

天珠变

唐家三少◎作品

Ⅱ 翡丽神将

天珠变出，箭定天下。
天珠十二变，一个修炼天珠变的弓箭手传说……



HEAVENLY JEWEL CHANGE

5TH COMPILATION

Tang Jia San Shao

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Heavenly Jewel Change

(天珠变)

by

Tang Jia San Shao

(唐家三少)

Synopsis

Every human has their Personal Jewel of power, when awakened it can either be an Elemental Jewel or Physical Jewel. They circle the right and left wrists like bracelets of power.

Heavenly Jewels are like the twins born, meaning when both Elemental and Physical Jewels are Awakened for the same person, the pair is known as Heavenly Jewels.

Those who have the Physical Jewels are known as Physical Jewel Masters, those with Elemental Jewels are Elemental Jewel Masters, and those who train with Heavenly Jewels are naturally called Heavenly Jewel Masters.

Heavenly Jewel Masters have a highest level of 12 pairs of jewels, as such their training progress is known as Heavenly Jewels 12 Changes.

Our MC here is an archer who has such a pair of Heavenly Jewels.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Zen @ [Wuxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Book 21

Chapter 172 True might of Emperor! (1)

As such, as Gu YingBing announced that he was giving up the Royal Heir position, it would revert back to the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger bloodlines. From then on, the stock of the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lions in the entire WanShou Empire grew, to such a height that no one could shake, not even the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tigers who were at the same level.

The Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger and Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion bloodlines had always been at the head of the entire north. One bloodline would be in charge of the Heavenly Snow Mountain, and the other would then be in charge of the Empire. This was a rule that had been passed down from their ancestors long past, and both bloodlines could be said to be inseparably interconnected in complementing each other; no one would ever dare to destroy such an equilibrium. In the entire WanShou Empire, the Lion Tribe and Tiger Tribes could be said to be the two strongest tribes absolutely. Each of them had five Regiments of soldiers, and the two tribes combined was already more than a fifth of the entire WanShou Empire armies... furthermore, they were undoubtedly the strongest fifth!

No matter the Lion Tribe or the Tiger Tribe Regiments, when they entered the battlefield, they always brought about the blood of their enemies as well as their defeat. Of course, in the recent history, these two tribes seldom participated in the war against humans. After all, the war against the humans were mostly raids meant for looting, not an actual invasion.

In the entire WanShou Empire, there were over a hundred Beastmen Tribes in total, large or small. Amongst them, those which could actually form an effective fighting force numbered at least a few dozen, but only about a dozen to a score actually could form an entire proper Regiment that was accepted into the army. Of those tribes, all their leaders and chiefs were all heading

towards the Heavenly Snow Mountain; with those at a closer distance having already reached.

The war in the north was already closing in on the end. After all, every year the battles on lasted for two months. Furthermore, in a few days time, it would be the Winter Solstice, also the the date that the marriage between the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord's daughter and the Lion Prince. This wedding was definitely considered far more important than a mere annual skirmish on the borders.

Of course, this year's war between the human Empires could be said to be the worst in history. The main reason was naturally the ZhongTian NorthWest Army area. During that fight, due to a unique new troop in the ZhongTian NorthWest Army, the WanShou Empire had suffered an unprecedentedly massive loss. Worse still, since the larger army had been sent to the NorthWest side, the successful raiding from the other zones were actually slightly less than normal.

The North had now fallen into deep winter, and even the Beastmen Tribesmen would be hard pressed to continue fighting. They had no choice but to retreat at the usual time, but this time they had not succeeded in raiding and looting enough resources, and it would not be an easy winter for the WanShou Empire to get by. They would probably have to dig deep into their reserves to survive the winter.

...

At the peak of the Heavenly Snow Mountain, the weather was as severe and bitter as normal, a stark contrast from the warmth at the feet of the Ten Thousand Beast Heavens that was at the feet of the immense mountain; a contrast that was definitely hard to take for many.

Since the early morning, Gu Yingbing had been standing at the entrance of the Heavenly Snow Mountain Castle, personally

receiving all the incoming guests. His long, fiery golden-red hair whipped in the cold wind, but he seemed unaffected by the bitter cold, even dressed in the simple thin golden red robes he was adorned in. Currently, he had a warm, welcoming smile on his face, a far cry from his usual haughty and heroic demeanor.

After all, he was about to be married... married to his most beloved Tian'er. How could Gu Yingbing not be overjoyed? Furthermore, marrying Tian'er would also mean he would be confirmed as his teacher's heir, to become the next Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord.

His Master would definitely go all out in assisting his own cultivation, aiding him in reaching the necessary power to inherit the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord post.

More importantly, he truly did love Tian'er in his heart. At the same time, the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tigers had a great draw towards the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lions.

The Divine Heavenly Spirit Tigers' bloodline was slightly higher grade than that of the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lions', and they had held control of the Heavenly Snow Mountain all these years. Perhaps, it was finally a time for change this generation. Of course, that would mean the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lions would lose the Royal Crown, but in comparison to the throne of the WanShou Empire, the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord position was far more important! As long as the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord wished it, a simple order could replace even the king! To the entire North, perhaps the Royal Family was able to command all the Tribes, but the Heavenly Snow Mountain was tantamount to being the totem of the entire WanShou Empire. He could finally be the pride of the entire Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion Tribe.

The guests came in a constant stream, their gifts were all the most precious items in the entire north. Of course, accepting gifts was not a task that Gu Yingbing needed to personally do. Much earlier, the WanShou Emperor, the Lion King Gu Si Te, had sent

two hundred disciples from the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lions to help out. Just like that, there was a slight feel that the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion Tribe was starting to become the master of the Heavenly Snow Mountain.

Naturally, only those incoming guests, the heads of the various tribes could sense that. These bloodline disciples of the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion Tribe were still very respectful towards the people of the Heavenly Snow Mountain.

...

Deep within the Heavenly Snow Mountain Castle.

Tian'er sat on her bed silently, not moving an inch. She was dressed in a white full dress, her similarly white hair hanging down behind her back. The two blue strips of hair in front seemed to have lost their original lustre. Sitting there, she seemed like a beautiful statue... a lifeless one to boot.

All of a sudden, a faint glow appeared, and the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord appeared out of nowhere with a single step. Looking at his daughter like that, Xue AoTian couldn't help but furrow his brow.

These few days, Tian'er had stopped cultivating at all, just spending all her time sitting there silently as if deep in thought, yet at the same time strangely not thinking at all. Only when he came with Gu YingBing came would she speak a few words.

"Tian'er, it's your big day in two days time. Although it is tradition that the bride does not appear in public, you should be happier. After all, you already agreed to marry Gu Yingbing; you should be a good wife." Xue AoTian said solemnly.

Tian'er lifted her head to look at her father, her empty eyes finally with a slight light within. With a faint smile, she said: "Father, don't worry, I will definitely marry Big Bro Gu, I won't let you down."

Seeing that obviously forced smile on his daughter's face, Xue AoTian felt that something was off. Walking towards Tian'er, he placed a hand gently on her forehead, but he did not find anything wrong with her.

"Father." Tian'er said in rebuke.

Xue AoTian sighed gently and said: "You're still thinking about that human brat?"

Tian'er's heart flinched slightly, and she gave a forced smile before saying: "No, of course I'm not! How could I be thinking of him. Father, I'm already going to marry Big Bro Gu, don't mention that person anymore; if Bro Gu hears about it, he will not be happy."

Xue AoTian smiled and said: "Father is very happy that you are sensible enough to say that."

Tian'er smiled and said: "Father, both you and Big Bro Gu have promised me that as long as I marry him, you two will not hurt Zhou Weiqing, right? Big Bro Gu has already beaten him up previously... and I will not have any other association with him in the future, no matter what. So please, Father, do not mention him again, and do not go and hurt him alright?"

Xue AoTian nodded and said: "Of course, since when have I not kept my promises? Sigh... I must say that if not for your ... connection with him, I truly do feel like bringing him back to teach him a lesson... he is truly an outstanding youth with a bright future ahead. Although this time due to your Big Bro Gu, he has been unable to join in the battlefield, that whatever Peerless Battalion of his has given us quite a big loss."

"Father, please do not say anymore. I do not want to know anything else about him." Tian'er suddenly burst out violently.

Xue AoTian did feel apologetic and regretful towards his daughter, and he just smiled faintly and said: "Alright, Father will

not speak of this anymore. You just have a good rest then. I hope that my Tian'er will be the most beautiful bride in the world."

...

Xue AoTian left the room. After a while, Tian'er's hands subconsciously gripped her bed sheets tightly, her impassive face finally showing some emotion as she said softly: "Little Fatty... Little Fatty... I'm so sorry. I'm truly sorry... I cannot keep the promise that we made each other previously. I had no choice but to write that letter to you... to hurt you... However, I had no choice... if I did not do so, Big Bro Gu would definitely kill you. You still have Bing'er... she can still be with you and take care of you... Sorry Little Fatty, I cannot be your wife anymore. However, do not worry, as I said before, Tian'er will only ever belong to you. A good woman will not have a second husband. In my heart, you will always be my only man. Once the wedding ceremony between myself and Big Bro Gu is complete and both his and my father's face can be satisfied, I will leave this world forever... clean and proper... I will make sure I give a good act that I have passed from cultivation issues. Little Fatty, even if I go to the next world, I will pray for you and Bing'er..."

As she thought up to that point, Tian'er could no longer control her tears, and she fell down onto her bed sobbing, face down. She did not hold any hope in her heart, as she knew Zhou Weiqing's strength was just too low now. There was no longer any possibility between the two of them. She did not regret any of her choices; if she could just choose again, the only change she would ever make would be to stay a longer time on the Heavenly Jewel Island with Zhou Weiqing, to make more precious happy memories with him. All these past few days, the only thing that had given her strength to get through those miserable days were all the memories of them together, immersing herself in them all day long.

The normally chilly and empty Heavenly Snow Castle was now decorated with bright lights and coloured hanging decorations,

bustling with life. It was now getting very close to the wedding, and the clash and noise of drums and gongs rang out. The entire Heavenly Snow Mountain was also extraordinarily lively due to the arrival of the various tribe leaders and officials.

The Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord's daughter marrying out, it was definitely a major event. Although there were still two more days before the day of marriage, all the invited guests had arrived, and even some of those who weren't invited had also come.

Standing at the entrance of the Heavenly Snow Castle, the smile on Gu Yingbing's face had not lessened a bit. Seeing the sky darken as night was coming, and most guests had already come, and he was about to head in. However, just as he was about to do so, 2 figures appeared in the distance, one fat, one thin, trudging up the path. Gu Yingbing's feet stopped instantly, the smile on his face vanishing, a chilly expression flashing across his face.

The one walking at the front was a large fatty, dressed in black. The reason why Gu Yingbing stopped suddenly and had his face change was naturally because of the black clothing of the large fatty. In the Heavenly Snow Mountain, black was a taboo colour, and anyone who arrived on the mountain was supposed to change to white.

Chapter 172 True might of Emperor! (2)

However, Gu Yingbing's face quickly resumed his normal expression, once he saw clearly who that man was. Even if he were the Lion Prince, even if he was the future heir to the Heavenly Snow Mountain, towards this man, he did not have the qualification to be angry. Taking two quick steps forward, he said respectfully: "Junior greets the Heavenly Emperor."

The big fatty glanced at him, his face overcast as he said coldly: "Where is that Old Monster Xue? This old man is looking for him, I have things to speak to him about."

Gu Yingbing's brow furrowed slightly and he said: "Senior Long, the day after tomorrow is this Junior's wedding date, and I will be marrying my Master's daughter. If it is convenient for Senior, why not stay and join the wedding feast. As for your issue with Master, is it possible trouble you to please wait a few days until it is all over?"

Without question, the large fatty in front of Gu Yingbing now was the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor, Long Shiya. Of course, the one following behind him was naturally Zhou Weiqing. However, at this moment, Zhou Weiqing had his cloak drawn up around him fully, covering his entire face.

Long Shiya had been up the Heavenly Snow Mountain several times, and every time it was to challenge Xue AoTian. Naturally, Gu Yingbing thought that this time was no exception. His wedding was upcoming, and he naturally did not wish that Long Shiya's arrival would ruin the festive atmosphere.

"Oh? You are going to be marry?" Long Shiya looked at Gu Yingbing with an exaggerated look of surprise.

Gu Yingbing quickly said: "Yes Sir. This Junior and Tian'er have been in love for many years, and it is my greatest luck to be able to marry her and have her as my wife."

Long Shiya suddenly smiled and burst out laughing. “Very good, very good, your greatest luck. However, you haven’t asked this old man whether or not I agree to it!”

Hearing Long Shiya’s words, Gu Yingbing almost couldn’t believe his own ears. Although Long Shiya often came to the Heavenly Snow Mountain to challenge his Master, it could be said that the two of them actually had a pretty good relationship. In fact, while it was true that Long Shiya was fully bent on defeating Xue AoTian, and they should technically be considered enemies, the two of them shared a sense of together-ness of sorts, both almost similar in nature. As such, he had never expected that Long Shiya would come here purposely to cause trouble now.

Gu Yingbing’s expression soured instantly: “Senior Long, what do you mean? At such a time that Master is marrying off his daughter, you are actually here to cause trouble?”

Long Shiya gave a few disdainful hmphs, saying: “Causing trouble... far from it... however, I need Old Monster Xue to give me a reckoning.”

Two figures flashed out of the shadows abruptly. It was the two Heavenly King Stage powerhouses that had previously accompanied Gu Yingbing to the border to take care of Zhou Weiqing, and they were currently looking at Long Shiya with an unfriendly look on their faces. From the looks of it, as soon as Gu Yingbing gave the order, they would immediately take action against Long Shiya.

They had not witnessed the power of the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor for themselves.

“Just the mere two of you, and you want to take on this old man? If I wasn’t giving that Old Monster Xue a bit of face, I wouldn’t have come here to speak so nicely. If not... when your wedding date comes, it won’t be as easy as this.”

As he said that, Long Shiya waved his arm lazily, and a massive

amount of Heavenly Energy appeared abruptly, pressuring Gu Yingbing and the two Lion Tribe Heavenly King Stage powerhouse to stagger back a few steps. Almost at the same time, six different coloured lights shone forth from Long Shiya's body, soaring up into the skies. It was evening time, and the spray of lights gave a brilliant show in the darkened skies of the Heavenly Snow Mountain.

Sensing the terrifying boundless Heavenly Energy from Long Shiya, the two Heavenly King Stage powerhouses' expressions changed, paling drastically. However, they did not back off, instead both moved to the side to stand in front of Gu Yingbing protectively, afraid that Long Shiya would take action against their Lion Prince.

This was after all the Heavenly Snow Mountain. If it were any other place, they would never dare to stand so easily in front of a Heavenly Emperor powerhouse, but this was the sacred land of the entire WanShou Empire, the grand Heavenly Snow Mountain. Let alone the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord, the only Heavenly God Tier powerhouse in the entire world, they also had other Heavenly Emperor powerhouses in the Heavenly Snow Mountain. As such, to them, protecting the Lion Prince Gu Yingbing was more important than anything, even their own lives.

Long Shiya did not care about them at all, standing right there with an proud and unyielding look on his face. Two mere Heavenly King Stage powerhouses were not worthy of him to take action.

Gu Yingbing's expression was now extremely ugly. After all, someone was coming here to cause trouble at his own upcoming wedding, who could be comfortable hearing such a news. However, just like Long Shiya said, he had not come on the wedding day itself, and though Gu Yingbing was rather vexed, he was at least not resentful.

Right at that moment, a deep and resonant voice rang out. "Who dares to barge in our Heavenly Snow Mountain to cause trouble?"

Accompanying the voice was a sudden lightning quick figure streaking down from the top of the Heavenly Snow Castle in a flash of light. As the light came down, the figure appeared, a tall and large man appearing out of nowhere.

Seeing that man appear, Gu Yingbing and the two Heavenly King Stage powerhouses instantly bowed deeply. Gu Yingbing said respectfully: "Uncle Xue, how do you do."

The man who had just appeared looked to be a middle aged man around forty odd years old, a head of short white hair upright. His features were rather handsome, a squarish face with well defined features, his two metre tall height and broad shoulders matching his dignified and majestic bearing. His simple white robes were laced with gold thread patterns, and he did not have any other ornaments, all of which just added to the noble and stately air he had. Standing still right there, he was like a tall and majestic tower.

"En?" The man glanced at Gu Yingbing and the other two before his gaze landed on Long Shiya. With much surprise, he said: "Isn't this Fa... Big Bro Long? What brings you here?"

He had almost blurted out the words Fatty Long, luckily he had seen Long Shiya's face start to turn black, and he had managed to change his words in time. Long Shiya gave a cold humph and said: "Old Tiger, you are here as well... to attend that wedding?"

This middle aged man with the short white hair was naturally the current Tribe Leader of the Tiger Tribe, also one of the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger bloodline. In fact, he was the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord Xue AoTian's younger brother, Tian'er's uncle, Xue Aoying.

Of course, his features and actual age were not proportional. Although he was not like Long Shiya being over the age of hundred, but he was already over ninety years old.

He was also at the Heavenly Emperor cultivation level, but he did

not have the same talent as his elder brother Xue AoTian, only at the Mid Level Heavenly Emperor stage. Even compared to Long Shiya, the gap was clear.

Xue Aoying laughed heartily and said: “My niece is about to be wed, as her beloved uncle, how could I not come. Big Bro Long, since you are here, come join in the festivities and have a drink with me. Even if you want to challenge my big brother, you can wait until my niece is married right?”

Long Shiya gave a cold humph. “Old Tiger, this matter has nothing to do with you... you better not meddle in this matter. This time, I am here to look for your brother and get him to proper reckoning for this matter. If not, this wedding cannot be held.”

Hearing those words, Xue Aoying’s expression also changed. He knew clearly the relationship between his brother and Long Shiya, and though they were considered adversaries, under normal circumstances, Long Shiya would not go to such an extent and not give his brother face at all. As compared to Gu Yingbing, his thoughts went much deeper, and he immediately knew that Long Shiya truly had something to bring up this time.

Just as Xue Aoying was lost in thought, a strong and loud voice rang out. “Such big talk! Fatty Long, aren’t you [afraid that you will sprain your tongue?](#)”

Another flash of light, and another figure appeared. An old man, with a similar large built to Xue Aoying, but with a hair of golden red hair, abruptly showed up beside him. As soon as he appeared, Gu Yingbing and the two Heavenly King Stage powerhouses immediately bowed respectfully to him.

“Father.” Gu Yingbing said respectfully. As for the two elders, they greeted him “Lion King.”

Under the influence of Long Shiya’s six coloured lights, all Heavenly Emperor stage powerhouses and above could sense it. As for the man who had just appeared, it was naturally the Lion

Tribe's Tribe Leader, the strongest powerhouse of the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lions, the [Lion King Gu Site](#), also Gu Yingbing's father.

As compared to the steady nature of the Tiger King Xue Aoying, Gu Site's nature was like fire, and his cultivation level had also reached the High Level Heavenly Emperor level. Seeing that the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor was here to cause trouble at his son's wedding, how could he not be angry? In that moment, he could not refrain himself from calling out 'Fatty Long'.

"What did you call me?" Long Shiya's eyes narrowed, a cold light flickering within.

The Lion King Gu Site did not back down, saying: "I called you Fatty Long, what about it? Look at your whole body of fats, and you won't let anyone call you?"

Long Shiya smiled, a strangely wicked smile. "Good, very good. Since Xue AoTian hasn't come yet, let me teach you, this little watchdog, a lesson first." As he said that, with a wave of Long Shiya's arms, instantly the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation at his feet glowed brightly, a thick and terrifying Heavenly Energy reverberation rising into the air instantly along with the brilliant six coloured lights. The next moment, a palm struck out at Gu Site.

At their cultivation level, fighting was now extremely simplified, and all they used were just the simplest, most basic, fighting styles.

Although Gu Site's words had been so unforgiving and arrogant, he was actually very wary towards Long Shiya. He was after all a King, an Emperor, the sole leader of the entire WanShou Empire, and he had never had the chance to fight against Long Shiya previously. Towards this Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor and his strength, all he knew was what he had heard from the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord Xue AoTian. Against this Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor, that even the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord

had praised, he did not dare let down his guard at all or underestimate him in the slightest. Responding instantly as well, his right hand struck out as well towards Long Shiya's incoming strike.

All around could clearly see that along with Gu Site's palm strike, a layer of red light sprang forth around his body, and his right palm seemed to turn into a ruby, glowing brilliantly. It was clear that his Elemental Jewel Attribute was that of Fire, yet as he struck out there wasn't the usual fiery hot aura that one would associate with a Fire Attribute Heavenly Jewel Master. The air around still remained icy cold as ever. Just from that alone, one could see how much control he had over his Heavenly Energy.

As the palms from both sides slammed into each other, there was no sound, no explosion; yet the shield of lights around both their bodies flickered and shrank slightly. In the next instant, Gu Site's expression changed drastically, his palm shrinking back as his entire body staggered back three steps before he barely regained his balance.

Long Shiya did not continue attacking. By now, his left hand had also retracted, a slightly disdainful expression on his face as he glanced at Gu Site. "Compared to Old Monster Xue, you are far from him. Hmph, just with your abilities, you dare to call me Fatty Long? You have not earned such a right." As he said that, his right hand lifted once more, and all around Long Shiya's body, a total of thirty six blades of various coloured lights appeared. Each were at least a metre long, with the width of the blades almost reaching half a metre. The brilliant glow of the six lights consolidated into a terrifying energy that any onlooker could sense, each and every one of them locked onto the Lion King Gu Site.

Direct translation, basically means brag too much that one is unable to uphold his own end of bragging

Pronounced Si Te, but I didn't want to separate it as it

Chapter 172 True might of Emperor! (3)

Both sides were Heavenly Emperor powerhouses, but as soon as they exchanged blows, Gu Site's heart was filled with shock. He was an Emperor, a King, one that held himself above all others, and he was used to his subjects deferring to him. Naturally, his aura and bearing were beyond question, strong as one could be. Yet, right at this moment, in front of Long Shiya, he truly felt that his strength was of no match at all.

Just in that single palm strike alone, though it might have seemed very simple, he had truly suffered a major disadvantage. With Long Shiya's Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation, his six Attribute Heavenly Energy had truly merged together, and though his overall Heavenly Energy output was only slightly higher than Gu Site, the effect and offensive capabilities of the fusion was far superior to his own output. It was truly a case of quality over quantity. Furthermore, that was not even considering that Long Shiya was at the Max Level of the Heavenly Emperor Stage, even higher than himself. In just the single blow, the Lion King felt a terrifying power overcome him like waves from a boundless ocean... as if the entire space around them was fully under Long Shiya's control.

Seeing the thirty six blades of light spring into existence in front of him, the Lion King could no longer care about face. Along with several continuous bouts of dark gold light flashing, an entire set of nine God Tier Consolidated Equipment appeared, coalescing into form around his body. Although it was no match for the Heavenly Snow Mountain's own God Vanquishing Heavenly Spirit Set, it was already a rare and exceptional Legendary Set in the entire mainland.

The Lion King Gu Site's weapon was a massive heavy bastard sword, and as it pointed ahead, a strong red light shot forth into the skies. Behind his back, the illusory image of a huge gold-red

ferocious lion appeared. It was clear that he was going all out now.

The Tiger King Xue Aoying stood at the side unmoving, without any thought of intervening. Regarding Long Shiya, he was far more familiar than Gu Site was, especially since he had twice personally witnessed fights between Long Shiya and his brother Xue AoTian. He knew that Xue AoTian had an extremely high opinion and appraisal of Long Shiya. He had once told Xue Aoying that even for himself, even if he wanted to defeat Long Shiya, it would be extremely tough even for him, and would take him a lot of time and effort to do so. The Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation that Long Shiya had created could be said to be the greatest formation and invention today, and nothing could compare. If not for the fact that Long Shiya had not managed to break through to the Heavenly God Tier, the title of strongest powerhouse alive today would possibly be different now. At the same time, Xue AoTian had also told Xue Aoying very seriously that even if they offended the other four Great Saint Lands, they must never offend Long Shiya. The reason was simple – he was alone in the world with no other care. Such a powerhouse, if he truly wanted to cause trouble for them, even the Heavenly Snow Mountain would be hard pressed to deal with them. Of course, this was also because Xue AoTian did not have any reason to attempt to kill Long Shiya as well.

Without question, Long Shiya coming here today to cause trouble definitely had some reason behind it, and without knowing the true reason, Xue Aoying would not take action.

The competition and rivalry between the Lion Tribe and Tiger Tribe could be said to be existent since the start of the WanShou Empire. This time, for Gu Yingbing to marry Tian'er, in truth Xue Aoying was rather vexed by it in his heart. He was extremely clear that once Gu Yingbing inherited the position of Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord, their Tiger Tribe would be in a downward spiral and their future would not be good.

Even though the Tiger Tribe would take over the position of the Royal Family and Emperor of the WanShou Empire, that would not mean they could control the Lion Tribes. On the contrary, when that time came, the Lion Tribe would have the backing of the Heavenly Snow Mountain, having a higher status above all, and they would not need to listen to the Tiger Tribe even if they were the Royal Family. It was the exact status that the Tiger Tribe enjoyed right now, not Royal but having a status above the Lion Tribe. This was the power of the Heavenly Snow Mountain, one of the top Great Saint Lands.

As a result, watching the Lion King Gu Site taking a disadvantage right now, Xue Aoying was more than happy to just keep watching; how could he possibly lend a hand? Let alone the fact that he did not think he could take on Long Shiya; even if he could he would still not take action. The fact that the Tiger Tribe did not have any talented geniuses in the younger generation that were outstanding enough to inherit the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord position was already vexing enough to him, and he was definitely in no mood to assist the Lion King without a good reason.

Each and every one of the thirty six blades of light could be said to have the offensive power of maximum Heavenly Emperor. However, even at the Heavenly Emperor Stage himself, the Lion King Gu Site did not think he could come up with thirty six similar attacks at the same time; otherwise how could he not care about his own face and unleash all of his entire Legendary Set at once before his opponent had even used one.

With a wave of his large hand, Long Shiya continued standing there unmoving, but the thirty six blades of light flew towards the Lion King Gu Site at top speed, as if they had eyes of their own.

From an outside perspective, the clash of these two Heavenly Emperors did not seem particularly flashy or powerful, perhaps even less startling than two nine-Jeweled Upper Level Zong Stage Heavenly Jewel Masters. Yet, in truth, that was because all their

attacks were highly compressed, and may not look as impressive as their true power might be. Furthermore, this was after all the Heavenly Snow Mountain, and the two restrained themselves to prevent too much possible property damage.

The Lion King Gu Site's body starting spinning abruptly, gripping his heavy bastard sword in both hands, his entire person becoming like a massive fiery tornado. Spinning crazily, he ignored the six coloured lights striking towards him, instead charging straight towards Long Shiya.

With his entire crimson red Legendary Set boosting him, currently the Lion King's power had reached the Maximum stage of the Heavenly Emperor cultivation state.

Facing such a whirlwind attack, if it had been the Tiger King Xue Aoying, he could only attempt to dodge it. However, Long Shiya did not even make a move, nor did he seem to care at all.

A spark of light flashed in Long Shiya's eyes, and the thirty six blades of light formed an array in front of him like a beautiful necklace stringing various different coloured beads, before intercepting the fiery red spinning figure of Gu Site.

FlopFlopFlopFlop

A series of strange sounds rang out, as the blades of light smashed into the fiery whirlpool of crimson one after the other, vanishing as they did so. However, every strike from a blade would cause the crimson glow of the tornado to lower a little, slowing it down bit by bit.

Long Shiya's right hand lifted once again. This time, in a grab towards the empty space above his head. At once, lights of the same six colours started gathering at crazy speeds above his head, slowly gathering into and forming a massive six-coloured hammer.

The consolidation speed of the hammer was rather slow, and behind his back, the illusory image of Long Shiya seemed to

become even more solid and real. For the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor to have to gather power in order to unleash this Skill, one could imagine its power.. However, at this moment, Lion King Gu Site could not do anything else as all his attention was in blocking the thirty six blades of light.

Suppression, an all-round, total suppression. As an outside observer, this was the only phrase that the Tiger King Xue Aoying could use to describe this fight. In front of the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya, even the High Level Heavenly Emperor Lion King Gu Site did not have any chance at all!

Originally, when he was watching Long Shiya fighting against Xue Aotian, Xua Aoying did not have such a strong and intense feeling. However, when the opponent was changed to Gu Site, only then did he truly feel the terrifying power of Long Shiya. If that person fighting was himself, he knew that he would most likely fare even worse than Gu Site.

Seeing that massive, nearly ten metre long, six-coloured hammer forming, the Lion King Gu Site was also both surprised and getting worried. Those blades of light that seemed so easily summoned by Long Shiya had taken so much to deal with, and every time one of them detonated against his whirlwind, it would spark a chain reaction of the six Attributes.

More surprising to Gu Site was that the chain reaction for each blade was different, causing him to have to use all his strength and care in blocking each and every one of them. He estimated that he had to use almost two to three times the amount of Heavenly Energy that Long Shiya used, in order to actually take care of each blade.

Furthermore, even while Long Shiya was controlling those thirty six blades of light to attack him, this Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor actually had the strength and attention to spare to charge up another Skill, one that was obviously far stronger. This was a total shock to Gu Site. Only at this point did he realise the true gap

between him and Long Shiya, and he knew that it was likely his opponent had not even shown the extent of his strength.

A gold light sprang forth from Gu Site's body. At this point, he could not hold anything back. The Divine Attribute, one of the Saint Attributes, showed itself, and the giant illusory lion behind his back also turned gold, with Golden Saint Flames surrounding him. At last, he could start moving while blocking Long Shiya's attacks, and he continued doggedly step by step towards his foe.

"Scram!" Long Shiya gave a cold humph.. The massive six coloured hammer descended from the skies, but it did not slam down directly, instead sweeping horizontally to smash savagely into the whirlwind of gold flames that was Gu Site.

This time... there was finally a loud explosion... an explosion that seemed to resound deep into every single one of the observers. In the huge ringing sound, the mass of gold and red light and flame actually flew back, smashing right off the Heavenly Snow Mountain and flying off into the distance.

With another wave of Long Shiya's right hand, a three metre long six-coloured sword appeared out of nowhere. The entire atmosphere seemed to warp around it, and in a flash of light, the sword flew towards Gu Site's body, which was still flying off into the distance, the light surrounding him having dimmed to almost non-existence.

"Fatty Long, show mercy!"

Right at that moment, a gold light descended from the skies, warping into a shield to block the final six-coloured sword that Long Shiya had unleashed.

The sword and shield slammed into one another, and both visible swayed violently before they dissipated into the air simultaneously. Throughout the fight, Long Shiya had not moved a single step, but at this point he actually swayed slightly, though he still did not stagger back.

A snow-white figure appeared out of nowhere, silent and swift. No one had seen how he had appeared, but as soon as he did so, everything seemed to become a mere background to his presence.

“Bro Long, how are you?” The one who had stopped Long Shiya’s final blow and even caused him to shake slightly was naturally the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord, the strongest powerhouse in the world, the only Heavenly God Tier Heavenly Jewel Master... Xue AoTian.

Looking at him, Long Shiya gave a cold smirk and said: “Old Monster Xue, you are finally willing to show yourself.”

At that point, the Lion King Gu Site had finally recovered his balance, and with his own powerful Heavenly Energy, he flew back to them. Although he did not have the Wind Attribute, that just meant he would not be able to fly too quickly or for long periods of time. For a short distance, using his Heavenly Energy to fly was still a possibility.

Currently, Gu Site was extremely vexed and disappointed. That blow from Long Shiya’s hammer had not actually harmed him, but it had almost dissipated all of his protective aura and Heavenly Energy. If that final sword had actually landed on him, even if it did not kill him, he would definitely be severely wounded. Yet, Long Shiya had not even unleashed a single Consolidated Equipment... It was clear how far the gap between the two of them were.

“Mountain Lord.”

Gu Site glared angrily at Long Shiya, but he still bowed respectfully to Xue AoTian first.

Xue AoTian smiled faintly and said: “Lion King, you do not need to be vexed. Losing to Bro Long is not something to be ashamed of. In this entire mainland, Bro Long can be considered the strongest Heavenly Emperor. Even for myself, I dare not say that I can definitely defeat him.”

Xue AoTian's words could be considered extremely kind, giving Long Shiya a lot of face. Even if Long Shiya was acting aggressively now, his expression couldn't help but ease up.

Chapter 173 ‘Your Father’ is here to demand a reckoning! (1)

Gu Site gave an angry humph towards Long Shiya, clearly still vexed and unwilling to accept his loss. After all, he still had several powerful aces up his sleeve that he had not used. If this was not the Heavenly Snow Mountain and he could unleash his full power, he still thought he had some chance of fighting against Long Shiya. He did have the Divine Attribute after all.

At this moment, on the top of the Heavenly Snow Mountain, there was now four of the strongest powerhouses in the entire Boundless Mainland. One Heavenly God and three Heavenly Emperors! These four were not only terrifying presences who could awe the lands, they were also some of the strongest in the entire land.

No one dared approach to be an onlooker, no matter how tempting that might be. This was the Heavenly Snow Mountain... the Heavenly Snow Castle! Even the various tribe leaders that had come to celebrate the wedding dared not move out, fearing that they might annoy or anger the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord, and cause trouble for their entire tribe.

Xue AoTian smiled faintly at Long Shiya and said: “Bro Long, let us move inside to speak in private? Standing here for everyone to see isn’t the best way to solve any issues, and it is not how I greet my guests.”

Long Shiya nodded and said: “Very well, Old Monster Xue, I will give you that face.”

Xue AoTian waved his hand and said: “Come then.” As he said that, he headed for the castle entrance.

Long Shiya’s gaze swept across to land upon the Lion King Gu Site and the Lion Prince Gu Yingbing. “You two come as well. The

matter I have come to speak off concerns you both as well.” After saying that, he beckoned to Zhou Weiqing who was still behind him, still covered with the cowl of his cloak, but his hidden face was filled with shock and awe. He then followed behind Xue AoTian as he entered the castle, easily taking the second position.

All that had just happened was just so quick, and naturally Zhou Weiqing had witnessed everything. With his intelligence, he could easily guess who all these people were as well.

Ever since he had formally acknowledged Long Shiya as his Master, this was the first time that Zhou Weiqing had actually seen him take action. Previously, when Long Shiya had fought, Zhou Weiqing had clearly sensed that around his own body, there was an invisible shield protecting him, so that he would not be affected by any of the energy reverberations from the clash of the two powerhouses.

This was also the first time he had witnessed the true terrifying power of the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation. As the only disciple and heir of the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor, Zhou Weiqing was naturally much clearer about the uses of the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation and the intricacies of what Long Shiya had done, even compared to the Lion King Gu Site who had experienced it for himself. Indeed, what Gu Site had guessed was true... Long Shiya did not use his full strength at all, and his control was so impressive and fine to such an unbelievable degree. If Long Shiya had wanted, he could have totally destroyed the Lion King in a flow of continuous attacks.

Invincible amongst the same stage. This was what Long Shiya rated his own Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation. This was not hubris at all; and regarding such a rating, even the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord had never refuted it; otherwise he would have never said that this formation was the greatest formation in the entire Boundless Mainland.

Even though the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation had

its own drawbacks and disadvantages, the sheer amount of advantages and superiority it had far surpassed those drawbacks. If one were to pick at it stringently, its worst flaw would be the unbelievable demanding amount of innate talent a user would need to have in order to even start learning it. After all, in the entire world, the number of people who could possibly have six Attributes was just too few... too few.

That was the true power of THE Heavenly Emperor! Look at his Master! Just a single person alone, and he had actually intimidated all the powerhouses from the Heavenly Snow Mountain. Even the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord, while not intimidated, treated him with much respect. The pride for his master swelled up in Zhou Weiqing's heart.

His feelings for Long Shiya was not just gratitude, but had grown to true familial love.

The moment when Long Shiya had told him that he would personally bring him up to the Heavenly Snow Mountain, within Zhou Weiqing's heart, Long Shiya's status had risen up to almost the same level as his own father, not just a respected teacher.

...

As they walked into the Heavenly Snow Castle, Zhou Weiqing focused his will inwards protectively, not paying much attention to his surroundings. That was because he could clearly sense that the Tiger King Xue Aoying who was following behind his teacher was silently observing him. As compared to the Lion King, Gu Site, who kept all his attention on Long Shiya, Xue Aoying was clearly much more interested in this unknown person following behind Long Shiya, face hidden.

After all, everyone knew that the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor was the ultimate lone wolf! No one had ever heard of him having any relatives, kin, descendents or even disciples. Yet, this time, ascending the Heavenly Snow Mountain, he had actually brought

along this person. For the Tiger King, being so familiar with Long Shiya, how could he not have his interest sparked?

With the Tiger King's cultivation level of Heavenly Emperor, he could naturally sense that Zhou Weiqing was around the six-Jeweled stage. However, that was all his senses could detect on the surface. After all, Long Shiya was right there, and he could not just extend his Heavenly Energy to fully investigate. Furthermore, he could sense that around Zhou Weiqing's presence, Long Shiya's aura remained present protectively.

Zhou Weiqing did his utmost best to keep his breathing steady. He knew that it would soon be his turn to be on the stage. Although the past few months he had spent fully preparing for this very moment, doing all he could to prepare for it, just standing right here in this strongest of the Great Saint Lands, his heart couldn't help but race. However, no matter how nervous or afraid he was, the greatest feeling in his heart was still resolve. No matter for Tian'er's sake, or for his Master's reputation, he would no longer back down at all.

With Xue AoTian in front personally leading the way, the group of them quickly reached the central Grand Hall, right in the middle of the Heavenly Snow Castle.

The Lion King Gu Site had brought along his son Gu Yingbing; as for the two Heavenly King Stage powerhouses, they did not have the qualification to follow the group.

In following the group, it was not that Gu Site was really that afraid of Long Shiya. As the Royal Emperor of the WanShou Empire, he would never have such an emotion. However, he did want to find out the reason why Long Shiya had come here so aggressively and righteously.

As they entered the Grand Hall of the Heavenly Snow Castle, Xue AoTian took his seat at the head of the table, while the Lion King Gu Site naturally took the primary seat at his left. After all, in the

entire WanShou Empire, his rank and status was second only to the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord, Xue AoTian.

However, strangely enough, something that might cause others to ponder was that the right hand primary seat was normally for the Tiger King to seat, yet he took the initiative to let Long Shiya have that seat, instead [taking the one beside him](#).

As for Gu Yingbing and Zhou Weiqing, they naturally just stood behind the Lion King and Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor respectively. In such an occasion, how could they have any seat?

The Lion King Gu Site glanced at the Tiger King Xue Aoying. Although he did not say anything, a flash of discontent crossed his eyes, and even Zhou Weiqing could clearly notice it.

However, very quickly, his attention turned back to Long Shiya, his gaze filled with strong enmity and dissatisfaction with the previous fight result.

Very quickly, servants came to bring tea to the table, the faint fragrance of the tea bringing some life to the icy cold hall. Xue AoTian gave an inviting gesture to Long Shiya, and he did not hesitate. The famous Icy Mist Tea of the Heavenly Snow Mountain was extremely delicious after all.

As they drank their tea, Long Shiya totally ignored the glares from the Lion King, instead looking passively at Xue AoTian, as if in the short period of time his emotions had all calmed down.

The Lion King might seem to have a short fuse and violent temper, but in truth he was not foolish or headstrong, his mind detailed indeed. Otherwise, how could he successfully arrange things to have his son end up as the main disciple of Xue AoTian and possible heir to the Heavenly Snow Mountain.

For Long Shiya to come to the Heavenly Snow Mountain to cause trouble at this critical period, especially with what he had said earlier... it was without question that it had something to do with

his own Lion Tribe. The reason why he displayed such an intense enmity towards Long Shiya was also a way to show Xue AoTian his stance and resolve, to attempt to influence him.

“For Bro Long to come here this time, I’m guessing it is not to join in the wedding festivities right?” Xue AoTian said with a faint smile. If one just looked at his outward appearance, no one would imagine that he was the top powerhouse in the entire world. Zhou Weiqing had been observing this possible father-in-law of his, and he was shocked to find that he could not even sense the slightest bit of Heavenly Energy reverberations around Xue AoTian. Yet, he had a strange aura about him that seemed as if he was naturally in control of everything around him.

Long Shiya said coldly: “Of course I’m not here to join any so-called wedding. Old Monster Xue, this time, I have come to get a reckoning from you.”

Xue AoTian arched a brow slightly. “Reckoning? What reckoning do I owe Bro Long, I do not recall anything?”

Long Shiya’s immense body slowly stood up. Immediately, a powerful and forceful presence emitted from him, but the target was not Xue AoTian, but the Lion Prince Gu Yingbing opposite him.

The Lion King Gu Site immediately stood up, not daring to delay a second, circulating his Heavenly Energy to protect his son as he glared angrily at Long Shiya. “Fatty Long, you are now in the Heavenly Snow Castle, and you dare to behave so obnoxiously?” His words were simple but effective, aiming to sow discord and instigate something if possible.

Xue AoTian’s expression also clouded. “Bro Long, I have treated you as a guest here, and it is about to be my daughter’s wedding day... I do not wish to clash with you on such an occasion. Please state your business clearly. Yingbing is my son in law.”

“Son in law?” All of a sudden, Long Shiya laughed out loud with

no warning. “Well, it is hard to say who is your son in law right now. Old Monster Xue, you know my character very well. I, Long Shiya, all my life I have spent alone, chasing the pinnacle of cultivation and the theories of heavens, and I have no other living relatives. Have you ever seen me bring anyone along with me before?”

Xue AoTian started momentarily. He had never expected that Long Shiya would change the subject so quickly. Subconsciously, he said: “No...”

“... Bro Long has always been alone, coming and going freely as you wish. Yet... this time...” At this moment, his interest was also piqued as he turned his attention to Zhou Weiqing.

Of course, compared to his brother Xue Aoying, Xue AoTian’s senses were far superior. With just a single glance at Zhou Weiqing, a light of surprise flickered in his eyes. Although he could not fully determine what Zhou Weiqing’s Attributes were, he could immediately sense that his Elemental Jewels had six different Attributes.

Long Shiya said: “Not long ago, I finally accepted a disciple. This disciple of mine... he is like me, his Elemental Jewels having six Attributes. At long last, the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Arts that I have created can finally be passed down, and I have a heir of my own as well... I was so overjoyed, like I had found some precious treasure. I trust that Old Monster Xue, you can understand my feelings in this matter.”

Hearing Long Shiya’s words, some understanding dawned upon Xue AoTian’s heart, but at the same time a sense of foreboding came over him. Towards Long Shiya, he was just too familiar. With that character of his, it was nearly impossible for him to find a disciple. Yet, now that he had truly found one, he could just imagine the sheer protectiveness. Furthermore, he could indistinctly guess who Long Shiya’s disciple was... and he knew that it would not be an easy matter to settle.

Long Shiya said coldly: “This old man has already lived for more than a hundred years, and finally I have a relative.. a descendent. Yet... he was almost killed by this disciple of yours. Although he barely managed to survive, but his four limbs were all broken. Old Monster Xue, if do not give me a good reckoning that satisfies me, then this old man will declare war on your Heavenly Snow Mountain and even the WanShou Empire. For the rest of my life, I will make sure that you all will know no peace.”

In chinese culture (and hence these stories by extension, seating is extremely sensitive to position/rank/status

Chapter 173 ‘Your Father’ is here to demand a reckoning! (2)

Hearing Long Shiya’s words, not just Xue AoTian and Xue Aoying, even the Lion King Gu Site... all their expressions changed instantly, their faces paling. Gu Site might have a fiery temper, especially on the surface, but he was always in control, ensuring he did not cross any limit. In truth, he could not afford to actually fully offend Long Shiya, and as a King he would never do such a thing. After all, for a person like the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor to hold enmity for the WanShou Empire, it would bring them an unprecedented loss. Not even the Heavenly Snow Mountain could endure such losses! In the end, it came down to that line... the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor was all alone...

Instantly, the Lion King Gu Site turned his gaze to his son, saying angrily: “Yingbing, what is going on?”

Gu Yingbing’s expression was also bewildered. “I also do not know! Senior Long, when has this Junior hurt your disciple?”

Long Shiya’s countenance remained icy cold as he gave a humph. Turning to Zhou Weiqing, he said: “Little Fatty, let him see who you are.”

On the other side, Zhou Weiqing immediately lifted his hand to pull down the cowl of his cloak, revealing his features.

For the others present, when they looked at him, they would not have any other thoughts about it. However, Gu Yingbing’s expression changed instantly, staring at Zhou Weiqing with utter shock. “You... it is you...?!”

Zhou Weiqing smiled passively. After the thirty six days of cultivation, having gone through all the pain and suffering and being on the verge of death so many times, he had matured and grown much more. Facing Gu Yingbing now, his aura was not any

lesser than him.

“Lion Prince, it has been a while. Hope you are still well.”

In that moment, no matter the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord Xue AoTian, the Tiger King Xue Aoying, or the Lion King Gu Site, all their attention was focused on Zhou Weiqing. Everything else aside, they were extremely curious about this new disciple of Long Shiya's.

After greeting Gu Yingbing, Zhou Weiqing walked out from behind Long Shiya's seat. He first bowed deeply towards Xue Aotian, greeting him. “Junior Zhou Weiqing greets Senior Xue.”

He then turned towards the Tiger King and bowed once more. “Greeting Senior Tiger King.”

After saying both greetings, only then did he turn towards the Lion King. However, this time he only inclined his head slightly in greeting, almost as if his status was same as the Lion King.

“You are Zhou Weiqing?” Although Xue AoTian had guessed as such in his heart, when he actually heard Zhou Weiqing speak his name, a light flashed in his eyes. Towards Zhou Weiqing, he had heard too much about him... this young man that had drawn his daughter to him... one with such unbelievable talents, with two Saint Attributes – the Demonic Attribute and Time Attributes. More so, one that had six Elemental Attributes. Now... this young man was actually standing right in front of him in such a fashion. This was something he had not expected at all.

As for Zhou Weiqing, he was experiencing a totally different feeling. To him, Xue AoTian's gaze was like a magnifying glass, as if every inch of his body was under examination, as if it could even pierce through him. Just from his gaze alone, Zhou Weiqing felt as if his entire life and death was under Xue AoTian's full control.

“Yes Sir.” Zhou Weiqing answered respectfully.

“Zhou Weiqing, I spared your life, and you dare appear in front

of me here?” Upon seeing Zhou Weiqing, Gu Yingbing could no longer maintain his composure. In a flash, he stepped out, his entire body glowing with fiery light, as if he was ready to take action at any time.

Long Shiya gave a cold humph, a powerful presence bursting forth from him. The Lion King quickly stepped forward as well, blocking in front of his son, afraid that Long Shiya would suddenly take action.

Long Shiya said coldly: “The series of events... I do not need to go into detail any longer; I guess Old Monster Xue you can already guess what happened. Your disciple heavily injured my disciple. This matter, you have to give me a reckoning.”

Xue AoTian’s expression was extremely ugly. This was truly not an easy situation to resolve. Long Shiya had already spoken things out clearly, not leaving any leeway at all. Even as the top powerhouse in the world today, he could not easily ignore such a threat from Long Shiya. While it was not that difficult for him to defeat Long Shiya, but even if he were to join forces with the Lion King and Tiger King, they might not be able to kill Long Shiya. The entire WanShou Empire could not withstand the anger of the someone like the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor. Knowing it, this was also why Long Shiya dared to actually bring Zhou Weiqing up to the Heavenly Snow Mountain.

“Bro Long, what kind of reckoning are you looking for. Let us discuss it then.” Xue AoTian said solemnly.

Long Shiya said coldly: “Very simple. A debt of blood must be paid. What your disciple did to my disciple, I will do to him in return.”

“You dare!” Gu Site howled angrily. This was the first time he had actually heard the name Zhou Weiqing. In truth, he did not know anything about the current situation.

Gu Yingbing leaned closer to his father and spoke softly in his

ear: “This is the human who stole Tian’er away.”

Hearing Gu Yingbing’s words, only then did Gu Site finally understand what was happening, and his expression grew ugly as his face turned overcast. The atmosphere in the room turned dangerous as killing intent filled the entire Grand Hall.

The only one who was highly relaxed was the Tiger King Xue Aoying. Currently, his expression was rather weird; his eyes flashing with a hidden glee, almost as if he was delighting in the Lion King’s troubles. The entire matter did not really have anything to do with him, and he could naturally sit back and watch the show for now.

“I dare? In this world, what is there that I, Long Shiya, dare not do?” Long Shiya glared at the Lion King disdainfully.

Xue AoTian looked coldly at Long Shiya and said: “Bro Long, are you saying that the two of you, Master and Disciple, have come here specially to cause trouble?”

“Cause trouble? Old Monster Xue, if your disciple was the one who was beaten nearly to death, four limbs broken, what would you do? If I really wanted to cause trouble, I would have come two days later, during the actual wedding, to cause trouble in front of all your WanShou Empire Tribe Leaders... a proper trouble. I have chosen to come early, that is already to give you a lot of face.”

In truth, if anyone else had been beaten by Gu Yingbing, Xue AoTian would not have any sense of guilt at all. However, with all he knew about the matter, and with this Zhou Weiqing somehow becoming Long Shiya’s disciple, he knew this matter was very troublesome.

Looking at how Long Shiya was being so protective, he knew his character very well, and that Long Shiya would definitely do as he threatened if pushed to it. In a short moment, the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord was given a big headache, not knowing what to do.

“Bro Long, how about this, I can give your disciple some compensation in other areas... After all, Yingbing is about to wed my daughter. If you heavily injure him, how can the wedding be held? We can discuss what sort of compensation... what do you think?”

For Xue AoTian to speak like this, it was already a huge compromise for someone of his stature.

However, Long Shiya immediately rejected the proposal. “No way.”

Just as Xue AoTian’s expression turned sour from that, Zhou Weiqing who was standing beside Long Shiya quickly tugged at his sleeve, shaking his head tentatively.

A sudden suspicion struck Xue AoTian, and he said: “Bro Long, why not listen to what your disciple has to say? After all, he is the main party in this matter.”

Long Shiya looked at Zhou Weiqing irritably; as if dissatisfied with his cowardly appearance. “Little brat, I am here trying to get justice for you. What are you trying to say?”

Zhou Weiqing said humbly, trembling with awe and trepidation: “Master, even if you break that Lion Prince’s four limbs, the pain that I have suffered cannot be returned. We might as well get the compensation.”

At the head of the table, Xue AoTian laughed heartily and said: “Bro Long, look, your disciple is much more reasonable than you are. Little fellow, speak out then, what do you want? In this entire mainland, as long as this old fellow wants to do it, there should not be any issue.”

Zhou Weiqing quickly seized the opportunity and said respectfully: “In that case, this Junior thanks Senior respectfully.” As he said that, he abruptly fell down on his knees in front of Xue AoTian. “Senior, the compensation I wish to have is... please let

me marry Tian'er."

In terms of power and strength, Zhou Weiqing was no match for any of these powerhouses in front of him right here. However, in terms of cunning and shrewd planning, perhaps none of them were a match for him at all.

In truth, Zhou Weiqing and Long Shiya were actually acting out a planned scene, to make concessions in order to gain an advantage. Long Shiya was naturally acting the '[red-face](#)' to perfection, and with this ingenious and timely teamwork with Zhou Weiqing... in moments they had both encircled the others in their trap. Currently, all they had done was to construct a scenario where they were perfectly justified to ask for such a request.

"No way!" Without thought, Gu Yingbing retorted. Actually, with his status as the Lion Prince, under such a scene with all his elders and powerhouses here, he would never have spoke out so rashly. However, since it was to do with Tian'er, his heart was already in disorder, especially with Zhou Weiqing right here. No matter how much Gu Yingbing did not wish to accept it, he knew that the man Tian'er truly loved was this Zhou Weiqing. Furthermore, not only did Gu Yingbing love Tian'er deeply, their marriage was also a huge affect on his future. If he could not marry Tian'er, who knew if his master would actually pass down the position of Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord to him.

Zhou Weiqing continued looking at Xue AoTian, as if he had not heard Gu Yingbing at all.

At this point, the Lion King Gu Site could no longer resist. Turning to Xue AoTian, he said: "Mountain Lord, this pair of master and disciple are clearly here just to cause trouble." His expression was even uglier than his son. However, though he might be speaking as such to Xue AoTian, he dared not overdo it. After all, Long Shiya's earlier threats had definitely taken effect. As the Emperor of the WanShou Empire, he dared not risk his tribe and Empire.

Xue AoTian's eyes grew cold. As the top powerhouse in the world today, not only was his talent exceptional, his intelligence and understanding definitely had to be top notch as well. The act between Fatty Long and Zhou Little Fatty, how could he not see through it? The truth was likely that all the reckoning was false, and their true goal was his daughter. Yet, at this point, the two of them had reason on their side, and it was not so easy to handle it.

“Zhou Weiqing, my daughter has already been betrothed to Gu Yingbing... you should already know about it, and you are purposely using it as your compensation? What kind of position are you trying to put me in?”

Zhou Weiqing continued kneeling there, his gaze fixed upon Xue AoTian. Steadily and calmly, he said: “Senior, have you ever asked Tian'er whether she was willing? In a relationship between man and woman, the most important thing is love between the two. You only have one daughter, do you really want to see her suffering for life? Tian'er got Gu Yingbing to give me a letter that she wrote, and within she asked me to forget her, to give up on her. I know her too well. If she did not agree to write that letter, perhaps that previous time, the Lion Prince would have already killed me. Tian'er loves me, and she only loves me. We have already been through intimate relations.”

Literal Translation – basically acting as the ‘bad cop’ or ‘bad guy’

Chapter 173 ‘Your Father’ is here to demand a reckoning! (3)

“Originally, when Tian’er first left me, she had told me that if you did not agree to the relationship between us, she would threaten you with her death. I am sure that you, above anyone else, know full well how Tian’er’s character is like. Perhaps she might marry Gu Yingbing to give you face, but I am certain that she will never be his true wife. As a father, if you are willing to see your daughter suffer for the rest of her life, perhaps even to the extent of taking it herself... then I can only say that you are not a qualified father, almost not deserving to be one.”

Zhou Weiqing’s words were firm and resolute. In front of the top powerhouse in the world, Xue AoTian, he did not show any fear at all. As he spoke to his last words, his tone was even reproachful.

The Tiger King Xue Aoying could only stare at the side, his jaw agape. It had been years since he had seen, or even heard of, anyone daring to speak to his elder brother like this. This little fellow truly has guts indeed!

Xue AoTian’s face turned green, then white. Looking at Zhou Weiqing, the energy reverberations around his body fluctuated violently, as if he was on the verge of taking Zhou Weiqing’s life.

Long Shiya stood right beside his disciple. He did not dare be negligent at such a moment. Without a doubt, he was confident in escaping even if the three top powerhouses here surrounded and attacked him. However, he knew he did not have the ability to do so and bring Zhou Weiqing along as well.

That was to say... if Xue AoTian actually fell out with him; then Zhou Weiqing would forever be left here. Even though in Long Shiya and Zhou Weiqing’s plan, such a situation was highly unlikely to occur, but there was always that small possibility.

For Zhou Weiqing to actually dare to anger Xue AoTian like this, even Long Shiya had not expected it. In his heart, he couldn't help but give a big hidden thumbs up to Zhou Weiqing, but at the same time he also felt like breaking into a cold sweat for his precious disciple.

“Senior, Tian’er will only be truly happy with me, we are in love with each...”

“Enough!” At last, Xue AoTian interrupted Zhou Weiqing abruptly. Currently, the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord seemed to be in a rage, standing up suddenly from his seat.

Just the action of standing up alone did not seem much, but everyone in the room grew nervous at that. The one who felt it the most was naturally Zhou Weiqing, taking the brunt of the powerful and violent aura, causing his entire body to stagger back, almost falling down. Long Shiya instantly stepped in front of his disciple, while both the Tiger King Xue Aoying and Lion King Gu Site also stood up in succession. Of course, the two had very different expressions on their faces.

The Tiger King looked at his elder brother, his face showing signs of worry and anxiety. On the other hand, Gu Site’s eyes were filled with murderous intent. His only thought now was how to best leave Long Shiya here ‘permanently’, and not allow him to escape. “You all wait here.” All of a sudden, Xue AoTian said angrily. With a sweep of sleeve, his entire figure flashed and disappeared from the grand hall.

Zhou Weiqing stood up, looking at his shocked teacher. With a low tone, he said to Long Shiya: “Looks like we have a chance... Mountain Lord Xue does love Tian’er very much after all. He must have gone to speak with Tian’er about what I said earlier. Perhaps, he has also sensed something wrong with her, that perhaps her current circumstance is not far from what I described.”

With Long Shiya’s powerful Heavenly Energy surrounding them,

the master and disciple pair were not afraid of having their conversation heard by the others. Long Shiya nodded upon hearing that, saying: “Very good. In the end, being able to bring home the beauty, it will all depend on yourself.”

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: “I will definitely succeed.”

Gu Yingbing stood there, looking at Zhou Weiqing with a venomous glare. At this moment, he was filled with regret. He truly regretted not killing Zhou Weiqing at that time when he had the chance. During that time, he had two Heavenly King Stage powerhouses with him. If he had killed Zhou Weiqing then and burned all evidence, killing Shangguan Fei'er and Lin TianAo at the same time, who would know it was him? There would be no such trouble right now! Of course, that was also because he had never dreamed that Zhou Weiqing would suddenly gain a Master like Long Shiya. The notorious Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor... his own father had personally tested his cultivation just now. The strongest of the Heavenly Emperors... one could even call him the second strongest powerhouse in the entire world! With his threat there, his own Master would have to think twice about everything... would he actually still agree to let him marry Tian'er? No, the chances were dropping astronomically.

As Gu Yingbing thought up to that point, he immediately felt as if his heart was being burnt by a raging flame, almost to the point of physical pain. An intense jealousy overwhelmed him... Tian'er... she loved this man after all! But, no matter what, I will never give up on marrying Tian'er! Master must never leave her to him! I am Master's main disciple! Furthermore, this is an important and critical chance to bring the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger and Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion Tribes closer together... how could Master possibly change his mind about this important marriage alliance?

As he thought further, Gu Yingbing's expression finally turned better slightly, though the Lion King Gu Site's expression

remained cold and wary, and he seemed to be subtly speaking to the Tiger King Xue Aoying. A few lines of something, but Xue Aoying only shook his head slightly, as if rejecting whatever suggestion.

Without question, Long Shiya could easily guess what the Lion King was telling the Tiger King, likely trying to instigate the Tiger King to attack him. Of course, he was not too worried, after all he was extremely confident in his own cultivation and strength. More so, he knew that both Xue AoTian and Xue Aoying knew him well enough, and without Xue AoTian's word, Xue Aoying would never take action against him. Now, it would all depend on Xue AoTian.

The battle of wits in the grand hall aside, on the other side, Xue AoTian had already arrived at his daughter's room once more.

Tian'er was still sitting dazedly on her bed, as if she had never moved a muscle since he last saw her. Unlike the previous time, Xue AoTian did not walk directly to his daughter, instead standing at the room entrance, watching her silently.

Tian'er's eyes were void and empty. Those beautiful eyes did not seem to not seem to have any soul left in them. Watching his daughter, Xue AoTian suddenly felt as if his heart had been stabbed brutally.

Tian'er being unwilling to marry Gu Yingbing, how could he not know? Yet, Xue AoTian stubbornly believed that feelings and emotions could change as time passed. As long as Tian'er married Gu Yingbing, and the two spent more time together, she would eventually grow to love him. Furthermore, their marriage could also determine the future of the Heavenly Snow Mountain and the WanShou Empire. No matter how much he loved his daughter, he still had to think about the picture of his land and subjects.

The facts had also proven itself, that his daughter was also willing to follow his orders for the big picture, finally agreeing to the marriage. Yet, Zhou Weiqing's words had also stabbed deeply

into Xue AoTian's heart. The deepest resonance was that Tian'er was his only daughter!

Indeed! He only had a single child... a single daughter! From young, he had always loved Tian'er so much. Yet, due to his cultivation, how much time had he actually managed to spend with her?

Now, his daughter had finally grown up... yet for his own reasons, he was about to force her to marry someone she did not love. In that instant, Xue AoTian felt deeply uncomfortable in his heart.

Especially when he saw his daughter's empty eyes... that was a heavier blow than any words or thoughts.

Taking a deep breath, Xue AoTian steeled himself before walking slowly to his daughter. Sensing someone entering the room, Tian'er finally lifted her head subconsciously.

"Father." Tian'er gave a forced smile.

Originally confident that Tian'er would eventually comply to everything he imagined, only now did Xue AoTian realise how much bitterness there was in her smile, how forced it look. Once again, he felt his heart twist in pain. "Tian'er, is it that you truly do not want to marry Yingbing?"

"Ahh?" Tian'er gave a startled cry, but she quickly lowered her head, shaking it as she said: "No! Of course not! I am willing to marry Big Bro Gu."

"Really? But... just a few moments ago, someone told me that I am not qualified to be a father... not qualified to be your father... because I am forcing you to marry someone you do not love. In fact, it is possible that after your marriage, you will leave me forever... permanently... is that true?"

Xue AoTian did not beat around the bush any longer, instead asking the question that was burning right in the forefront of his

mind.

“What?” Xue AoTian’s words was like a bolt of lightning in Tian’er’s ears. Her entire body trembled as she stared at her father, unable to speak at all.

Xue AoTian’s shock in his heart was no less than his daughter. From her eyes, he could clearly sense that Zhou Weiqing’s words were truly accurate. It was likely that Tian’er would complete the marriage to Gu Yingbing, to bring about the alliance between the tribes, before ending her own life.

As a father, his understanding for his daughter was far less than a young man who had only known his daughter for over a year. In this moment, besides anger and indignation, the greatest feeling in his heart was guilt. What a close call! His daughter could have left him forever due to his own actions!

Thinking up to that point, Xue AoTian’s heart was throbbing in pain.

“Who... who said something like that...” Tian’er’s voice was trembling as much as her body, her eyes filled with disbelief. She had not actually noticed that someone would actually dare to speak to her father like this, but was fully shocked by the fact that someone had actually read her thoughts so completely.

Xue AoTian looked at his daughter, muttering to himself: “You would really abandon father like that?”

Tian’er said mournfully: “Originally, I have always lived happily, without a care in the world. Even when I originally ran away from home, it was more a rash, childish piquish thing to do, more to get back against Father for not asking me before formalizing the betrothal between Big Bro Gu and myself. It is not like I dislike Big Bro Gu... in fact if everything had advanced slowly and gradually, perhaps everything would have proceeded as you planned. However, when I ran away from home, I met him... these few years of being together, I lost my heart to him. Perhaps, he may

not be the best, the most talented of all, but Tian'er's heart can no longer hold anyone else but him. Father, don't you know my character? If I have not truly given my whole heart to him, how could I possibly give myself to him? Father, don't you love Tian'er anymore?"

As she spoke up to that point, she was already sobbing hard.

Xue AoTian abruptly raised his arms, pulling his daughter into a tight hug; as if he did not do so, she would disappear from his eyes. As the top powerhouse in the world, with the grand cultivation level of Heavenly God Tier... Yet at this very moment, his heart was filled with an emotion that he had not felt in a long time... sheer and utter fear... even terror. In that instant, Xue AoTian realised that compared to his daughter, everything else did not seem important anymore.

Chapter 174 To be confirmed (1)

Being hugged so abruptly and almost roughly by her father, Tian'er was startled momentarily. Next, the tears fell from her eyes, her arms encircling her father's waist in a return hug. In that moment, she felt as if that father who loved her most had finally returned.

"Please don't leave daddy, never ever... do you hear me?" Xue AoTian said tyrannically, but his voice was clearly trembling.

Tian'er bit her lower lip before she finally said softly: "I'm sorry... Father, but if you do not wish to bet on that thirty percent chance of the Resurrection Skill working on me, then... then... please do not let me marry Big Bro Gu. I... I cannot let down Little Fatty."

Xue AoTian let go of his daughter. "You have really set your resolve?"

Tian'er smiled faintly and said: "Father, I just thought it through and finally came to a decision. Even if you really want to kill Little Fatty because of this, I will no longer change my mind. I am not even willing to go through that marriage with Big Bro Gu anymore. If you both kill Little Fatty, then I will just have to reunite with him down below." Her tone was soft, mild, but the resolution in them was clear.

Looking once more at his daughter, Xue AoTian's eyes held a complicated look. After a short moment, he finally gave a sigh. "A grown girl cannot be kept at home indeed! You have really made this decision?"

Tian'er did not hesitate to nod her head.

"Very well, come with me then. However, you have to listen to everything that I say, and do as I instruct. Otherwise, I might change my mind again." As he said that, Xue AoTian pulled his

daughter's hand, pulling her outside.

...

Back within the Heavenly Snow Castle Grand Hall.

The Master Disciple pair of Long Shiya and the Father Son pair of the Lion King might be at loggerheads, with the smell of gunpowder strong within, but both sides at least controlled themselves. The reason the Lion King controlled himself was naturally because of the gap between himself and the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor, while Long Shiya's control was naturally due to their goal in coming here, and he did not want to risk that just to satisfy himself momentarily.

At last, in a flash of bright light, Xue AoTian reappeared in the Grand Hall. However, when the members within the hall saw his face, they were secretly surprised.

Xue AoTian's face could truly be described with the expression 'the turbulent wind precedes the coming torrential storms', dark and clouded as if he was about to explode at any moment. Furthermore, his gaze was glaring right at Zhou Weiqing; that ferocious glare causing even Long Shiya to be surprised and nervous.

Xue AoTian swept his gaze between Zhou Weiqing, Gu Yingbing, then to Long Shiya and Gu Site.

"Bro Long, you have brought your disciple all the way up here to my Heavenly Snow Mountain, but don't think that I cannot see your true reasons with my own eyes. Still, it is true that Yingbing was the one who harmed your disciple first, so you have reason on your side. Fine, I will give you that reckoning you requested... a chance..."

"Regarding this Zhou Weiqing and my Tian'er, I have already learned about what happened between them. However, as Bro Long you should know, our WanShou Empire has always believed

in ‘Might is Right’. Today, I will give your disciple a chance. With myself as the examiner, he will have to contest against Yingbing in a test. If he can defeat Yingbing, I will annul the betrothal between Yingbing and Tian’er. On the other hand, if he fails, I ask that Bro Long do not continue causing trouble, and leave my Heavenly Snow Mountain along with your disciple. Of course, I have already given you face in this matter, and if Bro Long still wants to continue causing trouble to my WanShou Empire after that, don’t think I will be afraid. I will not hesitate to leave the Heavenly Snow Mountain to hunt you down, no matter what it takes.”

The Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord’s overbearing presence was indeed terrifying, his eyes flashing with thick killing intent. On the surface, he seemed to be totally against Long Shiya and Zhou Weiqing, this master disciple pair who had come to cause them trouble.

The Tiger King Xue Aoying’s eyes flashed with respect, but also a slight disappointment.

Naturally, the respect was due to the fact that it was without question that this was the best method of dealing with this entire matter; both sides given sufficient face and with a proper method of resolution. Furthermore, no matter how one examined this resolution, it was of utmost benefit to Gu Yingbing, who was almost about to reach the nine-Jeweled cultivation level! Zhou Weiqing’s cultivation level was undoubtedly far from Gu Yingbing, and from the Tiger King’s perspective, no matter what, Gu Yingbing was at a vast advantage. As for the disappointment, it because he had never wanted the Lion Tribe to gain from this and had hoped Long Shiya’s current presence would be the chance to turn things around.

If even the Tiger King thought this way, naturally the Lion King also thought the same way. Naturally, Gu Yingbing breathed a subtle sigh of relief. He had fought against Zhou Weiqing just a few months ago, crushing him then, and he was absolutely confident in

defeating him again. Furthermore, Gu Yingbing knew his Master's character very well; once Xue AoTian had spoken out a promise, he would never change it.

Long Shiya's brow furrowed tightly, and he said solemnly: "Old Monster Xue, please pay attention to one detail – your disciple is already over thirty years old, and my disciple is not even twenty years old yet. Fighting each other, can that even be fair? Might is right, that is a principle I adhere to as well, and indeed only one with outstanding talent and power can have the right to be the son in law of an old monster like you. However, such a competition still needs to be fair."

Xue AoTian said coldly: "Bro Long, hold your horses. Since I have already brought up such a competition or examination method, I will naturally be fair. This fight between Yingbing and your disciple, I plan to have it be a total of three different stages."

A thought struck Long Shiya, and in that moment, he suddenly realised that when Xue AoTian was looking at him, he seemed to be giving a strange meaningful look to him. Although it was very subtle, with the change almost imperceptible, but in terms of everyone in the grand hall, only his own and Xue AoTian's spiritual power was the greatest. This Old Monster Xue... was he signalling something to him?

Just like how Xue AoTian respected Long Shiya, in truth Long Shiya was also extremely respectful of Xue AoTian. At their level, Xue AoTian did not need to pretend or act in front of him, and in that glance, Long Shiya seemed to understand something.

In a deep, solemn voice, Xue AoTian continued: "Although I am giving him the chance, Yingbing was after all originally going to be my son in law already. As such, I will be upfront about this – for the three competitions, my rules will naturally be favouring Yingbing slightly. If Zhou Weiqing wants to be my son in law, it will not be an easy task... he will have to prove himself."

By directly speaking out that the rules would be favouring Gu Yingbing before the competitions even started, Xue AoTian was already being completely open and aboveboard. Although Long Shiya furrowed his brow at that, he did not retort. After all, he was the one who brought Zhou Weiqing up here to cause trouble. Just in terms of Tian'er's marriage, they did not actually have a very high moral ground in a traditional way.

Xue AoTian said: "The first examination – comparing the power and influence of their auras."

"Aura?" Long Shiya looked at Xue AoTian with surprise.

Xue AoTian nodded his head and said: "In our WanShou Empire, we rule over thousands and millions of Heavenly Beasts. In front of Heavenly Beasts, bloodline and aura is the most important. In the world today, in front of myself, no Heavenly Beast below the Heavenly God Tier would even be able to come up with the notion of fighting or resisting against me. That is the power of aura. I will personally choose ten Heavenly Beasts and seal them. After which, both Yingbing and Zhou Weiqing will use their own aura against these beasts. If the Heavenly Beast in question falls to their feet, it is considered a success. Whichever of the two succeeds the most will be considered the victor of this round.

At this point, Xue AoTian paused and looked to Long Shiya before saying: "Bro Long, let me say this outright first. Though the rules favour Yingbing, but during the actual competition, I will definitely be fair and just. However, as I mentioned, since Yingbing is the original betrothed of Tian'er, for your disciple to make me annul this marriage, he must defeat Yingbing in ALL three tasks, to prove that he is far superior to Yingbing... only then will he be considered the overall victor. If he loses any one of the competitions, then Yingbing will be the victor."

"Old Monster Xue, that is just far too unfair." Long Shiya immediately said, much discontent apparent in his voice.

As for the Lion King Gu Site and Lion Prince Gu Yingbing, both couldn't help but grin in glee. They had no reason at all to be opposed to Xue AoTian being the judge of this huge competitive 'bet'. From all appearances, Xue AoTian was leaning heavily to their side, and this so-called bet was just to prevent Long Shiya from having any excuse.

Just from the first test alone, Gu Yingbing felt that he could never lose. No matter any Heavenly Jewel Master, their aura was extremely dependent on their own power and cultivation level. More importantly, against Heavenly Beasts, not only was aura important, bloodline was as well, and it was without a doubt that Gu Yingbing held the purest of the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion bloodline, one of the strongest bloodlines in the entire Mainland. In his mind, with his own higher cultivation level and the addition of his own bloodline, these two advantages would add up to give him an absolute advantage, and he could not imagine how he could possibly lose to Zhou Weiqing. He was confident that their competition would not even reach the other two.

Xue AoTian looked at Long Shiya coldly and said: "Bro Long, you brought your disciple up here to break up my daughter's marriage, is that fair to my Heavenly Snow Mountain? If you are not happy with the bet I have proposed, you can choose not to accept it and leave now. I, Xue AoTian might respect you, but I am not afraid of you. If you want to push me, this old man can spend the rest of my life following you around forever, until one of us dies."

Long Shiya's expression changed several times in succession, his eyes filled with rage, so much so that it was as if fire was spitting out of them. Still, he seemed to be silenced by Xue AoTian's words, not able to retort at all.

In that moment, his breathing grew ragged.

At the side, the Tiger King had been watching on, and he gave a silent sigh inside. From the current scenario, it looked like there would be no chance to give the Lion Tribe a sneaky side blow.

What a shame...

As for the Lion King Gu Site, he was naturally elated and proud, his chest puffed up airily.

Alas, both of them did not know that the current Long Shiya was howling with laughter inside, happy as could be. Heh heh, who said that Little Fatty and mine's acting is top notch, in terms of acting skills, this Old Monster Xue is actually far beyond the two of us!

Earlier, when Xue AoTian had said all that, he had once again given Long Shiya an eye signal. This time, Long Shiya was truly confident that Xue AoTian had something else up his sleeve. In fact, he guessed that this sudden change in Xue AoTian was probably due to what Little Fatty had told him... and his own verification with his daughter.

In truth, in coming up the Heavenly Snow Mountain today, Long Shiya did not hold any confidence at all. After all, he was all alone in bringing Zhou Weiqing here, and he did not have any other backup at all. Long Shiya was also afraid that Xue AoTian might throw caution to the wind and just go crazy. If that truly happened, Long Shiya knew that while he was still confident in escaping with his life, he would not be able to do so with Zhou Weiqing. That would mean his precious disciple would forever remain in the Heavenly Snow Mountain... his life lost for nothing.

With regards to Zhou Weiqing, Long Shiya could now be said to look to him as one of the most important, if not the most, person in his life. In Long Shiya's entire life, he had spent all of it immersed in cultivation and training. Now that he was already more than a hundred years old, he no longer had any kin or relations alive. Ever since he had accepted Zhou Weiqing as his disciple, he had grown to like this precious disciple more and more, to the point he considered him kin; not just because he also had six Elemental Jewels like himself, but more because of his character.

In this matter, if it were up to Long Shiya's own thinking, he would not have brought Zhou Weiqing up to the Heavenly Snow Mountain, as the odds were not favourable enough. Putting Zhou Weiqing's current power level aside, it was impossible for any two people to go up against the Heavenly Snow Mountain by themselves. Even for Long Shiya, it was impossible to have any confidence in their endeavour. After all, who could truly grasp the mind and thoughts of the man in front of them... the top powerhouse in the world today, Xue AoTian?!

Chapter 174 To be confirmed (2)

However, despite his reservations, Long Shiya still brought his disciple here. Although he had never married, he could still understand Zhou Weiqing's thinking. As a man, if he could not even protect his own woman, then it would undoubtedly leave an unforgettable shadow in his heart and mind. If that really happened, perhaps it would cause trouble in the future if he met any cultivation bottlenecks, possibly preventing him from breaking through in future. This was not something that Long Shiya wanted to see. Furthermore, in terms of feelings, he did not want to see Zhou Weiqing suffer as well.

Regarding Zhou Weiqing's Empire's destruction and lost family, Long Shiya could stand aside and not give full assistance... that was mainly to put him through the hard school of adversity, to allow him to grow through the experience. However, in this current matter, if Long Shiya did not come forward, it would be impossible for Zhou Weiqing to actually come up the Heavenly Snow Mountain, let alone solve anything. As such, Long Shiya had come forward without hesitation.

Of course, there was one other reason.

Long Shiya's lifelong greatest goal had always been to become the strongest in the world; and to do that he had to defeat Xue AoTian. However, he knew that in this life it was unlikely he would have such a chance any longer, as he was unable to breakthrough to the Heavenly God Stage after so many years. As such, he had placed all his hopes on his precious new disciple. Of course, now there was a chance of 'defeating' Xue AoTian within his lifetime... if Zhou Weiqing could actually marry Xue AoTian's daughter, and bring her back with him, it could be said that it would be a victory of sorts over Xue AoTian. Although this was not exactly a victory of might, but Long Shiya would still feel extremely happy. As such, no matter from which angle, he would do as he promised and bring

Zhou Weiqing up the Heavenly Snow Mountain, even if the chance of success was barely ten to twenty percent.

After they arrived, the series of actions that both Long Shiya and Zhou Weiqing had gone through were fully designed towards constructing an atmosphere that was of great advantage to them. From the current situation, Long Shiya knew that Little Fatty's chance of success had definitely risen far beyond their own expectations. At least, it was clear that Xue AoTian's inner feelings were no longer against Zhou Weiqing, perhaps even partial towards him!

Of course, this was just Long Shiya's own estimation, and he still did not know what was about to happen in the near future. Would he still be worried about the competition rules of this first test that Xue AoTian had proposed? If one would ask Long Shiya that question, his reply would only be a cold laugh.

Putting on a vexed and annoyed look, Long Shiya suddenly grit his teeth and said angrily towards Xue AoTian: "Fine. Old Monster Xue, you are indeed ruthless. I accept those conditions. However, you better keep your word. If my disciple wins all three of those tests, none of you are allowed to prevent him from bringing your daughter away."

Xue AoTian gave Long Shiya a dismissive glance and a cold humph before turning to the Lion King Gu Site. "Bro Gu, what do you think?"

Gu Site laughed heartily and said grandly: "I will follow your lead, Mountain Lord." In his eyes, his son could not possibly lose with such favourable terms. Just in terms of bloodline, their Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion bloodline might lose out to the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger bloodline by a narrow hair, but it was already at the top tier in the entire continent. How could he possibly lose to a mere human disciple of Long Shiya? Furthermore, he also had the advantage of cultivation level. With his own Heavenly Emperor cultivation level, he could easily tell

that Zhou Weiqing was only at the six-Jeweled stage. Although a youth of lesser than twenty years reaching the six-Jeweled stage was an astonishing feat, it would not change the fact that he still had not grown to his full potential yet, and was still much lower than his son.

Xue AoTian nodded and said: “In that case, this old man will be the judge of this competition, along with Xue Aoying. We will ensure absolute fairness in the actual competition. Alright, both you young men can start preparing yourselves. I will personally select the Heavenly Beasts for this first competition.”

“Old Monster Xue, wait a moment.” Long Shiya said.

Xue AoTian turned to him questioningly.

Long Shiya continued: “Old Monster Xue, you said there are three competitions. What are the other two?”

Xue AoTian gave a cold laugh and said: “Wait until your disciple actually wins the first round before we talk. If he loses the first round, what is the point of talking about the second or third round now?” After saying that, he turned and walked off, not even giving Long Shiya the chance to retort. At least from an outward appearance, Xue AoTian was totally on the side of Gu Site and Gu Yingbing. That was also a reasonable assumption, as the WanShou Empire should technically be fighting on the same side.

However, at this point, the Tiger King’s eyes flashed with a hint of surprise. The Tiger King Xue Aoying had grown up from a young age together with this big brother of his. Xue AoTian was ten years older than him, and had always taken care of him all the way. To Xue Aoying, Xue AoTian was not just a big brother, almost even like a father figure. Having grown up together, Xue Aoying was knew his big brother extremely well.

Under any normal circumstance, especially in front of outsiders, Xue AoTian would usually not act so domineering. The terms of this competition just seemed way too unfair, and so unlike his big

brother's character! Xue Aoying's heart was puzzled, but just a little. After all, to him, no matter who won this competition, it did not really affect him at all. He was just a relatively indifferent bystander who would just watch the show on the sidelines.

Leading Zhou Weiqing along, Long Shiya went to the side to sit down. With a simple thought, powerful Heavenly Dao Energy sprang forth to surround both of them in a protective barrier, preventing them from being heard.

“Little Fatty, how sure are you of winning this first round?” Long Shiya asked solemnly.

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly and said: “Master, I can say with confidence that this round is a guaranteed victory for myself.”

“Ohh?” Long Shiya looked at his precious disciple with an amused look, his lip curling in the shadow of a smile. “Pride comes before a fall, and it is a dangerous vice for a Heavenly Jewel Master to have.”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “Master, you should know how important this competition is to me, I would not want to lose due to overconfidence as well. All that is in my mind now is how I can win. Master, I am sure that you can tell as well... the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord does not seem to actually hold much enmity towards me. Furthermore... this first test he has brought up is extremely strange!”

It was Long Shiya's turn to be surprised. The reason why he could judge that about Xue AoTian was because of the meaningful glance that he had given him. Yet, Long Shiya was extremely sure that he was the only one who could have seen that, with how Xue AoTian did it, even the Lion King and Tiger King, powerhouses that they were, had not detected anything amiss. As such, Zhou Weiqing could not possibly have seen it as well. Yet, he was still able to make such a judgement call. From that alone, one could tell how powerful his disciple's observation skills and analysis was.

“Master, in this matter, I am certain that my bloodline has a vast advantage. If I have not guessed wrongly, the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord Xue must have changed his mind after speaking to Tian’er, and his heart has softened. Although he might not have actually fully approved of me yet, in bringing up such a test, he is definitely giving me a chance. This is a true test for me in his eyes.” Zhou Weiqing said confidently.

Long Shiya said passively: “In doing anything, there is always a chance. The only difference is how great the chance is. Since you have already chosen to come here, then you must put your all, go to all lengths to win. At the same time, you must not look down on the bloodline of their Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion tribe. After all, the power of bloodlines will be influenced by cultivation level, and the cultivation level gap between you and Gu Yingbing is not inconsiderable. I never expected that little brat to have broken through to the nine-Jeweled stage. So, you better be careful. Don’t think of anything else, just focus on gaining this first victory, and it will also give us an edge for momentum and presence, increasing our overall chances of victory. Furthermore, it looks like the Tiger King is not on good terms with the Lion King, see if you can make use of that point in any way.”

Zhou Weiqing nodded. He was not one to be careless, especially when this concerned both his own and Tian’er’s future! This was his only chance!

At once, Zhou Weiqing sat down at the side in a meditation position, closing his eyes as he began cultivating, trying to ensure that his Heavenly Energy was at his peak before the competition. Although technically his Heavenly Energy would normally be at the peak even if he didn’t do that, due to his Immortal Deity Technique, he would not waste any chance to improve his spiritual energy, even just a little.

Looking at Zhou Weiqing’s appearance, in Gu Yingbing’s eyes that translated to severe lack of confidence. He would not follow

suit. In his eyes, this so-called competition or test was merely a formality, something his Master had come up with to shut Long Shiya's mouth. After this first round, this Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor and his lowly disciple would have to slink off dejectedly.

At the same time, the Lion King Gu Site was also not worried for his son. Gu Yingbing could be said to be Gu Site's greatest pride. He was extremely clear that despite the sheer strength and power of the WanShou Empire, which was far superior to any individual human Empire, but with the existence of the other Great Saint Lands, they would not be able to annex all the human Empires. No matter how strong the Heavenly Snow Mountain was, they would not be able to take on the other four Great Saint Lands, or even three, ignoring the Heavenly Demon Sect.

If not for the shared counter restraints of the five Great Saint Lands, perhaps the war between the WanShou Empire and the human Empires could have already destroyed the entire mainland.

Yet, the Lion King Gu Site still had his own ambitions. On all outward appearances, he seemed to be a coarse or negligent person, but he was actually a very careful and detailed person. In his lifetime, he might not be able to accomplish all his goals, but that did not mean his son would not be able to do so in the future. As long as Gu Yingbing was able to gain the position of the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord, then anything might be possible! At least, the first step was for the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion Tribe to gain control of the entire Heavenly Snow Mountain, and thus true control of the WanShou Empire.

All these years, although the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tigers ruled the Heavenly Snow Mountain, but in the WanShou Empire, the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lions had also controlled the Royal Family for so many years. If Gu Yingbing inherited the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord position, although the Royal Family would change to the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tigers, but who would truly control the power? More importantly, if one day Xue AoTian was

no longer with them, then... would there be a need for the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tigers any more?

Of course, these were all just possibilities in the future. The most important thing now was to solidify his son's position in the Heavenly Snow Mountain. This Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor might cause the Lion King Gu Site to be wary, but it was just keeping on his guard. After all, Long Shiya was just alone. This was a huge advantage of his, but also a great disadvantage. On the larger scale of matters, or the big picture, just his lone existence would not be able to influence things too much, no matter his power. Furthermore, in this matter, it seemed clear that Xue AoTian was fully on their side. This Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor was just a joke in his eyes.

...

Meanwhile, Xue AoTian had left the Grand Hall for quite some time, much longer than the group had anticipated.

Chapter 174 Three Examinations Choosing Son-in-Law (3)

Zhou Weiqing continued sitting there cultivating. The amount of time did not affect him at all, as he was fully immersed in his cultivation, and time seemed to breeze past. On the other hand, Gu Yingbing's mindset was a little unstable. Although his cultivation level was very high, there was a severe shade in his heart regarding Zhou Weiqing. Naturally, that was because of Tian'er. The one that she truly loved was this mere human, not himself. Whenever he thought of this, Gu Yingbing's heart was filled with pain and rage. He truly itched to tear Zhou Weiqing into shreds, only then would it assuage the sheer rage in his heart.

At this moment, all Gu Yingbing could think of was to defeat Zhou Weiqing as quickly as possible; to chase him away and allow him to marry Tian'er as quickly as possible. As long as all of this ended, he could have Tian'er to himself. It was more important to marry her and be intimate with her first, he could slowly cultivate her love for him over time.

Looking at Zhou Weiqing, he felt as if that fellow was looking more and more disagreeable to the eye by the second. He could only hope that this torturous wait would finally be over.

After more than two hours of waiting, Xue AoTian finally reappeared in the Grand Hall. As he did so, his previously overcast expression had vanished, resuming his usual impassive face; as if the previous events had not happened.

“Lion King, Bro Long, I have already prepared all the Heavenly Beasts for the first competition. Come, lets go.” As he said that, he headed back out once more towards the door.

Long Shiya quickly roused Zhou Weiqing, while the Lion King Gu Site led his son in following. As for the Tiger King Xue Aoying, he was the first to follow behind his brother, as the entire group

headed towards the depths of the Heavenly Snow Castle.

Xue AoTian walked at the head of the group, but he moved slowly. From the back, none of the others could see his face or expression, but even as he moved at that stately speed in front, this top powerhouse of the world gave them all a feeling as he could not be overtaken.

Looking at Xue AoTian from behind, Long Shiya's face changed slightly. He knew that in this life, he would truly never be able to pass this great mountain or obstacle that was Xue AoTian. All of his hopes could only fall upon his precious disciple. No matter how powerful a Heavenly Emperor was, in the end he was still restricted at the Heavenly Emperor stage.

...

The group walked for almost fifteen minutes, twisting and turning throughout the castle before they finally reached a large room. Within the sides of the room, there were stairs headed down, and Xue AoTian continued leading the group down. After almost three hundred yards down the spiralling stairs, at last they reached a strange holed out crypt.

This crypt did not have obvious signs of being man made, almost as if it was a naturally formed cave of sorts, filled with glowing brilliant ice crystals around, as well as snowy white Heavenly Cores studding the ceiling, providing light illuminating the entire area in a strangely dazzling yet warped sensation. As soon as the group entered, it felt as if they had entered some strange fantasy world. Without question, this was part of the Heavenly Snow Mountain, and one that was deep within the heart of it. It was also one of the most important sacred areas of the Heavenly Snow Mountain. Normally, if there were no critical issues or unique circumstances, no one was allowed to enter this place, let alone outsiders like Long Shiya and Zhou Weiqing. Even the Lion King Gu Site had never actually entered this area before.

On the other hand, Gu Yingbing was relatively familiar with this place. It was the zone where the Heavenly Snow Mountain kept and raised Heavenly Beasts.

The Heavenly Snow Mountain was very different from other Great Saint Lands. For the other Great Saint Lands, when they captured Heavenly Beasts, they would Seal and imprison them in order to let their Jewel Masters Skill Store from them. Of course, the Heavenly Snow Mountain was very different. The Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger and Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion were in a sense also Heavenly Beasts, top level Heavenly Beasts on the same rank as Dragons. As such, their own presence was of great deterrence and awe to any Heavenly Beasts. To be able to stay in the Heavenly Snow Mountain was considered a great honour, utmost honour, to any Heavenly Beast. As such, these Heavenly Beasts here could only be described as raised or cultivated, not caught or imprisoned.

Of course, to be able to stay in the Heavenly Snow Mountain, most of these Heavenly Beasts were of the Ice Attribute. Only then would they be able to survive in the cruel icy conditions of the peak.

One should not think that the depths of the Heavenly Snow Mountain would be warmer than the outer regions. On the contrary, the depths were much colder.

Only the direct bloodline of the Heavenly Snow Mountain would know that deep in the heart of the mountain there lay an unimaginably huge slab of Ice Jade. This Ice Jade could not possibly be harvested out, not even a Heavenly God Tier powerhouse could. This was the true reason why the Heavenly Snow Mountain maintained such a low temperature even right in the middle of the warm climate of the Ten Thousand Beast Heavens.

One of the main reasons why the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tigers had always suppressed the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lions was

also due to this. The Elemental Attributes of the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tigers were Divine, Spirit and Water, while the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lions were that of Divine, Spirit and Fire. There was normally no difference in power between Water and Fire Attribute, but in the Heavenly Snow Mountain... that difference was clear.

The immense Ice Jade Slab had an impressive supplementary assistance to cultivation of ice and water Attributes. This was also a huge reason why Xue AoTian could actually reach the Heavenly God Tier stage. His own talents were undoubtedly outstanding, but it did not guarantee he could actually reach such a stage. However, with the aid of that massive Ice Jade Slab, his cultivation speed was fast enough to reach the Heavenly King Stage before the age of thirty, slowly allowing him to step by step climb up the paths towards the Heavenly God Tier.

...

The surrounding temperature continued dropping as the group moved along. Besides Xue AoTian, all the remaining members found that a thin layer mist had formed around their bodies.

Xue AoTian continued walking down the icy path, his slow measured strides seeming so casual like that of an ordinary human. As for the Lion King and Prince, the mist around them was glowing with a faint red, while that around Long Shiya was a six-coloured glow. After all, Long Shiya had the Water Attribute as well, and this environment was of no effect to him. In truth, when one reached the Heavenly Emperor Stage, it was difficult for external environment to affect them.

As for Zhou Weiqing, the mist surrounding him was extremely strange, grey in colour, surprising the rest of the party. In fact, he seemed to be totally fine, in an even more relaxed state than Gu Yingbing.

Although Zhou Weiqing did not have the Fire or Water

Attributes, one should never forget what his bloodline contained. The Solidified Dragon Spirit had given him immunity to fire, but at the same time it had also strengthened his resistance to cold far beyond that of any ordinary person. Although the current temperature was at a terrifying low, he still did not feel anything. In truth, he himself was puzzled about the grey mist around his body. Strangely, he seemed to sense an evil aura about the icy depths, drawing his own Demonic Attribute, causing it to automatically come out of his body and surround him. In such a situation, his own cultivation level was actually aided. At least for his Demonic Attribute, his power levels was increased by at least thirty percent.

As for the Tiger King Xue Aoying, a blue mist surrounded his body. Although he was at the front of the party, his senses were extended out, continuously keeping watch over Zhou Weiqing. Xue Aoying had watched Tian'er grow up, and he knew this niece of his too well. For a man to draw the eye of his proud niece, how could he be ordinary? At least, the current changes around Zhou Weiqing's body gave him a strange sensation, almost startling even, and he began to have some doubts about his original judgement on this entire competition.

At long last, under the lead of Xue AoTian, the entire group reached a wide space, almost a thousand square metres, with a height of more than thirty metres. This was possibly the biggest piece of open space in this icy caverns. At the side of the of this open cave, there was a dark hole, an entrance to another pitch black cave. It seemed very deep and quiet, but all of them could sense several powerful auras deep within. Some cold, some ferocious, some frenzied. Without question, those were the Heavenly Beasts Xue AoTian had referred to.

Xue AoTian said solemnly: "The first competition will soon begin. For the purpose of fairness, besides the last Heavenly Beast, I have prepared a pair of each of the first type of nine Heavenly

Beasts, with each single of the pair for each competitor. As long as you manage to succeed in overwhelming one, you can go on to the next one, until one of you actually fails.”

Long Shiya said: “What if both of them successfully overwhelms all ten of your chosen Heavenly Beasts?”

Xue AoTian said proudly: “That is impossible. The last Heavenly Beast... is my partner.”

Hearing his words, Long Shiya couldn't help but be caught by surprise: “You mean... it is...”

Xue AoTian nodded towards him and said: “Of course, otherwise, how can I truly test the true limit of these two? If they can successfully overwhelm the first nine Heavenly Beasts, then the final judgement will be determined by my old partner. I am sure my old partner will give a fair judgement, with its pride, it will never lie. Bro Long, what do you think?”

This time, Long Shiya did not hesitate to nod in agreement, saying: “I agree.” One could imagine, for a Heavenly Beast to gain the approval of the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya, even respect and even a slight fear, one could imagine how powerful this Heavenly Beast was. A power that even Long Shiya would not doubt its judgement.

Of course, Gu Site would not have any objections, and before Xue AoTian could ask him, he nodded in agreement as well.

Xue AoTian smiled faintly and said: “In that case, let us begin. Both of you, stand apart at a distance of thirty metres.”

Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing immediately walked forward. Their gazes met momentarily, and it was as if obvious sparks flew in the air from the tension.

Although Gu Yingbing had the Fire Attribute, and would be slightly affected by such intense cold of the environment, he was after all a member of the Heavenly Snow Mountain, and he had

already grown used to such an environment. Furthermore, as the saying goes, when the extreme meets, some good will come of it. In truth, when he cultivated his Fire Attribute Heavenly Energy in such intense icy conditions, it was also of some benefit.

At this moment, Gu Yingbing's eyes were filled with palpable hate, as if he wanted to devour Zhou Weiqing. On the other hand, Zhou Weiqing looked calm and peaceful, and that calm caused Gu Yingbing to rage even more. To him, Zhou Weiqing was dreaming that he could even beat him!

Abruptly, Xue AoTian clapped his hands.

With that, two huge figures slowly walked out from the side cave. When the two Heavenly Beasts appeared, both the Tiger and Lion King's expressions changed slightly. Although they knew that Xue AoTian would not choose some weak Heavenly Beasts, they had not expected that just the first one would be so powerful. After all, both Gu Yingbing and Zhou Weiqing had not reached the Heavenly King Stage, and such a test seemed just too tough.

Chapter 175 First Test. Power. (1)

The two huge Heavenly Beasts slowly lumbered all the way to the front of both youths before they stopped. They looked almost exactly the same, their body length about seven metres large, covered fully with a thick layer of icy blue scale armour. In contrast, their height was only one and a half metres tall, with their entire body down close to the ground, showing a stark difference between their heights and lengths.

Zhou Weiqing did not recognize such a Heavenly Beast, but it looked like a huge pangolin. Its eyes flashed with cold light, and from the aura, both were Upper Level Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts.

It had to be known – the task for both Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing was not to defeat these Heavenly Beasts, but to overwhelm them with their aura. To an ordinary Heavenly Jewel Master, perhaps they might be able to defeat a Heavenly Beast of equal level, maybe even higher level. However, in order to just use their aura to overwhelm a Heavenly Beast, they had to be at a much higher cultivation level! Yet, these two Heavenly Beasts in front of them... let alone Zhou Weiqing, even Gu Yingbing was at a lower cultivation level! After all, Gu Yingbing had only just reached the Nine Jeweled stage. This test would truly be highly dependent on both their bloodlines now!

The two huge Heavenly Beasts were extremely obedient, their eyes fixed upon the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord Xue AoTian, as if waiting for any instruction. From the looks of it, they were unbelievably well behaved and honest.

Xue AoTian said passively: “You both can start now. The time given is [five minutes](#). If in this time, any of you have not succeeded in overwhelming them, it counts as a failure.”

As Xue AoTian gave the command to start, Gu Yingbing was the first to act. Gold-red light sprang forth around his body, and his

eyes also turned a brilliant gold. At the same time, a powerful aura burst forth from him, the terrifying presence enveloping the huge pangolin-like Heavenly Beast in front of him.

The Heavenly Beast's body trembled slightly, and it seemed to hesitate slightly before it stepped back a few steps. Its four limbs buckled, and it fell to the ground, its body still trembling. Success... it had been overwhelmed.

The gold-red light slowly dimmed slightly, and Gu Yingbing put his hands behind his back in a relaxed position, as if nothing much had happened.

In a matter of a few short breaths, he had successfully overwhelmed a powerful Heavenly Beast living in the depths of the Heavenly Snow Mountain. One could imagine how powerful his aura was.

In truth, with Gu Yingbing's bloodline and current cultivation level, he normally would not be able to overwhelm such a powerful Heavenly Beast at such a speed. However, he had been in quite an unstable state for the past few hours, with all the hate towards Zhou Weiqing raging in him. This time, he wanted to give Zhou Weiqing a quick blow first, and he had burst forth with a massive power boost at the start, succeeding in an instance.

As soon as Gu Yingbing succeeded, he naturally turned his gaze to Zhou Weiqing at the side, waiting to see if he could actually succeed.

As he did so, his eyes naturally gleamed with an obvious disdain and contempt.

As compared to Gu Yingbing's dazzling performance and impressive presence and aura, Zhou Weiqing's performance was vastly different. He actually took a few steps forward right in front of the powerful Heavenly Beast, placing his palm on its huge forehead. The faint grey mist around his body started glowing more, swirling around, though his body did not have any other

obvious changes, nor did he seem to release his aura much at all.

Gu Yingbing gave a cold smirk. He had been waiting all this while for Zhou Weiqing to take action. This first Heavenly Beast was already at the Upper Level Zong Stage, and with that puny cultivation level that Zhou Weiqing had, how could he possibly overwhelm it? Still, why didn't he release that Demonic Change State of his? If he used that, at least he might have some chance of success.

Just as Gu Yingbing was getting slightly curious about that, all of a sudden, the huge pangolin Heavenly Beast in front of Zhou Weiqing collapsed onto the ground. It was success for Zhou Weiqing as well! Although its body was not shivering, it had actually collapsed cowering down on the ground.

Gu Yingbing subconsciously turned his gaze to Xue AoTian, and actually saw slight surprise on his teacher's face.

In a way, one could say that this form of overwhelming Heavenly Beasts was of no meaning in actual combat. After all, in any normal fight, Heavenly Beasts would never stand there obediently allowing you to slowly overwhelm it. At the same time, Heavenly Jewel Masters would usually not spend their Heavenly Energy on strengthening their aura and pressure. Despite all that, it was no question that it was a shockingly impressive feat for Zhou Weiqing, a mere six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master, to be able to successfully overwhelm a nine-Jeweled Heavenly Beast! More so, he had not taken much more time than Gu Yingbing did!

On the scene, there were six people in total. Of them, three were at the Heavenly Emperor Tier stage, and one Heavenly God Tier stage. In the entire world, that was already considered the apex of power. Yet, out of all four of these powerhouses, somehow none of them could figure out how Zhou Weiqing actually succeeded in overwhelming the Heavenly Beast. Indeed, not a single one. Even the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord Xue AoTian was not able to figure out. Only Long Shiya could vaguely guess how Zhou

Weiqing managed to do so, but he was still not sure.

Even though he seemed to have succeeded in overwhelming that nine-Jeweled stage Heavenly Beast, Zhou Weiqing still did not emit any powerful aura or presence. It was truly a strange sensation. How did he manage to pull that off?

In fact, when Zhou Weiqing placed his palm on the massive pangolin Heavenly Beast's forehead, his eyes had subtly turned a deep purple. However, his back was facing the group, and the others did not see it. As for the Heavenly Beast, in the next instant it felt a strange presence emitting from the palm, an aura filled with despair.

Icy cold, despair, darkness, gloom, deathly stillness.

Uncountable negative emotions swarmed into the pangolin's mind. A Zong Stage Heavenly Beast already had some intelligence, but it was no match for those Heavenly King Stage or higher Heavenly Beasts. As soon as it was filled with those powerful negative emotions, its only feeling was that it could only surrender or die.

In this first round, Zhou Weiqing had actually resorted to skillful trickery. He did not want to reveal his true powers too quickly. What he had done was actually very simple – hiding the Devour Skill of the Demonic Attribute within his palm, but not actually releasing it out. As such, none of the others could detect it, but the sensation and aura of it was still emitted through his palm to the Heavenly Beast's head, even if it had not taken action yet.

As his cultivation level had grown, and his body had gone through evolution twice, Zhou Weiqing's Devour Skill had also improved drastically. It could be said to be full of many different miraculous uses, and it truly lived up to its name as the strongest Skill of the entire Demonic Attributes, able to improve infinitely. More importantly, the Heavenly Beast had been given strict instructions not to fight back, and his strategy of using the hidden

Devour Skill had been a straightforward, yet miraculously effective one.

As soon as Zhou Weiqing completed overwhelming the Heavenly Beast in front of him, he did not even look at Gu Yingbing. Instead, he took a few steps back, standing there in a calm and relaxed position.

When the two Heavenly Beasts stood up once more, the one that faced Gu Yingbing did not have much change, just a hint of fear in its eyes. However, the one which faced Zhou Weiqing had its head held down low, not even daring to look at Zhou Weiqing. It was ingrained into its mind that even if it just looked at Zhou Weiqing, he would Devour it totally.

The term used here is 一炷香, or time for one incense stick to burn. From my research, I believe in the old days it's their reference for 5 mins

Chapter 175 First Test. Power. (2)

Xue AoTian waved his hands, and immediately the two Heavenly Beasts slunk back to the cave from which they had come from, dejected and with their tails between their legs.

Xue AoTian continued passively, not giving any comments on the duo's performance. "Second one, prepare yourselves."

None of them detected how the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord managed to do so, but from within the depths of the dark cave, the next two Heavenly Beasts appeared. However, as compared to the large lumbering pair previously, these two were much smaller and more agile. They were extremely familiar to Zhou Weiqing, a pair of Silver Emperors.

The two small figures flashed in midair, encircling around Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing's heads respectively.

This pair of Silver Emperors were still young, and their cultivation level was also at the Upper Level Zong Stage, just like Zhou Weiqing's old pet Little Red Bean.

Thinking about Little Red Bean, Zhou Weiqing felt his heart wrench suddenly. Previously, Little Red Bean had been killed while protecting him from Gu Yingbing, and even up until now, he still remembered that scene clearly, as well as the heartache it brought him. Looking at the two Silver Emperors encircling them, Zhou Weiqing's calm finally broke, and he glanced towards Gu Yingbing.

As if sensing Zhou Weiqing's gaze, Gu Yingbing also looked towards him, his eyes flashing with both disdain and an unhidden killing intent. With a cold humph, the golden-red light flashed brightly once more, bursting into the skies.

If one were to liken Gu Yingbing's Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion aura and presence to that of an ocean, then the Silver Emperor would be a tiny boat within that ocean, thrown about by

a tempestuous storm, doing its all to break free of the restraints of the powerful aura.

Both were Upper Level Zong Stage Heavenly Beasts, but it was clear that the Silver Emperor with the potential to reach the Heavenly King Stage was much stronger and more resistant than the first Heavenly Beast. Furthermore, it was much more agile and with an impressive speed. If not for Xue AoTian's restriction, it would have already broken free of Gu Yingbing's aura and fled swiftly. Of course, if these Heavenly Beasts could attack them, it would be far more difficult to oppress and overwhelm them with just their auras.

On the other side, Zhou Weiqing had also taken action. Due to the fact that his first round had been 'won' so strangely, currently all the powerhouses were focused on him.

The thick grey swirling mist rose forth once more from Zhou Weiqing's body, a pure and thick Demonic aura. The next moment, Zhou Weiqing simply raised his head and looked at the Silver Emperor encircling him. With a single rumbling command, he said: "Come down."

A miracle happened next.

The next instant, the freely circling Silver Emperor stopped abruptly, its wings folding as if some invisible power had gripped it, a power it was unable to break free from. As it spiralled down, it landed onto Zhou Weiqing's outstretched right hand, lowering its proud head.

This time, Zhou Weiqing's speed was actually even faster than Gu Yingbing!

The bloodline of the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion was undoubtedly strong, but they were after all Heavenly Beasts of the land. The Silver Emperor belonged to the skies, and thus Gu Yingbing did not have any easy way to reach it. He could only use his own powerful aura to continue pressuring it, and by the time

he succeeded in overwhelming his Silver Emperor, Zhou Weiqing had already released the Silver Emperor in his hands.

Of course, the reason why Zhou Weiqing could deal with the Silver Emperor so easily... only he and Long Shiya knew the reason. It was actually very simple – the dragon bloodline within his body.

What was a dragon? One of the strongest Heavenly Beasts around, even higher level than the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lions. More importantly, they were overlords of the skies, holding absolute sovereignty over the skies. As soon as Zhou Weiqing released his aura with the Demonic essence, it held a hint of his dragon bloodline, and the little Silver Emperor could no longer resist.

The Solidified Dragon Spirit may not have brought Zhou Weiqing any Skills, but the number of benefits it had was numerous. Power over the flying beasts was one of them.

At this moment, the Lion King Gu Site's face had turned overcast. Originally, the test that he thought would be a crushing victory had turned to be a far more even fight than he had imagined. He couldn't help but worry a little, as this disciple of the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor was not as simple as he thought. With a mere six-Jeweled cultivation level, he had actually managed to succeed in overwhelming those two Heavenly Beasts. More so, this second round was even faster than his own son!

Book 22

Chapter 176 Heavenly Emperor Beasts! (1)

As for the Lion King Gu Site, the moment he saw the Demonic Change State around Zhou Weiqing, the thought that sprang in mind was very different. His gaze on Zhou Weiqing also changed, turning cold and overcast. Such an unbelievably talented youth, yet he could not be used by himself. If I give him enough time to grow... that could lead to unforeseen, even disastrous circumstances...

Only the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord Xue AoTian remained standing there impassive, his face still expressionless as if he did not care about anything. However, if one examined him closely, they would discover his gaze was also transfixed on Zhou Weiqing

From Xue AoTian's perspective, he was rather curious about Zhou Weiqing. He had heard a lot of news about this youth from his daughter, and at present, what he was about to do was to create a truly fair fight, although on the surface appearance he was helping Gu Yingbing.

Regarding this young fellow who had stolen his daughter's heart, Xue AoTian's feelings were rather mixed. However, it was without a doubt that he was very curious about him, especially when he learned that Zhou Weiqing had the two Saint Attributes, Demonic and Time, that had piqued his interest even more.

Of all the people present, the one who had the strongest impression on Zhou Weiqing's current aura and presence was naturally Xue AoTian. Just like his daughter years ago, his own Divine and Spirit Attributes, the other two Saint Attributes, could clearly sense the Demonic and Time Saint Attributes from Zhou Weiqing. Vaguely, the four Saint Attributes were resonating with each other.

The Tiger King Xue Aoying also felt a strange connection to Zhou Weiqing as well, and that was the reason why, though he did not

know it. As for the Lion King and Prince, although they both had the Divine and Spirit Attributes as well, in terms of purity and strength, it was no match for the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger bloodlines. In addition to the fact that they had strong feelings of enmity and hatred for Zhou Weiqing, the 'connection' with Zhou Weiqing was much weaker, even negligible.

Perhaps, a large portion of why Xue AoTian was willing to give Zhou Weiqing a fair chance now was because of his two Saint Attributes.

After all, he would never allow a useless person, a person without a good future, to become his son in law.

Currently, all of Xue AoTian's senses were focused on Zhou Weiqing, and almost as soon as Zhou Weiqing unleashed it, he sensed something different from his Demonic Change State.

As the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord, how could Xue AoTian not have any prior contact with the Heavenly Demon Sect? He had faced many of the powerhouses from the Heavenly Demon Sect in his time, and he naturally knew how powerful the Demonic Change State was. Even for himself, he was also wary about the unique powers of the Demonic Attribute and its special changes. However, Zhou Weiqing's current Demonic Change State was different from any that he had seen before... perhaps at a higher state than any, even the current Heavenly Demon Sect Master's!

Heavenly God Tier. That was a terrifying state that could fully control and dominate all energy within their sphere of control. Xue AoTian could naturally sense every minor change, detailed flux in Zhou Weiqing's body.

The first thing about Zhou Weiqing's Demonic Change State that he felt was the change in his spirit. For all the previous Heavenly Demon Sect powerhouses that Xue AoTian had met, even the Sect Master, when they entered their Demonic Change State, their spirit would fluctuate and be unsettled. However, this was not

present for Zhou Weiqing. Indeed, when he entered the Demonic Change State, though his aura and presence underwent an entire upheaval, his spirit was still calm and peaceful like a lake of water. What did that mean? It was no longer as simple as a controlled Demonic Change State!

The next was the sheer power within Zhou Weiqing's bloodline. The Demonic Change State was originally a kind of mutated power that joined bloodline power with the Demonic Attribute. Generally speaking, it was unique factors within human bloodlines mixed with the Demonic Attribute, and it was exactly because the power held within the Demonic Attribute was far greater than that of the human bloodline, thus many Demonic Jewel Masters entered a crazed state, losing control etc etc.

However, Zhou Weiqing's situation was clearly very different. The bloodline power that merged with his Demonic Attribute was not just his own human bloodline, but also another bloodline that was no weaker... perhaps even stronger... than his own Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger bloodline. This bloodline... even this strongest powerhouse in the world, Xue AoTian, who controlled all the strongest Heavenly Beasts in the entire Heavenly Snow Mountain... he had never seen any bloodline like this before. In fact, he had not even heard anything like it before.

When these two powers merged together, it caused Zhou Weiqing's Demonic Change State to become far stronger than anything he had seen before. The aura emitted by Zhou Weiqing was already far beyond any ordinary Demonic Change State.

Tian'er had told Xue AoTian regarding Zhou Weiqing, and how he had an incomparable talent in overwhelming Heavenly Beasts. Previously, when he his cultivation level was still very low, he had already managed to Skill Store so many powerful Skills. This was also the reason why Xue AoTian had chosen the route of overwhelming Heavenly Beasts during this first competition. After all, just in terms of cultivation level, he was just too far from Gu

Yingbing, and the age difference was not inconsiderable. To keep the competition actually fair, he did not want a direct frontal clash between the two youths.

Currently, as he continued sensing all the changes of Zhou Weiqing's Demonic Change State, but Xue AoTian's face remained impassive and expressionless. Despite that, his heart was actually filled with shock. What kind of bloodline did this Zhou Weiqing have? How could it be so powerful?!

Furthermore, as time passed, the shock in Xue TianAo's heart grew stronger and stronger, so much so that one could almost describe it as tempestuous storms brewing and raging turbulent waves rolling. That was because he discovered that Zhou Weiqing's bloodline was also of the Tiger type. More importantly, that bloodline seemed to have a strange complementary relationship with their own Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger bloodline!

In that instant, Xue AoTian could fully understand why his daughter had looked for Zhou Weiqing to accompany him on such an easy whim. At that time, Zhou Weiqing's cultivation level was low, and he was not able to hide any of his presence or aura.

At that time, Tian'er had not only sensed the draw of the Four Saint Attributes reverberating and drawing upon each other, but also that complementary aura of their bloodlines that had so strongly drawn her to him.

As he thought up to that point, Xue AoTian's heartbeat couldn't help but beat rapidly. Even as the top powerhouse in the world, he was somehow unable to control his own heart from racing. That was because from Zhou Weiqing, he saw a possibility. The possibility of breaching the thirteenth Jewel – the legendary Heavenly Change! In that instant, the scales in his heart were trembling.

At last, with a plop sound, the Snow Wolf King in front of Gu

Yingbing fell to the ground. Overwhelming success. Wolves and Lions were not on the same level after all, and Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion perfectly countered the Snow Wolf King, especially since Gu Yingbing was already at the nine-Jeweled stage. More so, Gu Yingbing had already used his Spirit Attribute in pressuring the Snow Wolf King. The power of a Saint Attribute along with the superior bloodline; it was not that difficult to overwhelm the Snow Wolf King. The Divine and Spirit Dual Saint Attributes was one of the important techniques of the Heavenly Snow Mountain in suppressing or controlling Heavenly Beasts, so in a way the Snow Wolf King could be said to be used to being overwhelmed like that.

Just as Gu Yingbing succeeded, on the other side, Zhou Weiqing also succeeded at almost the exact same time.

Zhou Weiqing had raised his Demonic Right Leg behind him, his palms extended out. They could clearly see that between each 'paw', there was a ball of grey mist swirling. As for his bloodshot eyes, they were glowing with a shocking intensity, with a thick aura of suppression that somehow succeeded in overwhelming the other Snow Wolf King at the same time.

Of course, this Snow Wolf King was not just afraid of Zhou Weiqing's Dark Demon God Tiger aura, but also the Devour Skill in his hands. Any Heavenly Beast below the Heavenly God Tier stage would instinctively be terrified of the Devour Skill, and this was also one of the reasons why Zhou Weiqing had been able to overwhelm those powerful Heavenly Beasts in the past when his cultivation level was much lower, allowing him to Skill Store far beyond his normal level.

The reason why he used the simple Demonic Change State instead of his newly gained Dragon-Tiger Transformation was because he still wanted to hide his true power. After all, the Solidified Dragon Spirit was not like his Dark Demon God Tiger bloodline inheritance, affecting his entire body. As such, after

melding with the Solidified Dragon Spirit, he was no longer able to enter transformation state without entering the Demonic Change State. Of course, he could still not activate the Dragon-Tiger Transformation and only use the Demonic Change State. Furthermore, even as he used his current Demonic Change State, it was mainly only focused on presence and aura, and was not a large toll on his energy. He could even hide his wings, not allowing his full transformative state to be displayed in front of all the others. Even so, he had managed to succeed in overwhelming the Snow Wolf King. After all, overwhelming Heavenly Beasts was what he excelled in even in the past, let alone now that he had reached the six-Jeweled stage.

...

The next few Heavenly Beasts, the fifth sixth and seventh, were all also at the Heavenly King Stage, just at the Mid Level, High Level and Max Level respectively.

So far, Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing had used the same method as in the fourth round, in order to complete their overwhelming. Of course, the time taken had also continued increasing, but the two still continued succeeding.

Seven out of the ten rounds had already completed, and both were still fully equal. Originally fully confident in his victory, Gu Yingbing's disdain and scorn had changed to seriousness. He had a strange feeling that this current Zhou Weiqing was very different from the puny fellow he had easily trashed just a few months ago. Even his Demonic Change State seemed different. It might not be that easy to defeat him in terms of overwhelming Heavenly Beasts.

For the entire group of onlookers, perhaps the most easy going one was surprisingly the Six Ultimate Emperor Long Shiya. He knew that Zhou Weiqing had not even used the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, but had already completed seven rounds of overwhelming. Although both sides looked exhausted, he was still confident that Zhou Weiqing had this in the bag.

“You both may rest for an hour.” Once again, Xue AoTian proclaimed a rest time. This time, Gu Yingbing did not speak out, and the two youths sat down at once, quickly trying to recover their spirit and energy. They might have completed the first seven rounds, but that did not mean that the last three would be easy for them. Without question, it would be time for them to meet Heavenly Emperor stage Heavenly Beasts!

Just like Heavenly Jewel Masters, in terms of cultivation level for Heavenly Beasts, it was also a massive gap between the Heavenly King stage and Heavenly Emperor stage. Both Gu Yingbing and Zhou Weiqing were not confident in continuing to succeed. After all, no matter how strong a bloodline was, there was a limit to how much it could bridge the gap in cultivation level and sheer power. Even if the Heavenly Emperor Beast was restricted from attacking them, it was still a difficult task.

The superior feeling in Gu Yingbing’s heart had long dissipated, but he still did not think he would lose. As a nine-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master, he was confident that his recovery speed was far superior to Zhou Weiqing, especially since he had the Spirit Attribute, his Spiritual Energy and recovery speed was definitely astonishing.

Chapter 176 Heavenly Emperor Beasts! (2)

However, one hour passed, and when the two youths stood up once more, Gu Yingbing was surprised to see that Zhou Weiqing looked refreshed and rejuvenated, as if he was back in tip top condition. How could he not be surprised?

Xue AoTian looked at the two of them and said in a serious tone: “Next, you will both be facing Heavenly Emperor stage Heavenly Beasts. I do not need to remind you too much, for Heavenly Beasts to reach the Heavenly Emperor stage, it is without question that they also have extremely high quality bloodlines. As such, your advantage of bloodline will not be that obvious, and you may even run the risk of being counter-injured.”

Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing’s faces turned serious. Overwhelming a Heavenly Emperor stage Heavenly Beast. They had never even dreamed of doing it at their current levels, let alone trying it out, and they did not know whether or not they could succeed.

Boom Boom Boom

A low, rumbling thunder shook the entire cave as it rang out. The Heavenly Beasts that they would face had not even appeared, but a terrifying and oppressive presence could already be felt.

The expressions of both Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing instantly changed. In their hearts, they suddenly had the strange misconception – Who was the one doing the overwhelming?! The two Heavenly Emperor stage Beasts had not even appeared, and they were already barely able to hold on. Such a level of power, was it really possible for them to succeed? Wasn’t that just a fantastical dream?

Even if it were a lowest level Heavenly Emperor Stage Beast, it was still the difference of heaven and earth compared to a max level Heavenly King Stage Beast!

The two youths were not the only ones whose expressions changed. Long Shiya, the Tiger King and Lion King also looked serious. With their cultivation level, they could easily sense the sheer power of the two incoming Heavenly Beasts – not Low Level Heavenly Emperor Stage, but at the Mid Level Heavenly Emperor Stage! Besides Xue AoTian, only Long Shiya actually had any confidence that they could overwhelm Beasts of such a level with only their aura and presence.

Soon, two unbelievably immense figures appeared in their sights, so massive that it was almost terrifying. This cavern was extremely huge and spacious, but as soon as the two Heavenly Beasts appeared, it was as if the cavern had suddenly become too tiny.

Both Beasts were more than ten metres tall, fifteen metres in length, their bodies covered with long white fur with huge tusks protruding out like two terrifying lumbering mountains of doom.

Mammoths! These were Mammoth – Type Heavenly Beasts!

Mammoth Type Heavenly Beasts were extremely talented, their bloodlines ensuring they could reach at least Upper Level Zong Stage or higher. These two were magnificent species amongst their kind, obviously with their Heavenly Emperor Stage, and they were Lords and Leaders amongst all Mammoth type Beasts.

Long Shiya muttered: “Snow Lord Mammoths. These huge fellows. Old Monster Xue, you are already bringing these out on the eighth round? How can they possibly succeed in overwhelming them? Do you think they have already reached our level?”

Xue AoTian glanced at Long Shiya before saying passively: “From this round onwards, the test is reversed. Yingbing, you and Zhou Weiqing will have to withstand the oppressive pressure of these Snow Lord Mammoths for 5 minutes. If anyone fails in that time, you will have lost the round. If both of you can withstand the pressure, then we will go on to the ninth round...”

“Yes, Master.” Gu Yingbing said respectfully. He couldn’t help

but heave a huge sigh of relief in his heart. At least it was not an impossible task. Withstanding pressure and attempting to overwhelm these Heavenly Beasts was a hugely different task.

By this time, the two massive mammoths had already lumbered to the front of Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing respectively. If one thought their presence was terrifying just now, the addition of their massive bodies in front of them brought some strange new pressure!

Snow Lord Mammoths. These monstrous beasts had the Ice, Earth and Wind Attributes, and their innate talent was to berserk. In the entire Ten Thousand Beast Heavens, they were highly ranked and respected. In the WanShou Empire, there was a Legion of controlled Heavenly Beasts controlled only by the Heavenly Snow Mountain. It was also one of the main reasons why the other four Great Saint Lands feared them so much. The Legion Commander of that Legion had a Snow Lord Mammoth mount, and one could imagine how powerful it was for such a high ranked powerhouse.

They were able to control winds and snows, trample across the earth in stampedes. They were considered a rare breed that were equally power in both offense and defense.

Such powerful Heavenly Beasts, even Long Shiya would have a bit of trouble in defeating them. For Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing, it was definitely impossible for them stand against them. The Snow Lord Mammoths might not seem to have any scales or armour, but their pure white fur was actually deceptively tough, one of the strongest defenses. Even a full powered attack from a Max Level Heavenly King Stage powerhouse might not be able to cause any damage to them. Of course, one had to consider that these powerful Heavenly Beasts were under full control of Xue AoTian, and from that alone one could tell how powerful this Heavenly God Tier powerhouse was.

The Lion King Gu Site's somber eyes were suddenly filled with a

burning heat. Even he had not expected that the Heavenly Snow Mountain held so much power. If... his son could control the Heavenly Snow Mountain in the future... perhaps... they would be able to sweep over the entire mainland!

ROARR Almost at the same time, two resounding roars rang out from the two Snow Lord Mammoths, their long trunks raised up in the air. Instantly, a powerful layer of green-blue light sprang forth from their bodies, enveloping Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing's bodies respectively.

In the next instant, Zhou Weiqing felt as if he was trapped in a world of ice and snow. The surrounding air plummeted to absolute zero, the frigid temperatures buffeting him along with the cruel pressure of the Mammoth's terrifying aura, feeling like uncountable sharp ice shards slicing all over his body. A massive spiritual pressure descended upon him like a huge mountain from the skies, smashing down over his head.

Zhou Weiqing gave a muffled grunt as he staggered back subconsciously. Even under the Demonic Change State, he was almost unable to withstand this terrifying pressure.

On the other side, Gu Yingbing was in a much better state than Zhou Weiqing. After all, his cultivation level was at the nine-Jeweled stage, much higher than Zhou Weiqing. He had not staggered back, holding his ground, though his expression had turned very ugly and his body was trembling slightly. The golden-red light around him was so thick that it was as if an actual solid burning shroud was around him, as the thick Heavenly Energy reverberations around him denoted his channeling of his spirit to the maximum.

Alas for these poor two young souls, both Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing had just been foolish enough to be relieved and think that withstanding the pressure would be easier than overwhelming. Now, they knew what a joke their previous thoughts had been just an instant ago. Facing a Heavenly Emperor stage was never a

trifling task.

Having reached the Mid Level Heavenly Emperor stage, as soon as the Snow Lord Mammoths' powerful aura smashed down upon them, they realised it was far more difficult than when they were trying previously to overwhelm the Max Level Heavenly King Stage Beasts!

Furthermore, this pressure was now reverse. That was to say, they definitely had to hold on the best they could, otherwise failure would also lead to serious injury. More importantly... that already-terrifying pressure was still increasing slowly!

The terrifying pressure was crushing down upon both Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing, draining their energy at a crazy rate. When Zhou Weiqing staggered back a step, he felt as if he could no longer hold on. However, after moving back one more step, he finally stopped staggering back just like that. Although he was still having trouble holding on, at least he had finally stabilized himself and not lost just immediately.

At this moment, even the Tiger King Xue Aoying couldn't help but reveal a hint of admiration on his face. For a six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master, even with the aid of the Demonic Change State, to be able to withstand a Mid Level Heavenly Emperor Stage Heavenly Beast for so long, it was already unbelievably astonishing. He could imagine that any other six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master would have already imploded internally from facing such pressure. After all, the gap in cultivation level was just too huge.

Haaahhh Gu Yingbing yelled softly in exertion as his arms raised up abruptly, palms facing upwards. The next moment, the golden-red light around his body actually turned pure golden, as if flames rising into the air.

Divine Flames. This was not any Skill, but the pure merger of Heavenly Energy of the Divine and Fire Attribute merging together

fully. This was also one of the ultimate secrets of the Heavenly Snow Mountain that was never to be passed outside. With the sheer power of the Divine Flames, Gu Yingbing finally managed to hold his ground, but his Heavenly Energy expenditure was now several times his original.

Gu Yingbing finally had a moment of respite to turn to look at Zhou Weiqing. In his mind, Zhou Weiqing could not possibly hold on for five minutes. Although the Divine Flames was a huge drain on himself, he was confident of at least holding on for that long, and without question that would put him as the ultimate victor.

However, a shocking sight followed next. Just as everyone thought the swaying body of Zhou Weiqing would fall, abruptly a tearing sound rang out, and the back of Zhou Weiqing's shirt ripped apart in a burst. A pair of huge wings sprang forth from his back without warning.

The black grey wings were like an artifact calming the seas. When they appeared, the massive amounts of various energies suddenly started surging crazily towards Zhou Weiqing. At the same time, it was as if Zhou Weiqing's bloodline aura abruptly raised up to an even higher state. Although his cultivation level was still the same, the gap between them still like an unbreachable chasm, his bloodline aura was suddenly at a massive advantage against the Snow Lord Mammoths!

Using bloodline alone to suppress a Heavenly Emperor Stage Snow Lord Mammoth of noble blood!??

Both the Tiger King and Lion King widened their eyes. This time, as Xue AoTian saw the wings spreading out from Zhou Weiqing's back, even he was not able to maintain his impassive expression.

Paired wings that could actually upgrade one's bloodline?! What the h*** was going on?!

In that instant, Xue AoTian suddenly realised that he had severely underestimated that ancient tiger bloodline of Zhou

Weiying's. He had previously thought he had already judged it very highly, but it appeared it wasn't as simple as he thought... perhaps... it was even at a far higher level than his own bloodline... a nobler and higher grade than even the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tigers!

As soon as the wings burst forth from Zhou Weiying's back, shock filled the eyes of Snow Lord Mammoth in front of him. Abruptly, the pressure on Zhou Weiying almost halved, and in the short instantaneous respite, Zhou Weiying had actually taken a huge step forward, regaining the footing lost previously.

Black and grey light swirled around him as if burning into the air. It was a mix of his Darkness and Demonic Attributes.

The Divine Attribute and Demonic Attribute were both Saint Attributes, and it was hard to compare which was stronger than the other. However, if one compared Darkness and Fire Attribute, there was an obvious difference. Zhou Weiying had somehow managed to just use his Demonic Change State to somehow merge his Darkness and Demonic Attributes, fusing them perfectly like the Divine Flames of the Heavenly Snow Mountain. All this without any secret arts! This was the advantage of his bloodline power!

The Dark Demon God Tiger was originally of the Darkness, Demonic and Lightning Attributes, and had full control over all these Attributes, able to merge them easily. As such, under the Demonic Change State, instinctively having them fuse together was not that difficult a task.

Chapter 176 Heavenly Emperor Beasts! (3)

Furthermore, although Zhou Weiqing's Heavenly Energy was far lower than Gu Yingbing, do not forget about his Immortal Deity Technique! With the twenty four opened Death Acupuncture Points and the energy whirlpools, along with the pair of wings behind his back, his energy regeneration was somehow able to sustain the massive drain on his Heavenly Energy.

“What... what kind of bloodline is that?!” The Tiger King Xue Aoying was finally unable to control himself, turning to the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor beside him and asking.

Long Shiya was eyeing his disciple with unbridled smug satisfaction on his face. There was nothing to hide about the name of Zhou Weiqing's bloodline; after all, it was his alone. “It is called the Dark Demon God Tiger Bloodline, a perfect match for your own Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger bloodline! One black tiger, one white tiger... That is why I said that my Little Fatty is more suitable for your little Tian'er. How about it, Tiger King, my precious disciple is not bad huh?”

Xue Aoying smiled bitterly and said: “Bro Long, if you are willing to let me have him as disciple instead, I will satisfy any condition you have! Even that marriage, I will do everything in my power to ensure it happens.” He spoke softly to Long Shiya, though he was not afraid of the Lion King listening in.

Long Shiya gave an exasperated humph and said: “Don't daydream. Even if you use the entire WanShou Empire to swap with me, I will not do so! My precious disciple is one of a kind!”

Both sides had already stabilized, but in comparison, at least in outward appearance, Zhou Weiqing was slightly better off. The Snow Lord Mammoth facing him showed a hint of fear towards his bloodline aura, and even its powerful aura now seemed slightly weaker than the other one.

Looking at Gu Yingbing's side, his expression was extremely ugly. He had never in his wildest dreams imagined that Zhou Weiqing could last up to this round, let alone take the advantage here. He could clearly see that this had to be because when Zhou Weiqing's cultivation level had broken through to the six-Jeweled stage, his Demonic Change State had either mutated or evolved somehow, with those wings appearing.

Thinking up to this point, Gu Yingbing suddenly calmed down, breaking out of his state of rage and jealousy. At that moment, he suddenly realised he had been ignoring all this time, a serious problem indeed – Zhou Weiqing's cultivation level.

Previously, he had been disdainful of Zhou Weiqing's mere six-Jeweled cultivation level. Yet, all of a sudden, as he thought about it, the last time he faced Zhou Weiqing, he had just broken through to the five-Jeweled stage! However, now, in just a matter of months, he had somehow already reached six Jewels! This was something that was impossible just from cultivating... something else must have happened.

As he thought about that, Gu Yingbing's scorn and underestimation of Zhou Weiqing was wiped away. At last, he realised that for Zhou Weiqing to dare to come here today, especially since he was brought by Long Shiya, he had to have been fully prepared. If there was no chance at all, even if Zhou Weiqing was crazy enough to do so, would the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor be that crazy?

As comprehension dawned upon him, Gu Yingbing turned calm and cool. He knew that if he wanted to defeat Zhou Weiqing today, it would not be an easy task, and he could not afford to underestimate his foe.

Time passed, second after second, minute after minute. Gu Yingbing and Zhou Weiqing were both gritting their teeth as they held on with all their might. The two Snow Lord Mammoths aura continued raising up to a certain before maintaining equilibrium.

After all, they were not able to actually strike out in an attack, and if they raised their presence too far, they would have no choice but to strike.

Five minutes was not considered a long time, but it was not too short either. By the time the time ended, both Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing were surrounded by mist – their bodies generating so much sweat that was then quickly evaporated by the vast amounts of Heavenly Energy around them.

The two youths, perhaps the absolute top of their entire generation, had finally passed this round. When the pressure from the two Snow Lord Mammoths disappeared, both of them instantly sank down onto the ground, quickly assuming a meditative position to recover their energy.

This round of testing had not only pushed the two to the limit, but also squeezed out their potential and talent. Facing these two powerful Heavenly Beasts, the drain had been far more than all of the last seven rounds added up together.

When the Snow Lord Mammoths stopped, both Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing had felt utterly exhausted. After all, facing a healthy Heavenly Emperor Stage Heavenly Beast in top condition was far different from those Sealed in the Skill Storing Palaces.

“You both only have one hour of rest.” Xue AoTian’s voice rang out, in a rather emotionless and almost unreasonable way.

Currently, all the powerhouses present were interesting in finding out what the limit was for both Gu Yingbing and Zhou Weiqing. There was still two more rounds of this test to go, and since the eighth was already with Mid Level Heavenly Emperor Beasts, the last two were definitely even stronger. How far could they go?

Besides Xue AoTian, not even the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya could claim to do the same as these two youths when he was at their age... let alone the Tiger and Lion

King! However, the strongest emotion in his heart now was pride. After all, Zhou Weiqing was not even twenty years old yet! If Long Shiya previously only held some hope that Zhou Weiqing would reach the Heavenly God Tier, now, he was extremely confident that as long as his precious disciple could continue growing and improving at his current speed, he would definitely reach the Heavenly God Tier eventually.

One hour passed quickly, and when Zhou Wieqing and Gu Yingbing stood up once more, their expressions were quite different.

Gu Yingbing's face was grave and serious, his face still pale. As for Zhou Weiqing, he was still covered in the black tiger tattoos, but his eyes were bright and clear. The powerhouses present could clearly sense that Zhou Weiqing's spirit and Heavenly Energy recovery was no less than Gu Yingbing! Was this a recovery speed of a six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master?! Especially since he was still maintaining his Demonic Change State...

The Lion King Gu Site's expression was rather ugly. He could not believe that this mere six-Jeweled little brat was holding his own against his son. In theory, that was truly impossible.

A Six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master withstanding a Heavenly Emperor's pressure? Even if they said it out who could believe it?

Before Xue AoTian could summon the next group of Heavenly Beasts, Gu Site suddenly spoke out. "Mountain Lord, I have a suggestion."

"En?" Xue AoTian turned to him and said passively: "Lion King, what is your suggestion?"

Gu Site continued: "Mountain Lord, from a certain perspective, we can be considered Heavenly Beasts. How about, for this ninth round, let me and the Tiger King be the testers. The Tiger King can suppress Yingbing, while I will do the same for this Zhou Weiqing. My cultivation level is about the same as the Tiger King's, so that is

fair. What do you think?”

“Haha.” Long Shiya burst out laughing heartily. “I never expected that the Lion King, head of an entire Empire, would be so shameless. Your WanShou Empire is trying to band together to bully me and my disciple? I do not reject your suggestion, but the one who suppresses your son will have to be me for it to be fair.”

“Bullshit. How is that not fair? My cultivation level is the same as the Tiger King’s, but you are already at the Max Level of the Heavenly Emperor, with the boost of your Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor. Your suggestion is the unfair one!” Gu Site said angrily.

Long Shiya said coldly: “Don’t forget that your son is nine-Jeweled, and my disciple is only six-Jeweled. That evens things out.”

Xue AoTian swept them both with his gaze before saying solemnly: “Both of you need not argue. This test is mainly about their bloodline power, and though cultivation level is definitely of help, it is not as huge as difference. Bro Long, as I said, in this test, Yingbing will have some advantages. Both of you need not argue, I will still go on with my original test.”

As he said that, he waved his hands as he sent out a command. Instantly, all the air in the cavern seemed to freeze and still, as two calm, stable and boundless auras came forth from the cave entrance.

Sensing the two auras, even Long Shiya’s expression changed swiftly.

This was the true hidden background power of the Heavenly Snow Mountain. In the Heavenly Snow Mountain, they did not have the sheer numbers of powerhouses like the Heaven’s Expanse Palace, nor their terrifying wealth and Consolidated Equipment. However, the Heavenly Snow Mountain had many powerful Heavenly Beasts, and many of these were under the control and command of the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord. Without

question, if Xue AoTian were to command these powerful Heavenly Beasts of the Ten Thousand Beast Heavens to war, he could almost wipe out all of humanity, bringing about a holy war between Heavenly Beasts and Humans.

Of course, such a scenario was not just feared by the human empires, but even the WanShou Empire or the Heavenly Snow Mountain did not want something like this to happen. After all, there was no benefit in doing so. Most of the powerful Heavenly Beasts were already divested of their requirement of food, able to gain their nourishment from absorbing the atmospheric energies. As such, their existence in the Ten Thousand Beast Heavens was safe, nor did they fear interference from humans. The best case scenario was for both sides to coexist without interference from each other. At the same time, if the four Great Saint Lands joined forces against the Heavenly Snow Mountain, it would be hard for them to hold out as well.

Two faint gold lights approached, and before Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing could actually see clearly, they felt their vision blur momentarily and there was a man standing in front of them respectively.

Indeed. A man, middle aged, with short gold hair.

Both these middle aged men were gold in colour, their skin a faint gold colour with a yellow-gold short hair. In fact, their entire body was shining with that faint gold light, and even the pupils of their eyes were gold. It was as if they had been carved out of gold.

Long Shiya's face was full of surprise as he exclaimed: "Old Monster Xue, you have even called upon your Heavenly Snow Mountain Guardians, the two Light Titan Apes... you truly think very highly of this two young fellows huh?"

The two middle aged men looked exactly alike, clearly a pair of identical twins. Hearing Long Shiya's words, the two smiled at Long Shiya, nodding in greeting as they said: "Since the Six

Ultimate Heavenly Emperor is here to visit, how can we not show up.”

Indeed, these two middle aged men were actually the two Light Titan Apes. Some Heavenly Beasts, even if they cultivated up to the Heavenly God Tier stage, they were still unable to take human form. Some were able to do so at a low cultivation level. For example, Tian’er, she had already been able to take human form even though her cultivation level was not too high. Although that did not mean anything for their power or cultivation level, it usually meant their intelligence was higher than those which could not take human form.

Chapter 177 To be confirmed! (1)

Both these Light Titan Apes were at the Upper Level Heavenly Emperor stage. Although they might not be able to compare with the human Heavenly Emperor Jewel Masters, their strength was undoubtedly terrifying.

In fact, the main difference of power between Heavenly Beasts and human Heavenly Jewel Masters was in their Consolidated Equipment and the restrictions of Skills. Long Shiya had fought with these two Light Titan Apes several times before, the first time when he had first reached the Heavenly Emperor Stage. At that time, Xue AoTian had not reached the Heavenly God Stage as well. Although these two Light Titan Apes did not have any Consolidated Equipment, they were a pair of twins which could work together very well. During that fight, Long Shiya had barely won by a hair. It was only in the future as he finally completed his 'Hate Sky No Handle' Legendary Set, and his cultivation level increased, that he could finally guarantee defeating them in a fight.

Heavenly God Tier Heavenly Beasts could not possibly be controlled or commandeered by others, not even the Heavenly Snow Mountain. As such, it was already the absolute limit to command Heavenly Emperor Stage Heavenly Beasts. Furthermore, only a Heavenly God Tier powerhouse like Xue AoTian could fully convince such powerful Heavenly Beasts. These two Light Titan Apes could be said to be a core backbone of the Heavenly Snow Mountain power base, and whenever Xue AoTian entered closed door cultivation, they would personally guard him.

Currently, for them to be invited to test Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing, it was no wonder that Long Shiya was so astonished.

Xue AoTian's originally impassive face finally revealed a faint smile as he nodded towards the two Light Titan Apes, making an inviting gesture towards the two youths. This was a treatment that

not even the two Snow Lord Mammoths had gotten.

Gu Yingbing's eyes showed some clear nervous tension. He was not foolish enough to think that these Heavenly Snow Mountain Guardians would take it easy on him. These two Light Titan Apes only listened to Xue AoTian alone.

“This time, you both only need to withstand their pressure for 2.5 minutes to pass this round.” Xue AoTian told Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing.

A thick gold light sprang forth the moment the words ended. The entire cavern was surrounded with ice, and in the sudden brilliant light, it painted a miraculous picture of astounding beauty.

In the midst of the pure gold light, the two Light Titan Apes' bodies shimmered and slowly became transparent. Their aura and pressure did not seem like the Snow Lord Mammoths, compared to the massive mountains pressuring down, it was more like an intangible yet all-encompassing environmental energy. That did not mean it was any weaker, as terrifying pressure swelled around the two youths from all directions. Behind the two Light Titan Apes, a huge, illusory image of themselves appeared.

Looking at that, Long Shiya, the Lion and Tiger Kings, all of them suddenly realised that these two Light Titan Apes had strengthened once more, now only a step away from reaching the Max Level Heavenly Emperor Stage. On the surface, their aura and pressure was more 'gentle' than the Snow Lord Mammoths, but it was strengthening at a frightening pace, far faster than the Mammoths earlier. More so, it was a pervasive pressure that came from everywhere, invaded everywhere.

It was as if all the Light Attribute Energy in the world was focused here in that instant, fully pressuring against Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing. What was in front of them did not seem like two Heavenly Beasts, but two bright suns shining with radiant light.

Such pressure was not just on their spiritual energy anymore, the

pressure almost like a solid presence, actually oppressing their bodies. If their cultivation level was insufficient, such a pressure alone would be able to crush them into dust, vanishing from this world forever.

Without any delay, the gold Divine Flames blazed forth around Gu Yingbing's body. Facing the Light Titan Ape, he dared not hold back at all, circulating all of his Heavenly Energy, bloodline power as well as all his Attributes at once, fully powering his Divine Flames which burned and rose in the middle of all the incoming pressure. Even so, the Divine Flames that blazed so strongly momentarily was quickly pressured back in all the way to a tiny area surrounding his body.

Looking at the situation, the Lion King Gu Site was no longer frowning, instead feeling joy. The reason was simple – the Attributes of the Light Titan Apes!

The Light Attribute was the natural counter to the Darkness Attribute. At least, Gu Yingbing had the Divine Attribute, which could be in a certain way described as an sublimed upper state of the Light Attribute. At least, it had a natural resistance towards the Light Attribute. Yet, the Darkness and Demonic Attributes of Zhou Weiqing were naturally countered by the Light Attribute of the Light Titan Ape. As such, even facing the same amount of pressure, Zhou Weiqing should fare much worse. Seeing his son having such difficulty, he expected that Zhou Weiqing would be in dire straits.

Alas, the truth of the matter that happened next surprised all the watching powerhouses.

With a low tiger's howl, the grey-black swirling mist around Zhou Weiqing's body grew thicker, the wings around his back flapping gently rhythmically, causing his entire person to seem to be wrapped in layer of thick black mist. At the same time, within the mist, arcs of bluish purple electricity flashed about erratically. The most surprising thing was that the large layer of black mist was somehow being suppressed at a slower rate than Gu Yingbing's

Divine Flames!

His bloodline actually had some other hidden powers that hadn't been released up to now? Both the Lion and Tiger Kings were taken aback. What kind of bloodline power was that? It was no lower than even the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger!

Indeed, the Light Attribute was a natural counter for the Darkness Attribute, and they were on the same level. However, if one counted the Demonic Attribute, how could the Light Attribute alone possibly counter it fully?

Furthermore, Dragons had the Light and Fire Attribute. While Zhou Weiqing's Light Attribute resistance was far lower than his Fire Attribute resistance, it was definitely not as weak as Gu Site had estimated. Hidden deep within the black mist, Zhou Weiqing's eyes had turned from the deep red to a purple. In order to withstand the Light Titan Ape, he had already started entering the Dragon-Tiger Transformation.

After all, this was just pressure from aura and presence, not Heavenly Energy. The main fighting was bloodline power. It was without question that Zhou Weiqing's bloodline was far superior to Gu Yingbing.

The Light Titan Ape in front of Zhou Weiqing revealed a hint of surprise in his eyes. He could clearly sense Zhou Weiqing's cultivation level, and for a mere six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master to withstand his own pressure, even giving him an indistinct hint of a threat. That sense of danger came from the bloodline power of Zhou Weiqing, and was definitely not obvious, but the occasional twinge in his heart made the Light Titan Ape unwilling to push his own aura and pressure to the maximum.

—Roar—!

At the other side, Gu Yingbing was no longer able to hold on. Abruptly, the gold flames around his body burst out in a sudden rise. The next moment, his entire body seemed to drop to the

ground, and in the middle of the thick gold light, he turned into a massive four metres long gold lion. The circle of blood red fur around his neck obvious.

Under the sheer pressure of the Light Titan Ape, Gu Yingbing had no choice but to release his original Heavenly Beast form. In his Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion form, his bloodline power was greatly boosted, a similar case to Zhou Weiqing's Demonic Change State. Once again, both youths entered a sort of equilibrium state; both holding on with all their might, both refusing to fall.

Sweat poured down from their bodies, only to evaporate a few moments later to disappear into the air. Their breathing grew heavy and ragged; with such pressure beating down upon them, their sweat soon turned to fine blood droplets appearing along their skin.

At this moment, Zhou Weiqing felt like his entire body was being squeezed to the limit, as if he were about to explode at any moment. Yet, under such pressure, his twenty four energy whirlpools at the Death Acupuncture Points somehow broke through their previous limitations, speeding up at least fifty percent of their previous maximum speed. His body had already far surpassed his limit, and the suffocating feeling made him feel like he was about to be destroyed at any moment.

In truth, perhaps Zhou Weiqing was in a lot more trouble than Gu Yingbing. However, in terms of withstanding pain and suffering, Gu Yingbing was no match for Zhou Weiqing. Just his Immortal Deity Technique alone had given him a massive experience in withstanding pain, let alone the period of time he had spent immersed in lava while at the Fire Spirit Mountain. Having gone through the spiritual suffering during the merger of the Solidified Dragon Spirit and his Dark Demon God Tiger bloodline, his nerves were now unbelievably steely and his resistance to pain was unparalleled. Even a Heavenly Emperor

powerhouse might not be able to match him in that regard. Right now, this level of pain was nothing, definitely within his limits. With that, he forcefully did not fully enter the Dragon-Tiger Transformation. After all, this was only the ninth test, and there was one final one. He was certain that the final round of test would be a Max Level Heavenly Emperor Beast. If he revealed all of his Dragon-Tiger Transformation now, it would be difficult to achieve victory later.

Even so, Zhou Weiqing's potential was being fully pressed out of him. At that moment, behind his back, an illusory light appeared abruptly.

The figure of light was not clear at all, but it vaguely seemed to be a huge black tiger, wings spread out behind his back, just like the ones on Zhou Weiqing's back.

This is his bloodline lineage! Xue AoTian thought to himself. In a certain perspective, this little brat can be considered a beastman, with such powerful Heavenly Beast bloodline within him. The Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger bloodline was already considered the top in the entire world, king of all Beasts. Could this unknown Dark Demon God Tiger's bloodline actually be superior to his own Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger?!

Towards this, Xue AoTian was not willing to admit it, but the facts in front of him were almost too much to ignore.

2.5 minutes was half the time of the previous round. However, to Gu Yingbing and Zhou Weiqing, that time was like an eternity. By the time the two Light Titan Apes halted and left stealthily, the two could not control their own bodies, flopping down onto the ground panting and gasping for breath.

Long Shiya had his hands behind his back, a huge smug smile on his face. Zhou Weiqing had managed to reach this point, and he was extremely proud. Having gone through this entire test this time in the Heavenly Snow Mountain, no matter the final result, it

was already a cleansing and possible evolving for Zhou Weiqing in all matters. He now truly had the power to protect himself.

Xue AoTian's gaze swept across Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing, a hint of appreciation in his eyes. Gu Yingbing was his disciple, his pride, and he was not too surprised that he had managed to succeed. After all, he had spent a lot of time on effort on developing Gu Yingbing.

From Xue AoTian's status and perspective, he could see things from a whole different level from the Tiger King Xue Aoying. He had long grown past the restrictions of tribe or race, and could look down at the bigger picture from his stage up above.

Chapter 177 To be confirmed! (2)

No matter the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger or the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion, both belonged to the WanShou Empire. The reason why he spent so much time and effort to groom Gu Yingbing was simple – he was the most talented and held the most potential amongst the entire young generation. What he needed was a heir who could hold up and support the entire Heavenly Snow Mountain, and he would not hold back just because Gu Yingbing was from the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion Tribe.

Zhou Weiqing had already brought more than enough surprise to the unflappable Xue AoTian. From this youth, he had seen so many impossibilities, challenging so many things that he had taken for granted. Xue AoTian could not help but admit the how outstanding this young man was, his sheer talent and potential... and that he was truly worthy of his own beloved daughter.

The first test was reaching the end, and at this point, Xue AoTian's inner heart was already more on Zhou Weiqing's side. In his ears, Zhou Weiqing's previous words from the Grand Hall resonated. Indeed! He was not a good father... did he really have to sacrifice his daughter just for the sake of the Heavenly Snow Mountain? As the Mountain Lord, did he still need to use such means to solidify the alliance between the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger or the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion Tribes?

No. He did not need to. Thinking back to how his daughter's bright eyes and life when he told her about Zhou Weiqing coming, Xue AoTian finally made his resolute decision. This young man Zhou Weiqing had the courage to ascend the Heavenly Snow Mountain for his daughter's sake, and that very courage and resolution was more than enough to ascertain how much feelings he had for his daughter.

I guess I have to help them now. Xue AoTian sighed inwardly, closing his eyes slowly as he sent a message to the strongest

Heavenly Beast in the other exit.

This last rest for Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing lasted two whole hours. Their recovery rate was rather astonishing, and their Heavenly Energy had fully recovered before that time. The reason why they took two whole hours was because their spiritual energy was just too huge.

Two hours later, when both youths stood up once more, they looked at each other, and they could see the fatigue in each other's eyes. Somehow, the enmity between them lessened slightly. As love rivals, it was nearly impossible for them to 'cherish' each other, but it did not stop a slow respect from growing towards each other. In the end, the most important thing in the Heavenly Jewel Master world was after all still power!

Xue AoTian slowly walked to the two of them and said solemnly: "You both have gone through the first nine rounds to reach this step, and that has already proven how outstanding and talented you are. I am very pleased, gratified, to see this. Well, this last round will be a true test of your deepest potential. Similarly, you will be facing an oppressive pressure, and you will have to withstand it. However, this time, there will only be a single Heavenly Beast, and it will unleash its aura and pressure on both of you at the same time. With its control, it will refrain from hurting you. Whoever lasts the longest time will be the final victor of this last round. I will go according to your status to judge this round, when I feel that your body or spirit is about to breakdown, I will stop this round. Do you both understand?"

At once, both Gu Yingbing and Zhou Weiqing nodded their heads, and as their eyes met once more, they saw the resolution in each other's eyes. Gu Yingbing no longer dared underestimate Zhou Weiqing, nor had the slightest bit of disdain left in his eyes. In this first nine rounds of competition, though the two had not actually fought against each other, their 'fight' had already been violent and difficult. Gu Yingbing had quickly adjusted his own

attitude, treating Zhou Weiqing as a worthy opponent, an equal.

“Come on then, I know you have already awakened. I have already waited twenty years for this day.” Xue AoTian’s face suddenly turned gentle, as if speaking to his greatest kin. As he spoke, the light around suddenly dimmed.

No matter the Tiger King or Lion King, both of them had a puzzled look on their faces. None of them knew which Heavenly Beast could be deemed Xue AoTian’s old partner, nor had they even heard anything about it!

Only Long Shiya’s face suddenly changed, shock in his eyes as his gaze was fixed in front of Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing.

From the shadows, as if it had only taken a simple step forward, a transparent looking Heavenly Beast suddenly appeared in front of everyone’s eyes. In a somewhat similar fashion to Xue AoTian, when it appeared, it did not have any of the overbearing presence or aura that any of the previous Heavenly Beasts have, as if it was just part of the surroundings, having always been there and appearing just so natural.

It was a greyish black tiger Heavenly Beast, only about two metres long and eighty centimetres tall. It’s sleek black fur was gleaming, but its body seemed to have a sort of transparent or translucent feel to it, the grey colour seeming to shift and move, while the most obvious stripes were that of a tiger tattoo. On its forehead, there was a glowing crystalline ‘[King](#)’ tattoo, greyish in colour yet glittering like a crystal.

When he saw the Heavenly Beast in front of him, Xue AoTian’s face, which had remained emotionless for most of the day, suddenly showed an excitement and agitation, his body flashing as he appeared in front of it. Right in front of everybody, he knelt down on one knee, extending his arms and hugging the Heavenly Beast’s neck.

The Tiger Heavenly Beast’s eyes were also gentle, its head

nuzzling against Xue AoTian's face as it said: "AoTian, I have missed you too."

Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing stood there, not far away, exchanging helpless glances. They could see the surprise in each other's eyes. Who or what was this Tiger Heavenly Beast? Weren't they supposed to be having their final test? Why was Xue AoTian being so affectionate with it, saying they had not met for twenty years!?

Xue AoTian gave a bitter smile and said: "Alas, it is my fault that I do not have the ability to stay by your side. If not for Tian'er being married, I'm afraid 'he' will not allow you to come back, to reunite with us father and daughter."

As the Tiger Heavenly Beast heard Xue AoTian's words, its eyes dimmed slightly. Lifting a front paw, it gently laid it on Xue AoTian's shoulder. "I'm sorry AoTian, I can never betray Master. He has given me my life, especially since Master is doing so for the sake of the lives of all in the Boundless Mainland. How could I possibly leave him?"

Xue AoTian nodded his head and said: "I understand. Unless someone can defeat him in the future, otherwise, he can never be free. We can only depend on all of you guardians and his own sheer willpower for now. Phelia, these two young men in front of you now both love our daughter, you have already seen their performance in the first nine rounds. This tenth round, having you as judge will be the fairest, and you are the only one who has the qualification to make the final decision."

Phelia's gaze turned to Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing, who were just standing there dazed in shock. Xue AoTian had not used his Heavenly Energy to hide his conversation with Phelia, and all present had heard his words.

This Tiger Heavenly Beast in front of them was actually Tian'er's mother, and, it seemed like she came from another secret place.

Everything else aside, the fact that she was Tian'er's mother had already left them all shaken. Even the Tiger King and Lion King had never heard of Phelia's existence, let alone seen her before.

Phelia turned her gentle gaze towards Gu Yingbing and Zhou Weiqing, nodded slightly to them. "Not bad, not bad at all, both of you are outstanding young men. I have already seen your efforts just now. In fact, I already have a choice in my heart, but if I were just to say it out like that, none of you will think it is fair right? So, let me give you this final test."

Phelia had actually said she had her own choice in her heart! Hearing those words, both Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing's hearts skipped a beat. This was their possible future mother in law in front of them! As long as either of them could gain her approval, that would be half the battle won! Alas, who could know what was her choice right now.

The 'King' word on Phelia's forehead grew brighter, and she smiled faintly before saying: "I am just a Entropic Nether Tiger, and to be more accurate, I am not wholly of this world. You can count me as a Heavenly God Tier Heavenly Beast. So, be careful."

Heavenly God Tier. These three words were like a battle hammer, smashing into the already-stunned bodies of Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing, causing their bodies to tighten up in shock once more as their spirit entered an excited state. At the side, the Lion King, Tiger King and even the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya's faces were all grave. No matter any of them, they knew they had severely underestimated the Heavenly Snow Mountain. Especially for Long Shiya, whose feelings were the strongest. From Xue AoTian and Phelia's conversation, he could naturally hear that behind this Phelia, there was another person that even Xue AoTian could not compare to. The Master of a Heavenly God Tier Heavenly Beast, what kind of existence was that? For an instant, Long Shiya fell into a dazed trance.

Right at that moment, both Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing

suddenly felt the air around them twist and warp, as everything turned illusory about them.

Instantly, the two of them entered a strange state. Everything around them seemed to vanish in the twisting vision. As for the rest of those present, all they could see was a faint layer of grey-black colour glimmering as it enveloped the two youths, yet there was no powerful aura or presence. The only thing they could see was the sudden glitter in the Entropic Nether Tiger Phelia's eyes.

It all happened so quickly and suddenly, and Zhou Weiqing felt as if his soul was being torn apart. The violent pain in his soul was no less than the time of the merger of the bloodlines during his time in the Fire Spirit Mountain.

Luckily, this pain did not last for a long time, just a few seconds. All of a sudden, the pressure lessened, and Zhou Weiqing was surprised to see that he had appeared in another place.

This was a dense and thick forest. Everything seemed so real, and there was no hint whether or not this was an illusion or reality, though all signs pointed to the latter.

Right at that moment, Zhou Weiqing suddenly realised that his surroundings had darkened. Yet, his heart was shocked to realise that this darkness was because of himself. Subconsciously, he looked down, and he was shocked for the umpteenth time today. He realised that he was no longer human, but a pitch black massive tiger!

王 (Wang)

Chapter 177 Heavenly God Beast! Mother-in-Law! (3)

As he looked down upon himself, all of a sudden his vision actually left his body, soaring into the skies, giving him a bird's eyes view down.

It was a massive black tiger, fully pure black with not a second colour. Its red bloodshot eyes were cold and ferocious, with its body length more than eight metres long. Its huge size belied its sleek but muscled body, looking to be at least three thousand jin heavy or more. The 'King' word on its forehead was black, but somehow a different shade from its black fur, more a deep, gloomy black like the mist around the moon. The strangest thing was its tail... as compared to ordinary tigers, its tail was much longer, standing up straight upwards into the air, made out of several bone joints ending in a giant hook which gleamed with a scary shine.

Dark Demon God Tiger.

As he continued watching from above, Zhou Weiqing felt his heart clench. He finally understood what he was looking at – the original owner of his bloodline inheritance!

The huge forest had been brimming with life, but as soon as the Dark Demon God Tiger released its aura, the entire area turned icy cold and dead silent, its evil energy spreading crazily in all directions.

The next instant, the Dark Demon God Tiger seemed to sense something, its gaze turning to fix upon something in the distance, its bloodshot eyes filled with cold killing intent and powerful bloodlust.

Very quickly, Zhou Weiqing's vision perspective followed the Dark Demon God Tiger to see a human man... a man who was actually flying!

He had a head of long blue hair, and his handsome features were more than sufficient to cause any man to feel jealousy. In his hands, there was a glowing trident raised up, showering brilliant light all around. At the same time, that man seemed to have discovered the Dark Demon God Tiger's existence, and a blue light shot out from his forehead, while the gold trident in his hands also lit up even brighter, the powerful Light Aura causing Zhou Weiqing to feel a sense of aversion and fear. He could not sense how powerful this man actually was, but just the energy reverberations around him was as vast as the oceans, as if it was about to devour the entire surroundings at all time, yet his body seemed filled with pure life and vitality.

Black, black, black, black, red, black, red, red, red. Nine rings of light rose from below the handsome youth's feet, encircling his body. Man and tiger faced off, and tension rose as a battle seemed inevitable. Observing from the side, Zhou Weiqing could only feel his own heart starting to fill with bloodlust, as if he was about to turn back into the Dark Demon God Tiger.

The fight between the two erupted almost in the next instant, but alas Zhou Weiqing was no longer able to see clearly. Their speed was just too fast, multi colours flashing out non-stop from the youth's body, and the Dark Demon God Tiger was just as fast, its terrifying strength and boundless energy smashing into its foe's attacks. Very soon, their clashes had destroyed everything around.

All of a sudden, Zhou Weiqing saw a layer of grey light spring forth around the Dark Demon God Tiger. He instantly recognized it; for it was the Ward of the Demon God that he had once used before! Next, he saw countless of lightning arcs strike out... a sudden yet familiar sight, the Dark Demon God Lightning that had saved him several times! However, in comparison to his own, the lightning just burst forth from the Dark Demon God Tiger's body, and not a single bolt, but thousands striking out in different directions towards the youth!

What followed next was a sudden glow on the tail hook of the Dark Demon God Tiger, a terrifying burst of energy followed suit, shooting out in a powerful offensive attack, and in the sudden onslaught of attacks, the handsome youth almost failed to take on all the attacks.

Although Zhou Weiqing's current cultivation level and power did not allow him to see all the details of this fight, and he was thus unable to gauge who was having the upper hand, it did not stop him from feeling his blood boil with excitement. It was as if he could see his future in front of him, and he swore that he would become as powerful of them one day! At that point, Zhou Weiqing suddenly saw the entire Dark Demon God Tiger turn into a similar gray colour as the energy that had burst out of its tail. It was a crystalline grey light, spreading across the entire battlefield.

Seeing that colour, all of a sudden Zhou Weiqing was reminded of a similar 'King' word, of the same colour. A cold shiver ran down his spine as his entire body trembled. Instantly, he remembered that he was still in an illusion! This entire scene was created by the Entropic Nether Tiger Phelia!

Alas, the next instant, the Dark Demon God Tiger had suddenly lost... lost to the trident of the handsome youth. Zhou Weiqing felt a strong sense of sorrow overwhelm him. As he watched the Dark Demon God Tiger stumble and throw up with large mouthfuls of grey liquid, how he wished he could rush forward and accept the blow on behalf of the Dark Demon God Tiger. Alas, he could not.

Another green light shot forth from the young man, enveloping the entire Dark Demon God Tiger. However, right at the same time, the Dark Demon God Tiger abruptly looked up, the dimming light in its eyes suddenly flashing with a sudden brightness.

The pain and exhaustion in its eyes disappeared, and the grey mist turned black, bringing its entire body like a grey cloud which pounced onto the youth. The speed was unbelievably quick, even faster than all their fighting had been earlier. However, the instant

it pounced up, the tail hook lashed out, a bright light appearing between itself and the handsome youth. An intense black light burst forth, swiftly becoming a three metre radius black hole.

What... what was that?! Zhou Weiqing stared in shock at the sight before him. All of a sudden, he understood. That black was not Darkness as he first thought, but Time. Indeed, it was a Time Attribute Skill!

Almost simultaneously, Zhou Weiqing heard a heartrending scream, and he quickly focused away from his thoughts back to the battlefield, only to see two bolts of bluish purple light shoot forth from the youth's eyes, smashing into the protective greyish black layer of light around the Dark Demon God Tiger, destroying it instantly.

That youth was indeed powerful. Even caught by surprise by the Dark Demon God Tiger's acting, he still managed to launch such a counterattack.

Yet, a strange sight happened in the next second, and Zhou Weiqing's eyes almost bulged out in surprise as soon as the scene changed in front of him. The forest seemed to have vanished, replaced with a massive round arena. His true surprise came when he saw the two parties on the arena stage.

What was that?! A six year old boy... and a one and a half metre long black tiger?!

This... this is?!

Zhou Weiqing was no fool, but even he was taken aback for a moment, his mind blank. After a moment, he finally recollected himself and understanding dawned upon him. This was the handsome youth and the Dark Demon God Tiger that had been fighting earlier! Somehow, they had turned into their youthful selves again!

At once, Zhou Weiqing realised that the Skill which the Dark

Demon God Tiger had unleashed, in forming that huge black hole. It had to be the Time Attribute Skill that forced the two to reincarnate back into their younger selves. More so, he guessed that it was because the Dark Demon God Tiger's protective shield had been destroyed, otherwise it would still remain in its original form to face the young child form of its foe... one could imagine the ease of victory then? That Skill was truly unbelievable, not just in sheer strength, but also in how odd it was. Alas, the Dark Demon God Tiger had not expected things to progress this way.

“Welcome to the Life and Death Arena. This will be a fight to the death, and only the sole survivor can ever leave this Spatial Zone. Countdown begins – Five, Four, Three, Two, One. Start!”

A strange voice rang forth, reverberating throughout this strange new Spatial Zone. The next instant, the new fight against the two young forms began.

To Zhou Weiqing, this was a fight without suspense at all. He could easily guess the victor; after all, even if both sides were transformed to their youthful states, the young Dark Demon God Tiger should be far stronger than a mere six year old child right?

Alas, very quickly, Zhou Weiqing realised he was dreadfully wrong. The six year old child actually managed to nimbly dodge the Dark Demon God Tiger's attacks. Once. Twice. And suddenly, there was a black box in the child's hands.

A soft mechanical QIANG sound, as the black box was slowly lifted up.

SWOOSH ... A Dark Demon God Lightning shot out, just a small bolt far weaker in comparison to the waves of thousands that its adult form had shot out. Alas, at the same time, another resounding crack QIANG, and intense buzzing sounds erupted. Sixteen lines of black light spat out from the black box in the child's hands, flying out in a blur.

BOOM The first explosion was the Dark Demon God Lightning.

Even diminished, its explosive power was truly astonishing, smashing away at least six of the black shadow lines and sending them spinning in various directions. However, the remaining twelve black lines continued shooting towards the Dark Demon God Tiger in the same instant.

ThudThudThudThudThudThud A series of muffled impact sounds, and the Dark Demon God Tiger froze in place. Large clouds of grey burst forth from its body, each causing its body to tremble slightly. Its bloodshot eyes were filled with pain and disbelief.

The handsome youth opened his mouth to speak. During the entire long battle between man and beast, this was the first time Zhou Weiqing had heard any words exchanged.

“My apologies, you have indeed been a worthy opponent. I must admit that out of all the spirit beasts I have seen, you are the most cunning and treacherous, perhaps the most intelligent one. Not only do you have such formidable strength, but such calculation, strategy and battle planning... It’s no wonder you are able to survive up to now, even as a Dark Demon God Tiger who all attack. I believe that you would be considered a king amongst the entire Dark Demon God Tiger Tribe, however few they number. I must admit that in terms of planning and control, I have lost terribly. I underestimated your strength too much, and my overconfidence let me overlook the possibility of danger. Unfortunately, luck wasn’t on your side today. I have to say that even if I am six years old, I may or may not have lost to you, but I remain confident because I am a Tang Sect disciple. But more importantly, even though your Time ability is exceedingly powerful, it was not able to restrain my Spirit Tool. The Godly Zhuge Crossbow has once again become the key to my victory. When you and I were returned to childhood and arrived in this strange Spatial Zone, your loss was already destined. But I will admit that you are an enemy worthy of respect. A powerful opponent indeed.”

Saying so, the handsome youth gave the Dark Demon God Tiger a

slight bow, expressing his respect. At the same time, the Dark Demon God Tiger also seemed to understand what had been said to him, giving the youth a hateful glare and a last unwilling roar. Its bloodshot eyes seemed to blaze with fire, as if spitting out flame.

All of a sudden, the youth shuddered all over, as if he had understood something from the Dark Demon God Tiger's gaze. His face paled, and at last he said: "Well, it seems my luck has really been excellent. Goodbye then."

Chapter 178 Phelia's Approval! (1)

QiangQiangQiang Pupupupupu

The mass of blood and grey mist once again exploded out from the Dark Demon God Tiger's body. No matter how tough or resilient it was, this time all its life was fully extinguished by the exploding shrapnel of the metal crossbow bolts. This arduous fight was finally over.

The entire area twisted and shimmered once more, distorting as the entire Spatial Zone shattered. Darkness fell once more, and the handsome youth finally relaxed his tensed body, slowly lowering the Godly Zhuge Crossbow.

Light flashed, and his entire body grew lighter. By the time his feet were once again firmly planted on the ground, the youth was already back in the Star Dou Great Forest, everything restored back to the previous original state. The Gold Trident also lay quietly at his feet once more. Not far ahead of him, the Dark Demon God Tiger's giant corpse lay silently, and on top of it floated a strange pearl. The pearl was entirely pure black, but green and blue colored lights seemed to swirl within as well.

What was that? Before the youth could react, the black hole which had been the Time Skill seemed to burst forth with a strange but powerful suction. Instantly, the strange pearl flew inside. Without hesitation, the handsome youth promptly used the Controlling Crane Catching Dragon, but just at the same moment as he caught hold of the pearl, the black hole closed with a bang, the spatial rend in the skies sealing back to normal state. The strange pearl from the Dark Demon God Tiger's corpse had disappeared.

Shock. Zhou Weiqing was totally shaken by the entire experience.

As soon as the black hole closed, the entire scene in front of Zhou

Weiqing distorted once more, blurring into an illusory sight. However, he knew that everything that had happened was true... all those events had definitely happened before, and he finally knew the origin of the black pearl he had swallowed so long ago. It was the Nucleus Core of the Dark Demon God Tiger after its death! An origin that was from another world totally, a world where the Dark Demon God Tiger was not a Heavenly Beast, but called a Spirit Beast. What Zhou Weiqing had inherited was its bloodline!

A sudden powerful exhaustion filled Zhou Weiqing's entire body, but the distorted reality around him did not vanish. Right in the midst of the illusory environment, a solid figure slowly appeared. At the same time, Zhou Weiqing found that he was no longer in 'perspective mode', finally appearing in his own body as well.

The figure that appeared was a woman dressed in black, looking to be about twenty seven years of age or so. She was extremely beautiful, her features at least seventy percent similar to Tian'er. Her gaze was gentle as she looked at Zhou Weiqing silently, not making any sound at all.

A powerful alarm rose in Zhou Weiqing's heart. Even though he had been caught in this illusory reality for such a long time, he still managed to keep the last bit of clarity in his mind's core. He knew deep inside that this was not reality, and it was all a created illusion.

"Child, you are far more outstanding than I even imagined, and not only that, you also have this bloodline that shocks even myself. Demonic and Time together, this is a talent that I have been searching for for all these years. Are you willing to help me?"

A familiar voice, as the black clad lady spoke out. Her gentle gaze on Zhou Weiqing was kindly and amiable as she did so.

"You... you are Phelia?" Zhou Weiqing instantly recognized that familiar voice. Wasn't it the exact same one as the Entropic Nether Tiger, Phelia?

Phelia nodded and said: “Indeed, I am Phelia. Just now, you have already heard my conversation with AoTian. We had the fortune to have relations of man and wife, but unfortunately we have never been able to stay together. That is because I am a guardian, and I have to stay back to guard it. This role of guardian will stay forever unless the Heavens Transform. As for you and Tian’er, it has given me a hope for that to finally happen.”

Zhou Weiqing started momentarily: “Aunty, I’m afraid I do not really understand what you mean.”

Phelia smiled faintly and said: “It is not time for you to understand yet. Some things are not meant for you to learn too early, otherwise it will not be beneficial for your growth. If you are willing to help me, I will teach you a mating-cultivation technique for you and Tian’er, and it will be of great benefit to both of your cultivation. Of course, one day, when you finally have the power to aid me, I will look for you.”

Upon hearing that, Zhou Weiqing was overjoyed. “Does that mean, I am the son-in-law that you approve of?”

Phelia sighed gently and said: “No, you are wrong. It is not my approval, but Tian’er’s. That year, when I gave birth to Tian’er, I had no choice but to leave her and continue my Guardianship. Twenty years... I have never played my role as mother, never executed my responsibilities to her.”

“If Tian’er did not love you, then no matter how talented you are, I will never choose you. I have chosen you because my daughter has already chosen you, and you just happened to have the other two Saint Attributes, and such a young age as well. Treat Tian’er well, and love her well. She has been so pitiful since young, never knowing the love of a mother, and she was even prepared to meet death for your sake.”

“I will.” Zhou Weiqing said firmly, the resolution clear in his voice and eyes.

Phelia smiled faintly and said: “I believe you. In truth, the current you is just like AoTian so many years ago. For the sake of your lover, you can do anything, fight anything to win. Of course, the only difference between you and AoTian is that you have more fraternity in love. You do not need to suspect anything, I can see into your heart. In this world, a powerful man is always able to draw the attention of the opposite sex... that is the natural way of life. I will not blame you, but I hope that you will never disappoint Tian'er or break her heart. This is not a threat, but the request of a mother.”

Zhou Weiqing's expression was rather embarrassed. He truly did not know what to say. Being called that by his woman's mother, that was a feeling that only someone who experienced it personally could describe.

Phelia took a step forward, and in the distorted reality she appeared in front of Zhou Weiqing, holding onto his left hand.

Just as Zhou Weiqing was taken aback, he suddenly saw Phelia's eyes turning into the deep black, just like before, as if the orbs had become two black holes of infinity.

“Count this as a present for you.” Along with Phelia's voice, Zhou Weiqing felt a strange cooling energy well into his body. That energy was not Heavenly Energy or even Spiritual Energy purely, but a strange fusion of many types of energies.

The cool feeling quickly spread across Zhou Weiqing's entire body, and he only felt a soothing comfort all around. The fatigue he was feeling was wiped out, and he could sense that something had been added to his mind.

...

While Zhou Weiqing was experiencing all that in the illusory world, back in the real world, what the four powerhouses saw was very different.

When the strange entropic field of light enveloped Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing, both their bodies started to shudder violently, as if suffering unimaginable pain.

In an instant, Gu Yingbing turned into his Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion form, and Zhou Weiqing crouched down onto the ground, his right leg lifted up high as the black tiger tattoos around his body grew thicker and more obvious.

Both the Lion King and Long Shiya were extremely nervous. After all, the Entropic Nether Tiger was a Heavenly God Tier Beast! She was at the same level as Dragon kind. Facing the aura suppression of a Heavenly God Tier Beast, let alone these two little fellows, even for them as Heavenly Emperor Stage powerhouses, it would not be easy at all.

Barely a minute passed before the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion form of Gu Yingbing vomited out a mouth of blood. In a flash, Xue AoTian appeared before him, forcefully breaking through the entropic barrier of light to grab him back to the main group, personally circulating his Heavenly Energy to heal Gu Yingbing.

Almost at the same time, a fresh new miracle seemed to happen to Zhou Weiqing, drawing the rest of their attention. From the wings on his back onwards, Zhou Weiqing's entire body started to change colour.

The original greyish black slowly became a mysterious shade of purple, and the original tiger tattoos were being replaced by scales. The powerful aura of the Dark Demon God Tiger burst forth even stronger, and his entire body started trembling even more violently. Faintly, they could hear the sounds of tigers and dragons roaring.

“This... this is...” The Tiger King's eyes opened wide in shock.

He was not the only one. Even Xue AoTian couldn't help but stare dazedly. “Dragon... Aura of a Dragon?”

Xue AoTian, the Lion King and Tiger King. All their eyes suddenly turned to Long Shiya.

Long Shiya said proudly: “Old Monster Xue, in terms of power I may have lost to you, but in terms of disciples, you are far from me. My precious disciple’s bloodline is truly one of a kind in the entire world, not even you can compare in that sense. He once helped a Dragon in the Heaven’s Expanse Palace Lustre Spatial Realm, and from that he gained the Solidified Dragon Spirit. Just before coming here, he managed to complete the blood fusion between his original bloodline and the Solidified Dragon Spirit. Otherwise... do you think I would bring him here to make a fool of himself?”

The meeting of Dragons and Tigers, Bloodline Fusion! The eight words instantly appeared in the minds of the three powerhouses. The Lion King’s expression was now extremely ugly. He had never dreamed that this mere puny little six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master could be of such threat to his own son.

However, Long Shiya did not remain smug for long, instead turning to Xue AoTian worriedly: “Old Monster Xue, the victor is clear. Hurry up and get your wife to stop, and let my disciple go.”

Phelia’s barrier of entropic energy, even Long Shiya did not dare to easily enter it. It was not that he was afraid of her, but he was afraid that if he entered, it might cause a chain reaction that ended up in harming Zhou Weiqing. With Phelia’s Heavenly God Tier power, even her little finger could destroy Zhou Weiqing easily.

Right at that moment, they suddenly saw Phelia move. In a single step, she appeared in front of Zhou Weiqing, her front claw gently resting on his left shoulder. The entire entropic shield turned hazy, and they could no longer see into the depths from outside.

Long Shiya was extremely worried, and was about to move in when Xue AoTian stopped him with a hand.

“Phelia knows what she is doing, Bro Long, do not worry.” Xue

AoTian said solemnly.

Long Shiya was just too worried because he cared too much. However, he had his own thinking. After all, now that they were in the cavern deep within the Heavenly Snow Mountain, and the other side had two Heavenly God Tier and two Heavenly Emperor Tier powerhouses. If they truly wanted to take down him and Zhou Weiqing, it would be hard to say that they could successfully escape.

Chapter 178 Phelia's Approval! (2)

Of course, the chances of that happening were minuscule. With Long Shiya's experience, how could he not see the approval that Xue AoTian held for Zhou Weiqing. Otherwise, with his status and power, he need not even give Zhou Weiqing the chance to compete.

Taking a deep breath, Long Shiya forced himself to calm down, though he kept his guard up and senses extended to the max. If he sensed anything amiss, he would definitely take action first.

As Xue AoTian sent wave after wave of Divine energy into Gu Yingbing's body, his wounds slowly mended and his spirit also recovered slightly. However, his eyes were currently filled with a conflicted expression. Without question, he had lost at this last round of the test. Up until now, Zhou Weiqing was still withstanding the pressure. Furthermore, when Zhou Weiqing had actually entered the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, he had already left the suppression area and clearly sensed it. Power aside, the patience and thought behind Zhou Weiqing's actions caused Gu Yingbing to be filled with alarm.

There were still two more competitions ahead, and as his Master had said, Zhou Weiqing had to defeat him in all three before he could claim victory. Currently, Gu Yingbing truly wanted to know what the contents of the next two tests were, and the one he hoped for most was a direct confrontational clash with Zhou Weiqing. Only then did he feel that he could grasp victory in his hands. After all, in terms of cultivation level, he was still so far ahead of Zhou Weiqing, almost an insurmountable gap between them. No matter how powerful and pure his bloodline was, he would not be able to fully bring it into play in an actual fight.

If those were the terms of fighting, Gu Yingbing was still confident in his own victory.

Just as the others were still nervously lost in their own thoughts, all of a sudden, the entropic barrier dissipated. The Entropic Nether Tiger Phelia had already disappeared, leaving on Zhou Weiqing sitting there cross-legged in a meditative position.

Currently, Zhou Weiqing was sitting there with his eyes closed, his face peaceful. The Dragon-Tiger Transformation had already vanished, though his upper body was naked, showing his solid bronzed muscles.

Without Phelia's shield covering Zhou Weiqing, Long Shiya could instantly sense his condition. Seeing his disciple was fine, he heaved a sigh of relief.

Turning his gaze to Xue AoTian, he said: "Old Monster Xue, the outcome of this first test is very clear right, you should proclaim it now."

Xue AoTian nodded his head and said: "Very well, as you all have seen, the first round of overwhelming with aura, the results are out. Zhou Weiqing has lasted longer in the tenth round, so he is the victor of the overall competition. I will give you both another two hours to rest and recover before we start on the next test."

Towards Xue AoTian's proclamation, the Lion King Gu Site was not able to say anything. The outcome had been very clear to everyone's eyes, and if he tried to argue it would be beneath his status. Furthermore, there were still two more rounds. However, his feelings were no longer as relaxed as they had been earlier. Zhou Weiqing's showing had proved that he could be of actual threat to Gu Yingbing.

"Mountain Lord, while bloodline and aura suppression is important, actual combat is the most important to any Heavenly Jewel Master. For the second test, shouldn't they compete in actual combat?" Gu Site asked Xue AoTian curiously. His thinking was the same as Gu Yingbing, that it would be faster and more direct to just defeat Zhou Weiqing in a face to face clash.

Although Zhou Weiqing had the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor as his Master, Gu Yingbing also had the strongest powerhouse in the entire world as his Master, the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord. Even if their fighting skills were similar, or with Zhou Weiqing's slightly higher, but the difference in cultivation level was too huge that no amount of talent or skills could overcome. Actual combat was very different from aura suppression and overwhelming after all.

Xue AoTian nodded and said: "That is correct. The second test is actual combat."

Hearing those words, Gu Site finally smiled once more. Long Shiya did not say anything; he knew that since he dared to bring Zhou Weiqing here, there was no avoiding some fighting. Towards Zhou Weiqing, this would be his most difficult test, and the most important as well. If he wanted to go home with his girl, he had to pass this round as well, otherwise everything else was false.

In truth, Long Shiya was not sure whether or not Zhou Weiqing could succeed, but he wanted to give his precious disciple a chance. After all, one could lose a fight, it was just a matter of your skill being below your opponent for now, and he had the confidence he could still bring his disciple back down safely. Having the courage to fight for yourself was the most important thing. In any case, at least from the way things were going, it was still relatively smooth sailing. However, this next test would be a critical point ahead.

Time passed, minute after minute. No one else knew what had happened between Zhou Weiqing and the Entropic Nether Tiger Phelia in the last round, but they could all sense that his Heavenly Energy was still brimming. Sitting there cross legged, it seemed like like he had already recovered from the previous test, perhaps just some fatigue in terms of spirit.

The bloodline of Dragon and Tiger... was this bloodline of that unknown black tiger fused with the Solidified Dragon Spirit so strong? Even the Entropic Nether Tiger was not able to fully

suppress him. That only meant one thing – just in terms of bloodline quality alone, Zhou Weiqing's bloodline was already above that of the Entropic Nether Tiger, and naturally that also meant that it was superior to both the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger and Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion bloodlines. One could imagine what a shocking news that was! Towards Zhou Weiqing, all the powerhouses present had a fresh recognition towards him.

Two hours passed very quickly. Previously when Xue AoTian was speaking out the time for their rest, both Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing could clearly hear it. Although Gu Yingbing was injured, his spirit somewhat damaged by the invasion of the entropic field, but under Xue AoTian's healing and the two hours of rest, he had pretty much recovered back to his prime state.

Gu Yingbing stood up once more. Currently, this Lion Prince was once again filled with a powerful fighting intent. He had not expected to lose the first round, but he would not allow himself to lose again this time. Otherwise, even if he finally won the third test, he would not be able to live with himself as it would be an overall loss in his eyes. How could he live up to his name as the Lion Prince? Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing was more than ten years younger than he was! If he could still lose, then in the near future as that fellow grew stronger, could he have a chance?

Filled with all sorts of complicated thoughts, Gu Yingbing's fighting spirit was fuelled to the maximum.

On the other side, Zhou Weiqing had slowly gotten up from the floor. His eyes had returned to their normal black colour, looking as if he was totally fine, and he had not just been aura suppressed by the Entropic Nether Tiger.

However, the one most familiar with Zhou Weiqing, Long Shiya, could tell from the details that Zhou Weiqing's eyes had some changes. An additional calm and tranquility, and a hint of joy within as well. Seeing that, Long Shiya finally relaxed. With Zhou Weiqing's intelligence and wit, he would not be taken advantage of

so easily, and if he had been, then he would not have such a look in his eyes. It was clear that the future mother in law had given him some benefits. Furthermore, he could judge from it that the one Phelia had chosen was clearly Zhou Weiqing.

Although this was the first time Long Shiya had met Old Monster Xue's wife, he could just imagine how much feelings Xue AoTian must have for her. Twenty years apart! Without question, Phelia would have a great influence on him, and if this future mother-in-law had approved of Zhou Weiqing, then his chances would increase greatly.

Xue AoTian motioned Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing to come before him. As they did so, Xue AoTian said solemnly: "The first test was on your personal potential and bloodline power."

"Zhou Weiqing is the victor for the first test, but there are two more tests to go. Now, for the second competition, it will be a test of your actual fighting capabilities. If either of you want to marry my daughter, you will need to have the ability to protect her."

"This fight will not be between the two of you. After all, you are more than ten years apart in terms of age, and your cultivation level gap is large too. If it is just a fight between the two of you, then it will be too unfair to Zhou Weiqing."

Hearing Xue AoTian's words, the Lion King Gu Site was anxious. Taking a hurried step forward, he said: "Mountain Lord, that isn't good right? Although his age is younger, he was the one who came here to snatch the bride. You said it yourself earlier, Yingbing deserves to have an advantage right."

Xue AoTian's face darkened. "Lion King, do you think that my disciple is not able to win a fight under fair circumstances?"

Although Gu Site was the King of the WanShou Empire, and his character had always been strong, in front of Xue AoTian he dared not be too impetuous. His face changed several times, before he sighed softly and said: "As the Mountain Lord instructs."

Xue AoTian continued passively: “This second test, Bro Long, you and the Lion King will be participating. For fairness sake, you will each be testing Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing. Bro Long, you will be testing Yingbing, the Lion King will test Zhou Weiqing. In this way, there will not be any unfairness.”

The Lion King Gu Site was still having a vexed look on his face a moment ago, but he started upon hearing that, and joy replaced it. He thought to himself: “The heavens are with me. Hmph, for this King to take care of that little brat, won’t it be a simple task?”

Long Shiya’s expression grew ugly. Although he did not think that Gu Yingbing could defend against himself for long, but with Zhou Weiqing at the six-Jeweled cultivation level, it was even worse for him against the Lion King Gu Site! How could they possibly compete like that?”

Xue AoTian said: “My words are not done, both of you do not need to be so anxious. In order to properly test their power, I will be binding both your powers. I will use a Sealing Skill to restrict your Heavenly Energy... once the Heavenly Energy you use goes beyond my Seal, then it will be breaking the rules, and that means the disciple or son of your side will be considered to have lost. If that does not happen, then whoever loses first between Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing will have lost the fight.”

Hearing his words, Long Shiya’s expression settled. “Old Monster Xue, to what levels will you be restricting our cultivation level during the fight then?”

Chapter 178 Phelia's Approval! (3)

Xue AoTian smiled faintly and said: “Bro Long and the Lion King, both of you have countless experience in fighting. Compared to the two young ones, both of your fighting capabilities are much stronger. However, Bro Long’s Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation is unparalleled in the world. If at the same level, even I will not be Bro Long’s match. As such, let’s have Bro Long be at the limit of nine-Jewels while testing Yingbing. In such an arrangement, Yingbing will be able to fully spark his potential as well. As for Zhou Weiqing, he is at the six-Jeweled cultivation level, and should have already learned Bro Long’s Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation. In addition to that, as I said previously, Yingbing will be given some advantage in the test. As such, the Lion King can test Zhou Weiqing at the limit of eight Jewels. How does that sound to both of you?”

“I do not agree.” Long Shiya said without hesitation, his face angry. “Old Monster Xue, that is too obviously a bias. What difference is there from a eight-Jeweled Lion King and a nine-Jeweled Gu Yingbing? In that case, we might as well let the two youths fight each other. Who needs your so-called fairness?”

Xue AoTian smiled and said: “Bro Long, hold your horses, let me finish. During the entire process of the test, both Bro Long and the Lion King are not allowed to use any of your Consolidated Equipment. You can only use your Elemental Jewel Skills. Alright, now, that is fair right?”

Hearing his words, Long Shiya couldn’t help but be slightly surprised. Indeed, if it were the Lion King restricted at Eight Jewels and not allowed to use any Consolidated Equipment, then he would be slightly weaker than Gu Yingbing who could use everything in his arsenal. As for himself, even if he did not use any Consolidated Equipment, just with his Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation alone at the nine-Jeweled cultivation

level, he was confident of taking down Gu Yingbing fairly quickly.

Seeing that Long Shiya was no longer protesting, Xue AoTian turned to the Lion King questioningly.

Almost without thinking, Gu Site immediately nodded. As a King of an entire Empire, how could he not have faith in himself? Even if he could only use the Elemental Jewels, his restricted strength would still mean he would be two Jewels higher than the little brat. Furthermore, do not forget that as the King of the WanShou Empire, in terms of Skill Storing, he was definitely at the top of the entire world. It could be said that all the Skills that he had Stored were amongst the most powerful. Furthermore, he had many years of combat experience, and Gu Site was absolutely confident in himself. As for his son, although he knew Long Shiya was strong, without the use of his Consolidated Equipment, he felt that Gu Yingbing would be able to hold on for enough time.

This competition was no longer a competition between Zhou Weiqing and Gu Yingbing; it had also become a competition between Long Shiya and Gu Site!

Xue AoTian looked at both sides and said: “This round, both the Tiger King and myself will be the judge. Bro Long, Lion King, I will now start to place the Seal on you both.”

Long Shiya gave a cold laugh and said: “Old Monster Xue, no need for my Seal. This is your Heavenly Snow Mountain, how can I possibly trust you with that? With you at the side judging, are you still afraid that I will use any Heavenly Energy above ninth Jewel? Well, on the other hand, that Lion King, you better Seal him, otherwise who knows what he will do with his character.”

The Lion King immediately retorted angrily: “Fatty Long, you dare say that about my character?”

Long Shiya said arily: “Whose character is bad, we know by ourselves. Stop acting with that rash face, you think this old man still can’t see through all your acts? Otherwise, I wouldn’t be called

the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor. You fake old lion, better be careful, with only an eight-Jeweled cultivation, you better not stumble and capsize before my disciple. Heh heh, we'll see then if you still have the face to remain King."

"You..." Gu Site's eyes turned cold, as he snapped out of that 'rash anger' he had been acting with. Coldly, he said: "Very good, Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor. We shall see who is the one who actually fails miserably and capsizes in a storm drain!"

At Xue AoTian's signal, both sides slowly separated. In the end, Xue AoTian really did not Seal Long Shiya, but he still personally Sealed the Lion King, with the excuse of not allowing outsiders to call them out. The judges were then split as well, with the Tiger King keeping watch on the Lion King and Zhou Weiqing, while Xue AoTian personally kept watch on Long Shiya against Gu Yingbing. As such, the second test was finally ready and about to begin.

Ever since Xue AoTian had revealed the details of the second competition, Zhou Weiqing had been keeping silent at the side, waiting for the test to start without making a sound. He did not bother thinking about the third test, or when that might happen. Everything depended on getting through this fight first. As such, he now placed full attention on the Lion King Gu Site.

Facing a Heavenly Emperor Stage powerhouse, Zhou Weiqing dared not be careless at all. Although the rules were that the Lion King could only use Heavenly Energy up to the eight-Jeweled stage, but Zhou Weiqing still decided to treat him as a Heavenly Emperor. In the midst of the dim light falling upon him, Zhou Weiqing's face was grave and solemn. Although he had just gained an unexpected benefit earlier, facing the King of the entire WanShou Empire, he could only do his best, put his all, and the result could only depend on how well he could bring all his powers into play against the restrained Lion King.

Xue AoTian looked at both sides. The Lion King and Zhou Weiqing were about ten yards apart, and the same case for Long

Shiya and Gu Yingbing. At such a distance, towards people of their caliber, any Skill would already be effective. Any attack would be able to work from there, crushing down with irresistible force, and it would be up to the other to handle it. This was a good starting distance indeed.

“Begin.” At last, Xue AoTian shouted the word out loud, and both sides sprang into action as combat began.

For the sake of his precious disciple, Long Shiya did not hold back at all. Instantly, six coloured lights rose from his body, flashing brightly. His Heavenly Jewels rose and spun over his head as his Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation was unleashed. Instantly, a vast amount of atmospheric Heavenly Energy gathered around him, as well as his Six Attribute powers, revolving around Long Shiya.

Xue AoTian was watching from the side all this while. From Long Shiya, he could only sense the Heavenly Energy of the Nine-Jeweled stage. Of course, Long Shiya did not hesitate to use the Max Level Nine Jeweled stage, not the Low Level Nine Jeweled Stage that Gu Yingbing currently was.

As the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation sprang up around Long Shiya, Gu Yingbing did not remain idle. He did not bother attempting to use his Consolidating Equipment God Protective Aura to slowly block the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor’s attack individually. He had long since heard from Xue AoTian before that Long Shiya’s fighting style was extremely different from any other ordinary Heavenly Jewel Master. In a fight, if you gave Long Shiya any advantage, his offense would then be a crazed flurry like the cascading waters of a raging river. With the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation, he did not have any cooldown or waiting time, and even the smallest, tiniest Skill... in Long Shiya’s hands it would be at full power, maximum effect. Even when Xue AoTian was facing Long Shiya, he did not dare to let him get a good head start and build up momentum... Let

alone Gu Yingbing now.

As such, as soon as the fight started, Gu Yingbing did not hesitate to unleash all of his Consolidated Equipment. Six God Tier Consolidated Equipment and three Zong Stage Consolidated Equipment appeared around his body instantly, all nine of his current possible Consolidated Equipment.

A resplendent gold light of his Equipment mixed with the dark-gold light of the Consolidating Equipment God Protective Aura, and Gu Yingbing's aura was extended to the max. From just the outward appearance of the intensity of lights alone, even Long Shiya was lesser than he was currently.

However, just from the Consolidated Equipment that Gu Yingbing had summoned, one could see the difference between the Heaven's Expanse Palace and the Heavenly Snow Mountain.

The Heavenly Snow Mountain's advantage and superiority lay in its vast numbers of powerful Heavenly Beasts, which also led to them having a massive advantage in Skill Storing. More so, with these Heavenly Beasts, though they might not be able to attack out so easily, protecting themselves was a guarantee. Otherwise, they might have been long since crushed by the other four Great Saint Lands.

However, in terms of wealth, The Heavenly Snow Mountain was no match at all for the Heaven's Expanse Palace. Do not forget that Gu Yingbing was the Lion Prince, not only was he the Crown Prince of the entire WanShou Empire, though he had given up the position as heir to the throne for now, but he was also the main disciple to the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord! It was without a doubt that the Lion King Gu Site had placed so much hope on this eldest son of his, and even under such a circumstance, with Gu Yingbing reaching the Ninth Jewel Stage, he was still only able to have six God Tier Consolidated Equipment instead of all nine. From that, one could just imagine how lacking the WanShou Empire were in terms of Consolidated Equipment.

If it were any of the main or core disciples of the Heaven's Expanse Palace, for example of Shangguan Fei'er reached the Nine-Jeweled stage... she would definitely have nine pieces of an entire Legendary Set. If the Legendary Set only had nine pieces in total, then she would have already completed the entire set at this stage... and her future Consolidated Equipment would surely still be God Tier Consolidated Equipment.

The sheer difference between an entire Legendary Set of Consolidated Equipment as compared to just nine ordinary pieces of even God Tier Consolidated Equipment was like Heaven and Earth. If Gu Yingbing really had an entire Set like that, then perhaps even a restrained Long Shiya who could only use the nine-Jeweled Heavenly Energy and not his own 'Hate Sky No Handle' Legendary Set would be hard pressed to take him on. Perhaps even to the extent of having a chance of losing! After all, the boost of an entire Legendary Set was just too terrifying.

Even so, under the current circumstance, a six piece Legendary Set of God Tier Consolidated Equipment still brought quite a massive advantage, but compared to Long Shiya's Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation, it was still just not enough. Of course, Gu Yingbing had already brought out all of his current power and was in tip top condition for this fight.

After unleashing all his Consolidated Equipment, Gu Yingbing instantly launched his own attacks. In a flash, he already appeared in midair. A distance of ten yards, it was perfect for him to strike out with the large gold long cudgel which had appeared in his hands. An earsplitting whistle as he smashed through the air alongside a massive surge of Heavenly Energy that morphed in a gold blur smashing out at Long Shiya.

In his first attack, Gu Yingbing had already used his strongest Divine Attribute. Having a Saint Attribute was his greatest weapon, and without a doubt he had to go all out from the start. He could only win this round, or hold out for a longer time than

Zhou Weiqing, only then would he smash through all the barriers between him and Tian'er as his wife.

...

On the other side, Zhou Weiqing's thoughts on this fight was almost identical to Gu Yingbing. Both youths could be said to have set full resolve to pit their lives in this fight. They did not focus on the 'opposing' side at all, only focusing all their attention on their own fight. At least, even if they lost in the end, they had to have given their all. Only then could they have no regrets in this competition.

Chapter 179 Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation! (1)

Facing Gu Yingbing's attack, Long Shiya's expression remained impassive. He waved his hand towards Gu Yingbing in mid air. His reaction seemed slow even, but even if he struck second, his attack reached first. As Gu Yingbing's cudgel came smashing down, six blades of light had already come to greet it. Not just one set, but an entire chain series of them!

Upon seeing that sight, even Xue AoTian at the side couldn't help but reveal a hint of surprise. He could clearly sense that in terms of Heavenly Energy control, Long Shiya had improved from the last time they had fought.

Ever since Long Shiya's cultivation level had reached the Max Level Heavenly Emperor Stage, it had stalled there. This was also his greatest regret. However, since his Heavenly Energy was unable to raise up, then the only way he could improve his fighting capabilities was to strengthen his control over Heavenly Energy, to better control how he used it, timing and explosive effect to deal stronger blows. Only then did it allow him to hold his own against the Heavenly God Tier Xue AoTian. Of course, his chances of winning were still extremely minimal.

A series of explosions rang out in the air in a chain, and Gu Yingbing was shocked to find that although this cudgel strike of his had been nigh perfect, no matter in terms of power or momentum, it was already at the maximum he could have possibly done, yet the strike had still failed to actually smash down.

Gu Yingbing's body remained suspended in midair. He could clearly sense the six coloured blades of light did not seem to hold the power to block his God Tier Consolidated Cudgel filled with the his own Divine Attribute Heavenly Energy, and he did not sense any powerful impact blocking him. Yet, he was just unable to

complete the blow!

What is going on!? Gu Yingbing's heart was filled with shock, and he continued trying to circulate his Heavenly Energy at full power.

Upon seeing that sight, Xue AoTian's face changed slightly. With a single look he had seen how Long Shiya had managed it.

The reason why Gu Yingbing had not been able to discern the reason was simple – he just had not reached that state yet. Although Long Shiya was only using the Heavenly Energy of the nine-Jeweled stage, but his state attained was already at the Heavenly Emperor stage, and his control over Heavenly Energy was also at that state, or even further. In that short instant, Long Shiya had set a trap for Gu Yingbing, making use of his own powerful offense against him to lead him into the cunning trap.

In fact, the attack that Long Shiya had activated looked to be a bunch of blades of light. However, each and every blade held their own myriad of changes and profound meanings behind.

For example, amongst the six blades of light, the Earth Attribute was focused on blocking, the Fire Attribute focused on exploding and causing momentum, the Wind Attribute to throw off the opponent's body and movement. Etc etc. The Six Attributes each had their own small but important role to play, but it was as they came together that fit everything into a sum that was far greater than its parts. Although it wasn't sufficient to break apart Gu Yingbing's attack, it was able to stop him from actually landing the blow. In such a way, the succession of continued blades of light would have the similar effect, causing a final situation that had come into play – Attrition.

Indeed, it was Attrition. What Long Shiya was using was the simplest and most effective way to fight against Gu Yingbing.

Gu Yingbing's body was already in midair, and he dared not change anything now. If he retreated, then Long Shiya's blades of

light would be able to chase up and attack him in a crazed flurry. When that happened, perhaps Gu Yingbing would no longer have any chance to retaliate anymore, and lose the fight directly. As such, he could only continue circulating all his Heavenly Energy into the cudgel, to smash down with all his might upon Long Shiya, hoping he could break free of the continuous stream of blades of light, to change a blow suddenly and gain advantage to continue fighting.

Alas, now that he was already locked in this state, how could Long Shiya possibly give him the chance to recover? With the aid of the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation, Long Shiya did not even need to use any powerful or high rated Skills, just using the six Attribute blades of light to continuously drain Gu Yingbing. In this way, whoever's Heavenly Energy ran out first would lose the fight.

Without question, for Long Shiya, this was considered a rather 'stupid' method. However, there was one benefit for this – stability.

With the power of the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation, its terrifying recovery rate, as well as the advantage of being able to use Max Level Nine-Jeweled stage against a Low Level Nine-Jeweled Stage, using this method Long Shiya was able to guarantee victory in a stable method, and also almost at a time he could predict.

The reason why he did so was the truly intelligent part about Long Shiya. No matter what, Gu Yingbing was still Xue AoTian's disciple, and his planned son-in-law. He knew Xue AoTian must have taught him everything, let alone the support from the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion Tribe. Long Shiya would never underestimate Xue AoTian, having a healthy respect for him. Who knew how many Skills or Secret Arts Gu Yingbing had? Long Shiya did not know. Although he still had absolute confidence he would not have the tables overturned against himself, but what if he had

some secret arts that enabled him to escape? In that case, Long Shiya would not be able to defeat him in time. Instead of having all these unknown variables in the equation, he decided to just use the safest, stablest and most direct method, however stupid it might seem, to guarantee his victory, and hopefully Zhou Weiqing's victory as well!

By the time Gu Yingbing could discover this plan, he should have already expended a huge amount of Heavenly Energy. Furthermore, even if he wanted to back out now, it would not be an easy task.

As Gu Yingbing strengthened the circulation of Heavenly Energy in an attempt to overwhelm his opponent, he started unleashing Spirit Attribute attacks to harrass Long Shiya at the same time. Alas, although the Spirit Attribute was a Saint Attribute, there was just too massive a gap between his own spiritual energy and Long Shiya's.

Amongst all Elemental Jewels, even compared to other Saint Attributes, perhaps the Spirit Attribute was the most unique. If at the same level, when one compared the Spirit Attribute to any other single Attribute, it was considered practically invincible. Suppression of the spirit could cause one's opponent to be confused or mess up, or it could even become an actual attack.

Unless one had unique methods to defend oneself from such spiritual attacks, or perhaps using other Saint Attributes to weaken the power of the Spirit Attribute, otherwise in a fight it was already a major disadvantage.

At the same time, the Spirit Attribute also had one weak point. Strangely, its strongest point could also be its weakest point – spiritual energy. If an opponent's spiritual energy was more than three times that of the Spirit Attribute's user, then they were practically immune to all of those spiritual attacks.

Unfortunately for Gu Yingbing, Long Shiya's spiritual energy...

how could it be as easy as merely three times that of Gu Yingbing's! Having trained so much in the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation, although Long Shiya did not have the Spirit Attribute of his own, it could be said that of those present here, besides Xue AoTian, no one else could compare to him... not even the Lion King.

As such, when Gu Yingbing continued trying to harrass Long Shiya with his spiritual attacks, it was a totally futile attempt. As for his Fire Attribute... nothing more need to be said for that. Even his Saint Attributes had failed, adding a Fire Attribute to the mix, an Attribute which Long Shiya also had himself, was merely just a further waste of energy.

Gu Yingbing was so vexed by his continued failure that he was almost speechless. He had so many powerful Skills, but at this point, Long Shiya would not give him a chance to use anymore of them. On the surface it seemed like Gu Yingbing was the one attacking, but by now he was being fully suppressed on all fronts by Long Shiya. Control over the entire fight was totally in Long Shiya's hands, and having a fight go like this, how could one not be vexed? Yet, Gu Yingbing had no other choice in the matter, and could only continue in this stalemate.

Even though Xue AoTian could easily see through this with a single glance, there was nothing he could do or say. After all, before the fights, he had not set any rules about how they would go about fighting. Furthermore, Gu Yingbing had been the one who attacked first, and he could not comment on Long Shiya's strategy on meeting that attack. He could only stand at the side and watch helplessly as Gu Yingbing's Heavenly Energy continued being eroded away.

Of course, Gu Yingbing was no pushover either. As soon as he realised that he was stuck in this stalemate, he began to start exerting finer control over his Heavenly Energy.

Naturally, his control over Heavenly Energy was no match for

Long Shiya, definitely not as fine as the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation. Still, he had the Spirit Attribute, and being so well trained, he was definitely much more skilled and had finer control over his Heavenly Energy than any ordinary Heavenly Jewel Master. As he focused on that, he was able to slowly bring down his expenditure, turning some of his offense into defense to form a more equilibrium state in midair. In this way, he would not waste as much energy as previously. At the same time, Gu Yingbing also turned into his Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion form, allowing his rate of absorption of atmospheric energy to grow. Even if that was still affected by the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation, he was at least able to stem the tide slightly.

At least, he would not lose to Long Shiya too quickly in the near future.

Now that both Long Shiya and Gu Yingbing had gone through the series of clashes and adaptations, both sides were pretty much in a forced stalemate. Gu Yingbing had no way to break out of it, but Long Shiya also did not have a good way to end things quickly. Instead of risking things, he might as well continue on the guaranteed route to success, as it was only a matter of time, no matter how much Gu Yingbing had delayed the inevitable.

As they had achieved a temporary equilibrium, both of their gazes turned to the other side. Naturally, Long Shiya hoped that Zhou Weiqing could hold off the Lion King, at least until he defeated Gu Yingbing. As for Gu Yingbing, he could only pray that his father could quickly finish off Zhou Weiqing before his own Heavenly Energy was drained. Both sides held such similar yet opposite thoughts as they turned their attention to the other pair of fighters on the battlefield. Even the judge for their side was no exception, as Xue AoTian also turned his attention to Zhou Weiqing and Gu Site.

While Long Shiya and Gu Yingbing's fight was pretty much

settled, it had not influenced the other side at all.

The reason Long Shiya had chosen this route was also in a sense because he did not have much choice. Long Shiya had very good judgement over such fine details, and after all Gu Yingbing had already used nine Consolidated Equipment, with six pieces being a Legendary Set as well. With the cultivation level gap not being much, the risk of having any unforeseen circumstances and variables happening was just too great to take.

...

On the other side, the Lion King Gu Site was far more confident than Long Shiya. He did not use the same strategy and Long Shiya did, nor did he have the insane recovery speed that the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation gave. As such, as soon as their fight started, it was far more violent and intense than Gu Yingbing's side.

As soon as Xue AoTian's order came out, both Zhou Weiqing and Gu Site sprang into action.

Zhou Weiqing did not summon his Consolidated Equipment at first notice, instead his right foot springboarding onto the ground lightly, his entire body flying back rapidly in a retreat.

Gu Site was originally about to launch an attack when he saw that Zhou Weiqing did not have the courage to face him directly and was flying back in a retreat. Immediately, he made the judgement call that Zhou Weiqing was about to use guerilla tactics.

Chapter 179 Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation! (2)

Without question, this was not just an ordinary fight, but a fight for time. In such a manner, guerilla tactics was indeed a good option. As long as Zhou Weiqing could buy enough time, he could achieve final victory.

However, how could the experienced Gu Site give Zhou Weiqing such a chance? As soon as he saw Zhou Weiqing flying back, a thick gold light sprang up around his body, and in a flash, gold-red flames spurted out of his back, actually pushing Gu Site's body in a sudden terrifying burst of speed.

Zhou Weiqing had no idea what kind of Skills the Lion King had, nor did he have any interest in guessing. In truth, what he was actually doing now was not running away, but bringing forth all his power to maximum capacity. As he flew backwards, he did not hesitate to enter the Dragon-Tiger Transformation State, bringing his body to his strongest state.

The wings behind his back spread out fully, his entire skin surface now purple, with the purple tattoo and scales. Even his eyes were now purple orbs, the powerful aura of his Dragon-Tiger Transformation bursting forth.

Only when one truly faced Zhou Weiqing in that Dragon-Tiger Transformation State would he be able to understand how powerful that bloodline was.

Even the Lion King Gu Site, with his pure Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion bloodline... as soon as he sensed the shocking aura in front of him, he couldn't help but skip a step.

Such a powerful aura! I must not allow this brat to grow up, otherwise he might become the next Heavenly God Tier!

In that instant, a powerful killing intent rose in the Lion King's

heart. He was no longer thinking about his son's wedding, but the future of the WanShou Empire. Without question, Zhou Weiqing would never belong to the WanShou Empire, and in the future no matter if he was an independent Heavenly Jewel Master or belonged to a Great Saint Lands, it was not something that Gu Site wanted to see. All his life he had spent building up the WanShou Empire and all he thought of was its future, and his own ambitions. To have such an unbelievably outstanding talent in front of him, and not for his own use... then he would have to totally destroy him and not allow him to grow to reach his potential.

Thinking up to this point, Gu Site had already made up his mind. As long as he gained any advantage, he would definitely try to find a chance to strike hard. Even if he did not manage to kill Zhou Weiqing, he would try to deal a serious injury, enough to leave lasting hidden damage that could not be easily healed. Although the Tiger King Xue Aoying was watching at the side, but Gu Site was not too worried about him. After all, Xue Aoying was not Xue AoTian, and the Lion King was confident that he was more powerful than Xue Aoying. As long as he was careful about things, making it appear like it had been an accident, he was confident in killing Zhou Weiqing before Xue Aoying could react. Once that was accomplished, even if Long Shiya was angry, so what? This was after all right in the depths of the Heavenly Snow Mountain.

Naturally, Zhou Weiqing did not know his opponent's thoughts, but he could clearly sense a sudden thick killing intent from the Lion King. Upon releasing the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, Zhou Weiqing's senses and judgement was raised up to a new max, even compared to his previous Demonic Change State it was more than double. As such, though Gu Site was using an eight-Jeweled cultivation level which was much stronger than him, Zhou Weiqing was still able to sense the various changes in the Lion King's body, even any tiny reverberations of Heavenly Energy.

This was a truly strange feeling, being able to grasp hold of the changes in his opponents, that was already a huge first-mover advantage to him.

With the sudden burst of speed from the gold flames on his back, Gu Site almost caught up with Zhou Weiqing instantly. However, at that moment, Zhou Weiqing's body suddenly executed a sudden turn that was totally against the laws of physics.

Zhou Weiqing had been flying backwards at high speeds, but all of a sudden his body flew up perpendicularly into the air. As compared to his backward movement, he had suddenly shot up an entire ninety degrees. Even with the Lion King Gu Site's full powered strike, under such a circumstance, he was unable to react in time, passing by Zhou Weiqing's feet. By the time he wanted to turn around, Zhou Weiqing was already in midair.

The reason why Zhou Weiqing had been able to turn directions so abruptly was of course due to the wings behind his back. The power held within those wings were terrifying; not only could they be used to fly, they could be used for attack and defense. In fact, one could be said that even under a circumstance where Zhou Weiqing was unable to use Consolidated Equipment, this was another deadly weapon available to him, comparable to his Demonic Right Leg.

With the power of the wings and the toughness and flexibility of his own body, Zhou Weiqing was able to force the abrupt change in his flying direction, buying time for himself.

This time was far too important for Zhou Weiqing. As he flew high up into the air, his six Alexandrite Elemental Jewels flew off his wrist, sparkling with different colours.

In this icy cavern, the Alexandrite Cat's Eyes' lights refracted into a rose red. Their brilliance glowing was obvious in the air of the caverns, drawing everyone's attention. Even the Tiger King Xue Aoying could not help but exclaim in marvel and jealousy.

Heavenly Jewels with multiple Elemental Jewels were already extremely rare, let alone someone like Zhou Weiqing with that many Elemental Attributes. Such a Heavenly Jewel Master, if he was able to truly grow, one could just imagine the combat power, it would be more than several times that of any normal cultivation level.

Six Alexandrite Elemental Jewels flying out... what did that mean? All the powerhouses there knew that it meant Zhou Weiqing was about to unleash the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation!

The Lion King Gu Site did not think he was able to stop Zhou Weiqing from unleashing the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation. As the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor's greatest art, he definitely had many ways to unleash it no matter who tried to prevent it, and Gu Site was sure he would have passed them down to Zhou Weiqing.

As such, after missing the first strike, he did not rush to chase Zhou Weiqing up in the air, instead staying on the ground to gather energy slightly. An illusory image of a giant gold lion slowly rose up behind him, the original thick Heavenly Energy reverberations seeming to calm down. Gu Site's eyes both turned gold, fully showing his bloodline as a Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion. His right hand slowly raised up, and in that moment his entire right arm turned a golden yellow, chilling long claws extending, turning into that of his main form's actual arm.

Although it was just a single arm, but the aura that burst forth from Gu Site was far beyond any ordinary eight-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master, yet he was still using the Heavenly Energy of one. This was the state that a powerhouse had attained, and no one could say he was cheating, even though his next attack just felt so terrifying.

However, the next moment just overthrew everyone's expectations, leaving them with shock on their faces.

The Six Alexandrite Cat's Eye Elemental Jewels in the air did not turn into a normal hexagon like Long Shiya's formation to form the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation. Instead, the six Elemental Jewels seemed to shuttle back and forth, glowing in an eye-catching brilliance. Instantly, they had formed a strange star-shaped hexagon!

In truth, this star-shaped hexagon was a simple 'drawing', just the stacking of two triangles. However, to those powerhouses watching, it was a whole different meaning.

Although Long Shiya had invented the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation by himself, that did not mean it could be easily changed. The Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor had spent so many years, gone through so many trials and tribulations, to perfect his Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation to what it was today. The main profound secret behind it was balance – this was clear to all who saw it... but such a balance was just not so easily achieved! Even for Xue AoTian, he did not think he could easily achieve such balance even if he had six Elemental Attribute Jewels!

Yet, right at this moment, Zhou Weiqing had proven that he had not only achieved it, but it was an almost miraculous change.

If Zhou Weiqing had just set up a similar Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation, all the powerhouses would have just been marveling at his talent, but they would not think too much else. After all, Zhou Weiqing's power and innate talent had already surprised them so many times today. However, actually changing the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation from ground up... that was a whole different meaning.

How long has he even learned the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation? One year? Less than a year!

That was because the previous time Gu Yingbing had met Zhou Weiqing, he was only at the five-Jeweled stage. And... training

with the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation had the prerequisite of needing six Elemental Jewels!

A time of less than a year... perhaps to be more accurate, it was barely two to three months! Not only had Zhou Weiqing learned the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation, he had even changed it totally to fit himself. That was just too shocking. Furthermore, it looked like the changes he had wrought made it even more balanced.

A hexagon just meant a shape with six sides, but six obtuse angles and six acute angles were totally different. Each acute angle was like a shining point, and this star-shaped hexagon looked to be more offensive than Long Shiya's original hexagon shaped Formation.

Zhou Weiqing's six Alexandrite Cat's Eye Elemental Jewels finally halted in their position within the Formation, and their colours also changed accordingly. However, it was again unlike Long Shiya's Formation, where each took on the colour of a different Attribute.

Instead, Zhou Weiqing's six Alexandrite Cat's Eye Jewels took their own position in an acute angle edge respectively, and they were somehow still in their Alexandrite Cat's Eye Jewel form.

A whole new, equally balanced yet different Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation. This had totally broken away from all the onlookers' imaginations. This was the first time it had appeared on a battlefield, and it belonged to only one person – Zhou Weiqing.

Xue AoTian's feeling was perhaps the strongest. Besides Long Shiya, he could be said to be the only person in the world who understood the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation the most. Only he had fought with Long Shiya so many times, and he had previously studied it in detail as well.

Almost instantly, Xue AoTian discovered how different Zhou

Weiqing's Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation was, or perhaps its difference from Long Shiya's one.

Long Shiya's Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation was like an art of nature, a harmonious and integrated whole, with the six Attributes each holding the fort in each corner, allowing the six Elemental Attributes to have a miraculous balance. Such balance allowed a major draw on environmental energy, also allowing them to easily transform between each other, or fuse. In that way, Long Shiya was able to use powerful Skills with minimal expenditure.

Chapter 179 Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation! (3)

Xue AoTian had once estimated that if both he and Long Shiya were on the battlefield, facing enemies of a certain strength, then after a certain amount of time, just from overall killing power and sustained fighting capabilities, he may not even be equal to Long Shiya.

This was already extremely high praise, and perhaps no other person in the world deserved such praise. Still, from that alone, one could imagine how powerful Long Shiya's Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation was.

Yet, when Zhou Weiqing released his own new Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation, Xue AoTian suddenly saw a whole new world in front of him.

As compared to Long Shiya's Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation, Zhou Weiqing's one was still a unified whole, but before completion it was in two different portions.

That's right – two different portions; made out of an assembly of two triangles. Yet, the end result was that there was a smaller portion that was similar to the old Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation, having the same effect though perhaps to a smaller scale. However, there was now the addition of the outer six acute angles.

What did these six acute angles entail? Xue AoTian did not currently know, but somehow he knew that Zhou Weiqing's Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation might even surpass Long Shiya's one in the future! Furthermore, as he suddenly remembered in startlement. Zhou Weiqing's six Attributes were not of the normal elements, but including the two Saint Attributes of Time and Demonic!

This strange new formation of his was perhaps forced due to these two Saint Attributes... Instantly, Xue AoTian realised the key to the matter. This child is truly a genius, no one can deny that fact... not just his talent, but his sheer intelligence in being able to create his own Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation! Even if he had Long Shiya's tutelage, to be able to balance two Saint Attributes amongst his own six Attributes, that was a feat of the ages!

Although the Lion King Gu Site and Tiger King Xue Aoying were shaken by the sight, knowing how special this Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation of Zhou Weiqing's was, their feelings were definitely not as strong as Xue AoTian.

Gu Site suddenly decided not to continue storing energy for his attack. He had the abrupt feeling that he should never have let Zhou Weiqing successfully form that Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation. He realised his mistake now; as though the formation looked more magnificent than Long Shiya's one, from the fact that Zhou Weiqing's actions which weren't too smooth, it was clear that he had just created this formation not too long ago, and would not be like Long Shiya who could successfully set it up despite any interruptions.

Gu Site's judgement was indeed correct, but unfortunately for him it was just too late. In fact, what Zhou Weiqing had created was no longer called the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation; after he had successfully created the formation, Long Shiya had named it the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation. The reason why he had changed the name was because it had some different profound mysteries behind it, and the Lion King Gu Site was about to experience it for himself.

Lifting his right hand, the right arm of Gu Site which had warped into his original lion form made a swipe in the air towards him. Instantly, a solid looking gold claw shot out, flying towards Zhou Weiqing.

From the Heavenly Skill Image that appeared, it was a powerful Skill with at least an eleven-star rating, perhaps even a Heavenly God Tier Skill.

However, as Long Shiya once told Zhou Weiqing, a true Heavenly God Tier Skill could only be truly and properly used by a Heavenly God Tier powerhouse. Anyone without sufficient cultivation level could still use it, but there would be a large difference in effectiveness and power.

Seeing the massive gold claw speed towards him, Zhou Weiqing remained calm and unflurried in midair. He did not attempt to dodge it; facing a Skill of such a level, he knew dodging was pointless, as most Skills would be able to track or follow their target.

Zhou Weiqing took a deep breath, and of his six Icy jade Physical Jewels, five lit up. In the next moment, five sets of dark gold lights sprang forth around him, five layers of shields appearing just as the brilliant gold claw struck at him.

Pupupupupuu A stunning sight happened next, and the Lion King Gu Site's power gave Zhou Weiqing a shock as well.

The five Consolidating Equipment God Protective Aura shields just vanished one after the other, smashed aside by the gold claw. These auras that were so 'invulnerable' in Zhou Weiqing's mind, under the offense of the gold claw, seemed just like mere paper to be torn aside.

However, they were not totally useless. After the gold claw had smashed through all five of the Consolidating Equipment God Protective Auras, its light had clearly dimmed significantly. The 'crying-face' hammer in Zhou Weiqing's right hand lashed out, smashing right into the gold claw. With a massive explosion, Zhou Weiqing was sent flying back in the air, while the gold claw vanished totally.

In just the single blow, Zhou Weiqing's heart gripped tightly. Do

not think that just because the Lion King Gu Site seemed so weak in front of the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya meant that he could be easily dismissed. He was still after all a Heavenly Emperor stage powerhouse! It was only that Long Shiya was just that more powerful. Even restricted to an eight-Jeweled cultivation level, Gu Site was still that terrifying. The power of the single claw Skill was already so strong, and without the five layers of Consolidating Equipment God Protective Auras, if Zhou Weiqing had tried to take the blow head on, he would definitely have failed.

What Zhou Weiqing didn't know was that the Lion King Gu Site's surprise was even greater than his own. Despite what Zhou Weiqing thought, that gold claw strike Gu Site had unleashed was no ordinary attack, certainly not a casual strike like it had seemed. It was after all a Skill which had summoned out a Heavenly Skill Image, and more so, he had actually spent some time storing power before unleashing it. One could just imagine how powerful it was. In truth, Gu Site had been trying to end things as quickly as possible, and had thus used one of his strongest Skills at the start to at least gain an advantage. However, he had not expected that Zhou Weiqing would be able to deal with his attacks so easily. More importantly, this merely six-Jeweled little brat, he had actually summoned five God Tier Consolidated Equipment! Furthermore, they seemed to be part of a Legendary Set, only one less than his own son! How could Gu Site not be shocked by that? Legendary Sets and God Tier Equipment had nothing to do with talent, but it had a huge connection with one's wealth and connections.

His right foot striking down on the ground, Gu Site also launched himself into the air. The Heavenly Emperor level of control allowed him to use his Heavenly Energy to fly into the air easily, almost imitating a flying skill of sorts. Both hands extended in claws, he once again struck out and two similar gold claws, smaller but faster, rushed towards Zhou Weiqing.

Currently, Zhou Weiqing had shown his fifth Legendary Set piece. Besides the previous Legendary Hammers, the Yin Yang Giant Spirit Palm (2 gauntlets), and the Heart Mirror, the fifth was actually a layered war kilt that protected him from waist down. Altogether, the Heart Mirror connected the four protective equipment to form an entire breastplate to bracer and gauntlets, joining down to the war kilt to complete the entire costume.

With the addition of this piece of God Tier Consolidated Equipment, Zhou Weiqing's body could be said to be finally fully protected. This was the effect of a Legendary Set, as the area covered was far beyond ordinary four pieces of God Tier Consolidated Equipment. The war kilt was giving forth a glow that seemed to have a spiral spin to it. Besides the usual protective capabilities that equipment had, its main effect was similar to all the other pieces of the Set, to greatly boost their user's strength.

The 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set had very few imbued Skills. According to Duan Tianlang's estimation, perhaps only once the Legendary Set was fully complete would the true imbued set Skills be activated.

However, that was not to say that the 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set was not strong. On the contrary, its strength was all in the word 'extreme'. Indeed, it was only focusing on the basics, but to the ultimate extreme!

Each and every piece of the Legendary Set would increase the user's strength one-fold, and this was stacked multiplicatively.

That was to say, when Zhou Weiqing was wielding only the Legendary Hammers, his strength was double of his original. With the two pieces that made the Yin Yang Giant Spirit Palm, it was not three or even four times... but after stacking twice it was a massive eight times his original strength! If Zhou Weiqing managed to complete all ten pieces of his Legendary Set, that would mean just in terms of strength alone, it would be five hundred and twelve times his original strength! What kind of terrifying number was

that?! Do not forget that not only was Zhou Weiqing a Strength type Heavenly Jewel Master, his own body had been evolved several times from his bloodlines, and he also had the boost from the Dragon-Tiger Transformation. One could imagine once he really finished the 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set, his strength would reach a state that was unparalleled in history, and possibly in future. This would be the true meaning of the saying 'In the face of pure strength, all tricks are useless'.

As Zhou Weiqing slowly gained piece after piece of the 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set, his strength would grow further and further. At the beginning, it was not obvious at all, but by now, the terrifying power was starting to reveal itself.

The fifth piece of the Legendary Set was naturally created by Duan Tianlang, his first piece of the 'Hate Ground no Handle' Set. Previously, Long Shiya had personally flew back to the Peerless Battalion camp to get it for him, before flying back to the Fire Spirit Mountain where Zhou Weiqing had quickly succeeded in Consolidated it.

With this fifth piece of the Legendary Set, Zhou Weiqing's strength was now thirty two times of his original strength. In addition to the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, his strength was truly something to be reckoned with.

At first, Zhou Weiqing did not have a real understanding of the power and effectiveness of the 'Hate Ground no Handle' Set, and he had never fully flourished its strength. His previous use of it was rather limited to the trickery of the Legendary Hammers and the boost to his Skills. However, do not forget who his Master was... the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor... whose own Legendary Set was the 'little brother' set with a similar boost, the 'Hate Sky no Handle' Legendary Set!

In fact, the boost of the 'Hate Sky no Handle' Legendary Set was exactly the same as the 'Hate Ground no Handle'. Of course, with only nine pieces, the total boost would only amount to a maximum

of two hundred and fifty six times! That was to say, the difference of a mere one piece in a Legendary Set was actually the difference between Heaven and Earth! Under Long Shiya's careful tutelage, Zhou Weiqing finally understood the true power of his Legendary Set and how to carefully control and use it.

Facing the Lion King's charge at him, Zhou Weiqing remained unafraid. Swinging the two Legendary Hammers before him, he burst forth with a massive wave of Heavenly Energy. Two balls of thick grey mist gathered around each Hammer respectively, with the 'crying-face' Hammer in his right hand blocking out at the Lion King's attack, while the 'laughing-face' Hammer in his left hand smashing towards the Lion King's head.

The Lion King was clearly using the Divine Attribute Heavenly Energy, while Zhou Weiqing was using the Demonic Attribute Heavenly Energy. The clash of two directly opposite and opposing Saint Attributes, equal in level, but the victor would go to the stronger.

Zhou Weiqing's cultivation level was only six-Jeweled, and naturally he could not compare to the Lion King, even restricted to eight-Jewels as he was. However, with the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, his Heavenly Energy was far beyond any ordinary six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master, let alone with the terrifying strength from his Legendary Set.

A thick dark gold light sprang forth around Zhou Weiqing's Legendary Set Equipment, gushing towards his right arm. If one observed closely, the dark gold light was like waves of power rippling towards his right arm, causing it to grow several times larger.

Chapter 180 Little Fatty vs Lion King! (1)

Naturally, while a Legendary Set was extremely powerful, making use of the power was not just so simple. To make full use of the thirty two times of strength, one had to fully activate the power of each individual Consolidated Equipment piece, transferring and gathering all the power together in a concentrated burst. That was exactly what Zhou Weiqing was doing now, gathering all the power into his right arm, to the 'crying-face' Hammer in his right hand!

The 'Hate Ground No Handle' Legendary Set had finally made its debut appearance in the annals of history, and its opponent was actually a Heavenly Emperor stage powerhouse. This Legendary Set could be considered a unique one, without any imbued Skills like most other Consolidated Equipment had, but in focusing in stacking the basics, it had turned a basic stat of Strength into a terrifying maximum.

The Lion King's two Divine Claws instantly smashed into the 'crying-face' hammer, quickly tearing apart the Demonic Attribute Heavenly Energy surrounding it. In terms of power of Heavenly Energy or control, Gu Site far surpassed Zhou Weiqing. However, to his surprise, the hammer just flashed with a thick glow of dark gold light, and in that next instant, both claws were destroyed with a muffled poof sound.

The next moment, the 'smiling-face' hammer was smashing down at his head.

How is that possible? Without any Skills, he is actually able to break apart my attack?

Gu Site did not have time to think further. Lifting his left hand, he slapped it at the 'smiling-face' hammer, Heavenly Energy gathering quickly in a large burst. His right hand continued forward, blocking towards the 'crying-face' hammer that was still

continuing its blow after dissipating the two claws.

All of a sudden, Zhou Weiqing's seemed to slow down, keeping the 'smiling-face' hammer a half second back. In this way, both hammers would now strike the Lion King at the same time.

A little way off, Long Shiya, who was still suppressing Gu Yingbing while watching his disciple, smiled faintly as he thought to himself: This little brat, truly the epitome of sneakiness!

Poof*Boom* Two different sounds rang out at once. Xue Aoying's jaw dropped; as judge of the match he had been watching closely, and he was shocked to suddenly see Gu Site's body sent flying back by Zhou Weiqing's strike.

Facing the two hammers of Zhou Weiqing's, Gu Site had naturally divided his Heavenly Energy equally. Alas, being the first time he was facing the Dual Legendary Hammers, how could he know the secret behind those tricky hammers?

The Poof sound had been Gu Site's left hand passing right through the 'smiling-face' hammer upon impact, his powerful Heavenly Energy smashing right through and up into the skies. An unexpected lack of connection with anything solid threw him off balance, catching him off guard momentarily. Although he was able to catch his balance quickly due to his power and skill, but even for a powerhouse like him it was definitely not a good feeling to strike out in such a missed blow.

More importantly, as the missed blow came from the 'smiling-face' hammer, the 'crying-face' hammer had also smashed down. This time, it was an actual strike, but with the sudden loss of balance on the other side, it definitely affected the Lion King on this side. The Heavenly Energy on this defending side shook for just a split second, but it was more than enough. Since the Heavenly Energy had been split equally compared to a full powered blow from Zhou Weiqing... this time he was at severe disadvantage.

The 'crying-face' hammer currently held all of Zhou Weiqing's power, including his thirty-two times of power. With the aid of the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, how terrifying was that?! Just in terms of pure physical strength alone, Zhou Weiqing already surpassed any eight-Jeweled Strength type Heavenly Jewel Master, let alone with the thirty two multiplier. Currently, if one were to only take physical strength into account, with his 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set, he could match most strength-type Heavenly King Stage powerhouses.

So what if he did not have Heavenly Energy powering it up. No matter what kind of ability, when it was powered up to an absolute maximum, its strength was not to be underestimated. As the saying goes, 'All roads lead to Rome'. There was no one correct path for fighting.

Under such a circumstance, Gu Site felt a terrifying strength behind the blow, one that he was unable to withstand. With the massive explosion of impact, his entire body was sent flying but the one fake and one true blow. The greatest loss of face to him was that the strength of the blow was just too powerful; not only was his hand numb from the impact, his entire chest area was still constricted from the blow. Gu Site was forcefully stopping himself from spitting out a mouthful of blood, but he had already suffered some internal injuries.

Right at the next instant, Zhou Weiqing suddenly appeared behind Gu Site. Gripping his Dual Legendary Hammers in his Yin Yang Giant Spirit Palm, he smashed them down savagely in a top-down fashion towards Gu Site's head.

Blink. Indeed, in that moment, Zhou Weiqing had used one of his most practiced skills, the Blink Skill.

As a Heavenly Emperor powerhouse, Gu Site's senses were definitely extremely powerful, and he instantly discovered Zhou Weiqing's follow-up attack. Yet, the first thought in his mind was just this: Impossible!

Previously, when Long Shiya was using the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation, even though he could control his various Attributes to interchange at will, or fuse them at will, or even increase the regeneration of his Heavenly Energy... but he had never been able to use his Stored Skills! How then did Zhou Weiqing manage to use the Blink Skill?!

However, this was not the time for Gu Site to overthink things. Having just been sent flying by Zhou Weiqing's hammer blow, he naturally knew how terrifying the strength behind the hammer was. Even with his Heavenly Emperor stage body, he dared not let such a blow land on him unprotected.

A huge illusory figure of a mammoth suddenly appeared above and behind Gu Site. At the same time, a bright gold light sprang forth, like a sudden growth of bramble rising up to greet Zhou Weiqing's hammers.

This Skill was one of the Lion King's strongest defensive aces, Stored from a powerful Splendid Mammoth King Heavenly Beast. This Splendid Mammoth King Heavenly Beast was also one of the WanShou Empire's strongest, a Heavenly Emperor Stage powerhouse. To be more accurate, it was the Totem and Tribe Leader of the Mammoth Tribe. It was only because its intelligence was not high that it did not manage to enter the true leadership and ruling class of the WanShou Empire. Even so, it still had a very high rank and respected status in the entire WanShou Empire. In terms of bloodline power, these Splendid Mammoth Kings were second only to the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tigers and Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lions. Similar to the former two, they also had the Divine Attribute, and this Skill of theirs was called Splendid Bramble Holy Shield, a powerful Skill that was both offense and defense in one. Being able to force the Lion King to use such an ace-in-the-hole Skill not long after they had clashed, Zhou Weiqing could truly be proud of himself.

However, at this moment, a truly unexpected thing happened

next, shocking Gu Site to the core. From behind Zhou Weiqing's back, an illusory figure rose as well, a huge, fat one that looked like a big insect. As soon as the illusory figure appeared, it wriggled forward and flew right into the Mammoth illusory figure above Gu Site's head. Both tangled with each other momentarily, before the two vanished along with the Splendid Bramble Holy Shield!

This was the clash of Heavenly Skill Images, an Absolute Neutralisation.

Originally, the Lion Prince Gu Yingbing had used this exact method to neutralise Zhou Weiqing's Dragon Silencing Seal, and now Zhou Weiqing was using this method to on Gu Site to neutralise his Splendid Bramble Holy Shield!

Clash of Heavenly Skill Images referred to when both sides unleashed a Skill that would bring about a Heavenly Skill Image – either side could instead use the Heavenly Skill Image to actually neutralise the other, if quick enough. Nobody knew the reason why this would occur, and according to guesses of the forefathers, this was because the heavens were having mercy on the world, not wishing such powerful Skills to cause too much death and destruction upon the world, allowing such a neutralising effect to happen.

In the past, Zhou Weiqing had no proper training, having to figure everything out by himself. Naturally, he did not know about the Clash Of Heavenly Skill Images and had been caught by surprise so easily by Gu Yingbing, thus being taken down so easily. However, in this period of time, under Long Shiya's tutelage, he had also grasped the principle of this effect, and at least knew the concept of how to deal with it both offensively and defensively. At least, his spiritual energy had grown to barely be able to control the Heavenly Skill Images. At this moment, he had suddenly made use of this very effect, instantly changing the state of the current battlefield.

The Tiger King Xue Aoying had been watching all this while, and

when Zhou Weiqing had used the Blink Skill, his jaw had dropped as well. He was rather familiar with the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation, having talked to his brother about it previously. As such, he knew that with the Blink Skill being of higher rating than six stars, especially with Zhou Weiqing being new to the formation, he should not have been able to use that Skill! Furthermore, the Blink Skill should have been one of the toughest to mimic. At that moment, his mind was left with the same thought as Gu Site – How could this be?!

However, when Zhou Weiqing summoned the Heavenly Skill Image, under Xue Aoying's close observation, he finally noticed something that could possibly be the profound secret behind it.

When Zhou Weiqing had unleashed those two Stored Skills, one of the 'Star' Angles would light up in that hexagon shape of the formation below his feet, the Alexandrite Cat's Eye Elemental Jewel flashing brightly before the Skill appeared.

Having noticed that, Xue Aoying could guess the secret behind Zhou Weiqing's usage of such Skills. However, that did not diminish the surprise in his heart. Could it be that when he used his new Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation, he could still use Skills? That would be too overpowered!

In truth, Xue Aoying's guess was fairly accurate. The Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation of Zhou Weiqing, when compared to the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation, was far worse in terms of Heavenly Energy efficiency and recovery rate. However, the inferiority in this portion was easily compensated for by his Dragon-Tiger Transformation and the Immortal Deity Technique. As for the extra six acute 'Star' angles of the formation, each of them could 'save' a particular Stored Skill for use every time the formation was created.

That was to say, with the underlying basis of the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation, the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation was able to temporarily bind six Skills whenever he

summoned his Formation, and he would be able to use them just like in normal combat. These bound Skills would be chosen from all of his own Stored Skills, but the Heavenly Energy used would be affected by the efficiency of the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation as well as the recovery rate.

Without question, in an overall combat capability standpoint, especially for Zhou Weiqing, the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation was far superior to the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation. The reason was also simple – although both held six Attributes, Zhou Weiqing's one contained two Saint Attributes. Adding to the fact that the structure of his formation was different, the logic behind it had caused such a change.

One of the bound Skills had naturally been the Blink, which Zhou Weiqing had used to close the gap in a quick follow-up attack. The second Skill he had bound and just unleashed was actually the Time Reversal Skill. The reason why he had even selected this Skill to be bound was actually for the purposes of Clashing Heavenly Skill Images. Since the Lion Prince also had Skills which could summon the Heavenly Skill Images, how could the Lion King not have some? As such, Zhou Weiqing had intentionally planned to use this 'useless' Time Reversal Skill to gain such a nearly perfect result.

As the Splendid Bramble Holy Shield vanished, Gu Site was once again shocked and caught off guard. At the same time, Zhou Weiqing's hammers were already striking down at him, and in such a short period of time it was too late for him to use another Skill. In astonishment, Gu Site could only use his hands to block forward, bursting forth with his powerful Heavenly Energy to forcefully defend himself.

Chapter 180 Little Fatty vs Lion King! (2)

Naturally, while a Legendary Set was extremely powerful, making use of the power was not just so simple. To make full use of the thirty two times of strength, one had to fully activate the power of each individual Consolidated Equipment piece, transferring and gathering all the power together in a concentrated burst. That was exactly what Zhou Weiqing was doing now, gathering all the power into his right arm, to the 'crying-face' Hammer in his right hand!

Another massive explosion, and Gu Site's entire body was savagely smashed into the ground without any suspense, with both his legs drilled right into the icy ground of the cavern. Although with his tough and powerful Heavenly Emperor Stage body, his arms and legs were not broken by Zhou Weiqing's terrifying strength, the blood he had been forcing himself not to spit out previously finally came out. Zhou Weiqing landed right beside Gu Site, his hammers striking out at Gu Site's head for the third time in an explosive strength. Taking on the impact of the previous hit was no issue for his powerful body in the Dragon-Tiger Transformation state.

Gu Site was extremely vexed! The reason why he was now in such a disadvantage was because he had severely misjudged Zhou Weiqing's power, and that underestimation had led to him being surprised by him so many times. Growling angrily, he concentrated hard and the brilliant shimmer of the Divine Guardian Angel appeared around him, protecting his body.

Alas, almost at the same time, another illusory figure appeared behind Zhou Weiqing. This time, it was the Demonic Dragon Lady.

How many Skills with the Heavenly Skill Image does this brat have?! The thought sprang up simultaneously in both the Lion and Tiger King.

Still in shock, Gu Site had no time to be angry as he hurriedly circulated his Heavenly Energy to the maximum with his hands facing upwards, his entire body spinning in a whirlwind as powerful gold light sprang forth. The light soon turned into a massive gold tornado, fully enveloping his body.

In Gu Site's eyes, it was without question that Zhou Weiqing was once again using a Heavenly Skill Image to neutralize his Divine Guardian Angel Skill before his hammer with that terrifying strength landed once more. Having just used two powerful Skills, he was for a short time indisposed from using too much Heavenly Energy, and he had no choice but to now use his strongest Skill to defend himself.

Alas, this time Gu Site had guessed wrongly. Zhou Weiqing had been striking down at him with such swift and fierce momentum, but the next moment he actually stopped in midair, his wings spreading apart and causing his body to hover right before he actually reached the Divine Guardian Angel barrier. In the short moment of time, the Heavenly Skill Image of the Demonic Dragon Lady had fully coalesced and his prepared Skill was ready to be used.

As the purple red light glowed in the air, Xue AoTian couldn't help but furrow his brow. How could the Lion King make such a 'newbie' mistake?

Although Gu Site had told himself over and over that this young man in front of him was no ordinary six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master, he was still a Heavenly Emperor stage powerhouse... how could he not have feelings of disdain and underestimate his opponent? Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing's series of actions and abilities had truly gone beyond any of the present powerhouses' expectations and judgement. It had just been too shocking. Even Xue AoTian had been caught by surprise several times, let alone Gu Site. As such, the Lion King had not been able to bring his full power into play, falling into Zhou Weiqing's rhythm and trap. At

this moment, Zhou Weiqing had made use of this ‘Inertia of thinking’ that Gu Site had fallen into to spring this new trap.

The purple red flash of light appeared within Zhou Weiqing’s formation, and his body did an about-turn in midair, as he retreated to the side to wait. A faint smile appeared on his face as he looked at the Lion King Gu Site. He was in no rush at all, and he could now afford to sit and wait for a while.

The Divine Guardian Angel Skill had indeed come into effect, and this powerful Skill had an ‘Absolute’ effect as well. If Zhou Weiqing tried to use his Dragon Silencing Seal on Gu Site now, it would be totally wasted. However, though the Divine Guardian Angel Skill was indeed powerful, but just like the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation, it had its own set of limitations. In this case, the flaw was simple – when the user was within the Divine Guardian Angel Shield, he would not be able to move about, or unleash another Skill. This was the reason why Gu Site’s spinning body was unable to move, and could previously only circulate his Heavenly Energy into the gold whirlwind of light to protect himself.

As a result, Zhou Weiqing could now wait calmly at the side. No matter how fast the Lion King could unleash his next Skill, it could not be faster than the Dragon Silencing Seal that Zhou Weiqing now had prepared to go at anytime. As for Clashing of Heavenly Skill Images, it had to be activated within a certain time limit of the Heavenly Skill Image being summoned; once it was fully coalesced, that was no longer possible.

Due to that fact, normally a Clash of Heavenly Skill Images was done by a later Skill used to neutralized an earlier one. That was to say, Zhou Weiqing could have used his Heavenly Skill Image to neutralise the Divine Guardian Angel, but not the reverse.

As such, Gu Site was now stuck using a powerful defensive Skill for nothing, as well as wasting his Heavenly Energy in the whirlwind of light, and was unable to do anything about Zhou

Weiying's Dragon Silencing Seal.

Calm, unhurried and confident. Those words could be used to describe Zhou Weiying at this point. Who could have imagined that a mere Upper Level Zun Stage Heavenly Jewel Master could push a Heavenly Emperor Stage powerhouse to such a degree, even one so restricted like Gu Site had been!

Abruptly, two bouts of purple-red light shot out from Zhou Weiying's eyes, before it flickered off once more. All of a sudden, the Divine Guardian Angel Skill around Gu Site vanished without warning.

It was the Clash of Heavenly Skill Images! However, just as Gu Site was overjoyed, thinking that Zhou Weiying had not been able to resist in using his Dragon Silencing Seal to neutralise his Divine Guardian Angel Skill... the next instant, a purple-red vortex appeared over his head. His Skills were suddenly all restricted!

What ... what the **** is going on?! Once again, Zhou Weiying's actions were unreadable to the Lion King Gu Site. the Dragon Silencing Seal had clearly been used to Clash with his own Divine Guardian Angel Skill, yet... yet... how could it still come into effect?

Let alone Gu Site, even the Tiger King Xue Aoying who had a bird's eye view of everything going on was utterly confused. Of all the powerhouses present, only Long Shiya who was familiar with all of Zhou Weiying's Skill could fully understand what was going on. Even Xue AoTian could only vaguely guess what had happened.

Xue AoTian's judgement was that Zhou Weiying had somehow activated yet another hidden Heavenly Skill Image Skill, using that to neutralise the Divine Guardian Angel Skill before activating the Dragon Silencing Seal in the same instant.

His judgement was indeed accurate. Zhou Weiying had actually used the Demonic Dragon God Seal, also from the Demonic Dragon Lady, to neutralise the Divine Guardian Angel Skill. As the

Heavenly Skill Image was also of the Demonic Dragon Lady, he was able to superimpose and disguise it perfectly. In truth, if he had attempted to actually use this Skill, it would be Zhou Weiqing himself asking for death. After all, not only was Gu Site far stronger than him, he also had the Spirit Attribute. The Demonic Dragon God Seal would not only have been useless, it would have probably been returned to damage himself. However, just like with the Time Reversal Skill, using it to neutralise the Divine Guardian Angel Skill was a whole different matter. Once again, another perfect timing and a worthwhile trade of a useless Skill to neutralise the Divine Guardian Angel Skill.

Zhou Weiqing might not have much, but he definitely had tons of Skills. In fact, the powerful Heavenly Skill Image Skills he had were no lesser than most Heavenly King or Heavenly Emperor stage powerhouses. Six Attributes! He could pretty much go Skill Storing at will. In fact, even now, after reaching the fifth and sixth Jeweled stage, he still have many 'empty slots' that he had not Stored Skills yet.

The Absolute effect of the Dragon Silencing Seal had come into effect! That meant that within the next minute, the Lion King Gu Site was no longer able to summon his Consolidated Equipment or use his Stored Skills. Even if the former was already restricted, but the latter was a major blow indeed. So what if he was using Heavenly Energy of the eight-Jeweled stage? Facing a six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master with Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, five God Tier Consolidated Equipment of a Legendary Set... what could he do? Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing still had the Dragon-Tiger Transformation!

With a hearty laugh, Zhou Weiqing's entire body pounced towards Gu Site like a bolt of lightning, the twin Hammers in his hands swirling eagerly. This time, he was not trying to last as long as he could, but was actually attempting to defeat the eight-Jeweled Lion King Gu Site!

Seeing Zhou Weiqing leap at him, Gu Site suddenly understood. This fight, even if were his son with his full power, facing this six-Jeweled little brat, he might not even win.

With no Stored Skills to use, restricted at the eight-Jeweled Heavenly Energy... am I really going to lose?

Gu Site's eyes suddenly turned calm and serene. Facing the pouncing Zhou Weiqing, his face turned expressionless, only lifting his right hand slowly towards to incoming youth.

Ten yards. Zhou Weiqing was barely ten yards from Gu Site. With his charging speed, that was closed in barely a blink of an eye.

Gu Site's raised right hand had his palm outwards facing Zhou Weiqing, as if attempting to stall Zhou Weiqing's attack. Yet, everyone around could see that he might block one attack, or even two, but without any Skills or Consolidated Equipment and with his Heavenly Energy restricted, how long could he last against that terrifying strength of Zhou Weiqing?

A relieved and satisfied expression flickered across Long Shiya's face, while a hidden flicker of happiness flashed in Xue AoTian's eyes before it disappeared, hidden away. The Tiger King Xue Aoying also had a gleeful look on his face as he chuckled at the Lion King's misfortune. However, in an instant, an abrupt change erupted.

Just as Zhou Weiqing was about to strike Gu Site, he suddenly saw the Lion King's palm light up with a crimson red glow.

In that moment, the Seal restricting Gu Site burst apart, and he resumed his Heavenly Emperor stage cultivation level.

Smashing apart the Seal, releasing an attack. The entire process happened in a split second. Just as the expressions of the other three powerhouses froze, a resonant lion's roar rang out as a huge gout of crimson flame swallowed Zhou Weiqing entirely.

The flame connected right back to Gu Site's palm, and the fire spouting out formed the image of a giant lion in midair. As the huge crimson lion formed, the temperature of the entire icy cavern rose abruptly. Besides a single leg that was outside the flames, Zhou Weiqing's entire body was engulfed in the flames.

“NOOOOO!!!!” Long Shiya howled in crazed rage. He no longer cared that it was a competition, and with a flicker of his arm, a terrifying Heavenly Energy smashed into Gu Yingbing, sending him flying. Another palm strike lashed out at Gu Yingbing while at the same time, his entire body pounced towards the Lion King Gu Site.

Xue AoTian was already by his side in a flash. Naturally, he would not allow his disciple to be killed like that, and he quickly blocked the enraged blow which would have finished Gu Yingbing off. However, he did not attempt to block Long Shiya from pouncing on Gu Site.

A terrifying aura burst out from Long Shiya's body, his entire 'Hate Sky no Handle' Legendary Set appearing all at once. The Silver octagon plum blossom Hammer still glowing with the dark gold light of being summoned, smashing down hard on Gu Site in a frenzy.

Chapter 180 Little Fatty vs Lion King! (3)

Indeed, Long Shiya had almost gone crazy. He instantly recognized the Flame that Gu Site had released, taking on the form of a huge lion. It was the Personal Core Fire of the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lions, the Earth Spirit Heart Flame! Let alone Zhou Weiqing with a mere six-Jeweled cultivation level, even a Heavenly King Stage powerhouse would evaporate from such an attack, an instant death indeed. It was no easy feat to summon the Earth Spirit Heart Flame, even for Gu Site. Not only was it a massive drain, it would seriously damage his life force and vitality.

No matter what calculations and expectations Long Shiya had, he had never imagined that Gu Site would actually break the rules of the competition just like that, resuming his Heavenly Emperor Stage cultivation level and using his Personal Core Flame to destroy Zhou Weiqing.

When Gu Site had realised he had been tricked, the fury in his heart was burning to an unbelievable point. He had always had a hot temper, and with the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion blood burning hot within him, in his sheer rage he had lost control. Who was he? He was the King of the WanShou Empire, a noble Heavenly Emperor Stage powerhouse! To be forced to such a stage by a mere brat of six-Jewels, to even lose to such a person, how could he stand it?!

As the saying goes, '[Anger rises from the heart, and evil will then rise from the gall bladder](#)' Gu Site instantly made the decision not to let Zhou Weiqing leave this place alive, even if he had to fall out with Long Shiya. There were three powerhouses here on the side, including himself, and if the Entropic Nether Tiger was willing to help out, they might even be able to kill Long Shiya as well. As such, he had flung caution to the wind and launched his attack. He had been confident that Xue AoTian would not sit back and watch Long Shiya kill Gu Yingbing.

The Lion King's estimations had all been correct, but he had missed one point. That was... he was still stuck in the Absolute effect of the Dragon Silencing Seal, and he now had to withstand the crazed fury of Long Shiya in that state.

BOOM A single hammer blow. The Lion King's body was sent flying by Long Shiya like a cannonball shot from a cannon, smashing savagely into the mountain. The next moment, a bout of light followed suit into the freshly opened hole. Gu Site had actually been smashed by the hammer right through the Heavenly Snow Mountain and back outside! This time, even if he did not die, he would definitely be severely injured.

"Show mercy!" At this point, the Tiger King Xue Aoying had no choice but to intervene. Although he did not like the Lion King, and did not get along well with him, he could not just sit back and watch the King of the WanShou Empire get slaughtered by the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor!

"Get lost." By now, Long Shiya did not care about anything or anyone else. The brilliance behind his back forming his own figure, almost making it seem like own body had grown huger. The light around the octagon plum blossom Hammer brightened a hundredfold as it whistled brazenly towards the Tiger King.

Xue Aoying's expression changed. Although he was able to use his own Skills and Consolidated Equipment, he dared not take such a furious blow from Long Shiya! Immediately, his body moved aside.

"Bro Long, calm down. Zhou Weiqing is not dead." At last, Xue AoTian appeared, using his own body to block the fresh new hole, a snow white long spear in his hands. Behind his own back, a similar glow of his own illusory figure flashed. With a flick of his spear, he blocked Long Shiya's hammer, and the entire cavern seemed to groan slightly in the massive impact. Originally, the exit which housed the large number of Heavenly Beasts had constant sounds of heavy breathing, but it was instantly silenced. After

these Heavenly Beasts sensed the sheer aura and power of the two powerhouses clashing, they did not even dare let any sense of their presence be felt.

In a direct clash of physical strength, even Xue AoTian would not dare to do so against Long Shiya with his entire 'Hate Sky no Handle' Legendary Set. As such, he could only subtly parry the blow as best he could.

As soon as Long Shiya heard Xue AoTian's words clearly, his anger diminished. Subconsciously, his head snapped to where his precious disciple had been.

The next moment, Long Shiya was dumbfounded, staring dazedly as he stopped.

Zhou Weiqing had not been devoured by the Earth Spirit Heart Flame like he had thought, and he was just standing right there. His entire set of Consolidated Equipment had all disappeared, but he seemed totally unharmed. The only embarrassing thing was that he was now totally naked, standing right there in his birthday suit in a rather ridiculous sight that even Zhou Weiqing himself was stunned by. Luckily, his entire skin was still covered by the purple scales, so it still wasn't too obvious. The certain 'object' between his legs was swinging slightly, and if one looked closer they would be able to see it.

Long Shiya almost slapped himself silly. Indeed, how could he have forgotten!

No matter how powerful that Earth Spirit Heart Flame was, how could it be of any effect to his disciple? After absorbing the Solidified Dragon Spirit, Zhou Weiqing was pretty much immune to fire.

The Earth Spirit Heart Flame was the Personal Core Fire of the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lions, and under the restriction of not being able to use his Consolidated Equipment and Stored Skills, this was the strongest attack that Gu Site could use. Alas for

the poor Lion King, his attack was fully of the Fire Attribute. Although that terrifying attack has caused Zhou Weiqing's entire Legendary Set to dissipate, his body remained unharmed.

In a flash, Long Shiya appeared beside Zhou Weiqing, examining his precious disciple up and down, even that 'certain object' got a glance. Only after he was certain that Zhou Weiqing was totally alright did he heave a sigh of relief.

However, despite the fact that Zhou Weiqing was fine, that did not mean the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor's rage was assuaged. He spun around abruptly, turning his gaze to Xue AoTian. His eyes were cold, but he did not say anything. Pulling Zhou Weiqing's hands, he said solemnly: "Let's go, Little Fatty."

"Bro Long, wait a minute. I will give you a reckoning on this matter." Even for Xue AoTian, seeing Long Shiya like this caused him some anxiety. He knew that if he allowed Long Shiya to leave like this, there would be severe repercussions. In fact, let alone Long Shiya, currently Xue AoTian's heart was filled with rage. He had never imagined that the Lion King Gu Site would actually disregard his own pride and status to do something so shameless as to attack Zhou Weiqing with full power. If Zhou Weiqing truly died, Long Shiya aside, Xue AoTian would not let Gu Site go so easily.

"Aoying, go bring the Lion King back here." Xue AoTian said gravely. His expression was already extremely ugly.

Long Shiya took a deep breath, suppressing the rage in his heart. After all, this was still the Heavenly Snow Mountain, and they still had not achieved their original goal in coming here.

Zhou Weiqing said softly: "Master, I am fine."

Long Shiya glared at him and said exasperatedly: "Just because you gained a slight advantage, you thought you could press it? Did you forget who your opponent was?!"

Zhou Weiqing gave a helpless look. He had also been given a huge fright, not having expected that the Lion King would actually go all out on him. In that instant, there had been zero chance for him to dodge the blow. Although Long Shiya did not spell it out, Zhou Weiqing knew that his Master was reminding him that if Gu Site had not used a Fire Attribute attack, perhaps he would be dead now.

However, was that really the truth of the matter? At that moment, Zhou Weiqing did not try to explain himself to Long Shiya; after all, his Master was not wrong to lecture him. In truth, when he had sensed the Lion King's attack, in the last split second Zhou Weiqing had managed to react and release a Skill. With that unique Skill, even if the Lion King was not using a Fire Attribute attack, Zhou Weiqing still had some confidence that he could at least survive it, if barely.

Before long, the Tiger King had brought the Lion King back.

Gu Site's current look was truly miserable and desolate. His right hand hung limp at his side, looking like the bones within had been totally shattered. Even if he could keep the arm, it was not going to be a simple matter to heal it.

At the same time, his chest area had clearly sunk in, and his face was ashen. Blood seeped out of all his seven orifices, and his eyes were clearly dim. From just one look, it was clear that Gu Site was severely injured.

Long Shiya had previously thought that he had killed Zhou Weiqing, and in his rage, he had struck out with all his might, supported by his entire 'Hate Sky no Handle' LEGendary Set. The Lion King had originally been weaker than Long Shiya, let alone without any of his Consolidated Equipment. Being able to stay alive was already a testament to how powerful his body and cultivation was.

Seeing the Lion King once more, Long Shiya's eyes were filled

with a violent killing intent. Raising the hammer in his hands, he said coldly: “Gu Site, you bastard. We are now mortal enemies, I swear I will kill you. You don’t want your face anymore? You even dare bully a mere junior. Just you wait, this old man will ensure that your entire Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion Tribe is wiped out.”

“Bro Long, please calm down. Allow me to handle this matter.” Xue AoTian’s face was stern as he spoke.

Gu Site did not react to either of their words, instead staring dazedly at Zhou Weiqing. He could not believe that Zhou Weiqing was still alive, even unharmed, after taking a head-on blow of his Earth Spirit Heart Flame. Yet, there he was standing there, wearing his clothes!

How could this be!? Why is this happening? Zhou Weiqing had given him just too many shocks today. Was that brat really six-Jewels? Gu Site’s heart was filled with questions.

Gu Yingbing remained uninjured, as Xue AoTian had received the blow that Long Shiya had struck at him. He quickly rushed to his father’s side, and rays of healing Divine energy shone upon his father’s body. However, his head remained bowed down, and he did not dare look at Zhou Weiqing, as his face was filled with shame. He was still young, not as experienced and vicious as his father. Having such a thing happen had diminished his strong fighting spirit.

Xue AoTian looked at the Lion King coldly and gave a cold humph. “You have thrown away the face of the Heavenly Snow Mountain. There is no longer any need to continue with the competition. You can go now, and tell all the guests that the wedding is cancelled.”

“Ahh?” Only then did Gu Site react, his face darkening as he said: “Mountain Lord, I admit that I have made a grave mistake. We have indeed lost this second test, but... isn’t there still a third

test?”

Xue AoTian said coldly: “You still have the face to mention a third test? What is your status, your power? Have you gone stupid being the King of the WanShou Empire? How old is Zhou Weiqing? What did I tell you previously? I said. You can get lost now. Yingbing will no longer inherit my Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord position. Yingbing, you escort your father back. In a month, I want to hear that you have assumed his position as King of the WanShou Empire. Otherwise, don’t blame me for taking care of it myself.”

Enforcing his will strictly and swiftly. That was truly the way to describe Xue AoTian. In a matter of moments, he had already made his choice and judgement. He did not even give Gu Yingbing a third chance. Not because of Long Shiya’s threats, but because of his own face, and the honour and dignity of the Heavenly Snow Mountain.

A clumsy literal translation! Basically it means that when one is enraged, he can do anything/people can do sudden rash things in a fit of anger, things they would not do otherwise with a clear mind

Chapter 181 Tian'er, I love you! (1)

This was also not because he had such high regard for Zhou Weiqing, or placed so much importance on him. It was because he could not have his face thrown like that. He had set the rules, and under his watch, Gu Site had still dared to do such a thing. That was tantamount to slapping the face of the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord. How could he possibly continue on with this competition?

“Master.” With a loud thud, Gu Yingbing knelt down in front of Xue AoTian, his eyes reddening. “Master, please give me a chance. Since young, I have loved Tian'er for twenty years. I beg you, please give me a chance for this last fight. My father was wrong, and I am willing to apologise for it, apologise to both you and Zhou Weiqing. However, I cannot just let Tian'er go like this, I am not satisfied.”

Gu Yingbing could be said to be raised and taught fully by Xue AoTian. Looking at the tears in his eyes, the ugly expression on Xue AoTian's face eased up. However, since he had already spoken, he would not change it easily. With another cold humph, he waved his sleeve, motioning that they could leave.

Gu Site did not expect that Xue AoTian would be so strict, even down to stripping him of his Lion King position. This was the power of the Heavenly Snow Mountain, and in the entire WanShou Empire, only the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord could dominate and control everything.

Although Gu Site was angry inside, he dared not say anything. He was clear that he had already severely angered Xue AoTian. If he continued protesting, even if Xue AoTian killed him or crippled him, the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion Tribe would not dare say a thing. Currently, his heart was only filled with sorrow and regret.

Seeing that his Master would not change his mind, all of a sudden, Gu Yingbing turned to Zhou Weiqing. Gritting his teeth, he said: “Zhou Weiqing, my father’s mistake, I will bear it. However, I beg you, please give me a chance to contest you one last time.” As he said that, he suddenly lifted his right hand to grip his left shoulder. Before the surprised looks of all the others present, there was a ripping sound, and he forcefully tore his entire left arm off.

“Yingbing!” Gu Site was shocked. Despite his injuries, he leaped forward to hold his son. Regret filled every nook and cranny of his mind. He had never imagined that a sudden rash decision of his would result in his son paying such a price.

Seeing Gu Yingbing do something like that, even Long Shiya’s expression changed. Clearly, Gu Yingbing truly loved Tian’er, and it was not just a matter of the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord position.

Do not think that just because they had the Divine Attribute, they would be able to regrow his arm. That was an impossible feat. Even if they could reattach his arm, the damage to his nerves and meridians could never be fully repaired. That was to say – Gu Yingbing’s actions had fully severed his future chance of ever reaching the Heavenly God Tier stage. No matter how hard he worked in the future, his future would only be the Heavenly Emperor stage.

Gu Yingbing stood up slowly, but he did not reveal any signs of pain. His eyes staring into Zhou Weiqing’s eyes, he said solemnly: “You are able to come all the way up to the Heavenly Snow Mountain to fight for Tian’er, and I can see that you truly love Tian’er as well. However, I feel the same way. I do not wish to lose to you for some other reasons. Please give me a final chance to compete with you. If you win, and Tian’er is willing to go with you, then the betrothal between myself and Tian’er is nullified. However, if you lose, then I ask that you do not tangle with her any

longer. Even if she does not love me now, I will use my own love and feelings to touch her heart.”

Seeing Gu Yingbing’s stubborn gaze, Zhou Weiqing’s eyes sparked with respect. Nodding to him solemnly, he said: “Although you are my love rival, I have to admit that you are truly worthy of respect. I agree. Let us use this final round to determine the final victor. However, before the third round begins, fix your arm first. Otherwise, I will not feel happy with such a victory.”

Xue AoTian looked at Gu Yingbing, then sighed softly. “Child, why torture yourself like this?” As he said that, he waved his hand, and the torn arm at the side flew into his grip. Carefully, he attached it back to Gu Yingbing’s shoulder, and in a brilliant flash of gold, he personally started healing his disciple.

The Tiger King Xue Aoying watched from the side, nodding to himself inside. Compared to Gu Site, he approved of Gu Yingbing far more. No wonder Big Bro was willing to accept him as disciple and was willing to pass him the position of Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord in the future. Alas, it looks like everything has changed now. Who would imagine things would have turned out this way today?

The healing did not take too long; with Xue AoTian’s powerful Heavenly God Tier energy, it did not take long for him to reattach Gu Yingbing’s arm. Of course, even he was not able to fully heal the arm, and it would be a long time before he could even use it normally. Gu Yingbing would have to spend time to nourish it with his own Heavenly Energy for it to resume some working in the future, but it would never be the same again.

Xue AoTian looked at Gu Yingbing, then back at Zhou Weiqing, and he said solemnly: “No matter which of you becomes my son-in-law, I am very satisfied already. Alright, this last test will no longer be held by me. After all, you will be contesting to be Tian’er’s husband, so I will have her make the final choice.”

Hearing those words, Gu Yingbing was extremely anxious. He knew how important Zhou Weiqing was to Tian'er, and if she was the one to make the choice, he would have no chance at all.

Naturally, Xue AoTian could see Gu Yingbing's face change. Solemnly, he said: "Yingbing, do not be so anxious. This time, I am having Tian'er make the choice under a particular circumstance. I have temporarily Sealed Tian'er's memories, and she only has her own instincts. Under such a circumstance, each of you has five minutes to profess your love to her, to use your words to move her. In the end, whoever she chooses will be her husband. This time, there is nothing to do with your cultivation level or fighting capabilities, but whether or not Tian'er can accept you."

Hearing Xue AoTian's words, Gu Yingbing finally calmed down. Both he and Zhou Weiqing exchanged glances, their eyes filled with fighting spirit. Neither of them would give up easily. Five minutes. They only had five minutes of time. Immediately, both of them lapsed into deep thought, thinking how they would use their words to move Tian'er.

Xue AoTian gave the Tiger King a signal, hinting him to keep watch of Gu Site and not allow him to cause anymore trouble. He then turned around and left the cavern, clearly going to bring Tian'er here.

The icy cavern turned silent once more. Long Shiya did not interrupt Zhou Weiqing. This final test was a fight between their charisma and attraction.

Zhou Weiqing closed his eyes, standing there silently. In his mind, the images of all his interactions with Tian'er flashed by. There were sweet memories, warm memories, but also pain and suffering.

Yet, all those were the memories between them! Zhou Weiqing was clear that if he truly wanted to move Tian'er, he could only depend on those memories. So what if they were Sealed away, that

did not mean anything! Zhou Weiqing had confidence that he could Awaken her.

It did not take long for Xue AoTian to return. When he came back, not only did he have Tian'er along with him, but also a beautiful, black clad middle aged woman.

Black was considered a taboo colour in the Heavenly Snow Mountain. The reason why Long Shiya wore black was because he was using it as a provocation to Xue AoTian. For this middle aged beauty together with Xue AoTian to wear black, her status must be quite unique.

As for Zhou Weiqing, he instantly recognized the middle aged lady to be Tian'er's mother, the Entropic Nether Tiger, Phelia. Of course, this was her in human form now.

He quickly took a step forward, bowing respectfully: "Hello, Aunty."

Phelia smiled faintly but did not say anything, remaining beside Xue AoTian, with her arms wrapped around Tian'er's shoulders gently. No one else could imagine that this black clad beauty was actually a Heavenly God Tier powerhouse, no lesser than Xue AoTian or Long Shiya.

Zhou Weiqing's gaze flew from Phelia to Tian'er. Currently, she was dressed in her usual white gown, but her brilliant and moving purple eyes had lost all lustre. Zhou Weiqing had not seen Tian'er in such a long time, and seeing her so suddenly, he could not help but feel his eyes water.

Tian'er had lost weight... indeed, it was all his fault! She had actually lost so much weight. Originally, she had been buxom and well curved, but now she looked so emaciated, her face pale like she had gone through a major illness. Even her perfect skin had lost its usual glow and radiance.

Although they had not spoken, Zhou Weiqing could clearly sense

that in this period of time, Tian'er had suffered so much. It was all because of him! Zhou Weiqing was filled with hate, hatred towards himself for not being able to protect Tian'er, that he had caused such a girl to suffer so much silently. In that moment, Zhou Weiqing set his resolve that he would not part with Tian'er here, even if he had to die here.

Seeing Tian'er, Gu Yingbing's expression was agitated. He knew that this was his last chance to hold on to his fiancée, to continue being together with Tian'er. It all depended on the next five minutes. In truth, he did not have much confidence in his heart, but he would never give up. Even if it was with his own lifeblood, he would fight for every last possible chance.

Xue AoTian brought his daughter to the center of the cavern, turning to the two youths as he said: "In a moment, I will give each of you five minutes. As you each have your turn, the other will not be able to listen in. I will use my Heavenly Energy to block the other from listening. Since Yingbing is originally Tian'er's fiancée, he will go first. Zhou Weiqing, do you have any objections?"

Chapter 181 Tian'er, I love you! (2)

Zhou Weiqing shook his head without hesitation, his gaze not leaving Tian'er's face. "I believe in Tian'er. Besides myself, Tian'er will never fall for anyone else. If anyone can evoke her memories, it will only be me."

Xue AoTian gave him a long searching look before turning back to Gu Yingbing. "Yingbing, this is your last chance. Although I know that you were originally Tian'er's fiancé and all of today's tests may seem unfair to you... I have no choice but to admit that some of Zhou Weiqing's words had been right earlier. I have not been a good father, and I have never really thought of her interests deep enough. As such, this time, in the final choice, I want to leave the choice to her. I do not want her to suffer for the rest of her life. Do you know? This time, Tian'er had already made the preparation to marry you in order to cement to alliance between the relationship between the Heavenly Snow Mountain and the Lion Tribe... and then she would leave us forever... permanently. This is not something I wish to see. If today you can move Tian'er with your words and get her to choose you, then I will not unSeal her memories, and let her be your wife like this. Otherwise, Master can only say sorry to you. I hope you can understand."

Gu Yingbing saw the hint of apology in Xue AoTian's eyes, and nodded gravely. "Master, I can understand your feelings. I will do my best."

Xue AoTian nodded and said: "Alright, let us begin then. I will give you five minutes first." As he said that, Xue AoTian raised his right hand, and a layer of faint gold light spread out, enveloping the family of three along with Gu Yingbing.

On the outside, Zhou Weiqing and Long Shiya could not hear anything, but they could still clearly see what was going on inside.

Five minutes. The last five minutes that would decide if he could

spend the rest of his life with his love. In that instant, Gu Yingbing's forehead was filled with sweat. Even when he had torn off his own arm earlier, he did not have such an expression, his eyes filled with hope, yet more unease and anxiety.

Taking a small step forward, Gu Yingbing knelt before Tian'er on a single knee. Right at that moment, Xue AoTian also released his spiritual control over Tian'er, allowing her to resume consciousness.

"Tian'er, it is me. I am your Big Bro Gu!" Gu Yingbing said softly.

Tian'er looked vacantly at Gu Yingbing. Currently, her heart was at a loss, with most of her memory vanished. She only had the memory of everything before five years old, as well as her base instincts.

Originally, Xue AoTian had already set his resolve to allow Tian'er to marry Zhou Weiqing. However, when he saw Gu Yingbing tear off his own arm, it had affected him greatly. After all, Gu Yingbing was the disciple that he had raised all these years, and his actions proved that he truly loved Tian'er. Who was to say that Yingbing could not bring happiness to Tian'er? At least, he was not such a 'playboy' like Zhou Weiqing.

As such, Xue AoTian had decided to leave Tian'er with a five year old memory. This also meant that she would know who Gu Yingbing was, but not who Zhou Weiqing was. Without question, this gave Gu Yingbing an obvious advantage.

Towards her husband's decision, the Entropic Nether Tiger Phelia did not say anything, allowing him to do as he wished.

"Big Bro Gu." A tender voice rang out from Tian'er, sounding so moving and sweet to Gu Yingbing's ears.

Gu Yingbing was overjoyed, moving forward slightly in excitement. "Tian'er, it is me! I am your Big Bro Gu! Big Bro Gu loves you so much, do you remember? I brought you to catch those

little snow wolves, you were so scared then, just not long ago. You promised Big Bro Gu that when you grow old, you will become Big Bro Gu's wife. You won't go back on your word right?"

Tian'er looked absently at Gu Yingbing. "Become Big Bro Gu's wife? But... Big Bro Gu, why have you become so old?"

Gu Yingbing started. Even Xue AoTian was helplessly left not knowing whether to laugh or cry. Indeed, he had only left his daughter with her memory of five years. However, that also meant that she had regressed to a mental age of five.

Now... at thirty years old, how could Gu Yingbing possibly look like when he was fifteen?

After a dazed moment, Gu Yingbing quickly said: "Because Big Bro Gu and Tian'er have both grown up!"

"Papa, I am a bit scared. Big Bro Gu... he seems to have changed." Tian'er muttered.

Xue AoTian gently stroked his daughter's hair. In that instant, he seemed to see the precious young daughter who had also stuck by his side, unwilling to part from him. Every time he entered closed door cultivation, she would pout and stare at him unwillingly. In that moment, his heart was filled with love and tenderness.

"Tian'er, then do you like your Big Bro Gu? Big Bro Gu treats you so well, will you be his wife?"

"I like Big Bro Gu." Tian'er said without hesitation. "Big Bro Gu always protects me, so I like him!" Hearing her words, tears streamed down Gu Yingbing's face in joy. "I... I... right? Let me always protect you forever."

Tian'er blinked innocently. "But... liking Big Bro Gu means I have to marry Big Bro Gu? Papa, I do not understand."

Gu Yingbing froze, the hope that had suddenly blazed in his heart crushed in such a massively heavy blow. He could only stare at Tian'er dazedly. For a while, he did not know what to say.

Currently, she was just like a little girl, and no matter what he said, she would not leave her father's arms to enter his.

Zhou Weiqing was watching from outside the shield of light. The expression on his face was calm and confident, but in truth, his hands were gripped tightly in fists. In this final moment, how could he not be nervous? No matter how much confidence he had, how could it be absolute?

Although he saw that Tian'er was speaking, and that Gu Yingbing's expression grew more flurried and anxious, Zhou Weiqing did not grow relaxed at all.

Five minutes, why did it seem so slow!

It was as if an entire century had passed before Gu Yingbing finally seemed to be unable to control himself, standing up and moving right in front of Tian'er, pouring out his heart. Alas for him, almost at the same time, the Entropic Nether Tiger Phelia, who had been standing beside Xue AoTian, suddenly gave a soft sigh, clapping her husband's shoulder. The five minutes was now up.

The gold light vanished, and Gu Yingbing was still standing there crying out anxiously: "Tian'er, I am your Big Bro Gu who will protect you forever! Why won't you marry me? Big Bro Gu won't force you, let me hug you please? Just like when we were young."

However, Tian'er seemed to be in a fright, refusing to leave her father's arms as she clung tight to him, not even looking at Gu Yingbing.

At this point, the Lion King Gu Site's face was ashen. Looking at his son, he sighed and said softly: "Foolish child, you were too anxious and impatient. Even if you had a chance, you have thrown it away now." As the saying goes, 'a bystander sees things with a clear mind'. Seeing his son's anxious and flurried look, and looking at Tian'er who had lost most of her memory and was in a fragile state. Being pressed like that, how could she not be afraid?

“Yingbing, enough. If Zhou Weiqing does not gain Tian’er’s approval, you will have a second chance later.” Xue AoTian sighed, trying to comfort him.

Gu Yingbing’s body swayed, his face paling suddenly. With a Wah sound, he suddenly vomited out a mouthful of blood as he staggered back a few steps. He suddenly felt like Tian’er was leaving him further and further. If not for the Tiger King Xue Aoying quickly stepping forward to support him, he would have fallen to the ground.

Xue AoTian turned his gaze to Zhou Weiqing. To be honest, he did not wish to see this sight, the precious disciple that he had raised and groomed with all his effort, now taking such a huge blow from his daughter. Worse still, he might not be able to get back up from this setback. All of this was because of this young man in front of him, Zhou Weiqing. No matter how outstanding and talented he was, how could he easily replace Gu Yingbing in Xue AoTian’s heart, whom he had raised since young! As such, Xue AoTian’s heart was truly complicated.

“It is your turn.” Xue AoTian said calmly to Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing nodded, moving to five yards from Tian’er before he stopped. At this moment, his fists unclenched again, as he gazed tenderly at her.

Unlike Gu Yingbing, he did not seem agitated at all. On the contrary, he just stood there, staring at Tian’er calmly. Currently, Zhou Weiqing had already changed to a fresh new set of clothes, and he had reined in all his Heavenly Energy, not a hint of aura leaking out. He just stood there simply, looking at Tian’er, his gaze tender and clearly filled with love.

Originally hiding in her father’s embrace, Tian’er seemed to sense something, and she slowly lifted her head to look at Zhou Weiqing. In that instant when her gaze finally met his, her entire body trembled slightly. Although she still seemed puzzled and

confused, her heart had somehow started racing. This strange looking person in front of her, whom she had no memory of, was somehow tugging at her heartstrings.

At the beginning, her gaze was trying to escape, until it slowly turned dull and sluggish. Tian'er just continued staring back at Zhou Weiqing, as if trying very hard to remember something, yet just being unable to do so. Slowly, a pained expression crossed her beautiful features.

“Fat Cat.” Zhou Weiqing said softly.

In that instant, amongst the entire group gathered there, four people froze at once.

As everyone knew, tigers were part of the cat family, perhaps the strongest amongst the cat family. Amongst the entire group, four of them were tigers! Besides Tian'er, the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord Xue AoTian, the Entropic Nether Tiger Phelia, and the Tiger King Xue Aoying, weren't they all of a Tiger bloodline? With that single phrase 'Fat Cat', the three of them almost vomited blood out.

Chapter 181 Tian'er, I love you! (3)

The three powerhouses' faces turned strange, especially Xue AoTian, whose face was twitching uncontrollably.

At the side, Long Shiya was trying to force a smirk down, as he looked at Xue AoTian with a strange expression on his face. Musing to himself: Fat Cat, Fat Cat, what a good phrase to use. Perhaps I should start calling Old Monster Xue that as well?

However, the same two words had a totally different feeling in Tian'er's ears. Just like a heavy warhammer, smashing right into the closed and locked doors of her heart, causing her entire body to tremble violently. In her entire life, only Zhou Weiqing had called her that, and it was how he had called her in those few years they had spent together.

As Gu Yingbing had already failed, Xue AoTian had neglected to raise the sound barrier once more. As such, all present had actually heard Zhou Weiqing's words.

Tian'er continued looking at Zhou Weiqing, her gaze turning from blank, to dazed, to a strange struggle. She was trying so hard to remember, to remember why this stranger in front of her looked so familiar, yet she did not remember anything about him. Subconsciously, she felt that this person in front of him should be important to her.

"Do you still remember how we first met? You were always so mischievous, yet always loving to hide in my embrace." Zhou Weiqing said softly. His voice was gentle, yet seemed to be filled with a strange magic, every word striking deep into Tian'er's heart.

"Haha. I still remember the first time I beat your buttocks. Although you were still a tiny little white tiger then, but your little buttocks were still so round and soft, anyone would be unwilling to let go." Not far away, Gu Yingbing vomited out another mouthful

of blood, as he stared angrily at Zhou Weiqing.

Xue AoTian's expression also turned ugly. He truly wanted to send a slap into that little brat's face! His daughter's buttocks had been touched by this stinking little brat when she was in her main form!

The Entropic Nether Tiger Phelia was still standing at the side, covering her mouth as she smiled faintly. She couldn't help but think to herself, no wonder this naughty little brat was able to attract her daughter. His bad boy look was easy to attract attention indeed.

"At that time, I still did not understand why you were struggling so much. Weren't you just a little tiger, what's the big deal about touching you. At last, only after looking did I realise that you were a little female tiger."

"Waah* Gu Yingbing vomited another mouthful of blood. This time, he couldn't take it anymore, his entire body swaying as he fainted, before being caught by Xue Aoying.

"Bastard, are you trying to die? If you continue talking like that, you better get lost!" Xue AoTian was also unable to hold back any longer, and he growled angrily at Zhou Weiqing. He was starting to regret giving that stinking little brat any chance, such a wretched brat!

Long Shiya looked at Xue AoTian's angrily face and he laughed heartily, saying: "This has nothing to do with me, it is his previous teacher who taught him that."

It was as if Zhou Weiqing did not hear their words. All this while, his gaze was still fixed upon Tian'er. Gently, he continued: "Later on, I still gave you a bath, and that time you struggled even harder. After that, you kept ignoring me for days. Yet, even then, you still did not leave me. From your body, I could vaguely sense some energy reverberations. Later on, many people told me that Tiger type Heavenly Beasts were the top tier amongst all Heavenly

Beasts. By then, I already knew that you had your own goals and reasons for staying by my side.”

“Your goal was this... right?” As he said that, Zhou Weiqing waved his hands, the two glowing triangles once more, stacking, and in moments he had once again summoned his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation.

The concentrated light seemed to draw Tian'er's attention, causing her eyes to dull slightly momentarily. The next instant, within the glow of six lights, only two auras remained. Time and Demonic. The two Saint Attributes!

Instantly, Tian'er's body froze, before she started trembling even more. Subconsciously, her hands raised as well, gold and purple flickering in them. The Divine and Spirit Attributes rose up, mingling with the Demonic and Time Attributes of Zhou Weiqing.

They had after all once had intimate relationship, and in that time the four Saint Attributes had gone through a major fusion. Even before that, they had cultivated and trained many times with the four Saint Attributes. In that moment, the attraction between their Attributes and Heavenly Energy was far stronger than anyone else. Even so, as soon as Zhou Weiqing released his two Saint Attributes alone, in that instant, both Xue AoTian and Xue Aoying felt a strong sense of benign warmth, as if they could not wait to step forward to cultivate together with Zhou Weiqing. Of course, due to the sheer gap between their cultivation levels, the feeling was diluted many times over, and they were clear that it was not a huge benefit for them to cultivate with Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing slowly walked towards Tian'er, step by step, his hands held out with the two Saint Attributes reverberating around.

As he walked, he continued speaking: “In truth, the time when I truly fell in love with you was on the Heavenly Jewel Island. Originally, I had always been wary of you, as I could sense that you

had some purpose and goal for staying by my side. At that time, your cultivation level was far higher than mine, and I dared not do anything to you. However, after the events in the Lustre Spatial Realm of the Heaven's Expanse Palace, my view of you totally changed. After that, when I learned of the demise of my homeland, only you stood by my side. You were even willing to use your most precious possession to ease my despair and hurt. If not for you, I do not know how I could have walked out from that state of depression.”

At that time, although my heart was mostly filled with vengeance, I could still clearly sense that it had also been seized by you. Tian'er, do you still remember? Just because you did not want to cause any further trouble for me, and you left me that letter before sneaking away. You signed off with 'Your Tian'er, your Fat Cat.', along with that last question. Now that I have finally seen you again, I must tell you those words that I owe you, the words that I failed to tell you long ago.”

As he spoke up to this point, he had finally reached Tian'er. Tears poured down uncontrollably from his eyes. A man does not easily show his tears, only if his heart is truly broken. His hands slowly grasped onto Tian'er's hands, and in that moment, the four Saint Attributes swirled around, above their heads, without any sign of rejection or exclusion, as if they belonged together. Almost instantly, they seemed to fuse together, forming a four-coloured whirlpool spinning right over their heads.

“Tian'er, I love you.” As he spoke, Zhou Weiqing was already sobbing.

A spark seemed to enter the dazed orbs of Tian'er. As light slowly returned to them, a faint purple mist emitted from her head, and her body began trembling violently. Tears started streaming down her cheeks like the pearls from a broken necklace, following the curve of her cheek before dropping down.

“Tian'er, I love you. I am your Little Fatty! Please wake up!”

Zhou Weiqing called out as he sobbed. His voice was not loud, but at that moment, it infected everyone present.

Gu Yingbing had managed to rouse from his faint with the Tiger King Xue Aoying's help, just in time to see this sight. His already pale face turned even whiter, and he closed his eyes in pain.

"Little Fatty, my Little Fatty... Little Fatty, Little Fatty!" Light seemed to spring from Tian'er's beautiful eyes, and with a sob, she sprang forward abruptly, her arms encircling Zhou Weiqing's neck as she burst into tears.

At last, Tian'er had awoken, The faint cloud of purple mist was the Seal that Xue AoTian had used to Seal her memories.

Zhou Weiqing's imprint in her heart was too deep, just too deep. How could a mere simple memory seal work to remove it? Zhou Weiqing's words, the four Saint Attributes, all of it allowed the seed of memory to grow once more. The young couple who loved each other deeply, after all their trials and tribulations, they finally embraced each other again.

In that moment, all words and descriptions were useless, only the deep feelings and emotions, as if they were melding into one another's body, tying their hearts together, forever.

The ugly expression on Xue AoTian's face slowly relaxed. Sensing the feelings of his daughter bursting out like crazy, he knew that things were already set in stone.

At that moment, his hand was suddenly grasped by Phelia, who said: "Just wish them well... For our daughter to be able to find true love, it is her fortune. Just like originally when we met each other. Although we had no choice but to separate for twenty years, although we also went through our own trials and tribulations, but I will never regret it. AoTian, hold me."

The feelings that Xue AoTian had hidden deep in his heart for twenty years also burst forth, and he pulled his wife in for a deep

hug. At that moment, his eyes were moist.

Long Shiya was beaming from ear to ear. Before coming up the Heavenly Snow Mountain, he had estimated that their chance of success was less than ten percent. However, they had done it, they had succeeded. It was not Zhou Weiqing's cultivation level, power, fighting ability or his bloodline, or even his teachings that had won the day... it was an invincible strength in the world – Love!

“Father.” After some time, Tian'er finally lifted her head from Zhou Weiqing's chest. Looking at her parents in their own embrace, she leaped over to them, hugging them as well. Looking at this woman in front of her that she did not recognize, her beautiful face was filled with a sudden joy. Love, both of intimacy and kinship, this was what the world spun around for... and at this moment, she had finally received both of them at once. Currently, Tian'er felt like she was overwhelmed with joy, all the suffering that she had once undergone evaporating.

Xue AoTian held out an arm, enveloping his daughter into their joined embrace. At this point, he wished he could hold his wife and daughter forever like this, what an amazing thing that would be!

Unknowingly, Long Shiya had somehow appeared behind Zhou Weiqing. Giving him a kick on the buttocks, he said: “Little Fool! What are you still standing there for?!”

Only then did Zhou Weiqing rouse to his senses, and he scrambled forward quickly. With a thud, he knelt down before Xue AoTian and Phelia, kowtowing three times. “This little son-in-law, Zhou Weiqing, greets his father in law, mother in law.”

Xue AoTian gave a humph and said: “Stand up. If you let me know that you ever bully my Tian'er... hmph, hmph, you know what will happen.”

Chapter 182 Returning with a beauty! (1)

Zhou Weiqing wiped the tears off his face, smiling joyously as he said: “I can’t wait to dote on her, how could I possibly bear to bully her? Please rest assured.”

Phelia smiled faintly and said: “Rest assured? It isn’t that easy eh, young man, it is not a good habit to spread your love too much.”

Seeing Phelia’s eyes, Zhou Weiqing couldn’t help but feel a chill down his spine. He could only smile and nod, not daring to say anything.

Tian’er turned her head, her gaze moving past Zhou Weiqing to land on Gu Yingbing. She pulled back and turned to Gu Yingbing, bowing as she said apologetically: “Big Bro Gu, I am really sorry. I know that you feel for me, and you have always treated me well. However, my heart already has Little Fatty. I am sorry.”

By this time, Gu Yingbing had stood up straight again, his gaze fixed on Zhou Weiqing. He bit his lip and said savagely: “Zhou Weiqing, remember this, it is not done between us. You are currently not strong enough, but you must protect Tian’er well. I will not admit defeat just like this, even if Tian’er marries you, I will not give up so easily.”

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly and said: “Bro Gu, if not for the fact that we are love rivals, I think that we can become friends. Thank you for loving and taking care of Tian’er all these years, you are a worthy opponent who can be respected. Even so, I will not give you any chance to steal Tian’er away from me. She is mine, this life, the next life, and forever.”

In that instant, Zhou Weiqing seemed to be giving forth an indescribable glowing power and presence. There were three Heavenly Emperor stage powerhouses and two Heavenly God Tier powerhouses present, but at that moment, it was as if Zhou Weiqing was the center of attention.

Originally, the lights of the four Saint Attribute which had been whirling above Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's heads suddenly fused together, forming a faint white light pillar which enclosed Zhou Weiqing, causing his entire body to give forth a light of treasure. Right in the middle of his forehead, a white stripe appeared.

This was longer an ordinary tattoo, perhaps using the phrase 'line of god' would be more apt. The white line seemed to form the 'King' word, yet like a dragon encircling it, with the outer circle of white light. Such a strange sensation, everyone around could feel it. At the same time, all the environmental energy of the entire icy cavern started rushing towards Zhou Weiqing's body crazily.

"This... this is..." Not even Xue AoTian understood what Zhou Weiqing was going through. Only the Entropic Nether Tiger Phelia's eyes widened in shock.

"Heaven and Earth Primary Tide! How is this possible... how could it be?!" Phelia exclaimed

Xue AoTian looked at his wife in surprise. "Heaven and Earth Primary Tide? What is that?" Without hesitation, Phelia replied: "Only for one that ascends above the Heavenly Dao will have the ability to summon and endure the Heaven and Earth Primary Tide. So, it seems that the legends of old were actually true... The gathering of the Four Saint Attributes can truly cause a miracle that transforms the heavens! After going through this baptism of fire of the Heaven and Earth Primary Tide, his spiritual senses will transcend to Divine Senses, and he will be nearly immune to all forms of spiritual suppression. Furthermore, due to the fact his Divine Spirit will be far above his own Heavenly Energy, his future cultivation will be even faster. Even his body will slowly evolve to be above the Heavenly Dao Stage."

In truth, there were other reasons added together coinciding in this change that Zhou Weiqing was experiencing, and it wasn't just as simple as Phelia mentioned. Otherwise, since Tian'er was also bathed in the whirlpool of the Four Saint Attributes, how did it not

have the same effect on her.

Ever since Zhou Weiqing had bathed in the lava of the Fire Spirit Mountain, he had entered a unique state of cultivation. The fusion of the Solidified Dragon Spirit and his Dark Demon God Tiger bloodline was already an existence that surpassed the Heavenly Dao. The reason was simple, both Dragons and the Dark Demon God Tigers could be considered existences that were at the maximum of the Heavenly God Tier, pushing beyond even. No matter how one looked at it, these two should never be possible to fuse together. Yet, someone Zhou Weiqing had done it, and it had been because of the Four Saint Attributes fusion he had gone through that allowed it.

When that fusion completed, it had already brought Zhou Weiqing's new bloodline to a whole new level, a state that defied the heavens.

That was not to say that Zhou Weiqing would suddenly become invincible or reach the Heavenly God Tier instantly. It was that his body and talent now had the strong potential to surpass the Heavenly God Tier in the future.

Towards this point, even Long Shiya had not been able to make a judgement, let alone Zhou Weiqing.

After all that, Zhou Weiqing had then started training in the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation, even going so far as to create his own Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation. That had allowed his connection to the world's energies to grow even stronger, to bring him closer to nature; his body and Heavenly Energy both evolving in a qualitative change. Originally, at that time, Zhou Weiqing already had the potential to bring about the Heaven and Earth Primary Tide. However, at that time, Zhou Weiqing's mind and heart had not been in harmony and understanding, filled with thoughts and worry about Tian'er. Furthermore, without the burst of energy from the fusion of the Four Saint Attributes, there was no push in aiding him breaking

past the shackles of the heavens, and he could only remain status quo.

However, just in that previous instant, he had already succeeded in gaining back Tian'er. As he held her hands, the fusion of the four Saint Attributes had burst forth in power. With his mind and heart finally in harmony, along with all the previous conditions fulfilled, it had actually abruptly brought about the Heaven and Earth Primary Tide.

From this moment on, the Heavenly God Tier's door was already officially wide open to Zhou Weiqing. That was to say, in his future cultivation, no matter the Heavenly King Stage, Heavenly Emperor Stage or Heavenly God Stage, there should be no large bottlenecks for him. Especially with the aid of the Four Saint Attributes, if he stayed together cultivating with Tian'er, there was the real possibility of him surpassing even the Heavenly God Tier stage... the Heavenly Jewel Change!

Even Xue AoTian couldn't help but reveal a strong envy on his face as he looked upon the white light surrounding Zhou Weiqing... let alone the others.

However, no one dared interrupt Zhou Weiqing, even as Long Shiya stood anxiously not far from him. Zhou Weiqing was still undergoing the baptism of the Heaven and Earth Primary Tide, and all the powerhouses in the area, even those hidden Heavenly Beasts of the Heavenly Snow Mountain, were benefiting a lot from the fallout effects.

More than five minutes passed before the Heaven and Earth Primary Tide finally subsided. Zhou Weiqing's originally bronzed skin now shone with an inner glow. Even stranger were his eyes, now black and shiny as a precious gem, his gaze deep and profound yet without any fire. If one were to look closely, it gave an impression of unbelievable clarity and pureness.

The Entropic Nether Tiger Phelia looked at her son-in-law to be,

a glow in her eyes. Only when the Heaven and Earth Primary Tide did she take a step forward and say: “Weiqing, do not forget the agreement between you and me.”

Zhou Weiqing nodded immediately: “Mother-in-law, do not worry, I remember it clearly.”

Phelia smiled faintly before turning her gaze to Tian’er. Her eyes turned gentle and loving, tears brimming as she said softly: “Tian’er, my child, can Mummy hug you, please?”

“Mummy?” Even though Tian’er had been with Phelia earlier, her memories had been Sealed and her consciousness suppressed. As such, she had not learned about Phelia. Now that she had regained her memories, she had vaguely guessed the importance of Phelia, but hearing her actually say the words, Tian’er couldn’t help but tremble uncontrollably.

From a young age, ever since she could remember anything, she only had her father, and not her mother. Seeing all those Heavenly Beasts having their mothers, she was so envious. Now that she finally met her own mother, she somehow did not know what to do or what to say.

Besides excitement, her inner heart was also dazed and confused. Perhaps, if not for Zhou Weiqing’s and the joy it had brought her, Tian’er might not even be able to accept Phelia. After all, for twenty whole years, Phelia had never even appeared once. If one were to say that Xue AoTian was not a great father, then Phelia was not even a passable mother.

However, currently Tian’er was in a state of joy and fortune from reuniting with Zhou Weiqing, and even the slight hatred she had felt for her mother was washed away.

Slowly, in a trembling voice, Tian’er said: “Mother... why... why do you not want Tian’er!”

Hearing those words, Phelia could no longer control herself.

Taking an abrupt step forward, she enveloped Tian'er in her embrace, sobbing uncontrollably.

Xue AoTian quickly hugged both mother and daughter, and the family of three was immersed in a mix of sadness and joy, locked in embrace.

Gu Yingbing looked deeply at Zhou Weiqing, but he did not say anything further. Turning around, he supported his father, and with the aid of the Tiger King Xue Aoying, they silently left.

It could be said that this time, the arrival of Long Shiya and Zhou Weiqing had caused the entire WanShou Empire to be thrown into disarray, their entire ruling structure in a mess. Gu Yingbing would no longer be able to inherit the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord position, and the Lion King Gu Site had also been stripped of his title of King, at least within the next month. For a short period of time at least, the entire WanShou Empire would be thrown into turbulence. However, no matter what the future lay for them, it would no longer have any connection with Zhou Weiqing.

Long Shiya stood beside his precious disciple, a faint smile on his face. This ending was perhaps the best possible ending for him, and he placed a fat palm on Zhou Weiqing's shoulder, silently giving him a big thumbs up.

Without question, without Long Shiya, Zhou Weiqing would not even have the chance to ascend the Heavenly Snow Mountain, with neither the ability or right to do so. However, after that, everything else today had been the result of his own efforts and hard work. From setting up the entire scene, to provoking Xue AoTian and sparking that fatherly love in his heart, to the three rounds where he had spent his all in defeating Gu Yingbing... It could be said that Zhou Weiqing had far surpassed all of Long Shiya's expectations and hopes. That was without even talking about him going through the Heaven and Earth Primary Tide and his limitless possibilities in the future.

...

The entire Heavenly Snow Mountain was soon thrown into a massive shock. The Lion Prince Gu Yingbing and the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord daughter's wedding had been called off without warning, causing all the Tribe Leaders who had come as guests to be totally surprised. However, due to the authority and power of the Heavenly Snow Mountain, no one dared to say anything. Under the command of the Tiger King Xue Aoying, the Tribe Leaders slowly left silently. Of course, no one dared attempt to retrieve back the gifts they had brought...

Zhou Weiqing and Long Shiya were arranged to stay in the Heavenly Snow Mountain for a time. It was such a rare chance that Phelia was able to return, and she wanted to spend every second with her husband and daughter, and even Zhou Weiqing had to be placed behind in the 'queue'. Besides a few short chances to see Tian'er every day, he spent most of his time in his own room cultivating.

Chapter 182 Returning with a beauty! (2)

Naturally, he would not mind that too much. He had already done whatever he could have done, succeeded in everything he had come to do, and it was time to slowly wait patiently to reap the benefits.

On the third day that Zhou Weiqing and Long Shiya had arrived at the Heavenly Snow Mountain, the entire mountain had finally quietened down as all the wedding guests had finally left. Phelia had also left silently, as she had her own responsibilities as a Guardian to tend to, and could not disappear for too long.

When Zhou Weiqing finally saw Tian'er again, her eyes were red from crying about her mother's leaving. Although they had only been together for three days, after listening to her explanations and apologies, she had quickly forgiven Phelia. It was not all Phelia's fault, but that set of responsibility was just too heavy.

"Little Fatty, Father is looking for you." Tian'er stood at the entrance of Zhou Weiqing's room, calling him lightly.

Zhou Weiqing leapt to his feet, swiftly holding Tian'er in his arms and planting a kiss on her lips without warning. "So fragrant! Dearest, what is my Lord Father-in-Law looking for me for?"

Tian'er was originally full of sorrow from her mother's leaving, but with Zhou Weiqing messing around, she couldn't help but blush a deep red, and the sorrow in her heart lessened slightly.

"How would I know what Father is looking for you for. You naughty fellow, you're here in the Heavenly Snow Mountain and you still don't behave a little."

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily, swiping a finger lightly across her cute nose as he said proudly: "Why should I behave? You are my wife. It is a natural thing for man and wife to be intimate, nothing to be ashamed of!"

Tian'er gave a humph and said: "I haven't agreed to marry you yet. You have only passed Father's test, not my test!"

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily, giving her a perverted leer as he said softly: "Alright! Tonight I will let you test me all you want, how about that? Heh heh."

Tian'er blushed even deeper, giving Zhou Weiqing's waist a savage pinch and twist before she said: "When we are still in the Heavenly Snow Mountain, you're not allowed to do anything funny. Father's senses extend throughout the entire area."

Zhou Weiqing blinked innocently and said: "Heh, so that is to say that when we leave the Heavenly Snow Mountain, we can..."

"You terrible fellow, come on let's go!" Tian'er's face grew redder, but her eyes were mischievous and delightful, without any hint of rejection. She had always been a bold girl who dared to hate or love, and was also a Heavenly Beast cultivated to Human, without many of the bashfulness that female humans had. Love was love, and she was willing to do anything for the man she loved.

If one were to say that she previously had some ill feelings in her heart about Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er's relationship, but this time after Zhou Weiqing had come to the Heavenly Snow Mountain at such a huge risk of his life just to snatch her back... such courage and resolution had already proven his love for her. Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing had used his own strength to defeat Gu Yingbing, proving himself even further to her! In Tian'er's heart, her Little Fatty was already more perfect than her father!

Led by Tian'er, Zhou Weiqing was quickly brought to another icy chamber.

As soon as he entered, he immediately sensed the temperature drop drastically. The entire Heavenly Snow Mountain was already so cold, but this temperature was a whole level colder, and even with his physique and cultivation level, he couldn't help but shudder slightly.

There was only a single piece of furniture in the entire room, a stone bed. Xue AoTian sat right upon it, and as he saw Tian'er walk into the room with Zhou Weiqing, hand in hand, his expression was gentle.

"Father, I have brought him here." Tian'er told Xue AoTian.

Xue AoTian looked at Zhou Weiqing and said: "Tian'er, leave us for a while. I have some words to speak to this little brat alone."

Tian'er started momentarily, before she held onto Zhou Weiqing's hand even tighter. Reproachfully, she said: "Father!"

Xue AoTian said exasperatedly: "A grown girl truly cannot be kept at home anymore... would I hurt him? Go go."

Tian'er flushed prettily, and she glanced at Zhou Weiqing before leaving reluctantly.

Xue AoTian looked at Zhou Weiqing. His expression was calm and unflurried, but from his brow and eyes, Zhou Weiqing could sense a hint of sorrow. Clearly, Phelia's leaving still left his heart feeling extremely uncomfortable.

"Weiqing, Phelia has told me all about the agreement between you and her. To be honest, if you were an outsider, no matter what price I have to pay, I will groom you to do that. However, you are also Tian'er's husband, and for my daughter's sake, well-being and happiness, I will not force you to do so. Tell me, what do you think about the whole matter?"

Hearing Xue AoTian's words, Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly and said: "Sir, Father in Law, my thinking is very simple. I will not take risks."

"Oh?" Xue AoTian arched a brow, looking at him in slight surprise.

Zhou Weiqing continued: "If I do not have absolute confidence, I will not attempt to join in that matter... otherwise it is not only harmful to myself, but to others as well. Not only will it fail to let

Mother-in-Law return to your side, Tian'er will also suffer as a widow. Something like that I will definitely not do. I have chosen to shoulder that responsibility and to work towards it, but I will not attempt it without absolute confidence.”

Hearing Zhou Weiqing's words, Xue AoTian smiled and nodded, saying: “With those words of yours, I can set my mind at ease. You little rascal, you are far more wiser and mature than any of your own age. However, you are trying to take away my daughter, and I cannot bear that as well... so how should we deal with that?”

A strange expression crossed Zhou Weiqing's face, and he said tentatively: “How about... you come along with Tian'er. I don't mind having you come along to guide us in cultivating.”

Xue AoTian said exasperatedly: “You're trying to gain another bruiser to help you? Stop dreaming. Having the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor by your side isn't enough for you?”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “I'm just joking around. However, Father-in-law, to be honest, aren't you bored and lonely staying in the Heavenly Snow Mountain all day long just cultivating? As Mother-in-Law has already said, just like my Master does not have any possibility of breaking through to the Heavenly God Tier in his lifetime, you also do not have any possibility of breaking through past the Heavenly God Tier. What is the point of staying shut-in in the Heavenly Snow Mountain? The world outside is so huge, and even if you are already at the Heavenly God Tier, I'm sure you haven't explored every nook and cranny of the world. Why not come on out and see the world, who knows if you relax and have a change of perspective, enjoy yourself, and it might even have a better effect on your cultivation?”

Xue AoTian started momentarily before laughing in spite of himself. “Only you, little brat, would ever dare to speak to me like that. For me to stay in the Heavenly Snow Mountain... it is not just because of cultivating... more as an awe or threat. Do you really

think that the WanShou Empire is that stable? That easy to control? Especially with so many different Tribes? Without the Heavenly Snow Mountain above them all, even the grand WanShou Empire would splinter and break apart before long... and be destroyed.”

Zhou Weiqing gave a bitter smile and said: “From a certain perspective, I am still enemies with the WanShou Empire. The war between the WanShou Empire and Humankind has gone on for years, decades, longer than even I know. Every year, countless of lives die, not just humans, but on both sides. Father in law, is there a need for that?”

Xue AoTian looked at him passively before saying: “In this world, the law of the jungle is the ultimate law of nature. The weak are the prey of the strong, that is life. More importantly, the world needs a certain balance.”

Zhou Weiqing looked at Xue AoTian, puzzled. “Balance?”

Chapter 183 Oops! (1)

Xue AoTian said passively: “Birth, Death, Illness, that is all the circle of life, the law of nature. In any world, the number of living beings that can be supported will always have a limit. For example, one day, if the WanShou Empire does not war with your human empires... your Human Empires will just start in-fighting amongst each other. The death count will be no lesser. Do you understand my meaning?”

Zhou Weiqing scratched his head sheepishly: “Not really.”

Xue AoTian suddenly laughed. “It’s good that you don’t. You are not made out to be a politician, ruler or conqueror. Some things are not good to learn too early. You can leave now, bring Tian’er along, otherwise even if she stays here, her heart is no longer here. Every three years, I want you and Tian’er to return here, I will examine both your cultivation progress.”

Zhou Weiqing was overjoyed. “Thank you Lord Father in Law!”

Xue AoTian smiled faintly and said: “I can see a possible miracle on you, something I never thought I would see in my life. However, I do not wish that this miracle be just a passing or transient flight like the flowering of the broad-leaved epiphyllum. In this world, there are many geniuses and talents, but in the end they amount to nothing. That is because of the word – ‘Pride’.”

“With Fatty Long by your side, I do not have to worry too much about that. I also know that there is much pressure on you from all sides. However, for youths, no pressure means no motivation. I hope that you can let me continue seeing more miracles, until that day when I can no longer interfere in your business. Oh yes. One more thing, both of you are not allowed to appear on the borders of the WanShou Empire any longer. Otherwise, I will personally catch you back and smack your ass.”

“Uhh..” Zhou Weiqing looked at his father-in-law speechlessly,

before finally running off dejectedly.

After Zhou Weiqing had left, Xue AoTian finally sighed softly. His wife had left, and now his daughter was also leaving, and even his disciple was gone. A sudden loneliness overwhelmed him. He sat there silently for a while, and all of a sudden his head turned in thought, and he muttered to himself: “That little brat does have a point... perhaps it is time for me to go have a walk outside. However, that will still have to wait until I settle everything here in the WanShou Empire...”

...

The next morning, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er said their goodbyes to Xue AoTian, before following Long Shiya to leave the Heavenly Snow Mountain.

Long Shiya did not bring Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er in flying with him, instead letting Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er make their own way while he returned to the Peerless Battalion camp first. To quote Long Shiya: “It's too much for me to move along with you young folks. You two are always so intimate and affectionate, provoking this poor old man who is still a virgin at the age of hundred. Ahhh the inhumanity!”

And thus, the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor fled the scene. As for Zhou Weiqing, he entered the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, flapping his massive wings as he carried Tian'er in a bridal-style, slowly flying across the skies towards the northern border.

Soaring and tumbling in midair, Zhou Weiqing was definitely not in a rush to go back; after all the borders were already over by now. From his father-in-law's words, Zhou Weiqing knew that his Peerless Battalion was definitely fine, and had even caused quite some trouble for the WanShou Empire. Furthermore, Long Shiya would already be returning in advance. As such, he decided to take his time and put his focus on Tian'er as they made their return.

In the past few months, he had spent every waking hour

cultivating and training with all his might. Now, he needed some relaxation time, to spend some time with his beloved Tian'er.

“Tian'er, what do you say... if we were to do 'that' high up in the skies, wouldn't it be extra sensational?”

“You... stop dreaming!”

“Come on, let's try it. It'll be a unique experience.” A voice filled with temptation rang out in the air.

“No, what if I fall down, I don't know how to fly.”

“No you won't... even if I fall down, I will never let you fall!”

“No...”

“Tian'er, your little buttocks are so perky. But... you have really lost so much weight. Come, let me help you rub them, your meat will grow back then.”

“Zhou Weiqing! You are truly a bad egg, rotten to the core!”

“Tian'er, haven't you heard of that line? “If a man is not bad, a woman will not love him; if a man isn't a rogue, women will not go to bed with him. A good guy will always remain a virgin! Anyway... I was already forced by you last time, you must take full responsibility for me!”

“Who forced you! You... Wuuuu....”

A similar occurrence happened almost everyday. Luckily, they were flying high above almost thousand metres into the sky. In the entire trip back, the greatest reward that Zhou Weiqing had was that his flying technique grew by leaps and bounds.

...

North Border. ZhongTian Northwest Main Army Camp. Peerless Battalion.

“The Battalion Commander has been gone for so long, why isn't he back yet!”

In the large headquarter tent of the Peerless Battalion, all the officers were present. Hua Feng, Mu En, and the other Heavenly Bow Unit god archers, as well as the Chief Instructor Shangguan Fei'er, Vice Commander Wei Feng and the various Main Company Leaders.

The current Peerless Battalion, not only did they have an exalted status in the Northwest Armies, it was even in the entire ZhongTian northern border.

The site where the Peerless Battalion was camped at did not change, but now around the Peerless Battalion there were fully six Heavy Armoured Regiments encamped, four of which were Heavy Infantry Regiments and two Heavy Cavalry Regiments.

The entire Northwest Army originally did not have that many Heavy Armoured Regiments, and some of them had actually been moved over from the other Northern Armies. Their only mission was to defend and support the Peerless Battalion!

In this year's border wars, the Northwest Armies had met an unprecedented number and power of enemies; not just in terms of quantity but also quality. A whole seventeen Companies of the WanShou Empire! Not only that, it was including a powerful Mammoth Company and the invincible flying Eagle Company. Yet, it was also in this year's border wars that the Northwest Armies had achieved an unforeseen and hitherto unknown success.

When the WanShou Empire armies had retreated, out of the seventeen Companies that had invaded them, only eight remained. And the only reason this had happened was because of this single new formation that the Northwest Armies had – the Peerless Battalion.

The strength of combat prowess of the Peerless Battalion had already been proven to the extreme in just the first battle they had attended. In fact, it was only because of their brutal strength which had allowed them to turn the tide of the battle, forcefully

turning a sure-loss into a shocking victory. The first full force advance of the WanShou Empire had turned into a full rout, and the ZhongTian army had even been able to chase to further kill some more enemies. In the subsequent battles that happened, the Peerless Battalion had truly become the stabilizing force and pillar¹ of the Northwest Army. The WanShou Empire armies had tried all sorts of means and different offensive strategies, but besides the Mammoth Company, no other Regiment was able to withstand the rain of powerful Consolidated arrows.

Under the leadership of Hua Feng and the other leaders, the Peerless Battalion was truly able to make full use of all their advantages. Against the Mammoth Company, they would immediately move aside in avoidance. Although the other Regiments of the Northwest Army were no match for the Mammoth Company or the other Companies of the WanShou Empire, but they were able to risk their lives to hold off the Mammoth Company for some time. The Peerless Battalion would then seize the chance to attack the other weaker Companies of the WanShou Empire. Under the constant onslaught of their Consolidated Bows, the fatalities amongst the WanShou Empire was just too high, too quick. As a result, though their enemies had been the strongest, it had actually been the Northwest Border which had ended the annual border wars the soonest.

Being the linchpin of such an amazing victory, with countless military exploits under their belt in such a short time, it was no wonder that even the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord Xue AoTian quickly learned of their existence.

According to their military exploits, it was no problem for the Peerless Battalion to be upgraded to an actual Regiment. Let alone the Northwest Armies, even the main North Central Army Headquarters had sent several envoys in hopes of taking over the Peerless Battalion.

Alas, with the background of the Heaven's Expanse Palace there,

especially with Shangguan Fei'er's presence as a stunning deterrent, how could the Peerless Battalion be given to anyone? The original Ruffians that were looked down upon by all had suddenly become the admiration and envy of all the ZhongTian Northern armies. Countless of people dreamed of entering the Peerless Battalion, even some of those Regiment Commanders or Vice Commanders were no exception.

The treatment of the Peerless Battalion was just too good. After discussion between all the officers, Hua Feng had decided to swap all their military exploits and awards for gold and other necessary supplies. As for the Peerless Battalion side, in the last few months they had continuously been upgrading their gear, continuing their training without halt. It could be said that every day was an improvement to the entire Peerless Battalion, no matter how small. The only thing that remained unchanged was their numbers.

Seated at the head of the table, Hua Feng swept his gaze across all the officers gathered. He couldn't help but sigh inwardly with emotion. It could be said that when they had left their dying Empire behind originally, the seven members of the Heavenly Bow Unit had been filled with despair and hopelessness. They did not contain any hopes of ever succeeding in their task of reviving their Empire, even thoughts of revenge seemed far off. Yet, now their hearts were all filled with endless hope. The strength of the Peerless Battalion warmed their hearts, allowing them to see the possibility of actually reviving their homeland in this lifetime.

"I'm sure he will be returning soon. Since the Battalion Commander was brought away by Senior Long, I'm sure he has been in closed door cultivation. He must be in a critical period of his cultivation, otherwise he wouldn't have left during such a period of war." Hua Feng smiled faintly as he spoke.

Shangguan Fei'er sat not far from Hua Feng, and as she heard his words she pursed her lips. From the looks of things, she was

clearly not very happy about it.

Wei Feng said: “Battalion Commander Hua Feng, the war has already ended for some time. Should we return to our original Peerless Battalion camp? If we continue staying here, I’m afraid the rest of the Northwest Armies might end up rebelling.” As he spoke up to that point, he couldn’t help but laugh out loud.

Wei Feng was not even joking or being alarmist at all. Ever since the Peerless Battalion had proven their terrifying strength in war, countless of people had been trying all means to join the Peerless Battalion. This included the six Heavy Armoured Regiments that were camped around them... most especially the Heavy Infantry Regiment that had actually fought together with them in the war.

Only those who had actually fought together with the Peerless Battalion and seen them in action could truly know how strong they were. As soldiers, who did not wish to have such powerful friends and allies by their side? Who did not dream of being invincible on the battlefield? Gaining military exploits and awards seemed to be as easy as picking things up from the ground!

However, such a situation was actually pointless to the Peerless Battalion. The Northwest Army Headquarter had actually sent several envoys in hopes that the Peerless Battalion would expand to become a Regiment, or even a Legion. They promised that their leaders and officers would remain unchanged, and they would give them some strong Regiments to form a Peerless Legion, to become the strongest Legion in the entire ZhongTian Army as a deterrent threat against the WanShou Empire.

This suggestion was actually made by the main ZhongTian Army headquarters, not just the Northern border armies. However, Hua Feng and the others had suppressed it.

Regarding this matter, the ZhongTian Army Headquarters had even gone all the way up to the ZhongTian Emperor, Shangguan Tianxin. When Shangguan Tianxin learned of the Peerless

Battalion and their supposed background, he had personally taken a trip down to the Heaven’s Expanse Palace. However, the final result was a shock to everyone. The Heaven’s Expanse Palace had given the order that the final decision would be left to the Peerless Battalion’s Commander – Zhou Weiqing. That was to say, if Zhou Weiqing was willing to set up the Legion, then they could go ahead. Otherwise, remaining as status quo would also be fine.

[Previous Chapter](#)[Next Chapter](#)

1. 定海神针 – Literally translated would be the Godly Needle that Calms the Oceans. Another name for the Gold Heavenly Cudgel that Sun Wukong wields in legend.

Chapter 183 Oops! (2)

With the Heaven's Expanse Palace speaking out, who dared to say anything else? Just like the status of the Heavenly Snow Mountain in the WanShou Empire, the Heaven's Expanse Palace was also like a supreme ruler overlord in the ZhongTian Empire. Furthermore, in most people's eyes, the creation of the Peerless Battalion had the shadow of the Heaven's Expanse Palace behind it, and they were even more respectful towards the Heaven's Expanse Palace.

As such, the Peerless Battalion remained with their 'original' Battalion formation, though it was no longer the traditional Battalion size. They now numbered a full five thousand soldiers, and the two thousand Heavy Cavalry Soldiers of the two powerful Tribes.

The greatest beneficiary of the border wars could be said to be the Gold Crow Tribe and the Berserker Tribes. Everything else aside, they now owned their own mounts. Naturally, they had all chosen the Unicorn Heavenly Beasts captured in the war.

Besides the new formation of two Main Companies each consisting of a thousand heavy cavalry soldiers, both tribes were also able to each gear up one more reserve Main Companies of cavalry. As such, one could say that the actual total strength of the Peerless Battalion was already at nine thousand soldiers, not much different from an actual Regiment. Of course, no one could tell for sure how powerful the Heavy Cavalry soldiers of the Gold Crow Tribe and Berserker Tribes could be.

These two Heavy Cavalry Main Companies had slowly been gearing up, and it was only recently that they had finally managed to finish equipping all two thousand men. For the past few days, they had actually been getting used to their new gear and fighting with it.

Hua Feng thought for a moment and said: "This is indeed a

problem. Yesterday, I have spoken with the Northwest Army headquarters... for the sake of the harmony and discipline of the rest of the Northwest Army, it is best that we return to our original campsite. Although the conditions there aren't great, but we have already built up our strong network of tunnels, letting it go to waste is a bit of a shame. In any case, in the past our Peerless Battalion might be afraid of some sneak attacks from the WanShou Empire, but now, we are confident in facing those."

"If the WanShou Empire dares come, without at least ten whole Companies, they will not be able to take us all out. Furthermore, amongst those ten Companies, there must at least be one Company that is of equal standard to the Mammoth Company or greater, only then will they be able to take us out."

Shangguan Fei'er said passively: "In that case, let us leave quickly, lest our own soldiers are also affected by the other Regiments around. Too much pride causes people to lapse or even retrograde, and I think we need to give them a fresh 'rap' on the head. It has been a while since we had a martial tournament to undergo a change in our inner rankings... this time we can invite the Gold Crow Tribe and Berserker Tribe to participate as well?"

Hua Feng nodded and said: "That is indeed true, the Northwest Army camp does not have much binding force upon us. How about this, I shall give them a report, and tomorrow morning we shall set forth to return to our old camp. When Weiqing returns, we can see how we want to progress further."

Early next morning, ignoring the various persuasion from the Northwest Army for them to stay or any offers to escort them, the Peerless Battalion packed up and headed towards their old original Ruffian Battalion camp further up in the north border.

The current Peerless Battalion could be described as immensely wealthy. This was not just a description for the Battalion as a whole, but each and every individual Peerless Battalion soldier.

After so many fights in the war, every single one of the Peerless Battalion soldiers had accumulated wealth of at least hundred gold coins or more. More so, that was also after the Peerless Battalion would ‘take back’ some of their gold coins when issuing other benefits; otherwise perhaps each of them would have at least a thousand gold coins!

Taking back some of the wealth was of course necessary – that had been the rule set long ago when the Peerless Battalion had first been set up. In the rules of the Peerless Battalion, one of the main ones was that there was no gain without working for it. Of course, retrieval of those gold coins was because of the equipment and Consolidated Equipment of the soldiers, even heavily discounted as it were. At least for a long period of time, the soldiers would not be able to just grow rich like that.

As for the ‘propaganda teachings’ of the soldiers, Hua Feng had long started with it. This was one of the points that Zhou Weiqing had not thought of previously.

As the saying goes, once someone grows rich, it is easy for them to turn ‘bad’. Hua Feng knew this very well, and the main thing he wanted to instill in the Peerless Battalion soldiers was this core thought – ‘Once you leave the Peerless Battalion, you are nothing.’

Of course, the truth of the matter was as such anyway. It was because of the existence of the Peerless Battalion as an organization that the Peerless Battalion soldiers could have the remotest possibility of having the power and status they had today. Having experienced the lowest of all status, only then could one treasure the new heights. It was also the reason why the cohesiveness of the soldiers was at such an unprecedented level. Of course, compared to the past, they held much more pride. Even so, that pride had been earned, and was worth encouraging. A powerful and cohesive force of soldiers, if they did not have pride in themselves, how could they call themselves a strongest force?

Just as the Peerless Battalion had just started moving out, far off

in the distance, a large black dot encroached upon them.

Shangguan Fei'er was the first to sense it. Subconsciously, she lifted her head to look into the distance, barely spotting the fact that it was two people, one carrying the other.

"Incoming!" A loud shout from Shangguan Fei'er, and all the soldiers around her reacted instantly. At once, more than a hundred Consolidated Bows appeared, pointed into the skies.

"Stop! Wait, it's me! I have returned!" Zhou Weiqing's voice rang out from above. From the height of his flying, it was at least a thousand metres away! However, his voice was still clear and loud as it rang down to the entire Peerless Battalion and all the officers.

Shangguan Fei'er was the most surprised. After all, she was familiar with Zhou Weiqing. Ignoring the fact that Zhou Weiqing had somehow gained the ability to fly, just that ability of voice transference he had shown just now proved that his cultivation level had improved by leaps and bounds since she had last seen him... a massive jump that she subconsciously thought was impossible!

When he had left, he had only been at the five-Jeweled stage, and had reached that not long ago too! How could he return at the six-Jeweled stage... it had only been slightly more than two months!

Hearing Zhou Weiqing's voice, naturally the Consolidated Bows would not fire. Within moments, Zhou Weiqing had descended from the skies together with Tian'er.

Previously, high up in the skies, he had seen the Peerless Battalion from a distance. Perhaps if it were any other army unit, he might not have recognized them from such a distance. However, the titanium mail of the Peerless Battalion was just too obvious and familiar to him, how could he mistake it? That was the reason why he had started heading lower and towards them.

As he landed upon the ground, Zhou Weiqing released hold of

Tian'er's waist as he strode forward in large strides. The group of Peerless Battalion officials quickly dismounted to greet him.

“Little brat, you finally know to come back! You just threw the Peerless Battalion to us and ran off to chase chicks eh.” As soon as Mu En saw Zhou Weiqing, he went forward to give him an exasperated knock on the head. However, as he did so, he gave a subtle signal with his eyes at Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing was just too familiar with this teacher of his. With just that signal, he could fully understand what Mu En meant. Clearly, Mu En was taking the initiative to ease up any tension. After all, Shangguan Fei'er had been here all this time fighting on his behalf, and he had disappeared for months, to return with another girl!

The seven God Archers of the Heavenly Bow Unit had never seen Tian'er before, and it was without question that they would side with Shangguan Fei'er.

Shangguan Fei'er could be said to have played a huge role in the entire creation of the Peerless Battalion, as well as building it up to its current status. Compared to the Battalion Commander Zhou Weiqing, or the temporary commander Hua Feng, or even any of the rest of the commanders and officers, she had done so much more. For a girl like her of noble birth and high status to stay here to help Zhou Weiqing train his soldiers, to fight in wars with them, all of them knew what it meant. Yet, at this moment, Zhou Weiqing had actually brought another woman back. The rest of the Peerless Battalion officers couldn't help but show some discontent on their faces. Some of the others might only mutter a few words inwardly, but for the seven God Archers of the Heavenly Bow Unit, they would not hide anything, especially since they were considered his teachers and seniors. As such, Mu En had quickly stepped forward to give him a scolding first, that was because in his heart his precious disciple was most important, and he was trying to cover for him as best he could.

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily, giving Mu En a big hug before turning to the others and saying: “What are you all doing? Heading back to our old campsite?”

From Hua Feng’s face, one could not see any blame or anger, as he gave a quick and simple explanation about what had happened since Zhou Weiqing left. After which, he asked: “At least you are back, and I can finally give up this temporary Battalion Commander position. Well, what do you have planned in the future?”

Without question, Zhou Weiqing replied: “Let’s go along with what you all have decided for now, to return to our original camp and continue our training. After all, we still have a lot of our equipment that isn’t delivered or completed yet. Once we have finished all of that... we will return to Heavenly Bow.”

Upon hearing the last few words, the seven God Archers of the Heavenly Bow Unit revealed clear looks of excitement on their faces. Even the most stable Hua Feng was no exception.

The Heavenly Bow Empire had been destroyed for more than a year, and they had never imagined that they would have a chance to counterattack in such a short period of time.

Hua Feng smiled faintly and said: “Admiral Zhou will be so proud of you.”

At that point, Tian’er walked to Zhou Weiqing’s side. Zhou Weiqing snuck a look at Shangguan Fei’er, who was standing near Hua Feng with an impassive look on her face. Only then did he introduce Tian’er to the others: “This is Lady Tian’er. From today onwards, she will be officially joining our Peerless Battalion.”

Upon hearing that introduction, everyone present had a strange look on their faces. Almost subconsciously, they all turned to look at Shangguan Fei’er.

Shangguan Fei’er and Tian’er’s gaze clashed almost instantly.

Both girls did not say anything, but it was as if sparks were flying between their eyes as neither backed down from the locked stare.

CoughCough “Let’s get back on the move then, we still have many things to do back in camp.” As he said that, Zhou Weiqing released his single-horned Ghost Demon Horse, mounting up together with Tian’er as he gave Shangguan Fei’er an apologetic look.

Shangguan Fei’er gave him a cold look back, a look so cold that Zhou Weiqing couldn’t help but shiver in his heart. Even when he was facing a Heavenly Emperor stage powerhouse, his heart had not felt such a pounding unease.

He couldn’t help but think to himself: It truly isn’t great to spread the love too much! How many brain cells will be killed again this time.

At this point, he did not know how he would deal with the relationship between his two loves, and he could only take things as they came.

In the midst of this strange atmosphere, the Peerless Battalion resumed their march towards their old camp in the border. When they finally reached, the soldiers began to unpack and re-set up the camp that they had once vacated.

Zhou Weiqing had barely caught his breath when he heard an icy cold voice ring in his ears: “Zhou Weiqing, come over here.”

Chapter 183 Oops! (3)

As the Battalion Commander, Zhou Weiqing's large tent was one of the first few to be completed. Tian'er was right by his side, and as she heard that voice, she giggled and said: "Someone is breaking a whole jar of vinegar ¹. Little Fatty, that shouldn't be Shangguan Bing'er right, you can do it!"

With an embarrassed look in his face, he bowed humbly to Tian'er and said: "I'll go have a look first." With a quick lift of the tent flap, he disappeared.

Shangguan Fei'er was standing not far from the tent, and seeing Zhou Weiqing walk out, she looked at him icily. A cold killing intent caused goosebumps to appear all about Zhou Weiqing's skin.

"Fei'er, listen to my explanation... I've mentioned this to you before..." Zhou Weiqing walked over with an apologetic smile on his face.

Shangguan Fei'er gave a cold humph and said: "Enough nonsense, come with me." As she said that, she flew off in the air towards the outskirts of the camp.

Zhou Weiqing dared not delay, and in a flash he had chased off after her. He had to explain things clearly now! Of course, whether or not he would succeed was another matter.

Shangguan Fei'er was moving very quickly in the front, every time her feet touched the ground, she would move almost ten yards ahead. Without using the Demonic Change State or Dragon Tiger Transformation, it took quite some effort for Zhou Weiqing to actually follow her.

Within the time for a few breaths, the two had already left the camp. In Zhou Weiqing's eyes, Shangguan Fei'er did not want to argue with him in front of everyone, leaving him face. Such a thought also calmed him down, since Fei'er was willing to look

after his face, that meant she wasn't fully angry.

What should I do then? As Zhou Weiqing followed behind Shangguan Fei'er, his eyes rolled in their sockets in deep thought. He was indeed filled with guilt. Fei'er had stayed here to help me take care of everything and even fight for him, yet he had ran off for Tian'er. This was indeed nothing to be proud of. Yet, at the same time, how could he not go find Tian'er at that time? It was also impossible!

There was no good reason for it all, and when he is in the wrong, there was no point trying to reason or persuade Shangguan Fei'er... then the only option was to be shameless!

Thinking up to that point, Zhou Weiqing had already come up with a plan. With a sudden purple flash in his eyes, he had silently entered the Dragon-Tiger Transformation. The wings behind his back unfurled as new strength filled him. With a silent beat, his entire body flew like an arrow towards Shangguan Fei'er.

By this time, both of them had already left the Peerless Battalion camp for quite a distance, and the area was rather wide and desolate. Just as Zhou Weiqing made his move, Shangguan Fei'er had also thought this was a good enough place and had slowed down and started to turn around.

As soon as she turned around, a purple face abruptly appeared right in front of her. No matter how strong she was, Shangguan Fei'er was still a young lady, and being startled like that by such a strange looking purple face, she was given a fright and she yelled out loud.

Right at that moment, the owner of the purple face gave her a kiss right on her lips, arms tightening around her waist as a pair of huge wings encircled and covered them both.

His arms were so strong, and lips invading with such fiery heat. Shangguan Fei'er only felt as if her head was dizzy before she had been pushed down to the ground by the muscular body, now atop

of her.

“Wuuu, no!”

An indistinct cry came from Shangguan Fei'er as she struggled with all her might. However, under the onslaught of those fiery lips, her body was feeling soft and unable to use her full strength. Especially with those powerful arms that held her, one hand was on the Acupuncture Point on her back, also causing her to be unable to use her full strength.

Zhou Weiqing had no choice but to hold Shangguan Fei'er in place first, otherwise with her anger and her terrifying close combat power, he knew he would not be able to take her on easily.

Under the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, Zhou Weiqing was light, speedy and with massive strength. Since he had purposely snuck up upon her, Shangguan Fei'er had not noticed until now, and it was already too late to struggle!

How to be shameless? Of course, it was to make the waters murky before any discussion. Both he and Shangguan Fei'er also loved each other, though they had been intimate with each other, they had not crossed that final line. In that previous instant, Zhou Weiqing had decided that actions were far stronger than words, let's be intimate first, then even if Fei'er blamed him, she wouldn't beat him too hard right? Heh heh.

According to Zhou Weiqing's original plan, he wanted to be intimate with Shangguan Fei'er for a while, to make her happy and calmer before he slowly explained things. However, when he kissed those cool delicious lips of Shangguan Fei'er, he could not control himself.

Those lips were like the best miracle drug in the world, so comfortable, so comfortable.

Especially now that it seemed that Shangguan Fei'er's kisses had become more awkward. Zhou Weiqing had finally gone passed her

teeth to find that smooth little tongue of hers. One hand of his was still suppressed on the Acupuncture Point of her back to prevent her from running, while the other was moving along the smooth curve of her back. The fire in his blood rose, and a strong animal lust caused his breathing to deepen.

If one had to point out a disadvantage of the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, this would be it. No matter the Dark Demon God Tiger or Dragons, both were lustful beasts by nature. With the two bloodlines combined, that made things even worse, and in terms of basic 'physical needs', Zhou Weiqing now far surpassed any ordinary humans. Traveling all this way with Tian'er, even with her powerful physique she had almost been unable to keep up.

Currently, Shangguan Fei'er was feeling extremely hot. That Zhou Weiqing pressing down atop her was like a large furnace, trying to melt down her entire body, and her defenses were slowly being eroded bit by bit from this intense heat.

Zhou Weiqing's kiss had moved to her neck, and he was still murmuring: "Fei'er, I love you."

Hearing those words, Shangguan Fei'er's body shuddered silently, her dazed eyes suddenly regaining consciousness. Once again, she cried out: "Let go, let me go now."

"No, I won't let go of you anymore, what if you run off?" Zhou Weiqing gave a helpless chuckle, 'helping himself' to one of the bountiful mounds in her front, caressing it gently.

"Let go of me!" Shangguan Fei'er's voice was trembling and tears started falling from her eyes.

Zhou Weiqing saw her tears and his lust instantly diminished greatly as he stared, startled. He had not imagined that Shangguan Fei'er would have such a huge reaction. Quickly he kissed the tears on her cheeks and said: "Fei'er, don't cry. It is my fault, it is all my fault. I have spread my love too much, but I truly cannot live without each and every one of you. If I had not gone to bring

Tian'er back, she would already be dead now. I cannot fail her, nor can I fail you. Can you understand my heart? I know I am being too greedy, but... that is me, a greedy soul. I want to hold you all tight, never let go."

"You... you bastard..." Shangguan Fei'er said with a trembling voice.

Seeing her angry and trembling lips, Zhou Weiqing was filled with love. Once again, he capture her lips. Bastard it shall be. In that instant, Zhou Weiqing decided to 'cook the rice first'. That way, Fei'er could not run away!

As soon as that thought entered his mind, Zhou Weiqing's actions became even more excited. This time, he would not let go of her lips so easily. Take advantage now, and even if he got beaten up later it would already be a win! Furthermore, would Fei'er bear to beat him up later?

Shangguan Fei'er's clothes lessened one after the other, and the flustered look in her eyes grew stronger. However, Zhou Weiqing's hand on her back kept control over her, not allowing her powerful Heavenly Energy to blow up. After all, previously she had not have any precautions against him.

More so, Shangguan Fei'er was unable to control her body. Under Zhou Weiqing's invasive and experienced teasing, even her soul was trembling as her heart's defenses fell.

No, no no! Shangguan Fei'er was regretting her actions now, regretting that she had not spoken clearly when she had the chance just now. However, it seemed that it was all too late now...

Tears started pouring from her eyes, as her gaze was complicated. Anger, sorrow, pain... and despair.

Zhou Weiqing had originally been fully immersed in his enjoyment, his hand already in Shangguan Fei'er's long pants, holding her round and perky buttocks, almost about to pull her

pants down. All of a sudden, the wet tears touched his face, and he subconsciously opened his eyes, his gaze meeting hers.

Despair. Abruptly, Zhou Weiqing saw that strong despair in Shangguan Fei'er's eyes.

A cold chill ran down his spine. Although he had been wanting to make Fei'er his own woman at this time before 'facing the music', now as he saw that despair in the depths of her eyes, his heart clenched in pain, and he forcefully pushed down the roaring fire of lust in his blood.

Lifting his head subconsciously, his hands stopped totally. "Fei'er, you..."

Shangguan Fei'er's tears streamed down even harder. "You... you bastard. I am not Fei'er."

I am not Fei'er. Those words, in Zhou Weiqing's ears, were like an explosion, blowing his mind into bits.

Not Fei'er? Then.. who? It couldn't be Bing'er... with Bing'er's character, especially since she had already known of Tian'er and him long ago, how could she have such a look of despair? If it wasn't Bing'er or Fei'er... then it could only be...

She... She was...

Zhou Weiqing's entire body flew back as if he had been electrocuted, staggering back almost a dozen yards as his eyes widened in shock, a certain 'evil tent' below still at full mast.

"You... you... you're Shangguan Xue'er?!"

TN: Phew, not an easy chapter to TL indeed. Anyway, the original title of this was 'A Big Mistake', but I thought 'Oops!' seemed more apt.

[Previous Chapter](#)[Next Chapter](#)

1. Being jealous

Chapter 184 Boundless Infinitum! (1)

“You’re Shangguan Xue’er?” The moment Zhou Weiqing asked the question, he wanted to slap himself on the face.

Indeed, lying right there on the ground, her body huddled up in herself as she cried... it was the heir to the Heaven’s Expanse Palace, the eldest sister of the Shangguan Sisters, Shangguan Xue’er.

Originally, when the border wars had ended and the Peerless Battalion was alright, Shangguan Fei’er had discussed with Shangguan Xue’er and left silently to return to the Heaven’s Expanse Palace. Since Zhou Weiqing was not around, she wanted to head back to the Heaven’s Expanse Palace to talk to Bing’er first, before returning to look for Zhou Weiqing.

Before she left, this mischievous Little Demon Girl had schemed a trap for her own sister...

“Sister, I am going back now, but I am still worried about the Peerless Battalion. Anyway, no one can recognize the difference between you and me. As long as you do not use your Consolidated Equipment, you’ll be exactly the same as me. Those Peerless Battalion fellows, without me to keep them in their places, who knows what they will end up doing? You take my place for now to suppress them and help train them ok?”

“Also, also... Little Fatty is such a playboy, you help me look after him. Don’t let me bring back another few more women. Big sis, help me please. For mine and Bing’er’s sake, you must keep watch on Little Fatty. Ok?” Just like that, after countless wheedling and begging, Shangguan Xue’er had finally agreed to take her position after she left. Just like Shangguan Fei’er had predicted, no one recognized her after that, especially since the close combat training of the Peerless Battalion was already on the right track, and Shangguan Xue’er’s cultivation level was even above Shangguan

Fei'er's, naturally they would not have any issues in that area. As such, in this period of time, Shangguan Xue'er had slowly eased into her sister's position without any problems.

Today, when Shangguan Xue'er saw Zhou Weiqing bringing Tian'er back, how could she not be furious? This little bastard had already seduced her two sisters, and was still going after other women?! Even though she had seen Tian'er in her 'Fat Cat' form before, she had never seen Tian'er before. As such, she had not been able to resist in calling Zhou Weiqing out. In her original plan, she would beat him up savagely first before informing him of her identity, and getting him to dump Tian'er.

Who knew that the heavens would play such a huge joke on her. Zhou Weiqing had truly taken her for Shangguan Fei'er, and with her Acupuncture Point suppressed, she had not been able to resist... and the events had played out as such.

Zhou Weiqing stood there staring at Shangguan Xue'er dazed, unable to even say a word. All his plans and shameless ideas for Shangguan Fei'er had suddenly turned into being against Shangguan Xue'er... and that was a whole different matter!

Oh Heavens! What had he done!

Shangguan Xue'er's outer clothes had been thrown to the side by him, and she did not have much covering her any longer; even her pants were halfway down.

The heavens were falling, and the earth was sinking. That was his own sister in law!

No matter how intelligent and cunning Zhou Weiqing was, faced with such a scenario, he was totally at a loss. Having almost committed such an evil act, he wished that the earth would open up and swallow him whole. If Bing'er or Fei'er knew about this, he would truly be a goner!

Shangguan Xue'er remained sobbing bitterly on the ground, even

forgetting to wear her clothes. From young, she had always been the most hardworking, the most disciplined, as she knew the responsibilities that weighed down on her young shoulders. In the Heaven's Expanse Palace, she was the First Young Miss, above all. Let alone anyone daring to violate her, most people would not even dare to look at her in the eye. Even Zhan LingTian, who had feelings for her, would keep some distance when he spoke to her.

Previously, when Shangguan Xue'er had lost her first kiss to Zhou Weiqing by accident, she had already been in much pain and suffering. However, for the sake of her little sister, she had forced herself to tolerate it. However, that hate in her heart for Zhou Weiqing for stealing away her first kiss had never disappeared, thus holding that grudge in her heart all this time.

Yet, just right now, Zhou Weiqing had actually even done far worse to her, doing all sorts of intimate things to her forcefully. Currently, the only thing left in Shangguan Xue'er's confused heart was utter sorrow.

The two just remained there, one standing there at a loss, the other crying her eyes out.

At last, it was Zhou Weiqing who recovered first. The situation had already occurred, and it was no point in trying to avoid it. No matter what, he would have to face it. Carefully, he walked to the side and picked up Shangguan Xue'er's clothes, carefully covering her with them. Bracing himself, he said softly: "I'm... I'm sorry. I really did not know it was you, I thought it was Fei'er..."

"How about... how about... you beat me up. Will that make you feel better? I will not fight back at all, how's that?"

With a sudden swoosh, Shangguan Xue'er's head abruptly lifted, her eyes that were red from crying were filled with flames of hatred. Her teeth gritting hard, she had already charged forward in a flash. An intense killing intent burst forth like a sharp blade from a sheath. "I'm going to kill you!" Her eyes were bloodshot, and

with a single palm strike to the chest, Zhou Weiqing flew all the way out.

Zhou Weiqing had kept his word, allowing her palm to strike hard on his chest without any resistance, and he was instantly sent flying back.

The powerful defensive capabilities of the Dragon-Tiger Transformation saved his life here; luckily he had been in that state all this while.

When Shangguan Xue'er's palm struck his chest, Zhou Weiqing's entire body glowed in a purple light. If Shangguan Xue'er had been in a calmer state, she would have instantly sensed that her blow was scattered by the purple light, as if the strength behind the blow was separated to every inch of Zhou Weiqing's body. As such, though it seemed like he had been savagely blown away by that palm strike, Zhou Weiqing was actually not injured at all.

The defensive capabilities of the Dragon race could be said to be top notch even amongst all Heavenly God Tier Heavenly Beasts, and they themselves were considered one of the strongest amongst all their peers. Furthermore, the Dragon-Tiger Transformation was not just the sole Dragon bloodline alone, but with the power of the Dark Demon God Tiger behind as well. With Shangguan Xue'er's seven-Jeweled cultivation level, her palm strike wasn't able to actually hurt Zhou Weiqing, even if he did not defend himself, and could only cause his chest to hurt.

Zhou Weiqing crashed onto the ground, skidding back almost a dozen yards before he came to a stop. At that moment, Shangguan Xue'er's killing intent finally locked down upon him.

Zhou Weiqing's heart gripped in shock. She was really trying to kill him! If Shangguan Xue'er was going to beat him up, he would allow her to do so without any question, even if he was severely injured. After all, he was the one in the wrong! However, if she wanted to take his life, he couldn't possibly lay his life down just

like that!

Shangguan Xue'er's body was like a gust of icy cold wind, and as Zhou Weiqing was struck back by her palm, she flew forward in chase. In midair, her entire body suddenly burst forth with a brilliant dark-gold light. The three chi long snow-white sword that Zhou Weiqing had once seen before appeared in her hands, pointing right towards his chest.

Even though he was still in the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, even with that snow white blade only just pointing at his chest, Zhou Weiqing felt a slight sensation of pain.

The blade in Shangguan Xue'er's hands was the Boundless Infinitum Sword from the Boundless Infinitum Set. In the world today, the Boundless Infinitum Set was currently the only Legendary Set that consisted of eleven pieces, known as the God Set. It was also the greatest treasure of the entire Heaven's Expanse Palace... how could it be ordinary?

Currently, Shangguan Xue'er's eyes were covered with a film of blood red. Any pure and innocent girl who met such a huge shame and humiliation, how could one remain calm?

A snowy white light flashed through the skies, drawing a beautiful arc that raced right towards Zhou Weiqing's heart. In that instant, Zhou Weiqing could only sense that the distance between him and Shangguan Xue'er seemed to warp strangely. Even with his powerful senses, he was actually unable to sense which area Shangguan Xue'er's Heavenly Energy was targeting and locked on to.

In the blink of an eye, the white light had reached Zhou Weiqing's chest area.

A lean to the side, a sidestep, a Blink Skill. Only then did Zhou Weiqing escape instantly. At the same time, two triangles of bright light appeared on each of his hands, as he quickly released his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation.

He had no choice but to do so! Shangguan Xue'er's cultivation level was higher than his, not just at simply a seven-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master, but already at the maximum of the seven-Jeweled stage, barely a thread away from reaching the eight-Jeweled stage. More importantly, with the Boundless Infinitum Set's terrifying pressure, Zhou Weiqing could sense that without using the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, he would not be able to even survive. However, even at the same time as he used his Blink Skill, his heart relaxed slightly inwardly. That was because the position that the white light had been about to strike at his heart, but at the last split second before he blinked he sensed it move to the side very very slightly. It was only a slight movement, barely even noticeable, but if it had landed on him, it was the difference between a fatal wound and a severe wound. That was to say, although Shangguan Xue'er was in a berserk rage, she still held a thread of sanity, perhaps not willing to actually kill him off.

Having her blow dodged by Zhou Weiqing and seeing the glow of the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation appearing below his feet, Shangguan Xue'er's face grew even frostier. Six more bouts of dark gold light appeared, and in the cover of the Consolidating Equipment God Protective Aura, the magnificent looking Boundless Infinitum Set appeared around her.

The pieces of the Boundless Infinitum Set that Shangguan Xue'er currently had were the two shoulder pauldrons, chestplate, girdle and belt, war kilt, and greaves for her right leg. Just like any Legendary Set which had not been completed, her current Boundless Infinitum Set items were still dark-gold in colour, but the tattoos and inscriptions around them were one of the most beautiful that Zhou Weiqing had seen from any God Tier Consolidated Equipment or Legendary Sets.

The tattoos and inscriptions around the Boundless Infinitum Set items were like beautiful Cloud Dragon Tattoos, surreal and even ethereal. From the surface of the armour, these Cloud Dragon

Tattoos seemed to come to life, like many little cloud dragons twirling around Shangguan Xue'er's body.

Chapter 184 Boundless Infinitum! (2)

The important part about the beauty of the Boundless Infinitum Set was not its looks, but in its complicated intricacy. For example, just her shoulder pauldrons alone had six layers of tattoos and inscriptions, and even as she moved, the equipment seemed to give off a strange aura.

In the middle of the Heart Mirror area of the Consolidated chestplate, there was a huge gemstone embedded. Although the gemstone was current dark-gold in colour, there seemed to be a layer of mist deep within it, glowing and floating about.

The shoulder pauldrons extended down into bracers and all the way down to her fingers, showing the beautiful curvature of her arms. Without question, the shoulder pauldrons and bracers were a single piece, only taking up a single 'slot' of equipment.

Seven pieces of Consolidated Equipment, all God Tier, all part of a Legendary Set. Furthermore, the one wearing it was Shangguan Xue'er, and in that instant Zhou Weiqing sensed that she was even more dangerous than Gu Yingbing.

This time, Shangguan Xue'er did not continue attacking Zhou Weiqing, instead floating back down onto the ground and closing her eyes.

Just as her eyes closed, a terrifying and ferocious pressure grew, causing Zhou Weiqing to step back subconsciously.

One had to know that currently Zhou Weiqing was in his Dragon-Tiger Transformation, and yet he had still been forced to move a step back. From that alone, one could imagine how intense and terrifying that pressure was. Even when he was facing the Heavenly King Stage Heavenly Beasts, such a thing had not occurred.

The pressure that Shangguan Xue'er brought to Zhou Weiqing

was not from any bloodline, but from her own energy and aura.

The current Shangguan Xue'er, although she was standing there with her eyes closed, the feeling she gave Zhou Weiqing was like a naked blade unsheathed and ready to kill. That pressure was like the manifestation of her sword intent.

By this point, Zhou Weiqing had seen his share of powerhouses, even top quality ones like Long Shiya and Xue AoTian. Instantly, he made the judgement that Shangguan Xue'er was highly versed in swordsmanship, just like how Shangguan Fei'er had fully focused on close combat.

Compared to Shangguan Xue'er, the feeling Shangguan Fei'er gave was dangerous but not as lethal. On the other hand, Shangguan Xue'er gave him the feeling of violence bottled up. Once she unleashed her attack, it was definitely going to be unbelievably terrifying, far beyond what Shangguan Fei'er could unleash.

Who said that Gu Yingbing was the top in the entire young generation? Let him try and fight against Shangguan Xue'er with her Boundless Infinitum Set. Perhaps with the gap between seven-Jeweled and nine-Jeweled, she might not be able to match him fully yet, but do not forget she still had the Heaven's Expanse Palace behind her! Once Shangguan Xue'er reached the eight-Jeweled stage and gained her eighth piece of the Boundless Infinitum Set, at least fully completing her leg armour... Zhou Weiqing was entirely certain that Gu Yingbing would no longer be a match for her then.

Right at that moment, Zhou Weiqing suddenly remembered how Shangguan Xue'er had originally told him – if he wanted to marry her sister, he would have to first defeat her!

Forcefully pushing down his guilt and apologetic feeling, Zhou Weiqing decided to take this opportunity to see how powerful this Boundless Infinitum Set and Shangguan Xue'er were.

To any Heavenly Jewel Master, having a powerful opponent was definitely not a bad thing. With Zhou Weiqing's experience in cultivation, it was often that a Heavenly Jewel Master's improvement was much easier when facing powerful stress and opposition, only then were they able to draw out their potential. Just like this trip of his to the Heavenly Snow Mountain. When he had first ascended the Heavenly Snow Mountain, he had only just broken through to the six-Jeweled stage. However, after all the events and stress he had suffered on the Heavenly Snow Mountain, even almost facing death, he could clearly sense that not only was his grasp on the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation far stronger, even his cultivation speed had risen, and his understanding towards the Heavenly Xu Energy stage had also improved drastically. Originally, according to normal speed, that was a progress that should have taken him at least half a year or more. This was the benefit of facing such pressure (and surviving).

The instant that Shangguan Xue'er had closed her eyes, she was fully treating Zhou Weiqing like an enemy. For survival's sake, also for the pressure, Zhou Weiqing had to focus all his spirit to deal with it. The Six Elemental Jewels at his feet quickly formed the hexagon formation, and around his body, the six Attribute Heavenly Energies spun around, giving Zhou Weiqing the sensation that he was able to control everything around him.

On the Heavenly Snow Mountain, he did not have a chance to fully use the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation to its full potential. Facing the Lion King Gu Site, what he used most was his own judgement, strategizing and planning, as well as making use of Gu Site's underestimation to gain a huge advantage in one fell swoop. However, facing Shangguan Xue'er at this moment, the pressure on him was even greater than when he had been facing Gu Site. After all, at that time, Gu Site had his cultivation level restricted and wasn't able to use his Consolidated Equipment at all. Furthermore, there was the difference in mindset between the two now... How could both be compared then?

The wings behind his back spread open slowly once again. If anyone else was here, they would be able to sense the thick and heavy various Attribute Heavenly Energy that was gathering crazily towards Zhou Weiqing and into him. In this regard, he was beyond Shangguan Xue'er.

With the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, his Dragon-Tiger Transformation and the Immortal Deity Technique, even for Shangguan Xue'er with her Boundless Infinitum Set, she was far from being a match for Zhou Weiqing in terms of drawing in atmospheric Heavenly Energy.

Of course, although Shangguan Xue'er's Heavenly Energy regeneration might not be fast, the sword intent she had around her continued growing crazily.

The snow white Boundless Infinitum Sword became brighter and brighter. In Zhou Weiqing's eyes, there was no longer Shangguan Xue'er, only the sword.

The two of them faced off just like that. Shangguan Xue'er's original messed up clothes, or lack thereof, were now totally covered. Only the left leg that was not covered by greaves, but at least her pants had not been removed by Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing subconsciously eyed her left leg, and somehow his thoughts wandered back to the soft skin, and his heart heated up suddenly.

In that instant, Shangguan Xue'er made her move.

Shangguan Xue'er's senses were all locked onto Zhou Weiqing's body. Though she was using swordsmanship, hers was not the speed/agility focused route, instead focusing on power, range, pressure, inertia and momentum.

Zhou Weiqing's emotional fluctuations were all within her sword intent. As soon as she detected a slight fluctuation, she instantly seized the opportunity and attacked.

Sword and Body as one. Flashes of light flew out of the snow white sword at an insane pace. Yet, at the same instant, Zhou Weiqing could actually only see a single point of the snow-white light.

Shangguan Xue'er's entire sword intent was locked onto Zhou Weiqing, but at the same time, how could his attention not be on hers? Just as Shangguan Xue'er launched her attack, Zhou Weiqing had also seen some of the profound secrets behind her swordplay, but that discovery did not let Zhou Weiqing feel a bit relaxed at all. Instead, he was even more stunned.

All around that huge gemstone of the Heart Mirror of Shangguan Xue'er's breastplate, there were twelve grooves. At this point, seven of the twelve grooves were set with the seven Alexandrite Cat's Eye Elemental Jewels of Shangguan Xue'er.

From Shangguan Fei'er, Zhou Weiqing had learned some news about Shangguan Xue'er and her powers. After all, he knew that he would have to challenge her sooner or later.

Shangguan Xue'er's Elemental Jewel was Four Attributes. Water, Fire, Earth, Wind. Although she was not as 'disgusting' as Zhou Weiqing or the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor with their six Attributes, she was already considered an ultimate talent and genius. Even She had even one more Attribute than Shangguan Tianyang.

Currently, her seven Elemental Jewels were embedded in her chestplate, which meant that she was actually giving up on using all her Stored Skills. Or perhaps more accurately, ever since Shangguan Xue'er had started cultivating, she did not Store any Skills. All of her training was focused on the Boundless Infinitum Sword in her hand.

This was an extreme form of training, chasing nothing but the purest form of swordsmanship.

This training method was something that Shangguan Xue'er had

come up with herself. After she had Awoken her Heavenly Jewels, after she had gained her first piece of Consolidated Equipment – the Boundless Infinitum Sword, she had come up with the idea and resolution.

Shangguan Tianyang and Shangguan Tianyue had both tried to persuade her against such a training method. After all, for a Heavenly Jewel Master to totally ignore Storing Skills, it was totally against conventional thinking.

However, Shangguan Xue'er continued on her own path, resolutely sticking to her own decision. Even at such a young age, the only concession she would make was to say that it was only temporary.

As time went by and Shangguan Xue'er's cultivation level grew stronger... by the age of ten she had already learned and mastered all the top sword mastery skills in the Heaven's Expanse Palace. On her own, she came up with the Dao of Swordsmanship. In the next few years, the new and immature sword intent of hers was slowly shaped into her own creation, and it grew stronger and stronger. By the time she reached the six-Jeweled stage, no one tried to persuade her to give up this unconventional cultivation method. That was because the swordsmanship of the six-Jeweled Shangguan Xue'er was already at a height that shocked even Shangguan Tianyang and Shangguan Tianyue!

Not a single Stored Skill was required, and in her heart, there was only her sword intent. With the heart and path of the sword clear, her sword intent could destroy any Skill. This was Shangguan Xue'er's unique cultivation path.

In embedding all her Elemental Jewels around that massive gemstone in her chestplate, it was not to activate any imbued Skills of the Boundless Infinitum Set. Instead, it was to simply provide her with more Heavenly Energy, fusing it all into her sword. For her swordsmanship, she had even given up the powerful imbued Skills of the Boundless Infinitum Set. One could imagine how

persistent and resolute she was towards her swordcraft.

No matter if it were any ordinary Heavenly Jewel Master, if one focused on one thing to bring it to an extreme, it would bring a massive amount of power. A good example would be the Ultimate Defense Heavenly Jewel Master like Lin TianAo. Let alone Shangguan Xue'er, with such immense talent and the Boundless Infinitum Set!

It could be said that Shangguan Xue'er was the total opposite of Zhou Weiqing. Instead of having so many different powers of so many different ranges, Shangguan Xue'er only had one single power. Her Sword.

At this very moment, when Shangguan Xue'er entered a state where her Body and Sword were as One, pointing towards Zhou Weiqing, he could only feel as if even his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation was being slowed down. Just in an instant, that single flash of white light appeared right in front of him.

It was clear – Shangguan Xue'er's intense and violent sword intent did not dissipate or scatter, fully focused on a single tiny point.

Zhou Weiqing's expression changed. Shangguan Xue'er's strength had greatly surpassed all of his expectations. The sheer terrifying power of that swordsmanship technique... he felt that even three Shangguan Fei'er's added together was not even equal to it!

Instantly, the 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set appeared around him. Five bouts of brilliant dark-gold light; five layers of protective shields, blocking in front of Zhou Weiqing.

Normally speaking, Shangguan Xue'er's cultivation level was not that far above Zhou Weiqing's, and her attacks should not be able to break past his Consolidating Equipment God Protective Aura.

Chapter 184 Boundless Infinitum! (3)

However, in that single pinpoint of white sword-light, Zhou Weiqing's Consolidating Equipment God Protective Aura was pierced right through and destroyed.

Zhou Weiqing's combat experience was rich and plentiful. Under such a disadvantageous position, the 'crying-face' Hammer in his right hand swept forward, a thick blue light exploding out from it.

A massive explosion. Only then did the snow white light rebounded away, revealing Shangguan Xue'er there, but Zhou Weiqing had staggered back six steps before he recovered his balance.

With a single blow from her sword, Shangguan Xue'er had not only broken through five layers of his Consolidating Equipment God Protective Aura, she had even forced him back. More so, that intense sword intent caused Zhou Weiqing to feel a slight sense of numbness.

Currently, Shangguan Xue'er still had her eyes closed. As for Zhou Weiqing, even as he was staggering back, his dual Legendary Hammers were already in movement.

The Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation glowed brilliantly, and balls of blue light floated out from the Legendary Hammers one after the other, blotting up the area as they floated towards Shangguan Xue'er.

This was the major advantage of the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, not only the nearly infinite Heavenly Energy, but also the lack of a cooldown for those mimicked Skills. In his training, Zhou Weiqing had chosen his main offensive Attribute to be the Lightning Attribute.

Amongst his six Attributes, the Lightning Attribute was not the strongest. However, it was without question that the burst damage

potential of the Lightning Attribute was one of the strongest, without too much Heavenly Energy expenditure. Zhou Weiqing's choice was a constant stream of attacks that wouldn't stop. If it were any of his other Attributes, that would not match his requirement. As such, he had chosen the Lightning Attribute. After all, do not forget that his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation also allowed him to Fuse Attributes.

With Zhou Weiqing's current cultivation level, he would not be able to fuse all Six Attribute like Long Shiya could, but fusing two or three was no issue.

At least several hundred of those Lightning pearls flew out, and under the fine control of Zhou Weiqing, it fully covered Shangguan Xue'er and any possible retreat or dodging options and angles.

Shangguan Xue'er's eyes remained closed, the Boundless Infinitum Sword was trembling slightly. That trembling was actually due to the strike from the 'crying-face' hammer.

Shangguan Xue'er's sword skills and sword intent, along with the explosive power of the Boundless Infinitum Sword, it was truly a terrifying power indeed. However, Zhou Weiqing with his 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set and all the pure physical strength he had was not something that could be easily dismissed as well, especially in his Dragon-Tiger Transformation state. Even Shangguan Xue'er at full power was not able to clash with him directly. The reason why Zhou Weiqing staggered back six steps was not because of the direct power, but the sword intent held within. If he had not retreated, he would have been injured by the sword intent.

Shangguan Xue'er's expression remained impassive, as if those several hundred Lightning pearls were not a threat to her.

In that next instant, the Boundless Infinitum Sword burst into action. As compared to the previous 'body and sword as one', it

was now a steady and smooth flow of actions. All Zhou Weiqing could see was countless slim white threads burst forth from the sword.

Each and every strike landed perfectly on a Lightning pearl, as Shangguan Xue'er spun around in a move that seemed like a beautiful dance move, all the Lightning pearls had been swept aside, not a single one exploding.

This was not an easy feat indeed. In order to ensure that a Lightning pearl did not explode, the only way was to strike it right in the center heart of it, destroying its core before it could explode, not allowing the Lightning Element Attribute Heavenly Energy within to be unleashed.

More importantly, those several hundred Lightning pearls were all under Zhou Weiqing's control. Yet, all of them had been dealt with by Shangguan Xue'er in a single instant. What kind of swordsmanship was that?! Let alone seeing anything like this before, Zhou Weiqing had not even heard of such a thing!

At this point, Shangguan Xue'er's entire body was surrounded by a layer of blue light; after she destroyed several hundred Lightning pearls, the vast amount of Lightning Attribute Heavenly Energy had been released back into the atmosphere.

Thus far, Shangguan Xue'er had only showed her swordsmanship twice. The first time was the simple piercing strike at the start of the fight, a simple and seemingly basic move that was actually so boundlessly heavy. As for the second strike, it was a countless stream of fine attacks.

With just two mere attacks, Zhou Weiqing, who had always thought of himself as invincible amongst any equal stage enemies, was left drenched in cold sweat. The only thing in his mind was – he had actually been intimate with such a beauty, was this luck?!

Shangguan Xue'er would not change her actions just because of Zhou Weiqing's psychological changes. The Boundless Infinitum

Sword swirled around in the air, white light shining brightly. Abruptly, the Boundless Infinitum Sword seemed to have a strange suction force, and the thick Lightning Attribute Heavenly Energy was drawn into it, turning the blade of the sword into a purplish blue.

A step forward, a forward pierce. All of Shangguan Xue'er's actions seemed so basic, yet terrifyingly powerful. If Zhou Weiqing had to describe that attack, he would say it was simple, yet resplendent.

Indeed, simple but resplendent, and more so, he found he was unable to dodge it. This sword was not just with the powerful sword intent, but filled with all of the Lightning Attribute Heavenly Energy that Zhou Weiqing had summoned up earlier!

A path that brought the basics to the extreme. This was the core of Shangguan Xue'er's sword mastery. She did not have any Stored Skills, everything used on the single sword, and with it she could destroy everything.

Zhou Weiqing was left with no other choice, and the only thing he could do was to lift up the 'crying-face hammer' in his hands to block the incoming blow

BOOOM

An explosion that seemed to almost shake the world, and Zhou Weiqing's body was blown back instantly.

Shangguan Xue'er's body also flew back, the Boundless Infinitum Sword in her hands trembling once more. It was not that she did not want to press the advantage and follow up on the attack, but she was just unable to do so. The strength behind those Legendary Hammers were just too terrifying. Though she had been able to knock Zhou Weiqing back with her sword intent and the explosive power of the lightning elements, she was still unable to fully dissipate the power from those hammers.

At the same time, the defensive capabilities of the Dragon-Tiger Transformation was just too disgusting. Although Zhou Weiqing had been sent flying back, he was actually totally unharmed. It was just that this was the first time he had ever experienced a foe like Shangguan Xue'er, as such, caught by surprise and off balance, he had not been unable to react properly to such unfamiliar techniques. It was somewhat like how the Lion King Gu Site had felt when facing him indeed!

Zhou Weiqing did not rush into releasing other Skills, instead taking a stance with his hammers. He took a deep breath, trying to clear his mind and calm down.

Shangguan Xue'er's power had far surpassed all of his expectations. Only if he calmed down, cleared his mind and focused with all his might could he stand a chance at all.

The tip of her feet touching the ground lightly, Shangguan Xue'er flew up into the air once more. As her body rose into the air, the sides of her shoulder pauldrons actually extended. Although they were not actually wings that could beat and fly like Zhou Weiqing had after entering his Dragon-Tiger Transformation, those extensions enabled her to glide in midair. Her movements quick like lightning, the sword in hand warped into thousands of different strikes from all directions, slashing and piercing down towards Zhou Weiqing.

Clearly, Shangguan Xue'er knew that she could never gain any advantage by clashing directly. The pure physical strength behind the hammers were more than enough to close any gap from Heavenly Energy, even able to suppress a portion of her sword intent. As such, she switched to using her techniques, overwhelming him with her fine swordsmanship.

In terms of fine technique, even ten of Zhou Weiqing was no match for a single Shangguan Xue'er. The pure strength behind his hammers might be much more terrifying, but in terms of speed and agility, how could they compare with her sword?

Of course, Zhou Weiqing still had his own advantages. More so, he had always been a person who was extremely adaptable and able to use any advantage in the best possible way.

Once again, an almost exact replica of the previous scene came into play, as several hundred Lightning pearls were unleashed from Zhou Weiqing's hammers. To any Heavenly Jewel Master, using his Heavenly Energy so generously like that was pretty inconceivable. Yet, to Zhou Weiqing, it was no big deal with his insane regeneration. Perhaps in that instant, he could not regenerate all the Heavenly Energy back, but his terrifying regeneration was a constant effect, and he was not using his Skills all the time. As such, Zhou Weiqing was not worried that he might run out of energy at all, especially since he was using his Lightning Attribute, not the Darkness, Spatial, Time or Demonic Attributes which were even more costly. For those, he would still have to take energy into account before unleashing too many Skills.

It was not that Zhou Weiqing had not thought of switching to other Attributes as his main offensive force, but Long Shiya had told him. In terms of the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Arts, at least before his cultivation level reached the Heavenly King Stage and beyond, it would be best for him to focus on one and train in it, and it would be far superior to trying to practice every single Attribute. After all, such training and usage of power all had their similarities, and once he had mastered a single Attribute to the extreme, when his cultivation level reached a certain level in the future, it would be easy to transfer that knowledge to using the other attributes as well. The reverse would actually be slower and detrimental to his overall growth. Furthermore, one of Zhou Weiqing's strongest future power would be the widespread use of his Dark Demon God Lightning, akin to how the Dark Demon God Tiger had used it in his vision. Currently, using his Lightning Attribute as his main offensive tool in the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation was a suitable start for him indeed.

Another several hundred Lightning pearls against Shangguan Xue'er's terrifying swordplay. Would the result be the same, with the pearls being destroyed, and their energy used by Shangguan Xue'er? The answer was a definite no.

With the fine control over the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation towards the Lightning pearls, would Zhou Weiqing really make a similar mistake twice?

Just as the rain of light from Shangguan Xue'er's sword was about to strike the sea of Lightning pearls once more, there was a strange energy fluctuation from the pearls. At the same time, a layer of grey light sprang into existence around Zhou Weiqing's body.

BoomBoomBoomBoomBoom A series of small explosions that seemed infinite, combining into one massive major soundwave. In the seemingly small energy wave reverberation, the massive amount of Lightning pearls exploded in a series of chain reactions.

Since you are able to disable them and prevent my Lightning pearls from exploding, I'll just set them off before you do so! That was Zhou Weiqing's current action. He controlled the energy reverberations of the Lightning pearls and caused them to explode as he willed. The terrifying explosion was then pushed outwards with the Ward of the Demon God he had summoned, causing the external force of the explosion to be magnified. These two Skills might seem independent, but they had a surprising synergy indeed. Besides Blink, the Ward of the Demon God was the second Stored Skill that Zhou Weiqing had imbued into his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation this time.

As the Lightning pearls exploded, Zhou Weiqing ignored the sudden massive drain on his Heavenly Energy. At the same time, a purple-red light appeared above his head, forming a faint illusory figure... It was the Demonic Dragon Lady!

Chapter 185 If You Lose, Marry Me! (1)

Anyone else might fail to recognize such a rare Heavenly Beast like the Demonic Dragon Lady, but how could Shangguan Xue'er not? Firstly, the Demonic Dragon Lady was from the Heaven's Expanse Palace, and as the heir to the Heaven's Expanse Palace, her knowledge was definitely extensive and well informed indeed.

Sensing the presence and aura of the Demonic Dragon Lady, Shangguan Xue'er furrowed her brow, but her eyes still remained closed. In the midst of the terrifying explosion, the flurry of sword thread attacks were swallowed by the burst. The sword intent was the soul of swordsmanship, but even so, against such a vast number of explosions, she could not just force her way forward, otherwise, even before she could strike Zhou Weiqing, her body would have been blown back by the explosive impact.

As she retreated from the explosion, though Shangguan Xue'er seemed like she had been in the advantage in this clash, she was clear that if she was not careful, this might lead to a massive disadvantage for herself. After all, without any Stored Skills, when she faced any top tier Skills, she did not have any Skills with Heavenly Skill Images of her own to cancel out her opponent's. This was also the reason why Shangguan Tianyang and Shangguan Tianyue had originally been so against her method of cultivation. However, after so many years of being immersed in her path, Shangguan Xue'er had come up with her own ways of dealing with such situations. This was not the first time she had faced such a situation after all. She was extremely clear that if she allowed Zhou Weiqing to unleash his Dragon Silencing Seal on her, she would lose her Boundless Infinitum Set, and her combat strength would fall drastically. In that case, she would no longer be a match for Zhou Weiqing with his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation. Just in terms of recovery rate alone, Zhou Weiqing would be able to wear her down and defeat her.

As such, in that short moment, Shangguan Xue'er had already made her judgement and plan. In the midst of flying back, her entire body glowed in a sudden brilliance as all the Consolidated pieces of the Boundless Infinitum Set lit up.

It was not the usual dark-gold colour, but a snow white light that was akin to that of the Boundless Infinitum Sword in her hands. That was the colour that the Boundless Infinitum Set would take after completion of all pieces! Yet, being able to do so before the actual completion... even the Heaven's Expanse Palace Master Shangguan Tianyang had not been able to do such a thing! In all the generations of heirs to the Heaven's Expanse Palace, Shangguan Xue'er had been the first to accomplish this feat. The reason was simple – purity and extreme.

It was exactly because Shangguan Xue'er had put everything into her sword, all her focus, power and life into her sword, that was the reason why the Boundless Infinitum Sword was able to glow with such a colour, not the dark-gold light. It was that stubborn resolution in taking her own path that had allowed her to gain the approval and support of the Boundless Infinitum Set, a perfect confirmation that surpassed any of her predecessors. As such, when she burst out with a full strength without holding anything back, Shangguan Xue'er was able to temporarily cause her Boundless Infinitum Set to flash with the light of completion.

Of course, this was not just a matter of the changing of colours. It was this exact change that allowed her, for the short moment, to use some of the Skills that could only be used when the Boundless Infinitum Set was completed.

The massive gemstone at her chestplate lit up in resplendent white, just like a heart of ice, glowing brilliantly in all its splendour. In that very instant, the closed eyes of Shangguan Xue'er suddenly snapped open. Her eyes were actually glowing with the colour of ice and snow, her entire person seeming like a Goddess of Ice descending from the heavens. The white light did

not represent the power of ice or snow, nor was it just Heavenly Energy... It was the Ultimate Secret Technique of the generations of heirs of the Heaven's Expanse Palace – the Ice Heart Arts of the Boundless Infinitum Technique.

For Shangguan Tianyang, it was only after he broke through the Heavenly King Stage that he returned to his original expressions and looks; as for Shangguan Xue'er currently, her cold outlook and disposition was a large portion due to this secret heavenly technique.

At this moment, she was wielding the Boundless Infinitum Technique – Ice Heart Arts to the maximum, along with the Boundless Infinitum Set. This was her strongest possible state that she could push herself to.

The piercing white light burst forth from her eyes and the gemstone at her chestplate, almost simultaneously. In that instant, Shangguan Xue'er's body disappeared, and all Zhou Weiqing could see was massive Boundless Infinitum Sword, almost ten times magnified. All the white light was drawn in by that massive sword, and it struck out almost as Zhou Weiqing finished his Dragon Silencing Seal.

The terrifying white sword flew towards Zhou Weiqing, and he could sense that it was fully locked onto him. Even if he used his Blink Skill, he would not be able to dodge it. At the same time, he also sensed that he would not be able to block this blow.

This was truly power to the extreme! When Zhou Weiqing's cultivation level had reached the six-Jeweled stage, and he had successfully retrieved Tian'er from the Heavenly Snow Mountain, his confidence level had been boosted greatly. He had felt he was invincible against any Heavenly Jewel Master below the nine-Jeweled stage. Now, he realised how wrong he had been; he had underestimated the powerhouses of the world. This extreme sword of Shangguan Xue'er, in terms of overall power, he truly could not match it.

Is she going to kill me?

Facing such an ultimate extreme power, even his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation had limited use. If Zhou Weiqing was at the same cultivation level as Shangguan Xue'er, with one more piece of his 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set, further doubling his already considerable strength, perhaps he would have a good chance. However, the current situation was without a doubt highly disadvantageous to him.

Zhou Weiqing had faced death many times, been in so many tight spots. Under those conditions, he had always been able to reach deep into his potential and subconsciously react in the best possible way. Even if the best possible way did not allow him to beat his enemy, at least it could give him a chance of survival or minimize damage to himself.

The six-coloured light below his feet dissipated. Facing Shangguan Xue'er's strongest attack, Zhou Weiqing had actually dismissed his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation!

What was he trying to do? If there had been anyone else watching on the sidelines, they would have thought this fellow had gone crazy. Was he trying to commit suicide?

However, Zhou Weiqing did not think the same in his heart. What he was doing was to meet extremes with extremes, facing the extreme minimalism with extreme maximalism! You do not use any Stored Skills and focus all your power on your sword? Very well, I shall use my crazy amounts of Skills to face your Zero amount of Skills!

Without the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, Zhou Weiqing's Heavenly Energy regeneration rate dropped drastically. However, at the same time, he became like a projection machine that fired out Skills at an unbelievable rate. No matter what, he had after all already reached the six-Jeweled stage, and his Heavenly Energy was already at the Heavenly Xu stage, and even

when using Stored Skills, he was able to sustain himself for quite a long time.

A flash of green light, and the Fetters of Wind landed upon the huge snow-white Boundless Infinitum Sword. Zhou Weiqing had lifted up his left hand, where the six Alexandrite Cat's Eye Elemental Jewels were spinning about crazily.

All of this happened in just a matter of moments. As Shangguan Xue'er flew back and opened her eyes, Zhou Weiqing had already dispelled his own Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation and Dragon Silencing Seal. As she turned into the giant sword and started moving, the Fetters of Wind already landed on it.

Even with Zhou Weiqing's current power levels, the Fetters of Wind only managed to cause the giant sword to tremble slightly, not even slowing its speed. That was even after it had been unleashed through his Consolidated Dual Legendary Hammers boosting it, as well as in the Dragon-Tiger Transformation State.

Despite the seemingly uselessness of the Fetters of Wind, Zhou Weiqing did not seem to care. His Dual Legendary Hammers glowed brightly as Skill after Skill launched without a pause.

Close behind the Fetters of Wind was a Touch of Darkness, ten thick tentacles forming a web to block the giant sword under Zhou Weiqing's control. However, within moments, they were broken apart into many tiny pieces. Even so, there was some effect as the giant sword continued trembling harder due to it.

As he threw out his Skills, Zhou Weiqing's entire body flew back in a retreat. This was open ground, and there were no obstacles. With the wings behind his back beating strongly, he retreated at an amazingly quick pace. Of course, his speed was no match for that of the incoming giant sword, but at least it could buy him more time.

The next Skill after the Touch of Darkness was another Control Skill, the Spatial Shackles. As compared to the first two Skills, the

defensive capabilities of this Spatial Shackles was much higher, and as such, it was actually able to have a noticeable slowing effect on the giant sword.

At the same time, the 'crying-face' hammer in Zhou Weiqing's right hand was suddenly flung out, and he instantly cut off his connection to it. This way, even if the hammer was destroyed, it would not affect him. Around the hammer, four glows of light shimmered, clearly four Skills had been imbued within.

Even though Zhou Weiqing was currently unable to fuse or merge the Skills together, this was one major benefit of God Tier Consolidated Equipment. Even without Sockets, it could be imbued with several Skills, to be unleashed at once, or even one after the other. Even without a fusion effect, having a bunch of Skills activating nearly simultaneously – there was a certain stacking or supporting effect between them.

The Boundless Infinitum Sword and the 'crying-face' Hammer slammed into each other. In the next instant, the hammer was swallowed up... or perhaps more accurately, it was quickly dismissed by Zhou Weiqing after impact. As long as the Skills imbued within were activated, Zhou Weiqing did not wish for his Hammer to be really damaged. As such, in the instant that the Skills had activated, his 'crying-face' hammer dissolved and reappeared in his hands. By now, Zhou Weiqing's face was pale white. After using so many powerful Skills in succession, even with the Immortal Deity Technique and Dragon-Tiger Transformation, it was starting to take a large toll on him. Yet, the effect was unquestionably good.

The four Skills imbued into the 'crying-face' Hammer were all close combat ones, otherwise Zhou Weiqing would not choose to unleash them like this.

The first Skill was the Absolute Delay. With its Absolute properties, the giant sword finally slowed drastically. However, the Boundless Infinitum Sword with the full power of the

Boundless Infinitum Set behind it, and Shangguan Xue'er's sword intent was just too strong. The Absolute Delay only lasted a second before disappearing. The Absolute properties had still been in effect, but the time it lasted was forced to be shorter. Just from that alone, one could see how absolutely terrifying that attack of Shangguan Xue'er's was.

Chapter 185 If You Lose, Marry Me! (2)

However, the Absolute Delay was just the first Skill. Besides that, the other three Skills also sprang into effect simultaneously. The three Skills were the Lightning Suffering, Silver Emperor Wing Slash and the Silver Emperor Lightning Pierce respectively. All were extremely powerful Skills, two of were Stored from the Silver Emperor. However, they all shared a certain characteristic – a strong explosive effect.

Stacked together, they were able to boost each other.

With the four Skills bursting out simultaneously, the white light around the giant sword was obviously weakened, and the speed slowed considerably, giving Zhou Weiqing even more time to react.

As he was retreating at top speed, Zhou Weiqing's brain was working at top speed in the state of Icy Cold Senses. Besides focusing most of his senses on the terrifying giant sword and the various energy reverberations within, he was also clear about everything around in the surroundings, including the distance between the two, the difference in speeds, all with perfect judgement.

With a faint smile, a cold light flashed across Zhou Weiqing's face. The Dual Legendary Hammers lifting in front of him once more. This time, he did not throw one out as he had earlier, instead his wings abruptly beat strongly and his entire body flew up into the air.

Just as body flew upwards, a layer of purple light flamed out around Zhou Weiqing, staining all the 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set Consolidated Equipment with that same purple hue, even the Dual Legendary Hammers in his hands. Deep within his purple orbs, there was a demonic light, and his flying speed reached a terrifying height.

The giant sword flying at him also increased speed abruptly. Previously, it was unable to do so due to the various Skills from Zhou Weiqing, and also because Shangguan Xue'er did not want to use too much energy just on speeding up. After all, the normal speed of the giant sword was already pretty fast. However, as she saw Zhou Weiqing fly up, though her Boundless Infinitum Set could let her barely fly, it was more to let her maneuver in midair than flying speed, definitely not comparable to Shangguan Fei'er's Consolidated Wings.

Zhou Weiqing's flying speed was now fully displayed to Shangguan Xue'er, and she was clear that if she allowed him to accelerate and continue, then she would not have a chance to lock that rascal down. Left with no choice, she had to suddenly force an acceleration on the giant sword, hoping to take him down before he could take off.

However, much to her surprise, Zhou Weiqing only flew up less than ten yards into the air before he came to a screeching halt. The next instant, he suddenly accelerated in reverse, flying straight down like a meteor. A terrifying energy reverberated through the air, and Zhou Weiqing's entire body was like a huge energy ball smashing down.

Indeed, Zhou Weiqing had flown up not to escape. He knew that was impossible. What he wanted was the momentum and build up the edge to actually fight.

All this time, facing Shangguan Xue'er's giant Boundless Infinitum Sword, he had been fully suppressed all the way. Under such a circumstance, even if he had one hundred and twenty percent power, he could at most use seventy percent. As such, he had to adjust his aura and momentum to be able to have a chance. Having flown up into the air, he was able to at last throw off the suppression and have the advantage of high ground. Although it did not affect Shangguan Xue'er's momentum, at least he was now able to bring his full power into play. As the Dual Legendary

Hammers drew a short and quick arc in the sky, his entire body spun in a 360 degree spin before smashing down towards the giant sword which was chasing towards him.

Zhou Weiqing's Dual Hammers were now almost purely covered by purple light, as he blew up with a huge number of Skills, as he finished up almost all remaining Heavenly Energy.

There were three main offensive Skills that were the backbone of his strategy. First was the Skill that Zhou Weiqing was most well-versed in, the Spatial Rend. Next was the Time Disorder Skill that prevented enemies from locking onto him. Lastly was the Lightning Explosive Palm. With the three main Skills exploding out, backed by his full strength and the sheer weight of the Legendary Hammers... in that instant Zhou Weiqing's offensive power was unbelievably terrifying.

This was Zhou Weiqing's plan. Facing a sword of such extreme singularity, he decided to utilize his own strength, the extreme multiplicity. Without question, this was an act of last resort, with nothing held back or left behind. All of his Heavenly Energy was drained from this final blow, and unless he could Devour her Heavenly Energy, this would be his only chance. If this failed, he would be left totally at Shangguan Xue'er's mercy, in absolute danger. As such, the only reason that he dared do this was that he felt Shangguan Xue'er would not actually kill him off.

If one paid close attention, the Skills that Zhou Weiqing used so far had all been different. In such a short period of time, he had gone through all his Stored Skills and divvied out his Heavenly Energy to his selection in a series of actions that could bring about his strongest offensive power. Currently, with both hammers slamming downwards, filled with their respective Skills, along with the earlier series of weakening Skills, the large gap between two was no longer so obvious.

In mid air, the two massive energies smashed into each other. Strangely, there was no sound, but the effect on both was clear.

Zhou Weiqing's was perhaps the most direct. He felt as if his entire body, every inch of his muscles trembling, as if he had been immersed in the depths of her sword intent, and it was about to tear him into shreds. His body shuddered violently, and even his 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set was unable to handle such a terrifying blow.

After the moment of clashing ended, all of Zhou Weiqing's Consolidated Equipment vanished just like that. At the same time, his body was sent flying back up into the sky in a strange arc, temporarily losing consciousness as he flew up and about.

Shangguan Xue'er did not come off easy as well. Both of Zhou Weiqing's Legendary hammers were backed by all the terrifying physical strength he had, with the boost of the Dragon-Tiger Transformation and the 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set. Added on that was the boosts of his many 'disgusting' Skills. At the final instant, Shangguan Xue'er had clearly seen that Zhou Weiqing's entire body had turned shadowy and illusory, and the last remnants of her sword intent had not been able to continue hurting that fellow.

On her end, Shangguan Xue'er's entire body was sent falling from the skies, smashing right into the ground, with her legs sent deep into the ground all the way to her knees. At her lips, a trickle of blood flowed down, and the right arm which had been holding onto the Boundless Infinitum Sword was trembling uncontrollably. Although her Boundless Infinitum Set did not vanish, it was clear that its glow was far dimmer than it had been, no longer shining with that snow-white lustre.

Currently, Shangguan Xue'er felt as if her entire innards were upside down, her bloodflow in a mess. If not for the protection of the Boundless Infinitum Set, perhaps the impact of the blow would have severely injured her.

Bastard! When did that bastard become so strong? To be able to receive that strongest blow of mine!

In the distance, Zhou Weiqing's body had completed a parabolic arc before falling to the ground. Shangguan Xue'er gritted her teeth, suppressing all the pain and uncomfortable feelings as she forcefully dragged her body from the muddy ground.

Before pulling herself out, it had not been so obvious, but as soon as she did so, she saw the entire right pants leg had been torn asunder, revealing her smooth white skin.

Shangguan Xue'er's face turned red in embarrassment once more, almost instantly reminded of the incident that was the precursor of their fight. Gritting her teeth once more, the hate returned, and with great difficulty she shifted the Boundless Infinitum Sword to her left hand before charging towards Zhou Weiqing again.

Although Zhou Weiqing had lost consciousness temporarily, it had only been for a short while, due to the incitement of Shangguan Xue'er's sword intent. As he was falling from the top of the arc, he came to his senses only to see Shangguan Xue'er charging at him once more, shocking him fully awake.

Currently, Zhou Weiqing's Heavenly Energy was barely a tenth of his maximum capacity. As the saying goes, a wise man knows not to fight when the odds are against him, only a fool would continue fighting with her. The enmity between them was not huge, or rather, was one sided, and he quickly regained control of his own body, the wings behind his back extending and preventing the fall before flying back up again slowly, attempting to get out of Shangguan Xue'er's attack range.

"Zhou Weiqing, you bastard! If you dare run away, I will immediately return to the Heaven's Expanse Palace and tell Fei'er and Bing'er how you violated me. I will make sure you never see them again!"

Without question, that threat was the greatest threat Shangguan Xue'er could ever make. Zhou Weiqing's body froze in midair, and

he indeed did not dare to continue flying up. Maintaining his position, he faced downwards towards her and said helplessly: “Big Sis, what do you want to do? Even if you really kill me, do you think that is satisfactory? After all, no matter what I am still your brother-in-law! I know, just now that was all my fault, but I had really made a mistake in recognizing the wrong person. Furthermore, even if we continued fighting, you may not even win against me.”

“Bullshit! You think you can defeat me?! Zhou Weiqing, you have violated me and I will not let you go. Come down here. Don’t think I can’t see that your Heavenly Energy is almost out... you think you still can fight?” Shangguan Xue’er did not relent, and from the looks of things she wanted to finish him off!

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “What if I defeat you then? Can we drop what happened today?”

Shangguan Xue’er said angrily: “What if you lose then?”

Zhou Weiqing drew himself up imposingly and said in a stately tone: “If I lose, then I lose, so be it!”

In terms of being shameless, he had never been afraid of anyone!

“You...” Shangguan Xue’er was so furious that her entire body was trembling. She had never been the best at squabbling or bickering... how could she out-talk the master of these arts, Zhou Weiqing!

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “How about this, if I come down now and am still able to defeat you... you will no longer interfere between me, Fei’er and Bing’er in the future. How about that?”

“Fine. But if you lose, then I want your life.” Shangguan Xue’er said savagely.

Zhou Weiqing started momentarily before saying with an aggrieved and wronged tone: “No need to be so savage right? Furthermore, such betting terms are totally unfair! If I win, I only

get your agreement not to be involved in Bing'er and Fei'er's relationship with me, but if I lose, I will have to die? How could I possibly agree with such terms?"

Chapter 185 If You Lose, Marry Me! (3)

Shangguan Xue'er was just too naive. In terms of interpersonal interaction, she was far worse than Shangguan Fei'er.

“What do you say then?” She subconsciously thought that Zhou Weiqing's words did make some sense, and she actually asked out loud.

How could Zhou Weiqing not seize such a perfect opportunity? All this while, he had been talking nonsense to Shangguan Xue'er for a simple reason – to delay time. No one else knew how terrifying Zhou Weiqing's Heavenly Energy recovery speed was. With just his Dragon-Tiger Transformation wings and his Immortal Deity Technique circulating at max speed, his recovery rate would truly shock the entire world. In just a matter of their short conversation so far, he had already recovered another ten percent of his energy. Naturally, he did not mind continuing speaking more. At the same time, Shangguan Xue'er was still dressed in her Boundless Infinitum Set Consolidated Equipment, and instead of recovering Heavenly Energy, it was still draining from her... or at the very least an equilibrium that did not allow her to recover. With such a contrast, Zhou Weiqing's current severe disadvantage could possibly be reversed!

“Hmmm.... This... Well...” Zhou Weiqing looked to be deep in thought, and after some musing, he finally said: “How about this? You three sisters are triplets, and your relationship is so strong between each other. In the future, if Bing'er and Fei'er both marry me, you will be left alone. I will feel really bad about that. If I defeat you, why don't you just marry me as well? How about that? Betting your future against my life... that is a fair trade right?”

Shangguan Xue'er truly wanted to give him a piece of her mind! Fair trade my foot! However, at this point, her mind was not even in a fully clear state. All she wanted to do was to get Zhou Weiqing down as quickly as possible and give him a savage beating before

talking about anything else. Furthermore, he did not even have his own Legendary Set any longer, how could he possibly defeat her?!

Of course, this was also because Shangguan Xue'er did not know Zhou Weiqing well enough. If it were Shangguan Bing'er or Shangguan Fei'er here right now, they would never bet with him. That rascal, when had he ever lost out in a bet? Would he ever come up with a bet that he had no confidence in winning? The answer was clear – a huge no! Alas, Shangguan Xue'er had slowly fallen in Zhou Weiqing's trap.

“Fine. I agree. Come down here and accept your death then!” Shangguan Xue'er cried out angrily.

It was actually Zhou Weiqing's turn to be surprised. Originally, he had planned to give such an absurd terms of betting that Shangguan Xue'er would be enraged and argue with him further, letting him have more time to recover. He had not expected that it would actually backfire, and Shangguan Xue'er would just agree like that... not leaving him with any more time!

“You really said it yourself? Will you really live up to your words?” Zhou Weiqing asked tentatively.

Shangguan Xue'er was no fool, as she saw the cunning light in Zhou Weiqing's eyes, she instantly knew that this rascal was up to no good. At the same time, she quickly saw that Zhou Weiqing was doing his best to recover his Heavenly Energy, which was why she agreed so quickly. She planned to end this fight quickly, not giving him anymore time to recover.

“I, Shangguan Xue'er, swear to the heavens. If today, Zhou Weiqing can defeat the Boundless Infinitum Sword in my hands, I will marry him. If I break my vow, may lightning descend from the heavens and destroy me body and soul, so that I will be cast out from the reincarnation cycle.”

Shangguan Xue'er's vow was vicious indeed, but short and sweet. In barely a moment, she had finished it, and she turned a

disdainful and provoking gaze to Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing was after all a man. With Shangguan Xue'er already agreeing so quickly to his absurd terms, how could he possibly continue running away and stay in the sky? He knew that if he really continued to fly in the air to finish recovering his Heavenly Energy, Shangguan Xue'er would forever hold him in contempt, and who knows if she might even start using any secret arts to recover her own Heavenly Energy... and what the final result would be from that again.

Gritting his teeth, Zhou Weiqing descended from the skies, landing not far from Shangguan Xue'er. His expression was grave, but he crooked his finger at her and said solemnly: "Come then."

Seeing that he was really back on the ground, Shangguan Xue'er did not hesitate any longer. In a flash, the Boundless Infinitum Sword in her hands had pierced out towards him. At this point, Zhou Weiqing no longer had his 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set, and it was without question that his fighting capabilities had dropped drastically, no longer with that terrifying physical strength. With her own powerful sword intent, though she had now swapped to her left hand, Shangguan Xue'er still had absolute confidence in defeating Zhou Weiqing quickly.

In an instant, the Boundless Infinitum Sword had reached Zhou Weiqing, striking out at his right chest.

Seeing the Boundless Infinitum Sword strike out at him, a faint smile appeared on Zhou Weiqing's face. It was not a mocking one indeed, but one with a hint of appreciation and gratitude. No matter what her words were, even in such an angry state, Shangguan Xue'er's actions showed that she was not truly trying to kill him. Otherwise, that sword would be aimed at his left chest, not the right.

Taking a deep breath, Zhou Weiqing's entire expression was grave and serious. However, to Shangguan Xue'er's surprise, as her

sword pierced right in front of Zhou Weiqing, he did not make any move to dodge at all.

With a sickening thud, the Boundless Infinitum Sword pierced right into Zhou Weiqing's body, shoving right through his chest. Yet, Zhou Weiqing's only action was to suddenly raise both hands, grabbing onto the blade with his bare hands!

Shangguan Xue'er was totally caught by surprise. When her sword had pierced right through Zhou Weiqing, she had already been shocked and dazed. No matter what, she had not expected that he would not even make an attempt to dodge.

It was not that she felt any heartache for Zhou Weiqing, after all she was still hating that fellow. However, just like what Zhou Weiqing said, no matter what he was still her future brother in law! It was concerning both her sisters' future happiness. Both Shangguan Bing'er and Shangguan Fei'er loved Zhou Weiqing so much, and if she killed him with that single sword pierce, how could she account it to her sisters?!

As such, when the sword in her hands pierced through Zhou Weiqing's right chest, she was totally dumbfounded. She did not realise that as the sword pierced through, there was no blood at all. At this point, Zhou Weiqing's hands suddenly grabbed onto her Boundless Infinitum Sword. Instantly, a terrifying suction force drew upon Shangguan Xue'er through the Boundless Infinitum Sword.

Demonic Attribute – Devour Skill!

Indeed, it was the Devour Skill that Zhou Weiqing had not had a chance to use all this while.

When Zhou Weiqing reached the six-Jeweled cultivation level, his Devour Skill was already able to begin Devouring his opponent's Heavenly Energy even with a small distance, instead of the previous requirement of having to touch his opponent. In fact, against a much weaker opponent, his suction force was strong

enough to just drag it to his hands to Devour. Of course, it was without a question that a direct touch was still the most effective for Devouring. Furthermore, unless the opponent's cultivation level was far above Zhou Weiqing's, otherwise once he touched the opponent, then the Devour Skill was so strong that it could turn the tides of battle.

As soon as Shangguan Xue'er felt the strong Devour Skill burst out abruptly at her, she instantly realised what Zhou Weiqing's plan had been. However, she had not expected that he would be so savage to himself, actually using his own body to take a sword right through his chest just to gain an opportunity to activate such a Skill.

What do I do? What do I do? In Shangguan Xue'er's eyes, as long as vibrated the Boundless Infinitum Sword with her power, she could easily cut through Zhou Weiqing's hands and kill him off. However, if she really did that, that would also be killing off her sisters' happiness!

Zhou Weiqing was gripping onto the Boundless Infinitum Sword so tightly that without cutting through his hands, or even slicing them off, she could not possibly free the sword. In terms of raw physical strength, Shangguan Xue'er was no match for Zhou Weiqing, and the only way she could end the fight on her own terms was to totally destroy Zhou Weiqing's hands and possibly kill him. However, Shangguan Xue'er could not bring herself to do so!

Without question, the rascal Zhou Weiqing was fully making use of Shangguan Xue'er's kindness. As Mu En's disciple, being so shameless was of extremely ease to our dear Zhou Little Fatty. With such a good method to use, why not use it? So what if it was shameless? Ordinarily speaking, beauties always fell for the bad boys after all, and the good guys would stay single! Shangguan Xue'er had already sworn such an oath, as long as he could gain this eldest sister as well, heh heh, the Heaven's Expanse Palace

would not be able to stop him in the future! More importantly, this was the only way he could see to get out of this current mess, and if he did not do so properly, how could he face up to Tian'er as well?

Seeing that strange smile on Zhou Weiqing's lips, Shangguan Xue'er snarled angrily: "Let go, otherwise I will cut off your hands!"

As she said that, she gave a gentle vibration in the Boundless Infinitum Sword. However, Zhou Weiqing continued holding on tight, as if the Boundless Infinitum Sword was not cutting into his flesh.

At that moment, only then did Shangguan Xue'er see blood starting to flow from Zhou Weiqing's hands and chest. However, there was no hint of him slowing down or stopping the Devour Skill. In the series of fights, Shangguan Xue'er had already used quite a lot of Heavenly Energy, and currently as she was being Devoured by Zhou Weiqing, she felt a sense of weakness wash over her. She was clear that if this continued any longer, she would truly be losing.

"You... despicable!" Shangguan Xue'er said hatefully.

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: "My Lady Xue'er, what is being shameless or despicable? In this world, the victor is the king, he is the one who writes the history books. Come on then, kill me! You only have two choices now... to kill me off or to marry me. Take your pick. Sigh... Bing'er, Fei'er, let us see how your big sister chooses. There is not much time left... I estimate about ten seconds more before I Devour enough Heavenly Energy to overcome you. Let me help you countdown. Ten... Nine..."

Shangguan Xue'er almost fainted from sheer anger. This shameless... despicable... rascal!!! She glared angrily at Zhou Weiqing, and in that moment, she actually let go of the Boundless Infinitum Sword, breaking free from his Devour Skill.

Chapter 186 Shameless... With Good Intent?

(1)

One had to know that, ever since Shangguan Xue'er had started training, this was the first time that Shangguan Xue'er had let go of the Boundless Infinitum Sword of her own will. For Zhou Weiqing to be able to press her to such a state, he could already be proud of himself.

To Shangguan Xue'er, the Boundless Infinitum Sword was like her own life. However, she did not wish to lose the fight just like this, and more so, did not wish to marry Zhou Weiqing. Yet, she also could not bring herself to kill him. Left with no choice, she could only compromise with this worst choice.

As the Boundless Infinitum Sword left Shangguan Xue'er's hands, it vanished instantly. In the next moment, her right hand slammed savagely towards Zhou Weiqing's face.

However, at that very instant, Shangguan Xue'er saw the crushing despair in Zhou Weiqing's eyes.

Indeed, it was despair. Zhou Weiqing opened his mouth, and a mouthful of blood spat out, and his entire body fell back down before Shangguan Xue'er could even strike at him. His entire chest was stained red with blood.

"Ahhh... no good!" Shangguan Xue'er was caught by surprise, immediately realising that Zhou Weiqing had been severely injured by her sword. Not the sword that had pierced right through his right chest, but the strongest blow that she had struck earlier!

That's right! Facing that strongest sword of hers, even a nine-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master might not be able to take it head on, let alone Zhou Weiqing with his six-Jeweled cultivation level. Oh no... was he really about to die?

Shanggua Xue'er's original palm strike turned into a grab, holding onto Zhou Weiqing's left hand as she pulled the falling body back up. With a step forward, she held onto his body.

However, before Shangguan Xue'er could even examine his wounds, her hand had been counter grabbed by Zhou Weiqing. The Devour Skill appeared once more. This time, it was direct contact, and was far stronger than when it was executed through the Boundless Infinitum Sword.

His legs lifted up abruptly, wrapping around Shangguan Xue'er's waist in a clinging fashion and with a wrestler's twist, he had forced her onto the ground below him.

In truth, after the previous period of recovery and the Devouring, his Heavenly Energy had already reached a point above Shangguan Xue'er. The reason why he continued using such shameless methods was because he did not want to face any more invincible techniques from Shangguan Xue'er if it wasn't necessary.

Alas, by the time Shangguan Xue'er had realised it, it was already too late. The remaining Heavenly Energy in her body was being drawn out bit by bit by Zhou Weiqing, and her body was being pressed down by his. The masculine scent from Zhou Weiqing, along with the smell of blood, and the drain of Heavenly Energy... coupled with the fact that she was so angry, with a muffled groan she actually fell unconscious.

It was Zhou Weiqing's turn to be frightened, and he quickly stopped the Devour Skill. Subconsciously, he patted her on the face, ensuring that she was alright before he relaxed. At this point, he was panting hard, the intense pain from his chest and hands causing him to grimace. However, after that, he was still feeling smug. No matter what, he had won this fight. Earlier, Shangguan Xue'er had even sworn that she would marry him... right?

Foursome... Triplets! Was there anything more joyous than

that?! With such sudden evil thoughts coming to his mind, Zhou Weiqing suddenly felt like his chest wasn't hurting as much anymore.

In truth, when he had descended from the skies, he had already prepared for this. Of course, he knew why Shangguan Xue'er was so quick to agree to his bet. In that circumstance, it would have been impossible for him to defeat Shangguan Xue'er with a direct clash. As such, he had come up with such a plan. If Shangguan Xue'er had pierced towards his heart, he had his own way of dealing with it as well.

Previously, up on the Heavenly Snow Mountain, the Entropic Nether Tiger Phelia had given Zhou Weiqing a present – a Stored Skill that belonged to her! This Skill did not have any offensive capabilities, but it was a miraculous defensive Skill. The Skill name was also a simple 'Nether State'.

When he activated the 'Nether State', he would enter a state of being totally immune to any physical attacks for the next three seconds. Although it was just three seconds, but what did being immune to physical damage mean! That means any weapons could not wound him. If timed correctly, that was tantamount to three seconds of total immunity!

Previously, Zhou Weiqing had actually used this very Skill when he had clashed hard with Shangguan Xue'er, so that he did not take any damage from her sword intent as well. The greatest benefit of the 'Nether State' Skill was that it could be instantly activated without any sign, and at his level he could use it a maximum of three times daily.

Since Zhou Weiqing had already used it once, if Shangguan Xue'er really tried to kill him, he could make use of the 'Nether State' Skill once more to protect himself as he activated his Devour Skill. It would still leave him with one more chance of using the 'Nether State' Skill in case of any unforeseen circumstances; for example if Shangguan Xue'er really tried to cut off his hands, he

would have activated it instantly. As such, no matter what, Zhou Weiqing had a contingency plan for almost all possible outcomes.

Of course, he definitely would not wish to use such a contingency plan. Furthermore, he had strong confidence that Shangguan Xue'er would not actually strike to kill. As such, he had gone through his daring plan that was almost like betting his life. More so, the smartest part of his plan that he would actually allow himself to be stabbed right through by Shangguan Xue'er, and she would never expect to what degree that Zhou Weiqing could control his own body and even innards.

With the toughness and power of the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, although it seemed like Zhou Weiqing was entirely pierced through his right chest, due to the fact that he had more than sufficient to prepare to receive that blow, in the instant that his right chest was pierced through, Zhou Weiqing had actually forcefully shifted his lungs to the side, allowing the sword to pierce right through the gap between his sternum. As such, although it was a thorough wound that looked horrifying, in truth it was not too serious. Zhou Weiqing had also managed to avoid injuring any of his important meridians as well!

This was the miraculous power of his body in the Dragon-Tiger Transformation state. Under Zhou Weiqing's meticulous control, he did not even bleed at the start. It was only at the end when he wanted to delude Shangguan Xue'er that he controlled the blood to flow out of those wounds, creating the illusion that he had been severely wounded. After he had forced out a decent looking amount of blood to cover all the wounded areas, he had actually closed off the wounded area once more. He did not even need anyone to help heal him, with just the regenerative powers of the Dragon-Tiger Transformation State, that horrifying looking wounds could be recovered fully in just a relatively short period of time.

Shangguan Xue'er's loss could be said to be truly an unjust win,

yet at the same time, not at all. She had lost to the sheer experience of Zhou Weiqing... not in terms of combat abilities, but experience in terms of being shameless and perfect acting skills. In this manner, perhaps no one else could compare with our dear Zhou Little Fatty. In a manner of speaking, it was no shame to lose to Zhou Weiqing like this... after all she was not the first, or even the most powerful person to lose to him that way!

Zhou Weiqing lay down on the floor, recovering his Heavenly Energy at the same time as he healed his wounds. The Dragon-Tiger Transformation state was truly quite disgusting; his skin and muscles were originally already extremely tough and flexible, and the damage taken was smaller than it seemed. As Zhou Weiqing lifted his hands, he could clearly see the muscles, meat and even skin knitting themselves together. It was the same scenario for the wound on his chest. Though he had lost quite some blood, with the toughness of his body it was not a big deal.

One could say that in the Dragon-Tiger Transformation state, his physical regenerative capabilities were almost as disgusting as his Heavenly Energy recovery rate! In just a short period of time, both wounds on his hands and chest were almost fully healed. His Heavenly Energy recovery was even more terrifying, with his tank almost back up to full. However, after that, he did not change to a fresh set of clothes, instead holding Shangguan Xue'er in his arms like before. This time, he did not press down on her, instead laying on the ground and having her lie atop him. He then closed his eyes and concentrated, slowly circulating a thin thread of Heavenly Energy into her body to rouse her back to consciousness.

Acting pitiful to gain sympathy. Such an 'art' had long since been perfected by Master Zhou...

Shangguan Xue'er was after all not injured at all; it was a mixture of an excessive consumption of Heavenly Energy as well as too much rage at once that caused her to faint. Her physique might not be comparable to Zhou Weiqing in his Dragon-Tiger

Transformation State, but it was far stronger than any ordinary human, or even most Jewel Masters. With the aid of Zhou Weiqing's Heavenly Energy, she quickly regained consciousness.

With a small movement, Shangguan Xue'er slowly opened her eyes.

"Ahhh—" The first thing she saw when she opened her eyes was a mess of red. That was because she was lying right on Zhou Weiqing's chest, and was given a sudden fright by the blood soaked clothing.

In her fright, she did not even realise that those wretched hands of Zhou Weiqing's were rested on her pert buttocks. Vaulting up into a sitting position, she pressed her hand onto Zhou Weiqing's chest as she examined his heartbeat worriedly.

As the saying goes, acting had to come in a full package. Zhou Weiqing had released the Dragon-Tiger Transformation and was controlling his heartbeat to a feeble slow rate.

"Zhou Weiqing, Zhou Weiqing, how are you?" Shangguan Xue'er wanted to use her Heavenly Energy to help him heal, but at that moment she barely had any left, and she was unable to do anything. In such a state, she was extremely worried, helping his upper body up into her embrace as she tried to wake him up.

After a time, Zhou Weiqing gave a soft mumble as he slowly 'awakened', though the light in his eyes were dim, as if he was about to 'go out' at any time.

"Xue'er... did...I... win...?" Zhou Weiqing said faintly and disjointedly.

Shangguan Xue'er held on this his hand and said urgently: "In this situation, you still can't forget about all that? How are you feeling?" She was all too familiar with the power of her Boundless Infinitum Sword. Once someone was struck by it, the boundless power would instantly destroy all meridians and internal organs in

reach. That was the reason why Shangguan Xue'er did not have any suspicions about Zhou Weiqing being severely injured.

Zhou Weiqing shook his head gently, looking so horribly weak. "Xue... er... I... I don't think I can make it. It... it doesn't hurt, just... numb... Xue'er... it counts... as my victory right? Help... help me... tell Bing'er... and Fei'er... that I really love them. I might have some ... philandering ways, but... I truly... love them... cannot control... my own... emotions..."

Chapter 186 Shameless... With Good Intent? (2)

“For... my... sake... Tian’er ... was even willing... to give up... her life..., I cannot... abandon... her... Help me ... apologise... to Bing’er... and Fei’er... Please... Also... to you... I sincerely... apologise as... well... I truly... did not... know it was... you... I did... not mean... to violate you... like that...”

Hearing Zhou Weiqing’s words and seeing his feeble state, no matter how much hate Shangguan Xue’er had for him violating her, she couldn’t possibly flare out now!

She truly did not mean to kill him!

“You... you... why didn’t you dodge! I didn’t mean to kill you!” Shangguan Xue’er choked out through her dry sobs, tears welling up in her eyes and threatening to fall.

Zhou Weiqing ‘forcefully’ squeezed out a smile, almost a grimace... such an amazing performance indeed, with just a faint hint of sorrow, with the right mix of apology, and a thick unwillingness to part with the world. In a soft voice, he said: “It was of my own will. I know, in your heart, I have never been a good person. I am not worthy of Bing’er or Fei’er. Just now, I even violated you... That sword, count it as a repayment to you. This way, I do not owe you anymore. Furthermore, now that I have won... you can’t interfere with me and Bing’er or Fei’er anymore right?”

“You can’t even keep your own life anymore, what’s the point of speaking about all that?” Shangguan Xue’er couldn’t help the tears starting to fall down quietly.

Zhou Weiqing shook his head slightly and said: “Of course there is meaning... Bing’er and I are already man and wife intimately. Please do not tell her that you were the one who killed me... just

say that I have let them down, and that I took my own life. As for Fei'er, please help her find a person who loves her more... I have not actually been fully intimate with her. As for you, although you made an oath just now, that was just me provoking you so that I can defeat you. Originally, I thought I could still survive, haha, I did not realise how much blood I had lost..."

"Don't speak anymore... in such a circumstance, you can still laugh." Unknowingly, Shangguan Xue'er was holding Zhou Weiqing's body tightly as tears streamed down her cheeks, her entire body trembling violently. In her entire life, this was the first time she had such a violent emotional fluctuation.

Zhou Weiqing continued laughing foolishly as he said stubbornly: "Let me finish speaking. If I do not get this off my chest, I am afraid I may not have the chance to say it in the future. Xue'er, I am sorry, can you accept my apology? You are a very good person and wonderful lady, Bro Zhan LingTian seems to like you a lot, you can consider him in the future. Alright, I am done... you can go now, please let me lie here to silently leave the world? I wish to leave my last time with my girls, let me think of them as I drift away..."

"No, no, you can't die like this." Shangguan Xue'er's heart trembled, her emotions veering out of control. She circulated whatever Heavenly Energy she had with all her might, trying to infuse it into Zhou Weiqing's body. Alas, she had already spent so much Heavenly Energy in the fight, and at the end Zhou Weiqing had been just too thorough when using his Devour Skill earlier. Furthermore, only a short time had passed since she had awakened, and her emotions had been in such turmoil and turbulence since, how much could she have recovered?

Zhou Weiqing laughed and said: "Don't waste strength anymore, Xue'er. Please don't forget the words I said and help me pass them on. As for Tian'er, I..." Zhou Weiqing stopped at that point, pain flashing in his eyes as the glint of tears showed, the deep orbs filled

with unwillingness and sorrow. In Shangguan Xue'er's eyes, the sight caused her heart to ache so much that she found it difficult to breathe.

"I... I will not marry anyone else. I have already lost the bet, and I will keep that oath. I will be your wife as well. If you die, I will also accompany you in death. Leaving me alone here... how could I possibly face Bing'er and Fei'er? The words you said... I'm sorry, I cannot pass them on as well." Shangguan Xue'er burst out crying as she fell upon Zhou Weiqing's body. Luckily, she was not able to release her Boundless Infinitum Sword now, otherwise who knows if she might even kill herself.

If Zhou Weiqing really died at her hands, how could she possibly face her two sisters, and even that Tian'er? She would never be able to get past that in her heart. To her, the easiest choice would be to follow Zhou Weiqing into death, with no other problems to face. At this point, Shangguan Xue'er set her resolve. Holding tight onto Zhou Weiqing, feeling his body grow colder, she thought to herself – as soon as he passed, she would follow suit.

Shangguan Xue'er did not see that Zhou Weiqing's head suddenly turn slightly to the side, waggling his eyebrow as he threw a significant look in signalling.

Right at that moment, a sombre voice rang out of nowhere. "What are you two little fellows doing? What is going on?"

A flash of light, and a massive figure descended from the skies, landing beside them. It was the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya!

Shangguan Xue'er was given a fright by his sudden appearance, before she was filled with joy. She immediately cried out: "Senior Long, quickly save Weiqing. He is almost dying. Please save him!"

Looking at Shangguan Xue'er's worried eyes, Long Shiya almost burst out laughing. Almost dying? That little brat was still brimming with life. Shangguan Xue'er might not be able to see it,

but how could he not?

In truth, when Zhou Weiqing had won Shangguan Xue'er, Long Shiya had already arrived. With such strong Heavenly Energy reverberations during their fight, others might not have sensed it, but how could the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor not sense it? Long Shiya had long since returned to the Peerless Battalion, just that he had not shown himself much, staying together with Duan Tianlang and helping him with his Consolidating Equipment Scrolls. With his status, he normally did not mix around with the others too much.

Just as he arrived, he had witnessed Zhou Weiqing's wretched hands on Shangguan Xue'er's buttocks moving around. However, the blood all over Zhou Weiqing had also given him a fright, and he quickly did voice transference to ask Zhou Weiqing. Upon hearing that his Master had arrived, Zhou Weiqing had quickly come up with a new plan, hence the scene that had occurred since. Long Shiya's timely appearance now was naturally to 'save the day' and rescue him from death's door.

Of course, this was all part of Zhou Weiqing's master plan!

With a grave look on his face, Long Shiya unleashed a powerful Angel's Blessing Skill. A thick gold light enveloping Zhou Weiqing's entire body. Bathed in the gold light, Zhou Weiqing's expression relaxed instantly, taking a favourable turn. Beside him, even Shangguan Xue'er felt her Heavenly Energy recovering quickly.

Watching Zhou Weiqing with a nervous and anxious look on her face, Shangguan Xue'er had never felt her heartbeat race so quickly before. The abrupt rise and fall in her emotions caused her to feel so tired, but her feelings for Zhou Weiqing had undergone a total upheaval, turned upside down altogether.

In her eyes, a person so close to death was definitely speaking the truth, for there was no reason to lie. These words that Zhou

Weiying spoke to her had to be from his heart. Although this fellow was quite the playboy, and shameless to boot, but his feelings for those girls were all true and strong. The hate in Shangguan Xue'er's heart had evaporated, and as she thought how he had violated her, as well as the oath she had taken, a strange feeling rose in her heart.

It did not take long before Long Shiya slowly dispelled his Skill, taking Zhou Weiying from Shangguan Xue'er's hands. He breathed a loud sigh of relief, saying: "Luckily this old man came in time. How did Little Fatty sustain such a heavy injury? What were you two doing?"

Long Shiya's voice was filled with anger, eyeing Shangguan Xue'er as if he was feeling enraged at her.

Right at that moment, Zhou Weiying opened his eyes weakly and said 'anxiously': "Master, don't blame Xue'er. It was my own fault for being careless when we fought, and I was injured by mistake. It is not her fault."

Long Shiya gave an angry humph, glaring at Zhou Weiying exasperatedly: "You little bastard, can't you rest a bit. Previously, you already brought back one from the Heavenly Snow Mountain, and now you are provoking a new one. Hmph!" These words were at least extremely heartfelt.

Shangguan Xue'er flushed deeply and she said softly: "Senior, it is my fault, I was the one who hurt Weiying. Will he be alright?"

Long Shiya said solemnly: "His wounds have basically healed, but at a toll to his vitality. It will take a while for him to fully recover, but he is no longer in any danger. You guys, since you are duelling, why did you use the Boundless Infinitum Sword? Don't you know the power of your own Boundless Infinitum Sword? Alright, you head back first, I'll still need to finish healing him, at least to ensure he recovers some vitality."

Upon hearing that, Shangguan Xue'er heaved a sigh of relief. She

asked sincerely: “Senior, can I stay to help take care of Weiqing?”

Long Shiya glanced at her and said: “No need, having me here is enough. You head back first, if you want to take care of him, wait until he returns to the camp to rest.”

Seeing Long Shiya’s distant look, and Zhou Weiqing’s apologetic look at her, Shangguan Xue’er sighed before turning to leave. She did not rush off, looking back several times as she did so, as if imprinting Zhou Weiqing’s looks in her mind.

When Shangguan Xue’er finally disappeared into the distance, only then did Long Shiya dump his ‘precious’ disciple on the ground huffily. He couldn’t help but scold angrily: “You little brat, bringing disaster to yet another good girl!? This old man is going to be angered to death by you in the future! Next time, don’t look for me to act like this! Such a good girl like her, how can you lie to her like that?!”

Zhou Weiqing smiled bitterly and stood up. “Haiz, I had no other choice, otherwise I would have been unable to get past that stage! Xue’er is the elder sister of Bing’er and Fei’er, and of the three of them, she is the one who truly represents the Heaven’s Expanse Palace.”

“If she does not give her consent, not only will my relationship with Tian’er be in deep trouble, even Bing’er and Fei’er will be extremely troublesome. Only if I gain her approval, can there be a resolution.”

Speaking to that point, Zhou Weiqing suddenly turned shameless once more. “Furthermore, Master, don’t you think it is a great thing to marry triplets? Your disciple will be marrying the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord’s daughter and the Heaven’s Expanse Palace Master’s daughters! Heh heh, two Great Saint Lands!”

Long Shiya couldn’t help but laugh as well. “You little brat, with those acting skills of yours, let alone that little girl, even I was

given a big scare. If I had not gotten the voice transference from you, I would have known that you were totally fine so easily. Well... what now? Keep up the act?"

Chapter 186 Shameless... With Good Intent?

(3)

Zhou Weiqing scratched his head sheepishly and said: “Complete the acting package... Shangguan Xue’er might be cold on the outside, but she is warm on the inside. Just now, even when she was so angry, she did not strike any killing blow towards me. Master, you are right, she is really a good girl. Although I am lying to her now, I will definitely use my actions to pay her back in the future, treating her just as good as Bing’er and Fei’er. I will not let her down.”

Long Shiya gave a cold humph and said: “There are many good girls in the entire world. Furthermore, if you are too much of a playboy, how can you concentrate on cultivating?! With such a talent like yours, are you going to waste it just like that? Let me tell you, I will never allow such a thing! You better keep yourself in check, you’re not allowed to go find other girls any longer, otherwise don’t blame your Master for teaching you a lesson.”

Zhou Weiqing quickly nodded his head repeatedly, grinning as he said: “Even if you asked me to find more girls, I wouldn’t dare! I already have four, if I add on anymore, I wouldn’t be able to handle anymore! A man’s vigor is limited after all, and he shouldn’t attempt to go past his own limit!”

“Bullshit, what four. It is five. Don’t forget that little girl that I agreed to when she helped you in the fusion of your Dragon-Tiger Transformation. That is the little girl from the Heavenly Demon Sect. Just this five. No more. Do you hear me?”

“Uhh...” Zhou Weiqing couldn’t help but mutter inwardly: Master, you were the one to say not to add anymore, and you just added one yourself. Of course, he could not dismiss Little Witch. After all, she had become his Sacrifice that time, given him her most precious virtue, and he could not just abandon her like that.

Zhou Weiqing suddenly had an urge to cry to the skies – It is not this brother who is philandering, sometimes I am forced as well!

Of course, if he dared to shout it out, if Long Shiya did not beat him until his teeth dropped out, he would not be the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor!

When Zhou Weiqing reappeared in the camp, it had already been mostly set up properly once again. Currently, he had changed into a fresh set of clothing, and nothing seemed amiss besides a pale complexion. This was not an act; after all he had lost quite a lot of blood, and even for his physique, it would take him some time to replenish that blood loss.

“Little Fatty, what happened to you? Why do you look so off colour?” Tian’er had waited so long for Zhou Weiqing to return, and she asked concernedly.

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly, held onto her hands and said: “Don’t worry, it is nothing. Alright, you go to our tent to wait for me first. It has been a long time since I have returned, and I will need to hold some meetings with the Peerless Battalion. To round up our thoughts and discuss about the future.”

Although Tian’er was still slightly curious, she nodded and returned to the tent. Even before Zhou Weiqing had ascended the Heavenly Snow Mountain, he had already captured Tian’er’s heart; but when she actually saw him up the Heavenly Snow Mountain fighting for her, he had totally conquered her heart and soul. Although Tian’er had a wild character, towards Zhou Weiqing she was mostly gentle and compliant.

Zhou Weiqing immediately sent an order for the upper echelons of the Peerless Battalion to gather for a meeting.

Before long, the group of officers who had laboured for half a day had gathered. Of course, that included Shangguan Xue’er, still disguised as Shangguan Fei’er.

All of them saw Zhou Weiqing's pale face, but not many actually sympathized with him. Who asked him to two-time so obviously?

However, they were all quickly given a big surprise.

When Zhou Weiqing sat down at the front main seat, Shangguan Xue'er walked up, a bowl of hot soup in her hands which she placed down in front of him. Gently, she said: "I've made this for you, it will help enrich the blood. Drink it first, the weather is cold here."

Everyone else stared with jaws agape, not believing their eyes. All of them had experienced Shangguan Fei'er's temper for themselves, and they believed that seeing Zhou Weiqing bring a woman back, having her not blow up on the spot was already giving him a lot of face! How could she possibly still cook soup for him?! Could it be... it was poisoned? A laxative or something perhaps?

That still didn't seem right! Looking at their Chief Instructor and her gentle affection eyes, how could it be poison? What was this magic?!

In an instant, the Drunken Rogue Luo Ke Di, who usually thought of himself as the greatest playboy, wanted to throw himself at Zhou Weiqing's feet in admiration. He thought to himself that when the meeting was over, he would have to consult Zhou Weiqing to see how he had done it!

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly, taking the bowl of soup honestly, not even seizing the chance to touch her hands. Gently, he said: "Thank you." Drinking a mouthful of soup, he found it delicious, and a jet of warm energy flowed into his body, giving him a comfortable feeling. 1

Shangguan Xue'er blushed slightly, and she retreated to the side with her head down slightly. Seeing Zhou Weiqing 'come back to life', her heart was filled with joy, so much so that she was not even angry about him bringing back Tian'er.

Just like that Zhou Weiqing had told Long Shiya, if he had not acted previously, there was no possible way that they could have resolved the issue today. Yet somehow, he had successfully passed through that ordeal, and the irreconcilable issues had been reconciled.

Zhou Weiqing turned to the others and saw the disbelief in their eyes, and he couldn't help but reveal a hint of smugness.

“Master Hua Feng, these few weeks it's been a great trouble for you. I still do not know what our Peerless Battalion have accomplished during this border wars, and the state of the Northwest Army currently.”

Hua Feng said: “To our Peerless Battalion, the state is extremely good.” He then described to Zhou Weiqing all that had happened during the war, how the Peerless Battalion had helped save the day for the Northwest Army, and the status they had gained as a result.

Hearing his account, Zhou Weiqing kept nodding all the way. The current development had already far surpassed all his previous expectations and plans, and it was without question that the current Peerless Battalion had been forged into a formidable fighting force.

At last, Hua Feng summarised: “At this current moment, our Peerless Battalion has already official gone through the baptism of war. Besides close combat experience, which has been relatively lesser, they are now very experienced in all other forms of combat. As for the the Northwest Army, or even the ZhongTian Army Headquarters, they wish for us to change formations to become a Legion, even offering to supplement with elite troops to form a Peerless Legion, to become the strongest Legion in the northern borders to face the WanShou Empire in the future. Battalion Commander, this decision is up to you.”

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly but he shook his head and said: “That is not possible. If we truly become a Peerless Legion, then we

would not be able to leave this place. How could we leave the ZhongTian Empire in the future then, or break away from their control?”

“As you all know, originally I chose the Ruffian Battalion to begin my development was for very simple reasons. Firstly, ruffian soldiers would be more easily enticed by money and other benefits. Secondly, to be able to become ruffian soldiers, they must have some degree of strength, power or other abilities. As long as I could bring them together as a proper team, their combat prowess would be something to be reckoned with. Perhaps more importantly, these ruffian soldiers have already gone through hell and back, faced with possible death all the time, and they would cherish their lives even more, knowing to treasure a last possible chance. Also, the fact that they were exiled to the Ruffian Battalion meant that they did not have any other backgrounds or connections. On the surface, they might be a bunch of useless ruffians, but the truth is they are the purest unit in the army, at least in my eyes. That was the reason why I chose the Ruffian Battalion.”

“However, if our Peerless Battalion turns into the Peerless Legion, then the first problem we face is how will we leave in the future? An entire Legion sounds very powerful, very tempting, but those new elites, how could they not have their own background and old leaders? More importantly, they would have families in the ZhongTian Empire. At this point, I will not hide anything from anyone, though most of you should know this already. I am from the Heavenly Bow Empire, and my homeland has been destroyed by the Kalise Empire and Bai Da Empire. The reason I set up the Peerless Battalion was to eventually return to my homeland, to chase off the invaders. You all will be my future officers of merit who restored the homeland. As such, I would ignore all the suggestions of the ZhongTian Empire.”

Hearing Zhou Weiqing’s words, those who already knew about this were impassive, but most of the newer Main Company Leaders

were surprised. Leaving the ZhongTian Empire? However, just like what Zhou Weiqing had said, most of these ruffian soldiers did not have any connections or kin in the ZhongTian Empire, and thus after a short period of surprise, they were able to accept it with no problems.

Zhou Weiqing said solemnly: “In the near future, we will be continuing our training and integration of our entire Battalion, as well as completely outfitting all our troops. Once this is done, we will leave for the Heavenly Bow Empire.”

One of the Main Company Leaders couldn't help but ask: “Battalion Commander, it is fine on our end, but will the Northwest Army actually let us leave?”

Zhou Weiqing smiled and said: “I have my own ways regarding this matter, so you all do not need to worry about it. Also, in this period of time, we do not need to worry that the WanShou Empire will launch any attack. Alright, Bro Lin, what is the current status of outfitting our troops currently?”

Lin TianAo stepped forward. It had been a few months since they had seen each other, and he looked even more stable and composed now, clearly his cultivation level had also improved.

Previously, when Long Shiya was in the camp and had nothing to do, he would give some pointers to these Peerless Battalion officers. Amongst them, the one that Long Shiya placed most importance on was actually Lin TianAo, giving him several tips on his Assembly Shield Set, how to control and wield it in battle, and Lin TianAo had definitely benefited greatly from it.

“Currently, the outfitting of our Heavenly Bow Unit is already at the later stages. Of our five thousand archer troops, all of them are already geared fully in the titanium mail. Those that sustained any damage in the war are currently being repaired, otherwise that is considered completed. We have also recruited around a hundred blacksmiths into our Peerless Battalion to join our logistics team,

fully focused on repairs and crafting any spare equipment we need.”

“As for the Gold Crow and Berserker Tribes, for their Heavy Cavalry equipment the first batch of five hundred sets have already arrived. Although the equipment is extremely expensive, it is truly worth it. The remaining one thousand five hundred sets should arrive within the next half year, even including the armour for their mounts. Currently, their two Main Companies of a thousand soldiers each already have their own Unicorn Heavenly Beast steeds, even their own reserve troops have their own Unicorn Heavenly Beasts. In fact, Battalion Commander, you are back just in the right time. I needed to ask you if we are going to gear their reserve troops as well?”

Without hesitation, Zhou Weiqing said: “Of course, we must gear them as well. These are all to protect our lives on the battlefield. Every chance that increases our troops survival on the battlefield, we do not need to save money on that. Bro Lin, this matter I shall leave it to you. I don’t care how you increase the order amount, but within half a year, I don’t just want to see that one thousand five hundred sets, but three thousand five hundred sets. By that time, we will be leaving, so I want everything to be settled by then. What about our Consolidated Equipment?”

Chapter 187 Visiting Fei Li! (1)

Lin TianAo nodded. Though the mission that Zhou Weiqing had given him was not easy, he did not shirk from it. After all, as long as they were willing to spend the money, it was not impossible to complete it. Furthermore, they could also requisition some from the logistics department of the Northwest Army.

Towards the specifications of those heavy armour, they were not afraid of leaking them out. The reason was simple – they weren't equipment that ordinary humans could easily wear, not even Jewel Masters would choose to wear such heavy equipment. Only the Gold Crow and Berserker Tribes with their immense innate physical strength were suited to wear them. More so, without sturdy and powerful mounts like their Unicorn Heavenly Beasts, no warhorses could actually carry them in battle!

Lin TianAo continued: “Regarding our Consolidated Equipment, the situation is going well. Currently, all five thousand archers of our Peerless Battalion already have their Consolidated Bows. As for the Consolidated Wings, we already have one thousand and seven hundred men who have succeeded in Consolidating them. In fact, I have some extremely good news to report regarding our team of Consolidating Equipment Masters, even as they are continuing their progress in creating the Consolidating Equipment Scrolls. Yun Li has already officially succeeded in reaching the Grandmaster Consolidating Equipment Master stage, and Little Miss Muddle also broke through the Zong Stage Consolidating Equipment Master. Both their speeds at creating Consolidating Equipment Scrolls have increased drastically. Furthermore, we currently have five more Consolidating Equipment Masters, all introduced by Senior Duan Tianlang; they are his disciples. With seven Consolidating Equipment Masters at work, even with a conservative estimate there should be enough Consolidated Wings for all our archer troops. Of course, that does not include our two

Cavalry Main Companies.”

Hearing Lin TianAo’s words, Zhou Weiqing was overjoyed. The Consolidated Wings did not just mean the power of flight, it also meant that all the Peerless Battalion soldiers had reached at least the three-Jeweled stage! The Peerless Battalion had not been set up for a long time, and he was not surprised with all the investment they made that all of them had become Jewel Masters, but for all of them to reach the three-Jeweled stage was a whole different matter. Such a united force was a truly terrifying strength! In truth, he had not expected that in such a short period of time, his dream of completing all their Consolidated Wings would actually have the chance of success.

Zhou Weiqing nodded repeatedly in satisfaction before turning to Wei Feng, saying: “Vice Commander Wei, after this meeting, send word with my order that everyone should work hard in cultivating, to reach the three-Jeweled stage as quickly as possible. Although the Consolidating Equipment Scrolls of the Consolidated Wings might be complete soon, there is still quite a gap for everyone’s cultivation level. Our target is within the next one to two years, our entire Peerless Battalion archers can take flight.”

Wei Feng was beaming happily as he agreed. He had also never dreamed that one day he would be leading such a powerful army. He was beginning to regret that he had completed his Consolidated Equipment so early, losing the chance for having his own set of Consolidated Wings.

Zhou Weiqing said solemnly: “In the next half a year, we will remain here. This remaining time is our final burst in accumulating strength. Bro Lin, help me tell Yun Li and the others, once the Consolidating Equipment Scroll for the Consolidated Wings are completed, begin crafting those made to measure for personal troops. Focus on the Berserker and Gold Crow Tribe members. Do not save on money or resources, this should be of extreme priority.”

Lin TianAo nodded in agreement, before moving back to his position.

Seeing the tent full of various talents, Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but sigh with feeling inwardly, a sense of accomplishment overcoming him. Not that long ago, he had just been a lonely fellow whose Empire had been destroyed, a man without a home, without friends. Yet, today, just a few days later, he now had a powerful troop under his command, one that could even influence the results of the northern border wars. Everything seemed to have fell into place so nicely, but Zhou Weiqing knew how much strenuous effort and heart it had taken for all this to happen.

Right at that moment, Zhou Weiqing thought of Zang Lang and the other senior graduates that had parted from them before all this. After the Peerless Battalion meeting, he called Lin TianAo back and gave him a series of instructions regarding them.

According to Zhou Weiqing's original plan, when he had first sent Zang Lang and the others out, it was to have them become officers in the army and to each pull in a few trusted elite soldiers, so that they could come with him in the end to the Heavenly Bow Empire. However, with the current situation, it was no longer necessary. Furthermore, pushing the envelop and taking more elite soldiers with them would inevitably bring about the discontent of the ZhongTian Empire, trouble that was unnecessary, and could possibly even cause Zang Lang and the others to be considered criminals or have a bounty set upon them.

As such, he gave Lin TianAo the instructions to contact Zang Lang about the change in plans. At the same time, he ordered Wei Feng to record a list of names to ask the ZhongTian Empire to transfer Zang Lang and the other dozen or so seniors to the Peerless Battalion, to become mid level core officers.

It was indeed time to return soon. Half a year, just half a year more of accumulating strength, to fully grow into their own, then it would be the time to return to the Heavenly Bow Empire and

fight to regain it. As he thought about that, he couldn't help but think of his parents and godfather, and his heart grew heated as his hands gripped in fists.

Father, wait for me, your Little Fatty will definitely rescue all of you!

The rest of the officers had already left, and currently remaining in the main tent was the Heavenly Bow Unit God Archers, Shangguan Xue'er and Lin TianAo.

Under Shangguan Xue'er's observation, Zhou Weiqing had unknowingly finished the bowl of hot soup through the meeting. Now, he looked towards Hua Feng and said: "Master Hua Feng, it is time for us to start planning for our return."

Hua Feng nodded and said: "Yes, it is time to plan properly. Why don't you tell me your thoughts first, I believe you should already have a draft of a plan by now."

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: "Just a very simple outline, as for the details I still need to discuss with all of you. For us to succeed in reviving our Empire, it will not be an easy task, or a quick one, but it is not impossible. After all, our Heavenly Bow Empire has not been occupied for long by the Kalise and Bai Da Empire. From the Bai Da Empire's perspective, the only draw our Heavenly Bow Empire has for them is the Stars Wood from the Stars Trees. As such, the main occupation of our lands should be by the Kalise Empire, and the Bai Da Empire should at most have a few army troops to help defend against the Fei Li Empire."

"Our Heavenly Bow Empire and the Kalise Empire have been warring against each other for many years, and the enmity between our Empires means that it is highly unlikely that our Heavenly Bow Empire citizens will easily submit to the Kalise Empire. As such, the first thing we need to do is to return to our homeland and set up a base of operations. We can start establishing that foothold, before starting to call upon the citizens

to rise up against the errant occupants. Although our Peerless Battalion's combat strength is extremely high, our numbers are just too low. Depending on ourselves alone to win a war will be slow and unlikely... so such a process is definitely needed."

Hearing Zhou Weiqing's detailed description, Hua Feng and the others nodded in agreement, their eyes filled with approval.

Hua Feng smiled and said: "Weiqing, for you to be able to think of such things, that is very good. I'm happy that you are not blinded by the strength of our Peerless Battalion and start overreaching beyond our means. Alright, in that case, where do you think will be the best place to establish a foothold?"

Without hesitation, Zhou Weiqing replied: "That is one of the details I have not thought of yet. However, it definitely has to be close to the Fei Li Empire border. That way, as long as we can gain the support of the Fei Li Empire, not only can we have an avenue of supplies and logistics, at the same time we can ensure one front is relatively safe. It will be a big step towards success."

Luo Ke Di couldn't help but say: "Little brat, are you that confident that the Fei Li Empire will not oppose us instead? Do not forget how they treated you the last time you were there."

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: "The current me is not the same as in the past. I am no longer alone. At that time, sacrificing me was the expedient thing to do for them politically. Now, they will have to consider if it is worth it for them. More importantly, our target is the Kalise Empire, and possibly the Bai Da Empire. To the Fei Li Empire, that is of no harm to them, and can only be beneficial. What reason would they have to attack us instead? In politics, there is no perpetual friend or enemy. Of course, at the same time, the Fei Li Empire is of high importance to us, and this is a visit we have to make. It is an important springboard for us to return to the Heavenly Bow Empire."

Mu En asked: "You want to personally visit the Fei Li Empire?"

Zhou Weiqing nodded without hesitation and said: “I have to go. In the Fei Li Empire, there is still a class of my brothers. This time, I will bring them along. Our Heavenly Bow Empire used to be so weak because we lacked the talents, especially in terms of Jewel Masters and military talent. More importantly, I will also need to ensure that we have a good position for us to launch our counterattack, to begin our restoration of our Empire.”

Hua Feng thought for a moment, then asked: “Are you going as a representative of our Empire on an official visit to the Fei Li Empire? That might not be too appropriate. Although you are the son of Admiral Zhou, but you still can’t fully represent the Heavenly Bow Empire.”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “It has been a long time since I have seen Princess Difuya, I wonder how Her Highness is doing in the TianBei City?”

Hearing Zhou Weiqing’s words, the rest of their eyes lit up. Indeed, Zhou Weiqing’s status might not be sufficient, but Princess Difuya definitely had sufficient status. Besides the remaining Royal Family Sealed in the Heavenly Bow City, she was the only member of Royalty of the Heavenly Bow Empire still alive and active outside. If she was part of their delegation team, that would be sufficient to represent the Heavenly Bow Empire.

Hua Feng thought for a moment, then asked: “When will you move out?”

Zhou Weiqing said: “As soon as possible. I plan to just bring the First Main Company and our Chief Instructor. The rest of you will stay back and continue training the remaining troops. As soon as I come to an agreement with the Fei Li Empire, I will send word back, and we can directly join up in the Fei Li Empire as a good springboard to return to our Heavenly Bow Empire. Chief Instructor, I will have to trouble you to send a letter to the ZhongTian Empire, there are some things which we might need their aid.”

Shangguan Xue'er looked at Zhou Weiqing, actually feeling as if this was the first time she truly knew him. This was also the first time she had really been at work together with Zhou Weiqing, and though he was the youngest amongst all those gathered here, but he had been at the head of the meeting, taking up the reins without any hitch, arranging everything neatly and in proper order. The light of wisdom in his eyes was far more suave than his usual shameless self!

All this while, Shangguan Xue'er had always thought that the majority of the Peerless Battalion's formation and success was due to her sister Shangguan Fei'er, but Fei'er had always lauded Zhou Weiqing to her. At this moment, only then did she realise that her sister's praise was not because of her love for Zhou Weiqing, but he truly did have his own genuine skills.

Shangguan Xue'er nodded slightly, expressing her agreement.

Seeing her nodding, a flash of happiness appeared in Zhou Weiqing's eyes. Shangguan Xue'er's status was different from even Shangguan Fei'er's. As the future heir of the Heaven's Expanse Palace, her word and authority was far greater than Shangguan Fei'er's, and she could influence both the ZhongTian Empire and the Heaven's Expanse Palace. In Zhou Weiqing's plan, both were of extreme importance that could not be neglected.

As long as they had the support of the Heaven's Expanse Palace, there would not be any danger in visiting the Fei Li Empire. At the same time, it would also allow the Peerless Battalion to leave the northern borders without a hitch in half a year's time, beginning their return to the Heavenly Bow Empire.

Chapter 187 Visiting Fei Li! (2)

Hua Feng frowned in thought and said: “Little Wei... just bringing five hundred men, isn’t that a bit too little?”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily as he replied: “It isn’t that few, after all the First Main Company are the strongest amongst all our soldiers. How about this, I’ll have Crow and Ma Qun join me as well, with each of them bringing fifty of their elite Heavy Cavalry soldiers. In such a case, though we might only number six hundred, I am confident of facing even an entire Regiment and still be able to break their ranks. Furthermore, our main purpose of visiting is to establish a diplomatic relationship, not to fight with them. A sufficient show of strength is all we need, and to bring too many might actually have the reverse effect.”

Hua Feng nodded and said: “Very well, we’ll go according to your ideas. The combat prowess of the First Main Company should be sufficient to protect you all, or at least bring you both back alive no matter what. Hmmm... in fact, let’s have them be your elite personal guards in the future. Oh right, regarding Princess Difuya, you better go personally. She is after all your official fiancée.”

Hearing the word fiancée, Zhou Weiqing’s expression grew strange, and he couldn’t help but glance at Shangguan Xue’er guiltily. Luckily, this time, she remained calm and impassive, as if she did not hear it.

Zhou Weiqing quickly changed the topic and asked: “Chief Instructor, how long do you think it will take you to send the letter and get a reply?”

Shangguan Xue’er replied: “Ten days would be the fastest, slowest half a month or so.”

Zhou Weiqing’s eyes lit up and he said: “That is very fast already. Alright, so including all the preparations for the visit, let us set our official departure date to head to the Fei Li Empire to be one

month from now. Master Hua Feng, I'll have to trouble you to help make the arrangements."

Hua Feng said: "That is no trouble at all. I have never thought that you would let us see the hope of restoring our Empire so quickly."

...

After a few more discussions about details, the meeting ended, and they all headed back to their own personal tents, leaving Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Xue'er alone in the main tent. By now, Zhou Weiqing's wounds were fully healed, but he dared not make it too obvious. He stood up slowly, about to walk to the exit when he was stopped by Shangguan Xue'er.

He lifted his head to look at her, and her eyes were still as cold as ever. However, in that moment, they were reddening, as two lines of tears slowly dropped down, causing Zhou Weiqing's heart to grip and twist.

"I'm sorry, it's all my fault. I really did not mean to..." Zhou Weiqing was at a loss, and he could only offer such a line. At this point, he dared not act shamelessly; it was clear that currently Shangguan Xue'er was in a very fragile state.

Shangguan Xue'er said sobbingly: "You... you are really a bastard! If you really died, how could I possibly account to Bing'er and Fei'er? How could I ever face them again? Why did you do that? Why? Why did you just take my sword like that?" Zhou Weiqing subconsciously opened his arms, wanting to embrace her, but in the end he did not dare to. She was after all not Shangguan Bing'er or Shangguan Fei'er! Although he had already 'taken advantage' of her previously, that was in an unknowing state, and now his courage suddenly failed him.

Shangguan Xue'er looked at him with tears still in her eyes, her chest rising and falling with ragged breathing. Lifting her hand to wipe the tears away, she grit her teeth and asked: "You... you

really want to marry me?” Such a question caused Zhou Weiqing to start and stare dazedly. Of course he was willing! Triplets! However, at that moment, he discovered that looking at that beautiful face that was so similar to Bing’er and Fei’er, he could not bear to bully Shangguan Xue’er anymore.

However, he dared not nod his head, instead scratching it sheepishly as he said: “I... At that time, I was only trying to anger you. I never really thought I would win. This...”

Shangguan Xue’er’s eyes flashed with a complicated look. “But you still won. Do you think that I am a person who would break her oath? I hate you, hate you, hate you!” After saying that, she turned and ran, charging out of the tent.

Zhou Weiqing stared at the tent flap with his jaw agape. Although he had always thought of himself as intelligent, alas the heart and mind of a woman was on a level of its own, and he was unable to even begin to fathom it. He did not know what Shangguan Xue’er was thinking at all. Was she willing or unwilling? Perhaps, more on the unwilling side? Wha... what could he do now?!

Headache. Zhou Weiqing truly felt his head aching terribly. For the first time, he felt that having so many girls at once was truly not a good thing. However, things were already in motion, and he would never bear to give any up!

Just as he was still trying to think of what to do, Shangguan Xue’er’s voice came from outside. “No matter what you do, you’re not allowed to stay with that Tian’er. At least until my sisters come back. Otherwise.... Otherwise... Hmph Hmph!”

Hearing Shangguan Xue’er’s domineering words, Zhou Weiqing’s headache grew stronger. Not allowing him to stay with Tian’er, that... that was... not possible! If it were any ordinary circumstance, he would have replied with ‘Not allowing me to stay with Tian’er, how about you stay with me then?’ Of course, at this

current moment, he dared not say so.

“Xue’er, wait, don’t go! Listen to me! The reason I’m staying with Tian’er, uhh, is because we need to cultivate together!”

Outside, Shangguan Xue’er had already been prepared to run off as she did not want to face Zhou Weiqing directly. However, upon hearing his words, she started. The tent flap lifted, and she went back in, glaring at Zhou Weiqing with her tear-streaked cheeks.

Zhou Weiqing gave a helpless look and said: “It really is for cultivation! Both Tian’er and myself have two Saint Attributes of different types. When the four Saint Attributes come together, our cultivation speed is much faster than when we are alone. Furthermore, it is also the only way to have the possibility of breaking past the limit of twelve Heavenly Jewels, through to the Heavenly Jewel Change!”

Shangguan Xue’er was momentarily stunned. Twelve Jewel Limit? Although her emotions were currently unstable, as the heir of the Heaven’s Expanse Palace she naturally knew what that signified. Despite her previous hatred for Zhou Weiqing, she had personally seen how insane the speeds at which his cultivation level had risen. He was not even twenty years old yet, and already at the six-Jeweled stage. More importantly, his cultivation speed was just so quick, and his combat prowess was even higher than his cultivation! Even if she wanted to defeat him, it was not any easy task. Still... breaking past the twelve Jeweled limit, was that really possible?

Zhou Weiqing continued explaining hastily: “We have tested it before, as you know, my cultivation level has reached the six-Jeweled stage in such a short period of time, and the main factor in that is because of the four Saint Attributes. Previously, I went up the Heavenly Snow Mountain to get Tian’er, and regarding the four Saint Attributes, even the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord approved of it, and he hoped that we can achieve a breakthrough in the future past that legendary stage. Of course, you need not

worry, I will not interfere between any of the Great Saint Lands, no matter what my cultivation level reaches in the future. Ok?”

Shangguan Xue'er's mind was currently in a turmoil, and she could not easily calm down to think clearly. Biting her lip lightly, she glared at him and said huffily: “Whatever you say, I'm leaving.” As she said that, she disappeared in a flash once more.

Seeing that she had left once again, Zhou Weiqing rubbed his face and temple wearily before heaving a sigh of relief. At least he had passed this barrier, if only barely. However, there was only Xue'er and Tian'er here right now, if Bing'er and Fei'er, or even Little Witch, were all here, how would he spend his days in the future! Thinking up to that point, he felt a conflicted feeling of pride and worry. It was truly not going to be an easy thing to handle.

Never mind, I shall not care about all that now. The cart will eventually find its way round the hill when it gets there, things will eventually sort itself out!

This was one of the advantages of Zhou Weiqing; once he met something that he couldn't figure out, he would not spend too much time dwelling on the matter. Sometimes, overthinking was useless, and it would be better to spend limited time on doing more important things. As for any of the dilemmas, there would eventually be ways to solve them.

Returning to his tent, perhaps due to Shangguan Xue'er's warning, or because he was still not fully recovered, Zhou Weiqing did not have intimate relations with Tian'er, instead starting to cultivate immediately.

This was actually Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's first time cultivating together with the four Saint Attributes. Previously, they had been flying back and did not cultivate, but now they were able to actually focus on it.

Zhou Weiqing's mother-in-law, the Entropic Nether Tiger Phelia – besides gifting him with the ‘Nether State’ Skill, she had also

taught him the cultivation method of joining the four Saint Attributes. Of course, this cultivation method was conceptualized by Phelia with her own experiences, and for the actual specifics, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er still had to fumble about themselves.

Both of them sat cross-legged on the bed, facing each other, holding hands as they circulated their Heavenly Energy. A thick Heavenly Energy reverberation soon enveloped their bodies. According to Phelia's teachings, they unleashed their Saint Attribute auras to the forefront. As expected, they did not need to control it too much, and the four Saint Attributes were quickly drawn to each other. All they needed to do was to ensure the Heavenly Energy they were circulating was in proper rhythm and with the fluctuations in tune. In this way, the four Saint Attributes would be stabilized, without any being stronger than the other.

As the two of them circulated their energies carefully, the four Saint Attributes began to spin in a clockwise manner, forming a whirlpool. Instantly, a strange sensation spread to both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er.

However, the sensations they felt were actually very different. Tian'er felt the icy cold sensation of the Demonic Attribute and the strange warping sensation of the Time Attribute. As for Zhou Weiqing, he sensed the light-filled Divine Attribute and the strong Spirit Attribute reverberations.

The four Saint Attributes crisscrossed in the whirlpool, and soon both youths were fully immersed in the cultivation experience, forgetting themselves.

Not long after they began cultivating, at the center of the Peerless Battalion, Long Shiya walked out of his own tent, looking in their direction. A delighted and gratified look flashed across his face. The presence and fluctuations of the Four Saint Attributes were just too obvious; let alone for Long Shiya, any Jewel Master above the three-Jeweled stage would sense something. If anyone observed closely, they would be able to see a faint light forming

above Zhou Weiqing's tent, reaching almost a hundred metres tall, vaguely appearing and disappearing in the bright sunlight.

As Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er continued cultivating, this circle of light grew stronger and more obvious, filled with the four – White, Gold, Purple and Grey colours, forming a faint whirlpool of colours after a time.

Chapter 187 Visiting Fei Li! (3)

Naturally, Shangguan Xue'er could also sense the powerful Heavenly Energy reverberations. Looking at the whirlpool in the sky, she thought to herself that Zhou Weiqing did not lie to her after all; they were indeed cultivating!

However, his wounds had just barely recovered slightly, would cultivating now affect him? Unknowingly, Shangguan Xue'er did not even realise that the hatred in her heart towards Zhou Weiqing had vanished, and she was instead filled with anxiety and worry. Her character was after all quite different from Shangguan Fei'er's, and the burden on her shoulders was also far greater. Furthermore, she had a psychological barrier and burden due to her sisters falling for Zhou Weiqing first. Every time she thought about what happened between Zhou Weiqing and herself, she would feel extremely weird, as if she were trying to steal her sisters' man.

Forget it, I shall not think about it any more for now. Shangguan Xue'er returned to her tent and started writing a letter to her uncle, the Emperor of the ZhongTian Empire, Shangguan Tianxing. As for the relationship between her and Zhou Weiqing, she currently just wanted some distance from him. Although she had agreed to marry him, she had not stated a date... at most, she could just refrain from marrying the rest of her life...

...

Time passed just like that, day after day. Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er spent most of their time cultivating; once they entered the deep meditative state, they would almost forget the time outside, usually staying in a cultivation trance for three days or more at one go.

On the surface, they did not have much feeling about that. However, every time a training session ended, both of them were

pleasantly surprised to sense the sheer growth in their Heavenly Energy. Another area of marked improvement was in their degree of compatibility, unity and integration.

In this matter, Zhou Weiqing's improvements were even more obvious than Tian'er. Firstly, he had the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, and his bloodline was even more superior than Tian'er, and his growth was thus faster. Secondly, he was leading force during their cultivation, and his cultivation level was still currently lower than Tian'er's. With all those factors combined, it was no surprise that his improvement was faster than Tian'er.

Of course, there were some things that Shangguan Xue'er did not know of. For example, after a round of training with the Four Saint Attributes, they would subconsciously have a bout of intimate relations, causing the training to become even more perfect... Of course, that would be the reason if Zhou Weiqing were the one to describe it. If Tian'er were to describe, it would be that 'a certain person' would not be able to control himself shamelessly after every cultivation, and would make use of the excuse of 'completing their training'.....

In any case, while they were focused in training, time passed swiftly, and soon a month had passed. The Heaven's Expanse Palace and ZhongTian Empire had both replied Shangguan Xue'er with a clear-cut answer. By the third week, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er had stopped cultivating, and started to prepare for their trip. At this point, it was almost time for them to head out.

This time, as they set off for the Fei Li Empire, Zhou Weiqing brought the five hundred men from the First Main Company, as well as Shangguan Xue'er and Tian'er.

He had originally wanted to bring only one of the two ladies, but did he dare do such a thing? Of course not! Otherwise, he would be in big trouble! Left with no choice, he could only bring both of them.

Besides Shangguan Xue'er and Tian'er, after some consideration, Zhou Weiqing also decided to bring Lin TianAo along. The reason was simple, his pure ultimate defense was that powerful, and combined with Zhou Weiqing's Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, it would allow him to unleash his offensive capabilities to the max. As for the coordination of outfitting equipment and training which had been Lin TianAo's primary responsibility, it was temporarily passed to Little Four and Drunken Bao. All this time, both of them had been helping Lin TianAo with the matter, so it was not too difficult for them to take over.

Besides that, there was also Crow and Ma Qun coming along. Originally, Zhou Weiqing had only wanted them to bring fifty elites from each of their individual tribes. However, the final decision was to bring a hundred elites each. This decision was not Zhou Weiqing's, or even the two of them, but by the two Tribe Leaders. After all, Zhou Weiqing's safety could be said to be of paramount importance to the entire Peerless Battalion, not to mention the two heirs of the tribes were also going along.

As such, the large party of seven hundred moved out, almost a fifth of the entire Peerless Battalion's strength. Furthermore, these were definitely the cream of the crop amongst all the elites of the Peerless Battalion. Led by Zhou Weiqing, they struck off towards the Northwest Army camp. After all, they had to return to the ZhongTian Empire in order to reach the Fei Li Empire. As for the ZhongTian Empire, they had already sent word to the Fei Li Empire regarding the diplomatic visit of the Heavenly Bow Empire, showing their support. This was arranged by Shangguan Xue'er and the ZhongTian Empire.

Towards the Peerless Battalion, the ZhongTian Empire was extremely supportive.

The Peerless Battalion had truly shown their power in the fight against the WanShou Empire armies during this year's border wars. However, to the Heaven's Expanse Palace, what they saw

was not just the result of a single border war, but the potential that Zhou Weiqing had.

Before this war, they had already seen the vast individual talent and potential that Zhou Weiqing had. However, after the Peerless Battalion's showing, they truly understood Zhou Weiqing's boundless potential was not restricted to his individual strength.

If it were just one person, no matter how powerful he was, he was still a single person. However, Zhou Weiqing's inborn leadership qualities and unrestrained and creative styles of thinking... that was something that the Shangguan brothers truly admired.

To be able to form such a powerful army from a mere group of ruffians... although a large amount of that was a massive amount of wealth that Zhou Weiqing had accumulated, further supported by the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor, but without proper command, leadership and his various amazing ideas, none of this could have succeeded.

Even though Zhou Weiqing had not indicated that the Peerless Battalion would join the ZhongTian Empire, even wanting to bring the Peerless Battalion away to the Heavenly Bow Empire, their training methods could still be duplicated! They only needed to do some slight modifications, and the ZhongTian Empire could possibly train a similar, new powerful unit. After all, in terms of wealth, how could Zhou Weiqing compared with the entire ZhongTian Empire! Furthermore, even his creation of the Peerless Battalion had been done with a lot of help from the Heaven's Expanse Palace.

When Shangguan Fei'er had returned to the Heaven's Expanse Palace, she had been requested to detail the training program of the Peerless Battalion. This was something that Zhou Weiqing did not know of.

As such, when the three Shangguan brothers had received

Shangguan Xue'er's letter, after a simple discussion, they decided to back Zhou Weiqing's efforts in restoring his homeland.

They had all seen Zhou Weiqing's immense potential, let alone now with the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya behind his back. With all these factors in mind, supporting Zhou Weiqing was an investment that could only lead to benefits, and with no harm to them. Furthermore, they did not even have to expend anything, not even needing to send out any other troops or logistics, as they would not be actually fighting on his behalf, just using their words to pave the way for him. They would allow Zhou Weiqing to fight as he willed, and this would be also another way to further test his potential. As such, to a certain extent, they would continue supporting Zhou Weiqing.

In the recent times, it was not just the northern borders which had broke into war. Even the Dan Dun Empire and the Bai Da Empire seemed to be stockpiling and preparing for something; and the Blood Red Hell seemed to be plotting something. In fact, there seemed to be something brewing up in the entire South.

Normally, the focus of the ZhongTian Empire armies were more towards their northern borders, and they would not want to see problems occurring to the south. With Zhou Weiqing stirring things up there with his Peerless Battalion, who could foresee what would happen in the future? Of course, with chaos came opportunity, and who knew what achievements he could accomplish? After all, before he came to the northern borders, who could have imagined he would build something like the Peerless Battalion?!

As such, the ZhongTian Empire acted swiftly, and in less than a month, all the preparations had been complete as per Zhou Weiqing's arrangements. The Northwest Army Camp had also received the order that no matter what the Peerless Battalion's movements were, they would support it. With such an order present, the Peerless Battalion could easily leave and head out to

wherever they needed to.

Currently, Zhou Weiqing was mounted upon his single-horned Ghost Demon Horse, with Shangguan Xue'er and Tian'er each to the side of him. Shangguan Xue'er was still with a cold, impassive bearing, while Tian'er would glance towards Zhou Weiqing from time to time. Occasionally, if she looked at Shangguan Xue'er, she would immediately lift her head proudly, giving a disdainful expression.

In their month of cultivation, Tian'er and Shangguan Xue'er had barely spoken at all. Luckily, the two girls were able to control themselves, and at least they did not break into a fight – that was already giving Zhou Weiqing a lot of face. After Zhou Weiqing's explanation, Tian'er had already learned that it was Shangguan Xue'er, not Shangguan Fei'er. Towards her Little Fatty's philandering ways, Tian'er was actually the most accepting of it. After all, in the Heavenly Snow Mountain, or perhaps the WanShou Empire, it was a very common sight. The more powerful one was, the more wives or concubines they would have. Even her father, the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord, had many concubines, though he had only taken one wife, the Entropic Nether Tiger Phelia. At the same time, he would not have any children with his other concubines, using them only to sate his physical needs.

However, accepting was one matter, but Tian'er would not back down on her on position. Besides Shangguan Bing'er who she knew could never be replaced in Little Fatty's eyes, she would never back down from anyone else. After all, Shangguan Bing'er was Zhou Weiqing's first woman, and the one he loved the most. Furthermore, her character, her gentleness and kindness, that was something Tian'er had seen and approved of. However, this Shangguan Xue'er was always so cold and impassive, added on to the fact that the two ladies represented the two opposing Great Saint Lands, it was natural that they did not have a harmonious relationship.

Zhou Weiqing had already grown used to that atmosphere between them. Currently, he ignored them both, his gaze landing on the seven hundred Peerless Battalion warriors in front of him.

There was little more to be said about the five hundred men of the First Main Company. These five hundred had gone through countless screenings and competitions, trials and tribulations before they had finally been together as the First Main Company. In the Peerless Battalion, there were always various competitions, duels, discussions and more, both individually and between Main Companies. Those who had constant outstanding performances would eventually be transferred to the First Main Company, and it was truly the elites amongst the elites. They also shouldered the greatest responsibilities on the battlefield.

Amongst the current First Main Company warriors, there were actually more than twenty Heavenly Jewel Masters. Furthermore, all five hundred of them were equipped with Consolidated Wings, and the average cultivation level of them were at the five-Jeweled stage or higher. Of course, that was mainly the Physical Jewel Masters, not the Heavenly Jewel Masters.

Even so, having an average of five-Jeweled Physical Jewel Masters for an entire Main Company, that was already a shocking phenomenon. Under such a circumstance, one could just imagine their sheer combat prowess.

Furthermore, each and every one of the First Main Company soldiers had been issued a Unicorn Heavenly Beast as their mounts. After all, during the border wars, the Berserker Tribe had focused their attentions on capturing these powerful beasts, and had succeeded in capturing a large number. Even though both tribes had taken on the majority of the Heavenly Beasts, there were still sufficient remaining, and naturally the First Main Company had first pick.

Chapter 188 Powerful Peerless Seven Hundred! (1)

The powerful Unicorn Heavenly Beasts were covered in custom crafted titanium mail, the joining links all treated specially. Titanium alloy was light but with extremely strong defensive capabilities, and thus it greatly improved the survivability of these powerful mounts without restricting their speed and agility. Furthermore, with the strength of these Unicorn Heavenly Beasts, it was no problem carrying these ordinary weighted soldiers with their own titanium mail gear.

Of course, the rest of the equipment of the First Main Company was also top notch and fully complete. On each side of Unicorns, there were two quivers full of titanium alloy arrows. When Zhou Weiqing planned the outfitting of his Peerless Battalion, he had never cared about cost. After all, what was the point of hoarding money for nothing? Furthermore, with those Heavenly Cores that Long Shiya had given him, his funds could still last a long while more.

Besides the four quivers which held two hundred of those titanium alloy arrows, each of them also had six javelins on their back. These javelins were about three chi long each, and were crafted specifically for throwing. Besides that, each of them had a long bow, and hanging on their mount's bridle was a four metre long lance. One could describe them to be armed to the teeth. Besides their insane long range combat prowess which they were now renowned for, even their close combat abilities were not to be underestimated. With so many Physical Jewel Masters, that was an extremely terrifying force to be reckoned with.

Of course, while these First Main Company soldiers were finely equipped, but if they were to compare to the two Tribes' Heavy Cavalry, their equipment would suddenly seem extremely light.

The heavy cavalry of the two tribes numbered two hundred in total, and their equipment was almost totally the same, with their weapons being the only difference.

Their Unicorn Heavenly Beasts were also protected by similar titanium mail of the First Main Company, but seemed slightly thicker and heavier. As for the Gold Crow and Berserker Tribe members, their armour was not crafted from titanium. More accurately, it was not fully crafted from titanium.

In their heavy armour, both Tribe Warriors looked like a moving fortress of steel. A simple black exterior, but if one examined closely, the thickness of the armour was a shocking half chi. Only the physique of these Gold Crow and Berserker Tribe soldiers allowed them to actually fight in such an insanely heavy armour. If it were any ordinary humans, even Jewel Masters, perhaps they would not even be able to move.

That armour was actually crafted out of a mix of top quality Frozen Steel, Titanium alloy and other precious metals that were extremely tough and durable. The cost of construction was enough to take one's breath away. At the same time, the defensive powers had been tested and proven; even for a six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master, without any extremely overpowered Skills they would not even be able to break through the armour.

For the two powerful Tribes and their warriors, Zhou Weiqing had spent a staggering amount of money, and this armour had been the original brainchild of both him and Lin TianAo.

When the two Tribe Leaders had received the first piece of such an armour, they fully committed themselves and their Tribes to Zhou Weiqing. In their eyes, Zhou Weiqing was truly a leader worth following, totally thinking about their safety! Wearing such an armour on the battlefield, even if they just stood there not moving, it would be tough to sustain much injuries!

Furthermore, no matter the Gold Crow or Berserker Tribes, they

had their own considerable defenses even naked, and the addition of this armour could only be like a tiger growing wings ¹. Of course, that was with two caveats. Firstly, their own sheer physical strength which allowed them to actually fight in such an outfit. Secondly, the Unicorn Heavenly Beast mounts; without these powerful mounts who could carry their weight and these terrifying armours, any other mount would just collapse under that! In any case, it was safe to say that both tribes were delighted with this current state of their outfitting.

Originally, the height and stature of the Tribesmen from both Tribes were already massive, and upon wearing such an armour, they looked even taller and bulkier. This was especially so for the Berserker Tribe warriors, as their armour actually had some space for them for entering their Berserk state. Once they entered the Berserk state, they were truly moving killing machines.

In terms of weaponry, both Tribes did not bother with any shields. In the first place, not many could even get through their armour, what need was there for a shield? That would just be a useless burden.

As such, they only focused on weapons. In terms of weapons, both tribes finally differed. For each of the Berserker Tribe warriors, they held a large spiked mace in each hand. The large spiked maces were two metres long each, with a thick end that was already thicker than a grown man's thigh. The short deadly spikes around the end weren't too long, but thick and sharp. Each spiked mae weighed almost two hundred jin!

As for the Gold Crow Tribe, they used their traditional war axes, all uniform in creation with the Legendary Gold Crow Axes that Crow used as a blueprint. Furthermore, they were fully crafted with Frozen Steel... definitely no skimping in terms of crafting and material.

These two powerful units, even if they stood there unmoving, it

was already a sight that would strike fear in any enemies' hearts.

Of course, it would be a long process and difficult task to fully gear all the warriors of these two Tribes. After all, no matter how much money one spent, the fact remained that it would still take a long time just to craft a single piece of armour. Furthermore, there was a lack of raw materials or blacksmiths who were skilled enough to work these. It was only with the help of the entire Northern Army that would possibly give them the chance of completing it in half a year.

Looking at the seven hundred soldiers in front of him, Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but grin maniacally. With such a powerful army... it was even more beastly than any Beastman army!

For the Gold Crow and Berserker Tribe warriors, when they were mounted, they were Heavy Cavalry Troops. Dismounted, they were Heavy Infantry Troops! Besides the Mammoth Warriors of the WanShou Empire, Zhou Weiqing had never seen any stronger than them. With the gear outfitted, their weight surpassed a thousand jin in total, even those Tyrannical Bear warriors of the WanShou Empire could barely match them in comparison.

Zhou Weiqing was currently dressed in a titanium mail armour of his own, and after a moment of contemplation, he finally laughed heartily and said: "Move out!" Ever since he had moved to the northern borders, he had not seen Princess Difuya. One reason was of course he had been extremely busy, but the other main reason was that she had never held any place in his heart. The reason he left her in the TianBei City was, at least on the surface, for her own safety. In truth, it was also because Zhou Weiqing did not want her trying to interfere and attempting to order him around.

...

Very quickly, they had reached the TianBei City.

As expected, with such a large troop of soldiers marching towards

the TianBei City, it immediately raised many alarms.

The City Gates were immediately shut, and a Battalion of soldiers were sent out to scout who they were and to stop them if necessary.

Luckily, the Northwest Army had made preparations for this. They had sent along a company of soldiers to escort Zhou Weiqing's party, and they moved forward with the necessary documents to clear the way. Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing and the others did not need to all enter the TianBei City together.

In the end, Zhou Weiqing and Lin TianAo decided to enter the TianBei City alone, escorted by some of the Battalion soldiers.

For Zhou Weiqing to personally receive Princess Difuya, it was already giving her a lot of face.

...

On the top of the city walls, the city guards and soldiers above could see the Peerless Battalion warriors in the distance, and looks of shocks appeared on all their faces.

"Are these our ZhongTian army soldiers? Why don't they have any flags? Who are they?"

"Stupid, don't you know anything? That is the Peerless Battalion. Haven't you heard of their legend!"

"Ahh? So they are the Peerless Battalion! They look so valiant indeed! No wonder they can even defeat the WanShou Empire armies. Hey, are those calvary soldiers in front actually human? They look so unbelievably tall... even those Tyrannical Bear warriors of the WanShou Empire are just about that height right?"

"Shhhhh, be quiet. Don't get us into trouble. The matters of the Peerless Battalion is considered a top level secret in our Northern Armies, we better not discuss too much about them. Sigh... I've heard that their treatment is truly the best, each of the soldiers have at least ten thousand gold...."

...

Naturally, Zhou Weiqing did not know that the 'Legend' of the Peerless Battalion had already started spreading through the ZhongTian Empire. Currently, he and Lin TianAo were heading towards the temporary quarters that the Peerless Battalion had purchased in the TianBei City.

It was not far from the entrance of the city, and before long the duo had arrived.

The door to the courtyard was open, and as soon as they entered, both Lin TianAo and Zhou Weiqing spotted Xiao Yan.

Currently, Xiao Yan was chatting with a young lady beside him, smiling as he did so. Wasn't that lady... Princess Difuya?

The current Difuya did not look any different from previously. Her age was about the same as Zhou Weiqing, and she was definitely in the prime of her beauty. Of course, her dressing was much different now; the finery in the past replaced by simple cotton clothing. However, her head of bright fiery red hair was just too striking, and cotton clothing could not hide her beauty, instead giving her a more gentle, noble air than before.

Abruptly seeing Zhou Weiqing and Lin TianAo appear in their military attire, Xiao Yan started momentarily. The next instant, Zhou Weiqing saw a flash of embarrassment on his face, while Princess Difuya's face turned pale beside him.

Ever since Zhou Weiqing had started building up the Peerless Battalion, he had been constantly running about doing things. Either his own affairs or the Peerless Battalion's, and besides his own cultivation time, there was almost no chance for him to relax. Currently, seeing Xiao Yan, only then did he suddenly realise that it had been ages since he had seen this brother of his. At this moment, from the sudden changes in expression in both Xiao Yan and Difuya, Zhou Weiqing saw many things.

“Weiqing, you are here.”

Xiao Yan quickly came up to greet them, still slightly embarrassed and awkward.

After a moment of surprise, Zhou Weiqing recovered as well. Laughing heartily, he said: “Xiao Yan, it has been a long time!” After a simple greeting, he strode towards Princess Difuya.

[Previous Chapter](#)[Next Chapter](#)

1. Literal translation – basically means making someone/something strong even stronger

Chapter 188 Powerful Peerless Seven Hundred! (2)

Seeing Zhou Weiqing's actions, Xiao Yan's face changed slightly. Just as he was about to follow suit, he was suddenly stopped by Lin TianAo who had grabbed his wrist. As he lifted his gaze to look, he saw Lin TianAo's strict and fierce piercing look.

"Weiqing, no! It's all my fault, if you want to blame someone blame me!" With a sudden thud, Xiao Yan knelt down on the ground, gritting his teeth as he looked towards Zhou Weiqing, his face filled with shame.

Zhou Weiqing started in surprise, turning to look at Lin TianAo. Seeing the fury in Lin TianAo's eyes, he suddenly understood. All of them had misunderstood him.

Indeed, although Zhou Weiqing had never been together with Difuya, she was still his fiancée in name. From Difuya and Xiao Yan's actions and expressions, it was clear that they had a special connection. Yet, to 'steal' a brother's wife, that was something that was truly shunned.

An idea sparked in Zhou Weiqing's heart, and he suddenly turned to Xiao Yan, his gaze cold, but he did not say anything.

Normally, Xiao Yan was quiet and did not speak much, but currently he was choking on his words as he wept: "It's all my fault, Weiqing, I was the one who fell for Her Highness. It is not her fault, please blame me instead. Nothing has happened between us... I..."

Zhou Weiqing said passively: "Xiao Yan, you are truly a good brother of mine!"

"Don't blame him! I was the one who fell for him!" Difuya somehow garnered the courage, abruptly moving in front of Xiao Yan, standing in front of Zhou Weiqing with her arms spread

open, just like a mother chicken protecting her chicks.

Tears rolled from her cheeks as she said angrily: “What right do you have to judge us? Just because you are my fiancé? I have never agreed to that, and even if you are, we have been here for so long... have you even come to see me once? Big Bro Xiao Yan is here to take care of me everyday, he is a good person.”

“If you have the ability, just kill me, it has nothing to do with him. I have always encouraged him to look for you to lay our cards on the table, but all this time he has not been willing to accept me fully. It is all because of you, because of you! Kill me if you wish!”

Zhou Weiqing gave a cold humph and said icily: “That is to say, you are willing to die for him?”

Difuya started momentarily, a look of disbelief flashing in her eyes. “You really want to kill me? I am the Princess, you are my subject. What right do you have?!”

A mocking look crossed Zhou Weiqing’s face as he said: “You still remember you are a Princess? Besides losing yourself in love, do you still remember that your Father is Sealed in the Heavenly Bow City? Princess... very good... very good.”

Difuya’s face turned white. All of a sudden, she yelled in rage: “I am just a woman, is it wrong for me to want a home? To want someone to love me and take care of me? Why must you keep following me like a devil! Kill me then! As long as you let Big Bro Xiao Yan go, kill me. I am willing to die for him.”

“No! It is all my fault. Weiqing, kill me instead, she is the Princess of your Heavenly Bow Empire! You can’t take action against her.” Xiao Yan forcefully tore away from Lin TianAo’s grasp, rushing towards Zhou Weiqing and pulling Difuya behind his back.

Zhou Weiqing swept his gaze coldly across the two of them, before he turned to Difuya, saying: “Xiao Yan does not need to die,

and I can spare your life as well. However, from now on, you have to listen to all my orders. If you can do that, I will spare both of you.”

“I’m willing!” Difuya agreed without hesitation.

Seeing the resolution in her eyes, Zhou Weiqing was finally unable to continue acting. A faint smile appeared on his face and he said: “It looks like the passage of time, and the destruction of our Empire had truly allowed you to grow up at last. At least, you know how to bear responsibility for your actions. Although you are still that stubborn princess, not able to contribute to the Empire, but at least the current you I no longer bear any enmity.”

Hearing Zhou Weiqing’s words, Difuya started, not understanding what he meant at all.

On the other hand, Xiao Yan understood slightly. After all, he wasn’t as naive or sheltered as Difuya. “Weiqing, you... you...”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “Stand up. Congratulations you both. However, Bro Xiao Yan, I must warn you that Difuya is not a good tempered woman, you will have your work cut out for you in the future. Anyway, just like how she has never thought of me as her fiancé, I have never thought of her as my fiancée. At least, you both were able to hold yourselves back before I agreed, and she is also willing to die for you. With that, I can set my mind at ease to have you two together.”

“You were fooling around with us?!” Difuya’s eyes widened.

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly and said: “As your fiancé, shouldn’t I test you both first? Do not forget what you agreed to just now. Anyway, the important thing for us to do now is to annul our betrothal between us. Otherwise, if Master Hua Feng and the other teachers see that you have betrayed that betrothal, they won’t be as nice as I am.”

As he said that, Zhou Weiqing took out a piece of parchment and

pen from his Spatial Ring, writing a simple contract of annulment. Signing his name, he passed it to Difuya.

Seeing Zhou Weiqing do all this, Difuya was stunned momentarily. Without knowing why, a small but strange sense of loss came over her for a while. Although she had not seen how Zhou Weiqing had built up the Peerless Battalion, but from the discussions of the others, she knew how much Zhou Weiqing had proven himself. Looking at his stern and resolute face, she did not know if she had made the right choice.

Seeing the contract of annulment in front of her, Difuya gave Zhou Weiqing a complicated look before taking the pen and parchment, adding her signature to it.

Zhou Weiqing heaved a sigh of relief, he had at least solved a big problem he had always had.

This way, even after he rescued his godfather from the Seal, he wouldn't be able to blame him! After all, this was Difuya's own choice. If that Princess had really stuck to him, Zhou Weiqing would have no choice. After all, his godfather had been Sealed, and she was the only remaining Royal Family outside. What else could he do? Now, all issues had resolved themselves peacefully.

Zhou Weiqing carefully kept the contract in his hands and smiled, saying: "Alright, you guys pack up. Follow me."

Difuya's expression tightened and she looked at Zhou Weiqing warily. "What, what are you doing?"

Zhou Weiqing said exasperatedly: "In your eyes, am I such a monstrous fellow? Relax... for godfather's sake, I couldn't possibly do anything to you. Besides losing yourself in love, it is time for you to contribute to the Empire. Our grand plan to revive our Empire is beginning. As the only remaining Royal Family, you will have to be the figurehead of our revival plan. Come on, Your Highness."

Difuya looked at Zhou Weiqing in shock: “Reviving our Empire? Did you say reviving our Empire? How is that possible? Are you just sending me to my death?”

Zhou Weiqing looked at her speechlessly: “You are still that brainless bimbo! I truly don’t know how Xiao Yan can fall for you. Enough rubbish. Hurry up and come with me, don’t make me have to force you.” As he said that, Zhou Weiqing turned and left.

Up until now, Xiao Yan was still in a daze. Subconsciously, he looked towards Lin TianAo, a pleading look in his eyes.

Lin TianAo glared at him coldly. “You are really my good brother.” After saying that, he also turned to leave, following behind Zhou Weiqing. Although Zhou Weiqing said he did not mind, Lin TianAo could not possibly feel the same. He was the one who had introduced Zhou Weiqing to Xiao Yan and brought him along, yet Xiao Yan had now stolen Zhou Weiqing’s fiancée. How could he feel good about that?”

Difuya looked at Xiao Yan nervously: “What do we do?”

Xiao Yan sighed and said: “Follow Weiqing’s words.” The two of them returned to their rooms to pack up.

Lin TianAo stood behind Zhou Weiqing’s back. He sighed and said: “I’m sorry, Weiqing. It is my fault for not paying attention, I never thought...”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “Big Bro, it is okay, I really do not mind. To be honest, Difuya is just a burden to me. It is great that Xiao Yan is helping me take care of this burden. I do not blame him at all. Love comes after spending time together, that I can understand.”

Upon hearing his words, Lin TianAo did not know what to say. In his eyes, even though Zhou Weiqing said he did not mind, but no matter for any man who met something like this, how could he really not mind?

In truth, Zhou Weiqing really did not think much about this. In fact, he was happy and relaxed that this has finally been solved. He already had so many women that he truly loved, how could he possibly care about that Princess Difuya that he did not even like? The reason he did not state things clearly like that was so that he could gain an upper hand in controlling the situation, using it to ensure that the road would be peaceful. At least, if he acted like the victim, Shangguan Xue'er and Tian'er would also treat him better. Of course, such a thinking he would not share with Lin TianAo... he had to maintain his image... right?

Very quickly, Xiao Yan and Difuya had packed up their things and left the courtyard. Both of them had their own Spatial Rings, and they did not have to carry any luggages. As the two of them looked at Zhou Weiqing, they were still slightly uneasy.

The four mounted up and moved out of the city directly.

When they left the city gates, only then did Xiao Yan and Difuya see the Peerless Battalion soldiers waiting on the outskirts, like a wall of steel greeting them. In that moment, a look of utter surprise crossed their faces.

The Gold Crow and Berserker Tribe soldiers in front were just too ferocious and valiant looking. Their terrifying bodies and stature, if one did not look closely, they would think it was an army troop from the WanShou Empire!

With a wave of his hands, Zhou Weiqing signalled for the entire group to start moving out, following the main road towards the center of the ZhongTian Empire.

As soon as Zhou Weiqing exited the city gates, his acting skills turned on once again, an ugly expression on his face as if he was extremely vexed. When he returned to Shangguan Xue'er and Tian'er's side, he did not say anything, just leading the troop as they moved out.

Just as he had predicted, when Shangguan Xue'er and Tian'er

deduced what had happened in the TianBei City, they were clearly more gentle towards Zhou Weiqing, and they even stopped being so prickly towards each other.

Just like this, Zhou Weiqing led the seven hundred mounted soldiers southwards. They would have to pass through the ZhongTian Empire before entering the Fei Li Empire.

Chapter 188 Powerful Peerless Seven Hundred! (3)

Towards the upcoming talks and negotiations, Zhou Weiqing was not too worried. With the support of the ZhongTian Empire, as well as the benefit that they could bring to the Fei Li Empire, he was confident that this diplomatic visit to the Fei Li Empire could only be successful. The only thing they had to fight for was exactly how much support they could gain from the Fei Li Empire.

The border wars had just ended. Due to the fact that the ZhongTian Northwest Region had taken up a huge amount of this year's WanShou Empire forces, even the Fei Li Empire borders had far less pressure than normal.

...

Fei Li Empire.

Cai Cai sat on her seat in the Principal's office of the Fei Li Royal Family Military Academy, leaning back with a furrowed brow as she was lost in thought. On her desk, there was a file. It was labeled top secret, and only the top echelon of the Fei Li Empire had access to it. If Cai Cai did not have the status of Princess, even her position as the Vice Commander of the armies did not allow her to have access to this file so quickly.

"The Heavenly Bow Empire is coming for a diplomatic visit... Princess Difuya?" Cai Cai muttered to herself. She sensed something off about all this. After all, the Heavenly Bow Empire had been destroyed for quite some time. During this period, the Fei Li Empire had received news of some small pockets of resistances and rebellions, but they were usually quickly quelled by the Kalise Empire with the aid of the Bai Da Empire. Yet, they were sending an envoy from the ZhongTian Empire now, how could the Fei Li Empire not be surprised?

Could it be that the Heavenly Bow Empire had a hidden force in the ZhongTian Empire? But, they had never heard any hint about such news before!

It was no wonder that Cai Cai had such suspicions. After all, the Heavenly Bow Empire was such a tiny Empire, how could they possibly attract the attention of the ZhongTiann Empire? Yet, this was a missive that had been sent from the official channels of the ZhongTian Empire, even going so far to hint that they were fully supporting the Heavenly Bow Empire.

If one were to consider the past relationship between the Heavenly Bow Empire and the Fei Li Empire, it would be like a vassal state. In comparison, though the Fei Li Empire was not a vassal state of the ZhongTian Empire, they were still highly dependent on the ZhongTian Empire for many things. As such, even though the Fei Li Empire was a very powerful Empire, they still had to place much importance on the official missives and conformations of the ZhongTian Empire.

After much discussion of the upper echelons of the Fei Li Empire, the final decision was for Princess Cai Cai, representing the Vice Commander of the Fei Li Military, to be in charge of receiving the diplomatic party. As for the scale of the reception, it would be according to the previous bearing towards the Heavenly Bow Empire. Although they needed to give the ZhongTian Empire face, they still had not decided upon a final verdict regarding this current diplomatic visit. After all, the Fei Li Empire was not too clear what the visit was about. The missive from the ZhongTian Empire only vaguely described that they hoped the Fei Li Empire could help aid and support the Heavenly Bow Empire in restoring their homeland.

After much discussion, the Fei Li Empire had decided that besides sending out troops, Cai Cai would have the final say on how much other aid they gave. As for the actual amount, they would have to wait and see what the diplomatic party was like and how the

discussion went.

All of a sudden, a name suddenly sprang out in Cai Cai's mind. "Zhou Weiqing?" Cai Cai exclaimed abruptly as the name escaped her lips.

Right at that moment, a lazy voice rang out from outside her office. "You have also thought of that brat?"

A tall figure pushed open the door and entered. With Cai Cai's identity, status and position, it was nearly impossible to find someone who would just walk into her office without knocking on the door. Yet, this youth dressed in black just strolled in casually, as if walking into his own house. Still, Cai Cai did not show any sign of annoyance or anger.

Seeing him, Cai Cai gave a beautiful smile, standing up and walking to the front of her desk, leaning upon it as she said: "It's good that you're here, just in time. Come and help me analyse this. Could it be really that brat Zhou Weiqing has stirred something up?"

The youth nodded, a faint smile on his face as he said: "If I have not guessed wrongly, it should be that little rascal. If I were you, then this time you should use the highest reception in receiving the Heavenly Bow Empire..."

"Ohh? Why is that? Just because of a Zhou Weiqing...?" Cai Cai looked at the black clad youth curiously. "The only reason I thought of him was because that Difuya was brought away by him previous... what about you? How did you guess that this time this diplomatic visit has him in the background?"

The black clad youth smiled and said: "I have actual proof."

"Do you really think a single Zhou Weiqing does not warrant such a welcoming party? If you really think that, then I must tell you that you are very wrong. Even if there was no diplomatic party, and it is only Zhou Weiqing visiting alone, for the sake of

the Fei Li Empire, I recommend that you welcome him with the highest possible honours, to mend the torn relations from when he left the Fei Li Empire.”

“Ming Yu, this is not like your usual arrogant self! It is truly the first time I have heard you hold anyone in such high esteem. Furthermore, if I do not remember wrongly, you have only met Zhou Weiqing once personally right?” Although Cai Cai was rather surprised, her speech was still elegant and poised.

The man standing in front of her was the famed, or even notorious, Fei Li God General, having just returned from the frontlines on their border wars with the WanShou Empire, leading the Fei Li Empire to victory once again.

All these years, Ming Yu had accumulated many victories and military awards, and by now he had risen to the rank of Major General. In the Fei Li Military, his rank and status was unshakable. Facing such powerful enemies like the WanShou Empire, even if he had always been censured and criticized for the methods he used, such a military genius like him could not remain unused unless the Fei Li Royal Family were fools.

Looking at Cai Cai, Ming Yu gave a soft sigh and said: “If I had not gotten news from reliable sources, I would also be unwilling to believe that Zhou Weiqing would actually grow so powerful in such a short period of these few years. All I can say is one simple line, but that should be sufficient for you to realise why I hold him in such high regard. Zhou Weiqing has a Heavenly Emperor Stage powerhouse backing him up...”

“What?” Cai Cai couldn’t help but exclaim in shock, her usual grace and poise actually disappearing in that moment as she stared at Ming Yu in surprise. Her voice was almost trembling as she said: “Are you certain of what you’re saying? How could Zhou Weiqing possibly have a Heavenly Emperor powerhouse behind him?”

Ming Yu gave a bitter smile and said: “That is not the only thing.

Do you still remember that Shangguan Bing'er who entered the academy together with him? That little girl has an extraordinary background after all... she is actually the long lost third daughter of the Heaven's Expanse Palace Second Master Shangguan Tianyue! You and I know very well her connection with Zhou Weiqing... and it is without question that the support of the ZhongTian Empire, or even the Heaven's Expanse Palace, to Zhou Weiqing could very well originate from this."

Ming Yu's news, let alone for Cai Cai, it was truly news of utmost importance to the entire Fei Li Empire. In that moment, Cai Cai's expression changed several times. She understood that their plans for receiving the Heavenly Bow Empire diplomatic party had to be changed drastically.

"Why didn't you report it up the command structure?" Cai Cai looked at Ming Yu, a hint of blame in her eyes.

Ming Yu pursed his lips, taking a step forward and holding Cai Cai's hands, roughly pulling her into his embrace. "Why should I report it up? If not for the fact that you told me about it, would I even know about this diplomatic party? What bullshit Fei Li God General... In the eyes of your Royal Family, I am just a mere dog that is currently useful."

Cai Cai's face froze, but she allowed him to continue hugging her. An apologetic look appeared in her eyes as she said softly: "I'm sorry Ming Yu... As you know, we are also under a lot of pressure. Your fighting style is just too unique... and not everyone can accept it."

Ming Yu said passively: "Enough, don't I know enough about what your Royal Family thinks about me? If they truly placed any importance on me, they would have already allowed me to marry you. Would you still have to wait until today, to remain unmarried at the age of forty? We do not need to discuss this any further... As I have once told you... If one day, I have to leave the Fei Li Empire suddenly, don't be too surprised."

Cai Cai drew a deep breath, suddenly hugging Ming Yu back with all her might. In a low tone, she begged: “No, I won’t let you go. For my sake, can’t you please stay?”

Ming Yu sighed softly and said: “... If not for you, I would have already left a long time ago. I have never hid my background from you... because I trust you. However, you do after all belong to the Royal Family, and there are too many things you cannot put down. You can hide my background, but when you are faced between a choice of the interest of the Royal Family, in the end you will not be standing by my side.”

Cai Cai fell silent. She knew what Ming Yu said was true. One side was the man she loved... the other was her family, her homeland, her Empire... It was truly too difficult for her to make any choice.

“I will listen to your suggestion and treat the Heavenly Bow Empire diplomatic party with utmost importance. Do you have any other news about Zhou Weiqing? I will have to report upwards that he has the support of Shangguan Tianyue from the Heaven’s Expanse Palace.”

Ming Yu suddenly laughed, pulling away slightly from Cai Cai. “Did you really think that the Heavenly Emperor stage powerhouse I was referring to earlier was Shangguan Tianyue? No, you are wrong. The Heaven’s Expanse Palace and the ZhongTian Empire do indeed support Zhou Weiqing, but the Heavenly Emperor supporting Zhou Weiqing is someone else indeed.”

“Someone else?” This time, Cai Cai found it impossible to believe. She recalled that honest looking youth who had been so cunning... how could he be such ‘wanted property’ now?

Ming Yu nodded and said: “I am not trying to scare you. That person backing Zhou Weiqing... even the entire Fei Li Empire cannot afford to offend him. No matter what, do not attempt to ruin the relationship with the Heavenly Bow Empire... otherwise,

you cannot guess the possible dire consequences.”

Cai Cai’s face turned an interesting sight indeed. “Do... do you know who that person behind him truly is?”

Ming Yu shook his head and said: “Yes, I do know, but I cannot tell you. You should understand the source of the news...”

Cai Cai inclined her head slightly and said: “Thank you for telling me all these. However, why do I feel like your heart is slowly leaving me bit by bit?”

Ming Yu looked at her deeply, a complicated look in his eyes. Finally, he sighed and said: “Perhaps... the Fei Li Empire is not truly suited for me.”

...

Fifteen days later. Dawn.

The East Gate of the Fei Li City was open wide early in the morning, with more than a thousand soldiers gathered there to maintain order. The streets had been washed and cleared up, and currently the Royal Family Cavalry were arrayed in perfect formation, looking impressive indeed as they gathered there.

Under the shelter of silk umbrellas, the Fei Li Royal Princess, Principal of the Fei Li Military Academy, Cai Cai, led a contingent of Fei Li officials standing at the gate, personally waiting to receive the incoming party.

Author’s Note: One thing – Previously, some readers have mentioned that the multiplier I mentioned for the ‘Hate Ground no Handle’ Legendary Set is wrong. At that time of writing, I did not think there was any error, that was because I treated the first piece of equipment as ‘1’ not Zhou Weiqing’s strength as the ‘1’. As such, when you are counting the boost of the ‘Hate Ground no Handle’ Legendary Set, the multiplier is outside of his personal strength! Regarding this matter, I apologise about any confusion caused.

Book 23

Chapter 189 ‘Rolling-Knife Meat’! (1)

Today, Cai Cai was dressed in official clothing as usual, but they were her finest. Her face was expressionless, even stern, as she stood waiting.

Behind the separation of the soldiers, there was a gathering of Fei Li Empire citizens who were watching in curiosity. They did not know what was happening, to have such a parade now.

The Royal Family Cavalry personally out in formation, with Princess Cai Cai at the head of the parade, waiting outside the City Gates. Such a formality could be said to be extremely rare in the Fei Li City, and only when welcoming honoured guests from the main large empires would this happen, second only to having the Emperor personally welcome someone. After all, Princess Cai Cai had a rather high status even in the entire Fei Li Royal Family, and she also had a good reputation and high popularity amongst the citizens.

Time passed, minute after minute. By the time the sun had risen three poles high ¹, and the welcoming party had already waited for quite some time, but they still did not see any sign of the diplomatic party.

“Report—” A scout from the Royal Family Cavalry rushed towards Cai Cai, kneeling down in front of her.

“Speak.” Cai Cai said passively. Currently, she was impassive but dignified, showing her noble and elegant demeanor of a princess from a large Empire.

“Your Highness, the Heavenly Bow Empire diplomatic party is about to arrive. Later, should we allow their escorting troop to enter the city as well?”

Cai Cai waved a hand and said: “Yes, of course they can enter. The Heavenly Bow Empire is our allied Empire, how can we leave

them at the door?”

“Yes.”

These few days, Cai Cai had been receiving much news about the Heavenly Bow Empire party, of which many of them were describing how astonishing the seven hundred men troop was and how imposing their presence was.

Towards such reports, Cai Cai had not paid much attention to. In her eyes, Zhou Weiqing had the support of the ZhongTian Empire, and it was not surprising that the ZhongTian Empire would send a couple hundred elite soldiers as a show of support. No matter how strong they were, they only numbered seven hundred after all. After Ming Yu's suggestions, she had already greatly increased the welcoming party towards the Heavenly Bow Empire diplomatic party.

Right at that moment, a huge flag could be seen in the distance.

It was truly a massive flag indeed, even from the distance one could estimate that the flagpole was at least twenty metres long, as thick as a water bucket, rising high up in the skies. Above, an eight metre long, five metre wide huge flag hung upon it, swaying gently in the wind.

The flag was lined with gold thread, with the main symbol upon it a huge Star Wood Bow. Four large letters were inscribed below, clearly visible even in the distance – Heavenly Bow Empire ²

Seeing such a massive flag, the members of the welcoming party couldn't help but exchange looks. What was this? Even the ZhongTian Empire main army flag was just a match for it? Could such a thing actually be used as a military flag for the Heavenly Bow Empire?

In actual fact, their guess had been accurate. That flagpole was exactly the same as the ZhongTian Northwest Army main one, just that Zhou Weiqing had commissioned someone to craft an exact

replica.

Almost after seeing the flag did the members of the diplomatic party start coming into vision. At the head of the entire contingent was a single rider, mounted upon an massive horse. The horse was totally covered in black scales, its snout area like a lion's maw, a single horn shimmering with faint light on the top of its forehead, while its eyes were faintly red. Its massive muscles bulged, looking savage and ferocious, and even a male lion would pale in comparison to it.

The rider on its back was fully dressed in gold armour, a blindingly scarlet cape billowing behind his back. From the side view, they could see that a similar Star Bow insignia was stitched upon the cape; the logo of the Heavenly Bow Empire.

Gold helmet, gold armour and fine red robes. As soon as this general appeared in their sights, he immediately became the focus of all attention. At first impression, his dressing seemed boorish, almost vulgar. Gold armour... that was not something that could be found on a battlefield. No matter how confident a general or military leader was, one would never wear a gold armour.

Besides the fact that such gold armour was just too eye-catching, easily drawing the attention of all enemies to become a target... just the fact that gold was actually a very soft metal was a huge problem. Besides being useful for showing off, there was no practical use for such an armour at all!

In the eyes of most of the onlookers, this gold clad general was like some rich upstart who didn't know anything. However, in the eyes of Princess Cai Cai, it was vastly different.

Was this really an armour made of gold? The answer was actually a resounding no!

With a single look, Cai Cai could tell that this gold armour was more than it seemed on the surface. The colour was slightly more faded than gold was, but in the sun it somehow seemed even more

resplendent.

Could it be crafted out of refined gold? How much would that actually cost? Cai Cai's heart wrenched slightly as the thought came to her mind.

Refined gold was so valuable that even titanium alloy could not compare to it. Any ordinary weapon, if one just added a tiny bit of refined gold, it would immediately transform into a top quality weapon. Furthermore, Refined Gold was extremely good at conducting Heavenly Energy, even able to amplify or magnify it. Its weight was about the same as titanium alloy, but its toughness and flexibility was far superior, almost five times that on titanium alloy. Of course, the price was more than a hundred times more expensive than titanium alloy! To craft an entire set of armour out of Refined Gold, that was already far beyond being luxurious or extravagant... even considered wasteful! Yet, Cai Cai had no choice but to admit, besides Consolidated Equipment, an armour crafted of Refined Gold was the strongest possible.

Perhaps no else besides Cai Cai could tell it was an armour made of Refined Gold, but they were still shocked with their jaws agape. That was because the immense flag that they had seen earlier was actually being held in a single hand by that leading general. More so, it was with that single hand extended out in front of him! As the single-horned Ghost Demon Horse advanced, the immense flag moved along so steadily, the flag swaying lazily in the wind. Such a presence was truly able to capture everyone's sight.

Right behind this leading general, there were four others right behind in an array. Some were dressed in armour, while others in simple clothes. However, even from just a single look, it was without question that these were no ordinary folk as well, especially two top beauties who drew even more attention.

Right behind them was a large and luxurious horse carriage, pulled on by sixteen fine horses. The driver of the carriage was a ferocious looking warrior clad in black full heavy armour, reaching

almost two and a half metres tall, cutting a majestic and imposing figure indeed. That warrior held the reins to all sixteen horses in a single hand, controlling them all with just his wrist, and they mighty horses were obedient as they moved slowly along.

Originally, when they had been choosing a driver for this horse carriage, the only selection marker was stature. In the end, even the Young Master of the Berserker Tribe Ma Qun failed to gain the position; the person there was actually his elder cousin – renowned amongst the entire Berserker Tribe for his height, stature and vigor.

As their gaze wandered past the horse carriage, it was as if they could suddenly sense a strong aura of killing intent.

At this moment, everyone watching suddenly made the same action, as if in unison. Rubbing their eyes. Indeed, all of them thought they had suddenly been hallucinating. What were they looking at?!

Behind the massive horse carriage, the array of cavalry soldiers behind were actually not riding upon warhorses... there were no warhorses in existence that were so tall and mighty, more so... those wings at the side and the majestic horn on their heads!

Heavens above! Those were Unicorn Heavenly Beasts from the WanShou Empire! All the cavalry soldiers were actually mounted upon Unicorn Heavenly Beasts! Seven hundred cavalry soldiers... seven hundred Unicorns!!

[Previous Chapter](#)[Next Chapter](#)

1. Ancient chinese method of telling time using shadows of a wooden post. Basically means late morning
2. 天弓帝国 in Mandarin

Chapter 189 ‘Rolling-Knife Meat’*! (2)

As she looked upon the imposing sight before her, Cai Cai was starting to feel some regret... regret about the words she had just said earlier. These people... was it truly wise to allow them to enter the Fei Li City?

Those two hundred soldiers at the front, where were they from? Mounted upon the Unicorn Heavenly Beasts, their total height reached almost four metres tall? Were they actually human? Looking at those weapons... massive spiked maces, immense battle axes... were those really fully solid?! If so, how heavy were they!?

Cai Cai couldn't help but feel a wrench in her heart, thinking to herself that the ZhongTian Empire's support for Zhou Weiqing was beyond even her expectations! Were they even sending the most hidden treasure and finest elites along with Zhou Weiqing? Even after all these years, the Fei Li Empire had never even heard of the ZhongTian Empire having such an army unit!

Very quickly, under the leadership of the gold clad general in front, the entire troop reached the front of the Fei Li City, stopping around thirty yards from Princess Cai Cai. The general halted his mount, and before anyone could see his actions, he had already dismounted in a flying motion. The flag in his hands actually flew back steadily, landing firmly in the hands of one of the four behind him, a large youth with a similarly massive stature. Just from that show of power alone, he had to be at least six-Jeweled or higher to be able to do so with such ease.

The gold general took a few steps forward, removing the helmet from his head, revealing a honest and dignified, though young, face. He bowed slightly in respect towards Cai Cai before saying: "Heavenly Bow Empire, Peerless Regiment Commander Zhou Weiqing, leader of our diplomatic party here, greets Your Highness."

Indeed, the Peerless Battalion had been officially renamed by Zhou Weiqing to a proper formation of Regiment. Since they were returning to the Heavenly Bow Empire, they did not need to restrict themselves as previously. Now that the Peerless Regiment numbered more than nine thousand men, it was no problem to call themselves a Regiment. Of course, their internal formation did not change, still using their Main Companies instead of Battalions.

Looking at Zhou Weiqing, a far-off look flashed in Cai Cai's eyes as she almost slipped into a trance momentarily. It was only about two years since they had last met, and Zhou Weiqing had already grown and matured so much after leaving the Fei Li Empire. Without knowing why, in that instant, Cai Cai felt a strong sense of regret, regret that she had not been able to fight against all the opposition to do as she had wished in the past, to allow that youth to remain in the Fei Li Empire safely.

Looking at Zhou Weiqing, Cai Cai smiled and nodded, saying: "Regiment Commander Zhou, you've traveled far with your diplomatic party indeed. May I know if Princess Difuya is here as well?"

Hearing Cai Cai's question, Zhou Weiqing's brow furrowed slightly. In truth, for Cai Cai to actually have such a grand welcoming ceremony, even involving the Royal Family Cavalry... that was something that was far beyond Zhou Weiqing's expectations. After all, they were only a diplomatic party from a currently-dead Empire, but they were still given a welcoming of such high standards. However, as soon as Cai Cai spoke, he could instantly sense the superiority feeling of a large Empire. Both were princesses, but her tone was such that Princess Difuya was of much lower status than her.

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly and said: "Her Highness is currently resting in the horse carriage, Princess Cai Cai. How about we enter the City first before we chat more?"

Cai Cai stared momentarily. She did not expect Zhou Weiqing to

reply her like that. Today, she had personally come here to receive the Heavenly Bow Empire contingent with such high honours, and they had waited for such a long time. In her view, no matter what, Princess Difuya should personally come out to thank her. After all, even if it were the Kalise Emperor coming here personally, he would not get such a welcoming reception! Yet, looking at Zhou Weiqing, it seemed like he was not satisfied with this, even that Princess Difuya was not prepared to come out personally yet. This was tantamount to slapping her face!

Of course, what Cai Cai did not know was that Zhou Weiqing's thinking was just very simple. His entire purpose of having this diplomatic visit was to act '13' ¹, or to show off their might.

Zhou Weiqing knew that with the support of the ZhongTian Empire, the Fei Li Empire would definitely support their Heavenly Bow Empire as well. However, the problem was that it was probably just a token support to 'satisfy' the ZhongTian Empire, not substantial at all. From how they had reacted after the Heavenly Bow Empire had been destroyed and the subsequent warrant issued for his own arrest after that... he could definitely tell that.

As such, if he wanted to squeeze more benefits from the Fei Li Empire, he had to display the true strength and worth of the Heavenly Bow Empire, to let the Fei Li Empire feel that they could actually change the situation in the entire south... to be actually worth investing in and supporting. Only then would the support of the Fei Li Empire be truly sincere.

Although Zhou Weiqing was still very rich, he could not possibly just depend on that amount of money alone to totally fund the war in restoring his homeland. In the first place, the sheer amount required to fund such a war was astronomical; not only would he have to gather more troops, treat the Heavenly Bow Empire citizens well... all of which would cost money. As such, this time not only was he here to 'act cool', but to do so up to a certain level,

with style! With that said, this fellow was just here to show off the strength of his Peerless Battalion. No, wait, it should now be called the Peerless Regiment.

Before Cai Cai could respond, an official beside her had already stepped forward, saying coldly: “Commander Zhou, our Princess has personally come to receive your Heavenly Bow Empire Princess Difuya, surely it doesn’t mean that Princess Difuya won’t even show her face to us? Could it be that after the Heavenly Bow Empire was destroyed, you all have even forgotten the most basic courtesy?”

This official was a man who looked to be about forty years of age or so, dressed in a striking silver armour with some intricate gold tattoos making it seem a magnificent sight. Behind his back was an aquamarine green cape, billowing back in the wind as he spoke sharply.

Zhou Weiqing’s face instantly changed. “Princess Difuya might also be a Princess, but she is currently the only member of our Royal Family. She represents our Heavenly Bow Empire. Though we are working to ensure otherwise, if we are unable to rescue His Majesty in the future, Princess Difuya will become the new Queen of our Heavenly Bow Empire. The future Queen of our Empire is here, but your Empire has only sent a Princess here to receive her, so why should Her Highness come out to see you?”

The entire contingent of Fei Li Empire officials gathered behind Cai Cai had their jaws agape upon hearing those words. In their eyes, it was already so unbelievable that they would receive this Heavenly Bow Empire contingent with such high honours, yet this youth who didn’t even look to be twenty years old actually dared say that their welcome was not good enough. That was utterly unfathomable!

In that instant, even Cai Cai’s expression turned ugly. Even asking herself, she felt that she treated Zhou Weiqing pretty well, but this little brat was acting up like this. If not for the fact that

she was in front of so many people, she really felt like asking Zhou Weiqing: “Damn little brat, are you here just to cause trouble?”

That officer who had walked out to scold Zhou Weiqing was totally stunned by his words. He had never expected Zhou Weiqing to reply so rudely and forcefully. His anger rose and he yelled in rage: “What is your Heavenly Bow Empire, a mere dead little Empire, let alone that Difuya isn’t Queen yet, even if she is, can she compare with our noble Princess? You still want our Emperor to receive her?” To be able to refrain from cursing, he was already showing considerable restraint.

Zhou Weiqing looked at him coldly and said: “May I know who you are?”

The general said proudly: “This general is the Fei Li Empire Royal Family Cavalry Troop Vice Commander, Shen Wang.”

Zhou Weiqing nodded towards him, then he lifted his hand along with the gold helmet he had taken off earlier. In a solemn tone, he said: “Vice Commander Shen, you have insulted my Empire. I challenge you to duel of mortal combat. Let us use our fresh blood to wash away that shame. Do you dare accept?”

Shen Wang was enraged, and he was just about to speak, but was stopped by a single gesture from Cai Cai. Looking at Zhou Weiqing and his unreasonable yet unyielding look, she couldn’t control herself any longer. Lowering her voice, she said solemnly: “Zhou Weiqing, did you come here just to cause trouble?!”

Zhou Weiqing said coldly: “What do you mean I come here to cause trouble? If someone insults your Empire, shouldn’t you retort or fight back? There is no mediating this. If he does not accept my challenge, we will not enter the city... and you all can be responsible for your own actions. Although our Heavenly Bow Empire might currently be occupied by others, that does not mean we will allow anyone else to insult us.”

“If you wish to fight, I am willing! Your Highness, please allow

me to teach this young upstart who doesn't know how high the sky is and how thick the earth is²." Shen Wang said angrily.

Currently, Princess Cai Cai was in a state like she didn't know whether to laugh or cry. In the history of the entire Mainland, she was sure that there had never been any diplomatic visit that started off with a fight before they even entered the door. If they actually started fighting outside the city gates, what would the ordinary citizens think?!

Cai Cai glared at Zhou Weiqing and said angrily: "Fine, if you want to fight, so be it. We shall do so in the drilling ground, not at the front of the city gates. It will cause too much trouble and chaos here."

This time, Zhou Weiqing did not insist. Without hesitation, he agreed: "Very well, the drilling ground is fine. Principal Cai Cai has always treated me well in the past, such face I will definitely give."

Cai Cai glared at him again, as if saying If you're giving me face then why are you causing trouble here?!

This disturbance resulted in the Heavenly Bow Empire contingent not even entering the Fei Li City, instead the whole group headed towards a drilling ground further out on the outskirts of the city.

The Fei Li City was the capital of the entire Fei Li Empire, and its importance was without question. Not only was it the center of its political might, it was also the center of its economic might. As such, there were a large number of elite troops stationed all around the Fei Li City in encampments not far off, and there were drilling grounds beyond each of the city gates. Of them all, the one to the south was the largest, with the one at the east the just slightly behind.

Escorted by the Royal Family Cavalry Troop, Cai Cai led the group of Fei Li officials while Zhou Weiqing led the Peerless Regiment soldiers directly towards the drilling ground. This was

also because Cai Cai was at the head of this entire contingent, otherwise it would not have been possible. She had been given full power over how to treat this current diplomatic party, and in the end she could do as she pleased without anyone questioning her. The actual Commander of the Royal Family Cavalry Troop was usually stationed at the Palace to guard the Royal Family, and only the Vice Commander Shen Wang was here escorting her. In fact, he actually belonged to her faction politically.

Cai Cai entered her own horse carriage, and Zhou Weiqing remounted his single-horned Ghost Demon Horse, moving alongside the carriage as they headed towards the drilling ground. All of a sudden, he heard Cai Cai's voice in his ear.

“Zhou Weiqing, what are you trying to do?” Cai Cai used her Heavenly Energy to do voice transference, not allowing anyone else to hear it.

Zhou Weiqing's expression remained impassive, and he also said in voice-transference: “I'm not trying to do anything in particular... I am only trying to get the respect that my Empire deserves, is that wrong?”

*TN: Regarding the title, it is a literal translation of 滚刀肉. Or meat that would cause a knife to roll off it while trying to cut it. Describing a person that is extremely tough to deal with / pain in the neck. ie. with unreasonable demands etc.

Previous ChapterNext Chapter

1. Literally 装十三, or 装13. Chinese internet slang where 13 looks like the english letter 'B' – equating to 装逼 (zhuang bi) which means acting cool/acting pretentious
2. Literal translation, basically means to not understand how the world works

Chapter 190 Three out of Five? (1)

Cai Cai said solemnly: “Zhou Weiqing, in the past, even before your Heavenly Bow Empire was destroyed, if your Emperor personally came to the Fei Li City, I would not even personally receive him. This time, I am already giving you a lot of face... What else do you want?”

Zhou Weiqing said passively: “You are not giving me face, you are giving the ZhongTian Empire face right? It is not what I want, but that for the current us, even this reception is not sufficient. Principal Cai Cai, when I was studying at the Fei Li Military Academy, you have always treated me well and given me many opportunities, and I truly do respect you. As such, I must inform you about something serious... please do not let your Fei Li Empire do something they will regret.”

Hearing Zhou Weiqing’s words, Cai Cai fell silent. She suddenly felt that Zhou Weiqing’s words were just so similar to what Ming Yu had said to her previously. Could it be that there was some connection between him and Ming Yu? That should not be possible... after all Ming Yu was from the Heavenly Demon Sect. This Zhou Weiqing already had some connection with the Heaven’s Expanse Palace, how could he possibly have any connection with the Heavenly Demon Sect?

There was nothing much left to be said, and Cai Cai subconsciously maintained her silence. Although she had been given control over the entire situation, there was a limit to it, and what Zhou Weiqing wanted was not something she could just decide on a whim. To have the Fei Li Emperor come out personally to receive them, that was nearly impossible. If the Fei Li Empire did that, wouldn’t it be tantamount to admitting weakness to the Heavenly Bow Empire?

The drilling ground was not far from the east gate, and both sides were mounted. Before long, they had reached it. Currently, the

entire drilling ground was empty, as some of the Royal Family Cavalry had ridden ahead to clear the zone. Under Shen Wang's command, besides those who had originally already been there to escort the diplomatic party, another five thousand of the Royal Family Cavalry Troops had also arrived there. If the Heavenly Bow Empire party attempted to do anything against the Fei Li Empire, he was confident that their numbers were sufficient to take care of them.

The Royal Family Cavalry troop was no ordinary army unit; for a soldier to enter such a formation, not only did they have an absolute clean background, their family had to be of Fei Li descent, and to be clean as well. More so, they had to have participated in the border wars against the WanShou Empire, to have achieved sufficient military awards before they even had the chance to be accepted. Even after that, there would be a series of very strict tests and training before one could finally become an official member of the Royal Family Cavalry troop. Amongst the entire Fei Li Military, they had the best pay and treatment, and could be said to be the finest elites amongst them. The entire Royal Family Cavalry troop consisted of fifty thousand warriors, and were the ace troops that were only under the command of the royal family.

The five thousand soldiers of the Royal Family Cavalry were arrayed in a formation around the drilling ground, split into five formations of a thousand men each, covering the four viewing stands and the center VIP platform, fully enclosing the entire area.

Towards this, Zhou Weiqing did not really care much. Cai Cai brought the other officials to the VIP stand, but Zhou Weiqing did not follow. Up until now, Princess Difuya had not left the carriage.

Naturally, Cai Cai could tell that Difuya was just a figurehead in this scene, and the true leader of this diplomatic party was Zhou Weiqing.

Shen Wang did not follow the Fei Li contingent up into the viewing stands, remaining at the bottom of the drilling ground. He

was mounted upon a tall, sturdy warhorse, his silver armour giving him a suave and noble air. His fierce gaze rested upon Zhou Weiqing. As the Vice Commander of the Royal Family Cavalry troop, it had been ages since he had been provoked like this. Towards Zhou Weiqing, he only felt a sense of disdain. A mere youth of less than twenty years of age, just because he had some strength, he actually dared to challenge me? He is virtually asking for death!

Zhou Weiqing jumped off his Ghost Demon Horse steed. Turning around, he took a long look at the large Heavenly Bow Empire flag swaying in the gentle winds. Taking a deep breath, he quietly reminded himself in his heart, his fists gripped tightly in resolution. It is time to begin the revival of my homeland!

Striding in large steps towards Shen Wang, Zhou Weiqing only stopped when he was about thirty yards from him. Extending his right hand, he made an inviting gesture.

Right at that moment, Cai Cai's voice rang out from the VIP stand. "Commander Zhou, you are after all here for a diplomatic visit, and since you are already here, it is not a fortuitous sign if blood is drawn. How about making this a duel about exchanging pointers. If you are really able to defeat Vice Commander Shen, I will get him to apologize to you, how about that?"

Zhou Weiqing looked towards the VIP stand and said arrogantly: "In that case, I will give this face to Your Highness. However, this Vice Commander Shen has insulted my Empire. If I win, he has to kowtow towards my Empire's flag when he apologizes."

Before Cai Cai could open her mouth, Shen Wang had already said coldly: "Fine. If you can defeat me, I will kowtow and apologize!" He was an old hand on the battlefield, and he could naturally tell that Zhou Weiqing was trying to rile him up. In such a case, he might as well just agree to his terms; not only could he present the generosity and bearing of a general of a large Empire, it would also show his absolute confidence in himself. In truth, he

did not think he would lose at all.

At last, a faint smile flashed across Zhou Weiqing's face. "Very good, simple and direct, I appreciate that." As he said that, Zhou Weiqing's hand slashed across the air, and the two triangles appeared in midair.

Being much older and stronger, Shen Wang would naturally not attack first. Especially since he was in front of Princess Cai Cai and so many other officials, how could he not want to show off? Towards Cai Cai, he had always harboured feelings towards her, but Ming Yu's performance in the military was just too outstanding, and he had never had a chance to display his own talents. However, just in terms of personal strength, Ming Yu was no match for him!

Although Shen Wang did not attack first, that did not mean he would be careless in front of Zhou Weiqing. After all, he was an experienced soldier. His nine sets of Heavenly Jewels appeared, glowing brilliantly as they swirled around his respective wrists.

The Physical Jewels on his right wrist were the same type as Zhou Weiqing's, the Icy Jade Jewels that denoted the Strength Attribute. As for the Elemental Jewels on his left wrist, they were the Tourmaline that denoted the Wind Attribute. A Wind and Strength Attribute Heavenly Jewel Master, at the nine-Jeweled stage. He truly had the strength and right to be confident and proud. It was no fluke that he was the Vice Commander of the Royal Family Cavalry troop, and it was not because of any special background that allowed him to advance to such a position. He had fought his way to this position, and it was his strength that allowed him to do so.

After releasing his Heavenly Jewels, Shen Wang could also see that Zhou Weiqing had also done the same, with his six sets of Heavenly Jewels. Around his right wrist, there were the six Icy Jade Jewels, the same type as his own. However, around Zhou Weiqing's left wrist, Shen Wang also saw six Tourmaline

Elemental Jewels of the Wind Attribute.

Naturally, this was due to the Ring of Concealment that Tang Xian, the mother of the three Shangguan Sisters, had given him in the past. Zhou Weiqing knew that the Fei Li Empire did not know much about his true power, most of them not even linking him to the Zhou Weiqing that had led the Fei Li Battle Team to victory in the Heavenly Jewel Tournament! As such, he would definitely seize any opportunity to mislead his opponent.

As Shen Wang saw that Zhou Weiqing was only at the six-Jeweled stage, the onlooking officials on the viewing platforms could also see it. For a time, looks of disdain, contempt and scorn filled their gazes as they looked at Zhou Weiqing, some even whispering to each other about how these young whippersnappers were reckless and foolish, asking for death!

Of course, whether or not Zhou Weiqing was foolish, asking for death, or not... one could only know after an actual fight. However, it was unfortunate that Shen Wang had also been fooled by Zhou Weiqing's outward appearance... just like he had expected.

Of all the Fei Li Empire onlookers, only Cai Cai frowned and furrowed her brow when she saw the six Jewels of Zhou Weiqing. She clearly remembered the time when Zhou Weiqing had led the Fei Li Battle Team to win the Heavenly Jewel Tournament years ago. At that time, his cultivation was only at the four-Jeweled stage... in fact most of the Tournament had been spent with him at the three-Jeweled stage!

Cai Cai was all too familiar how difficult the Heavenly Jewel Tournament was, and what kind of monsters of the younger generation they would face there. Those were all the finest elites of every single Empire, especially the cream of the crop of the younger generation in the Five Great Saint Lands. Under such a circumstance, the mere four-Jeweled Zhou Weiqing had still been able to create history and lead the Fei Li Battle Team to defeat all

these powerful opponents, bringing back the championship. Now, at the Six-Jeweled stage, how far had his power grown then? If he did not have any confidence, would he dare come here to cause trouble? To actually challenge Shen Wang?

Indeed, that little brat's cultivation speed was just too astonishing. It hadn't even been two years since he had left the Fei Li Empire, and his cultivation level had already jumped unbelievably, from four Jewels to six Jewels! That was totally shocking, almost unprecedented and unheard of in history! At this moment, Cai Cai was truly starting to believe Ming Yu's words. Coming into conflict with Zhou Weiqing was truly not a wise idea.

However, things had already developed to such a stage... and by now they had no choice but to fight first. Furthermore, even though Cai Cai had a very high opinion of Zhou Weiqing, she still did not see how it was possible that a six-Jeweled stage Zhou Weiqing could defeat the nine-Jeweled Vice Commander Shen Wang.

After all, as the cultivation stage of a Heavenly Jewel Master grew further and further, the gap was greater and greater! The difference between six Jewels and nine Jewels was far greater than four Jewels to six Jewels! Not to mention, Shen Wang was an experienced fighter in his own right even amongst the nine-Jeweled stage, otherwise how could he reach the rank of Vice Commander?

Shen Wang did not disappoint Cai Cai. Although he did not attack first, he did not wait to summon out his Consolidated Equipment.

The moment Shen Wang released all his Consolidated Equipment, Zhou Weiqing's mouth curled upwards in a hint of disdain. This was no longer him acting, but it was truly him looking down upon the Equipment. After all, do not forget the kind of people he had been mixing around with!

Without question, with Shen Wang's status in the Fei Li Empire, he would have all nine pieces of Consolidated Equipment for his nine Jewels. However, just from his Consolidated Equipment, one could tell how lacking the Fei Li Empire was in the profession of Consolidating Equipment Masters, and the lack of resources and actual Scrolls.

The nine Consolidated Equipment that Shen Wang was wearing were also Set Equipment, however they were three pieces per set, three sets in total, with some Socketed as well.

Amongst the three Sets, one was clearly crafted by a Zong Stage Consolidated Equipment Master, while the other two were just Grandmaster stage ones. Even so, from Shen Wang's expression, it was clear that he was extremely proud of his equipment. Indeed, in the Fei Li Empire, for a Upper Level Zong Stage to have such a gathering of Consolidated Equipment, it was already extremely good.

Although Shen Wang's Equipment was separated into three Consolidated Sets, it was already sufficient to cover most of his body protectively. Helmet, two shoulder pauldrons was a set. Chest, girdle and Kilt another Set. The final Set was the Zong Stage one, which included his weapon, a longsword, and the two greaves respectively. It appeared that this Set was not complete, probably lacking two combat boots. Of course, his cultivation level was far from reaching that. Indeed, for him to reach Heavenly Emperor Stage was highly unlikely, perhaps even impossible.

Looking at Shen Wang release all nine pieces of Consolidated Equipment without hesitation, Cai Cai secretly relaxed slightly, sighing in relief. Earlier, her words to Zhou Weiqing were undoubtedly to regain some goodwill, but it was also to tell Shen Wang not to underestimate Zhou Weiqing, but also not to kill him.

Chapter 190 Three Out Of Five? (2)

Zhou Weiqing did not release his own Consolidated Equipment. Instead, at the moment which Shen Wang unleashed his Consolidated Equipment, the two triangle formations in front of Zhou Weiqing stacked upon one another and fused together, forming his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation.

A strange light instantly burst out in an overpowering glow, and the six light hexagon settled into place below Zhou Weiqing's feet, which were now positioned right in the middle of the hexagon. As the light glowed below his feet, the shimmer of gold reflecting on his armour caused him to look like a god that had descended from the heavens. Just from outlook alone, Shen Wang had lost terribly.

A hexagon made of six lights?!

Looking at the strange formation of light, all the Fei Li Empire members present were stunned and puzzled. In fact, even most of the Heavenly Bow Empire side, besides Shangguan Xue'er and Tian'er, were just as puzzled.

What was that hexagon formation of lights? What did that mean? Why were there the six Elemental Jewels at each of the end peaks of the hexagon?

No one actually recognized it. After all, in the entire Fei Li Empire, no one was worthy of the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya to personally go and challenge him. Furthermore, the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation that Zhou Weiqing was using was his own customized version, and it was the first time it was on display for such a large number of people.

Although Shen Wang was surprised, but the longsword in his hands still pointed towards Zhou Weiqing, giving a gesture inviting him to attack first.

Zhou Weiqing smirked coldly. He was in no rush at all. Letting

me attack first? Trying to show how powerful you are? Well, if you want to act, I'll see how long you can act for!

Zhou Weiqing did not charge forward in attacking, instead a purple-red light began to gather above his head. You want to act right? Not attacking me first right? Fine, just wait then!

In the next instant, Shen Wang's expression changed, and he no longer dared to wait at all. The reason was simple, he could clearly see the illusory image of the massive Demonic Dragon Lady appearing above Zhou Weiqing's head.

As Zhou Weiqing's cultivation level had grown, the Heavenly Skill Image of the Demonic Dragon Lady had also grown clearly and more solid. The top half of an absolute beauty, and the bottom half of a serpent, both clearly defined like the legend of the naga of old. The purple-red light of the massive image painted the skies, causing the clouds to look different. The aura and pressure that Zhou Weiqing was giving out was even suppressing the nine-Jeweled Shen Wang!

Heavenly Skill Image?! Cai Cai almost exclaimed in shock. The next moment, she suddenly recalled Ye Paopao's description years ago. Indeed, Zhou Weiqing had used this very Skill two years back in the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, and it was this Skill that had allowed him to defeat the genius Zhan LingTian of the Heaven's Expanse Palace... snatching the final championship of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament for the Fei Li Battle Team!

However, even Ye Paopao did not fully understand what that Skill of Zhou Weiqing's was, or its effects... he could only say that it was definitely very powerful. At this moment, as Zhou Weiqing unleashed it, it could be said that the entire audience was shaken.

He dared not wait any longer. Naturally, Shen Wang could no longer care about face and wait for Zhou Weiqing to finish that move. He might not know exactly what Skill Zhou Weiqing was using, but it was without question that any Skill with a Heavenly

Skill Image was unbelievably strong. He might be at the nine-Jeweled stage, but he did not own any such powerful Skill! He did not come from a Great Saint Lands, and a Skill with a Heavenly Skill Image was not so easily gotten.

In a flash, Shen Wang had charged towards Zhou Weiqing, a thick green light bursting from his body, causing his speed to rise abruptly more than three times. The sword in his hands leading the way, he was like a bolt of lightning barrelling down at Zhou Weiqing.

Attacking first might be shameful for one of his age and status, but it was not as shameful as losing.

Seeing that Shen Wang had used a Skill, Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly. It was a Skill he was just too familiar with – the Silver Emperor Lightning Pierce from the Silver Emperor!

Even if he used his toenails to think, Zhou Weiqing could easily know that this Shen Wang should have Stored it from the Silver Emperor that had been in the Fei Li Heavenly Skill Palace, the same one he had Stored many of his own Skills from. Of course, that Silver Emperor had been set free by Tian'er later. It looked like this Shen Wang had succeeded pretty early on!

The distance between the two was barely thirty yards, and with the speed from the Silver Emperor Lightning Pierce, Shen Wang reached Zhou Weiqing almost instantly. He could still remember Princess Cai Cai's warning, and he did not try to go for any killing blow, striking out at Zhou Weiqing's left shoulder.

Facing such a blow from Shen Wang, Zhou Weiqing did not even bother dodging. In an almost instant reaction, he shocked the entire audience once more. Five bouts of dark-gold light sprang into place around him, like waves of light expelling out from his body.

The Silver Emperor Lightning Pierce was an extremely powerful Skill, and with Shen Wang's cultivation level and that

Consolidated Sword, he should be able to break through Zhou Weiqing's Consolidating Equipment God Protective Aura. However, that was if it were only a single Consolidating Equipment God Protective Aura. Currently, Zhou Weiqing did not hesitate to unleash five at once, how could he possibly break through them all?!

In the audience's eyes, all they saw was Shen Wang charging towards Zhou Weiqing at breakneck speed, and in the next instant, light sprang up around Zhou Weiqing, and Shen Wang bounced off it and was sent flying back. As for Zhou Weiqing, he remained standing in place impassively, equipment appearing around his body.

The Refined Gold armour seemed to have disappeared somehow, to an unknown place, and Zhou Weiqing was instead in an ordinary cloth attire. In his hands, there were two immense warhammers, gleaming dark gold gauntlets tipped with scary looking claws, extending all the way up to his arms and shoulders until the thick dark-gold Heart Mirror that drew everyone's attention, glowing with chilling light. The dark-gold would continue spreading all the way to his waist before it stopped. All around his body, a powerful Heavenly Energy fluctuation burst forth.

The hammer in his right hand pointed forward, and an array of purple-red light flew out from the crying-face hammer, chasing right towards Shen Wang who had been thrown back from the impact earlier.

Although Zhou Weiqing needed time to unleash his Dragon Silencing Seal, it was already much faster than previously. Added to the fact that Shen Wang had spent some time waiting, and the delay of his own Consolidating Equipment God Protective Aura, it was enough time for Zhou Weiqing to finish completing it.

The purple-red light instantly caught up to Shen Wang's body, enveloping him in it. The Absolute Effect that it was meant he had

no chance of evading it, and under the gaze of the thousand onlookers, Shen Wang's nine Consolidated Equipment vanished like snow in the summer sun. Above his head, a strange purple-red symbol rotated slowly.

Zhou Weiqing's eyes also turned a similar purple-red. However, he did not chase forward to strike, instead both his hammers pointed at Shen Wang. In an instant, thousands of blue Lightning Pearls appeared in the air, forming a web of lightning pearls which flew towards Shen Wang, surrounding him.

The instant Shen Wang had been hit by the Dragon Silencing Seal, he had been given such a huge fright that he paled instantly. He had never imagined that Zhou Weiqing's Skill would be so overbearing, instantly crippling all his Skills and Consolidated Equipment! Although he could guess that this situation should not last long, but as a Heavenly Jewel Master so used to his Consolidated Equipment, in a short period of time it was very hard for him to adjust. As his feet struck the ground and he retreated backwards, he suddenly saw the blanket of lightning pearls cover the skies around him.

Shen Wang did live up to his rank as the Fei Li Royal Family Cavalry Vice Commander. Facing such a vastly unfavourable scenario, he did not panic. Both his hands circled in motion, and a thick Heavenly Energy reverberation appeared, forming a thick layer of faint white light around his body.

His Heavenly Energy cultivation level had already reached the maximum of the Heavenly Xu Stage. Although it was still far from reaching the Heavenly Dao Energy, it was clear that his total Energy was already beyond that Upper Level Zong Stage Master that Zhou Weiqing had faced long ago, Ming Yu's father Ming Wu!

Explosions started to ring as Zhou Weiqing's lightning pearls began to smash into the shield of white light.

In Shen Wang's eyes, Zhou Weiqing should have been a Wind

Attribute Heavenly Jewel Master! However, when the lightning pearls exploded, he realised he had been fooled. However, even as he realised he had been tricked, he did not know how or what happened.

The strength of the Lightning Attribute was in its explosive offensive power, and those lightning pearls that Zhou Weiqing had summoned was under his fine control through the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, allowing him to channel out as much Lightning Attribute Heavenly Energy as possible at once. With the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation's powerful control and regenerative rate, those lightning pearls were not so easily taken on.

One... two... even ten lightning pearls would not be able to hurt Shen Wang at all. However, the current Shen Wang was after all unable to use any Skills or Consolidated Equipment. It could be said he was fully in Zhou Weiqing's battle rhythm.

Both were at the nine-Jeweled stage, and in terms of Heavenly Energy cultivation level, Shen Wang was even higher than the Lion Prince Gu Site. However, if one would compare both their total strengths, he was far far far from Gu Site. Even the Lion Prince had not been able to gain an advantage over Zhou Weiqing, let alone Shen Wang!

Several hundred lightning pearls surrounded him from all directions almost simultaneously, and the terrifying explosions rang out one after the other in unison.

Shen Wang channeled his Heavenly Energy with all his might to protect himself, but every single lightning pearl explosion would take over some Heavenly Energy. Let us not speak of counterattacking; in this series of massive explosions, both his body and hearing were greatly affected, as if he were a tiny little boat floating in the vast ocean, being smashed around by the waves of the lightning pearls, tossing and turning around turbulently.

Ever since Zhou Weiqing had completed training in this ‘Flying Lightning God Technique’ of his, this was only the second time he had ever used it in actual combat. The first time was naturally against Shangguan Xue’er. Of course, Shangguan Xue’er had broken it apart the first time with her Boundless Infinitum Sword, but upon the second time even with her supreme sword skills, she had not been able to take them too easily. Let alone now for Shen Wang, without his Skills and Consolidated Equipment!

The most shocking thing to the audience was actually Zhou Weiqing himself. In their eyes, they could all still see him standing there simply. Since the fight had started, he had not even moved a step, and all he had done was to lift his hammer and point twice. Even now, his hammers were still pointed forward, lightning pearls still swarming out of them crazily!

In those officials’ eyes, Shen Wang was extremely powerful, yet currently in the midst of the ‘Flying Lightning God Technique’, he was barely hanging on, as if on the verge of collapse. Anyone could see that Zhou Weiqing clearly had the upper hand, but perhaps more terrifying was the fact that no one could understand how Zhou Weiqing was winning.

Wasn’t that just too powerful? That’s crazy! Similar thoughts appeared in every single onlooker. However, at that very instant, all of them were struck speechless.

Chapter 190 Three Out Of Five? (3)

All of a sudden, Shen Wang sensed his body feeling lighter. At once, he understood that the restriction on his Consolidated Equipment and Stored Skills was about to end!

He had held on for so long just for this chance, and though his Heavenly Energy was almost used up more than seventy percent, the opportunity had finally arrived. In his eyes, though Zhou Weiqing was currently in an advantageous position, but for a six-Jeweled stage Heavenly Jewel Master to continuously attack for so long, his Heavenly Energy should be drained as much or even more than his own. He might have been humiliated previously, but the chance for winning had come!

In fact, as Shen Wang felt the pressure upon him lessen, it was because all the lightning pearls attacking him had stopped for a moment. However, a temporary stop did not mean that they had disappeared.

The current Dragon Silencing Seal timing was one minute, and towards such a timing, how could Zhou Weiqing make a mistake?

Hope had just sparked in Shen Wang, but when he saw the sight before him, his heart sank in despair.

The halt of attacks from the lightning pearls was because they were actually gathering together, pressing close to each other. In that short period of time, another several hundred lightning pearls had coalesced into existence. This time, as compared to all the previous attacks, all the lightning pearls swarmed together as one, striking out at every single portion of his body at once in a final simultaneous strike.

Another massive explosion. Shen Wang's body shuddered violently, and turned a burned charcoal black. Originally, the beautiful silver armour had been kept when he had released his Consolidated Equipment, and he hadn't had the time to wear it

back. Currently, his clothes were pretty much in shreds, and his beautiful locks of golden hair were all frizzled and burned. In the mass of explosions, he was blown back almost five metres before landing heavily on the ground.

Zhou Weiqing did not continue attacking, twirling the Dual Legendary Hammers in his hands before turning in a suave, smooth motion. Acting cool indeed! ¹

Compared to Zhou Weiqing's acting cool, currently Princess Cai Cai's expression was very interesting. She was not vexed or depressed at all; she was not that shallow, and this minor setback was nothing in her eyes. Instead, what were in her eyes was pure shock. Indeed, utter shock.

Nine Jewels versus Six Jewels, yet it was as if he he did not have a chance at all, losing before he could even display his own strength. It was truly a tragic loss, not even able to force his opponent to take a single step. What kind of power gap was that?

Zhou Weiqing was feeling his own 'Flying Lightning God Technique' more and more, especially as he grew more familiar with using it in combat. Ever since he fought with Shangguan Xue'er, the more he liked the idea of focusing on training a Skill to the utmost. With his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, he could easily mimic any Skill and transmute energy between each Heavenly Energy Attribute. However, each and every Attribute has its own unique characteristics, and there are definitely differences in manipulating them well. In order to boost his current combat ability, to improve his current control, Zhou Weiqing decided to temporarily give up practicing his control of the other five Attributes while in the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, fully concentrating on the 'Flying Lightning God Technique'.

In truth, he had already been on this path even before fighting against Shangguan Xue'er, but it had just affirmed his notions. After all, even if in the future he had more Heavenly Energy to

start Fusing his own multiple-Attribute Skills, by training his control of the 'Flying Lightning God Technique', it would also help in his future control (as long as Lightning was part of the Fusion).

The silence was deafening. Perhaps more accurately, the entire audience was dumbfounded, especially the group of Fei Li officials who were staring with their jaws agape.

Zhou Weiqing walked slowly towards Shen Wang who was lying on the ground. At that moment, Cai Cai's voice rang out urgently: "Commander Zhou, please spare him."

Zhou Weiqing lifted his head to look at Cai Cai on the VIP stage before smiling as he said: "Your Highness, please do not worry. Since I have already agreed it is just a duel, I naturally will not kill him. Furthermore, I am still waiting for his apology. Tian'er."

Instantly, Tian'er understood what he meant, and a faint gold light shimmered around her hands. From her seat to where Shen Wang was lying, it was at least forty yards away, but the gold light just flew across without any problems, landing accurately upon him. A thick divine aura formed a circle of light around Shen Wang's body, and his unconscious body started twitching before he actually roused up.

Shen Wang was after all a nine-Jeweled Upper level Zong Stage Heavenly Jewel Master. Although his defenses had been breached and overwhelmed by the mass explosions of numerous lightning pearls, his inner muscles, bones were all sturdy, and his injuries were not too deep. It was just that his Heavenly Energy had all been used up, and he was unable to continue fighting any longer.

As soon as he woke up, Shen Wang immediately saw Zhou Weiqing standing right in front of him.

Waah Shen Wang vomited out a mouthful of blood; not because of any injury, but because he was totally ashamed and embarrassed, wishing a pit would open in the ground and swallow him up.

In front of his goddess that he secretly loved, in front of all those officials, even in front of so many of his subordinates... he had actually lost to Zhou Weiqing, a mere six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master. More so, he had lost so terribly, his opponent not even moving a step before winning. The word 'shame' was not enough to describe his current feelings.

Zhou Weiqing did not say a word, instead pointing to the flag behind him before looking at Shen Wang. His meaning was clear – 'You have lost, please fulfill your promise.'

Shen Wang grit his teeth, enduring the massive pain on his body as he slowly stood up, looking at Zhou Weiqing as his face twitched. Finally, he sighed, lifting his right hand, gathering the final remnants of his Heavenly Energy into his palm, and in a lightning strike his palm slammed towards his own head.

As the Vice Commander of the Royal Family Cavalry troop, he represented the honour and dignity of his own Fei Li Empire. If he were to kneel and kowtow to the Heavenly Bow Empire flag like in the bet, it would not just be a mere representation of himself, but the entire Fei Li Empire. As such, he would rather choose to die for his Empire than to kneel.

Right at that moment, Shen Wang's body froze in place. His hand had already reached his head, but did not manage to land finally. He heard Zhou Weiqing laughing at the side before he said: "Bro Shen is a staunch man with strong morals indeed, a man of sentiment and emotions."

"However, it is not necessary to die for your Empire. After all, our Heavenly Bow Empire is still a friendly ally of the Fei Li Empire, it was only because Bro Shen insulted my Empire earlier that I had no choice but to fight for honour. Regarding the bet, let us call it off, but I hope that Bro Shen can please choose your words carefully next time." Zhou Weiqing said generously as he pulled Shen Wang's hand away from his own head; at the same time, he used the Devour Skill to drain away the last bit of

Heavenly Energy.

Shen Wang couldn't help but clench his teeth as he looked at Zhou Weiqing's smiling face. That fellow had acted as both the bad guy, then the good guy. Now, it even seemed as if he was the one who caused trouble, and Zhou Weiqing was the generous fellow who forgave him!

At this point, Cai Cai had already personally come down from the VIP Stand, leading the group of officials to quickly come before Zhou Weiqing. Currently, her expression resumed its usual calm; not only was she not angry, she had a look of gratitude on her face. Smiling gently at Zhou Weiqing, she said: "Many thanks to Commander Zhou for showing mercy. We have indeed lost this round, and I represent General Shen to apologise for his previous remarks to your Empire." As she said that, she bowed slightly towards the Heavenly Bow Empire flag.

"Your Highness!" Shen Wang knelt down in a loud thudding sound before Cai Cai, his face filled with shame.

Cai Cai laughed heartily, supporting him up as she said: "General, your loss is not because of your own cultivation level. Please do not make light of your own life in the future, our Empire still needs to depend on General to defend us."

Zhou Weiqing was standing opposite Cai Cai, and as he looked at this Princess, he couldn't help but feel his heart grip tightly. With just a few simple words, Cai Cai had totally reversed the terrible situation that they had been in. Not only did she not lose any pride from this, she showed the generosity of an Empire, also sealing any other possible avenues for Zhou Weiqing to continue on those lines. More so, she had taken the opportunity to further affirm Shen Wang's loyalty. It could be said that she had killed many birds with a single stone!

As expected, Shen Wang's face was filled with gratitude, his gaze towards Cai Cai almost fanatic, as if he would be willing to die for

her anytime.

Princess Cai Cai, she is truly formidable indeed! Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but praise her in his heart, but also felt wary at the same time.

Shen Wang retreated to the side, and Cai Cai's gaze naturally landed upon Zhou Weiqing as she said in praise: "I never expected that Commander Zhou would give me such a good surprise after more than a year. Today, we have been rash and hasty indeed. Well, would Commander Zhou be interested in making a bet with me?"

Zhou Weiqing started momentarily. All along, it had always been him asking others to bet with him, and this time, Cai Cai was actually the one to take the initiative to do so. Along with Cai Cai's previous series of actions, he couldn't help but be on the guard.

"Your Highness, what kind of bet are you looking to make?"

Cai Cai smiled faintly and said: "No matter the relationship between humans or between Empires, power has always been an important factor. How about our two Empires hold a simple friendly competition, five rounds, and whoever wins three rounds will be the victor. Just now, that would be considered the first round, and you have won. If in the end, the victor is the Heavenly Bow Empire, then I will immediately return to the Palace and request for His Majesty to receive your Empire's diplomatic party with the highest honours. However, if we are lucky enough to win, then I would invite Commander Zhou to take the difficult task of inviting Princess Difuya to enter the Fei Li City together with me. Commander Zhou, what do you think?"

Cai Cai's words were indeed skillful. On the surface, to the Heavenly Bow Empire, no matter winning or losing, there was no actual loss to them. If they won, they could even gain more honour, and even if they lost, it didn't seem like any big loss. This bet fully displayed Cai Cai's generosity and the grand display of the

Fei Li Empire as one of the great Empires.

However, in truth, if they really lost this bet, then in this diplomatic visit and in the upcoming negotiations, the Heavenly Bow Empire would be at a big disadvantage. In such a case, no matter what Cai Cai was discussing with Zhou Weiqing, she would be able to play a leading role. At the same time, she was able to use this ‘three out of five’ competition to erase the dejected feelings that any of their side might be feeling, and seize the opportunity to suppress the Heavenly Bow Empire.

Zhou Weiqing asked impassively: “What, and how, would the next four rounds be then, Your Highness?”

Cai Cai laughed heartily and said: “Very simple, the current round’s losing side will propose the next round’s competing rules, so on so forth, until one side wins three.”

If not for the current subtle and tricky relations between both sides, Zhou Weiqing really wanted to give Cai Cai a big thumbs up. She was truly impressive! With just a few words, not only did she turn a disadvantageous situation into a strong opportunity for her side to gain the advantage, greatly lowering the victory gains that Zhou Weiqing had already won. This Princess Cai Cai was extraordinary indeed, no wonder she had risen to her status and rank from the rest of the Royal Family.

After a moment of thought, Zhou Weiqing nodded, Smiling at Cai Cai, he said: “Very well, as Your Highness says. Please set our next round topic then.”

Previous ChapterNext Chapter

1. I can't help but be reminded of this – <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Sqz5db5zmo>

Chapter 191 Fei Li God General! (1)

“After weighing the balance, Zhou Weiqing had finally agreed. He had absolute confidence in himself, his companions and his own Peerless Battalion. Such confidence came from strength, and Zhou Weiqing believed that even if they had to go through this ‘three out of five’ competition, especially with a victory in hand, they could not possibly lose. Furthermore, so what if they really lost? Would they really be that disadvantaged in the negotiations? That would also have to see who was on the other end. After all, do not forget what our dear Zhou Little Fatty was best at? Would he really care too much about the winning or losing of this current bet?

Cai Cai was also looking at Zhou Weiqing. Just like how Zhou Weiqing felt a sense of high respect and esteem for her, she had also a fresh new appraisal of the youth in front of her. From the start of Cai Cai’s performance in turning the tide, Zhou Weiqing had stood there without any movement, just silently watching her as if he were just a bystander, as if he did not care about any of this.

As she spoke, Cai Cai had kept her focus on Zhou Weiqing’s eyes, but she was quickly disappointed. She was totally unable to read anything within them. Indeed, nothing at all. There was only a gentle smiling intent in there, as if he was reuniting with an old friend. Towards that previous victory, there was no pride or arrogance, as if it was just an ordinary thing for a six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master like himself to defeat a nine-Jeweled powerhouse.

More and more, Cai Cai was starting to ratify Ming Yu’s judgement. This Zhou Weiqing was truly not any ordinary person. Was he really less than twenty years of age?!

However, this was clearly not the time to think too deeply into things. After a short time pondering, Cai Cai showed an apologetic

look, saying: “For the sake of the Empire’s honour, I might have to let Commander Zhou suffer some slight trouble. Principal Huo Feng, would you please?” As she spoke, she inclined her body slightly, making an inviting gesture to her back.

A tall and thin old man walked out slowly towards Cai Cai’s side, bowing slightly. He smiled faintly as he said: “I’m happy to be of service, Your Highness.”

Cai Cai laughed heartily and said: “You flatter me, we are all working for the glory of the Empire. I had no choice but to invite Principal to intervene, please forgive me.”

Seeing this person, Zhou Weiqing was startled in his heart. He knew that Cai Cai was going all out now. This old man in front of him did not seem to have much Heavenly Energy reverberations around him, but the instant that he had appeared, Zhou Weiqing had sensed a powerful threat. This was not a person he could handle alone... which could only mean one thing... this old man called Huo Feng was a Heavenly King Stage powerhouse!

Zhou Weiqing had not imagined that in the welcoming party of Princess Cai Cai, there would be someone like this here. In an instant, a wary look entered his eyes, but he did not have any notion of backing down.

Cai Cai nodded apologetically to Zhou Weiqing and said: “Commander Zhou, in this second round, we will be sending Principal Huo Feng to act on our behalf. You should have heard of Principal Huo Feng right, he is in charge of the Fei Li Heavenly Jewel Academy.”

Hearing the introduction, only then did Zhou Weiqing understand. So this old man was actually the Principal of the Heavenly Jewel Academy... that was to say, he was Xiao Yan and Lin TianAo’s teacher! No wonder his presence was so strong. In that moment, Zhou Weiqing’s brow furrowed, and he turned to look at Lin TianAo.

Both Lin TianAo and Xiao Yan's face were strange, and they exchanged looks momentarily before stepping forward. Stopping behind Zhou Weiqing, they bowed towards Huo Feng.

Xiao Yan said respectfully: "Teacher."

Lin TianAo also greeted him with Principal. As the two of them bowed, naturally the aura and momentum of Zhou Weiqing's side dropped, while for the Fei Li Empire's side, though they had dropped previously from Shen Wang's loss, a large amount was regained.

This Cai Cai must have done this on purpose! That was Zhou Weiqing's first thought. His thoughts were indeed true; after all, how could Cai Cai not know Lin TianAo and Xiao Yan's origin? Furthermore, ever since Zhou Weiqing and the Fei Li Battle Team had achieved victory in the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, Cai Cai had researched them all closely. Currently, sending out Huo Feng was a way of savagely beating down on the Heavenly Bow Empire's morale.

Huo Feng swept his gaze past the two of them before saying passively: "I am not worthy of such greetings. Since you both have already chosen to join the Heavenly Bow Empire, you are no longer part of the Fei Li Empire. The title of teacher, I am no longer worthy of it."

Lin TianAo was still fine; after all he had not been personally taught by Huo Feng. However, for Xiao Yan, upon hearing such words, he instantly knelt down on the ground, his head down as he was unable to say anything.

A cold light flashed in Zhou Weiqing's eyes, but he did not blame Lin TianAo or Xiao Yan. As the saying goes, one day as a Master, forever like a Father. If he were in their shoes, he would react the same way.

After a pause, Zhou Weiqing sighed and said: "For this round, we admit defeat."

Hearing Zhou Weiqing's words, Cai Cai smiled faintly, an expression of 'as should be the case' flashing across her face. Nodding to Zhou Weiqing, she said: "Very well, then for the third round, Commander Zhou please direct us."

Zhou Weiqing looked at Cai Cai coldly. Although he wanted to call her despicable, but in the end he did not say anything. This was after all a tactic, and if they could win, then it was a good tactic. In a clash between Empires, there was nothing more important than winning, and he knew that very well.

Without any hesitation, Zhou Weiqing smiled and said: "Very well, for this third round, I would like to learn from your Empire regarding a clash between armies. As Your Highness has seen, we have seven hundred soldiers here with us in our party. How about you all send out seven hundred troops and we can have a good group fight? Of course, it will just be a duel, and we can cover all our weapons with thick cloth to ensure no serious injuries. We'll see who can knock out more opponents to decide the victor. What do you think?"

Similarly, Cai Cai did not hesitate to agree, instantly nodding as she said: "Very well, then we shall meet again on the drilling ground. However, it will take some time for us to prepare that many thick cotton cloths. Commander Zhou, you and your soldiers can have a rest first. Once we prepare everything, we can begin the third round."

As both sides separated for the time being, Cai Cai returned to the VIP Stage. Once she was seated again, she immediately turned to one of her personal guards and said solemnly: "Quick, go invite General Ming Yu here, ask him to bring his personal guard."

"Yes Ma'am!"

As for Zhou Weiqing, he returned to the Peerless Battalion side. Lin TianAo and Xiao Yan had their heads down, a shamed look on their faces. They knew that it was for their sakes that Zhou

Weiying had admitted defeat.

It was still relatively okay for Xiao Yan; after all, in his eyes, although Zhou Weiying was strong, but a Heavenly King Stage was a huge difference from a Upper Level Zong Stage. He did not think that Zhou Weiying could defeat a Heavenly King stage powerhouse right?

However, Lin TianAo knew that for the second round, they definitely had a chance to win. For the Fei Li Empire to send out a Heavenly King Stage powerhouse, they could definitely respond with not just a single person, to make it a fair fight. If Zhou Weiying, Tian'er and Shangguan Xue'er joined forces against Principal Huo Feng, or even just two of them, it would not be easy to tell who would end up the final victor.

Zhou Weiying gathered his officers to him, saying solemnly: "In this next round, we can only win. Try not to kill anyone, as long as we win it is fine. This time, I will personally command the soldiers."

Everyone quickly agreed, especially Lin TianAo and Xiao Yan. Their eyes were filled with resolution. They had been the cause of the previous loss, and this time, they would want to make up for that loss.

After speaking to his soldiers for a while and encouraging them simply for morale, Zhou Weiying sat to the side, lapsing deep into thought. Towards this third round, he was absolutely confident in victory. Let alone the Fei Li Empire, even if the ZhongTian Empire wanted to find a group of seven hundred who could defeat the seven hundred elite soldiers he had with him, it would be extremely difficult. Towards this second victory, he was determined to get it.

However, the key was the final two rounds, and that was what he was pondering about. If they won this third round, then the fourth round would be determined by their opponent. If they lost that

round, then the fifth round would once again fall to his choice. In that case, what could he use that would be a guaranteed victory?

As he thought up to that point, Zhou Weiqing subconsciously looked back at his own camp. All of a sudden, a strange smile appeared on his lips.

After Cai Cai returned to the VIP stage, she had also ordered her men to start preparing a large number of thick cloths. At the same time, she also lapsed into thought. Without question, it was regarding this current 'three out of five' competition. This third round could be said to be the most important round. After all, since Zhou Weiqing had won the first round, he had a competitive advantage. However, if they could actually seize the third round instead, the advantage would be theirs.

He has chosen a group fight... clearly he has much confidence in his seven hundred soldiers. However, even if they are from the ZhongTian Empire, so what? Ming Yu's personal guards have gone through hell and back, climbing out from piles of dead bodies. Added on to the fact that it was the Fei Li God General personally commanding them, she could not believe a youth like Zhou Weiqing without much battlefield experience could possibly win.

After all, Zhou Weiqing had never been known for his strategy and tactics... even when he was studying in the Fei Li Military Academy, he had not participated much in classes...

However, just like how Ming Yu had appraised Zhou Weiqing when he first met him, although in terms of specific tactics or strategy Zhou Weiqing was not outstanding, but he had a quality no one else could match. An unbelievably acute senses, judgement and a soaring imagination that was wild and unmatched.

It was exactly because of this unique quality that had allowed him to build such a force like the Peerless Battalion in less than two years!

As orders were given out, Zhou Weiqing's expression was relaxed

and easy going. If the Peerless Battalion could lose to a mere fight against equal odds, then he could just give up on trying to revive his Empire now. Furthermore, no matter what tactics or strategy, facing absolute strength, what use was it? So what if he was not well versed in those traditional strategies and tactics? As long as he knew how to flourish their own strength, that was more than sufficient.

...

Almost an hour passed before the large number of cloths had been gathered and sent to the drilling ground. At the same time, a large troop of soldiers had also silently entered the zone, arraying into formation under the cover of the Royal Family Cavalry.

Chapter 191 Fei Li God General! (2)

However, Zhou Weiqing's senses were extremely keen. As soon as the troop entered the drilling ground, he had already discovered them. Furthermore, he could clearly sense a thick smell of blood on these new soldiers.

Indeed, it was the smell of blood. Every troop of soldiers had their own unique qualities, and this quality aura was very connected to their first commander and his character.

Just take Zhou Weiqing's Peerless Battalion for example, it was full of a roguish air, almost mercenary in nature. Utilizing profits and Zhou Weiqing's instigations, no matter what enemies they faced, they would charge without fear. This was something that had developed under Zhou Weiqing's influence. No matter that Zhou Weiqing seldom trained the soldiers personally, but as the commander of the Peerless Battalion, the one who came up with all the rules and regulations, his actions and words would greatly influence the entire troop.

This troop that had just arrived was also the same. Although their numbers were low, only about a thousand men in total, the sheer killing intent and smell of blood around them was enough to strike fear in any ordinary soldiers' hearts. Without question, this was an elite force that had been forged in the flames of battle, clambering up from a hill of corpses and sea of blood. Their commander was after all a daring and bloodthirsty general.

After making such a judgement, a cold smile crossed Zhou Weiqing's lips. He thought to himself: This Principal Cai Cai is trying to suppress me with aura and momentum! However, can she really succeed?

Those fellows might have the aura of blood around them, but I have the lure of money. Just a while ago, Zhou Weiqing had proclaimed a good reward to all his Peerless Battalion soldiers if

they achieved a victory, a gold coin each. Although it was not a large amount; after all it was just seven hundred gold coins for seven hundred men, but in the Peerless Battalion warriors' eyes, seven hundred versus seven hundred was tantamount to giving them a free gift of a gold coin each! Zhou Weiqing's only request to them was that they were not allowed to use their Consolidated Bow and Wings.

As for their strategy and tactics, Zhou Weiqing had already arranged it earlier. All they had to do now was to wait for everything to be prepared.

Very quickly, all the thick cloths had been prepared and sent over. Under Zhou Weiqing's direction, all the Peerless Battalion soldiers began to wrap their weapons with the cloth. On the VIP Stage, another person appeared. It was Ming Yu.

Today, Ming Yu was dressed in a dark-red scale armour, which was adorned with spikes in many areas. In the distance, he almost looked like a huge porcupine, but once anyone got close to him, the scent of blood around him was more than enough to cause anyone to quail. As he walked up the VIP stage, most of the officials started to scatter aside, distancing themselves from him.

Besides the nickname of God General, amongst the Fei Li upper echelons, Ming Yu had another nickname: God of Slaughter!

As Ming Yu walked up to the VIP Stage, it was clear that his brow was furrowed. When he saw Princess Cai Cai, his expression was not joyful at all. Removing his helmet, he walked up to her and bowed deeply, saying: "Ming Yu greets Your Highness."

"General, no need for such formalities."

Cai Cai quickly said as she supported him up. She waved her hands, ordering her attendants to clear out, leaving the two alone.

"I remember I told you not to provoke that Zhou Weiqing, why are you all fighting now?!" Ming Yu asked questioningly as soon as

they were alone.

Cai Cai smiled bitterly and said: “It is not that I went to provoke him, but he was the one who started causing trouble... what other choice did I have?” As such, she explained everything that had happened since the Heavenly Bow Empire diplomatic party had arrived.

Hearing Cai Cai’s words, Ming Yu’s brow furrowed even further. Cai Cai continued: “That little brat is clearly here to show off, he wants to use it as an opportunity to gain the advantage during negotiations, so that we have to give in more during the negotiations. I’m sure you can see that as well... but his requests are just too much. Although he has the support of the ZhongTian Empire, but even if the Heavenly Bow Empire were at full strength, they would never dare ask our Emperor to come receive them. I had no choice but to accept his provocation, thus resulting in this bet. Currently, both sides are now equal, but this next round is of critical importance towards who can gain the final victory, or at least have the upper hand in doing so. Ming Yu, I will have to depend on you for this.”

A cold light flashed in Ming Yu’s eyes, but as he looked at Cai Cai’s pleading eyes, he couldn’t help but shake his head and give a bitter smile: “I can only try my best. Since you have already called me here, can I not go to battle? I’ll get my personal guards to bind their weapons with the cloth then.”

Upon hearing his words, Cai Cai was extremely surprised. “Against Zhou Weiqing, do you not have any confidence? He did not even study for long in our Fei Li Military Academy, he shouldn’t be that good in command or tactics!”

Ming Yu looked at her meaningfully for a moment before saying: “Empty words are useless. I have already said everything I needed to tell you previously, but you did not listen to me. You shall see for yourself, he will prove my words to you with his own strength. Of course, you do not need to worry, I will use everything I have to

try to defeat him, that is because I am also curious to see what level this little brat has actually reached, to test myself against him. One last thing I must remind you... What sort of existence is the ZhongTian Empire? The Heaven's Expanse Palace? Just think clearly... if this Zhou Weiqing does not have something that impresses them or qualities they admire, do you think they will waste time supporting him? To actually make the effort to send word to the Fei Li Empire, to go through all the trouble just to revive that Heavenly Bow Empire? Why is that so? Although that little rascal is still young, he is far more complicated than you can ever imagine. You are truly underestimating him far too much."

After speaking those words, Ming Yu drew his black cape around him before turning to leave.

Standing there, Cai Cai's eyes were filled with shock. She was an intelligent person, and having been warned a second time by Ming Yu, she instantly thought of many things. Alas, the situation was already in motion, and they were like an arrow nocked on a bowstring, with no choice but to be shot out. She could only continue with this bet. Originally, her heart that had been filled with confidence was now truly shaken.

The Royal Family Cavalry troop parted, and slowly a group of warriors dressed in black armour walked to the center of the drilling ground.

The moment they entered, all the Peerless Battalion soldiers who had been lazing around on the ground suddenly perked up. These fellows from the First Main Company were all soldiers who had been surviving on countless battlefields, and as their opponent appeared, they could instantly judge how strong they were. Such a thick scent of blood and killing intent, they immediately sensed that the boring fight that they thought they would have to go through was going to be interesting indeed. Of course, it was just interesting, not even dangerous!

Dressed in his dark red armour, Ming Yu was mounted upon his

steed at the front of his troop. To Zhou Weiqing's surprise, Ming Yu's war steed was exactly the same as his own, a single-horned Ghost Demon Horse, and shockingly, the seven hundred cavalry soldiers behind him were all mounted on Ghost Demon Horses! This as the Cavalry troop that Zhou Weiqing had originally wanted to form! He had not imagined that Ming Yu had already beaten him to it.

Ming Yu did not wear a helmet, and thus Zhou Weiqing instantly recognized this Fei Li God General. Upon seeing his appearance, Zhou Weiqing also felt his heart grip with wariness and respect. As the saying goes, a man's reputation was like a tree's shadow ¹, for Ming Yu to be able to lead the Fei Li Empire armies to withstand the WanShou Empire armies, he was truly an outstanding military genius.

Zhou Weiqing had personally witnessed the strength and power of the WanShou Empire forces, and he knew that it was difficult for any ordinary human army to achieve victory over such powerful forces. However, he had gotten news that in the past few years, the Fei Li Empire's border war losses were actually even lesser than the ZhongTian Empire's. What did that prove? It showed that the Fei Li Empire was actually more than holding its own against the WanShou Empire! Of course, there was also the factor that the WanShou Empire focused more resources on the ZhongTian side, but at the same time, how could the Fei Li armies compare with the ZhongTian Empire armies? No matter what, the facts proved that Ming Yu truly lived up to his name.

As such, Zhou Weiqing would not underestimate Ming Yu at all, especially since he was leading such a troop of Ghost Demon Horse cavalry!

Nudging his horse with his foot, Zhou Weiqing rode forth all the way until he was about thirty yards from Ming Yu before stopping.

As he drew closer to Ming Yu's troop, the more Zhou Weiqing

could sense that inherent killing intent they had. It was not focused at him, but all of them had it hidden in their eyes, cold and indifferent eyes that seemed to pay no importance to life itself! Not only the lives of their enemies, but even their own! The weapons in their hands were long spears, and the black armour that they wore was a strange hybrid between light armour and heavy armour. Although the spears had already been covered with the thick cloths, Zhou Weiqing could still sense their keen edge indistinctly.

Facing such a troop, if one did not have a strong willpower, perhaps they would break down before even clashing.

Furthermore, for a troop to have such an air and quality about them, how could their combat prowess be weak?

“General Ming Yu, it has been a long time!” Zhou Weiqing smiled widely at Ming Yu, revealing a row of white teeth. However, his eyes were not that friendly, almost as if he was admiring a piece of art, wandering across Ming Yu from top to bottom.

Ming Yu smiled faintly and said: “It has only been a few years indeed, but you have changed so much that I almost did not recognize you. It looks like my foresight at that time was pretty accurate after all. I am starting to regret, why I didn’t take you directly from the Fei Li Military Academy. If I had done so, perhaps you would be my right hand man now.”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “That might not be so, why should I be your right hand man, you can be my right hand man instead right? Furthermore, even if you tried to take me from the Academy that time, I would never have agreed. Your troop does not have any beauties at all, why would I even bother going?”

Hearing Zhou Weiqing’s shameless words, Ming Yu’s gaze couldn’t help but drift towards Shangguan Xue’er and Tian’er in the distance, and he said in admiration: “Well, in that regard I am truly no match for you. You are a master indeed, to be able to gain the love of such top beauties. I am impressed indeed, respect,

respect. If there is any chance, you must teach me a few tricks. I am already forty years old, but still do not have a wife...”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “That is no problem at all. If General Ming Yu is willing to join my Heavenly Bow Empire, you can have the pick of women from the Empire!”

Ming Yu did not seem to hear the hidden meaning in Zhou Weiqing’s words, still smiling as he said: “Commander Zhou, I wonder where your Heavenly Bow Empire is!”

Zhou Weiqing smiled and said: “It will be back soon, no worries, it will not be long before the Heavenly Bow Empire is revived.”

[Previous Chapter](#)[Next Chapter](#)

1. Literal translation, and pretty literal meaning as well. Basically means that someone’s name and reputation is based on his deeds, just like the taller a tree, the larger its shadow; if it is a crooked tree, it will have a crooked shadow

Chapter 191 Fei Li God General! (3)

Ming Yu looked at him with a fiery gaze. “As a puppet of ZhongTian?”

“No, of course not. The Heavenly Bow Empire will only belong to our Heavenly Bow citizens, we will never be puppets for anyone else.”

Ming Yu’s gaze turned to the warriors in the distance behind Zhou Weiqing. If his own personal troop was full of killing intent, then the Peerless Battalion warriors were filled with confidence and vigor. Only a troop who had constantly won would have such a presence. Their aura was not piercing or forceful, but it was a stable confidence that spoke of absolute victory.

“Is that troop yours... or does it belong to the ZhongTian Empire?” The smile on Ming Yu’s face disappeared, and he grew serious. Instead, as he asked that question, he actually used his Heavenly Energy to transfer his voice.

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly and said: “With your Fei Li Empire’s intelligence gathering service, may I know if you have heard about the strange occurrences in this year’s ZhongTian Northwest border wars?”

Ming Yu nodded and said: “Although the ZhongTian Empire has tried their best to lock any news from spreading, but we have heard some bits and pieces from the captured prisoners of the WanShou Empire. Peerless Battalion right? A troop consisting of a mere few thousand, but they actually managed to assist the Northwest Armies in routing their enemies, which outnumbered them several times over. More so, they actually managed to cause severe casualties to the WanShou Empire, even alarming the Heavenly Snow Mountain.”

Zhou Weiqing’s smile widened even further, and he said one more line of words to Ming Yu using voice-transference, before

turning back and heading to his own lines. This round of fighting was about to begin.

When Ming Yu heard Zhou Weiqing's words, he actually stood there for several more minutes, stunned into silence, before he had finally recovered himself. As he looked at the Peerless Battalion warriors opposite of him, there was something else new in his eyes.

Zhou Weiqing's words to him were simple: "The Peerless Battalion was created by me, and is fully mine."

Just that simple line, it had already disclosed a large amount of information to Ming Yu. As for why Zhou Weiqing chose to tell him that, it was naturally not because he was the Fei Li God General, but because of his background of the Heavenly Demon Sect.

He was about to begin the major undertaking of the revival of his Empire. Although he was confident in their success, he knew it was no easy task, and what he wanted was to gather and unite all possible powers he could. Since he had already had such relations with Little Witch, along with his Master's promise, he was clear that there was now an undeniable link between him and the Heavenly Demon Sect. Furthermore, he did not hold any hate against the Heavenly Demon Sect; in fact there was some goodwill. After all, after the past time when he had been attacked once, the Heavenly Demon Sect had never done so again, instead helping him out several times and even letting him peruse their secret Demonic Manual without any repayment.

Currently, all Zhou Weiqing had was his Peerless Regiment. For the ZhongTian Empire not to stop him from taking the Peerless Regiment away, it was already a major support and giving him much face. He knew he could not expect any other material support besides their simple aid in contacting the Fei Li Empire. After all, that would be tantamount to declaring war on the Bai Da Empire. Although the Shangguan Brothers placed much

importance on Zhou Weiqing, it was not so much that he could compare with an entire Large Empire now.

As such, for Zhou Weiqing to revive his Empire from the yoke of the Kalise and Bai Da Empire occupation, he would have to face many trials and tribulations. As such, any bit of strength he could gather was of great importance.

Today, all that he had done against the Fei Li Empire was not for fun, or that he was too bored and was looking for trouble. The main reason was of course to build up his Heavenly Bow Empire's reputation and respect, but at the same time, a secondary reason was perhaps the hidden anger and need for vengeance against the Fei Li Empire who had been allies yet did not lift a hand to help them in the past. All of this was on the foundation of the support of the ZhongTian Empire.

Towards Ming Yu, Zhou Weiqing had always had a good impression, and held some approval in his heart regarding him. It was not just because of the approval and acknowledgement that he showed previously, but because of their similar natures on the battlefield that had been displayed at that time. Since Ming Yu was from the Heavenly Demon Sect, who was to say that he could not aid the Heavenly Bow Empire in the future? As such, Zhou Weiqing did not hide anything from him, directly letting him know about his Peerless Battalion.

Ming Yu drew a deep breath, looking at Zhou Weiqing who had long since returned to his lines. His mouth turned up in a faint smile, but no one could know what he was currently thinking about.

After a moment of thought, Ming Yu shouted out. "Prepare for battle!"

An orderly, almost synchronous, sound of armour clashing, and the seven hundred Ghost Demon Horse cavalry troops raised the spears in their hands, a soaring killing intent bursting forth as if a

giant spear filled with blood was about to pierce into an enemy's chest.

On the VIP Stage, the watching group of Fei Li officials were secretly shocked. Most of them had only heard of the Fei Li God General by reputation, but it was their first time seeing him on a battlefield. Witnessing the terrifying presence of the Ghost Demon Horse cavalry with their own eyes, their confidence surged instantly towards this victory.

Shen Wang stood by Cai Cai's side, a complicated look in his eyes. All along, he had always considered his own Royal Family Cavalry to be the finest elites in the Empire. However, as he looked upon Ming Yu and his personal guard today, he finally understood that the difference between him and Ming Yu was just so huge.

In terms of cultivation level, Ming Yu could not compare to him. However, in terms of leading troops, even a dozen of him could never compare to a single Ming Yu! No wonder Princess Cai Cai liked Ming Yu so much, not him! Who did not like a hero after all!

At this moment, Ming Yu had already drawn the long sword from the scabbard on his belt. Nudging his mount, the Ghost Demon Horse stepped forward three steps, and all seven hundred of his Ghost Demon Horse Cavalry behind him also did the same, in such an amazingly neat and orderly formation.

BoomBoomBoom Three sounds of all the horse hooves striking the ground simultaneously, causing everyone's heart to grip abruptly.

These three steps were actually carefully planned. Firstly, Ming Yu was informing Zhou Weiqing that they were beginning their attack. Next, the three steps also instantaneously powered his personal guard's aura and momentum to the max, and the killing intent grew suffocatingly.

Facing Ming Yu, Zhou Weiqing dared not be careless. Solemnly, he shouted: "Enter formation" Behind his back, the Peerless

Battalion warriors instantly entered the formation he had given the orders for previously.

The First Main Company of the Peerless Regiment was truly their strongest elites, and every single one of them had impressive personal strength. At the same time, they had also worked the hardest in the training and cultivation. Although their formation and movements were definitely not as tidy and orderly as their opponents, their speed was no slower. In an instant, a long snakelike formation emerged on the drilling grounds, a formation that seemed like such a joke to the watching Fei Li officials.

The snake like formation here referred to all seven hundred of them gathered in a line, just like the number '1'. (TN: In case the description isn't clear, it isn't a single file towards the enemy, but a horizontal line with all of them facing the enemy)

The greatest benefit of such a formation was its coverage and reach, but its flaws were just too obvious – being too thin and frail! With just a single layer of soldiers, what kind of frail formation was that? As long as anyone could charge and burst through any portion of it, the entire snake like formation would be pierced through and broken apart, unable to join up with each other. Even the newest, greenest commander on a battlefield would never use such a formation!

As the Peerless Battalion warriors entered their formation, Ming Yu and his troop had begun their charge.

Compared to the Peerless Battalion warriors, Ming Yu's personal guard clearly displayed a whole different side. Their training in such matters had clearly far surpassed the Peerless Battalion soldiers, and as they charged, they maintained the same square formation neatly. However, after advancing around a hundred yards, the formation actually changed into a triangular formation; the entire process completed so smoothly without any hint of stalling or messing up.

To change formations so easily in the midst of a charge, how much training did that require to accomplish that? More so, no matter the training given, only the finest elites would be able to do so. Ming Yu used his own actions to teach everyone present a lesson, to tell what was the meaning of ‘crack troops’.

With Ming Yu’s experience in leading troops, the moment Zhou Weiqing used that snakelike formation, he instantly knew Zhou Weiqing’s goal. Very clearly, Zhou Weiqing had absolute confidence in the power of his own troops to be able to choose such a formation, and his goal was to counter-surround Ming Yu’s troops once both sides clashed, allowing the personal combat strength of his soldiers to come into play.

The greatest confidence of Zhou Weiqing stemmed from the two hundred super Heavy Cavalry troops. Towards this point, Ming Yu was confident that he had read the situation clearly. Of course, with his vision, he could also tell how powerful those soldiers were. However, so what about that? This was a battlefield, a fight of seven hundred against seven hundred, not single combat. Ming Yu did not feel that just those two hundred soldiers alone could influence the result of the entire battle. He, too, had great confidence in his own personal guard.

You want to use that snakelike formation to show off your soldier’s personal strength? Very well, I shall breakthrough by striking on a single point!

A strange light flashed in Ming Yu’s eyes. Although he held much admiration for Zhou Weiqing, it was exactly because of that fact that he wanted to use all his power in this fight, to see how far this youth had grown. Powerhouses would always only respect other powerhouses.

As both formations closed in on each other, the snakelike formation started to move just like Ming Yu had expected. Under Zhou Weiqing’s command, both ends of the formation doubled the speed of their charging towards both sides, while the center started

to slow. Just like Ming Yu had guessed, Zhou Weiqing wanted to make use of the advantage of the snakelike formation to attempt to surround his personal guard.

High up on the VIP Stage, Cai Cai subconsciously gripped her fists tightly. Her usual grace and poise was belied by the agitation in her eyes. Although this was not the first time she had seen Ming Yu on the battlefield, she still had that same excitement that set her heart on fire. Ming Yu's command and direction in fighting just had such artistic appeal. She could almost envision his personal guards smashing through Zhou Weiqing's warriors and gaining the victory, and Zhou Weiqing's dejected look afterwards.

Both sides were on the verge of an explosive clash.

Just as Ming Yu's triangle formation was less than fifty yards from the central lines of Peerless Battalion, a drastic change occurred.

Ming Yu's Ghost Demon Horse came to an abrupt halt, and his sword pointed to the right. In an instant, he had disappeared into the entire triangle formation that seemed to swallow him up. In the swift charge of the formation, they wheeled and turn to the right, arcing in a perfect small line towards the left flank of Zhou Weiqing's formation.

Chapter 192 Power vs Strategy! (1)

This triangle formation gave off the impression that it was not an army troop, but like the body of a single person. Command, formation, movement, control, all of it was like someone moving his arm. This... was the Fei Li God General!

Without question, as he was facing Zhou Weiqing and his Peerless Battalion warriors, the Fei Li God General Ming Yu did not hold back at all, fully displaying the true power of his personal guard.

Changing formations mid-charge several times, abrupt changes in directions as they neared the opponent, having their leading commander vanish into the formation. All of these control and command were already individually considered top level skills on the battlefield, let alone having them appear all at once. Although Ming Yu was only commanding seven hundred men, to be able to do so so smoothly and without any hint of messiness, he truly lived up to his name as the Fei Li God General.

In truth, Ming Yu's strategy was also rather simple but effective. With a single look, he had determined that the backbone and core power of Zhou Weiqing's seven hundred men were the two hundred heavy cavalry soldiers in the center. However, due to their sheer weight, even if they were mounted upon Unicorn Heavenly Beasts, it was without a doubt that their speed would be somewhat restricted. Since these two hundred were the toughest to deal with, Ming Yu instantly decide to change his direction of attack.

His goal was actually very simple, to create chaos, and this time he chose a single flank of Zhou Weiqing's formation to cause it. As long as he could come crushing down with the irresistible might of his speedy charge onto the relatively weaker flank, then the Peerless Battalion formation would be thrown into chaos. Once that happened, with his elite troops and his own direction, he had

absolute confidence of slowly finishing off Zhou Weiqing's troops by chewing off bits and pieces

Indeed, as Zhou Weiqing saw such movements and commands from Ming Yu, he couldn't help but sigh in admiration. However, differing greatly from Ming Yu's expectations, he was not panicked at all, instead giving a simple order – Charge!

By now, the snake-like formation had already turned into somewhat of an arc, almost forming a pocket that was about to be filled up with Ming Yu's triangle formation. However, in everyone else's eyes, the 'fabric' of the pocket was just too thin, and the 'sharp point' of the triangle formation looked like it could easily tear a hole through this pocket at any time, with just a simple charge. Currently, the left side of the 'pocket' was just about to receive a massive blow from Ming Yu's personal guards.

Just as both sides were about to clash, all of a sudden, two figures sprang up and actually flew into the air. Instantly, two balls of different coloured light started glowing around their bodies. Without question, they were trying to unleash Skills. Generally speaking, on a battlefield, especially in a clash between large numbers, even if both sides had Heavenly Jewel Masters, they would not use any high powered Skills in such a fashion. The reason for that was because, unless that particular Heavenly Jewel Master's power had already reached a terrifying level, they would actually be in a highly disadvantageous stage. For example, any AOE Skills could accidentally harm their own side, even causing a drop in morale. After all, for a Skill to actually have use in such a large scale battlefield, it also meant that fine-grained control was most difficult. As both sides clashed, it was normally at close combat, and once that was so, any AOE Skills would definitely have a large chance of 'friendly fire'.

Besides that, if a Heavenly Jewel Master unleashed a large AOE Skill or any powerful Skill, it was without a doubt that he would immediately draw the attention of all enemies, becoming the main

target. He would also come under fire of all the opposing side's powerhouses. In such a large scale battle, even if the Heavenly Jewel Master was very powerful, who knew what a stray arrow or sword could do? As such, without special tactics or protection, Heavenly Jewel Masters would never take the initiative to unleash such large scale powers, instead using their own Heavenly Energy to protect themselves while they fought and killed normally.

Yet, these two who flew up into the air, they were actually attempting to unleash their Skills. Furthermore, by flying up in the air to do so, weren't they making themselves an easy target?

Ming Yu's personal guards were truly the finest amongst elites. Instantly, amongst the seven hundred of them, forty bouts of light shot out towards the flying duo. All of them were long ranged Skills! For a time, all the onlooking officials were totally stunned. Forty bouts of long ranged Skills... that meant in Ming Yu's formation, there were at least forty Heavenly Jewel Masters! Indeed, it was Heavenly Jewel Masters, not just Elemental Jewel Masters. The reason was because Elemental Jewel Masters would usually not become cavalry soldiers! For him to have over forty Heavenly Jewel Masters, how many Physical Jewel Masters would he have? At least a hundred estimated? For a moment, even Princess Cai Cai who perhaps knew Ming Yu the best was secretly shocked. She had not realised that the power that Ming Yu held had already grown to such heights.

Of course, the two that had flown into the air was Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er. Currently, Zhou Weiqing was in his Dragon-Tiger Transformation State, and the large wings behind his back were unfurled and flapping gently. His right hand was wrapped gently around Tian'er's slim waist, and looking at them, it did not seem like they were on a battlefield, looking more like a couple who were flying in the air enjoying the scenery. Towards the over forty incoming attacks, they totally ignored them, almost as if they had not seen the attacks.

In a flash, the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation lit up below Zhou Weiqing's feet, and in the next instant he lifted his right hand, causing a large patch of bluish purple light to cover the entire seven hundred personal guards charging at them. The most stunning thing was that the patch of bluish purple light also formed a triangle, and as it flew towards the charging personal guards, it landed perfectly on their formation, with not a single possibility of harming his own soldiers.

This time, Zhou Weiqing was not just unleashing a Lightning Attribute Skill, but actually wielding lightning itself. His 'Flying Lightning God Technique' was not just restricted to those lightning pearls, but even lightning in its raw form. Of course, those lightning pearls were much stronger, a more compressed version that held a stronger explosive power. Once he was able to bring them into play in massive numbers, even those with cultivation levels higher than Zhou Weiqing would not be able to take them easily. In comparison, raw lightning had the superiority in terms of pure speed. Furthermore, currently Zhou Weiqing was unleashing it in an area of effect, and there was almost no possibility of dodging it.

Amongst Zhou Weiqing's numerous Stored Skills, he had one called the Thousand Lightning Strikes, though it was not a very highly rated Skill. At this moment, Zhou Weiqing was actually using his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation to mimic the Thousand Lightning Strikes at a far greater degree, and also with much finer control. In terms of control, who could compare with his teachings Long Shiya? That was the core specialty of the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor indeed.

The most speechless thing about this attack was that this AOE lightning attack was not just an instantaneous one, but a continuous effect. If one looked closely, they would be able to clearly see that around the wings behind Zhou Weiqing's back, there was a large whirlpool of faint bluish purple light, swarming

into his body. As for the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation at his feet, it was also fully glowing in that same bluish purple light. In such a state, Zhou Weiqing was almost using his own body as a conductor, drawing all the Lightning Attribute energy from the atmosphere and discharging it via his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation. Such a constant and persistent AOE effect skill, it was truly terrifying indeed.

This was only the beginning. Right beside Zhou Weiqing, Tian'er was not idle. Without knowing when, a strange looking staff had appeared in her hands, about one and a half metres long, fully white in colour, with a strange purple gemstone right on the top of the staff, almost as large as an average man's head. However, that purple gemstone was now glowing with a brilliant gold light.

Another AOE Skill, but the one that Tian'er was unleashing was even more brilliant and resplendent than Zhou Weiqing's. A large area of gold light descended from the skies, landing on all the Peerless Battalion soldiers on the right flank, who were just about to clash with their opponents. In that moment, these soldiers enveloped in the gold light felt as if there was something burning in their bodies, filling them with strength and power. This included the Unicorn Heavenly Beasts below them, all of which were glowing with a layer of dim gold light. Their Heavenly Energy burst forth explosively, and in that moment, it was as if all of their strength had grown by at least twenty percent.

On the battlefield, was was more terrifying than an AOE attack Skill? The answer was simple... an AOE support or boosting type Skill! Of course, the chances that such a Skill could appear on the battlefield was also like the hair of a phoenix and the horns of a qilin, nearly impossible! Although the Water Attribute had some healing effect Skills, they did not have any large scale boosting abilities. Only the Light Attribute and Life Attribute had some, but they were extremely rare and also very difficult to Skill Store, with only some of the rarest Heavenly Beasts having such Skills.

Furthermore, most of the Light Attribute boosting Skills were in terms of defending against Darkness or increasing morale. As for the Life Attribute, it was not too bad, with large scale AOE heals. However, that was also only possible after the nine-Jeweled stage and with Heavenly Energy reaching the Heavenly Dao Energy stage.

In Ming Yu's long military career, he had seen a few AOE offensive Skills in his time, but this was truly the first time he had seen an AOE boost Skill! Furthermore, it was clear that this was no ordinary Light Attribute or Life Attribute Skill!

This Skill that Tian'er had unleashed was called Angel's Blessing, an AOE 'Boosting' type Skill, able to boost the stats of all living creatures by twenty percent within a certain area. The length of effect and exact strength of boost had a direct correlation with Tian'er's personal strength. Besides healing, this was the true superiority of the Divine Attribute.

The most frightening thing about such an AOE Boost Skill was not just that its effect was so strong, but its drain on Tian'er's Heavenly Energy wasn't too large. That was because Tian'er drew heavily upon the atmospheric Divine Energy, even priming some from solar energy. In such a case, she was just the inducing force, not the main source of the Divine Energy that was released, and thus it was only a minor drain on her own Heavenly Energy. However, such a Skill would also have an extremely long cooldown time before she could use it again.

Chapter 192 Power vs Strategy! (2)

Just as Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er unleashed their respective Skills, the forty attacks from Ming Yu's personal guards had also reached them.

A massive shield rose up from below the duo, and as it appeared, it had a diameter of two metres. However, as it rose, it actually started growing, and by the time it reached Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er, it had already expanded to a diameter of five metres, fully covering both their bodies behind it. Attack after attack smashed into the massive shield as it glowed with a thick yellow light, but besides a ripple in the light, all the attacks did not seem to have any other effect.

Naturally, this was the work of Lin TianAo. As Zhou Weiqing's Follower, his greatest effect was to be his shield and protection on the battlefield, how could he miss out at this critical time?

Lin TianAo's cultivation level could be said to have improved by leaps and bounds, faster than he had ever imagined. Ever since he had Followed Zhou Weiqing, he had never lacked for resources. The best food, drink, cultivation resources, Heavenly Cores, even Storing Skills and Consolidating Equipment Scrolls. All of it was provided for him, and he no longer needed to worry about them, allowing him to focus fully on training and cultivation. Currently, Lin TianAo was just a small step away from breaking through to the seven-Jeweled stage, and the six Jeweled Assembly Set Shield he unleashed was naturally with a considerable defensive power.

Previously, even the attack of a Heavenly King Stage powerhouse had not been able to break through his defenses with just a single blow, let alone these mere forty casual ranged attacks whose power had to have dissipated slightly from the distance. Furthermore, though there were quite a few Heavenly Jewel Masters, barely any had even reached the six-Jeweled stage. After all, if one was that strong, who would be willing to be just an ordinary soldier? It was

only because he had the support of the Heavenly Demon Sect that he was able to have so many Jewel Masters in his personal guard!

So many things happened at once, but all of it had actually occurred in a few blinks of an eye. Both sides almost clashing, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's Skills, the boosts, Lin TianAo helping them block the attacks... the next instant the two armies finally clashed at last.

The attack of the Peerless Battalion soldiers were simple and direct. Although their previous battles were mostly fought with bow and arrow, that did not mean their close combat skills were lacking. On the contrary, having been drilled so hard by Shangguan Fei'er, it could be said that the blood and sweat they poured into close combat training was even more than their archery training. After all, up to a certain point, it was hard for the ordinary soldier to improve further in archery; whereas close combat skills was always requiring countless experience.

As both sides were about thirty yards from each other, the Peerless Battalion soldiers began their first round of attacks. Throwing javelins.

Each of the Peerless Battalion soldiers were equipped with six javelins. Previously, they had all bound these javelins with thick cloth to prevent any serious injuries. Currently, with that distance of thirty yards, it was the perfect range for throwing javelins. At once, nearly three hundred javelins flew out straight towards the incoming crazed charge of Ming Yu's personal guards.

Intense, violent sounds of clashing rang out constantly. The impetus and force of impact of these javelins were not weak, and do not forget what the Peerless Battalion was most known for? It was not their great strength, but their shamelessness.

Previously, Zhou Weiqing had given them the instructions that for their first salvo of javelins, the aim was not to injure their opponents, but to slow them down, to give him more time to

unleash his Skills. As such, for this first salvo of javelins thrown, all the Peerless Battalion soldiers actually did not use any Heavenly Energy at all!

Ming Yu's personal guards were indeed strong, and they had quite some number of Physical Jewel Masters, and others who had some level of Heavenly Energy. If the Peerless Battalion soldiers infused their Heavenly Energy in this first salvo of javelins, they might gain some benefit, but it would undoubtedly cause their opponents to be wary. As such, they shamelessly decided to play the act of pigs to devour tigers.

Their plan was a success indeed. Although these javelins did not have any Heavenly Energy infused, their weight was not light, and the soldiers were strong and well trained in the art. Add on the fact the javelins were laced with titanium alloy, and were extremely tough... this salvo actually managed to slow the charge of the incoming personal guards. At the same time, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's Skills had managed to land.

Ming Yu's personal guards were undoubtedly decent at withstanding the offensive Skills, with some Heavenly Jewel Masters even releasing some area of effect defensive Skills. However, the actual area, range and control of their Skills were far weaker than Zhou Weiqing's, especially since his Skill was a continuous one. For a time, quite a few of the charging warriors felt their bodies go numb slightly, affecting their offensive capabilities.

On the reverse side, the opposing Peerless Battalion warriors were all getting boosted by Tian'er's Skill. Their offense and defense were boosted to the maximum, even increasing their charging speeds.

Unicorn Heavenly Beasts had the Light Attribute, and with the Angel's Blessing, it was as if they had been injected with stimulants, the boost having an even greater effect on them. All the Unicorn Beasts immediately used their own innate abilities –

the Gliding Charge.

Lowering their heads, the tough horns in the front, the wings on their sides spread open, their charging speed accelerated instantly, bringing their riders in a valiant charge towards the triangular formation.

...

At last, it was time for the actual clash.

In a massive explosive crash, both sides smashed savagely into each other. It was at this very second that Zhou Weiqing's 'Flying Lightning God Technique' halted abruptly. All the other Peerless Battalion soldiers also began accelerating their charge, bearing down on their opponents.

In most of the audience's eyes, for the entire of Ming Yu's triangle formation to smash into such a narrow portion of the snake-like formation, it should be easy for them to pierce right through. However, as both sides clashed, everyone, including Ming Yu, suddenly realised that they were very wrong.

In that abrupt crash, the front of the triangle formation was actually whittled off shockingly. The charge of the Peerless Battalion soldiers line had actually forcefully blocked the entire triangle formation.

In Ming Yu's strategy, the most important point was for them to pierce right through a single point, using their superior maneuverability to move back and forth to continually pierce through the snake-like formation and causing chaos to break out in their opponent's formation.

Alas, the events and results were contrary to their expectations. The piercing of the formation had been forcefully stopped in their tracks, failing spectacularly in an inconceivable fashion. The instant before the clash, all the Peerless Battalion soldiers abruptly burst forth in violent Heavenly Energy reverberations, especially

the dozen or so who were right in front to receive the main vanguard of the triangle formation. Their Heavenly Energy reverberation were clearly at least of the Upper Level of the Heavenly Shen Energy (six Jewels), with one even at the Heavenly Xu Stage (seven or more Jewels)!

The five in front were even Heavenly Jewel Masters!

Originally, Ming Yu's personal guard formation was also extremely powerful. To be able to be the vanguard of the triangle formation, they were naturally the strongest and finest elite of his troops. In terms of cultivation level, they would not lose out to the Peerless Battalion soldiers. Alas, they had been taking harassment from Zhou Weiqing, while on the other side their opponents were not only boosted by the Angel's Blessing, but their Unicorn Heavenly Beasts' Gliding Charge!

With such a disparity, in the savage clash, the first several dozen of Ming Yu's personal guard vanguard were all knocked off their mounts. Even their Ghost Demon Horses were sent tumbling by the excited Unicorns, many sustaining some injuries. This was also because of the powerful defenses of the Ghost Demon Horses, otherwise any ordinary horses might have been killed instantly.

What the... Ming Yu had been directing the clash right in the center of the formation, and he was shocked to realise that the formation was actually halted. He instantly knew something was wrong, and in a flash he stood up right on horseback, looking at the Heavenly Energy reverberation and glows in the distance.

This... this... this was...

Physical Jewel Masters? They were all Physical Jewel Masters! From the looks of things, there was not a single one below the five-Jeweled stage!

In that split second, even the Fei Li God General was struck senseless. Although he had already given a high appraisal of Zhou Weiqing's Peerless Battalion soldiers, he had never in his wildest

dreams thought that this would happen.

In his entire Personal Guard, he had three hundred Physical Jewel Masters, and that number was inclusive of the forty Heavenly Jewel Masters.

This was already a major point of pride for Ming Yu, and this strength was also because of heavy support from the Heavenly Demon Sect, with several of his guard being from the sect. All along, it had also been this core backbone that had allowed Ming Yu to sweep victory after victory.

However, it seemed like the Peerless Battalion soldiers in front of him all had even greater individual strengths! Ming Yu's Physical Jewel Masters were all on the average at the three-Jeweled stage. Although they still had room to grow, but that would require a large amount of time and effort. However, their opponents were already at the five-Jeweled stage or higher!

In the next instant, Ming Yu had already formed a judgement. These seven hundred soldiers were even tougher to deal with than seven hundred WanShou Empire cavalry soldiers!

The next few moments truly displayed Ming Yu's impressive tactics and command abilities. Although they had been greatly disadvantaged by this clash, Ming Yu instantly reined in his troop from imminent disaster, dragging them back from the the brink of the precipice. In a matter of seconds, the rear guard suddenly turned into the vanguard, a miraculous turn in formations as they began their retreat.

It was impossible not to retreat. At this time, the advantages of the snake-like formation were starting to come into play, and they were about to be surrounded. Once they were fully surrounded, and the two hundred Heavy Cavalry troops joined the fight, they would no longer have any chance at all.

Ming Yu's on the spot command had always been known for having the strongest point of being absolutely calm. No matter

what he faced, no matter how much losses they had suffered, he would still be able to calmly make the most accurate judgements and decisions in the shortest possible time.

Ming Yu's personal guard was actually forced to retreat... from just a single clash?!

Up on the VIP stand, Cai Cai could only watch with her jaw agape with shock.

Currently, the Peerless Battalion warriors gave the impression of magnificence and glory; especially the flanked soldiers who had been the first to withstand the furious primary clash. Their titanium mail was glowing silver in brilliant resplendence, added on to the golden glow of the Angel's Blessing, they suddenly seemed like divine troops descended from the heavens.

Flying in midair, Zhou Weiqing was now being ignored. He grinned widely, flying across in the skies.

The wings that the Dragon-Tiger Transformation brought to him gave him an extremely powerful flying ability and speed. At full power, it was truly a terrifying speed. All the others could see was a purple-red streak flash through the skies, and Zhou Weiqing had already risen to a much higher vantage point. This time, his flight destination was the path that Ming Yu's personal guard were retreating in.

Large patches of lightning pearls descended from the skies, under the fine control of the 'Flying Lightning God Technique', floating in the air before their paths. His goal was not to actually attack them, as he did not wish to kill anyone. Zhou Weiqing's intention was simple, just to block them.

The first patch of lightning pearls smashed down onto the ground, exploding with much sound and dirt, spinning dust into the air. As the terrifying explosions blew up, this was the first time that Ming Yu's personal guard were thrown into disarray.

Chapter 192 Power vs Strategy! (3)

Perhaps humans could still quickly adapt to such a state, but could their mounts? Even though the Ghost Demon Horses were far superior and stronger than any ordinary warhorses, they were still startled by the massive sounds of explosions. Just like that, the speed of their retreat was forcefully slowed drastically, almost stopped.

Ming Yu lifted his head to look at Zhou Weiqing in the skies, and couldn't help but scold inwardly: Is that little brat really human? How much Heavenly Energy does he have to waste away?! After all, for a six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master to defeat a nine-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master, it was already an impressive feat. Yet, he was still able to release a continuous stream of AOE offensive Skills just now... and even to the extent to use those lightning pearls here again! This was truly inconceivable. In Ming Yu's mind, only a Heavenly King Stage powerhouse could do something like this, even a nine-Jeweled stage powerhouse should not be able to last so long in throwing out so many high powered Skills! Indeed.. The regenerative power of the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, the wings of the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, and the Immortal Deity Technique... all of this combined to bring about the monstrous sustained fighting capabilities of Zhou Weiqing. This was something that truly defied logic and common sense!

In the first place, the speed of the Peerless Battalion soldiers was not slow, and with this short delay from Zhou Weiqing, the encirclement was complete and Ming Yu's personal guard formation was fully surrounded.

For the first time, the Peerless Legion revealed its fangs in the Fei Li Empire, leaving a truly lasting impression indeed.

Charge! Charging as one!

The Berserker and Gold Crow Tribes had been held back for just too long. In terms of cultivation level, they were perhaps no match for the Peerless First Main Company elites, but in terms of strength and overall power... these two powerful tribes could laugh all the way!

The scene of the battle turned somewhat strangely funny. The reason was simple – the weapons of these two powerful Tribes. No matter the great spiked maces or the massive battle axes, when they were wrapped with a large amount of cloths, they all looked like giant cotton candies being held in the hands of the Peerless Battalion Heavy Cavalry soldiers. Yet, these funny-looking giant candies had a truly terrifying effect.

In the front of Ming Yu's personal guard, there was one four-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master with the Strength Attribute, and he had always been proud of his own physical strength. However, the moment he clashed with one of the female Gold Crow Tribe warriors, he finally realised what the true meaning of strength was.

As both sides smashed into each other, there were only two words that could describe it: Absolute Suppression. Indeed, absolute suppression.

For either the Gold Crow or Berserker Tribes, none of their warriors even bothered defending themselves. The unbelievable thick and sturdy armours they were wearing could not even be broken through by five, six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Masters easily. On the other hand, as they struck out with their weapons at will, nothing could stop them and their pure physical prowess.

The difference in equipment alone was just too huge. The final result of the fight was might be slightly surprising, but the true surprise was in the sheer gap and disparity between both sides... that was something that was truly unexpected. Perhaps the gap in power alone was not too huge, but it was the addition of power and equipment that made the true distinction.

Besides Zhou Weiqing, who would actually be willing to splurge so much money on a single troop of soldiers? To use titanium like ordinary metals? Let alone that terrifying cost of those heavy cavalry soldiers... every time any of them struck out, it was like a blow of over a thousand jin!

In the time after both sides actually clashed into each other... the entire battle ended in a mere five minutes.

An outright absolute victory, with no suspense or doubt about the result at all.

In terms of close combat, the Peerless Battalion soldiers would never try and snatch a fight away from the heavy cavalry soldiers. These fellows were all ruffian soldiers, and their observation skills were just too deadly. Naturally, they could see that these personal guards of Ming Yu's were not easy to deal with, especially since they had so many Jewel Masters. If they were not careful, they might even sustain some injuries.

As a result, these shameless fellows only did what was required of them, to prevent their opponents from breaking free of their encirclement. As for the actual fighting, they left it to the two tribe's Heavy Cavalry, whom they now called affectionately as 'Tin Cans'.

This was the first time that the Heavy Cavalry had ventured upon the battlefield since they had been fully outfitted. Indeed, this first appearance did not disappoint Zhou Weiqing at all. Their combat prowess on the battlefield, along with that terrifying armour, even if they were to clash against the elite Mammoth Regiment, he was confident they could hold their own.

What kind of existence was the Gold Crow Tribe? Their average weight alone was more than six hundred jin, their bones weighing as heavy as gold but much tougher. Their strength was as herculean as their weight.

What about the Berserker Tribe? They were also nicknamed the

‘Titan’ Tribe. In terms of height, figure and stature, they were even more terrifying than the Gold Crow Tribe, with their average height an astonishing two point one metres, with the tallest here even reaching two point seven metres! Their weight was not comparable to the Gold Crow Tribe, but was not to be scoffed at as well. Perhaps the most monstrous thing was that their pure physical strength was even greater than that of the Gold Crow Tribe, and even more so when they used their innate Berserk skill!

In summary, both Tribes had their own strengths and advantages, but the most common point was physical strength. Pure, unadulterated strength.

When Zhou Weiqing had outfitted them with that heavy armour, they could be considered absolute killing machines on the battlefield. Even if their weapons were all bound with thick cloths, by the time the battle ended, all seven hundred of Ming Yu’s personal guard, including Ming Yu himself, were injured.

Ming Yu’s current look was rather miserable and wretched. When Zhou Weiqing appeared grinning in front of the Fei Li God General, he saw his armour was in shambles, even the Heart Mirror at his chest had disappeared, looking shabby and disconcerted. Even his helmet had disappeared, and half of his face was swollen and bruised. Without question, he must have been ‘nudged’ by one of the ‘tin cans’.

Luckily, he did not seem to have any serious injuries. In truth, Ming Yu was a six Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master, and if he were to fight with any of the ordinary Gold Crow or Berserker Tribe members on a one versus one fight, he would likely still be able to win. Of course, that was if he did not face any of their rare Heavenly Jewel Masters, who were even more terrifying.

After all, Ming Yu had many other Consolidated Equipment and Stored Skills.

Alas, on the battlefield, it was just too different. When two

hundred heavy cavalry soldiers charged together as one, it was like a small mountain bearing down upon them, not something that a single person could influence. The sheer imposing momentum and unyielding force was such that the strength of a single person was just a token trifle. Zhou Weiqing's strength was just as tyrannical and overbearing as any of the Gold Crow or Berserker Tribe members, perhaps even more. However, even if it were him, he would not be willing to face the charge of fifty of his own Heavy Cavalry soldiers easily. That was a terrifying momentum and impact of over tens of thousands of jin! Even if he had the 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set, there was a limit to how much his personal Heavenly Energy and strength could do. If fifty of them smashed into him, it would not be an easy thing to take.

...

At last, the fight had ended, and the Peerless Battalion soldiers reformed into their usual tidy formation, standing behind Zhou Weiqing once more. At this point, the entire drilling ground was filled with an eerie silence, and the scene in front of them was a horrifying sight.

'Horrible misery' was a pretty apt phrase to use to describe the current Personal Guard Battalion of Ming Yu's. Although with the bound cloth and Zhou Weiqing's orders for them to hold back and ensure no casualties, none of the Personal Guards had died, they had all sustained some form of injuries, and none of them were in full gear anymore. All their fine looking equipment, how could they compare with the Peerless Battalion's, instead seeming more like paper. Most of the gear had been broken or ruined in the clash. As for injuries, no one knew how many broken bones there were, or perhaps more accurately, no one knew how many broken bones there weren't! Less than a third of the personal guard could stand, and even with the Ghost Demon Horses' strong defenses, many of them were lying on the ground. Who knew how much medical expenses they would have to spend before they could be used as

warhorses again.

This was not the only thing. Currently, Ming Yu was right in front of Zhou Weiqing. This time, he was walking on his own feet. More accurately, he had been captured... on his shoulders there were still two large spiked maces resting there. Ma Qun was looking at this Fei Li God General with a wicked smirk on his face.

Zhou Weiqing jumped off his mount, landing right beside Ming Yu, grinning as he said: “Heh heh, how is it? Sir God General, my Peerless Legion isn’t too bad right?”

To Zhou Weiqing’s surprise, Ming Yu did not seem at all depressed by this loss. Instead, he was looking at the Peerless Battalion warriors like a pervert looking at beauties, swallowing his saliva as he did so. When he heard Zhou Weiqing’s words, he did not hesitate to nod eagerly. “They are not bad indeed! What kind of equipment are those? What material did you use? How come their defense is so strong? Did you create them yourself? How much money did you spend! No wonder you little rascal, were so bold as to challenge Princess Cai Cai, you had such an ace up your sleeve. Not bad indeed... in front of absolute strength, any dominance that good strategy and tactics grant is greatly weakened. However, this is after all still on the drilling grounds, not an actual battlefield. If it were on an actual battlefield, and I had sufficient time and information to prepare, I would still be able to defeat these warriors of yours. After all... they only number seven hundred...”

As Ming Yu was rambling on, Zhou Weiqing suddenly laughed heartily and said: “Did I say that they only number seven hundred? Furthermore... do you really think that you have seen all the power that they have?”

Hearing his words, Ming Yu started momentarily. After a while, he stared at Zhou Weiqing with a fiery gaze. “You have more of such warriors? How many more? What kind of full power are you referring to? Quick... tell me...”

Zhou Weiqing looked at Ming Yu's urgent yet eager look, and he couldn't help but smile inwardly. He had finally found Ming Yu's weak spot. This fellow truly had an intense obsession regarding military matters, especially offensive powers of soldiers on the battlefield! "That is a top secret of my army, why should I tell you? As for numbers... well I guess that part is fine to tell you. Our total numbers... as compared to those I have brought... should be about ten times or so..."

"Impossible..." Ming Yu exclaimed subconsciously, his eyes filled with shock.

To groom and train such a group of seven hundred, it must have already cost an astronomical amount. That was not the only thing, he had already seen how all seven hundred soldiers were Jewel Masters, and their average cultivation level was already at the five-Jeweled stage! To find such a number of people of this quality, it was already terrifying.... Ten times more?! What kind of notion was that?

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: "If you don't believe me, then so be it. Anyway, I do not need you to believe me."

Ming Yu refused to let the matter drop, and in a low tone, he asked urgently: "You really have ten times this amount of warriors like this?! If that is really true, wouldn't you be able to sweep through the entire mainland?"

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: "It isn't that exaggerated. The ones I brought with me here are naturally the finest elites."

Hearing his words, Ming Yu heaved a sigh of relief. He had trained troops for so many years, and he knew how hard it was to form an army of true strength. It was not just a matter of gold and supplies! In the first place, it was even more difficult to find so many talented warriors!

However, Zhou Weiqing's next words almost caused him to puke

out blood.

“Those ordinary warriors of mine... when compared to my elites... should be about twenty to thirty percent difference I guess? They should be about three to four Jeweled cultivation level on the average. Hmmm... oh yes, after some calculation, I think the number should be slightly more than ten times. Didn't you hear Princess Cai Cai introduce me earlier, I am now a Regiment Commander? Our overall strength of numbers is close to a proper formation of a Regiment... our Peerless Regiment!”

Chapter 193 Compete in Creating Consolidating Equipment Scrolls?! (1)

Spasming. Ming Yu's entire body and heart were convulsing.

"No... impossible... I ... I don't believe it." Ming Yu stared hard into Zhou Weiqing's eyes, as if trying to read something within.

Alas, he could not see anything, not even any [rheum](#).

Currently, Princess Cai Cai's expression was rather ugly as she led the officials back down into the drilling ground.

Originally, she had thought that when they won this round, she would 'invite' Zhou Weiqing up to the stage. Alas, with the current situation, she would have to move down personally.

Ming Yu turned his head back to look at Cai Cai walking in, and he took in a deep breath. In a low tone, he said to Zhou Weiqing: "I'll look for you later." After saying that, he walked back to Cai Cai, saying a few lines before turning back with an embarrassed look towards his Personal Guard Battalion. It was not going to be an easy task or a short time for his Personal Guard Battalion to regain combat effectiveness, and more importantly, to regain their morale. For a troop that had always lived with victory, it was a huge blow to them to suffer such a huge loss. Ming Yu had to personally return with them to comfort and console them and also guide them to enlighten them.

Cai Cai stabilized her own emotions before heading towards Zhou Weiqing once more. In her eyes, besides shock and awe, there was a hint of fear. She knew that although there were several thousand Royal Family Cavalry soldiers here with them, if Zhou Weiqing truly wanted to make a move against them, with the power he had displayed, they would have no chance at all.

As an onlooker, perhaps Princess Cai Cai could see many more things than Ming Yu. Even though he was the commander, he was

also deep in the midst of things after all. If she was forced to use a sentence to describe that fight, just a few simple words would suffice: “Just too terrifying!”

Indeed, the only thing that fight brought her was a sense of utter terror.

Cai Cai had never seen such a frightening army in her life. Although she had never actually been on the battlefield to see the WanShou Empire armies with her own eyes, she was certain that even they did not have any such dreadful warriors.

Seven hundred men, just seven hundred men. Yet, when they burst forth with all their strength, the stifling feeling their presence brought was like that of a immense army of a million strong! Their fighting capabilities were just too terrifying.

All of them were Jewel Masters. This one thing was clear in Cai Cai’s heart. Amongst the seven hundred, besides the two hundred heavy cavalry soldiers she had not been able to perceive clearly, the rest of the five hundred cavalry soldiers were definitely Jewel Masters. As for those two hundred she could not see through clearly, the power they unleashed on the battlefield seemed even more terrifying than any Jewel Master held. A crushing victory over the strongest and most elite troop of the entire Fei Li Empire! Facing such absolute chance, there was no chance... just like when Shen Wang faced up against Zhou Weiqing!

Such a troop of seven hundred... if they appeared on any battlefield, it would definitely bring about a sweeping victory. How could the ZhongTian Empire possibly be willing to pass such a troop to Zhou Weiqing? Could it be a direct core troop of the Heaven’s Expanse Palace?

Currently, Cai Cai’s heart was in a mess, and her usual composure had been thrown off. She finally understood why Zhou Weiqing had been so confident as to provoke her so easily. If this seven hundred soldiers truly belonged to the Heavenly Bow

Empire, then he definitely had the right to do so.

Although these seven hundred was far from sufficient to allow the Heavenly Bow Empire to restore their Empire, but their existence was tantamount to the Heavenly Bow Empire having a key to do so. Let alone the Kalise Empire, she was confident that even the Bai Da Empire would not have any troop that could block these seven hundred without a massive numeric advantage.

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly as he received Cai Cai, saying: “Your Highness, this third round should be considered our victory right?”

Cai Cai was quickly brought out of her thoughts. With a complicated look at Zhou Weiqing, she said: “This troop of yours... they will accompany you all the way in reviving your Empire?”

Zhou Weiqing laughed: “Of course, this is my own troop after all. Your Highness, have you forgotten my self introduction? I am the Peerless Regiment’s Regiment Commander, Zhou Weiqing. Brothers, tell Her Highness, what is our motto?”

A deafening roar as a united shout rang out instantly: “PEERLESS IN THE WORLD!”

If it had been before that battle, such a motto would have caused all the Fei Li officials to scoff contemptuously. However, the four words now just sent a shockwave in their hearts.

Peerless in the world. Such proud and arrogant words... yet they truly had the power to back it up. At least, in Cai Cai’s memory, she had never seen such a troop with such terrifying combat prowess.

All of a sudden, Cai Cai’s entire body shuddered slightly. Peerless...Regiment? Could it be...he had an entire Regiment of such warriors? But... If that was true...

Seeing that amused look in Zhou Weiqing’s eyes, Cai Cai forced her breathing to calm down. Finally, she smiled with her usual

grace. Although it seemed a tad forced, at least she had not lost her composure.

“If Commander Zhou really has an entire Regiment filled with such warriors, the hopes of revival of your Empire is truly high indeed.”

Zhou Weiqing did not pretend to be modest, nodding his head as he said: “I do think so myself. In any case, since this third round is considered our victory, then may Your Highness please come up with the next round’s topic?”

Cai Cai’s mind went into a whirl. Originally, she had planned that if Ming Yu won the third round, she would invite the Heavenly King Stage powerhouse again to clinch the final round. After all, they had not set any rules previously against re-doing a round’s topic. In that case, she would have been able to clinch the final victory with relative ease. Alas, the current situation did not allow her to use that plan any longer. Even if they won like that, then for the fifth and last round, Zhou Weiqing could also do the same as request for another seven hundred vs seven hundred fight. Who could possibly take on those Peerless Regiment soldiers?

Biting her lip lightly, Cai Cai thought for a while before saying: “Commander Zhou, previously our bet should have some restrictions that I forgot to mention. For those topics that we have already competed in, we shall not repeat them alright?”

Currently, Zhou Weiqing could be said to hold [the pearl of wisdom](#). Having won the third round, he had an absolute advantage. Even if he failed in this upcoming fourth round, it was a strong chance he could still win the fifth since he could control the topic. As such, he did not mind Cai Cai’s little tricks like this, nodding his head generously in agreement. Of course, he knew it was because Cai Cai was afraid of his Peerless Regiment soldiers.

Cai Cai secretly heaved a sigh of relief before smiling as she said: “If I remember correctly, Commander Zhou should be a

Consolidating Equipment Master right? In that case, shall we set the topic of the fourth round to be creating Consolidating Equipment Scrolls? Just a single piece, and the side who creates the higher quality Scroll will be the victor. What do you think?”

Zhou Weiqing started momentarily, his mouth starting to twitch slightly as his expression grew strange... “Your Highness, could it be the Fei Li Empire has somehow succeeded in recruiting a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master?”

Cai Cai flushed deeply. She thought that Zhou Weiqing was making a snide remark to mock the fact that she was using the entire resources of an empire to suppress a small diplomatic party. She thought to herself: You are the one who forced this Princess to such a state, what other choice do I have?

“... How could it be so easy to recruit a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master? Their numbers are extremely limited in the entire Mainland, and though I wish it was so, I’m afraid that our Fei Li Empire does not currently hold such abilities. However, we still do have some Grandmasters in the Royal Palace. Master Han Gao, I will have to trouble you for this round.”

As Cai Cai spoke out, a middle aged man walked out from the group of officials, looking to be around forty years of age. As the man walked to the front to stand beside Cai Cai, Zhou Weiqing’s heart gripped in slight shock.

The man’s gaze was peaceful and calm, as if he had not seen Zhou Weiqing. His eyes seemed to be far off, as if deep in thought, though no one knew what he was thinking about. Even when he was facing Princess Cai Cai, he only gave her a slight nod of greeting.

Towards his looks, Zhou Weiqing did not really pay attention. From this man’s eyes, he could clearly sense... this was one of those stubborn lunatics!

Zhou Weiqing had seen such eyes many times before, and he

instantly knew those who held such gazes were extremely stubborn, holding all their faith and belief in a single subject, spending all their lives working towards that single target.

Everything else, they could ignore. Using the phrase ‘stubborn lunatics’ was truly just too apt. This was without question a very talented Consolidating Equipment Master, and his stubbornness and resolve was definitely in that area. In such a case, his abilities in creating Consolidating Equipment Scrolls should not be low.

Although Zhou Weiqing was a Consolidating Equipment Master in his own right, he had not spent much time on it. In the past year and more, he had spent all of his time focusing on his training and cultivation, and any remaining time had been dealing with the matters of the Peerless Battalion. By now, even Yun Li had far surpassed him in terms of Consolidating Equipment Master skills. If he personally tried to face off against this middle aged man in front of him, the result was not going to be pretty. In his heart, he knew it was a sure loss.

Cai Cai looked at Zhou Weiqing and said: “Commander Zhou, will you be personally taking on this fourth round? Or will someone else in your party participate?”

Cai Cai suddenly laughed. The reason he had a strange expression on his face when Cai Cai had come up with this fourth topic was very simple – it had actually been his plan to use this as the fifth topic! In this regard, perhaps it had been a strange wordless linked fate.

“...Your Highness, please wait a moment.” As he said that, Zhou Weiqing turned and walked towards the horse carriage where Princess Difuya was seated.

As he walked to the front of the horse carriage, he bowed respectfully in a full ninety degree bow. “Senior Uncle, could I please trouble you.”

Zhou Weiqing had used his Heavenly Energy voice transference,

so Cai Cai could not hear what he was saying. However, as she watched him bow down, she was very curious. Could it be, Zhou Weiqing was asking Princess Difuya to come out? Or was he looking for instructions?”

From the horse carriage, Long Shiya’s exasperated voice rang out in his ears. “You little brat, how could you trouble your Senior Uncle over such a trivial matter?”

Duan Tianlang’s lazy voice rang out right after. “Enough about that Fatty Long, don’t act in front of me. Don’t think I do not know your character so well. If I refuse to help this round, would you go and compete in the next round? Haiz... Weiqing, I have to say, you are after all the heir to our Legacy of Strength Sect, the sole legacy carrier of the ‘Hate Ground no Handle’ Legendary Set. Your Senior Uncle’s ‘Hate Sky no Handle’ Legendary Set designs I also plan to impart to you in the future. I can help you now, but I hope that you can put some time to focus on your Consolidating Equipment skills.”

Indeed, in the large horse carriage, it was not just Princess Difuya seated within. Long Shiya and Duan Tianlang had also come along. Zhou Weiqing was only bringing a few hundred soldiers to the Fei Li Empire, and Long Shiya was a little worried. Since he did not have anything else to do, he decided to just come along, even dragging Duan Tianlang along with him. Although on the surface he had insisted that he would not intervene in the revival of Heavenly Bow Empire, with him along, it was tantamount to Zhou Weiqing having a god bodyguard with him. This was also the reason why Zhou Weiqing had acted so arrogantly... that little rascal had absolute confidence!

How many know what this actually is. I actually had to google for the technical term for ‘eye boogers’, in fact in the term in mandarin literally translates to that

Be in the position where he can cope with all schemes and strategies

Chapter 193 Compete in Creating Consolidating Equipment Scrolls?! (2)

The door of the horse carriage opened momentarily, and Duan Tianlang appeared from within.

Duan Tianlang was dressed in simple cloth clothes. Besides being clean, there was no other merits that anyone could see in those clothes.

From the surface, he looked to be just an ordinary middle aged man. He did not display any power at all, as he walked slowly towards the center of the drilling ground. Zhou Weiqing quickly led the way respectfully. Towards this Senior Uncle of his, he truly had utmost respect within his heart.

As Cai Cai saw the scene before her, her mouth opened slightly. She was perhaps even more surprised than when she saw the terrifying power of the Peerless Regiment. As a member of the Royal Family, she was extremely familiar and placed high value upon the etiquette of nobles. For Zhou Weiqing to actually invite a middle aged man from Princess Difuya's carriage, what was going on?

It had to be known, at least in title, Princess Difuya was still known as Zhou Weiqing's fiancée, and the two of them were not married yet. For an outsider to be seated in the same carriage, especially a man, it was rather improper. According to proper noble etiquette, even if it were Princess Difuya's father, the Heavenly Bow Empire's Emperor, he would not sit in the same carriage as his daughter during travel!

Led by Zhou Weiqing, Duan Tianlang soon arrived in front of Cai Cai. Towards this middle aged man that Zhou Weiqing had brought forward, Cai Cai was totally unfamiliar. However, she did not think that she would lose this round. In terms of aura and presence, this middle aged man seemed like a totally ordinary

person, with not even a sense of Heavenly Energy reverberations without him. His age did not even seem as old as Master Han Gao beside her, how could his Consolidating Equipment Scroll creation skills possibly compare? After all, Master Han Gao was a renowned talent, to be able to reach the Zong Stage Consolidating Equipment Master at the young age of forty five. He was not just hired by the Royal Palace, but was actually Cai Cai's personal Consolidating Equipment Master, one of Cai Cai's most trusted talents. Previously, she had spent so much time and effort to be able to recruit such a master.

“Ehhh?” Right at that moment, Duan Tianlang gave a surprised noise. It seemed like he had recognized this Han Gao in front of him.

At that point, Han Gao's head was still lowered, perhaps still pondering on some tough problems of a Consolidating Equipment Scroll. However, the surprised noise that Duan Tianlang made shocked him out of his reverie, and he subconsciously looked up.

At the side, Cai Cai smiled faintly and said: “Master, do you also recognize Master Han Gao? Master Han Gao is renowned to be one of the most talented geniuses in the last fifty years of the Consolidating Equipment Master world, with the Spatial and Wind Attribute Elemental Jewels. He has already become a Zong Stage Consolidating Equipment Master at a young age of forty five.”

Zhou Weiqing stood at the side, smirking coldly to himself. Cai Cai's introduction was clearly targeted at him in a demonstration.

Upon hearing Cai Cai's introduction, Duan Tianlang nodded in satisfaction and said: “Very good, already reaching the Zong Stage! Ahhh, very good indeed.”

As Cai Cai's gaze was fixed upon Duan Tianlang, she had not realised that when Han Gao's head lifted up to see Duan Tianlang, his jaw had dropped. The indifferent eyes which had been lost in thought were currently filled with shock and joy.

“May I know Master’s name please?” Cai Cai asked Duan Tianlang courteously. No matter whose side they were on, a Consolidating Equipment Master was always deserving of respect. Although in the past the Heavenly Bow Empire did not even have a single Consolidating Equipment Master, not even a Low Level one, and though Cai Cai did not think that Zhou Weiqing could recruit any outstanding Consolidating Equipment Master, she could not be discourteous at all.

Right at that moment, Han Gao abruptly knelt down on the ground with a sudden thudding sound. PengPengPeng He kowtowed to Duan Tianlang three times. “This unworthy disciple Han Gao greets Master. Master, I have missed you so much!”

As he said that, Han Gao remained on his knees, clambering a few steps forward to hug Duan Tianlang’s leg. Tears were streaming from his eyes as he sobbed bitterly, looking as if he was deathly afraid that Duan Tianlang would run off without him.

Cai Cai’s voice trailed off slowly as she watched the sight before her with her jaw agape. Let alone her being stunned into silence, even Zhou Weiqing was totally dazed and shocked.

Duan Tianlang gently stroked Han Gao’s head as he smiled and said: “[Chi’er, Chi’er](#)... It has been ten years, and you have already become a Zong Stage Consolidating Equipment Master. Come, stand up and we shall speak.”

Han Gao continued holding Duan Tianlang’s leg tightly, refusing to let go or get up. Sobbing, he said: “Master, this time, you can’t abandon me please. If you do not agree, I will never get up.”

Duan Tianlang’s eyes also reddened, and he sighed softly. With both hands, he supported Han Gao and pulled him to his feet. “I agree, I agree.”

Hearing those words, Han Gao was overjoyed, and he used his hands to wipe the tears off his face. Alas, he had just been kowtowing on the ground, and his hands had been supporting him

then and were covered with dirt, and his face was now covered in dirt. However, no one would laugh at him, as they could clearly sense the natural innocent joy of him reuniting with his Master, the sheer joy and respect he held.

However, including Cai Cai, the entire Fei Li official contingent were all so shocked that their eyes were widened to the max.

Towards Han Gao, not many of them actually recognized him. However, Princess Cai Cai had already introduced him as a Zong Stage Consolidating Equipment Master! To be a teacher and master of a Zong Stage Consolidating Equipment Master... what level was he at personally?! Could it be..."

Duan Tianlang drew out a handkerchief, personally wiping his disciple's face clean. As for Han Gao, he just stood there staring at his Master, tears still streaming down his cheeks as his mouth was trembling, the joy in his eyes unmistakable.

Duan Tianlang was also extremely overjoyed. Turning to Zhou Weiqing at his side, he said: "Weiqing, let me introduce you. This is your Senior Brother Han Gao, your Senior Uncle's First Disciple. He is also my finest disciple. Previously, I sensed that my time was up, and I just left quietly. This child, he is too emotional, so I did not want him to be too heartbroken."

Zhou Weiqing quickly walked up, smiling as he said: "Greetings, Senior Brother."

Han Gao looked at Zhou Weiqing, before turning back to Duan Tianlang. "Master, he is...?"

Duan Tianlang smiled faintly and said: "Weiqing is also a member of our Legacy of Strength, an offshoot legacy holder. If not for him, your Master would have probably left the world more than a year ago."

Hearing Duan Tianlang's words, Han Gao's look at Zhou Weiqing instantly changed. Turning around, he actually knelt down once

more, and was just about to kowtow to him as well.

Zhou Weiqing was given a fright. How could he possibly accept such a kowtow. Quickly, he stepped forward to support Han Gao, preventing him from doing so. “Senior Brother, please do not do so. For Senior Uncle Duan to live well, it is both our wishes. I dare not claim credit.”

Han Gao looked at him with gratitude and said: “Junior Brother, Master has never spoken a word of untruth or even exaggeration in his life. Since he has said that you were the one who saved him, then it must be true. However, you are right, such great kindness cannot be expressed through words alone.”

As he finished speaking, Han Gao turned to Cai Cai and nodded to her, saying: “Your Highness, I have finally found my Master. Remember my words previously when I agreed to become your Consolidating Equipment Master? I would leave when I found my Master. Apologies Your Highness, it is time for me to take my leave.” After speaking his piece, he directly walked over to Duan Tianlang’s side, his face filled with joy and respect.

Cai Cai stood there, her mouth open, but in the end she was just unable to speak. Currently, she was totally filled with regret. It was truly a case of [losing one’s wife as well as one’s soldiers](#) . Not only had she lost the final bet, she had also lost a Zong Stage Consolidating Equipment Master! What was going on!? However, Cai Cai was still Cai Cai in the end, and though she had suffered such a huge loss, she managed to calm down after a short time. Bowing towards Duan Tianlang, she said: “[Greetings Master](#), it was this Junior who was too rude just now.”

Duan Tianlang smiled faintly and waved his hand gently. Pulling Han Gao’s hand, they moved off to the side to catch up on old times, neither picking up the thread of discourse.

Zhou Weiqing looked at Cai Cai in an amused fashion. “Your Highness, shouldn’t this mean our bet has been settled?”

Cai Cai glared angrily at Zhou Weiqing. “Commander Zhou, that Master previously is...?”

Zhou Weiqing did not attempt to hide anything. With a wide smile, he said: “Just as you think.”

Cai Cai’s expression was serious and respectful as she said: “Since Master has been gracious enough to come visit our little Empire, no matter what, our Emperor will definitely come personally to welcome him. Commander Zhou, please bring your men to the Ambassadorial Guild Hall to rest first, I will be back with His Majesty in a while.”

His goal had been met. Although Cai Cai had subtly avoided the topic about their bet, and ascribed the Fei Li Emperor’s welcoming to that of a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, Zhou Weiqing did not mind. His goal of showing the power of the Heavenly Bow Empire had been met, and that was sufficient.

Zhou Weiqing’s personal strength, the hidden Heavenly Emperor behind his back, the support of the ZhongTian Empire, the terrifying strength of the Peerless Regiment... and finally a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master to complete the package. Each of those accomplishments were considered impressive in their own right, but when they were all gathered together... this was truly something that the Fei Li Empire had to place great importance on. They would no longer dare to treat Zhou Weiqing and Princess Difuya like they were just from a mere dead empire.

Furthermore, others might not have perceived the Divine Attribute that Tian’er had used. After all, it was so rare that a Saint Attribute was seen. However, how could that Heavenly King Stage powerhouse not see through it? It was an Attribute that was only found on those direct bloodlines of the Heavenly Snow Mountain! The Heaven’s Expanse Palace... Heavenly Snow Mountain... two Great Saint Lands that should be like oil and water which do not mix... they had actually subtly shown their support for this Zhou Weiqing. This sense of mystery was perhaps even more shocking

than anything else.

...

The following negotiations and talks were much simpler from then on. With his shameless thick skin, his silver tongue, tactics of asking prices as high as heaven, and [offering payment as low as the earth](#), with just seven days, he had managed to gain sufficient support from the Fei Li Empire.

Princess Difuya had only showed her face once when the Fei Li Emperor had come personally to welcome then. Otherwise, everything else from that point onwards had been completed by Zhou Weiqing. Of course, on the Fei Li Empire side, the negotiating party was still Princess Cai Cai.

...

A room in the Royal Embassy.

Zhou Weiqing stood at the window of his room, looking outside with an air of content and satisfaction about him. Currently, Shangguan Xue'er and Tian'er were both in the room as well.

These few days, Zhou Weiqing could be said to have everything go smooth sailing, at least in terms of all the major events and goals. From the show of power, to the negotiations... Although he was still young, his intelligence, cunning and mostly his silver tongue had truly given a headache even to someone as shrewd as Princess Cai Cai. Alas, in terms of 'internal family' matters, our dear Zhou Little Fatty was in the midst of a tragic drama.

Shangguan Xue'er had come up with a great plan of her own. You are cultivating and training with Tian'er right? Very well, I will also cultivate together with you two; while I'm at it, I can keep watch on a certain person!

As a result, this strange scene of the three of them staying in a single room had occurred.

In the eyes of the Peerless Regiment warriors, their Commander

was just too awesome. Two top level beauties! Ahhh... it was truly enough to make one envious, jealous and hate!

However, only Zhou Weiqing truly knew what kind of life he was currently living... the phrase '[deep water and scorching fire](#)' was sadly too apt here.

Neither Tian'er or Shangguan Xue'er were the sort to have a sharp tongue, but living in the atmosphere where both of them constantly glared at each other with killing intent, added to the fact that he was highly tempted yet never dared to be overly intimate with either of the two... if not for the fact that Zhou Weiqing's skin was sufficiently thick, he would have gone crazy by now.

痴儿 or Chi Er, basically 'er' is an endearment, while Chi here means a person who is so persistent and stubborn. In this case, he is calling his disciple Han Gao by a term of endearment, not his actual name/nickname

This is a literal translation, basically it means suffering a double loss. The idiom comes from the Three Kingdoms era – Sun Quan wanted to gain back a city, and Zhou Yu came up with a plan to fake a marriage proposal with Sun Quan's sister and use the opportunity to seize an important hostage. Alas, Zhuge Liang saw through his plan and brought Zhao Yun in accompanying him to visit Zhou Yu's Father in law instead, who arranged for them to visit the Empress Dowager. Instead, she agreed to really marry Sun Shangxiang to Liu Bei. This resulted in Zhou Yu and Sun Quan being laughed at in future with the term 'Losing the wife and still Losing the soldiers/fight'. (In actual history, this never happened – It was an actual political marriage not a result of a failed plan)

In this case it is 大师 (a more generic term for Master) not 老师 (someone's actual teacher)

Basically bargaining heatedly/unreasonably

Living in suffering/misery

Chapter 193 Compete in Creating Consolidating Equipment Scrolls?! (3)

‘See, not touch’. Zhou Weiqing truly understood the meaning of that simple phrase now, and how torturous it could be. Currently, he was actually praying that Shangguan Bing’er, Shangguan Fei’er or even Little Witch would suddenly appear, somehow changing the equilibrium of this terrible stalemate. At this moment, he no longer held any foolish dreams about enjoying any threesomes, things were bleak enough that such fanciful dreams were just a thing of the past. If this continued, how could he even continue living!?

“CoughCough, you two, are you practicing some secret eye techniques?” Zhou Weiqing leaned back on the window sill, looking at the two ladies who were glaring at each other without backing down. Helplessly, he gave a cough as he exclaimed tentatively.

Shangguan Xue’er gave a cold humph and said: “Your negotiations are already over, when are we leaving this place?”

Zhou Weiqing said: “Very soon. There are some things that need to happen... at least I need to ascertain... before we can leave. Furthermore, I am still waiting for someone.”

Tian’er said: “In that case, isn’t it time that some people return to their homeland. A certain somebody is the Great Heir of the Heaven’s Expanse Palace, what’s up with them following us loving husband and wife?”

Shangguan Xui’er said coldly: “Husband and wife? Have you two officially married yet?”

Tian’er gave a humph and said: “When we rescue Little Fatty’s father and mother, we shall.”

Shangguan Xue’er said coldly: “Then I will break you two apart.

Even if you both marry, my little sister has to be first. You can only be a concubine.”

“You want to fight?” Tian’er sprang up abruptly, glaring at Shangguan Xue’er.

Shangguan Xue’er gave a disdainful sniff. “Just with you?”

“You...” Tian’er looked like she was about to explode. These two ladies were unwilling to accept each other, and both were extremely recalcitrant. If not for the fact that Zhou Weiqing was there in the middle of them, perhaps they would have already come to blows long ago. In terms of power, Tian’er was originally no match for Shangguan Xue’er. However, in the past few weeks, she and Zhou Weiqing had been cultivating together with the Four Saint Attributes, and her cultivation level had improved much quicker. At the same time, she had also gained a fresh new insight into her two Saint Attributes. Naturally, her confidence had also grown along with her power, and she was not afraid of Shangguan Xue’er.

Zhou Weiqing interposed his body between the two ladies, smiling bitterly as he said: “You two [Grand Aunts](#), do we have to go through this same scene every day? How about you both beat me up instead. Isn’t that better?”

“No.” This time, both Shangguan Xue’er and Tian’er were united, as they spoke in unison.

Finally, Zhou Weiqing blew up. These past few days, he had been enduring and tolerating it the best he could, and at last he couldn’t take it anymore. Angrily, he said: “Fine, you both fight then. Just you both wait. One day, when I have the power to beat you both up at once, I will Seal you both and take turns in ‘taking’ you both!”

This time, both ladies had vastly different answers.

Shangguan Xue’er’s snapped: “Get lost...”

On the other hand, Tian’er smiled sweetly and said: “Sure!

Sounds good!”

Draping an arm around Zhou Weiqing’s shoulder, Tian’er giggled and said: “Little Fatty, do you want me to help you? She is definitely no match for the two of us together. I’ll help you do ‘that’ to her... hee... see if she dares to throw her temper around in the future. If I don’t suppress her now, once both her sisters come, won’t I be bullied to death by the three of them?”

Zhou Weiqing turned his gaze to Shangguan Xue’er, muttering to himself: “That sounds like a very good idea!”

Shangguan Xue’er said angrily: “You dare! If you dare to bully me together with her, I will never forgive you.” After saying that, she blushed a deep red before quickly continuing: “Fei’er and Bing’er will never forgive you too.”

Tian’er giggled once more. “Well, didn’t you want to cause trouble between me and Little Fatty? Fine, come on then! Your Mother, I, will go ahead and risk everything. If you want to watch, please feel free!” As she said that, she displayed the forthright valiance of the beastmen, actually turning around to unbuckle Zhou Weiqing’s pants.

“You... you... shameless!” A piercing sword qi instantly burst out towards Tian’er’s hands.

“#*\$&^@(#*\$” Zhou Weiqing paled instantly. If that sword qi accidentally sliced that important part of his, what would he do? Immediately, he abandoned the entire situation, using a Blink Skill to escape.

Just as they were bustling in argument, a sudden voice rang out from outside. “Commander, there is someone outside the Embassy looking for you. He says he is your acquaintance.”

Zhou Weiqing acted like he had struck the jackpot. Grumbling, he said: “Alright, stop causing trouble now, it is time for proper business. He is finally here, I’ve waited so long even. Bring him

here.”

Before long, one of the Peerless Regiment soldiers led a man into the room from the outside. The man was dressed in black robes, a cowl hiding his face. From his looks, it was truly a strange and garish sight, especially since he still had another black cloth covering his face even despite the cowl. This was clearly a person in disguise.

Although Zhou Weiqing could not see any of his features, he grinned and said: “Why did you only come now? I have been waiting for so long.”

A clear male voice rang out from behind the cowl. “No choice, as soon as you all moved into the embassy, there have been people keeping watch. It has not been convenient for me to make any moves. It was only after the negotiations ended that the surveillance was removed. At least, the only watchers left are on your soldiers. It is only now that I managed to find an opportunity to come.”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “Alright alright, come on, have a seat my dear God General.”

The black clad man removed the hood, revealing the features of the Fei Li God General, Ming Yu. His gaze naturally swept between Tian’er and Shanguan Xue’er, and he did not hide his envy as he exclaimed: “You are truly blessed indeed!”

Zhou Weiqing was not able to retort otherwise, else the two ladies would be offended. As such, he could only nod his head with a faint smile.

Ming Yu smiled in return and said: “I will not beat around the bush then. Let us be direct. You plan to revive the Heavenly Bow Empire... do you require our help? Of course, that will not come without some conditions.”

Zhou Weiqing also smiled, a calm and deliberate smile. “If the

help is unconditional, I definitely welcome it. However, if there are any attached conditions, then I'll have to give it a pass. As long as you all do not come causing trouble to me, I am fine with anything."

Ming Yu started. He had not expected that Zhou Weiqing would actually give such a reply. For a moment, he fell silent.

At last, he asked: "You really have such confidence?"

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily once more. "Why would I not have confidence? You have already witnessed, even tested out, my Peerless Regiment for yourself. Did you think I was lying to you? There is no need for me to do so. As soon as I begin my counter invasion, you will definitely get news of it. Furthermore, do not forget that although my Heavenly Bow Empire is a small country, we have several hundred years of history. Do not underestimate the power of the heart of the citizens. Furthermore, I have also gained the support of the Fei Li Empire, and my backline supplies should not be a problem. I do not foresee any problems in reviving my homeland."

Ming Yu furrowed his brow and said: "Don't you at least want to hear our conditions first before deciding?"

Zhou Weiqing shook his head and said: "I am a person who does not react well to threats. To me, your so-called conditions have no meaning to me. The Kalise Empire is nothing in my eyes, and the main enemy I have would be the Bai Da Empire. If I do not remember wrongly, your current headquarters should be in the Bai Da Empire right? If you were to tell me that you all do not have any connection with the Bai Da Empire, heh, do you think I would really believe that? However, you all have at least still been wise and logical. As far as I know, your connection to the Bai Da Empire is not deep, and at least I do not have to direct my attention to you all as well."

"Direct your attention to us? Do you really think you have the

power?” Ming Yu scoffed.

Zhou Weiqing did not reply, but Tian'er who had been standing harmlessly beside him actually replied instead. “Do you think we don't have the power? You should know best what kind of status your Heavenly Demon Sect truly has in the mainland. The only reason the other three Great Saint Lands do not join forces to wipe you out is because the threat of our Heavenly Snow Mountain is just too great. Since there was no chance of joining forces, the Heaven's Expanse Palace would not take action lest we act up. However, if our Heavenly Snow Mountain actually takes the lead in the matter, I am sure the Heaven's Expanse Palace would not reject it.”

Hearing the words Heavenly Snow Mountain, Ming Yu's expression changed. As he looked at Tian'er, he instantly remembered the AOE Boost Skill that she had unleashed during their fight. Could it be... it was really the Divine Attribute like he had guessed?

That day, after Ming Yu had returned to his base, he had started analyzing every single detail of the fight. At the same time, he had consulted many people regarding the strange six-coloured formation below Zhou Weiqing's feet, as well as the AOE Boost Skill that Tian'er had unleashed. The final conclusion that he had arrived at was that Zhou Weiqing's formation was truly unknown, and that Tian'er's boost skill could possibly be the legendary Heavenly Snow Mountain's Divine Attribute.

Upon coming to such a conclusion, Ming Yu was rather dismissive of it. Naturally, he had already received news that Zhou Weiqing had close connections to the Heaven's Expanse Palace. As a result, how could he possibly have someone from the Heavenly Snow Mountain beside him? Even if he did... the Divine Attribute was only from the core bloodline of the Heavenly Snow Mountain, the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tigers!

Yet, currently, from Tian'er's words, he could definitely read the

underlying meaning. How could he not be shocked? One of the young ladies beside Zhou Weiqing should be the third Young Miss of the Heaven's Expanse Palace, Shangguan Bing'er, while the other... was actually from the Heavenly Snow Mountain? No matter how intelligent and cunning Ming Yu was, in this moment, all his thoughts had been overturned.

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: "You do not to find it so strange. I am a loner without any clan or sect, and my Heavenly Bow Empire also does not belong to any camp. Since I am not the Heaven's Expanse Palace's enemy, why should I make myself the Heavenly Snow Mountain's enemy?"

"You... you all..." Ming Yu looked at Tian'er, then back at Shangguan Xue'er. In that moment, he was truly struck speechless. He realised that since he had faced Zhou Weiqing, although that little rascal had not spoken many words, this negotiation that he was representing for the Heavenly Demon Sect was already at a severe disadvantage.

Ming Yu was not a man who was willing to give up easily, but against Zhou Weiqing who constantly played outside the conventions, he was truly given a huge headache.

Shangguan Xue'er said coldly: "You just need to be clear of one thing. Although our Heaven's Expanse Palace are enemies with the Heavenly Snow Mountain, but there is one thing we have in common. Both of us support Zhou Weiqing and his efforts in reviving his homeland. By speaking like this, it should be clear to understand for you."

Ming Yu couldn't help but gulp down his saliva. His brow furrowed deeply as he was lost in thought.

Zhou Weiqing was not in a rush, sitting there calmly and sedately. Looking at the two beauties before him, he was also highly satisfied. In this negotiation, he had successfully borrowed the influence of others in a striking manner. At the same time,

both Tian'er and Shangguan Xue'er had not disappointed. Despite them being at loggerheads, they had supported him perfectly in this matter.

Literal translation. It's slang for girls with 'Young Miss' or 'Princess' attitudes throwing tantrums

Chapter 194 Crescent City! (1)

Of course, this was also because it was official business indeed. In truth, their support for Zhou Weiqing was not just because he had become the son-in-law of both the Heaven's Expanse Palace and Heavenly Snow Mountain. No matter the Peerless Regiment that he had created, or the stunning display of talent and future potential that he had shown, added to the fact his Master was Long Shiya... it was sufficient for both the Heaven's Expanse Palace and Heavenly Snow Mountain to want to draw him to their side. As such, it had ended up in such a strange delicate but amazing situation.

Ming Yu sighed and nodded towards Zhou Weiqing, saying: "Alright, you have won. I can represent the Heavenly Demon Sect to make a direct guarantee to you. During your efforts to revive your homeland, we will definitely not provide any aid to the Bai Da Empire or Kalise Empire. We hope to gain your friendship. However... we would like to know what is your final goal... is it just to revive your Heavenly Bow Empire, or do you have greater ambitions?"

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: "Regarding that, I can't say for sure as I shall not have the final say. That will have to wait until our Heavenly Bow Empire's Emperor to make the final decision. Of course, all of that will have to wait until we succeed in reviving our homeland."

Ming Yu couldn't help but scold him inwardly. This little rascal was truly 'waterproof' indeed! Looks like I must give him some strong medicine first.

"Commander Zhou, let us end our official business here then. I have some other personal matters, can we discuss them now?" Ming Yu's expression resumed to his normal, calm and unflurried state.

Zhou Weiqing started momentarily. “What personal matters?” All of a sudden, he had a strange ominous feeling, as he saw a thread of delight in Ming Yu’s eyes.

Ming Yu laughed heartily and said: “Nothing much, just that Commander Zhou shouldn’t have forgotten about what you have done previously right? Although I do not know what Godly Technique Commander Zhou was cultivating at that time, but our dear Princess had aided you in a heavy price. Wouldn’t Commander Zhou make some time to visit our little Princess? After all, after she returned, she has been thinking about you day and night!”

Zhou Weiqing’s body froze instantly. At the same time, he abruptly sensed an aura of ill intent from both sides around him.

“My Dear God General, you are truly savage! Let us return to official business. If I am willing to let you command my Peerless Regiment, would you be willing to leave the Fei Li Empire to join our Heavenly Bow Empire?”

Zhou Weiqing instantly changed the topic, and he quickly brought up a topic that he knew Ming Yu was most interested in. He knew that would definitely cause Ming Yu to change his focus instantly.

Ming Yu stared at Zhou Weiqing in surprise. “You are willing to let me be in charge of your Peerless Regiment?”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “Not be in charge of, but be in command to direct it. I believe that if the Fei Li God General becomes our Heavenly Bow God General, the Peerless Regiment would be able to better flourish their combat prowess... to become even more terrifying.”

Hearing those words, Ming Yu’s breathing grew rapid and urgent. As a military commander, who would not dream of commanding such a gloriously powerful troop? He had witnessed the terrifying power of the Peerless Regiment with his own eyes,

and his own body. If he were to become their Commander, he truly believed that they could be forged into an invincible force.

Zhou Weiqing continued: “Furthermore, I am even more interested to know... If I wish to earn the support of the Heavenly Demon Sect, what price do I need to pay?”

Ming Yu took a deep breath and said: “Very simple. We have two requests before we can place ourselves fully in your camp. Firstly, the Heavenly Bow Empire needs to actually acknowledge our Heavenly Demon Sect publicly. That is to say, once the Heavenly Bow Empire has been restored, you will not resume following the world in declaring us an Evil or Heretical Sect. Instead, you must recognize us as a legit party and our status in the Mainland. This is our first, and most important request.”

Zhou Weiqing laughed and nodded: “I am already considered friends with the Heavenly Demon Sect. Originally, I have even perused through your Demonic Manual. This first request, I can personally agree to it. In the first place, I also have the Demonic Attribute and the Demonic Change State, how can I not recognize the Heavenly Demon Sect?”

Ming Yu nodded, both delighted and gratified. “Since Commander Zhou has already said that, our chances of working together are definitely very high. Well, as for the second request, we hope that after the Heavenly Bow Empire has been revived, it can become the asylum or shelter for our Heavenly Demon Sect... allowing us to go through a full migration to your Empire.”

Hearing those words, Zhou Weiqing started momentarily. “You all want to become the background supreme ruler of our Heavenly Bow Empire?” How could he not understand what the Heavenly Demon Sect was implying? Without question, they were looking at the Heaven’s Expanse Palace and its relation with the ZhongTian Empire, or the Heavenly Snow Mountain and its status in the WanShou Empire.

The greatest weakness of the Heavenly Demon Sect was that they had no place to set roots, with no Empire which would support them and allow them to grow. This greatly restricted their basic safety and also their growth potential. However, in the current state of things, it was impossible for them to choose and large empires to forge such a relationship, and targeting a small Empire was actually a realistic goal.

It was clear that the previous goal of the Heavenly Demon Sect was the Kalise Empire, but the Kalise Empire was far too deep in control under the Bai Da Empire. As such, the Heavenly Demon Sect had not succeeded after several tries, leaving them still in the Bai Da Empire with an awkward status. After all, although the Heavenly Demon Sect was considered one of the Great Saint Lands, their overall power was far from comparable to the Heaven's Expanse Palace or the Heavenly Snow Mountain. It was impossible for them to directly clash with a large Empire.

A faint light flashed in the room, and Zhou Weiqing's face turned icy cold. His hands were held before his chest, his eyes narrowed and clearly filled with anger and ill intent.

Ming Yu smiled bitterly and said: "What background supreme leader? All our Heavenly Sect needs is a place to stay and place down roots. As you know, it is extremely difficult for us to even survive in the entire mainland. We do not have any intentions of controlling your Heavenly Bow Empire at all. Furthermore, even if we wanted to, your Master alone isn't someone our Heavenly Demon Sect dares to offend."

Looking at how Ming Yu was placing the Heavenly Demon Sect in such a position of weakness, Zhou Weiqing smirked coldly in his heart. Indeed, they might not have intentions currently, or rather, they were not capable of doing so... but in the future? If he allowed the Heavenly Demon Sect to enter the Heavenly Bow Empire and set up their headquarters, it could end up as a cancerous growth that might blow up in his face at anytime. When the Heavenly

Demon Sect gained second wind and recovered their true strength, who was to say what they would do in future?

Looking at Zhou Weiqing's eyes, Ming Yu sighed in his heart. It looks like this negotiations will most likely be falling through. This Zhou Weiqing is just too intelligent and astute, it will be just too difficult for him to agree to such a request.

However, to Ming Yu's shock, the next moment Zhou Weiqing actually nodded towards him, even smiling as he said: "Very well, I agree to your second request as well."

Ming Yu almost thought he had heard wrongly. "What... what did you say?"

Zhou Weiqing nodded once more and said: "I said, I can agree to both terms that your Heavenly Demon Sect have come up with. Are you that surprised?"

Ming Yu did not even bother trying to hide his thoughts, nodding as he said: "Indeed, I am very surprised. With your intelligence and astute thoughts, how could you easily agree to such terms? This makes me somewhat ill-at-ease."

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: "You do not need to feel so ill at ease. I can explain my thoughts to you to assuage your curiosity. There are three reasons why I would agree in the end. Firstly, I do not have any malice or ill intentions towards the Heavenly Demon Sect, maybe because I also have the Demonic Attribute. Secondly, I do not think that the Heavenly Demon Sect will be of threat to our Heavenly Bow Empire in the future, that is because as long as we can our strength sufficiently high, there is nothing to be afraid of. Thirdly, with the Heavenly Demon Sect stationed within our borders, that will also be a great aid for us in growing stronger... perhaps more so... your existence would always be a constant whip behind us, an impetus for us to keep growing and to never slacken off."

Although Zhou Weiqing was smiling as he spoke, those words

and the strong confidence behind them caused Ming Yu's heart to ripple agitatedly.

He was actually using the Heavenly Demon Sect as his own whetstone? To grind the blade of himself and his Empire?! Indeed, what Zhou Weiqing said was true, if one's strength was sufficient, why would he be afraid of the Heavenly Demon Sect? At least, currently, with the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor by his side, he did not need to fear anything. Furthermore, in the future, who could say whether or not Zhou Weiqing would also become an existence like the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor, or even greater?

Ming Yu stood up, actually bowing slightly towards Zhou Weiqing as he said: "I represent the several hundreds of my Heavenly Demon Sect brethren in thanking Commander Zhou's magnanimous generosity. Currently, on the surface we still aren't able to actively help you in terms of reviving your Empire. After all, even if we tried it would not be a good thing for you. However, regarding Commander Zhou's first proposal, I am highly interested. However, I would need some time to prepare to do so. When you begin your counterattack into the Heavenly Bow Empire to begin the revival of your homeland, I will definitely find a way to do so. Alright, shall we end our discussion here? I shall take my leave now."

After saying that, Ming Yu once again pulled up his cowl before heading out. Zhou Weiqing walked him to the doorway, and just as Ming Yu was about to descend the stairs, he suddenly turned around and said to Zhou Weiqing: "Remember, leave that position for me. I am looking forward to it. Hahaha."

The Fei Li God General had left, but not long after, Zhou Weiqing's room burst into dangerous excitement once more. Alas for Little Fatty, regarding his own connection with Little Witch, he had no choice but to come clean now.

...

The next morning, when Zhou Weiqing woke up, he had obvious black eyes. (Zen: I think this is referring to dark circles from lack of sleep, not getting beaten up?) With a gloomy and overcast face, he gave the order to move out from the Fei Li Empire, heading towards the original Heavenly Bow Empire territory.

At last, Zhou Weiqing led his Peerless Regiment to begin working towards the revival of his Empire.

...

At the same time, the entire Mainland was not quiet at all. Chaos had begun to rear its ugly head.

To the north, the WanShou Empire had just finished with its annual border wars, and there was not much action there. However, for the rest of the Mainland, sudden unrest ensued. Amongst the most obvious was the Dan Dun Empire situated far to the south. Just as Zhou Weiqing had actually reached the Fei Li Empire previously, the Dan Dun Empire had suddenly launched an attack against its neighbour, also one of the larger Empires in the Mainland, the Geritimo Empire.

War broke out just so suddenly, so much so that by the time the ZhongTian Empire received news of it, both sides had already been embroiled in major battles. The most shocking thing for the ZhongTian Empire was that, in such a short period of time, the Geritimo Empire had already lost one third of its land!

It had to be known that although the Dan Dun Empire had always been stronger than the Geritimo Empire, it should not be to such a standard. Yet, the Geritimo Empire just hadn't been able to withstand the pressure.

Instantly, the ZhongTian Empire and the Bao Po Empire sent a joint Regiment to the Dan Dun Empire to mediate and try to stop the war. By this time, the war had already gone on for more than a month, and some of the Geritimo Empire's most fertile lands had already been conquered by the Dan Dun Empire.

According to the ZhongTian Empire's investigations, the cause of the war was because of some minor scuffles on the borders. Using this as an excuse for revenge, the Dan Dun Empire had launched an abrupt invasion. It was clear that this was actually a premeditated attack from the Dan Dun Empire, that had been planned for a long time. In such a short period of time, they had gathered a massive army of more than a million strong, charging directly into the Geritimo Empire to conquer some of the choicest bits.

In terms of geography, the Dan Dun Empire was at the absolute south of the continent, while the Geritimo Empire was more of a Central South. The two Empires shared quite a border, but to their north, there was a large patch of several smaller Empires that separated them from the ZhongTian Empire!

Chapter 194 Crescent City! (2)

It was exactly because there were these small Empires blocking the way, added on to the fact that the Dan Dun Empire had launched its attack so suddenly and so swiftly, so much so that even though the ZhongTian Empire and the Bao Po Empire wanted to send aid, they were not in time.

As for the Northwest of the Dan Dun Empire, it actually had a shared border with the Bai Da Empire. To everyone's surprise, although the Dan Dun Empire had been fighting so violently with the Geritimo Empire, the Bai Da Empire did not react at all, remaining extremely silent, as if it had nothing to do with them.

In the end, the war finally ended under the mediation of the ZhongTian Empire, with the Dan Dun Empire withdrawing some of its forces. However, the ZhongTian Empire was after all situated very far away, and they could not really influence this area of the continent too greatly. As such, although the war finally ended with the Dan Dun Empire stopping its advance and promising to return half the conquered territories, it had successfully kept the other half of the conquered territories as its own.

In truth, actually getting the Dan Dun Empire to return the promised half was not an easy task as well. Although they had agreed to it verbally, it remained to be seen whether or not they would actually go through with it.

This casual demonstration of the Dan Dun Empire's capability in war also rang many alarm bells for the ZhongTian Empire. This strong Empire situated in the South which had always stayed out of any wars previously... it seemed like they would no longer be as quiet and restrained as they used to be. In this matter, what role did the Blood Red Hell of the Dan Dun Empire play, no one else could know for sure.

However, it was without question that the Dan Dun Empire's

overall strength after this major war and invasion could only grow, far beyond the Fei Li and Bai Da Empire, and perhaps even slightly edging over the Bao Po Empire now. Although the Passion Valley was also extremely strong, in terms of overall combat powers, they were not as ferocious as the Blood Red Hell.

The Dan Dun Empire's greatest advantage was that situated far in the south, they had no other natural threat. With their backs facing the ocean, they also had one relatively protected border in that sense. Furthermore, access to the oceans provided another source of wealth if used properly. After all these years of peace, their calm and unhurried advancement allowed them to have perhaps nearly as much wealth as the ZhongTian Empire.

...

Heaven's Expanse Palace.

"What are the Dan Dun trying to do exactly?" Shangguan Tianyue's brow was furrowed deeply as he stalked back and forth in the grandhall.

Shangguan Tianyang remained seated in his main seat, his brow also furrowed as he remained deep in thought.

"Big bro, what are we going to do? To the north, there is that old tiger in the WanShou Empire, and now in the south the Dan Dun Empire is also starting to cause trouble. Should we teach them a lesson?"

Shangguan Tianyang looked at Shangguan Tianyue calmly before shaking his head, saying: "How are we going to teach them a less? Unless we make a show of force with the Heaven's Expanse Palace, it will be extremely difficult to do so. All this while, we have neglected the Dan Dun Empire too much! This time, they have shown their fangs, and only now we have seen the true strength of the Dan Dun Empire. You and I know very well how strong the Geritimo Empire is, and to be able to successfully conquer such a vast territory in such a short time, what does that prove? It can

only show the Dan Dun Empire's power and combat abilities.”

“All along, we have thought that the Dan Dun Empire and Geritimo Empire at the south should not pose much threat. After all, although they are able to advance and grow peacefully, it is also the lack of wars that does not allow them to have any chance to train their troops in actual battle. In terms of fighting capabilities, their soldiers should technically be far weaker than ours. However, it looks like we have greatly underestimated them, and that is truly a mistake. The combat prowess of the Dan Dun Empire is far above our original judgement. I believe that has to do with the support of the Blood Red Hell, only then can such events occur. These few years... the entire Mainland has truly not been peaceful at all! First, the destruction of the Heavenly Bow Empire, now the invasion of the Geritimo Empire. If this goes on, even if the WanShou Empire does not attack us, our Human Empires will be embroiled in chaos and internal fighting. At least, currently it seems like the Dan Dun Empire has grown to big to be effective... but even so, since most of our troops are focused on the north, and the Dan Dun Empire already has an army that numbers more than a million strong, it will be too difficult for us to move troops over to suppress them.”

Shangguan Tianyue also sighed. “Indeed! It is truly too difficult for us to extend or move our forces. However, can we really just sit back and watch the Dan Dun Empire create havoc in the south?”

Shangguan Tianyue furrowed his brow once more, saying: “If it is just the Dan Dun Empire, it isn't a big deal. At the most, we both can personally move over to take some action. The worrying thing to me now is that it isn't just the Dan Dun Empire causing trouble alone. Haven't you seen something weird in the current situation? In this matter, the Bai Da Empire was just too quiet right? They are also direct neighbours to the Dan Dun Empire, and it should normally be impossible for them to not protest over such a serious incident. If... the Bai Da Empire and Dan Dun Empire have allied

themselves in an effort... then ... the south might truly be in trouble... Do not forget the ambitions the Bai Da Empire had shown previously with the Kalise Empire...”

Hearing Shangguan Tianyang’s analysis, Shangguan Tianyue’s expression also changed.

Far off in the south, if the Bai Da Empire and the Dan Dun Empire joined forces, they would literally be unbeatable in the region. If they were willing to do so, they could easily invade and crush the dozen or so smaller Empires around them, and the Geritimo Empire would not pose any threat to them. Once these two Empires continued expanding, they could possibly start posing a direct threat to the ZhongTian and Fei Li Empires. Yet, these two Empires would still need to face their main enemy, the WanShou Empire. Despite their strengths, facing such a situation where they were pincerred between two groups of powerful enemies, that would truly be a dangerous situation.

Shangguan Tianyang said solemnly: “Call Third Brother over as well. We need to prepare for the worst. It looks like we will have to increase our support for that little fellow Zhou Weiqing. He can be a sharp nail for us, striking savagely into the south.”

...

Fei Li Empire. South Border. The zone where the original Heavenly Bow Empire was about to begin.

From the Fei Li Empire borders, in the southwest direction slightly more than a hundred li away, there was a small city, almost a town. This small city originally belonged to the Heavenly Bow Empire, and its name was the [Crescent City](#). The city was not large at all, but its position was extremely good, with its back towards the Fei Li Empire, rolling hills and mountains to its right, and to its left was the largest river in the Heavenly Bow Empire which flowed through the entire Empire. As such, it was very well connected in terms of traffic, and was considered one of the more

prosperous cities in the entire north of the Heavenly Bow Empire. The population of the city was about two hundred thousand families, numbering slightly more than a million citizens in total. Although their city area was not large, the population density was one of the highest in the entire Heavenly Bow Empire, behind only the capital city Heavenly Bow City, and another important city to the far west of the Heavenly Bow Empire.

Twenty Li from the Crescent City, in the depths of a forested region.

Zhou Weiqing led his Peerless Regiment soldiers, silently hiding amongst the trees as they waited. There were advantages to having a small number. Since they only had seven hundred men, all of them cavalry soldiers as well, it had not been a difficult task to sneak past the borders via the Fei Li Empire and entering the (ex) Heavenly Bow Empire without being discovered.

The Peerless Regiment soldiers were all resting on the spot. All of a sudden, a figure rode in from the distance, heading directly towards Zhou Weiqing.

“Boss! Oh, uhm, Commander, I have returned.” The person was not tall, but looked shrewd and capable. He was dressed in commoner’s clothing, and he ran all the way to Zhou Weiqing before he finally stopped.

“How was it? Kou Rui, what is the situation in the XianYue City?” Zhou Weiqing asked smilingly.

The one who had arrived before Zhou Weiqing was his old classmates in the Fei Li Military Academy, Kou Rui. As the Heavenly Bow Empire diplomatic party arrived in the Fei Li City, Zhou Weiqing had prematurely ended the three-year promise he had with his classmates, bringing those willing along with him. His war to revive his Empire was about to begin, and all sorts of talents were of great importance to him.

Kou Rui had always been adept at intelligence gathering, and he

was a great scout. However, this was still the first time that he had actually been on an actual scouting mission that wasn't a lesson, and he couldn't help but feel extremely excited.

“Commander, I have investigated the situation in the Crescent City in full detail. I'm not sure if it is because the Kalise Empire thinks that the Fei Li Empire would never attack them, or for some other reason, the defenses in the Crescent City are far weaker than we had even expected. The garrisoned troops in the city number only three Battalions, three thousand in total. Furthermore, they usually cycle their rounds for guards, and the normal number of soldiers guarding the gates and walls would be only a thousand men. They are all the Kalise Empire soldiers.”

As he said that, Kou Rui squatted down, grabbing a small twig on the ground and drawing a simple diagram of the layout of the defenses and the normal positions of the enemy soldiers.

“According to the information that I heard, the nearest camp or garrison to the Crescent City is at least a hundred li away, there is an entire Regiment of soldiers there. However, from the time for them to send news and return, the fastest possible time they can get here would be four hours. Possibly more.”

Kou Rui displayed his talents as an outstanding scout, acquitting his duties with conscientious professionalism. Furthermore, he only provided the information that he had scouted out in detail, not mixing in any of his own opinions. That was not the job of a scout.”

Zhou Weiqing thought for a moment, then said: “Alright, very good. Thank you. Since we have already fully verified the situation, then it is time for us to take action. Lei Zi.”

“Here.” The First Main Company's Company Leader Lei Zi appeared swiftly before Zhou Weiqing. The wild and intractable nature he had when he had first entered the Peerless Battalion had now vanished. It was not that he had taken too many blows, but

because he truly loved the atmosphere and environment of the Peerless Regiment. Although the training was tough, their treatment was also top notch, so much so that he had never even heard of such a thing. Of course, the greatest attraction was still the Consolidating Equipment Scrolls and Stored Skills.

More importantly, towards this young Commander of theirs, Zhou Weiqing, he truly felt a strong sense of respect and heartfelt admiration. Even a nine-Jeweled stage Heavenly Jewel Master, he was still able to take him down. Lei Zi knew he would not be able to do such a thing.

In the entire Peerless Regiment, Lei Zi's power was definitely one of the top ranked. Not long ago, he had just broken through to the seven-Jeweled stage, being a Low Level Zong Stage Heavenly Jewel Master.

“Lei Zi, I want you to choose fifty of the strongest brothers with high cultivation level. Disguise yourselves to enter the Crescent City. When we launch our attack from outside, your mission is to lead these brothers to open the city gate.”

“Understood!” Lei Zi was overjoyed. Such an [auspicious](#) job, he was more than happy to do so. It was after all just a small city, and with the opponents likely being only three thousand ordinary soldiers, most likely without even any Jewel Masters... as a Low Level Zong Stage Heavenly Jewel Master, he was confident of completing this mission even alone, let alone with fifty of his strongest brothers.

Zhou Weiqing glared at him and said: “Do not be too complacent. This is an extremely important fight, and we cannot afford to make any mistakes. Not only do I want you to open the gates, I want you to ensure that all fifty one of you are unharmed. Otherwise, you can wait to be punished by the military code. If your mission is completed well, once we occupy the city, any gold we gain from the three thousand soldiers, the bunch of you can get five percent.”

Lei Zi grinned and said: “Heh heh, Boss, do not worry. We are all tough ones who treasure our lives so much, with these trash from the Kalise Empire, are they even capable of injuring us?”

Lei Zi headed off to prepare, and Tian’er moved beside Zhou Weiqing with interest. “Little Fatty, how are you planning to invade this city later?”

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly, looking composed and confident as if he had an ace up his sleeve. “This commander naturally has my own brilliant schemes.”

One hour later, when the Peerless Regiment warriors were starting to move out, Tian’er stared at Zhou Weiqing with her jaw agape as she listened to him give the order. “This is your so-called brilliant scheme?...”

The order that Zhou Weiqing had given was unbelievably simple. Two words. “[Charge!](#)”

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “Silly girl, sometimes people over-complicate things... it is exactly when they start thinking too much that things become complicated.”

Quite an interesting name (弦月City, or XianYue. Together it means crescent, but Xian refers to bow or bow string, and Yue refers to moon, just thought it was poetic for the Heavenly Bow Empire to have such a city name 😊)

I suspect a play on words here, the phrase for auspicious is literally ‘开门红’ or ‘Open door Red’ It can also mean ‘a good beginning’

It’s two words in mandarin (冲锋)

Chapter 194 Crescent City! (3)

“In truth, to invade such a small city who are not even prepared for us, do we really need any strategy? Let me ask you... can their arrows penetrate our defenses? It is most likely a resounding no. Furthermore, the city gates will soon be open from within... besides charging as fast as we can, what else can we do?”

Under Zhou Weiqing's command, the Peerless Regiment soldiers entered their formation. The Gold Crow and Berserker Tribe Heavy Cavalry soldiers were in front, and the four hundred and fifty Peerless Cavalry behind. Zhou Weiqing and the classmates that he had brought from the Fei Li City remained behind the main troop. For this particular fight, they would not even be needed to join in. Zhou Weiqing wanted to let them familiarize themselves with how the Peerless Regiment soldiers fought, at the same time displaying to them the sheer power of their Peerless Regiment.

...

Crescent City. City Walls.

A group of patrolling soldiers strolled about lazily on the city walls. Technically, they were supposed to be on shift for eight hours before the guard would change, but in truth, it was already considered very good when [there were three or four Companies in total on guard](#). Most of the Kalise soldiers were complacently resting in their barracks.

The Crescent City was a prosperous city with good positioning, and thus there were many visitors, especially traveling merchants, and it was without doubt that income was good. Taxes aside, which had to be sent back to the Kalise Empire, just the soldiers charging for entrance fee was already a rather large sum of gold and income for them.

“Eh? Did you all hear something?” One of the soldiers with sharper ears suddenly asked.

“I think so as well, rolling sounds of thunder... is it going to rain?” Another soldier said, even looking up into the skies. However, it was currently mid afternoon, and the skies were clear, bright and sunny with not even a cloud in sight. The weather was definitely good... what rain was there?”

The Kalise soldiers were all puzzled, as the sound of rolling thunder grew more and more obvious.

All of a sudden, one of the soldiers’ expression changed. “Could it be... cavalry soldiers?!”

As he spoke those words, in the distance, a brilliant glint of reflected sunlight flashed into their eyes.

It was the titanium mail of the Peerless Regiment Cavalry soldiers, reflecting light as they charged! More so, the two hundred Heavy Cavalry soldiers right in front were like majestic beasts charging forth.

The speed of the Unicorn Heavenly Beasts were far superior than any ordinary warhorses, even if they were carrying the thousand jin Gold Crow and Berserker Tribe warriors.

“Enemies...! We are under attack!!” Screams and shouts began to rang out from the city walls, and the alarms soon began to ring as well.

For a time, chaos reigned upon the city walls. Ever since they had invaded and conquered the Heavenly Bow Empire, these Kalise soldiers had enjoyed peace and quiet in the Crescent City for too long. This sudden surprise attack from these unknown cavalry soldiers caused them to fall into a panic, the city walls thrown into confusion.

One of the Company Leaders was relatively calm. “Do not panic, hurry up, remember your training! Prepare the ballista, archers get into position! Hurry, hurry! You there, get the brothers below to shut the city gates immediately!”

Just as he was shouting out a flurry of commands, all of a sudden, a soldier beside him stared wildly into the skies, pointing as he yelled: “Wha... What is that?!”

A few dozen figures had somehow floated in the skies. They had wings behind their backs, and in that instant, a shower of death rained down from the skies.

In just a single salvo of arrows, all the soldiers around the eight ballista lined up along the city walls fell down. Some of the Kalise Empire soldiers with quicker reactions raised their bows returned fire.

Alas, shooting arrows down from a vantage position was different from firing it upwards at such a distance. Let alone with most of their range was insufficient to reach the flying figures, even if their arrows could reach them, how could they possibly break through the titanium mail of the Peerless Regiment soldiers?

For the sake of stability and safety, to prevent the ballista from causing any potential problems, Zhou Weiqing had specially arranged for another fifty Peerless Regiment soldiers to fly into the air to give the soldiers on the city wall a heavy blow. Furthermore, it would also be a good distraction for Lei Zi’s force inside.

Almost at the exact same time, the city gates below were also in a mess. At this moment, Lei Zi was leading his fifty Peerless Regiment soldiers, clearing away the Kalise Empire soldiers guarding it like they were [cutting melons and cabbages](#). Fifty Jewel Masters, what kind of notion was that? That was already the sum of the Heavenly Bow Empire’s total number of Jewel Masters in the past! Towards ordinary soldiers, it was akin to wasting talents on trivial tasks, with not the least bit of suspense at all towards the completion of the task.

Zhou Weiqing’s voice suddenly rang out in all the Peerless Regiment soldiers’ ears. “All of you better listen carefully. Once we enter the city, besides the Kalise soldiers, you are not to kill anyone

or rob anyone. Otherwise, you will be strictly dealt with in our military code. It is not that Your Father, I, am unreasonable, but this is my homeland. Once we revive my homeland, and it is time to counterattack and invade the Kalise Empire, or even the Bai Da Empire, there will be chance for you to loot and plunder all you wish. Now, charge with all your might! Those who attempt to stop you, slaughter them all!”

Suppression from the air, control of the city gates... In the end, the Peerless Regiment soldiers’ charge did not meet with much resistance at all. The arrows from the few Kalise archers who actually managed to shoot at them were just like a mere joke, so much so that the Heavy Cavalry soldiers in front did not even bother swinging their weapons at the arrows, allowing the arrows to bounce off their armour.

By the time the garrisoned troops in the Crescent City had begun to react, the Peerless Regiment had already charged into through the open city gates. What followed next was just a pure one-sided slaughterfest.

Towards these Kalise Empire soldiers who were occupying his homeland, Zhou Weiqing did not hold any thoughts of being lenient. If one came, he would kill one. If two arrived, he would slay the pair.

Even the powerful WanShou Empire armies and their terrifying combat prowess had failed against the Peerless Regiment, let alone these ordinary soldiers from the Kalise Empire. Within a short period of a mere hour, more than a thousand of the garrisoned Kalise Empire soldiers had died, with the remaining surrendered.

For Kou Rui, Yan Zhexi, these classmates that had followed Zhou Weiqing from the Fei Li Military Academy, they were all staring at the sight before them with their mouths agape, totally dumbfounded. This battle had totally overturned the military knowledge they had learned in the past few years!

Just like Zhou Weiqing had told Tian'er, this was a battle which needed no strategy. Simple, direct, a headon clash. Yet, the result was a complete victory, perhaps 'crushing' victory would even be more apt. As the saying goes, what you hear may be false, but what you see is true... Zhou Weiqing had used actions to prove to them that following this big bro was definitely a right choice.

After taking care of all the defending troops, Zhou Weiqing immediately issued a series of fresh commands. "Close all the city gates, and I want fifty men each stationed on all four walls. Do not let anyone leave the city at all. Lei Zi, lead a squad of brothers to the Governor's Abode. Bring all the officials of the Crescent City to see me. All of you, when you are acting on these orders, shout out this slogan as you do so. As loud as you can. 'Princess Difuya has returned, along with the Heavenly Bow Empire's Peerless Regiment to revive our homeland! Heavenly Bow has returned!'"

Previously, even when he had first set up the Peerless Battalion, Zhou Weiqing had already started to prepare for the future, of possible avenues of attacks for reviving the Heavenly Bow Empire. Indeed, though the Heavenly Bow Empire was considered small, they still had quite a number of cities. This Crescent City had been specially chosen by Zhou Weiqing to be his first target. Of course, the caveat for that was that he needed to gain the support of the Fei Li Empire first. In this way, the Crescent City would have the Fei Li Empire to its back, and supply lines ensured, leaving it a good place to be a primary base.

Although the Peerless Regiment was extremely powerful and seemingly glorious all around, they definitely had their own weak points as well. The most glaring one was that they did not have their own logistics and supply team. In the ZhongTian Empire's Northwest Army camp, that point was an issue as they had the full support of the Northwest Army. However, now that it was a full campaign to revive the Heavenly Bow Empire on their own, it was not possible to hope that the ZhongTian Empire would continue to

send them supplies, and they could only depend on themselves. Everything else aside, even having their daily meals would be a problem.

As such, Zhou Weiqing's first plan was to set up a stable base and foundation for them to take care of any supplies and logistic issues. At the same time, it would serve to begin announcing themselves to the Heavenly Bow Empire borders, to recruit the warriors and fighters of the Heavenly Bow Empire who were scattered throughout. Gradually, as their foundation stabilized and they grew, they could continue with further plans and follow-up actions.

As for the orders he had just issued, it could be said to be rather simple but ingenious. Firstly, not allowing anyone to leave the city would delay the arrival of any enemy troops. As for the slogan he had his men yell out, it was naturally to calm the populace down, and to sow the seeds of his recruitment plans. After all, he currently only had seven hundred men, and if he had to use them to maintain law and order, it was rather insufficient for an entire city. He couldn't possibly use the Gold Crow and Berserker Tribe members as a policing force either, their size and stature would give most ordinary people a scare. As such, shouting out such a slogan was a relatively effective method. In the first place, the Kalise Empire's occupation of the Heavenly Bow Empire was not that long yet, and the Heavenly Bow Empire had always treated its citizens well. Zhou Weiqing believed that the overall sentiment of the people would still be slightly inclined towards the Heavenly Bow Empire.

Breaching and occupying a single city could be said to be very simple for the current Peerless Regiment soldiers. However, the continued control and maintenance of said city was a very different matter, especially to use it as a stable base; that was truly not an easy task. However, Zhou Weiqing was not in a rush at all. All he needed to do with his seven hundred men was to fortify

their defenses and spread the news that Princess Difuya had returned together with him, leading a strong army to revive the Heavenly Bow Empire. At the same time, he would have to establish supply lines with the Fei Li Empire. Once all of that was arranged, only then could he begin the actual fighting to revive their homeland.

With the city coming under attack so suddenly, citizens would usually learn of such news later. Most of them only realised the Crescent City had been under attack when they heard the shouts of the slogan.

Princess Difuya of the Heavenly Bow Empire had returned with an army? They were looking to revive the Empire? Very quickly, the news spread in a short time over the entire Crescent City.

The effect was even better than Zhou Weiqing had expected. Before long, the entire city had calmed down, and there were no disturbances at all. However, the traffic in the city had almost disappeared, all the houses with closed doors and sealed windows, as if afraid that they might be caught up any fighting or battles.

With Zhou Weiqing's strict orders in mind, the Peerless Regiment soldiers only guarded the city gates and walls, and did not violate any of the people's interests. Of course, the exception were the three thousand Kalise Empire soldiers. Besides their arms and weaponry, all of their gold was also seized. Zhou Weiqing did not keep anything, splitting everything between his men.

The Peerless Regiment had after all come from the Ruffian Battalions, and though their loyalty to him was already extremely high, and he no longer needed to use wealth as a binding tool, he did not remove any good treatments to them.

Very soon, the Governor of the Crescent City and the other officials were brought in front of Zhou Weiqing. After some questioning, Zhou Weiqing quickly understood the current status and situation that the Crescent City was in, and he ordered for

these officials to be kept under guard for now. At the same time, he got some official notices to be made and posted throughout the city.

The notices were very simple, listing all the officials of the Crescent City. He had men stationed at the notices, allowing the citizens to make reports on how good or bad these officials were. At the end, he could use that information to decide who he could continue using, or if any were traitors or did too many ill deeds, he would kill them. It was as simple as that.

In terms of governing and maintaining a city, Zhou Weiqing did not know anything about doing so. However, many of the current officials in the were not from the Kalise Empire, and many of the middle to lower officials were originally from the Heavenly Bow Empire. As such, he would only need to remove some of the Kalise officers in the upper echelons, as well as weeding out some of the other rotten ones. What Zhou Weiqing needed was for the entire city to resume its usual operations perfectly, and not just a simple occupation. At the same time, he also sent news that under their new command, the taxes in the entire city would be waived for a year.

Previously the information Kou Rui scouted out was the 'technical' shift of 1000 guards, so they are saying only 300-400 are actually present at most times

Literal translation, basically means with great ease

Chapter 195 Peerless Heavy Cavalry! (1)

From the Crescent City officials, Zhou Weiqing had learned that when the Kalise Empire had occupied the Heavenly Bow Empire, they had greatly increased the tax rates. All the commoners and merchants were extremely angry about it, but under military suppression, they dared not even protest. This was also the reason why the entire city had been relative quiet even after learning about the Heavenly Bow Empire's counterattack and reoccupation.

As Zhou Weiqing's orders came into play one after the other, the citizens of the Crescent City slowly calmed down and they finally dared to come out of their houses. Without question, the Peerless Regiment soldiers had given them a very good impression in these past days.

By the time the Kalise Empire received news about the Crescent City, it was already three days since the attack. In this three days, although Zhou Weiqing couldn't say that he had already gained full control over the city, at least it was tentatively back in working order. Of course, that was still only within the city. For now at least, he still kept the gates sealed, not allowing anyone to leave.

The governor's mansion had now become Zhou Weiqing's temporary headquarters. As for Princess Difuya, Zhou Weiqing left Xiao Yan to take care of her. As long as she did not interfere in his matters, he did not need to bother with her.

"Commander, our scouts have spotted an entire Regiment of Kalise Empire forces camped about thirty kilometres from our Crescent City. They might attack us at anytime." Kou Rui brought in the latest news.

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: "Roger. Thank you. Kou Rui, bring a few brothers to detour around and scout them carefully. I want you to see the surrounding areas as well. Take care to check if they have really only sent a single Regiment."

Kou Rui nodded as he received the orders, leaving to execute them.

Currently, in the main hall that they were using as an administrative assembly room, besides Zhou Weiqing, Shangguan Xue'er, Tian'er, Lin TianAo, Lei Zi, Crow and Ma Qun were all there, as well as Yan Zhexi and the other elite classmates of Zhou Weiqing's class. At this moment, Yan Zhexi had assumed temporary leadership of the class of military students.

Zhou Weiqing's gaze turned to Yan Zhexi and he said: "Zhexi, what do you think about the current situation?"

Yan Zhexi said: "From the current situation, I believe that the Kalise Empire has only sent that single Regiment. After all, the Bai Da Empire aside, the Kalise Empire only has a total army strength of ten Regiments. Furthermore, they would be separated to the various parts of the Empire, as well as their own homeland. This time, our attack must have come as a great surprise to them, and we have managed to seal any news of the attack. They should not know our current numbers or strength. I believe that we currently do not need to worry about any of their reinforcements for now. What we need to do now is to entrench ourselves and fortify our position, to defend it until the Fei Li Empire can send their logistic troops with supplies."

Pausing for a moment, he continued: "However, this is only a short term solution. Commander, should we begin recruiting troops? Although our army is extremely powerful, we only number seven hundred in total. If more enemies come, and that is an eventual outcome, they can attack us from all directions. Once our forces are split up, it will be extremely difficult for us to withstand a sustained attack. I propose that we begin recruiting soldiers, and with the core of the Peerless Regiment soldiers leading some new recruits on each wall, we will be able to put up a proper full defense."

Hearing Yan Zhexi's analysis which was reasonable, clear and

logical, Zhou Weiqing nodded in satisfaction as he said: “Your suggestion is not bad. However, the current hearts and minds of the people are still not stabilized, and it is not a suitable time to begin recruitment yet. In terms of military command, I am no match for you all, but do keep in mind that in the long run, the hearts and minds of the citizens is the most important. To put it simply, if you are currently just a normal citizen, and your city has just been invaded by a group of soldiers. Even if these soldiers were once belonging to the city, before you can ascertain their strength, whether or not they have a future, whether or not they can provide you with safety, to protect your city... would you actually be willing to join up with them? When the enemy comes to attack, that will be the time for us to prove ourselves and start building the Crescent City citizen’s confidence in us.”

Hearing Zhou Weiqing’s words, Yan Zhexi nodded slowly, as if deep in thought. At last, he asked: “In that case, Commander, what should we do?” In terms of military studies, even ten Zhou Weiqing’s could not compare with him. However, he had never been on an actual battlefield, and he definitely needed actual combat experience, to marry his theoretical knowledge along with experience to have a truly comprehensive understanding and mastery of military matters.

Zhou Weiqing said confidently, as if he had already thought everything through: “Lei Zi, get some men to invite two hundred citizens as representatives. If you are not able to get enough volunteers, grab and ‘persuade’ them to do so. However, I do not want you to injure anyone. I want these two hundred citizens to be able to watch our incoming battle from a good vantage point of the city walls, so try to make sure that there are representatives from all walks of life, hopefully every trade and industry as well. Crow, Ma Qun, this is time for you to shine. If I were to get you two to lead your two hundred Tribesmen to charge and defeat an entire enemy Regiment, do you all dare to do so? Would you have confidence in victory?”

Ma Qun laughed heartily and said: “Boss, in that case, does that mean that if we achieve victory, we will be able to gain a larger percentage of loot?”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily as well, saying: “of course, you all will get forty percent of it all, with the rest split amongst the other five hundred brothers. I want you to achieve a resounding and beautiful victory, to charge and show the might of our Peerless Regiment. More importantly, I want the morale of our people! As for how you two wish to conduct the battle, I’ll leave it to you two to command. However, do remember not to charge into their camp, in case of any traps or unforeseen ambushes. At the same time, make sure you all do not overextend and leave energy to return safely.”

“For the retreat, I will have our top archers to cover you. This fight, I want to build our reputation and prestige, not only to boost our morale, reputation amongst the citizens, but also to crush the enemy’s morale.”

Ma Qun thumped his chest confidently. “Boss, leave it to us. Ever since our Peerless Heavy Cavalry has been set up, we have never met a fight too tough for us. Isn’t it just a Regiment? We might not be able to slaughter them all, but [to charge in and out seven times](#) is not a big deal.”

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: “Very good, you two go and prepare then.”

Ma Qun and Crow strode out in large steps, and Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly as he looked at the others, saying: “Come on then, brothers, follow me to the top of the city walls.”

Yan Zhexi could not hold back, saying: “Commander, are you really asking Ma Qun and Crow to lead two hundred out of the city to attack the enemies? They have an entire Regiment!”

Zhou Weiqing laughed and said: “[No matter how many ants there are, they can never kill an elephant with their bites.](#)”

Although the current strength of our Peerless Regiment is not actually a full formation of a normal Regiment, these trash from the Kalise Empire I do not really take into account. Just wait and see, this time, you will truly witness the real strength of the Peerless Heavy Cavalry. I want the Kalise Empire to truly fear our Peerless Regiment, to tremble from just the sound of our names.”

The last sentence, Zhou Weiqing said grimly with great resolution. He truly hated the Kalise Empire men for invading his homeland, forcing his father to use such a desperate skill that would harm himself. As his own cultivation level grew, Zhou Weiqing began to understand the price his father would have to pay to use such a Sealing Skill. Perhaps, in the future, Zhou Weiqing might be able to remove the Seal, but as the user of the Darkness Consolidated Fate Denying Seal... even Long Shiya did not have the confidence to keep Admiral Zhou alive.

This was also an important reason why Zhou Weiqing wanted to keep close ties with the Heavenly Demon Sect. All other reasons aside, he knew that the core of the Heavenly Demon Sect had the Life Attribute. Tian'er's Divine Attribute and Long Shiya's power could perhaps have a chance to keep his father alive, but if he truly wanted to help him recover, he would definitely need the support and aid of the Life Attribute. Even if it were just this reason alone, Zhou Weiqing would definitely keep good terms with the Heavenly Demon Sect. Of course, for negotiation's sake, he would not reveal this fact to them too early.

After all, Zhou Weiqing had never been an ambitious person. One could even say that his character was rather lazy. For him to have his current achievements, a lot of it was forced out of him through all sorts of different pressures and stresses. Especially the fall of the Heavenly Bow Empire and his parents and godfather's loss, that was a massive influence on him.

Lei Zi's working efficiency was high, and since Zhou Weiqing had allowed him to use more 'persuasive' forceful means, he had sent

all five hundred of his Peerless Regiment First Main Company out to do as ordered. In just a short period of time, they had succeeded beyond even his requirements. Just a short while after Zhou Weiqing and the others had ascended the city walls, at least three to four hundred citizens had been grabbed up onto the wall as well.

“Boss, mission accomplished.” Lei Zi grinned as he sidled closer to Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing glanced at him and said: “This is far more than two hundred eh? Well, get all the brothers up on the walls. I want each one to personally be in charge of a single citizen. Ensure that they open their eyes wide and watch everything that happens outside the city walls. Tell them who our Peerless Regiment fellows are. At the same time, be prepared to receive Ma Qun and the others when they return.”

Lei Zi said in a slightly upset tone: “Boss, why don’t you let us go! It’s just a mere Regiment, it wouldn’t be a problem for us five hundred as well! Just kiting them alone, we are confident of killing them all.”

Zhou Weiqing said: “The art of kiting takes a lot of skill, but for ordinary citizens, the visual impact and shock of it will not be as impressive. Furthermore, if anything amiss occurs, do you think the Heavy Cavalry and their speed will be able to support you in time? On the contrary, you all will be able to support them if anything comes up. Alright, enough. Follow your orders.”

“Yes sir.”

Yan Zhexi had followed Zhou Weiqing all the way and was standing by his side. Looking at the enemies in the distance, he muttered: “Commander, if we truly have sufficient power to take these enemies on directly, it is a good way to prevent them from surrounding us and causing us trouble by splitting our forces.”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “Indeed, that is also my goal. Well, once our main forces arrive, we will also be relieved of

such an awkward position. Oh by the way, how goes the recruitment of temporary army cooks and other logistical positions?”

Yan Zhexi said: “Basically we have gathered enough army cooks. The Heavenly Bow Empire does indeed hold the hearts of the populace. Although many still maintain a suspicious attitude, but there are those who already accept us and are willing to give us help in our fight against the Kalise Empire. In fact, there are already some who wish to join up in the army, which is the reason why I was asking about actual recruitment.”

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: “Good, but there is no rush for recruitment yet. Let’s wait until everything is stabilized before we discuss it. I want every single citizen of the Crescent City to know that not only is the Heavenly Bow Empire back, we also have a powerful army that can crush the Kalise Empire. When they have true confidence in us, full acceptance of us, that will be a cohesive unity that will reforge the entire Crescent City. In truth, our return is already a lot earlier than all my previous expectations, so I am not too worried or urgent. Taking things a step at a time is the best method currently.

Before long, all the preparations had been made. The five hundred archers of the Peerless Regiment First Main Company stood in a row along the wall. The citizens which had been brought up stood along with them, not knowing why they were here. All of them stood there with mixed emotions, many trembling in fear as they looked at the warriors in gleaming mail armour beside them.

“Send orders to Ma Qun and Crow, set up formation outside the city!”

The city gates opened, and the two hundred Heavy Cavalry soldiers rode out. For a small city like the Crescent City, there was no moat, and naturally there was no need for any drawbridge. The citizens on top of the wall saw the massive bodies appearing outside the city, and they couldn’t help but stare dazedly. In the

distance, the Kalise Empire soldiers also saw the movement. Those warriors in heavy armor was just too huge and robust looking, and standing together they seemed like a wall of metal... and their warhorses... why did they have wings!? Those mounts were so huge, and they also had their own armour... Were they Heavy Cavalry? But... that didn't seem exactly right...?

Right at that moment, Zhou Weiqing's voice rang out across the entire city wall, loud and clear.

An idiom that references the famous scene in the Romance of the Three Kingdoms novel where General Zhao Yun charges seven times through the ranks of Cao Cao's armies

This is actually an idiom, but I was curious and went to research about army ants, though it looks like the horror stories I heard about them were greatly exaggerated 😊

Chapter 195 Peerless Heavy Cavalry! (2)

“My dear brethren of the Crescent City, I apologize if any of my soldiers were rude or rough when they were inviting you up to the walls. The reason I have invited all of you here is to witness a victory that belongs to us all, a victory that belongs to our Heavenly Bow Empire”

“First of all, let me introduce myself. My name is Zhou Weiqing. Perhaps most, if not all, of you will not be familiar with my name. However, I am sure all of you know another name... the Admiral Zhou of our Heavenly Bow Empire... who is my Father. In order to protect the rest of the Royal Family, my old man used his strongest self-sacrificial Sealing abilities to Seal the entire Palace.”

“Now, Princess Difuya has returned, and I have also returned by her side as her General. These Kalise bastards have invaded our homeland, and only blood can wash away that disgrace and humiliation. I am sure you fellow brethren will have some worries about our power, and as the saying goes, it is best to see for yourselves. Currently, beyond our walls, you all can see that the Kalise Empire has sent a full Regiment of soldiers to attack our Crescent City once more. Now, we will use our actions and absolute power to let you know that... our Heavenly Bow Empire is back. We will definitely revive our homeland once more! Our previous official notices have already been posted, and taxes will be waived for a year. This... right here... shall be the beginnings of our Empire’s revival. Today, not long from now, the Crescent City’s name will be inscribed in the history books, and you will soon be proud to be the citizens of this city!”

With his Heavenly Energy voice transference, Zhou Weiqing’s voice clearly transmitted to every single one of the citizens’ ears. When he said that he was Admiral Zhou’s son, the original frightened citizens clearly calmed down. In the entire Empire, Admiral Zhou could be said to be one of the most famous...

everyone knew him to be the previous great guardian of the previous Heavenly Bow Empire, and he had fought off the Kalise Empire for decades. The reputation of Admiral Zhou was extremely high and well respected amongst all the citizens, and at least now, in their eyes, there was less fear and some hope rekindled.

“Ma Qun, Crow, move out.” As he said that, Zhou Weiqing’s foot tapped lightly on the ground, launching him off the city walls. As the citizens cried out in surprise, he abruptly entered the Dragon-Tiger Transformation state, the massive pair of wings spreading out behind his back, keeping him aloft in midair.

This would be their first real fight since their return. As the commander, how could Zhou Weiqing stay out of this one? With a few flaps of his wings, he appeared right above the two hundred Heavy Cavalry. Under Ma Qun and Crow’s command, the two hundred Heavy Cavalry soldiers formed another snake like formation, moving out slowly as they bore down towards the Kalise Empire army lines.

Kalise Empire Sixth Regiment. Temporary Headquarters.

“Have you all managed to check who these people are who attacked the Crescent City?” The Kalise Empire Sixth Regiment Commander Zeng Jian said with a gloomy and overcast expression on his face.

“Regiment Commander Sir, from the looks of the flag on the city walls, it looks to be those conquered fools from the Heavenly Bow Empire.”

“They managed to seal the city gates in time, and none of the garrisoned soldiers guarding the city managed to escape. As such, we currently do not know their actual numbers. If not for the fact that some of our men who were supposed to return from the Crescent City did not come back, we might not have gotten the news of the Crescent City being attacked and occupied until much

later.”

“Trash. What a bunch of trash! Just a mere Crescent City and they weren’t able to defend it.” Zeng Jian said angrily as he slammed his palm on the table. As the Commander of the Kalise Empire Sixth Regiment, he had naturally been part of the original invasion of the Heavenly Bow Empire. In the Kalise Empire, he had a nickname of ‘Fox’, and was a cunning presence on the battlefield. On the surface, he might seem like he was in a rage, but in truth, when he heard his scouts’ reports, he had secretly heaved a sigh of relief. The thing he was most afraid of was actually that the attacking force was from the Fei Li Empire. After all, this was still very close to the Fei Li Empire borders. He did not think just the mere force of a single Regiment was enough to face off against the Fei Li Empire.

Before they had rushed here to the Crescent City, Zeng Jian had already dispatched a large number of scouts all around the Fei Li Empire border. It was exactly because of his worry that the Fei Li Empire had invaded them in force that he dared not directly launch a counterattack against the Crescent City. However, from the current looks of things, the Fei Li Empire border was extremely quiet, with not a sign of any military activity. If it was just a group of Heavenly Bow Empire survivors who had seized a chance to launch a surprise attack, even if they had succeeded once, he was not worried at all. In fact, during the period which the Kalise Empire had occupied the Heavenly Bow Empire, such a situation had already happened a few times, though perhaps not to such a degree. Even so, it was just a matter of surrounding and destroying them, and it would even reap him some military achievements.

“Report.” A scout ran in front outside, kneeling down on a single knee.

“Yes, speak.” Zeng Jian said coldly.

“Regiment Commander, the Crescent City seems to have some movement. Two Companies of Heavy Cavalry soldiers have moved

out from the city and are headed towards our camp. Currently, we are not sure what their goal is.”

Even the scout did not think that their opponent would send a mere two hundred soldiers against them. Wasn't that tantamount to suicide?

“Heavy Cavalry soldiers?” Zeng Jian started momentarily, a hint of nervousness on his face. Naturally, heavy cavalry soldiers were beyond any ordinary soldiers, usually elites who had been chosen and formed with piles of gold.

“What designation do they hold? Are they from the Fei Li Empire?” Zeng Jian asked with slight tension.

“No Sir, the designation they display seems to be that of the old Heavenly Bow Empire.” The reply came.

Zeng Jian gave a cold smirk and said: “Very good, it's good that they aren't from the Fei Li Empire. In that case, it seems like these two hundred soldiers are here to negotiate? Fools! Would their Father, I, actually be willing to negotiate? No matter what, let's 'eat up' these two hundred heavy cavalry soldiers before we do anything else. Heh heh heh, two hundred sets of heavy cavalry equipment... heh heh.” Pausing a while, he continued: “Send my orders, I want four of our strongest Heavy Cavalry Companies to move out against them, with light cavalry Companies flanking the sides as support. I want to annihilate all two hundred of those enemies with a crushing victory. Move, let us hold the fort on the side and watch.”

As he gave the order, Zeng Jian led the group of Sixth Regiment officers as they left their temporary headquarter tent.

The Peerless Heavy Cavalry soldiers did not advance quickly. Firstly, it was to conserve energy so that they could burst forth with power later, and also to hide the capabilities of their mounts. As they grew closer to the enemy camp, Zhou Weiqing was still floating above them in midair. His heart felt like it was aflame,

burning with righteous rage. It was these Kalise Empire bastards who had invaded his homeland, and it was time for them to pay in blood.

Right at that moment, the gates of the Kalise Camp opened wide, and a large number of soldiers charged out. The first out of the gate were four Heavy Cavalry Companies, totally four hundred soldiers. Right after them came an entire Battalion of light cavalry soldiers, charging swiftly to catch up with their compatriots in a flanking maneuver, as the entire group bore down upon Zhou Weiqing and his two hundred men.

For a small Empire like the Kalise Empire, for a Regiment Formation to have four Heavy Cavalry Companies was already considered very good. It could be said that Zeng Jian had dispatched the strongest of his core elite soldiers directly, with the goal of minimizing losses. As for Zeng Jian himself, he led two thousand ordinary infantry soldiers and four Companies of Heavy Infantry soldiers numbering four hundred, advancing behind the cavalry party as a backup support to hold the lines.

“Commander, things do not seem right! Look, the opposing Heavy Cavalry soldiers seem to look very different.” All of a sudden, Zeng Jian’s Vice Commander at his side said to him quietly.

Since the Vice Commander had already noticed it, Zeng Jian had also seen it for himself. After all, he was an old hand on the battlefield, and as the Peerless Heavy Cavalry entered his view, he couldn’t help but draw a deep cold breath.

On the battlefield, there were just some things that were afraid of being compared and contrasted. Both sides were Heavy Cavalry soldiers, but just from outward appearance alone, the four hundred Heavy Cavalry soldiers on the Kalise side paled in comparison to the Peerless Heavy Cavalry soldiers!

The simplest comparison would just be in terms of their height.

Though both were Heavy Cavalry soldiers, the mounted Kalise Empire soldiers barely came up to their enemies' chest. It had to be known that these were the strongest elite forces of the Kalise Empire armies, and they were specially chosen for stature and strength. Seeing those Peerless Regiment warriors mounted upon Unicorn Heavenly Beasts, looking like demonic warriors or gods, Zeng Jian's expression changed. Where had these monsters come from? He had never even heard of such a force, not even from the Fei Li Empire! These fellows were at least two metres tall? More so, their armour looked to be just too heavy... what kind of weight was that?!

Chapter 195 Peerless Heavy Cavalry! (3)

Heavens! What on earth were they holding in their hands! Were those weapons even logical? Wasn't the standard weaponry of Heavy Cavalry soldiers the long lance? What... what are they carrying in their hands?! Oh my mother! Are those huge spiked maces? Are they fully solid? How heavy would that actually be?!

The Berserker Tribe soldiers were indeed all carrying an extra-large spiked mace. That novel weapon was even heavier than Crow's Legendary Axes. Of course, the Gold Crow Tribes had their heavy battle axes in hand as well.

Both sides had not even clashed, and in terms of aura and presence, the Peerless Heavy Cavalry soldiers had already fully suppressed their enemies.

Almost in the next instant, the Heavy Cavalry soldiers of both sides smashed savagely into each other.

Crow and Ma Qun were right in the front of their respective troops, and naturally they were the first to slam into their foes. A terrifying sight ensued immediately.

Ma Qun's twin huge spiked maces moved simply, but directly. Sweeping in front of him, he totally ignored the heavy lances that the two Kalise Empire Heavy Cavalry soldiers had pointed at him.

In the entire Boundless Mainland, all Heavy Cavalry soldiers were normally outfitted with heavy lances as their weapons. For the Kalise Empire soldiers, their heavy lances were almost four metres long, as thick as a normal human's arm. Only the strongest elite could be chosen to become Heavy Cavalry soldiers, because only they were able to hold these lances while charging. When charging, the weight and momentum of such a weapon, along with their strength, this was the reason why Heavy Cavalry soldiers had such destructive powers that no other type of soldiers could compare to.

Such a pity that the current enemy they were facing were also Heavy Cavalry soldiers... the Peerless Heavy Cavalry! The two heavy lances slammed into Ma Qun's chest, but their owners could not feel excited or happy at all. Their usual unstoppable charge was instead halted, and they felt as if they had slammed into a giant hill, the force of impact actually forcefully stopping their charge. Their mounts actually continued running forward, but their bodies had been lifted off their mounts, pushed off with their own heavy lances!

Right at that moment, Ma Qun's spiked maces struck. BamBam The first spiked mace slammed into the heavy lances, actually breaking both in that single blow. The next spiked mace slammed into the chests of the two Kalise Heavy Cavalry soldiers.

Like two tin cans being smashed, the Kalise Heavy Cavalry soldiers' armour totally caved in. Following that came the creaking sound of the armour breaking apart and blood gushed out of all the gaps of the armour. Like two cannonballs, the two corpses slammed to the side, each knocking over another Heavy Cavalry soldier.

A similar sight duplicated itself for every single one of the Berserker Tribe members. With their defensive capabilities, they totally ignored the ineffectual attacks of their foes, as they sent their enemies on a free trip to heaven instantly.

The Gold Crow Tribe's attacks was a different beast altogether. Crow was not far from Ma Qun as she slammed into the enemy formation. On her end, she did not allow her enemies to strike at her at will, instead the Legendary Axes in her hands striking out in two directions. A single swipe of the first axe cleaved apart the heavy lances striking at her, while the swipe of the second axe flashed across the two Heavy Cavalry soldiers facing her, instantly leaving two lower bodies that had lost their top half.

If one had to use a phrase to describe the sight of the two Heavy Cavalry forces slamming into each other, then perhaps 'a massacre

with flesh and blood flying in all directions, bodies blown to pieces' was a long winded but most apt description.

Both sides might be Heavy Cavalry soldiers, but as both sides met, the Peerless Heavy Cavalry soldiers charged into Kalise formation like a hot knife cutting through butter, as if they were tigers pouncing upon a flock of sheep. On the battlefield, blood, flesh and broken armour sprayed in all directions, and screams of death and agony rang out throughout.

Within a matter of moments, the clash between the Heavy Cavalry soldiers had ended. Alas, behind the Peerless Heavy Cavalry soldiers, there wasn't even a single living Kalise Heavy Cavalry soldiers. In just that short period of time, the Peerless Heavy Cavalry soldiers were like a meat grinder machine, totally wiping out their enemies, leaving only their scattered remains behind,

The Kalise light cavalry soldiers who were surrounding the Peerless soldiers, the infantry and archers behind the Heavy Cavalry soldiers who had been supporting them, and the distant officers including the Regiment Commander Zeng Jian...all of them were stunned silly by the sight before them.

When had they ever seen such terrifying killing machines in their entire lives? Those were four hundred elite Heavy Cavalry soldiers! In a matter of a dozen breaths, they had been slaughtered as if they were mere cabbages being harvested in the field. This... This.....

Just as Zeng Jian was still dazed, the Peerless Heavy Cavalry soldiers did not even slow their charge. Having wiped out the enemy Heavy Cavalry, they continued barreling on the path right towards the archers and infantry soldiers.

If one could liken the Kalise Empire Heavy Cavalry soldiers' performance just now as sheep, then the poor Kalise archers were now little white rabbits. The mass of tigers charged into the herd

of rabbits, almost able to even just scare them to death! Furthermore, these tigers were armed to the teeth with those horrific looking massive weapons.

A Battalion of archers... alas they could not even slow the Peerless Heavy Cavalry down for a split second. As the two hundred men... no, tigers... thundered past, in moments they had left behind a patch of red on the ground.

Let alone the enemies being stunned silly... even Zhou Weiqing who was flying above ready to support his men at any time was also staring in shock.

What kind of equipment have I given these fellows? Are they really Heavy Cavalry soldiers? I... I have created monsters! They are literally killing machines! An entire Regiment, and almost instantly a tenth of them were wiped out. For the first time, the Peerless Heavy Cavalry had truly shown their power on a real battlefield, unleashing their full might, and the sheer terror of the combat prowess had already far surpassed even Zhou Weiqing's grand expectations.

Atop the city walls, the watching citizens were also dazed. Was this really a fight? It looked just like a simple slaughter. Two hundred soldiers... just two hundred soldiers... and yet it looked like their enemies did not stand a chance at all. Such a powerful troop... does it really belong to our Heavenly Bow Empire?

Lei Zi was standing there moving his arms around, muttering to himself: "Impressive, just too impressive." From the way he looked, he was itching to be on the battlefield himself, hating the fact that he was stuck up here. Although watching the fight was indeed enjoyable, he was also slightly depressed as it meant their First Company Air Force had no chance to take action at all.

Heavy Cavalry soldiers were always the most terrifying killing machines on the battlefield, and amongst them, the Peerless Heavy Cavalry were truly gods amongst the killing machines.

Seeing his advance forces wiped out so quickly, Zeng Jian finally came to his senses. Currently, his expression had changed drastically, fear in his heart. In such a situation, there was no time for him to ponder slowly. Instantly, he gave the orders. "Retreat! Retreat back to camp and fortify it! First, Third Infantry Battalions, set up your spears on the ground in the anti-cavalry formations. Second Battalion, return immediately to the camp to prepare the anti-cavalry traps."

After giving the series of orders, he led his personal guard and rushed back to camp. These... these were not humans, they were devils! How could they possibly stand against them!

Although the Kalise Empire soldiers were in shock, their training overtook them. As orders from their superior was passed down, they subconsciously followed the instructions almost woodenly.

The two Battalions of Infantry soldiers quickly set up their spear formations. The anti-cavalry formation, as the name suggested, was specially designed against the charge of enemy cavalry soldiers. Pushing the butt end of their spears into the ground with the points forward in an angle, and their weight to hold position, such a formation in numbers was not designed to damage their enemies, but to stop their mounts from charging past them.

Alas, although this technique which was extremely effective against all cavalry soldiers, they were currently facing the Peerless Heavy Cavalry. Not only were the soldiers heavily armoured, even their powerful Unicorn Heavenly Beasts were also armoured fully!

Just like crushing dry weeds and smashing rotten wood, the two hundred Peerless Heavy Cavalry soldiers smashed savagely into the two Battalions. Up until now, the whole Battalion of surrounding light cavalry soldiers had not even dared to send a single soldier in attack!

A thousand versus two hundred? It was a large numbers advantage. However, in the face of such terror, what was the use of

numbers? The hearts of the light cavalry soldiers quailed as they dared not even attack.

In the past, when the Berserker and Gold Crow Tribes were still in the Fei Li Empire, they had been forced to fight so many times against the WanShou Empire on the frontlines. They only had simple weapons, not even given proper armour, but they had caused much damage to the WanShou Empire armies. Now, with Zhou Weiqing sparing no cost to develop them and outfit them fully with such unimaginable equipment, their terrifying combat strength had already caught up and perhaps surpassed the Mammoth Regiment! How could these ordinary Kalise soldiers compare to them? Despite numbering a mere two hundred, when the gap between strengths was just too far apart, numbers no longer meant anything.

As the saying goes, [an infinite number of ants could bite even an elephant to death](#). However, no matter what, they had to actually be able to bite through for that to happen. The Peerless Heavy Cavalry armour was just too terrifying, the thickness and toughness. Ordinary people could not even wear it, let alone penetrate through it!

Zhou Weiqing watched from his vantage position in the air. He knew that there was no need for him to even take action any longer. He did not think of being able to kill all the enemies. Firstly, he did not need his men to do unnecessary killing, but more so, it was to conserve his strength. After all, the main force of the Peerless Regiment had not arrived, and stability was the key for him now. That was the reason why he gave the strict order for Ma Qun and Crow not to lead their troops directly into the enemy camp.

His lips curved in a cold smirk. Today's fight had more than accomplished all the goals that he had set. With this single charge of the Peerless Heavy Cavalry, how could the Kalise Empire Regiment still have the guts to attack the Crescent City? If not for

the fact that he wanted to hide the power of his Peerless Regiment, as long as the five hundred Peerless Air Force joined in the fight, it would not have been a problem for them to wipe out the entire enemy force.

Although he had his Peerless Regiment that seemed invincible in combat, Zhou Weiqing was still extremely careful as he began the revival of his Empire. He had his own thinking... if he revealed too much of his strength too early, then the Kalise Empire would quickly send a large number of reinforcements here, even the Bai Da Empire might be alerted to send reinforcements. However, for the rest of the Peerless Regiment to arrive, it would take at least two more months. In this window of time, with just his seven hundred men, if he had to face the onslaught of several Regiments, it would still be tough for them. After all, his main goal was still to stabilize the Crescent City and develop it as his base of operations and launching pad.

According to Zhou Weiqing's current understanding of the Kalise Empire's army deployments in the Heavenly Bow Empire, for the next two months he would at least have to deal with two more waves of enemies before the rest of his Peerless Regiment would arrive. Of course, this was not counting his Master, the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya.

Long Shiya had already indicated to Zhou Weiqing that he would not join their fight on the battlefield. In truth, there was an agreement amongst all powerhouses that any Heavenly Emperor stage powerhouse and above would not be allowed to interfere in the wars of man. At their level, if they took action against ordinary humans, it could possibly lead to widescale destruction and possibly even the extinction of men! As such, it was strictly forbidden for Heavenly Emperor Stage powerhouses to join in such battles, otherwise all their peers would surround the one in question to kill him.

Yes, this should be the actual saying. I believe that TJSS is using

it (last chapter's version) as two sides of the same coin, depending on which is the stronger party

Chapter 196 The Sudden Assassination (1)

When they had reached the Crescent City, Long Shiya had actually left silently. Even Zhou Weiqing did not know where his Master went or what he was up to. In fact, in Long Shiya's eyes, in the Heavenly Bow Empire borders, there should not be anyone that could pose a threat to Zhou Weiqing. The Kalise Empire did not have any Heavenly King Stage powerhouses, and thought the Bai Da Empire should have some, they would definitely be holding the fort in the Bai Da Empire. At least in the near future, there was no possibility of them appearing. As such, Long Shiya felt relaxed in leaving.

In the first place, Long Shiya had always been a person who loved freedom. Since Zhou Weiqing had already mastered the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, it could be said that he had already gained his full legacy. The only thing he was lacking was experience and attainment in the skill, as well as cultivation levels. Long Shiya had already passed on all the techniques and the path he needed to take. Now, for the revival of his own Empire, it would be up to Zhou Weiqing as an exercise for him.

After being run through by the Peerless Heavy Cavalry, the two Kalise Empire Infantry Battalions had barely a third of them surviving. The thick smell of blood lingered in the air, and in the back, the Kalise light cavalry retreated even further, not wanting to become the egg that threw itself on the rock. Set after set of Anti-Cavalry traps were rolled out, with four Heavy Infantry soldiers and a large number of ordinary Kalise soldiers setting them up in position and taking up their formation behind the traps in preparation.

Zeng Jian's heart was spasming and bleeding. He had never imagined that he would ever meet such a terrifying army. Just two hundred enemy soldiers, yet they seemed just like two hundred devils, instantly destroying nearly a third of his entire army. More

importantly, that had included his most precious four Companies of Heavy Cavalry soldiers!

Just the two hundred Heavy Cavalry soldiers in front of him gave him a strong sense of powerlessness. More importantly, their enemy had only sent out these two hundred men... and he did not even know how many more enemies there were in the Crescent City. In the military world, information was always key, and the unknown was to be feared. Since these enemies dared to come and actually successfully take the Crescent City, it showed a level of preparation and power... that definitely was not limited to these two hundred soldiers. To send out only this small force against him, there could only be one goal... to reduce their own injuries or deaths. Indeed, how could one deal with this Heavy Cavalry force? Even if he was a six-Jeweled Physical Jewel Master, if he charged forward, he would not have any use. These super heavy cavalry units were just like a moving fortress of metal, unstoppable in his eyes.

In midair, Zhou Weiqing had already spotted Zeng Jian. In any army, the outfit of the commander was definitely different from all his soldiers. Furthermore, Zeng Jian had his personal guards in formation around him.

“Ma Qun, Crow. Clear the battlefield. Do not advance any further.” Zhou Weiqing’s order came from above. He could see that the Peerless Heavy Cavalry’s bloodlust had been incited in the fight, and he was worried that they might just rashly charge into the enemy’s base. There were just too many obstacles and obstructions around the camp, especially the anti-cavalry traps, and it was not a good ground or position for the Heavy Cavalry soldiers. Of course, he did not think they could be defeated, but if they were entangled within, it would be unnecessary trouble.

As he spoke, Zhou Weiqing drew back the Overlord Bow, a long arrow made out of pure Heavenly Energy suddenly coalescing into existence.

Taking a deep breath, Zhou Weiqing raised his Ice Cold Perception to the max. His gaze was like a bolt of lightning, locked upon Zeng Jian's body. As long as he could slay this commander, this Kalise Empire force would have no choice but to retreat.

Zeng Jian was after all a relatively high leveled Physical Jewel Master. As soon as Zhou Weiqing locked onto him with his Overlord Bow, he immediately sensed danger. Lifting his head, he spotted Zhou Weiqing in midair, and instantly saw the strange hexagon-star formation glowing with a brilliant bluish purple light. All around Zhou Weiqing's body, a thick lightning was arcing around, causing the entire air to reverberate around him.

He wants to kill me! Zeng Jian paled instantly as he realised what was happening. Swiftly, he unleashed his three Consolidated Equipment. At the same time, he jumped off his warhorse, darting deeper into the midst of his soldiers' formation.

All this while, though he flew in midair, Zhou Weiqing had not taken action. However, these Heavy Cavalry soldiers were already so strong, could this person be weak at all? Furthermore, that hexagon formation below him was so strange, who knew what unique powers it had?

Dodging? Zhou Weiqing smirked coldly. Do you think that hiding in a crowd would be of any use?

Thick Heavenly Energy, abruptly solidifying, and the now-bluish purple arrow gave off a terrifying energy reverberation. Within this arrow, there were no special effects or flourishes, just a pure terrifying amount of Heavenly Energy that had been consolidated through the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation. If one were able to examine it closely, they would discover that this arrow was truly strange looking. Three inches behind the arrowhead, there was a strange bluish purple round ball, fully made out of pure energy.

With the Overlord Bow drawn to a full crescent, Zhou Weiqing raised his personal spirit and energy to the maximum, and in that

instant, he unleashed his arrow.

As his cultivation level had increased, his understanding towards archery was also no longer as simple as before. Within this arrow, it did not just hold energy alone, but it was highly compressed and transmuted to lightning elemental power.

An ear-piercing screech rang out in that moment, and across the skies, all could only see a bolt of lightning flash across. The bluish purple light as if the heavens had thrown down a bolt of lightning, smashing down into the Kalise Sixth Regiment camp.

However, right at the same time as he shot out the arrow, all of a sudden, Zhou Weiqing's expression changed. In the next moment, his entire body flipped and rolled in midair, and he followed it up with an instant Blink Skill.

That was because, in the instant that he had shot out the arrow, he sensed a sudden cold that he had never felt in his entire life, descending upon his entire body. An ambush!

This foe's choice of attack timing was just too perfect. Zhou Weiqing's arrow had been fully focused on chasing an effect of guaranteeing an instant kill, consolidating that arrow from a massive amount of Heavenly Energy, and more so bringing his spirit and focus to a maximum point. As he shot out that arrow, in that instant when he released such a powerful blast of Heavenly Energy, his entire body was in a short temporary period of weakness. It was in this instant that this hidden foe had seized the opportunity to launch his attack.

A thick black light that was almost like ink flew towards Zhou Weiqing's body from below. Almost as Zhou Weiqing rolled away, it crossed paths with his body, bringing a bead of blood away from him. Right away, the black light seemed as if it had been locked onto its target, in a flash it swooped around and chased up to Zhou Weiqing who had blinked away... a black sword point striking towards Zhou Weiqing's throat.

At the same time, Zhou Weiqing's arrow had reached its target. The thick bluish purple light drawing a beautiful arc in the skies, seeming to worm its way across all obstacles, flickering as it did so. It was almost as if the arrow had eyes as it flew past several soldiers, striking onto Zeng Jian's Consolidated Shield with unbelievable accuracy.

The bluish purple light flashed brightly upon the hit, seeming to lance right into his body through the shield. The next instant, a violent explosion rang out from Zeng Jian's body. With that ball of lightning attached to the arrow blowing up from within his body, how could Zeng Jian survive?

This critical arrow of Zhou Weiqing's, it had taken all his power, spirit and planning to launch it. Let alone Zeng Jian, who was a six-Jeweled Physical Jewel Master... even an ordinary six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master would have been hard pressed to defend himself against it.

However, although Zhou Weiqing had successfully killed Zeng Jian, he had now fallen into extreme danger.

Ever since he had become a Heavenly Jewel Master, Zhou Weiqing had experienced his share of close shaves. However, this was truly the first time that he had felt so close to death. No matter even when he had faced the Lion Prince Gu Yingbing for the first time, he did not have such a feeling. After all, Gu Yingbing did not have a strong killing intent at that time, and he had not been trying to kill him.

However, this enemy in front of him only gave Zhou Weiqing a single sensation. A simple one that could be described with one word. Death.

A feeling of death. That icy cold feeling. There was only one single goal he had – to kill Zhou Weiqing. This was an assassin. An absolutely powerful assassin. A terrifying Heavenly Energy reverberations filled the entire air with the scent of death.

The moment Zhou Weiqing fell into trouble, on the distant city wall, Shangguan Xue'er, Tian'er and Lin TianAo immediately leaped off the wall, charging at their top speeds without any hesitation. Alas, they were just too far from him now, at least a few li away, and in a short period of time they would not be able to rescue him.

Chapter 196 The Sudden Assassination (2)

Zhou Weiqing's heart was filled with fear. He was already in the Dragon-Tiger Transformation state all this while, and his Ice Cold Perception was at its maximum. For him to have such feelings in such a state, one could just imagine how much danger, how serious this attack truly was.

This was the first time the Ice Cold Perception had failed him. Even in the instant that his enemy had struck out at him, Zhou Weiqing did not even sense his presence. One could just imagine how skillful he was at concealment. Currently, Zhou Weiqing only had one thought. To live! To survive!

As he rolled around in midair, the Ward of the Demon God had already sprang into existence, along with the automatic Immortal Deity Shield. Added to his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation's lightning screen around him, as well as his body's power physical defense in the Dragon-Tiger Transformation state, Zhou Weiqing could be said to be already in his strongest possible defensive state that his body currently possessed.

Despite all of that, the black rapier which darted about like a venomous snake had still managed to leave a deep trail of blood on Zhou Weiqing's chest area. If not for the fact that his instinctive sense of danger had allowed him to roll away at the last second, his heart would have been pierced through in that strike.

What terrifying offensive capabilities! Zhou Weiqing felt that even if it were his Master, just comparing the instantaneous burst of power in a single point, this assassin might even be slightly higher!

His Blink Skill only gave him a split second of time to catch a breath, and the rapier that was [like a disease which had invaded deep into one's bones](#) had already reached his throat once more.

In the face of such critical danger, Zhou Weiqing's depth of

potential erupted once more. Five bouts of dark-gold light instantly sprang into existence nearly simultaneously. One after the other, they exploded in a horrible scraping sound, but they had successfully blocked that terrifying black rapier for the split second that he needed.

Only at this point did Zhou Weiqing finally see what this assassin looked like. It was an ordinary face, ordinary to the point that no one would be able to pick him out of a crowd. He looked to be around twenty years of age, fully expressionless, and it was almost clear that he was wearing a mask. He was dressed in a set of ordinary Kalise Empire Infantry Soldier's uniform, which was covered in fresh blood. Clearly, he had been hiding within the Kalise Empire Infantry Battalion previously.

Zhou Weiqing did not have the time to think about where this foe had come from, and who had sent him to kill him. All he could do now was try to stay alive.

A giant black tiger's illusory figure formed behind Zhou Weiqing's back. However, it was not the Dark Demon God, as it did not have the scorpion's tail or the massive wings. Instead, it was the Entropic Nether Tiger!

As that formed, the black rapier had finally pierced through the five Consolidating Equipment God Protective Aura. Unbelievably, the five protective shields had barely lasted a split second, only managing to slow the attack slightly before it once again pierced towards Zhou Weiqing.

The Ward of the Demon God and the Immortal Deity Shield had turned back on, but once again they were torn aside just so easily. Like a small bolt of lightning, the black rapier pierced right through Zhou Weiqing's throat. At this point, Zhou Weiqing's 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set did not yet cover his head or neck, and he also did not have any chance to dodge such a swift blow.

“NOOO!!!” In the distance, both Shangguan Xue’er and Tian’er howled in sorrow. Instantly, both of them used their respective secret arts to increase their speed to the maximum. Alas, they were still not in time.

However, the subsequent scene caused this powerful assassin to stare dazed for a moment.

That was because, though the black rapier had pierced through Zhou Weiqing’s throat, it did not draw any blood at all. Instead, Zhou Weiqing’s Legendary Hammers smashed out savagely towards him.

A powerful glow of lightning burst forth as the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation circulated to its maximum. Zhou Weiqing gathered almost all his remaining Heavenly Energy onto his Hammers. The black rapier was just too quick, so much so that Zhou Weiqing did not even have the time to release any Skills. All he could chase for was for his strike to land, as he knew that this would likely be his only chance. If he missed it... perhaps the only result for him would be death.

Facing the Legendary Hammers’ attack, the black clad assassin’s reaction was equally fast. Lifting his left hand, palm outwards, he struck out in a parrying motion to clash directly with the Dual Legendary Hammers.

A massive explosion, as if a bolt of thunder in the skies, and Zhou Weiqing’s entire body flew back.

The terrifying strength of the ‘Hate Ground no Handle’ Legendary Set proved its worth once more. Although the cultivation level and power of the powerhouse assassin was far higher than Zhou Weiqing, but facing the full power of the Legendary Hammers, his entire body which had been moving swiftly was actually stalled in midair, his upper body actually forced to snap back from the massive impact. Zhou Weiqing also seized the opportunity and the throwback of the impact to allow

himself to be flung back, temporarily escaping the black rapier's attack.

It could be said that Zhou Weiqing's abundant combat experienced had saved him. All his efforts had given him just enough time to release his next step at the last possible second. The Heavenly Skill Image he had summoned earlier was the secret defensive Skill of the Entropic Nether Tiger, the 'Nether State', granting him the temporary immunity to physical attacks which had allowed him to survive that lethal blow to the neck. At the same time, the power of the 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set and the blow of the Legendary Hammers was just enough to give him time to catch his breath.

At this moment, Shangguan Xue'er was charging right at the front, barely three hundred yards from Zhou Weiqing. Tian'er was close behind her, but Lin TianAo had fallen behind, as his speed was not his strong point.

His reinforcements were clearly arriving soon, but Zhou Weiqing did not dare relax at all. The moment his foe had struck out at him, he had sensed that it was a Heavenly King Stage powerhouse. However, this was no ordinary Heavenly King powerhouse, but one trained in the arts of assassination. For a Heavenly King to actually use such ambushing tactics against a mere six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master... Zhou Weiqing could count his lucky stars that he had managed to survive!

However, this Heavenly King Stage powerhouse's cultivation level was already at the max, and even despite Zhou Weiqing's sheer power, his foe had been able to shunt it off in time.

Besides the black rapier in his hands, this Heavenly King powerhouse did not seem to have any other Consolidated Equipment. As Zhou Weiqing used the time that his Legendary Hammers had earned, the wings behind his back flapped crazily, increasing the momentum he had from being thrown back as he attempted to fly away. At the same time, he used the Silver

Emperor Lightning Pierce to increase his speed by three times as he flew off.

Facing a Heavenly King stage powerhouse, especially one with such terrifying offense, with even all his powerful defenses seeming like paper in front of him... Zhou Weiqing was clear that in order to survive, he would need to join up with Shangguan Xue'er and Tian'er, only then would they have a chance. Otherwise, despite his previous success, it would barely take a few more blows for his foe to take his life.

Ever since he left the Heavenly Snow Mountain, Zhou Weiqing had been extremely confident about his own strength. After all, even the Heavenly Snow Mountain's disciple, prince of the Lion Tribe, had not been able to defeat him. As a result, his own confidence had perhaps grown too inflated. Right at this moment, he truly understood that in this world, there were just too many things unknown, too many things he had to learn. Just like how he had taken so many people by surprise, if he was too overconfident, he would pay that same price that those who had fallen to him did. This Heavenly King stage powerhouse in front of him was indeed terrifying, far beyond what he could manage on his own.

The short pause did not cause the the Heavenly King Stage assassin to slow down much, and he certainly did not stop. Even as his left hand had been knocked away by the sheer force of the impact, another series of black lights sprang out from his body. As Zhou Weiqing unleashed his Silver Emperor Lightning Pierce, he was shocked to suddenly find himself slamming into a web of black, and in moments, the terrifying keen piercing edge seemed to approach from behind.

This...? This is the Touch of Darkness?! Could the Touch of Darkness could be used in such a manner? Zhou Weiqing was truly taken aback. This black web that had blocked his way, wasn't it the Touch of Darkness that was so familiar to him? The Darkness Skill that was one of his earliest Skills and had served him so well. The

twelve tentacles of the Touch of Darkness had instead formed a large web in the skies, instead of trying to grab or grapple him, it was just used to forcefully block his way and prevent him from flying with his Silver Emperor Lightning Pierce's boosted speed. In this way, no matter all his flying speed, he was actually unable to move forward even if he had not been actually Controlled.

The black clad assassin was just too fast. Just as Zhou Weiqing had stalled for an instant, a cold chilly sensation gushed through him as the point of the rapier pierced right through his back and out his chest.

The black rapier had struck so craftily, piercing right through the tiny gap of Zhou Weiqing's currently incomplete 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set, from his upper back neck area all the way to the front of his chest. Although it did not pierce through the Consolidated Equipment at all, the terrifying frigid cold caused Zhou Weiqing's heart to sink to the depths.

Luckily, the 'Nether State' was still in effect. With the physical immunity, once again the black rapier did not take his life and destroy his body. However, the terrifying darkness energy within the rapier still burst forth, raging crazily within him.

The 'Nether State' was truly worthy of the Heavenly God Tier Skill that it was. Even under such a supreme disadvantageous situation, it still managed to barely protect Zhou Weiqing. It brought a total physical immunity, and though energy attacks were not immune, they would still have to erode the Nether State's energy before actually being able to harm Zhou Weiqing. As such, Zhou Weiqing could sense that the time of the 'Nether State' lasting was rapidly reaching its end before its normal time. From the looks of things, it would no longer be able to save him for much longer.

The black clad assassin was currently behind Zhou Weiqing, slightly above in a vantage position. His mouth curved in a mocking smirk as he looked down on the youth. Although he had

truly been impressed by Zhou Weiqing's reactions and skills over the past few seconds in reacting to his attacks, that did not stop him from killing Zhou Weiqing. In truth, the reason why he only had a single black rapier in his hands and no other Consolidated Equipment was actually very simple. The black rapier in his hand was not a single Consolidated Equipment, but an Assembly Set Sword! Just like how Lin TianAo had created an Assembly Set Shield, this black rapier of his was actually formed out of eight Consolidated black rapiers in an Assembly Set. He was just one step away from reaching his ninth and last one, where it could be considered a Legendary Set!

Ordinarily speaking, a set of eight could already be barely considered a Legendary Set. However, for Assembly Sets, they were an exception. That was because their earlier pieces were all lower quality and weaker, that was the only reason they could continue stacking on in an assembly. Even so, a rapier that consisted of eight Assembly pieces... one could just imagine how terrifying the offense was. In a stark contrast and reversal from Lin TianAo's aspirations, this black clad assassin had chased after an ultimate offense.

A direct translation. Basically means an enemy which is hard to deal with

Chapter 197 Dragon-Tiger Transformation

– 2nd Form! (1)

The mocking look still on his face, the Heavenly King Stage assassin shook the black rapier in his hand slightly. A massive surge of Darkness Heavenly Energy raged into Zhou Weiqing's body. He was not in a rush; towards Tian'er and Shangguan Xue'er flying towards him, it was as if he did not even see them.

Zhou Weiqing's 'Nether State' body and his various skills in protecting himself had truly given him a surprise. However, this assassin was extremely experienced, and he had even seen stranger Skills than the 'Nether State'. He was even clearer than Zhou Weiqing how to make use of strength, and he was sure that with Zhou Weiqing's six-Jeweled cultivation level, that strange defensive skill would not be able to last a long time. With his Darkness Attribute Heavenly Energy surging into this youth, he was confident he could wipe Zhou Weiqing off the surface of the earth before Shangguan Xue'er and Tian'er could reach. Furthermore, in the first place, he did not even care if the two could reach in time. Even for these young ladies, their highest cultivation level were only seven-Jeweled, what threat could they pose to him?

This assassin was actually really lucky. His employer did not tell him that Zhou Weiqing had a Heavenly Emperor stage powerhouse by his side, and more so, Long Shiya had also left Zhou Weiqing's side just a few days ago, thinking there should be no trouble for him. Otherwise, no matter how short the time was, as long as Long Shiya was nearby, he could easily rush over in time, and how could the assassin escape then?

Ice cold sensations flooded his entire body, the feeling of his soul being ripped from him was truly a terrible one. Zhou Weiqing could clearly sense death encroaching upon him. He knew that

once he lost the 'Nether State', he would immediately be destroyed by the black rapier.

His lauded physique and innate defense, facing that black rapier, it was just like a joke. In the end, cultivation level was cultivation level, and his level was just not sufficient! If he was also at the Heavenly King Stage, even if it were just the nine-Jeweled stage, how could that black clad assassin even hurt him?

All this while, Zhou Weiqing had thought that with all his various boosts, his many attributes and skills, his strength was still not too bad. However, at this point, he knew that though those had carried him thus far, the gap of cultivation level was still his limiting factor in allowing himself to be an actual powerhouse.

As the black rapier had pierced into Zhou Weiqing, the large net that Touch of Darkness had formed wrapped down around him, enveloping him totally. With the difference in cultivation level, it would be very difficult for Zhou Weiqing to break free of it just by struggling, at least while it lasted. Furthermore, as that happened, the black clad assassin placed his left palm on Zhou Weiqing's head.

Darkness – Nether Seal.

The Darkness Attribute was perhaps best in Sealing Arts, and such a powerful Seal instantly caused Zhou Weiqing to temporarily lose his ability to use his Skills. Of course, this Nether Seal was no match for his own Demonic Dragon God Seal, but it was still able to 'silence' him for almost three seconds, more than enough time.

Three seconds... could his Nether State even last three more seconds? The Nether State might grant him physical immunity, but it would not grant immunity of the effects of Stored Skills! The mocking look on the assassin's face was because Zhou Weiqing had truly fallen in a state of sure death.

Am I really going to die now? Currently, Zhou Weiqing was facing in Shangguan Xue'er and Tian'er's direction. Although in

the past few days, he had been having a terrible headache due to the two ladies arguing, but as he looked at the ladies he loved, looking at the Crescent City in the distance that was the beginnings of his plan... in Zhou Weiqing's heart, a flame rose. He was not reconciled to this, he would not take this defeat just like that! He still had not revived his homeland, his loves were in front of him... No! I cannot die like this! I still have to save Father, have to destroy these invaders and chase them out of my homeland! How can I die just like this?

Such strong feelings of vexation, turning into the deepest resolution. Zhou Weiqing's eyes lit up, and his body which was unable to move suddenly changed... evolved...

The first change was Zhou Weiqing's eyes. Originally, when he was in the Dragon-Tiger Transformation state, his eyes were a deep purple. Currently, they had changed abruptly, his left orb turning fully grey, not just the pupils but even the whites of the eyes, a cold strange black. The right eye had also warped, filled with red, not the usual bloodshot but a billowing fiery red.

Zhou Weiqing's strong and robust body actually expanded further. He had always been large in stature, especially when in the Demonic Change State or Dragon-Tiger Transformation, but he now grew even larger. At the same time, the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation actually warped into a strange star-hexagon, silently imprinting into in chest area, hiding within the 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set.

As his body grew, scales began to rise up from below his skin. In contrast with the usual Dragon-Tiger Transformation state, currently Zhou Weiqing was giving forth a wild and violent aura from within.

What is going on? The assassin's senses on Zhou Weiqing was extremely sensitive. After all, his black rapier was still in Zhou Weiqing's body, and he could sense that the Nether State was just about to end. Yet, at this final juncture, Zhou Weiqing's body

exploded with that aura that caused even him to feel his heart palpitate in sudden fear.

What was that?!

In just that short moment of time, Zhou Weiqing's body had actually expanded into a five metre tall giant. To be more accurate, he now looked more like a giant demonic beast with a vague humanoid shape. Even more strangely, along with his body expanding, the entire 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set had vanished. No, the only thing that vanished was the external appearance; not just the 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set, but even all of Zhou Weiqing's energy seemed to have vanished, or perhaps kept within. His clothes burst apart. Luckily, his pants were still relatively elastic enough, and a certain portion was still relatively hidden.

Currently, Zhou Weiqing's entire body was filled with a layer of deep purple scales, even his wings. His entire body was glowing purple, and on his forehead, a black tattoo of the 'King' word appeared, extremely eye-catching. In that instant, the assassin suddenly felt a powerful explosive strength from within Zhou Weiqing's body, just in the instant that the Nether State ended, forcing his black rapier out.

Abruptly turning around, Zhou Weiqing's grey and red eyes were filled with a strange yet terrifying aura. An unbelievably strong energy reverberation exploded out, as if it were about to tear the entire world apart.

In the skies, a strange vision appeared. The entire sky turned half red, half grey. On the red side, along with a loud dragons' roar, a massive illusory dragon appeared. On the grey side, a giant black illusory tiger with wings also appeared.

"Heaven and Earth Anomaly, Heavenly God Tier?!" For the first time, the assassin's expression actually changed. He could not believe his eyes. This Zhou Weiqing was a mere six-Jeweled Upper

level Zun Stage... how... how could he possibly give forth the aura of a Heavenly God Tier? Furthermore, that strange anomaly in the skies were just too weird... impossible!

In his impression, the only person who could cause such an anomaly was the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord Xue AoTian. When Xue AoTian unleashed his full power, the skies would turn white, and an illusory figure of a huge white tiger would appear, fully covering the entire skies. However, the current anomaly in the skies might be large, but it covered only a thousand metres in area... and it also had two illusory figures. Even so, despite the smaller size, it was still an impressive sight indeed.

Instead of retreating, Zhou Weiqing advanced in a flash. Currently, he was not able to unleash any Skills. Perhaps more accurately, he was not even fully conscious.

The wings behind his back had expanded to almost twice their normal size, along with that terrifying scale armour and the right leg that had warped into a massive black hook. Zhou Weiqing looked like a demonic god that had risen from hell.

Both his hands looked different. The right hand was a tiger's paw, while the left hand was a dragon's claw. As his body flashed, his movement was so fast that it could even rival a Spatial Blink. In that moment, his speed was even faster than the Agility Type assassin!

Facing absolute death, with that powerful unreconciled feelings in his heart, Zhou Weiqing's deep inner potential final burst forth. The Dragon-Tiger Transformation was the fusion of the Solidified Dragon Spirit and his Dark Demon God Tiger Bloodline. With such powerful bloodlines, and suffering so much for so long, could it be just so simple? The wings were just brought about from the bloodline power of the Dark Demon God Tiger, while the hidden scales were just a surface addition from the dragon bloodline. Originally, the Dragon-Tiger Transformation already had a powerful boost to Zhou Weiqing, but it was far from truly using

the full power of the fusion. The reason was simple – Zhou Weiqing’s cultivation level was just too low, not able to truly harness their power.

However, at this current moment, in the face of death, the hidden bloodline powers and energies in the depths of his body had exploded out. The Dragon-Tiger Transformation entered a second advanced stage.

Dragon-Tiger Transformation Second State: ‘Like Dragon Equivalent Tiger’.

The current Zhou Weiqing had all his energy, including his Consolidated Equipment and Stored Skills, fully fused into his Dragon-Tiger bloodline. The profound secret behind the second state was exactly that, to transform all energies into actual physical power. That was to say, no matter his Consolidated Equipment or Stored Skills, all his Heavenly Energy, the original Dragon-Tiger Transformation state, Immortal Deity Technique... all of it were incorporated together as if thrown together in a cauldron and fused together, spreading into his body and boosting his physical strength and toughness. In that instant, his body had reached a new terrifying level.

In such a state, Zhou Weiqing was only left with simple hand to hand combat and brawling. However, his strength in that area was also raised to the maximum, no matter offense or defense.

The assassin was after all an old hand on the battlefield, and though he had never heard or seen of something like this, after a moment of surprise he quickly regained his calmness. As an assassin, no matter what happened, even if facing death, he would not panic.

His body flew back in a burst of speed. His flying speed was just dependant on the normal Heavenly King powerhouse’s flying abilities, but in a short period of time he could explode in an astonishing speed. As he retreated, the black rapier pierced

forward, a glint of sword flurry as it pierced towards Zhou Weiqing's chest once more.

Zhou Weiqing's left dragon claw lifted, grabbing towards the eight-Jeweled Assembly Set Sword. An earsplitting grinding sound rang out, and to the assassin's shock, his weapon that had an offense close to that of a Legendary Set was actually grabbed and held onto by Zhou Weiqing's left claw. Next, a terrifying power that was far beyond a Heavenly King Stage traveled from the rapier, and Zhou Weiqing actually forcefully pulled the assassin back towards him.

Chapter 197 Dragon-Tiger Transformation

– 2nd Form! (2)

The assassin gave a cold humph, his entire body tensing as white light burst forth, instantly increasing his Heavenly Dao Energy to the maximum. In terms of physical strength, he was naturally far from Zhou Weiqing, but as his Heavenly Energy exploded to the max, he could temporarily raise his strength to a terrifying level. At the same time, the Darkness Attribute energy in the atmosphere welled over to him and surging into the black rapier. In that short moment, the Assembly Set Sword's power raised even further.

This was the power of the Heavenly Dao Energy, able to use the energies of the heavens as his own.

As Zhou Weiqing pulled back, the assassin did not try to go against it, instead in that burst of power, he pierced forward instead. With the burst of terrifying power, the rapier actually broke free of Zhou Weiqing's left claw, striking straight towards the heart in his left chest.

That assassin's offensive power was just so terrifying, but in that lightning speed strike, Zhou Weiqing's body actually managed to twist slightly. However, the following scene actually caused the calm heart of the assassin to no longer maintain his tranquility.

Although Zhou Weiqing managed to twist his body slightly, he was still unable to fully dodge the sword. A horrible scraping sound rang out as the rapier pierced right into his left chest. Although it was to the side and not directly at the heart area, in the assassin's viewpoint, it was still more than enough to kill Zhou Weiqing. Without that strange physical immunity skill active, he was confident that once his blade pierced through Zhou Weiqing, its destructive power was more than enough to destroy his innards.

However, would Zhou Weiqing really die to this sword? To the

assassin's shock, his eight Jeweled Assembly Set Sword actually struck on the scales of Zhou Weiqing's chest, causing many sparks to fly, but he was actually unable to pierce right through, only leaving a deep white scar.

The force of the impact caused Zhou Weiqing's body to flip back and sent him flying, but that sword that should have slain him instantly had been unable to take his life!

This... how could this be? Even if it were another Heavenly King stage powerhouse, if he managed to pierce that person with his eight-Jeweled Assembly Set Sword, he would definitely be severely injured! A little six-Jeweled Zun Stage fellow... he had.. He had actually taken the blow just like that with just barely a scar to show for it?!

Despite his sheer shock, the assassin continued attacking, perhaps from instinct alone. In his mind, as long as his enemy did not die, he would not stop, only using an even greater explosive power on his target.

The rapier whistled in the air as it pierced out once more. The Heavenly King stage Agility Physical Jewels burst out in full speed, and his figure could not even be seen in the skies at the speed he was moving. Another earsplitting explosive sound rang out as Zhou Weiqing barely managed to use his left palm to block the sword, but was still pierced by it. However, this time, he was better able to block and dodge the main blow, and the rapier was only able to pierce his shoulder.

A stronger explosive power, forced into just a pinpoint blow, causing Zhou Weiqing to grunt in a muffled cry. Once again, he was blown backwards in the impact, but as the rapier pierced into his shoulder, it was barely half an inch, barely seeing the scales dent inwards. As the assassin tried to unleash his explosive Heavenly Energy into the wound, he was shocked to find that he was unable to even push his Heavenly Energy into Zhou Weiqing's body.

This was a total upheaval about everything he knew. The defensive power of Zhou Weiqing's scale had reached a whole other level. Even if it still wasn't able to fully block all of his attacks, but if he wanted to kill Zhou Weiqing, he was actually unable to do so in a short amount of time.

The greatest surprise was that the small white notch which had been caused by the first blow was now healing rapidly.

The Heavenly King Stage assassin refused to believe it, and his body flashed forward in another attack. However, just as he did so, he was met with a sudden burst of snow white light. An unbelievably powerful sword intent instantly encased his body, and with a clang, the white figure that had charged at him was knocked back, blood spurting out from its mouth. However, the terrifying sword intent from that white sword also caused the black clad assassin's body to halt, as the white figure fell back down to the ground.

At last, Shangguan Xue'er had arrived. Previously, in that instant, she thought that Zhou Weiqing had been killed, but he had somehow entered the second stage of the Dragon Tiger Transformation and held on past the last few attempts of the Heavenly King Stage assassin.

Tian'er also came right on her heels, but both of them did not have the capability of flight. Even more worrying, Zhou Weiqing in midair did not seize the chance of being knocked back to fly down to them, instead charging towards the Heavenly King assassin once more.

ROOOAAARRR High up in the sky, the entire air shook and vibrated as an angry howl that shook the world burst forth from Zhou Weiqing's mouth. Currently, that roar gave the impression that ten thousand tigers were snarling angrily, the terrifying sound waves causing the Heavenly King Stage assassin to actually be stunned in midair for a split second.

The rapier pierced forward yet again, and the Heavenly King assassin's entire body was encased with a layer of black, his Heavenly Energy circulating throughout his body and pushed outwards, an explosive surge of Heavenly Energy causing the entire black rapier to be filled with a destructive aura. This time, the target was Zhou Weiqing's throat.

Both tiger paw and dragon claw crossed in midair. This time, Zhou Weiqing did not attempt to dodge. Instead, with a loud clang, the sword actually pierced onto his throat, causing the scales there to cave in. Zhou Weiqing ignored it totally, instead his hands had already smashed down together, grabbing onto the sword.

The rapier with all the power of the Heavenly King assassin gathered in his greatest blow, all of his strength, yet it was still unable to pierce through Zhou Weiqing's throat. At the same time, his black rapier had been fully locked onto by his dragon claw and tiger paw.

Instantly, the Heavenly King assassin shook his arm, trying to use his power to destroy Zhou Weiqing's dragon claw and tiger paw.

To his surprise, he was unable to do so. Not only were they unbelievably tough, they were like steel traps, fully locking onto his black rapier. A massive strength traveled through it once more, pulling his entire body along.

Such disgusting strength! That was equal to any Heavenly King Stage powerhouse with the Strength Attribute right?

Just as the Heavenly King Stage was lost in shock, from below another terrifying sword intent rose once more. Shangguan Xue'er's body vanished, and all that remained was that huge Boundless Infinitum Sword.

At its side, a giant white tiger also sprang up. She was unable to fly, but with that leap, she was able to charge towards where Zhou Weiqing and the assassin were. In midair, Tian'er's purple eyes

suddenly glowed as two bouts of purple light shot out. At the same time, a resplendent golden light rushed out from her body, forming a golden tiger of energy, speeding towards the Heavenly King assassin.

In that instant, both Tian'er and Shangguan Xue'er had burst forth with their strongest attacks, as if pitting their entire lives in a single blow. In their hearts, they only had one notion. Little Fatty, you must hold on! If not for the sudden attacks from the two ladies, perhaps the assassin could have continued with his blow, and using all his might he might have finally pierced through Zhou Weiqing's throat eventually. After all, even though Zhou Weiqing's body was at another level from the second stage of the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, he was still after all still a six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master. There was quite a large element of luck for him to even enter this second stage; under normal circumstances he should have only been able to do so after reaching the ninth-Jeweled cultivation level.

No matter how confident this Heavenly King assassin was in himself, he did not dare to allow the two attacks from Shangguan Xue'er and Tian'er to land on his body. His greatest strength was his offense, not his defense. Left with no choice, he had to draw back his eight-Jeweled Assembly Set Sword, and the black rapier vanished from between Zhou Weiqing's claws. At the same time, his body spun around in midair, and the rapier appeared once more in his hands, and in a swing, a black arc of light struck out.

This was truly a display of power for a Heavenly King powerhouse. If it had been Lin TianAo, with a similar Assembly Set Equipment, once he dismissed his Assembly Set Shield, within a short period of time he would not be able to summon it out and reassembly it so quickly. However, for this assassin, it looked as if it disappeared, and in the next instant reappearing, as if it had been an illusion.

The black arc of light was so wide that it could reach all three of

the youths.

Shangguan Xue'er's terrifying Body and Sword as One first struck the black light, causing a massive explosion as she was thrown back down on the ground. Next, Tian'er's gold light struck, and the gold tiger was also shattered by the black light.

If it were any ordinary Heavenly King stage powerhouse, Shangguan Xue'er and Tian'er's attacks would definitely not be dissipated so easily. However, this Heavenly King assassin was truly a master at the peak of his powers, fully focused only on offense, offense and offense. His offense was truly at the level that he could destroy his enemies' attacks as well. A powerhouse who actually used all his eight Jewels in an offensive Assembly Set, that offensive power was just too disgusting. In terms of pure offensive power alone, it far surpassed the Boundless Infinitum Sword... and both girls' attacks were dissipated just like that.

Even so, the assassin was not able to fully withstand their attacks. After all, he had been forced to disassemble and reassemble his sword so swiftly, and that instant of time had barely been enough. As such, the Spirit Attribute attack that Tian'er had shot out from her eyes still landed upon him, causing him to freeze in midair for a split second, slowing his movement.

Right at that instant, Zhou Weiqing's attack reached. This time, it was his right leg, the enormous black scorpion tail that it had warped into.

Still, the Heavenly King assassin was just too power. Even under that massive onslaught and disadvantageous position, he was still barely able to move his sword in the last second, somehow able to use the last dredges of the black arc of light to block his right leg.

Chapter 197 Dragon-Tiger Transformation

– 2nd Form! (3)

Puuuu Blood sprayed out from the assassin's mouth. He had never imagined that the abrupt attack from Zhou Weiqing's right leg could even reach such a level. At least six of his ribs were broken, and a strange cold energy invaded his body, warping into three icy cold auras that started to spread throughout his body.

Not good!

The Heavenly King assassin had rampaged throughout the entire continent for so many years, and he had faced countless dangers and slain countless opponents. In the shortest time, he made the most accurate choice. Sensing the invasion of the cold evil power, he instantly judged that the sheer toxicity of the poison was not something he could handle. Once it truly spread through his body, he would be in serious trouble with endless disastrous possibilities.

As such, he made an instant snap decision that not many else could. In an instant the black rapier spun around, striking deep into his own chest. A pierce, and a flick, meat and blood sprayed out as he forcefully dug out. The blood sprayed in midair, forming a strange blue, black and grey colours, before dissipating in the air.

With such a powerful will to live, the Heavenly King assassin had unbelievably managed to counter the tri-element venom of the scorpion tail hook of Zhou Weiqing's evolution.

It could not be said to be luck, instead a more accurate description would be power, guts and vision. With his sword blocking, he was able to avoid the majority of the blow from the scorpion's tail, and in the shortest possible time he had sealed his meridians, and finally he used his own sword to cut himself and force out all the venom. Only with all of that was he able to survive that onslaught. However, that also had a heavy price, as this assassin had finally suffered a serious injury, greatly sapping his

vitality. To be fair, he had not lost to Zhou Weiqing, but he had lost to the sudden arrival of the two girls and more importantly, his lack of understanding of this new state of the Dragon-Tiger Transformation.

After entering the second state of the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, Zhou Weiqing was only able to fight in close combat. However, in such a state, his melee capabilities had already risen to an unbelievably terrifying height, especially his defense. Even that Heavenly King assassin was not able to break through such a defense with ease, and that had been the most important adjustment that caused the series of snowballing changes leading to a different final result.

Without any hesitation at all, a thick black tail of flames spurted out from the Heavenly King assassin's back. In an instant, he warped into a stream of light, disappearing into the distance within moments.

An icy cold voice rang out in the air. "I'll be back."

Tian'er and Shangguan Xue'er both landed on the ground at the same time, both their eyes showing their shock. This was especially for Shangguan Xue'er; with her pride, her heart was currently filled with fear. It had just been too dangerous. It had truly been a fine line then, and Zhou Weiqing had almost lost his life so many times. Although the assassin was only at the Heavenly King Stage, his assassination skills and offense... especially even when trying to kill someone so much lower level than himself like Zhou Weiqing, he still chose to ambush and launch a sneak attack, in the best possible time. It could be said that it was a lot of luck that Zhou Weiqing had survived.

In the air, Zhou Weiqing did not attempt to chase. Instead, he levitated there, wings spread out, as if a Demon King who had achieved victory.

By now, the battle on the ground had long ended. Currently, the

two hundred Heavy Cavalry soldiers were below Zhou Weiqing, staring up at him with shock and awe in their eyes.

No matter the Berserker or Gold Crow Tribe soldiers, they were extremely proud and confident in their own combat abilities. However, that fight in the sky was truly something they had never witnessed before. Only at this time did they realise how terrifying a true powerhouse really was. Especially for the Heaven and Earth Anomaly that Zhou Weiqing had somehow activated, it had truly left a lasting impression in their hearts. What kind of horrifying strength was required to do such a thing! As for that assassin who had attacked Zhou Weiqing, they might not know what cultivation level he was, but for a Heavenly Jewel Master to be able to fly with just his own body and without any Consolidated Equipment, that already proved a serious problem. Yet, even under such a situation, Zhou Weiqing had still succeeded in forcing his enemy to retreat. It was clear that when the assassin had fled, he had been severely injured.

All of a sudden, a massive shout rang out, reverberating through the skies. “PEERLESS THROUGH THE WORLD!” The two hundred Heavy Cavalry Soldiers had howled out with all their might without any prompting, draining off all the feelings in their hearts as they did so. With such a powerful Commander leading them, they were filled with even greater confidence.

In midair, Zhou Weiqing’s wings slowly folded as he descended, landing on the ground. The tall, muscled body and brilliant scales, causing some of the Gold Crow Tribe female warriors to look at him with a glint in their eyes.

Tian’er and Shangguan Xue’er rushed to Zhou Weiqing. They were far more familiar towards the powers and limits of Heavenly Jewel Masters, as compared to the Peerless Heavy Cavalry soldiers. Zhou Weiqing had indeed survived, but the sheer power he had burst out with, no matter in terms of defense and offense, that was already enough to rival that of a Heavenly King Stage powerhouse.

That was definitely not normal, and for him to gain such strength in a short period of time, they knew it was not possible to not pay a heavy price.

Zhou Weiqing looked at both girls with his strange eyes, one grey one red. As he spoke, his voice was clearly lower and hoarser than usual. "I'll head back first. Ma Qun, Crow, retreat back to the city as well."

After saying that, the wings behind his back flapped hard, and his entire body warped into a purple light as he disappeared as well. None of the others had even seen how he had entered the city, that speed was no lower than the Heavenly King assassin just now.

"Not good, let's go back as well." Shangguan Xue'er said softly to Tian'er. Both girls did not hesitate, quickly flying back towards the Crescent City as well. Currently, they no longer fought amongst themselves like normal, seemingly highly in sync.

As the Peerless Heavy Cavalry headed back for the Crescent City victoriously, the three hundred citizens on the city walls had already been stunned by the series of events.

They had witnessed the sheer power of the Peerless Heavy Cavalry with their own eyes. To them, these soldiers did not even seem human, as if they were divine soldiers descended from the heavens. Those Kalise Empire soldiers were scary enough to these commoners, and their numbers had surpassed the Peerless Cavalry many times over. Yet, in front of them, they had just seemed so weak and fragile. With such an army protecting the Crescent City, what was there to worry about?

What followed next with the fight in the air was even more shocking to them. Although Zhou Weiqing's fight with the Heavenly King assassin had happened at lightning speed, finishing in a short period of time, but in just that short process, the shock that it brought about was perhaps even stronger than that of the Peerless Heavy Cavalry. The changes in Zhou Weiqing's body, the

Heaven and Earth Anomaly, to ordinary people like them, it was like a miracle from the gods.

Furthermore, they were at such a distance. From their perspective and knowledge, they could not tell that Zhou Weiqing had been at the disadvantage all the time. After all, at the speeds both had been fighting at, they could not see any details. All they knew was that finally Zhou Weiqing had sent the assassin flying with a single kick, and the enemy had fled.

Currently, besides the shock on the three hundred citizens' faces, there was no longer the fear which had been there previously. That had been replaced with excitement and joy. Le Zi laughed heartily, shouting out to them: "All of you have seen for yourselves. That is our Peerless Regiment Commander! That is the strength of our Commander, and our Peerless Regiment! I am not afraid to tell you all, all of us here are just merely the vanguard party. You all should know how many people a Regiment has, and they are all elite soldiers almost as strong as us. With us here, the Crescent City will be paradise on earth. No longer will you have to fear our enemies! Alright, that is all for today, you all are free to leave now. Remember to let your friends and families know about our Peerless Regiment and our strength. Our Commander has invited you here to witness our battles, so that you can dispel the fears and worries in your hearts. Now, you can see for yourselves, there is nothing to worry about right?"

It could be said that Zhou Weiqing's plan and goal had been completed to perfection, far beyond all his expectations. When these three hundred citizens returned to their homes, the word would spread and the sheer increase in public opinion could be foreseen. However, while that part was successfully, Zhou Weiqing was currently in huge danger.

...

As he dashed into his room, Zhou Weiqing abruptly crashed down on the ground. His entire body was shuddering violently, the

red and black of his eyes appearing and disappearing in an unstable fashion, while each and every scale on his skin was trembling with a disruptive energy along with his movement.

He felt an intense pain in his body, as if his entire innards were being shredded apart, far beyond even the previous time where he had been immersed in lava! Every single cell of his body screamed in agony, as if bits of him were being disintegrated inside.

Previously, when he had entered the second stage of the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, he had felt his entire body heating up to a blazing intensity, as if he was filled with infinite strength. However, such a state only lasted for only ten seconds. That was to say, for the rest of the fight, especially that last kick that sent the Heavenly King assassin flying, he had already been in the midst of enduring such pain.

As the heat dissipated, came the horrifying pain. However, with the endurance and willpower that Zhou Weiqing had trained from his years of cultivating the Immortal Deity Technique, and the time he had spent in the lava, only then had he managed to barely hold on, forcing himself to not give himself away as he flew back to the city as quickly as he could.

He could not allow anyone else to see the current state he was in. Firstly, it was in case the Heavenly King assassin was hidden somewhere nearby, who knows if that fellow had really left. He did not want the assassin to be able to seize the opportunity to kill him. Secondly, he had spent so much effort in impressing all those citizens, a state that he could not allow to fail at the last moment. At last, he managed to hold on until he reached his room before he could no longer withstand it any longer, collapsing onto the ground as waves of pain rolled within him.

The power of the Dragon and Tiger rampaged crazily inside his body. Originally, the dual energy had been balanced when he had achieved the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, but now they had gone berserk. If not for the layer of scales outside, perhaps the

terrifying energy would have burst out of his body, destroying him totally. Pain... Pain!! It was not just his body, even his soul felt like it was being ripped apart. From below the scales, blood started to seep out all over his body, and the surface of the scales also began to change colour, growing dimmer... as if they were slowly in the process of disappearing. At this point, one could vaguely see that on Zhou Weiqing's actual skin, there were shockingly cracks all over. His entire person looked like he was drenched in blood, and as the dragon tiger energy within his body raged all about... once the outer layer of scales disappeared, he could possibly implode and die.

Having his inner potential burst forth like that before its time in a forced entry to the second state of the Dragon-Tiger Transformation might have seemed like a good thing, and it had certainly saved his life. However, that also meant that Zhou Weiqing's body had to endure levels of energy that it could not handle... how could he not pay the price now? He had chased away his enemy, but now the problems he was facing could just lead to his death. At this moment, any Skill was useless... not any amount of healing. After all, the source of this was internal, from within to without, a far more chilling destructive capability.

The intense pain had caused Zhou Weiqing to even lose his capability of thought, he could only lie down on the ground, trembling as the energy rocked his body, without the strength to even thrash around.

Chapter 198 Breakdown! Rescue! Devour! (1)

Zhou Weiqing did not know that this state he was in was known as 'Breakdown'. That was to say, his entire body was in the midst of breaking down and collapsing from within.

When he had triggered the energy that his body could not withstand, he had gained a temporary boost to his combat abilities, saving his life in front of the Heavenly King assassin. At the same time, the backlash was not something his body could withstand.

The Dragon-Tiger Transformation could be said to be a power that had come about through the mutation of his bloodline. Such a mutation was extremely rare, or perhaps even totally non-existent in the entire Boundless Mainland. After all, the Dark Demon God Tiger bloodline was not from this world, and added to it the rare phenomenon of the Solidified Dragon Spirit... the fusion between the two had caused such a unique mutation that only Zhou Weiqing had.

When he had first achieved the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, Zhou Weiqing had actually only managed to tap into a small portion of the power of the bloodline, but it was in perfect balance. At the same time, as Zhou Weiqing continued growing, the bloodline power would continue being unlocked and triggered. According to normal growth, if Zhou Weiqing cultivated to the nine-Jeweled stage, the second stage of the Dragon-Tiger Transformation should naturally come to him, giving him a huge boost to his combat abilities, also mimicking the innate fighting style of dragons or tigers. That formidable might alone would have been astonishing indeed.

However, he was after all currently only at the sixth Jeweled stage. No matter his body, its strength and toughness, as well as his Heavenly Energy, his Legendary Sets, all of it could not meet the requirements for the perfect fusion of the second stage of the Dragon Tiger Transformation.

The bloodline power had been invoked by him, but he was only able to maintain that state for a very short period of time. What followed next would be the power attempting to settle back down, and this process would need his entire body to be strong enough to re-forge itself and fuse with the new bloodline power. This was a process just like when he originally first Awakened his Demonic Change State.

However, it was clear that Zhou Weiqing did not have the power, toughness and stability to settle the abruptly awakened bloodline, resulting in the clash of energies in his body now, as it raged through his body in an attempt to find a place. Once his body was unable to withstand it, then the energy would burst through and he would be utterly disintegrated. Even the Resurrect Skill of the Divine Attribute would not be able to bring him back, as Breakdown meant he would instantly be disintegrated into nothing.

Currently, the sheer amount of power was no longer something he could control. It was not just a simple matter of willpower that could allow him to tide through.

Perhaps if the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya was here, he might have a slight possibility of using his Heavenly Emperor energy to suppress the bloodline power, forcing it to settle down... but Long Shiya wasn't here!

PENG The door slammed open and two graceful figures entered. At this moment, both Shangguan Xue'er and Tian'er were extremely worried, and they had rushed here urgently at top speed.

As soon as they entered, the two girls immediately saw Zhou Weiqing's current condition. His body had not shrunk back to his original state, still stuck in the second stage of the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, stout as can be. However, by now, the scales on his body were already indistinct, a very thin layer that seemed to disappear and reappear like an illusion. It was clear that it was

about to vanish, and they could clearly see the horrible cracks and tears on Zhou Weiqing's skin.

Both girls were heirs of the two most powerful Great Saint Lands, and at this moment, neither of them panicked, instantly making their judgement of the current situation.

Tian'er was the first to spring into motion. In a flash, she appeared beside Zhou Weiqing, her hands outstretched and Divine Attribute Heavenly Energy bursting out of them, warping into a thick gold light which enveloped Zhou Weiqing's body. With all her might, she focused on the healing and boosting effects of the Divine Attribute.

The Divine Attribute was truly one of the four Saint Attributes, and the healing effect was one of the top in the world. The horrifying cracks on the surface of Zhou Weiqing's skin, all the way down to the tears in his meridians, started to heal. The involuntary shuddering of his body also calmed slightly.

For Zhou Weiqing, lost in the violently intense pain, he suddenly felt a soft warmth encompass him, lowering his pain slightly.

Shangguan Xue'er stood by Zhou Weiqing's side, looking urgently at Tian'er. She did not have any healing capabilities, and she was unable to help besides watching Tian'er save Zhou Weiqing.

"What is his current status?" She asked urgently with worry.

Tian'er's brow was currently furrowed. As her Divine Attribute energy entered Zhou Weiqing's body, she instantly sensed his current condition.

In this world, in terms of knowledge of Zhou Weiqing's body, no one could surpass Tian'er. She had the most intimate relations with him so many times, and they often cultivated together with the four Saint Attributes. As such, no matter his meridians, his bloodline energy, how he circulated his Heavenly Energy, down to

all parts of his body, Tian'er was extremely clear of everything. As such, she directly discovered the tremendous danger he was currently in.

“It's his bloodline energy exploding forth and acting up. I believe his current state is due to that excessive bloodline energy, initiated when he was facing death... but the problem now is that his body is unable to withstand such a level of energy, resulting in a severe backlash. He is in danger of Breakdown at anytime.” Tian'er said urgently.

Her Divine Attribute could only help Zhou Weiqing suppress the energy for a short period of time, but it would never be able to help him settle it down. After all, it was still an external source of energy, and while the healing might help, it was no long term suggestion. Once Tian'er's energy ran out, then the suppressed bloodline energy would burst out once more.

“What do we do then?” Shangguan Xue'er asked worriedly.

Tian'er bit her lip, hesitating for a moment before saying: “Help me, circulate your Heavenly Energy into my body to support me. I will have to try using my two Saint Attributes to invoke his two Saint Attributes. There is nothing we can do directly... Perhaps now the only chance is for the four Saint Attributes to fuse together, and hopefully that will help the raging bloodline energy calm down and settle.”

In a flash, Shangguan Xue'er appeared behind Tian'er's back. Placing her palms on Tian'er's back, she took a deep breath and said: “Be careful. We must definitely succeed now!”

Tian'er nodded and said: “We will.”

Shangguan Xue'er began to slowly infuse her Heavenly Energy into Tian'er's body. Without any instructions, she automatically knew what to do. She purified her own Heavenly Energy, ensuring there was no Attributes within, only the purest form of Heavenly Energy. This would enable Tian'er to better use it for her own

purposes.

With Shangguan Xue'er's help, Tian'er's spirit perked up, and the circulating of her Divine Attribute Heavenly Energy also increased.

The Heavenly Energy cultivated with the Boundless Infinitum Technique had one unique point, that was a vast amount, boundless and long lasting. With such a strong support of sustainable Heavenly Energy, Tian'er clearly heaved a sigh of relief.

A faint purple light rose slowly from Tian'er's eyes, and a thick spirit energy fluctuation appeared. Tian'er took a deep breath. Abruptly, the purple light shot out from her eyes, but not directly onto Zhou Weiqing's body. Instead, it spread out, forming a faint purple shield of light enveloping Zhou Weiqing, starting to merge with the Divine Attribute energy that she was infusing into his body.

No matter Tian'er or Shangguan Xue'er, they were now extremely nervous. To be honest, Tian'er did not know whether this last ditch method could work. After all, in all the time that she had cultivated together with Zhou Weiqing, though they had done so with the fusion of the four Saint Attributes, they had never succeed in actually using the fused Saint Attributes or understanding the underlying profound secrets. The reason they did so was because with such cultivation, it was much faster than if they did so individually.

Currently, Tian'er was facing two problems. Firstly, she did not know how or if using her two Saint Attributes would actually invoke Zhou Weiqing's two Saint Attributes as well. Secondly, even if it worked, she did not know if it would actually be of help in suppressing and settling his bloodline energy.

If any one of those problems 'failed', then she would have no way of saving Zhou Weiqing.

The Divine and Spirit Attributes surrounded and enveloped Zhou Weiqing's body, but his body actually seemed to tremble even more violently. Just as Tian'er was surprised by that, a grey coloured light rose up, along with a faint energy reverberation that seemed to warp the world around.

The four Saint Attributes were indeed able to attract each other, and she had successfully invoked Zhou Weiqing's two Saint Attributes as well. The four Saint Attributes fused together, forming the usual whirlwind shape it took, spinning right above Zhou Weiqing's body. At the same time, the violent shuddering of his body slowed down, his ragged breathing having a better turn.

Miraculously, as the four fused Saint Attributes swirled in the whirlpool, the raging bloodline energy in Zhou Weiqing's body actually seemed to calm down slightly, at least not smashing around violently. Under Tian'er's control, the fused energies slowly entered Zhou Weiqing's body, slowly entering his over twenty energy whirlpools of his Death Acupuncture Points, as they too whirled along.

Both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er did not know that when the four Saint Attributes gathered and fused together, the unique product from it was only one – Nature's Fortune Stealing Heaven and Earth.

The Nature's Fortune Stealing Heaven and Earth was actually the key to breaking through the human limits that everyone faced, that was the Heavenly God Tier stage. Of course, the great improvement in cultivation speed that Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er enjoyed was just one of the benefits that the Nature's Fortune Stealing Heaven and Earth granted.

Currently, it was this Nature's Fortune Stealing Heaven and Earth that was above all other forms of energy. The four Saint Attribute's fusion energy forcefully suppressed the ebullient bloodline power.

Tian'er's desperate choice had been accurate. With Zhou Weiqing's current situation, even if Long Shiya had been here, using his powerful Heavenly Energy to suppress his bloodline powers, even if he managed to save Zhou Weiqing, there would definitely be terrible side effects. Only the fusion of the four Saint Attributes, entering the Nature's Fortune Stealing Heaven and Earth state... the critical key was the 'Nature's Fortune' words. Facing the fusion energies that was above all, even the great mutated bloodline of the Dragon and Tigers had no choice but to submit.

It could be said that Zhou Weiqing's Dragon-Tiger Transformation was the strongest bloodline in the entire world today, but the four Saint Attributes' fusion energies was the strongest attribute power in the world. The actual strength of both was difficult to actually compare, but the two energies were not actually clashing. Instead, the fusion Saint Attribute energies were guarding, protecting, restoring and repairing. Along with the fact that not all of the bloodline powers had been invoked out, and by chance it had definitely been a case of 'applying the right medicine to the problem'. Zhou Weiqing's body was steadily taking a turn for the better.

Chapter 198 Breakdown! Rescue! Devour!

(2)

Time passed, seconds, then minutes. Outside the door, Lin TianAo, Duan Tianlang and the others were gathered. Previously, Lin TianAo had also quickly realised that something was wrong with Zhou Weiqing, just that his speed was much slower. When he rushed back, he had quickly went to look for the person with the highest cultivation level in the entire Crescent City, Duan Tianlang, inviting the God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master to help.

Although Duan Tianlang had never seen the four Saint Attributes fusion before, his experience was far stronger than any of the others. Instantly, he realised that Zhou Weiqing was currently slowly easing past the crisis under the help of the four fused Saint Attributes. As such, he had held Lin TianAo back, and both of them waited outside the door. As soon as Shangguan Xue'er's Heavenly Energy was not sufficient to support Tian'er, he would immediately move forward to replace her to aid Tian'er.

Gradually, Zhou Weiqing's body turned back to his original look, the scales vanishing, his legs and hands resuming their human form. The horrific cracks and tears on his skin also started healing with the help of the Divine energy, though his skin still looked pale and pallid. Luckily, his breathing was still relatively even.

"I'm alright now, Tian'er. Thanks..." Taking a deep breath, Zhou Weiqing slowly stood up. The raging bloodline energy within his body had finally calmed down. He was out of danger, but his vitality was greatly sapped, his face looking terribly pale.

Tian'er and Shangguan Xue'er slowly reduced their Heavenly Energy infusion before fully withdrawing. Seeing Zhou Weiqing's ashen face, Tian'er leaped into his arms, crying out: "Little Fatty, you scared me to death!"

Zhou Weiqing quickly embraced Tian'er tightly, a bitter look on his face. "I wonder who had such power wealth and resolution to do this, to actually hire a Heavenly King assassin to take care of me. I was truly lucky this time, if not this time I would have been killed for sure!"

Shangguan Xue'er stood at the side, looking at Tian'er in Zhou Weiqing's embrace. A hint of envy flashed in cold her eyes momentarily; as she saw that Zhou Weiqing was all right, she also relaxed. Previously, when she saw that Zhou Weiqing was so close to death, the urgency and worry in her heart was no lesser than Tian'er's.

Tian'er's tears soaked Zhou Weiqing's shoulder, but at the side, Shangguan Xue'er said coldly: "Hey, shouldn't you at least wear some clothes first?"

Tian'er lifted her head to look at Zhou Weiqing. Earlier, due to her worry and nervousness, she had not even realised that due to the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, besides a few critical areas still covered by the remaining shreds his pants, most of Zhou Weiqing's body was revealed. With a faint blush on her face, her tears finally stopped.

Embarrassed, Zhou Weiqing took out a large overcoat from his Spatial Ring and draped it on himself. At that point, Tian'er said viciously: "I wonder who is that bastard who hired that guy... this Heavenly King assassin looks to be extremely professional. In the world of assassins now, I would guess he is at least the top three... if not the top. A Heavenly King stage assassin, it is truly too terrifying. If I find out who that employer is..." A powerful killing intent shot out from Tian'er's beautiful eyes. She had never been a gentle or peaceful person, and now that someone was targeting her man, how could she not be enraged?

In deep thought, Zhou Weiqing pondered out loud: "It is hard to say for sure. However, I am at least quite certain that it isn't the Kalise Empire or the Bai Da Empire. They should not have such

information at hand. We have only just arrived here, and the assassin already reached. He clearly has access to information about me, and at least has a clear understanding of my movements, besides wanting to ensuring my death.”

Shangguan Xue'er said: “Whoever you threaten, that would be the greatest possibility in wanting to kill you.”

Hearing her words, Tian'er's brow furrowed in slight anger: “What do you mean?”

Shangguan Xue'er ignored her anger, not afraid of her at all. “When Weiqing set up his Peerless Regiment, it was the greatest threat to your WanShou Empire. For someone to be able to hire a Heavenly King assassin, one must at least have the requisite connections and status... who else could it be?”

“Don't make such dirty unfounded accusations. Weiqing is my husband, how could our Heavenly Snow Mountain take action against him? Father has already agreed to our wedding, and he also knows about our four Saint Attributes fusion. Hmph, if he wanted to kill Weiqing, he could have done so personally when we were on the Heavenly Snow Mountain.”

Shangguan Xue'er glanced at her before saying: “Use your brains please? Did I say the Heavenly Snow Mountain?”

Tian'er started, before saying slowly: “You mean... the Royal Family?”

A pondering look on his face, Zhou Weiqing said: “Indeed... to be able to know my current location with such accuracy, and to actually take action against me... I can only think of two possibilities. One is the WanShou Empire... Since I stole you away, even if the Lion Price Gu Yingbing is not willing to take action, the Lion King Gu Site hates me to the core. A possibility is that he sent this assassin instead of his own powerful tribe members is because he fears your Heavenly Snow Mountain, especially your father. The other possibility is... the Fei Li Empire. Our diplomatic party

could have also caused them to feel threatened... However, I personally think that the Lion King is the greater suspect.”

Tian’er took a deep breath, gritting her teeth with anger as she said: “I’ll write to Father!”

Zhou Weiqing shook his head and said: “There is no use, we do not have any concrete evidence. There is no point in telling him about mere guesses. Currently, the most important thing we have to deal with is that assassin. Furthermore, if I can’t even handle such matters, how can I say that I will protect you, to be your husband? Let me handle this matter.”

Tian’er said urgently: “But... that fellow is a Heavenly King stage powerhouse, and not any ordinary one. Furthermore, that weapon of his is truly strange, my guess is it is an Assembly Set weapon, otherwise it is impossible for him to have such a powerful offense.”

Zhou Weiqing sighed and said: “Originally, when I brought you down from the Heavenly Snow Mountain, I had such confidence in myself. At least, I had imagined that my current abilities weren’t too bad, that I could be considered strong. However, today’s lesson, while painful, has allowed me to understand that... no matter what, six Jewels are still six Jewels. Although my instantaneous explosive power and other boosts can grant me power far beyond my cultivation level, but if I face a true powerhouse, then it all amounts to nothing. The most important thing now is for me to raise my Heavenly Energy cultivation level!”

Tian’er comforted him gently: “Little Fatty, don’t be so hard on yourself. You are demanding too much from yourself. After all, you are not even twenty years old yet! In the entire mainland, to be able to reach such a cultivation level at your age, that number can be counted on one hand. Don’t think too much...”

Zhou Weiqing shook his head and said: “It’s not that I want to think too much! I have never been an ambitious person, and if I were alone, I would not care about all that. However, now I have to

command the Peerless Regiment to revive my Empire. In the future, the enemies that I will have to face will only be stronger and stronger.”

“From the news that the Fei Li Empire had sent, the Dan Dun Empire attacked the Geritimo Empire, and if that doesn’t have the Bai Du Empire’s shadow behind, that would be too strange. In the future, I will definitely clash with the Bai Da Empire, and maybe even the Dan Dun Empire. In that case, I would be facing powerhouses from the Blood Red Hell... that is the power of a Great Saint Lands. The only one I can depend on is myself... as long as my own power is sufficiently strong, only then can I face all these enemies. It looks like I should not be too urgent in attacking, we will focus on stabilizing the Crescent City for now. The first priority for me is to quickly raise my cultivation level and power.”

Shangguan Xue’er nodded and said: “Your thinking is correct. However, if it is just yourself alone, it will definitely not be enough. Let me write back to the Heaven’s Expanse Palace for them to send some manpower...”

Without hesitation, Zhou Weiqing waved his hand in rejection. “No, in reviving my Empire, I can only depend on myself, not on others. If I just depend on your Heaven’s Expanse Palace, or even Tian’er’s Heavenly Snow Mountain’s power. Then, in the future, could my Heavenly Bow Empire still remain autonomous? You do not need to rush to deny it, no matter what, especially in terms of strategic positioning, if either of the two Great Saint Lands move out to aid us, they will definitely have some terms. Even if I were the leader in their position, I would do the same. In this world, there is no such thing as a free lunch.”

Tian’er pursed her beautiful lips as she said huffily: “Little Fatty, don’t put everything in such realistic terms, what about me, how do I count?”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “Both of you are not the same of course, you are my women, we are a family.”

Tian'er gave a satisfied smile, a look of bliss on her face. On the other hand, Shangguan Xue'er turned red and muttered: "Who's your woman..."

Zhou Weiqing blinked at her innocently and said: "You lost to me to become my wife right! Have you forgotten? At that time, I said that you didn't have to follow that oath, but you weren't willing to do so. So, aren't we a family? Not just you, Bing'er, Fei'er, we are all a family. In fact, since we are all here now, I have some words to speak to you both."

As he spoke up to that point, Zhou Weiqing's expression turned serious and stern. "As the saying goes, before one can start on an external expedition, the internal must be settled first. If both of you keep fighting between the two of you, it is truly not easy for me to pass the days. I love both of you, and perhaps Xue'er might have came later, and we may not have gone through as much together as Tian'er. However, you already have a position in my heart. So, I ask you both now seriously, can you try to accept each other?"

"In others' eyes, having such two great beauties like you beside me, I should be enjoying a great life. However, I have to tell you both now, in the past few days, enjoying is the last thing I have experienced. All I have felt is suffering, and more suffering."

"Behind every successful man, there are women who have supported him. I truly hope that you all can get along well. In this way, no matter what I am doing, when I think of you all I can be filled with happiness, be filled with motivation. If this continues, when Bing'er and Fei'er returns, it will become worse. I won't be able to pass my days any longer. If that really happens, once I revive my homeland, I will run away forever and not allow you all to find me again."

"No!" Both Shangguan Xue'er and Tian'er exclaimed simultaneously. Both girls exchanged looks, a strange expression on their faces. However, Zhou Weiqing's threat seemed to have

taken effect, and they did not snipe at each other like they would have, only glaring at Zhou Weiqing.

“If you all are willing to be with me, then please try to accept each other. I thank you both.” Zhou Weiqing said with a bitter smile.

Tian'er looked at his pitiful look, thinking about how he said he had been suffering all these days, her eyes turned slightly red as she muttered: “I'll... I'll try my best.”

Zhou Weiqing turned his gaze upon Shangguan Xue'er and said: “What about you?”

Shangguan Xue'er glared at him exasperatedly, but in the end she gave a soft ‘En’ of assent.

Zhou Weiqing smiled happily. Standing up slowly and shakily, he grabbed onto each other their hands respectively. “That is great. We will soon be facing stronger enemies, and if we can unite and work together, I believe that we can face all difficulties head on.”

As he said that, he pulled both girls into his embrace overbearingly. Tian'er submitted happily, but Shangguan Xue'er struggled slightly, unaccustomed to it at all.

Chapter 198 Breakdown! Rescue! Devour!

(3)

However, almost instantly, Zhou Weiqing staggered to the side, swaying unsteadily as a line of fresh blood trickled down the side of his mouth. Instantly, Shangguan Xue'er dared not move, allowing him to hold her slim waist.

As she truly leaned into Zhou Weiqing's embrace, feeling his rather feeble body against her now, she suddenly felt a sense of peace in her heart, an indescribable feeling growing.

...

Zhou Weiqing rested for three whole days before he barely recovered his vitality. This was also because of his strong physique and the miraculous recovery rate of the Immortal Deity Technique.

When the Peerless Heavy Cavalry had retreated victoriously, it had barely taken two hours before the Sixth Regiment of the Kalise Empire to retreat, almost fleeing away. Although Zhou Weiqing had almost died to the Heavenly King assassin, the arrow that he had launched prior to that had indeed slain the Sixth Regiment Commander.

As the battle ended, the entire process of the fight had also started to spread from the three hundred citizens. Within the day, the entire city knew all about the fight.

In general, populace and general opinions could be likened to water. Water could bear a boat and keep it afloat, but it is also the same water that could overturn and swallow it. Zhou Weiqing's speech, his waiver of tax for a year, added to the great spectacle of the Peerless Heavy Cavalry's power, all of that added together to allow the Crescent City to restore itself to its original state in a short period of time. The city gates opened, trade resumed and the

panic in the city soon dissipated. Towards the return of the Heavenly Bow Empire, the grand majority of the populace were definitely extremely happy.

The dealings of the city officials had also ended. Along with all the citizens' votes, some of the original officials had been killed, some promoted, and the administration of the city was now in good order.

However, in a contrast to the smooth sailing of the Crescent City administration, Zhou Weiqing's personal condition was not as favourable. During the few days when he was resting and healing up, the upper echelons of the Peerless Regiment were all extremely nervous.

A professional Heavenly King assassin who could appear at any time, that was definitely sufficient cause for anyone to be afraid. Tian'er and Shanguan Xue'er remained in Zhou Weiqing's cultivating, while Duan Tianlang personally moved to the room next door just in case. At the same time, Lin TianAo and the others also moved closer, and the atmosphere around was rather nervous.

Even after Zhou Weiqing's injuries had fully healed, the aura of nervousness did not disappear. The greatest problem was that Heavenly King assassin's terrifying offensive power. Under normal circumstances, if any of his attacks landed on any single member of the Peerless Regiment, it would definitely be a lethal blow.

That second stage of the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, Zhou Weiqing was not able to enter it at all. Previously, that time was truly godsent luck, and if he had to go through such an attack again, he was not sure that he would be enter such a state again. Of course, the previous time was also when he had been fully focused on attacking an enemy, before being ambushed. If he were to be prepared and on guard, with his extraordinary senses, he should at least sense something amiss. Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing also knew that the assassin had been severely injured that day, and it would take him some time to fully recover.

“Weiqing, it will not do to keep going on like this.” Shangguan Xue’er said as she looked at Zhou Weiqing with her brow furrowed deeply.

Tian’er nodded firmly in agreement, saying: “I also think that we cannot continue on like this.” That day, after that talk with Zhou Weiqing, the relationship between the two girls had indeed eased up. At least, they no longer argued all the time. Of course, due to worry for Zhou Weiqing’s safety, the three of them had been staying together, and Tian’er had not been able to be intimate with Zhou Weiqing for days, and she was not too happy in her heart, and she naturally agreed with Shangguan Xue’er’s words.

Shangguan Xue’er glanced at Tian’er before saying: “We can’t possibly keep maintaining such a high level of alert forever. We do not know when that enemy will appear once more. For a Heavenly King stage powerhouse trained in the assassination arts, he is clearly well versed in keeping hidden. It is just too difficult for us to deal with him.”

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: “Indeed. That assassin’s offensive power is truly something I’ve never seen in my life. Besides entering the second state of the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, none of my other defensive abilities are of much use. In terms of attacks alone, his offensive strength is already at the Heavenly Emperor stage. His weak point would be his defenses, since he is chasing an absolute offense, his own defense would definitely be weak. No defensive Consolidated Equipment armour, and I guess he doesn’t have any defensive Stored Skills as well. However, he has trained so much that he can use his offensive attacks as a sort of parrying defense. What a shame, he was actually able to force out the venom that was injected into him with my kick, otherwise it would be enough to cause him trouble for some time.”

Speaking up to that point, Zhou Weiqing fell silent for a moment, his eyes glinting in a fiery light. “In the end, it all comes back down

to the same point. Our strength is just not sufficient. If my cultivation level was at the nine-Jeweled stage, I would be able to enter the second stage of the Dragon-Tiger Transformation at will... if he dares try to assassinate me then, who knows who will be the one who dies.”

Although the Heavenly King Stage was still considered high above the nine-Jeweled stage, Zhou Weiqing had the Dragon-Transformation state, all his other boosts, as well as his six Attributes. If he truly grew to the Upper Level Zong Stage, he was confident of challenging any Heavenly King Stage, even one as strong and unique as this assassin.

Shangguan Xue'er said: “Since that assassin had failed his first time, he knows that we will be prepared for any follow up attacks. My guess is that unless he sees a perfect chance, he will not easily attack again. At the same time, the Kalise Empire has just lost a large percentage of their Regiment before they fled, and in a short period of time they shouldn't be able to gather too strong an army here. At the same time, they also need to consider if we have the Fei Li Empire at our backs. Also, by now, the news of our reoccupation of the Crescent City should have reached the Fei Li Empire, and I'm sure that it will not be long before their promised supplies reach us, along with the batch of logistic units to aid us.”

“With our previous crushing win, the situation in the Crescent City is at least growing towards our intended goals. I believe that it is time to start recruitment, at least to prioritise setting up our own logistics and supplies unit... only then will our Peerless Regiment be able to flourish their full power on the battlefield without too much worries.”

“As for that assassin, we currently do not have any better plans, and all we can do is to be careful. If Senior Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor returns in time, I believe that assassin would not even dare come again.”

Zhou Weiqing gripped his fist tightly and said: “I can't keep

relying on Master alone, we also need to focus on our strength and power. However... what possible route is there for my Heavenly Energy to grow quickly?”

Shangguan Xue'er glared at him exasperatedly and said: “You're not even twenty yet and you are already at the six-Jeweled stage. How much faster do you want to be?”

The Shangguan Sisters were three years older than Zhou Weiqing, but even for an outstanding genius like Shangguan Xue'er, when she was at Zhou Weiqing's age, she had barely reached the six-Jeweled stage. Furthermore, with Zhou Weiqing's current strength, could he really be considered as an ordinary six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master? That day, with that Heavenly King assassin, if he had attacked any other nine-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master instead of Zhou Weiqing, she believed that it would still have resulted in a death. Perhaps, even an ordinary Heavenly King stage powerhouse, if careless, might have also sustained serious injuries or even death.

Hearing Shangguan Xue'er's words, all of a sudden, Zhou Weiqing's eyes lit up brightly. Lowering his head to look at his hands, he muttered: “Raising Heavenly Energy... it's not exactly impossible...”

As he said that, he silently released his Heavenly Jewels, and a grey light glowed around his palms faintly.

In that moment, he had abruptly thought about the Demonic Manual and the writings within. Demonic Attribute... Devour Skill... the heralded top Skill of the Demonic Attribute. Perhaps a Skill that could even exceed those Heavenly God Tier Skills with their Heavenly Skill Images... how could it simply be just a minor aid in battles?

According to the records in the Demonic Manual, in the history of the Heavenly Demon Sect, there had only been one Heavenly God Tier powerhouse... the Founder of the entire Heavenly Demon

Sect, who had Awakened the Demonic Attribute and also had the innate Devour Skill like Zhou Weiqing.

Six Jewels. It was not only the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation that had such a boundary limit. Towards the Devour Skill, it was also a boundary limit! However, Zhou Weiqing had read the Demonic Manual a long time ago, added on to the fact that he had been extremely busy during this period ever since he reached the six Jeweled stage, along with the addition of the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, he had neglected this Skill. Currently, he abruptly recalled it once more, and how the Demonic Change State and Devour Skill would upgrade and evolve after the Heavenly Jewel Master reached a six-Jeweled cultivation level.

Sensing the Demonic Attribute around Zhou Weiqing's palms, Tian'er was still fine, but Shangguan Xue'er on the side shuddered involuntarily, an unknown strange of danger overwhelming her.

This sensation was an involuntarily one that rose from the depths of her heart, perhaps it was her natural instincts, as if something terrifying was about to happen with the source being Zhou Weiqing's palms.

"You..." Shangguan Xue'er had experienced the Devour Skill before when they fought, but not knowing why, this time the sensation was totally different.

Swoosh The wings billowed out from Zhou Weiqing's back as he entered the Dragon-Tiger Transformation state, his eyes glowing purple. Zhou Weiqing clapped his hands onto his chest, his Heavenly Jewels spinning around his wrist. In a flash, his entire body was covered by a swirling layer of grey air.

Currently, in Tian'er and Shangguan Xue'er's eyes, Zhou Weiqing had disappeared, there was only a massive whirlpool.

That massive whirlpool had a terrifying suction force that caused their very souls to tremble, automatically causing their Heavenly Energy in their body to well up, even their soul and spirits, as if

about to be dragged out of their bodies.

What, what was that?

The Devour Skill had not appeared for just too long. As such, even amongst the other Great Saint Lands, they did not have much records left about it.

Zhou Weiqing's mind flew at top speed as he tried to remember everything he had read in the Demonic Manual. After the six-Jeweled stage, the Heavenly Xu Energy was able to better invoke the Devour Skill, allowing the Demonic Attribute energy to spread throughout his entire body. With his entire body drawing in energy from his palms, all the atmospheric energy being sucked in at a crazy rate, almost like a soul eater.

Almost similar to what Shangguan Xue'er and Tian'er were feeling, Zhou Weiqing could clearly sense like he had warped into a giant whirlpool. In such a state, he found that the other five Attributes in his body seemed to be suppressed and hidden, and he could only sense the Demonic Attribute. In this state, his Ice Cold Perception was also raised to the max.

Chapter 199 To be confirmed! (1)

Along with the raising of the Ice Cold Perception, Zhou Weiqing suddenly realised a miraculous happening. At that point, he could actually vaguely sense the inner circulations of Heavenly Energy for both Shangguan Xue'er and Tian'er.

“Little Fatty, your Devour Skill evolved?” Tian'er asked in surprise.

Zhou Weiqing nodded, his voice still cold from the change. “It seems like when my Heavenly Energy cultivation level reached the six-Jeweled stage, it automatically evolved, just that I had never really noticed or activated it.”

Without hesitation, Tian'er extended her hands out. “Come, let's try it.”

Looking at that scene, Shangguan Xue'er suddenly felt her heart race. She had never had a favourable impression of Tian'er, but in that instant, that feeling changed. Without question, Zhou Weiqing's current state and the Devour Skill was extremely terrifying, but Tian'er did not hesitate to offer herself as a test subject. What kind of trust did that require? It might just be a simple detail, but from that alone Shangguan Xue'er was sure that Tian'er was willing to sacrifice everything for Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing nodded. He had absolute confidence in his control, and his hands grasped on Tian'er's hands.

As their hands met, Tian'er's entire body started shuddering violently like she was being electrocuted. Standing at the side, Shangguan Xue'er could clearly see a circle of eye-piercing light burst out of Tian'er's body, flying right into Zhou Weiqing's body.

Heavens! That was...

Shangguan Xue'er widened her eyes in surprise. The Boundless Infinitum Technique she cultivated in was extremely sensitive

towards even minor changes in energy flow, especially at such close proximity. She could clearly sense Tian'er's Heavenly Energy flowing crazily into Zhou Weiqing's body. Not only that, it was as if Tian'er's entire body had been Sealed, and besides Devouring the Heavenly Energy, even her life energy and vitality were being drained out of her. Originally, Tian'er's smooth silky skin was starting to darken, even her soul and spirit were trembling violently.

What a terrifying Skill.

As the actual parties concerned, both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er had an even stronger sense of that. The instant that Zhou Weiqing held onto Tian'er's hands, he immediately felt as if his body had become a bottomless pit, a crazy suction force bursting out, crazily devouring everything from Tian'er. He felt a strong sense of satiation as the Devouring began.

The Devoured Heavenly Energy flowed in through his hands, beginning to circulate all around his body, starting to merge with his own Heavenly Energy. Although this external Heavenly Energy was still not his, he would be able to quickly refine it with the Devour Technique to purify it and make it his own. Although only the finest core of it would remain, perhaps only a tenth or so, that was still far faster than his own cultivation speed.

However, Zhou Weiqing was not at all pleased by that. Instead, fear filled his heart, as he was shocked to find that as soon as the Devour Skill started, his own control started to slip. Attempting to stop the Devouring process, he found it extremely difficult, almost impossible. Furthermore, he could sense the life force draining out of Tian'er, and it was also because the Devouring process included this life force that allowed him to refine the Heavenly Energy so easily.

If this continued, when Tian'er had been drained dry, nothing would remain of her but a dessicated corpse.

Just like the Forest Direwolves all those years ago.

“Tian’er, activate your Saint Attribute!” Zhou Weiqing shouted out loud. At the same time, he channelled all his might into trying to control the Devour Skill, attempting to stop or at least slow it down, and also invoking his Time Attribute Heavenly Energy simultaneously.

As soon as the Devour Skill started, it was as if it was never-ending, with all his other Attributes now actually being suppressed. Only his Time Attribute, as the other equal Saint Attribute, was barely able to be invoked out.

Currently, Tian’er was also filled with surprise. However, she did not feel any fear in her heart; even if she were to die at Zhou Weiqing’s hands, she would not regret it. In this case, at least she would forever be with Zhou Weiqing, a part of him. Sometimes, a girl who is lost in love just thinks differently from ordinary humans. Of course, after hearing Zhou Weiqing’s words, she immediately began to attempt using her two Saint Attributes.

Divine and Spirit, the two Saint Attributes slowly began circulating under Tian’er’s control. However, they were still began Devoured into Zhou Weiqing’s body. One could imagine, for both Saint Attributes to actually be Devoured in failed resistance, what what the other Attributes?

Naturally, the reason for this was because Tian’er’s cultivation level was not much higher than Zhou Weiqing’s, and more importantly she had allowed him to Devour him without resistance earlier, and now she was unable to break free anymore. If it were a powerhouse with far higher cultivation level than Zhou Weiqing, as long as he discovered and broke free as quickly as possibly, it was definitely no problems. Of course, even then it had do be done quickly; if one underestimated the Devour Skill and allowed it to go on for some time... well, it would be hard to say who would end up the victor.

Currently, the grey swirl of air around Zhou Weiqing grew even stronger and obvious, his entire body glowing with grey light. The original purple looking scales that had emerged over his skin also turned a crystalline grey, as if a layer of grey water was now covering him.

As the Divine and Spirit Attributes entered his body, Zhou Weiqing immediately reacted. He had cultivated with Tian'er so many times, and towards any change in energy between the two of them, control, he had much experience. Instantly, he started activating the Time Attribute energy and a small portion of the Demonic Attribute energy to move over and meet the incoming energy.

This time, the four Saint Attributes gathered inside Zhou Weiqing's body, and under his control, they began to spin faster and faster, forming the usual whirlpool which now blocked in front of the Devour Skill.

Instantly, now blocked, the speed of Devouring slowed drastically. No matter Zhou Weiqing or Tian'er, both gave an inner sigh of relief.

The more they experimented and tested with the fused Saint Attributes, the more they realised how unique it was. The fusion of these four Saint Attributes was at a level above any other Attribute, even a single Saint Attribute.

However, it was also because of this knowledge that Zhou Weiqing realised with such clarity how terrifying the Devour Skill truly was. Even facing the blockade of the four Saint Attribute whirlpool, the Devour Skill continued, not halted but just slowed immensely.

Just as Zhou Weiqing was prepared to forcefully break the connection between the two of them and end the Devour Skill, a miraculous sight happened next.

The four Saint Attribute whirlpool that formed in Zhou

Weiqing's body was spinning faster and faster, and all the Heavenly Energy that had been Devoured and not refined by Zhou Weiqing was actually being drawn into the whirlpool. At the same time, Zhou Weiqing's own Heavenly Energy was also drawn into it at an almost equal rate of Tian'er's energy and his own. Originally, the tiny whirlpool began to grow larger and larger, and somehow the Devour Skill did not slow down further from there. Instead, it seemed to form a strange equilibrium with the whirlpool, continuing to draw energy and life from Tian'er.

What was this?! Zhou Weiqing was totally shocked. However, the next instant, that shock would be multiplied many times over.

As the whirlpool grew larger, the strange new Energy, power to the extreme, seemed to form at the very tip of the whirlpool, dropping down.

It was just a single drop, pure white liquid, clean and crystalline, glowing with a faint shimmer like it was an unparalleled treasure.

As soon as the pure white liquid that was as smooth as jade entered Zhou Weiqing's body, he felt an indescribable sensation. The sheer power held within this single drop of unknown energy was even stronger than his original Heavenly Energy, and many times purer.

When his cultivation level had reached the Heavenly Xu Energy stage, Zhou Weiqing's Heavenly Energy had already reached a liquefied state. However, this strange new liquid energy that had been a product of the four Saint Attribute fusion whirlpool was just so much purer and refined than his own Heavenly Energy, a level that seemed to be utterly impossible. That was to say, given the same volume, this drop of liquid held the maximum possible amount of energy density.

Even more miraculously, as soon as the drop of liquid entered his body, it became his own, part of him. He was able to take command of it and move it around. Furthermore, as the liquid

slowly flowed to his DanTian, it did not merge with his own Heavenly Energy, instead taking its own position at the side, as if establishing a system of its own.

Within the drop of liquid, it not only held an unbelievable amount of Heavenly Energy, it was also full of life force. This was not something either Zhou Weiqing or Tian'er actually had originally. It was as if their life force had upgraded and evolved itself within the whirlpool. Zhou Weiqing felt as soon as he was joined with that drop of liquid, a sense of euphoria overcame him.

The second drop formed, much slower than the first one. Right at that moment, an urgent voice slammed into his soul in a shocking fashion, right into his mind.

“ZHOU WEIQING, WHAT ARE YOU DOING?! ARE YOU TRYING TO KILL HER?!” The voice was Shangguan Xue'er's, her urgent and frantic voice rang out in his soul, reverberating throughout his mind, instantly snapping Zhou Weiqing out from his reverie.

Opening his eyes, Zhou Weiqing was given a huge fright.

Chapter 199 Saint Energy! (2)

Tian'er's hands were still in his grasp, and her eyes were currently closed. Her skin was dim, almost dark, and her life force was unbelievably weak, and continuously dropping down. Her Heavenly Energy was almost fully drained. It was clear that under Zhou Weiqing's Devour Skill, Tian'er was on the verge of death.

Oh no! Not good! Cold sweat streamed down Zhou Weiqing's back as fear and shock overwhelmed him. Subconsciously, he circulated his own Heavenly Energy, surrounding the fresh new drop of silvery white liquid, forcing it into his mouth. At the same time, he pulled Tian'er into his embrace, lowering his head and giving her a kiss on her pale red lips.

Just like that, the drop of liquid passed through their lips into Tian'er's mouth, and a strange spectacle occurred next. Standing at the side, Shangguan Xue'er could only stare with her jaw agape as she watched the two kiss, and from their mouths, an utterly pure form of energy seemed to diffuse all around, instantly engulfing Tian'er within. She could clearly see a faint light shine forth, starting from Tian'er's head, slowly moving down. Within moments, her entire body was glowing, and a large Heavenly Energy reverberation began. All the Heavenly Energy and life force that Tian'er had lost seemed to return, and her eyes began to open... filled with surprise and shock.

The whirlpool in Zhou Weiqing's body continued spinning, continuing to draw upon his and Tian'er's original Heavenly Energy... and as it spun... more drops of the white liquid continued to be generated.

Slowly, Zhou Weiqing began to get the hang of it. He would leave one drop of the white liquid for himself, one drop to Tian'er, and so on... In this way, an intriguing but marvelous loop began.

At the side, Shangguan Xue'er had a totally different sensation.

All the energy aside, in her eyes, all she saw was Zhou Weiqing holding onto Tian'er, their bodies pressed against each other. Every once in awhile, Zhou Weiqing would lean forward to kiss Tian'er deeply.

The strangest thing was that everytime they kissed, a brilliant light would appear around Tian'er, as if the precious light of treasure. Originally, Tian'er was already a great beauty, and each time that happened, it was as if she was evolving, her beauty shining forth even more, even her skin purifying. Looking at that, Shanguan Xue'er was not only shocked, but also slightly envious.

How are they doing that? Wasn't it the Devour Skill? How did it end up like this?

As the process continued, the amount of the silvery white liquid in Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's bodies grew steadily, and their original Heavenly Energy also continued dropping.

Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er had cultivated together with the four Saint Attributes fusion so many times before, but this was the first time something like this had occurred.

In the past, when they cultivated together, they would release their Heavenly Energy, allowing the four Saint Attributes to gather between or above them. In that way, the Saint Attributes would begin to spin and form the whirlpool, drawing in energy. As their Heavenly Energy slowly increased, it would be drawn back into their bodies and made their own.

Such a cultivation technique, it was already far faster than if they were to cultivate individually and separately. However, this strange silvery white liquid had never appeared before!

In this moment, a vague understanding slowly came to Zhou Weiqing. The profound secret should be the difference between the fusion occurring outside the body and within the body.

Perhaps, the current situation happening in his body was the

truest form of the cultivation with the four Saint Attributes. Furthermore, he guessed that the true key to this miraculous event was not the Devour Skill, but the life force of both of them fused together.

The Devour Skill had only been the tool to bring all of their energies together into Zhou Weiqing's body to form such a new whirlpool. When their life forces had joined together due to the Devour Skill, they had also fused together to join into the four Saint Attributes fusion. Under such a circumstance, the fusion of the four Saint Attributes had been ignited, causing such a miraculous chain reaction.

Indeed, Zhou Weiqing's guess was pretty accurate, but still incomplete. As he had imagined, when the four Saint Attributes gathered together, life force was the key to activating and igniting the change. However, at the same time, it was also due to the fact that when the four Saint Attributes fused outside of their bodies, it would draw in all forms of energy from the atmosphere. At that time, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er had thought it was naturally a good thing to draw in the atmospheric energy... after all, it could only be a boost right?

However, the truth was actually the reverse.

The four Saint Attributes were the highest quality Attributes in the world, and within them was a vast potential and miraculous force. When they fused together, how could they require the addition of other weaker and mixed energies? All they needed was absolute purity, not additional quantity of other unnecessary energies. When they were fully purified, the four Saint Attributes would grow in synergy, interpromoting reciprocally and having mutual generation, resulting in a all around growth and evolving.

Currently, the four Saint Attribute fusion was right in Zhou Weiqing's body, and it was a strangely favourable condition endowed by nature... with the Dragon Tiger Transformation, his body had a natural pure XianTian or primordial force. This was

something that the four Saint Attributes needed. Furthermore, within his body, as they gathered and spun, they would not come into contact or draw in the various mixed atmospheric energies that were full of other impurities. Under such a circumstance, with the mix of Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's life forces, only then had the true profound secret of the four Saint Attributes been revealed.

It could be said that Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's luck was truly good. If not for all of these unique circumstances coming into play, perhaps in their entire lives they would never discover this profound secret.

By going through this process, not only was their entire Heavenly Energy going through a fresh round of purification and refining, it was also going through the evolving of the four Saint Attributes fusion. In this manner, their original Heavenly Energy without going through their Elemental Jewels, had not transformed into the purest energy in the world, with the aura of the four Saint Attribute fusion energy. This was truly the purest form of energy in the world that any Heavenly Jewel Master could have.

A human's DanTian had its limits, and before reaching the Heavenly King stage, this limit would not be broken. As for the Heavenly King Stage? This was actually one of the greatest bottlenecks of this stage. Only when one was able to break past this major limiting factor, transforming their energy to a whole different level, only then would a Heavenly Jewel Master be able to reach the next stage. However, the size of the DanTian and the Ki Ocean would not change. That was to say, even for a Heavenly God Tier powerhouse, besides having his meridians and internal organs stronger and more flexible, his 'load bearing' and capacity was actually no different from an ordinary Heavenly Jewel Master.

Although their meridians were widened, there was definitely a limit, and it was impossible for it to continually widen forever. If that really happened, wouldn't the person just explode?

Now, this silvery white liquid that Zhou Weiqing had formed

from this round of cultivation was totally different. The inherent energy held within was more than ten times that of the Heavenly Energy liquid of the same level. That was to say, Zhou Weiqing could store more than ten times the energy in his body. Furthermore, that was a qualitative change, not that he had compressed the energy. This would mean both he and Tian'er, when compared to a Heavenly Jewel Master of the same level, their energy purity and density was far stronger than anyone, and their sustainability would be on a whole new level. Furthermore, once they could enter the Heavenly King Stage, that would be yet another concept altogether. The true profound secret of the four Saint Attribute would only come into play fully then, and the future benefits it would bring them was not something they could even dream about now, far beyond the limits of their mortal comprehension.

Time passed, seconds and minutes. Nearly an entire day and night passed before all their Heavenly Energy had been fully refined and transformed.

Although Shangguan Xue'er was rather envious and even jealous, she still kept guard by their side. She knew that such unique opportunities were few and far between for any Heavenly Jewel Master, and once they missed it, it would be a regret that they would have to live with forever. Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's cultivation level did not seem to have much changes, but the aura and presence they gave off, it was as if they had been born anew.

Finally, the last bits of their Heavenly Energy entered the whirlpool, and the last drop of silvery white liquid formed.

Currently, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er both had the feeling like their DanTian and meridians were so empty. The originally feeling of being filled with energy had disappeared, and all they had within each of them was a mere over twenty drops of that silvery white liquid. Even then, they could sense that their total amount of Heavenly Energy was actually more than previously. Although it

was all contained within that twenty plus drops of liquid, it was without a doubt their inherent energy was terrifying. The strangest thing was that it was not a condensed or compressed form as well, and they did not need to focus on controlling it.

The whirlpool slowly dissipated silently. At this moment, Zhou Weiqing also discovered something else strange. That was... despite the sheer power of his Devour Skill, it was unable to draw anything from Tian'er's body any longer. That was to say, the silvery white liquid Heavenly Energy was totally immune from his Devour Skill.

Towards this point, Zhou Weiqing was rather pleasantly surprised. It was without question that the silvery white Heavenly Energy was on a whole different level, not something that any existing cultivation technique could cultivate or refine. After this strange cultivation process, a whole new door had been opened to both him and Tian'er, and they were slowly starting to realise the true potential of the four Saint Attributes.

The Devour Skill also stopped at last, as the whirlpool within Zhou Weiqing's body finally stopped. The cultivation of the two of them had also finally stopped after an entire day and night. Tian'er had also been kissed so many times by Zhou Weiqing.

In truth, during the cultivation, as the time passed and it reached the later stages, the time between the production of each drop of the silvery white liquid began to take longer and longer time. In Zhou Weiqing's senses, it was due to the fact that their 'raw materials' were running out, thus the cultivation speed had also slowed dramatically. However, despite that, before the entire process was complete, how could Zhou Weiqing bear to stop? Who knew if there would be a future chance like this, and if he passed it up, they might regret it in the future.

"Xue'er, come here a while." After ending this round of cultivation, that was Zhou Weiqing's first words.

Seeing Zhou Weiqing with brimming with energy and almost radiant in complexion, Shangguan Xue'er who was extremely tired started momentarily, but she still walked towards him.

Just as Shangguan Xue'er reached Zhou Weiqing, in that instant, Zhou Weiqing suddenly grabbed hold of her waist without warning, lowering his head to give her a kiss.

“Wuuuu...” Facing such a sudden intimate violation, Shangguan Xue'er was caught off guard, embarrassed fully. If it had just been her and Zhou Weiqing, perhaps she would not have resisted, or not struggled so much. However, Tian'er was right there! With her character, how could she not be embarrassed?

However, before she could struggle too violently, she suddenly realised that a shameless scoundrel had actually stuck his tongue into her mouth.

Filled with sudden anger, Shangguan Xue'er bit down onto Zhou Weiqing's tongue.

In shock and pain, Zhou Weiqing quickly withdrew his tongue. “Aiiiiiya, that hurts! Xue'er, what are you doing!”

The tongue was perhaps one of the weakest spots in the entire human body, and having it bitten, how could it feel good? Furthermore, Shangguan Xue'er had been in a state of anger and embarrassment, and that bite had been stronger than she realised.

Chapter 199 Saint Energy! (3)

Right at that moment, Shangguan Xue'er froze in shock. She clearly sensed that as she bit Zhou Weiqing, a burst of pure energy instantly filled her mouth, streaming down her throat. Within moments, that pure Heavenly Energy entered her body, filling her entire body with a soothing cool, a comfortable, almost euphoric feeling extending through every inch of her body.

This... this was the secret behind him kissing Tian'er? Shangguan Xue'er was extremely intelligent, and she immediately realised what had happened. Previously, every time Zhou Weiqing had kissed Tian'er, she had glowed with that light of treasure. So, that was because of this strangely pure energy entering her body. Although Tian'er did not know how this energy had come about, but she could sense it held its sheer purity and the massive amounts inherent, with the aura of the four Saint Attributes as well... what kind of valuable treasure was this! He... he actually gave me a drop, but I bit him instead. Instantly, Shangguan Xue'er's face turned red, looking at Zhou Weiqing apologetically.

At this moment, Tian'er opened her eyes, looking at Zhou Weiqing pained look, she couldn't help but giggle out loud. "Serves you right, who asked you to just take advantage of her without explaining anything. Couldn't you just spit it out and give it to her?"

Zhou Weiqing looked at her exasperatedly: "Why does it sound so disgusting when you say it like that! What do you mean spit it out!? Without my aura protecting it, once it comes into contact with the atmosphere, it will quickly dissipate and vanish."

Shangguan Xue'er said apologetically: "I'm so sorry, I... I didn't know."

Zhou Weiqing shamelessly stuck out his tongue once more, showing the slight teeth imprint. "Give me some more kisses and it

won't hurt anymore.”

“Bah...” Shangguan Xue'er blushed deeply, subconsciously dodging behind Tian'er, saying in a low tone: “In the future, you do not need to do so again. This is the energy that you both risked your lives for, and gone through so much trouble to cultivate, how can you just give it to me?”

Tian'er giggled and extended her hands, pulling Shangguan Xue'er to her side and saying: “Sister Xue'er, I haven't even thanked you properly yet. Earlier, if not for your intervention in reminding some particular scoundrel, I would have been drained dry and killed now. Little Fatty is right, we are a family, why should we be so particular about sharing?”

Although she had argued a lot with Shangguan Xue'er, in that previous instant earlier, she had finally truly accepted Shangguan Xue'er in her heart. Without question, they were rivals in love, but in that point of critical danger, Shangguan Xue'er had still been willing to save her life. Not just willing, but anxious. Although there was still the possibility that Zhou Weiqing might have come to his senses in time, it was still without a doubt that Shangguan Xue'er's reminder had saved her, and Tian'er had been extremely touched by that. The previous ill feelings she held towards Shangguan Xue'er had vanished.

At the same time, Tian'er was no fool. She knew Zhou Weiqing's feelings for Shangguan Bing'er was the strongest; not to mention there was still another Shangguan Fei'er. The three of them were sisters, triplets. No matter what, the three sisters added together would have a higher place in Zhou Weiqing's heart than her. If she continued on this path of constantly arguing with Shangguan Xue'er, just like what Zhou Weiqing said, the days ahead would not be good at all. It was a good opportunity at hand in closing the gap between the two of them, and at least they would not have such a sense of enmity towards each other.

Shangguan Xue'er looked at Tian'er with a slightly startled

expression before she finally shook her head lightly, saying: “Although I do not like you much, but we are not enemies after all. If it had been you, you would have also done the same thing.”

Tian’er giggled and said: “It isn’t as simple as not being enemies right. Because of a particular rascal, we have been forced to become sisters. For the sake of Little Fatty, and for our own sakes, we should indeed try to accept each other. What do you say?”

Both girls could be said to have extremely stubborn characters, each with their own strong personalities. It was not easy for either of them to admit defeat at all. At this moment, with Tian’er taking the initiative to ease the relations between them, it instantly broke the thin barrier between them that was the most difficult first step to take.

Shangguan Xue’er slowly nodded. Looking at Tian’er, she slowly smiled faintly. For a person who was cultivating the Boundless Infinitum Technique to actually smile, it was not an easy feat!

Only then did Tian’er turn her gaze to Zhou Weiqing, whose tongue was still stuck out as he stared at the two of them with wide eyes. “Little Fatty, what was all that about? What is that liquid energy? How did you gain such a thing?”

Due to the fact that the leading force was Zhou Weiqing, as such although Tian’er had accepted the pure energy and benefited from it during their long cultivation, she was actually just as confused as Shangguan Xue’er, not knowing what had happened at all.

At that time, Tian’er had discovered that her body was almost drained dry, even her life force was about to vanish. In her heart, there was some fear and panic, but at that very moment, she sensed Shangguan Xue’er’s shout of warning towards Zhou Weiqing, the voice that shook down to the very soul even managed to cause her dazed thoughts to rouse slightly. The next instant, Zhou Weiqing had pulled her closer and kissed her lips.

In that instant, Tian’er could sense a vital life force entering her

body, fully replenishing all of her drained life force. Next, the silvery white liquid of pure energy fused fully into her body. Tian'er's senses were no lesser than Zhou Weiqing's, and within moments she discovered the power of the liquid. As the involved party, her curiosity about it was definitely even higher than Shangguan Xue'er.

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: "Heh, Tian'er, we have just been too lucky. I'd say [we were blind cats that caught a dead rat.](#)"

Tian'er said exasperatedly: "You are the one who's the blind cat."

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: "If only we can meet such good luck all the time, so what if I'm a blind cat. Hahaha."

Tian'er said, full of curiosity: "Hurry up, tell me and Xue'er, what was actually going on? Why was there that pure energy whenever you kissed me? How come all my Heavenly Energy was totally transformed in the process?"

Zhou Weiqing began to describe the entire process of that cultivation simply, and as the two girls listened to his story, their expressions changed several times.

Previously, Tian'er was still bashful and irritated about Zhou Weiqing's choice of words with blind cat, but after hearing his description, she could only shiver with fear on how close she had come to death several times. Indeed, she had to admit that the phrase was rather apt in the circumstance.

"That was a true mix of time, luck and life. Sometimes, when luck comes, one can't even reject it! It looks like we have to thank that assassin, otherwise we might not have such a miraculous encounter."

Tian'er said: "Don't get too excited, this is just the beginning for us. Now that our Heavenly Energy has all been transformed, how are we going to cultivate in the future? Without our original Heavenly Energy... could we continue cultivating with this pure

and refined energy? This is already the fusion of the four Saint Attributes.”

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: “This is also what I am worried about, so we will need to continue experimenting in all the cultivation techniques for the four Saint Attributes. This is something we have to fumble about before we can find a right path. However, what you mentioned just now should not be possible. When the Heavenly Energy was refined and transformed to that silvery white liquid, I was no longer able to affect it with the Devour Skill, not able to draw upon it. As such, it cannot be used as our Devour Skill cultivation. We will have to try on other areas.

Shangguan Xue’er stood at the side, her heart filled with envy. However, she did not have any Saint Attributes, and naturally could not cultivate together with them in a similar fashion.

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “That is the reason why I infused a drop of the fused power to Xue’er. Since we are going to experiment, we need to conduct many different tests with many different variables. I have a thought to try out later... I will begin Devouring Xue’er’s Heavenly Energy instead this time, and Tian’er you and I will start forming the four Saint Attribute fusion whirlpool within my body like the last time, and we shall see if we can help Xue’er to transform all of her Heavenly Energy as well... as well as what difference there might be in such a process, or what we can gain from it. With that drop of the silvery white energy protecting her, no matter what happens, at least Xue’er will not be in danger.”

Shangguan Xue’er blushed deeply, but her heart was secretly rejoicing. At least, Zhou Weiqing had not forgotten her, and such an unbelievable treasure, he was still willing to think of her.”

“You both haven’t eaten for a whole day and night, aren’t you hungry?” Shangguan Xue’er asked concernedly.

Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er exchanged looks. Indeed, such a long time had passed, yet neither of them felt any sense of hunger.

Zhou Weiqing said: "Perhaps it is because of the four Saint Attributes' fusion and that sheer massive amount of energy that it holds, that it even settled all issues of hunger and thirst. Alright, it is rather tiring to keep calling it that, how about we give it a name. Hmmm... a simple one... our original energy is called Heavenly Energy, and this is the product of the four Saint Attributes... shall we call it Saint Energy then?"

Shangguan Xue'er said: "Weiqing, I think your idea of experimentation is in the right step. However, I think that you should not rush to start on that first, especially in using the Devour Skill in training for now. That is because you still have not fully grasped this Saint Energy yet, understanding it fully and being able to control it. I feel that you both should begin cultivation first, try to learn how to cultivate it on your own and also how to control it, and also begin sharing your thoughts and understanding. With that, you can begin to fully understand it, the underlying principles and control. Only then should we start experimenting with the various training methods."

Zhou Weiqing's eyes lit up and he nodded in agreement. "That is true, I am being too eager to try that out." At the same time, his heart was secretly rejoicing. Everything else aside, it was at least clear that Shangguan Xue'er's attitude towards him had changed. This could be seen just from the fact on how she addressed him compared to previously. Furthermore, it looked like the relationship between Tian'er and Xue'er was starting to improve as well. This was amazing news for him! At least, with this improvement, his days would no longer be plagued with suffering!

...

Although they weren't particularly hungry, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er still decided to rest up and have a meal first, along with Shangguan Xue'er. While doing so, the three of them began to

have a simple discussion regarding the four Saint Attributes. Only then did they begin the fresh round of cultivation, entering a meditative state.

Zhou Weiqing sat there cross legged, starting his attempt to circulate this new Saint Energy of his. What Shangguan Xue'er had said was indeed true, he had to learn and understand it, and to do so, he would have to start actually using it and trying it out. Only then would he be able to understand the underlying profound meanings behind it, and to truly make it his own.

Literal Translation of chinese idiom, pretty much means unbelievably lucky

Chapter 200 Saint Energy Whirlpool! (1)

As he circulated the energy with all his might, it all seemed smooth, and there was no sign of it being hard to control just because the energy was of a higher state. Just like in the past when he circulated his old Heavenly Energy, Zhou Weiqing managed to circulate the energy without any issues all the way to his Death Acupuncture point energy whirlpools. To his joy, although there were only about twenty drops of the Saint Energy liquid, he found he was able to easily break them apart, not needing to keep to the size of the droplet of water. In this way, he was able to spread the Saint Energy evenly between all of his Death Acupuncture Point energy whirlpools.

As the silvery white Saint Energy entered the energy whirlpools, a strange sensation, almost unprecedented in its strength, flooded Zhou Weiqing's entire body.

All of the energy whirlpools turned the similar silvery white colour instantly, but their spinning did not actually increase, instead slowly down. Despite that, under such a circumstance, Zhou Weiqing felt as if he was in the midst of using the Devour Skill, Heavenly Energy pouring in from the atmosphere at a crazy rate. With the guidance of the Saint Energy, his cultivation level was almost three times faster than normal. However, before long, Zhou Weiqing realised a new problem. This Heavenly Energy that came from the atmosphere would not be transformed into Saint Energy from his own personal energy whirlpools, remaining as the same state of normal Heavenly Energy. Furthermore, as he drew in more and more Heavenly Energy, the energy whirlpools which had been activated by the Saint Energy grew slower and slower.

Perhaps a more accurate description would be that as the energy whirlpools grew less pure, the cultivation speed also dropped.

Zhou Weiqing discovered that this Saint Energy was extremely sensitive. He had only cultivated for such a short period of time,

and though the rate of it was indeed much faster, how much total Heavenly Energy could he actually draw? Yet, the slowing of the energy whirlpool was already quite substantial.

Zhou Weiqing sighed inwardly at that. In the end, it was because he did not have the four Saint Attributes by himself! With his own strength, he was not able to generate the Saint Energy, and it seemed like that could only be done together with Tian'er.

At this point, he suddenly had a strange thought. If he and Tian'er had a child in the future, would he or she have all four Saint Attributes? Wouldn't that be truly a talent that defied the heavens? If one wasn't possible, then I'll have more children... Heh Heh Heh.

Naturally, Tian'er did not know that a certain person was thinking of such things while cultivating. As for her, she had also discovered the same problem that Zhou Weiqing had run into. Although both their cultivation techniques were very different, the end result was about the same. No matter how they cultivated, they were not able to generate Saint Energy by themselves, only having the new Heavenly Energy cultivated having a strand of aura of the Saint Attributes.

Before long, the three of them opened their eyes slowly, one after the other. When they had all ended their cultivation, Shangguan Xue'er looked at Zhou Weiqing and asked: "How was it?"

Zhou Weiqing shook his head and said: "No, it isn't possible to directly cultivate the Saint Energy by myself. Although my cultivation speed has increased for a time, but as the original type of Heavenly Energy increases, the cultivation speed will begin dropping. From what I see, the best way would be for us to cultivate individually for a period of time, to maximize the Heavenly Energy we have, then cultivate together to refine and transform the energy into Saint Energy. At least, we need to have sufficient Heavenly Energy to generate a drop of Saint Energy before that is worth doing, probably more."

Shangguan Xue'er thought about it for a moment and said: "In that case, what if you Devour my Heavenly Energy before cultivating again?"

Zhou Weiqing said: "I'm afraid that isn't possible. That is because I definitely need Tian'er and her other two Saint Attributes to be able to form the Saint Energy whirlpool. If I only Devour your Heavenly Energy, it will only be simply draining you to death. Furthermore, currently the majority of energy in Tian'er's body is the Saint Energy, and I am totally unable to Devour anything to start the process."

Tian'er said: "How about this... I will use the Saint Energy to activate just my two Saint Attributes and infuse them into your body. At the same time, you do the same with your two Saint Attributes to receive it. In this way, I can hold one of your hands to do so. While we do that, you can use your other hand to Devour Xue'er's Heavenly Energy, and begin the process of transforming her Heavenly Energy into Saint Energy and infusing it back into her, and we can see if we are able to fully complete the process of purifying her Heavenly Energy. If that is possible, you can even start considering using this against enemies, Devouring, Transforming, Purification and making it all our own."

"Good idea." Hearing Tian'er's words, Zhou Weiqing's eyes lit up. In theory, that all seemed possible. The Saint Energy was extremely pure, and it held the aura of the four Saint Attributes, holding a massive amount of energy. Each and every drop was very precious indeed, and even if Shangguan Xue'er could just gain a few drops, it could come in handy in critical moments, as the power in using it should be extremely different. After pondering for a few moments, Zhou Weiqing said to Tian'er: "Let us first try if we can form the Saint Energy whirlpool in my body again. If it succeeds, then we can first attempt to cultivate like that. My thought is with the Saint Energy whirlpool, we can directly begin to draw Heavenly Energy from the atmosphere to refine and

transform. The Devour Skill should only be hastening the entire process.”

Tian'er nodded and said: “Good, let's try it then.”

Using a single hand, Zhou Weiqing held onto Tian'er's hand. As the two exchanged looks, they began to circulate their Saint Energy.

Using the Saint Energy to invoke their respective Saint Attributes, as soon as they began to do so, they immediately had a totally different feeling. It was clear that it was extremely different from their previous usage of the Saint Attributes. With just a single thought, the Saint Attributes were easily activated, rising instantly, and the 'fuel' of the Saint Energy glowed brightly in their bodies. However, to both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's surprise, the rate of consumption of the Saint Energy was also extremely fast, far beyond their expectations. Although the Saint Energy held more than ten times the energy of their original Heavenly Energy, the rate of consumption was actually about the same. This continued all the way until the Saint Energy whirlpool started forming in Zhou Weiqing's body, before the consumption began to lower slowly. As soon as the Saint Energy whirlpool formed, the normal Heavenly Energy that Zhou Weiqing had just cultivated earlier was drawn in and transformed. However, the amount was just too little, and new Saint Energy was not formed. Still, as they had hypothesized, when they tried cultivating new Heavenly Energy, it would instantly be drawn into the Saint Energy whirlpool.

After a while, both of them finally stopped. Exchanging glances, they asked: “Why is the energy consumption so high?” They began to describe what they had gone through to Shangguan Xue'er.

As the saying goes, ‘The spectators see the chess game better than the players.’

Shangguan Xue'er said: “Hmm... it is possible that in this case,

the high energy consumption, or rather similar rate of energy consumption means that this Saint Energy is not just a compressed form or to save energy. On the other hand, it means the output or quality of Skills used would be correspondingly much larger. Why don't you try using the Saint Energy to use a Skill. Just now, when you were circulating the Saint Energy, the aura that you both gave forth caused me to feel such a powerful presence, even that of awe."

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: "Let me try." As he said that, he focused his will to activate the Demonic Attribute, releasing the Ward of the Demon God silently. Instantly, a strange anomaly occurred. Originally, the Ward of the Demon God was just a single layer of faint grey light shield. However, this time, when Zhou Weiqing used the Ward of the Demon God with the Saint Energy, a crystalline layer of grey light burst out of his body. For a grey colour to actually glow with such resplendent magnificence... they did not even need to test it out to know how terrifying the defensive capabilities of this new Ward of the Demon God brought. It gave Zhou Weiqing the feeling similar to that of his second stage of the Dragon-Tiger Transformation. However, Zhou Weiqing quickly ended the Skill, as he was shocked to find that in just that short moment he had it up, he had almost used up an entire drop of Saint Energy.

"The consumption rate is just too high!" Zhou Weiqing said in shock. The increase in power was clear to everyone, but if the consumption rate was so fast, with just a mere twenty drops of Heavenly Energy, how could he even fight ordinarily?

Tian'er also gave it a try of her own, but the result was the same as Zhou Weiqing. Furthermore, they realised that after using up a drop of Saint Energy, it would not automatically recover as time passed or even with their own cultivation.

The two of them joined hands once again to experiment. This time, they discovered another few profound secrets of the Saint

Energy. Indeed, as they used the Saint Energy to unleash their Skills, the consumption was a direct link to the increase in power. However, when they had formed the Saint Energy whirlpool before using the Skills, then the consumption of Saint Energy would allow them to recover some of the Saint Energy, and as they drew in more energy from the atmosphere, it was refined and transformed until they reached their ‘theoretical max’ once more.

After several tries like this, the three of them exchanged looks. Zhou Weiqing smiled bitterly as he said: “What is this... after transforming our energy to Saint Energy, we aren’t even able to fight normally anymore. What kind of sustainability do we have? This is even worse than I had imagined! Even with my Immortal Deity Technique, I can’t sustain such a massive drain. Even when we are joined together with the Saint Energy whirlpool, we can’t even do many normal attacks. The most we can do is to ensure that our Saint Energy doesn’t totally vanish... but that is still far from having a sustained fighting capabilities.”

After some musing, Shangguan Xue’er comforted them, saying: “This world is a fair one after all. The Saint Energy would give a massive burst in power in a short period of time. If it could really be used like ordinary Heavenly Energy, wouldn’t your current cultivation level be equivalent to tearing down the heavens? In my opinion, this Saint Energy should be used like an ace up your sleeve, a hidden trump card.”

“As for normal fighting, I also have some thoughts about that. Why don’t you try to see if you can transform the Saint Energy back to normal Heavenly Energy. If that is possible, then you all can maintain the majority of your Heavenly Energy, with a small portion transformed into Saint Energy as your aces. After all, your cultivation level is still far from true powerhouses. Perhaps, we can only uncover more of the profound secrets of this Saint Energy when we reach the Heavenly King Stage or higher...”

Zhou Weiqing’s eyes glowed in sudden inspiration. “You mean to

say... reverse the Saint Energy whirlpool?”

Shangguan Xue'er smiled faintly and said: “Well, not exactly reverse. In truth, our body is limited in its own ways, no matter your DanTian or your meridians. When we reach the Heavenly Xu Stage in cultivation, isn't it exactly because we have liquified our Heavenly Energy so that we can hold more of it? More so, when we continue cultivating, we are further compressing and consolidating the liquid Heavenly Energy, so that when we breakthrough to the Heavenly Dao Stage, we can form a Heavenly Core Nucleus to enter the Heavenly King Stage.”

“If you think about it in that fashion, your current bodies do not have any Heavenly Energy to fill up, let alone being able to compress and consolidate the Heavenly Energy. As such, you can try to directly draw the atmospheric Heavenly Energy to fill yourself up right? You do not need to think about transforming these into Saint Energy. In the future when you cultivate, only when you find you are unable to continue compressing the Heavenly Energy, then you can start transforming them into Saint Energy... eventually you can reach a point where your entire body and meridians are filled with Saint Energy... and you can use that Saint Energy to form the Heavenly Core Nucleus... I think that would be the point you can start cultivating the Saint Energy on your own individually.”

Chapter 200 Saint Energy Whirlpool! (2)

The Boundless Infinitum Technique was known as the top cultivation technique in the world today, and it was far more complete than even the monstrous Immortal Deity Technique that Zhou Weiqing had. As such, in terms of cultivation and techniques, experience or theory, Shangguan Xue'er was definitely the strongest amongst the three.

Hearing her suggestions, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er were both delighted. Although their bodies currently did not have any Heavenly Energy, it should not be too tough to recover it. After all, they could still use their Saint Energy to activate their normal cultivation. Currently, all they needed was to fill themselves up once more. However, in order to preserve their sustained combat abilities, they could no longer just blindly transform everything into Saint Energy, leaving their majority Heavenly Energy to fight with, and just some Saint Energy as their trump cards.”

In the following time, even for the Peerless Regiment warriors, Zhou Weiqing, Tian'er and Shangguan Xue'er all disappeared. No one else knew what they were doing, and it was as if they had vanished into thin air. Once in awhile, some orders would come from the governor's mansion, and that was the only sign they were still around. However, even with Zhou Weiqing's leadership, the current Crescent City was already in proper normal operations, as Zhou Weiqing had already passed on the temporary leadership to Lin TianAo. As for the three of them, they were currently undergoing closed door cultivation under the protective watch of Duan Tianlang.

...

Very soon, a month had passed. Within this month, the Crescent City had not yet been attacked by a second wave of Kalise Empire troops, and the Heavenly King assassin also hadn't showed himself.

On their end, Zhou Weiqing was naturally wary and afraid of this assassin. However, this assassin was no fool as well. That kick of Zhou Weiqing's had definitely given him a lasting impression. In the end, assassins were just like a cold venomous snake, even if they had to lie in ambush and wait for a year without moving, they would do so, and not take risks where they had no confidence. Furthermore, during this period of Zhou Weiqing and the two girls were in closed door cultivation, Duan Tianlang did not hide his Heavenly King stage aura at all.

Zhou Weiqing's weird powers, along with Tian'er and Shangguan Xue'er who had certainly surprised him, and the unknown Heavenly King Stage powerhouse (Duan Tianlang)... such a formation staying together, even if this Heavenly King assassin was the top assassin in the world, he dared not act rashly. Of course, during this month, he had also spent most of it healing and recuperating. Currently, he was silently hiding nearby, waiting for another perfect time to strike.

This month was not just silent for the Crescent City. The rest of the entire Mainland was also extremely silent, the various large Empires not showing any movement. The Kalise Empire also did not show any large movements. According to Kou Rui and his scouts, the Kalise Empire had already stationed another large troop of armies in another city that originally belonged to the Heavenly Bow Empire, the closest one to the Crescent City about three hundred li away. However, there were currently no signs that they were about to move out.

At the same time, Kou Rui, who had been left in charge of scouting and general information gathering, had strengthened their checks at the city gates of the Crescent City, and they had already caught several dozen spies.

Conscription of soldiers was perhaps the most troublesome job, and currently Yan Zhexi was in charge of it. As the Fei Li Empire sent the first batch of supplies as well as a troop of five thousand

logistics personnel, the critical state their forces had been in was at least solved. Currently, besides the requisite training they did everyday, the Peerless Regiment soldiers would undergo some patrolling investigations or interrogation missions.

In the hidden room where they were cultivating.

Zhou Weiqing slowly opened his eyes. Instantly, it was as if two cold bolts of lightning pierced through the room, filling it with a strange aura.

As he opened his eyes, Shangguan Xue'er and Tian'er each at his side respectively also opened their eyes.

Shangguan Xue'er's face had a faint blush on her face, and as she looked at Zhou Weiqing, she turned her head around. On the other hand, Tian'er was smiling happily as she said: "We did it! An entire month, but it was truly worth it. Our Heavenly Energy has finally recovered to our original standards. This cultivating of the Saint Energy is truly not easy at all."

Indeed, they had used an entire month to transform the cultivated Saint Energy back to their Heavenly Energy, resuming their usual strength.

In truth, this entire month could be said to be extremely dangerous for Zhou Weiqing's trio. If the Heavenly King assassin had snuck in secretly, perhaps he would have had a great chance. Of course, that was no certainty as well, even without their Heavenly Energy, their Saint Energy was not to be underestimated. The instant explosive power was more than enough to shock even the Heavenly King stage powerhouse Duan Tianlang.

This Saint Energy was truly one of a kind. However, at this moment, it was not just Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er who had it, even Shangguan Xue'er had it now.

According to Zhou Weiqing's hypothesis previously, Shangguan Xue'er's Heavenly Energy had been fully transformed to Saint

Energy after he combined forces with Tian'er. In this month, Shangguan Xue'er had joined them in the process of recovering her Heavenly Energy. The reason she blushed upon seeing Zhou Weiqing just now was because during the transformation process of the Saint Energy, she had been kissed by him so many times. Towards such a method of using their mouths to infuse the Saint Energy, our dear shameless Little Fatty was more than happy to enjoy it.

However, during the process of transformation, Zhou Weiqing also discovered that for Shangguan Xue'er without her own Saint Attributes, they actually had to spend more energy to refine and transform into the Saint energy. As such, she actually had less Saint Energy than Zhou Weiqing or Tian'er. This was even after the fact that she was at a higher cultivation level than the two of them, and the Boundless Infinitum Technique was known for its thick and stable Heavenly Energy. Do not forget that Shangguan Xue'er also had the Alexandrite Cat's Eye Elemental Jewel, and though it was not as monstrous as his six Attributes, she still had four Attributes!

Zhou Weiqing had done a simple calculation. If an ordinary Heavenly Jewel Master were to fully transform their Heavenly Energy, assuming he was at the same level as them, being able to have four to five drops would likely be the norm.

Also, after their investigations and calculation, they estimated that if they wanted to fill their entire bodies with the Saint Energy, it was definitely a long road ahead of them, as it would likely take them around three thousand drops to complete the entire process.

However, in this month, they did not just simply spend it recovering their old Heavenly Energy. Besides the fact that all their cultivation had improved, strengthening the overall amount of Heavenly Energy. In terms of controlling the Saint Energy and finding a balance, they had also discovered several tricks.

For example, with all three of them, it was no longer just a simple

matter of ‘storing’ the Saint Energy.

Although none of them had all four Saint Attributes individually, the Saint Energy itself was consisting of all four Saint Attributes! As such, after much experimentation and testing, they were able to form a very tiny whirlpool of Saint Energy in their bodies, silently spinning away. This whirlpool was actually modelled after the original energy whirlpool that formed in Zhou Weiqing’s body after he joined hands with Tian’er and their four Saint Attributes actually fused together.

Do not underestimate this tiny whirlpool within their bodies. In fact, it could be said that the majority of the time and efforts of this entire month was spent developing this one thing, and it was also their greatest progress. With this tiny whirlpool in their bodies, they no longer needed to worry about permanently using up their Saint Energy.

Unlike the original fused one, this whirlpool would not automatically refine and transform their Heavenly Energy, only maintaining its own form and the Saint Energy within. However, once they circulated and started using their Saint Energy, as long as this whirlpool existed, the Saint Energy would slowly recover and not be used up totally like in their first few tries.

Zhou Weiqing had tested the limits of this many times. Any Saint Energy he used up would be slowly recovered at the rate of about one drop per day. However, there was also a caveat for that. The tiny whirlpool could only be maintained with at least ten drops of Saint Energy, and Zhou Weiqing called it the base requisite amount. That was to say, unless Zhou Weiqing and Tian’er joined forces to ensure their Saint Attributes fused again, otherwise if any of the three used their Saint Energy individually, they had to hold back half of it to maintain the whirlpool.

In this month, with the sheer amount of talent between the three of them, and their cultivation speeds, they had only just recovered their Heavenly Energy and only improved slightly in that sense.

However, all three of them felt as if they had been fully reborn and remoulded. That was because they truly had a new power within them, the true profound secrets of the four Saint Attributes!

This was especially so for Shangguan Xue'er. In truth, she felt a great sense of gratitude towards Tian'er, though she might not show it externally. After all, according to normal circumstances, it would have been impossible for her to have this Saint Energy. However, Tian'er's generosity greatly touched Shangguan Xue'er. The conflict between the two had long disappeared, and their relationship had improved dramatically. Many times during breaks of their cultivation, Zhou Weiqing would joke that this was actually his greatest reward in the entire month.

Stretching his arms and doing a few simple exercises, Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: "Heh heh, now, if that bastard really comes, he will not have the chance to easily kill me anymore. With the current Saint Energy I have, I can at least ensure he will not be able to kill me within ten seconds. With this time, we should be better be able to deal with him."

Tian'er giggled and said: "Now, I am actually thinking that perhaps the best cultivation method for us is to return to the WanShou Empire. As long as we have enough Heavenly Beasts to let us Devour... Heh heh, our Saint Energy can increase quickly. At least, it will be faster than if we cultivate it ourselves. Once we can fill our entire bodies with Saint Energy, to consolidate our Heavenly Core Nucleus, then we will be the strongest Heavenly King powerhouses in the entire world. At that point, I think that we can even stand up to ordinary Heavenly Emperors."

Zhou Weiqing laughed and said: "How can it be so easy to consolidate and form the Heavenly Core Nucleus? Each of us needs at least three thousand drops of the Saint Energy, how many Heavenly Beasts would that take? Furthermore, those Heavenly Beasts aren't going to stand there quietly to let us Devour them."

Tian'er stuck her tongue out at him and said: "However,

Weiqing, you must promise me one thing. Even if we use the Devour Skill on Heavenly Beasts to help our cultivation, we must not kill or severely injure them. I know that your Devour Skill also Devours life force, and in doing so the speed of cultivation is much faster. However, unnecessary killing is also acting against the heavens, we cannot kill large numbers of Heavenly Beasts for selfish reasons. Otherwise, I will not be able to accept it.”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “Don’t worry, I never planned to go kill Heavenly Beasts. After all, my wife is the King of the Beasts right? Furthermore, if we just depend on killing for our cultivation, it will definitely leave a shadow in our hearts. It will actually be a detriment to us in the long term and possibly limit our potential.”

Chapter 200 Saint Energy Whirlpool! (3)

“Thinking about it, if we really use Saint Energy to form the Heavenly Core Nucleus, perhaps it shouldn’t be called that anymore, but a Saint Core Nucleus. No one has ever gone down this path before, and we still have to explore it bit by bit ourselves, so it isn’t going to be as easy or smooth sailing all the time. However, once we actually succeed, just like Xue’er said, forming that Saint Core Nucleus, we will finally truly be part of the top echelon powerhouses in the world.”

Their learnings and gains in the month was definitely substantial, but they also knew that they had barely seen the tip of the iceberg regarding the deepest profound secrets of the Saint Attributes and the Saint Energy. However, if they wanted to do more tests, they also needed a greater amount of Saint Energy. Furthermore, the current recovery rate of the Saint Energy was just too slow, and only when Zhou Weiqing and Tian’er joined hands to form the original large whirlpool, would the recovery rate be faster. As such, they truly did need a large supply of Heavenly Energy to refine and transform into Saint Energy, as they delved deeper into the secrets.

Shangguan Xue’er stood by the side, listening silently. In her heart, she was quite envious of Tian’er, but she would never exclude her from Zhou Weiqing’s side any longer. Compared to their three Sisters, perhaps Tian’er was the most compatible with Zhou Weiqing.

Both of them had the top tier Tiger bloodlines, one with the Dark Demon God Tiger bloodline and the other with the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger bloodline. More importantly, their energy was perfectly complementary into forming the four Saint Attributes.

At last, Zhou Weiqing said: “Come on, let’s go. It’s time for us to end the closed door cultivation and move out. Regarding the Saint

Energy, this is a secret between us. Tian'er, Xue'er, I hope that this secret will remain ours alone. I know that you both are from your respective Great Saint Lands, and you have to consider your families as well. However, in this matter, the fact of the matter is the lesser people who know about it, the better. After all, as the saying goes, the greater the wealth a man has, the greater the greed it can spark in others... and it can only lead to our possible ruin. If anyone else knows about this power of ours, it might cause the entire world to cast greedy eyes upon us. At that time, we would be in deep trouble.”

Towards Tian'er's earlier suggestion, it would be a lie to say that Zhou Weiqing wasn't tempted. Without question, it would be impossible for them to actually gain a massive amount of Saint Energy with their normal cultivation speed. Zhou Weiqing vaguely sensed that the Saint Energy was actually not something that people of their current levels would usually be able to access. Even with the four Saint Attributes fused together, it was his conjecture that perhaps only when one had consolidated their Heavenly Core Nucleus, then they would start to learn about this, slowly transforming the Heavenly Core Nucleus into the Saint Core Nucleus. However, they now had gained access to it much earlier, and were also able to start cultivating it. The key to the entire matter was actually Zhou Weiqing's Devour Skill.

Only with the Devour Skill would they be able to gain sufficient energy to support such an impossible cultivation target. To get so much energy, it was not realistic to Devour other Heavenly Jewel Masters, unless Zhou Weiqing wanted to go on a killing spree around the world.

As such, Devouring Heavenly Beasts' Heavenly Energy could possibly be the best choice. However, there were just too many things for him to do right now, and he was unable to just run off to train like that. Zhou Weiqing made a hidden resolution that once he had established everything onto the right path, he would make

a trip down to the WanShou Empire together with Tian'er, entering the Ten Thousand Beast Heavens to raise their Saint Energy. Once they gained large amounts of Saint Energy, one could just imagine their power in the future. Furthermore, in terms of breaking through to the Heavenly King stage, they would not have any bottlenecks at all. Everything else aside, with the Saint Energy, their cultivation speed would be greatly increased. There were still many underlying secrets waiting to be discovered, just like a grand door to a mountain of gold had been opened, awaiting their arrival. How could he not be filled with a great fighting spirit?

Both girls nodded instantly. Although they did not speak much else on the matter, the resolution in their eyes gave Zhou Weiqing the answer he wanted. At least, before they consolidated their Saint Core Nucleus, if anyone knew of this miraculous power, it would bring about unnecessary trouble.

As the three of them left their cultivation room, Duan Tianlang in the next room was immediately alerted. Opening the door, Duan Tianlang came out of his room to greet them.

“How is it, you three little fellows have finally finished your closed door cultivation?” Duan Tianlang smiled faintly as he said, a hint of teasing in his voice as well.

Both Shangguan Xue'er and Tian'er both blushed, and only Zhou Weiqing with his thick skin did not mind at all, only assuming a smug and gloating expression.

“Senior Uncle, thank you so much for this past month. We have greatly troubled you.” Zhou Weiqing bowed respectfully towards Duan Tianlang. His respect towards Duan Tianlang was no less than his Master, the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya. This God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master definitely held a respected position deep in Zhou Weiqing's heart.

Duan Tianlang laughed heartily and said: “There is no need for thanks, after all, Senior Uncle is not an outsider! That damn fatty,

your Master, isn't here, and meeting such a tough circumstance, how can I not intervene? That fellow Fatty Long, if he knows some assassin dares to touch his disciple... heh heh, no matter what remote corner of the world he is hiding in, he will still dig out that assassin and destroy him."

"Towards the profession of assassins, I am really not too familiar. However, for one to reach the Heavenly King stage like that one, I am sure he is one of the top of that profession. Previously, there was a certain level of luck for you to be able to escape death at his hands, so during this next period of time, you all better not let your guard down. Fatty Long has been gone for quite some time, so I am sure he will be back soon. We need to keep our guards up at least until he has returned, so wherever you go in this period of time, Senior Uncle will follow you."

Zhou Weiqing also laughed heartily and said: "Then many thanks to Senior Uncle."

As they exited the cultivation chamber, Zhou Weiqing immediately gave the order for the Peerless Regiment officers to gather for a meeting. They had been in the Crescent City for over a month, and he had been in closed door cultivation for all this time. There were many things to handle, and he also needed first hand news before he could make further decisions.

Before long, the Peerless Regiment officers that were currently in the Crescent City all gathered in the governor's mansion grand hall.

Lin TianAo was the first to arrive. Towards the assassination attempt on Zhou Weiqing, he was the one who was most self-castigatory. He had always treated himself as Zhou Weiqing's Follower, even though Zhou Weiqing had already lifted the Seal. He was also adept at defense, yet under such a circumstance, he had failed in his personal mission to defend and protect Zhou Weiqing. How could he not feel vexed and depressed?

However, it was perhaps also this matter and the feeling of vexation that had incited a strong fighting spirit within him. In this month, he had finally broken through to the seven-Jeweled stage, and with the Consolidating Equipment Scrolls that he had gained from the Heavenly Jewel Island previously, he managed to complete his seventh Consolidated Assembly Set Shield piece. His overall defense had grown to a startling degree. Lin TianAo was confident that even if that assassin came once more, he could at least help Zhou Weiqing block one attack.

Zhou Weiqing sat at the head of the table, and for the others, this was the first time in the entire month they had seen their Commander. Their eyes were filled with some surprise, as they realised that no matter Zhou Weiqing, Tian'er or Shangguan Xue'er, they seemed to be very different from a month ago.

This was mainly in terms of their presence and aura. No one could clearly say what the change was, but the feeling was definitely different.

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: "I'm truly sorry everyone. During this period of time, I have been slacking off due to recovering from my injury. However, I am back now. What is our current situation like, everyone please let me know. Bro Lin, you go first."

Lin TianAo was his usual stable self, nodding as he said: "Currently, things are going very well, almost the ideal path we were hoping for. The targets we have set have all been met. Currently, in the entire city, besides our Peerless Regiment warriors, we have also recruited three thousand new soldiers. Of course, these soldiers are still fresh, their combat abilities are nothing much, and they do not have much training yet, let alone any experience in fighting. They will not be much use on an actual battlefield, but at least in terms of everyday guard duties, it is still fine. At least, this greatly solves our manpower issues. After all, though the Crescent City is not considered large, it is still an entire

city, and the populace is pretty high.”

“As for the Kalise Empire, they currently do not seem to have plans to attack us yet. However, they have already started gathering troops in the Xinyue City three hundred li from here. Currently, our scouts estimate they have already gathered three Regiments of troops by now, one of which is from the Bai Da Empire. Once they start moving out, they can reach the vicinity of the Crescent City within three days to begin attacks on us.”

“On the logistics end, the first batch of supplies from the Fei Li Empire have already reached, and is sufficient for us in the near future. More importantly, the supply lines between the Fei Li Empire have also been established and being maintained. Our main force of the Peerless Regiment has already started moving out, and are currently marching from the ZhongTian Empire to the Fei Li Empire, where they will pass through the Fei Li Empire to meet with us. The Fei Li Empire has been informed of their arrival to prevent any misunderstandings. Although it is a major movement of troops, since they are all cavalry soldiers, they should be able to arrive within a month or so. By that time, even if the Kalise Empire can amass an entire Legion of troops, we are confident in fighting them off. The Fei Li Empire will also be helping supply our main Peerless Regiment force as they move through their borders, and Vice Commanders Wei Feng and Hua Feng are in command.”

“The main troop is moving out a lot earlier than we had planned. Although their outfitting is not fully complete, the ZhongTian Empire has already promised us that they will be aiding us in sending us our orders once they are completed. They have also given us aid in terms of supplies and gold. At the same time, the ZhongTian Empire has given you a letter, only for your eyes.”

After saying that, Lin TianAo retrieved a sealed letter, passing it to Zhou Weiqing.

A letter from the ZhongTian Capital City? Towards this point, Zhou Weiqing was rather surprised. Immediately, he opened the

letter to read it, right in front of everyone.

This letter from the ZhongTian Empire was not short. First of all, it described the current situation in the south, especially the attacks and disorder of the Dan Dun Empire, pointing out clearly the possible alliance between the Bai Da Empire and Dan Dun Empire. There was also a greater description of all the Bai Da Empire armies and their formations. At the same time, the ZhongTian Empire expressed that they would be willing to increase their support for the Heavenly Bow Empire, both in terms of supplies and gold, and it would be sent to them via various unique channels. However, they had one request, for the Heavenly Bow Empire to hasten the revival of their Empire. At the same time, they were to declare war on the Kalise Empire, at a certain level to tie down the Bai Da Empire as well. The letter also expressed that if necessary, the ZhongTian Empire was willing to give some actual military support to them, though this would not happen too quickly yet.

The promised support of gold and supplies was definitely not a small amount, and once he read the letter, the first thought in Zhou Weiqing's mind was awe about the wealth of the ZhongTian Empire.

The gold and supplies that the ZhongTian Empire were giving them was even more than the previous Heavenly Bow Empire's annual taxes!

Chapter 201 Saint Energy – Recalling to Life! Hell's Angel! (1)

After he had finished reading the letter, Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly. “It looks like our luck is not too bad once more. As the saying goes, a hero is the product of his times, it looks like the current circumstances of the world is also increasing our chances of reviving our Empire!”

As he said that, Zhou Weiqing passed the letter to Shangguan Xue'er at his side, letting her read it first. Shangguan Xue'er could definitely represent the ZhongTian Empire, and since the letter was from the ZhongTian Empire, Zhou Weiqing naturally wanted her to have a look first.

After reading the letter, Shangguan Xue'er's brow furrowed as she said: “From the current situation, it looks like the Dan Dun Empire has far greater ambitions than I had imagined. Our ZhongTian Empire is situated right in the middle of the continent, and we share borders with many Empires. The total surface area of our land is the largest amongst all the Empires, but that can be a boon or detriment depending on the situation. Even so, I highly doubt that the Dan Dun Empire would dare to attack us directly.”

“Still, their geographical position holds many advantages. They would be able to encroach and nibble up all the smaller empires around them, growing gradually. If they have truly made an agreement with the Bai Da Empire, then it will be a huge threat. The war with the Geritimo Empire might have ended for now, but it could be said that the Geritimo Empire was pretty much broken by that attack. Although the Dan Dun Empire ‘retreated’, they will be able to slowly digest their massive gains at that time. If the Bai Da Empire declares war and invades the Fei Li Empire, then the entire southwest will be in massive turmoil. The few small empires between our ZhongTian Empire and the Dan Dun Empire will not

be any deterrence to the Dan Dun Empire, almost like meat on the chopping block to them, waiting to be gobbled up. As for our ZhongTian Empire, the majority of our forces are occupied with the WanShou Empire, and at least at the current moment we do not have excess energy to intervene in the south.”

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: “As I said, a hero is the product of his times. If we can seize this opportunity to help the ZhongTian Empire and Fei Li Empire to delay the plan of the Bai Da and Dan Dun Empires, it will be a major change to the landscape of the mainland. We could possibly be the critical key affecting the changes in these troubled times.”

Hearing his words, all the officers present had rather strange expressions on their faces. After all, even if they counted the entire Peerless Regiment, they only had less than ten thousand men. Yet, in Zhou Weiqing’s words, they could actually be the most critical key to influence the entire situation in the south. Despite their strength and confidence in themselves, it just seemed too much like bragging.

Seeing their expressions, Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “Don’t be too quick to disbelieve it. In terms of geographical position, our current location is actually extremely important with the state of things as they are. If we can succeed in reviving our Empire quickly, then we would definitely become the most important chess piece in the west. What you all are thinking is true, we are currently far from being strong enough. However, as long as we have sufficient time and opportunity, and I am able to recruit all the armies of the previous Heavenly Bow Empire, our strength can only grow stronger. With our Peerless Regiment at the core of the armies, forming the sharpest edge of a formidable blade, we can definitely cause a lot of trouble for the Bai Da Empire. At least, I am confident that the Bai Da Empire does not have a single troop that can compare with our Peerless Regiment.”

“As long as we can successfully destroy the Kalise Empire, letting

the ZhongTian and Fei Li Empire see our strength, then they will also continue or even increase their support to us in terms of supplies and gold. Furthermore, what we need from them is just finances and supplies, not troops, and that is something the Fei Li Empire and ZhongTian Empire hope for the most... that is because they do not have additional troops to support us.”

Shangguan Xue'er nodded her head, actually being the first to approve of Zhou Weiqing's words. “Your words make sense, but all of that is conjecture built upon the premise of us defeating the Kalise Empire. Furthermore, it cannot just be a simple defeat, but a crushing defeat that has to be done before the Bai Da Empire places too much importance and focus on us.”

“According to the letter you just gotten, we have news that the Bai Da Empire has been secretly building their armies during these years of peace, and their entire nation's forces number more than 1.4 million soldiers. That is not counting any possible hidden ones they have. Although that cannot compare to the Dan Dun Empire, it has already surpassed the Fei Li Empire by quite a margin. No matter how strong and powerful our Peerless Regiment is, in the end we only have ten thousand soldiers. Furthermore, the powerhouses in the Bai Da Empire also cannot be compared to the mere ones in the Kalise Empire.”

Smiling faintly, a cold expression crossed Zhou Weiqing's face. Folding his arms across his chest, a cold light flashed in his eyes, and the air seemed to grow colder and solidifying all around as a powerful aura burst forth from him. Abruptly, he stood up, his eyes narrowed as he said solemnly: “The Kalise Empire... it should not take long for us to crush and disable them. When our main force arrives, we will give them a savage blow. Kou Rui, what is the exact situation in the Xinyue City?”

Kou Rui took a step forward and said: “Commander, according to reports from our scouts, they currently do not seem to have any intention to move out yet. It looks like they are waiting for

something, but we have not been able to find out what exactly. However, we have also scouted the surroundings of the Xinyue City and beyond, and at least it looks like there are no other signs of any other incoming forces. If the Kalise Empire launches their attack at us, it should be just this three Regiments. From all signs, my guess is that they are waiting for powerhouses to arrive... that is to say, when their next attack comes, we will likely be facing their Heavenly Jewel Masters. Furthermore, since we have already opened the Crescent City and resumed the usual trade, though we have increased checks and caught many spies, I do not doubt that some would have snuck through. As such, we can expect that they should already know the actual numbers of our troops, at least a rough gauge. The only thing they will not know is our actual combat prowess. I would guess their knowledge of us to be just having five thousand soldiers...”

Zhou Weiqing gave a cold laugh as he said: “Looks like the Kalise Empire has plans to crush us in one fell swoop! Hmph, waiting for Heavenly Jewel Masters? If I do not remember wrongly, the Kalise Empire should have a seven-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master, and their total Jewel Masters number about fifty. It looks like they are taking us very seriously. The only thing we do not know is whether or not the Bai Da Empire would send any Heavenly Jewel Masters as well... Zhexi, currently how goes the training of the three thousand new recruits?”

Yan Zhexi said: “The training thus far has been progressing well. There were actually more than ten thousand applicants to join up in our army, and the three thousand that we finally decided upon had gone through several qualification exams before we selected them. All of them are between the age of eighteen and thirty, healthy and strong in their prime. Their morale is very high, and the pay that we give them is also very generous for recruits, so their current state is not bad at all, and they put in a lot of effort in training. However, they are after all still fresh recruits, and they have not been on the battlefield before. In fact, even their

commander, myself, is in the same state. As such, regarding their actual combat prowess, I do not think we can place too much hopes on it. However, if it is just defending the city walls, they might still have some use.“

Zhou Weiqing was highly appreciative of Yan Zhexi's practical and realistic attitude towards reporting, able to call a spade a spade no matter if it didn't exactly paint them in a pretty picture. Nodding with satisfaction, he said: “It has only been a month, and to be able to reach such a state is already not easy. It has been tough on you Zhexi. Currently, we should only count our main fighting force to be the seven hundred Peerless Regiment soldiers, and our enemies number three entire Regiments. We cannot place our hopes fully on having our main forces of the Peerless Regiment arriving on time, so we have to prepare for the worst case scenario that it will just be us seven hundred against thirty thousand. From now on, I want full preparation on this. This time, our mission is to dig in and just defend tenaciously. Our seven hundred Peerless Regiment soldiers and three thousand fresh recruits... to hold the Crescent City until our reinforcements arrive.”

Those words of Zhou Weiqing, in the ears of Kou Rui and Yan Zhexi who still had not witnessed the true power of the other Peerless Regiment soldiers, were rather crazy. Seven hundred soldiers and three thousand fresh recruits, facing more than ten times their numbers in enemies... besides the word ‘crazy’, they could think of no other description. However, for the rest of the Peerless Regiment officers, it seemed rather normal.

Perhaps it was more accurate to say that they had never placed any importance on the Kalise Empire armies at all. Even the powerful WanShou Empire armies had fallen to them in the battlefield, what could those Kalise Empire soldiers amount to? Sometimes, a numbers advantage was not an absolute guarantee of victory.

Looking at Kou Rui and Yan Zhexi's expressions, Zhou Weiqing

could tell that they were worried, However, he did not place too much concerns on it. They would soon understand when actual fighting broke out in the future.

“Kou Rui, from now on, I want constant tight surveillance on the Kalise Empire armies. As soon as there is any movement, report back immediately. Zhexi, I leave the defense of the city to you. Although the Crescent City walls aren’t particularly tall or sturdy, but as long as we have sufficient defensive siege weapons, we should be able to hold on for much longer. Commandeer all the blacksmiths in the city to start creating arrows and other weaponry for us. I want us to start full preparations for war. Currently, every day that the Kalise Empire delays, it means our chances of victory increases.”

“Yes Sir.” Both of them responded immediately.

Towards the three Regiments of the Kalise and Bai Da Empires, Zhou Weiqing was actually not too worried. However, he was extremely clear that once the fighting started, it would give the hidden Heavenly King assassin many chances to attack him. That was the most troublesome thing now, and he had to treat the situation with utmost care.

...

It was almost ten days after Zhou Weiqing called the meeting that Kou Rui finally sent word back. The three Regiments of the Kalise army had finally started moving out towards the Crescent City at full haste. Amongst the three Regiments, there were actually two entire Battalions of Heavy Cavalry soldiers. Clearly, the news of the Peerless Heavy Cavalry had been sent back, and they were prepared to use absolute numbers to even things up, and hopefully gain an advantage.

Once again, the Crescent City gates were sealed. Although their back was to the Fei Li Empire, it was still of some distance, to the current Crescent City and their relationship with the Fei Li

Empire, they could not expect any reinforcements. They could consider themselves an isolated city.

After sealing the city, Zhou Weiqing immediately ordered his soldiers to spread the news in the city about the incoming attack, but that there would be reinforcements as well. Atop the city walls, the large flag representing the Heavenly Bow Empire flew tall and proud. All of the soldiers immediately began preparing to receiving the incoming attack.

As they had estimated, the three Kalise Regiments reached the outskirts of the Crescent City. This time, they directly camped about ten li from the Crescent City, showing that they were determined to achieve victory at all costs. With their numbers, the arrangement of their encampment was even subtly showing signs of nearly surrounding half of the Crescent City.

Zhou Weiqing was dressed in simple military attire, standing proudly on the city walls. Facing the mass joint forces in front of him, he did not look worried or urgent at all.

Looking down from the top of the city walls, it was clear that the three Regiments were ranked differently. The Regiment in the middle had the Bai Da Empire flag raised up high, and their formation was neat and disciplined. Clearly, this was the main force in this attack against the Crescent City. Naturally, the Bai Da Empire soldiers were better trained and stronger than the miscellaneous regiments of the Kalise Empire. It was also this Bai Da Empire Regiment that caused Zhou Weiqing to feel some pressure.

Chapter 201 Saint Energy – Recalling to Life! Hell's Angel! (2)

“Boss, let us sally forth to fight them for a bit, so what if they have three Regiments? They will not be able to hold us down.” At Zhou Weiqing’s side, Ma Qun was raring to go.

Zhou Weiqing shook his head and said: “No, this time the enemy is not the same. Furthermore, you all have already revealed yourselves in the previous fight, and the enemies will definitely have prepared something against us doing something similar. If your two entire Main Companies were here, I would definitely send you to destroy their confidence. However, you currently only number two hundred in total, and if you were to be entangled with the enemy’s two Heavy Cavalry Battalions for too long, even with your combat prowess and strength, it will not be easy to get out without any losses.”

At the other side, Lei Zi said: “Boss, then let us go instead. We’ll fly above their heads and let them know what is the meaning of heavenly soldiers descending from the skies.”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “There will be many chances for all of you to take action soon. However, I do not want to reveal our Peerless Air Force quite so early. It isn’t time yet. After all, it is one of our aces. Prepare your javelins for now... those will be even more effective than arrows in a siege battle.”

Lei Zi nodded and said: “We have already prepared that long ago. Ever since we entered the Crescent City, we have ordered blacksmiths to continue crafting them. Furthermore, we have brought quite a number ourselves.” As he said that, Lei Zi even gestured towards his own Spatial Ring.

Previously, Lin TianAo had been tasked with purchasing as many Spatial Containment objects as possible, and besides all the high ranking officers of the Peerless Regiment, the excess Spatial Rings

had been issued to the elites of the First Main Company.

Although Zhou Weiqing only had seven hundred proper fighting forces, never forget that even amongst the Peerless Regiment, those were the cream of the crop, the elite in all aspects.

“Alright, very good. Prepare for battle at any moment. We still have at least half a month before our reinforcements arrive. During this period, we must ensure our city walls stay secured. We must not give our enemies any opportunity.”

The Peerless Regiment officers saluted in agreement as they received the command.

In truth, what Zhou Weiqing was most worried about was not a full on frontal attack on the main gates. With the city walls and defensive advantage, it was nearly impossible to breakthrough the walls guarded by the Peerless Regiment soldiers. However, they only numbered seven hundred, and they could not split themselves or appear in more than one places. If the enemy chose to surround and attack from all sides of the city, their true problem of having a lack of manpower would reveal itself.”

In order to counter such a possible scenario, Zhou Weiqing had meticulously assigned his troops. For the Peerless Regiment archers, he placed two hundred men on the frontal walls, and a hundred on each of the other three walls. As for the Peerless Heavy Cavalry, in such a siege they would be Heavy Infantry instead, and with each wall assigned fifty of them. With their numbers, it was just too difficult to take everything into account, and this was a difficult but necessary choice to make. As long as the enemy commander wasn't a fool, he would have such plans in mind.

Currently, the Peerless Heavy Cavalry were already in position, but the five hundred Peerless archers were still on the main south wall facing their enemies. With their Consolidated Wings, they could easily rush to the other walls when necessary, so they did not need to get into position too quickly.

On the enemy's end, the Kalise army did not seem to be in a rush at all as well. After setting up camp, they actually did not attack for three days. However, since their camp was merely ten li away from the Crescent City, the invisible pressure they exerted upon the city was palpable. Without question, this was a form of psychological warfare, and the current commander of the Kalise forces was definitely an excellent one.

It was the morning of the fourth day since the Kalise Empire arrived, just after breakfast, when Zhou Weiqing received an urgent summons to the city walls. As soon as he reached the walls and looked at the sight before him, even for Zhou Weiqing's stable character, he couldn't help but have an ugly expression on his face. He finally understood what the Kalise Empire armies had been waiting for these last three days, and it wasn't just a psychological tactic.

A large number of sieging weapons were arriving from the distance into the Kalise encampment. Amongst them were several siege vehicles specially for attacking city walls. These siege vehicles were not for knocking down the city gates, but for holding troops. Each siege vehicle was five metres wide, ten metres tall, with wheels below them on all four sides. On the top, there were metal plates covered with cured cowhide, while the front was extremely thick and heavy with spikes jutting out.

Each of these siege vehicles were able to hold at least fifty soldiers, and there were push rods within the towers which enabled them to move the siege vehicles. This way, they could ignore any risks from heavy cavalry charges or arrows from the walls to move directly to the foot of the walls.

These siege vehicles actually numbered more than fifty. Besides that, there were also ten large trebuchets, several battering ram carts and various other specialised siege weapons. Amongst them, the most eye catching were the four massive siege towers which could be slowly pushed to the front. All in all, it was clear they

were fully prepared for war.

Indeed, Zhou Weiqing had not expected that even knowing that the defending force of the Crescent City was merely three thousand, especially with the majority being fresh recruits, the Kalise Empire would actually spend so many resources to launch their attack. From this alone, one could see how much importance they had placed on this attack.

These siege weapons would definitely bring a lot of trouble to their defending side, especially those siege vehicles. With them, the advantage of the Peerless Heavy Cavalry and archers facing open plains before them would be greatly reduced. With the siege vehicles in front, besides those soldiers in the actual vehicles, they would also be able to cover another four to five thousand men to reach the city walls. Along with the siege towers, ladders, catapults and various siege weapons, it would definitely increase the pressure on their defending side.

Looking at the siege weapons bearing down upon the Crescent City slowly, the Kalise Empire armies also began their movement.

The fifty siege vehicles were intermingling between the various other siege weapons, and they were clearly already filled with soldiers. Two Battalions of Heavy Infantry and the two Battalions of Heavy Cavalry moved forward along with them, both guarding the siege weaponry while also using them as cover. At the back, there were at least four more Battalions of infantry soldiers advancing at a slower pace behind. In just this first offensive wave, the Kalise army had already sent its main force. From the looks of things, they did not even seem to be placing much importance on attacking from the other sides, focusing most of their attention on the frontal assault.

Tricked! Zhou Weiqing immediately realised his mistake. The enemy commander had seized upon the fact that he would prepare for the surrounding all-out assault, and instead changed tactics to focus on the full frontal assault. With the various siege weapons to

assist in their assault, this was not going to be an easy fight.

“Boss, let us charge out and destroy those siege weapons!” On the city walls, the feelings of all of them were rather oppressed, and Ma Qun couldn’t help but offer to attack once more.

Zhou Weiqing waved his hands and said: “No, there are too many enemies now, especially with the siege vehicles to cover them. It is just too dangerous for you to charge out now.”

Yan Zhexi said: “Boss, how about transferring back the rest of the Peerless Heavy Cavalry from the other walls?”

Zhou Weiqing shook his head and said: “No, the other walls might not be attacked now, but they may be attacked at any time. Look far off in the distance, the Kalise Regiment behind has started sending light cavalry troops using a roundabout fashion to loop around. Although their offense and sieging capabilities aren’t that strong, just leaving the fresh recruits alone to withstand their attacks will be a definite loss. Brothers, we will have a tough fight ahead of us, let’s pluck up our spirits. Once we can achieve this first victory, we can definitely hold on until our reinforcements arrive.”

If not for the Heavenly King assassin who might be hiding anywhere close by, even if the enemy forces were stronger, Zhou Weiqing would not be so dismal. However, with such a powerful hidden enemy who could attack at anytime, he had to spend so much focus on being alert for that, keeping his guard up. This was not a comfortable feeling at all.

The enemy drew closer bit by bit. It was clear that the Kalise commander was extremely experienced, and his directions were very well placed. He was not rash or impetuous, not charging forward, instead moving at a slow stable pace, maintaining perfect formation to fully take advantage of the siege weapons.

Zhou Weiqing gave a cold laugh. “Your Father, I, will give you a greeting gift first.” As he said that, he waved his hands before him,

and the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation appeared as he unleashed it. At the same time, he also entered the Dragon-Tiger Transformation state, the large wings spread out behind his back. All the Jewel Masters present could instantly sense a huge amount of Heavenly Energy gathering towards Zhou Weiqing, swarming crazily to him.

Standing at his two flanks, Shangguan Xue'er and Tian'er subconsciously drew closer to him, looking about warily at this point. Zhou Weiqing was about to launch an attack, and this was undoubtedly a good chance for the Heavenly King assassin to make his move. As the saying goes, 'caution is the parent of safety', and the two girls naturally raised their guard further in preparation.

It was not just the two of them. Naturally, Lin TianAo also took up his position right behind Zhou Weiqing. He was even more direct, with his seven-Jeweled Assembly Set Shield already released and at the ready. His eyes were cold as they scanned the area, fully ready to spring into action at any time.

The Overlord Bow gave forth a chilling aura as Zhou Weiqing drew it to a full crescent. Abruptly, he gave a loud shout, and with the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation glowing about him, in the Dragon-Tiger Transformation state, he truly looked like a demon god atop the city walls. Especially with the loud shout that was like a tiger's roar, giving all the soldiers on the city walls a morale boost.

Facing such a formidable looking force, along with invisible pressure of the threat from the last few days, the morale of the soldiers on the walls was slightly suppressed, especially those of the fresh recruits. Zhou Weiqing may not be an outstanding commander, especially in terms of 'normal' military tactics, but in terms of his grasp of the big picture view, he could match any top commander. He was extremely clear on what he needed to do right now.

A layer of black light covered the Overlord Bow, and in an

instant, using the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, Zhou Weiqing gathered a massive amount of Heavenly Energy and transformed it into the Darkness Attribute. At the same time, one of the Alexandrite Cat's Eye on one the edges of the hexagon glowed brightly. Clearly, Zhou Weiqing was not using a mimicked skill, directly unleashing one of the Stored Skills of his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation.

A pitch black figure appeared silently above Zhou Weiqing's head, hovering for a moment before spreading out and forming a humanoid figure with three sets of wings behind its back.

Right at that moment, Zhou Weiqing gave another loud shout, his eyes actually turning a vast expanse of white. A strange aura burst forth from his body next, swarming up above his head and forming a small trail of silvery white mist, infusing into the pitch black figure of light above him.

The silvery white mist seemed like the best fertilizer, and within an instant, the figure expanded to almost three times its original size, reaching a height of almost ten metres. The six wings behind its back spread out wide, and the figure seemed to become clearer, more focused and consolidated.

The soldiers on the city wall found they were almost unable to breathe. Although the huge black illusory figure was not directed at them, they still felt the oppressive presence that was almost unbearable. Zhou Weiqing took a step forward, right over the city walls, actually hovering in midair. Above his head, the giant black illusory figure also did the same, and in that instant, its features were fully shown to all the soldiers on both sides, several tens of thousands of men.

Chapter 201 Saint Energy – Recalling to Life! Hell's Angel! (3)

It was the image of a youth, the giant but slim black figure giving forth a faint purple glow... bloodshot eyes filled with endless ruthless killing intent, a cruel aura about it. The features were handsome, but pale, and the sheer power of the aura the figure released was enough to cause [even the heavens to change colours](#).

In the skies, no one knew when a large patch of dark clouds had suddenly gathered, forming a strange black whirlpool shape right above the black, six-winged youth.

Currently, Zhou Weiqing had his eyes closed. His entire body was shaking gently, even down to his hands and the Overlord Bow. His entire aura was raised to the max, and a terrifying energy reverberation could be felt all around. Let alone the enemies, even his own companions were trembling from the sheer presence.

Shangguan Xue'er's eyes were filled with shock. "This... this is an actual manifestation of a Heavenly Skill Image... right?" Although she knew, or perhaps had guessed, how Zhou Weiqing had actually accomplished it, even so her heart was still filled with disbelief. The sheer energy reverberations were just too powerful, and it looked like even if a Heavenly King stage powerhouse used the same Skill, it might not have the same formidable power as Zhou Weiqing's.

Tian'er was the only one not afraid of the huge black figure in the air with the terrifying aura. At this moment, she was standing right behind Zhou Weiqing, both her hands on his shoulders. All around her palms, gold and purple, two lights glowing as the different energy surged into Zhou Weiqing's body from her.

In truth, no one else knew but the actual initiator of the Skill, Zhou Weiqing, was also filled with shock at that point. He had never expected that this would happen.

Without question, the Skill that he was trying to unleash was the Hell's Angel, and he had planned to use the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation's powerful but fine control and the powerful Heavenly Energy absorption, infusing the Hell's Angel Skill into the Overlord Bow to unleash the powerful AOE Skill into the mass of enemies.

In order to bring the Skill to its greatest effect, the silvery white mist that had rose above his head was the Saint Energy which Zhou Weiqing had infused upwards into the Skill.

Zhou Weiqing had experimented with the Saint Energy many times, and he had long discovered that when using his Skills, as long as he infused a single drop of Saint Energy, the power of the Skill would explosively increase several times over. Originally, Zhou Weiqing's plan was to infuse a few drops of Saint Energy to further strengthen this Hell's Angel Skill.

However, he had never imagined that for this powerful Skill with the Heavenly Skill Image, even after he had already infused three drops of Saint Energy into it, the Heavenly Skill Image of the Hell's Angel in the sky seemed like a bottomless pit, beginning to drain the Saint Energy directly from his body.

Tian'er and Zhou Weiqing pretty much trained everyday together with the Saint Energy whirlpool, and the connection between them was extremely strong, almost like they could sense each others' emotions or thoughts. Instantly, she realised something was wrong with Zhou Weiqing, and came to his side to assist him, quickly forming the large Saint Energy whirlpool. Only then did the Hell's Angel begin to stabilize, just before the Zhou Weiqing's smaller internal Saint Energy Whirlpool was drained dry.

In a matter of moments, a grand total of over thirty drops of Saint Energy had been devoured from Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's bodies. Besides their own personal internal Saint Energy whirlpools, there was nothing left.

By now, Zhou Weiqing realised that empowering Skills with the Heavenly Skill Image was vastly different from his ordinary Skills, and it was definitely not a wise idea for them to do so in their current state. However, it was too late at this point, he could no longer apply the brakes to it, and all they could do was to grit their teeth and hold on for the ride.

Right at that moment, the massive black figure above Zhou Weiqing's head began to move. In a flash, he appeared right in front of Zhou Weiqing.

Bloodshot eyes stared right at Zhou Weiqing, an aura of extreme cold caused the entire group of people on the Crescent City south wall to shudder uncontrollably.

“My Lord, thank you for granting me life with your purest energy. I can serve you for three seconds.”

A thick, deep voice rang out in the depths of Zhou Weiqing's soul, and it seemed like he was the only one who could hear it. The massive black youth had a face glinting with an evil light, and within the blood red orbs, he could sense an endless killing intent and frenzied presence.

It's alive... alive?! Towards what was happening right before their eyes, no one could refrain from being shocked. Especially so for Zhou Weiqing himself... only he truly understood that he had actually given a Skill its own consciousness! This... this was something that the Saint Energy had done! However, what could this Hell's Angel that was brought to life actually do? Zhou Weiqing did not know, but he felt a burning fire raging in his heart. He knew he had found another of the Saint Energy's deepest profound secrets.

“My Lord, although your energy is pure, it is just too minimal. If you do not give an order, I will vanish soon.” The Hell's Angel's voice rang out once more, snapping Zhou Weiqing out of his reverie.

“Destroy. Please do all you can to destroy my enemies outside the city walls.” Zhou Weiqing did not hesitate any longer, quickly giving his order to the live Hell’s Angel.

“As you wish.” The Hell’s Angel moved, his actions smooth and so natural, that unbelievably handsome face was filled with an icy cold killing intent.

In a flash, he disappeared into the clouds above. The next instant, a shocking sight occurred.

The dark clouds that were swirling about them in a whirlpool fashion actually started moving crazily. In a blink of an eye, the dark clouds formed another, even larger, illusory figure of the Hell’s Angel.

The dark clouds were also changing colours, a dark purple light rising to encompass everything.

Six giant wings spread out in the air... an oppressive pressure descended from the skies.

The wings behind the giant Hell’s Angel abruptly moved, and within moments a huge circle of light spread out in the skies, glowing a deep purple.

From the giant ring of purple light, hundreds of large balls of purplish black air bubbles dropped down, each almost ten metres in diameter.

The generation of the air bubbles lasted only three seconds, and the illusory Hell’s Angel in the sky disappeared, warping back into the patch of dark clouds. However, in those three seconds alone, more than a hundred of the purplish black air bubbles had descended from the skies right onto the three Kalise Empire Regiments.

Zhou Weiqing’s body crumpled to the ground, and at his back, Tian’er also slid down together with him. Right at the same instant, a pitch black flash of light struck out like cold lightning

from the side... it was one of the fresh recruits! The light struck out directly towards Zhou Weiqing's throat.

In truth, the black lightning had arrived a little late, and it wasn't the absolute perfect moment. That was because Shangguan Xue'er had already blocked at Zhou Weiqing's side. Perhaps the reason for that was even the attacker had been just too shocked by the scene beforehand.

When Zhou Weiqing had released his Skill, after a tiny moment of shock, Lin TianAo had already made full preparations to react to any trouble, his mind and spirit fully focused and alert. When the abrupt black light appeared, he was the first to react. The seven-Jeweled Assembly Set Shield ready in his hands moved forward in a flash, and his entire body and shield blocked right in front of Zhou Weiqing.

Still, the black rapier's offense was just as terrifying as always. In a massive explosion, Lin TianAo's seven-Jeweled Assembly Set Shield was destroyed in just a single strike despite its powerful defensive capabilities. At the same time, Lin TianAo was sent flying into the sky.

However, in the end Lin TianAo had still succeeded in blocking the blow, if only just barely. He had just been at a too severe a disadvantage, not just in terms of the gap in cultivation level, but also the fact that his Assembly Set Shield was one piece lesser than his enemy's Assembly Set Sword.

Still, Lin TianAo had earned a precious second, and Shangguan Xue'er's Boundless Infinitum Sword also struck out at that moment. The snow white sword, glowing with a crystalline light, piercing straight at the owner of the black rapier.

Without question, the Heavenly King assassin had come again, seizing the opportunity of the moment of Zhou Weiqing's weakness when he had finished releasing his powerful Skill.

"Eh...?" A surprised sound emitted from the Heavenly King

assassin's mouth. He originally wanted to continue attacking Zhou Weiqing. However, strangely enough, Shangguan Xue'er's attack suddenly gave him a strong sense of danger.

Having been an assassin for so many years, living on the edge, his personal senses were far more developed than anyone. It was also these senses that had saved him from many potential disasters over the years. At this point, he could clearly sense that if he continued attacking Zhou Weiqing and ignored Shangguan Xue'er, he would not be able to dodge it... and it would mean his death!

How is that possible?!

Despite his disbelief, this Heavenly King assassin was too used to trusting his own senses. Swiping the black rapier in his hand, he struck out horizontally towards Shangguan Xue'er's Boundless Infinitum Sword.

Another earsplitting explosion rang out. Shangguan Xue'er's cultivation level was just too low compared to her opponent, and despite her sword mastery, with the assassin's sheer offensive power and cultivation level gap, both her and her sword were also sent flying back.

However, the Heavenly King assassin was unable to continue attacking Zhou Weiqing. That was because the black rapier in his hands had abruptly turned a silver white colour.

The Heavenly King assassin's body suddenly began to shake violently, pausing in mid-movement. He was shocked to realise that a strange energy he had never sensed before had wormed into his palm through his rapier, an energy that he didn't even know... an unknown attribute even. The energy was warm, filled with life, but when his Darkness Attribute Heavenly Energy made contact with it, the darkness energy dissipated. This new energy did not hurt his body at all, but with a posture like a sovereign over his subjects, it was beginning to devour all the Heavenly Energy within his body at an alarming rate.

What was going on? For the Heavenly King assassin, it could be said that the majority of his power was in the rapier in his hands. It was after all an eight-Jeweled Assembly Set Sword, just a step away from being a Legendary Set. Furthermore, the offensive strength of such a assembly weapon was far above any ordinary Consolidated Equipment, chasing the ultimate. Yet, he had currently lost contact with his own sword. Furthermore, though the strange energy that entered his body was swallowing his Heavenly Energy, it would not be able to finish doing so any time soon... but the problem was he could not find any way to deal with it. Added to the fact that he had lost contact with his precious rapier... he couldn't even recall it back!

This is a saying, not literally the skies are changing colours

Chapter 202 Living Hell! (1)

The previous time, after Zhou Weiqing's powerful kick, he was able to take care of the tri-attribute venom by self-injury and sacrificing a serious injury to cut his losses. However, this time was very different! This unknown energy had invaded his hand, and all of his abilities were focused on his rapier and sword-wielding hand! If he wanted to do the same, he would no longer be the top assassin in the world. Alas, in just a few moments of his hesitation, the strange energy had already settled into his arm and reached his shoulder.

Right at this moment, a bright, clear voice rang out, though it was currently filled with a cold anger. "Since you have come, then stay here forever."

A brutal and overbearing force of HEavenly Energy appeared right in front of him without warning, a massive silver hand grabbing towards the assassin's neck.

As soon as the person appeared, the Heavenly King assassin was shocked to judge that it was a Heavenly King stage powerhouse!

At this point, he no longer dared hesitate or even use his most familiar weapon. He knew if he stayed any longer, it would mean death. Frantically circulating all of his Heavenly Energy, his feet tapped the ground as he launched himself backwards in full retreat.

Despite his fear, at the same time, joy rushed in his heart. The strange energy that had reached his shoulder had finally stopped, and was showing signs of slowly vanishing. As long as he could save his arm and hand, there would always be another chance for him to try again.

The silver white light on his rapier also vanished, and the rapier warped into eight black lights before disappearing back into the assassin.

This new Heavenly King stage powerhouse that had abruptly appeared was naturally Duan Tianlang. Now that he was here, how could he allow this assassin to leave so easily? The large silver hand in the sky abruptly exploded, warping into countless threads of silver, forming a large silver cage, enveloping the Heavenly King assassin.

Currently, Duan Tianlang was dressed in the full 'Hate Sky no Handle' Legendary Set. As the crafter of the set for Long Shiya, how could he not have one of his own? It could be said that God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters were definitely some of the most powerful forces in the entire world. The reason why the Heaven's Expanse Palace was so feared was also because of the three God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters, just that they would not usually take action.

A layer of silver light burst forth, warping instantly into a huge shield of light, covering the Heavenly King assassin once more. It was the Spatial Shackles.

This was a Skill that Zhou Weiqing also had. However, when compared to Duan Tianlang using it, his seemed like mere child's play.

The Spatial Shackles of Duan Tianlang covered more than several dozen square metres, and its strength was terrifying indeed. For the Heavenly King assassin, he could only bounce off ineffectually. Without his black rapier, he was unable to breakthrough the barrier.

A horrifying strength exploded forth as the octagon plum blossom hammer in Duan Tianlang's hands smashed forward. Yet, perhaps even more terrifying was the fact that the Spatial Shackles was actually rapidly shrinking in around the assassin.

What kind of power did Duan Tianlang have? His cultivation level had reached the maximum level of the Heavenly King stage years ago, just that he was unable to breakthrough to the Heavenly

Emperor state. Added to the fact that he had an entire Legendary Set, his current strength was boosted to a monstrous degree. From Zhou Weiqing and the others' descriptions, along with his own observations earlier, he could naturally tell that this Heavenly King assassin's greatest strength was his speed, agility and offensive powers.

According to Zhou Weiqing's original plan, he would purposely leave a weak point for this Heavenly King assassin to exploit and launch his attack. By drawing him out, Duan Tianlang would be able to launch his own sneak attack against the assassin since he did not know they had a Heavenly King stage powerhouse on their side.

However, Zhou Weiqing had never dreamed that the Hell's Angel Skill of his would end up like that, causing both him and Tian'er to lose their abilities to fight as all their energy had been depleted. Otherwise, if Zhou Weiqing, Tian'er and Shangguan Xue'er had joined forces with their Saint Energy, it wouldn't just be a simple matter of causing the Heavenly King assassin to lose control of his rapier for a short period of time.

However, the trio did not understand Duan Tianlang's power clearly. Currently, the usually gentle and warm God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master truly erupted with his full power. His overall combat prowess was indeed terrifying, far beyond the unbalanced Heavenly King assassin.

Although the black rapier had been recalled, the Heavenly King assassin was still temporarily unable to use it. The rapier along with his right hand had been Sealed with Shangguan Xue'er's Saint Energy earlier, and although it was on the verge of vanishing, recovery would still take a little while more, and he was temporarily unable to connect to his Physical Jewels. Alas, that was the drawback of focusing one's power to the extreme, and now that he was unable to use it, it was a loss of the majority of his power. Yet, Duan Tianlang's attack was already reaching, and with

the Spatial Shackles power affect, the assassin's speed and agility was severely restricted. Duan Tianlang attacked, and the Heavenly King assassin dodged, and just like that the two of them exchanged blows at lightning speed in the rapidly decreasing space. In order to prevent himself from being fully trapped, the Heavenly King assassin was forced to unleash his Heavenly Energy at full force to hold back the Spatial Shackles from shrinking too rapidly.

The assassin was groaning inwardly secretly. He dared not have allow that terrifying hammer of Duan Tianlang's to even touch him, his senses telling him that this Heavenly King powerhouse in front of him was not someone he could handle even at his full power. No matter the 'Hate Sky no Handle' or 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Sets, they chose to chase physical strength to the extreme. In a certain sense of things, it was similar to the Assembly Sets in a manner, just far stronger and more well rounded. Facing the massive hammer, though both sides were at the Heavenly King stage, the assassin knew that if it even brushed against him, he would definitely be severely injured. That was the terrifying power of a full Legendary Set. Currently, he could only keep dodging, hoping to wait for the time when he could use his rapier again to break free, or the time of the Spatial Shackles to run out... only then would he have a chance to escape.

All of this happened on the city walls in a manner of seconds, and by the time the two Heavenly King powerhouses were entangled in their fight, the several hundred air bubbles from the Hell's Angel had also fallen to the ground.

It was as if the purplish black air bubbles had eyes upon them, spreading out to land perfectly on important targets. One of the first to get into trouble was one of the large siege towers.

Below these siege towers were mainly wooden wheels. All of the materials had been brought by the three Kalise Regiments, and they had spent the last three days assembling them together. The siege towers were about twenty metres tall, almost at the same

height as the Crescent City walls, able to hold thirty archers at the top, allowing them to face off against the archers atop the city walls.

Of course, for the Peerless Regiment soldiers, out of all the siege weapons, the most useless were actually these siege towers. However, due to the sheer height of the towers, they were naturally the first few to be 'taken care' off by the giant purplish black air bubbles.

Swoosh One of the air bubbles landed on the siege tower, causing a strange screeching sound. The closest one could describe it would be when cooking with a pot of hot oil, and pouring a ladle of cold water inside.

A dreadful scene played out next. The thirty archers and the over dozen shield bearers protecting them did not even have time to scream before they vanished along with the strange sound.

All that everyone could see was just the purplish black bubble descend from the sky, creeping over the entire siege tower and it just vanished like that. As the bubbles fell on the ground, it was like a splash of a wave smashing onto the ground, spreading at least several dozen metres before dissipating. However, in that entire large radius of the each bubble's fall, every single living being was just like the men on the siege tower... vanishing into thin air.

Of the three Regiments, one was from the Bai Da Empire, and naturally they had their share of Jewel Masters and archers. Almost instantly, they reacted, and along with cries of surprise and shock, a rain of arrows and light beams of Skills flew upwards.

The arrows did not have any effect, disintegrating before they even reached the air bubbles. As for the various light bolts that the Jewel Masters released, it actually caused the situation to grow worse.

Those purplish black air bubbles actually broke upon contact

from the skills... but what then? As they broke apart, a rain of purplish black liquid fell from the skies from each broken bubble instead!

What was a living hell on earth? For the first time, the Heavenly Bow side on the city walls witnessed it firsthand. Each of the purplish black air bubbles had a horrifying destructive power, and just looking at the scene before them made them almost stop breathing.

No enemy, no skill, nothing could hold back or withstand the purplish black air bubbles. Each of them burst when they landed or came into contact with something, spraying the light all about. Anything that came into contact with it, be it human or weapon, they were all assimilated.

Everywhere they struck, it wasn't even necessary to clear up the battlefield. Even the earth... all that was left were giant holes in the ground.

Just watching from the vantage point of the city walls, it was truly a grand sight. Whenever an air bubble landed, it was like the entire ground became molten lava. All of the gathered siege weapons did not have a chance to come into play, and they were all disintegrated, including the fifty siege vehicles... not a single one was left. All that remained were countless of deep holes in the ground.

At the back, the Heavy Infantry and Heavy Cavalry soldiers were considered much luckier. At least, they were still quite some distance away, and the Hell's Angel only lasted three seconds. As such, only about ten or so of the bubbles actually struck them.

Even so, just the mere ten bubbles exploding in their midst caused the two Battalions of Heavy Cavalry and two Battalions of Heavy Infantry to lose more than a third of their numbers.

There were no violent explosions, no special lights or effects. The entire process was just so quick and simple, like an invisible giant

hand had poured a immense jug of lava over the entire area. At least three thousand Kalise soldiers and all their various siege weapons disappeared instantly, with not even a single token to show that they had once been there.

No matter how outstanding the Kalise army commander was, meeting such an unbelievable situation, he could only be shocked to the core.

What kind of power was this... an act of god! No one could have expected, or even imagined, that something like this would happen. This had all happened under the circumstance that the siege weapons were rather spread out, and there were not many of the attacking soldiers packed into the area. Even so, they had suffered such a major loss in seconds. If the thirty thousand troops had been charging together in the attack? Perhaps... the number dead would have doubled or more!

In that instant, everyone could only stare in stunned shock, even the two who had caused the entire thing to happen.

Chapter 202 Living Hell! (2)

When Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er were supported up by Shangguan Xue'er to the side of the wall to see what had happened outside, they were struck speechless. Indeed, neither of them could even find words to describe the entire scene in front of them. At the same time, the price they had paid was heavy. Besides the last remaining ten drops of Saint Energy that was barely enough to sustain their internal little Saint Energy whirlpool, they did not have a single drop of energy left in both their bodies. That was including even the normal Heavenly Energy that they had painstaking cultivated in the past month, with not a single drop left once more. For the next dozen to twenty days, they would not be able to recover to their maximum state, let alone taking any action.

Even so, everything the Hell's Angel did definitely caused them to be filled with shock and awe. Perhaps, the sheer amount of killing was not bloody at all, but it was even scarier and unnerving than a bloody massacre.

Shangguan Xue'er could only say in a stupor: "What... what kind of power is that? Even if a Heavenly King stage powerhouse unleashes a powerful AOE Skill, it will not have such a massive effect. Weiqing... you... you both... just too scary..."

Zhou Weiqing smiled bitterly and said: "Don't ask me, I don't even know what happened. I had only planned to destroy some of the siege weapons..."

Tian'er opened her mouth slightly, but remained speechless. In truth, she did not know what to say at this point.

In the entire mainland, it was restricted for Heavenly Emperor stage powerhouses to interfere in ordinary wars between empires, and the reason for that was exactly because of such situations. However, who were they? Were they Heavenly Emperor

powerhouses? They were merely a six-Jeweled and a seven-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Masters!

Saint Energy, it was the Saint Energy that had caused all of this. In their previous training and experiments, though the three of them had already known that the Saint Energy was extremely powerful and had many miraculous effects... but only now did they truly understand how powerful it was.

Zhou Weiqing was now certain that if he could consolidate a Saint Core Nucleus, and release that Hell's Angel once more, he estimated that he might even be able to bring it to life for more than a minute.

Within that mere three seconds, it had already done so much damage. If the Hell's Angel could be maintained for a whole minute... perhaps the entire Kalise Empire Regiments would be wiped out totally.

Terrifying Saint Energy, what kind of power did that hold! Exchanging glances, Zhou Weiqing and the two girls set the resolution in a tacit understanding without exchanging words. From now on, they would not use such a power easily. Otherwise, if this was revealed too early, it would definitely bring them much trouble. Tian'er and Shangguan Xue'er were still not too bad, after all they each had a Great Saint Land behind them. However, it was definitely not a good thing for Zhou Weiqing. He had just begun his path upwards, and at this point, the thing he was afraid most was drawing attention from the powers that could destroy him easily now. For example, the five Great Saint Lands.

Zhou Weiqing forced out a faint smile. "I really do not know if I should be laughing or crying. However, I'm sure that by now the Kalise Empire fellows are totally frightened."

Almost as soon as he said that, coincidentally, the rest of the Kalise Empire armies began fleeing like the receding tide from a shore. The speed of their frenzied retreat was nearly a few times

that of their arrival.

Facing such an attack like the Hell's Angel, more like a force of nature than anything, any Jewel Master worth his salt would immediately guess it was at least a Heavenly Emperor who could do such a thing! In the continent, Heavenly Emperors were restricted from interfering in normal human wars, as such a destructive power could not be countered by any ordinary army. Still, all the restrictions aside, if one was really here, why should they stay and wait for death?

On top of the city walls, the Heavenly Bow Empire soldiers were all stunned silly, even the Peerless Regiment soldiers were no exception. Although they knew their boss was extremely powerful, they had never expected such a degree of strength. They had personally seen Zhou Weiqing unleash that Skill, and the sight before them was truly a landscape of hell on earth. Perhaps, if the fresh recruits earlier were all extremely nervous and afraid from the sheer scale and power of their enemies, then at this moment, the only thing left in their hearts was awe.

For these ordinary soldiers, they did not have much understanding about Jewel Masters, or Heavenly Jewel Masters. Their confidence in Zhou Weiqing was a blind one, strengthened in conviction by their own eyes. From their perspective, all their powerful Commander needed to do was just unleash a few more attacks like that, and the thirty thousand enemies would never be able to succeed in occupying the Crescent City.

After a moment of being stunned, the entire Heavenly Bow Empire side erupted into cheers as their morale shot sky high. The cheers resounded throughout the air like waves crashing into the shore. Without a doubt, this battle, which should have been so tough, had ended so quickly, so unexpectedly.

On the city walls, the fight between the two Heavenly King stage powerhouses was also nearing the end. The assassin was being severely pressured by the powerful God Tier Consolidating

Equipment Master, Duan Tianlang.

In truth, even without Shangguan Xue'er's attack earlier, the assassin's overall power could not compare to Duan Tianlang. Now, it just helped Duan Tianlang save a lot of time and effort.

“Hate... Sky... No... Handle...” Facing his enemy's constant dodging, Duan Tianlang finally grew tired of wasting time. As a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, he was extremely sensitive to Consolidated Equipment, and he could sense that the sealing on his enemy's black rapier was ending soon. He did not want to lengthen the fight any longer, and he released one of the powerful imbued Skills of his Legendary Set.

‘Hate Sky no Handle’ was not just simply the name of the Legendary Set, but it was also the name of the Skill that the Legendary Set granted when it was complete. Duan Tianlang raised his warhammer with both hands, savagely smashing it down in the air.

A terrifying scene occurred next. The cheering Heavenly Bow Empire soldiers suddenly felt an unprecedented pressure explode out. The suppression was so strong that it even surpassed the presence of the Hell's Angel powered by Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy earlier.

Everyone had the same feeling – the sky was about to fall down.

Indeed, in that instant, it was as if the entire sky was straining, on the verge of collapsing, as a series of massive explosions rang through the air. On the city walls, even for the powerhouses like Shangguan Xue'er, everyone fell down to the ground from the sheer pressure, and even the city walls began to tremble.

One had to know that when Duan Tianlang released his Legendary Set Skill, it was fully focused on the Heavenly King assassin who was still Sealed in his Spatial Shackles. Everything that could be felt outside was just the resultant product that he was already doing his best to minimize.

Puuuu Originally constantly dodging, the Heavenly King assassin suddenly collapsed, as if he had been struck by a bolt of lightning, caving in as if the entire heavens had collapsed down upon him. There was a sickening sound of bone snapping from his body, and in that instant, all of his Heavenly Energy burst forth in an explosive manner that was far beyond his limits, forcefully breaking through Duan Tianlang's Spatial Shackles.

Alas, it was just too late. How could the strongest imbued Skill of a Legendary Set, especially one as high quality as the 'Hate Sky no Handle' set, be something so easily endured just like that? Even if he had the black rapier in his hands, he would definitely still be injured, let alone now with him being suppressed so heavily. After all, his defense was one of his weakest points.

The Heavenly King assassin's body was now forcefully smashed down upon the ground, his entire body sunk down into the tough rock of the city walls. Duan Tianlang gave a cold laugh, his warhammer striking down once more. Splat This time, the assassin's body was entirely smashed into meat paste by the terrifying force of the hammer blow.

Zhou Weiqing stared with jaw agape at it. At this point, he couldn't help but ask: "Senior Uncle, did you really just pull down the sky?" As the heir to the Legacy of Strength, the owner of the 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set, no one had a clearer feeling than him just now.

From the surface, the final blow that Duan Tianlang used was that of the Spatial Attribute. However, Zhou Weiqing was extremely clear that it was not any particular elemental Attribute at all, but pure, unadulterated strength. An incomparable, horrific strength. That was the reason he asked the question.

Duan Tianlang smiled faintly. Having just killed a Heavenly King powerhouse, his breathing was uneven, and he looked exhausted. After all, despite his power, the state of his body still had not been in perfect condition all this while.

“Of course we can’t actually pull down the skies, but the effect of this ‘Hate Sky no Handle’ is to mimic the effect of the skies being pulled down.”

“This Skill can be considered a single target attack, or an area of effect attack. If I had used this Skill on the Kalise Empire armies, and I was standing right in their center, then the destructive power of it could only be higher than your Hell’s Angel just now. In truth, such a Skill does not necessarily need our particular Legendary Set, but its requirement is having absolute strength, just like one is really pulling down the entire skies. As a result, besides our ‘Hate Sky no Handle’ or ‘Hate Ground no Handle’ Legendary Sets, there should not be any other possible situation where one can accomplish this. In the future, when you have gathered nine pieces of your ‘Hate Ground no Handle’ Set, you should also be able to use this Skill. If you actually complete your tenth piece, besides the ‘Heaven’s Falls’, you should also be able to cause the earth to sink. ‘Heaven falls, Earth crumbles’, such a state, even if it were compared to the Boundless Infinitum Set, it should not be any weaker.”

In the past, since Zhou Weiqing’s cultivation level was just too low, Duan Tianlang had never explained all of this to him. However, after witnessing the terrifying Hell’s Angel Skill, Duan Tianlang would no longer judge Zhou Weiqing just by his cultivation level any longer.

Although he did not know exactly how Zhou Weiqing had accomplished it, it was without a doubt that the power of the Hell’s Angel just now had stunned even Duan Tianlang. Of course, he would not question Zhou Weiqing about the secrets behind the Hell’s Angel; in the end he was not Zhou Weiqing’s teacher. To any Heavenly Jewel Master, this was definitely a top secret. With his own status and position, how could he possibly ask such sensitive questions at will?

“Boss, the enemy has retreated, what should we do?” Lei Zi said

respectfully to Zhou Weiqing.

Earlier, that Hell's Angel could be said to have 'conquered' all those present. In all their eyes, Zhou Weiqing had raised to all whole different level.

Zhou Weiqing glanced at him and said: "What else can we do? Continue holding down the fort in the Crescent City. However, I expect that the Kalise Empire will not easily come back again. I am heading back to the governor's mansion first, but no matter what, do not grow careless just because of our victory just now. Keep the gates sealed for now."

"Yes Sir." All of them acknowledged. Lin TianAo took over Zhou Weiqing from Shangguan Xue'er, supporting him as they left, while Shangguan Xue'er supported Tian'er. Along with Duan Tianlang, they headed back down the walls and into the city. With Duan Tianlang's status, he would not help Zhou Weiqing in the war. If not for the Heavenly King assassin, he would not even have appeared here today.

Chapter 202 Living Hell! (3)

As Lin TianAo supported Zhou Weiqing to walk along, only then did he truly sense how weak he was. Zhou Weiqing's current state was truly terrible, his entire body nearly drained dry of energy, and he had to lean almost all of his weight on Lin TianAo as he 'flopped' along.

However, despite his weakness, Zhou Weiqing's current feelings were considered very joyous. The two greatest problems he was facing had been solved, and it was without a doubt that he had taken a huge step towards the revival of his homeland.

Duan Tianlang did not return to his own abode, instead still going along with Zhou Weiqing and the others to the governor's mansion. Currently, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er were fully drained dry of energy, almost to the point where they couldn't even sit down to cultivate at that point. They could only wait for their bodies to slowly recover at their natural regeneration state, and within three days it would be impossible for them to move properly.

"Weiqing, I'm afraid that you will soon have to face a lot more trouble, you better have preparation for that in your heart." As soon as they were away from the crowd, Duan Tianlang said with furrowed brows.

Zhou Weiqing started momentarily, alarm in his heart as he asked: "What trouble?" For a person like his Senior Uncle, whose cultivation level was almost reaching that of any ordinary Heavenly Emperor, to say that he would meet trouble... it just showed that this trouble was not small at all.

Duan Tianlang sighed and said: "Just now you really shouldn't have used that Skill! Killing so many at once, it is going against the heavens. Furthermore, that offensive power of that Skill, it is almost able to match a Low Level Heavenly Emperor's area of

effect skill. As long as those Kalise Empire soldiers aren't fools, they will spread the news out. That will definitely bring about some Heavenly Emperor powerhouses to look into the matter. After all, there is an agreement between all Heavenly Emperors that restrict them from interfering in human wars, or taking action on battlefields. Even for Heavenly King powerhouses, we are restricted from using area of effect skills on the battlefield. In this area, even for your Master, as proud as he is, he would not dare to offend all the Heavenly Emperors in the world in this."

Zhou Weiqing's expression changed immediately as he exclaimed: "There will be Heavenly Emperors investigating the matter... or causing trouble?"

Duan Tianlang shook his head and said: "Not necessarily causing trouble. For Heavenly Emperor powerhouses, all of them are either living a free and easy life, otherwise they belong to one of the Great Saint Lands. Amongst the five Great Saint Lands, it is clear that the Heavenly Snow Mountain and Heavenly Demon Sect won't come causing trouble for you. As for the Heaven's Expanse Palace, they already know you are here so that isn't an issue either. As for the Passion Valley and the Blood Red Hell, as long as they don't have anything better to do, they shouldn't interfere as well. As such, according to the normal circumstance, you would just be receiving a warning from the Great Saint Lands, but there shouldn't be any actual action taken yet. However, if this happens again, I'm afraid that even the Heaven's Expanse Palace won't sit back and let you continue."

Zhou Weiqing gave a bitter smile as he said: "But... I'm not even close to being a Heavenly Emperor yet!"

Duan Tianlang looked at him and said: "Silly boy, so many people know that your Master is by your side, and that Fatty Long also has the Darkness Attribute. Do you think you really can explain yourself clearly? If you said he wasn't the one who did it, who would believe you?! Furthermore, if they actually truly believed

you, it would be even more troublesome. A six-Jeweled and seven-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Masters joining forces to release a Skill that reaches the power of the Heavenly Emperor stage... such secret arts... how many people would be drawn to that? My boy, do not underestimate human greed... If that really happens, even if you run off to the Heavenly Snow Mountain or the Heaven's Expanse Palace, there will still be people who will come after you."

Zhou Weiqing's brow furrowed deeply as he said worriedly: "Senior Uncle, what should we do then?"

Duan Tianlang said: "Keep a low profile, and do not ever use that Skill on the battlefield again."

"I believe that within ten days, you will receive some warnings. At that time, you just need to maintain a low profile and reply politely. Anyway, they will assume it is your Master who did it, so you might as well just throw the shit onto Fatty Long's head. You can then express that your Master has already left, and will no longer interfere in your battles. Overall speaking, the situation shouldn't be too bad, I just wanted to give you a heads up of the possible ramifications. In fact, things should be going well. Those three Regiments of the Kalise Empire should not dare return in the next ten days due to that matter, and after that, when they return, enough time should have passed that you do not have to hold out long before your reinforcements arrive."

Zhou Weiqing released the breath he didn't even know he was holding, grinning relaxedly as he said: "Heh heh, as long as it isn't some Heavenly Emperors coming here to cause trouble, then it's fine. Poor Master! [He will get shot even when he is lying down!](#) I hope that he won't beat me up when he returns."

Duan Tianlang laughed heartily and said: "[He treats you like his most treasured prize, how could he bear to beat you up?](#) Alright, it is time for me to return as well, these old bones have not fought for so long, I am also very tired now."

Duan Tianlang left, and only the trio of Zhou Weiqing, Tian'er and Shangguan Xue'er remained in the room.

Shangguan Xue'er closed the door before releasing a long breath, saying: "I never imagined... the power of the Saint Energy would be so monstrous. That instant, even I was terrified. Weiqing, what happened with that Hell's Angel?"

Zhou Weiqing began to describe the entire process of him unleashing the Hell's Angel's Skill. Hearing his words, the two girls' eyes were filled with shock.

"The Skill... the Heavenly Skill Image... actually came to life?!" Even though Shangguan Xue'er came from the Heaven's Expanse Palace and had the most experience and knowledge amongst them, she had never seen or heard of such a strange circumstance. For a Skill to come to life... she couldn't even imagine such a thing!

A light of wisdom flashed in Zhou Weiqing's eyes momentarily as he said: "This should be another use of the Saint Energy that we hadn't previously uncovered. As we know, the Saint Energy is a product of the fusion of the four Saint Attributes, and without question it is the strongest known power in the world. I would not find it strange no matter what kind of other unique effects it may generate. We were once again lucky this time, that Senior Uncle's power was far beyond my expectations. Otherwise, after this strange abrupt change from the Saint Energy, we might not have been able to survive that Heavenly King assassin, let alone kill him. Well, at least now that the fellow is finally dead, we can all breathe easily once more. At least, we don't have to keep worrying that someone is always about to ambush us."

Tian'er said: "You still need to be wary. Whoever the employer is, if they can send one, who's to say they won't send a second assassin?"

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: "[When soldiers come, we will fight them off with a general, when the water rises we will](#)

[use earth to blockade it off](#). Let them come. Alright, let's not speak of that for now. Xue'er, come aid us in circulating our Heavenly Energy, we are drained too dry to begin it ourselves. This time, we have definitely benefited in influence and awe, but that energy consumption was just too scary. I can barely even move my hands now."

...

In the next few days, both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er were lost in the state of recovery. However, both of their bodies were in much better state than he had first feared. With Shangguan Xue'er's help, their Heavenly Energy recovered relatively quickly. Zhou Weiqing was able to determine that this was also because in the end, both of them had managed to save enough to maintain their personal little Saint Energy whirlpool. Otherwise, they would have to start everything from zero once more. If that truly happened, perhaps even three months of recovery would not be sufficient.

The Kalise Empire army did not retreat far, setting up camp about thirty li from the Crescent City instead this time. When Zhou Weiqing heard that news, he knew that his Senior Uncle's judgement should be accurate. The Kalise Empire should have already sent out news about the devastation caused by his Hell's Angel Skill, and was waiting for others to come to warn and restrict him. More accurately, to them it would be to restrict the Heavenly Emperor on his side. They would not just give up just like this, and were now just waiting for their next opportunity.

Let them wait then. The more time that passes, the greater the advantage we will have. Since these Kalise Empire fellows weren't in a rush, Zhou Weiqing was naturally happy to keep status quo.

On the eighth day since the repulsion of the attack, a letter from the Heaven's Expanse Palace came. Of course, it was not directed at Zhou Weiqing, instead for Shangguan Xue'er. Within the letter, it was clearly asking about what had really happened.

Regarding this, Zhou Weiqing had already planned a draft reply. Their return letter was simple, and he told the Heaven's Expanse Palace that during the battles he had twice been ambushed by the Heavenly King assassin, further describing the Heavenly King assassin in detail. Naturally, this had caused his Master to fly into a rage, and he had been unable to restrain himself and struck out in a fit of anger. As his Master knew he had violated the agreement, he had left, and promised that this would not happen again.

Zhou Weiqing's reply was seamless and perfect indeed. Those who knew Long Shiya well knew that this fatty was extremely protective of his own, even to a fault. It was quite normal that something like this would happen.

What followed next was a query from the Passion Valley, also asking similar questions. Naturally, they replied with a similar answer. After that, the Blood Red Hell followed suit, though their wording was much stricter and stern, saying that if something similar occurred, they would personally send powerhouses to deal with them.

As for the Heavenly Snow Mountain and Heavenly Demon Sect, they did not even send any query or warnings. However, two days after the Blood Red Hell's questioning, the Kalise Empire armies began to show signs of movement once more.

This time, they did not choose the full frontal assault again, instead spreading out in the distance to fully surround the entire Crescent City.

As they started surrounding the city, in the distant plains, another two Regiments of soldiers actually appeared.

As the three Kalise Regiments had still been camped on the outskirts of the city, they had strictly barricaded them from sending out scouts. The Peerless Regiment currently numbered so few, and they naturally dared not risk moving out without reason. Yet, the Kalise Empire had actually sent another two Regiments. It

was clear that not only did Zhou Weiqing's actions the other day not scare them off, it had actually just rang warning bells to them, and it was clear that their objective was to nip this growing resistance here in the bud, destroying them totally. This was totally out of Zhou Weiqing's expectations.

Previously, there were still around twenty seven thousand remaining soldiers from the three Regiments, and they were now joined by another two Regiments numbering twenty thousand. This was already two thirds of the original Kalise Empire army!

Furthermore, the two new Regiments had brought another batch of siege weapons. Of course, the numbers were not as much as the first time, but it was still a sight to behold.

Standing on the city walls, Zhou Weiqing had already recovered all his basic Heavenly Energy in the past ten days. However, his Saint Energy was still barely less than half recovered. At this point, he couldn't help but scold out loud: "Are these Kalise Empire fellows crazy? We only have seven hundred men, and they actually sent out fifty thousand soldiers...." No matter how much confidence he had in the Peerless Regiment and their combat prowess, facing such an unbelievable difference in numbers, how could he still remain fully positive?

The surrounding Kalise main army was not in a rush to attack. It was as if the Crescent City was already meat at their mouth, and they could swallow it anytime.

With nearly fifty thousand soldiers, it was more than enough to totally surround a small city like the Crescent City. From the distance, the soldiers which had looped around joined up with the two new Regiments, moving in slightly as they closed ranks in perfect formation all around the Crescent City, in a containment that not even a single drop of water would leak out.

Literal translation, meaning getting blamed for something he didn't do, or getting involved/dragged into a matter when it has

nothing to do with him

Why do I think Zhou Weiqing the troll is being trolled?

Literal translation of an idiom. Basically means we will deal with whatever comes

Chapter 203 Peerless! (1)

On their own side, the overall number of troop was a mere three thousand seven hundred, and they were defending a city which didn't even have a moat. How could Zhou Weiqing deal with this?

Their reinforcements would reach in at most ten days, at top speed and some luck, perhaps five days was sufficient. However, would the Kalise Empire really give him five to ten more days?

The answer was a clear no.

The next morning after the Kalise Empire armies had surrounded the Crescent City, they finally began their attack.

Zhou Weiqing and the others were actually still considered newbies in terms of commanding troops. Even for Yan Zhexi and the other top students in the Fei Li Military Academy, as they did not have any battle experience. When the enemy started attacking at dawn, the entire Crescent City walls was thrown in a bustle as everyone rushed around in reaction.

The Kalise Empire armies charged forward simultaneously from all four sides. Of course, the frontal assault was still the strongest. Just like the previous time, all of the siege weapons were focused on the south front. However, the other three sides were no longer fake attacks, each with a massive number of soldiers actually charging in.

Facing such a situation, Zhou Weiqing did not have Shangguan Xue'er and Tian'er stay on the front walls with him. The four sides were all being attacks, and each side needed a powerhouse to stabilize the core of their defense. Not just for morale purposes, but also to do their best to save the situation if possible. Furthermore, the Heavenly King assassin had been killed, so there was no need to gather all their powerhouses together.

As such, Tian'er, Shangguan Xue'er and Lei Zi were each

dispatched to one of other walls for defense, while Lin TianAo remained by Zhou Weiqing's side. The other powerhouse remaining at his side was also Xiao Yan.

Just like the previous time, besides the fifty Heavy Cavalry soldiers, Zhou Weiqing only kept two hundred Peerless Regiment archers on the front. Both Ma Qun and Crow had also been dispatched to the east and west walls respectively. Zhou Weiqing had sufficient confidence in himself. As long as the enemy did not have a Heavenly King stage powerhouse, he believed that with his strength, he could still hold on for some time.

After all, at such a level, just in terms of sustained fighting capability, who could compare to him with the Immortal Deity Technique and Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation?

In the distance, a large number of siege weapons were being pushed slowly to the front again. However, this time there was a notable exception of siege towers. Clearly, there had not been sufficient time to craft them. Even so, there were still fifty siege vehicles like the last time, as well as a few battering ram carts and trebuchets. This was already all of the siege weapons that the Kalise Empire could gather in such a short period of time.

To Zhou Weiqing's surprise, the soldiers standing on the Crescent City walls, even the new recruits... none of them revealed any nervous or fearful looks at all. Instead, many of them looked at Zhou Weiqing with a hint of excitement.

Zhou Weiqing did not realise that the previous time where his Hell's Angel had wrought such havoc, it had given him the unconditional trust of his soldiers. So what if their enemies came in the numbers? Our Boss can get rid of a few thousand with just a single Skill! No matter how many came, they were just ants! After all, they did not know much about the Heavenly Jewel Master world or Heavenly Emperors restrictions, as well as the warning he had received.

Especially when the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation and Dragon-Tiger Transformation appeared, along with the Overlord Bow with a faint icy mist around it. The morale of the Heavenly Bow Empire soldiers raised to a maximum.

Zhou Weiqing gave the order solemnly: “All ballista turrets, focus on the enemy siege vehicles. I do not need you to shoot quickly, but you must be accurate. Take down as many siege vehicles as you can.”

In Zhou Weiqing’s eyes, these siege vehicles were actually the greatest threat to the Crescent City. If they were allowed to continue transferring soldiers to the front of the city walls, it would greatly restrict the greatest power of the Peerless Regiment archers. As such, to him destroying the siege vehicles was of utmost importance.

There were four ballista turrets along each of the four walls. This was definitely one of the most powerful defensive siege weapons in the world, and each required eight soldiers to even draw the mechanism and properly man it. One load was seven of the ballista shot heavy arrows, each two metres long and with a thickness diameter of twenty centimetres. The ballista range easily reached a terrifying eight hundred yards, and the destructive power was definitely extremely high. No ordinary bow and arrow could match these. Of course, the shortcomings were obvious as well. Their weight was just too heavy, and could not be moved around, so they could only be used for siege defenses. Furthermore, they were extremely expensive to create, and took a long time to assemble as well. However, as long as their aim was good, it should not be too difficult to take down siege weapons.

The Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation glowed brightly below Zhou Weiqing’s feet, and the wings behind his back unfurled as a large amount of atmospheric energy swarmed towards him.

Pulling his Overlord Bow to a full crescent, Zhou Weiqing narrowed his eyes in focus. Instantly, he locked onto his first

target. Naturally, this time he dared not use his Saint Energy so easily.

In an instant, the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation under his feet which had been glowing in six different lights turned a full bluish purple.

He did not even need to nock any arrow, as a bluish purple arrow formed in position in his Overlord Bow.

A variant of his 'Flying Lightning God Technique' forming the arrow, and Zhou Weiqing's full concentration was on the further siege vehicle, almost one thousand five hundred yards from the Crescent City walls now. Even with his cultivation level, archery skills and the powerful Overlord Bow, this was already at the limit of his accuracy.

A shrill, ear-piercing screech covered the buzz of the bowstring releasing, and the bluish purple lightning that streaked across the skies only left a faint illusory light behind. The soldiers on the city walls nearby could clearly smell the faint burnt smell that the lightning left behind.

Wherever the illusory light passed, the very space and air around it was warped.

BOOM

The bluish purple light struck directly onto the siege vehicle targeted, one thousand five hundred yards away. The next instant, it exploded in a violent bang. From the city walls, they could even see a small mushroom cloud rise up in the distance. As for the siege vehicle, known for its frontal defense, it just disintegrated in the bluish purple light of the explosion.

Screams of agony rang out. For the Kalise soldiers in that siege vehicle, it was likely that more than half had perished instantly. The terrifying explosive power of the lightning strike caused broken limbs and flesh to fly up and around in the mushroom

cloud.

Cheers rang out from the Crescent City walls. Once again, Zhou Weiqing had brought them shock and awe. After all, a distance of one thousand five hundred yards, most ordinary people could barely see at such distance, and even an object the size of the siege vehicle would just be a small black dot far off. Yet, Zhou Weiqing had still managed to destroy one with just an arrow. What kind of accuracy, what kind of destructive power was that!

Zhou Weiqing let loose a breath as he stood on the city walls, the twenty five energy whirlpools at his Death Acupuncture Points whirling crazily and drawing energy. Behind his back, the wings also helped him draw more energy and his Heavenly Energy recovered at a rapid rate. The arrow just now had indeed used up a large amount of his Heavenly Energy, but with the assistance of his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, he did not worry at all.

Just two days ago, along with the recovery of his Heavenly Energy, Zhou Weiqing had finally broken through to his next cultivation stage. The Immortal Deity Technique had reached the next point, causing him to breakthrough his next barrier only three months after reaching the six-Jeweled stage, and his Heavenly Energy was now at the Heavenly Xu Energy stage.

This time, as he broke through, his Saint Energy had once again given Zhou Weiqing a pleasant surprise. As he broke through the next Death Acupuncture Point and his body was at its frailest state, the Saint Energy in his body had automatically reacted by forcing out a drop of Saint Energy, entering that particular Death Acupuncture Point, causing the energy whirlpool to form at a much faster speed. The intense pain that he used to have to endure was thus greatly diminished.

This also gave Zhou Weiqing an even greater understanding about the Saint Energy. Vaguely, he realised that the greatest use of the Saint Energy was perhaps in the word – Creation.

Without any hesitation, Zhou Weiqing drew his bow once more. The bluish purple light arrow formed again at the bowstring. His aim was to destroy as many siege vehicles as he could before the enemies reached the city.

The familiar shrill cry rang out once more. For this type of straightforward, single-lined shooting, even at such a great distance, Zhou Weiqing's archery and accuracy was absolutely a hundred percent.

Yet another explosion, and another siege vehicle was destroyed.

Zhou Weiqing did not spare his Heavenly Energy at all, firing five arrows one after the other. Just like that, five of the siege vehicles had been destroyed totally, along with a large number of Kalise soldiers in them.

However, just as Zhou Weiqing was about to shoot his sixth arrow, there was a sudden change in the situation.

In the distance, over a dozen figures suddenly charged to the front of the Kalise army. One of the figures at the front jumped up abruptly, a thick green light forming a blade, striking savagely onto the sixth arrow that Zhou Weiqing had shot out.

It had to be known that the speed of the arrow formed by Zhou Weiqing's 'Flying Lightning God Technique' was unbelievably quick. To be able to block it so accurately, this person's cultivation level was at least equal to or higher than Zhou Weiqing!

Another explosion rang out, and the figure that had blocked Zhou Weiqing's arrow was sent flying back. However, the siege vehicle had been saved.

On the city walls, Zhou Weiqing's eyes were dismal and dissatisfied. He did not continue firing any longer. After six arrows in succession, even for him with his various insane recovery rates, it wasn't sufficient to fully recover all his Heavenly Energy. It would be better for him to take a short break to recover for the

upcoming fight. After all, since the dozen figures had come to the front, they were clearly the Jewel Master powerhouses on the enemy's side. They had already successfully blocked an arrow, so it shouldn't be a surprise if they could block any others. Zhou Weiqing naturally did not want to waste time and energy on fruitless efforts.

“Prepare to fight!” Zhou Weiqing shouted out loud. Currently, the siege vehicle which had charged closest to the Crescent City was only about a thousand yards from them.

Currently, Zhou Weiqing's eyes were cold. One could just imagine how much pressure the Heavenly Bow side were in for this battle, and as their commander, the stress he was facing was definitely the greatest.

The Kalise Empire army had held back for so long to gather everything into their favour. Today's fight, they would definitely be going all out. If they could repulse the Kalise forces today, it would definitely be an important step in enduring and surviving until their reinforcements. However, towards this point, even Zhou Weiqing did not have absolute confidence.

I've just been too careless! Zhou Weiqing admonished himself. He had not imagined that after they had entered the original Heavenly Bow Empire lands for such a short period of time, the Kalise Empire would place such importance on them and actually respond with such a huge show of force so quickly. Such a scenario did not even give him a chance to gather his own Peerless Regiment here, throwing back his plans dramatically and putting them in danger now.

Still, there were still advantages and disadvantages to this. If they were just destroyed here by the Kalise Empire, then there was nothing else to speak of about the situation. However, if they could actually dig in and really hold on against the Kalise Empire long enough for their reinforcements to arrive, with the full power of the Peerless Regiment, he was confident in destroying these

several tens of thousands of Kalise soldiers.

From the overall strength of the Kalise Empire, even if they had been taking great efforts in conscription and recruitment in the past few years, their total army numbers should not be much more than a Legion. If they could destroy all fifty thousand soldiers here, along with the Sixth Regiment that Zhou Weiqing had crippled previously, it could be said that almost half of their army would be totally destroyed here.

Chapter 203 Peerless! (2)

If that truly happened, it would undoubtedly be a major step in the process of the revival of his homeland. The entire Heavenly Bow Empire lands would be relatively open to him as the Kalise Empire's forces would be greatly reduced. It could be said that in just this short period of time, Zhou Weiqing would be expending all his efforts to recover at least half of his empire's original lands. This would definitely be a great advantage to him... if he could succeed and survive.

As such, to Zhou Weiqing, and to the Heavenly Bow Empire, this was probably the most important battle for a long time to come. Once they succeeded, even if the Kalise Empire sent more troops, they would likely have to shrink back into the area around the Heavenly Bow City and have a standoff with Zhou Weiqing.

Towards this, Zhou Weiqing was already very clear, having thought through all the various possible scenarios in the past few days. As such, no matter what, he did not choose to retreat and would go all out to hold off the enemy.

In truth, with Zhou Weiqing and his Peerless Regiment forces, if they wanted to escape from the Crescent City, it would be easy for them to breakthrough any encirclement. However, he would never do such a thing. If he escaped, he would lose all credibility and the heart of the populace. In the future, if he wanted to regain the support of the populace, especially that of the Crescent City and the nearby citizens, it would be just too difficult.

Furthermore, there were still five thousand logistic troops in the Crescent City that the Fei Li Empire had sent to them. How could he just abandon them like that? If he really did so, perhaps the alliance with the Fei Li Empire would just be broken like that.

Lastly, if the Kalise Empire side actually took back the Crescent City, they would definitely fortify it and station a large number of

troops there. It would be many times the trouble for them to take it back again once all that occurred, and things could possibly be even tougher.

Although Zhou Weiqing was not too experienced at commanding troops, he definitely knew that defending a city was a totally different concept from sieging and invading a city. For the attacking side, if they did not have three times the power as the defense, it would be tough to succeed, and the losses in doing so would definitely be high. Instead, now that they were on the defending side, it would also be a good opportunity to destroy as many enemies as they could. Of course, this chance was also pushing himself onto the barbeque pit to cook, and whether or not he could succeed would depend on his own capabilities.

The enemy grew closer and closer. The Kalise Empire armies were definitely very careful in the attacking process. Besides the siege vehicles and other siege weapons at the front, right behind him at the vanguard of the entire force were all heavy infantry soldiers. Although a large number of them had been slain during their first attempt, they still numbered more than a thousand five hundred. As they marched forward, they held their massive tower shields layered upon one another, slow and steady in formation. At their backs, the Heavy Cavalry soldiers were also arranged in a powerful defensive formation.

With the thickness of those tower shields, even the Peerless Regiment archers and their Consolidated Bows would have a tough time piercing through.

As the enemy advanced to a thousand yard radius, by now Zhou Weiqing was starting to feel the pressure on him increase. They could already see the enemy clearly, and that the trebuchets were filled with stones. Although those weapons could only be useful at the two hundred yard range, but if they truly got into action, then it would be a disaster, especially for the ordinary Heavenly Bow soldiers on the walls.

“Peerless Air Force, prepare yourselves to rise up with me. Ready your javelins!” Zhou Weiqing gritted his teeth and finally made the decision. He could not allow these enemies to reach the foot of the city walls and attack them at will. With the protection of the siege vehicles and other weaponry, it was hard for the Peerless Regiment archers to unleash their true power. Once the actual siege began, the numerical advantage of their enemies was just too great, and there were barely over a thousand men on this side of the wall, how could they possibly take care of every inch easily? He had to take down the heavy armoured troops first, and especially take care of the siege weapons, or at least slow them down greatly. Only then could the Peerless Regiment archers be of greater use in fighting off the enemy.

“Come with me!” As he shouted out loud, the wings behind Zhou Weiqing’s back unfurled. His entire body soared into the air like a cannonball, and he passed the command of the remaining soldiers to Lin TianAo at his side.

To the shock of the entire battlefield, the two hundred Peerless Regiment soldiers also released their Consolidated Wings simultaneously. Just like two hundred rays of light, they surged up into the skies.

When the Kalise Empire armies saw the sight, their first reaction was that the Heavenly Bow Empire soldiers had gone crazy! Were they just jumping off the walls like that?

However, the next instant, their jaws dropped. That was because the two hundred figures did not fall to the ground like they imagined, instead each and everyone of them had wings appear behind their backs, sending them soaring into the skies.

Zhou Weiqing’s eyes flashed with a cold light. Facing such a major battle, his emotions immediately calmed down. His character was the sort that would explode into his true potential the greater the stress he faced. Currently, in his heart, it was as if a huge ball of fire was burning. Strangely, he did not feel any fear.

All along, he had always been the kid who feared death, but when his heart was burning with righteous fury, he was always the craziest. This... this was the bloodline of Admiral Zhou that he had inherited!

Under the leadership of Zhou Weiqing, the two hundred Peerless Regiment Air Force soldiers disappeared above into black dots. By the time the Kalise Empire soldiers reacted and wanted to shoot at them with arrows, it was far too late and they were beyond range. Any ordinary longbow would only be accurate or have the force behind it at a range of two to four hundred yards. Yet, in just a matter of moments, the Peerless Air Force had already soared to a height of over five hundred yards.

Not a single Kalise Empire powerhouse rose up to follow them. Taking aside the fact whether or not they had Consolidated Wings or the ability to fly, just looking at the sight in front of them, they were just too startled and frightened to do so.

As Jewel Masters, they knew more than any ordinary soldiers what these two hundred flying soldiers actually meant. To have Consolidated Wings... that meant they were the very least two-Jeweled Physical Jewel Masters.

Perhaps in the eyes of the powerhouses, a two-Jeweled Jewel Master was nothing. However, that was such a numerical difference! Two hundred Jewel Masters! What kind of notion was that? Even the entire Kalise Empire did not have two hundred Jewel Masters in total. Even for larger empires like the Bai Da Empire or Fei Li Empire, two hundred Jewel Masters was already a considerable amount. As the saying goes, sometimes a quantitative change can result in a qualitative change. So many Jewel Masters together... the offensive and destructive power on the battlefield could just be imagined.

Just as the Kalise troops were staring, stunned, a patch of fine black dots suddenly descended from the skies.

The throwing javelins of the Peerless Regiment had been changed and improved many times over. When they first started, the throwing javelins were just a smaller version of the normal javelins and lances. However, after many versions and repeated improvements, there was truly a major difference by now.

For the current throwing javelins that the Peerless Regiment Air Force was using, the entire front third of it was a tapered spike, fully crafted from titanium alloy. Although the weight was light, it was extremely tough and durable, with a powerful piercing effect. As for the remaining two thirds, they were far thicker and tougher, in order to increase the total weight.

At the end of the javelins, there was a cross-shaped tail fin. This was to ensure that as the javelins fell from the skies, they would be balanced to remain facing tip first, and not skew or deviate from their path.

Chapter 204 Bloody Battle in Crescent City!

(1)

The benefit of throwing javelins like this was that even if they didn't use much strength, the sheer weight, the balance of the tail fin, and the piercing power of the titanium tip would mean an overall terrifying downward piercing thrust.

Originally, when they completed research and development on these throwing javelins, the goal was to reduce the Heavenly Energy expenditure of the Peerless Air Force. After all, though they were all Jewel Masters, their cultivation level was still not considered very high yet. Just maintaining flight with their Consolidated Wings alone was no small consumption. With these javelins, they could still ensure their killing power even while saving as much Heavenly Energy as possible.

Currently, the large patch of black dots descending down upon the Kalise soldiers were naturally the javelins that had been thrown down. Their targets were simple – the Kalise Heavy Infantry and Heavy Cavalry in the front.

The Heavy Infantry subconsciously reacted swiftly, raising the tower shields in their hands. As for the Heavy Cavalry, though their reactions were just as quick, they could only use the small round shields bound to their left hands.

Throwing javelins down from a height of five hundred yards was definitely not the same as shooting arrows, and naturally accuracy suffered. However, one could not dismiss the fact of their sheer numbers! Two hundred javelins raining down, and the enemy formation was so tightly packed. Even if they wanted to miss, it would be extremely difficult.

PuuPuuPuuPuu A series of grating, harsh and horrific sounds rang out, along with screams of agony that were often cut off abruptly.

The Heavy Infantry soldiers were relatively okay. Even facing such powerful javelins, their tower shields were barely able to hold on. Although the javelins were able to pierce through the shields, by the time they did so the remaining force was much smaller, with only the front titanium tip able to pierce through. Besides a few that were unlucky enough to have it land directly at their head and killing them, most of them only received minor injuries.

Alas, for the Heavy Cavalry soldiers, misery befell them. The small round shields in their hands, how could they possibly withstand the javelins thrown from a height of five hundred yards! Clouds of bloody mist rose from the backs of the horses as the soldiers were lanced right through, some even piercing right through the human and deep into their warhorses.

Although their heavy armour weighed at least twenty jin, with those terrifying javelins that were thrown from such a height, the armour was torn through like paper, not having any use at all.

Originally, each of the Peerless Regiment Air Force soldiers were equipped with six throwing javelins, and after several volleys of such javelin rain, several dozens of Heavy Infantry soldiers had fallen, while the Heavy Cavalry was nearly wiped out.

Furthermore, having prepared for this battle for so long, how could Zhou Weiqing still leave his men with only six throwing javelins? Out of the two hundred Peerless Air Force soldiers, there were at least ten Spatial Rings, filled with large numbers of javelins. From just a rough estimate, they had at least two thousand more.

The owners of the rings did not even need to pass them to the other warriors, only needing to toss the javelins down as soon as they took them out of the Spatial Rings. The javelins would automatically fall down tip first, still resulting in the terrifying piercing effect.

Zhou Weiqing remained floating in midair. He was actually the

busiest one of all. Right by his side, there was a member of the Peerless Air Force with one of the Spatial Rings, specially passing him javelins one after the other. In fact, the several dozen Heavy Infantry soldiers that had been killed were mostly all slain by him. He did not even need to use Heavenly Energy, just using his powerful natural strength and accuracy of throwing... how could their tower shields hold out against him?

By the time the Kalise Empire soldiers advanced another two hundred yards, the two Battalions of Heavy Cavalry had been wiped out. More than a hundred Heavy Infantry soldiers had also lost their lives.

At this point, Zhou Weiqing stopped the others from wasting their javelins, ordering them to 'gift' their final throws to the mass of infantry behind. As for himself, after taking a few more lives of the Heavy Infantry soldiers, he gathered his Air Force to return to the city walls.

Cheers erupted like a volcano's explosion, all around the Crescent City walls. In just this burst of attacks, more than two thousand Kalise Empire soldiers had died. More importantly, most of those were the most elite and 'expensive' Heavy Cavalry soldiers! One could imagine the current expression on the Kalise Empire Army Commander.

"Boss, let us go again. Even if we just bring some rocks, we can smash those fellows to bits." One of the Peerless Regiment soldiers said excitedly.

A notion rose its head in Zhou Weiqing's heart, but he shook his head and said: "No, all your Heavenly Energy is not sufficient. Especially when the load is too heavy, the expenditure of Heavenly Energy is just too huge for you. Hurry up and recover your Heavenly Energy. Prepare to start shooting. I want all of you to focus on the soldiers who are manning the siege weapons. Your goal is to stop them all before they reach five hundred yards from the city walls."

The Peerless Regiment First Main Company was the strongest elites of the entire Regiment, and their members all had ranges absolutely accurate up to eight hundred yards. After Zhou Weiqing gave his orders and arranged everything, he immediately went to look for two massive rocks, grabbing them as he flew up into the skies once more.

These rocks were part of a collection of fallen logs and rocks that were prepared for use in dealing with enemies who came closer. With that reminder from the Peerless Regiment soldier earlier, Zhou Weiqing flew up with the two giant rocks. Naturally, his targets now were the trebuchets.

Soon, the Kalise soldiers below could only stare in shock as two trebuchets were just smashed into smithereens by the two giant rocks. It had to be known that they only had a total of eight trebuchets for this entire battle!

However, when Zhou Weiqing returned to the city walls and rose again with another batch of rocks, he no longer had the opportunity to repeat his feat once again. The Kalise Empire powerhouses were not there just to look pretty, especially since most of them were not even from the Kalise Empire, but from the Bai Da Empire. This time, they worked together to block the falling rocks, protecting the trebuchets.

Foiled once more, Zhou Weiqing could only return to the city walls. He was not at all excited by their achievements thus far, as he knew that this was only the beginning. The hidden aces that he had were slowly being flipped open, but the attack of the enemy was only just beginning.

Just on this frontal assault on the south wall, the Kalise Empire still had at least twenty thousand soldiers. For just a small city, once their attack actually started, it would be wave after wave crashing against them. Furthermore, if the giant battering ram cart actually reached the gates, how long could the weak gates of the Crescent City hold out?

Come then! Zhou Weiqing yelled in his heart. At this moment, he suddenly thought about how the Kalise Empire had invaded his homeland, and how his father had fought to the end, almost sacrificing his life to Seal the Royal Palace. His eyes turned red slowly. The true battle was about to begin.

The Peerless Regiment archers began to display their true strength. They began to focus on firing at those soldiers that were pushing the various siege weapons. At this point, they did not even need to use their Consolidated Bows, each using their personal longbows, causing the movement of the siege weapons to drop dramatically.

However, the Kalise Empire commander also reacted quickly. They still had more than a thousand Heavy Infantry soldiers remaining, and they quickly stepped forward with their tower shields to protect the soldiers pushing the siege weapons. Once again, the siege weapons resumed their slow march towards the city walls.

From the vision up on the city walls, at least fifty sets of sieging ladders were prepared right behind the rest of the siege weapons. Once they all reached the two hundred yard range, the true offense would begin.

“Summon your Consolidated Bows. Fire!” Zhou Weiqing shouted angrily. The enemies had finally reached the five hundred yard range. At this moment, it was time to show another ace. It was imperative that these siege weapons were stopped!

Once again, the Peerless Regiment soldiers showed their power. The Consolidated Bows sprang into existence one after the other in bright light. Soon, the earsplitting sounds rang out explosively as they fired as one.

The tower shields of the Heavy Infantry truly had an amazing defense. Even with the explosive effect of the Consolidated Bows, they still weren't able to destroy them with a single shot. However,

the explosive effect was still stunning, able to knock them back or even send them flying.

For a time, the Heavy Infantry soldiers at the front were under great pressure. The explosive power of the arrows caused their neat formation to stumble and be thrown into disarray. Furthermore, for some of the skilled Peerless Regiment archers, their Consolidated Bows did not have the explosive effect, instead with a powerful piercing effect. The arrows that these fired out were not stopped by the tower shields, each claiming a life upon hitting.

At this point, the defensive line that had been the sturdy bedrock of the Kalise soldiers finally suffered a catastrophic loss. With the Peerless Regiment soldiers no longer sparing their Heavenly Energy, the remaining thousand Heavy Infantry soldiers all perished by the time the formation reached the three hundred yard mark.

Three hundred yards. At last, the Kalise Empire soldiers began to come into range to return fire as well, and a large number of arrows began flying up in an arc towards the city. In such a large scale battle, there weren't many soldiers who could be as accurate in their archery as the Peerless Regiment soldiers. However, they just had too great of numbers, and they just needed to shoot upwards in an arc towards the Crescent City walls.

A large patch of arrows fell upon them. The Peerless Regiment archers and Heavy Cavalry were naturally not afraid due to their armour, but for the ordinary soldiers, the injuries and death were starting to add up. Although they were all equipped with shields, they were after all still fresh recruits with minimal training! Facing such a battle, how could panic not ensue?

Bang*Boom*Bang*Boom* The ballista turrets on the walls also began their fire. One by one, the siege vehicles were smashed apart by the heavy bolts of the ballista. Although they weren't as effective as Zhou Weiqing's previous arrows, even down to killing

the soldiers within, but at least the main goal of taking down the siege vehicles had been met. For a time, the death toll on the Kalise side continued rising higher.

Out of the fifty siege vehicles at the start, the number which had actually reached the three hundred yard range now was only about twenty or so. Just from that alone, one could imagine how crazy the fight for the Crescent City had been thus far.

However, by this point, a large majority of Zhou Weiqing's hidden aces had already been revealed. Yet, there were still six more trebuchets, and they were closing in soon. The remaining siege weaponry were also reaching soon.

This was especially so for the giant battering ram cart, the lumbering giant which seemed to be the next greatest threat soon. Those things were just too huge, and Zhou Weiqing had tried using a massive rock to smash one earlier, but it did not have a big effect. It seemed to difficult to destroy them outright. At this point, Zhou Weiqing did not dare to spend too much Heavenly Energy. After all, those Kalise Empire powerhouses were not to be trifled with, and when the actual onslaught began, they would charge forth as well. On his own side, there was only Lin TianAo and Xiao Yan who could help him deal with those powerhouses, so it could be said that the majority of enemies had to be dealt by Zhou Weiqing.

As such, standing on the city walls, Zhou Weiqing could only continuously fire arrows with his Overlord Bow at the Heavy Infantry soldiers, not even using much Heavenly Energy. At such a range, even his ordinary arrows were not so easily blocked.

It wasn't just the Heavy Infantry soldiers who suffered. Even some of the Kalise powerhouses who tried to charge forward were sent on a retreat by Zhou Weiqing's Overlord Bow.

Since the fight had already reached such a point, it was already infinitely close to the most savage and ruthless point, hand to hand combat. It wasn't just the frontal south wall though, all the other

three walls of the Crescent city were also facing the frenzied attacks of their respective enemies.

Currently, this Crescent City was just the first stop in Zhou Weiqing's revival of his Empire, and just like a boat in the torrential winds of the fifty thousand Kalise Empire armies, on the verge of capsizing at anytime.

Chapter 204 Bloody Battle in Crescent City!

(2)

Closer... closer... closer... As the siege vehicles entered the two hundred yard range, so did the trebuchets, which were already primed and ready.

BangBangBangBangBangBang

Six Trebuchets. Almost as one, they launched their loads with an angry roar. The trebuchets did not launch a single large rock, instead each of them having six decent sized rocks. As they were flung up into the air in an arc, all in the same direction but spreading out as they flew. For these rocks, thrown at a distance of two hundred yards, even ordinary Heavy Cavalry soldiers would be severely wounded or even killed if struck.

The greatest weakness of the trebuchet was its accuracy. For the first volley, the majority of the rocks smashed ineffectually onto the city walls, causing a round of explosions. However, just the small percentage that actually hit the top of the walls managed to take the lives of eight ordinary Heavenly Bow Empire soldiers.

This was time for the show of the Peerless Regiment Heavy Cavalry once more. Out of all the soldiers, these rocks from the trebuchets posed the least threat to them. For a time, the large spiked maces or giant battle axes waved in the air, and any of the large rocks that came near them were smashed into bits instantly.

F**k your sister! Zhou Weiqing screamed angrily in his heart. All around his body, a bluish purple light burst forth as he nocked another arrow. This time, his arrow was not shot at any particular target, instead towards the skies. Instantly, along with a chain of explosions, a large patch of lightning struck down from the skies, fully enveloping the six trebuchets. Immediately, many of the soldiers in charge of reloading the trebuchets fell to the ground.

Thousand Lightning Strikes.

The destructive power of this Skill was not strong, definitely not sufficient to destroy the trebuchets. However, it was enough to disable the Kalise Empire soldiers who were manning it. Left with no choice, Zhou Weiqing could only use such a method to delay the attacks from the trebuchets.

However, since the Kalise soldiers had reached the two hundred yards, they could also begin their actual charge. No matter how skillful the Peerless Regiment soldiers were, they only numbered two hundred. Facing the charge of several thousands at once, even with their firing rates they could only take down a portion of enemies. They could only watch as the rest of the Kalise Empire armies charged to the walls despite their best efforts.

One by one, siege climbing ladders were placed onto the walls as soldiers scrambled to climb up. Right behind them, the plodding giant battering ram cart still moved on, advancing slowly and steadily like an unstoppable force.

This was the first time Zhou Weiqing truly felt the terror of the battlefield. No matter how powerful he was individually, he still could not take care of everything that was happening. When he tried to deal with the trebuchets, the battering ram cart moved on unimpeded. Even the delay on the trebuchets did not last long, as more soldiers ran forward to continue reloading them. Taking a deep breath, a thick purplish black light began to gather crazily about him, and with an explosive shout, Zhou Weiqing flew up once more.

Ten days ago, the purplish black light which had shocked everyone, taking thousands of lives instantly, it appeared once more. When the six giant wings spread out and the illusory light spread across the entire field with the oppressive pressure... the charging Kalise soldiers suddenly stalled, stunned.

All of a sudden, some of the soldiers just turned and ran, not even

caring about their orders. In their haste to flee, they did not even care about their siege ladders, just dumping them on the ground in the sudden trample of movement.

This was something that Zhou Weiqing did not expect. The fear the Hell's Angel caused even before he unleashed it was actually at such a level.

For the first time since the battle had started, a cold smile flashed across Zhou Weiqing's face. However, it was not one of happiness, but one filled with a cold killing intent.

This time, the Hell's Angel Skill did not show any signs of coming to life. Naturally, Zhou Weiqing did not dare to infuse Saint Energy within once more, and it was just an ordinary Skill that was close to the Heavenly God Tier stage. A thick darkness aura welled up, and with the powerful control of his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, the terrifying skill that had been stored into his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation was not transformed into a purplish black arrow nocked to his Overlord Bow.

Above Zhou Weiqing's head, the illusory figure of the Hell's Angel flapped its wings hard, and along with the explosive release of the Overlord Bow and the shrill screech, the arrow flew towards the trebuchets.

This time, none of the Kalise powerhouses dared to block it. When they saw the image of the Hell's Angel above Zhou Weiqing's head, they had been scared silly. After all, it was just too similar to what had happened ten days ago, and they did not even care to be curious why the Heavenly Emperor on the Heavenly Bow Empire side would actually dare to break the rules again. The powerhouses were the ones who fled the fastest, and within moments they were back at the end of the army lines.

One could clearly see that currently, all of the Kalise soldiers who had been charging forward were now retreating like the waves which had crashed upon a shore. Indeed! Who would be willing to

withstand the terrifying force of nature they had witnessed ten days ago?!

Even Zhou Weiqing did not realise the awe and deterrent power his Hell's Angel Skill suddenly had. In that moment, he felt laughter almost bubbling up to the front. Without question, as the enemy started retreating, the pressure on their defense was greatly reduced.

Boom

Once again the explosive effect of the Overlord Bow caused another violent detonation. Next, the six trebuchets were totally swallowed by the purplish grey swirls of air that rose from the very earth, the terrifying corrosive nature and destructive power causing the six trebuchets to disintegrate into thin air. Some of the slower Kalise Empire soldiers who did not flee in time were also swallowed up.

Once again, the Kalise Empire soldiers were stunned silly, but this time for a totally different reason. Indeed, the Hell's Angel Skill of Zhou Weiqing's was extremely powerful, and the area of effect was not small at all; otherwise it couldn't have swallowed all six trebuchets at once. However, when compared to the horrifying image ten days ago and the deep impression it left, this current Hell's Angel was like child's play! The Hell's Angel that had been brought to life was just at a whole different level, and the force that defied nature did not appear once more. However, by the time they realised it, the Kalise forces had already retreated back past the three hundred yard range.

With that, the Peerless Regiment soldiers on the wall burst out laughing at the sight. They did not hesitate to make full use of the opportunity, arrow after arrow chasing after their enemies' butts, and wave after wave of Kalise soldiers fell like wheat harvested in the fields.

From the start of the battle until now, out of the twenty

thousand Kalise soldiers on this front, at least three thousand would never witness the dawn tomorrow. In stark contrast, the Heavenly Bow Empire had only lost a few dozen soldiers. Such a huge difference in death and wounded could only be found in a siege battle.

The Kalise Empire army command were no fools, after a short moment of shock, they immediately reacted. Indeed! Since the Heavenly Bow Empire had already received strong warnings, how could they possibly dare to use the same terrifying Skill again? Instantly, a series of strict orders were issued again, and only then did the Kalise soldiers barely stabilize and begin to turn back, charging back towards the Crescent City once more.

However, in just the matter of retreating and returning, the Kalise had left behind another thousand or so corpses before they reached the city walls again. The Peerless Regiment soldiers were all godly archers, and they might not be able to take down the Heavy Infantry soldiers in the front, but that did not stop them from focusing on the backlines. Furthermore, there were still the ballista turrets. In the extra time given, it was sufficient for four more salvos from them. Once again, they focused on the siege vehicles, and by now only a dozen or so actually remained fully intact.

However, despite all of the success, this also spelled the end of some of the main defensive advantages of the Crescent City. The true siege had begun, and once again siege ladders were thrown against the wall, arrows flying up and towards them like swarms of locusts.

Without a doubt, the destruction of the trebuchets meant they were facing much less pressure, but the waves of attacks from their enemies were just as crazy as before.

The Heavy Infantry soldiers had accomplished their goals. Actually attacking the walls were not their forte indeed, as climbing would be difficult. As such, they slowly moved back to

continue escorting other Kalise soldiers to charge to the front once more.

On top of the city walls, the piles of fallen logs and large rocks which had been prepared over the past months were now put to good use, thrown down to smash into the climbing foes. This also caused many casualties on the Kalise side. However, there were elites mixed within those soldiers, especially some of the powerhouses who had reached the front along with the ordinary soldiers. Although the Heavy Cavalry soldiers were still pushing down and destroying ladder after ladder, they just couldn't take care of the entire section of wall.

As soon as the enemies reached the top of the walls, the arrows of the Peerless Regiment soldiers would no longer be as effective, and they would have to resort to hand to hand combat. Still, their effectiveness had proven itself. More than four thousand enemies had fallen by the time the first Kalise soldier reached the top of the walls, and this was under the fact that they still had a large number of siege weapons

The Peerless Regiment only numbered seven hundred in total, and on this wall alone, Zhou Weiqing and his men only totalled two hundred and fifty. With just this two hundred and fifty core of elite soldiers, they had actually already managed to kill a total of more than ten times their number. For any defending army, that was already something to be proud of.

However, despite all their resistance, their enemies had still reached the top of the wall. At this moment, the terrifying combat prowess of the Heavy Cavalry soldiers truly came into play.

The fifty Peerless Heavy Cavalry soldiers were spread out along the wall, so thinly spread that there was only one of them every hundred metres. However, as soon as any enemy broke through the barricade and reached the top of the walls, the destructive force of the Heavy Cavalry soldiers would greet them.

This was especially so for the Berserker Tribe warriors, whose performance stood out strikingly. In terms of destructive powers, perhaps they were slightly inferior to the Gold Crow Tribe members; after all the large spiked maces and massive battle axes could not be compared in terms of destructive power.

However, the length of the spiked maces were far beyond the battle axes, and these Berserker Tribe members who had inherited a hint of the ancient Titan Bloodlines, they all stood even taller with a startling arm reach. Even if they stood there unmoving, the pair of supreme spiked maces in their hands could reach an area of more than a dozen square metres. As long as enemies climbed up to the city walls, before they could take action, a terrifying blow would greet them.

From below the city, it was an even scarier sight. For those Kalise soldiers, they could clearly see their fellow soldiers who had painstakingly climbed all the way to the top, and within moments, it was as if an entire cart had slammed into them, their bodies exploding out from the city walls and smashed several dozen metres away before falling to the ground. Before they could even land on the ground, they were already mangled corpses.

The Peerless Heavy Cavalry stood there on the city walls, just like gods of war. Unmoving bedrocks of the defense which could not fall. As for the rest of the Peerless Regiment archers, they had long since switched to long spears, and for some time at least, they were still barely able to hold their own and defend the city walls. However, they no longer had any excess energy or time to spare with regards to the enemies outside the wall.

When the enemies had reached the city walls, Zhou Weiqing had instantly changed his weapon. Although the Overlord Bow was powerful, it was no longer important now that they were climbing up. The most important thing now was to stop them from actually overwhelming the top of the walls.

The two Legendary Hammers in hand, the rest of his 'Hate

Ground no Handle' Legendary Set worn around him, along with the Dragon-Tiger Transformation and the wings behind his back. Where there was the most enemies, Zhou Weiqing would appear there, slaughtering countless numbers of enemies. Even he did not know how many he had killed, having lost count long ago, and before his eyes was just a sea of red.

Chapter 204 Bloody Battle in Crescent City!

(3)

In any war, the most horrifying part was when both sides were fully embroiled in hand to hand combat. Once that happened, it was usually a matter of only one side surviving. Furthermore, the Kalise armies had expended so much to actually charge up the city walls, and this was their greatest chance. If they actually retreated to recover and try again, wouldn't that mean an even greater loss? As such, the Kalise Empire commander had given the death order. No matter what the cost, they had to take the Crescent City today!

In a full scale, mass battle, Zhou Weiqing's combat effectiveness was definitely terrifying. No one would believe he was just a six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master from all he had done.

It could be said that for the entire section of the wall, nearly a third of it was covered by Zhou Weiqing alone. The dual Legendary Hammers in his hands were like cannon turrets, constantly spitting out large amounts of lightning pearls, which spread out to knock down countless of enemies.

With the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, Zhou Weiqing could maintain such attacks for a long time, but the Kalise army would not give him the chance to keep doing so. In that moment, more than a dozen figures appeared on the city walls like the wind, all directed at Zhou Weiqing. All of them could tell how important Zhou Weiqing was to the Heavenly Bow Empire, and as long as they could kill him, there would be no longer any suspense about the outcome of the war. Even if they could not kill him, they could at least prevent him from attacking their ordinary troops.

When the over dozen figures appeared on the city walls, the pressure the frontal wall was under increased greatly. The reason was simple, the Bai Da Regiment had finally joined the battle. They had treated the Kalise soldiers like cannon fodder, and now that

they had reached the city walls, they had also begun their own attacks.

Although the Bai Da Regiment had lost their Heavy Cavalry soldiers and a large number of Heavy Infantry soldiers, their ordinary infantry soldiers' fighting capabilities were already far beyond that of the Kalise Empire soldiers.

Even for their ordinary light infantry soldiers, these Bai Da Empire fighters had a full set of leather equipment and helmet, even their left hands had a small round shield buckled on.

This allowed them to have a greater survivability on the battlefield, not to mention their better training. Furthermore, the officers of the Bai Da Empire were all Jewel Masters, and for their Company Leaders and above, they had to be at least a two-Jeweled Physical Jewel Master or higher. Battalion Commanders and above had to be Heavenly Jewel Masters.

With these powerhouses joining the fight, the pressure the Peerless Regiment faced instantly increased.

Firstly, the fresh recruits of the Heavenly Bow Empire were being injured or even killed rapidly. Although they had been given basic training, and with Zhou Weiqing's actions and words inspiring them to bloodlust and they were just giving it their all, but they were still fresh recruits with no real combat experience. Unfortunately, facing the crazed onslaught of their enemies, these fresh recruits were the first to perish.

On the frontal wall, there were only a total of a thousand fresh recruits, and under such a circumstance, the injury and death toll began to rise. Only those luckier ones who were right beside the Peerless Regiment warriors were saved.

At this moment, the rest of the Peerless Regiment soldiers also showed their considerable fighting abilities.

By now, the two hundred Peerless Regiment archers had

morphed into close combat fighters. Not long after this bloody battle began, they started to truly feel so much gratitude for their beloved drillmaster Shanggaun Fei'er. It was her merciless training and spurring that had given them their current skill in hand to hand combat.

All of the Peerless Regiment soldiers were dressed in titanium mail, light, flexible but extremely tough. Ordinary arrows, swords and sabres could not harm them easily. This allowed them to fight on without too many distractions. Furthermore, all of them were Jewel Masters. To be able to enter the First Main Company, they were at least four-Jeweled Physical Jewel Masters or higher. Even if a lot of their Heavenly Energy had been expended earlier with their Consolidated Wings and Consolidated Bows, as Jewel Masters their physique, physical attributes and even toughness were far beyond any ordinary soldiers.

In the hands of the Peerless Regiment soldiers, the long spears thrust, pierced, flick, dodged, all the various simple yet effective techniques working wonders in their hands. Even for the Bai Da Empire soldiers, none could last around them. Almost every time they took action, the Peerless Regiment soldiers could severely injure or kill an enemy, and already a large number of enemy troops had been sent off the wall.

Melee combat had barely started for more than fifteen minutes, and the Peerless Regiment soldiers, including the Heavy Cavalry soldiers were all drenched in blood. However, none of them were injured yet, and they even had to intervene or take blows to protect the fresh recruits beside them. It was their powerful presence and performance that kept the Crescent City from falling there and then.

Without a doubt, the pressure that Zhou Weiqing was under was the greatest. Lin TianAo and Xiao Yan had both been dispatched by him to protect the other sides of their wall. Currently, more than a dozen Bai Da Empire Heavenly Jewel Masters were surrounding

Zhou Weiqing on his side of the wall. This was a war, not an arena fight, and there was no such thing as being 'fair' on the battlefield. As soon as these Heavenly Jewel Masters appeared atop the wall, they instantly surrounded Zhou Weiqing and began attacking crazily together.

BANG

The crying-face hammer savagely smashed one of the Bai Da Heavenly Jewel Masters into meat paste, but at the same time, Zhou Weiqing had to take blows from two enemies at his back.

With the wings behind his back, Zhou Weiqing's speed was extremely fast. However, amongst the surrounding Bai Da Empire Heavenly Jewel Masters, two of them were at the eight-Jeweled cultivation level, while the rest were at least four Jewel or higher, with some six and seven Jeweled respectively. This force gathered together was definitely a formidable one.

Despite his speed and agility, Zhou Weiqing could not dodge everything and still go on the offensive. As such, he had done his best, accepting the hits from the weakest four-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Masters, while forcefully killing one of the six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Masters.

At this point, Zhou Weiqing's tremendous physique and constitution proved its true use in actual combat.

As the two four-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Masters struck Zhou Weiqing, they felt as if his body was just like a tough and flexible rubber. Not only did their attacks seem to lose strength immediately, there was a return counter-force.

Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing's body was surrounded by lightning, and his Dual Legendary Hammers continued to constantly spit out large amounts of lightning pearls which spread out in the area, causing the Bai Da Empire powerhouses to have to react to them. This barely allowed him to hold his on for now, but Zhou Weiqing had definitely been contained by his foes, and would not be able to

affect the rest of the battle.

More and more enemies climbed up the walls, and the stacks of corpses piled up there was already so much that there was barely space for more to stand.

The Bai Da and Kalise soldiers that climbed up the walls after were forced to actually clear some of their fallen comrades before they could continue fighting.

The intensity and viciousness of the fight far surpassed the expectations on both sides. For Zhou Weiqing's side, he had never imagined that the Kalise Empire would be so resolute in their efforts to take down the Crescent City, and to bring so many forces into play now. There were no probing attacks or exploratory moves like he had expected, instead this all-in attack with more than fifty thousand soldiers. The sheer amount of resources and powerhouses channeled into this was astonishing. Although Zhou Weiqing knew that the frontal assault was the toughest, he could imagine that the other three walls were also facing their own uphill battles.

At this point, there was no time for regrets, nor was there any meaning in doing so. All they could do was to fight, to put everything on the line and fight. There was no chance left to retreat, as everyone was full of bloodlust. Now, it was kill or be killed.

As for the Kalise Empire side, they had never imagined that this tiny force of Heavenly Bow Empire soldiers would actually cause them so much trouble, so many casualties. Unlike the various other Heavenly Bow rebellions that they had quelled, the Peerless Regiment's terrifying combat abilities had just caused them far too much death and losses.

...

The battle raged on from dawn all the way to high noon, and the city walls were bathed in a river of blood.

The Peerless Regiment soldiers were still hanging on. However, even their titanium mail was mostly in tatters, not a single piece of their armour was fully intact. Although their wounds were not serious, the remaining fresh recruits by their side had dropped drastically.

Of course, the death toll on their enemies were far greater, and none of the Peerless Regiment soldiers actually knew how many they had killed. All they could see before them was a spread of blood red.

The Peerless Regiment soldiers might have the best training, the best equipment, being powerful Jewel Masters... but they were still human, not machines. They could still feel exhausted; by now all the Heavenly Energy in their bodies had long been used up. Even for the Berserker and Gold Crow Tribe warriors, with their powerful physiques and constitutions, they were barely even able to hold their massive weapons any longer. Luckily, their armour was just too thick and strong, for the moment no matter how their enemies struck at them, they were unable to break through their defense; otherwise they might have already suffered casualties.

After these several hours of fighting, there were still seven powerhouse enemies surrounding Zhou Weiqing. They were the strongest of all the Heavenly Jewel Masters who had come from the Bai Da Empire. All of the others had died to the Dual Legendary Hammers. With his own six-Jeweled cultivation level, to have done so much up until now, that was already close to the limit for Zhou Weiqing.

The Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation was indeed powerful, especially in terms of sustainability. Even so, an entire morning of constant high pressure fighting had pushed Zhou Weiqing's body to the limit.

By now, he couldn't even maintain the Dragon-Tiger Transformation. All about his body, where the 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set did not cover, countless wounds covered

him. If not for the fact his constitution was so strong, with the bloodlines of the dragon and tigers mixed within him, perhaps he would have fallen by now.

No! I can't fall here. I mustn't fall here! At this point, all that held Zhou Weiqing up was his own willpower. He was no longer able to use any Skills, just using the strength that was brought to him by the 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set to keep fighting... fighting. He was extremely clear that if he fell down now, then the war would be over, and all would be lost.

He had long since witnessed many of his Peerless Regiment soldiers wounded, but these soldiers who had come from the Ruffian Battalion had a strong sense of survival, able to cover and protect each other as best they could. All of the injured Peerless Regiment soldiers gathered together in a defensive bunch. Zhou Weiqing did not know if any of them had died, or if so, how many. However, he could see that barely a third of them were still able to continue fighting.

As for the Berserker and Gold Crow Tribe warriors, they were now just resorting to using their weight to shove enemies down the walls. Most of them could not even lift their weapons anymore, let alone fight.

For a battle to reach such an intense, horrifying state, one could use the word 'meat-grinder' to describe it.

Chapter 205 Reinforcements | Fei Li God General (1)

However, the exploits and results of these Peerless Regiment soldiers was glorious indeed. From the start of the fight until now, the Kalise and Bai Da soldiers had all been thrown into the fight, but no one could even know the current death and injury toll. No matter atop the city walls or below, all that could be seen was a sea of corpses.

BANG One of the eight-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Masters slammed his weapon savagely into Zhou Weiqing's back, causing his entire body to smash into the city wall, almost sinking in with an explosive sound. At last, the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation below Zhou Weiqing's feet dissipated with the final violent blow.

“Bastard!” Zhou Weiqing howled angrily, abruptly turning around and giving a furious swing with his Legendary Hammers, causing his enemies to step back momentarily.

Perhaps it was because they saw the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation below Zhou Weiqing's feet dissipate, the Bai Da powerhouses surrounding him finally heaved a sigh of relief, their attacks stopping momentarily.

These enemies were not in particularly great condition either, none of them remained injury free. More than a dozen Heavenly Jewel Masters! All of them had been surrounding a single person, Zhou Weiqing, all this time, and more so right on top of the city wall that was not wide at all... more than half of them had actually died at his hands.

Besides the strong killing intent they had, all of the Bai Da Empire powerhouses couldn't help but look at Zhou Weiqing with a hint respect.

This youth in front of them was just too powerful. Amongst any Heavenly Jewel Master they had seen before, in terms of six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Masters, no one could compare with him.

The Mid Level Zong Stage Heavenly Jewel Master who had just struck Zhou Weiqing continued panting as he said: “Young man, surrender yourself. Your future is just too bright, with limitless potential behind you. Why do you need to sacrifice your life for an impossible dream, working to revive your empire... that is an empty and illusory dream for you. As long as you can bring your men and surrender to us, our Bai Da Empire will definitely welcome you with open arms, and treat you with top honours.”

With a temporary halt from his enemies, naturally Zhou Weiqing was more than happy for the delay. His personal regeneration speed for his Heavenly Energy and even his body was far beyond anyone else, and currently his twenty five energy whirlpools of his Death Acupuncture Points were working overtime, whirling at maximum to recover as much as possible before the fight started once more.

These Bai Da Empire Heavenly Jewel Masters were far strong, far more persistent than he had imagined. Clearly, these were not just Heavenly Jewel Masters who were flowers grown in a greenhouse, each of them having a lot of battle experience. After one of their numbers had been destroyed by Zhou Weiqing’s Devour Skill, none of the other stronger powerhouses had given him the opportunity to Devour anyone else.

“Surrender?” A faint, disdainful smirk crossed Zhou Weiqing’s lips. His voice was hoarse as he said: “I am very afraid of death, and I truly do not want to die. However, if I surrender now, I might as well just die. Haha, come on then, I don’t know if you believe me or not, but I will tell you now, even if you can kill me, I will ensure that all of you accompany me in death.” At this moment, a sudden figure appeared in Zhou Weiqing’s mind, his father’s broad figure, and it was as if he could see his father

Admiral Zhou before his very eyes.

Father, do not worry. No matter how afraid of death I am, I will never surrender to them. I am your son! Just like you, I can have a steel backbone. How could I possibly surrender to these fellows who caused you to end up like that?

“Kill him.” Hearing those words, the Mid Level Zong Stage Heavenly Jewel Master did not want to give Zhou Weiqing any other chance to rest. Having fought this youth for so long, how could he not know that his recovery rate was just so astonishing? In the previous fighting, if not for the fact they had been able to cover each other, either helping each other take or soften Zhou Weiqing’s blows, or just striking him to disrupt some of his blows, perhaps the fight would have already ended in Zhou Weiqing’s favour.

These Heavenly Jewel Masters from the Bai Da Empire were actually from the Bai Da Empire’s Hundred Killer Hall. They had undergone the strictest training and many cruel, inhuman battles. Compared to most ordinary Heavenly Jewel Masters, their actual fighting capabilities were much stronger. Yet, this youth before them had caused them so much trouble, even causing them all to feel an unprecedented spark of fear in their hearts.

Once again, all the Bai Da Empire powerhouses sprang towards Zhou Weiqing again. At the same time, a piercing light shot forth from Zhou Weiqing’s eyes, a silver white replacing the originally bloodshot eyes. Our dear Little Fatty was about to pit his life on the line. Even if there was just a single thread of chance for survival, he did not want to give it up. He still had one last ace up his sleeve, one that he dared not use previously... the last few drops, slightly more than a dozen, of Saint Energy. Zhou Weiqing believed that if he burst forth with the full potential of the Saint Energy, even if he was to be crippled or killed finally, he could bring these enemies down before he fell.

Right at this very instant, all of a sudden a gold light descended

from the skies out of nowhere, enveloping Zhou Weiqing's body. Zhou Weiqing felt a gentle warmth around his entire body, and his drained and exhausted body and Heavenly Energy actually started recovering rapidly in this warmth.

A violent explosion, and the gold light shattered. The Bai Da Empire powerhouses had struck out, but the gold light had managed to stop their blows, and had actually knocked them back with the backlash.

A figure appeared silently out of nowhere to land right beside Zhou Weiqing. It was Tian'er!

Currently, Tian'er looked far better than Zhou Weiqing did. At least, she wasn't totally covered with blood. Even so, her white clothes had blood specks all over them, and her face looked pale and ashen.

"Tian'er why have you come? Could it be... the north gate has fallen?" Zhou Weiqing was caught by surprise.

Tian'er grabbed onto Zhou Weiqing's left hand with her own right. "Let's face these enemies first. The north gate is fine."

With her words, Zhou Weiqing heaved a sigh of relief. As the two of them held hands, the remaining Heavenly Energy in their bodies reacted almost automatically, fusing together with the four Saint Attributes, forming the familiar large Saint Energy whirlpool almost instantly.

They had been training together for such a long period of time, and their tacit understanding of each other was extremely strong. Even their respective circulation of Heavenly Energy, how they reacted with each other, all of them was just too familiar to them, and with the four Saint Attributes drawing upon each other, there was no hint of any rejection possible.

With Tian'er by his side, it was without question that Zhou Weiqing's fighting capabilities were magnified severalfold. The

Saint Energy whirlpool did not only just help them refine and transform Saint Energy, it also greatly increased the recovery rate of both their Heavenly Energy.

The Bai Da Empire powerhouses senses were definitely clearest. Seeing Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er hold hands, they sensed the Heavenly Energy reverberation in the air around grow stronger. Despite their own cultivation level, it was as if they had been abandoned by the atmospheric Heavenly Energy, all of which were gushing towards Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er. At the same time, they could clearly see that around their linked hands, there was a faint silvery white light glowing.

The seven Bai Da Empire powerhouses exchanged glances, seeing the shock in each other's eyes. Due to Zhou Weiqing's sheer power and performance in the past few hours, even though they could clearly see that Tian'er only had seven Heavenly Jewels around her wrist, but Zhou Weiqing was already so strong... Furthermore, Tian'er's Elemental Jewels seemed to also be that of the Alexandrite Cat's Eye, and her cultivation level was even higher. With these two joining forces, what kind of level would they reach? More importantly, it seemed like as they joined hands, they clearly had some sort of ability to fight together!

“Attack! Even if we can't kill them now, as long as we hold them back, we will still win the battle. Their soldiers cannot hold on for much longer.”

Indeed, the fighting on the city walls was reaching its end. By now, most of the Peerless Regiment soldiers were driven to gather together, making their last desperate stand.

The Kalise armies on the frontal onslaught were not just the strongest amongst all walls, but also numbered the most. Furthermore, all of the siege weapons and powerhouses were gathered here, especially the Bai Da Regiment. To be able to hold on for such a long time, the Peerless Regiment had already gone far and beyond their usual strength.

Perhaps the only thing saving them now was the fact that there wasn't much space to stand anymore. Many of the Bai Da soldiers were now clearing some corpses away so they could properly surround the Peerless Regiment soldiers gathered together on the city walls.

Still, pushed to such a corner, the Peerless Regiment soldiers showed their firm and unyielding spirit. Those too critically injured to fight were right in the middle of their formation resting, while those with light injuries were relatively outside, still resting for now to await their turn to fight. Gathered together, they were able to use this method to take turns resting before slaughtering their enemies once more. Although every time their resistance grew weaker and weaker, they were still the Peerless Regiment soldiers after all! And they continued killing ... and killing.

All of them cherished their lives so much. As long as there was still a chance to hold on, no one would give up easily!

Naturally, Zhou Weiqing had seen the danger the Peerless Regiment were in. Currently, with Tian'er by his side, he suddenly drew in a deep breath, forcefully suppressing his own injuries. With some Heavenly Energy recovered, he pushed himself to enter the Dragon-Tiger Transformation once more, and the powerful aura burst free again.

"Come here!" A silvery white light flashed in Zhou Weiqing's eyes, and his right hand grabbed out at one of the Bai Da Upper Level Zun Stage powerhouses closest to him.

This Upper Level Zun Stage powerhouse was the most injured out of the remaining seven Bai Da enemies, his entire right arm had been destroyed by one of Zhou Weiqing's hammer blows earlier, flopping uselessly at the side. With such a critical injury, he had also not participated as much in the surrounding fight. Currently, he suddenly felt an unbelievable suction force on him, and he stumbled, falling towards Zhou Weiqing.

“Hold!” Just as the other Bai Da Empire powerhouses were about to spring to his aid, all of a sudden, Tian’er shouted out loud. A thick purple light sprang from her beautiful eyes, enveloping the other Bai Da Heavenly Jewel Masters in an instant, covering them totally.

Although Tian’er was also exhausted, the Saint Energy whirlpool had given her Heavenly Energy a quick recovery boost in the last few seconds. With this shred of energy, she was able to use this spiritual attack to cause the other Bai Da Empire powerhouses to black out for a split second, delaying their rescue for that critical moment.

In that moment, Zhou Weiqing had seized the chance and sprang into action. The wings behind his back flapped hard, and he carried Tian’er along as they appeared in a flash right in front of the six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master.

The terrifying suction force caused the Upper Level Zun Stage to have no chance of resistance. He could clearly sense that the suction force was not just devouring his Heavenly Energy, but his life force and soul! He could only try his best to struggle, to do his best not to be Devoured, but he could no longer fight anymore.

Zhou Weiqing was actually currently more than ten yards from him. For him to be able to use the Devour Skill at such a range, it was without question that he had used a drop of Saint Energy and infused it within his Devour Skill.

Previously, when Zhou Weiqing was alone, he dared not do such a thing. After all, he was not confidence in success, and it might instead put him in peril as the other enemies struck out at him. However, it was far different now. With Tian’er here to stop the others momentarily, and with the support of the Saint Energy whirlpool, using a drop of Saint Energy was no problem for him.

Chapter 205 Reinforcements | Fei Li God General (2)

Right before this, when Zhou Weiqing had taken the major blow, and because he had run out of Heavenly Energy, his Dual Legendary Hammers had vanished. Now, his hands still had the Yin Yang Giant Spirit Palms on them, and his right palm savagely struck out towards the shoulder of the Upper Level Zun Stage powerhouse who had lost the ability to resist. With the Saint Energy powering the Devour Skill, it was truly just too strong. All his attempts to resist were futile.

With Zhou Weiqing's terrifying strength, his other arm was also instantly shattered. What followed next was the increase of the shocking suction force from Zhou Weiqing's right palm as contact was made, not even giving him time to scream in agony.

This was truly the first time since Zhou Weiqing had gained the actual Saint Energy that he could use the Devour Skill without holding back at all, with the aid of his Saint Energy!

The Bai Da powerhouse in his hands was trembling violently, and a strange sight occurred. Everyone could clearly see him actually growing old right in front of them as not just his Heavenly Energy, life force and even soul was drained out of him. The speed of Devouring was just too terrifying when it was powered with the drop of Saint Energy. When the other Bai Da Empire powerhouses recovered from Tian'er's spirit attack, the Heavenly Jewel Master in Zhou Weiqing's hand had already become a dessicated corpse, and in the next instant the corpse actually disintegrated into dust, blown away by the wind.

This time, the Devour Skill gave Zhou Weiqing a totally different feeling. He found that when the Heavenly Energy mixed with life force and soul energy entered his body, it instantly entered the Saint Energy whirlpool automatically, and drops of Saint Energy

were transformed quickly, directly entering his own personal little Saint Energy whirlpool.

For this six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master, with his Heavenly Energy expended to a certain degree, he had only given Zhou Weiqing a total of seven drops of Saint Energy. It had to be known that this was also having his entire life force and soul drained. Similarly at the six-Jeweled cultivation level, Zhou Weiqing's own Heavenly Energy alone had been transformed into more than twenty drops of Saint Energy. This was the massive difference between those who had the Saint Attributes and those without.

Despite the fact that the Devour Skill in its current state would only bring him Saint Energy, the addition of the seven drops of Saint Energy instantly perked Zhou Weiqing up, giving his entire mind and spirit a huge boost.

At this point, he did not transfer any Saint Energy back to Tian'er. Currently, he needed to fight, and they could balance things out after he had dealt with all these enemies in front of him.

He quickly infused a drop of Heavenly Energy directly into his QiHai Acupuncture Point. With the fusion of the Saint Energy, it was as if a fresh breath of life was blown into the QiHai Acupuncture Point, drawing in more Heavenly Energy from outside, with the absorption rate greatly increased, Zhou Weiqing's ordinary Heavenly Energy also began to recover at a even more terrifying pace.

"All of you, come meet your maker at I, Your Father's hands!" Zhou Weiqing shoutedly loudly. However, his actions were contrary to his words, as he abruptly sprang upwards, still holding on to Tian'er tightly. His wings flapped hard, and instantly the pair of them shot up into the skies. Above his head, a purplish red light appeared at once... forming an illusory image... it was the Demonic Dragon Lady!

Previously, during the hours of fighting, Zhou Weiqing had to

take into account the entire battlefield, and he had too many enemies surrounding him. As such, he did not have any chance to use the Dragon Silencing Seal. Furthermore, in the first place he had not even prepared the Dragon Silencing Seal in his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, as it took too long to prepare this powerful Skill.

Currently, with Tian'er's assistance and the additional fresh new seven drops of Saint Energy, coupled with the fact that there were much fewer enemies left, he could finally fully flourish this extremely useful Skill.

Of course, Zhou Weiqing would not infuse his Saint Energy directly into the Dragon Silencing Seal. He did not want the Demonic Dragon Lady to come to life. It wasn't that he was too afraid of any Heavenly Emperor powerhouse questioning him, though that was also a consideration. However, the main point was that with both his own and Tian'er's current state, if they tried to bring a Heavenly Skill Image to life like the previous time, it would be their turn to be drained to death.

Even without the infusion of Saint Energy, the Dragon Silencing Seal was undoubtedly an extremely powerful Skill. The remaining six Bai Da Empire powerhouses could only stand there and watch Zhou Weiqing fly away. They did not have their own Consolidated Wings, and before the Heavenly King stage, how could they chase him?

“Not good...!”

Alas, by the time they wanted to react, it was too late. Zhou Weiqing's eyes were filled with a strong killing intent. The Dragon Silencing Seal unleashed... with his current six-Jeweled stage, he was able to use it six times daily, and without holding anything back, he used them all at once.

One of the greatest benefit of the Dragon Silencing Seal was that it did not consume any of his Heavenly Energy at all. Six bouts of

Dragon Silencing Seals, and the six Ba Da Empire powerhouses were instantly struck with it. Their Consolidated Equipment, Stored Skills, were all Sealed away. At this point, Zhou Weiqing had also recovered some of his Heavenly Energy with the aid of his scary regenerative rate and the Saint Energy whirlpool, and he at least had the strength to fight once more.

His heart was currently bleeding! He had personally built the Peerless Regiment from ground up, all the way from when it was just a mere Ruffian Battalion, and he had deep feelings for these brothers of his. The Peerless Regiment was also his greatest dependence towards his dream of reviving his homeland. Now, looking at things, he did not even know how many of the Peerless Regiment soldiers still survived, how could he not be enraged?

At this moment, Zhou Weiqing had long forgotten any of those useless sayings about killing too much being against the heavens. This was war! War! If he did not destroy his enemies, then his enemies would destroy him.

In Zhou Weiqing's heart, there was not even the slightest bit of pity or mercy left for these enemies before him.

The effect of the Dragon Silencing Seal gave the six Bai Da Empire powerhouses a huge shock. Facing this 'fresh' Zhou Weiqing who had suddenly become so powerful, they no longer felt the need to stubbornly continue fighting. However, their fighting experience was extremely abundant, and they did not panic. Instantly, the six of them flew off in different directions.

Zhou Weiqing's reactions were just as quick. He immediately chose one of the eight-Jeweled Mid Level Zong Stage Heavenly Jewel Masters as his prey, pouncing upon him instantly. At this point, he was no longer using the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, and he just swept his hand and unleashed a Fetters of Wind.

A Blink Skill, Absolute Delay, and Touch of Darkness. Instantly,

he appeared next to his restricted foe, and two more powerful Control Skills followed suit. This poor Mid Level Zong Stage powerhouse who had already expended so much energy in the past hours, and no longer had access to his Stored Skills and Consolidated Equipment... how could he possibly withstand for long, especially now that his mind was fully on retreat? Even when he tried to put up a last minute resistance, Tian'er quickly dealt with him using another Spirit Attack.

Zhou Weiqing's right palm clapped savagely on his throat, and the Devour Skill activated once more. This time, due to the fact that he did not infuse his Saint Energy, the Devouring process was much slower. However, this eight-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master was still unable to escape from Zhou Weiqing's grasp.

Drop after drop of Saint Energy formed in Zhou Weiqing's body. An eight-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master was just different! By the time he crumbled into dust, he had 'gifted' Zhou Weiqing with twenty six drops of Saint Energy!

By now, the other five enemies had fled down the city walls and away. Naturally, Zhou Weiqing used the opportunity to share half the Saint Energy with Tian'er.

With the additional dozen or so drops of Saint Energy, both of them could clearly sense the life force in their bodies brimming and thriving, their original sense of exhaustion weakening greatly.

However, though they had killed most of the enemy powerhouses and sent the rest fleeing, the battle was still not over.

"Little Fatty, help me." Tian'er abruptly said to Zhou Weiqing before he could decide what to do. Next, he instantly sensed a great suction force from Tian'er, directed at the Saint Energy whirlpool.

Tian'er's entire body started glowing a brilliant gold, and she was soon covered in a layer of gold light. A thick Heavenly Energy reverberation began to emanate from her along with the rising gold light.

Their minds were so connected that Zhou Weiqing instantly knew what she wanted to do. Besides the ten drops of Saint Energy that was required to maintain his personal little Saint Energy whirlpool, he quickly sent all of his remaining Saint Energy, including the freshly devoured ones, into Tian'er's body through their connected hands.

Towards any other person, he might need to use his mouth to transfer Saint Energy. However, for Tian'er, it was no longer necessary. With the support of the large Saint Energy whirlpool, it was as if their bodies were like one.

With the over thirty drops of Saint Energy he had just Devoured, along with the remaining usable from both of them, they had more than fifty drops of Saint Energy total. As Tian'er unleashed her Skill, it was diminishing quickly.

Above Tian'er's head, a cloud of gold light was slowly forming. Next, a streak of gold light rose into the skies, as if the illumination of dawn. Under this streak of gold light, the cloud of gold also began to expand rapidly.

Seeing such a strange sight, the warriors on both sides couldn't help but lift their heads, their eyes filled with surprise as they gazed upon it. However, in a stark contrast from the terror that Zhou Weiqing's Hell's Angel brought, this patch of gold light only gave them a peaceful feeling, a holy, divine aura that was calming and peaceful.

Currently, Tian'er had been fully covered with this gold colour, and she looked just like a goddess descended from the heavens, causing anyone who looked at her to have the urge to kneel down and pay obeisance.

After more than twenty drops of Saint Energy had been expended, the streak of gold light finally disappeared, and the gold cloud in the skies suddenly trembled slightly as it began to rain... golden droplets of rain.

This gold rain did not differentiate between friend or foe, covering the entire south walls. It wasn't just the Peerless Regiment soldiers, even the enemy soldiers were bathed in the light gold rain.

The rain painted the entire city walls a gold hue, the brilliant light giving everyone a sense of awe and beauty.

When a drop of rain fell upon one of the soldier's, no matter how thick his armour was, it did not stop the rain.

This small, thin, weak looking rain, yet what it brought to them was an endless pleasant surprise.

No matter any kind of wound, soaked in this gentle gold rain, they just healed as such a rapid pace that could be seen with the naked eye. Not only that, everyone could clearly sense their physical strength and vigor being restored even as their wounds healed, even the Heavenly Energy in their bodies was being regenerated at a greatly boosted pace, their connection with the atmospheric energy increased.

This Skill was called the Holy Light Skill, an area of effect type recovery and restorative Skill. The gold light in the air earlier was actually its Heavenly Skill Image. Within the area of effect of the Skill, it was able to heal any wounds, even clearing some of the negative influences that other skills or attributes might have brought, even undoing some light Seals. At the same time, it would also boost the recovery of vigor and even Heavenly Energy. This was one of the strongest support Skills in the world, in terms of healing and restoration.

Chapter 205 Reinforcements | Fei Li God General (3)

With Tian'er's current cultivation level, when she used the Skill without any Saint Energy, it would be a good day for her if she could cover a hundred square metres. However, with the infusion of the Saint Energy and Zhou Weiqing's aid, she had increased the area of effect by more than five times, managing to cover all of the Peerless Regiment soldiers, almost enveloping the majority of the south city wall. The regenerative and restoration powers were also at least thirty percent stronger than her normal usage of the Skill.

Zhou Weiqing's judgement of the Saint Energy had indeed been accurate. One of the underlying profound secrets of the Saint Energy was in Creation, not Destruction. As such, even though both times the Heavenly Skill Image had change induced in them, this Holy Light Skill that Tian'er had unleashed had taken up far less Saint Energy than Zhou Weiqing's Hell's Angel Skill. When the Skill ended, both of them still ended up with an average of more than twenty drops of Saint Energy.

Although using an area of effect restoration Skill would also bring their enemies much benefit, do not forget that it would not have any effect on the dead, nor could it cause severed limbs to grow back again.

As such, though more than a thousand enemy soldiers had also benefited from the restoration, but more importantly, the Peerless Regiment soldiers on the city walls could stand up tall once more.

To the Peerless Regiment archers, perhaps the restoration of their physical strength and vigor was still far from bringing them back to their full power. However, to the Peerless Heavy Cavalry, it was like a second life.

The long spiked maces and massive battle axes which had drooped down were now raised up high against, while those

previously injured Peerless Regiment soldiers also grabbed weapons from the ground and sprang to their feet again. The tides of the battle were finally turning.

Zhou Weiqing did not dare to slack off. However, the sheer exhaustion he was in was not something that even Tian'er's restorative Skill could help him fully recover. Holding on tight to Tian'er's hands, both of them began circulating their Heavenly Energy with full strength, concentrating on recovering as best they could. In using more than twenty drops of Saint Energy just now with Tian'er's Skill, it had also drained them dry of the Heavenly Energy they had just regenerated.

However, with the aid of the Holy Light Skill, the Peerless Regiment warriors who had recovered some of their combat abilities were once again rejuvenated, once again charging into the fray like tigers into a flock of sheep. At least for a short period of time, there should not be any large problems.

After an entire morning of fighting, the Kalise Empire soldiers were just as exhausted and drained. For now, it looked like an uphill task for them to actually conquer this south wall.

"Tian'er, what actually happened over at your end?" Zhou Weiqing was urgent to hear news about the north wall, and couldn't help but ask as soon as he regained enough breath. After all, Tian'er had been the only powerhouse on that side.

Tian'er smiled faintly, saying excitedly: "It is the Fei Li Empire, we have some reinforcements from the Fei Li Empire. In the first place, the amount of pressure on us was much smaller than on this south wall. With my smaller and controlled area of effect healing and recovery Skills and my own help, the scale of fighting there was far easier than over here. After all, the enemies there do not include any powerhouses or even any siege vehicles. They could only depend on swarming us with numbers, charging us endlessly and spending lives to reach us. We repulsed them many times, but we were just too few. After such a long time fighting, just as they

were about to overwhelm the gates with just numbers alone, the Fei Li Empire reinforcements arrived.”

“How many reinforcements?” When Zhou Weiqing heard that news, to be honest, he was extremely surprised. He did not think that the Fei Li Empire had such a good opinion of him, that they would actually send military reinforcements even despite not promising any.”

“Just a thousand men. However, they are extremely powerful indeed. With just a single charge, they pierced right through the enemy formation at the north gates and out all the way. They did so several times over, and by that time the Kalise soldiers were no longer able to attack us properly any longer. Even if they could, it had already bought us more than enough time to handle things for now. If I did not see wrongly, it should be those fellows that fought against us on the Fei Li City drilling grounds.”

Hearing her words, understanding finally dawned upon Zhou Weiqing. In joy, he exclaimed: “So, it is actually Ming Yu! Haha, he has really come at the right time!”

Tian’er nodded and said: “Since I didn’t see much problems at my side, I asked those reinforcements to head to the west gate. After all, Lei Zi’s strength is not comparable to Xue’er or mine, and they should be in the next greatest danger. After that, I also ran over here by myself. Luckily, you were alright. These Kalise fellows are truly crazy, they are really going all out, not caring about the cost it takes to take the city no matter what.”

Looking at Tian’er’s worried expression and her slightly reddened eyes, the bloodlust in Zhou Weiqing’s eyes faded slightly. “The Kalise army no longer has any chance. We have killed more than ten thousand of them here on this south wall alone, and now that everyone has recovered some measure of strength, the longer we drag it out, the greater our chances of victory.”

Both their Heavenly Energy was recovering bit by bit. Although it

would be impossible for them to recover fully in a short period of time, they would have no problems recovering enough Heavenly Energy to just fight. With their cultivation level, as long as they recovered sufficient Heavenly Energy to re-enter the fight, the Kalise army would no longer have any chance, especially with no more powerhouses left on their side. At that point, victory would be sealed.

The large Saint Energy whirlpool had just too great a draw on Heavenly Energy. Even when it was compared to Zhou Weiqing's Immortal Deity Technique, Dragon-Tiger Transformation and Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation added together, it was still slightly stronger.

If one could magnify their vision, they might be able to see the Heavenly Energy in the atmosphere actually gathering around them and swarming into their bodies... one could imagine how thickly gathered it was for them to almost be able to see it with their naked eyes.

"Weiqing." An exhausted voice rang out, and Zhou Weiqing turned to see Lin TianAo carrying Xiao Yan, who had clearly fainted, towards them in a slow pace. Even with Lin TianAo's power and defensive capabilities, his titanium mail was almost fully destroyed, the wounds on his body could clearly be seen.

Zhou Weiqing quickly headed towards him with Tian'er. "Bro Lin, how are you both."

Although Lin TianAo was clearly exhausted, the spark of excitement in his eyes was dancing. "I am fine. This was a great fight indeed! I never expected that at the last moment, we would still have the chance to turn the tides. Weiqing, this time you must give Xiao Yan top merits. At the time when you had drawn the attention of all the Bai Da Empire Heavenly Jewel Masters, he unleashed his secret arts and burned his own life force with his Flame of Life, forcefully destroying the giant battering ram cart. Otherwise, our gate and wall might have been destroyed a long

time ago.”

Hearing Lin TianAo’s words, Zhou Weiqing was indeed shocked. He turned, leaning over the walls to look down, only to see the remnants of the giant battering ram cart still burning, a large portion of it already burnt down to ash.

Previously, he had been just too overwhelmed by the large numbers of powerhouses surrounding him, preventing him from doing anything else on the battlefield. He had to spend every single bit of energy and focus just to survive and destroy his enemies, and could no longer take care of other things on the battlefield. Looking at the burning remains of the cart, he couldn’t help but feel a chill run down his spine, and he thought to himself: What a narrow escape we had!

It had to be known that this battering ram cart was finely crafted using the toughest thousand-year metalwoods. Not only was it lined with metal plates, cured cow leather, it was extremely tough and solid. Ordinary flames would not stand a chance of even harming it.

Lin TianAo was indeed right. If not for Xiao Yan risking his life to destroy this battering ram cart, perhaps it would have been destroyed long ago.

“How is Xiao Yan?” Zhou Weiqing asked urgently.

Lin TianAo gave a bitter smile and said: “He is not injured, but his vigor and life force have been greatly drained. Still, it is relatively alright, he exceeded his limit and fainted, but he should be fine. Earlier, some of our Peerless Regiment soldiers were protecting him.”

Zhou Weiqing took a deep breath, asking the question he feared the most. “Big Bro Lin, our Peerless Regiment soldiers... what is the death toll?”

The light in Lin TianAo’s dimmed as he said softly: “There are

definitely some heavy injuries and deaths, but I'm not sure exactly how many. Although we killed more than a dozen times our numbers of enemies, it is definitely impossible to go without death or injury. Luckily, everyone was vigilant in protecting each other, though we have many injured, but not too many dead."

Zhou Weiqing heaved a sigh of relief. As long as they were not dead, it was alright. With Tian'er's Divine Attribute, in terms of healing, she was definitely unparalleled.

"Big Bro Lin, you protect Xiao Yan and rest here for awhile. I'll bring Tian'er to fight once more." In this short period of time, Zhou Weiqing's Heavenly Energy had recovered slightly, and he was confident of at least being able to fight.

"Be careful."

Lin TianAo nodded towards Zhou Weiqing. Currently, his emotions were highly agitated and excited. He knew that a miraculous victory was about to come to the Heavenly Bow Empire. And the key to the victory had definitely been Zhou Weiqing himself!

If not for Zhou Weiqing holding out against all the enemy powerhouses... if not for him dealing such major damage to the enemies and their siege weapons, how could the Crescent City possibly hold against such hordes of enemies?

Even if the majority of siege weapons had not been able to come into play, most of the Crescent City walls were already greatly broken down.

With three thousand seven hundred men against fifty thousand enemies, to be able to hold on like that, how could it not be described as a miracle?

Zhou Weiqing held onto Tian'er, and both of them charged directly into the thick of battle. At this point, Tian'er did not even bother trying to attack, fully concentrating on circulating the Saint

Energy whirlpool and recovering energy for both of them. As for Zhou Weiqing, though that meant he could only use one hand to fight, that was already a weapon of mass destruction.

Zhou Weiqing's fighting style was a nightmare to the Kalise Empire soldiers. He focused on looking for those officers, especially the Bai Da ones. These army officers all had some form of Heavenly Energy cultivation level, but in front of Zhou Weiqing, they could not even put up any resistance. As long as Zhou Weiqing's right hand grabbed hold of one, within moments they would be drained dry, turning into dust.

Their Heavenly Energy would directly become food for Zhou Weiqing's large Saint Energy whirlpool.

Although these were only mere two or three Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Masters, almost useless for Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er, every little bit counted for something. Every seven or eight he killed actually managed to give them one drop of Saint Energy. With this additional replenishment of energy, Zhou Weiqing did not even have much expenditure of energy, instead his reserves growing larger and larger, allowing him to unleash an AOE Skill once in awhile, killing the enemies in drove.

Under his leadership, the enemies on the city wall grew lesser and lesser, until they were starting to be pushed back.

Right at that moment, a disturbance sounded out below the city walls.

After Zhou Weiqing finished off another Bai Da Company Leader, he looked down to see what the noise was, only to find a triangle formation of black armoured cavalry troops charging deep into the enemy formations below the city, forcing the constantly climbing foes to have to stop.

Chapter 206 Tian'er... is pregnant? (1)

This cavalry force that had arrived so suddenly, right in front of them was the Fei Li God General, Ming Yu. Under his leadership, his thousand personal guard wheeled and moved about, constantly changing formations. Even facing the Bai Da elite troops, they mowed them down without any problems, cutting through the enemy lines like a knife through hot butter. As they passed by, they just left a large patch of corpses behind.

At this point, the surviving enemy forces who still could fight at the south gate numbered less than ten thousand. With this fresh new force of a thousand breaking their lines so suddenly, they were immediately thrown into disarray.

All of a sudden, the sounds of drums and gongs rang out from behind the Kalise Empire lines.

Instantly, the enemies on top the city wall and also below the city wall began to retreat, like the receding tide from a shore. The thousand black armoured cavalry did not give chase, only killing off the few enemies who passed them in their retreat, before forming up with their long lances pointed towards the retreating Kalise Empire armies.

Ming Yu jumped off his mount, his feet striking the broken down wall several times for momentum, and soon he had reached the top of the wall.

Fully dressed in military attire, Ming Yu looked especially handsome and fresh. The first person to enter his sight was Zhou Weiqing, totally drenched in blood.

“Impressive. Very very impressive. I cannot help but be impressed... I defer to you in this truly!” As soon as Ming Yu saw that Zhou Weiqing was alright, he laughed heartily, giving him a big thumbs up.

Zhou Weiqing gave a bitter smile and said: “What so impressive! If you had come a few minutes later, we would have all perished. You have my everlasting thanks, and I will repay you in future, no need for me to speak about that.

Ming Yu laughed once more and said: “It is not me who saved you, but you who saved yourselves.”

Zhou Weiqing started, saying: “What do you mean?”

Ming Yu smiled and said: “As a general, I would never bring my soldiers into a fight in which I deem there is no chance at all, a fight that is certain death. In truth, I reached the outskirts of the Crescent City three days ago. However, due to the fact that the fifty thousand Kalise soldiers were camped there, I did not approach too closely. Furthermore, since they were about to attack, I did not try to meet up with you. In my eyes, with the mere numbers you had, it would be impossible for you to hold out against the Kalise forces. This Crescent City, I had deemed lost for sure. As such, I had never even thought about coming to join the fight. All this time, I was waiting until you all failed the defense and tried to escape, then I would come to your aid in helping you escape back to the Fei Li Empire before we think of our next step.”

“Yet, who could have guessed that you... this fellow... would actually create such a miracle. I have to admit that your Peerless Regiment is truly the finest... the strongest troop that I have ever seen in my life... to even be able to hold on for so long, to do so much... it could be said that ninety percent of the work had already been done by you all, so how could I not come join in for the last ten percent. Even without my aid, if the Kalise army really wanted to totally capture the Crescent City, the price they would have to pay would truly be unbelievably huge.

Zhou Weiqing was an intelligent man, and upon hearing Ming Yu’s words, he couldn’t help but laugh in understanding: “You cunning fellow!”

Ming Yu did not mind at all as he said seriously: “This is not cunning, it is the rule of survival on the battlefield. I only have a thousand men, and while I am confident in them, saving you and helping you escape is no problem at all. However, clashing against the Kalise armies in such numbers was pointless. That was the reason why I said it was you who had saved yourselves. By fighting off these Kalise armies for an entire morning, killing off more than a dozen times your numbers... If I still did not seize such an opportunity to appear at this point, I would not deserve the name of the Fei Li God General.

“Now, at least, the Kalise Empire has been crippled. Even if they wanted to launch an attack like this again in the near future, it will be impossible. If their commander is smart enough, the best path for them now is to retreat.”

Not caring about how they looked then, Zhou Weiqing held onto Tian'er as he flopped down on his ass onto the floor with a satisfied sigh, giving Ming Yu a bitter smile as he said: “I'm afraid my men will not have any energy left to open the city gates for you. Why don't you just pop over down there to open the gates yourself, let your men come in.”

Ming Yu laughed out, shaking his head as he said: “No, we'll pass for now. I'm still not part of your team yet, and such rules I still do know. I'll get my man to keep watch, send out scouts to see what they are up to, and clear up the battlefield. You all get some rest first.”

After saying that, Ming Yu waved towards Zhou Weiqing and turned around, jumping right off the city walls.

In doing so, he was avoiding any possible suspicions. After all, currently the Peerless Regiment was totally helpless, without any fighting capabilities left, while his thousand men were still rather fresh. At the same time, he was not just simply a Fei Li General, and also represented the Heavenly Demon Sect. Avoiding any possible suspicions would help improve overall relations with the

Peerless Regiment, and also let Zhou Weiqing feel his good faith and sincerity.

By this time, Lin TianAo had already settled Xiao Yan and returned to Zhou Weiqing's side. "What do we do now?"

Zhou Weiqing said: "Let all our brothers rest right here. Send someone who is in relatively better condition to get the logistics personnel to send some meat soup and other food here. Also, get all the medical personnel to come here as quickly as possible and start treating everyone. Everything else, we can wait to discuss later.

Compiling stats of injuries and death, all of that could be done later. Everyone was just too tired, and they had earned their rest. Once they had recovered, they could speak of all the other admin matters.

Of course, though they had all just fought through an entire morning, and everyone was exhausted to the maximum, they had after all won, and their spirits were still extremely high. The logistic troops had already made some preparations, and before long large cauldrons of meat soup were being carried to the city walls. At the same time, the medical personnel were starting to treat the wounded.

The logistics troops that the Fei Li Empire had provided was extremely complete, from smelting and smithing, medical, cooks... pretty much everything was covered. These were also experienced veterans who had battlefield experience; it was something that Zhou Weiqing had specially requested. Of course, they would not be of help in combat, but having such a complete logistical support would bring the Peerless Regiment to another level.

Drinking the meat soup, having some simple food, along with the treatment of the medical troops... soon, the city walls rang with the sound of snoring. The soldiers were just too tired, and though there were corpses all about, they could not even summon the

energy to care, just falling asleep directly on the city walls.

Zhou Weiqing was no exception. With one hand holding Tian'er, they leaned on the stairs of the walls, falling deep into sleep. Just like the rest of his soldiers, he was not only exhausted physically, but mentally as well. The pressure he had been under in his heart was far beyond any others.

Although they had definitely won this battle, Zhou Weiqing did not feel happy at all. Previously, even when he had been in the northern borders facing off against the WanShou Empire, no matter the enemies he faced, the Peerless Regiment had been victorious without any losses. As such, he still had not been used to the full cruelties of war, at least towards his own side.

However, in the intense and horrifying battle just now, he was truly exposed to the brutal cruelty of war. He may not be clear of the exacts of the other three walls, but at least on the south side, out of the thousand fresh recruits, less than a hundred still survived. All of them had families! Let alone he still did not know how many of his Peerless Regiment brothers had perished. This weight on his heart greatly diluted the joy of victory of defeating his enemies. No matter that this battle, this victory, could be considered a miraculous win. No matter that their deaths had caused so many times more deaths of their enemies. All of that would not change the fact that these soldiers had paid the final price, and would forever leave this world.

...

Their sleep lasted all the way until deep in the evening, and only then did Zhou Weiqing finally rouse up. The Dragon-Tiger bloodline showed its power in a subtle form here... anyone else who had been in such a frantic battle would definitely be aching everywhere after the sleep, but Zhou Weiqing felt in tip top condition, full of energy. All his wounds had already healed fully by now, and his Heavenly Energy had actually been fully restored by the automatic regeneration of the Immortal Deity Technique.

Only the Saint Energy was still in the same state as before his sleep, as the amount of energy required to be drawn in to form the Saint Energy was just too large.

The situation on the city walls had been greatly improved since Zhou Weiqing was last conscious. At least, all the corpses had been cleared off the walls to the grounds outside. Of course, to completely clear the battlefield would take quite some more time.

Only some of Peerless Regiment soldiers who had lighter injuries were still on the city walls, working together with the Peerless Regiment Heavy Cavalry to continue standing guard. Naturally, the Heavy Cavalry soldiers were uninjured due to their heavy armour.

Tian'er was no longer in Zhou Weiqing's arms, and standing by his side were two Peerless Regiment soldiers guarding him. He also realised that unknowingly, someone had placed a mat below him, allowing him to sleep more comfortably.

Zhou Weiqing climbed to his feet, stretching himself fully with all his strength, feeling his muscles and tendons stretch fully in comfort. At last, he said: "What is the situation now?"

"Commander." The two Peerless Regiment soldiers instantly saluted towards Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing waved his hands, looking out beyond the city walls. In the distance, the Kalise army camp was still there, lit brightly. However, as he looked directly below the city walls, Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but furrow his brows. The piercing scent of blood was enough to make him remember the bloody battle this morning.

"Commander, Report. The allies from the Fei Li Empire are helping us clear the battlefield outside the walls. Most of our men are back in the city getting medical treatment for their wounds. Sir Yan Zhexi is handling most of the aftermath administration.

Zhou Weiqing nodded his head. With Ming Yu and his men outside, the enemies would not dare to easily attack again, at least not anytime soon. “I will be returning to the governor’s mansion first. One of you, go notify Zhexi to come look for me there.”

After saying that, Zhou Weiqing headed off the city walls and into the city.

As he walked deep into the city, his heart sank deeper. He could hear sounds of crying all about him, clearly the families of the departed soldiers were in sorrow for the warriors who had sacrificed themselves for their sakes.

Zhou Weiqing gripped his fist tightly, swearing in his heart that in future, he would do all he could to reduce any deaths on his side. For him, victory should not be at the price of his soldiers’ blood!

As he walked into the governor’s mansion, Zhou Weiqing was given a small fright. The mansion was crowded and bustling with noise. All about, the Peerless Regiment soldiers and the remaining fresh recruits who had survived were crowded in the once-wide courtyard of the mansion.

Soon after, he saw two busy figures. No matter looking at them from the back, he could clearly sense their shocking beauty. It was Shangguan Xue’er and Tian’er.

Shangguan Xue’er was examining all the wounds of the wounded, and by her side, Tian’er was truly like an angel in white, using her Heavenly Energy to form the gold light of healing, aiding the wounded soldiers.

When Zhou Weiqing walked near the two beautiful ladies, he could clearly see exhaustion in their eyes and face, and on their foreheads, there was a layer of perspiration. However, without question, they looked unbelievably beautiful then.

“Tian’er, let me help you.” Zhou Weiqing quickly stepped forward, holding onto Tian’er’s hand. If she had the support of the

Saint Energy whirlpool, it would undoubtedly be of great aid for her in recovery, and even in using her healing Skills.

Tian'er turned her head to see Zhou Weiqing, and her ashen face brightened up in a faint smile. She slowly stood up from her squatting position, and before she could even stand firmly, her legs buckled before her, and she toppled into Zhou Weiqing's arms.

“Tian'er... Tian'er...!” Zhou Weiqing was startled, exclaiming at once.

Chapter 206 Tian'er... is pregnant? (2)

Shangguan Xue'er was equally exhausted, but she looked much better than Tian'er. Currently, her eyes were filled with deep respect. "Tian'er is just too strong. After you fell asleep on the city walls, she returned here and began healing the wounded soldiers. At least thirty critically wounded on the verge of death were dragged back by her. Everyone is now calling her Goddess of Life."

Looking at Tian'er fainted in his arms, Zhou Weiqing felt a twinge of pain in his heart, but also filled with love. To Shangguan Xue'er he said: "Hurry, call a doctor here." As he said that, he quickly carried Tian'er back to his room.

He could sense that Tian'er was currently extremely weak and exhausted, almost frail to the point that she couldn't even accept external energy. As such, he dared not even infuse his own Heavenly Energy within her to aid her.

In a matter of moments, Shangguan Xue'er had led a doctor into the room.

"Commander." The doctor was about to salute to Zhou Weiqing, who quickly stopped him and dragged him to the bedside. "Quick, have a look at her. Do you have any medicine to help relieve her current exhausted and frail status?" As long as Tian'er was able to recover a little, Zhou Weiqing would be able to use his Heavenly Energy to help her.

The doctor saw that Zhou Weiqing was in such an agitated state that his eyes were red, and he dared not say anything else, quickly bending over Tian'er to check on her.

It took more than fifteen minutes before the doctor completed his examination, and Zhou Weiqing asked urgently: "How is it? Is it serious?"

The doctor quickly replied: "Commander, please do not worry,

Lady Tian'er is not in serious condition, just that she is too exhausted both physically and in terms of Heavenly Energy. It is not suitable for her to use any medicines now, just let her have a good rest. When she wakes up, let her have some simple foods that can be easily digested. Her physical condition is good, so a few days of rest should bring her back up to top condition."

Hearing his words, Zhou Weiqing heaved a sigh of relief, saying: "That's good, that's good. Indeed! Tian'er is of the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger bloodline, how could she be in trouble? I was just too worried..."

"But... but..." The doctor clearly hesitated for a moment, looking at Zhou Weiqing, then at Tian'er, as if swallowing back the words he was about to speak.

At the side, Shangguan Xue'er said: "But what? Is Tian'er all right? Is there anything wrong?"

Reluctantly, the doctor looked at Zhou Weiqing once more before saying: "I am also not too sure, but from Lady Tian'er's pulse and meridians, it seems like she is expecting. However, though the signal from the meridians seems to have a strong life force, but it isn't obvious. I am not very sure at all."

"What?! Expec...Expecting?!" Zhou Weiqing was so shocked that he couldn't even speak clearly. Indeed, the doctor's words were truly stunning, leaving him standing there stupidly, his body trembling as his entire mind went blank.

It was not just him, even Shangguan Xue'er at the side was so stunned that she couldn't speak. This little brat was just too 'powerful', expecting...? Pregnant?!

It took a few moments for Zhou Weiqing to regain his senses, and abruptly he grabbed hold of the doctor. "You... did you see correctly?"

The doctor was given a terrible fright, but seeing Zhou Weiqing's

anxious and urgent eyes, he quickly said: “What I sensed from her pulse and meridian should not be wrong, just that the life force beating was very different from any other normal pregnant women. Perhaps it is because Lady Tian’er is a Heavenly Jewel Master, and her physique is very unique as well.”

Zhou Weiqing let go of him, saying almost in a muttering tone: “Alright, you can leave first. Thank you.”

The doctor quickly rushed out of the room, and Zhou Weiqing slowly turned around to look at Shangguan Xue’er with a strange look on his face. Slowly, he said: “I... I’m... I’m going to be a father?”

Shangguan Xue’er glared at him exasperatedly and said: “Pregnant before marriage, you rotten scoundrel. How can Tian’er face the world like that?”

However, she quickly discovered that Zhou Weiqing was not even listening to her. Just as she was starting to get worried about him, this fellow suddenly jumped up high, almost knocking into the ceiling of the room as he burst forth in excitement.

“Wahahaha. I’m going to be a father! I’m going to be a father! Hahaha, our Zhou Family has descendents at last!”

“Oeii! Quiet! Are you trying to disturb Tian’er?!” Shangguan Xue’er hissed exasperatedly.

Only then did Zhou Weiqing shut up instantly, clutching his mouth at once as he looked at Shangguan Xue’er, nodding. “Sorry, let me go out and be excited for a bit, I’ll be back in a while.”

As he said that, this fellow disappeared in a flash. Shangguan Xue’er could hear his excited voice ringing from outside. “Wahahaha, I’m going to be a father! I’m going to be a father!”

Hearing his wild howls from outside, Shangguan Xue’er’s gaze turned slightly vacant. “Are men so happy about becoming fathers...? What if...” As she thought up to that point, her face

turned red, and she quickly slapped herself lightly. “What am I thinking!”

Her gaze turned to Tian’er, sleeping peacefully in the bed. Shangguan Xue’er did not realise that her eyes were now filled with envy.

...

Tian’er slept for an entire day and night before she finally woke up. When she opened her eyes, she saw Shangguan Xue’er, lying at the side of her bed asleep.

Seeing the exhausted features of the sleeping Shangguan Xue’er, Tian’er felt a warmth in her heart. Having gone through so much together, the enmity which the two girls had between them at the start had mostly diminished, and they held a new appreciation for each other.

“Xue’er, Xue’er...” Tian’er shook Shangguan Xue’er lightly, waking her up.

“Ah! Tian’er, you’re awake? Don’t move.” Shangguan Xue’er was startled out of her sleep, and as soon as she saw Tian’er was seated up, she quickly supported her back to lie down again.

Tian’er looked at her curiously. “Xue’er, what are you doing? I’m not tired anymore. You should take the bed and sleep...”

Shangguan Xue’er shook her head repeatedly, saying: “How can I do that, you are the patient now, so you must rest well. Otherwise, that bad fellow will have a heartache.”

Tian’er giggled, saying: “What so bad about him? Is what he said really right, women only like bad boys? You obviously have feelings for him, and you can’t let him go, but you just aren’t willing to admit it.”

Shangguan Xue’er blushed faintly and she said: “Who said I have feelings for him. You wait here, don’t move, I’ll go call that fellow. He went to make soup for you.”

“Ah?” Tian’er started momentarily. Just at that moment, the door opened, and Zhou Weiqing entered, carrying a pot with his bare hands, as if not caring about the heat. Seeing that Tian’er had awoken on the bed, he was delighted, instantly putting the pot aside and moving to her.”

“Dearest, you are awake! Quick, lie down properly, I’ll feed you some soup to restore your body. You women, at such a critical time, we cannot be careless at all! You must drink well, eat well, and rest well, don’t get all exhausted like last time. It’s all my fault, how could I let you follow me on the battlefield at such a key period? Ahhh, it’s all my fault!”

Tian’er stared at Zhou Weiqing with jaw agape. “Oei, what are you going on nattering about? Like an old woman...”

At the side, Shangguan Xue’er burst into giggles, saying: “This is called being overly concerned. Who asked you to no longer be representing one person, but two people now?”

“What do you mean not a single person, but two people! What are you two talking about?” Tian’er looked at both Shangguan Xue’er and Zhou Weiqing with great puzzlement.

Zhou Weiqing looked deeply into Tian’er’s eyes and said: “[Dear, you already have it.](#)”

“What do you mean I have it?” Tian’er stared at him puzzled. All of a sudden, she realised something, and her eyes widened abruptly, filled with shock and disbelief as her lips trembled. “What... what did you say? I... I’m expecting?”

Zhou Weiqing held onto Tian’er’s hand and said: “You have the fruit of our love! We are going to be mother and father!”

Tian’er held her mouth, a small voice escaping: “This, this is impossible...”

Zhou Weiqing started. “Why is it impossible?”

Tian’er stared at him with wide eyes, before looking back down

at her flat stomach. “Our Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger bloodline has always not been very fertile. Father has many other women, other concubines, though Mother is his only wife. However, not a single one of them has had a child so far. We... we...”

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “Heh heh, that is no problem, this big bro’s capabilities are just too strong! Furthermore, you are fresh and fertile, heh, when the conditions are ripe, success will automatically come! Come, be good, I’ll feed you the soup.”

As he said that, Zhou Weiqing opened the lid of the pot, ladling out a full bowl of delicious smelling soup. Taking a spoon of it, he blew lightly on it for awhile before carefully bringing it to Tian’er’s mouth.

Only when she had finished the bowl of soup did Tian’er break out of her reverie. She held onto Zhou Weiqing’s hands, saying: “Little Fatty, I... I need to go home. Can you come to my house when you finish up here? Our Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger bloodline is very different from humans, so only Father can confirm whether or not I really... really am pregnant.”

“Okay, sure, whatever you say.” Zhou Weiqing’s expression was totally that of a loving father, the love in his heart for Tian’er was unconcealed.

Seeing his dazed and silly look, Tian’er couldn’t help but burst out in giggles, blushing deeply as she said: “Don’t be too anxious. I am fine. Even if I really am pregnant, it will be a long time before I can give birth. Our Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger bloodline usually have a gestational cycle of five to ten years. Furthermore, although we are not very fertile, once we have a child, there should not be any problems due to our strong bloodlines. Our bloodline powers will act to protect their legacy.”

“Five to ten years?! So long?!” Zhou Weiqing exclaimed in surprise.

Tian’er nodded and said: “We are not truly human after all.

Although, I do not know whether our child will be born like you or like me, a little tiger.”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “No problems, no problems, as long as it is ours, no matter what I will love!”

Tian’er looked at him exasperatedly and said: “Alright, go handle your business. Such a huge battle was just finished, and there are many things for you to settle. I am totally fine, and Xue’er is here to accompany me too.”

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “What can be more important than my precious wife?! Alright, since you are alright... when things are settled here, I will also rush to bring you back to my father-in-law to let him see you. Xue’er, I’ll have to trouble you to take care of Tian’er for a while, there are indeed quite a lot of things for me to settle.”

Literal translation, this is a slang for ‘you’re pregnant’

Chapter 206 Tian'er... is pregnant? (3)

Shangguan Xue'er nodded gently in agreement.

Only then did Zhou Weiqing turn to leave. However, not long after, both girls soon heard his voice traveling from outside. "Hahaha, I'm going to be a father..."

...

It took another entire day before the clearing of the battlefield was finally complete. All the enemy corpses had been thrown into a massive hole dug far outside the city walls, while the soldiers on their side were brought back into the city for their families to claim. For those without families, they were also buried with military honours.

In terms of pension payments for the bereaved, Zhou Weiqing was extremely generous. Every family with a deceased soldier was given fifty gold coins. This battle had been brutal and cruel indeed, but to the Heavenly Bow Empire and the Peerless Regiment, it was a crucial turning point in history. It was this fight that had truly cemented their place in the Crescent City, properly establishing their foothold in the lands.

Ming Yu and his personal guard were also welcomed into the city. Ming Yu had also taken the initiative to have his men temporarily help take over some of the guard duties on the walls.

...

Governor's Mansion. Grand Meeting Hall.

Zhou Weiqing's brow was slightly furrowed as he looked at all his officers before him, all of them still bearing their wounds of battle. Taking a deep breath, he turned to Yan Zhexi before him, saying: "Alright, what are our wounded and death toll numbers?"

Yan Zhexi nodded, the light in his eyes dimming slightly as he said: "Of our three thousand fresh recruits, one thousand seven

hundred and sixty two have lost their lives on the battlefield, three hundred and forty one critically injured, and the rest have minor injuries. In the future, those who can still fight... we have barely a thousand left.”

Hearing Yan Zhexi’s words, everyone drew in a deep cold breath. This was truly the cruelty of war! Of three thousand fresh recruits, all of them were injured, and those out of commission or dead was more than two thirds! This was mostly because of Tian’er’s powerful support and healing on the north gates, where the injury and death toll was the lowest. After all, they had also been the first to get help from Ming Yu. For the south gate where the fighting had been the toughest, out of the thousand fresh recruits, more than eighty five percent had perished.

Zhou Weiqing subconsciously gripped both fists so hard that his bones creaked out loud.

Yan Zhexi continued: “For our Peerless Heavy Cavalry, due to the sheer defensive power of their heavy armour, they are in the best condition. Besides exhaustion, they are pretty much unhurt. As for the five hundred men from the Peerless Regiment First Main Company, two hundred and sixty one have minor injuries, a hundred and three with heavy or critical injuries... and... forty nine dead.”

When Zhou Weiqing heard the words ‘forty nine dead’, he stood up abruptly momentarily, before he fell back in his seat once again helplessly.

His heart was bleeding in pain! Each and every one of his Peerless Regiment soldiers had been painstaking trained and cultivated with so much time, effort and resources. They were truly elites, especially his First Main Company which were the cream of the crop. This time... having a tenth of his Peerless First Main Company perish... although this was a very small percentage compared to the fresh recruits, or even compared to their enemies, but it was truly a massive blow to Zhou Weiqing.

Even in the northern border wars, the Peerless Regiment had rampaged through their enemies without any losses. Yet, this time, almost fifty of his brothers had left the world forever. How could Zhou Weiqing accept it in his heart.

At the side, Lei Zi's eyes were already red, his aura unstable around him.

“Weiqing.” Lin TianAo reminded Zhou Weiqing instantly.

Zhou Weiqing took in another deep breath before letting it loose slowly. After he had calmed down, he said: “For our Peerless Regiment brothers, I want their bodies to be escorted back to the ZhongTian Empire for burial. Fallen leaves must return to their roots, let them go home. If they have families, that would be best. Otherwise, invite the ZhongTian Empire to bury them with accolades. Once they have been sent away, we will see them off together with all our brothers.”

As he spoke up to this point, his eyes had also turned red. This battle might be a miracle to any onlooker, but in Zhou Weiqing's heart, it was also a terrible blow.

This heavy atmosphere lasted for almost fifteen minutes before Zhou Weiqing finally spoke up once more: “Kou Rui, what about the Kalise Empire side?”

Kou Rui stepped forward and said: “The remnants of the Kalise Empire armies have already started retreating this morning. According to our observations, their retreat of wounded and unwounded soldiers was barely twenty five thousand in total. That is to say that more than twenty five thousand of their soldiers had perished in their attack on us. We have indeed made them pay a huge price for this attack.”

Zhou Weiqing nodded, his expression finally easing slightly. His gaze turned to Ming Yu at his side, saying: “Bro Ming, once again I truly thank you for your aid. If not for your timely arrival, although we might not have all perished, our losses would

definitely have been far greater, possibly losing the Crescent City as well.”

Ming Yu laughed heartily and said: “[To be able to offer fuel in snowy weather](#), I am truly honoured. In war, it is inevitable that deaths occur, you should look ahead to the future instead.”

By now, Zhou Weiqing had finally recovered from his emotional turmoil, and he said calmly: “Bro Ming, this time, your presence here... is it under orders from the Fei Li Empire, or is it on your own accord?”

Ming Yu smiled faintly and said: “Do you remember our previous agreement? I have already arranged whatever necessary and tendered my resignation. These men that I have brought are all my personal guards and trusted subordinates. Will Commander Zhou still honour that promise?”

Hearing his words, Zhou Weiqing was delighted. “Of course, of course, that is my greatest wish, how could I not agree. Bro Ming, you have already seen the power of our Peerless Regiment, but what we lack the most is an outstanding general and commander like yourself! No problem at all, I will give up my position. From now on, you will be the commander of the Peerless Regiment.”

Ming Yu started, giving Zhou Weiqing a profound look as he said: “Aren’t you worried I will steal your Peerless Regiment away?”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “As the saying goes ‘If you use a man, don’t suspect him. if you suspect him, don’t use him in the first place.’ As i said previously, I have nothing against your Heavenly Demon Sect. Furthermore, what benefit is there for you to do harm to me? I still remember the terms you asked for clearly. In this matter, cooperating together is definitely a perfect win-win solution. Bro Ming, I trust that you are an intelligent person, so why bother testing me?”

Ming Yu joined him in laughter, saying: “It looks like you are truly the one with great wisdom. Very well, since you trust me that

much, I will not say anything else. Leave the commanding and tactics to me. However, the position of Commander, I will not accept the actual position of Commander, I can be your Vice Commander. This Peerless Regiment was set up by you, and every single army troop has its own nature, character, and this is greatly connected to their first commander and his character. It can be said that you are the very soul of the Peerless Regiment. As such, it is imperative that the soul exists.”

Originally, the other officers looked rather anxious when Zhou Weiqing announced he was stepping down from the Commander position. When they heard Ming Yu’s words, they nodded in agreement, their faces relaxing once more.

For Kou Rui, Yan Zhexi and even Zang Lang, those officers who had graduated from the Fei Li Military Academy, all of their eyes were fiery hot. In their hearts, Ming Yu had always been their absolute idol throughout their time in the academy! The Fei Li God General, he was one of the most respected amongst the younger generation. To be under his command, they would definitely learn much from him as well!

Zhou Weiqing said: “Bro Ming, towards our future actions, do you have any suggestions? The main force of our Peerless Regiment should arrive within five to ten days. At that time, even if the Kalise Empire sends an entire Legion against us, I will not be afraid.”

Without hesitation, Ming Yu said: “Expand, recruit, training and rallying.”

A hint of surprise flickered in Zhou Weiqing’s eyes as he said: “Expanding at this time, isn’t it a bit too quick?”

Ming Yu smiled faintly and said: “It is not too soon. On the contrary, the timing is quite perfect. With the Battle of the Crescent City, we have used almost a tenth of the enemy’s numbers to deal them a crushing defeat. Everything else aside, just

in terms of reputation and momentum, this will give us a massive advantage, especially since the hearts of the people here are already on our sides. Furthermore, if we consider the Kalise Empire side, in the near future they should not be able to launch any further attacks. If my estimations are correct, they have only two possible ways to deal with us.”

“Firstly, due to your outstanding and prominent performance in this battle, the Kalise Empire will definitely know that if they do not finish you off first, any future battles will still result in a great loss to them. As such, before they launch another such major attacks, not only do they have to gather an army even greater than this time, they also need to gather a bigger, and stronger batch of Heavenly Jewel Masters from the Bai Da Empire. However... if they choose this method... Hmph.”

As he spoke up to this point, a cold light flashed in Ming Yu’s eyes. “Our current greatest advantage is that the enemy does not know that our Peerless Regiment does not just number this amount, but with a large main force behind us. More so, they are not clear about the true strength about the Peerless Regiment. As such, all of their estimations will not be accurate. If they dare to attack once more, this time, we will not just defeat them and send them packing... I dare to say that we can finish them off totally right here. If that happens, unless the Bai Da Empire actually sends a major force into the Heavenly Bow Empire, it will be easy for us to revive the Heavenly Bow Empire without any other trouble.”

“Of course, this is also the path that I hope the situation develops into the most.”

“As for the second method, it will be a relatively conservative method for the Kalise side. However, if I am there Kalise Commander, I will definitely choose this path. That is to fortify their own lines and wait for a good chance.”

“If they choose such a path, then their best option is the draw most of their forces back to the Heavenly Bow Empire capital, the

Heavenly Bow City as the point to shore up their lines, and greatly fortifying the Heavenly Bow City. After all, sieging a city and defending a city are two totally different concepts. Furthermore, the Heavenly Bow City has the advantage of the Stars Forest as a natural defensive terrain. As long as they have sufficient numbers guarding the city, even if we want to attack them, it will not be easy at all, and we will have to expend many resources and lives to succeed.”

Of course, even if the enemy choses this path, we do not need to be afraid either. This will give us sufficient time to build up and accumulate power. The Heavenly Bow Empire has not been occupied for long by the Kalise Empire, and before this, the conflict between the Heavenly Bow Empire and Kalise Empire has lasted for a long time, deeply rooted in the hearts of the citizens. As such, we can use this to show that we represent a just cause, and it will be far easier for us to recruit new troops. In terms of finances, we have the support of the ZhongTian and Fei Li Empire... if you give me half a year, I can recruit and gather five more Regiments of soldiers... train them well in the strictest possible way. If I have a year, even if we have to face the Bai Da Empire head on, I am still confident in holding them off.”

The Fei Li God General truly lived up to his name. The series of analysis he laid out caused Zhou Weiqing and the other officers to nod continuously in agreement.

Ming Yu stood up, taking out a map. Yan Zhexi and Kou Rui quickly stepped forward to help unfurl the map, and all of them surrounded it.

The map was extremely detailed, filled with various small symbols and denotations, dazzling Zhou Weiqing’s eyes. He could barely make out that this was a map which included the Fei Li Empire, Heavenly Bow Empire, Kalise Empire and Bai Da Empire.

Literal translation of idiom, basically offering timely assistance

Chapter 207 Sis Ru Se! (1)

Ming Yu lifted a finger, pointing to a segment on the map, saying: “This is our Crescent City, situated in an important point in trading routes. Previously, your tactic of a year of tax exemption was truly an inspired one. However, we can add an addendum to that... the tax exemption should only be for original citizens of the Crescent City, and the merchant traffic that comes in and out constantly should still be taxed. These traders are all extremely rich; if we do not shave some off of them, then it would be a major disadvantage, even a disservice, to ourselves.”

“Weiqing, have a look there. To our east and west flanks, there lies a city each not far from us. The distance from those two cities to our Crescent City is about a hundred and fifty li to two hundred li, and their sizes are actually not too different from the Crescent City. Within the area controlled by these three cities, there are a total of two hundred and sixty three villages, and the overall population of the cities and villages added together is actually shockingly high if we add them all up. This has a historical reason, after all this is close to the Fei Li Empire borders, and the safety and prosperity of the Fei Li Empire is naturally more attractive; thus almost two thirds of the original Heavenly Bow Empire citizens are actually at the north. As long as we take control of those two cities, not only will we be able to greatly increase our income and resources, we can also gain much influence. More importantly, we will have the manpower to begin proper recruitment. We can also seize the chance to spread the word about our great victory over the Kalise Empire, and hopefully draw the attention of the Heavenly Bow Empire army whose remnants are scattered all over the lands.”

By occupying all three cities, that means we will form a line of control that is easy to guard, and it also means we will truly have our backs to the Fei Li Empire. If the Kalise Empire chooses to

defend and are not urgent about attacking us, it is even better for us. For now, gathering our strength is the most important. With the full might of the Peerless Regiment as our ace, when the time comes, even if the enemies send two Legions, we do not need to be afraid. Furthermore, if the Bai Da Empire really sends a major troop against us, that will give us the perfect opportunity to request for aid from the Fei Li Empire. They will not condone having such a huge army from their enemies so near their borders, and by fighting in our lands with us as a barrier, it is far more attractive than having the Bai Da Empire invade them instead... so they will most likely agree. Once our army strength is sufficient and with proper training, it will be easier to do anything we plan from there.”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “Bro Ming, your thoughts truly coincide naturally with mine, we are indeed perfectly in harmony. Taking the north of our original Heavenly Bow Empire territory, recruitment, stocking up of supplies... growing our strength to wait for a good opportunity. Very good, now I can feel easy in passing you the direct command of my army.”

“The greatest benefit of a lateral expansion like that is that it will be less likely to cross the baseline tolerance of the enemy. We can stay silent and unmoving while building up, and once we act, it has to be a swift and crushing movement that has great effect, so [slice through our enemies like splitting bamboo](#). Not only do I want to revive our Heavenly Bow Empire, but I also want to wipe out the Kalise Empire from the map. They have given us such pain and suffering, and I will definitely return it ten times, a hundred times!”

As he spoke up to that point, Zhou Weiqing’s fists were gripped tightly, a cold light in his eyes.

Zhou Weiqing had a relatively simple style of judgement towards things. He believed in the old saying ‘Words are but wind , but

seeing is believing'. In the Fei Li Empire, although Ming Yu and his personal guards had lost to his Peerless Regiment, Ming Yu had also shown him his strength and skill in commanding his troops.

In that respect, Zhou Weiqing held great respect for Ming Yu. He had been able to command and wield his thousand men as if they were part of his body, an extension of his will. Such an ability, it was not something any ordinary commander could do.

It was also due to this respect for Ming Yu that he actually felt a stronger good will towards the Heavenly Demon Sect. One of Zhou Weiqing's strongest points was that he had a good judge on his own abilities, knowing where his own strength and weaknesses lay.

In terms of pure fighting and combat prowess, even five of Ming Yu added together was no match for Zhou Weiqing. But... in terms of commanding an army, perhaps ten Zhou Weiqings could barely catch up with the Fei Li God General!

As such, although Ming Yu had just joined them, Zhou Weiqing instantly declared his absolute trust in him. Zhou Weiqing was extremely clear that the type of human being Ming Yu was... they were often proud and aloof. If he presented himself as wary and on guard against him, perhaps this Fei Li God General would leave... after all the Fei Li Empire was a good example.

What Zhou Weiqing wanted was to allow Ming Yu to use all his talents to their maximum. He could understand why Ming Yu had come... the Heavenly Demon Sect aside, perhaps it was more that he truly wanted to have a chance to command the Peerless Regiment of his.

For someone like Ming Yu, even though his cultivation level was not higher, but his rank and status in the Heavenly Demon Sect was perhaps even higher than his father Ming Wu. If he was not willing to do so, even the Heavenly Demon Sect would not be able to force him to go aid Zhou Weiqing.

The Peerless Regiment had been built from ground up by Zhou Weiqing, after so many trials and tribulations. He knew how much effort and resources he had poured in the Peerless Regiment. Even if one ignored the massive amounts of gold and resources, just in terms of the spirit, vigor and thought he had invested, without Shangguan Fei'er and the Heaven's Expanse Palace's precious medicines, without Long Shiya's Heavenly Cores to create those medicines, and without so many skilled Consolidating Equipment Masters painstakingly creating so many Consolidating Equipment Scrolls... how could the Peerless Regiment be at its current state? Even now, the entire Peerless Regiment had not been fully outfitted. To have lost forty nine of his elite warriors and brothers, Zhou Weiqing's heart truly ached deeply.

Of course, it wasn't that Zhou Weiqing's heart did not ache when he passed the command of his precious Peerless Regiment to Ming Yu. However, he was clear that only an outstanding commander like Ming Yu could truly make full use of the Peerless Regiments entirety, to flourish their true power and strength. He did not want to see another time like the fight in the Crescent City. Despite the fact that they had achieved final victory, and Ming Yu did not speak of anything, but Zhou Weiqing knew that their losses were because of his own mistakes in command. If he had been able to hold back longer, waiting a month before he actually attacked the Crescent City, they would never have suffered such losses. He might have the talent at military command, but it was definitely extremely undeveloped and immature. Zhou Weiqing did not want to see the force he had painstakingly built up wasted away due to his own commands.

It was because of all these factors and considerations that he did not hesitate to pass command to Ming Yu, while he remained at the background overseeing everything. Of course, that did not mean that his existence was useless. On the contrary, just like what Ming Yu had said, he was the spiritual leader of the Peerless Regiment, the soul and backbone of the entire Regiment. It would

not be easy for Ming Yu to even attempt to take over his position. Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing would still be the decider in matters of the big picture. In terms of direct military command, perhaps Zhou Weiqing was still lacking, but in terms of big picture strategy and the entire political structural layout of the world, he was no lesser than Ming Yu. Perhaps in terms of level, he was at an even higher state than Ming Yu.

Only Zhou Weiqing himself knew clearly what connection he had with the Heaven's Expanse Palace and Heavenly Snow Mountain, and how to make use of that connection.

Furthermore, the Peerless Regiment was created by Zhou Weiqing and his companions. Even if Ming Yu had the command of the Regiment, he did not need to worry. After all, no matter what, Ming Yu would never be able to take away the Peerless Regiment.

This bloody battle in the Crescent City could be said to have taught Zhou Weiqing a massive, painful lesson, but it was valuable experience nonetheless. Towards any future battles and wars, Zhou Weiqing was beginning to have a clearer picture and understanding.

Ming Yu laughed heartily and said: "Very good, I shall not be too courteous then. I hope that you are truly letting me have full command, and absolute control in that sense."

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: "Your every order is to be executed without fail. If anyone disobeys, they will be punished with martial law."

Ming Yu said: "Very good. Next, what we shall do first is to build up our campaign. Our losses this time are extremely high, and the citizens in the Crescent City will not be able to recover from the pain so quickly. As such, recruiting should not be our top priority any time soon. After all, our Peerless Regiment main force should be arriving soon. Of course, my dear Commander Zhou, I have to

say that if the rest of your Peerless Regiment are just [flowers in a mirror and the moon's reflection in water](#), and not as you promised, don't blame me if I just walk away! As a commander and general, it is your Peerless Regiment that drew me here, and I would be extremely honoured to be able to command an elite regiment like that. Otherwise, I might as well remain in the Fei Li Empire and continue scheming along with them.”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “You will definitely be satisfied. Without question, this First Main Company that I have brought are the finest of the entire Peerless Regiment, the cream of the crop. However, the rest of the troops are not to be dismissed easily. Especially so for the Peerless Heavy Cavalry... they definitely have equivalent strength, or perhaps even stronger.”

Ming Yu nodded and said: “Let the Peerless Regiment brothers rest and heal up. I will send my personal guard out to begin spreading news and propaganda, to let the brilliant results we have achieved spread through the north. We must let the citizens in the north know that our Heavenly Bow Empire armies have returned. Next, we just need to continue moving step by step and it should be without any problems. After all, the most difficult and important fight is now over.

Zhou Weiqing began to introduce Ming Yu to the various structure and formations of the Peerless Regiment in detail, their powers and strengths. After which, this Commander once again passed the reins of power totally to Ming Yu. By leaving halfway, firstly it was to show full support for Ming Yu, and secondly was also because his heart was now with Tian'er and his precious one in her stomach.

...

After a few days of sorrow, the Crescent City slowly regained a sense of normalcy. The four gates opened wide, and normal operations resumed bit by bit.

Ming Yu was definitely the sort who carried out his tasks with speed and vigor, with the force of thunder and speed of lightning. Within these few days, he had already familiarized himself with all of the Peerless Regiment, all the various formations within and their strengths and weaknesses. After some discussion with Zhou Weiqing, he had also added his personal guard to the Peerless Regiment, splitting them into two 'Main Companies' to suit the Peerless Regiment's formations. As such, the total strength of the Peerless Regiment was actually now that of an actual Regiment.

Unexpectedly, in just four days, the main force of the Peerless Regiment had passed through the Fei Li Empire borders and reached the Crescent City. When Zhou Weiqing caught sight of the familiar sight of his closest armies arriving, tears almost threatened to fall! The arrival of the Peerless Regiment meant that they could finally hold steady in the north of the Heavenly Bow Empire, no longer needing to worry about enemy attacks.

Currently, the entire Heavenly Bow Empire armies were fully ready to begin the revival of their empire, their various departments deployed out, especially in terms of their proper formations.

Literal translation – basically similar to our 'knife through hot butter'

Literal translation of idiom. Basically means a beautiful dream/illusion

Chapter 207 Sis Ru Se! (2)

The Peerless Regiment's original total army strength was about seven thousand men, including the five thousand Peerless Archers, and two thousand Peerless Heavy Cavalry Soldiers. That was the true core of the Peerless Regiment. Of course, there were also the two thousand backup Heavy Cavalry Soldiers. Including them, the Peerless Regiment numbered nine thousand.

As the main force of the Peerless Regiment arrived, there was yet another force of five hundred cavalry soldiers. This force was one that Zhou Weiqing had specially given orders to be invited before they left the northern ZhongTian borders. It was the Snow Deer Cavalry Troops from the WanShou Empire that had been promised as aid to him by their tribe leader.

Although the Snow Deer Cavalry only numbered five hundred men, these five hundred could be considered amongst the top three cavalry forces in the entire WanShou Empire. From that, one could imagine how strong they were. Of course, the reason they would join him was because of the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor and their debt to him, and Zhou Weiqing would never forget it. Naturally, he would also treat these Snow Deer Cavalry soldiers extremely well, directly bringing them into his Peerless Regiment and awarding them the same pay and treatment.

With Ming Yu's personal guard also integrated into the Peerless Regiment, their total strength was now up to more than ten thousand, a full and proper Regiment at last.

...

The first full military meeting in the Crescent City was currently being held now, directed by Zhou Weiqing.

The meeting was attended by the upper echelons of the Peerless Regiment. At the same time, Zhou Weiqing was using Princess Difuya's name to issue a series of orders.

The Peerless Regiment Commander would still be Zhou Weiqing. Besides that, there were now a few Vice Commanders. Amongst them, Ming Yu was named the First Vice Commander, and he would be in charge of daily matters. Towards this point, before the meeting had started, he had already communicated this to the other higher ranked officers of the Peerless Regiment, and only after getting their approval did he announce it to rank and file. Besides Ming Yu, the other Vice Commanders were Hua Feng, as the Heavenly Bow Unit Leader and overall archery drillmaster. The original Ruffian Battalion Commander Wei Feng was also still one of the Vice Commanders of the Peerless Regiment. However, they now had their own responsibilities. Hua Feng would be mainly in charge of his duties as the Archery Drillmaster, and Wei Feng would be in charge of logistics. Both of them would complement Ming Yu in commanding the entire army.

Besides them, the other officers were also given their responsibilities as under Ming Yu's advice, the entire Peerless Regiment had their formations reestablished.

The main unit of choice was still the 'main company', with five hundred men to a single 'Main Company'. The First Main Company was now converted to Zhou Weiqing's personal guard, while the other Main Companies would remain unchanged. Ming Yu's personal guard battalion had been changed into two light cavalry Main Companies when they entered the Peerless Regiment, while the Snow Deer Cavalry soldiers formed a Assault Main Company in the formation.

Speaking of the Snow Deer Cavalry soldiers, it had truly given Ming Yu a large amount of respect towards Zhou Weiqing. When he had first seen the tall and robust Snow Deer Tribesmen amongst the arriving main force of the Peerless Regiment, Ming Yu had been totally shocked.

In his many wars in the northern borders, Ming Yu had witnessed the terrifying power of the Snow Deer Cavalry with his

own eyes. At that time, he had said that if he could command ten thousand Snow Deer Cavalry, he could be undefeated on land combat. One could imagine the impression that the Snow Deer Cavalry had left on him to actually say something like that.

Upon seeing the Snow Deer Cavalry, Ming Yu no longer had doubts regarding the overall strength of Zhou Weiqing's Peerless Regiment.

Naturally, there was no need for the Snow Deer Cavalry to undergo any changes or improvements. Even compared to the Berserker or Gold Crow Tribe warriors, their individual strength and power were equal or even stronger. Furthermore, the Snow Deer Heavenly Beasts that were their beloved mounts were far more powerful Heavenly Beasts than the Unicorn Heavenly Beasts.

As for Ming Yu's original personal guard, now the two light cavalry Main Companies, they would require a serious change in outfitting. In this, Zhou Weiqing was extremely generous. Not only were they issued nearly the same equipment as the Peerless Regiment Archers, even the secret medicines to awaken their Heavenly Energy as well as provisions of the Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, all of them were given the same treatment as the other Peerless Regiment soldiers. These two Main Companies would be directly commandeered by Ming Yu.

Zhou Weiqing's trust truly touched Ming Yu, and he used his own actions to prove that he indeed deserved the name of the Fei Li God General.

On the tenth day after the Peerless Regiment main force had arrived in the Crescent City, Ming Yu personally led his two Main Companies out on an expedition. Using his strategy and plan to trick open the city gates, he took two days to conquer the two cities on the east and west flank of the Crescent City. Although the enemies did not put up much resistance, it did not tarnish the fact that Ming Yu had captured the two cities without losing a single soldier. With them in their command, the three cities formed a

triangular formation that would feed off each other, surrounding and protecting one another. This would be the base of the entire Heavenly Bow Empire armies.

What followed next was no longer any of Zhou Weiqing's business, as he had passed on the responsibilities to his men. As for him, once again he entered close door cultivation. Besides a few required business he had to attend to daily, he and Shangguan Xue'er basically cultivated together with Tian'er everyday.

The recruitment was far more smooth sailing than any of them had expected. After capturing the other two cities and settling them properly, they had begun recruitment. At the same time, all other aspects were moving along in proper motion as well.

In another half month, the Fei Li Empire had sent a second batch of supplies and resources. At the same time, the 'shopping list' that Zhou Weiqing had ordered had also reached the Crescent City. The main armies of the Heavenly Bow Empire began their outfitting.

This time, the recruitment process was far different from the previous times.

The previous recruitment process had been the responsibility of Yan Zhexi. The facts had proven that when compared to Ming Yu, he still had much to learn. Originally, Yan Zhexi had undergone a strict screening process before recruitment, but Ming Yu was the total opposite.

When Ming Yu underwent the recruitment process, his only rule was that the age requirement was from fifteen to thirty five, and anyone of the age could join the army. Anyone who signed up were taken. After which, he did not issue them any army uniforms or supplies, directly throwing them into an integrated training camp. This would be his screening process instead, using the training as a means of testing over a period of time. From the various strict trainings, different talents would show themselves in different ways, and they would be thus allocated to the different formations

that suited them. In this way, not only was it more effective, it also prevented the loss of any possible hidden talents and a far more accurate allocation of talents.

In just a matter of one month, with the three cities on the north of the Heavenly Bow Empire as the base, they had already recruited two Regiments of soldiers, undergoing a strict series of training.

Ming Yu's training methods were simple, split into two portions. Individual combat training and group combat training.

When it came to individual combat training, he directly delegated the task down, splitting the Peerless Regiment up totally. Each of the Peerless Regiment soldiers would be in charge of two fresh recruits, and they would train in personal combat together. As for group combat training, even the Peerless Regiment would have to attend training. After all, though the Peerless Regiment were extremely powerful individually, their group combat had a lot of room for improvement.

"Little Fatty, Little Fatty, look who's here..." At the moment, Zhou Weiqing was accompanying Tian'er, sunbathing in the courtyard. He had asked several doctors and received information that sun was good for an unborn child. Although Tian'er did not currently show any signs of being pregnant yet, Zhou Weiqing was clearly becoming more and more like a foolish doting father.

The sudden voice that rang out was all too familiar to Zhou Weiqing. It was his first teacher, the one who had initiated him to the world, teaching him everything about being an adult and surviving in the world, and perhaps the one with the greatest influence on him in making him the man he was today. The God Eye Scoundrel, Mu En!

Mu En's time in the past months had been great. He now had a wife, a daughter, and he didn't have to handle much in the entire Peerless Regiment. At the same time, Zhou Weiqing was his

disciple, and within the entire Peerless Regiment, his status was no lower than Hua Feng's.

“Master, what good thing has come up, that you are so exci.....” Seeing that Mu En had come, naturally Zhou Weiqing stood up to receive him personally. However, before he could even complete his sentence, it was as if someone had gripped his throat, and he could no longer speak. He was so excited that his body was trembling violently.

Naturally, Mu En had not come alone. Right behind Mu En, a general followed behind him, dressed in chainmail, looking valiant and gallant indeed. However, the handsome face of the general had a hint of delicateness.

Seeing Zhou Weiqing, the young general was just as excited, trembling so much that the chainmail began to give forth a scraping sound.

“Little Fatty.. You... you're finally back.”

Under Tian'er and Shanguan Xue'er's surprised looks, Zhou Weiqing suddenly charged forward, enveloping the youth in a big hug as he began to sob. “Big Sis Ru Se, you are still alive! You're still alive! That's great... that's great...”

Indeed, this valiant general, wasn't it Zhou Weiqing's childhood friend and 'big sis' Xiao Ru Se.

Ever since he knew that his homeland had been invaded and conquered by enemies, Zhou Weiqing had been suppressing the sorrow in his heart. Currently, seeing Xiao Ru Se in front of him, one could imagine the sheer agitation in his heart. Xiao Ru Se was still alive, and this news was of extraordinary importance to him, holding great meaning. He had deep feelings for this sister of his. After the destruction of his Empire, finally meeting his kin once more, all the suppressed emotions and feelings in Zhou Weiqing's heart finally burst out.

Xiao Ru Se was also crying hard, hugging Zhou Weiqing back, and the pair of brother and sister just stood there hugging and crying.

At this side, they had been crying, but both Tian'er and Shangguan Xue'er were both thrown in confusion, both of them exchanging glances. Although Zhou Weiqing had called out 'Big Sis Ru Se', in their eyes this young general in front of them was a man. Furthermore, both girls were extremely familiar with Zhou Weiqing, and the way he had called out was obviously not just an ordinary relationship! What was going on?

At the side, Mu En was grinning away happily, but his eyes were growing wet. Seeing Zhou Weiqing and Xiao Ru Se hugging and reunited, with the hopes of reviving his Empire right in front of him, how could he not be overjoyed?

After crying for awhile, Zhou Weiqing finally regained control. Holding Xiao Ru Se by the shoulders, he asked: "Big Sis Ru Se, how have you been these few years?"

Xiao Ru Se rubbed her eyes, saying bitterly: "Our home has been destroyed, how could I have been having a good time?"

Mu En clapped the two on their shoulders and said: "Come on, let's go in before speaking. Ru Se has rushed here, and it has been tough on her these few years..."

"Right, right..." Zhou Weiqing quickly invited Xiao Ru Se into the courtyard.

Before they had taken a few steps, Xiao Ru Se spotted Shangguan Xue'er, and her face froze momentarily before she smiled happily. In her original female voice, she exclaimed: "Bing'er, it has been a long time! You're even more beautiful now..."

Shangguan Xue'er started, but she quickly realised that it was another case of mistaken identity. However, upon hearing that Xiao Ru Se's voice was female, she couldn't help but ask: "You..."

are you male or female?”

Xiao Ru Se exclaimed in surprise: “Bing’er, I’m Xiao Ru Se! We have been apart for just a mere few years, and you have already forgotten this poor ex Company Leader under your command?”

Chapter 207 Sis Ru Se! (3)

Originally, many years ago, when Xiao Ru Se was still a Company Leader, Shangguan Bing'er had already been her Battalion Commander. When Zhou Weiqing heard her call out 'Bing'er', at her side, his heart was filled with a thick sentiment as he remembered those times. Indeed! He had been apart from Bing'er for so long, and he truly missed her so much. He began to wonder when she would actually come out from her closed door cultivation.

Although he was thinking of that in his heart, he quickly stepped forward to explain the situation. "Big Sis Ru Se, you have got the wrong person. This is not Bing'er, she is Bing'er's sister, part of triplets, Shangguan Xue'er. Naturally, she does not recognize you. Xue'er, Tian'er, let me introduce you both. This is Big Sis Xiao Ru Se, I grew up together with her. Due to the fact she wanted to join the army, she disguised herself as a man. Big Sis Ru Se is a heroine in the army indeed!"

Tian'er and Shangguan Xue'er instantly glanced at Zhou Weiqing with a similar, meaningful look, before they greeted Xiao Ru Se.

Naturally, Xiao Ru Se was also examining the two girls. Shangguan Xue'er and Bing'er looked exactly alike, so much so that she was literally amazed. As for Tian'er's lustrous white hair and purple orbs accentuating her beauty, it was also extremely shocking. She couldn't help but think to herself: It's only been a few years, and that little rascal Weiqing has managed to meet with such beautiful women. Looking at their eyes... it seems their connection with him isn't that simple after all!

Zhou Weiqing invited Xiao Ru Se into the house, as he couldn't wait to ask about the circumstance on how their Empire was destroyed previously.

Xiao Ru Se took some time to calm herself down before following

him into the house.

At that time, the Kalise armies had attacked just so suddenly. No one knew how they had gotten news that Admiral Zhou was not at the frontlines, and had returned for the capital city for a short time. At first time, they had sent all their armies in a massive surprise attack.

Besides the Kalise Empire's own entire army of six Regiments of soldiers, there were also five more Regiments from the Bai Da Empire. Furthermore, the Bai Da Empire had dispatched more than a dozen powerful Heavenly Jewel Masters, led by a Heavenly King powerhouse in a concerted attack.

There was no chance at all. The Heavenly Bow army line crumbled almost instantly, and the army rampaged all the way through the capital city. At that point, although Admiral Zhou had led his personal guard and the armies in the Heavenly Bow City to put up a last ditch stubborn resistance, the gap between both sides was just too huge. At the last moment, Admiral Zhou was forced to sacrifice himself to use his Darkness Consolidated Fate Denying Seal, Sealing the Heavenly Bow Emperor Di Fengling and some of the other higher ranking officials of the Heavenly Bow Empire in the Royal Palace.

During that time, Xiao Ru Se had been on the frontlines of the Kalise border, and she had been one of those who had first faced off against the Kalise and Bai Da armies. After the large battle, when all was lost, they had no choice but to flee in all directions. These defeated troops ended up springing up in small rebellions in the past year, attempting to revive their homeland.

Due to Xiao Ru Se's identity, rank and status, her own rebellion troop was one of the largest of them all, numbering almost six thousand in total as they hid in one of the remote hills. Alas, their strength was just too low, and just by themselves, besides using the complicated terrain of the hills to protect themselves, they were unable to do much more in terms of resistance.

However, not long ago, it was Ming Yu's spreading the word which had indispensable in letting them learn that a force of Heavenly Bow Empire armies had actually taken back the Crescent City, even managing a magnificent defensive victory after the Kalise armies laid siege once more. More importantly, after some more scouting, Xiao Ru Se had heard the names of Princess Difuya and Zhou Weiqing, and she immediately rushed over.

Hearing Xiao Ru Se's descriptions, Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but sigh deeply.

"Sis Ru Se, do not worry. This time, not only are we here to revive our homeland, to bring back the Heavenly Bow Empire, we will also destroy the Kalise Empire. In the past, we were just too weak. However, those days are long past. Soon, we will firmly stand strong as one of the powerhouses in the mainland."

Tears brimmed in Xiao Ru Se's eyes, as she looked at Zhou Weiqing with a smile on her face. "Little Wei, it is so good that you are back. We can finally have a mainstay, a pillar to support us. I do know where most of the remnants of our armies are, and I will dispatch some men immediately to contact them and gather them together. Once we can mass our forces back together, we can start to regain our homeland as quickly as possible."

Zhou Weiqing was delighted, and exclaimed: "That would be great. We are now in the stage of gathering strength, to invade and reoccupy the Heavenly Bow City in one fell swoop."

Xiao Ru Se asked: "Little Fatty, how have you spent the past few years?"

Zhou Weiqing also went through the events of his life simply, since he had last parted with Xiao Ru Se. As compared to Xiao Ru Se's simple army life, his experiences were far and varied, definitely a rich and plentiful one, and as Xiao Ru Se listened to his story, she couldn't help but be visibly moved in countenance.

Both Shangguan Xue'er and Tian'er had left the room, leaving it

for the brother and sister pair to catch up with each other, and there were only the two of them alone in the room.

After hearing Zhou Weiqing's description, Xiao Ru Se couldn't help but move her lips in a hint towards the door, saying in a low tone: "What is with those two girls? Aren't you with Bing'er? How did you end up swapping with her sister? And that Lady Tian'er... it looks like her relationship with you isn't that simple..."

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: "Just intimate friends, intimate friends...Heh heh"

Xiao Ru Se glared at him exasperatedly: "You terrible fellow, trying to be a playboy eh. Later I'll tell Uncle Zhou, and get him to beat you up..."

Those were the words that Xiao Ru Se was so used to threaten him with since young, and she subconsciously said them. As soon as she did so, she regretted it instantly, looking at Zhou Weiqing with an apologetic look.

Zhou Weiqing shook his head and said: "Sis Ru Se, I'm fine. Father will definitely have the chance to beat me up again." With firm resolution in his eyes, he said savagely: "Before long, we will be able to return. I will definitely save my father.. No matter how difficult or tough that Darkness Consolidated Fate Denying Seal is... I will definitely save him!"

Regarding the Darkness Consolidated Fate Denying Seal, how to release it and to save his father, Zhou Weiqing already had a set of plans. Normally speaking, if one released or broke the Darkness Consolidated Fate Denying Seal, it would also mean the death of Admiral Zhou. After all, he had burnt everything he had, even his life force, in unleashing such a Skill... in exchange for a chance that the Heavenly Bow Empire Royal Family could have a chance to turn the tables.

However, was the Darkness Consolidated Fate Denying Seal really unbreakable or without a solution? Zhou Weiqing already

had some ideas about it, and he was still in the midst of refining and perfecting his plans.

Right at that moment, a knock sounded on the door, and Shangguan Xue'er's voice rang from outside. "Weiqing, may I come in?"

Zhou Weiqing started momentarily, but opposite him, Xiao Ru Se blushed slightly, glaring at him exasperatedly as she said softly: "Look, what kind of terrible character you have in those girls' hearts."

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: "My character is extremely good! Xue'er, come in."

The door opened, and Shangguan Xue'er walked in from outside, with Tian'er following behind her. In her hands, there was a letter.

"What is it?" Zhou Weiqing asked Shangguan Xue'er in puzzlement.

Shangguan Xue'er replied: "Father has just sent a letter. The next Heavenly Jewel Tournament has begun, and Father and Uncle have suggested that you join the Heavenly Jewel Tournament once more, representing the Heavenly Bow Empire."

Hearing her words, Zhou Weiqing's heart sparked with sudden inspiration. He was an intelligent person, and he instantly understood what the two heads of the Heaven's Expanse Palace intended.

The Heavenly Bow Empire had just began their quest to revive themselves, and they were rising up in an abrupt but dominant fashion. At this time, if they could give a show of strength in the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, it would undoubtedly be a perfect time, allowing them to once again spread their name.

Seeing that Zhou Weiqing did not reply her immediately, Shangguan Xue'er thought that he had some misgivings or worries, and she quickly continued: "What Father and Uncle mean

is that they hope you can show the rest of the Empires in the Heavenly Jewel Tournament that the Heavenly Bow Empire has returned. Furthermore... Bing'er has finally finished her closed door cultivation."

If at first Zhou Weiqing heard about the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, his mind was fully immersed on how he could use that to the benefit of the Heavenly Bow Empire. However, as soon as he heard Shangguan Xue'er's last sentence, his emotions overwhelmed his reason. Abruptly, he leaped up from his seat. "Bing'er, Bing'er has finally come out? Great, that's just too great!"

Seeing Zhou Weiqing's excited expression, Shangguan Xue'er smiled faintly. Behind her, Tian'er's smile was rather strained. She knew that in Zhou Weiqing's heart, no one could replace Shangguan Bing'er.

It could be said that without Shangguan Bing'er at the start, there would be no current Zhou Weiqing, and he would not have the power he had... or perhaps he would not even be alive.

Shangguan Xue'er said: "Weiqing, don't be so quick to be happy. Father asked me to inform you that this is also your best chance to earn his approval. However, it will not be an easy task. Our Heaven's Expanse Palace will be sending our strongest ever team to participate in this year's Heavenly Jewel Tournament, to regain our lost championship. Unless you can lead your Heavenly Bow Empire to defeat us, otherwise Father will not allow you to bring Bing'er away."

Zhou Weiqing started. "Strongest team ever? What is the strongest team?"

Shangguan Xue'er giggled and said: "What do you think?"

Zhou Weiqing instantly understood, and his eyes widened in shock. "Wha... No... It can't be... Uncle wouldn't let you three sisters..."

Shangguan Xue'er nodded gently, saying: "Do not think that we will go easy on you. If you do not defeat us head on in front of all the younger generation of all the Empires, how can you prove that you deserve to marry... marry Bing'er?" As she spoke up to that point, her face blushed slightly. She had originally been about to say marry the three of us, but when the words were on her lips, she just couldn't bring herself to say it in front of Xiao Ru Se.

Zhou Weiqing said with a distressed expression: "That is just too difficult right, after all I am just a single person."

The usually cold and impassive face of Shangguan Xue'er broke up in a rare teasing expression. "That is your problem. Whether or not you can succeed, that is up to your own ability. Don't you have Tian'er by your side too?"

Zhou Weiqing looked at Tian'er, but sighed. How could he bear for Tian'er to fight by his side in her current state! Although Tian'er had said that even if she was pregnant, it would not influence her ability to fight, and the baby would be safe. However, in Zhou Weiqing's heart, the current Tian'er was fragile and he would not allow her to risk herself and the baby.

Although Zhou Weiqing had absolute confidence in himself, just like he said, the Heavenly Jewel Tournament was never about a single person... but an entire team. Lin TianAo's power was definitely more than sufficient, but his age had already surpassed the age restriction of thirty years old. Just like the Heaven's Expanse Palace's Zhan LingTian and Heavenly Snow Mountain's Gu Yingbing, both would not be able to join this year's Heavenly Jewel Tournament.

"So, are you going or not?" Shangguan Xue'er asked as her mouth curled up in a faint smile.

"Of course I'm going. For Bing'er's sake, no matter what I will have to pit everything to win the tournament again!" Zhou Weiqing instantly agreed, his heart already in the midst of

planning what he could do. Although Lin TianAo and Xiao Yan was no longer of age and could no longer assist him in this new Heavenly Jewel Tournament, he could still build up a whole new team!

Chapter 208 Heavenly Bow Empire Battle Team! (1)

“Xue’er, could you please invite everyone over for a meeting.” After setting his resolve, Zhou Weiqing naturally needed to settle everything here before he could leave for the Tournament.

Tian’er looked at his expression and instantly knew what he was thinking. “Little Fatty, you must definitely bring me along. Do not worry, I will be fine. As the saying goes, when one marries a chicken, then one will follow the chicken. If one marries a dog, then one will follow the dog. I am now considered a member of the Heavenly Bow Empire, and it is natural that I play a part as well.”

Zhou Weiqing did not reject her, nodding as he said: “That is natural, no matter where I go, I will definitely bring you along.” However in his heart, he added one more line that he did not speak out loud. As for whether or not you fight, that is another matter.

...

In about an hour, the upper echelons of the Heavenly Bow Empire had gathered into the governor’s mansion grand hall.

Ming Yu was the last to enter the hall, and when Zhou Weiqing saw him, he was startled. This handsome and suave Fei Li God General was looking extremely shabby, clearly haggard and exhausted, his attire in disarray and unshaven face. However, his eyes were lit up, clearer than they had ever been, showing his spirits were extremely high.

“Weiqing, why have you called us so urgently? I was in the midst of reorganizing and incorporating the forces Lady Xiao had brought to us.” As soon as Ming Yu sat down beside Zhou Weiqing, he asked.

These few days, Zhou Weiqing had thrown off all the responsibilities and had been leading a relaxed life. However, for

Ming Yu, as the First Vice Commander and overall director of the Heavenly Bow Empire forces, his job was extremely difficult and onerous. Although the others could help him share some responsibilities, the absolute trust Zhou Weiqing had in him, as well as the absolute power in commanding the army was something that Ming Yu had always wanted. Now that he finally had his chance, he had put his heart, mind and soul fully into the matter.

In the past, when he was in the Fei Li Empire, although he was considered a high ranking officer in the army, he just had too many restrictions upon him. Furthermore, the Fei Li Empire was already a powerhouse Empire, with its strength already there, and basically their only enemy was the WanShou Empire in the north. However, the Heavenly Bow Empire was very different. It could be said that they were starting from scratch, and to a military specialist and lover like Ming Yu, this was definitely an exciting challenge to meet. All his life, he had chased after this, and although it was extremely tiring, ever since he had come here, he had spent everyday leading a substantial and rich life. Being able to use all the he learned and knew, it was also a type of happiness.

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “Bro Ming, you do not need to deal with everything personally. The most outstanding commanders do not need to handle every single matter personally, and they can trust in others to complete their tasks. Look, am I not a perfect example of that?”

Ming Yu couldn't help but roll his eyes at that, saying: “If everyone does it like you, then when can we actually conquer the world?”

As soon as Ming Yu said that, the entire meeting hall fell silent, and everyone looked at him in shock.

Ming Yu realised that had spoken too much, and he gave an embarrassed chuckle, saying: “Our achievements are only limited by our daring. At least, thinking about it is one thing right.

Anyway, my dear Supreme Commander, please hurry up and speak your mind. I still have many things to do.” Ever since they had recruited two new Regiments of soldiers, besides the position of Regiment Commander of the Peerless Regiment, Zhou Weiqing had also ‘risen rank’ to become the Supreme Commander of the current Heavenly Bow Empire forces. This was a rank that no one could steal from him, and Ming Yu was still only the Vice Commander.”

Zhou Weiqing swallowed hard before laughing once more, saying: “I have not misjudged you indeed. You truly have great ambitions! Alright, I will not waste all your time any longer, let me be direct. The Heaven’s Expanse Palace had sent word to invite our Heavenly Bow Empire to send a Battle Team to join the upcoming Heavenly Jewel Tournament. There is about one and a half months before the Heavenly Jewel Tournament begins.”

Hearing the words Heavenly Jewel Tournament, everyone’s eyes lit up, especially Lin TianAo, Xiao Yan and Crow, those who had joined the previous tournament and won the championship. It could be said that the previous tournament had forged them into what they currently were... not only giving them the confidence boost they sorely needed, but also giving them the chance to become one of the stronger powerhouses amongst the younger generation. It had also given them the honour and glory of a lifetime.

Originally, Ming Yu had been rather impatient, but as soon as he heard the words Heavenly Jewel Tournament, he perked up. “Of course, we definitely need to join that! Spreading the word... gaining reputation... nothing can beat having a good ranking in the Heavenly Jewel Tournament! It will greatly accentuate all our efforts! We must participate indeed. Supreme Commander, who are you planning to bring?”

The others also nodded rapidly. The Heavenly Jewel Tournament was of great fame and status in the entire mainland,

and could be said to play a decisive role. It was perhaps second only to the ranking tournaments between the five Great Saint Lands, but in terms of actual influence, it surpassed even that. After all, the Heavenly Jewel Tournament was open to all Empires, and even ordinary citizens could view it... one could just imagine the influence and reputation it had.

Even Hua Feng, who was normally calm and unflurried, actually looked both agitated and excited. Looking at Zhou Weiqing, something glittered in his eyes as he said: “Little Wei, do you know? All these years, your father’s greatest wish was for our Heavenly Bow Empire to one day have the chance to participate in the Heavenly Jewel Tournament. Now, his wish has been fulfilled by you. Go... you do not have to worry about us here, leave it to us. Before you return, our Heavenly Bow Empire will never fall to any enemies.”

The other God Archers of the Heavenly Bow Unit also nodded in unison, their eyes filled with hope and anticipation as they looked at Zhou Weiqing. Because of the Shangguan Sisters and their relationship with him, it was without question that he would not be in danger in the Heaven’s Expanse Palace, and the current Zhou Weiqing was definitely outstanding amongst the younger generation, and even his cultivation level had already long caught up and was above average for his age. With him leading a battle team, the Heavenly Bow Empire could fight against any opponent without any worry, even if they met an opponent backed by a Great Saint Lands. Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing was one of the previous champions of the previous Heavenly Jewel Tournament. Although that had an element of luck in that victory, it was without question that the previous experience could only increase his chances of victory once more.

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: “Since everyone has also agreed, then there should be no problem. Now, we need to decide who will be joining me in the Heavenly Jewel Tournament. According to

the participation rules, any participants must be below the age of thirty. Bro Lin and Xiao Yan who joined me in the previous Tournament are no longer eligible to participate. Of course, I will be going, but besides myself, I have only confirmed one other person to join the Heavenly Jewel Tournament-Tian'er. Who else is willing to go with me?"

Almost as Zhou Weiqing finished speaking, an urgent voice rang out. "Me, me! Boss, you must bring me this time!"

A massive figure strode to the front, with a toady-ing smile on his face, that expression was truly a mismatch for his massive, valiant and impressive figure. It was Ma Qun.

"Stinking little brat, what do you look like now, are you trying to throw your father's face?" The Berserker Tribe leader gave his son an exasperated kick on his ass.

Ma Qun grinned and said: "Heh heh, Dad, don't you hope to see me represent our Berserker Tribe in the Heavenly Jewel Tournament? To show the power of our Titan bloodline in this greatest stage? Boss, this time, you must definitely bring me along! Although my cultivation level isn't too high, only at the four-Jeweled stage, but wasn't Crow just at the three-Jeweled stage when she attended the previous Tournament? My current state is at least equal or stronger than she was at that time. Bring me along, I will not throw your face!"

Looking at Ma Qun, Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly as he nodded in agreement. Indeed, though Ma Qun's cultivation level was not high, only at the four-Jeweled stage... this fellow was born with a godlike physical strength. In terms of pure physical strength, he was even above Crow! In the previous battles, wielding his pair of long spiked maces, his power and destructive capabilities were perhaps even beyond any ordinary six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master. Furthermore, his age was definitely suitable. That fellow was the same age as Zhou Weiqing, and more so, he was the future heir to the Berserker Tribe. Without question, the Heavenly Jewel

Tournament was a great training ground for any youth, a perfect place where one may forge themselves in the fires of high level battles. Perhaps, Ma Qun would also be able to spark his own potential in this tournament.

“Very well, you’re counted as one.” Zhou Weiqing nodded to Ma Qun.

Ma Qun was overjoyed, jumping up happily. Instantly, PENG... This fellow’s head smashed into the ceiling, causing everyone to burst out laughing.

Crow also took a step forward and said: “Weiqing, count me in as well.” Currently, Crow’s cultivation level had already reached the five-Jeweled stage, and her aura and presence was far more stable than previously. Her age was also eligible, and her overall combat prowess was above Ma Qun’s. Furthermore, she also had experience from the previous Heavenly Jewel Tournament.

“Very good, you were originally part of my plans as well.” Zhou Weiqing exchanged glances with Crow, and in that instant, their tacit understanding as teammates in the previous Heavenly Jewel Tournament seemed to return.

Zhou Weiqing continued: “The main battle team for the Heavenly Jewel Tournament needs to be six people, and two reserve members. Currently, we have four ready to go, so we need at least two more before we can actually form a battle team. Does anyone else have anybody to recommend? Their cultivation level must be at least four Jeweled or higher.”

This requirement by Zhou Weiqing, both Yan Zhexi and Kou Rui could barely reach it. However, neither of them volunteered. The reason was simple; as compared to the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, both would rather be by Ming Yu’s side, learning from him. After all, their goal was to be an outstanding commander and general, not a powerhouse.

All of them exchanged helpless glances, as they all hesitated.

Amongst all present, there were many powerhouses, but there weren't many who met the requirement of being below the age of thirty.

Right at that moment, a delicate voice suddenly broke the silence. "Weiqing, bring me back this time. I have left the Heavenly Jewel Island for so long, and I want to go back to see Master."

The one who had stepped forward was Little Miss Muddle. Seeing her, Zhou Weiqing instantly smiled. It could be said that for the success of Zhou Weiqing's Peerless Regiment had a lot to do with Little Miss Muddle. Originally, it had only been her and Yun Li as Consolidating Equipment Masters, and it was their hard work and toil which had given the Peerless Regiment soldiers so many Consolidating Equipment Scrolls.

"Indeed! You had followed me since the previous Heavenly Jewel Tournament, and it is a good time to return. Right... you still aren't thirty years old yet right? Do you want to join us to play around in the Heavenly Jewel Tournament?"

Looking at Zhou Weiqing's beaming smile, those familiar with him all felt as if they were watching a big bad wolf trying to con and kidnap a little white rabbit. This Little Miss Muddle's cultivation level was no lower than Shangguan Xue'er. Although her combat prowess could not match Shangguan Xue'er, she still had the Spatial Attribute after all, and with her cultivation level so high, she could scare off most opponents.

Chapter 208 Heavenly Bow Empire Battle Team! (2)

At the side, Shangguan Xue'er suddenly raised a brow, and she said passively: "Naturally, Little Miss Muddle will be joining the Heavenly Jewel Tournament. However, she will not be joining your Heavenly Bow Empire Battle Team, but our ZhongTian Battle Team. Later, I will be leaving with her to head back first."

Upon hearing her words, Zhou Weiqing's mouth began to twitch uncontrollably. At last, he gave a bitter smile and said: "Xue'er, are you really trying to form the greatest battle team in history of battle teams before you are satisfied?"

In front of so many people, Shangguan Xue'er naturally assumed her usual icy cold demeanour, saying passively: "This is all part of your test, if it were too easy, there would be no point. Only stress and pressure will give you sufficient motivation. As the saying goes, when one gets too comfortable, they will just drift along. You must work hard. Come on, Little Miss Muddle, let's go."

As she said that, Shangguan Xue'er nodded to the others, and pulled Little Miss Muddle out of the room.

Zhou Weiqing could only stare after them helplessly, left speechless. Facing a ZhongTian Battle Team with the three Shangguan sisters and Little Miss Muddle... was there a chance of success? Besides the difference in cultivation level between both sides alone, all three Shangguan sisters could be said to have accompanied Zhou Weiqing respectively from the start of him becoming a Heavenly Jewel Master all the way until this very day. Although it would be an exaggeration to say they knew him down to the last hair... well, it wasn't that far of an exaggeration! Towards the other powerhouses of the Peerless Regiment, they were also extremely familiar. Without a doubt, there were very few secrets they had against the three sisters. If they truly went all

out against his team, how could they fight?

Just as Zhou Weiqing was sitting there vexedly, Shangguan Xue'er suddenly reappeared at the doorway, saying to Zhou Weiqing: "There is one more news I have to tell you. We have also heard that this year's Dan Dun Battle Team will be their strongest ever. Clearly, they have a similar wish as you all, to spread the reputation and show the power of the Dan Dun Empire. Previously, they had been eliminated by your team, and with the character of the Blood Red Hell and how they will seek revenge for any small matter... you better pray hard... and watch out. I am leaving now." After finishing her speech, only then did Shangguan Xue'er turn to leave. As she did so, a faint smile crossed her lips. She could imagine the dazed look on Zhou Weiqing's face right now.

Indeed, Zhou Weiqing was stunned momentarily before he said helplessly: "What can this brother do now!"

Lin TianAo spoke up seriously: "Weiqing. Remember, when we first moved out as a team, when we were representing the Fei Li Battle Team? At that time, no one fancied our chances as a Battle Team. No one would have imagined we would actually become the champion of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament. Indeed, our power would not be able to match the four Empires backed by Great Saint Lands. However, we still did it. We managed to achieve victory. Why? Because we always had the heart to charge forward no matter what."

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: "Big Bro Lin, you misunderstand me. It is not that I do not think we will lose... it is just that the ZhongTian Empire Battle Team are all my women... It is hard for me to actually attack them!"

"Bullshit, what do you mean all your women. Don't you have face at all?" At the side, Yun Li suddenly said angrily.

"Ehhh... Yun Li, how come you didn't follow Little Miss Muddle

home?” As soon as Zhou Weiqing saw it was him, he quickly changed the topic.

Yun Li said with an ugly expression on his face: “That is because I am joining you to attend the Heavenly Jewel Tournament.”

Zhou Weiqing’s eyes widened in surprise. “What? You are below the age of thirty?” In his impression, four or five years ago when he had first met Yun Li, that fellow was already thirty years old... right? In truth, he had never asked Yun Li what his age was.

Yun Li ‘sweatdropped’.”Do I really look that old? There are still more than two months before I turn thirty!”

In the grand hall, everyone couldn’t help but break out in smiles at that. Even Lin TianAo, who was the most familiar about the relationship between Zhou Weiqing and Yun Li, couldn’t help but laugh out loud.

Only then did Zhou Weiqing react, grinning as he said: “Heh heh, mature, that is maturity. Men, it is good to be more mature! No problem, it’s no problem at all! Anyway, you have already found your wife, even if you look a bit older, there’s nothing to be afraid.”

Looking at the black lines forming on Yun Li’s head, Zhou Weiqing hastily added: “Alright, we’ll add you as well. Later, if Little Miss Muddle’s Master isn’t willing to accept you, I will help you!”

Upon hearing the last sentence, only then did Yun Li’s anger turn into joy. In terms of cultivation level, Yun Li was not weak at all. These few years, although he had spent most of his time and energy on Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, it was without a doubt that during the creation process, not only did he have to focus fully with all his spirit, he also had to expend large amounts of Heavenly Energy all the time. Naturally, that was another form of cultivation process. Furthermore, his Heavenly Energy cultivation level had originally been higher than Zhou Weiqing’s, and

currently he had already entered the six-Jeweled stage. For him to do so before the age of thirty, that was already very impressive.

By now, five of the six members of the Heavenly Bow Empire Battle Team had already been chosen, and they still lacked a final member for their main team.

Right at that moment, Han Mo suddenly stepped out. As one of the seven God Archers of the Heavenly Bow Unit with the nickname of 'Arrow Tower', Han Mo was usually the most silent of them all. Zhou Weiqing couldn't help be surprised that he stepped forward so abruptly.

"Master Han Mo, don't tell me that... you're also not thirty years old?!" Zhou Weiqing smiled as he said.

Han Mo acted as if he never heard those words, saying: "I will introduce you to someone. Hold on." After saying that, he walked out of the room.

After some time, Han Mo returned with a person, and as soon as the person entered the room, Zhou Weiqing had to actually look up to see the person's features.

It was a girl. Her height was even taller than Crow, and from her heavy steps, she was clearly one of the Gold Crow Tribe members. Although her stature was tall and great, her features were indeed very beautiful, and she looked to be only about eighteen or nineteen years old, a bashful look on her face as she walked behind Han Mo into the grand hall.

Towards this girl, Zhou Weiqing did not have any impression at all. Curiously, he asked: "Master Han Mo, who is this? Could it be... you are the same as Master Mu En, having a secret daughter in the Gold Crow Tribe?"

"Bullshit!" The usually silent Han Mo, who seemed impassive no matter what happened, suddenly burst out angrily. He glared at Zhou Weiqing for a moment before saying at last: "She is my

girlfriend, her name is Xixi.”

“Girlfriend?!” Zhou Weiqing’s shock was palpable! In his memory, Han Mo had always been a quiet enigma. Besides fighting, where he displayed his power and valiant side, he seldom spoke at all. At most, he had an occasional line of cold humour. Yet, unknowingly, he had actually found a girlfriend, and one so young!

Luo Ke Di couldn’t help but mutter out loud: “This is the legendary ‘Old Bull eating Nubile Grass!’”

Han Mo said savagely: “If you do not want to die, shut your smelly mouth!”

At this point, the girl named Xixi stepped up to Han Mo’s side. With her height and stature, she was even taller than Han Mo by at least two heads, but she leaned at him shyly. Zhou Weiqing couldn’t help but think wickedly... with her weight, would she crush Han Mo when they were...

“Hello everyone, my name is Xixi.”

Clearly, Crow knew about the relationship between Han Mo and Xixi, and she was the first to speak up with a faint smile: “Weiqing, Xixi is my cousin. If we had to speak of the greatest talent in our Gold Crow Tribe younger generation, she would definitely take the spot. In terms of pure combat ability, although Xixi is younger than me, she is no weaker than I am. She is also a Heavenly Jewel Master, currently at the four-Jeweled stage. Her Physical Jewel is the Strength Attribute, and her Elemental Jewel is the Ice Attribute. In our entire Gold Crow Tribe younger generation, she is of equal fame with myself, and we are known as the ‘Fire and Ice Duo’.”

Hearing the words ‘Fire and Ice’, Luo Ke Di who had just resumed drinking suddenly spat out the mouthful of wine. Han Mo and Mu En sprang to their feets instantly and dragged the fellow out. Alas for this ‘Drunken Rogue’, he would soon be gifted with

some ‘inhuman treatments’.

Naturally, Zhou Weiqing knew what that perverted Luo Ke Di was thinking about. Of course, he was still able to control himself to not show it. With a straight face, he said seriously: “Very well, since both of you have recommended her, Xixi welcome to our Heavenly Bow Empire Battle Team. I think that we do not need any reserves, at least from the looks of things. In three days time, we will leave and head towards the ZhongTian Empire.”

Just like that, the first Battle Team in the history of the Heavenly Bow Empire was formed, a historic representation to join the Heavenly Jewel Tournament. The Team Leader was naturally Zhou Weiqing, with the final members being confirmed as Tian’er, Yun Li, Crow, Ma Qun and Xixi.

Such a group was definitely far stronger than Zhou Weiqing’s previous Fei Li Battle Team. Especially when one looked at Zhou Weiqing and Tian’er, they were definitely amongst the top in their age group. Crow was also far more matured and stronger than she had been that time. Yun Li’s cultivation level was above Xiao Yan and the others at that time. As for Ma Qun and Xixi, though their cultivation levels were relatively lower, they had the innate talents of their bloodline. Overall, in Zhou Weiqing’s eyes, the strength of their entire team was no weaker than any team from a Great Saint Lands.

In the next three days, Zhou Weiqing, Ming Yu and the rest of the upper echelons of the Heavenly Bow Empire began discussing in detail the follow up plans and strategy regarding their defense and building up. They arranged a whole series of plans and contingencies since Zhou Weiqing would be leaving for the Heavenly Jewel Tournament.

This time, Zhou Weiqing had already decided that not only would they be going to attend the Heavenly Jewel Tournament... once the Tournament ended, he would bring Tian’er home to the Heavenly Snow Mountain for a visit.

No matter what, the news that Tian'er was pregnant had to be verified by the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord. There was also the matter of their Saint Energy. The Heavenly Snow Mountain had many powerful Heavenly Beasts under their command, and if Xue AoTian was willing to ask them to aid in their cultivation, the gathering of their Saint Energy would undoubtedly be much faster.

Having experienced the assassination from the Heavenly King assassin, Zhou Weiqing deeply felt his own lack of power. Although his overall combat prowess was far above his own cultivation level, it was without a doubt that only when one entered the Heavenly King Stage would they finally be deemed a real powerhouse. No matter that he was still young... his enemies would not wait for him to grow slowly.

In his previous experiences, he did not have much chances to fight against Heavenly King stage powerhouses, which was why Zhou Weiqing did not have such a strong feeling previously. However, ever since he had almost died to the Heavenly King assassin, it had sparked great alarm in his heart. As a person who was so afraid of death, what was more important than keeping himself alive? Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing was extremely clear what his Heavenly Bow Empire currently lacked most.

In terms of overall military strength, though the Heavenly Bow Empire armies were not high in numbers, but with the Peerless Regiment as the core, he was confident in facing any other Empire head on.

However, their greatest weakness was that they just lacked a top end powerhouse... one that could awe and frighten their enemies... or at least be a deterrence.

Chapter 208 Heavenly Bow Empire Battle Team! (3)

Heavenly Emperor Powerhouses were not allowed to interfere in ordinary wars, but currently the Heavenly Bow Empire did not even have a Heavenly King stage powerhouse of their own. Of course, Zhou Weiqing could not possibly keep bothering his Senior Uncle to help him, especially since he was immersed in Consolidating Equipment Scrolls.

As such, the only right solution was for Zhou Weiqing to reach the Heavenly King stage as quickly as possible. This time, Zhou Weiqing did not know how long he would be gone, so he needed to ensure everything would continue running well without his presence. After all their plans and contingencies, and with Ming Yu and the officers to run things, there should not be any problems. His only worry was if any enemy powerhouse entered the fray.

Before leaving, Zhou Weiqing left a letter for his Master, inviting him to stay in the Heavenly Bow Empire during the period he was gone. If a large amount of enemy powerhouses came, he would ask the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor to take care of them. As for the fact that Long Shiya previously mentioned he would not help him revive his Empire, our dear Little Fatty totally ignored it. In his letter, he gave the excuse of asking his Master to help him ‘protect a few people’, not to help him revive his homeland. Of course... the ‘few people’ was... quite a large number in the end.

...

Third day since the meeting.

Dawn.

Six warhorses quietly left the Crescent City, heading directly into the Fei Li Empire and eastwards.

The six warhorses were extremely conspicuous and attention drawing. The one at the head was extremely huge, covered with thick and sturdy looking scales, with a single horn on its head. It was the single-horned Ghost Demon Horse. Naturally, the youth seated comfortably atop it was Zhou Weiqing.

Their group of six was definitely attention grabbing. Zhou Weiqing, Tian'er and Yun Li were all mounted on Ghost Demon Horses, while Ma Qun, Crow and Xixi were mounted on their Unicorn Heavenly Beasts. These were all top horse-type Heavenly Beasts in the entire mainland. Furthermore, the figures and stature of the six of them were indeed massive. Besides Tian'er and Yun Li who looked relatively normal, even Zhou Weiqing was nearly two metres tall. Of course, even he paled in comparison to Ma Qun and the two Gold Crow Tribe girls.

Of course, though they drew much attention and gazes on their journey, perhaps due to their massive sizes, they did not actually meet any trouble. Within ten days, they had reached a city in the east of the Fei Li Empire, called the Green Jade City. As soon as they passed through the Green Jade City and headed east for another few hundred li, they would enter the ZhongTian Empire.

There was still more than a month before the Heavenly Jewel Tournament began, and they had a lot of time to spare. The reason they moved out so early was because Tian'er wanted to care for Tian'er, and wanted to take their time in traveling. Although they currently could not see any outward signs that she was actually pregnant, but he did not want to take any chances! As such, in their current travels, they did not rush or would also find a comfortable place to rest every night.

"Weiqing, I have heard that there is a special delicacy called the Green Jade Cake Roll in this Green Jade City. Shall we go try it since we are here?" Yun Li said to him.

Ever since he met Zhou Weiqing, he had never been able to experience a relaxed day again. If he wasn't researching

Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, he was creating them. This time, he was finally getting a chance to rest and relieve stress, and he was happy that Zhou Weiqing had chosen this slow method of traveling. Watching the scenery as they moved, enjoying the good food as they traveled, it was quite a good feeling.

“Sure, that sounds good! You’ve been to this Green Jade City before?” Zhou Weiqing asked Yun Li.

Yun Li shook his head, saying: “No I haven’t, I only just heard of it. You all wait a while, I’ll go inquire about it and see which place sells the best Green Jade Cake Rolls.” As he said that, he passed his reins to Ma Qun before heading off to inquire for more information.

Before long, Yun Li returned. “Not far up ahead, there is an inn called the Green Jade Palace. We can find the Green Jade Cake Rolls there. Come on, we can also stay there for the night.”

Following Yun Li, the group soon reached the Green Jade Palace he had mentioned.

Although its name was impressive, it was just a three story inn. Of course, for a small border city like the Green Jade City, it was considered one of the luxurious inns.

Handing their horses over to the stablekeep and paying for the best fodder for it, the group entered the inn.

They checked in three rooms. Naturally, Zhou Weiqing and Tian’er would share a room. Alas for Ma Qun, he had been abandoned by Crow as soon as they left the Crescent City, so he had to share a room with Yun Li while Crow and Xixi shared a room.

The six of them first went to their rooms for a short rest and clean up, arranging to meet up in the dining hall of the inn later to try the Green Jade Cake Roll.

“Dear, hug!” Zhou Weiqing grinned as he enveloped Tian’er in

his arms.

Tian'er giggled, saying: "Don't! I want to take a bath and change before we go eat."

She was not like human females who might feel shy so easily, instead feeling happy that Zhou Weiqing was so infatuated with her.

"How about we take the bath together? Heh heh." Zhou Weiqing grinned.

Tian'er blushed slightly, rolling her eyes at him, saying: "Well, now you aren't afraid of harming your child?"

Zhou Weiqing chuckled and said: "I'll be gentle... who knows our precious will be in your stomach saying... Wahh, papa is here to visit me again."

Pfft Tian'er laughed at that, 'savagely' punching him a few times. At last, she fell into the shameless perverted fellow's arms.

Zhou Weiqing was best at shamelessly following up on things when given the slightest opportunity, and he immediately began 'helping' Tian'er remove her clothes. Taking a bath together, such a great temptation, a certain person's 'beastly blood' began to boil instantly.

Right at that moment, a knocking sound rang on their door.

"Who is it!" Zhou Weiqing asked exasperatedly. Anyone who was interrupted at such a time would definitely not be in a good mood.

"Sir, the situation is like that. There are a few new guests outside who have taken a fancy to your mounts, and they are asking if you would sell the mounts to you." The waiting staff's voice traveled from outside.

Zhou Weiqing said: "We're not selling. Stop disturbing our rest."

After a slight pause, the staff's tentative voice said: "Those guests said that they are willing to pay a high price."

Zhou Weiqing felt his anger rising, and he let go of Tian'er, stalking to the door and opening it. The staff immediately nodded at him respectfully and with humility. He could naturally tell that Zhou Weiqing's group were not ordinary at all.

“Go tell those people, ten million gold coins per mount. If they can afford it, then we will sell, otherwise tell them to stop bothering me.” After saying that, Zhou Weiqing slammed the door shut.

The staff stood there, stunned momentarily. Only after a few moments did he finally react. Ten million gold coins? This gentleman truly knows how to demand an exorbitant price.

Returning to the room, Zhou Weiqing ignored Tian'er's sudden startled cry as he picked her up and walked into the bathroom. In the misty hot bath, the sounds of spring pervaded the room.

Two hours later, the Heavenly Bow Battle Team met in the dining hall. They sat together at a table in the corner, having ordered the Green Jade Cake Roll and a large amount of other food.

“Why are you all looking at me?” Tian'er said shyly as she glanced at the others.

Xixi blinked and said: “Sis Tian'er, you are so beautiful. Why is your face so red, you look so cute and beautiful!”

Tian'er was left speechless, and below the table, she stomped savagely on Zhou Weiqing's foot. She was originally extremely beautiful, and after just being ‘enriched’, she naturally looked especially attractive. It was no wonder that the others couldn't help but look at her.

“Err, come let's eat, let's eat.” Zhou Weiqing could only endure the pain in his foot and quickly change the topic.

As he glanced at Yun Li unwittingly, he realised that fellow was mouthing a line: Wanton actions in the day!

Zhou Weiqing's skin had always been thick, and he did not care what others thought about him. Looking at the beauty beside him again, his heart was filled with satisfaction. He was growing more and more infatuated with Tian'er.

Soon, their food was served. They were no refined nobles or the like, and they immediately began eating voraciously.

Just as they were in the midst of their meal, another group of guests arrived, seating near them. As it was in the afternoon, and not during any meal time, the dining hall was relatively empty.

This new group numbered five, four males and one lady. Their clothes were showy, especially the lady's. She looked about twenty years of age, dressed in a purple skirt with a gold peacock embroidered upon it. Her features were above average, with a curvaceous figure, though she paled in that department compared to Tian'er. Still, she could still be considered a beauty.

The lady sat down first, and the other four men were clearly very attentive of her, helping her pull out her chair, ordering dishes etc. Their voices were especially loud in the dining hall.

"I wonder which bastard is the one who owns those horses, actually quoting us ten million gold coins, how sick." The lady was clearly in a bad mood as she said angrily. She did not lower her voice, and Zhou Weiqing and his group could clearly hear her.

When she finished speaking, she happened to glance over at Zhou Weiqing's table. When she saw the strange mix of people there, especially the absolute beauty Tian'er, her gaze froze momentarily.

"Xuan'er, don't be angry. Isn't it just some Ghost Demon Horses and Unicorn Beasts, I'll get one for you later, whichever you prefer. Although those are indeed expensive, ten thousand gold should be enough to get one." One of the youths seated beside the lady called Xuan'er said fawningly.

Xuan'er gave a cold humph. "Do I need you to pay ten thousand

gold for me? Do I lack money? Hmph, some people just don't know what's good for them. Don't let me know who it is, otherwise I'll teach them a lesson."

Obviously, Zhou Weiqing knew she was speaking of them, but he ignored them, continuing to eat with large mouthfuls. Guzzling down his food, he did not look civilized at all. However, with Ma Qun, Crow and Xixi there, he was not too obvious. The table which was filled with food was swept clean in a short time.

Ma Qun called out loudly: "Boss, another round, same order as just now."

If one had to point out the biggest flaw of the Berserker and Gold Crow Tribe, it was definitely their insane appetite.

Their appetite was no joke at all! For the two tribes to actually run into survival issues, their sheer capacity for food was one of the reasons. It was no surprise really, with their massive stature and strength, it was normal to have a larger appetite.

One of the other youths at Xuan'er's table, with thin lips and clearly with an acrid tongue, said in a low tone: "[What a bunch of gluttons](#). Xuan'er, do you think those horses belong to them?"

The phrase '吃货' literally means those who eat. Can be used to describe foodies, people who eat a lot, or slang for 'those who only know how to eat', or being good for nothing. In this case, I used glutton but his meaning would likely be tending towards the latter

Chapter 209 Meeting Ye Paopao again! (1)

Who were Zhou Weiqing and the others? With their cultivation levels, although the youth tried to speak in a low volume, they could naturally hear him loud and clear.

Zhou Weiqing could easily control his expressions, and Yun Li also relaxed, ignoring the comment. However, Ma Qun had always had a character who loved to cause trouble. Hearing someone call them gluttons, how could he hold back. Instantly, he slammed his palm on the table as he stood up abruptly.

“Dammit, you little gigolo, who did you say is good for nothing?”

Ma Qun’s height and stature was definitely a terrifying one, but it wasn’t too obvious when they were all seated. As he stood up abruptly, he gave the group of youths a scare. Towering at than 2.3 metres of height, he could definitely be considered a giant amongst these ordinary humans, almost as if he were [a crane in the midst of a flock of chickens](#). Furthermore, Ma Qun was extremely muscular, his broad shoulders more than twice that of normal human. As he stood there now, it was as if a mountain was towering over them.

“I am only speaking out facts, who is the one eating the most and responding is the one. What so great about being big sized, I’m afraid that one could be [a pewter spearhead that shines like silver](#), looking fine but useless in reality...” The tart youth said caustically, not willing to admit defeat, looking at Ma Qun disdainfully, not even caring about his palpable anger.

What kind of temper did Ma Qun have? If no one else came to cause trouble, he might even be the one causing trouble! Otherwise, he wouldn’t have been taught a lesson by Zhou Weiqing when they first met. Now that someone had actually spoken to him in such a manner, and right to his face, how could he possibly hold back. He was just about to step out when Crow at

his side grabbed him.

“Don’t cause trouble, listen to Weiqing.” As she said that, Crow forcefully dragged Ma Qun down to his seat.

Ma Qun glared at the harsh youth savagely, saying: “Little rabbit, if you talk some more trash, I’ll destroy you.”

“Who are you calling rabbit?!” This time, it was the youth’s turn to slam the table and get up.

However, this time, the young lady called Xuan’er frowned, her brow furrowing slightly as she said: “Ah Dou, how can you lower yourself arguing with a bunch of commoner bumpkins. Don’t affect my mood for eating...”

The youth pointed at Ma Qun, a cold savage look in his eyes. Ma Qun did not back down, pointing his middle finger back at the youth.

The young lady called Xuan’er suddenly took out a dark gold card and placed it on the table. “Staff. Send us some of your best food at once. Also, please cleanse this area of these irrelevant rabble. I will pay one thousand gold coins.”

By saying that, she was literally slapping their faces. After all, Zhou Weiqing and the others had not finished eating yet, and if she wanted them to clear the site, wasn’t that tantamount to chasing them out?

After Xuan’er said that, she even turned to the youth called Ah Dou, saying: “Don’t always be so rash. Anything that can be solved by money is never a problem. A bunch of country bumpkins, just chase them away...”

The server had long heard the commotion between both groups. At this point, he knew it was no longer possible to hide, and he quickly stepped forward with an embarrassed expression towards the purple clad young lady, saying: “Young Miss, that isn’t too good right? Those customers there have not finished eating. How

about, I bring your group to a reserved room? How about that? We have large reserved rooms here, quiet and far more luxurious than sitting in the dining hall.”

Xuan'er's face darkened. “No need. I just want to eat in the dining hall, not your reserved rooms. I will cover their bill, let them leave now. I will add another thousand gold to book the entire dining hall.”

“But...” Although the gold was very tempting, the server could see that Zhou Weiqing's group were no ordinary bunch as well, and he dared not go over to chase them out.

“Three thousand...” Xuan'er held up the dark-gold card, saying passively. The act of using money to smash into other's face, truly overbearing and tyrannical.

“Young Miss, please do not make it tough for us.” The staff was clearly tempted. Though he was not the boss, if he could help the inn earn such a large sum of money, there would definitely be a bonus for him.

“Four thousand...”

“...”

Zhou Weiqing finally finished eating his Green Jade Cake Roll, lifting his head he muttered: “This Green Jade Cake Roll is really not bad... soft and spongy, sweet and fragrant, with just a faint hint of the freshness of bamboo leaves. An exquisite delicacy indeed!”

Ma Qun couldn't help but say: “Boss, when has your temper become so good? You can even endure this?!”

Zhou Weiqing glanced at him and said: “Ma Qun, do you know what reason there could be for a young lady to show off her wealth like that?”

Ma Qun started momentarily, but he played along, shaking his head quickly. He had known Zhou Weiqing for quite awhile, and

hearing those words, he knew this boss of his definitely had something else up his sleeve.

Zhou Weiqing said calmly and in a dignified fashion: “For a young lady to show off her wealth like that, there can only be two reasons. One, the one who ‘[suns](#)’ her is [extremely formidable](#). Second, the one who ****s her mother is extremely formidable.”

As soon as Zhou Weiqing’s words left his mouth, Ma Qun’s jaw dropped. At the side, Crow had just drank a mouthful of tea, and she sprayed it all out onto the table. At the end, she turned unwittingly and even got some on Ma Qun’s body.

Yun Li had been eating a Green Jade Cake Roll calmly, and he choked on it as he heard that. Even Tian’er couldn’t help but cover her mouth to suppress a giggle. Only Xixi, who was still relatively innocent, had a puzzled look on her face, not understanding what Zhou Weiqing was saying.

With great difficulty, Yun Li recovered and managed to force the mouthful of Green Jade Cake Roll down his throat. Mutteringly he said: “Weiqing, are you trying to murder me?”

Zhou Weiqing said with an innocent look on his face: “I’m just speaking the truth...”

Yun Li gave a humph and said: “So vulgar... but there is truth in that...”

“For a young lady to show off her wealth like that, there can only be two reasons. The one who ****s her is extremely formidable or the one who ****s her mother is extremely formidable... Boss, that line of yours is just too amazing, such an analysis, such a brilliant exposition indeed. Impressive, impressive.” Ma Qun burst out laughing as he repeated Zhou Weiqing’s words, the anger his heart having been swept away by his own laughter.

Zhou Weiqing had not spoken too loudly, and on the other side, they had been haggling and did not hear his words too clearly.

However, with Ma Qun repeating it out loud, with the massive volume of his, even those on the road outside would be able to hear him, let alone those just a few tables away.

As soon as the young lady Xuan'er heard those words, her body froze. She stood up slowly, and the rest of the four youths also stood up one after the other. Ah Dou shoved the serving staff aside, his eyes filled with killing intent as he snarled savagely: "You are asking for death!"

A cold light flashed in Xuan'er's eyes. "Tear off their mouths and throw them out. If they resist, kill them."

Ah Dou was clearly eager to impress, and with a large stride he bounded forward. At the same time, an obvious Heavenly Energy reverberation sprang forth from his body, as he struck out at Ma Qun.

Around his wrists, four Jewels sprang into existence respectively, whirling about. He was actually a Low Level Zun Stage Heavenly Jewel Master!

Seeing that this youth was actually a four-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master, Zhou Weiqing and the others started momentarily. It looked like the group of youths did have the capital and ability to back their arrogance.

The youth called Ah Dou had the Icy Jade Physical Jewels, a Strength Type Heavenly Jewel Master, while his Elemental Jewels were of the Fire Attribute. As his fist flew towards Ma Qun, thick flames rose around it, causing the entire air around to grow heated.

Ma Qun gave a cold humph, not even bothering to stand up. He raised his massive hand, looking almost like a fan as he did so, slapping out towards his opponent's fist. At the same time, he also unleashed his Heavenly Jewels. Since his opponent was also a Heavenly Jewel Master, he did not want to lose by underestimating him.

PENG

A muffled thump.

Ah Dou had come at them so quickly, but his 'return' was even faster. He had been sent flying with a single slap from Ma Qun.

In terms of Heavenly Energy cultivation level, both of them were pretty equal. However, Ma Qun was of the Berserker Tribe with a trace of Ancient Titan bloodline. How could Ah Dou's strength even begin to compare with Ma Qun? As such, he staggered back more than a dozen steps, smashing apart two tables while doing so, before he finally barely regained his balance. The expressions of the rest of his group also changed instantly.

Being Heavenly Jewel Masters had always been something they were proudest of. However, they not not expected that this strange looking bunch in front of them also had Heavenly Jewel Masters amongst them, and that huge fellow was actually at the four-Jeweled stage too!

After sending Ah Dou flying off with a slap, Ma Qun stood up once more. His hands gripped together, making a grinding sound as he said: "You want to fight? Your Father, I, loves to fight the most!"

A thick, heavy aura burst forth from Ma Qun. In the first place, ignoring the fact that his strength was far above his opponent, just in terms of aura alone Ma Qun far outstripped his opponent as well. Having been through several actual battles, Ma Qun had slain hundreds of enemies, and currently when his aura burst forth, it held the scent of blood. How could it be compared to a youth who had never been blooded before?

Ah Dou shouted angrily as he charged forward once more. This time, he was no longer so rash and impetuous. His hands circled twice, and a large flaming sword appeared in both hands, striking out at Ma Qun's head as his entire body flew along sword first.

Ma Qun laughed heartily. He lifted his left hand, and a yellow shield coalesced in his hands. Simple, without flourishes, he just moved it directly into the path of the flaming sword.

That Ah Dou clearly knew his strength was no match for Ma Qun, and the Earth Attribute that Ma Qun had was a slight counter to his own Fire Attribute. In a flash of movement, he had spun to the back of Ma Qun, the flaming sword in his hand abruptly changing directions, drawing an arc in the air as it sped towards Ma Qun's throat.

This change was extremely subtle but ingenious. Ah Dou had clearly been thought by a master, and his actual combat experience was not bad at all.

Alas, the one he was facing was Ma Qun. Ma Qun's close combat skills had been 'tortured' out by Shangguan Fei'er, and he also had been in massive scale battles before. Facing an opponent of the same level, with his own innate talent and battle experience, how could he let his opponent gain an advantage over him so easily?

From Zhou Weiqing's group angle, Ma Qun's body seemed to slow down suddenly, and he was unable to dodge his opponent's attack.

Xixi couldn't help but cry out in alarm, but as she was about to spring forward, Crow pulled her back.

The next instant, the flaming sword swept across Ma Qun's throat. However, a shocking scene occurred next. The instant that it swept across his throat, all of a sudden a strong yellow light burst forth, and along Ma Qun's skin, a thick yellow armour appeared out of nowhere.

Pfft The flaming sword struck into it, Heavenly Energy bursting forth, but it did not seem to have the slightest chance of breaking the stone armour.

This is a literal translation of an idiom that he is actually using

literally – the original meaning is being an outstanding talent/distinguished person amongst common folk

Literal translation of another idiom. Impressive looking but useless person

Different Slang for f**k

He uses Niu Bi here, I believe I mentioned it previously in translations

Chapter 209 Meeting Ye Paopao again! (2)

Ma Qun's obviously slowed body abruptly exploded into motion, the shield in his left hand smashing out savagely into Ah Dou, who was in the midst of extending himself in the strike.

BANG Ah Dou was sent flying once more, blood spurting from his mouth.

In truth, if one compared their total combat strength, he shouldn't have been taken down so easily by Ma Qun. However, he had lost fully in terms of calculations and schemes. Ma Qun had purposely revealed a seeming weak spot for him to exploit, using his own powerful defense to just take the blow instead. As soon as he successfully struck Ma Qun, he would be extended out, and his state of mind would inadvertently relax slightly. Although he had seen Ma Qun's shield strike out at him, but in his mind, as long as he could kill Ma Qun before the shield reached him, then it wouldn't have much power behind it to worry about. In doing so, he could still act cool in front of Xuan'er, naturally he was happy to do so.

Alas, it was this mindset that let him throw away the fight totally. Ma Qun's strength was so terrifying. With just a single strike, though it was with the flat of the shield, it was more than enough for Ah Dou to deal with. His entire body flew and smashed into the side of the inn.

However, it was clear that Ma Qun would not let him go so easily. After all, that fellow had tried to deal a killing blow to Ma Qun, how could he let that pass like that? The shield in his hand flew out like a bolt of lightning, forming a giant earthen yellow round knife as it flew towards Ah Dou with an ear splitting shrill. If that struck, Ah Dou would not be able to escape the fate of being sliced into two.

Right at that moment, Xuan'er sprang into action. In a flash, she

appeared beside Ah Dou. With the support of her right hand, her entire body flipped and a shield of ice appeared in midair, right in the path of Ma Qun's flying shield.

To Zhou Weiqing and the others' surprise, the ice shield did not block the incoming weapon directly, instead deflecting it from an angle. As such, though Ma Qun's shield was extremely heavy and with a spinning momentum, it was still deflected by the ice shield to fly off, missing Ah Dou.

Grabbing hold of Ah Dou, Xuan'er brought him back to the front of their table. The entire process of her saving him was clean, neat and quick.

It had been a good display of her power. Furthermore, around her wrists, five sets Heavenly Jewels sparkled. Her Physical Jewel was Coordination, while her Elemental Jewel was of the Ice Attribute. She looked just barely twenty, yet she was already at the five-Jeweled stage, a Mid Level Zun Stage Heavenly Jewel Master. That was already quite a feat. In any place, with such a cultivation level at the age, she would be considered a young genius. There was a reason behind her pride and arrogance after all.

Ma Qun started momentarily, withdrawing his shield. He gave a big thumbs up, before slowly turning it down. "Well done, very good indeed, you truly know how to hide behind a woman's skirts. You are great indeed."

Xuan'er passed Ah Dou to one of her other companions, and she stepped forward slowly. With her abilities, she could naturally sense that though Ma Qun was only a four-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master, the terrifying strength he had and pure defensive capabilities, even a five-Jeweled powerhouse might not be able to deal with him. Furthermore, she was currently extremely furious. In truth, she did not really care about Ah Dou being injured, but she had taken to heart the words Ma Qun had repeated.

"You have insulted me, and more so you have insulted my

mother. Today, either you die or I die.” As she said that, Xuan’er waved her right hand, and a Consolidated light blue staff appeared in her grasp. Next, an aquamarine necklace, an aquamarine crown circlet and another an aquamarine belt appeared one after the other around her. It was four Consolidated Equipments!

Furthermore, these Consolidated Equipment were not ordinary at all. From the energy reverberations around them, they were actually all Zong Stage Consolidated Equipment... and pieces of a Set to boot. With Xuan’er’s five-Jeweled cultivation level, to have a four-piece Zong Stage Set, she had to have come from an extremely rich background, even for a Heavenly Jewel Master.

Interestingly, the four Consolidated Equipment she summoned clearly had a rather unique boost, one that was not often seen at all. When the four equipment appeared, the Water Attribute element reverberations around her clearly grew much stronger, almost explosively. A thick Water Attribute aura filled the area, almost reaching that of most six Jeweled Water Attribute Heavenly Jewel Masters. Clearly, she had chosen the route of a long ranged attacker, and with the boost of her four Consolidated Equipment, her combat prowess was definitely not to be underestimated.

However, facing Xuan’er like that, Ma Qun’s expression did not change at all. Instead, his face split in a wide grin as he said: “Not bad, not bad. This girl’s cultivation level is not bad! Her Consolidated Equipment looks quite interesting as well... unique indeed. Aiii, if I had not brought my wife along, perhaps we could have some fun together.”

Towards Xuan’er, he was not worried at all. In terms of fighting capabilities beyond their cultivation level, in this entire place, who could compare with Zhou Weiqing? He had been Zhou Weiqing and the others for long enough, and his vision and horizon had been broadened to a height far beyond his past self. This Xuan’er’s fighting capabilities and skill were not bad at all, but she lacked

any true battle to the death experience. Although Ma Qun did not know if he could defeat this girl, he was confident he would not lose to her. After all, he was Lin TianAo's disciple!

"Ma Qun, come back. If you keep wasting time, you won't have enough time to eat." Zhou Weiqing's voice came from behind as he stepped up besides Ma Qun. Clapping Ma Qun on the shoulders, he motioned him to return.

In truth, amongst the entire Heavenly Bow group, any one of them was no weaker than this Xuan'er. However, Zhou Weiqing did not want to waste time, and he couldn't possibly ask Tian'er to fight. He had long decided that in this Heavenly Jewel Tournament, he would not allow Tian'er to fight at all unless absolutely necessary. As for Yun Li, Zhou Weiqing did not think he could get him to fight on this small matter. After all, all these years, Yun Li had laboured so hard and contributed so much to his own personal homeland revival plans. Naturally, Zhou Weiqing would not want to trouble him over such a small and simple matter. As such, in order to settle things quickly, he decided to step forward himself.

Seeing Zhou Weiqing step forward, Xuan'er's gaze narrowed. Although this tall and robust youth had a lazy look about him, yet... with her cultivation level, she was not able to sense his power at all.

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly and said: "Little girl, you might have some power, but don't be too overconfident. Just a small matter and you are spouting nonsense about kill or be killed. Everyone only has one life... one life only has a few dozen years. Looking at you, you're still a virgin right, you've not even experienced the wonders a man can bring you. Wanting to die now, isn't that a shame? Why go to such an extent?"

"You.. you're asking for death!" Xuan'er's voice came out through gritted teeth. From young, she had been lauded as a genius in cultivation, and had led a very sheltered life. No one had ever

dared speak to her like that. The disdain and mockery from Zhou Weiqing's words were extremely clear, and her anger rose to the maximum.

Tipping her staff forward, she pointed it directly at Zhou Weiqing. Instantly, a blue light flashed out, and an ice cone formed instantly, flying towards Zhou Weiqing's chest.

This was no ordinary Ice Spike Stored Skill. Its length was more than one chi, and when it flew, a powerful icy cold burst forth. At the same time, Xuan'er's right leg kicked out at a distance towards Zhou Weiqing, and a strange blue circle of ice flew out, moving along the ground towards Zhou Weiqing's legs.

The circle of ice was extremely sharp, perhaps its destructive capabilities were far beyond even the ice spike.

Facing the two attacks, the lazy smile on Zhou Weiqing's face did not change. With a lazy swipe of his right hand, a faint silver light flashed out, and the two Skills that were just about to reach him just vanished into thin air, not a trace of them remaining.

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: "Such a little girl, but such a fiery temper. In the future, who would dare marry you?! Let me help your family teach you a little lesson alright. This is after all someone else's inn, it won't be good to destroy their things, we'll have to pay for damages!"

Zhou Weiqing's words might have caused Xuan'er to rage, but at the same time, her heart gripped in shock and fear. The instant that Zhou Weiqing had taken action, his Heavenly Jewels had released. The Icy Jade Physical Jewels of Strength were familiar, but on his left wrist, a strange red gemstone that glowed with a brilliant light... something that she had never seen before. What was that? Fire Attribute? No... that did not look correct. Furthermore, he had clearly used a Spatial Attribute Skill just now!

Currently, the two were still fighting, so Xuan'er quickly dismissed her thoughts. Her attacks did not stop or slow down at

all, as she pushed her staff forward in front of her, a row of ice spikes appeared one after the other... nine in total. At once, they flew towards Zhou Weiqing simultaneously, each of them directed at different vital points of the body.

Zhou Weiqing's expression remained impassive. Once again, he just lifted a hand, waving it in a strange arc. Another silver light flashed in the air, forming an arc for an instant, and the nine Ice Spikes just disappeared like that again.

What kind of Skill was that? The youths who accompanied Xuan'er were all stunned silly. Zhou Weiqing's actions were just too weird... seeming to disperse all of Xuan'er's attacks with such ease.

Xuan'er's surprise had to be the greatest. This time, the staff in her hands lanced down onto the ground. Instantly, a layer of icy blue light began to spread. At this time, Zhou Weiqing no longer wanted to play around and tease her. Waving his right hand in the air, Xuan'er suddenly felt the hair of her entire stand as fear gripped her. Subconsciously, her body flashed backwards. Right where she had been standing, a silver circle of light appeared silently, the entire air and light around there warping in a violent turbulence. Without question, if she had stayed in that position, perhaps her head would have been separated from her shoulders.

"Your senses aren't too bad at all. However, if I had been trying to hide the position from you, you would not be able to discover it. Alright, enough already."

Zhou Weiqing waved his right hand once more. Another flash of silver light, and the icy cold aura that had been spreading seemed to meet a strange suction force, disappearing once more. Xuan'er could clearly sense the Heavenly Energy in her body lurch and fall, as if being drawn away by some strange force, and a large chunk disappeared at once.

After showing that, Zhou Weiqing just turned around and headed

back towards his table.

Chapter 209 Meeting Ye Paopao again! (3)

The Devour Skill of the Demonic Attribute. Towards someone who was at an even lower cultivation level than he was, he could easily Devour their Heavenly Energy even at a short distance. Of course, such a tiny amount of Heavenly Energy was not much use to him.

Xuan'er stood there, just stunned. All along, she had believed that in the entire younger generation, no one could compare with her. With her strength, she thought she could compare to even those younger generation geniuses of the Great Saint Lands. Alas, the sight before her eyes was toppling her belief. Although Zhou Weiqing spoke like an arrogant senior, from his looks he was barely twenty as well. Yet, in front of him, she did not seem to even have the slightest chance.

Anger. Vexation. Unwillingness to accept such a situation. All sorts of complicated emotions burst forth in that instant, and Xuan'er suddenly screamed out loud. "Die!!"

The staff in her hands abruptly pointed at Zhou Weiqing once more. In the twinkling of an eye, a wheel of ice appeared behind her back... the thick blue light slowly turning black. This was the Ice Attribute Element, pushed to the limit and beyond. This was something that could only happen when one used their Life Force to power a Skill!

The originally only Heavenly Energy reverberation suddenly turned violent and restive. Without warning, a pitch black ice spear appeared in front of Xuan'er, floating there restlessly. At the same time, her face turned pale and ashen. It was clear that unleashing such a Skill had a great toll on her.

Zhou Weiqing turned back around. This time, his expression was extremely ugly.

Previously, although Xuan'er had been provoking them all this

time, in Zhou Weiqing's eyes, they were just a bunch of kids who [did not know the immensity of heaven and earth](#), and just teaching them a lesson was sufficient. After all, with his status and horizon outlook, he wouldn't lower himself to the same level as these kids.

However, Ah Dou had tried to kill Ma Qun, and Xuan'er with the attitude of fighting to the bitter end, wanting to kill them. Now, she had even resorted to using burning her Life Force in using a Skill to attempt to kill him. With that, the flames of anger were finally fanned in Zhou Weiqing. He had always been one who loved his life and treasured it so much, and if someone tried to kill him, he would definitely treat them as an enemy, an enemy to be slain.

The black ice spear flew towards Zhou Weiqing like a bolt of lightning. Wherever it flew, the very air around it was warped and twisted. In that moment, even Tian'er, who had been sitting calmly at the table, had a sudden change in expression.

Zhou Weiqing's right hand lifted suddenly. Upon close examination, one might discover that in that instant, his entire right hand had also turned pitch black, with faint glow of purple tattoos writhing on the skin.

Lifting hand.

Grab. As if grabbing at empty space.

To any onlooker, such a slow movement would never be able to affect the black ice spear.

However, as soon as Zhou Weiqing actually attacked, the energy reverberations in the air all around them suddenly turned strange, as if everything was being warped, giving a powerful illusory feel to everything.

When the ice spear entered this warped space, it stopped momentarily all of a sudden. In that instant, Zhou Weiqing's right hand grabbed onto it, actually grasping the ice spear in his hands.

A strange sight occurred next, as a thick grey light flared up,

covering Zhou Weiqing's right hand and the spear in a layer of crystalline like grey. Next, the ice spear began to melt rapidly, as if its ice had met with an unbelievably strong fire, slowly turning smaller and smaller before it vanished totally.

By this time, 'stunned' was no longer sufficient to describe what Xuan'er was feeling. She had never imagined that her most powerful attack could be dissipated in such a way by Zhou Weiqing. The strength and power that he had displayed had caused her to truly lose all hope.

Right at the same time, Zhou Weiqing's other hand lifted up towards her, a thick blue light flickered, and a round lightning pearl tumbled towards Xuan'er at a deceptively fast speed, crackling with purple lightning.

Xuan'er's face had already been pale, but it somehow grew even more ashen at that moment. Although the lightning pearl that Zhou Weiqing had shot out was not large, when it appeared the powerful cold in the dining hall actually disappeared, filling the area with the ozone scent of raging lightning attribute.

In that instant, the several youths who had been fawning over her actually stumbled backwards in retreat, not wanting to be affected by the spread of electricity. Shockingly, no one attempted to rescue her, and having lost most of her Heavenly Energy, how could Xuan'er withstand this simple angry strike by Zhou Weiqing.

It might just be a single lightning pearl, but with the fine control of Zhou Weiqing's 'Flying Lightning God Technique', that particular lightning pearl was actually compressed with a massive amount of lightning attribute Heavenly Energy. Towards someone who tried to kill him directly, he did not feel the need to hold back. Even if that person was a beautiful lady, in Zhou Weiqing's eyes, she was just a femme fatale.

"Show mercy!" Right at this moment, an urgent voice rang out. The next instant, an icy blue light engulfed it. It was a massive

water bubble. As soon as the bubble appeared, it enveloped Zhou Weiqing's lightning pearls. To Zhou Weiqing's surprise, the water bubble actually severed the connection between him and the lightning pearl.

Next, the water bubble flew out towards the door, up into the skies. After a few moments, the loud explosion of lightning and thunder rang out, as if someone had detonated a massive lightning bomb in midair.

Xuan'er subconsciously staggered back several steps, her body knocking into a table which toppled to the ground. Currently, her eyes were filled with shock. She knew that if not for the bubble appearing at the last second, she would have been blown to bits by that lightning pearl's explosion.

A tall and slender figure appeared at the doorway. "Please show mercy. I apologize deeply on behalf of my sister." As soon as the figure appeared, his words and attitude were extremely courteous, but in a flash he appeared in front of Xuan'er defensively.

When he saw the person, Zhou Weiqing started momentarily. The figure first looked at Xuan'er, making sure that his sister was fine, before he turned to look at the other side.

Four eyes met. The person who had saved Xuan'er suddenly shuddered violently, eyes filled with shock as he staggered back a step, exclaiming in shock: "It... it's you?!"

This person who had saved Xuan'er was actually someone Zhou Weiqing knew... was even familiar with. It was Ye Paopao, son of the Fei Li Empire Prime Minister... once his treasured companion who had been in the same Battle Team with Zhou Weiqing in the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, fighting alongside him... but also the same person who had ran off early and reported Zhou Weiqing's information to the Fei Li Empire... causing him so much trouble...

O

A shadow of a smile crossed Zhou Weiqing's face... a strange,

even conflicted look. “Why can’t it be me? Is this your little sister? Not bad, not bad at all! So young, and already at the five-Jeweled stage.”

Seeing that it was Zhou Weiqing, Ye Paopao’s face changed dramatically. If there was one single person that he wished most not to meet, it had to be this youth standing right in front of him now.

Originally, when Lin TianAo, him and the others had represented the Fei Li Empire to join the previous Heavenly Jewel Tournament, Ye Paopao had definitely gained many major benefits. Not just in terms of the raise in cultivation level... even the simple reward of being able to ascend the Heavenly Jewel Island after winning the championship was an unbelievable benefit. Currently, his cultivation level had already broken through to the six-Jeweled cultivation stage, which would have been far above his own expectations before he had attended the Heavenly Jewel Tournament.

Alas, he had betrayed Zhou Weiqing, informing his own Family about Zhou Weiqing’s details, and influencing the decision for the Fei Li Empire to break ties with Zhou Weiqing, forcing him to flee from the Fei Li Empire. It could be said that at that time, Ye Paopao had affected Zhou Weiqing the most. All these years, Ye Paopao had also been filled with guilt and regret.

Not long ago, Zhou Weiqing had led a diplomatic party to visit the Fei Li Empire, he had learned about it. However, at that time, he had only looked at him in the drilling ground from a distance for a short moment.

How could he dare, have the face to meet Zhou Weiqing? However, just that single look was sufficient for him to see how powerful Zhou Weiqing had grown in the few years apart.

Previously, when he was only at the three-Jeweled stage, Zhou Weiqing had already done so much, caused so much wind and rain

in the last Heavenly Jewel Tournament. Let alone now, when he was already at the six-Jeweled stage. It could be said that the person Ye Paopao feared most was Zhou Weiqing, and now that he appeared so suddenly in front of him, one could imagine the sheer shock in Ye Paopao's heart.

"Weiqing, how are you. It's been a long time." Ye Paopao forced a smile. At last, he gathered his spirits and greeted Zhou Weiqing.

"Ye Paopao, he hurt Ah Dou, and Xuan'er. You must take revenge for us!" One of the youths sidled up, saying angrily towards Ye Paopao.

Ye Paopao swept a cold gaze over him, before saying quietly: "Shut up. Take Xuan'er and get lost. Wait for me outside."

"Ye Paopao, you aren't so afraid of things right." The youth said vexedly.

All of a sudden, Ye Paopao just gave him a backhand slap, sending him flying, fixing his crashed form with a cold gaze. This time, no one else dared say anything else, and even Xuan'er stood up quietly, glaring savagely at Zhou Weiqing before leaving gloomily with the other youths.

Ye Paopao looked at Zhou Weiqing with an embarrassed expression. "Weiqing, my apologies, they are just too young, arrogant and willful."

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly, saying: "They did not do anything to that they have to apologize about, just a bunch of kids. On the other hand, if I did not remember wrongly, you were the one who actually let me down right..."

Ye Paopao gave a bitter smile, saying: "Yes... yes I let you down indeed. All these years, I have lived in regret. I have also always been running away from the truth, avoiding the past. Now that I have seen you today again, I know that I can no longer run away. Do it then, no matter how you deal with me, I accept it. Although I

had my own reasons for doing it at that time, it is true that I betrayed you... that I let you down.”

Looking at Ye Paopao’s sorrowful face, Zhou Weiqing gave a cold smirk. Waving at him, he said: “Go, get lost. Killing you will only dirty my hands. I am too lazy to talk about the past, I can only blame my own eyes for being blind.”

After saying that, Zhou Weiqing turned back to his own table.

Indeed, when he had been betrayed, he had once been filled with hate and anger against Ye Paopao. At that time, if not for the fact he had just barely been strong enough, perhaps he would have died at the Fei Li Empire, died in the hands of his so-called allies.

However, so much time had passed, and just too many things had happened to him since. Especially since he had gained so much more in the ZhongTian Empire, meeting all his Peerless Regiment brothers. Perhaps, if not for Ye Paopao’s betrayal and actions, he would not have what he has today. As such, a lot of the hate towards Ye Paopao had vanished. He had never been a person to dwell on hatred, always preferring to look towards the future. In his heart, Ye Paopao was no longer of any importance at all, just a mere past guest that had once been in his life briefly.

Naive / have an exaggerated opinion of one’s abilities

Chapter 210 Ascending Heavenly Jewel! (1)

Ye Paopao had thought of many possible reactions Zhou Weiqing would have when they met again. However, he had never in his wildest dreams imagined that Zhou Weiqing would actually just let him go like that. For a moment, he stood there, stunned and speechless.

“Do you still need me to send you off?” Zhou Weiqing glanced at him coldly.

Only then did Ye Paopao come to his senses. Gritting his teeth, a complex light in his eyes, he finally gave a long sigh, bowing deeply to Zhou Weiqing before turning to leave. The knot in his heart that had been there for years had finally come loose, but it didn't make him feel any better. Alas, there was no such thing as medicine for regret in this world. So, no matter how gloomy he felt, there was nothing he could do to change things that he had already done.

Ye Paopao left, and Ma Qun couldn't help but say: “Boss, that fellow betrayed you in the past, and you just let him go like that?”

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly and said: “It isn't about letting him go or not. In my eyes, he is no longer anyone important. It is pointless to make a fuss over people like him. Furthermore, killing him is of no benefit to us. After all, we are currently still allies with the Fei Li Empire. Alright, go back and eat, see if eating more can't keep your mouth shut?”

...

Ye Paopao walked out of the inn, still in a distracted and dazed state. Ye Xuan'er and the others were already waiting for him outside, and as soon as they spotted him, they gathered around him quickly.

Ye Xuan'er's eyes were filled with anger. “Brother, why? What abilities does that fellow have that you are actually so scared of

him? Are you still a man?”

Ye Paopao glanced at her coldly. “Do you know who he is? If I hadn’t come back in time, you would already be dead in there. All of you. I had just gone out for a while, and you all caused so much trouble. If you all continue on like this, we don’t even have to speak about entering the Heavenly Jewel Tournament finals, I’m afraid we can’t even get past the preliminary rounds.”

The anger in Ye Xuan’er’s eyes did not lessen due to Ye Paopao’s words. “Brother, have you forgotten the honour of our Family?”

Ye Paopao’s gaze suddenly froze. All of a sudden, he slapped Ye Xuan’er viciously on the face, sending this beloved sister that he had always doted on so much falling to the ground.

“Honour of our family? Do you know, that person can easily destroy our family. You all want to know who is he? Fine, let me tell you. His name is Zhou Weiqing. Not long ago, he led the diplomatic party from the Heavenly Bow Empire to visit our Fei Li Empire. Yes, that Zhou Weiqing. That Zhou Weiqing who defeated the nine-Jeweled Vice Commander of the Royal Family Guards with his six-Jeweled cultivation level. At the same time, he is also the person who led our Fei Li Battle Team in the previous Heavenly Jewel Tournament. At that time, he was only at the three-Jeweled stage. In the entire Fei Li Empire, he is the only one in my heart who can be called a legend. I was once his team member, and I personally witnessed the countless miracles that he created. Who the hell do you all think you are, you dare to provoke him?!”

Hearing Ye Paopao’s words, these youths were stunned. Even Ye Xuan’er totally forgot the pain on her face.

Years ago, when Zhou Weiqing had led the Fei Li Battle Team to achieve the championship of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, it had shook the entire Fei Li Empire. This was especially so for the younger generation of Heavenly Jewel Masters, he could be

considered an idol even.

Zhou Weiqing and the rest of the Fei Li Battle Team, and their series of actions and achievements on the Heavenly Jewel Tournament... it had long been turned into stories, passed down through all the various Academies. How could Xuan'er and the others not know about it? Their respect and idolizing of Ye Paopao was also because Ye Paopao had been part of the team!

Just like what Ye Paopao said, in their hearts, Zhou Weiqing was a legend... and this legend had been right in front of them just now!

Naturally, Zhou Weiqing could guess the meaning behind Ye Paopao bringing all these outstanding youthful Heavenly Jewel Masters such a outlying border city at this time. It was clear that they were headed to join the Heavenly Jewel Tournament. However, this year's Fei Li Battle Team would no longer be able to reproduce the glorious results of the previous tournament.

...

They rested for the remainder of the day in the small border city. The next morning, the six members of the Heavenly Bow Battle Team resumed their journey, officially entering the ZhongTian Empire.

They moved on for fifteen more days, at a pace that was even slower than ordinary folk riding normal horses. Still, at last they reached their destination.

In the distance, the giant and wondrous capital city of the ZhongTian Empire in the horizon, with the great pillars that supported the Heavenly Jewel Island, a stunning sight for anyone.

Zhou Weiqing stopped his single-horned Ghost Demon Horse, and his eyes blanked a moment as he drifted into remembrance.

Several years ago, it was this exact place where he had led the Fei Li Battle Team to achieve a miracle. It was this place where he had

met Shangguan Fei'er and Shangguan Xue'er. It was also this place where he had received the news about the destruction of his Empire.

Returning to this place of so many memories, but things had changed so much already. The current Zhou Weiqing was no longer the young and green youth. He was now a powerhouse and true leader in his own right.

“What is it, did many thoughts and feelings spark in you? Or are you just thinking of your three Shangguan Sisters?” Tian'er was by Zhou Weiqing's side and she couldn't help but teased him.

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily, saying: “All I guess, I don't know how Bing'er has been.” In front of Tian'er, he did not attempt to hide his feelings and yearning for Shangguan Bing'er. In Zhou Weiqing's life, not only was she his first woman, it was also Bing'er who had helped him become a Heavenly Jewel Master, saving his life in the process and helping him since. It could be said that Bing'er's position in his heart was irreplaceable. They had not seen each other for years, and he did not know how her cultivation had been after such a long closed door cultivation. However, no matter what, in Zhou Weiqing's heart, she was still the gentle, amazing Bing'er forever.

They entered the ZhongTian City. With the experience from the last time, Zhou Weiqing easily brought the others to the same inn they had stayed during the previous Heavenly Jewel Tournament.

To Zhou Weiqing's surprise, when they were registering to stay, they met Ye Paopao once again.

“Weiqing, you... you all are also here to join the Heavenly Jewel Tournament?” Unlike Zhou Weiqing who had already guessed Ye Paopao's purpose, Ye Paopao had not actually guessed at Zhou Weiqing's goal. They had been moving at such a faster speed than Zhou Weiqing's group, and had already been staying here for days. Perhaps because of the old cherished memory, Ye Paopao had

actually also brought the current Fei Li Battle Team to stay at this same inn.

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly, saying: “Why? Can’t we join the Heavenly Jewel Tournament as well?”

Ye Paopao quickly came to his senses, saying: “Right, you all must be representing the Heavenly Bow Empire. Just a short three years, and things have changed so much. Weiqing, may I speak with you personally?” The last sentence, Ye Paopao had gathered up all his courage to say.

Zhou Weiqing glanced at him, saying: “There is no need. The Heavenly Jewel Tournament is starting in half a month, and we will only be rivals then. Good luck to you then.”

Looking at Zhou Weiqing and his group’s retreating figures, a hint of bitterness crossed Ye Paopao’s lips. It was too late to speak about some things, and all of it had mostly been caused by himself. If, originally, he had not rushed back to the Fei Li Empire, spilling everything on Zhou Weiqing and adding fuel to the fire in pushing the Fei Li Empire to treat Zhou Weiqing as an enemy... perhaps this year’s Fei Li Battle Team would still be led by Zhou Weiqing.

A few years had passed, and everyone had grown up, much more mature. The way they looked at things had also changed. By now, Ye Paopao truly realised that what he had done previously, besides the slight reason for his family, more of it was because of his jealousy of Zhou Weiqing.

However, now that he saw Zhou Weiqing again, he realised that he no longer had even the right to be jealous of Zhou Weiqing.

...

After they had settled down in their rooms, Zhou Weiqing called the others to his room for a short meeting.

“Everyone, take a seat. Let us discuss the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, which will be starting in half a month.” Zhou

Weiqing gave a signal, and everyone found a place to sit. Tian'er just sat cross-legged on his bed, looking at Zhou Weiqing with a faint smile on her beautiful face.

As time had passed, the original perverted little rascal had grown more mature and stable. Perhaps it was a case of 'beauty in the eye of the beholder', and Tian'er's love for him had influenced her thoughts. However, in her eyes, heart, there was only this young man in front of her. Even if she may not admit it outright, Zhou Weiqing's position in her heart had already surpassed her father. This was perhaps a real life scenario of the old saying 'a grown girl can't be kept at home'.

Zhou Weiqing said solemnly: "We have already reached the ZhongTian City. This time, we are here to represent my homeland, the Heavenly Bow Empire. Although most of you are not original citizens of our Heavenly Bow Empire, you have chosen it to be your new home. This current Heavenly Jewel Tournament is truly very important to me, and it is the best chance for our Heavenly Bow Empire to rise up. With the sheer power and influence of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, we must seize this opportunity to let everyone know that our Heavenly Bow Empire has returned... returned much stronger and greater."

"As such, we only have a single goal. The final championship." As he said the last sentence, Zhou Weiqing's words were filled with resolution.

Towards this state of his, Tian'er was the most familiar. Everytime Zhou Weiqing spoke like that, it meant he had truly set his resolve, to accomplish this task no matter what he had to do.

The rest of the group looked at him, nodding, but no one interrupted him.

Zhou Weiqing continued: "This year's Heavenly Jewel Tournament will be very different from the previous ones. During our journey here, I have already considered it very closely. In the

past, the reason why I was able to snatch the final championship with the Fei Li Battle Team... I can say it was probably eighty percent luck. Even for the final battle, if not for the massive dragon, we could never have defeated the other three battle teams with the backing of the Great Saint Lands. Furthermore, the more I recall things closely, even those Battle Teams backed by the Great Saint Lands, they definitely did not send their strongest teams. That gave us a huge opening, coupled with our luck and hard work... only then did we win.”

“However, this time will be very different. Before Xue’er left the Crescent City, she told me that all three of them Shangguan Sisters will be joining their ZhongTian Battle Team in the Tournament. In telling me this, she is not just informing me about the decision of the Heaven’s Expanse Palace, but also reminding me that this year’s Heavenly Jewel Tournament will not be so simple. There are likely many political reasons behind this... so we must be ready that we will be meeting far stronger opponents than the previous round. At least, I believe it isn’t just the Heaven’s Expanse Palace... all of the other Great Saint Lands will also be sending their strongest teams... strongest formations. This means that I need everyone to be prepared for the toughest possible fights, not just cultivating, but also preparing yourself in your heart. Of course, as the team leader, I will do my best to bear a larger burden, but I will not accept any failure.”

Pausing for a moment, he then asked: “Tian’er, how much money did we bring this time?”

Chapter 210 Ascending Heavenly Jewel (2)

Tian'er looked at Zhou Weiqing and said: "Besides the bare minimum we need for our Heavenly Bow Empire to continue running properly, we brought all excess funds. We currently have around thirty million gold in total."

Hearing that sum, everyone was surprised, staring at Zhou Weiqing in shock. To bring such a large sum of money, what was he trying to do? Previously, Zhou Weiqing had not told them about this.

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: "Building up the reputation of our Heavenly Bow Empire is indeed important, but to us, perhaps the more important thing now is to earn money. We can never have enough money, there are just too many ways we urgently need to spend in. Furthermore, I have just declared a year of tax exemption for our Empire, but we have to keep building up our troops. With just our current funds, I'm afraid we can't last too long. As such, before we finish our empire's revival and build the economy back to self sufficiency, we need to get fresh infusions of gold. Only by doing this will we be able to continuing further upgrading and improving our troops. This Heavenly Jewel Tournament is definitely one of the best chances we have."

It could be said that Zhou Weiqing was currently the highest commander in the entire Heavenly Bow Empire, with Princess Difuya only as a figurehead, and she would not interfere in his decisions. This time, since he was leaving the Heavenly Bow Empire for such a long time to join the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, naturally he had to do something for the Empire during this time.

Attending the Tournament was indeed very important, but Zhou Weiqing had also definitely placed much importance on the chance to earn gold. After all, the previous time he had joined the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, he had won slightly more than one

hundred million gold. This time, his capital was even greater, and he would not give up the chance easily.

Of course, Crow had one of the previous Fei Li Battle Team members who had earned much from the last Heavenly Jewel Tournament. Instantly, her eyes lit up as well as she said: “Boss, tell us what to do then? Do we still bet everything on ourselves? We can already earn a decent amount in the preliminary stages.”

Zhou Weiqing shook his head and said: “It will be tough to just throw everything betting on us, it is too obvious a target. After all, this time our capital is much higher, and if we bet everything on us, it will greatly influence the odds. We need to spread our web in betting. Of course, we will definitely bet on ourselves too. Thirty million gold... it should be impossible to multiply it by a hundred, but if we are careful, multiplying it by ten times or more should not be a problem. With the wealth of the ZhongTian public, and the other Battle Teams’ ‘investment’, I have no worries about success. As for how we do so exactly, it will have to wait until we all draw lots and the groups are settled.”

Crow grinned and said: “That is your business already, in any case I will just bet all my personal funds on us, that is the safest.”

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: “That is good too. I think all of you can just bet all your personal funds on ourselves, that will be safer. However, when it comes to some critical matches, we also need to be careful. After all, we might not necessarily be able to win every single fight. Alright, you guys have a rest in the inn first, I am going out for a while, to trying and find some information about our opponents this Heavenly Jewel Tournament. I should not be back too early, so Tian’er, you do not need to wait for me tonight.”

Tian’er nodded in agreement.

Zhou Weiqing opened the door and left. As they watched his retreating bet, Yun Li couldn’t help but ask Tian’er curiously:

“Why don’t you follow him, all this time you both haven’t been apart.”

Tian’er smiled faintly and said: “He is going to the Heavenly Jewel Island to look for his loves, what use is there for me following him?”

Yun Li started momentarily. “You know about it? Why did you just let him go then?”

Tian’er smiled and said: “There are some things that are not worth fighting about. If I cannot hold onto his heart, what is the point of holding onto him? If he really leaves me because of other women, that only proves my own attractiveness is insufficient. However, I am confident.”

Ma Qun gave Tian’er a big thumbs up and said: “Sis-in-law, impressive. We’ll head back first then.” After saying that, he stood up and left together with Crow and Xixi.

Yun Li also scratched his head sheepishly before following them. He did not really understand Tian’er’s psychology in that.

In truth, for the past few days, Tian’er had suddenly become open minded. This fellow Little Fatty had this many women, why should she continue finding trouble for herself? Forcing him to be so troubled about having to chose. Furthermore, the three Shangguan Sisters were not tough to get along with. No matter what, Zhou Weiqing would not leave her, or leave them, so she did not want to give him excess trouble that could be avoided. She had decided not to fight with them about this, and it would be much better.

Tian’er’s guess was indeed accurate. After Zhou Weiqing left the inn, he headed straight for the Heavenly Jewel Island. With the previous plaque he had from the last Heavenly Jewel Tournament, it was no trouble for him to ascend the Heavenly Jewel Island. Furthermore, with his current cultivation level, it did not take long for him to cross the clouds and reach the top.

In truth, even before they stepped into the ZhongTian City, as they neared it, his heart had already flown up there. Before Shangguan Xue'er had left, she had told him that Bing'er was already out of her closed door cultivation, and he could no longer hold back the longing in his heart. Of course, he would still be looking for information about the other Battle Teams, but the most important thing for him now was to look for Bing'er.

“Is your Third Young Miss here? Please help me send a message that Zhou Weiqing is here to look for her.” As soon as he reached the Heavenly Jewel Island, Zhou Weiqing did not hesitate to look for one of the workers of the Heaven's Expanse Palace.

The few white clad youths did not recognize him, and as soon as they heard he was looking for Shangguan Bing'er, they were surprised.

The Heavenly Jewel Island wasn't a place that most people could easily access. One had to be a Upper level Zong Stage to even have the right to be given special access, or the only other way was through the Heavenly Jewel Tournament. This youth in front of them clearly seemed to be the latter, and they not know which Great Saint Land he had come from.

One of the white clad youths at the head said passively: “I'm sorry, Sir. We are not able to help you send such a message. Our Third Young Miss will not see any ordinary person easily.”

Zhou Weiqing's face grew bleak. “I am her husband, how can you not send the message?”

As soon as he said that, the white clad youths' eyes widened, and they stared at Zhou Weiqing with disbelief.

The leader's face turned ugly, and he shouted angrily: “You dare insult our Third Young Miss? Arrest him!”

Instantly, the dozen or so Heaven's Expanse Palace white clad youths surrounded Zhou Weiqing, unleashing their Heavenly

Jewels.

They were all Heavenly Jewel Masters, and though their average cultivation level was at the four-Jeweled stage, with only the leader who was about thirty years of age being around six-Jeweled stage. However, they definitely had the numbers advantage.

Zhou Weiqing said exasperatedly: “I really am Bing’er’s husband, what do you mean I am insulting her?!”

The leading white clad man gave a disdainful hmph. “Why don’t you urinate in a puddle and look at your own reflection? You think you are worthy?!”

“Your sister...” Little Fatty flew into a rage, stepping forward and sending a punch flying towards the white clad leader, totally ignoring the rest of the youths charging at him.

Instantly, the entrance of the Heavenly Jewel Island lapsed into a mass of chaos and confusion.

Chapter 211 Bribing Father-in-Law! (1)

Zhou Weiqing was very angry, and the consequences were grave. As a man, who would be willing to hear others say he was not worthy of his woman? Furthermore, it looked like if he did not take action, he would not be able to see Bing'er.

The dozen or so white clad youths were clearly the outer disciples of the Heaven's Expanse Palace, and only the leader who had insulted Zhou Weiqing might possibly be part of the inner or core disciples. Zhou Weiqing totally ignored the others, just punching him directly.

Although he did not unleash his Heavenly Jewels, Zhou Weiqing's physical body was already far stronger than any ordinary Heavenly Jewel Master. The step forward was as at unparalleled speed, and all the other white clad youths only saw a blur before them before Zhou Weiqing had reached their leader. The rest of them could only surround him from the back, but they were far too late to stop him.

Facing Zhou Weiqing's punch, the white clad leader was also given a fright. This was the Heavenly Jewel Island, where the Heaven's Expanse Palace was situated. Even if the Heaven's Expanse Palace disciples did not become arrogant from that, they would still have a sense of pride that held them at a lofty position. At least, they had never seen anyone dare to take action here. Even a Heavenly King stage powerhouse would be polite to these workers here. Who would guess that Zhou Weiqing would actually attack him first just like that?

Flustered and caught by surprise, the white clad leader had not time to use any Skills, and he could only gather his Heavenly Energy as he tried to block Zhou Weiqing's punch.

BANG Zhou Weiqing's fist slammed savagely into his opponent's crossed arms which he had just put up in a defensive guard. He

struck right in the intersection where the defense was supposed to be the strongest. Both sides were almost equal in cultivation level, but the sheer difference in physical strength was just too huge.

The white clad leader was sent flying like a cannonball released. This was also because Zhou Weiqing had held back, withdrawing some strength at the last moment, otherwise it could have just destroyed his arms from the sheer tyrannical impact.

Almost simultaneously, the ordinary four-Jeweled Heaven's Expanse Palace outer disciples attacks from the back reached Zhou Weiqing.

Right at that moment, an inconceivably powerful aura burst forth abruptly from Zhou Weiqing's body. The charging Heaven's Expanse Palace disciples felt as if they were suffocating, as the suppressing force caused their Heavenly Energy to be pushed back, even stalled, making them falter in their charge.

A giant pair of wings erupted from Zhou Weiqing's back, and a thick Heavenly Energy reverberation joined the immense aura.

All of the attacks landed on the pair of wings. However, all the white clad youths were shocked to discover that instead of their attacks taking effect, a vast power instead sent them flying back.

If there had been any onlooker at the side, they would have seen a stunning sight. A dozen white clad youths leaping at Zhou Weiqing simultaneously, and all of them swept off and sent flying by the appearance of the massive pair of wings.

This was at the edge of the Heavenly Jewel Island. In the sweep, some of the Heaven's Expanse Palace disciples were actually sent flying off the island, about to fall down. If they were to fall from such a heights, perhaps it would be difficult to even find a proper piece of their remains.

Several bouts of black light sprang out from Zhou Weiqing's body instantly, as if they had eyes of their own, encircling all of the

white clad youths who were about to fall and pulling them back. The giant wings which had sent them flying unfurled once then returned back into Zhou Weiqing's body, hidden once again.

At this point, the white clad youths were now looking at Zhou Weiqing with gazes filled with shock. When Zhou Weiqing first ascended the Heavenly Jewel Island, they had not paid much attention to him due to his youth and his simple dressing.

However, they now realised that this youth in front of them had powers that far surpassed even their imaginations. He had not even unleashed his Heavenly Jewels, and he had already defeated all of them with such ease.

The white clad leader who had been sent flying back with Zhou Weiqing's punch finally regained his balance. The arms that he had used to block the blow were now totally numb, almost having lost all feeling in them.

"You... you actually dare attack us on the Heavenly Jewel Island?!" He had lost so miserably, and the extreme shame turned to red faced anger. He quickly drew out a gemstone from his pocket, infusing Heavenly Energy within. Instantly, a brilliant gold light shone forth.

It was as if Zhou Weiqing did not even see what he had done, instead a faint silvery-white light lit up in his eyes, and the aura around him changed suddenly. In the white clad youths' eyes, after the change, there were only two phrases to describe him. Illusory... boundless...

Under any ordinary circumstance, with Zhou Weiqing's character and intelligence, he would never be so rash and impetuous. However, he had been parted from Bing'er for so long, and at long last he had finally gotten to know that she was out of closed door cultivation. He was now at the Heavenly Jewel Island, just a few steps from her, and one could just imagine how excited, agitated and urgent he was. At this moment, he only wanted to see her. As

for manners.... He couldn't give a damn now.

“BING’ER, I— HAVE— COME —.” All of a sudden, Zhou Weiqing lifted his head, shouting up into the skies. As he shouted, the surrounding Heaven’s Expanse Palace disciples felt dizzy, their eyes shocked.

All around Zhou Weiqing, there was a shield formed by layer of silver white light. His voice instantaneously covered the entire Heavenly Jewel Island, the soundwaves assisted by the strange reverberation of the Saint Energy. Zhou Weiqing believed that even if there was a Spatial Separation, with the help of the Saint Energy, it would not be able to block his voice.

“Who dares to shout and howl around in our Heavenly Jewel Island...” A solemn voice rang out. Next, two figures appeared near the front of Zhou Weiqing.

The two figures looked to be elders of around sixty years of age, both dressed in white as well, though their sleeves were adorned with silver thread. As Zhou Weiqing had previously been to the Heaven’s Expanse Palace, he knew that these were Guardians of the Heaven’s Expanse Palace.

The Heaven’s Expanse Palace had several administrative levels. Those who remained outside to receive guests and guide them along, they were all ordinary outer disciples, and they could only wear the pure white without any decorations. These disciples might have differing cultivation levels, but the highest would not be above the seven-Jeweled stage. Once their age reached a certain point, but their cultivation level did not keep up, they would be sent down to the ZhongTian Empire to hold some important positions, but they would no longer be able to remain in the Heaven’s Expanse Palace.

However, if they could meet the requirements, they would raise one stage up, which were the Guardians. According to Zhou Weiqing’s memories, the Heaven’s Expanse Palace Guardians were

ordinarily eight or nine Jeweled in stage. However, these Guardians were still considered outer disciples.

As for the true core of the Heaven's Expanse Palace, Zhou Weiqing did not really know what the requirement was. In any case, those core disciples he had seen all had gold thread embroidery around their sleeves, for example Zhan LingTian. Anyone above should be at least of Elder status. Of course, Zhou Weiqing did not know how many Elders the Heaven's Expanse Palace had, but he knew that one needed to be at least of the Heavenly King Stage to be even considered an Elder, and their cultivation level would also determine the number of gold threads on their sleeves. For example, for the two Heaven's Expanse Palace Masters he had seen previously, the First Palace Master Shangguan Tianyang had nine gold threads around his sleeves, while Shangguan Tianyue only had seven. It was clear that there was some difference between the two brothers' cultivation level, though he did not know what they were exactly.

Zhou Weiqing looked at the two Guardians innocently, saying: "I am here to look for people, but they insulted me first. You can't blame me for taking action."

The two old men's faces fell, and the one on the left said: "No one can take action at the Heaven's Expanse Palace. Surrender now, otherwise we will kill you."

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: "So fierce! Come and try then!"

By now, he was really angry. The previous time, he had reached the Heaven's Expanse Palace without any problems. Why did he have so many problems now? Was it just so difficult to see Bing'er?

The two Guardians' expressions changed. Both of them did not continue speaking, instead charging towards Zhou Weiqing in a flanking maneuver. In their eyes, how could someone as young as Zhou Weiqing have much strength? Even if he came from another

Great Saint Lands, he should not be beyond the seven-Jeweled stage. As such, the two of them did not even bother releasing their Consolidated Equipment, just charging straight at him. The old man on the left had the Wind Attribute Elemental Jewels, and he unleashed a Fetters of Wind. As for the old man on the right, he directly used his hands to strike out at Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing gave a cold humph. He also did not summon his Consolidated Equipment, instead the wings behind his back spread out once more as he instantly entered the Dragon-Tiger Transformation state. Strange purple tattoos covered his entire body at once, and his body turned left abruptly, with the wings on the left actually turning silver at the same time. As he turned, the left wing swiped down with a ear splitting shrill sound. At the same time, with his turn Zhou Weiqing was able to face the old man trying to strike out at him directly.

Although the Fetters of Wind was invisible, one needed to use the Wind Attribute in the atmosphere to bind their enemies. However, the old man was shocked to discover that when Zhou Weiqing's left wing struck down, the air actually coagulated around him. The Wind Attribute Energy that was about to bind him actually split into two, dissipating... no longer able to affect him.

Silver Emperor Wing Slash. One of the Silver Emperor's powerful Wind Attribute Skills.

Zhou Weiqing's fist also received the other old man's hands. No Skills, just a pure clash of strength.

Another massive explosion. Although this old man was not sent flying like the previous white clad youth, he still staggered back eight steps before regaining his balance. He couldn't help but think to himself: Such strength!

"The Heaven's Expanse Palace also needs to speak reason right!" Zhou Weiqing's eyes were piercing with anger. Although these two old men had a decent cultivation level, both at the eight-Jeweled

stage, they were after all still outer disciples of the Heaven's Expanse Palace, and did not have the real legacy and teachings of the Heaven's Expanse Palace. If they were to really fight it out, Zhou Weiqing was definitely not afraid of them.

Right at that moment, a surprised voice rang out. "Zhou Weiqing, why are you here?"

When Zhou Weiqing turned his head to look, he saw Zhan LingTian leading four Heaven's Expanse Palace core disciples flying right at him.

They had not seen each other in quite some time. Currently, Zhan LingTian looked like his aura was solidified and more consolidated than before. However, his gaze at Zhou Weiqing was no longer as friendly as it had been on the northern borders. Besides surprise, there was a sullen anger.

"Bro Zhan, it has been a long time. Your Heaven's Expanse Palace has such great rules!" Zhou Weiqing said to him.

Very quickly, Zhan LingTian arrived at the scene, turning to the two old men, he said: "Guardians, let me handle this matter."

Seeing that it was Zhan LingTian, the two old men bowed slightly and stepped back.

Chapter 211 Bribing Father-in-Law! (2)

Moving to the front, Zhan LingTian looked at Zhou Weiqing with furrowed brows, saying solemnly: “Zhou Weiqing, you are here for the Heavenly Jewel Tournament right? Since that is the case, why did you come to the Heaven’s Expanse Palace?”

Zhou Weiqing started momentarily. “Did you not hear my shout just now? I am here to look for Bing’er.”

A cold light flashed in Zhan LingTian’s eyes. “Just for Miss Bing’er?”

Seeing his cold and aloof look, Zhou Weiqing was somewhat unhappy. “Bro Zhan, what do you mean? It seems like who I am looking for is none of your business. I have earned the plaque to come to the Heavenly Jewel Island, and I do not need to report to you why I have come here.”

Zhan LingTian took a deep breath, calming himself down. Fixing Zhou Weiqing with a fiery gaze, he said: “Zhou Weiqing, I challenge you. If you lose, you are not allowed to provoke First Young Miss any longer.”

Understanding dawned upon Zhou Weiqing. “You know about that?”

Zhan LingTian said coldly: “Whatever your relationship is with Second Young Miss and Third Young Miss, I do not care. However, First Young Miss is the heir to our Heaven’s Expanse Palace, the next Heaven’s Expanse Palace Master. You will not be disrespectful to her.”

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly, saying: “Even if we discuss this matter, it should be the two Palace Masters discussing it with me. Can you make the decision for Xue’er?”

“Very well, let me discuss with you then. Shall we discuss?!” All of a sudden, a clear voice rang out, with a hint of anger.

The air in front of Zhou Weiqing warped slightly, and the next instant, a figure appeared.

The figure was none other than the father of the three Shangguan Sisters, the Second Palace Master of the Heaven's Expanse Palace, Shangguan Tianyue.

Shangguan Tianyue's expression was even uglier than Zhan LingTian. Looking at Zhou Weiqing as if he was some thief that had stolen his most precious possession.

Seeing that it was his future father-in-law, Zhou Weiqing instantly turned honest and polite. He quickly bowed in greeting: "Greetings, Father-in-law."

"Who's your father in law?!" Shangguan Tianyue waved his sleeve, and Zhou Weiqing felt as if the air tightened around him, forcefully making him straighten his waist.

Shangguan Tianyue said angrily: "Zhou Weiqing, you little brat. Let me ask you, how has my Heaven's Expanse Palace treated you? How has my ZhongTian Empire treated you?!"

Towards this father in law of his, naturally Zhou Weiqing could not treat him the same way as he did Zhan LingTian. Quickly, he said respectfully: "Both the Heaven's Expanse Palace and ZhongTian Empire have treated me very well."

Shangguan Tianyue said: "You also know that we have treated you well? Not speaking of how Fei'er helped you trained those men of yours, even to the point of using our secret recipe and medicines to help them. Just the fact that we allowed you to bring away so many Jewel Masters, how much help is that to you? We even supported you financially in your efforts to revive your Empire... What about you? How have you repaid me?!"

"You little bastard, not only did you take Bing'er's virtue, and you even provoked Fei'er... fine. Now, you won't even let Xue'er go. You little playboy brat! I just want to smack you dead with a

single slap.” As he continued speaking, his anger grew, and a powerful aura burst forth from Shangguan Tianyue, causing the entire air around them to freeze.

Of course, as the saying goes ‘[Don’t wash one’s dirty linen in public](#)’. Despite his anger, his voice could only be heard by Zhou Weiqing; even Zhan LingTian standing next to him could not hear anything else.

Seeing Shangguan Tianyue’s rage, with a sudden thud, Zhou Weiqing just knelt down on the ground, kowtowing to Shangguan Tianyue three times. “Father in Law, I am wrong. I have no objections no matter how you wish to punish me.”

Suddenly getting three kowtows from this fellow, Shangguan Tianyue was also stunned. Originally, he had already resolved to teach this brat a lesson. However, now that he was honestly kneeling in front of him, ready to take the punishment, it actually caused him to feel like he couldn’t take action.

The reason why Zhou Weiqing acted like this was because he had suddenly thought things through. Simply put – if he had been in Shangguan Tianyue’s shoes, having a youth steal all three of his daughters’ hearts, he would probably be even angrier than Shangguan Tianyue. It was true that it was his fault for being such a playboy, so he had nothing else to say. Since it was his fault, he would accept the punishment.

However, if it were Zhan LingTian who came pointing fingers, he would not be so polite; he had never been afraid of a fight. In his eyes, the difference was Zhan LingTian was just being envious and jealous, they were love rivals in this matter. Instead, Shangguan Tianyue was his future father in law, so Zhou Weiqing was extremely well behaved. No matter how Shangguan Tianyue dealt with him, as long as it did not cross the bottom line, he would take it. If he wanted to enjoy the marriage of these few girls, he had to pay the price first.

“Get up!” Shangguan Tianyue said exasperatedly. Another flick of his sleeve, and the air around forced Zhou Weiqing up, not allowing him to kneel any longer.

Looking at this Zhou Weiqing’s honest, well behaved, earnest and flattering look, Shangguan Tianyue almost burst out laughing. He could not understand how such a brat like this could actually steal the hearts of his three precious daughters. Although Xue’er did not admit it outright, as a father and a person who had experienced love before, how could he not see it?

“Zhou Weiqing, let me ask you. If I force you to choose one of my three daughters, who would you choose?” Shangguan Tianyue said solemnly.

Zhou Weiqing asked tentatively: “Can’t I choose all?”

“No!” The flames of rage that had just subsided rose up once more.

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “Heh heh, then I shall not choose at all. I’ll find a chance to steal them all away in the future.”

“You must be daydreaming. This is the Heavenly Jewel Island, where my Heaven’s Expanse Palace is. With just you alone, you think you can steal my little girls away?” Shangguan Tianyue said disdainfully.

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “Of course I am not able to do so currently, but that doesn’t mean I won’t be able to do so in the future. Father in law, how about this, shall we place a bet? Within five years, if I am able to steal them away, you will no longer intervene in our matter, how about it? If I can do it, it will also prove my abilities.”

“Bullshit, what do you take my daughters for? If you dare steal them, I’ll destroy your Heavenly Bow Empire.” Shangguan Tianyue wished he could just destroy this little brat with a single

slap.

Zhou Weiqing gave an aggrieved look as he said: “Father in Law, I am wrong. But... I can’t control my heart like that! I will definitely treat them well. The relationship between me and Bing’er, well, I don’t need to speak more about that. For my sake, Fei’er almost died, how could I abandon her? As for Xue’er, you understand her the most. I was intimate with her unwittingly, and with her temper, she would never marry anyone else. Furthermore, she had made a bet to marry me. So, I really cannot let anyone go!”

The more Shangguan Tianyue heard, the angrier he got. Taking a step forward, he kicked Zhou Weiqing on the chest, sending him flying off the Heavenly Jewel Island.

“Bastard! Asshole!”

Zhou Weiqing was also rather depressed. Shangguan Tianyue’s kick had not been light at all. Although he did not use any Heavenly Energy, it was still a kick from a Heavenly Emperor! That was a terrifying blow indeed!

Swoosh The wings behind his back spread out instantly, stopping his fall in mid air. Looking at Shangguan Tianyue’s rage, he dared not fly back too quickly.

All of a sudden, a sudden spark of inspiration struck Zhou Weiqing. In the air, he said to Shangguan Tianyue: “Father in law, please let me on the island first? I have a matter of utmost importance to report.”

Shangguan Tianyue was still on the edge, in the midst of his fit of anger. Glaring at Zhou Weiqing, he snarled: “Stop talking rubbish. Get lost now, otherwise I’ll beat you up until you can’t even take care of yourself. We’ll see how you join the Heavenly Jewel Tournament then.”

Zhou Weiqing gave a distressed expression as he said: “Father in

law, just let me say a few words. If you still want me to leave, I will do so without any other protest, and I will promise never to bother Xue'er, Fei'er and Bing'er again. What do you say? What I am about to say is regarding the rise or fall of the Heaven's Expanse Palace."

For Shangguan Tianyue to appear here, it was truly because as a father, he could not take it, and he really wanted to teach Zhou Weiqing a lesson. Of course, he was still very satisfied with Zhou Weiqing as a son in law.

Ever since the first time he had seen Zhou Weiqing, right up to this point, his feelings had undergone an unbelievable transformation. The news sources of the Heaven's Expanse Palace were far beyond Zhou Weiqing's imagination. Furthermore, the Shangguan Sisters had pretty much each followed him all through his journey, accompanying him one after the other. As a result, Shangguan Tianyue could be said to be extremely familiar with all his experiences.

What Zhou Weiqing had done in the north borders... even when the Shangguan brothers, Shangguan Tianyang and Shangguan Tianyue discussed it, they could only use the word 'miracle' to describe it. To form such an army troop by himself... one that actually had the power to turn the tides against a sure-loss scenario against the WanShou Empire. Of course, there was the support of the Heaven's Expanse Palace which allowed it to happen, or even the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor's financial support. However, if it were anyone else, could they even duplicate the feat even if they were given all the same resources?

Perhaps the bigger surprise for Shangguan Tianyue was that Zhou Weiqing had actually dared to charge up the Heavenly Snow Mountain for Tian'er's sake... to cause trouble! And that Master of his, he had actually accompanied him along on such a crazy quest. The craziest thing was that they had succeeded! Besides feeling that it was inconceivable and beyond their comprehension, the

Shangguan Brothers could only feel good about it. After all, the Heaven's Expanse Palace and Heavenly Snow Mountain had fought for such a long time. For the Heavenly Snow Mountain to suffer a loss, no matter how small, how could they not be happy?

As such, even though Shangguan Tianyue was scolding Zhou Weiqing, wanting to teach him a lesson, deep in his heart he was still very satisfied with this son in law. Zhou Weiqing could truly live up to the saying 'A Dragon or Phoenix amongst men'. However, he was afraid that in the future Fei'er or Bing'er would suffer in the future if they followed him, so he still wanted to teach him a lesson. As for Shangguan Xue'er, it was true that in his heart, he was really unwilling to let her marry Zhou Weiqing. After all, Shangguan Xue'er was the heir of the Heaven's Expanse Palace!

"Get down here and speak." Shangguan Tianyue said coldly. At the same time, he waved his hands, motioning for the others to leave.

Zhan LingTian hesitated a moment, but with the signal from Shangguan Tianyue's eyes, he had no choice but to leave unwillingly.

Towards Zhou Weiqing, Zhan LingTian actually had quite some understanding. In his eyes, Zhou Weiqing was unbelievably sneaky and cunning. Who knew if that fellow had some method to talk to and persuade Shangguan Tianyue. Alas, he did not have any choice, and he could not speak too much regarding it to Shangguan Tianyue, and could only turn and leave.

Flapping his wings, Zhou Weiqing returned to the Heavenly Jewel Island in a flash, his face still with the aggrieved look.

The mandarin saying is family troubles should not be talked about in public

Chapter 211 Bribing Father-in-Law! (3)

Shangguan Tianyue glanced at the wings behind his back, secretly examining all the changes that the Dragon-Tiger Transformation state brought to Zhou Weiqing. Sensing the terrifying bloodline aura within him, a flash of surprise flickered across Shangguan Tianyue's eyes.

This Dragon-Tiger Transformation, even the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord had never seen or heard of before. It could be said to be one of a kind in the entire Mainland. Although Shangguan Tianyue had heard Xue'er speak of it, it was an entirely different matter to look upon it with his own eyes, to feel it with his senses... only then did he truly sense how miraculous it was. He couldn't help but nod to himself inwardly. This little brat's power... one definitely could not judge him with ordinary logic.

"Alright. We are alone now. Speak then. If you aren't able to satisfy me, I'll kick you down again." Shangguan Tianyue crossed his arms, looking at Zhou Weiqing with a bleak face.

Zhou Weiqing grinned, moving forward a few steps, a fawning look upon his face.

Looking at him like that, Shangguan Tianyue couldn't help but chuckle to himself inwardly, thinking: This little brat, why does he not have the proper look of the powerhouse that he is... Still, this is also a good psychology... at least he doesn't have the overbearing arrogance that most young talents have. No wonder he is able to accomplish so many impressive things.

"Why do you need to get so close to me. Hurry up and speak." Shangguan Tianyue furrowed his brow and said unhappily, despite his thoughts.

Zhou Weiqing lowered his voice dramatically as he said: "Father in law, this is a matter of critical importance, no one else can hear it!"

Shangguan Tianyue glared at him exasperatedly before he waved his hands. Instantly, a faint milky white shield of light enclosed the two of them.

This was naturally Shangguan Tianyue's terrifying Heavenly Emperor stage Heavenly Energy. With this layer of Heavenly Energy covering them, even if the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord was outside, he would not be able to hear what they were speaking of inside.

Only then did Zhou Weiqing speak, still in the low tone: "Father in Law, I know that I am wrong to want to marry all three of your daughters, I indeed have a heart that loves too much, and it is my fault. However, it is true that for Bing'er, Fei'er and Xue'er, following me is absolutely the right choice... the best choice."

"In fact, as long as you agree to our marriage, I have confidence that not long in the future, all three of them sisters will definitely reach the Heavenly God Stage. Isn't that a matter that would truly determine the future of the Heaven's Expanse Palace?"

Shangguan Tianyue looked at Zhou Weiqing's confident expression and couldn't help but be stunned slightly. "Hmph, even if you say Heavenly God Stage, does it really mean Heavenly God Stage? Anyone can make empty promises. Nonsense... nonsense..."

Zhou Weiqing said in surprise: "What do you mean empty promises... Father in Law, didn't Xue'er inform you about the Saint Energy?"

It was Shangguan Tianyue's turn to be surprised. "Saint Energy? What Saint Energy?"

Zhou Weiqing fell silent. If one examined him closely and knew him well, they would be able to see within his eyes ... a hint that he had been greatly moved.

Shangguan Tianyue actually didn't know about the Saint Energy... what did that prove? Shangguan Xue'er had not even told

her father about the Saint Energy that they had. As the Heaven's Expanse Palace heir, even when she had returned home, she had kept his secret even from those closest to her. How could Zhou Weiqing not be touched... be moved?!

Shangguan Tianyue looked at Zhou Weiqing, puzzled. "Speak then! What is this Saint Energy you speak of? How come Xue'er never spoke of it to me?"

Zhou Weiqing took a deep breath, calming his agitated emotions. Originally, in his heart, Shangguan Bing'er was the most important, followed by [Shangguan Fei'er](#), while his feelings for Shangguan Xue'er was perhaps relatively more surface or lighter. However, at this moment, he had already set his resolve that no matter what, he would definitely marry all three Shangguan Sisters, and he would never forgive himself if he had to give up on any one.

When Zhou Weiqing set his resolve to do something, he would definitely give it his all. Furthermore, at such a time, it was when his mind was clearest and at its peak.

Taking another deep breath, he cleared his mind and ensured all his lines of thoughts. At last, Zhou Weiqing said solemnly: "Father in Law, have you heard about the miracles of the four Saint Attributes gathered together?"

Shangguan Tianyue's eyes flickered. "Time, Spirit, Divine and the original Demonic Attribute... all four Saint Attributes gathered together?"

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: "Exactly. There are legends which say that when the four Saint Attributes gather together, one can breakthrough past the Heavenly God Tier, the restriction of the twelve Jewels of the Heavenly Jewel Change, to gain the thirteenth Personal Jewel. This is the Legendary Heavenly Change."

Shangguan Tianyue's heart was sent in turmoil by Zhou

Weiying's words, but he nodded calmly and said: "I have heard that legend. Continue."

Zhou Weiying said: "As you know, my Elemental Jewels consist of six Attributes. Amongst them, there is the Time Attribute and the Demonic Attribute... two Saint Attributes. My Demonic Attribute can be said to be the only original-Awakened Demonic Attribute in the world today, at least currently one of a kind. As for the Heavenly Snow Mountain Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger direct descendents, they have the Spirit and Divine Attributes. That is to say, when I am ... ahem... cultivating together with one of the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tigers, we would have gathered the four Saint Attributes together."

Shangguan Tianyue's brow began to twitch, and the light in his eyes began to fluctuate. He nodded and said: "You are referring to Tian'er right? I know."

Zhou Weiying nodded and said: "Yes, it is Tian'er. After countless experiments, we have begun to have a feel for the true cultivation technique of the four Saint Attributes together... and from there, we have formed a strange new energy... a whole new one that does not belong to the knowledge of any Heavenly Jewel Master. We call it the Saint Energy."

Pausing, Zhou Weiying finally continued. "... It is difficult for me to describe it with words alone, and perhaps just by saying it you might not understand. Let me show you my Saint Energy and once you feel it, you will understand."

As he said that, Zhou Weiying lifted his right hand, moving it before Shangguan Tianyue. A silvery white light flashed in his eyes, and instantly, that right hand turned the similar silver-white colour.

The faint glow of light surrounded his palm, moving gently and rhythmically. As soon as the light appeared, the powerful Heavenly Energy shield that Shangguan Tianyue had surrounded

them with began to shake violently.

As the owner of the Heavenly Energy, Shangguan Tianyue's sensation was the deepest. He was shocked to discover that his own Heavenly Energy had begun to produce... an emotion akin to fear?! Was it actually afraid of the faint silvery white light in Zhou Weiqing's hands?

How was this possible? As a Heavenly Emperor, his Heavenly Energy had already reached the Heavenly Dao stage, and more so, was already at the later stage. Even his elder brother Shangguan Tianyang, or even the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord, though their cultivation levels were higher than him, just using a bit of energy reverberations, they would never be able to cause his Heavenly Energy to show such a strange fear. This was something impossible as far as he knew.

Yet, Zhou Weiqing had done just that. Shangguan Tianyue's heart could be said to be surging with turbulent thoughts and emotions. Slowly lifting his hand, he grasped onto Zhou Weiqing's right hand, his powerful spiritual energy gathering to sense the energy on Zhou Weiqing's palm.

As soon as he did so, Shangguan Tianyue's eyes were instantly filled with shock.

When he extended his spiritual energy to sense, he naturally needed to infuse some of his Heavenly Energy to increase his senses. However, as soon as he did so, Shangguan Tianyue felt his Heavenly Energy was like ice water which had entered lava, disappearing in an instant.

Furthermore, the energy in Zhou Weiqing's palm seemed as boundless and infinite, not belonging to any type of attribute, instantly causing his spiritual energy to shrivel in moments.

As such, his hand could only stay on Zhou Weiqing's palm for a split second, before he let go immediately, subconsciously taking a step back.

Standing there, Shangguan Tianyue closed his eyes, his full concentration on what he had felt in that instant, and the changes in energy.

Boundless... infinite... with no attributes, yet seemingly encompassing all attributes. Saint Energy... this was the Saint Energy that was created from the gathering of the four Saint Attributes?

Zhou Weiqing withdrew his right hand and his Saint Energy before saying solemnly: “Father in Law, Tian’er and I have only just begun cultivating this Saint Energy. It can be said that we have barely scratched the surface on the intricacies of the four Saint Attributes and this Saint Energy. However, I truly believe that with this Saint Energy, we can perform countless miracles in the future. As for the interflow of this Saint Energy, it requires ... intimate relations between man and women to undergo. Through this method, we can transfer Saint Energy. That is to say, my future wives will all gain the benefit of the Saint Energy, which is boundless and inexhaustible. Currently, what we know of the Saint Energy is its greatest strength is in creation. You should have heard about the strange Hell’s Angel phenomenon that appeared at our Crescent City, causing countless destruction right. In truth, that Skill was unleashed by myself and Tian’er, using this very Saint Energy. As long as you are willing to marry Bing’er, Fei’er and Xue’er to me, I can guarantee that with the help of Saint Energy, they will definitely reach the Heavenly God Stage. When that happens, the Heaven’s Expanse Palace can truly become the First Great Saint Lands.”

Shangguan Tianyue furrowed his brow, an uncertain light in his eyes. If one were to say that he was not drawn in or attracted by Zhou Weiqing’s words, that would definitely be impossible. After feeling the Saint Energy and its terrifying strength by himself, he knew deep within himself how scary it truly was. If what Zhou Weiqing said was true, the future that lay in the Saint Energy was

infinite. With this unique energy, it should not be too difficult to break through to the Heavenly God Stage. However, if he had to give up all three daughters for that, especially Shangguan Xue'er, to marry Zhou Weiqing, he still did not feel too willing.

“Come with me.” Shangguan Tianyue waved his hands once more. Instantly, Zhou Weiqing felt himself covered with a hazy white. In the next instant, he could sense that he had left their original position.

It did not take long, and by the time the surroundings cleared up in his eyes, Zhou Weiqing discovered that he was in a clean stone room. Clearly, they had entered the Heaven's Expanse Palace.

Shangguan Tianyue's voice traveled out. “Wait here.” As soon as he said that, his presence vanished instantly.

Naturally, Zhou Weiqing understood that Shangguan Tianyue must have gone to look for Shangguan Tianyang. Such a serious matter of major importance, the two brothers definitely had to discuss in detail before making their decision, and Shangguan Tianyue alone could not do so.

Zhou Weiqing was not urgent at all. Previously, when he had spoken those words, he had already thought things through. The story about needing intimate relations between man and woman to transfer the Saint Energy, naturally that part was made up by him. However, everything else was true, and with the sheer power of the Saint Energy, he knew that Shangguan Tianyue would definitely believe him. After all, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er had always cultivated in [paired cultivation](#).

He is probably referring to just the three Shangguan Sisters here, I personally believe #2Tian'er

#Sexytimes

Chapter 212 Spatial Collapse! (1)

The reason why Zhou Weiqing had decided to use the Saint Energy to draw in Shangguan Tianyue and let this father in law of his to approve of him, it was after much serious considerations.

Before entering the Heavenly Jewel Island, he had already anticipated that this time he would not have a nice reception. After all, he had 'seduced' all three of his daughters, how could Shangguan Tianyue give him a good face.

However, Zhou Weiqing also knew that this was an important chance for him. If he failed to grasp this chance, it would be even tougher for him to be together with the three Shangguan Sisters in the future. The Heavenly Jewel Tournament might be a good test in most eyes, but Zhou Weiqing was clear that for the Shangguan brothers, Shangguan Tianyang and Shangguan Tianyue, the Heavenly Jewel Tournament would not count for much.

As such, after much thought, Zhou Weiqing decided to speak out regarding the Saint Energy, also indicating he would definitely help the Shangguan Sisters cultivate with the Saint Energy.

However, to his surprise, Shangguan Xue'er had not informed her father and uncle about the Saint Energy when she had returned.

Of course, that had not influenced Zhou Weiqing's entire plan. Another reason why Zhou Weiqing was willing to speak of the Saint Energy was to gain the trust of the Heaven's Expanse Palace.

The Heavenly Bow Empire had just started the revival of their Empire, and though it seemed like everything was proceeding well, the problem was that the Heavenly Bow Empire's border wasn't just the Kalise Empire alone! There was still the powerful Bai Da Empire, and the shadow of the Dan Dun Empire beyond. With just the Heavenly Bow Empire alone, how could they possibly stop them? As such, Zhou Weiqing needed to obtain the support of the

ZhongTian Empire without any reservation... only then could he have a go at it freely.

The Saint Energy, no matter to which Heavenly Jewel Master, it was definitely a top secret matter. For Zhou Weiqing to be willing to speak of it, it would only show that he had absolute trust and close relations with the Heaven's Expanse Palace. With that, he believed that Shangguan Tianyang and Shangguan Tianyue could make their own judgements.

To gain the Heaven's Expanse Palace support, and his three beautiful wives... it was a matter of killing two birds with one stone. That was Zhou Weiqing's thought. After all, even if others knew of his Saint Energy, they could not cultivate it on their own. This was something that could only be done with the four Saint Attributes.

Even if someone else really gathered the four Saint Attributes, without Zhou Weiqing's Devour Skill, they would still not be able to cultivate the Saint Energy. This was another area which Zhou Weiqing had held back in. Of course, if it were an enemy or opposing influence, if they knew he had the Saint Energy, they would definitely try to kill him off. However, Zhou Weiqing believed that the Heaven's Expanse Palace would not do so... as they did not need to! Even if Shangguan Tianyue decided to only marry a single daughter to him, he would still be a son in law to the Heaven's Expanse Palace!

With all of those thoughts in mind, that was the reason Zhou Weiqing actually dared to speak out regarding the Saint Energy to Shangguan Tianyue. He also believed that this time, his trip to the Heavenly Jewel Island would not be a waste.

Zhou Weiqing waited for more than an hour before Shangguan Tianyue finally returned. He did not even speak, and once again a gust of Heavenly Energy enveloped Zhou Weiqing's body. Moments later, he was in another room.

Towards this room, Zhou Weiqing was actually familiar. That was because the first time he met Shangguan Tianyang was also in this hall.

As expected, Shangguan Tianyang was seated in the main seat above. In the entire hall, there were only the three of them.

“Greetings Uncle.” Zhou Weiqing stepped forward and bowed in greeting. With his thick skin, he called out ‘uncle’ with such feelings, as if he was returning to his own home.

Shangguan Tianyang smiled faintly and said: “Weiqing, your speed of growth is truly amazing, even I am extremely surprised! In just a few short years, you have already reached the six-Jeweled stage. I know about what you have done in the northern borders, well done indeed.”

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “Heh heh, thank you uncle for your praise. I had no choice in that matter, like [a duck forced onto a perch](#). In truth, I do not have much ambition towards authority. However, for my family and my home, I had to fight it out no matter what.”

Shangguan Tianyang nodded and said: “What you told Tianyue, he has already told me. Enn... it isn’t so easy to marry a girl from our Heaven’s Expanse Palace... especially since one of your targets is Xue’er. You should know... to our Heaven’s Expanse Palace, what Xue’er means. Ever since she accepted the Boundless Infinitum Set, she has already been bound as the heir to the Heaven’s Expanse Palace. Furthermore, you still have entanglements and relations to the Heavenly Snow Mountain.”

Zhou Weiqing also smiled faintly, however he did not act humble at all. “Uncle, for Xue’er to marry me, that is the best choice. Indeed, she has inherited the legacy of the Boundless Infinitum Technique and the Boundless Infinitum Set, this might be slightly more troublesome. After all, my wife will follow by my side. However, I have some tentative thoughts, and I’m not sure if I

should speak them out now.”

Shangguan Tianyang laughed heartily and said: “You little brat, for Xue’er to inherit the strongest Legendary Set in the world, in your mouth it actually turned into trouble. Speak then, let’s see if you can convince me.”

Zhou Weiqing said seriously: “Uncle, with your cultivation stage, and the fact that you are still in your prime, you would have no problems leading the Heaven’s Expanse Palace for another hundred years or more. Although Xue’er is considered your heir, but in the near future she would not be able to inherit the Heaven’s Expanse Palace. Am I right?”

Shangguan Tianyang laughed in spite of himself. “You sure know how to talk. Indeed, it is unlikely that I pass away anytime soon. However, that does not mean I want to hold on to the burden of the Heaven’s Expanse Palace forever! In any case, the Heaven’s Expanse Palace definitely needs a declared heir.”

Zhou Weiqing said: “What if I were to give you three new heirs, letting you choose whoever you prefer?”

Shangguan Tianyang started, not really understanding what Zhou Weiqing meant. “Three new heirs?”

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “I can have a child with Bing’er, Fei’er and Xue’er... isn’t that three new heirs? At that time, you can choose any of them to be the heir to your Heaven’s Expanse Palace.”

Hearing his words, both Shangguan Tianyang and Shangguan Tianyue were totally stunned. Both brothers exchanged looks, not knowing whether to laugh or cry. This little brat really knew how to imagine things creatively!

“I have not yet agreed to let my daughters marry you!” Shangguan Tianyue said huffily.

Zhou Weiqing scratched his head sheepishly and said: “Father in

Law, if you do not agree, it is a huge loss to the Heaven's Expanse Palace! With such an awesome son in law like me, who could also become an important ally in the future, there can only be a hundred benefits to the Heaven's Expanse Palace and no harm!"

Shangguan Tianyang lifted his hand to stop Shangguan Tianyue from continuing. Turning to Zhou Weiqing, he said: "Weiqing, use your strength to convince me. Let me see how miraculous that Saint Energy truly is, whether or not it is worth dozens of years of my time in waiting."

Zhou Weiqing nodded, his expression turning sombre and serious. Since he made the decision to use the Saint Energy as a betrothal gift in marrying the three Shangguan Sisters, he had already expected this scene before him.

In order to gain the approval of the two Heaven's Expanse Palace Master, to prevent them from stopping him from being together with his loves, he had to show them his own personal strength.

"So, will Father in Law or Uncle be the one testing the Saint Energy attack?"

Shangguan Tianyang said: "Let me. Just go ahead, attack with all your might."

Zhou Weiqing nodded, taking a deep breath as he slowly lifted his left hand. At the same time, he released his Heavenly Jewels. "Uncle, be careful. I am about to use the Spatial Rend."

Shangguan Tianyang smiled faintly. With his max level Heavenly Emperor stage power, he naturally did not think that much about Zhou Weiqing's attacks. However, he still raised his senses to the maximum. After hearing Shangguan Tianyue's description of the Saint Energy, he was extremely curious and interested about it. Perhaps more accurately, the attraction of the Heavenly God Tier stage was of greater importance to him than anything else. He knew that although he had been trying to break through that stage for years of closed door cultivation, it was already highly unlikely

that he would ever be able to succeed in this lifetime. If Zhou Weiqing was truly able to prove that this Saint Energy could guarantee the three Shangguan Sisters would break through the Heavenly God Tier, marrying them to him was not impossible. After all, they truly did love him as well.

Of course, it was also because Shangguan Tianyang could see that Zhou Weiqing had limitless potential, and a great future ahead. That was the reason why he even gave him a chance to prove himself now. He knew that once they gave this youth enough time, his future ahead could only shock the world.

Zhou Weiqing's expression grew even more serious and focused. At the side, Shangguan Tianyue was surprised to find that the previous Heavenly Energy around Zhou Weiqing that he could sense easily, had now changed in that instant. When the silvery-white light appeared around Zhou Weiqing's left hand, his entire body seemed to be encased in a special aura. Even with his Heavenly Emperor senses, he was unable to feel the energy movement in Zhou Weiqing's body. Shangguan Tianyue was astonished at that, and his curiosity towards that Saint Energy increased even more.

Zhou Weiqing drew out five whole drops of Saint Energy from his little Saint Energy whirlpool. This was already not the first time he had used the Saint Energy, and his understanding of it was already far stronger than those previous times, and he now had relatively more control over it.

The Spatial Rend was considered a Heavenly King stage Skill, without the Heavenly Skill Image. Zhou Weiqing infused the five drops of Saint Energy into it under full control, otherwise if he could just use any amount of Saint Energy, and the result would be according to the amount used.

Zhou Weiqing's left hand slowly moved towards Shangguan Tianyang. In the next instant, a strange sight occurred. A silver light that did not have any Spatial Attribute appeared abruptly.

Shangguan Tianyang suddenly felt as if the entire Space around him was crumbling, an unforeseen sense of danger caused him to subconsciously channel his Heavenly Energy around his entire body.

Shangguan Tianyang's Heavenly Energy was at the forty seventh stage, the later stage of the Heavenly Dao Energy. He was after all at the Max Level of the Heavenly Emperor stage, only slightly less than Long Shiya. Currently, with his Heavenly Energy circulating at the maximum, a layer of milky white crystalline light covered his whole body.

However, even as his powerful Heavenly Energy appeared, the center portion of the milky white crystal began to crumble. Next, Shangguan Tianyang gave a shocked exclamation, and he actually staggered back one step. At the same time, he waved his hand, a brutal surge of immense power swelling up. Only then did the Space around him recover and become steady once more.

Literal translation, basically like a fish out of water

Chapter 212 Spatial Collapse! (2)

Seeing that sight, Shangguan Tianyue's expression truly changed. Even if it were him, he dared not say that he could use a single Skill to force Shangguan Tianyang to stagger back one step! Yet, Zhou Weiqing had actually done so, and it was even after he had said what Skill he was about to use.

“What a powerful Saint Energy that is.” Shangguan Tianyang couldn't help but suck in a cold breath as he expelled the Heavenly Dao Energy around his body. However, when he looked at Zhou Weiqing again, his expression was very different, as if he was looking at the greatest treasure in the world. All along, he was extremely calm and impassive, never showing any of his emotions; but at this moment his eyes showed earnest hope.

“Saint Energy... so that is the Saint Energy? This is the result of you infusing that Saint Energy into your Spatial Rend Skill?” Shangguan Tianyang asked the series of questions urgently.

Zhou Weiqing nodded, saying: “When I first got the Saint Energy, we went through a series of tests. I discovered that the Saint Energy could be infused into any Skill. Furthermore, it would cause a qualitative change in any Skill it was infused in, but the issue is that I am currently unable to control the type of change. More accurately speaking, the stronger the Skill originally, the greater the requirement of Saint Energy it has, and the amount of Saint Energy infused also determines the extent of change in terms of power.”

Shangguan Tianyang nodded, saying: “This Saint Energy is definitely one that is above all other Attributes, powerful and domineering. Just now, when your Skill landed on me, I had the feeling of my Heavenly Energy being absorbed and turned, as if my Heavenly Energy was also being used by the Saint Energy against myself. Although its strength was far from enough... but if you can cultivate it to a greater level, perhaps any other energy or attribute

will quail before it.”

With his status as the Heaven’s Expanse Palace Master, for Shangguan Tianyang to have such high praise for the Saint Energy, one could imagine the shock in his heart currently.

Although it was just a short and simple attack, the impression it had left on him was deep and lasting. Shangguan Tianyang had discovered that for his own Elemental Jewels, facing this Skill that was infused with Saint Energy, he could sense that they were slightly suppressed. It had to be known that although it was just a minor suppression, the gap between him and Zhou Weiqing was just too huge, and for any sort of suppression to happen was already considered pretty unbelievable, showing the gap in levels between the Attributes. It was similar to the previous case on the Heavenly Snow Mountain where Zhou Weiqing had used his Dragon-Tiger Transformation’s bloodline superiority to suppress those Heavenly Beasts whose cultivation level was far above his.

Zhou Weiqing said: “I have only just touched and explored the surface of the Saint Energy. According to my estimations, we need to at least reach the Heavenly King Stage before we can truly dig into the true profound secrets of the Saint Energy. However, there is one thing I am certain of; once I can use this Saint Energy to form the Heavenly Core Nucleus at the Heavenly King Stage, in the future when I am attempting to breakthrough to the Heavenly Emperor or even Heavenly God Stages, there will no longer be any bottlenecks or barriers for me.”

Shangguan Tianyang nodded and said: “That is very possible. I have to say, this Saint Energy of yours is very convincing indeed. Tianyue, please bring Xue’er here to join us.”

Shangguan Tianyue nodded. He gave Zhou Weiqing a strange glance before disappearing from the hall.

When Shangguan Tianyue left, only Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Tianyang were left in the hall. At this point, the

Heaven's Expanse Palace Master had regained his usual impassive self.

Looking at Zhou Weiqing, Shangguan Tianyang suddenly said: "Weiqing, if you are willing to join the Heaven's Expanse Palace, I can make the decision now to marry Bing'er, Fei'er and Xue'er to you as your wives. What do you say?"

Zhou Weiqing's heart leaped for a moment, but he kept silent. After a moment's thought, he shook his head resolutely, saying: "Uncle, I'm afraid that will be impossible."

Shangguan Tianyang's gaze turned cold, and a sudden pressure caused Zhou Weiqing to subconsciously stagger back a few steps. He had to focus all his strength to even withstand the sheer pressure.

"Why do you say it is impossible? You should know what this Saint Energy means. If I am not able to use it, I just need to kill you off here... at least to ensure that you will not act against the Heaven's Expanse Palace in the future."

A thick killing intent surrounded Zhou Weiqing, causing his blood to almost freeze. In front of this Heavenly Emperor Stage powerhouse, even if he had the Saint Energy, there was no chance for him to resist.

"Uncle, why don't you let me analyze it for you before you jump to conclusions." Zhou Weiqing said calmly. Currently, he was not flustered at all, even facing Shangguan Tianyang's pressure... as if he had turned into someone else.

Shangguan Tianyang looked at him with some surprise, but was nodding in approval inwardly. With his experience and sight, he could easily see that Zhou Weiqing had already long thought of all possibilities happening before speaking of the Saint Energy, and it was not some last minute rash decision. He definitely had a full plan up his sleeve.

“Speak then.” The pressure slowly withdrew, and Shangguan Tianyang resumed his benevolent elder pose.

Zhou Weiqing said: “Uncle, in truth, it is not a big deal for me to join the Heaven’s Expanse Palace. In the first place, once I marry Bing’er, Fei’er and Xue’er, I can be considered the son in law of the Heaven’s Expanse Palace, and we are all a family. I don’t have any issues against joining the Heaven’s Expanse Palace. However, have you thought about it closely at all Uncle. Once I join the Heaven’s Expanse Palace... what will it bring. I dare say that it will be the destruction of the Heaven’s Expanse Palace once and for all.”

“Oh? Weiqing, are you exaggerating things with such alarmist speak.” Shangguan Tianyang said with a faint smile.

Zhou Weiqing shook his head and said: “I am definitely not exaggerating things at all. There are several reasons. First of all, this Saint Energy is not something that I can cultivate on my own, and I need Tian’er’s full cooperation to do so. And Tian’er is the only daughter of the Heavenly Snow Mountain. Even if you have the ability to kill her, she will never join the Heaven’s Expanse Palace. To this point, you can’t possibly deny it right? Without her, I am unable to continue cultivating the Saint Energy, so then what will be the point of me joining the Heaven’s Expanse Palace?”

“Next, the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord also knows about the Saint Energy. Once I proclaim that I have joined the Heaven’s Expanse Palace... what will he think? Naturally, he knows the power of the Saint Energy. At that time, he just needs to proclaim and spread the word of the Saint Energy. At that time, I can guarantee that I will no longer have the chance to reach the Heavenly King Stage... and all we can do is wait for the Heavenly Snow Mountain to gather all the other Great Saint Lands to charge up the Heaven’s Expanse Palace and destroy us all.”

“I am the Heaven’s Expanse Palace’s son in law, but I am also the Heavenly Snow Mountain’s son in law. As such, no matter which side I join, the other side will never let me go. As such, the only

choice I have is to stay neutral, to never join either side or to help either side... to ensure that I am individual and separate. This is the only way that both sides will accept. I have already promised the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord that in the future, I will no longer join in the fight between the ZhongTian Empire and WanShou Empire... naturally I am also unable to join in any fight between the two Great Saint Lands. In such a circumstance, at least in the future, even if I become a powerhouse, I will not pose any danger to both your Great Saint Lands... after all I am still your son in laws. Even if I build up a new Great Saint Lands in the future, I will never forget the aid that the Heaven's Expanse Palace has given me."

These words, Zhou Weiqing spoke with honesty and conviction, and Shangguan Tianyang also paid full attention to them.

"Forming a new Great Saint Lands... Weiqing, looks like your ambitions are not small after all!" Shangguan Tianyang smiled faintly as he said.

Zhou Weiqing shrugged and said: "Who knows, no one can tell what will happen in the future. However, if it were just myself, I would rather enjoy a simple and easygoing life, just bringing my wives to wander the land, to explore it and be carefree. We humans only have one life, and my dream has always been to experience everything possible, to see all the various beautiful sceneries of the world, the taste all the delicious food possible in the world."

Shangguan Tianyang sighed faintly and said: "That is indeed a wonderful life. However, in the future you will understand... many times things are not as easy as we wish them to be."

Zhou Weiqing laughed and said: "As long as one is willing to let go, there is nothing difficult."

A hint of surprise flashed in Shangguan Tianyang's eyes. "Let go? Let go... what a good phrase indeed, to let go. However, can one truly let go? I have to admit that today, you have convinced me.

However, whether or not you can really marry Bing'er, Fei'er and Xue'er, it will still be up to your final abilities and efforts."

Right at that moment, Shangguan Tianyue appeared in a brilliant flash of light in the hall, along with Shangguan Xue'er.

When Shangguan Xue'er saw Zhou Weiqing, her gaze wavered slightly, but she did not speak at all, not even looking at his eyes. Instead, she walked towards Shangguan Tianyang and curtsied before standing respectfully at the side.

Shangguan Tianyang said: "Tianyue, Bing'er, Fei'er and Xue'er are your daughters... naturally their marriage will be under your charge, I will not intervene. Xue'er, its not often that Weiqing gets to come to the Heavenly Jewel Island, you can bring him around to look around. However, one thing I have to stress... in the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, you all can't go easy. Haha."

Hearing Shangguan Tianyang's words, both Shangguan Tianyue and Shangguan Xue'er gave obvious looks of surprise. The underlying meaning behind his words were extremely clear, he had been convinced by Zhou Weiqing, and would not interfere in the relationship between Zhou Weiqing and the three sisters. As the Heaven's Expanse Palace Master, his attitude could even represent the entire Heaven's Expanse Palace.

After saying all that, Shangguan Tianyang nodded towards Zhou Weiqing before moving off.

Shangguan Tianyue looked at Zhou Weiqing with a bleak, overcast expression, saying: "Stinking brat, don't think that just because you have convinced my big brother, I will also agree to marry my three daughters to you..."

Zhou Weiqing quickly said with a flattering smile: "Of course, that is natural. Xue'er and her sisters, their marriage is definitely according to what you say."

"Hmph, its good that you know it. You better complete these two

things well first before coming to ask for their hand in marriage again. First of all, this year's Heavenly Jewel Tournament, you and your Heavenly Bow Empire have to gain the final championship. Our ZhongTian Battle Team will not go easy on you, so don't think this will be an easy task. If you can accomplish this, I will allow my three daughters to follow you out. When you help them complete the so-called Saint Core Nucleus that you speak of, then you can actually marry them. That is the second condition."

Hearing Shangguan Tianyue's words, Zhou Weiqing was instantly overjoyed. Without question, he knelt down before Shangguan Tianyue, kowtowing three times again. This swift, unhesitant and flowing action gave even Shangguan Xue'er a fright. Although the saying goes that men have [gold under their knees](#), kneeling to one's father in law was a serious matter. After all, one can only kneel to the heavens, the earth and one's parents.

Literal translation – basically means men should not kneel easily

Chapter 212 Spatial Collapse! (3)

“Thank you Father in Law for fulfilling us. This little son in law will not let you down.”

Shangguan Tianyue gave another humph before saying: “Xue’er, bring him around before chasing him off. I will not allow him to see Fei’er or Bing’er. When he gets the Heavenly Jewel Tournament Championship, then we can speak of it again.”

After saying that last line, Shangguan Tianyue stepped forward, as if walking into an illusory realm, disappearing from sight.

Zhou Weiqing bounced up to his feet, laughing heartily. Seizing the opportunity that Shangguan Xue’er was still slightly stunned, he embraced her in his arms, twirling around in the air in a circle before letting her down.

Shangguan Xue’er gave a startled cry. “What are you doing? Father didn’t even agree to anything yet, why are you so happy? Do you really think that this year’s Heavenly Jewel Tournament is going to be easy? To gain that Championship? Furthermore, that Saint Core Nucleus is so far off in the future, who knows if it is even possible.”

Zhou Weiqing grinned, releasing the struggling Shangguan Xue’er as he said: “Heh heh, who said that Father in law did not agree to anything? What I told him was that only when a man and a woman goes through intimate relations can we transfer the Saint Energy. Heh heh, you know, Paired Cultivation. Since Father in Law is willing to allow me to help you three consolidate the Saint Core Nucleus, doesn’t that mean he is already silently agreeing to us? Heh heh heh.”

Only the did Shangguan Xue’er understand. Instantly, her face turned beet red. “You... you... you shameless...”

Zhou Weiqing held on to her hands. “If I am not shameless

enough, how can I gain all of you as my wives? Come, quick, give your husband a nice good kiss.” As he said that, his face moved forward.

Shangguan Xue’er quickly lifted a hand to press against his mouth. “Behave yourself.”

Zhou Weiqing did not insist, just giving her soft smooth hand a quick kiss before letting her go. No one could blame him for being so excited, after all with the tacit approval of Shangguan Tianyang and Shangguan Tianyue, the greatest difficulty he had to face was already over. It could be said that since Shangguan Tianyue personally brought up those two ‘conditions’, the Heaven’s Expanse Palace had pretty much officially confirmed him as the son in law... more so, the common one between all three Shangguan Sisters.

In the entire Boundless Mainland, perhaps there was nothing more difficult to accomplish than this. For Zhou Weiqing to gain such approval, it was not just as simple as the existence of the Saint Energy, it was also the potential he had shown, all of his previous actions and accomplishments to gain their approval, and his wisdom and intelligence in persuasion... all of it added together in a package which sealed the deal.

“Xue’er, since Father in Law has forbidden me to see Fei’er and Bing’er, I will head back to prepare first. Do not worry, this time in the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, I will definitely seize the final championship once more.” In that moment, Zhou Weiqing’s heart was filled with fighting spirit, firm in his resolve to earn that right. No matter how strong his opponents were, he would charge ahead without any qualms.

Seeing that he wanted to leave, Shangguan Xue’er grabbed onto his hand instead. “What is the rush? I have something to talk to you about.”

Zhou Weiqing looked at the blushing beauty in front of him, and

he couldn't help but want to move towards her once more. However, he was quickly stopped by Shangguan Xue'er's hand at his chest, now allowing him to move closer.

"Don't play around, I am serious. This year's Heavenly Jewel Tournament is not as easy as you think."

Hearing those words, Zhou Weiqing immediately calmed down. He knew that Shangguan Xue'er was about to reveal the situation behind this year's Heavenly Jewel Tournament.

"This year's Heavenly Jewel Tournament can be said to very different from all the past years. There are two main reasons." Shangguan Xue'er allowed Zhou Weiqing to hold her hands while she spoke seriously. "The first reason is actually because of the Fei Li Battle Team that you led the previous Heavenly Jewel Tournament, seizing the Championship from the hands of all the Great Saint Lands. It could be said to have caused all four Great Saint Lands to lose a lot of face... especially so for the Dan Dun Battle Team, who did not even make it to the top four. As such, this time, all four Great Saint Lands are definitely putting out their top teams."

"The second reason is the Lustre Spatial Realm. There seems to be a strange change in the Lustre Spatial Realm, and the entire zone is filled with a violent, frantic unknown energy reverberation, causing it to be very unstable. Several times, there were signs that the entire Spatial Realm had splits and cracks in it, but it was suppressed by the many powerhouses of our Heaven's Expanse Palace... even so they were barely able to maintain the stability. As such, this year's top four battle teams will be given the responsibility to investigate the changes in the Lustre Spatial Realm."

"The Lustre Spatial Realm can be said to be the most important place in our entire Heavenly Jewel Island. Not only is there the majestic Dragons that you have seen previously, there are many other precious and rare Heavenly Beasts. Previously, the Lustre

Spatial Realm that you experienced was actually only a portion of the entire realm. After all, our Heaven's Expanse palace needs to maintain the secrecy of the entire Lustre Spatial Realm, and we never open the entire thing to outsiders. However, this time will be different. In order to solve the sudden energy unrest that has appeared, we will actually be opening the entire Lustre Spatial Realm. Some of the rarer medicines, treasures, ores and even Heavenly Beasts will now be in front of everyone. Furthermore, in order to have the other Great Saint Lands place more importance in it, this time all that is gained from the Lustre Spatial Realm can be kept by the Battle Team. Our Heaven's Expanse Palace will not restrict it."

"With those two reasons in mind, I'm sure you can imagine what kind of battle team the Great Saint Lands will form, and the strength they will hold. Furthermore, this is not just restricted to our four Great Saint Lands... the news has been spread to all the Empires in the world. As such, this year's Heavenly Jewel Tournament can be said to be of unprecedented quality and power. To gain the championship in this current tournament, the difficulty level far outstrips any of the previous years. You must have the preparation in your heart regarding this. It will not be easy, even for you."

Zhou Weiqing finally understood the gravity of the situation, and he said: "No wonder even you three sisters will join the competition... so that is the true reason. The Lustre Spatial Realm has restricted entry to only those below thirty years of age... so even with your Heaven's Expanse Palace will not have sufficient manpower to check it out fully. Did you all send anyone inside to investigate yet?"

Shangguan Xue'er gave a bitter smile and said: "Of course we have. In that Spatial Realm, there are lots of strong and violent fire elemental attributes, causing the entire spatial realm to feel as if it was burning. Anyone below the six-Jeweled stage cannot even stay

for long in there, let alone spending enough time to investigate the reasons. Father and Uncle do not allow us to enter on our own, as it is too risky. After all, even for our Heaven's Expanse Palace, there aren't that many people who are below thirty years old and above the six-Jeweled stage... and they are all the top elites. It is definitely safer to gather the strength of all four Great Saint Lands, and also with greater hopes of success."

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: "I understand. This time, the other three Great Saint Lands... is there anyone special for me to look out for?"

Shangguan Xue'er said: "Yes. Especially for you, you need to be careful of the Blood Red Hell. That Shen Little Demon which you severely injured last time is back again."

"I heard that in this past three years, her cultivation level has already raised to the seven-Jeweled stage. However, in such a circumstance, in the Battle Team, she could not even make the position of Vice Leader. One can imagine how strong the Dan Dun Battle Team will be this year. However, even for us, we have not been able to gain news about the exact news about all their team members."

"As for the Passion Valley, their strength is also not to be underestimated. The leaders this time are the heirs to the Passion Valley, a couple who have been cultivating in 'Paired Cultivation' ever since the age of eighteen. Both of their cultivation levels are at least seven Jeweled or higher."

"Lastly... the Heavenly Snow Mountain... we are even less clear about their Battle Team. However, I am certain that they will not be weak at all. As such, no matter which Battle Team from a Great Saint Lands that you meet... it will not be an easy matter."

Zhou Weiqing grinned, saying: "Heh, no problems. Let the storms blow even more violently, without pressure, how will I have the motivation? Furthermore, for the sake of my three

beautiful wives, I will not sit back and lose!”

Shangguan Xue’er glared at him exasperatedly, saying: “At such a time, you can still be so cheeky. If you are to be eliminated, I’ll see what you do then. Although Father has grudgingly accepted you, he will not change his words. If you really want to..... You better not lose this time!”

Zhou Weiqing exerted force in a pull, holding Shangguan Xue’er in his embrace once more. “How about giving me a small reward first?”

“Stop it, you better go now. Don’t let Tian’er wait so long that she is worried.” Blushing, Shangguan Xue’er slipped free of his embrace, tapping him lightly on the head. Next, she actually gave him a quick hug around the neck and kissed his lips.

Zhou Weiqing had never imagined that Shangguan Xue’er would take such intimate initiative towards him, and in that instant, he was stunned. At that moment, he suddenly saw a cunning look flash in ‘Shangguan Xue’er’s’ eyes.

Her lips parted, and ‘Shangguan Xue’er’ flew back, giggling. “Bing’er asked me to tell you that she is very very angry about your playboy actions. Since she is so angry... the repercussions will be very serious. Good luck to you! You have to think about how to solve it yourself. Heh heh.”

“You’re Fei’er?” At last, Zhou Weiqing figured out who she really was.

The Shangguan Sisters just looked too alike. If one just used their eyes to see, even for someone as familiar with them like Zhou Weiqing and her father, they were still unable to differentiate them. Only with their different aura and temperament could they barely differentiate them.

It was clear that Shangguan Fei’er had been imitating Shangguan Xue’er all that time. It was not just Zhou Weiqing, even Shangguan

Tianyue had been fooled. Seeing Shangguan Fei'er again after being apart for some time, one could imagine how agitated Zhou Weiqing was. In a flash, he chased after Shangguan Fei'er.

"In this place, you can't catch up with me. Hurry up and go back to prepare for the Heavenly Jewel Tournament. In the Tournament, I won't go easy!" With a small laugh, Shangguan Fei'er disappeared in white mist.

Zhou Weiqing stood there, staring blankly at the empty air for a few moments, silent. Seeing Shangguan Fei'er again, it could be said his heart was filled with many mixed feelings. In that moment, it was as if something was stuck in his throat. Although he was a bit of a playboy, his feelings for the three Shangguan Sisters were true and deep. Xue'er, Fei'er, Bing'er, those three names kept spinning around in his mind.

After standing around for almost fifteen minutes, Zhou Weiqing finally roused up. Unknowingly, his fists were now gripped rightly. Under his calm expression, it was as if a storm was broiling beneath.

"Wait for me." He muttered those three words, before turning around to leave as well.

Behind another hidden patch of white mist, three young girls, with exactly the same features, stood silently behind a lit screen. One of them was already sobbing her heart out, being hugged by another of the girls with a cold expression. She was only remaining standing with that support. As for the last girl, she had her tongue stuck out, but the fire in her eyes were no less than Zhou Weiqing who had just left.

"Fei'er, why are you so mischievous. Bing'er asked you to tell him that she did not blame him, and that she misses him so much. What did you say!" Shangguan Xue'er glared at Shangguan Fei'er.

Chapter 213 Cunning bets! (1)

Shangguan Fei'er giggled and said: "We three sisters are already being given to that naughty fellow, he is already getting such a big advantage... how can we let him go without some pressure? That fellow, we need to punish him a bit first."

Shangguan Xue'er gave a humph and said: "Is that really a punishment? More like a gift."

Shangguan Fei'er giggled, saying: "Big sis, don't just say me. What stage have you and that naughty fellow advanced to? If I did not guess wrongly, he must have taken advantage of you somehow. Otherwise, with your character, how could you easily fall for a man?"

Shangguan Xue'er blushed faintly, glaring slightly at her sister before saying: "If you keep talking about this, I'll disqualify you from participating in the Heavenly Jewel Tournament. Furthermore, if you want to marry him, just go ahead and marry him, what connection is there with me?"

Shangguan Fei'er continued smiling, saying teasingly: "Is that true? Hmmm... but... I don't know who it was who heard Papa speak about how Zhou Weiqing told him about the Saint Energy, using the fact that he can help us consolidate Saint Core Nucleus in exchange for Papa's agreement to our matter... who was it who was so touched? Sis, I have never you seen you so touched by another man. Us sisters have such strong empathy with each other, it is no point acting."

Shangguan Xue'er gave a humph, but she did not refute Shangguan Fei'er's words. "That is because you do not know what the Saint Energy truly means. I never expected he would do such a thing. That Saint Energy that he and Tian'er cultivated, as long as he is given sufficient time, he will become the most powerful in the entire... not one of."

Shangguan Fei'er's eyes opened wide in shock. "Even that one on the Heavenly Snow Mountain also can't?"

Shangguan Xue'er nodded seriously.

Right at that moment, Shangguan Bing'er suddenly lifted up her head where she had been crying in Shangguan Xue'er's embrace. With eyes still blurred from tears, she said: "Big sis, Second Sis, I miss Little Fatty, I really miss him..."

Shangguan Xue'er gently patted her sister's back, saying softly: "Bing'er, don't be so anxious, you will get to see him very soon."

"You have just finished your closed door cultivation, and you need to recuperate your body in this period; you need to refrain from overwhelming yourself with emotions. He won't run away, don't worry. He is no longer the same Zhou Weiqing as he was years ago. Currently, even if a Heavenly King Stage powerhouse tries something against him, it won't be so easy to succeed."

Zhou Weiqing returned to the inn, telling Yun Li and the others that he would be entering a short closed door cultivation with Tian'er before heading back to his room.

He told Tian'er about everything that had happened in the Heavenly Jewel Island, not hiding anything at all. This was where Zhou Weiqing showed his intelligence. He knew he had been a playboy, and if had to keep trying to hide or balance the relationships between the girls, he would never have time for anything else. As such, Zhou Weiqing had long decided that he would treat all his wives equally, speaking the truth about matters. Although sometimes the truth wasn't comfortable to listen to, at least once you told the truth, you didn't have to worry about covering up lies and stumbling.

Tian'er listened to Zhou Weiqing's telling, and she just remained quietly in his embrace, holding his hand but remaining quiet.

Zhou Weiqing asked tentatively, a little nervous: "Dear, aren't

you jealous?” As soon as he asked that, he wanted to slap himself. Who would ask such a question? Alas, the words were already out of his mouth, and he couldn’t take it back.

Tian’er gave a light humph. “What is the point of being jealous? If I really was jealous, would you abandon them? I have already thought things through, if you really don’t want me in the future, I will take the child and live by myself. Anyway I already have a precious baby, you aren’t so important anymore.”

“Ehhh... Why does it sound like I’m just a studhorse...” Zhou Weiqing gave a depressed look as he said.

Tian’er giggled and said: “[You are exactly just a stud horse.](#)”

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “Dearest, since you want a child, then we should make the best use of our time. After all, we don’t really know if we truly have a child together yet right? Heh heh.”

Tian’er gave him a light punch, saying: “Didn’t you say we were going to cultivate in closed door cultivation, to do some last minute training?”

Zhou Weiqing looked at her beautiful face and smooth skin, and his hands couldn’t help themselves as they ‘roamed’ about. “Well... it won’t take that long... it’s just to get us in the mood for cultivating.”

Tian’er: “.....”

...

Days passed, one after the other, and as it got closer and closer to the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, the ZhongTian City also grew more crowded, bustling with life. Although the ordinary citizens did not know the unique underlying currents in this year’s Heavenly Jewel Tournament, and they did not know about the changes in the Lustre Spatial Realm of the Heaven’s Expanse Palace which caused it; to them, it was still one of the grandest events they could experience every time it was organized.

All the rooms in the inns were already filled up, and some of the Battle Teams which had come later had to go to the ZhongTian Empire to arrange places for them to stay.

The lively atmosphere infected almost everyone in the entire ZhongTian City, and various news about the Heavenly Jewel Tournament also spread like wildfire. This was especially so for all the estimations of each Battle Team's strength; there were so many various editions spreading around.

After all, the Heavenly Jewel Tournament was also one of the ZhongTian Empire top betting events. After all, there were so many people joining the Tournament, and if one could seize the opportunity to bet on a dark horse, they could possibly gain a fortune overnight. For example, the last Tournament's Fei Li Empire... Although many had lost a lot of gold, there were the few who had made off like kings with the sheer odds... especially during the fight against the Dan Dun Empire where it had been a 100 to 1 odds... Zhou Weiqing was not the only one who had earned from that.

Amongst the over twenty Battle Teams that had joined, the most attention was naturally focused on the powerful Battle Teams which had the Great Saint Lands behind their backs. This was a normal situation that happened every single Heavenly Jewel Tournament. However, this year, another team was also under high scrutiny, and that was naturally the Fei Li Battle Team.

After all, the Fei Li Battle Team had been the biggest dark horse in the previous Heavenly Jewel Tournament, perhaps even in the history of the Tournament itself. More so, it had actually won all the way, even obtaining the final championship, shocking the entire world. This round, naturally there were many who looked at them with high hopes and expectations. Of course, every single Battle Team was doing their best to keep their team members and strength secret. As such, the news that ordinary citizens could get was highly limited, and amongst them, the Fei Li Battle Team was

one of the most mysterious ones... and also one that had greatest anticipation for many.

As for the Heavenly Bow Battle Team, no one would pay attention to them. Every session of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, there would be countless of small empires joining the Tournament, but all of them just served as a foil or contrast to the large empires.

Only a few observant people would notice that this Heavenly Bow Empire which had already been destroyed, had actually appeared on the main namelist of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament... what did that mean? Of course, even if they noticed it, they did not pay much attention to it. Who would treat such an unknown Battle Team as one of the hot favourites?

By this time, the registration period of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament had ended. This year, there were a total of twenty five Battle Teams, representing their respective Empires. Similarly to past years, they were split into four groups, three with six teams each and a fourth with seven Battle Teams. For that particular group, it would perhaps be relatively harder to advance.

The lot-drawing ceremony has also completed yesterday, and the one to represent the Heavenly Bow Empire to draw lots was Yun Li. However, when he returned with the results of the lots and told Zhou Weiqing, it gave Zhou Weiqing such a huge shock that he could only stare with jaw agape.

The group which the Heavenly Bow Empire had been placed into could truly be called the 'Group of Death'. Not only was it the only group with seven Battle Teams, the real reason it was called the Group of Death was because there were actually TWO of the Battle Teams backed by the Great Saint Lands! Perhaps what made Zhou Weiqing speechless was that several of them were even old enemies and foes, or those with links to them.

This group had seven teams which included the ZhongTian

Battle Team, Dan Dun Battle Team, Bai Da Battle Team, Kalise Battle Team, Mi Ou Battle Team, Geritimo Battle Team and of course, the Heavenly Bow Battle Team.

“Big bro... are you toying with me? Please say you are.” Zhou Weiqing looked at Yun Li’s calm face, then back down at the group list and schedule, his brow twitching violently.

Yun Li glanced at him, but did not speak.

Zhou Weiqing had a ‘speechless’ look on his face, as he said: “My dear big boss, this is not true right?! Are you trying to play me to my death?! What kind of enemies did you draw!! All old friends and old foes! If you want me to die, you should just say so directly. This must be a prank right? Quick, take out the real schedule.”

Yun Li said exasperatedly: “This is the real result. If you don’t believe it, you can go look for yourself. Isn’t it just a bit of bad luck, it’s not like I did it on purpose. Anyway, this is also a good thing right? Any enmity, we can deal with it all at once.”

Zhou Weiqing’s heart was bleeding! “Big brother... is this really just a ‘bit’ of bad luck?! Look at all the enemies? ZhongTian Empire... nothing much more needs to be said right? With the three Shanguan Sisters... we don’t have to imagine that they will go easy on us. Don’t forget your precious Little Miss Muddle will be part of them... I dare say their average cultivation level is at least seven Jewels or higher.”

“Next is the Dan Dun Empire... that is an old enemy of mine. I heard that the previous team leader Shen Little Demon has already reached the seven-Jeweled stage, yet this time she couldn’t even make it as the Vice Leader. So... yeah, they can’t be underestimated either. Besides that, well... at least the Kalise Empire and Bai Da Empire are great, those are the two that I had hoped to meet the most. At least I can vent my anger then...”

“Then, there is the Geritimo Empire... This is also a large Empire equal to the Fei Li Empire, and they have just lost a war against the

Dan Dun Empire... they will definitely be gearing up their best to take revenge in this Heavenly Jewel Tournament... so it will be safe to say that their Battle Team will also not be weak.”

“Overall... besides the Mi Ou Battle Team which should be an easy fight... we will have three extremely tough fights ahead of us just in the group stages alone. And there will only be two Battle Teams which can advance from the group stages. I... I...”

Yun Li said helplessly: “The lots have been drawn, it is already set in stone... what else can I do?”

Zhou Weiqing said savagely: “What else can you do... hmph... every round you will be the first to fight. Let’s see what else you can do. Hmph Hmph.”

Yun Li was also staunch and unyielding. With a humph of his own, he retorted: “Fine, I’m fine with being first to fight!”

...

At last, the official start date of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament was finally here. Before dawn, the entire ZhongTian City was already bustling with life and cheer. The sounds of sales, shouting, breakfast, all of it rose and fell from every single corner of the city.

After having breakfast, the ZhongTian Battle Team members were all called to Zhou Weiqing’s room.

“Wear these clothes, and these bamboo hats. We will set off soon.” Zhou Weiqing pointed to the pile of clothes on the table. Both he and Tian’er had already changed into them.

These were unbelievably simple clothings. Grey, plain common clothes. Indeed, simple cotton clothing which weren’t even military attire. The only redeeming feature about the clothes was that they were of pure cotton, so they were at least relatively comfortable. There was pretty much no difference between these clothes and that of ordinary work attire of porters and haulers... without any decorations or embellishments.

Besides the grey clothes, there was a simple bamboo hat, with a simple tassel. In any case, once they wore that hat, as long as it wasn't someone with x-ray vision, no one could tell how they looked like.

He is making a pun here. 种马 literally means stud horse, but is also 'net' slang for harem stories

Chapter 213 Cunning bets! (2)

“Boss, isn’t this a bit too shabby?” Ma Qun held up his clothes as he complained.

Zhou Weiqing shot a glance at him and said: “If you think it’s too shabby for you, you don’t have to join the tournament. What do you know, haven’t you heard of the term acting as a pig to eat tigers?! Or do you prefer to write on your forehead ‘I AM VERY STRONG’ before you are happy? Do you know what it means to feint some weak points for your enemies to draw them in?! Don’t forget that besides winning, we still need to work hard to earn money!”

Crow burst into giggles at the side, saying: “Just listen to Boss. The art of acting like a pig to eat tigers, no one is better than him at it. Both Weiqing and I have attended the previous Tournament, and we were also pivotal in achieving victory. Anyone could easily identify us. As such, it will be best for us to delay revealing ourselves as much as possible. Otherwise, how can we earn any money at all. Right, Boss?”

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “Looks like it’s Crow who knows me best. Alright now, hurry up and change clothes, I still have a mission for each of you to accomplish.”

Under Zhou Weiqing’s forceful request, the group of them grudgingly changed into this team uniform that was not really a team uniform. At least, they were relatively neat and in sync. If not for Ma Qun, Crow and Xixi’s heights, they could have been easily lost in the sea of people in the crowded streets. This was exactly the result and effect that Zhou Weiqing was looking for.

Once everyone had changed and returned to Zhou Weiqing’s room, he placed a stack of crystal cards on the table.

“Each of you take five cards. Each of these cards contain one million gold coins. I want you all to place bets according to my

instructions. Once you have finished betting, only then do you take your participant badge to the competition ground by yourselves.”

As such, he handed out the cards to the various individuals, and he began informing them of the bets they were to place, each of them having different bets. This was the result of the past few days, which he had spent calculating the best odds for them to maximise their winnings.

Tian'er couldn't help but find it amusing, saying drolly: “If I didn't know that you were targeting the championship, I would really think you are just a professional gambler.”

The first round of fights had also been arranged and scheduled after drawing lots, and the schedule had also been released to the public for the sake of betting. However, all the bets would only start this morning, from daybreak until the sun is high in the morning, which was the arranged time for bets to be placed before the actual fighting began.

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “Winning money is also a grand accomplishment, one that grants you much satisfaction. Very soon, you will all feel it for yourselves. Oh right, for your own money, if you want to bet, do not follow my instructions. Our first fight will be against the Mi Ou Battle Team... so you can just bet on ourselves.”

This first fight could be said to be stress-free for all of them. It was perhaps the easiest fight in their entire group, and thus Zhou Weiqing found it extremely easy to arrange for their first day.

The team stealthily left their inn, mixing into the crowd as they split up, each heading to their own destinations according to Zhou Weiqing's directions. They would be betting in different betting stations, and with their nondescript clothings, it should not draw much attention.

Naturally, they would not just dump a million gold coins at once on a single battle team. Instead, Zhou Weiqing's method was to get

them to scatter their bets here and there, even placing a few tiny bets on those battle teams which did not seem to have a chance to win, while having the majority on his targets. In this way, those above mentioned targets would not be too obvious.

Early in the morning, the odds of the day's fight had already come out.

The Heavenly Bow Battle Team and the Mi Ou Battle Team's odds had also come up, 1.5 to 1. That was to say, if the Heavenly Bow Battle Team won, bettors would gain 1.5x their bet, and if the Mi Ou Battle Team won, bettors would gain 1x of their bet.

The odds were constantly fluctuating, and it was determined by the ZhongTian government authorities, while the adjustments were done according to the bets.

Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er quickly arrived at their destination betting booth. After some observation, he discovered that many more people were betting on the Mi Ou Battle Team than their Heavenly Bow Battle Team.

After all, the Mi Ou Empire had joined the Heavenly Jewel Tournament many times before. Although their results weren't astounding, more people would look to them rather than the Heavenly Bow Empire which had never joined a single Heavenly Jewel Tournament prior to this.

"Little Fatty, aren't we going to place our bets? It isn't early already." Tian'er asked curiously.

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: "Very well, let us begin. You go first, bet one million gold on the Mi Ou Battle Team."

"Huh? Did you get that wrong? Bet on the Mi Ou Battle Team?" Tian'er was caught by surprise. "Are you planning on giving up the first fight?"

Zhou Weiqing continued grinning widely as he said: "Heh heh, just do as I say first."

Although Tian'er was filled with puzzlement, her trust in Zhou Weiqing won out in the end. Furthermore, in her eyes, one million gold wasn't much, so she did as he said and placed the bet.

Barely two minutes after Tian'er had placed her one million gold coin bet, the odds were adjusted, changing dramatically, reaching a high of 1 to 4.5!

After all, these two Battle Teams were not popular at all, and most did not have information on them. As such, the amount of total funds bet on them was not much. With a sudden addition of a one million gold coin bet, the odds would naturally be influenced greatly.

When he had joined the previous Heavenly Jewel Tournament, Zhou Weiqing had already spent some time observing all the details of the betting stations. These odds were controlled by objects similar to the Lustre Gems on the Heavenly Jewel Island. As long as one betting booth had a large infusion of bets, then all of the booths would change the odds.

As for the citizens, when they placed their bets, there was usually some distinguishing signs. That was, the popular battle teams and fights would definitely have a greater amount of bets in total. For example, if it were down to the top eight fights, and a Great Saint Land Battle Team was facing another Great Saint Land Battle Team, perhaps the total bets would amount to several billion gold coins or more!

Conversely, in the preliminary stages, due to the large number of fights, some of the smaller empires would have much lesser bets. After all, most would not want to place their bets on unfamiliar teams.

Indeed, as Zhou Weiqing had expected, after trying it out, the bet of one million gold had greatly increased the odds, proving Zhou Weiqing's guesses to be accurate. He was instantly overjoyed.

Odds was a rather tricky thing. Sometimes, when it went high, it

would cause others to follow suit. Seeing the Mi Ou Battle Team's odds, before long, there were other people following suit, causing the odds to continue rising.

Humans had a habit of the inertia of thought. To many of them, since someone had dared to place such a heavy bet on the Mi Ou Empire, that must be because they had absolute confidence.

This year's Heavenly Jewel Tournament betting had some variations from previous ones. Besides being the banker as usual, the ZhongTian Empire also added a rule that they would be taking a small cut from all the winnings. That was to say, if someone won money in a bet, a tiny portion would have to be paid up as 'taxes'. The current declared 'tax' was about five percent.

Do not underestimate this mere five percent. After all, the Heavenly Jewel Tournament was sufficient to draw in all the richest people of the world to come watch and enjoy, and bet at the same time. The final tally of gold inflow and outflow could be more than a hundred billion gold coins. A mere five percent of that was already a massive sum of money.

If it were any other empire, they might be called into question for daring to take a small cut. However, who dared to challenge the ZhongTian Empire? If they weren't willing to pay the cut, they could just not bet. However, this Heavenly Jewel Tournament could only be held by the ZhongTian Empire. As such, though there was some unhappiness due to this new rule, the dissenting voices were quickly drowned out.

Very soon, the time for the fights were about to begin. By this time, the odds of the Heavenly Bow Battle Team and Mi Ou Battle Team had risen to 1 to 7. That was to say, the Mi Ou Battle Team's odds were 7 to 1, and the 'profit' for betting on them was very minimal now.

At this time, Zhou Weiqing finally placed his own bet. He placed every single cent he had with him and Tian'er onto their Heavenly

Bow Empire, all at once. Once he placed the bet, he quickly left with Tian'er.

Although the odds would continue changing from there, but the fight was about to start soon. Of course, the payout would have an instant change from his bet, but it was unlikely many would be able to follow suit. The final odds should not be very different from the 1 to 7 payout rate.

Of course, that wasn't to say that the ZhongTian Empire would lose money. The ones who truly lost would be those who had bet on the Mi Ou Empire. Although Zhou Weiqing had savagely bet on themselves, even a 1 to 7 odds was a far cry from the past tournament's 1 to 100 odds.

"You are just too sly and cunning." As Tian'er and Zhou Weiqing walked towards the entrance of the competition ground, she couldn't help but comment with a smiling face. "Didn't you say we should not raise too much attention?"

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: "Heh, Since I didn't place all thirty million gold on this betting round, that is already giving the ZhongTian Empire a lot of face. To be honest, this will be our biggest opportunity to earn money in the entire Heavenly Jewel Tournament. Since no one knows of us yet, and the Mi Ou Battle Team is also the easiest fight, we only have this chance to use our wealth to manipulate the odds... as such I can only seize this opportunity to earn a large sum first. The same situation should happen for most of the other bets I planned. Those I have chosen are mostly those fights between smaller empires. However, the betting process will be different from what we did just now... after all, I only have fifty percent certainty about the results. Although we cannot win it all, we have a major advantage in terms of the odds. As such, though we are splitting our bets, I estimate that we will at least earn ten million gold coins for this round."

"Although this will definitely draw the attention of the ZhongTian Empire, perhaps even causing them to change some

rules, at least we will have earned the base of what we need. From here on, we will not be able to duplicate that feat. We can only wait for those tough fights before we bet on ourselves to win and rake it in again. This time, I want to bring back at least sufficient funds to run our Heavenly Bow Empire for at least five years without issues.”

As the pair spoke, they entered the competition grounds.

On the surface, the Heavenly Jewel Tournament did not seem any different from the previous one. It was still that same central stage, surrounded by the various resting rooms of all the Empires. At the front, there was the VIP viewing stand.

However, for this year’s four best resting rooms, the Dan Dun Battle Team did not have a place. Instead, the Fei Li Battle Team had taken their position. More so, it was the best room, the one which had belonged to the ZhongTian Battle Team the previous time.

Chapter 213 Cunning bets! (3)

Seeing the Fei Li Battle Team's insignia on their resting room, Zhou Weiqing suddenly felt his heart grow warm and fervent.

By now, the entire ZhongTian Plaza was filled with crowds of people, an audience that was literally awash with countless bodies. Cheers, shouts, even screams rose and fell, and the entire scene was extremely lively and bustling with excitement.

In such an atmosphere, any participant would easily feel their blood boil with excitement. Zhou Weiqing was no exception. Here, he had once helped the Fei Li Empire to fight for and win the greatest achievements and honour. It was also at that time that he had said he would lead the Heavenly Bow Empire Battle Team to this stage, to prove the power of their Empire. Now, he had done it... he was really here again, with his Heavenly Bow Battle Team, bringing their hopes and resolve towards the championship.

Taking a deep breath, taking in the air filled with the smell of smoke, Zhou Weiqing instantly forgot all about the betting. His gaze froze upon the fighting ring, and his fighting spirit raised instantly.

Tian'er and Zhou Weiqing's hearts were linked due to their constant cultivating of Saint Energy together. Naturally, she could sense the sudden change in his feelings. Grasping his hand, feeling the sudden sweat in his palms, she thought to herself: Little Fatty, you can do it.

"Get out of the way." A cold voice suddenly rang out behind the two of them. Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er subconsciously turned back to look, only to see a battle team dressed in red behind them.

The fresh blood red of the battle team's uniform could easily stimulate one's eyes. The one at the front of the team was a young man, an icy cold aura belying the fiery hot eyes he had. The strange mix of heat and ice was easy to give others a wrong

sensation.

Zhou Weiqing pulled Tian'er back, stepping aside to give way. The battle team members dressed in red did not even look at them as they passed by them with grand steps, headed towards the resting house in the centre.

“It's the Dan Dun Battle Team, looks like they have changed their team uniforms.” Zhou Weiqing instantly recognized his old foes, as Shen Little Demon was walking at the fourth position in the team.

It had been a few years since he had last seen Shen Little Demon, and she now looked to no longer have the impetus and rash character she had in the previous tournament, with a hint of maturity now. From her looks she was actually married now! Shen Little Demon was not young anymore, for a girl to be near the age of thirty, how could she not marry?

Tian'er pursed her lips, saying disdainfully: “Aren't they just the Blood Red Hell, look at how arrogant they are. Hmph!” She had never been one to back down, and she was currently not in a good mood at all.

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “It looks like I truly have fate with this Dan Dun Empire! We'll take care of them when it is their turn to fight us. For now, we need to stay low, we need to earn as much as possible. We will meet them in the sixth round, at that time, we will vent our anger.”

As he said that, his gaze turned to the resting room of the ZhongTian Empire. Alas, he did not see any sign of the three Shangguan Sisters at all. In fact, only four members of the ZhongTian Battle Team were there, none of them familiar to him at all. From the look of things, the three Shangguan Sisters were not intending to come today.

As usual, the ZhongTian Battle Team was the first to fight, and their opponent would be the Kalise Battle Team. Naturally, with such a calibre of opponent, the Shangguan Sisters would not even

have a chance to take action.

The Heavenly Bow Battle Team's rest house was at one of the most remote corners. After all, it was the first time they were attending the Heavenly Jewel Tournament. When Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er entered the rest house, the rest of the team had already gathered.

Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er were pretty much some of the latest of all the competitors. Not long after they entered the rest house, the ZhongTian Emperor Shangguan Tianxin stood up at the VIP stand, proclaiming the start of the entire Tournament along with loud cheers from the audience. This year's Heavenly Jewel Tournament's chief judge was still the ZhongTian Empire Skill Storing Palace's Palace Master, Shangguan Longyin.

Normally, the first round of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament always ended in the shortest possible time. That was because the first round would always be the seeded team of the particular group.

For the first group, the ZhongTian Battle Team stepped forward, and the Kalise Battle Team directly surrendered without a fight.

As for the other three groups, the same scene occurred except for the Fei Li Empire's group. However, their opponent was merely a Battle Team from a small Empire, and with the leadership of the powerful brother sister team of Ye Paopao and Ye Xuan, they quickly won their fight.

Very quickly, the second round began.

Shangguan Longyin's rich voice rang out. "First stage, First Group Second Round. Heavenly Bow Battle Team vs Mi Ou Battle Team. Both sides, please send your first fighter to the stage. Judge, to the stage."

According to the lots drawn, the Heavenly Bow Battle Team would be fighting in the second fight for the first group. Instantly,

Yun Li bounced to his feet, ready to head out. However, Zhou Weiqing grabbed hold of him, preventing him from walking out.

“What?” Yun Li asked Zhou Weiqing curiously. “Didn’t you say I will be the one to fight first every round?”

Zhou Weiqing shook his head and said: “Not this round. Ma Qun, you go first. Xixi, you will fight second. For the third fight both of you go together. Do not use your Heavenly Energy, wear your full heavy armour.”

Zhou Weiqing’s instructions were simple but extremely clear.

Upon hearing those words, Ma Qun was delighted. He had always been a person who loved to show off, and he had been yearning to join this Heavenly Jewel Tournament for such a long time. As soon as he heard Zhou Weiqing wanting him to lead the fight, he instantly charged out with an excited look on his face.

With a bounce of his feet on the ground, he leapt directly onto the stage.

As for the Mi Ou Battle Team, the one who walked out was a youth of about twenty six or twenty seven. The entire Mi Ou Battle Team was also no longer the same as three years ago, with pretty much everyone changed, and Zhou Weiqing had not seen this youth who had walked out before.

Crow sat by Zhou Weiqing’s side, laughing heartily as she said: “I still remember... the previous time when we were representing the Fei Li Empire... our first round was also against the Mi Ou Empire. What fate we have together!”

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly, but remained quiet. In truth, against the Mi Ou Battle Team, he did not feel like they would be any under any stress.

On the rostrum, Shangguan Longyin glanced naturally to the side of the Heavenly Bow Battle Team rest house. Looking at the entire team wearing their bamboo hats low even in the room, his mouth

twitched slightly momentarily, the flicker of a smile in his eyes. Clearly, he knew who was part of the Heavenly Bow Battle Team.

On the stage, the judge said solemnly: “Both sides, introduce yourself.”

Ma Qun stretched his powerful muscles, shouting out loud: “Heavenly Bow Empire, Ma Qun.”

When the youth from the Mi Ou battle Team saw Ma Qun’s size and stature, he was given a small fright. His own 1.8 metres height was not considered short, but he only barely came up to Ma Qun’s chest.

“Mi Ou Empire, Qian Shu.”

The judge continued: “The rules of the fight are simple, both sides can attack at will, any weapons are allowed. However, if you are fighting as a Beastmaster, you cannot use any Consolidated Equipment or Stored Skills. Once the enemy surrenders, you cannot continue attacking. Understood?”

Both sides indicated they understood, but just as the judge was about to proclaim the start of the fight, he was suddenly stopped by Ma Qun. “Judge, sorry, could we wait a moment.”

The judge started momentarily, saying: “Do you have any other questions?”

Ma Qun said: “I forgot to wear my armour below. Can I still wear it now?”

The judge’s face darkened, but he said: “Why didn’t you prepare before the fight? That’s what a schedule is for! Hurry up.”

The Heavenly Jewel Tournament rules allowed any weapons or armour, and he could not stop him.

Originally, the youth called Qian Shu was a little nervous upon seeing Ma Qun’s huge size, but he laughed out loud directly at that. In truth, most of the competitors joining the Heavenly Jewel

Tournament would be depending on their Consolidated Equipment, and for Ma Qun to request to wear armour, wasn't that revealing that his cultivation level wasn't sufficient? In that instant, the fear and worry in his heart lowered by more than half, converted to excitement. If he could gain a first victory for his Empire, it was an honour for any team member.

However, very quickly, that smile froze on Qian Shu's face.

Ma Qun stood on the stage, right in front of millions of audience as he took out his heavy armour piece by piece, wearing it as quickly as he could.

Let alone the judge and Qian Shu on the stage, even the honoured guests on the VIP audience stand were staring, stunned.

What kind of armour was that!? It was more than half chi thick all around, and more so, when Ma Qun had placed the entire armour on the competition stage, it caused a clear loud thumping sound, even causing reverberations throughout.

How heavy did that armour have to be for something like that to happen?

By the time Ma Qun finished wearing his heavy armour, all the onlookers couldn't help but feel their hearts wrench. Ma Qun's height and stature was immense enough, and with the entire body of Heavy Cavalry Armour, he was like a single moving steel fortress. Standing there, even without releasing his Heavenly Energy or a hint of aura, he already exuded an incomparable pressure. Standing in front of him, Qian Shu looked like a little lost sheep, as if he could be swallowed by this immense monster in front of him.

After wearing his armour, Ma Qun grinned and said: "Peerless Regiment Cavalry, Transformation Complete. Judge, I am ready."

Qian Shu stared blankly at the judge. "He... Is... Is that not against the rules? Isn't that armour just too massive?" From Ma

Qun's armour, he could sense a thick cold aura, and he was truly suspicious that if his own attacks could even get through that thick armour.

The judge's heart was also twisting inside, but the Heavenly Jewel Tournament rules had never prevented anyone from using any weapon or armour!

"Competitors can use any weapons or armour. If you wish to wear armour now, you can do so. If you do not require it, I will proclaim the start of the match."

Qian Shu could only resign himself to his fate. Since he had been chosen by the Mi Ou Empire, he was also one of the top of the generation, and he quickly calmed himself down, shaking himself free from the shock as he nodded towards the judge.

As the judge proclaimed the start of the match, the historical first fight of the Heavenly Bow Empire in the Heavenly Jewel Tournament finally began.

Qian Shu swiftly released his Heavenly Jewels. As the vanguard fighter of the Mi Ou Battle Team, his cultivation level was not weak. Four Heavenly Jewels appeared respectively on his right and left wrists, with his Physical Jewels the Dragonstone Jade of Agility, and his Elemental Jewels the Emperor Sapphires of the Water Attribute.

Pressing his hands together, his arms were instantly covered with Consolidated armour. It was a small set of two Consolidated Equipment pieces, in a thick blue light and the assistance of his Consolidated Equipment, a pair of ice blades formed in his hands, each three chi long. Facing Ma Qun's body which looked like a massive armoured fortress, he did not try to retreat, instead charging forward in a flash, instantly reaching Ma Qun's side, the ice blades swiping down at him.

Chapter 214 'Gentle' Xixi! (1)

This Qian Shu from the Mi Ou Battle Team was a rare Agility/Water close combat specialist.

In truth, Qian Shu's combat experience was quite decent. After being shocked by Ma Qun's armour, he immediately judged that Ma Qun's greatest strength should be his defense, and his speed would not be too good. As such, he was confident in using his own speed and agility in taking the fight to Ma Qun, and he still had a chance of winning. After all, for Ma Qun to wear such an armour, it should mean his Heavenly Energy cultivation level wasn't too high.

Just as Qian Shu attacked, Ma Qun did not choose to dodge. Instead, he waved his arms, withdrawing his weapons. At the same time, he stepped towards Qian Shu's direction, his arms twirling the massive spiked maces in direct swipes towards Qian Shu.

If not for his insane armour, such an attack from Ma Qun would normally be deemed as a suicide-attack type move, pitting their lives against each other. After all, Qian Shu had attacked first, and though his weapons might not be as large as Ma Qun's he would definitely hit first.

However, with the Peerless Regiment Heavy Cavalry Armour, everything changed.

Seeing the two terrifying massive spiked maces, Qian Shu couldn't help but shiver in his heart. He dared not care about hurting his opponent, instead lowering his body down, striking the ground with his feet in a swift movement to dodge the spiked maces, before his ice blades struck out again towards Ma Qun's legs.

Qian Shu's reactions could be considered very fast. Alas, it did not change the fact that Ma Qun was not even looking at his actions, only enacting his own plans and actions.

The two large spiked maces swung in a sweeping motion, not changing its path because of his enemy's dodge. With his legs as a pivot, he just spun himself totally, one spiked mace swerving upwards, the other swerving downwards. With his body moving, he was like a meat grinder smashing towards Qian Shu's direction.

PuuPuu Qian Shu's ice blades smashed hard into Ma Qun's leg. However, his attacks merely left two faint scratches on the Frozen Steel Armour, and instead the ice blades showed signs of cracking on impact. At the same time, the large spiked maces had already spun an entire round and returned.

The length of the spiked maces were almost two metres, along with their thickness and Ma Qun's spinning, the area of effect of their reach was just too large. Even though Qian Shu was an Agility type Heavenly Jewel Master, being overextended in position from his attack, he was unable to dodge it a second time.

Lifting his arms, he put his ice blades in a parrying position as his right foot stomped on the ground, using the momentum to push his body to the ground, his back on the stage floor as he tried to slide away.

Alas, on the first spin, Ma Qun had already noticed that Qian Shu had gone down low, and the lower mace of his reached all the way to the ground.

BANG

The massive spiked mace smashed savagely onto the crossguard of Qian Shu's ice blades, and a terrifying sight occurred. Qian Shu felt an incomprehensible strength transferring to him, and both ice blades in his hands shattered instantly. The next instant, the spiked mace smashed into the Consolidated Equipment of his arms. His entire body, Consolidated Equipment and all, was sent flying out of the stage like a golf ball, careening across the stage floor.

In midair, Qian Shu's Consolidated Equipment around his arms

also shattered. Luckily, it was because of the protection of the pair of Consolidated Equipment that saved his arms, escaping with minor injuries instead of being broken straight away.

With just the single strike from Ma Qun, it sent Qian Shu flying more than thirty metres before falling to the ground, almost reaching the rest houses.

Although Qian Shu was not heavily injured, he had already been knocked off the stage, and the victory had been determined.

“This... does this also work?” Such a sentence occurred throughout all the rest houses.

All of them had discerning eyes, and they could naturally tell that this was not even considered a clash between Heavenly Jewel Masters... more like a clash between a Heavenly Jewel Master and raw physical strength. Ma Qun did not even summon his Heavenly Jewels or use his Heavenly Energy, let alone any Stored Skills or Consolidated Equipment. He had just used raw unadulterated physical strength to send Qian Shu flying out of the stage. That was a four-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master! Yet, he had lost the fight without even much resistance... in such a short period of time!

On the VIP Stand, the ZhongTian Emperor Shangguan Tianxin had a slightly stunned look on his face, and he was muttering to himself: “So this is the notorious Peerless Regiment Heavy Cavalry? No wonder, no wonder. It looks like the news from the west is indeed accurate. If that brat Zhou Weiqing actually led several hundred of these powerful warriors, it is definitely possible to repulse the Kalise army.”

Shangguan Tianxin had long since read the report about the bloody battle in the Crescent City. His news was from Shangguan Xue'er, and thus was rather detailed. However, at that time, when Shangguan Tianxin heard her say that Zhou Weiqing had only used three thousand fresh recruits and seven hundred Peerless

Regiment soldiers to withstand the crazed onslaught of fifty thousand Kalise soldiers, he had only smiled passively. In his eyes, perhaps Xue'er had overestimated the numbers of the Kalise armies. However, now that he had seen Ma Qun's terrifying display of power, he immediately readjusted his thinking about Zhou Weiqing's Peerless Regiment.

After proclaiming the result of this fight and for the next match to begin, Shangguan Longyin walked beside Shangguan Tianxin.

"Your Majesty."

"En. What do you think?" Shangguan Tianxin asked Shangguan Longyin.

Shangguan Longyin was silently for a moment before saying: "These Peerless Heavy Cavalry should not be from the Ruffian Battalions. According to the news from the Northwest Army Camp, it seems like Zhou Weiqing had taken in some warrior tribes; the entirety of their tribes, and incorporated their warriors as part of his forces. These Tribes have some impressive natural inborn talents indeed. If I did not see wrongly, just now that Peerless Regiment Heavy Cavalry warrior's armour was no less than a thousand jin heavy, but it did not influence his movement at all. Any ordinary warrior, even for a Heavenly Jewel Master, he would not be able to wear it. From that alone, we can see that this person's physical strength alone is already at a terrifying stage. At this point, I can truly understand how is it that the WanShou Empire forces had lost so much to the Peerless Regiment. That little rascal Zhou Weiqing is definitely no ordinary person."

As they were speaking up above, on the stage, Ma Qun was howling smugly, raising his massive spiked maces in the air, as if he was some invincible general who had defeated an enemy army.

"Hey, it's time for you to go down. We are about to start the next match." It was only after the judge's reminder that Ma Qun realised he had to leave the stage, and he walked off the stage with

some discontent, as if he still wasn't satisfied.

The members of the Battle Teams with the four Great Saint Lands as background all revealed disdainful looks. Their judgement of Ma Qun was the mere words: Simple minded, mere brute force.

Alas, Zhou Weiqing did not hear their appraisal, otherwise he would have fallen to the ground laughing. For someone to deem Ma Qun, a fellow who had dared to try trick him when they first entered the Fei Li Royal Family Military Academy, as simple minded? Perhaps in the entire Berserker Tribe with their Titan Bloodline, no one else was as cunning and sneaky as this fellow. En... even as he judged Ma Qun as cunning, the sneakiest Zhou Weiqing did not blush or blink at all.

The other Mi Ou Battle Team members had extremely ugly expressions. When Qian Shu returned to his team rest house, he felt like he couldn't lift up his head. To lose to a brute like that who only used physical strength, his heart was extremely gloomy and unreconciled. In his eyes, he should have the chance to defeat Ma Qun, but he had underestimated that heavy armour of his.

The second member of the Mi Ou Battle Team quickly ascended the stage. Since the first match was a loss, this time their team leader decided to take the fight personally.

As compared to the previous Heavenly Jewel Tournament, this year's Mi Ou Battle Team seemed to be weaker overall. Even this team leader was only at the five-Jeweled stage. It could be said that the Mi Ou Battle Team was the complete reverse of almost all other battle teams, who were far stronger than all their previous incarnations. To be more accurate, they were just here to '[buy soy sauce](#)'. However, even if they didn't have high aspirations, they did not want to lose in too ugly a fashion, especially against a team like the Heavenly Bow Empire's who were only participating for the first time. In their eyes, this was something that was unacceptable.

As the Mi Ou Battle Team leader ascended the stage, Ma Qun was just walking down. Just as he was prepared to look at what kind of opponent the Heavenly Bow Empire would send for him, another massive figure jumped up.

BOOM CRASH

A horrendous crashing sound rang through all the rest houses, even giving the VIP Stand a huge scare. Both the Mi Ou Battle Team Leader and the judge on the stage were sent staggering back with the sheer sound shockwave and reverberations of the stage. If not for the fact that their cultivation levels were not low, perhaps they might have even fallen down.

The Mi Ou Battle Team leader's mouth couldn't help but twitch uncontrollably. One moving steel fortress had just gone down, and another one had sprang up. Looking at the height and stature, it did not pale compared to the previous one. Even their armour was exactly the same, with the only difference being the weapons in their hands.

It couldn't be that fellow who went down had just changed weapons and jumped back up right? Otherwise, how could the Heavenly Bow Empire have so many insanely strong fellows like that?

The judge had been given a rather large scare, and his heart was still thumping wildly. Mouth twitching, he said: "Both sides, introduction."

"Mi Ou Empire. Zhao Hui." After reporting his name, the team leader stared savagely at his opponent, concentrating fully on his opponent's voice. If it was exactly the same, he would definitely voice out his suspicions to the judge, asking the opponent to remove his helmet.

"Heavenly Bow Empire. Xixi."

As soon as the voice rang out, even the judge started slightly. A

warrior with such a massive physical stature... he.. Was a she...? Furthermore, Xixi's voice was a stark contrast from her figure... such a silky sweet voice, it was definitely not something that a man could imitate no matter how he tried, sounding extremely comforting.

This... this was really a girl? Zhao Hui was extremely gloomy. The judge was still in shock, but he quickly proclaimed the start of the match to prevent himself from suffering any further shocks.

Below the stage, in the Heavenly Bow Battle Team rest house, Zhou Weiqing was observing the fight very closely. Amongst all his team mates, the one he was least familiar with was Xixi, and he had not seen her fight before. As such, he had dispatched her to fight in this first round of battles. After all, he needed to familiarize himself with his team member's capabilities so that he could better arrange their strategy in the later stages of the tournament.

Ma Qun smiled faintly and said: "Boss, do not worry. In terms of defense, Xixi is definitely no match for Ma Qun. However, if we speak of offensive strength, even two Ma Qun's cannot compare to her. In the Crescent City battle, Xixi was at the west gates, so you did not see her fighting. There, she killed more than five hundred enemies by herself. She earned herself the nickname Gentle Fiend Goddess. Normally, she is extremely gentle, but once she enters battle mode, her ferocity scares even myself."

Literal translation – internet slang for ‘just passing by’

Chapter 214 'Gentle' Xixi! (2)

Zhou Weiqing started, saying: “How did that happen?”

Crow sighed softly, saying: “Xixi... when she was very young, she joined her parents in hunting in the hills. Alas, at that time, she wandered about and was lost. Eventually, she was taken up by a tiger. Perhaps because of our inborn tough skin and bones, the tiger was unable to eat her, and ended up raising her up all the way until she was eight years old, when the tiger died. She wandered around the hills, no one knows for how long, until she was discovered by other Tribesmen and brought home. Her voice is always so soft because her speech patterns are still not very accurate. In truth, since she grew up in the jungles where the law of the jungle truly prevailed... once that wild side of her bursts free, her fighting capabilities also rises. Amongst the entire Gold Crow Tribe young generation, her overall power is second only to me. However, if it was a fight to the death between the two of us, I dare not say I can really defeat her.”

This... this was a true female tiger! Zhou Weiqing's heart palpitated savagely. Perhaps, Master Han Mo had also fallen for her because of this past of us. However, he truly suspected if Han Mo [fought with her in melee combat](#), he would not be able to beat her.

As they spoke, the match on the stage had already begun.

As the judge retreated on his announcement, Zhao Hui also flew back swiftly, a crimson staff appearing in his grasp. With a flick of his wrist, a series of fireballs flew towards Xixi.

Just like Qian Shu earlier, Zhao Hui's Physical Jewel was also the Agility Attribute, but his choice of training was long ranged combat. With his Fire Attribute Elemental Jewels and its explosive power, it was not a bad choice to choose ranged combat. From the fact he was able to release such a chain of fireballs in quick

succession, one could tell that the control he had over his element and Skills was fine grained indeed.

As Zhao Hui launched his attacks, Xixi also reacted swiftly. Her fighting style could be said to be very different from Ma Qun. As soon as the judge shouted to begin, her entire body had begun to crouch low, as if she had become a beast about to devour its victims.

As Zhao Hui flew back, Xixi's right leg stomped down on the ground savagely, her entire body shooting forth like a cannonball. With her kick, a deep hole measuring almost a metre in diameter and half a metre deep was actually opened in the tough granite stage.

With the propelling impetus from this terrifying kick, Xixi charged towards Zhao Hui like a gust of evil wind, seemingly totally unaffected by her heavy armour.

In terms of length, the broad axes of the Gold Crow Tribe were lesser than the massive spiked maces of the Berserker Tribe. However, in terms of destructive power, they were more than a match, and their weight was pretty much the same.

The head of the axe was extremely thick and heavy, and to ensure that the edge of the axes wouldn't break too easily, when it was forged the blade wasn't too fine and sharp. Still, when it was swung around at such power, there was the sound of forceful cutting of air.

The pair of broad axes seemed to come to life in Xixi's hands, and the series of fireballs flying at her did not even have a chance to land on her armour, each and every one of them smashed by her swinging flurry of axes.

Xixi's actions were just too quick. Who could imagine that a massive fortress of steel like that could attack at such speeds? Before Zhao Hui could react, all of his fireballs had been destroyed, and Xixi was already in midair, her axes crossing in wide cross

sweeps at him.

The area that the wheeling axes covered was just too great, and at this moment it was no longer possible for Zhao Hui to dodge. Using her sudden powerful explosive might, Xixi had forced him into such a corner, where he had no chance to make full use of his agility and with no choice left but to block the blow head-on.

A huge fiery shield appeared at the last second, right in front of Zhao Hui, blocking perfectly at Xixi's heavy axes.

BOOM

A loud crash.

The defensive capabilities of the fire shield was not bad at all, actually managing to block Xixi's axes without being shattered instantly. After all, Zhao Hui was a five-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master. However, when everyone looked around for the Mi Ou Battle Team Leader, they were startled to find that he could no longer be seen.

Indeed, Zhao Hui had successfully blocked Xixi's attack. However, as he had been retreating all this while, he was already close to the edge of the stage. When the fire shield had been smashed so savagely by Xixi's axes, though it had successfully blocked the attack, the sheer force of the blow and the reverberations had been out of Zhao Hui's expectations, and he was actually knocked off the stage by the shockwave and backlash from his own fire shield.

As soon as Xixi saw that he was off the stage, the thick killing intent around her vanished. With a spin of her wrists, the two axes spun and fell into place at her side.

Let alone the audience, even Zhou Weiqing was looking on with shock. This... this was just too ferocious and valiant! Absolute violence! Master Han Mo, should I say a prayer for you?!

"... Heavenly... Heavenly Bow Empire's victory." When the judge

declared Xixi's victory, he was almost stuttering. The Heavenly Jewel Tournament was clearly a stage for Heavenly Jewel Masters, yet this pair from the Heavenly Bow Empire were unbelievably unique indeed, just using pure physical strength and the thick heavy armour of theirs to gain victory.

Of course, by now discerning eyes could tell that though the armour that both Ma Qun and Xixi were wearing had an insane defense, it was not something that ordinary people could wear at all! One had to have the requisite physique, strength and constitution to even move while wearing it, let alone fight.

"This fighter, you may head down already." Looking at Xixi in her full set of heavy armour, the judge said helplessly.

Xixi shook her head, saying gently: "I still need to fight in the next match."

Hearing her voice, the judge felt like his heart was being trampled upon once more. The stark contrast between her voice and her actions and size... it was just too huge.

Right at that moment, another massive crash, and the judge's heart almost jumped out of his chest.

It was the full armoured Ma Qun once more, and this time he had jumped up. The judge flew into a rage, glaring at Ma Qun as he shouted: "Can't you be more gentle, there are stairs there, don't you know how to walk! If you jump up like that once more, I'll award you a loss straight away for scaring the judge..."

Ma Qun laughed heartily and said: "I don't think there is such a rule for the tournament right? Since they can all jump up, why can't we? Judge, are you biased against our Heavenly Bow Empire?"

After the sudden fit of rage, the judge suddenly calmed down. That Ma Qun, suddenly pinning such an offense on him, caused the judge's face to turn red and white in succession, but he was

unable to retort. After all, this was in the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, open to so many audience watching. No matter how much he scorned a small Empire like that, he could not possibly state it out in front of so many people.

Forcefully suppressing his own rage and beating heart, he turned to the Mi Ou Battle Team. “Send you fighters for the third match.”

Oddly enough, the two fighters that the Mi Ou Battle Team sent out was also Qian Shu and Zhao Hui again. The fighters from the first two matches would be facing off once more.

These two fellows could be said to have lost in such an absurd fashion, losing before they could even see their opponent’s Heavenly Energy cultivation level. How could they possibly be satisfied?

As soon as they ascended the stage, Qian Shu couldn’t help but shout at Ma Qun: “Your Sister! Aren’t you here to join the Heavenly Jewel Tournament? Are you two even Heavenly Jewel Masters? Judge, I highly suspect whether or not they are truly Heavenly Jewel Masters... they are clearly just violent Heavenly Cavalry Soldiers.”

The judge had previously been angered by Ma Qun, and upon hearing this he seized the opportunity to cause trouble. Turning to Ma Qun and Xixi, he said: “Release your Heavenly Jewels and prove your status as Heavenly Jewel Masters.”

Right at that moment, Xixi lifted her axes. Looking at the bright glint of the axes, the six-Jeweled judge quickly stepped to the side. Xixi’s target was not him, instead pointing at Qian Shu. Her gentle, soft voice rang out. “He is my brother in law, so in a sense I am his sister. You have insulted me, just wait.”

If it were any other circumstance, hearing such a beautiful voice threatening him, Qian Shu might burst out laughing. Such a voice, could it actually threaten anyone?

However, currently he did not feel like laughing at all. It was the owner of this gentle voice who had sent his team leader flying off the stage with a single axe blow. As soon as he was fixed with Xixi's gaze, Qian Shu felt all the hairs of his back rise as a chill ran down his spine.

“Let them see.”

Ma Qun gave a disdainful humph, before raising his right hand, along with his spiked mace. Xixi followed suit. Instantly, the Icy Jade Jewels of the Strength Attribute appeared. Both of them were at the four-Jeweled stage, and the pure type Physical Jewels were enough to prove that they were definitely Heavenly Jewel Masters.

Looking at the sight before them, both Zhao Hui and Qian Shu felt as if something was stuck in their throats, and they were both unable to speak in that moment.

The judge also stared at the two terrifying killing machines in front of him speechlessly. At last, he gave up and just declared for the fight to start.

Zhao Hui quickly shouted. “Make full use of our speed and agility, we'll fight with them slowly on our terms, don't give them the chance to close in on us.” Both he and Qian Shu were of the Agility Type, and they were confident that since they were now prepared, they would no longer be easily be struck by either Xixi or Ma Qun. As long as they did not clash directly with the duo's terrifying strength, they still had some confidence in claiming their own victory. Hopefully, in the upcoming matches, the Heavenly Bow Battle Team would no longer have such scary tin cans.

Alas, sometimes things seemed very simple ... only in imagination. Xixi was actually the first to move, her body moving like lightning as she charged directly at both Zhao Hui and Qian Shu. At the same time, her axes flew out at them savagely.

Instantly, Zhao Hui and Qian Shu dodged in different directions.

However, they were shocked to find that... the axes were still flying at them.

Although they were of the Ability Type Attribute, their speed still could not compare to a flying axe!

When they had seen Xixi charging, both of them could only depend on their instincts to dodge at once, but the two axes acted as if they had eyes on them, actually changing directions in midair.

Right at that moment, they suddenly felt a frigid cold aura surround them instantly, as the two axes actually spurted out a white mist.

Both Qian Shu and Zhao Hui were in the midst of dodging and running, being chased by Xixi's axes. How could they expect that these giant axes would suddenly spray out the white mist.

In panic, both used their own Skills respectively to try to block the mist. However, the icy cold swirl of air still caused their actions to slow down. The next moment, both them and their blocks met with Xixi's axes.

Two muffled thumps.

This time, Zhao Hui and Qian Shu were not knocked off the stage instantly, but they still staggered back several steps from the blow. Although the large axes had changed directions in mid flight, the force within them was still not to be trifled with.

He uses the term 肉搏 which can also be slang for ... intimate relations, perhaps a pun?

Chapter 214 'Gentle' Xixi! (3)

Right at that moment, the giant axe facing Qian Shu suddenly disappeared, the the axe that was facing Zhao Hui also moved back. However, in the next instant, Xixi appeared in front of Zhao Hui, and at the same time, before Qian Shu could even breathe a sigh of relief, a massive spiked mace appeared before his eyes.

Having just been knocked back by the powerful blow, and still reeling from the shockwave, it was extremely difficult to dodge nimbly. In truth, the Skill that Xixi had unleashed through her axes had no offensive capabilities at all, but it was able to lower the temperature dramatically, causing their blood to freeze momentarily, slowing them down just a little.

A few more last ditch attempts at blocking, but at last the two unfortunate souls were once again sent off the stage ignominiously. The Heavenly Bow Battle Team had won with a great disparity of a three to zero score!

Zhou Weiqing sat in the rest house, greatly satisfied. Nodding to himself, he said: "Not only is Xixi extremely powerful, she is extremely intelligent and meticulous in fighting style too! The Stored Skill she chose might not have any offensive or destructive capabilities, but it is a perfect choice for her, a great counter against speed or agility type opponents. In the first place, with her own physical strength, her offense is already sufficiently strong. As long as she can control her opponent's speed, at least in the same level, not many will be able to defeat her."

Of course, a large part of Zhou Weiqing's satisfaction was also the excitement of winning several tens of millions of gold coins.

The audience couldn't help but stare in silence. Many of them had watched many years of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, but it could be said that this pair of Ma Qun and Xixi and their fighting style was truly a fresh sight. Pure physical strength and a uniquely

powerful armour. Yet, the effect was unbelievably good.

The other Battle Teams in their rest houses also glanced at them meaningfully. Of course, these Battle Teams who felt they were stronger did not place much importance on the Heavenly Bow Battle Team. Pure strength might seem extremely useful in a fight against the same level, but if they were to face a strength type Heavenly Jewel Master of greater cultivation level, they wouldn't be afraid of them. Furthermore, in most others' eyes, this was already the greatest ace of the Heavenly Bow Empire. As such, though they had won the battle seemingly easily, there wasn't much sensation caused around.

The rest of the fights all proceeded in a stable and methodical fashion. The Dan Dun Empire met with the Bai Da Empire in the first round, and the Bai Da Empire actually surrendered without fighting. It seemed like they were not even trying to hide the connection between their two Empires any longer. As for the other fights, most of them were won by the theorized stronger team. Each of the Empire's strength were laid out to the world, and it wasn't so easy for 'dark horses' to appear all the time.

When it was time for the last three fights, Zhou Weiqing stood up from the rest house, saying: "Let's go, it's time collect our winnings." The results of each match would be transferred to each betting station at first notice, and those who had won could go claim their winnings quickly. This was also to reduce too much crowding after the fight ended for the day.

On the VIP stand, Shangguan Longyin whispered in Shangguan Tianxin's ears: "Zhou Weiqing, that little brat, he has won a lot again. This round, he has won a few tens of millions of gold. He purposely increased the odds by betting on the Mi Ou Battle Team first, before placing a nine million gold bet in the last minute."

Shangguan Tianxin shook his head helplessly, saying: "That little brat, he has really gotten a taste for the betting scene huh! You keep watch on this matter, we can't let them come here every

Heavenly Jewel Tournament and make off like bandits. Gifting him some money is no problem, but it can't be too much."

"Yes, Your Majesty." Shangguan Longyin agreed. However, his mouth also twitched in a faint smile, thinking to himself: To dare to come to the ZhongTian Empire and 'steal' money in such an outright fashion, this Zhou Weiqing is truly the only one.

The team split up and headed to their respective betting stations to collect their winnings, and they returned to the inn. Of course, not all of their bets won, perhaps even the majority of the smaller bets they placed losing. However, Zhou Weiqing's heavy bet on their own team had paid great dividends. At final count, they had bet thirty million gold coins and ended up with more than seventy million, almost reaching eighty million gold. This was even after the ZhongTian Empire had 'taxed' them on their winnings.

All in all, it had been a great day, and the only regret Zhou Weiqing had was that he still had not been able to see his beloved Bing'er.

With lifted spirits from their victory and the earnings in their pocket, the team had a large meal in their inn before grouping up in Zhou Weiqing's room once again. After all, this first day was just the beginning of the entire tournament.

"Boss... tomorrow our opponents will be the ZhongTian Battle Team... what is the plan?" Ma Qun asked curiously. Although he was eager to fight, he knew that they might possibly face the Shangguan Sisters. As such, he dared not volunteer to fight, as he knew that he could not face up against any of the Shangguan Sisters.

Towards the incoming fight, Zhou Weiqing was also at a loss. He did not really know how to face up against the ZhongTian Battle Team. The three Shangguan Sisters could be said to be the opponents that Zhou Weiqing did not wish to face most... facing them, how could he actually bear to take action! Furthermore,

without using the Saint Energy, he did not have absolute confidence in defeating any of them. Of course, he couldn't possibly use the powerful Saint Energy to actually injure his own women right?

Tian'er looked at Zhou Weiqing's awkward and difficult expression, before smiling faintly, saying: "Little Fatty, you are far too concerned about the matter that you have overlooked the simplest things. Have you forgotten that every group has two Battle Teams that can qualify out of the preliminary stage right? Why do we definitely need to fight? As long as we can guarantee our advance to the next stage, everything will be fine. In truth, Yun Li's lot drawing might seem tough, but it is quite advantageous to us. By being in the same group as the ZhongTian Empire, if we both can advance to the next stage, in the top eight fights we will no longer need to face them. As for the finals, who knows what would happen then? In any case, don't you have confidence in defeating the Dan Dun Battle Team?"

Hearing her words, Zhou Weiqing's eyes lit up instantly. Indeed! He had been so focused on the fight with the ZhongTian Battle Team, so concerned about the Shangguan Sisters that he had totally missed the big picture. Why did they need to fight? As long as they beat the Dan Dun Battle Team, they would naturally advance together with the ZhongTian Battle Team!

...

This was a huge cave, extending so deep that one could not see the end with the naked eye. Strangely, there was a massive stalactite hanging from the roof of the cave, a weird blood-red colour. Below the cave, it was also a sea of blood red.

The thick scent of blood. The thick liquid that swirled around non-stop. If one looked with their eyes alone, they would never be able to know how deep the thick blood-like liquid went. Even the air around here seemed to have a red tinge to it.

Right in the center of the cave, there was a large, pitch black stone platform. It was not large at all, only about five metres long, but in the midst of all the red, the black was especially attention drawing.

Right smack in the center of that platform, there was another strange... black... consolidating into literally a black hole. The black hole had a diameter of about a meter, glowing a faint red in its surroundings. If one looked closely, they would discover the red glow was actually consolidated from the red in the air.

Currently, right in front of this black hole on the platform, stood a figure. The figure was dressed in long red robes, with crimson hair. Right above the demonic looking eyes, in the forehead, it had a red, crystalline jewel embedded. This person's features were simple, but there was an unspeakably strange feel to him, and one could not tell his age from just looks alone.

However, his eyes were glowing in a faint gold light, and his pupils were actually a mix of gold and red. Currently, he was staring right at the strange black hole in front of him, a look of respect on his face.

“My Lord, I sense that I am about to breakthrough. I will never forget how My Lord has taken care of me and trained me. Also, My Lord, your instructions have been carried out and should be complete before long.”

he red clad man's voice was cold, and as he spoke, the red liquid around the stone platform actually rolled violently, rising to form patches of red flame... the entire scene was highly suspect, almost demonic.

“En. Very good, FenTian, you have done well. However, I still need much more blood essence. Once we gain that object, I'll see if that old fool can still imprison me. What you need to do now is to gather more blood into this Blood Grotto.” A sudden voice rang out from the black hole. The voice was sharp, but one could not tell if

it were male or female. However, as the voice rang out, all the red liquid in the blood grotto seemed to boil, and large patches of blood flame welled towards the black hole and was swallowed up.

“Yes, My Lord.” The red clad man once again bowed respectfully to the waist.

“Hahahaha...” The piercing sound from the black hole suddenly burst out laughing. “Old Fool Feng Tian, do you really think you can seal me forever? Once I use your bloodline to destroy your Seal, I’ll see how you still stand against me. At that time, I will colour this entire continent with blood.”

...

The second day of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament had begun.

As the chief judge, Shangguan Longyin’s expression was slightly overcast, and he came glancing over towards the Heavenly Bow Battle Team rest house.

Just last night, he had personally visited the Heavenly Bow Battle Team’s inn to look for Zhou Weiqing, telling him that he could only bet on their own Heavenly Bow Battle Team, and not any other teams. Otherwise, the Heaven’s Expanse Palace would confiscate all their earnings. When Shangguan Longyin told Zhou Weiqing that news, to his surprise Zhou Weiqing had just agreed without any protest. Clearly, he had already expected something like this to happen.

However, the reason why Shangguan Longyin’s expression was so ugly was because in the first round of matches, the Heavenly Bow Battle Team had surrendered directly to the ZhongTian Battle Team, not even bothering to fight.

To any other person, this was something very normal. However, in Shangguan Longyin’s eyes, this was a totally different thing. That little brat Zhou Weiqing, he was clearly still trying to act like a pig to eat the tiger! By surrendering without a fight, those who

might have placed some importance on the Heavenly Bow Battle Team after yesterday's fight might just dismiss them again, and at least for a time, the future bets would not be placed on them. It looks like just a simple warning is not enough for that little fellow, we'll have to do some preventive measures.

Thinking up to this point, Shangguan Longyin went to have a simple discussion with Shangguan Tianxin, and got orders from him that from tomorrow onwards, no matter who the Heavenly Bow Battle Team faced, they would bet a hundred million gold coins on them.

No matter how intelligent he was, Zhou Weiqing was after all just a single youth, how could he win in such a battle of wits against the entire ZhongTian Empire? In the past, they had let him get away with it, but now Shangguan Tianxin knew that after this round of surrendering, he could no longer lose anymore. As such, with the one hundred million gold bet in advance, and the resulting other bets, one could just imagine the final odds for the Heavenly Bow Empire.

Chapter 215 Surrender! (1)

The Dan Dun Battle Team's second round was against the Kalise Empire, and naturally there was no suspense regarding the result once more. Like the Bai Da Empire, the Kalise Battle Team also surrendered without a fight. As such, though this Group One looked to be a Group of Death, it was more for the other teams within. In truth, in such a preliminary phase, it did not draw as much attention at all.

After the Heavenly Bow Battle Team admitted defeated, Zhou Weiqing did not remain for long in his own rest house, instead silently heading towards the ZhongTian Battle Team rest house. The reason was simple; before the fights had begun, he had already spotted Shangguan Xue'er and Shangguan Fei'er there. Only the two sisters were there at the ZhongTian Battle Team rest house, and the reason why he was certain Shangguan Bing'er wasn't here was because of their eyes. Zhou Weiqing believed that if Bing'er was here, she would be extremely agitated to see him, and her eyes would be different from Xue'er and Fei'er.

Before Zhou Weiqing could enter the ZhongTian Battle Team Rest House, he was stopped. One of the ZhongTian Battle Team members lifted his hand to block him, saying: "What are you doing?"

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: "I am the Team Leader of the Heavenly Bow Battle Team, here to greet your Team Leader. Is that alright?"

His words and tone were polite, and thus the ZhongTian Battle Team member was not rude in return. Before he could speak, Shangguan Xue'er's voice rang out from within. "Let him in."

Zhou Weiqing grinned and walked on into the ZhongTian Battle Team, not being polite in just finding a seat to sit in. His sneaky eyes hidden behind the bamboo hat were roving on both

Shangguan Sisters.

Today's ZhongTian Battle Team was clearly very different from yesterday's. Not only were the two Shangguan Sisters Fei'er and Xue'er here, even Little Miss Muddle was here. It could be said that besides Shangguan Bing'er, this was the ZhongTian Battle Team's strongest power gathered here.

"Xue'er, from the looks of things, you all were actually planning on giving us a good fight today?" Zhou Weiqing said with a speechless look on his face.

Shangguan Xue'er did not open her mouth, and it was Fei'er who spoke instead. "Tsk... little coward, [drinking cold water](#). How could you just surrender to us like that? Aren't you afraid of not being able to advance to the next stage?"

When Shangguan Fei'er spoke, Shangguan Xue'er who was right beside her waved her hands, and a light blue shield of light enveloped the three of them. This was a Water Attribute Skill that could shield them from prying ears. Anyone below the cultivation level of Heavenly King Stage who tried to eavesdrop would not be able to hear anything.

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: "Heh heh, how could I possibly take action against you all, my heart would ache too much."

Shangguan Fei'er stuck out her tongue at Zhou Weiqing. Looking at her cute look, if they weren't in the Heavenly Jewel Tournament competition grounds, Zhou Weiqing truly felt like holding her in his arms and getting intimate.

Shangguan Xue'er remained her usual icy self. This time, it really wasn't against Zhou Weiqing, but rather she was afraid that the other ZhongTian Battle Team members would suspect. She could only bring up a sound proof barrier, but was unable to block their vision. If anyone saw the usually cold and icy her smile at Zhou Weiqing, it would cause too much suspicion.

“Aren’t you trying to act like a pig to eat some tigers? Why did you run here today, wouldn’t it spark suspicion?” Shangguan Xue’er said passively.

Zhou Weiqing immediately said: “I’m being wronged totally! Who can I be acting like a pig to eat a tiger here? My Battle Team’s overall power is really below your ZhongTian Battle Team! As such, I decided it was a wiser strategy to surrender. Furthermore, for yesterday’s fight, I did send out our core power members, and did not try to hide anything.”

Shangguan Fei’er burst out in giggles, saying: “Come on now, others might not know you, but wouldn’t we know you well enough? If you weren’t trying to act, why wear that bamboo hat and even veils to mask all your appearances? Isn’t it because you are afraid many people will recognize you? By admitting defeat today, you are planning on sitting on the hill to watch tigers fight right? Aren’t you afraid that we will lose to the Dan Dun Empire tomorrow?”

Zhou Weiqing started momentarily, saying: “Is the Dan Dun Battle Team that strong this year? Even you all do not have absolute confidence in beating them?”

Shangguan Xue’er nodded and said: “Indeed, we do not have absolute confidence. If Bing’er was here, perhaps we would have a much stronger chance.”

Hearing her words, Zhou Weiqing sighed and said: “You all are really torturing me! You know how much I miss Bing’er, how come you do not allow her to come see me today?”

Shangguan Xue’er said: “Bing’er also misses you a lot. However, she has only just come out of closed door cultivation not long ago. In the last few years, she has spent in closed door cultivation, and her cultivation level has risen dramatically. However, that also means her current state is very unstable, and she cannot have too much emotional upheaval. Once you enter the finals, if you can

enter the Heavenly Jewel Island then, you will naturally be able to see Bing'er."

Zhou Weiqing sighed and said: "I hope that the Dan Dun Battle Team can be sensible and strategic then, and just surrender tomorrow. If I were them, I would not waste time clashing against you in just the preliminary matches."

Both Shangguan Xue'er and Shangguan Fei'er started momentarily. However, the next instant, both of them understood his meaning. Indeed, they had neglected that possibility because they knew how strong the Heavenly Bow Battle Team was, but... the Dan Dun Battle Team would not know that! Shangguan Fei'er couldn't help but exclaim: "So... your plan is to actually force out the Dan Dun Battle Team in the preliminary stages!? No wonder you would choose to admit defeat today... that is targeted at the Dan Dun Battle Team and cause them to underestimate you. With their confidence and arrogance, they would not deem you as a worthy foe at all. In that case, they would think that it is guaranteed for them to advance along with us... and because of that they might actually just surrender to us without fighting. In that case... as long as you can defeat them in the sixth round, then the Dan Dun Battle Team would not even be able to advance from the preliminary stages. That is your real plan right?"

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: "You are truly my precious Fei'er, so intelligent! I am also helping you all! To remove a strong opponent in the preliminary stages, it will be much easier in the finals."

Shangguan Xue'er was left speechless momentarily, before she said: "However, did you think that if you advanced as the second rank in the First Group, then you would likely have to face the top ranker of the Third Group in the top eight fights. That would definitely be the Bao Po Battle Team. Even if you can defeat the Dan Dun Battle Team, it will not be without injuries. Do you have the confidence to beat the Bao Po Battle Team in that state then?"

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly and said: “Why should I not have confidence? The top eight matches are all single combat fights. The Bao Po Battle Team’s greatest strength is their husband and wife team combos. In one versus one fights, their greatest strength will be diminished. Furthermore, don’t you have confidence in your own husband?”

“Whose your wife?” Both Shangguan Xue’er and Shangguan Fei’er retorted as one. In that instant, even Shangguan Xue’er’s face blushed slightly.

The other ZhongTian Battle Team members were not blind, and after Shangguan Xue’er had used the sound insulation barrier, they would glance in often. At this point, seeing Shangguan Xue’er blushing, their eyes almost bulged out of their sockets. What kind of situation was that? First Young Miss... was actually... actually showing such a feminine side?

...

At the same time, not far off from the ZhongTian Battle Team Rest House, the Dan Dun Rest House.

“Why did that Heavenly Bow Battle Team fellow enter the ZhongTian Battle Team Rest House?” The youth seated at the main seat asked with an overcast expression.

One of the other Dan Dun Battle Team members said disdainfully: “I guess that they are seizing the chance since they surrendered to express their goodwill towards the ZhongTian Empire.”

Shen Little Demon was seated a few seats down, and her brow furrowed deeply as she said: “I’m not sure why... but that person from the Heavenly Bow Battle Team gives me a strangely familiar feeling... as if I had seen him ... or her... before?”

The youth on the main seat looked at Shen Little Demon, and his eyes grew slightly gentler. “Just a mere bunch of cowardly fools

who hide themselves. When it is our turn to fight them, it will be the end of their act. There is no need to worry about them. On the other hand, our fight tomorrow is with the ZhongTian Empire... what do you all think?"

Shen Little Demon thought for a moment and said: "This time, the ZhongTian Battle Team is being led by the Shangguan Sisters, Shangguan Xue'er and Shangguan Fei'er. Their powers are both beyond mine. If we truly wish to clash headon against them and defeat them, I'm afraid we will have to reveal all of our hidden aces in order to do so. Our main aim is to enter the finals, so I recommend we do not draw too much attentions to ourselves."

The youth at the head nodded slowly. In the depths of his eyes, a cold blood-red light flashed momentarily before vanishing.

The second day of the competition continued without a hitch all the way. There were a few dark horses, but they were relatively minor, with more of the traditional stronger teams winning.

This time, Zhou Weiqing had chosen not to bet at all. In fact, there was no way for him to bet at all. For their fight against the ZhongTian Battle Team, the odds were 1 to 1000, and it was pretty much pointless even if he wanted to bet on the ZhongTian Battle Team. Of course, the thought of betting on themselves and pushing through to win the fight. However, if they did so, the ZhongTian Empire would not let him go so easily. After all, even with the ZhongTian Empire's wealth, they could not afford to pay out almost a hundred billion!

As such, Zhou Weiqing could only give up that dream.

Two days of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament had already passed, and the bettors already had a certain judgement of all the Battle Teams' overall power, and there were already favourites regarding the teams who would advance from each groups.

For the second day's fights, perhaps the most surprising result was that the Fei Li Battle Team had actually lost. Ye Paopao and his

sister had strong powers indeed, but they met a powerful team from one of the southern empires who had used strategy against them to win in a final result of 3v2. However, the group which the Fei Li Battle Team was in could be said to be relatively weakest, and they would have no problems advancing into the top eight. One could say that sometimes, luck was part of strength, equally important.

...

Third day of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament.

Early in the morning, Zhou Weiqing led his entire team out, stealthily heading to a betting station to begin his bets. Today was one of the most anticipated fights in the preliminary stages, that was the First Group's ZhongTian Battle Team against the Dan Dun Battle Team. Of course, the anticipation was mostly a view of the citizens, and Zhou Weiqing did not think any fight would happen at all.

However, he still placed a lot of importance on today's competitions. Of course, his main focus was on earning money.

Alas, when they reached the betting station, Zhou Weiqing could only stare in shock... as he looked on at a 1 to 100 odds.

In this third day of the tournament, the Heavenly Bow Battle Team would meet the Geritimo Battle Team, also one of the stronger teams in the Group. Normally speaking, even if the odds was 10 to 1, Zhou Weiqing would not be surprised, but 1 to 100 was rather exaggerated. What Zhou Weiqing could not accept was that the odds was to his disadvantage instead! Someone had actually placed a massive bet on them!

She is just making a pun/rhyme. It sounds much better in Chinese

Chapter 215 Surrender! (2)

After a moment of shock, Zhou Weiqing quickly understood. This had to be done by the ZhongTian Empire. Besides them, who else would bet so much on their team?

Looking at such terrible odds, Zhou Weiqing could only sigh speechlessly. Furthermore, with such terrifying odds, normal citizens would not dare to easily bet. Although no one would think that the Heavenly Bow Battle Team would defeat the Geritimo Battle Team, but what did those odds mean? For the odds to be pushed so high, it had to be at least several dozen million gold or more! For someone to be willing to place such a heavy bet on the Heavenly Bow Battle Team, there should be a reason! As such, most citizens would rather place their bets on 'safer' options.

"This is toying with me to death!" Zhou Weiqing said with a sorrowful look. "Aren't they afraid that I would just bet on the Geritimo Empire and lose on purpose? 1 to 100 odds!"

"You won't do that, because you are an intelligent person." A low voice rang out in Zhou Weiqing's ears.

When Zhou Weiqing turned around, he realised that unknowingly, a figure had appeared behind him, his appearance similar to them, down to bamboo hat and veil. However, though he could not see the person's features, he could identify the person through his voice.

"Senior Shangguan, is this necessary. It's just some small bets, surely that isn't necessary..." Zhou Weiqing said with a bitter smile.

Standing right beside him was the ZhongTian Empire Skill Storing Palace Master, the head judge of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, Shangguan Longyin!

Shangguan Longyin smiled faintly and said: "Towards any other

person, perhaps it might just be a small bet. However, to you, it isn't so simple right. Are you trying to cause us to go broke! Little brat, don't think that will happen. His Majesty has already given the order that no matter who you meet in the preliminary rounds, there will be a hundred million gold coin bet placed on you at the start. If you dare, you can just lose the fight, but in that case, you can forget about seeing the three Young Misses forever."

"Alright, fine... I admit defeat." Zhou Weiqing's head drooped forward as he gave up. Facing the power of a full state machinery, especially for the strongest Empire in the mainland... what chance could he have? Furthermore, he had so many connections with the Heaven's Expanse Palace.

Shangguan Longyin laughed heartily, saying: "You don't need to show me that look. You already wooed all three precious daughters of the Second Palace Master, no one will ever feel pity for you. In any case, since you all are facing the Geritimo Battle Team this time, I am guessing I will be able to see you take action right. Let me see how you have grown in the past three years."

After saying that, Shangguan Longyin strolled off casually. However, within a few steps, he had vanished from their sights.

Zhou Weiqing said helplessly: "No choice, we have no way to play against them. At least we have already earned a few dozen million gold coins already. We can only hope for the fight against the Dan Dun Battle Team, perhaps we will be able to earn a decent sum then." Although Shangguan Tianxin had ordered a hundred million gold bet on them for every fight, the Dan Dun Empire's strength and popularity were far beyond the Geritimo Empire, and they could still make some profit by betting then.

As they entered the competition grounds, Zhou Weiqing could clearly sense the excited atmosphere of the crowd, far beyond the previous two days. Indeed! The ZhongTian Battle Team against the Dan Dun Battle Team, such a huge battle, it was definitely worthy of all anticipation.

Especially with the Dan Dun Empire's domineering actions in the past few years, the ZhongTian Empire citizens had also heard of it. Everyone wanted to know how the clash between the Blood Red Hell and Heaven's Expanse Palace would end up.

Shangguan Longyin saw that the time was up, and he stood up in the VIP Stand, proclaiming: "The Heavenly Jewel Tournament, Preliminary Stage, Third Day, Officially begins. First Group, First Fight. ZhongTian Battle Team vs Dan Dun Battle Team. Both teams, please send your first fighter to the stage."

"Judge, please enter the stage."

Along with his proclamation, Shangguan Fei'er stood up from the ZhongTian Battle Team Rest House, appearing on the stage in a flash. For most people, all they saw was a blur before someone appeared on the stage.

Ordinary citizens would not know who Shangguan Fei'er was, but there would always be some rumours or news. Furthermore, she was such a top level beauty, and as soon as she appeared on the stage, tens of thousands of citizens cheered in an overwhelming wave.

Right at this moment, the Dan Dun Battle Team also reacted. Shen Little Demon leapt up, landing before Shangguan Fei'er.

The judge for this fight today was also a nine-Jeweled Upper Level Zong Stage Heavenly Jewel Master which had been specially chosen by the Heaven's Expanse Palace. After all, everything else aside, Shangguan Xue'er, Shangguan Fei'er were of extremely high status in the Heaven's Expanse Palace, and they needed to ensure no accidents would happen in the fights.

The judge looked at both girls and said solemnly: "Both sides, introduce yourselves."

Shangguan Fei'er was about to speak when Shen Little Demon spoke out first. "Dan Dun Battle Team, Shen Little Demon. Judge,

we are choosing to surrender.”

The judge started momentarily. “Are you surrendering for your fight, or your entire team?”

Without hesitation, Shen Little Demon said: “Our entire team is surrendering.”

As soon as she spoke, the entire audience erupted in an uproar, with boos rising from all around. The entire ZhongTian public square could hold more than several hundred thousand people, and most of them were from the ZhongTian Empire. [The boos](#) were so loud that perhaps the entire ZhongTian children would have the urge to go to the toilet.

When Shangguan Fei'er heard Shen Little Demon's words, she started slightly. In her heart, she couldn't help but think: As expected, that naughty fellow has guessed correctly again. Towards Zhou Weiqing, she felt another rise in respect in that regard.

Hearing all those boos cascading throughout the area, Shen Little Demon's expression grew ugly. However, she could not do anything about it, just giving Shangguan Fei'er a slight bow before descending the stage.

Shangguan Fei'er could only shrug helplessly, giving a feminine curtsy to the audience before slipping down as well. In the end, this most highly anticipated fight of the preliminary stages ended with a whimper.

Zhou Weiqing lounged casually in his seat at their Rest House, a satisfied smile on his face as he muttered to himself: “Dan Dun Battle Team, you will be ended in I, Your Father's, hands!”

What followed next was the fights from the Second, Third and Fourth Groups, all relatively exciting in their own right, though once again there were no surprises. After all, every day the first fight of each group was that of the seeded teams. Very quickly, a

round had been completed, and it was back to the First Group.

Shangguan Longyin stood up on the VIP Stand once more, saying solemnly: “First Group, Second Fight. Heavenly Bow Battle Team versus Geritimo Battle Team. Both sides, please send out your first fighter.”

Zhou Weiqing glanced at Ma Qun, who had an urgent look on his face. However, this time he shook his head, saying: “Yun Li, this time you go first. Safety first. I want you to try to achieve victory but with the priority of keeping yourself uninjured. We cannot underestimate the Geritimo Battle Team this time, as they are here burning with righteous indignation having fallen so badly earlier. Although their target is not us, they will not be easy to handle.”

Yun Li nodded in agreement before heading out of the Rest House, heading up the stage calmly. On the other side, the first member of the Geritimo Battle Team was already standing on the stage.

Yun Li’s opponent was a youth of about twenty seven or twenty eight years of age, dressed in their black uniform, a serious aura about him as he fixed his gaze upon Yun Li.

The judge said solemnly: “Both sides, introduce yourselves.”

“Heavenly Bow Empire, Yun Li.”

“Geritimo Empire, Bai Qiu.”

The judge proclaimed: “Fight, begin.”

As the proclamation sounded off, both Yun Li and Bai Qiu from the Geritimo Battle Team instantly chose to back up at once. This was the normal competition style in the Heavenly Jewel Tournament. After all, fighters would not be familiar with each other, and to just charge in blindly would perhaps allow their opponent to counterattack with ease. It was a safer method to start gaining information with probing and exploratory attacks.

As both retreated, they each released their respective Heavenly

Jewels. When they did so, it immediately caused a huge sensation.

That was because around both Yun Li and Bai Qiu were six pairs of Heavenly Jewels. That was to say, both these youths were Upper Level Zun Stage Heavenly Jewel Masters.

Bai Qiu's Physical Jewel was the agility Type, with the Wind Attribute... an Ultimate Speed type Heavenly Jewel Master!

However, Yun Li's was not to be dismissed as well. The Elemental Jewels on his left wrist was the Chrysoberyl Cat's Eye of the Spatial Attribute.

Just from the looks of things alone, both of them seemed equal, and in their hearts, the phrase 'formidable opponent' rose up.

As Yun Li already had Zhou Weiqing's warning earlier, so he did not think much about it. However, for Bai Qiu, he was truly caught by surprise. Originally, he thought he would be facing one of those 'tin cans' of the Heavenly Bow Empire, and with his speed and powerful attacks, he had absolute confidence in countering either of them. Who knew that the opponent would instead be a Spatial Attribute Heavenly Jewel Master, and one who was also at a similar six-Jeweled cultivation stage. It looked like this was the strongest member of the Heavenly Bow Empire. He had never imagined that such a tiny Empire would have a Upper Level Zun Stage Heavenly Jewel Master below the age of thirty.

Without a doubt, as Yun Li revealed himself on stage, everyone watching would have their judgement of the Heavenly Bow Empire totally overturned. At least, no one would look down on them any longer.

Yun Li made an inviting gesture with his hand, and with a flick of his right wrist, a faint silver light appeared in his grasp.

Towards an opponent of the same level as him, Bai Qiu naturally dared not be careless, unleashing his Consolidated Equipment at once.

A pair of green boots, a pair of gloves, and a pair of Wings. This was all of his six Consolidated Equipment. Although it was an entire set of six Consolidated Equipment, at least it was three sets of paired Consolidated Equipment.

In a flash, he appeared beside Yun Li, his speed so fast than Yun Li was given a surprise.

This Bai Qiu was of the Wind Attribute, and he naturally did not have a Spatial Skill like Blink. However, with that charge of his, the impression one would get was almost like the Blink Skill.

Upon the Consolidated Gloves on Bai Qiu's hands, there were sharp claws. As he appeared in front of Yun Li, those claws struck out towards his shoulders.

Bai Qiu's focus was clearly not something an ordinary Heavenly Jewel Master would go for, perfectly tailored towards his own abilities. It could be said that of his six Consolidated Equipment, both wings and boots were fully for the sake of increasing his speed, added on to his own full Agility and Wind Attributes, his speed was truly at a terrifying level. Even a Zong Stage powerhouse might not be able to compare with him in that aspect. Of course, the clawed gloves were his main offensive weapons.

It's more like hissing or xuuuu sound which people use to show their disapproval like boos, which is similar to the sound which parents use to help their infants to pee, hence the joke

Chapter 215 Surrender! (3)

Facing such a swift attack, it was clear that Yun Li would definitely be unable to dodge it through normal means. In the last critical moment, a flash of silver light, and Yun Li appeared five yards away. It was the Blink Skill.

Having missed his first attack, Bai Qiu was not discouraged at all. In another flash, his arms extended, the wings behind his back flapping abruptly. Just like that he appeared again behind Yun Li, those spread arms closing together strongly, ten wind blades bursting forth from the Consolidated Claws towards Yun Li.

Although the Blink Skill was good, one could not use it continuously, and Bai Qiu was certain that Yun Li would not be able to use the same method to dodge this new attack, enhanced with his Stored Skills.

Indeed, Yun Li was unable to dodge it. This time, his right hand waved out in front of him, and an ear splitting tearing sound rang out. A black hole in space was torn, almost one chi long. A strange sight occurred next as all ten of the wind blades were actually sucked in by the powerful suction of the black hole, and in a flash it was Yun Li's turn to strike out at his opponent.

The Skill that Yun Li had unleashed was the Minor Dimensional Slash, one of the powerful Skills of the Spatial Attribute. It was actually very similar to Zhou Weiqing's Spatial Rend Skill, but it did not last as long as the Spatial Rend and its area of effect was also smaller. As a result, its Rating was only at Eight Stars.

Bai Qiu gave a cold smirk, his body abruptly moving to the side about three chi, dodging Yun Li's attack. At the same time, his hands moved, and a dozen wind blades formed a small tornado, striking out at Yun Li.

Everyone watching could see that though Yun Li had the Spatial Attribute, in front of his opponent's absolute speed, he was being

suppressed.

In the entire Geritimo Battle Team, Bai Qiu was the third ranked powerhouse. Not only did he have six-Jeweled cultivation level, his fighting experience was also rich and plentiful.

Yun Li quickly took a step back. Just as he was about to dodge that small tornado of blades, Bai Qiu had reached his back, his strike was accompanied by the shrill sound of air sliced apart and the Wind Attribute, blocking Yun Li's path of retreat. Along with the tornado, it was a perfect pincer attack.

In the rest house, seeing Yun Li caught in such a position, Ma Qun said worriedly: "Big Bro Yun Li looks to be in a bad position."

Zhou Weiqing glanced at him and said confidently: "In terms of control of Skills, who can compare to a Consolidating Equipment Master? He creates tons of Consolidating Equipment Scrolls every day, that is training his control. Watch and see."

On the stage, as if he was trying to prove Zhou Weiqing's words, the dance of offense and defense between Yun Li and Bai Qiu suddenly changed.

Facing a pincer attack like that, Yun Li's left hand slapped out at the tornado. In his palm, a brilliant silver light glowed.

At the same time, he did not even turn his head to look at the incoming attack from behind. As the light grew brighter, his speed seemed to increase, and it was as if his body was being propelled from behind in a sudden burst of speed.

Strangely enough, when that tornado with such powerful cutting powers touched the silver light around Yun Li's hands, a soft Puuu rang out, and it dissipated into a cloud of green smoke. Yun Li's body continued moving forward unobstructed right through the green cloud.

The sudden burst of speed from Yun Li caused Bai Qiu to start momentarily. Originally, due to his success in trapping Yun Li in

his pincer attack, he had relaxed slightly, and this fresh burst of speed had been faster than his expectations. In the short surprise, he was just a little too slow.

Stopping his charge in midtrack, Yun Li abruptly spun around, his eyes glowing silver. In truth, Bai Qiu had neglected one point... Yun Li's Physical Jewel was also that of the Agility Type, though he did not have the Wind Attribute. However, one of Yun Li's Stored Skills was one called the Spatial Explosive Propulsion, able to increase his speed abruptly in an instant. As for the silver light in his palm, it was actually two compressed Skills, perfectly controlled with precise accuracy to use the Spatial Attribute to break apart the tornado's structure while causing it to be unable to attack. That was the reason why Yun Li was able to escape such a disadvantageous position.

Unknowingly, a spike appeared in Yun Li's grasp. Still in midair, he took a step forward, and Bai Qiu who had just shook off his surprise had a foreboding premonition when he saw Yun Li disappear. Blink... clearly Yun Li's Blink had come off cooldown and could be used again.

Subconsciously, Bai Qiu took a step forward, ready to charge away. Since he could not see his opponent, he had to be behind. However, in that moment, his body froze abruptly for just a short instant.

Spatial Freeze. One of the Spatial Attribute's control Skills.

As Bai Qiu had guessed, Yun Li was indeed behind him, and the spike in his hands struck out directly towards Bai Qiu's back, where his heart would be.

This Bai Qiu was no pushover either. Even in such a disadvantageous state, the Heavenly Energy within his body exploded forth, unleashing his strongest Tornado Slash Skill. His entire body forcefully spun in midair, breaking free of the Spatial Freeze. Although that sacrifice the majority of his Heavenly

Energy, at least he managed to break free just before the spike reached him. With a swipe of his right hand, his glove clashed against Yun Li's spike.

This was the first head on clash between the two, and in the resulting explosion, Bai Qiu's entire body was sent flying back by the powerful Heavenly Energy imbued in Yun Li's spike.

In terms of Heavenly Energy, Bai Qiu and Yun Li still had a certain gap. First of all, the Spatial Attribute was of a slightly higher boost to Heavenly Energy than the Wind Attribute, as it was one of the greater attributes. Even if one just compared Heavenly Energy alone, Yun Li was still ahead of Bai Qiu. Although both were at the six-Jeweled stage, Bai Qiu had just reached the stage, while Yun Li was already at the twenty seventh stage of cultivation, just one step away from his seventh Jewel. Let alone Bai Qiu having spent so much Heavenly Energy breaking free of the Spatial Freeze.

The Spatial Attribute Heavenly Energy brought a strong tearing sensation, causing Bai Qiu's speed to be restricted, and only then did Yun Li's attack fully explode forth.

The Spatial Explosive Propulsion appeared once again with a loud bang, and in a flash, Yun Li had caught up to Bai Qiu's flying body, the spike in his hands striking once more. At the tip of the spike, a silver white light consolidated.

Left with no choice, Bai Qiu could only gather the remnants of his Heavenly Energy, putting up his claws in a crossguard in a forced attempt to block it.

Another ear splitting explosion. This time, the audience only saw Yun Li's spike pierce lightly onto Bai Qiu's hands, and with the accompanying explosion, Bai Qiu's body was sent flying right out of the stage.

Having defeated his opponent, Yun Li landed on the ground gracefully, a faint smile on his mouth. An opponent who had lost

his balance, how could he possibly block the dual compressed Skills he had imbued on his SPIKE? Such a powerful and explosive attack along with his Consolidated Weapon, the destructive power could reach that of a seven-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master.

It could be said that right from the beginning of the fight, Yun Li had been hiding his true strength, showing weakness to his opponent. It was a strategy he had no choice but to use. Although his Heavenly Energy was stronger than his opponent's, he had his weak points... that was his lack of Consolidated Equipment. The only Consolidated Equipment was that single spike he used as his weapon.

The reason was simple... his nine piece Legendary Set. Indeed, although his Legendary Set was only nine pieces, and he technically had three 'extra' slots to use. However, that was only if he managed to reach a Heavenly God Stage cultivation level. Although Yun Li was a confident person, he had never dreamed he could breakthrough to such a stage. As such, he dared not give himself any other Consolidated Equipment, sacrificing his current strength until a time he could begin creating his Legendary Set.

At this point, he was already very close to reaching the Zong Stage Consolidating Equipment Master. Once he reached that stage, he could begin creating the first few pieces of his Legendary Set. Even so, at this current point, he would be using a single Spike Consolidated Equipment against his opponent's full six Consolidated Equipment. In such a circumstance, though Yun Li was still confident that they were equal in strength, he had no way of defeating his opponent easily. As a result, from the beginning he had planned to show weakness, allowing his opponent to underestimate him, and the burst forth with all his might in a critical moment. With the explosive strength of his Spatial Skills, he could force victory in a short period of time. In the end, his plan had indeed succeeded.

"Heavenly Bow Battle Team victory. Both sides, please send up

your second fighter.”

Yun Li returned victoriously, the smug look on his face could not be hidden. Zhou Weiqing sent Ma Qun on the second fight, before looking at Yun Li and giving a sigh, saying: “You should just behave yourself and stick to being an honest Consolidating Equipment Master.”

The smug smile on Yun Li’s face froze. “Your Father, I, won this round!”

Zhou Weiqing gave a pained expression. “You can only fool that idiot. This fighting strength of yours, you haven’t improved much in these few years!”

“Hmph” Yun Li glared at Zhou Weiqing before ignoring, sitting down at the side before saying passively: “It’s easy to make sarcastic remarks. These few years... have your Consolidating Equipment Scroll creation skills improved even a tiny bit?”

Tian’er, Crow and Xixi watched the two squabble at the side, giggling away to each other.

Ma Qun had not expected that he would be dispatched to be the second fighter, and he could not contain his excitement, leaping right onto the stage. The opponent facing him there was a five-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master.

After all, in the previous Heavenly Jewel Tournament, even the seeded teams backed by the Great Saint Lands weren’t all six-Jeweled and above. In the Geritimo Battle Team, Bai Qiu’s strength was already considered rather high. However, the first loss did not give them much cause for fear. The second fighter they dispatched was a young lady of about twenty four or twenty five. She was not exceptionally beautiful, with average features, but she had a rare steady and stable feeling about her.

“Heavenly Bow Empire. Ma Qun.”

“Geritimo Empire. Yuling.”

Ma Qun was still wearing his Peerless Heavy Cavalry armour, and coupled with his height and stature and those massive spiked maces, facing such a small-sized lady, the visual impact was extremely stunning. Instantly, the young lady called Yuling gained the compassion of the majority of the audience, as all of them began to support her!

Chapter 216 Spiritual Body of Earth! (1)

As the judge proclaimed the start of the fight, Yuling lifted her hands. Facing Ma Qun, this young lady did not seem afraid at all, her expression calm and steady as she charged towards him. At the same time, she released her Heavenly Jewels.

Strength Attribute Physical Jewels... Earth Attribute Elemental Jewels... her Heavenly Jewels were actually exactly the same as Ma Qun!

Seeing his opponent charge at him, Ma Qun hesitated instead. After all, his opponent was a young lady, and he was just slightly unwilling to swing that massive spiked mace at her so easily.

In a flash, Yuling had arrived in front of Ma Qun. her speed was not too fast, but her steps stable all the way. Just as Ma Qun had been hesitating, she had already reached him, both hands striking out in a shoving motion at Ma Qun's chest.

Ma Qun had his own thoughts. In his eyes, with this young lady's figure and stature, her strength should not be anywhere equal to his own. Even if he allowed her to attack him at will, he thought she should not be able to break through his defense. On the other hand, if he smashed down at her with his large spiked mace, that wouldn't be too good right? As such, he didn't even attempt to dodge, puffing up his chest in readiness to accept the blow, allowing these seemingly gentle palms to press up against his chest.

Alas, a surprising sight occurred next. The instant that Yuling had pressed her hands to Ma Qun's chest, her entire body suddenly turned an earthen yellow, the thick yellow light spreading across the entire stage, causing all the other attribute energies to be expelled, leaving only Earth Attribute energies.

Soon after, Yuling's body disappeared, and in the position where she had been standing, a huge cone appeared, smashing hard onto

Ma Qun's chest.

Ma Qun's own strength was definitely on the level, and with the weight of his armour, one could just imagine how strong and tough he was. Currently, he was even in the state of preparedness to receive the blow. However, even so, when the massive yellow earthen spike smashed savagely into his chest, he was sent flying all the way, landing out of the stage.

In a single step, Crow stepped forward, her hands lifting to receive the falling Ma Qun. She had to spin three times to fully relieve the immense power and momentum.

The entire area fell silent. A few seconds later, cheers erupted like the waves crashing upon a shore.

Who could have imagined that with Ma Qun's size and power, he would be smashed off the stage in moments after facing such a small looking lady.

The earthen yellow light on the stage slowly dissipated, revealing Yuling. The young lady was expressionless, her stable aura not changing the slightest despite her victory, only nodding towards Ma Qun. When the judge proclaimed her victory, she turned and walked off.

In the Heavenly Bow Battle Team Rest House, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er stood up, both their faces filled with shock.

"That... that is?" Tian'er exclaimed in a low tone.

Zhou Weiqing nodded, saying: "Spirit of Earth! That is the Spirit of Earth! I never dreamed that such a legendary spiritual body would actually exist."

Spiritual Body. Even amongst Heavenly Jewel Masters, they were considered a unique presence. As soon as they were born, their bodies were without any impurities, and would remain so forever, filled with the single Attribute Heavenly Energy through their existence.

Those who had spiritual bodies were not able to use Consolidated Equipment. However, in terms of Stored Skills, they had unparalleled possibilities. That was to say, they could Store any Skill that belonged to their particular Attribute. Furthermore, when they used those Skills, it would be far more powerful than any ordinary Heavenly Jewel Master using the same skills.

Earlier, that young lady named Yuling had used pure Earth Attribute Heavenly Energy. It was not her own strength that had sent Ma Qun flying, but borrowing the strength of the earth. No matter how strong Ma Qun was, how could he compare with the power of the earth itself? As for how exactly she was able to borrow such strength, even Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er who had the Saint Energy was not clear. Without question, this young lady named Yuling's cultivation level was not comparable to Bai Qiu, but her fighting capabilities were superior to Bai Qiu. Even Zhou Weiqing did not dare guarantee what would happen if he met her.

The shock was not just amongst them. The Earth Attribute Spiritual Body, or Spirit of Earth, was so powerful that even the various seeded teams were stunned. The various team members of the Dan Dun Battle Team also revealed serious, gloomy looks on their faces. The Geritimo Battle Team was a lot stronger than they had expected. If that Bai Qiu had not lost the first round, it was likely that Yuling would not reveal herself in this second round.

On the stage, the judge said: "Heavenly Bow Battle Team versus Geritimo Battle Team. Third match. Please send your fighters on the stage."

The Heavenly Bow Battle Team focused their gazes on Zhou Weiqing. Who were they sending next?

Tian'er looked at Zhou Weiqing and said: "Let me fight."

Zhou Weiqing shook his head, saying: "How could I let you go? If I have not guessed wrongly, that lady who has the Spirit of Earth Body will fight again, perhaps together with that Bai Qiu."

“Boss, let me. I was too careless just now.” Ma Qun was not injured at all, as he stood with a shamed look at the side. Indeed, he had not fully flourished all his strength, his Consolidated Equipment Shield, or his Stored Skills were not used at all.

Zhou Weiqing shook his head, glancing at him coldly, saying: “If you were on the battlefield, you would have died once already. Today, you will no longer be allowed to fight, this is a good time for you to reflect on it. Don’t you understand the principle of a lion catching a rabbit? If your Drillmaster Fei’er was here, what kind of punishment would she give you? Sit down.”

Ma Qun could only scratch his head embarrassedly and take a seat at the side. Zhou Weiqing’s gaze turned to Crow and Xixi, saying: “[You two sisters](#), go ahead.”

Crow nodded, beginning to wear all of her full armour. With the full armour covering her features, no one should recognize her.

Yun Li said with a slight discontent. “Why don’t you let me fight? I haven’t used much Heavenly Energy in the previous fight.”

Zhou Weiqing shook his head and said: “No, your fighting capabilities are no match for Crow.”

Yun Li’s eyes widened. “What did you say? Zhou Weiqing, if this tiger doesn’t show his power, are you treating me as a sick cat?”

Zhou Weiqing said: “Look for yourself... once this fight is over, if you still think you are stronger than Crow, I won’t mind letting you two have a duel after that.”

Currently, Crow and Xixi had both worn their armour, taking large strides up the stage.

Perhaps to give the judge face, the two sisters did not jump up directly onto the stage, stepping up the stairs.

In terms of height, Crow and Xixi were about the same, and with their armour, no one could really tell the difference. As for their weapons, the axes were very similar, with Xixi’s ones slightly

larger. Of course, the axes in Crow's hands were the Legendary Axes of the Gold Crow Tribe.

As Zhou Weiqing had expected, the pair facing them was Bai Qiu and the one who had just beat Ma Qun so easily, Yuling.

Facing the heavily armoured pair, Bai Qiu's face showed a clear disdain, saying mockingly: "Did you all not learn from the previous lesson? Or does your Heavenly Bow Empire not have anyone else? Strength does not mean everything."

Xixi did not utter a sound of protest, but Crow just said passively: "Strength might not mean everything... However, it is more than enough to deal with you two."

As she said that, both Crow and Xixi did something strange, springing away from each other, pulling the gap between them to about a seven to eight yards distance.

There was a reason why Zhou Weiqing had sent the two sisters to this fight. In terms of fighting capabilities, amongst all six of the Heavenly Bow Battle Team, Crow's fighting strength was only below Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er. Furthermore, she had said that Xixi's combat powers were not that much lower than her own. Lastly, they were both from the Gold Crow Tribe, and had grown up together. Fighting together, their tacit understanding and cooperation would be superior.

Yuling's gaze focused on Crow. She did not speak, just giving both Crow and Xixi an inviting gesture.

Cheers erupted once more, as the ZhongTian citizens' emotions were roused to the max.

Originally, they had been here to watch the ZhongTian Battle Team against the Dan Dun Battle Team, but who knew that the Dan Dun Battle Team would surrender so easily, and many were extremely discontent or resentful. On the other hand, this fight between the Heavenly Bow Battle Team and Geritimo Battle Team

was far more exciting and interesting than they had expected. Especially watching Yuling send Ma Qun flying off was such a shocking sight that caused their blood to boil. As the saying goes, laymen would just be watching for the bustle and excitement. In their eyes, this was a scene of the weaker side defeating the stronger side.

At this moment, the Heavenly Bow Battle Team had sent another two ‘tin cans’, and that Yuling appeared on the opposing side again. Instantly, the citizens were filled buzz once more.

“Both sides, introduce yourselves.”

“Heavenly Bow Battle Team, Xixi, Crow.” When Crow spoke, she purposely lowered her voice, keeping it muffled. At least, most of the other Battle Team members in the Rest House were unable to hear clearly.

“Geritimo Battle Team, Yuling, Bai Qiu.”

As the announcement came for the fight to start, it entailed a massive battle... the spirit of earth and an Upper level Zun Stage powerhouse against the famous Fire and Ice pair of the Gold Crow Tribe’s younger generation. This would definitely be a intense and violent fight.

Crow and Xixi burst into action at the same time, and their movement was exactly the same. Their legs stomped on the ground and in a burst of power, they charged towards their opponents. Xixi targeted Bai Qiu, while Crow targeted Yuling. The two sisters’ movements and their stature was such a huge contrast.

Bai Qiu was just as vexed and gloomy as Ma Qun. When he had lost to Yun Li in the first fight, he realised he had fell for a trick. He still had many powerful Skills he had not managed to use. Seeing Xixi charging towards him, he did not hold back at all, summoning all six Consolidated Equipment instantly. In a flash, he received her incoming charge. This time, he charged his speed to the max, filling the air with several illusory figures.

However, right at that moment, Crow and Xixi suddenly went through a change.

Previously, when they were charging, Crow was clearly faster than Xixi by a little, and she was thus in front. The battle between her and Yuling should have exploded first. However, in that instant, the entire battleground changed.

They are cousins, but they address each other as sisters

Chapter 216 Spiritual Body of Earth! (2)

Crow had been charging in a straight line, and all of a sudden her left foot struck down at the floor, her massive body executing a flip in midair. Xixi completed the same action simultaneously, and the two sisters actually slammed towards each other abruptly.

At the same time, right where Crow had been about to pass, a giant earth spike slammed out from the ground.

Crow and Xixi slammed together at an unbelievable speed. Strangely, there was no clashing sound of metals.

Crow's Legendary Axes somehow managed to hook onto Xixi's axes, and both girls exerted their full power at once, actually flinging each other out.

Indeed. Flinging each other out. Crow was sent flying into the air in a parabolic arc, while Xixi was sent flying in a straight line. As for how their strength had been used in such a manner, no onlooker could tell just from the surface. In such a strange transference of movement, both girls had exchanged opponents, turning into Crow against Bai Qiu and Xixi against Yuling.

Xixi flew directly towards Yuling, but Yuling did not take it lying down. Taking a step forward, the thick yellow light flooded the area, and another large earth spike struck out at Xixi.

On the other side, Crow rose further into the air, her legendary axes spreading out at her sides. The strength of both sisters combined was just too huge, and Crow actually rose more than twenty metres into the air, causing Bai Qiu to stare slack jawed at her.

Right at that instant, a fiery heat burst forth from the skies. From the soaring Crow, a piercing red light shot out, even causing her heavy armour to turn a crimson red. Especially eye catching was her pair of Legendary Axes, directly turning a rich golden red.

The red light from her body formed a giant pillar of light in the air, directly shrouding Bai Qiu's body.

Bai Qiu's speed was not bad indeed, but no matter how fast he was, how could he be faster than light itself?

In that moment, Bai Qiu felt as if his entire surrounding was fiery hot. However, he did not sense any offensive attacks on him, instead a powerful control. He was shocked to find that he was actually unable to escape out of the confines of the red light.

A Fire Attribute Control Skill?! Bai Qiu thought to himself, stunned.

It had to be known that amongst all the elemental Attributes, the Fire Attribute was possibly the weakest in terms of Control Skills. However, what Crow was using now... wasn't it exactly a Fire Attribute Control Skill? Furthermore, such a Control Skill was so strong that even Bai Qiu with his six-Jeweled cultivation level wasn't able to break free.

Almost as if on cue, Crow, who had been in midair glowing like the sun, began to swoop down like a falling meteor, targeted straight at Bai Qiu.

Even Zhou Weiqing did not know Crow actually had such a powerful Skill. His confidence in Crow stemmed from his past experiences with her. When Crow was just a mere three-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master in the past, she had dared to fight to the bitter end, defeating opponents at the five-Jeweled stage... let alone now! Furthermore, her current fighting experience was already far beyond what it had been at that time. With all the time spent in the Peerless Regiment, the countless tough training and also battles, it could be said that she had improved in every single aspect.

Bai Qiu couldn't help but stare dumbfounded. At this point, the only thing he could think of was if he was struck by that massive meteoric fireball that was Crow, he would die for sure. He

definitely could not block it.

The terrifying pressure and aura that Crow gave forth was far beyond Bai Qiu's imagination. Furthermore, he could vaguely sense that the power that she was releasing was not just as simple as Heavenly Energy alone.

"If you do not wish to die, jump down now." Xixi's soft and gentle voice rang out. At the same time, a massive explosion rang out as Xixi's axes smashed directly into Yuling's earthen yellow spike.

A spiritual body of Earth truly lived up to its name indeed. With the aid of the earth itself, her strength had reached a terrifying stage. Even for Xixi with all her strength, and in full preparation, exploding out with all her might, she was still sent flying back by the backlash of the blow.

By this time, Yuling had also realised that Bai Qiu was in a bad state, but Crow's descending meteor-like body was just too quick. Facing Xixi's full strength had not been too easy for her, even if she had gained the advantage, and she no longer had the chance to rescue him.

Anyone would be afraid of death, let alone a Heavenly Jewel Master who had a bright future ahead of him. Facing an attack that he obviously wouldn't be able to block, Bai Qiu could only sigh inwardly. He burst forth with all of the Heavenly Energy he had, his entire body spinning urgently. With his own body as the central focal point, his Heavenly Energy burst forth without holding back at all, a massive amount of green Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy forming a dragon-like figure charging into the skies towards the fireball that Crow had become. After firing this strongest attack of his own with all his might, he swiftly jumped off the stage. Even if he had to save himself, he still wanted to use up as much of his opponent's Heavenly Energy as he could, to aid Yuling as much as possible.

Just as Bai Qiu jumped off the stage, the giant fireball and the wind dragon smashed into each other in a massive explosive. However, at the same time, a single axe flew out of the fireball stealthily. Its target was not the other member of the Geritimo Team, Yuling, instead it flew towards Xixi who had been sent flying.

Are they infighting or something? Yuling had also been forced to stagger a step back from the backlash of Xixi's strength, and as she looked at the flying axe, she couldn't help but think to herself, puzzled.

Infighting? Naturally, Crow and Xixi would never do such a thing. Xixi lifted up a hand, the axe in her hand miraculously hooking onto the incoming Gold Crow Legendary Axe. Abruptly, she swept it outwards in a powerful fling. In that instant, the falling massive fireball which had just broken past the wind-dragon was actually changed directions, sent flying towards Yuling. Only then did everyone realise that there was a chain attached to the flying Gold Crow Legendary Axe.

Due to Yuling's spiritual body of Earth, when this fight started, everyone had not looked well upon the pair of Crow and Xixi. In truth, everyone thought that this Geritimo duo would win easily. However, as soon as the fight started, those who had estimated the Heavenly Bow Battle Team realised that they were severely wrong.

From the start of the fight, Crow and Xixi had displayed amazing teamwork and tacit understanding, a perfect mix along with their strength. As a Upper Level Zun Stage powerhouse, Bai Qiu had actually been forced to jump off the stage by them so quickly, and more so... Crow's attack had not even been 'wasted' by that.

When Crow was sent flying towards Yuling, she abruptly tugged onto the chain of the Gold Crow Legendary Axe with all her might. As a result, Xixi was also sent smashing towards Yuling suddenly at high speeds.

In that moment, Xixi's entire body began to glow with a brilliant blue light, a thick Water Attribute energy reverberation swiftly transforming into ice. Her massive body actually began spinning in mid flight, seeming to huddle into a ball which began to roll. Pulled by the axe and chain, her entire body slowly formed into a massive ice ball full of destructive power rolling at Yuling.

Yuling's expression turned grave, her legs retreating slightly as she gave a soft shout. Stomping her right foot on the ground, instantly the entire stage turned a thick yellow colour, the Earth Attribute Energy rising fully. Spinning around, her body began to draw in the yellow light, and instead of continuing her retreat, she began to advance towards Crow.

Another massive explosion, and sparks of fire flew about. Crow's body finally reappeared, and she had to stagger back seven, eight steps before she finally regained her balance.

Covered by the large amounts of Earth Attribute Heavenly Energy, Yuling had transformed into a stone attribute giant. However, she did not have a chance to chase Crow in a follow up attack, as Xixi's attack had also reached. An Ice Ball following a Fire Ball, this was truly a dance of Fire and Ice.

Both fists slammed upwards, and yet another explosion rang forth. Such a tremendous strength, it actually shook the entire stage, causing dirt and earth to fly out in all directions, as if it had been smashed deeper into the earth.

Xixi's body was also sent flying just like Crow, while the yellow stone giant that Yuling had transformed into had her legs buried deep into the floor.

The Geritimo Battle Team members who knew Yuling best couldn't help but draw in a cold breath. They were extremely clear how powerful Yuling was when she used the power of the Spiritual Body of Earth to draw in the strength of the Earth, the terrifying heights of strength she could reach. Even if she had to clash

directly with a nine-Jeweled Upper Level Zong Stage powerhouse, in terms of pure physical strength alone she was comparable! Yet, in just two direct clashes with her opponents, her legs had been buried into the earth. One could imagine the sheer strength these two ladies dressed in full heavy armour held.

Xixi's stumbling body was caught by Crow. Both sisters were equally shocked by Yuling's strength. Spiritual Body of Earth... one truly could not use normal logic to understand it.

The Earth Attribute Giant that Yuling had transformed into stood unmoving, almost five metres tall.

"Your strengths are truly terrifying indeed. If not for the aid of the earth, even if there were ten of me, I could not possibly compare in terms of strength with just one of you. However, as long as my feet are on the ground, the earth will aid me. As such, even if I am the only one left, you will still be unable to obtain victory."

Yuling's voice traveled out to them. In just the short clash earlier, both sides had expended a considerable amount of Heavenly Energy, and currently they needed a short time to catch their breaths.

Crow smiled faintly and said: "Your Spiritual Body of Earth is truly strong indeed. Perhaps, if you are able to unleash its full power and capabilities, neither of us will be your match. Alas, you are too stubborn in matching physical strength with us, insisting on clashing head on. Perhaps you are just too confident in yourself. You are right, the Earth Attribute is very strong, having the strongest defense. However, how could a single Attribute, no matter how much to the extreme you bring it, compare with two Attributes at once? Especially... when these two Attributes are perfect reverse polarities? Try for yourself, are you still able to move?"

Yuling started momentarily. In the next instant, a thick Earth

Attribute Heavenly Energy rose up, the yellow light bursting forth once more.

Any discerning audience could tell that the stone giant Yuling had warped into was starting to show cracks on its surface.

“Trying to break free now... it is too late.” Crow smiled faintly. Lifting her axes, both girls launched their attacks simultaneously. Four giant broad axes flew out, smashing savagely into the stone giant, sending it flying out of the stage.

PENG The stone giant shattered in midair, revealing Yuling’s original body. As she flew back, she vomited out a mouth of fresh blood before she was caught by one of the other Geritimo Battle Team members.

In the Heavenly Bow Battle Team rest house, Zhou Weiqing smiled as he said: “Extreme burning heat to dry all moisture, before applying extreme cold to turn the earth brittle. A dance of Fire and Ice indeed! They truly live up to their name... That Yuling did not lose shamefully. Alas, she did not have proper teamwork and tacit understanding with her teammate, otherwise it would have been more troublesome.”

Chapter 216 Spiritual Body of Earth! (3)

In each of the battle team's rest houses, including the seeded teams, more than a hundred fiery gazes landed on Crow and Xixi. Their strength had surpassed all of their expectations... especially since Crow was the fourth person that the Heavenly Bow Battle Team revealed, and they even had the six-Jeweled Yun Li as well. In this moment, no one dared to underestimate the Heavenly Bow Battle Team anymore. Clearly, it was not an ordinary team, not one that could be underestimated.

The most dazzling was naturally Crow. The Skills that she had shown, warping to a sun-like presence, the Control Skill, her sheer strength... even the ZhongTian Empire Skill Storing Palace Master Shangguan Longyin could not recognize those Skills. Only Zhou Weiqing could vaguely guess that those Skills might have some connection to the Gold Crow Legendary Axes. As her strength grew, it seemed like the legendary weapon of the Gold Crow Tribe was able to burst forth with even greater strength.

“Third match. Heavenly Bow Battle Team victory.” With some difficulty, the judge finally proclaimed the results of the third match. With the corresponding metallic screeches, Crow and Xixi took great strides down the stage, returning to the rest house.

Yun Li sat to the side, not speaking any longer, swallowing hard as he looked on. Thinking back to Zhou Weiqing's words, he could no longer retort at all. The power that Crow had shown left his heart full of shock. Examining himself, he knew that he would also be unable to take those Skills head on.

The entire ZhongTian Central Square was now rather noisy, a hubbub of voices as everyone was still eagerly discussing the previous fight, chatting about the surprise of the Heavenly Bow Battle Team.

Not far from the Heavenly Bow Battle Team, the members of the

Kalise Battle Team had extremely ugly expressions, even slightly panicked. That was because in the next day's fight, they would be facing off against the Heavenly Bow Battle Team. Looking at the terrifying weapons and armour of Ma Qun, Crow and Xixi, how could they not feel a chill down their spines? The Kalise Empire and Heavenly Bow Empire had long since reached a state of mortal enemies who would kill each other without question.

Zhou Weiqing gave the returning Crow and Xixi a big thumbs up, as he slowly stood up. His gaze did not focus on the stage, instead looking at the panicking Kalise Battle Team, a cold smirk crossed his lips. Next, he turned to look at the Bai Da Battle Team in their rest house, and the cold killing intent in his eyes grew even stronger.

It was only when the judge on the stage announced for the members for the fourth match to ascend the stage did Zhou Weiqing withdraw his gaze. In a single leap, he landed upon the stage.

Out of the six members of the Heavenly Bow Battle Team, four had already fought their battles. Only Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er remained. Naturally, he was not willing to let Tian'er fight, and thus he could only fight in this fourth match.

Zhou Weiqing's appearance also brought some surprised voices. The reason was simple this time – he was still wearing his bamboo hat and veil as he ascended the stage. Previously, due to their armour, Ma Qun, Crow and Xixi did not wear their bamboo hats, and Yun Li also did not wear his hat. However, Zhou Weiqing did not remove his; he did not wish to be recognized too easily.

The Geritimo Battle Team member who would fight in this fourth match also ascended the stage at the same time as Zhou Weiqing.

It was a tall, well built youth with short spiky hair, having a grave, stable bearing. The first impression Zhou Weiqing had upon

seeing him was like the first time he saw Lin TianAo so many years ago. Stable, stable, profound... with a greater dignity and majesty than Lin TianAo at that time. Indeed, a strange majesty that was definitely not normal at all.

“Both sides, introduce yourselves.”

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly and said: “Zhou Little Fatty.”

The youth from the Geritimo Battle Team said solemnly: “Yu Yun. Are you not planning to remove that hat of yours?”

Zhou Weiqing shook his head, saying: “No need, I am too ugly, and I’m too shy to show my face to scare others.”

Yu Yun’s brow furrowed slightly, but his eyes were just as calm and steady as before. “The Heavenly Bow Battle Team is far stronger than I have expected. Although we have never thought of you as enemies, but we will not allow you to stall our advance. We cannot afford to lose here.”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “Naturally I know who your enemies are, but my target is the final championship... so, I also cannot afford to lose.”

Yu Yun started momentarily, at last a hint of surprise breaking the calm in his eyes. If anyone else heard Zhou Weiqing’s words, they would only think of him as arrogant and foolish. For example, the judge who was standing by the side. However, Yu Yun had the strange feeling that this youth in front of him was not just speaking nonsense.

“Very well, let us use our own strength to speak then.” Yu Yun said solemnly.

The judge glanced at Zhou Weiqing with a hint of disdain before proclaiming the start of the fight.

Unlike all the other previous fights, when the judge moved back, both Zhou Weiqing and Yu Yun did not choose to attack at once. Instead, they both stood there unmoving, a vastly different sight

from the previous sights where they would spring into action to gain first advantage.

However, any discerning viewer could tell that the fight between them had already begun.

On the stage, the thick reverberation of Earth Attribute Heavenly Energies rose instantly. As compared to Yuling's previous earthen yellow, the audience could clearly see that the current stage had turned a deep yellow.

Spiritual Body of Earth! Without question, this Yu Yun in front of Zhou Weiqing was the same as Yuling, also having the Spiritual Body of Earth! Furthermore, his cultivation level was even higher than Yuling... to the point where there was a qualitative change!

Seven sets of Heavenly Jewels appeared around Yu Yun's wrists, an exact match to Yuling. However, having reached the Zong Stage, his aura and presence were far stronger than Yuling's.

Seeing Yu Yun's Low Level Zong Stage cultivation level, even the youth who was the leader in the Dan Dun Battle Team rest house had his brow furrowed deeply. In the eyes of most competitors, a seven-Jeweled cultivation level was already an amazing feat, but it was nothing much to them. The greatest surprise to them was that seven-Jeweled cultivation level was accompanied with the Spiritual Body of Earth!

Thick Earth Attribute Heavenly Energy began to force all the other Attributes out of the stage area. Although Yu Yun did not attack, as Zhou Weiqing stood there he could clearly sense the Earth Attribute Heavenly Energy begin to pressure upon him crazily. He knew that as long as he made any move, then the Earth Energies with Yu Yun as the central focus point would explode forth instantly.

"You are no match for me, and I do not wish to hurt you. After all, in a certain perspective, my Heavenly Bow Empire and your Geritimo Empire are on the same battle-lines, sharing the same

fates.” Even being surrounded by such a thick Earth Attribute Heavenly Energy, Zhou Weiqing still spoke calmly and in a relaxed tone.

Just because Zhou Weiqing did not attack, Yu Yun did not relax. On the contrary, this youth with the bamboo hat gave him an unbelievably deep and profound feeling, as if he was facing a vast chasm that could swallow everything. This was also the reason why he did not activate his attack at first reason. He had been confident that his cultivation level, his power, was at the top echelons of this Heavenly Jewel Tournament, yet he was still unable to penetrate the opaqueness of this youth in front of him.

“If you only know how to talk glibly, I will not be courteous.” Yu Yun said coldly.

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “Alright then, it is true that I have to show some things before I can be taken seriously... otherwise I will not have any chance in convincing you, right?” As he said that, Zhou Weiqing’s right foot suddenly tapped lightly on the ground.

His actions instantly struck a response in Yu Yun, and a thick, deep yellow light sprang forth from the entire stage. There was no actual attack, but this purest of elemental lashes was definitely powerful, and it had myriads of changes and possibilities. No matter what Zhou Weiqing did, Yu Yun was confident he could react in timely fashion.

Alas, soon Yu Yun realised he was very wrong.

As Zhou Weiqing’s right foot landed on the ground, a soft thud rang out, and the deep yellow Earth Energies that had been gushing out from below his foot was actually forced out of the area. Although it was still gushing out from the earth, it could only do so around Zhou Weiqing’s body, as if forming a yellow pillar of light around him, but not actually reaching him or hurting him.

As the column of deep yellow light appeared, a strange grey glow

erupted from Zhou Weiqing's body. It was in that instant that shock appeared on Yu Yun's face.

Originally, it was in the depths of his soul that he had sensed such a thing, but it had become truth. Zhou Weiqing's body seemed to actually turn into a massive chasm, and the Earth energies that he had activated using his Spiritual Body of Earth was swarming into Zhou Weiqing's body crazily, as if being thrown into a bottomless pit, vanishing as they did so.

Besides the single stomp of his foot, Zhou Weiqing did not make any other move. However, all that was left in Yu Yun's eyes was pure unadulterated shock.

He had never met such a circumstance, even against opponents far stronger than he was he would at least still have some confidence in fighting to the end. However, in meeting such a strange situation, he couldn't find the confidence within himself to continue holding out anymore.

“What thick and powerful earth energies, truly lives up to the name of Spiritual Body of Earth.” Right at that moment, Zhou Weiqing was still able to speak in such a relaxed tone.

Yu Yun's forehead was already beading with sweat. Although he was able to use his Spiritual Body of Earth to activate the earthen energies, it still took his own Heavenly Energy to do so. Furthermore, as the large amount of Earth energies was being Devoured non-stop by Zhou Weiqing, his own Heavenly Energy was also being drained constantly. Facing Zhou Weiqing,

Zhou Weiqing might seemed relaxed and having it easy, but in truth, this battle was one that he had racked his brains and painstakingly arranged so. He did not wish to reveal his identity too early. Facing a seven-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master with the Spiritual Body of Earth, if it were an ordinary fight, even for him it would be extremely tough, even if he was confident of winning in the end. However, in doing so, it would definitely reveal his own

identity. After all, Shen Little Demon was very familiar with some of his powers.

As a result, Zhou Weiqing had used a single drop of Saint Energy, and this time it was infused into his Demonic Attribute Devour Skill.

Behind his bamboo hat and veil, Zhou Weiqing's face was smiling. The only thing in his mind now was... I'm earning big now!

The Spiritual Body of Earth was indeed domineering, and the earth energies it was able to wield was unbelievably pure. As Zhou Weiqing Devoured the energies, in just a short period of time, he had already formed two drops of Saint Energy! Not only had he recouped his losses, he had even earned a drop! As such, he was not in any rush at all.

Yu Yun gritted his teeth with all his strength, taking a swift step towards Zhou Weiqing in a short charge. The thick Earth Attribute Heavenly Energy around him causing his entire body to bulge up, turning into a massive stone giant as he sent a fist careening towards Zhou Weiqing's chest.

Chapter 217 Devouring Earth Spirit! (1)

Zhou Weiqing lifted his left hand, his palm spread out to receive the blow. Yu Yun's seemingly vicious and ferocious fist was stopped directly by the palm, not able to move any further from there.

Clashing in terms of strength? With Zhou Weiqing's current physical strength, even Ma Qun could not compare with him! He had inherited the terrifying bloodline of both the Dragon and Tigers. In terms of pure strength, he had already reached a degree that was unheard of. If he used his Legendary Set, his strength alone would allow him to hurt an unprepared Heavenly King Stage powerhouse.

When the audience saw the sight before them, they couldn't help but stare with jaws agape.

Although they might not be able to tell how powerful Yu Yun was from looking, but the seven sets of Heavenly Jewels were clearly presented there. Having turned into the stone giant form, extrapolating from Yuling's performance earlier, they could easily imagine just how powerful that punch was. Yet... it was still stopped by Zhou Weiqing's palm.

A terrifying suction force spread out throughout Yu Yun's entire body, and everyone could clearly see throughout the stage, the deep yellow light of earthen energies was swarming crazily into Yu Yun, and Zhou Weiqing seemed like a little boat in the sea of yellow as their 'waves' crashed into him. However, no matter how they tried, he stood there unmoving.

In a short time, the yellow light had brightened to the max, and began to weaken slowly.

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily, saying: "As I said, you are not a match for me currently. However, do not worry... Just like they are for you, the Dan Dun Empire is also my enemy. What you had

planned to do, I will complete for you on your behalf.”

Yu Yun’s heart was totally overturned right now, welling with shock. Zhou Weiqing’s mystery and depth. Even in the process of using his strongest attacks, he was still unable to investigate this youth fully. With his stable character, his heart was actually feeling a faint sense of fear. Indeed, the unknown was always the most terrifying.

All of a sudden, Zhou Weiqing shook his arm, and Yu Yun’s entire body stumbled back a dozen steps before he finally regained his balance, the yellow light around his body dissipating as he returned to his original form.

“I have lost.” Yu Yun’s expression was extremely ugly as he gritted his teeth. This time, both he and his sister had joined the Heavenly Jewel Tournament together to look for the Dan Dun Battle Team’s trouble. However, he had never expected that he would actually lose to such an opponent.

Although he did not know what Skill Zhou Weiqing had used, he was certain that it was one that happened to counter their Spiritual Body of Earth perfectly, and their ability to greatly bring the earthen energies into play. That was the reason why he had lost so miserably. Luckily, at least this team was not allied to the Dan Dun Empire.

Yu Yun did not continue speaking, just giving Zhou Weiqing a long, meaningful look before jumping off the stage.

When Yu Yun jumped off the stage, the entire audience erupted.

It could be said that this fight between Zhou Weiqing and Yu Yun was the simplest and most direct fight, at least visibly. In the entire process, it was just Yu Yun turning into stone giant form and giving a punch, which was blocked by Zhou Weiqing. After being in that stalemate for a few moments, Zhou Weiqing knocked him back... and the fight... ended?

Was this an arranged match? Was there some cheating going on? Similar thoughts ran throughout the minds of all the audience. Without question, this round of the Heavenly Bow Battle Team defeating the Geritimo Battle Team was truly unexpected.

However, was this really arranged? Any Heavenly Jewel Master could tell that though this fight seemed simple on the surface, it was extremely complicated. Indeed, no one could really tell for sure what had happened, even Shangguan Longyin on the VIP Stand was unable to do so. However, any discerning person would have noticed one thing. That is, Yu Yun was currently the highest cultivation out of all the contestants that had appeared on stage since the entire Heavenly Jewel Tournament had started, the only Zong Stage powerhouse. Yet, even though he was at the seven-Jeweled stage, he had still lost to this Heavenly Bow Battle Team fellow who was wearing a bamboo hat. Due to Zhou Weiqing's attire and long sleeves, no one could tell how many Heavenly Jewels he had, and his cultivation level was still unknown. For a time, this fight had become the center of attention. This was especially so for those citizens who had bet on the Geritimo Battle Team, they were beginning to shout about cheating and arranged matches.

The judge on the stage was just as confused, standing there looking at Zhou Weiqing, who was standing there with his arms crossed calmly. His eyes were filled with confusion, not knowing what to do, and he subconsciously turned his gaze towards the VIP stand. The shouts and yells from the audience was resounding, and the Heavenly Jewel Tournament was always known for being absolutely fair. He did not know how to proceed from here.

"Silence." An old but hearty voice rang out at that moment.

Shangguan Longyin strode forth from the VIP stand, hovering in midair. With just his voice alone, he covered all of the angry shouts. Instantly, the entire ZhongTian Central Square fell quiet.

All of the participating Battle Teams, especially those from the

Great Saint Lands, and even including Zhou Weiqing, were all surprised by this shout from Shangguan Longyin. Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but think to himself: It looks like this Senior Shangguan has improved since I last saw him as well. He should not be far from the Heavenly Emperor stage now.

Shangguan Longyin continued: "The Heavenly Jewel Tournament has always been held by our ZhongTian Empire, and our strongest core value is to be open, fair and just. If any fight breaks the rules, they will be punished. However, I will say that for the fight just now, as the ZhongTian Empire Skill Storing Palace Master, I guarantee that no rules were broken. As for this young contestant from the Heavenly Bow Empire and how he achieved victory, it is a profound secret that only those with sufficient cultivation level can understand. I can speak honestly to tell everyone that he is the strongest contestant I have seen in any of the past Heavenly Jewel Tournaments. The Geritimo Battle Team did not lose unjustly. I declare, the Heavenly Bow Battle Team is the victor for this round."

Without question, Shangguan Longyin had extremely high prestige and status in the entire ZhongTian Empire. Having him step up and say such words, how could anyone dare question him? Especially his appraisal of Zhou Weiqing, it had truly drawn much attention.

In the end, the only gloomy one was Zhou Weiqing himself, who was currently thinking: Senior Shangguan, aren't you throwing me to the wolves like this? Alas, the milk had already been spilt. In any case, though he would have preferred it not to happen, it was not a big deal. After all, the Dan Dun Battle Team had already surrendered to the ZhongTian Battle Team previously, and even if they recognized him now, it was too late.

Zhou Weiqing went back to their rest house, and Ma Qun, Crow and Xixi instantly gave him a big thumbs up. Towards Zhou Weiqing's victory, they were not surprised at all. After all, they

had seen Zhou Weiqing defeat a nine-Jeweled powerhouse previously. Though this opponent had the Spiritual Body of Earth, he was still at the seven-Jeweled stage after all.

Although Yun Li was sitting in the corner with curled lips, his eyes could not hide the shock in them. In truth, it had been a long time since he had personally seen Zhou Weiqing fight, and he did not know how strong Zhou Weiqing had grown into. However, he had seen for himself how strong that opponent was, yet Zhou Weiqing had won just so easily.

Zhou Weiqing walked to Tian'er, sitting down by her side, instantly grabbing hold of her, pulling her into his embrace and kissing her lips.

The few who were still giving Zhou Weiqing their approval were instantly embarrassed. Xixi turned her head away, Crow blushed slightly, but Ma Qun gave Crow a wicked look instead.

Only Tian'er knew why Zhou Weiqing was doing so right now, as Zhou Weiqing passed her six drops of pure Saint Energy through his lips. As the Saint Energy entered her body, it began to fuse with her own personal little Saint Energy whirlpool, filling her with the satisfying sensation... as if her very soul was evolving.

After Zhou Weiqing had finished transferring the Saint Energy, he laughed heartily, saying: "This Spiritual Body of Earth is truly great. Perhaps even an eight-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master could not give me so much Saint Energy, let alone with such purity."

Tian'er gave him a light punch on the chest. "Couldn't you wait until we returned before doing that?"

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: "That's nonsense, you know very well that I can only transfer the Saint Energy in a short period of time I gain it. If I had absorbed it, it would become mine fully. Alright, come on, let us return now. There isn't much to watch in the later fights, I still have some things to do."

The entire team stood up, wearing their bamboo hats before leaving under Zhou Weiqing's leadership.

If this had happened in the past two days, no one would have noticed them in their remote little corner. However, having just defeated the Geritimo Battle Team, leaving now gave the impression that they were just being too arrogant.

...

Dan Dun Battle Team Rest House.

"Leader, can you tell ability that fellow was using just now?" The youth seated at the right hand side of the leader asked, seeming to be of even greater status than Shen Little Demon.

"It looks to be the Demonic Attribute... that grey colour could only mean the Demonic Attribute. Could it be... the Heavenly Demon Sect?"

Shen Little Demon's brow furrowed as she said: "It shouldn't be the Heavenly Demon Sect right? If it was them, could the ZhongTian Empire allow them to appear so obviously like that? Unless..... it shouldn't be... right?"

The icy cold youth which was their leader looked up, a light in his eyes as he said: "It looks like we need to hasten our actions. There is no such thing as impossibilities. Let us go as well, I need to send a message to Master. Heavenly Demon Sect... hmph... Heavenly Demon Sect."

...

Naturally, Zhou Weiqing did not know that his actions today had caused some things to be set in motion before their time. Leading his team back to their inn, he asked them to take a rest before he snuck out of the inn silently again, bamboo hat and all.

At the ZhongTian City West Gate, two horse carriages moved out of the city casually, following the official roads towards the west.

It was still early in the afternoon, and due to the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, the roads within and outside the ZhongTian City were relatively empty, allowing the two horse carriages to move rather swiftly. Soon, both carriages had driven more than a dozen li away from the city.

In the first horse carriage, there were four people seated. One of them was a skinny youth, looking rather pale and ashen. He seemed to heave a sigh of relief before saying: “At last we have left. Sigh... we should never have joined this Heavenly Jewel Tournament.”

One of the other youths furrowed his brow as he said: “Leader, isn’t it a bit too hasty for us to leave now? Are we really that scared of that mere Heavenly Bow Empire?”

The pasty looking youth gave a cold humph, saying: “What do you know? The war isn’t going as well as you think. Recently, that Heavenly Bow Empire has recruited a few hundred ultimate death warriors, who knows from where. Along with a couple of fresh recruits, they actually managed to throw back a fifty thousand strong army of ours, and we lost so many in that battle. His Majesty has even ordered a retreat back to the Heavenly Bow City to fortify our position... For us to take a defensive stance instead of continuing our rampage, you can imagine how tough that Heavenly Bow Empire is. Currently, we can only wait for the Bai Da Empire to send more powerhouses before we counterattack. It is rumoured that this time, the Heavenly Bow Empire is being led by that Princess Difuya, the only remaining royal family member who escaped our net last time.

Chapter 217 Devouring Earth Spirit! (2)

“True enough... those Heavenly Bow Battle Team fellows are indeed strong, and we are not able to fight against them. Even so, I just feel like by leaving in this manner, it is just so humiliating. We even had to ask the Bai Da Battle Team to help us inform the ZhongTian Empire about us giving up on the tournament. Leader, you saw for yourself what expression those Bai Da Empire fellows had. Hmph... even if they meet the Heavenly Bow Battle Team, they may not fair much better than us.”

The team leader gave a long sigh before saying: “Somehow, I feel like our Kalise Empire is not going to have a good time ahead of us. The Bai Da Empire only treats us like a dog, but the Heavenly Bow Empire looks to be growing stronger and stronger. If I did not guess wrongly, the Heavenly Bow Empire should be supported by the Fei Li Empire. Otherwise, where are they getting so much manpower and resources to revive their Empire? It looks like they, are just a dog for the Fei Li Empire.”

“Your guess is only half right. Your Kalise Empire will not have good times ahead. However, our Heavenly Bow Empire is still our Heavenly Bow Empire, and the Fei Li Empire is just our ally. Do you really think that everyone is like your Kalise Empire, willing to become mere dogs?”

Along with the abrupt appearance of the voice came a loud crash of lightning, and the horse carriages stalled.

A series of smashing sounds, and all the Kalise Battle Team members rushed out of their horse carriages. All they saw was a grey-clad figure standing right in their path in the road.

Simple grey clothes, bamboo hat, veil. He just stood there, but the impression he gave all the Kalise Battle Team members was that of an insurmountable mountain.

Slowly taking off the bamboo hat, Zhou Weiqing's eyes were

filled with a cold light. Under his feet, the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation began to glow brightly, with the purple light of the Lightning Attribute.

“You... you are that person on the stage just now?” A quiver could be heard in the voice of the Kalise Team leader, whose face had changed swiftly. All of the Kalise Battle Team members released their Heavenly Jewels as one as their leader spoke.

It had to be said, when compared to most of the other teams, especially in this year’s Heavenly Jewel Tournament, the Kalise Battle Team was definitely much weaker. Amongst the six official team members, even the strongest leader was only at the five-Jeweled stage, with two four-Jeweled members, while the rest were only three-Jeweled stage. The two reserve members were also at the three-Jeweled stage. With their team makeup, perhaps it would have been alright for the previous tournament, but in the current one, it would have been impossible for them to go far.

Having just defeated a seven-Jeweled powerhouse, how could Zhou Weiqing not give them immense pressure?

Zhou Weiqing laughed coldly, saying: “Let me introduce myself. My name is Zhou Weiqing. Perhaps, you might not be familiar with my name. If I did not guess wrongly, you Heavenly Jewel Masters should have been recruited by the Kalise Empire after they destroyed my Heavenly Bow Empire. However, perhaps you will know who I am after I speak of another relationship. My father, he is the Heavenly Bow Empire Admiral Zhou Shui Niu.”

The Kalise Battle Team Leader’s face paled further as he looked at Zhou Weiqing, saying: “Sir, you are right. We are Heavenly Jewel Masters who have only been recently recruited by the Kalise Empire, and we are not actually Kalise citizens. If you are willing to let us go, we promise to leave the Kalise Empire, and not work for them any longer.”

Zhou Weiqing lifted his right hand, wagging his index finger at

them, saying: “Being afraid before you fight, you are not a good leader. If you are already like this, how could your team members possibly have any fighting spirit? I can only say, once you made the choice to join the Kalise Empire, it was already a mistake. What reason do I have to believe you? The only interest I have is crushing all of my enemy’s power, isn’t that right?”

The lifted right hand dropped down at the end of his words, and a thick bluish purple light burst forth.

Eight bouts of lightning, each perfectly landing on one of the Kalise Battle Team members.

With Zhou Weiqing’s control and the speed of the lightning, as well as the absolute suppression of Heavenly Energy levels, these Kalise Battle Team members did not even have time to react, let alone release their own Skills to defend themselves.

As lightning spread through their bodies, they were all left numb and in shock... a sickening burnt smell emitting from their bodies.

In the next instant, a black light appeared stealthily, enveloping all eight of them, and a thick grey light lit up around Zhou Weiqing’s hand.

A few minutes later, the only thing remaining on the road were the shattered remains of the horse carriages and the corpses of the horses which had been slain by the initial lightning attack. The eight Kalise Battle Team members had disappeared totally.

A flash of blood red crossed Zhou Weiqing’s eyes before disappearing, as he looked to the west with a heated gaze. “Kalise Empire... this is just the beginning. Step by step, I will give you back the payment you deserve.”

...

The Heavenly Jewel Tournament proceeded smoothly. As the fourth day of the tournament arrived, the citizens which were now highly anticipating the next performance of the Heavenly Bow

Battle Team were disappointed, as their opponent for the day, the Kalise Battle Team, had withdrawn from the tournament, giving them a default win. Currently, with three victories and one loss out of four fights, they were at the third position in the First Group.

Naturally, the top of the group was the ZhongTian Battle Team, and the second was the Dan Dun Battle Team. The latter's results were currently exactly the same as the Heavenly Bow Battle Team, three victories and one loss, but as the team with the better results last year, they were temporarily positioned at second place.

However, for this fourth day, once again the First Group exploded in another major fight. That was between the Dan Dun Battle Team and the Geritimo Battle Team.

The round lasted four fights, and the Dan Dun Battle Team actually lost one.

The four fights could only be described with the phrase 'horrifying'. Bai Qiu and another one of the Geritimo Battle Team members were actually killed in battle. The brother and sister pair, Yu Yun and Yuling, managed to achieve victory in the 2v2 fight. Alas, in the fourth match, Yu Yun had lost, not giving his sister chance to fight in the fifth match. The one who defeated Yu Yun was Shen Little Demon, who had also reached the seven-Jeweled stage.

However, though Yu Yun had lost in the end, it could be said that both sides were greatly injured. Shen Little Demon had one arm severely injured, while Yu Yun lapsed into a coma from his serious injuries.

For this round, though the final victor was the Dan Dun Battle Team, the Geritimo Battle Team had definitely won the respects of everyone. They used their blood, courage and fighting spirit to show everyone that the Geritimo Empire would not admit defeat to anyone easily. If someone dared to invade them, they would fight

to the bitter end.

...

The fourth day of the Tournament ended in such a bloody process, after a relatively quiet day.

Zhou Weiqing held Tian'er's hand as they walked along the streets of the ZhongTian City. Both of them had changed clothes, but they were still wearing the bamboo hats. The reason for that was because Tian'er was just too beautiful, and the selfish Zhou Weiqing did not want to let his wife be seen by others so easily.

“Little Fatty, why did you drag me out here? We'll be fighting against the Dan Dun Battle Team tomorrow, do you really have that much confidence? You have seen for yourself... their two strongest fighters have not even fought today.”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “We are going to gift a favour to others. Our Heavenly Bow Empire needs allies, even if this ally is a little far from us.”

Book 24

Chapter 218 Destruction Attribute! (1)

Zhou Weiqing brought Tian'er wandering through the streets, swerving through alleys and corners before they finally reached a rather luxurious hotel. Entering the lobby, they headed directly to the stairs on the side and headed to the third floor.

Standing at the third floor, Zhou Weiqing thought for a moment before grinning at Tian'er. The next instant, a powerful Heavenly Energy reverberation spread out from his body.

Only Jewel Masters would have an obvious sense to such a Heavenly Energy reverberation. Any normal person, even if they were standing right next to him, would not feel anything.

A few seconds after Zhou Weiqing released the Heavenly Energy reverberation, one of the doors at the end of the corridor opened abruptly, a figure appearing from the room. It was the Geritimo Battle Team member with the Spiritual Body of Earth, Yuling.

Her original stable presence was currently disrupted, and her eyes were bloodshot. Seeing the pair of Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er at the stairs, wearing a bamboo hat, she immediately howled angrily: "You are here to finish the job? Exterminate us? I'll give you a fight!"

As she said that, a thick Earth Attribute Heavenly Energy burst forth from her body.

"Don't misunderstand, we are not enemies." Zhou Weiqing quickly said, removing the bamboo hat from his head.

Yuling's aura stalled momentarily, but she continued staring at them with a wary look.

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: "I am the Heavenly Bow Battle Team leader, Zhou Weiqing, also known as Zhou Little Fatty, the one who fought with your brother the other day. Today, we saw your brother injured by those Dan Dun Battle Team

fellows, and we are here specially to see if we can help in any way.”

Although Yuling did not recognize Zhou Weiqing, when he revealed his face she could see that he was not the anticipated enemy she had imagined. Her face relaxed slightly, but she said coldly: “What else is there to see... my brother... my brother... he... he is almost dying.” As soon as she said that, tears started pouring down her cheeks.

Zhou Weiqing was caught by surprise, and he quickly stepped towards Yuling. “Quick, bring us to have a look. Who knows, we might be able to save him.”

Yuling clearly did not trust Zhou Weiqing, and she did not have the intention of letting them in. Just as she was about to stop them, Tian’er lifted a hand, and a brilliant gold light appeared around her palm. Passively, she said: “If there are any wounds that even I am unable to cure, only then can you determine that your brother will perish.”

Yuling was knowledgeable and experienced indeed, and as soon as she saw the gold light in Tian’er’s hands, a strong light of surprise and delight flashed in her eyes. “This... this is the Divine Attribute? Please, come in.” She quickly opened the door, allowing Zhou Weiqing and Tian’er to enter.

In the room, the surviving members of the Geritimo Battle Team were gathered there, their expressions grief stricken. Yu Yun lay silently on the bed, his face pale and his breathing weak. One of the team members with the Water Attribute was standing beside him, constantly releasing healing skills on Yu Yun, trying to keep him alive and heal him.

“Team Leader Zhou...” Yuling was about to say something but Zhou Weiqing lifted a hand to stop her. “No need to say anything else, saving him is more important. Tian’er?”

Tian’er nodded and walked to the side of the bed. Yuling quickly pulled the teammate with the Water Attribute healing Yu Yun to

the side, saying something in a low voice into his ear.

Tian'er sat down beside the bed, placing her palm on Yu Yun's chest. A faint gold light spread out. Using the Divine Attribute meant that she had to unleash her Heavenly Jewels.

Yuling and the other team members could clearly see the seven sets of Heavenly Jewels around Tian'er's wrists, and their faces were immediately filled with shock.

That day, having lost to the Heavenly Bow Battle Team, in truth many of them were still rather unreconciled towards that result. All the way, up until the point he had lost to Zhou Weiqing, Yu Yun still did not know how he lost the fight, only vaguely sensing that Zhou Weiqing had used a skill that perfectly countered him.

However, now they understood that the Heavenly Bow Battle Team actually still had another powerful team member who hadn't fought that day. Seven Jewels... Divine Attribute? What did that mean? In their impression, they had only heard that the Divine Attribute belonged only to the Heavenly Snow Mountain. Even for the WanShou Battle Team members, none of them had the Divine Attribute. After all, they were not core bloodline members of the Heavenly Snow Mountain. A Lower Level Zong Stage powerhouse with a Saint Attribute, one could not use simple levels to measure them.

A faint gold light covered Yu Yun, causing his pasty white face to look like a piece of gold paper.

Tian'er's brow furrowed slightly. After a moment, she said solemnly: "His wounds are extremely serious, even his internal organs are on the verge of breaking down. Furthermore, there is a very strange Heavenly Energy reverberation in his body, and... it isn't any known Attribute that I have seen or heard of."

Yuling quickly interrupted: "That's exactly it, the reason why Brother isn't able to recover despite all our efforts. Originally, we just thought Brother had sustained severe injuries, but we weren't

too worried. However, when we got back, we realised it wasn't so simple. We even invited some healers from the ZhongTian Empire to help Big Bro heal, but it is that strange unique energy filled with some destructive powers that remain in his body, and even those ZhongTian healers were not able to do anything. Senior Shangguan Longyin even personally went to look for the Dan Dun Battle Team to help, but they refused to do so. Our two Empires are already mortal enemies."

A cold light flashed in Zhou Weiqing's eyes, and he looked at Tian'er, asking: "Can you heal it?"

Tian'er nodded at Zhou Weiqing, but secretly, she said in voice transfer: "I think it can only be done if we use the Saint Energy. Our Saint Energy is above all other Attributes, and with its support, there should be no problem."

Zhou Weiqing said: "Alright, then go ahead. I will support you."

Tian'er extended her other hand for Zhou Weiqing to hold. As the other Geritimo Team members looked on in puzzlement, a strange energy began to gather around their hands.

When Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er circulated their Saint Attributes, forming the Saint Energy whirlpool, it meant that when they used the Saint Energy there would not be an actual loss of it, and the Saint Energy would eventually recover. However, if they used it individually, when too much was used, it could possibly lead to a permanent loss of the used Saint Energy.

Currently, their individual Saint Energy was barely fifty drops, and they naturally weren't going to waste it easily. It was just too difficult to cultivate the Saint Energy.

The large Saint Energy whirlpool appeared silently within Zhou Weiqing, and he infused Saint Energy. A thick gold light rose, and in an instant the entire room was filled with the divine aura. Although Tian'er was still wearing the bamboo hat and just simply seated there, all of the Geritimo Battle Team members suddenly

felt a sensation like they should be paying homage to her. That aura and presence, it was as if they were at a whole different level.

With the infusion of the Saint Energy and the Divine Attribute Healing Skills, Yu Yun turned a gold hue, his shattered innards beginning to heal and reknit themselves at an astonishing rate. The strange, unknown energy that was rampaging through his body was slowly forced by Tian'er into a single area, at last gathering in his left arm.

With a soft sound, Yu Yun's left arm sleeve split apart, and they could all clearly see circles of bright purple light fluctuating there.

"Weiqing." Tian'er gave a low shout.

Zhou Weiqing immediately understood, using his other hand to grasp that glowing spot of Yu Yun's arm. Instantly, he activated the Devour Skill, and that strange energy filled with destructive power began to be drawn out of Yu Yun.

As soon as the energy entered his own body, Zhou Weiqing shuddered slightly. He could clearly sense that this unknown energy was filled with a destructive and negative aura. Indeed, destruction. If Zhou Weiqing had to give this unknown energy a name, it would definitely be the Destruction Attribute.

This Destruction Attribute had a powerful explosively offensive power, almost a calamitous destructive capability, as if the only thing it was good for was to destroy things. Even as Zhou Weiqing used this strongest Skill of the Demonic Attribute, the Devour Skill, to receive it, he felt as if the Devour Skill was being broken apart from within, with slight cracks even appearing. Although it was minor, rather weak even, but it had to be known that this Destruction Attribute was just a remnant energy, not unleashed as part of an attack, and Zhou Weiqing was still in the midst Devouring it. For it to have such an effect, one could just imagine how powerful this Attribute Energy really was.

However, as soon as this Destruction Attribute entered Zhou

Weiqing's body, it could no longer continue its overbearing arrogance. In front of the large Saint Energy whirlpool, it could only panic, trying to escape, but how could the Saint Energy whirlpool give it the opportunity.

Very soon, it had been transformed into part of the Saint Energy whirlpool, and Zhou Weiqing was surprised to discover that this tiny bit of Destruction Attribute energy had actually turned into five whole drops of Saint Energy! It was just a tiny portion of Destruction Attribute Energy, yet it could actually transform into such an amount. Immediately, Zhou Weiqing realised that this Destruction Attribute was at the same level as the four Saint Attributes, perhaps even slightly higher.

Zhou Weiqing was fully immersed in his own senses, but at the same time, the Divine Attribute of Tian'er was nourishing and healing Yu Yun's body, boosted by the Saint Energy.

By the time the gold light slowly dissipated, Yu Yun's breathing had stabilized, and his face had recovered some of its colour. He had lapsed into a proper sleep.

Without Zhou Weiqing or Tian'er's reminder, Yuling and the others knew that Yu Yun would be fine. In her excitement, Yuling was about to step forward and kneel to them, but she was stopped by Tian'er. At that point, Zhou Weiqing also broke out of his reverie.

"Lady Yuling, there is no need for that. To be honest, although we are not familiar with each other, the Dan Dun Empire and Bai Da Empire are our common enemies. As the saying goes, the enemy of my enemy is my friend, and I hope that we have the chance to help each other against our common enemies in the future. Today can be considered a good start to that. Your brother should be fine now. When he wakes up, please let him know that I will definitely ensure what I promised to him. I will not allow the Dan Dun Battle Team to advance into the top eight and beyond. If you all have any other difficulty in the future, please do come look

for us. Our Heavenly Bow Empire is currently situated in the Crescent City.”

Yuling said gratefully: “I really do not know what to say to this. You both have saved my brother, and such a great kindness, we will never forget it, and remember it deeply in our hearts.”

Chapter 218 Destruction Attribute! (2)

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly, but did not continue the conversation. After bidding farewell to the Geritimo Team, they left the hotel. Although they were here to do them a favour and get on their good side for the future, if they did too much, it would also induce suspicion. Zhou Weiqing was just here to plant the seeds of good karma. Whether or not it would be of use in the future, he was not too concerned about it. At least, with this baseline established, in the future the Heavenly Bow Empire should not become enemies with the Geritimo Empire.

“Little Fatty, what did you sense?” After exiting the hotel, Tian’er asked Zhou Weiqing curiously. Naturally, as connected as they were, she had sensed how distracted he had been during the Devouring process.

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: “It is truly a powerful destructive power, a new attribute even. No wonder the healers from the ZhongTian Empire weren’t able to do anything. If not for the Saint Energy, I’m afraid that even you might have trouble healing Yu Yun fully.”

Tian’er nodded and said: “Indeed, that energy is very strange, with the level of a Saint Attribute, yet without the aura of one. It feels a little like a fusion Attribute to me, yet I have never heard of anything like this... any previous fusion of attribute energies have never reached such a state as far as I know. To unleash a Skill with this Attribute, I can imagine the sheer offensive and destructive power it will hold. It looks like the Dan Dun Battle Team will be more difficult than we expect.”

Zhou Weiqing said: “This small portion of destructive energies... it was actually able to transform into five whole drops of Saint Energy. It looks like we have to be very careful when we fight against the Dan Dun Battle Team. This energy is extremely strange, we will have to further ponder regarding how to deal with

them properly. Luckily we came today, otherwise we might have suffered a great disadvantage or even a loss facing such an energy without preparation. One good deed begets another indeed. When we face the Dan Dun Battle Team the day after, we cannot allow everyone to risk themselves, I'm afraid this time both of us will have to take action personally."

They would be facing the Dan Dun Battle Team in the sixth day, and for their fifth day fight, it would be another old foe... a mortal enemy even... the Bai Da Battle Team.

The preliminary stage of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament had already reached such a point, and most of the groups were already pretty obvious what their final results would be. Only the first group was still in an intense fight. The ZhongTian, Dan Dun, Geritimo Battle Teams, those were the traditional strong teams that were still in the running, plus the dark horse of the entire tournament, the Heavenly Bow Battle Team. As a result, the infighting in Group One was still extremely tight. Besides the ZhongTian Battle Team which had already secured an advancement spot, the last one would have to be between the Dan Dun Battle Team and the Heavenly Bow Battle Team. As the Bai Da Battle Team had already lost to the Geritimo Battle Team, they were also already out of consideration.

However, the fights still had to go on as planned. The Kalise Battle Team might be able to run off without fighting, but the Bai Da Battle Team definitely could not do so. If they dared to surrender without a fight, when they returned to the Bai Da Empire, they would definitely be punished severely.

...

The Heavenly Bow Battle Team had gathered in their rest house early in the morning of the fifth day. Zhou Weiqing sat in the central main seat, saying passively: "Towards today's fight, there is nothing more to say. My only order is... do not leave anyone alive."

Ma Qun gave a hideous grin, saying: “Boss, do not worry, we all understand.”

Zhou Weiqing glanced at him and said: “If you dare make the same mistake as you did against the Geritimo Empire... for the rest of the Tournament you can forget about fighting anymore.”

“Uhh..” Ma Qun gave an embarrassed look as he said hastily: “I won’t, Boss, please give me another chance.”

Zhou Weiqing said: “Today, you fight first. Xixi, you second. Third match will still be Crow and Xixi together.”

Yun Li said with a dissatisfied tone: “Why don’t you let me fight?”

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly and said: “You killing someone... isn’t as satisfying to watch as them killing...”

When he said that, Yun Li shivered involuntarily as a cold chill ran down his spine. This was the first time he had sensed such a powerful killing intent and emotionless cold from Zhou Weiqing.

Indeed, towards the Bai Da Empire, Zhou Weiqing’s hatred was far above even the Kalise Empire. After all, without the Bai Da Empire, how could the Kalise Empire possibly have enough power to breakthrough their Heavenly Bow Empire battlelines and actually succeed in conquering the Heavenly Bow Empire?

The Bai Da Empire could be said to be the main culprit, with the Kalise Empire as their ‘figurehead puppet’. Zhou Weiqing was a man who bore grudges, and his target was not just as simple as destroying the Kalise Empire.

Right at that moment, a clear and bright voice rang from outside their room. “Team Leader Zhou, are you in? Yu Yun and Yuling from Geritimo Team are here to see you.”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily, standing up and walking over to receive them. Indeed, the brother sister team of Yu Yun and Yuling were standing at the door.

Seeing Zhou Weiqing walk towards them, Yu Yun bowed deeply. “Thank you Team Leader Zhou, and your Heavenly Bow Battle Team, for saving my life. Such a major gratitude, I shall not thank too much. In the future, if you all need any assistance from our Geritimo Empire, Team Leader Zhou, please feel free to request it. As long as we can accomplish it, we will definitely do it.”

Zhou Weiqing was caught by surprise. He immediately realised that this Yu Yun was not just so simple as the Geritimo Battle Team Leader... he could actually represent the entire Geritimo Empire!

...

In the Dan Dun Battle Team Rest House.

The leader looked at Shen Little Demon with a bleak and serious look on his face. “Little Demon, you used the Destruction Attribute yesterday?”

At this moment, Shen Little Demon had a puzzled, uncertain look on her face. “Yes, I did! That Yu Yun is one of the Princes of the Geritimo Empire, and the one with the greatest chance to be the heir, and we already decided to kill him off. During the fight, I used the Destruction Attribute to ensure his death... how could he possibly survive?”

The leader said coldly: “That question, you shouldn’t be asking me. As you have seen for yourself, he is still living and healthy. The two of them have just entered the Heavenly Bow Battle Team Rest House.”

Shen Little Demon said with great uncertainty: “Could it be... someone from the Heavenly Bow Battle Team saved him? That should still be impossible! Even if it is the Divine Attribute, without a cultivation level three Jewels above mine, they wouldn’t be able to dispel my Destruction Attribute.”

The youth leader narrowed his eyes, his gaze like a knife slicing

through the air as he said: “It looks like we will have to treat this Heavenly Bow Battle Team seriously after all.”

...

“Heavenly Bow Battle Team versus Bai Da Battle Team. Please send your first fighters onto the stage.”

Ma Qun instantly rushed out of the Rest House, eager and unable to hold himself back. He was dressed in his full heavy armour, and he landed directly on the stage.

When the first member of the Bai Da Battle Team ascended the stage, the rest of the Heavenly Bow Battle Team members furrowed their brows.

Zhou Weiqing and the others had watched all the other Bai Da Battle Team matches. However, this time, the first one to come out was actually the Bai Da Battle Team Leader, Noris!

For the Battle Team Leader to actually fight in the first match, it was a very rare sight on the Heavenly Jewel Tournament. Caught by surprise, the rest of the team turned to look at Zhou Weiqing questioningly.

Zhou Weiqing shook his head, saying: “It should be fine. A tougher match is more meaningful for a Heavenly Jewel Master.”

Crow’s eyes showed an obvious hint of worry. After all, this Bai Da Battle Team leader was a six-Jeweled powerhouse, and his Heavenly Jewels were the Strength and Darkness Attributes respectively. As compared to the four-Jeweled Ma Qun, he would definitely have a superior advantage.

Sitting there, Zhou Weiqing gave a cold laugh. He did not plan to change his battle formation today. He knew his opponent was trying to use their strongest against their so-called weakest, to gain as much advantage as possible. However, would that be of any use at all?

Ma Qun might seem like a brute who only depended on strength

on the surface. However, in truth, the cunning and sneakiness in his heart was no lower than Zhou Weiqing. As soon as he saw that his opponent was the enemy's team leader, he immediately took note, paying full attention. At the same time, his mind began to churn to form plan after plan.

“Heavenly Bow Battle Team, Ma Qun.”

“Bai Da Battle Team, Noris.”

“Fight, Begin.”

Noris was a young man of about twenty seven or twenty eight years old, with highly average features with the exception of his eyes, which definitely drew attention. His gaze was cold, and anyone fixed with those eyes would feel as if they were targeted by a venomous snake.

As soon as the judge proclaimed the start of the fight, a thick Darkness Attribute aura burst forth from Noris, and his Consolidated Equipment appeared around him.

Noris' Consolidated Equipment were rather interesting. [From his left hand, a pitch black rapier appeared, followed by gloves, bracers, shoulder pauldrons](#), chest plate and girdle. Six pieces in total.

In terms of quality, those six Consolidated Equipment were not the best. Both Yun Li and Zhou Weiqing had some experience in terms of Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, and they could instantly see that these were just Grandmaster Consolidated Equipment. However, these six pieces all belonged to a single Set. It was clear that it was already a prime example of set equipment pushed to the limit. Of the six pieces, only the rapier in his left hand was a Zong Stage Consolidated Equipment. All of the equipment were focused on boosting his Darkness Attribute. From the equipment he had chosen, it was clear that this Noris was a close combat type Heavenly Jewel Master.

As he released his Consolidated Equipment, a cold light flashed in Noris' eyes. In a single swift step, he charged towards Ma Qun.

Ma Qun's attacking style was no different from all his previous matches, ignoring his opponent's attacks totally as he raised his huge spiked maces, smashing them towards Noris' body directly. His attacks gave the impression of being crude and impetuous.

A thick sense of disdain flashed in Noris' eyes, a thick black light emanating from his body as if it were the plague, instantly spreading to Ma Qun's body.

The large spiked maces that Ma Qun swung slowed obviously, and a black symbol appeared above his head.

Curse. It was a Curse-Type Skill.

The Darkness Attribute's greatest strength, the Curse-Type Skills. The Skill that Noris had unleashed this time was the Slowing Curse.

Facing Ma Qun whose cultivation level was far lower than him, even this Slowing Curse that wasn't considered a high powered one could immediately show its effect.

Although Noris wasn't an Agility Type Heavenly Jewel Master, his speed was still decent. In a flash, he dodged to the side, perfectly sliding through the gap between the two large spiked maces' attacks. At the same time, the rapier in his hand blurred towards Ma Qun's throat.

At this point, it was clear that Ma Qun would not be able to dodge that. The gap in cultivation level was just too obvious.

At the last critical moment, Ma Qun's body forcefully pushed slightly to the side, as his spiked maces continued chasing Noris' body.

A soft sounds of impact; a black shadow slid through the coverage of the spiked maces once more. In the next moment, a massive crash and the large spiked mace originally in Ma Qun's left

hand smashed savagely into the granite floor of the stage.

On Ma Qun's left shoulder, a bloody hole appeared, and his entire body staggered back from the blow.

All those prior are only on the left, hence the 'interesting' part, not sure if my phrasing was clear enough

Chapter 218 Destruction Attribute! (3)

Although he had managed to prevent the rapier from hitting his throat, Noris' attack still managed to land on his shoulder. Even the thick Frozen Steel armour was not able to perfectly block a full powered blow from a six-Jeweled powerhouse, and the rapier pierced right through. There was even smoke emitting from the wound, clearly showing the corrosive nature of the Darkness Attribute attack.

Ma Qun howled in pain, as if a wounded beast. Flying into a rage, he swung the spiked mace in his right hand towards Noris as he charged forward.

In a single engagement, he had already suffered a serious injury. In the audience's eyes, Ma Qun had no hopes of winning. Currently, he was just like an arrow at the end of its flight, fighting desperately with the last bit of spent force. The difference between four Jewels and six Jewels was just too huge. Even those seeded team members, they felt that after Ma Qun's heavy armour had proven insufficient to defend him, it was clear that Ma Qun was no match for Noris.

For the Bai Da Battle Team to send Noris out in the first match, it was after deep thought. The reason was simple, his rapier was actually the most adept at breaking through the powerful defense that so many of the Heavenly Bow Battle Team members favoured. No matter if the Heavenly Bow Battle Team sent out any of the three Heavy Armoured warriors, they would be countered by Noris. Gaining the first victory would definitely be a good method of raising their morale for the rest of the matches.

From the way things were progressing, it seemed like this plan of the Bai Da Battle Team was successful. Alas, they had not been watching the rest of the Heavenly Bow Battle Team members' expressions in their rest house.

Yun Li's expression was anxious and urgent, and Xixi's brow was furrowed deeply. On the other hand, the one should have been most worried, Crow, was smiling, her previous anxiety seemed to have vanished totally.

As Ma Qun's wife, who could understand Ma Qun and his abilities more than her? In terms of pure combat capabilities, it was definitely true that Ma Qun was no match for Noris, after all the gap in cultivation level was there. However, losing in just a single engagement, in such a miserable fashion... that was definitely impossible. If that was really the case, how could Zhou Weiqing be willing to allow Ma Qun to join the Heavenly Jewel Tournament?

Noris did not know what Crow was thinking, nor would he have cared. Having succeeded in his first strike, his eyes were filled with bloodlust, glowing brightly in excitement.

These few days, the dominating performance of the Heavenly Bow Battle Team had given him a rather suppressed feeling. He knew that in terms of overall power of the entire team, their Bai Da Battle Team was definitely no match for the Heavenly Bow Battle team. However, that did not mean they would have no chance at all. In the history of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, there were many examples of weaker teams beating stronger teams. Wasn't the Fei Li Battle Team in the last tournament a perfect example of that? As such, he had planned a specially tailored counter strategy to the Heavenly Bow Battle Team for today's fight. Even if they were to lose, he did not want the Heavenly Bow Battle Team to have a good time.

Seeing Ma Qun still charging at him while howling in pain, without any style or reason, Noris gave a cold smirk. In a flash, he stepped to the left besides the spiked club that Ma Qun had left behind. The rapier in his hands flashed out like the fang of a venomous snake, striking out at Ma Qun's jugular vein.

Although his speed was not particularly fast, with his six-Jeweled

cultivation level, no matter how anyone looked at it, he was definitely faster than Ma Qun, especially since Ma Qun was now wounded, and his left side defense was the weakest. Noris did not plan on delaying any further, not even wanting to give Ma Qun the chance to surrender, hoping to kill him swiftly. He was even imagining after he killed Ma Qun, he would not let his corpse off, destroying it fully.

Ma Qun's charging body stumbled slightly, barely sliding to the side and dodging the incoming rapier. At the same time, the remaining large spiked mace swept savagely towards Noris' head.

Once again, a mocking disdain flashed in Noris' eyes, followed by a cold light. The Slowing Curse appeared once more, causing Ma Qun's body to further slow down. Simultaneously, his rapier chased Ma Qun towards his heart.

As Ma Qun had barely dodged the blow to the throat earlier, his body was mostly greatly imbalanced now. This current sword blow, he was definitely in no position to dodge it any longer. In Noris' eyes, once he pierced through his opponent's heart, he would still have the time to dodge Ma Qun's mace, and he would not even be touched.

When anyone felt he was in a sure win position, their spirit would relax slightly. This was a phrase that Zhou Weiqing had told Ma Qun a long long time ago.

The confused, muddled and bloodshot eyes of Ma Qun suddenly lit up. "DIE!" This time, his shout was not crazed, instead filled with an overbearing tyranny.

Right in that instant, the presence and aura of Ma Qun burst forth, a sensation that was fully different. The huge spiked mace whistling in midair that had been slowed by the Slowing Curse abruptly sped up, much faster than even his usual speed. A thick yellow light erupted from his body, and at the same time, his injured arm which had been flopping uselessly at the side suddenly

lifted up, holding up an unbelievably thick shield in front of his chest.

All of this had been accomplished by Ma Qun in the blink of an eye, and he had only done so when the black rapier was less than one chi from his chest. At this point, Noris no longer had any chance to change his strike.

A terrifying energy reverberation blew up. The current Ma Qun gave everyone the impression that he was an exploding volcano.

Puuu A soft sound rang out. Even though Ma Qun had burst forth with an abrupt speed, even breaking free of the Slowing Curse... Noris' attack still struck first, piercing savagely into the shield in Ma Qun's hands.

Alas, just as the rapier and shield came into contact, Noris' eyes were filled with shock and disbelief.

It did not pierce through fully... not fully through...! Furthermore, a sudden powerful suction force began to drag upon his rapier, forcefully holding it in place, preventing him from pulling it back.

The next instant, another Puuu sound. The massive spiked mace, glowing with a thick earthen yellow colour, smashed into Noris' head.

Noris was not wearing a helmet, and everything happened in just a split second. Just as he realised something was wrong, the rapier had pierced into the shield, and in the moment he was shocked, the large spiked mace came into intimate contact with his head.

Blood. Like a beautiful fountain of fireworks, made its appearance on the stage.

Imagine a watermelon being split by a giant hammer? In midair?

Currently, Noris' head was that exact watermelon. White, red... grey? Even some unknown colours, spraying everywhere in midair. At the same time, the rest of his body was sent flying,

slamming hard onto the ground outside the stage.

Ma Qun staggered back several steps on the stage before he finally regained balance. Although Noris' final blow had not broken through his shield, it did contain the full power of his six-Jeweled cultivation level and a strong piercing force, and he could only diminish it slowly as he staggered back.

The Consolidated Shield in his hands vanished, and a powerful angry howl rang forth from Ma Qun as he gave vent to all his feelings. His right hand lifted up the massive spiked mace, still covered with blood and brains, as if he was a god of war.

Below the stage, the audience could only stare in stunned silence. The fight had ended just too abruptly. In the eyes of the ordinary audience members, they had barely blinked a few times before it ended.

No one could have expected that the ending would be such an abrupt reversal, and in such a strange fashion. Ma Qun had actually won, and he had even managed to totally smash Noris' head into bits.

"Well done!" Zhou Weiqing jumped up in the Rest House, gripping his fists savagely.

He had been too agitated, and his sudden movement caused the bamboo hat to fly off his head.

Zhou Weiqing was extremely clear how Ma Qun had won. This entire battle could be said to have been planned and executed perfectly by Ma Qun, all part of his calculations.

From the start, Ma Qun had already come up with a complete plan. As soon as they exchanged blows, he purposely accepted a blow, purposely misleading Noris, allowing him to think that Ma Qun only knew how to fight brainlessly. Furthermore, he had 'lost' one of his spiked maces, and that naturally meant a drop in his combat prowess.

What followed next was all guided by Ma Qun step by step, fully bringing Noris into his trap... all the way to the end when Noris no longer had any chance of changing his attack, only then did Ma Qun burst forth with all his power.

An ordinary four-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master could not possibly block the full powered blow of a six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master with a single shield. However, Ma Qun's shield was a four-Jeweled Assembly Set Shield. Even for a six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master, how could he pierce through it fully so easily?

Originally, Lin TianAo's six-Jeweled Assembly Set Shield had managed to even block a single blow from the Heavenly King Assassin without dying. From that alone, one could imagine the sheer defensive capabilities of this Assembly Set.

Furthermore, at that very instant, Ma Qun had unleashed the full power of his bloodline powers, entering the Berserk state, which allowed him to break free of any Curse or Sealing Skills. Of course, the gap between them couldn't be too huge. Luckily, the Slowing Curse wasn't a very powerful Skill, and it was easily broken.

In the Berserk state, that severely damaged left arm was still barely able to move. At the same time, the huge spiked mace infused with Earth Attribute Heavenly Energy... how could Noris' head defend against it?

Noris' death was truly not a worthwhile death. He still had so many Skills he had not used, but he had just died like that to Ma Qun's spiked mace.

On the side of the Bai Da Battle Team, all the team members' eyes reddened, and they were about to charge up to pit their lives against Ma Qun, but they were stopped by the ZhongTian guards. Before this fight had even started, the ZhongTian Empire had already made preparations. They knew that the clash between the Heavenly Bow Empire and the Bai Da Empire would definitely not

be a calm or easygoing fight, and the facts had proved their preparations were indeed a good choice.

“It... it’s him... it’s actually him?!” Right at the same time, in the Dan Dun Battle Team rest house, Shen Little Demon exclaimed in shock, her expression extremely ugly. When she saw Zhou Weiqing’s bamboo hat fly off his head, she finally understood why she kept having a sense of familiarity towards this Heavenly Bow Battle Team.

“It’s Zhou Weiqing! That Zhou Weiqing who brought the Fei Li Battle Team to victory in the previous Heavenly Jewel Tournament!” Shen Little Demon’s grew urgent and laboured as she exclaimed.

It could be said that her hate for Zhou Weiqing was as high as the skies, with a hint of complicated feelings. In the previous Heavenly Jewel Tournament, she had lost to Zhou Weiqing, and because of that the Dan Dun Battle Team that she led was knocked out of the finals. It was this Zhou Weiqing who had used that strange tri-attribute venom to almost kill her, but he had also saved her life under the persuasion of the ZhongTian Empire.

Chapter 219 Shen Little Demon's Destruction Fire Phoenix! (1)

Later on, she had met Zhou Weiqing in the northern borders once more, and that fellow had actually succeeded in bluffing the Heavenly King Stage powerhouse from the Blood Red Hell, even injuring him severely.

Originally, when Shen Little Demon did not see Zhou Weiqing in the Fei Li Battle Team, she had heaved a sigh of relief. However, she had never imagined that Zhou Weiqing had still participated in the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, just that he no longer belonged to the Fei Li Battle Team, nor the ZhongTian Battle Team... instead representing this Heavenly Bow Empire. No wonder... no wonder he would keep wearing that bamboo hat to keep himself hidden. That was clearly targeted at the Dan Dun Battle Team!

Upon hearing the name Zhou Weiqing, the two youths heading the Dan Dun Battle Team had their eyes turn cold. Towards this name, they were not unfamiliar at all. After the last tournament, they had heard Shen Little Demon bring up that name many times. It was also that person who had given the Blood Red Hell an unprecedented disgrace and humiliation. Hearing that this Zhou Weiqing had appeared before them again, [becoming the tiger blocking their way](#) again, naturally these two youths were not surprised, but filled with an unparalleled fighting spirit. Both their gazes fixed upon Zhou Weiqing, who had stepped out excitedly to receive the returning Ma Qun, a cold killing spirit bursting forth from both of them.

Zhou Weiqing did not even look at them, as if he could not sense anything, just supporting Ma Qun back to their Rest House. As he did so, his left hand subtly extended towards the Dan Dun Battle Team Rest House, pointing out a long middle finger at them, making a pumping motion.

“Bastard!” Some of the Dan Dun Battle Team members jumped up, about to charge at him.

“Stop there.” The leading youth said coldly. He ignored Zhou Weiqing’s mocking gesture.

“We will be facing the Heavenly Bow Battle Team tomorrow, what is there to be anxious about. All that he is doing now... is digging his own grave. “

Hearing the youth’s voice, including the agitated Shen Little Demon, all of the team members nodded in full acceptance.

At this point, the Heavenly Bow Battle Team and Bai Da Battle Team began the next fight.

If the first match gave the audience the impression that the victory had been by accident, then the second match was a total one sided slaughter.

Xixi’s overall combat power was even stronger than Ma Qun, and her opponent was weaker than Noris. Furthermore, it was truly unfortunate that this opponent was a Strength type Heavenly Jewel Master, with the same attribute as Ma Qun, a Strength and Earth Heavenly Jewel Master.

This was a direct clash of strength versus strength, and Xixi only used a single round of crazy flurry of blows to break past her opponent’s defense. Once her terrifying axes slammed into her opponent’s body, along with a cold stream of air... in a flash of white light, the opponent had been sliced into several pieces. Furthermore, there was no blood at all, the shattered corpse having been frozen into a large ice cube before being broken.

After the first match had ended, the Bai Da Battle Team members were filled with rage. However, after the second match ended, the Bai Da Battle Team members became silent [like a cicada in cold weather](#). Without their leader, they had lost their core and backbone... and Xixi’s merciless slaughter had crushed their

confidence and fighting spirit.

The third match did not even proceed, as the Bai Da Battle Team chose to surrender. After all, no one wanted to die, and they would not choose to charge into sure death. At this point, they suddenly remembered how the Kalise Battle Team had run off without fighting, and their scorn towards them, and they felt a sense of shame. Of course, they did not know that by now, those Kalise Empire members were no longer alive.

The fifth day of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament ended smoothly. This time, Zhou Weiqing did not lead his companions to leave early, staying all the way until the end of all the fights before walking out with his companions. Standing at the door of their rest house, his eyes stared straight at the Dan Dun Battle Team.

By then, the Dan Dun Battle Team had also walked out of their own rest house, and their gazes met.

Zhou Weiqing revealed a disdainful smirk on his face, before making a wretched sign at them, his hands lifted towards the Dan Dun Battle Team, gripped in fists, with his thumb sticking out from between his forefinger and middle finger, before wagging them at the Dan Dun Battle Team members.

Yun Li stood behind Zhou Weiqing, and he just covered his eyes, muttering to himself: "I don't recognize this fellow."

The youth leader at the head of the Dan Dun Battle Team looked coldly at Zhou Weiqing's actions, but remained silent. After a while, he said passively: "Let's go."

Looking at the Dan Dun Battle Team members leave like that, Zhou Weiqing slowly put down his hands, his eyes turning cold and serious. He knew that tomorrow's fight would definitely be far tougher than the previous Tournament's fight against the Dan Dun Battle Team with the Fei Li Battle Team.

At this point, the ZhongTian Battle Team walked towards them,

with Shangguan Xue'er and Shangguan Fei'er at the head of their party.

As they reached Zhou Weiqing, they stopped. Shangguan Xue'er said coldly: "For Bing'er's sake, good luck for tomorrow's fight."

Shangguan Fei'er giggled, glancing at Tian'er beside Zhou Weiqing as she said: "Tomorrow, if you win, I'll let you kiss me once. Let's go."

As soon as she said that, the ZhongTian Battle Team members behind here all stared with jaws agape, looking at Zhou Weiqing with strange looks.

Zhou Weiqing's expression was not too good; that was because he was actually enduring pain. Tian'er was behind him, pinching a soft area of his waist, executing an extremely difficult movement, the famed 360 degree pinch. Of course, the difficulty was for Zhou Weiqing's skin.

The Heavenly Bow Battle Team returned to their inn, and Zhou Weiqing told the others to rest inside without heading out. He then spoke for a while with Yun Li before leaving with Tian'er.

"Where are we headed today?" Tian'er asked curiously as soon as they left the inn.

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: "Since the Dan Dun Battle Team isn't easy to handle, we should make some preparations. Let us head up the Heavenly Jewel Island."

Tian'er said in surprise: "But... I do not have the plaque to ascend the Heavenly Jewel Island."

Zhou Weiqing said: "That is not a problem. I think, the Heaven's Expanse Palace should be extremely interested in news regarding the Destruction Attribute... exchanging it for a temporary ascension to the Heavenly Jewel Island should not be a big issue."

By the time the sun rose in the east, bringing light and warmth to this largest city in the continent, it also signalled the beginning of

the sixth day of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament. This would also be the last day of the preliminary rounds.

Amongst the four groups, only the First Group matches had not ended. That was because they had an extra team compared to the other groups, and naturally needed one more round of fights.

However, none of the citizens would miss today's fight just because of the limited amount. On the contrary, their emotions were stoked to the highest point. That was because today's fight had ended up being one of the anticipated highlights, the Heavenly Bow Battle Team against the Dan Dun Battle Team.

In this year's Heavenly Jewel Tournament, these two teams were not seeded teams, but at this point, no one would dare to underestimate any of them.

In their previous matches, they had both only surrendered to the ZhongTian Battle Team without fighting, but had won every other match against all the other teams. Today's fight was the one which would determine which of the two would actually be able to advance to the next round. From that alone, one could imagine the intensity of the fights.

It was not just the citizens and audience members who were excited. Even the other teams who had completed their preliminary matches did not want to miss this fight, all of them appearing with exception in their respective rest houses.

To be able to witness such an exciting and high quality fight with their own eyes, it could only be of benefit to them.

...

The Four Seeded Battle Teams. Bao Po Battle Team Rest House.

As everyone knew, the BaoPo Empire was backed by one of the Great Saint Lands, the Passion Valley. For this year's Heavenly Jewel Tournament, the Passion Valley had sent out their absolute elite team, managing to advance as the first in Group 2. This also

meant their opponent would be the second position of Group 1... and they would face the victor of today's fight, the Dan Dun Battle Team or Heavenly Bow Battle Team.

The Bao Po Battle Team had a total of eight team members, six regular members and two reserve. Currently, seated at the main seats were a couple acting intimately.

“Big Bro XiHua, what do you think are the odds that the Heavenly Bow Battle Team can defeat the Dan Dun Battle Team?”

The young lady on the main seat asked softly. She was extremely beautiful, looking to be barely twenty years old. However, those who knew her well knew that she was about to celebrate her thirtieth birthday. She had a beautiful name, called Lan HuDie, but the rest of the Passion Valley members called her [Butterfly Orchid](#), a beautiful flower indeed.

The youth seated beside her also had dashing features, looking extremely suave with an aura of refined and graceful spirituality.

Shaking his head gently, the youth named XiHua hesitated before saying: “It's really hard to say.”

“Hard to say?” Butterfly Orchid stared at her husband in surprise. “Why is it hard to say? The two leading fellows of the Dan Dun Battle Team, they are both at the seven Jeweled cultivation level. Although that Shen Little Demon is also at the seven-Jeweled cultivation stage, she is positioned at the third. It's clear that their overall power should be far stronger. Do you really think that the Heavenly Bow Battle Team actually has a chance to threaten the Dan Dun Battle Team?”

XiHua sighed gently, saying: “Originally, I also thought that the Dan Dun Battle Team would definitely win. However, yesterday I actually saw their team leader's face... and I began to think that it's not going to be just that simple. Although we did not attend the previous Heavenly Jewel Tournament, you should have heard of the reason why the Fei Li Battle Team won that time. At that time,

they had a three-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master who turned the tides of battle, defeating Shen Little Demon in their fight against the Dan Dun Battle Team. That person's name is Zhou Weiqing. Yesterday, when we returned, I asked someone from the ZhongTian Battle Team and confirmed my suspicions. That person who dared to use those vulgar signs towards the Dan Dun Battle Team... it is that Zhou Weiqing. Three years... it can change many things, especially for a genius level talent. To them, three years can be an extreme qualitative change. Since he was able to defeat Shen Little Demon three years ago, who's to say he won't be able to create another miracle three years later? That day, when he fought against Yu Yun, even I was unable to perceive through him."

Butterfly Orchid stuck her tongue out, smiling sweetly at him as she said: "I also couldn't understand it. When you visited Yu Yun, what did they say? That day you snuck out, but I forgot to ask you when you returned."

Literal translation – basically just means obstacle / stumbling block

Literal translation, basically means keeping quiet out of fear

Her name is 兰蝴蝶 (Lan HuDie), and they call her 蝴蝶兰 HuDie (butterfly) Lan, which is also the name for the Butterfly Orchid

Chapter 219 Shen Little Demon's Destruction Fire Phoenix! (2)

XiHua sighed gently and said: "Yu Yun only told me one sentence... that Zhou Weiqing is his savior."

Butterfly Orchid giggled and said: "Interesting... it looks like today's fights will be very interesting indeed."

XiHua gave a bitter smile and said: "I don't find it particularly interesting, no matter who we have to face in the top eight, it will not be an easy fight for us."

...

Back in the Heavenly Bow Battle Team Rest House.

Zhou Weiqing and the others had come early in the morning. In the previous two days, Zhou Weiqing had not bet on anyone. With the influence of the ZhongTian Empire, the betting odds were just too low, and it felt pointless to bet. However, today was different... their fight against the Dan Dun Battle Team was the highlight of today, perhaps even the highlight of the entire preliminary round. It was safe to say that almost every single bettor was betting on their fight, and the Dan Dun Battle Team clearly held the absolute advantage. As such, even the massive bet from the ZhongTian Empire side did not greatly influence the odds too much.

In the end, Zhou Weiqing placed all of their seventy million gold on themselves. The odds were 1 to 3. To Shangguan Tianxin's amusement, the way the bets were going, it was almost as if the Royal Family was working together with the Heavenly Bow Battle Team to earn money. After all, they had bet heavily on the Heavenly Bow Battle Team as well.

Of course, that was not a big influence on the ZhongTian citizens. The majority of the large bets were those officials, merchants or various rich men. Even if the ordinary citizens placed bets, they

were extremely limited. Shangguan Tianxin was more than happy to earn from those fellows. The only heartache would be that once the Heavenly Bow Battle Team won, they would be taking away almost two hundred million gold. With such a sum of gold, within the next ten years the Heavenly Bow Empire could spend extremely comfortably.

However, Shangguan Tianxin could only let it be. A few days ago, he had ascended the Heavenly Jewel Island to speak with his two elder brothers. As such, towards this fight and the bet, Shangguan Tianxin could only treat it as ‘If one doesn’t sacrifice children, they would never catch the wolf’, or ‘if one doesn’t sacrifice one’s daughter, they would never catch the scoundrel’..... Indeed, this fellow was truly a scoundrel, otherwise how could he steal the hearts of his three nieces? Everytime he thought about that, as an uncle, he felt vexed and gloomy.

“Today, it should be time to let me fight first right?” Yun Li was itching to go. It was time to face the Dan Dun Battle Team, and the Heavenly Bow Battle Team members were all filled with fighting spirit.

However, to Yun Li’s surprise, Zhou Weiqing shook his head. “No, the first fight is not for you. Today, our main goal is not just to win, but to ensure that we do not have any losses or severe injuries, otherwise it will not be worth it. If anything happens to you, how can I account to Little Miss Muddle?”

Yun Li said exasperatedly: “Who are you preparing to send then?”

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “Heh heh, I will be going first.”

Hearing those words, the entire team was caught by surprise. Without question, Zhou Weiqing was the strongest in the entire team. Of course, that was a judgement made without knowing Tian’er’s actual combat strength.

Still, as a team leader, to be the first to fight was already a rare

and surprising thing.

Yun Li furrowed his brow as he said: “You want to learn from that Bai Da Battle Team?”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “Wait and see how it goes. If we are lucky, we might only need to fight a single tough fight today. Even if we are unlucky, with my arrangement, we should only have two extremely tough fights. Tian’er, are you sure that your body is alright?”

Tian’er was still satisfied with his concern, smiling as she said: “Do not worry, I will not joke around with our child’s life.” The last line was said very softly, and only Zhou Weiqing could hear it.

As the sun rose higher in the sky, the sixth day of the tournament finally began officially.

Without exception, the first round was a quick and simple surrender to the ZhongTian Battle Team, as they became the first official team to advance to the top eight stage.

At last, it was time for the second fight, the highlight of the day.

Shangguan Longyin stood up in the VIP Stand. With a single step, he walked into the air, and in another step, he landed on the tournament stage.

“This upcoming fight will determine which is the final team to advance to the top eight stage. Since this is such an important fight, this old man will personally be the judge for it. Heavenly Bow Battle Team versus Dan Dun Battle Team. Teams, please send out your first fighter.”

Towards Shangguan Longyin actually taking on the role of judge for this fight, no one had expected it. For the Dan Dun Battle Team, the leading youths’ expressions turned ugly. However, for the Heavenly Bow Battle Team, Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly.

This was a relatively good favour from the ZhongTian Empire! Why was Shangguan Longyin personally being the judge for this

fight? With his cultivation level, he could naturally prevent any unwanted deaths. From any angle, this was of no detriment to the Heavenly Bow Empire.

Walking out of the Rest House, Zhou Weiqing did not have any intention of seeking popularity by doing anything sensational. On the other side, the first member to represent the Dan Dun Battle Team had already walked out and jumped onto the stage. From her position, she just saw Zhou Weiqing walking up the stage.

The team member representing the Dan Dun Battle Team was Zhou Weiqing's old foe, the ex team leader of the last Dan Dun Battle Team, Shen Little Demon.

When he saw Shen Little Demon, Zhou Weiqing gave a wide grin, as if it was all within his grasp.

Zhou Weiqing had long guessed that the Dan Dun Battle Team would not underestimate his side. As such, they would definitely send out a powerhouse for the first fight, but not their team leader. As such, he estimated that either Shen Little Demon or the vice leader would be the one in the first fight.

The facts had proved that Zhou Weiqing was right. This time, the reason he decided to fight first was to take a victory from one of their top few powerhouses.

In the preliminary stages, besides the 2v2 fights, every member could only fight once. To be able to take down one of the enemy's powerhouse was definitely something Zhou Weiqing wanted to do.

Seeing that it was Zhou Weiqing, Shen Little Demon's eyes lit up with two fiery red gold flames, a powerful fighting spirit rising up in her as her aura burst forth towards Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing totally ignored her aura, as if he could not feel a thing. Laughing heartily, he said: "No need to be so anxious, Lady Shen, or are you afraid?"

Shen Little Demon glared coldly at Zhou Weiqing, her hands

balled in fists as she said solemnly: “Three years ago, the humiliation that you granted me, I will definitely return to you today.”

Zhou Weiqing ignored her instead, turning to Shangguan Longyin, bowing respectfully as he said: “Greetings, Senior Shangguan.”

Shangguan Longyin smiled faintly and said: “No need for such formalities.”

Zhou Weiqing sighed faintly, saying: “Senior Shangguan, looks like I made a terrible mistake in helping someone heal the poison in the previous tournament! This time, if something like that happens again, I apologise in advance for not giving you face. Please do not blame me for that.”

Shangguan Longyin smiled faintly and said: “I owe you one for that.” His words, only Zhou Weiqing could understand, and even Shen Little Demon looked rather confused. Clearly, Shangguan Longyin had already known about how Zhou Weiqing and Tian’er had healed Yu Yun. It was also because of this matter that this ZhongTian Empire Skill Storing Palace Master was so dissatisfied with the Dan Dun Battle Team. In the past, when they had been poisoned, he had helped them get the antidote. However, when he had asked for a favour back, they had refused to heal Yu Yun. This would forever be imprinted deeply in Shangguan Longyin’s memory.

“Both sides, introduce yourselves.” The procedure of the tournament still had to be followed.

Zhou Weiqing grinned wickedly at Shen Little Demon, saying: “Heavenly Bow Battle Team, Zhou Weiqing.”

Shen Little Demon continued glaring at him coldly: “Dan Dun Battle Team, Shen Little Demon.”

Right at Shangguan Longyin was about to proclaim the start of

the fight, Zhou Weiqing suddenly interrupted him. “Senior Shangguan, I have a question I need to clarify before we start the fight.”

“What is it?” Shangguan Longyin looked at Zhou Weiqing’s serious expression, and his heart twitched inside. When this fellow had that kind of serious, officious expression, it was likely he was trying to scheme against someone. Previously, when they were in the Heaven’s Expanse Palace, facing the Palace Master, he was also like that... in the end... that Immortal Deity Technique of his.....

Zhou Weiqing said: “For the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, is there any restrictions on flying? Does it mean as long [as we do not leave the zone above the stage, it should be fine](#)?”

Shangguan Longyin nodded and said: “Exactly.”

Zhou Weiqing grinned widely at Shen Little Demon, revealing a row of perfect white teeth. “Alright, then I have no further questions.”

Shen Little Demon suddenly had a sinking feeling, but she did not have the chance to think deeply before Shangguan Longyin proclaimed the start of the fight.

Foomp Golden red flames sprang forth from Shen Little Demon’s body instantly. Her Elemental Jewels were the Light and Fire Attribute, and as soon as she came up, she fused her two attributes into Light Flames. At the same time, she summoned all seven of her Consolidated Equipment, the powerful pressure and temperature of the flames causing the entire stage to become a sea of flames.

“Three years ago, you couldn’t defeat me. Three years today, how can you possibly defeat me? Surrender now, lest you lose in an ugly fashion later.”

Zhou Weiqing stood there, unmoving, but the burning Light Flames could not get within a radius of three chi from him.

Shen Little Demon looked at him coldly, the Consolidated Equipment around her had turned the same golden red. She did not conceal her strong killing intent as she said: “Die!”

The massive Light Flames formed into the shape of a phoenix, swooping crazily at Zhou Weiqing.

However, in the next instant, she lost sight of Zhou Weiqing totally.

In a flash of silver, Zhou Weiqing appeared in midair, more than ten metres above ground. It was his Blink Skill. At the same time, his palms pressed downwards, activating the Silver Emperor Lightning Pierce. However, it was not targeted at Shen Little Demon, instead causing his body to pull upwards abruptly, thrown higher into the sky.

It's pretty complicated this one – another literal translation. The basic meaning is one has to sacrifice something / pay the price in order to reach their goals. The phrase originates from an old dialect phrase which is actually sacrifice one's boots to catch the wolves? In that dialect, the word for boot and child is the same, and somehow across time when it was transferred to mandarin, the phrase became the current incarnation, but the overall meaning remains the same

Not sure if its phrased in an understandable fashion. Basically means he can fly above the stage, but not out of the confines

Chapter 219 Shen Little Demon's Destruction Fire Phoenix! (3)

At the same time, the giant wings unfurled from behind Zhou Weiqing's back, flapping abruptly. His entire body rose up like an arrow shot from a bow, and within moments he was more than a hundred metres above ground.

Looking down from such a height of more than a hundred metres, Shen Little Demon on the stage was barely a black dot the size of an ant. Zhou Weiqing spread his wings, stopping just like that in midair, an evil laughter traveling down from above. "Come on! Come hit me then! What are you waiting for?!"

Shen Little Demon missed her first blow, and by the time she realised it, Zhou Weiqing was already far up in the skies. In that instant, even she couldn't help but stare up, stunned. Previously when she met Zhou Weiqing in the northern borders, he did not have the ability to fly yet! Furthermore, at that time he was already 'full' on Consolidated Equipment, even if he raised his cultivation level to the sixth stage, he shouldn't be able to Consolidate a pair of wings! How did those wings come about?

Zhou Weiqing did not care about what Shen Little Demon was thinking about, casually lounging in the air as he released his Overlord Bow, muttering to himself: "Just shooting a live target, not much of a challenge huh!" His 'muttering' was just a tad too loud, so much so that the entire audience could hear him clearly.

It was quite rare that a Heavenly Jewel Master would choose to Consolidate a pair of Wings. After all, it would influence their overall combat prowess. It was definitely more commonly seen for Physical Jewel Masters.

In this year's Heavenly Jewel Tournament, this was the first time that someone with wings had appeared, giving the common audience a very interesting sight, as if their eyes had been freshly

opened.

A shrill, earsplitting shriek rang out above in the skies, as Zhou Weiqing's first arrow shot towards Shen Little Demon.

Shen Little Demon gave an angry humph, punching towards the air. A massive explosion, as Zhou Weiqing's energy arrow was shattered.

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: "Block then, let's see how many arrows you can block." As he said that, he continued firing away with his Overlord Bow, with his Rapid Fire Archery, as if he was a cat playing with a mouse.

In the ZhongTian Battle Team rest house, Shangguan Fei'er was already laughing so hard that she almost collapsed. "That fellow is just too evil, to think of such a method. Sis, what if he uses such a method against you? Luckily, he surrendered to us..."

Shangguan Xue'er said exasperatedly: "That's what we have you for right? Furthermore, with my sword intent, I can fly temporarily."

Shangguan Fei'er giggled as she said: "Even then, you wouldn't have the confidence in knocking him down. His archery is accurate in a thousand metre range. Previously, when he first had the idea of creating the Peerless Battalion, he already came up with this plan to bully his enemies from the skies. Such an evil fellow hehe."

Shangguan Fei'er was laughing at her side, but on the stage, Shen Little Demon was fully enraged.

If Zhou Weiqing clashed with her head on, both sides unleashing their biggest skills, even if she lost in the end, it would not feel so bad. However, in this current situation, Zhou Weiqing had already put himself in an impregnable position. With those arrows shooting down at her so rapidly, she did not know what the drain on Zhou Weiqing's Heavenly Energy was, but it was definitely a massive drain on her. That was because she did not know which

arrow he shot out would be imbued with Skills.

Originally, even that Heavenly King stage powerhouse from the Blood Red Hell had been blindsided by Zhou Weiqing's arrows, losing an arm. How could she dare to be careless against him? In such a circumstance, her Heavenly Energy was being expended too quickly, at a much higher rate than Zhou Weiqing.

“Bastard! If you have the ability, come down and slug it out with me!” Shen Little Demon yelled into the skies.

Zhou Weiqing rolled his eyes and said: “Are you an idiot? I am already in an advantageous position, why should I slug it out with you? What is the point? If you have the ability, come up here!”

“Bastard!” Originally, Shen Little Demon was already filled with hate for Zhou Weiqing. Now that she was in such a disadvantaged state from such an approach, how could she take it?

Abruptly raising her head, Shen Little Demon's eyes suddenly flashed with a thick purple. A deep breath, and her hands raised towards the skies. Instantly, the gold-red flames on the stage rose up, forming a massive fire pillar. Besides the original Light Flames, there was a strangely crazy aura.

Standing at the corner of the stage, Shangguan Longyin could clearly sense the terrifying power within that column. He thought to himself, it's that Destruction Attribute again!

However, he was not too worried about Zhou Weiqing's safety. That year, he had just been a mere three-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master when he faced up against Shen Little Demon... let alone now when he was at the Zun Stage.

In midair, Zhou Weiqing's mouth curved into a cold smirk. Although he was more than a hundred metres from the stage, with his vision, how could he not see the flash of purple in Shen Little Demon's eyes? Destruction Attribute... come on then, give me a taste of it!

A shrill and forceful piercing sound. No one knew what secret arts Shen Little Demon used, and a fire phoenix coalesced above her, one zhang long and with a similar wingspan.

Zhou Weiqing shot a few exploratory arrows, but before they could even reach that strange fire phoenix, they evaporated into nothing.

Although the fire phoenix was not too large, not even comparable to the first attack which Shen Little Demon had shot out at Zhou Weiqing, any discerning audience could tell how terrifying and destructive this Skill would be.

Behind Shen Little Demon, a dark red illusory figure of another fire phoenix subtly appeared. This was clearly a powerful Skill which had a Heavenly Skill Image.

When Zhou Weiqing saw the illusory image, a strange sensation entered his heart. Having entered the Dragon-Tiger Transformation state, it greatly enhanced his Icy Cold Perception. This sensation told him that this Skill that Shen Little Demon had unleashed... using the clash of Heavenly Skill Images would be useless against it. That was to say, even if he unleashed a Heavenly Skill Image against it now, it would not disrupt Shen Little Demon's Skill.

Could it be because of the Destruction Attribute? This Destruction Attribute seemed to be far above any ordinary Saint Attribute, not even as simple as being fused from Saint Attributes.

That fire phoenix above Shen Little Demon was like an actual entity, every feather could be clearly seen. Its entire body was a gold red colour, which caused the entire air around it to be continually warped and distorted. What Zhou Weiqing noticed most was that this fire phoenix had such a pair of bright purple eyes, making it look even more alive.

In the process of forming the Skill, a unique aura gathered around Shen Little Demon's body. Even the stage below her was

slowly sinking... perhaps more accurately, it was dissolving.

As for Shen Little Demon, her face was growing paler. Even with her seven-Jeweled cultivation level, it looked like it was extremely difficult for her to maintain this Skill.

Puuu Shen Little Demon spat out a mouthful of blood and flame. Indeed, blood and flame. As it sprayed onto the Destruction Fire Phoenix in front of her, she crumpled to the ground, and the Fire Phoenix seemed to change instantly. Its gold red body abruptly turned a blood red, shrinking rapidly until it was about half its original size. However, it had truly coalesced into nearly a crystalline statue like realism.

“Die, Zhou Weiqing! Destruction Fire Phoenix, Scorch the Earth!” As Shen Little Demon spat out the words, the Fire Phoenix gave off a bright call, flying directly towards Zhou Weiqing swiftly.

Currently, Shangguan Longyin’s expression was filled with shock. Was this girl crazy? That last mouthful she spat out was not just her Natal Core Fire, but also her Natal Core Blood. Her attack might have been strengthened greatly, but at least within a year or more, she would not be able to recover. This was the definition of ‘Killing an enemy by one thousand, losing out by eight hundred! From that alone, one could tell how much she hated Zhou Weiqing.

In mid air, Zhou Weiqing’s expression also changed. The Destruction Fire Phoenix had locked onto him, and his senses towards this terrifying Skill was naturally the deepest.

“This crazy woman. Your Father, I, did not carry her children and jump into a well, did she have to go so far...”

Zhou Weiqing scolded softly, but dared not delay any further. Instantly, the wings behind his back flapped hard, carrying himself higher and higher. Of course, this was not an attempt to deplete the power of the Fire Phoenix, as he knew that was impossible.

Having gained nourishment from Shen Little Demon's Natal Core Fire and Natal Core Blood, it was as if the Destruction Fire Phoenix came to life, definitely not giving up before accomplishing its task. Furthermore, its energy was contained within, and it could even draw upon the atmospheric Fire Attribute Energy to replenish itself, without worrying it would run out of energy. The act of flying higher now by Zhou Weiqing was just to buy himself time to properly react.

A silver white light flashed in Zhou Weiqing's eyes, and his hands extended on both sides of his body. His left hand turned silver, and his right green, as a thick Wind Attribute and Spatial Attribute Heavenly Energy gathered around his respective hands, compressing together.

Zhou Weiqing's flying speed was extremely fast, but his hands were moving extremely slowly, as they pressed against each other.

The Destruction Fire Phoenix was extremely fast as well, and where it passed, pitch black cracks were left in the air. Although they quickly closed behind it, the sheer fact it could leave cracks in the space as it passed, was enough to shock everyone.

Finally, Zhou Weiqing's hands grasped together. In that instant, a strange sight occurred.

In midair, Zhou Weiqing's entire body exploded forth with a weird aura, a thick green and silver light gathering before his chest, forming a massive ball of light. At the same time, behind Zhou Weiqing, a faint silver image gathered.

It looked like a bird as well, but compared to the Destruction Fire Phoenix, it was much smaller. Due to the fact that Zhou Weiqing was so far up in the sky, very few could actually see clearly what that bird was.

Naturally, Shangguan Longyin was not one of them. In his heart, he exclaimed in surprise: Silver Emperor! That illusory image behind Zhou Weiqing... it's the Silver Emperor?!

If the illusory image behind Zhou Weiqing's back was a giant dragon, it would not have given him such a shock. After all, a dragon was a Heavenly God Tier Heavenly Beast, and it was normal to have a Heavenly Skill Image. However, the Silver Emperor was merely a Heavenly King Stage Heavenly Beast! He had never heard of a Silver Emperor having any Skill that could bring forth the Heavenly Skill Image. As the Skill Storing Palace Master, Shangguan Longyin was extremely familiar to many various Stored Skills. In the entire mainland, there might be people more powerful than him, but almost no one else would dare say they knew more than him about Stored Skills!

What... This... What is going on? Shangguan Longyin's heart was filled with shock, and he could no longer understand what Zhou Weiqing was doing.

Chapter 220 Creation! Silver Emperor! (1)

The Heavenly Skill Image of the Silver Emperor behind Zhou Weiqing's back slowly drifted to the front, and just like that it began to merge with the green-silver ball of light in front of him. This merging caused the silver light around Zhou Weiqing's hand to brighten drastically, warping in an even stranger change.

As soon as his hands grasped together, the green-silver ball of light seemed to come to life. With violent reverberations, Zhou Weiqing's entire body erupted with a powerful green and silver light. However, since he was so high up in the sky, no one else could see that his eyes had turned a full silver-white.

Zhou Weiqing's arms shook abruptly, and his hands slowly spread apart again. A tiny bird, fully silver in colour, appeared before him.

"Silver Emperor?!" Even with Shangguan Longyin's status and power, when he saw what Zhou Weiqing had done, he couldn't help but exclaim out loud, unable to restrain himself.

What Zhou Weiqing had done had toppled everything he thought he knew. He... he had actually used his own Heavenly Energy to coalesce a Silver Emperor!

The scariest thing was... this Silver Emperor was clearly not just an image. As soon as it appeared, with Shangguan Longyin's powerful senses, he could clearly sense a powerful life force from that Silver Emperor, far stronger than the Destruction Fire Phoenix.

If he had to point out a difference between this energy-formed Silver Emperor and an actual Silver Emperor Heavenly Beast, it would be the colour of the eyes.

As a Heavenly King stage Heavenly Beast, the Silver Emperor had red eyes. However, for this Silver Emperor that Zhou Weiqing had

formed, its eyes were a silver-white. Even so, as compared to an actual Silver Emperor, this energy-formed bird seemed to have a divine aura about it, as if it were above

“Go.” Zhou Weiqing said softly, pointing his right hand downwards. The Silver Emperor before him cried out in a clear, bright cry, streaking down like a bolt of silver lightning towards the Destruction Fire Phoenix that was larger than it several dozen times over.

Even Shangguan Longyin could not tell what Zhou Weiqing had unleashed, let alone the others. In truth, Zhou Weiqing and Shen Little Demon’s battle had not started for a long time, but anyone could tell that this was one of the most exciting battles for the current Heavenly Jewel Tournament, at least up until now. Both sides had unleashed Skills that were far above any ordinary Stored Skills, and the power that they displayed was definitely far beyond the six or seven Jewels they showed on the surface.

A faint smile caused Zhou Weiqing’s mouth to form a wicked smirk.

His entire plan had been to force Shen Little Demon to use her Destruction Attribute. Otherwise, how could he learn more about the profound secrets behind the Destruction Attribute?

Light and Fire... could these two Attributes fused together form the Destruction Attribute? No matter what, Zhou Weiqing could never believe that. Even if they were fused together, these two Attributes would be pure and upright, how could it be like the Destructive Attribute?

What was the Silver Emperor’s strongest Skill? Without a question, it was the Dual Attribute Skill Silver Emperor Spatial Rend, a fusion Skill of the Silver Emperor Wing Slash and the Spatial Rend. Currently, the Silver Emperor swooping down was exactly unleashing that very Skill, forming a piercing green silver light that collided instantly to the Destruction Fire Phoenix.

Hisss Laaa A strange sound rang out, as if a red hot soldering iron had a bucket of ice water poured on it.

In mid air, the light dimmed abruptly, as if the sun's light was being suppressed.

They could clearly see a silver light fly into the head of the blood red Destruction Fire Phoenix, charging right down. Wherever it reached, it started breaking apart the entire body of the Destruction Fire Phoenix, and the green-silver body also began to shrink slowly as it charged down lower.

There was no violent explosions, but the terrifying energy reverberations in the skies could be clearly sensed by any Jewel Masters. Many watchers were secretly feeling lucky that this clash was in the skies; if it were on ground level, who knows what would have happened.

Creation. Once again, Zhou Weiqing had used the Saint Energy's Creation, with the price of five drops of Saint Energy, to unleash the fusion Skill Silver Emperor Spatial Rend, coalescing the actual Silver Emperor. Ever since he had done so with the Hell's Angel, he had been experimenting in repeating the process with other Skills.

Without question, the power of this Skill was far above the original Silver Emperor Spatial Rend. With the power of the Saint Energy, the Destruction Attribute was being totally suppressed.

Zhou Weiqing had left a strand of his own spiritual energy in that coalesced Silver Emperor, allowing him to sense the energy reverberations and fluctuations of the Destruction Fire Phoenix, and any myriad changes it might have. He discovered that this Destruction Attribute energy had a crazy dissolving or disassembling effect on any other Attribute. Only the Saint Energy was able to resist this dissolving effect, but it wasn't able to gain too much advantage either.

Of course, on the reverse side, the Destruction Attribute was also left helpless in front of the Saint Energy. It was destruction, and

the Saint Energy was creation. Both sides were not even on the same level.

Just from visual effect alone, when that single wisp of green-silver light pierced and traveled right through the Destruction Fire Phoenix before disappearing stealthily, the Destruction Fire Phoenix looked as if it had been sliced into two from the middle before falling apart totally. Only Zhou Weiqing could clearly sense that in terms of pure strength of energy, his Silver Emperor was actually lesser than the Destruction Fire Phoenix. The reason he could destroy it was actually because of the core of the Destruction Fire Phoenix. Once the core of the Destruction Attribute had been destroyed, it had lost its soul, not allowing its full power to be unleashed. In that terrifying collision, both the powerful Skills disappeared just like that.

“No... that’s not possible!” Pale and ashen, Shen Little Demon was barely standing with sheer exhaustion on the stage, her eyes staring up in total disbelief and shock. No matter what, she could not believe that what had happened in front of her eyes was true. Due to her fatigue, she had not been able to see clearly what Zhou Weiqing had done, only seeing a flash of silver before he Destruction Fire Phoenix vanished.

As the Destruction Fire Phoenix held her Natal Core Flame and Natal Core Blood, when it vanished, she couldn’t help but involuntarily vomit out another mouth of fresh blood.

When she unleashed that Skill, her goal had been to fight to the bitter end, to kill Zhou Weiqing no matter the price she had to pay. In her eyes, Zhou Weiqing would not be able to take this blow of hers. These three years, she had spent every single day training as hard as she could, putting her entire life into it. In the entire younger generation, she was one of the only three who had gained the Destruction Attribute. In order to do so, she had paid such a heavy price, withstood an unbelievable amount of pain and hardship, worked so hard in order to succeed. This time, coming to

the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, she had not imagined that she would run into Zhou Weiqing again. However, the moment she saw him, the sparks of hatred within her had been reignited, causing her to unleash such a powerful killing Skill without holding anything back. Her only goal was to kill Zhou Weiqing.

It could be said that the past three years of labour and toil for Shen Little Demon had been warped into that Destruction Fire Phoenix. Yet, all of it had been just destroyed so easily by Zhou Weiqing.

Trembling as her body barely stood, Shen Little Demon grit her teeth, once again lifting her hand. She could not accept it, would not accept it! Even if she had to use her last bit of strength and life, she would destroy Zhou Weiqing!

“Enough.” A cold voice rang out. The next instant, the voice said solemnly: “Senior Shangguan, the first round, our Dan Dun Battle Team admits defeat.”

Accompanying the voice was a figure who appeared onto the stage in a flash, gracefully holding onto Shen Little Demon’s waist as he brought her back down the stage.

“Let me go, let me go, I haven’t lost yet. He has to be just as spent as I am. Bro Feng, I cannot accept it, let me kill him, please!”

“Calm down.” The one who had carried Shen Little Demon off the stage was the Dan Dun Battle Team Leader, the youth with the cold expression. He did not hesitate to give her a slap, before enveloping her in a full embrace.

“Your shame and humiliation, I will help you take revenge. However, you must survive and stay alive. You are already severely injured, with your vitality sapped to the limit. If you continue fighting, you will definitely die. The day you married me, your body no longer belongs to just yourself.”

After saying that, he gently laid Shen Little Demon onto one of

the chairs in the Rest House. Turning, he looked upon Zhou Weiqing who was slowly descending from the skies onto the stage, his eyes filled with cold light.

His name was TianFeng, the true top genius of the Blood Red Hell younger generation. He was also the son of the Blood Red Hell Master. As for Shen Little Demon, she was the Princess of the Dan Dun Empire Royal Family. Although her status in the Blood Red Hell was very high, it could not be compared with TianFeng. In this year's Heavenly Jewel Tournament, for TianFeng to personally lead their team, it could be said that they were determined to achieve victory at all costs.

Naturally, TianFeng had heard about everything that had happened in the previous Heavenly Jewel Tournament from Shen Little Demon, down to every little detail. This time, since they had met with another Battle Team led by Zhou Weiqing, though TianFeng was always so calm and collected, the competitive spirit in his heart was hidden but stronger than anyone else.

Zhou Weiqing stood on the stage, looking towards the Dan Dun Battle Team Rest House. Laughing heartily, he said: "Ahhh, the Dan Dun Battle Team has the Blood Red Hell at its back, and I originally thought your fighting spirit would be not bad. Who knew you would admit defeat just like that, how disappointing, how disappointing."

"Bro, let me fight in the second round. I will take revenge for Sister in Law." The one who spoke up now was the second youth, seated at TianFeng's right hand side. He was TianMa, TianFeng's younger brother, and his strength was above Shen Little Demon, second only to TianFeng. Clearly, he had been provoked and angered by Zhou Weiqing.

TianFeng looked at Zhou Weiqing on the stage, as if he disdained to speak to him. Nodding to TianMa, he said: "Only victory is allowed. Do not lose."

TianMa nodded. He did not even wait for Zhou Weiqing to descend the stage, and in a flash he leaped up the stage.

TianFeng gave a cold smirk inwardly. Zhou Weiqing, you might be strong, but you are only a single person. Do you really think that you can stop my Dan Dun Battle Team just by yourself? Later, in the 2v2 match, I will let you remain on the stage... forever.

Chapter 220 Creation! Silver Emperor! (2)

In his eyes, the only person in the entire Heavenly Bow Battle Team that could enter his eyes and let him pay attention to was just Zhou Weiqing, and he totally ignored the others. They had already lost the first round, and the Dan Dun Battle Team could not afford to lose another round. His pride would not allow the Dan Dun Battle Team to be behind by two to zero, not even for strategy's sake. Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing had already fought, and in his eyes, it was a certain victory for his little brother TianMa in any one versus one situation.

As for the two versus two fight, naturally that was even more of an assured victory to him, since he would be participating personally. Although Zhou Weiqing had given him some surprises when he had fought in the first match, to TianFeng the overall result could only be a 3 to 1 victory for the Dan Dun Battle Team.

As soon as TianMa ascended the stage, with a swooshing sound, a pair of wings spread behind his back. His wings looked very different from Zhou Weiqing's, smaller and thinner, more like a pair of bat wings. The tips of his wings were sharp, looking to be lined by something like bone spikes, causing the entire edge of the wing to be extremely sharp.

Looking coldly at Zhou Weiqing who was preparing to walk off the stage, TianMa said coldly: "If not for the rules of the Tournament not allowing you to fight again, I would kill you this match."

Zhou Weiqing looked at him with a warm smile, but his mouth was just as evil as ever. "I'm so afraid! Come and bite me then? Oh, no, that's not right, someone like you should have too many diseases. Later I'll send you a little tortoise and you can slowly play with it and bite on it."

"Bastard!" TianMa was enraged, and in a flash he pounced

towards Zhou Weiqing.

However, the only thing that met him was a thick layer of Heavenly Energy blocking him. Shangguan Longyin stood in the distance, his face stern as he said: “No breaking of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament rules. Heavenly Bow Battle Team, send your second fighter to the stage.”

“Yes, Senior Shangguan.” Zhou Weiqing replied honestly, but as he did so he still pointed a middle finger towards TianMa before jumping off the stage lightly.

The brothers TianFeng and TianMa were the representative of the younger generation in the Blood Red Hell, just like how Shangguan Xue'er and Zhan LingTian were for the Heaven's Expanse Palace, or how Tian'er and Gu Yingbing were for the Heavenly Snow Mountain. Naturally, they had a similar status as well. From young, they had been cultivating hard, but that also meant they did not have much worldly experience... how could they have met such a situation and face such low brow mockery? Instantly, TianMa was further enraged, but unfortunately for him, Shangguan Longyin was there blocking him, and he couldn't lash out no matter how much he wanted to.

Returning to their Rest House, Zhou Weiqing gave a signal to Ma Qun, who gave a wicked grin. This time, he did not wear his Heavy Armour, just leaping up onto the stage immediately.

Seated at the side, Yun Li muttered out loud: “I have decided, no matter what I will not offend you in the future. You are just too evil.”

Zhou Weiqing looked at him innocently: “You can't blame me for that, who asked the Dan Dun Empire to act so overbearing in the south. More importantly, having such connections with the Bai Da Empire? Against enemies, we can never be merciful, sweeping them away with all our might, like the autumn wind sweeps away the withered leaves.”

...

Ma Qun's massive body appeared on the stage once more. For the entire Heavenly Bow Battle Team, if one were to think about who had the most appearances on the stage, it would be him and Xixi, who had fought almost every single round.

Seeing Ma Qun ascend the stage, Shangguan Longyin couldn't help but furrow his brow. Having placed much importance and attention to the Heavenly Bow Battle Team, he naturally knew the power of this huge youth in front of him. Although he had managed to sneakily kill the Bai Da Battle Team Leader, that did not mean he had the equivalent power. Perhaps this youth had much potential within him, but at his current state, he could not compare to TianMa at all.

After releasing his wings, TianMa also revealed his Heavenly Jewels. Seven sets. Low Level Zong Stage Heavenly Jewel Masters. Furthermore, with Shangguan Longyin's senses, he could naturally tell that this TianMa was already at the later stages of the seven-Jeweled stage, not too far from reaching the eight-Jeweled stage. One could imagine his power. Furthermore, his Physical Jewel was the Agility Type, while his Elemental Jewel was Alexandrite. That meant, he had at least two Attributes to work with. That was not even counting the possibility of the Destruction Attribute. With such an overall power, how could Ma Qun and his four Jeweled cultivation level face up against him?

However, rules were rules. Since the Heavenly Bow Battle Team had already sent Ma Qun to fight, Shangguan Longyin could not intervene in a personal fashion to force them to change their fighter. In a solemn tone, he said: "Both sides, introduce yourselves."

Ma Qun grinned and said casually: "Heavenly Bow Battle Team, Ma Qun."

TianMa's cold eyes were filled with the light of bloodlust as he

snarled: “Dan Dun Battle Team, TianMa.”

Just as Shangguan Longyin was about to proclaim the start of the fight, Ma Qun suddenly lifted a hand in a ‘stop’ gesture. “Senior Shangguan, please hold on a moment. I have something important to say.”

Shangguan Longyin asked: “Does it have something to do with the tournament?”

Ma Qun laughed heartily and said: “Of course, it definitely has a strong link.”

Only then did Shangguan Longyin nod and say: “Alright then, speak up quickly. Don’t waste time.”

Ma Qun bowed respectfully towards Shangguan Longyin and thanked him, before he turned his gaze to TianMa. He then proceeded in an action that both Shangguan Longyin and TianMa did not understand – his hands to his hips, taking a deep breath.

In the next moment, Ma Qun’s voice boomed out from the stage like a machine gun firing, the volume of his voice was so much that the surrounding battle team members in their rest houses could all hear it.

“Your name is TianMa right? Why aren’t you called [ZhongMa](#) instead? Look at you, as tall and beautiful as a jade tree, so handsome and suave, such a playboy style, everyone would fall for you upon looking at you, even the flowers would bloom as you walked past... I’m sure you are the top quality amongst all trash, beasts amongst the beasts. Furthermore, according to my keen observations, you must have been lacking calcium since a young age, growing up to look like you lack love, even your grandmother doesn’t love you, your uncles do not love you.

Your left face is asking to be slapped, your right face asking to be brutally stepped upon. Even a donkey would feel like kicking you, a pig would feel like stomping on you. You are born to be like a

cucumber, to be beaten! Yet, you have grown up to be like a walnut, to be ground to dust! Look, look, look, your little face is so skinny, like a pig! If we threw you into a toilet bowl now, even the toilet bowl would vomit. If we threw you into a Spatial Rend, the Spatial Rend would commit suicide and blow up!

Siighhh, look and see what you have done, this Great Young Master wants to teach you to use the knife, but you just insist on learning the sword, but you don't learn the sword properly, instead always using the '[down sword](#)'. There are so many styles of your 'down sword', yet you insist on learning the '[Drunken Sword](#)', instead of the 'Gold Sword', you learn the '[Silver Sword](#)'! I think you can just learn the '[Drunken Silver Sword](#)'!

You could have been a sword saint, or a sword immortal, alas you cried and insisted on being a '[sword man](#)'! Really... there is no need for you to do so. Even though your looks are like that, you should live on with courage! Even so, you do not need to use your buttocks to cover your face! I wanted to see you speaking, but why did you bury your face in your buttocks? Oh? I am so sorry, I did not know that is your actual face, then where are your buttocks? Why are your buttocks so red? Are you a monkey?

Sigh... in truth, living is a waste of air for you, but if you die you are also wasting earth to bury you, staying at home you are wasting gold for your family, how how how? You might as well urinate into a pool and drown yourself in it?"

After saying that entire long sentence, Ma Qun took an abrupt deep breath. He had rattled it all off without even taking a breath, and his entire face was now red from lack of oxygen, but he still stuck his chest out in a righteous look, as if he was a great hero who was speaking the truth of the world, sacrificing himself to save the citizens from a great evil.

After finishing all of that, he looked towards TianMa and Shangguan Longyin, who were both staring at him, stunned silly. Bowing towards Shangguan Longyin, he said: "I surrender." After

which, he turned around in a suave fashion, walking off the stage.

In Ma Qun's rapid fire speech earlier, his words had been spewed out at an unbelievable speech. Since when had TianMa seen anyone speak like that before? By the time he came to his senses, his entire mind was filled with the mass of chaotic nonsense that Ma Qun had rattled off.

What was a state attained... scolding without any curse words, this was a true attainment of state. In this entire rapid fire speech of Ma Qun's, he rambled on about so many different things in scolding TianMa, but he had not uttered a single curse word

"Bas... Bastard!" TianMa did not know how to scold others, truly. From young, he had grown up in the Great Saint Lands, and in there, who would dare to scold others? Let alone in front of him? By the time he recovered his senses, he was in such a rage that he felt like his lungs were about to burst.

A thick gold-red flames with an astonishingly brilliant hue of purple smashed crazily towards Ma Qun.

Puuu

The thick Heavenly Energy shield appeared once more, forcefully blocking TianMa's attack. No matter how powerful TianMa's Destruction Attribute was, the gap between Zong Stage and Heavenly King Stage was just too immense, not something they could cross so easily.

In truth, when Shangguan Longyin blocked this attack, his eyes were twitching uncontrollably. Even he had the urge to smash Ma Qun with a single palm himself, let alone the target of the scolding, Ma Qun. Disgusting, that was just too disgusting. That big fellow had clearly just come up here to tease TianMa, scolding him before instantly surrendering. No wonder... no wonder Zhou Weiqing would send a mere four-Jeweled little fellow against TianMa! Zhou Weiqing ahhh Zhou Weiqing, you are truly shameless to the utmost degree!

Another Puuu sounds, and TianMa vomited out a mouth of fresh blood. His eyes were bloodshot as his entire body shuddered violently. He pointed towards the Heavenly Bow Battle Team Rest House, but he could not speak a single word.

That mouthful of blood was not because of the backlash from Shangguan Longyin's blocking of his attack. As the head judge of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, Shangguan Longyin would never do such a thing. It was clearly because he had been just too angered by Ma Qun and Zhou Weiqing!

Back in the Heavenly Bow Battle Team rest house, Crow was staring at Zhou Weiqing with her jaw agape. "Boss, this... this... you taught Ma Qun that?"

Zhou Weiqing stood with arms crossed, calm and at ease, as if he was a lofty presence in the wind. "This is called strategy. Sigh, I also did not wish for this to happen. Who asked him to be the second to fight? In truth, I was just doing an experiment, I needed to test if the old saying 'Angered to death' can really be true? Alas, the facts have proved themselves, we have failed. Look, that fellow didn't die right?"

Tian'er and Xixi were clutching their stomachs, laughing helplessly at the side. On the other hand, Yun Li was covering his face, as if ashamed to be seen together with Zhou Weiqing.

PENG Ma Qun had jumped down from the stage, an excited look on his face. "Ahhhh, that felt good, so good! Boss, you are truly a genius! I will definitely memorise those words so I can use them in the future! Ahhh! No, I forgot!"

Stud Horse

下贱 vs '下剑' homonym pun. The former is being 'low' or degrading, while the other is literally 'down' and 'sword'

homonym – slang to acting lewdly while drunk

homonym – being a slut

I don't think there's an exact meaning, he just combined the two
lol

‘Little bitch’

Chapter 220 Creation! Silver Emperor! (3)

That last startled exclamation drew everyone's gaze to him, and as they looked at him curiously, Ma Qun said gravely, full of regret: "I forgot to give a loud fart before I went down..."

Zhou Weiqing gave him a kick, sending him to the side as he scolded laughingly: "That was not what I taught you! This big bro here is not so shameless!"

Including Tian'er, the entire Heavenly Bow Battle Team gave Zhou Weiqing a contemptuous look.

On the stage, another figure had appeared. TianFeng stood next to TianMa, one hand on his shoulders, helping him nurse his chaotic Heavenly Energy due to his rage.

"Calm down. The humiliation they have given us, we will pay back ten times, hundred times more. There is no point raging pointlessly now. Senior Shangguan, the third match, both of us will be the fighters."

Shangguan Longyin looked at Tianfeng and nodded in agreement. However, he felt his heart grip inwardly. This TianFeng was much calmer and more stable, far beyond his brother TianMa, especially that cold calculation that lay in his bones. It was clear that he was narrow minded person who would seek vengeance for any minor grievances, but one who could complete control his emotions. Such a person was far more dangerous and deadly than his strength alone could account for.

With his brother's help, TianMa managed to gradually calm down, his Heavenly Energy also easing up. However, the bloodshot red in his eyes did not withdraw, clearly he truly hated the entire Heavenly Bow Battle Team now.

Shangguan Longyin said: "Dan Dun Battle Team against the Heavenly Bow Battle Team. Two versus Two. Third match. Both

sides, please send your fighters up the stage.

In a flash, two figures appeared from the Heavenly Bow Battle Team, hand in hand. Tian'er had already removed her bamboo hat, revealing her beautiful features.

When Zhou Weiqing held her hands and they ascended the stage, instantly the phrase 'fresh flower stuck on bull crap' and similar phrases crossed all the rest houses.

Looking at Zhou Weiqing, both brothers TianMa and TianFeng's eyes contracted, a powerful killing intent released without any attempt at hiding.

Shangguan Longyin was also secretly surprised in his heart. He knew that this next match was of utmost importance to both sides. Zhou Weiqing had used a four-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master to 'waste' the second strongest powerhouse in the Dan Dun Battle Team, TianMa. Although that had been a loss of a match, in terms of strategy, it was a perfect victory. However, this current 2v2 match was perhaps the most critical one which would decide the outcome between both teams. After all, it was the fight between the strongest of both teams, and it would definitely be the most exciting fight of the entire Heavenly Jewel Tournament thus far. Being the judge for this match, it would not be so easy!

"Zhou Weiqing, today I will tear you into bits!" The rage and venom that TianMa had just suppressed burst free once again, rising up as he saw Zhou Weiqing.

Standing at Zhou Weiqing's side, Tian'er gave a cold humph. "Aren't you afraid of bragging so much you sprain your tongue? A mere Blood Red Hell, and you dare to be so arrogant in front of us."

...

As soon as Tian'er appeared on the stage, the entire WanShou Battle Team members subconsciously dashed out of their rest house. In this year's Heavenly Jewel Tournament, the WanShou

Empire had definitely sent an elite team as well, and since they were mostly from the Heavenly Snow Mountain, how could they not recognize their Young Miss? However, at this point, it was clearly not the time or place to greet her.

At the head, a youth who was clearly the leader couldn't help but mutter to himself: "Now, it looks like that Dan Dun Battle Team will be in trouble after all."

At his side, another youth asked curiously: "Boss, didn't you just say earlier that the Heavenly Bow Battle Team would not be a match for the Dan Dun Battle Team? Young Miss might be powerful, but she is just alone. Her cultivation level may not even be a match for the TianFeng and TianMa brothers right?"

"Zhou Weiqing... that name... don't you all find it familiar at all? Use your brains, why would the Young Miss actually appear here? Haven't you forgotten what happened on the Heavenly Snow Mountain?"

Hearing his words, the entire WanShou Battle Team members' jaws dropped. "He... he is that fellow who came to steal the bride?"

The leader sighed and said: "Indeed! Even Senior Brother Gu was defeated by him... hmph, do you think the brothers TianFeng and TianMa can be compared to Senior Brother Gu? So, the truly dangerous one is not Young Miss, but him. Watch carefully and learn, this will be a true fight between top powerhouses. We are indeed very lucky not to meet the Heavenly Bow Battle Team in the top eight." Clearly, he had already affirmed his belief on who the final team ascending to the top eight would be.

...

On the stage, Shangguan Longyin's expression grew bleak. "Enough, both teams, there is no point fighting with words. Both sides, introduce yourselves."

"Heavenly Bow Battle Team, Zhou Weiqing, Tian'er."

“Dan Dun Battle Team, TianFeng, TianMa.”

Shangguan Longyin swept his gaze across all four of them, before saying: “Know your limits. This is the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, not a life and death fight. Alright, fight, begin.”

With both sides confronting each other with daggers drawn and sabres rattling, in such an aggressive manner, he couldn't help but remind in a line. Of course, he did not have any goodwill towards the Dan Dun Battle Team. However, he did not want to see Zhou Weiqing suffer any loss. Even for him, he did not have a lot of hopes for Zhou Weiqing's success. After all, Zhou Weiqing had just fought against Shen Little Demon, and to unleash that strange Silver Emperor, it should have taken quite a toll on him. The brothers TianFeng and TianMa were not only fresh, but also stronger than Shen Little Demon. Clearly, it would not be an easy fight at all.

Along with Shangguan Longyin's proclamation, the aura and presence that both sides had been holding in and building up smashed into each other instantly. Aura and presence was invisible and intangible, but it could put immense pressure on an opponent's spirit.

If it came to a clash of auras, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er would definitely be able to laugh to the end. Previously, on the Heavenly Snow Mountain, Zhou Weiqing had been able to clash auras with a Heavenly Emperor stage Heavenly Beast with the bloodline pressure. This was a type of clash of auras.

The two brothers TianFeng and TianMa instantly felt a boundless and terrifying pressure, filled with noble grace and royal presence pushing down upon them from Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er. Vaguely, they sensed one black, one white, two massive tigers pouncing towards them.

In that instant, both sides unleashed their Heavenly Jewels. Zhou Weiqing had six sets of Jewels, actually ending up the lowest of the

four. Tian'er was at seven-Jewels, as was TianMa. However, when TianFeng released his Heavenly Jewels, even Zhou Weiqing's pupils narrowed in surprise. He was at the eight-Jeweled stage!

Indeed, TianFeng had released eight pairs of Heavenly Jewels. His Physical Jewels were the Icy Jade of the Strength Attribute, while his Elemental Jewels were also the Alexandrite Jewels of Dual Attributes. Powerful Heavenly Energy mixed into their auras, and the clash resumed.

Both sides did not take action instantly; in this clash of auras, whoever took action first meant their aura and pressure was already at the disadvantage. This would not be a good sign. All of the four were top powerhouses in the younger generation, and they were all able to defeat enemies above their cultivation level. Naturally, they knew very well the advantage in moving first. However, that had to be in unison with a suppression of aura to be of proper use, rather than the reverse.

Anyone could clearly see that from the aura that rose above the brothers TianFeng and TianMa, there was a faint gold-red light of Fire and Light, giving the audience a sensation like they were the rising sun in the skies.

On the other side, Tian'er gave forth a brilliant gold, along with a swirling purple. The beautiful purple eyes of hers were also glowing brightly.

The light around Zhou Weiqing was the strangest, six colours rising in unison, swirling around his body as they rose up. In terms of attributes, it was without question that Zhou Weiqing was the strongest amongst the four.

Very quickly, the clash of aura and pressure showed the victor. Zhou Weiqing had the Dragon and Tiger bloodlines, while Tian'er had the pure Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger bloodline. As both of them held hands, the four Saint Attributes were present as well. Although their overall cultivation levels and Heavenly Energy was

lower, their aura and presence was far superior to their enemies.

TianFeng and TianMa's expressions turned grave. When Tian'er released her aura, they instantly recognized where she was from. However, at this point, it was too late to say anything, and it was more important to defeat their enemies.

By now, all of the Battle Team members had walked out of their respective rest houses. Towards this major battle in front of them, they paid close attention, placing high importance upon it. The brothers TianFeng and TianMa were definitely shocking, but at the same time, this Heavenly Bow Battle Team had yet another hidden seven-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master, with such powerful Attributes as well. They were equally shocking indeed. Besides the ZhongTian Battle Team who already knew of them beforehand, and the WanShou Battle Team who recognized them, all of the other teams were just filled with surprise and shock.

This was destined to be a clash of the top! Originally, those who had looked down upon the Heavenly Bow Battle Team currently had very complicated feelings in their hearts.

Facing the terrifying bloodline powers and the suppression of their enemies' aura, both TianFeng and TianMa began breathing heavily. TianFeng withdrew his gaze, and abruptly, he took a half step forward, the gold-red in his eyes changing suddenly as the purple of the Destruction Attribute appeared.

TianMa and TianFeng could be said to be connected on a certain level. As soon as TianFeng activated his Destruction Attribute, TianMa's eyes also flashed in a similar fashion. The powerful Destructive aura gave their highly suppressed auras a huge boost; though it wasn't sufficient to turn the tides and allow them to suppress Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er, at least they were able to hold on.

Despite that, the two brothers were still forced to make the first move, and their Consolidated Equipment appeared.

Flashes of dark gold lit up around them one by one, as the light shield representing the God Tier Consolidated Equipment sprang up individually, causing the entire audience to erupt in surprise.

It had to be known, normally it was extremely difficult to even see a single God Tier Consolidated Equipment, enough to shock anyone. However, in that series of bright flashes, the two brothers had unleashed a total of fifteen dark-gold light shields!

Besides Legendary Sets, there was no other explanation for them having so many high level Consolidated Equipment.

That was a hideous and savage scale armour. Indeed, hideous and savage was a very apt description. Their armour was clearly not fully completed yet, as the Consolidated Equipment was still the dark-gold colour that represented an incomplete Legendary set. Almost the entire armour was covered with sharp spikes, and on the chest area, there was a strange symbol of a crab. Even their helmets, both sides of them had four sharp spikes twisting about, as if the eight legs of a crab. The two of them had exactly the same Consolidated Equipment, fifteen God Tier Consolidated Equipment in total, and instantly their aura exploded forth in a massive boost, not only regaining all lost ground, but actually starting to be the suppressor instead.

In terms of Consolidated Equipment, Zhou Weiqing could be said to be extremely knowledgeable and experienced already. As soon as both sides faced off, he could clearly sense that this TianFeng, in terms of cultivation level and overall combat prowess, was perhaps already a match for the Lion Prince Gu Yingbing. As one of the top in the Great Saint Lands younger generation, he was definitely top quality.

Of course, that did not mean that Tian'er, Shanguan Xue'er and Shanguan Fei'er could not compare to Gu Yingbing or this TianFeng. However, Tian'er, Shanguan Xue'er and the other girls were still much younger, far from reaching thirty years old. As a result, it was normal for them to have some gap in cultivation

levels for now.

No matter Shen Little Demon, TianFeng or TianMa, they all had the Destruction Attribute. It was clear that this Destruction Attribute was not inborn, but somehow cultivated by them in recent times.

Chapter 221 War between Destruction and Creation! (1)

Although they were faced off in a fight, all this time Zhou Weiqing had been pondering where this Destruction Attribute had actually come from. After all, creating an entirely new Attribute, even a Heavenly God Tier powerhouse could not possibly do so. For the Blood Red Hell to suddenly come up with a new legacy, that of the Destruction Attribute, how could he not feel strange about it?

Just as TianFeng and TianMa released their Legendary Sets, in the next instant, both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er had no choice but to release their own Consolidated Equipment. If they did not do so, perhaps the two brothers with their Legendary Sets could use that moment of advantage to launch their attacks.

Another series of dark-gold lights flashed in swift succession, causing all the battle teams watching below, especially those from smaller empires, as well as the audience, to stare in shock.

Has God Tier Consolidated Equipment become common goods? How many bouts of lights was it this time? Another eleven dark-gold shield of lights flashed above the pair. If both sides were added up, that was already twenty six God Tier Consolidated Equipment!

Zhou Weiqing's 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set was still currently two pieces, as his Overlord Bow was not part of his Legendary Set.

On the other hand, Tian'er had six pieces of her Legendary Set, as her seventh Jewel was broken through after she left the Heavenly Snow Mountain, and she would need to return before she could gain the Consolidating Equipment Scrolls for the next piece.

Zhou Weiqing held his dual Legendary Hammers in his hands.

Compared to him, Tian'er looked much more gentle and beautiful. If one were to describe Shangguan Xue'er's Boundless Infinitum Set as the ultimate close combat Legendary Set in the world today, then Tian'er's God Vanquishing Heavenly Spirit Set would be the ultimate ranged combat Legendary Set.

Even for Zhou Weiqing, this was the first time he had seen Tian'er wear all of her current God Vanquishing Heavenly Spirit Set.

In Tian'er's hands, a two metre long staff appeared. Of course, due to the fact her Legendary Set was also not complete, it was dark-gold in colour, and along its dark gold length, there were many complicated tattoos etched upon it, with faint light swirling in those tattoos. At the tip of the staff, there was the statuette of an absolute beautiful lady, whose hands were raised above her head in carrying a small, fist-sized pearl. Strangely, this pearl was not dark-gold colour like the rest of the staff, instead a bright and brilliant gold colour. As soon as it appeared, it began to shine so brightly, covering the entire stage. One could clearly sense that all the various Attributes were gathering around the staff, so thick that it was almost sticky in nature.

God Spirit Staff, a powerful Consolidated Weapon on the same level as the Boundless Infinitum Sword. It was because these weapons were at such a greater level that they could display a bit of their own colour.

Besides the staff, a crown had appeared on Tian'er's head, extremely beautiful and exquisite, a total of twelve spikes surrounding it, each tipped with a small gold jewel. Right in the center, there was a larger, purple gemstone.

Shoulder pauldrons, chest plate, equally beautiful. Added on to Tian'er's gloves on both hands, that was Tian'er's current six pieces of her God Vanquishing Heavenly Spirit Set.

As Zhou Weiqing was right next to Tian'er, and he had an

intimate connection with both her and Shangguan Xue'er, he could vaguely sense that Tian'er's God Vanquishing Heavenly Spirit Set seemed to be actually stronger piece by piece when compared to the Boundless Infinitum Set. However, the Boundless Infinitum Set was still ranked ahead because it was an eleven piece Set, as compared to the God Vanquishing Heavenly Spirit Set which was ten pieces.

Seeing the God Vanquishing Heavenly Spirit Set appear around Tian'er, both TianFeng and TianMa's expressions changed. TianFeng said coldly: "When has the Heavenly Snow Mountain come together with the Heavenly Bow Empire?"

Tian'er said passively: "This is my own business, and has nothing to do with the Heavenly Snow Mountain. Zhou Weiqing is my man." It could be said that she was not actually human, and compared to human females, she was not as shy regarding such matters. To declare that Zhou Weiqing was her man in front of such a massive audience, it was a matter of pride to her.

When Zhou Weiqing heard her words, he was originally in a good mood. However, very quickly, he heard someone below say: "What kind of world is this, all the best cabbages are always eaten by pigs."

Zhou Weiqing scolded inwardly: Your Sister! Since when did I, Your Father, become a pig? Am I that ugly?!

In the ZhongTian Battle Team Rest House, Shangguan Xue'er smiled faintly upon hearing that. At her side, Shangguan Fei'er said in admiration: "This Tian'er is really daring. Sis, would you dare to speak out like that in front of so many people? Haven't they not married yet?"

Shangguan Xue'er glared at her sister, a faint blush staining her icy-cold cheeks.

Zhou Weiqing took a side step forward, using his body to block Tian'er as he spread the hammers out, his eyes turning purple.

Compared to the brothers TianFeng and TianMa's bright purple orbs, Zhou Weiqing's was a far deeper purple.

At the same time, in a swoosh, the pair of massive wings spread out from Zhou Weiqing's back, and his entire aura exploded forth greatly. As he stepped forward in front of Tian'er, in that instant his own aura was able to suppress the combined aura of both TianFeng and TianMa back to their original state.

Indeed, Zhou Weiqing had entered his Dragon-Tiger Transformation state, the 'King' word on his forehead clear and glowing, as a thick energy reverberation burst forth to the extreme from his body. Originally the six coloured lights around him surged, forming a large light column into the skies that seemed actually solid.

Both hammers streaked to the front, each forming a triangular formation which merged together, a resplendent star shaped hexagon forming before settling below his feet, glowing brilliantly. As his wings beat gently, one could even clearly see circles of the various Attribute Heavenly Energies forming rings of light, swarming into Zhou Weiqing's body.

In that instant, Zhou Weiqing had become the focal point of the entire audience, the wild and ferocious aura he gave forth could even fully suppress the eight-Jeweled TianFeng.

This was the true Zhou Little Fatty in his full glory, the Zhou Weiqing who had ascended the Heavenly Snow Mountain to snatch a bride, and defeated Gu Yingbing.

"Come on then. Let me see what you Blood Red Hell brothers have that you dare to come at I, Your Father." Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily as he shouted. With the explosive aura and power that the Dragon-Tiger Transformation awarded him, he bounded forward in a single step, the Dual Legendary Hammers swinging out towards TianFeng and TianMa respectively. From the looks of things, he was actually planning to fight them alone.

Those wings of his was actually not Consolidated Equipment! This was the current thought that had entered both TianFeng and TianMa's mind. Just like how Zhou Weiqing had never seen the Destruction Attribute before, they had also never seen anyone like Zhuo Weiqing with his transformation.

From Shen Little Demon, they had learned that Zhou Weiqing's right leg was extremely dangerous, and he had the ability to control his Demonic Change State. However... this ability displayed in front of them... was it really the Demonic Change State? Even the Demonic Change State could not possibly bring up a person's aura to such a powerful degree right? Let alone... those wings?

TianMa had long since been unable to hold back. In truth, his Legendary Set did have some slight differences when compared to TianFeng, that was in his weapon. Both brothers had wings behind their backs, but when it came to weapons, TianMa was using a long spear, while TianFeng was using a longsword.

As Zhou Weiqing charged forward, TianMa's body spun in a half circle, the long spear in his hands darting out in a swift lightning strike. He totally ignored the incoming Hammers from Zhou Weiqing, instead piercing towards Zhou Weiqing's throat.

The length of his spear was far superior to that of the Dual Legendary Hammers, and this strike of his was attacking his enemy's key points to force his attacks back. On his spear, a thick gold-red flame sprang up, glowing with the hue of the Destruction Attribute. In the blink of an eye, along with the abrupt burst of flames, his attack seemed to strike first though he had attacked later.

Zhou Weiqing gave a cold humph, the hammer in his left hand subtly turning into the crying-face symbol as he spun his wrist in a light fashion, allowing it to block perfectly in the spear's path.

A massive crash, as the spear and hammer smashed into each

other explosively. With Zhou Weiqing and TianMa as the center, a powerful burst of light spread out. Although TianMa was at the seven-Jeweled stage, being blocked by Zhou Weiqing, he staggered back five, six steps before regaining his balance.

This was not because of a difference in Attributes or Heavenly Energy, but suppression of pure strength. Facing Zhou Weiqing's pure physical strength and the terrifying boost of the 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set, even if Zhou Weiqing was just blocking his attack, it was not something that TianMa could easily handle. If not for the powerful Heavenly Energy he had been using, perhaps this hammer blow would have already cost him his life.

TianMa had taken action, and TianFeng had moved at the same time. Grasping his four chi long broadsword, his body seemed to slide close to the stage, the sword slashing upwards in an uppercut fashion. In his movement, his body seemed to flicker in an illusory fashion. Before his sword even reached, a powerful gold-red light already spread through the stage.

However, abruptly, a gold light appeared, perfectly appearing at Zhou Weiqing's side, forming a gold shield, blocking all of the gold-red light.

The brilliant gold light was filled with a divine aura, and as soon as both sides clashed, a powerful energy fluctuation reverberated out.

The Light Flames that TianFeng had unleashed in his sword blow was totally neutralized by the Divine Attribute easily, only the final purple hue of the Destruction Attribute was left to slam into the gold shield of light in a true clash.

Another massive explosion, and the gold shield that Tian'er had unleashed showed several cracks. However, the purple light was also consumed and vanished.

Zhou Weiqing did not even bother about TianFeng, ignoring him totally as he charged forward towards TianMa. His Dual Legendary

Hammers swinging once again, the heads of his hammers imbued with the 'Flying Lightning God Technique' from his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, crackling with a powerful lightning as he struck out at TianMa.

TianMa was no pushover as well, even after being knocked back by Zhou Weiqing's hammer, his spear swiftly warped into tens of thousands of blurry illusions as he blocked Zhou Weiqing's attack.

Zhou Weiqing was now faced off against TianMa, while Tian'er was facing off against the stronger TianFeng. However, as compared to the more exciting clash on the other side, their fight seemed silent and sombre.

TianFeng's attacks were not quick, but each and every sword he struck out was filled with great destructive power. However, Tian'er only responded with a light flick of her God Spirit Staff, and a gold shield of light would appear, blocking his attacks. In truth, both of them were still tentatively probing in their attacks, and they did not use any of their powerful Skills for now, waiting for a better opportunity. At least from the outward appearance, both sides were extremely equally matched.

Chapter 221 War between Destruction and Creation! (2)

As for Zhou Weiqing and TianMa's side, the fight had risen to a white hot stage. Similarly, they did not unleash any of their stronger Skills, but a close combat fight like they were in was far more dangerous.

Zhou Weiqing's Dual Legendary Hammers were just too powerful. Even though TianMa's Heavenly Energy was at an advantage, and he had two more Consolidated Equipment than Zhou Weiqing, he was still at a major disadvantage.

The Dual Legendary Hammers were one solid and one illusory, and he did not know when Zhou Weiqing would swap the two, causing him many issues. Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing's strength was far beyond his expectations. With the Dragon-Tiger Transformation and the 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set, even a Heavenly King stage powerhouse could not match Zhou Weiqing's strength, let alone TianMa. Even if he was from a Great Saint Lands, he could not match a Heavenly King Stage at his current level.

As such, TianMa could only engage in guerilla tactics with Zhou Weiqing, using his spear mastery to continuously attempt to look for any weak points that Zhou Weiqing might have, attempting to pierce his critical spots.

However, very quickly TianMa discovered that this Zhou Weiqing fellow was just too shameless. Every time he seemed like he was unable to dodge his spear, he would instantly choose a suicidal type attack. If he pierced him, the hammers would smash back instantly, causing TianMa to have no choice but to give up. Having felt the strength behind Zhou Weiqing's hammer once, who dared to allow him to smash him directly?

As Zhou Weiqing attacked, he was carefully observing the

Destruction Attribute held within the Light Flame of TianMa.

After entering the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, Zhou Weiqing's overall power was more than sufficient to fight against an eight-Jeweled powerhouse, perhaps even some ordinary nine-Jeweled stage powerhouses. With the 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set and the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, it could be said that he was not afraid of anyone below the Heavenly King Stage. Even if the enemy was from the Great Saint Lands. After all, do not forget he had six Elemental Attributes!

TianMa's power was definitely very strong, but compared to Shen Little Demon, it was not that much greater, with only a slight increase in terms of cultivation level and Consolidated Equipment. There was one more thing, his Destruction Attribute seemed to be more pure, stable and stronger than Shen Little Demon's.

After his continuous sensing, Zhou Weiqing was already pretty clear that this Destruction Attribute was not from the bloodline, seeming more similar to his Saint Energy instead. Of course, it was not merged from the Saint Attributes, but it was also definitely not a product of Light and Fire... instead, it seemed like it was from an external source. Indeed, an external source infusion.

The Destruction Attribute had the unique property of being able to dissolve or disassemble other Attributes, and everytime Zhou Weiqing's hammers with the 'Flying Lightning God Technique' came into contact with it, he could clearly sense that the explosive nature of the Lightning Attribute was unable to fully flourish before being dissolved by the Destruction Attribute.

However, this fight was also extremely enjoyable for Zhou Weiqing. After entering the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, no matter speed, defense or strength, it was all boosted to a terrifying rate. With the added boost of the 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set, his pure strength alone was beyond any Stored Skill. Although TianMa was of the Agility type Physical Jewel, his speed was actually not that much faster than Zhou Weiqing's,

allowing him to put his full strength into play. Both had clashed several times, and it had always resulted in TianMa's disadvantage.

“Bastard! Die!!” TianMa's eyes suddenly burst forth with a startling light, and his entire body began to glow with a brilliant gold-red as the aura of Destruction Attribute erupted around him. Behind his back, the massive illusory image of a giant crab slowly lit up. Although the image was not very clear, Zhou Weiqing could still vaguely distinguish the outline of the crab. As for TianMa's long spear, the original gold-red colour was now turning a bright purple.

A thick Destruction aura was causing the energy reverberation around TianMa to slowly vanish, as if he was a giant black hole, and even the other various attribute energies in the air were also being taken apart.

As the bright purple spear pointed forward at him, Zhou Weiqing could only sense a terrifying Destruction power surge towards him. Even with his Dragon-Tiger Transformation's sheer defensive strength, he still felt a sense of alarm.

Placing his hammers before his chest, Zhou Weiqing's wings flapped abruptly, not in an attack but a sudden retreat.

This was the true power of the Destruction Attribute! As Zhou Weiqing's heart screamed in amazement, his entire body flew back to Tian'er.

With the full force of his power behind it, TianMa's now bright purple spear pierced out at Zhou Weiqing once more, filled with even greater Destruction Attribute power than Shen Little Demon's Destruction Fire Phoenix.

TianFeng had been fighting with Tian'er, and he furrowed his brow as he sensed his brother's actions, clearly not happy with TianMa's rash act. However, since TianMa had already launched such an attack, he could no longer hold back.

Pointing his longsword forward, TianFeng's eyes suddenly glowed abruptly as well, a thick purple light shooting forth. The sword pierced forward in an abrupt lightning strike, as nine purple knives of light struck out towards Tian'er. In terms of speed, it was in perfect unison with TianMa's spear.

Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's expressions grew serious. Zhou Weiqing took a deep breath as Tian'er disappeared in a flash behind Zhou Weiqing, placing her hands on his back.

Zhou Weiqing gave a sudden explosive shout as his hammers crossed in midair, intersecting with a up-down swing respectively. A silver-white light flashed in his eyes as the hammers collided.

Instantly, a terrifying Spatial Attribute reverberation burst out from Zhou Weiqing's hammers where they intersected, the silver light gathering into a point. All around the silver light, everything seemed to slow down, even TianFeng and TianMa's approaching attacks.

In the next instant, a silver ring of light gushed out from the intersection of Zhou Weiqing's hammers. In the middle of the ring, there was a black hole; not large at all, only a metre in diameter. However, this black hole seemed to swallow everything.

All of the purple light was crazily torn and scattered about as soon as it reached the black hole, with most flying towards the air, with only a few hitting the stage floor. However, just the small portion that hit the floor actually tore the entire stage into bits, causing a massive hole in the ground. The terrifying energy fluctuation caused the all the surrounding battle team members to fly back, even having to abandon their rest houses.

BANG A twisting energy reverberation soared up into the air, as if forming a massive pillar of light. The terrifying destructive aura causing the entire audience to fall into silence, as they all held their breaths, almost forgetting to breathe.

Most of the audience was just here to watch and enjoy

themselves, however at this moment they truly understood how terrifying such a fight could be.

Even with just a tiny amount of the purple light landing on the stage, the tough stage floor was still fully destroyed, leaving such a massive hole in the ground. The four members of the Heavenly Bow and Dan Dun Battle Teams were standing right in the middle of the gaping hole.

There was no cloud of dust from the hole, as all the shattered earth had been disintegrated by the Destruction Attribute and swallowed by the black hole in front of Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing's current expression was bleak, while Tian'er still had a hand pressed to his back. Clearly, this defensive strike of theirs was their combined efforts.

With the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, Zhou Weiqing could do more than just wield his Lightning Attribute. At that moment, in order to deal with the powerful Destruction Attribute attack of the brothers, he had no choice but to use a Fusion Skill... one infused with the Saint Energy.

Upon the Dual Legendary Hammers, he had unleashed a Skill each, before fusing them together as they struck each other. On the crying-face hammer, it was the Spatial Rend, while the smiling-face hammer held the Time Disorder Skill. The Fused Skill was the Time Space Black Hole Skill, a purely defensive Skill.

The Spatial Rend and the Time Disorder was fused perfectly with the help of the Saint Energy, forcefully swallowing the powerful combined destruction attacks of TianFeng and TianMa, scattering them away.

However, Zhou Weiqing's bleak expression was because the strike had not reached his targeted degree. In his original judgement, with the power of the black hole, he should be able to swallow the entirety of the enemy's Destruction Attribute. However, the facts had proven otherwise, as evidenced by the fully

destroyed stage.

Shangguan Longyin was currently levitating in mid air, a speechless look on his face. He couldn't help but think to himself: Youngsters these days... are they all so terrifying now? Is that really an average of a seven-Jeweled stage? Indeed, such an attack, even if he were to take it on, it would definitely not be easy.

However, the fight was not over. Just as Zhou Weiqing's expression was bleak, the brothers TianFeng and TianMa did not have a happy face either.

Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's powers had far surpassed all their previous judgements. The two brothers did not expect that even after they had used the full power of their pure Destruction Attribute, they were still unable to destroy Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er... not even one of them!

As the terrifying energy reverberations in the air slowly settled, the smell of gunpowder the air between both sides was now unbelievably thick. As the four stared at each other, their Heavenly Energy began to raise continuously as they prepared for the next clash.

Both TianFeng and TianMa's eyes were spitting purple, as if an actual purple flame was rising within. Even their original gold-red flames had been transformed to the purple flames of Destruction. This was their final ace that they had been prepared to use in the finals, but clearly if they did not use their full strength, they would not be able to even get past this stage.

Not only had Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er blocked their attacks, that silver-white light in Zhou Weiqing's eyes had struck a sense of fear and danger in their hearts. At least, Zhou Weiqing knew that they had the Destruction Attribute, but they did not know anything about that strange silver-white light. All they could be certain of was that it was definitely not one of the six Attributes Zhou Weiqing had. However, without that silver-white light, how

could Zhou Weiqing possibly fuse the Time and Spatial Attributes?!

Chapter 221 War between Destruction and Creation! (3)

In truth, with Zhou Weiqing's current cultivation level and his current control over the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, he was still far from being able to fuse any Skill of the Heavenly King stage or above.

In a flash, TianMa disappeared, as did the spear in his hands. However, in the next instant, he reappeared behind his elder brother TianFeng, making an action that no one else could understand. His arms wrapped around TianFeng from under his arms, around his chest as he placed his face on TianFeng's back.

No matter how one looked at it, the action seemed just to... strange... ambiguous...

However, in the moment that he embraced TianFeng, the bright purple flames around them rose to the extreme, and that terrifying purple light actually caused the already massive hole in the ground they were standing in to slowly sink even further. That was to say... just the aura of those flames alone was able to destroy everything around them. Any Attribute Heavenly Energy close to the purple flames would be instantly disassembled into ... nothing.

The horrifying energy reverberation in the air was so strong that Zhou Weiqing's expression grew even bleaker. The Destruction Attribute energy they were facing was already far beyond the eight-Jeweled stage, and the sense of danger he felt was far beyond even that he had when he was facing the Heavenly King assassin. It was clear that this incoming strike that their foes were preparing was far beyond anything he had faced before.

As soon as TianMa put his arms around him, TianFeng's eyes closed as his sword pointed into the skies. As the thick purple flames and light wrapped around them, behind the two brothers, the illusory image of a single massive crab, brightly lit in purple,

slowly appeared.

This time, the image of the crab was extremely clear, and the entire audience could see the countless massive spikes around the entire crab's body, as well as the destructive aura it held, as if it was about to destroy the entire world.

The giant crab in the air was more than twenty metres long, its massive pincers slowly raising up, and the bright purple flames around TianFeng and TianMa was slowly being devoured by the crab. Slowly, the tiny eyes, so disproportionate from its giant body, opened...

It was a pair of eyes that were like looking into the depths of hell, and as soon as they opened, the air around seemed to freeze totally. In that instant, even Shangguan Longyin in midair could no longer maintain flight, actually falling down. At the same time, his shocked voice rang out: "Quick! Evacuate the citizens!"

This was the first time in the entire long history of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament that something like this had happened... for a fight between two Battle Teams to actually rise to a point that an evacuation was required. However, Shangguan Longyin could clearly sense that the Destruction power of the brothers TianFeng and TianMa, especially after infusion into that huge, strange crab, had the ability to even threaten him. Furthermore, in that instant, it was as if the giant chasm the four were in was filled with an indescribable aura, and even a top level Heavenly King like him dared not intervene, as if he would be taking on all four of their powers at once.

In the end, everyone was afraid of death, and Shangguan Longyin was no exception. He dared not take the risk.

Both Shangguan Xue'er and Shangguan Fei'er's smiles had vanished long ago. Shangguan Xue'er had even unleashed her Boundless Infinitum Set, ready to intervene at anytime. Of course, with their cultivation level, all that Shangguan Longyin had

sensed, they could also sense it, and they knew that if they forcefully intervened, it was tantamount to seeking death. Even so, their concern for Zhou Weiqing was so great that they primed themselves to do so if things looked bad.

What kind of creature is that? Looking at that massive crab, Shangguan Longyin was left with that burning question.

Previously, the Silver Emperor that Zhou Weiqing had created, at least he had recognized it, though he still wasn't sure what had happened. However, in his entire life and considerable experience, he had never even heard of such a powerful Heavenly Beast like this crab.

Naturally, Crab Heavenly Beasts were plentiful in the ocean, but they were mostly the bottom of the food chain, and there had never been a case of one with such power, let alone such a terrifying aura. That was to say... this bright purple illusory figure was not as simple as a mere Crab Type Heavenly Beast. In its eyes, there was a wild mania, the cold light of destruction, as it focused on Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er. Just as the giant illusory figure of the crab opened its eyes, both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er felt as if their Heavenly Energy was freezing in their bodies, as if they were about to self destruct from within.

This was no simple Heavenly Skill Image! The thought instantly entered Zhou Weiqing's mind. He was no longer the 'newbie' Zhou Weiqing that had first started learning about Heavenly Jewel Masters from Shangguan Bing'er. The current him had seen, experienced and learned so much over the years, and could even be called experienced and well informed. This was especially so after he had taken Long Shiya as his Master, he had learned so much knowledge from his Master, things that he had never even dreamed about previously.

The reason he could tell this crab was not just a Heavenly Skill Image was because within its eyes, Zhou Weiqing could sense... emotion.

A Heavenly Skill Image was merely the reflection of a Skill, that was too powerful to contain and thus was displayed out. Even if there was any emotion, it was just an illusion. Although these Skills could use those images to undergo their attacks or effects, the illusion itself was just that... an illusion, without any life of its own. However, true emotion could only be found on a living creature. For an illusory figure to show illusion... what did that mean?

That could only mean it was not a Heavenly Skill Image. Perhaps, a totemic figure, or even a figure of bloodline creation.

Both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er had a similar totemic bloodline image. For Zhou Weiqing, it was currently the Dragon and Tiger, while Tian'er's was the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger.

However, it was exactly because they had a similar bloodline image that the shock in their hearts was so powerful. That was because they could clearly sense that this bloodline image of the giant crab was far beyond their own, even Zhou Weiqing's powerful dragon and tiger bloodline fusion. Otherwise, how could the brothers TianFeng and TianMa use this terrifying bloodline power to form an attack?

...

Heavenly Jewel Island. Heaven's Expanse Palace.

Deep in cultivation, Shangguan Tianyang's eyes suddenly snapped open. As a max level Heavenly Emperor, in that instant, his eyes were filled with shock.

"Brother." Shangguan Tianyue's voice also rang out at the same time. "What is going on? That power..."

In a flash, Shangguan Tianyue appeared before Shangguan Tianyang.

A cold light flashed in Shangguan Tianyang's eyes. "It is from the ZhongTian Grand Plaza."

Shock flashed in Shangguan Tianyue's eyes. "The Heavenly Jewel Tournament? How is that possible? The strength of the power is not that high, but that level... it actually reminds me of the pressure of that Old Monster Xue AoTian..."

Abruptly, the two brothers' expressions changed as they both sensed a icy cold aura rise, filled with power. That feeling, it was as if the entire Heavenly Jewel Island was about to be destroyed.

"Quick! Summon all the Elders, deploy the Boundless Infinitium Formation. The ZhongTian Plaza still has more than a million citizens!" As the Heaven's Expanse Palace Master, Shangguan Tianyang was extremely anxious as he gave the order.

...

ZhongTian Plaza.

"Tian'er, support me!" Zhou Weiqing said softly. In this moment, if they just made a simple attack, they would definitely die to the destructive power of the large crab. At this point, it was clear that it was too late to disrupt the Skill that TianFeng and TianMa was using, and any attempt at doing so would result in the last crazed killing blow of the massive crab.

The silver white light appeared in both Zhou Weiqing's and Tian'er's eyes. If one would describe what was in the crab's eyes as infinite destruction, then what was in their eyes was infinite light of creation.

Circles of silver white light rose from the two of them without reservation as they held hands. Where their hands met, the silver white light was the strongest, as if their hands had become a gemstone, glowing brilliantly. In their jade-like palms, the energy fluctuation was not especially strong, but when the silver white light rose up, the feeling of self destruction within their bodies vanished.

The pair of massive wings behind his back spread open, and in

Zhou Weiqing's eyes, the silver white light began to grow stronger. At the same time, a massive illusory figure began to slowly rise up behind their backs.

Even compared to the massive crab, this illusory figure seemed far more terrifying. It was at least a hundred metres tall, fully grey in colour. The instant it appeared, the entire ZhongTian City fell in temperature, an icy cold feeling causing the entire skies to darken, as if dark clouds had blotted out the entire sun.

An indescribable feeling of awe and dignity rose from the grey figure. Including even Shangguan Tianxin, the ZhongTian Empire Emperor seated on the VIP stand, everyone couldn't help but feel an urge to kneel down and pay obeisance towards the figure.

Along with the appearance of the illusory figure, the silver-white light around Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's body grew even more brilliant, as if flames that were constantly rising and soaring. At the tip of the flames, a circular halo of silver and white began to infuse into the massive grey figure, causing its illusory body to constantly turn more solid.

Under the orders of Shangguan Longyin, the citizens in the ZhongTian Plaza began to slowly retreat. However, there were so many people there, how could it be so easy for them to evacuate swiftly?

Currently, the entire ZhongTian Plaza was a mess of chaos. Even the ordinary citizens could sense the sheer scale of power that both sides facing off in the chasm. Everyone wanted to leave as quickly as they could, but there were just too many people in the plaza, and it was not so easy to do so as chaos reigned.

As the chaos grew to the point where the crowd was almost beginning to hurt each other as people fell as were almost stepped on, a sudden voice rang out in the air, filled with stately dignity.

"Do not panic. You do not need to leave. The Heaven's Expanse Palace will take care of the defense for this fight. Boundless

Infinitium Formation, Deploy!”

Accompanying the voice were bouts of lights appearing all over the skies, each of them formed from pure Heavenly Energy. Massive amounts of Heavenly Energy poured all over the skies, forming a white cloud, slowly pressuring downwards before spreading out. It was as if a massive shield of light was formed around the chasm, and the four ‘culprits’ within.

Chapter 222 Demon God Finger! (1)

The area the shield of light encapsulated was extremely large, not just the original stage, but several times over, especially up into the air. The shield was a faint milky white, but still transparent in nature, allowing those outside to look in. The thick Heavenly Energy reverberations were subtle and well hidden. In the skies, no one knew when but forty nine figures had appeared, all floating in midair. At their head were the Shangguan brothers, the Heaven's Expanse Palace Masters Shangguan Tianyang and Shangguan Tianyue. The forty nine of them unleashed their Heavenly Energy in a unique formation that melded together perfectly, fusing together in a subliminal distillation, rising together to form the strange energy reverberation. Although the shield did not seem particularly thick, but the powerful energy fluctuations and aura that Zhou Weiqing, Tian'er, TianFeng and TianMa gave off, no matter Destruction or Creation, all of it had vanished; at least from the perspective of the outside world.

To the entire ZhongTian Empire, the words Heaven's Expanse Palace was of paramount importance, of supreme height. As such, as soon as the citizens heard the three words, their fear, panic and nervousness calmed down dramatically. As soon as they saw the miraculous sight in front of their eyes, all of them stopped, silenced, their gazes drawn back to the center of the plaza once more.

Since the Boundless Infinitium Formation's Shield was translucent in nature, they could all still at least see what was happening within.

As compared to the ordinary citizens and audience members, the respective members of the various Battle Teams had a totally different feeling.

The power that the Heavenly Bow Battle Team and the Dan Dun Battle Team had displayed had already far surpassed their

knowledge and experience, even those from the other Great Saint Lands were no exception. However, when the Heaven's Expanse Palace showed their hand, revealing the Boundless Infinitium Formation's Shield, the shock in their hearts could only grow stronger, to the max.

All along, everyone accepted that the Heaven's Expanse Palace was the strongest of the five Great Saint Lands. However, no one had ever seen the true power of the Heaven's Expanse Palace. However, what happened before their eyes truly shocked them to the core.

For the forty nine figures floating in the air, not a single one of them had wings at all. That was to say, all of their cultivation level was at least of the Heavenly King Stage or higher; after all, that was the minimum requirement for flight, outside of wings, to use the Heavenly Dao Energy stage of power to soar in the air.

Forty nine Heavenly King stage powerhouses... and possibly higher! What kind of notion was that? Even the powerful Heavenly Snow Mountain could not present such a powerful formation.

Their overall strength being the strongest had always been the reason why the Heaven's Expanse Palace was the top of the five Great Saint Lands. Furthermore, who dared say that this was the entirety of the Heaven's Expanse Palace's power?

Of course, for the four combatants still facing off against each other, they did not pay much attention to all that had happened outside their fight. Currently, no matter Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er, or the brothers TianFeng and TianMa, they only had their opponents in their eyes. This was especially so for TianFeng and TianMa. When they had unleashed the full power of the Destruction Attribute, they were only left with basic combat instinct. That terrifying Destruction Attribute,, it was even burning up their life force from within to sustain itself, how could they possibly care about anything else?

They massive grey figure behind Zhou Weiqing's back was growing more and more solid, and slowly they were starting to see that the figure was that a huge man dressed in a grey robe. The grey robe extended all the way past his legs, while on his shoulders, a pair of massive grey pauldrons that were crafted from some unknown materials, lined with bright decorative patterns. A head full of black hair hung loosely behind his back, falling on the massive grey cape that flowed from below the pauldrons, covering his entire back. o

All around the massive grey figure, the entire air had turned cold to the extreme. His eyes had been closed all this time, and the only thing that could be clearly seen on his face was a strange symbol, which looked like three silk threads tangled with each other, with the three ends sticking out. The sheer aura that the figure emitted was actually able to suppress that terrifying destructive aura of the giant crab across the side.

The giant crab lifted its eyes towards the giant grey figure, but its eyes did not show any hint of fear at all, still filled with the promise of death and destruction. Even though its aura was being suppressed, if one examined them closely, they would discover in its eyes there was a strange light of pondering, as if absorbed in thought.

The silver-white light that was emitting from Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er was growing weaker and weaker, and their faces were also growing paler by the second. This was especially so for Zhou Weiqing, as the one who had actually activated the Skill, his entire body was now trembling slightly. Even he had not imagined that unleashing this Skill would bring such a heavy burden to both of them.

In preparation for today's fight, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er could be said to have done the maximum they could have. Yesterday, why had they ascended the Heavenly Jewel Island? Naturally, it was to enter the Heavenly Jewel Island's Skill Storing Palace, and

there, misfortune fell upon all the powerful Heavenly Beasts. An entire night of Devouring, and they had ‘visited’ more than twenty Heavenly King Stage Heavenly Beasts. Although they had only Devoured a little from each Heavenly Beast, it was already sufficient for both of them to each gather about a hundred drops of Saint Energy. Of course, in order for Tian’er to access the Heavenly Jewel Island, Zhou Weiqing had also told the Heaven’s Expanse Palace everything they had learned about the Destruction Attribute.

Originally, Zhou Weiqing had thought that since they had almost three hundred drops of Saint Energy between the two of them, and the support of the Saint Energy whirlpool, it should be more than sufficient to sustain the unleashing of this Skill. Alas, when he actually used the Skill, he realised that even the three hundred drops of Saint Energy was actually insufficient! As the Saint Energy infused into the Skill, he felt as if his soul was being sucked out. If not for the large Saint Energy whirlpool swirling violently, perhaps they would have already been drained dry, but even though the whirlpool was working overtime to help replenish them, it was barely able to do so.

That’s it, this is the limit, I can’t hold on much longer! Zhou Weiqing’s body began to shudder violently, as an intense feeling of frailty caused him to be on the verge of breakdown.

Perhaps sensing the condition of his body, just like the previous time when he had revived the Hell’s Angel, at this critical point, the suction of the Saint Energy stopped abruptly, and the massive grey figure stopped the draw of Saint Energy.

However, it was clear that the grey figure looked rather strange, with most of his body still illusory, and only his face was still relatively clear and solid. It was definitely clear that the infusion of Saint Energy from Zhou Weiqing and Tian’er was far from sufficient.

“You only have one second.” An ancient, vast and boundless

voice rang out in Zhou Weiqing's mind, shaking him down to his very core and soul.

Only a second? Zhou Weiqing's heart gripped with shock.

However, he did not hesitate as he raised his left hand instantly, pointing towards the bright purple crab in the air, which had already drawn in the brothers TianFeng and TianMa, and was currently staring at the grey figure.

The giant crab looked extremely fierce, vicious and terrifying, with several hundred sharp spikes from all directions of its body, especially on the edges of its pincers, where the spikes were interlocked in a jagged crisscross pattern. The thick destructive aura constantly burst forth from its body, as its two pincers pointed towards the grey figure that Zhou Weiqing had summoned. Purple light blazed from its eyes, filled with a sense of provocation.

Both Tian'er and Zhou Weiqing were panting heavily from exhaustion, with Tian'er staring at Zhou Weiqing in shock. That was three hundred whole drops of Saint Energy! In both their bodies, there was only the last ten drops that could maintain their little Saint Energy whirlpool, and in a short period of time, it would definitely be difficult to recover to more than a hundred drops of Saint Energy.

“What Skill did you use?! We already used up so much Saint Energy, and it is still far from being complete!”

Tian'er asked Zhou Weiqing, her expression still filled with shock. Luckily, after this period of cultivation and training, they had managed to practice using Saint Energy alone when infusing, ensuring that most of their Heavenly Energy was still unused. That way, at least when they used Saint Energy to infuse a Skill, they could still protect themselves after that.

Zhou Weiqing gave a bitter smile and said: “I used... the Ward of the Demon God.”

Tian'er's beautiful eyes widened as she stared at Zhou Weiqing speechlessly. Slowly, she raised her head, looking at the giant grey figure behind his back in disbelief. With a trembling voice, she said: "You... you ... actually... wha... revived... the Demon God...?"

Indeed, Zhou Weiqing had truly been just too daring. With just the previous feeling of the summoning of the Hell's Angel, he had actually dared to attempt to revive the Demon God this time. He knew that it couldn't possibly be the real Demon God, as a result he had made the attempt. Alas, he had never expected that the requirement for even this illusory Demon God would be such a terrifying amount.

In truth, Zhou Weiqing himself did not know that originally, when he revived the Hell's Angel, it was just a powerful Heavenly Beast's Skill. That was to say, the Hell's Angel was just a normal revival and amplification.

However, the Ward of the Demon God was different, an innate Skill that was granted to him through the bloodline of the Dark Demon God Tiger. The reason why the Dark Demon God Tiger was so powerful was actually because within its bloodline, it had a hint of the actual Demon God's bloodline power. In fact, what Zhou Weiqing had just attempt to revive was not just a Skill, but the actual Demon God. Let alone three hundred drops of Saint Energy, even thirty thousand drops of Saint Energy would not have been sufficient. Unless... one day, his cultivation level could reach the same level as the Demon God, would such a possibility exist.

However, thanks to the inbuilt self protection of the Saint Energy, the infusion of the Saint Energy had stopped before they were drained dry, allowing the illusion of the Demon God to still have some offensive capabilities.

Just as Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er were speaking, the giant grey figure behind Zhou Weiqing finally moved. His actions were extremely simple, just lifting his massive right hand, extending his index finger and pointing towards the giant bright purple crab.

Puuu A soft sound, but in that instant, the entire Boundless Infinitium Formation began to shake violently. The brothers Shangguan Tianyang and Shangguan Tianyue's expressions grew bleak and serious.

The shaking was not due to Heavenly Energy or any energy fluctuations, but a sort of willpower... the will of the Demon God. If not for the fact that Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er had just infused too little Saint Energy, no matter how strong the Boundless Infinitium Formation was, it could not possibly contain the Will of the Demon God. With the pride of the Demon God, how could it possibly allow anyone to seal or contain it? Alas, Zhou Weiqing had only revived an illusion, a projection, and the Will was still a bit too weak in that regards.

Chapter 222 Demon God Finger! (2)

One second. It was truly only a single second. An abrupt spread of grey, from the outlook it was just like the grey of chimney smoke, spreading out from the finger. The large, bright purple crab froze instantly, its eyes filled with unwillingness, with even a hint of disdain.

Zhou Weiqing could faintly hear a cold humph that shook through his soul once more. In the next instant, a muted explosion, and the entire bright purple crab vanished instantly in a puff of smoke.

The brothers TianFeng and TianMa, still locked in their embrace, fell limply to the ground, deeply unconscious, as blood began to leak out of their seven orifices.

Forcefully unleashing such a powerful destruction Skill, yet failing to kill or even defeat their enemies... All that was left for them was not just a simple wound or exhaustion. Even the Destruction Attribute in their bodies had been totally drained dry, and perhaps within the next few years they would not be able to recover.

As the terrifying Heavenly Energy reverberation swirled in the sky, a brilliant light flashed in Zhou Weiqing's eyes. Taking a deep breath, he closed his eyes to concentrate on the currently weak large Saint Energy whirlpool, working together with Tian'er to spin it and recover. At least, they were still standing.

This fight could be said to be a total lack of fighting skills at all, and the final victory had been determined by a single clash between their ace skills. However, it was without question that this clash of their powerful Skills had almost brought destruction and ruin to the entire ZhongTian City. Perhaps the Heavenly Energy inherent within the two Skills was not considered extremely high, at least not sufficient to bring shock to Shangguan

Tianyang and Shangguan Tianyue. However, the ideological stage at which they were at was just too terrifying, unbelievable. It was at the true Heavenly God stage, or even higher!

For the brothers Shangguan Tianyang and Shangguan Tianyue to rush here personally, it was not just to protect the ZhongTian citizens, but also to feel for themselves this stage.. This was a stage that they had been yearning for all their lives, working towards all this time, and this sensation was of utmost importance to them. If they were lucky, perhaps with this sensation, it could give them enough understanding to breakthrough once more. Especially for Shangguan Tianyang, as any breakthrough would mean reaching the Heavenly God Stage.

The Demon God behind Zhou Weiqing's back did not vanish instantly after unleashing its attack. Raising its head slowly, his eyes still closed, his Will shot towards the skies.

Shangguan Tianyang was personally managing the Boundless Infinitium Formation, and he instantly shouted out loud without hesitation: "Release the formation!"

The milky white shield of light instantly dissipated as all forty nine powerhouses swiftly withdrew their Heavenly Energy. As the ones who released the formation, they could vaguely sense the terrifying presence and aura of the Demon God.

As the Boundless Infinitium Formation vanished, the projection of the Demon God behind Zhou Weiqing also vanished, as if it never had the intention to attack the formation in the first place.

However, Shangguan Tianyang's back was already soaked in cold sweat. He could clearly sense that if he did not give the order to take down the formation in time, allowing the wisp of that Will of the Demon God to leave, perhaps it would have drawn in the true Will of the Demon God to descend upon them. If that truly happened, perhaps everyone in the entire area would have perished.

Whether or not the Demon God truly existed or not, no one dared to bet on it. However, even if it was just a gathered consciousness from all of the Demonic Attribute energy in the world, it was not something that humans could easily block.

Shangguan Tianyue's sensations were not as direct or clear as Shangguan Tianyang, but he still vaguely sensed something.

"Big bro, that aura... that sensation, are there really gods in this world? Heavenly God Stage...?"

Shangguan Tianyang sighed and shook his head, saying: "Heavenly God Stage... that is just a name, an estimation on our part. In the legends, only when we breakthrough the Heavenly God stage, then can we shatter the chains of this world, entering a whole different realm. That is the legendary Heavenly Transformation. Only those who have the power of Heavenly Transformation can truly be called Gods. Zhou Weiqing, that little brat, he actually managed to use that Saint Energy to summon a bit of a will of the Demon God here... luckily his cultivation level is insufficient... otherwise, today might not have ended well at all."

Shangguan Tianyue's heart was also twisting inside, especially as he looked at the massive chasm below them. Seeing Zhou Weiqing holding Tian'er's hands so intimately, as a father, he was even more dissatisfied. However, at this point, the Heaven's Expanse Palace clearly could not reveal too many things.

Shangguan Tianyang waved his hands, and the forty nine figures rose into the air, flying up back towards the Heavenly Jewel Island. Of course, only the powerhouses that belonged directly to the Heaven's Expanse Palace like them could fly to the Heavenly Jewel Island like that.

At this point, the citizens were no longer cheering. In truth, for this huge battle, in their eyes, they could not have too many feelings, nor could they understand the underlying profound meanings behind it. To them, it was just a huge grey figure

pointing at a large purple crab, and everything had ended. The pressure was terrifying, but without a baseline understanding, any pressure from a powerhouse would seem the same to them. If not for the fact that the brothers TianFeng and TianMa crumpling to the ground unconscious and not knowing if they were still alive, perhaps some of the audience might even think this was a joke fight, an empty show of strength.

Zhou Weiqing drew a deep breath, feeling the over-twenty energy whirlpools of his Death Acupuncture Points spin at full speed. Only when his Heavenly Energy had recovered to full did he relax slightly. For him, he was no better than Shangguan Tianyang, his entire clothes soaked in sweat after all that happened just now.

He made a decision inwardly... no matter what happened, he would never attempt to summon this Demon God easily again. It was just too abnormal, too frightening... not a power that he could control at all. He clearly sensed that the reason why the Demon God Projection actually helped him to destroy the giant crab was not because of his orders. He did not have the power or right to order the Demon God. However, it was the provocation of the giant crab that caused the Demon God Projection to act as he wished, destroying the crab.

Still covered in a faint, flickering light, Zhou Weiqing's face finally relaxed in a relieved expression.

Tian'er looked towards Zhou Weiqing, her eyes gleaming brightly. Her feelings were different from Zhou Weiqing; after all, the Skill was not unleashed by her, and all she did was to support him and infuse the Saint Energy into him. Although she could still sense the sheer terrifying power of the Demon God, Tian'er understood that by sensing the advanced state of that Will of the Demon God, it was definitely of immense benefit to their future breakthrough.

Currently, Tian'er's heart was full of pride, as it was her man

who had unleashed that terrifying power just now. Zhou Weiqing had been her own choice, a man who would not be any weaker or less accomplished than her father in the future. She was truly proud of her own man.

“Senior Shangguan? Where are you?” Zhou Weiqing looked around in puzzlement.

As if hearing his voice, a figure appeared in a flash hovering over the chasm. It was Shangguan Longyin. At this moment, the head judge of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament was truly speechless. Everything that had happened was far beyond any of their expectations, any of their imaginations, and it all gone way past his control, even alarming the two Heaven’s Expanse Palace Masters to activate the power of the Heaven’s Expanse Palace. Only then had they been able to suppress the powers of the clash.

From the surface appearance, the clash between both parties did not have any repercussions, without any rippling effect. However, Shangguan Longyin was extremely clear that if any bit of the Will of the Demon God had escaped the Boundless Infinitium Formation, it would have brought an unimaginable destruction to the entire ZhongTian City. This area now would be an ocean of corpses.

“You... you two...” Shangguan Longyin looked at Zhou Weiqing and Tian’er, wanting to scold them in his heart, but realising that he could not just bring himself to do so. In truth, that level of Skills, he did not know what he could do if he met it. The only choice for him would to not allow them to have the chance to gather and infuse those Skills and unleash them.

Zhou Weiqing shrugged, smiling bitterly as he said: “Senior Shangguan, you can’t blame us for that. In truth, we did not wish to use such a things, nor did we want all this to happen. However, we had no choice if we wanted to survive. Their attacks were just too strong, and we could only use our own strongest attack to deal with it. If it caused any problems to you, I hereby apologise

sincerely.”

A similar bitter smile flashed across Shangguan Longyin’s face. “Problems? Is it just so simple as problems? Luckily, the Palace Master and Second Palace Master came in time and took action. Alright, enough of that, let us just go according to the rules of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament. The Third Match of the Heavenly Bow Battle Team versus the Dan Dun Battle Team, the victor is the Heavenly Bow Battle Team.”

The last line was using the voice-transference with his Heavenly Energy, and all the audience could clearly hear it. At this point, the disorderly comments and discussions began to rise from the citizens.

Although they had experienced the panic and fear earlier, in this current instant, they were all starting to get excited once more. Indeed, such an experience, such a splendidly large scene, perhaps they would never get to experience a second time in their ordinary lives. This would definitely be imprinted in their memories forever. In the future, they could even tell their stories to their grandchildren, it was something to be proud of.

At this point, only then did the rest of the Dan Dun Battle Team members come to their senses. Quickly, the rest of the team members rushed to carry TianFeng and TianMa back to rest.

This time, the entire Dan Dun Battle Team consisted of Blood Red Hell core disciples, and naturally some of them had the Light Attribute. Quickly, Light Attribute healing Skills were used one after the other on the two brothers, at least barely stabilizing them. In truth, their bodies were not injured at all, what was critically wounded were their souls and bloodline power. However, at this point, as both were unconscious, it was clear they could no longer continue fighting in the round. Originally, TianFeng could still participate in the individual matches, but that was no longer possible.

...

The Rest Houses were all gone...

When Zhou Weiqing brought Tian'er back to their Rest House to rest, only then did he realise that all the Rest Houses were gone, destroyed. In their first violent clash, the destruction was not limited to the stage and the newly created chasm, even the Rest Houses of all the Battle Teams had been affected, and all the other battle team members had been forced to withdraw. Still, It was lucky that happened, as what happened next was the giant crab unleashing its Destruction Aura, disintegrating the Rest Houses. If not for the swift reaction of the Heaven's Expanse Palace, when the Demon God Projection appeared, perhaps it would not have been so simple as just the destruction of the Rest Houses.

Returning to their companions, all of them looked at the two with gazes as if they were monsters. Especially for Yun Li, who had always had a hint of recalcitrant air in him. After all, they were both at the six-Jeweled stage. However, at this point, that had totally vanished, and there was even a hint of fear as he looked at Zhou Weiqing. This fellow was just too powerful, too terrifying. Previously, the sheer horror of that aura, Yun Li did not even wish to try and remember it. He knew that in his life, he would never be able to catch up to Zhou Weiqing in terms of cultivation level and power, and the only thing he could do was to focus and work harder on his Consolidating Equipment Scrolls.

Chapter 222 Demon God Finger! (3)

On the other hand, Ma Qun's look at Zhou Weiqing was a totally different matter. It was definitely a type of worship, a fiery, flattering and worshipful look that caused a chill to run down Zhou Weiqing's spine.

“Crow! You have to keep an eye on your husband, be careful of his sexual preferences, in case any trouble happens.”

Crow giggled, saying: “No, it should be him having to keep an eye on me. Boss, if you keep presenting yourself like that, I am afraid I will fall for you instead.”

Looking at her sweet smile and laughter, and the contrasting massive body, Zhou Weiqing was struck speechless. At last, he said: “Please give me a break, you two. Today, this round we have already guaranteed our victory. The Dan Dun Battle Team should have their spirits broken by now, and without morale or fighting spirit, the rest of the fights should be in the bag. Crow, the fourth fight is yours. Tian'er, you shouldn't need to, but the fifth fight is yours just in case.”

Tian'er nodded as she smiled.

Although the fight today was alarmingly dangerous, with the Destruction Attribute Skill that the brothers TianFeng and TianMa had unleashed far beyond Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's expectations. However, they had at least proven one thing – comparing the Saint Energy and the Destruction Attribute, there was still a gap in their levels. Today, even if they had used a weaker Skill and not summoned the Demon God, any other powerful Skill powered by the Saint Energy should still have ensured their victory.

This gave them further confidence in the Saint Energy, and the future of their cultivation, as well as the path they were taking.

...

Just as Zhou Weiqing had said, after the top three of the Dan Dun Battle Team, TianFeng, TianMa and Shen Little Demon, had already lost, the morale of the entire Dan Dun Battle Team was at a record low. For the fourth fight, Crow used her powerful strength to easily defeat a six-Jeweled member of the Dan Dun Battle Team. In the end, the round today ended with the Heavenly Bow Battle Team's victory with a 3-1 score, and they became the last team to advance to the top eight of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament.

After the massive battle between the Heavenly Bow Battle Team and the Dan Dun Battle Team, the rest of the fights were pretty much nothing in comparison, especially since there was nothing left to fight for. At last, when Shangguan Longyin proclaimed the end of the preliminary round, the Heavenly Bow Battle Team had become the focus of the entire plaza.

The entire ZhongTian battle Team, led by Shangguan Xue'er and Shangguan Fei'er, headed over to the Heavenly Bow Battle Team. There were no longer any Rest Houses, so everyone was standing around.

As Shangguan Xue'er and Shangguan Fei'er walked to the front of Zhou Weiqing, a barrier of faint Heavenly Energy covered them, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er.

"Is that the power of the Saint Energy?" Shangguan Fei'er asked eagerly.

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: "Xue'er should have seen it for herself previously, when I summoned the Hell's Angel. Of course, this time, it was truly an unintentional mistake... the Demon God that I summoned was just too powerful. I believe that even if we consolidate the Saint Core Nucleus, such a summoning is still beyond our abilities. Luckily, the Saint Energy has a inlying self-protection of sorts, otherwise both of us would have been drained to death today."

Shangguan Xue'er took a deep breath and said: "It is truly impressive and shocking. In truth, the previous time, I did not really see you summon the Hell's Angel. After all, I was fighting at another wall. I could only sense the energy fluctuations of the Hell's Angel, and see the end results of the Skill. However, today, you have truly let me witness something shocking."

At the side, Tian'er burst into giggles as she said: "This time, even your father will no longer have any reason to stop Little Fatty from 'shooting three birds with one arrow' right? They have truly witnessed the power of the Saint Energy."

Shangguan Xue'er furrowed her brow slightly and said: "Weiqing, if we knew beforehand that the Dan Dun Battle Team was so strong, to force you to use such a Skill of your own, I would rather you not attend the Heavenly Jewel Tournament."

Naturally, Zhou Weiqing knew what she meant, and he smiled faintly as he said: "We cannot hide it forever, and it will eventually be known. So what if the power is known, even if they know about it, trying to sense the Saint Energy or its underlying meaning is not so easy, let alone gaining it for themselves."

Shangguan Xue'er nodded, saying: "That is true, but in the future, you will need to be very careful of the Blood Red Hell. This time, for them to be able to use this Destruction Attribute... it gives me a truly uncomfortable feeling. This matter has also stirred up our entire Heaven's Expanse Palace, as they are attaching much importance on it. Of course, we cannot see the future, but the recent developments and actions of the Blood Red Hell are extremely suspect, and both we and the Passion Valley are rather unsettled by it all. The entire situation in the south is also so chaotic... at the Heavenly Bow Empire side, you will need to be extremely careful as well."

Zhou Weiqing said: "When the tournament is over here, I will be heading to the Heavenly Snow Mountain with Tian'er for a while. Do you all want to come with me? As I promised previously, I will

help you three consolidate the Saint Core Nucleus.”

Shangguan Xue'er sighed gently, shaking her head as she said: “Unfortunately, I do not think it is possible for us to consolidate the Saint Core Nucleus.”

Zhou Weiqing started momentarily. “What? Why?”

Shangguan Xue'er said: “The little Saint Energy whirlpool in my body has already dissipated, and only the pure Saint Energy is left.”

Hearing her words, Zhou Weiqing's brow furrowed instantly. With Shangguan Xue'er's talents in cultivation being at the genius level, and how hard she worked, it was not possible that her little Saint Energy whirlpool had dissipated due to her not cultivating. That meant it was definitely a totally different reason.

Shangguan Xue'er continued: “I have thought about it in detail... it should be because I do not have any Saint Attribute. The Saint Energy originates from the gathering and fusion of the four Saint Attributes, and now I believe that only those who have at least a Saint Attribute will be able to maintain a perfect cycle. However, even just this bit of Saint Energy has given me countless benefits, improving my cultivation quality and speed. Even after breaking through to the Heavenly King Stage in the future, if we have some Saint Energy to assist us, it will make things a lot easier.”

Zhou Weiqing thought for a moment before saying: “In that case, it is even more important that you all come with us to the Heavenly Snow Mountain. Towards the Saint Energy, we just do not have sufficiently deep understanding. Only through constant testing and experimentation can we fully unearth more profound secrets. Even if you are unable to form the Saint Core Nucleus, being able to infuse more Saint Energy for you all can only be a good benefit.”

Shangguan Xue'er saw Zhou Weiqing's unreconciled look, and her face broke out in a rare smile. “Wait until you win before we

discuss this again, don't forget we won't go easy on you!" After saying that, she released the barrier of Heavenly Energy, nodding towards Tian'er before she turned and walked away.

Before Shangguan Fei'er left, she made a face at Zhou Weiqing, her lips moving in a 'mouth' shape.

Zhou Weiqing could tell that she was [telling him](#) 'Sis is just being outwardly stubborn.'

After the ZhongTian Battle Team left, the BaoPo Battle Team approached them.

As the BaoPo Battle Team members looked at Zhou Weiqing, their expressions were rather complicated. The leader XiHua and his wife Butterfly Orchid stepped to the front.

XiHua sighed and said: "Team Leader Zhou, I never expected that after the last tournament where you rose to fame after being the dark horse of the tournament, you would once again repeat the feat this year. Team Leader Zhou, just tell me the truth please. If you are able to repeat what you did today in the upcoming top eight fight, using that Skill, we will surrender directly."

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: "How can Secret Arts be used so easily? This time, it has taken a huge toll on us as well. As for the top eight fight, it is hard to say who will advance. I can say that the same Skill we used today, we will definitely not be able to use it then. I look forward to have a good spar with your BaoPo Battle Team."

XiHua looked deeply at Zhou Weiqing and said: "In that case, when the time comes, please show mercy."

After the BaoPo Battle Team left, the WanShou Battle Team were also about to approach and greet them. However, they were stopped by Tian'er, who motioned them to move away. Seizing the opportunity, Zhou Weiqing quickly led the team away, otherwise who knew how long they would be surrounded for.

If in the previous days, the Heavenly Bow Battle Team was considered a dark horse in the tournament, one that wasn't considered too strong, then after today's fights, they had risen to become one of the favourites to seize the championship.

...

In order to quickly recover their Saint Energy, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er once again ascended the Heavenly Jewel Island.

This time, as soon as they reached the top of the island, they ran into a familiar face. Zhan LingTian looked at them coldly, saying passively: "Come with me, the two Palace Masters wish to see the two of you."

Zhou Weiqing had already anticipated something like this would happen, and he ignored the enmity in Zhan LingTian's eyes as they followed him. After all, matters of the heart was not something that one could yield easily. Although he did not have any enmity towards Zhan LingTian, being a love rival was something that can't be helped.

...

Heaven's Expanse Palace.

Shangguan Tianyang and Shangguan Tianyue stood there, looking at the two youths in front of them, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er. At this moment, their hearts were definitely unsettled. The Demon God Projection and the shock it had brought was still there. The higher one's cultivation was, the greater their impression and sense of the Demon God Projection.

"Speak then, how did you two do this." Shangguan Tianyue was direct, asking as he pinned Zhou Weiqing with his gaze.

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: "Honestly speaking, it is not considered 'difficult', just infusing Saint Energy into a Skill. I have tested it before, and it seems like any Heavenly King Stage Skill and above, once infused with Saint Energy, there is a chance to

‘revive’ it.”

He had already told the secret of the Saint Energy to the Heaven’s Expanse Palace Masters, and towards this point, there was no need for him to hide it.

A flash of surprise appeared in Shangguan Tianyang’s eyes. “What about this Demon God that you summoned today? Where did it come from? What kind of Heavenly Beast did you Store such a Skill from?”

Zhou Weiqing replied: “It is actually an innate Skill, a power that belongs to my bloodline. Perhaps, my bloodline has a trace of the Demon God’s power, which is the reason all of this happened today. In truth, I never expected that we would be able to summon the Demon God Projection.”

Shangguan Tianyang’s eyes were filled with surprise and amazement. At last, after a time, he said slowly: “This Saint Energy truly lives up to its name of being top of everything. It looks like the legend of it being the key to breaking past the Heavenly God Stage to reach a higher state is not impossible! I believe Xue’er should have told you about her Saint Energy whirlpool and how she was unable to sustain it. What do you think about it?”

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: “It is currently impossible for us to know for sure yet, and we can only continue experimenting. After all, we have barely uncovered the uses of the Saint Energy yet. As such, after this Heavenly Jewel Tournament ends, I want to bring them with me. Only by continued testing can we find the problem and any possible solution. Of course, it might be that since Xue’er does not have any Saint Attribute, she is not able to maintain the Saint Energy whirlpool of her own. Even so, infusing Saint Energy into her will still be a great benefit to her cultivation.”

Shangguan Tianyang’s brow furrowed slightly, as he looked

towards Shangguan Tianyue.

Shangguan Tianyue's gaze was somewhat unfriendly as he glared at Zhou Weiqing. With a humph, he said: "Wait until you gain the Heavenly Jewel Tournament championship before we speak. This year's championship is not that easy to achieve, not just something luck can bring you."

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: "Father in Law, do you still not believe in my power?"

The literal words of that is 'Mouth''Hard', hence the symbolism

Chapter 223 Top Eight Fight | BaoPo Battle Team! (1)

Shangguan Tianyue glanced coldly at Zhou Weiqing, saying: “Your power? Is your power to bully those poor Heavenly Beasts of my Heavenly Jewel Island?”

“Uhhmm... that...”

Shangguan Tianyang said: “Alright, we already know about you using the Skill Storing Palace Heavenly Beasts, cultivating the Saint Energy with the Devour Skill right? You need to ensure that no Heavenly Beasts will die because of that. Every Heavenly King Stage Heavenly Beast and above that you Devour, you will need to pay a million gold. Yesterday, you two Devoured from over thirty Heavenly Beasts right, I will round it down for you. Later, pay up thirty million gold before you leave the island. Of course, if you wish to continue Devouring, you can do so. The price is the same.”

“Ahh?” Zhou Weiqing stared with jaw agape at Shangguan Tianyang, who looked serious and stern. “This... Uncle, we are all a family right? Isn’t mentioning money too much of an outside matter?”

Shangguan Tianyang smiled gently: “A family? I wonder who it is who won away two hundred million gold from our ZhongTian Empire, you certainly aren’t courteous in that regard! Oh, right, one more thing, you all destroyed my ZhongTian Plaza today, as one of the main culprits and the victorious side, you should take up the payment for it as well. Let’s give it a discounted price of ten million gold. Also... those three girls, their bride price and betrothal gifts, you still need to give right? Hmmm.... Another hundred million gold... that isn’t considered much right?”

As Zhou Weiqing listened up to this point, his mouth was already gaping open so wide, unable to shut. This... this was daylight robbery! However, the critical thing was.... He was unable to reject

it!

At the side, Tian'er was covering her mouth and giggles, but she did not say a word.

Lounging back casually, Shangguan Tianyang said in a relaxed fashion: "So... are you giving or not?"

Zhou Weiqing's heart was bleeding! Alas, as one was under the eaves, how could he dare to not lower his head? This was a matter of his own future happiness, could he not give the money?

"Give, give, of course I'll give. Uhh, Uncle, Father-in-law, after our fight with the Dan Dun Battle Team today, we are just too exhausted, our condition isn't too good. We are going to head back to rest first. Haha, well I didn't bring the gold with me today, when it is time for the Finals, I will bring it."

After saying that, he practically dragged Tian'er along as he fled the scene.

Looking at his sorry figure fleeing into the distance, a smile crossed the Shangguan brothers faces.

However, what they did not know was... As Zhou Weiqing brought Tian'er to leave the Heavenly Jewel Island, his panicked face turned into a sly grin, as if a cunning plan had succeeded.

Tian'er asked curiously: "You were just forcefully cheated of more than a hundred million gold, and you can still smile so happily?"

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: "Why shouldn't I laugh? As the saying goes '[The wool still comes from the sheep's back, a good sheep means good fur, and a good fur means good money](#)'. That one hundred million gold was originally their money after all, and we won almost two hundred million in the bets for the preliminary stage, and we are only returning them slightly more than half. That means we have almost a hundred million gold left still. Furthermore, by giving that amount, that means

they have subtly agreed to my relationship with Bing'er, Fei'er and Xue'er..."

"Also, it brings an official relationship to ourselves and the ZhongTian Empire as proper allies... before this, we were merely just a chess piece to the ZhongTian Empire. However, our Saint Energy, and the performance of our people in the Crescent City Battle... we have managed to fight for this status. Of course, from the current state of things, the ZhongTian Empire will not treat us as equal allies, but at least we are no longer a mere chess piece. This is a very good beginning. Without the ZhongTian Empire supporting us from behind, with just our powers alone, it will be nearly impossible to fight against the Bai Da Empire, let alone the Dan Dun Empire."

Tian'er was stupefied. "Why do I suddenly feel like you are such a schemer?"

Zhou Weiqing gave a defeated look as he said sadly: "What scheme is this, you should say this is intelligence and wisdom! Your husband, I, am a wise man! Although I may not have much ambitions, I will still do my best to ensure that in the near future, my homeland will have the power to ensure no one dares offend us easily."

Tian'er burst into giggles, saying: "Anyway, no matter if you are an Admiral, General or just a farmer, I will follow you."

...

The Heavenly Jewel Tournament preliminary round had ended, and the top eight fights would only begin after a few days. This year's Heavenly Bow Battle Team could be said to be far ['Darker'](#) than the last tournament's Fei Li Battle Team. After all, at least the Fei Li Battle Team was from a major empire, and even prior tournaments they had good results of fifth position previously. However, it was the first time that the Heavenly Bow Battle Team had attended the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, and they had

already entered the top eight stage. This was truly unbelievable in most people's eyes.

In the top eight round, the Heavenly Bow Battle Team would be facing up against the BaoPo Battle Team. This time, no one would dare to look down or underestimate this dark horse team. Ever since the last day of the preliminary stage ended, almost the entire ZhongTian City audience who had watched the fight that day were discussing it with great relish, the fight which had brought that so much surprise to them. It was being spread so much that they had almost become myths.

Although Zhuo Weiqing and Tian'er did not go through another round of Devouring Heavenly Beasts, their Saint Energy had after all already reached a level of one hundred and fifty drops each. Just by their normal cultivation using the large Saint Energy whirlpool, though it was slow, they would eventually recover a large portion.

Ever since they had gained the Saint Energy, although Zhou Weiqing would try his best not to depend too much on the Saint Energy, it was considered his last and most critical secret ace in hand for any danger.

Currently, though the Heavenly Bow Empire was in the development stage, perhaps they could even be considered as just starting out; however, with the Peerless Regiment and the Fei Li God General, or rather the now Heavenly Bow God General Ming Yu at the head of development and commanding, they were definitely on the right track. However, the problem was the Heavenly Bow Empire lacked absolute powerhouses.

Without sufficient powerhouses, facing the Kalise Empire was still alright, but in the future when they had to face the Bai Da Empire, things would become far more complicated. This was also the main reason why both Zhou Weiqing and Ming Yu were focusing on building up their strength instead of rushing to extend their territories and destroy the Kalise Empire. After all, with the

current Peerless Regiment, it would not be too difficult to take down the Kalise Empire!

If Zhou Weiqing could bring his own personal strength to a much higher level, especially if he could enter the Heavenly King Stage, it would be an immense aid to their future development. This was the reason why he could leave the Heavenly Bow Empire in such a critical point of the Empire's development, and the Heavenly Bow Empire upper echelons did not have any issues with that, as they knew how important this was.

...

After descending from the Heavenly Jewel Island, both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er would rest for the next days, not even leaving their rooms. If Zhou Weiqing would have to describe it, the sun was shining brightly outside, but the windows were closed, curtains shut and comforters drawn tight.

In truth, they were deep in cultivation these few days.

With continued use of the Saint Energy, they began to have a deeper understanding of it.

Besides the power of Creation of the Saint Energy, they had another feeling regarding the Saint Energy, which was its extremely powerful self protection. Simply put, no matter how they used the Saint Energy, it would never actually cause any harm to themselves. Just the example when they had infused the Saint Energy into the Ward of the Demon God, releasing such a terrifying and powerful Skill. With the aura and scale of the Demon God, if it continued devouring their Saint Energy, not only their energy would be drained dry, even their life force and souls would be devoured totally, with nothing left.

However, at the critical moment, even with the powerful Will of the Demon God Projection behind it, the remaining Saint Energy was able to automatically cut off the connection, protecting them from harm, so much so that their little Saint Energy whirlpool was

still maintained. It could be considered a 'last second' save even.

The importance of this could not be stressed more, especially since they were still at the beginning stages of training in the Saint Energy. After all, with their current cultivation level, they were still far from being able to use the true power of the Saint Energy, but with this recognition of the self defensive capabilities, at least when they were experimenting and training in its usage, they could be bolder and take more risks, which would definitely be a good aid in their progress.

Of course, that was not just the only benefit to the Saint Energy. In fact, that day after Devouring from so many powerful Heavenly Beasts and bringing their Saint Energy past a hundred drops, both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er could sense that in their original Heavenly Energy, there was starting to show signs of a very faint silver-white glow. The glow about their Heavenly Energy might be very dim, but it was extremely beneficial to their cultivation process and speed. Firstly, it seemed like the glow was attached to their meridian channels, not only strengthening the channels but also increasing their absorption rate substantially. Secondly, with this seeming remnant of Saint Energy around, it also greatly increased the absorption rate of the Heavenly Energy they drew in, making the entire process easier... almost by half! The Saint Energy was on a level far above any other individual Attribute, and thus when any Attribute Heavenly Energy had any interaction with the Saint Energy, it became much 'tamer'.

When Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er sensed this new discovery, they were extremely delighted. Previously, although there had been improvements to their cultivation, it was not as obvious as it now was. They understood the underlying meaning and how it would affect their future cultivation speeds drastically. As long as they had enough time, and enough external energy to transform into Saint Energy, it would perhaps not be too long before they truly consolidated the Saint Nucleus Core. Once that happened, they

would no longer need to fear anyone.

Cultivation had always been a dry and monotonous activity, but with the continuous experimentation of the wonders of the Saint Energy, it brought a new and interesting facet to the cultivation. It also gave them much joy and wonder as they tried out various things, experimenting in all sorts of methods. After all, the Saint Energy would not harm them, and thus they were starting to be bolder.

However, Tian'er was also a little vexed. With her background from one of the stronger Great Saint Lands, the Heavenly Snow Mountain, and the only daughter of the strongest powerhouse in the world... yet her cultivation speed was still no match for Zhou Weiqing!

That Immortal Deity Technique of Zhou Weiqing's was just too overbearing. With his current over twenty Death Acupuncture Points broken through, and the energy whirlpools at work at the same time, it was as if he was a black hole, making a clean sweep of the atmospheric energy around, drawing in all sorts of attribute energies. As soon as those energy whirlpools held a hint of Saint Energy, the sheer cultivation speed he could maintain was shocking, even to Tian'er. It had to be known that currently Tian'er was at a higher cultivation level than Zhou Weiqing, already at the seven-Jeweled stage. Even with such an obvious advantage, she was still slower than him in terms of cultivation.

It could be said that the Saint Energy's benefit to Zhou Weiqing in this regard was far greater than Tian'er. Of course, this had a strong connection with his Immortal Deity Technique. In the past, Zhou Weiqing always had some qualms and worry about cultivation in his heart. After all, the pain and suffering that the Immortal Deity Technique brought to him everytime he broke through was just too memorable. Even with his considerable willpower, he would still feel fear thinking about it.

Basically means in the long run, you have to pay the price for

what you gain. It's usually only the first line, this is the first time I've seen the later 2 portions, not sure if he just added it or it's the original saying that is now shortened

As in Dark Horse

Chapter 223 Top Eight Fight | BaoPo Battle Team! (2)

However, now that he had the Saint Energy, it was different. With the protection of the Saint Energy, even when breaking through it became a lot easier than before, at least he no longer needed to fear that his body would breakdown. Furthermore, now that he had completed the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, fully inheriting the powers of both the Solidified Dragon Spirit and the Dark Demon God Tiger bloodlines, the toughness and flexibility of his body was far beyond any Heavenly Jewel Master. As such, his progress in the Immortal Deity Technique had already long surpassed that of the creator!

...

Early in the morning, the ZhongTian Plaza was already crowded and bustling with life. The citizens had long since started to gather in the plaza and the surroundings, some having come the night before to camp out at the plaza grounds to ensure they had a good place. As long as they did not enter the central zone, the guards around the plaza would not bother them.

To some of the citizens' amusement, the freshly rebuilt competition stage looked very different from that of the preliminary stage. The first and most obvious change was in the size, at least double that of the previous stage. Secondly, it was clear that the stage was no longer crafted out of granite, instead giving off a faint green glow. Some of the people who had knowledge in this area quickly pointed out it was a green gold stone, a metal several times harder and tougher than granite. Obviously, that battle on the last day between the Heavenly Bow Battle Team and the Dan Dun Battle Team had caused so much destruction that it had left a deep impression on the organizers, and they were trying to prevent it from happening again. After all,

in the top eight fights, the others notwithstanding, the Heavenly Bow Battle Team would once again be facing a strong opponent, yet another team with the background of a Great Saint Lands, the BaoPo Battle Team.

The Passion Valley was behind the BaoPo Battle Team, and at least from the previous rankings, the Passion Valley was above the Blood Red Hell. This top eight fight was an elimination type match; that was to say, the team members on the stage would continue fighting until they were beaten, until all of one side's members had lost. As such, the competition and degree of fighting could only be more intense. Of course, once again this fight was the most anticipated amongst all of the top eight fights.

...

"Boss, today we really aren't going to bet anymore?" Ma Qun asked, a look of regret on his face.

Zhou Weiqing glanced at him, a look of stern justice on his face as he said grandly: "One must not be too greedy, we have already won enough."

The current time was not considered early anymore, with the morning sun relatively high in the sky.

The immediate surroundings of the stage was also different now. Although there was no restriction regarding the other teams who had not entered the top eight, and they would still be able to watch from their rest houses, there were only eight rest houses closest to the stage, belonging to the top eight to use. The rest of the teams had their rest houses further behind.

The Heavenly Bow Battle Team rest house was right next to the ZhongTian Battle Team's one, and Zhou Weiqing was definitely very satisfied with that arrangement. At least, he could now see his two wives at close proximity easily now. The top eight fight was just as important to him, as this would be the determining factor whether or not he could ascend the Heavenly JEwel Island and see

Bing'er.

It seemed like just a blink of an eye and three years had just passed like that. As the saying goes, the closer one was, the more one grew nostalgic about things. Now that he was on the verge of seeing Bing'er, his heart yearned for her even more. Towards this point, Tian'er could already sense it. As long as he was not deep in cultivation, Zhou Weiqing would constantly be dazed and distracted, his eyes filled with memory and remembrance. However, Tian'er never interrupted him. In truth, amongst all of Zhou Weiqing's other women, the one Tian'er could accept the most was actually Shangguan Bing'er. More than anyone else, she knew how much Bing'er meant to Zhou Weiqing.

The ZhongTian Empire officials still had not appeared in the VIP Stands yet, and as soon as Shangguan Tianxin appeared on the VIP Stand, the entire audience erupted into cheers of 'Long Live', a startling sight indeed. However, Shangguan Tianxin's expression was not too good, though why that was so, only he would know.

In the fight a few days ago, the Demon God Projection that Zhou Weiqing had revived had caused this ZhongTian Emperor to almost kneel down in obeisance. Luckily, at that time, no one had really noticed him. However, that feeling had left a deep impression in Shangguan Tianxin's psyche.

Amongst the three Shangguan brothers, both Shangguan Tianyang and Shangguan Tianyue placed all of their hearts and mind on cultivation. However, for Shangguan Tianxin, he had to run the entire Empire, and in terms of cultivation, he was much more slack in comparison. Of course, with the sheer amount of precious resources available and the power of the Heaven's Expanse Palace techniques, he had still managed to reach the Heavenly King Stage. However, in terms of both cultivation and fighting capabilities, this Emperor was definitely no match for his brothers. That day, after experiencing the power and aura of the Demon God for himself, different thoughts had sprang up in

Shangguan Tianxin's heart. He finally understood why both his elder brothers did not wish to be bogged down by the power of the Emperor. The truth was, when their power had reached a certain point, titles like Emperor was just a joke.

Seated at the head of the VIP Stand, Shangguan Tianxin's eyes subconsciously found the Heavenly Bow Battle Team rest house. Inwardly, he sighed. He had received news from Shangguan Tianyang yesterday to request that the ZhongTian Empire fully support the Heavenly Bow Empire's growth, and to also help them restrict the Bai Da Empire. At that point, Shangguan Tianxin knew that his three nieces were likely to be 'taken advantage' of by that little brat Zhou Weiqing.

...

On the other side, the Dan Dun Battle Team silently appeared in their rest house in the back row.

The brothers TianFeng and TianMa were conscious now, but their faces were still pale and ashen, and they had to be supported by their team members to even enter the rest house. However, they still insisted on coming to watch. Shen Little Demon was able to walk on her own, but her face was almost just as pale as theirs, and it was clear that all three of them had not recovered. Her expression was extremely complicated indeed.

"Big Bro, the news has already been sent back." TianMa said softly to TianFeng.

TianFeng nodded and said: "This is of utmost importance, and it is imperative that the Hell Master learns of it. Today, let us just keep watch on things for now, let us see if anyone else has that energy besides Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er."

TianMa's brow furrowed as he asked: "Brother, what do you think that energy is? How could it possibly be so strong that even our Destruction Attribute isn't able to move it? Didn't Hell Master say that the Destruction Attribute is the strongest Attribute in the

world? Above even the four Saint Attributes?”

TianFeng said: “I do not know either, brother. Alas, we are unable to test further. Unless, we can catch that Zhou Weiqing and imprison him, to do further tests on his Heavenly Energy... only then can we find out.”

A cold smirk crossed TianMa’s face as he said icily: “It looks like our failure this time may not fully be a bad thing. No matter what, we cannot let them go. We must catch them back no matter what before we can discuss anything further.”

TianFeng nodded and said: “Have we communicated with the Elders?”

At the side, Shen Little Demon said: “Yes, communications have already been established. However, we can only wait for them to leave the city before we think about taking action. After all, this is still the Heaven’s Expanse Palace territory.”

“Heaven’s Expanse Palace... hmph!” TianFeng gave a cold humph, as his mind couldn’t help but think back to the Boundless Infinitium Formation, a cold look of disdain flashing in his eyes.

...

Perhaps to ensure the top eight fights proceeded smoothly, the judge for the fights today would once again be personally assumed by Shanguan Longyin.

In a manner of speaking, the Fei Li Empire had some decently good luck. Although they had lost a round in the preliminary matches, they were still able to ascend to the top eight as the second position of their group. However, their luck was used up by now, as in the top eight, they would be facing up against the WanShou Battle Team.

...

At last, the fights officially began. As usual, the ZhongTian Battle Team was the first to start. Perhaps due to the nature of the

elimination formation, this time, Shangguan Fei'er was actually the first to start the fight.

What happened next was pretty much without any suspense. With her powerful close combat powers and seven-Jeweled cultivation level, within less than an hour, Shangguan Fei'er had defeated six opponents easily. One versus six, clinching the first victory of the day, and the ZhongTian Battle Team was the first to enter the top four.

The second round was the WanShou Battle Team against the Fei Li Battle Team. Once again, it was another easily predictable fight. The brother and sister duo of Ye Paopao took turns on the stage one after the other, and each of them managed a single victory before being knocked out, but the rest of the team fell just too easily. Still, they managed to save some face with those two victories.

"At last, it's our turn." Zhou Weiqing exercised his limbs as he looked towards his companions. "Ma Qun, you go first. Xixi, second. Crow, third. Yun Li, fourth. Today, I will be the fifth. Tian'er, you close up if necessary."

Besides Tian'er, the other four showed some surprise on their faces. In their minds, Zhou Weiqing would be fighting first, taking down as many as he could to bring victory for the team. They did not think that they would actually have the opportunity to fight today.

Zhou Weiqing could naturally see the puzzlement in their eyes, and he laughed heartily as he said: "This is a great opportunity to gain experience and train yourselves, do not waste it! The Passion Valley is different from the Blood Red Hell, as close allies to the Heaven's Expanse Palace, the BaoPo Battle Team members will not easily resort to killing methods. It will be a good fight and experience for you all, so you all just need to do your best and see how far you can go."

As the team leader, Zhou Weiqing would not care about showing off at all. Furthermore, in truth, Zhou Weiqing never really thought that highly of the BaoPo Battle Team in terms of this top eight fight.

After all, the greatest strength of the Passion Valley was the teamwork and unity of their husband wife couple teams. According to Zhou Weiqing's words, it was 'man and woman working together, no matter what they did it would not be tiring'.

In terms of one versus one, singular combat prowess, it was likely they were not even a match for the Dan Dun Battle Team members, let alone the brothers TianFeng and TianMa. Since this top eight elimination fight was all a one versus one style fight, Zhou Weiqing had absolute confidence that in the entire Passion Valley, no one could defeat him. As a result, he did not feel any sense of urgency at all, and felt it was a good opportunity to allow his companions to gain experience.

With a single bound, Ma Qun leapt up the stage, fully dressed in his Peerless Heavy Cavalry armour, the pair of massive spiked maces in his hands, striking an imposing figure indeed.

Perhaps because his form was so tall, grand and imposing, or perhaps because of his previous performances... as soon as he ascended the stage, the ZhongTian Plaza audience erupted in cheers.

Towards most of these audience, they were here to watch for the thrill and enjoyment, to have fun! Fighters like Ma Qun, with such direct styles, ferocity and pure strength... their fights were usually the most enjoyable to watch. At least, it would give the audience a sense of blood boiling, hearts afire, and free of inhibitions. As such, he had actually gained quite a few fans indeed.

On the Passion Valley side, the opponent who had ascended the stage was a six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master.

After both sides introduced themselves, the first fight officially

began.

Ma Qun's appearance and his character was definitely a stark contrast. He knew very well that against a disciple from a Great Saint Lands, with his four Jeweled cultivation level, it would be extremely difficult for him to achieve victory. As such, he had decided to take it slow and steady, in a 'seek not to be meritorious but only to avoid blame' defensive fighting style.

Although he had a pair of massive spiked maces, the truth was that most of Ma Qun's abilities were defensive, and offense was his weakest point. As such, as soon as the fight started, he maintained a defensive position.

In terms of offense, he might not be the best, but in terms of defense, Ma Qun was definitely a good hand. After all, he had trained a lot under Lin TianAo and had even received some pointers from Long Shiya himself. With the two massive spiked maces, the heavy armour, and his four-Jeweled Assembly Set Shield and his various Earth Attribute defensive Skills, he was like an impregnable fortress!

Chapter 223 Top Eight Fight | BaoPo Battle Team! (3)

Lin TianAo's teachings had also come into full play here, his steps and movement simple but effective, able to avoid direct clashes at critical moments, utilizing his defense to its ultimate max.

This fight lasted almost an entire hour before Ma Qun finally lost. However, his loss was because he had fully ran out of Heavenly Energy. Up until that point, his opponent had not broken through his defenses a single time.

Ma Qun's persistence and perseverance allowed Xixi to gain any easy victory when she came up. Originally, Xixi's overall combat prowess was already stronger than Ma Qun, though her expertise was the reverse of Ma Qun's, far more adept in offense than defense. Under her ferocious onslaught, the poor BaoPo Battle Team member who was already exhausted from his fight with Ma Qun fell, though he did manage to force her to expend a considerable amount of Heavenly Energy before her victory.

...

BaoPo Battle Team Rest House.

"Bro XiHua, let me fight." Butterfly Orchid said eagerly, clearly itching for a fight.

XiHua looked at her in surprise, saying: "Are you that eager to fight today?"

Butterfly Orchid gave a mysterious smile. Even though they had been married for so many years, XiHua was still bedazzled by the smile.

"If I go up now, we can perhaps force that Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er to fight with us both!"

XiHua laughed heartily and said: “You are still as competitive as ever. Do you really think we can defeat Zhou Weiqing though?”

Butterfly Orchid smiled and said: “If we do not try, how will we know? Alright, I shall go up to fight then.”

The Heavenly Bow Battle Team had been suppressed and disadvantaged since the start of the fight, and as soon as Butterfly Orchid entered the stage, they were fully suppressed all the way. Previously, the defensive capabilities that Ma Qun had displayed was all of his power. Those who followed him, Xixi, Crow and Yun Li, were all very good fighters in their own rights. Alas, they were facing one of top talents in one of the Great Saint Lands, one of the top few in the younger generation of the Passion Valley, Butterfly Orchid.

It was an absolute suppression of Attributes and cultivation level, and the next few fights ended rather quickly. Butterfly Orchid’s cultivation level was actually at the later stages of the seven-Jeweled.

As Yun Li lost in a helpless fashion, the score had suddenly become a shocking 4 to 1, with the BaoPo Battle Team leading by such a large margin.

At last, Zhou Weiqing stood up in their Rest House. In a flash, he appeared on the stage.

Seeing that he had finally come on stage, Butterfly Orchid smiled sweetly and said: “At last, you are here. Team Leader Zhou, I have a proposal. How about we simplify the entire fight for both of us. Myself and XiHua, against you and Tian’er. If you win, we will surrender all the rest of the fights.”

Although Butterfly Orchid’s voice did not seem loud, all of the teams in their rest houses could still hear them.

This might seem like an obvious advantageous proposal for the Heavenly Bow Battle Team, after all the BaoPo Battle Team was

already leading with such a massive advantage. However, those who truly knew the profound secrets of the Passion Valley knew that such an ‘advantage’ wasn’t truly that at all.

With a faint smile on his face, Zhou Weiqing said: “Lady Butterfly, that is a very interesting proposal, such fine calculation!”

Butterfly Orchid smiled winsomely, saying: “Your powers are so strong, letting us get some advantage, it isn’t too much right? I just do not want to lose in such a unreconciled fashion.”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “Very well, if the rules allow it, I do not have a problem.” As he said that, he turned to look questioningly at Shangguan Longyin.

Shangguan Longyin nodded and said: “As long as both sides agree, I will allow it as well. We can go through with that fight.”

Zhou Weiqing and Butterfly Orchid both nodded, beckoning to their respective partners.

As soon as XiHua ascended the stage, he gave a bitter smile towards Zhou Weiqing, saying: “Team Leader Zhou, I am truly sorry. We just want to experience Team Leader Zhou’s power for ourselves.”

Zhou Weiqing laughed and said: “No problem at all. Coincidentally, I also wish to truly experience the power of the Passion Valley, and the manipulation of the Time Attribute.”

Shangguan Longyin’s voice rang out throughout the plaza with his Heavenly Energy voice transference. “After some discussion, the Heavenly Bow Battle Team and BaoPo Battle Team have come to an agreement to hold a last two versus two fight to determine the final victory of today’s fight. Due to the fact that the BaoPo Battle Team is especially adept in two versus two fights, I deem this to be fair. Both sides, introduce yourselves.”

“Heavenly Bow Battle Team, Zhou Weiqing, Tian’er.”

“BaoPo Battle Team, XiHua, Butterfly Orchid.”

Shangguan Longyin glanced at Zhou Weiqing and said passively: “If you all cause such a huge commotion like the last fight, your payment will not be so low any longer.”

Zhou Weiqing’s eyes twitched. Low? Because of the damage last time, it cost me ten million gold! Is that considered low? Even if they rebuilt the entire ZhongTian Plaza, it wouldn’t cost that much right. Of course, he only dared think it in his heart, but would not say it out, only nodding towards Shangguan Longyin.

“Fight, begin.”

As Shangguan Longyin shouted the proclamation, the four of them on both sides instantly circulated their Heavenly Energy. Powerful Heavenly Energy reverberations rose abruptly over all four of them.

XiHua’s cultivation was about the same as Butterfly Orchid, though he seemed slightly stronger and more profound. Still, he was at the later stage of the seventh-Jewel, at least not giving Zhou Weiqing and Tian’er another insane eight-Jeweled opponent.

In a similar fashion to the fight against the brothers TianFeng and TianMa, as soon as both sides clashed, it was firstly a clash between their auras. Interestingly, for Zhou Weiqing and Tian’er’s side, both of them instantly held hands, and exactly at the same time, XiHua and Butterfly Orchid also held hands. It was as if there was some sort of couples meeting going on.

Both XiHua and Butterfly Orchid had a constant faint smile, but the aura and Heavenly Energy reverberations emanating from them was not gentle at all.

Zhou Weiqing was surprised to discover that all external sound seemed to have been fully isolated and blocked, and both XiHua and Butterfly Orchid in front of him became rather illusory in look.

In terms of strength of their aura, XiHua and Butterfly Orchid added up together was perhaps lesser than the brothers TianFeng and TianMa. However, they had their own strange tricks.

The aura around their bodies seemed to hold a certain illusory feel, and did not directly clash with Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's aura. Instead, it was soft and gentle like waves, ebbing and flowing one wave after the other, and their aura was slowly growing as well.

Instantly, Zhou Weiqing realised it was a profound mystery of Time Control.

Somehow, with the control of the time Attribute, the pressure of their aura was able to adjust constantly in tiny and fluid changes, and the 'past' aura could somehow overlap with the 'new present' aura, in the constant waves of overlapping, their pressure was increasing, slowly but surely, soon surpassing the maximum that their own cultivation level could have reached.

So... the Time Attribute can actually be used in such a manner! Zhou Weiqing felt he had witnessed a massive eye opener, nodding to himself inwardly. It looked like today, they would have no choice but to attack first.

Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er were connected in their hearts, and abruptly, the 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set and God Vanquishing Heavenly Spirit Set released simultaneously. In that instant, their aura was boosted far above their opponents.

XiHua and Butterfly Orchid's expressions changed, and they were also forced to quickly release their Consolidated Equipment as well.

The Passion Valley was after all not the Heaven's Expanse Palace, and XiHua and Butterfly Orchid did not both have Legendary Sets. As the seven Consolidated Equipment appeared around XiHua's body, they were all accompanied by the now-familiar Consolidating Equipment God Protective Aura. However, Butterfly

Orchid's one was not so, as around her body appeared a set of white armour, also seven pieces in total including the weapon. Although it was not a Legendary Set, it was clearly a fully complete seven-piece set of Consolidated Equipment.

Never ever underestimate a completed set just because it isn't a Legendary Set... that was especially because Butterfly Orchid's Set was already complete, and could fully unleash the effect of the Set. Compared to an incomplete Legendary Set, though the former would have greater future potential, currently their boost and combat strength was not that much weaker.

After all, in the end she had come out from a Great Saint Lands, one of the top in the Passion Valley, and this Set of Consolidated Equipment could not possibly be weak.

Zhou Weiqing moved then, the wings behind his back spreading out as he entered the Dragon-Tiger Transformation state. In a flash, he moved out towards XiHua in a swift pounce. As his body flew forward, the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation appeared below his feet as a thick Lightning Heavenly Energy reverberation appeared instantly, forming several hundred lightning pearls flying towards XiHua in a concerted fashion.

As Zhou Weiqing launched this massive attack instantly, XiHua was given a shock. He was also able to launch instant Skills, but these were usually much smaller and weaker, definitely not to the extent that Zhou Weiqing had just shown, a few hundred lightning pearls blasting out at him so quickly. These Lightning Pearls did not seem to be that powerful, at least individually, but stacked together in such numbers and proximity, their power could not be dismissed.

Furthermore, right behind the massive patch of lightning pearls, there was still Zhou Weiqing and his swinging Dual Legendary Hammers.

With a low shout, XiHua continued maintaining a hand linked

with Butterfly Orchid, and together they advanced forward.

Instantly, the air began to warp in a strange fashion, and as soon as any of the lightning pearls reached a range of three metres from their bodies, they began to fly off in various different random directions, just unable to hit them.

Zhou Weiqing's charging body stopped in his tracks, unable to get through the twisting light. The Legendary Hammers in his hands suddenly slammed into each other, causing a strange Weeeng sound, as the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation under his feet glowed brightly.

Instantly, the lightning pearls which had been sent flying away suddenly came back, all of them still intact. Just that level of control alone was enough to shock anyone else. In the next instant, along with that strange buzzing sound, all of the lightning pearls abruptly exploded in near XiHua and Butterfly Orchid.

After countless practice, especially as Zhou Weiqing grew more familiar with his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, his control over the 'Flying Lightning God Technique' was also growing finer. Do not underestimate the fine control over just a single attribute; with the boosts of the 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set, the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation's control and consolidation, this Skill was more than sufficient to compare with most Heavenly King Stage powerhouses' skills. More importantly, it had so many myriad changes to go along with the speed of its usage.

The violent explosion was almost enough to cause one's ears to go deaf. The greatest feature of the Lightning Attribute was definitely its explosive power, but many people neglected the sound that came along with the explosions. An abrupt explosion like that could greatly affect one's hearing, and the six senses were all linked together. Once the hearing was affected so suddenly, the overall senses would also be affected.

Of course, the couple XiHua and Butterfly Orchid were extremely

powerful. Even facing such a massive explosion of the lightning pearls, they instantly reacted with the best possible choice. They did not attempt to go too aggressive in hopes for a overreaching win, instead playing it safe and focusing on defense in that point.

In their eyes, though Zhou Weiqing's attack might seem ferocious, but since he had exploded out with so many lightning pearls, covering a relatively large surface area like that, though the power was not bad, it should still be no match for an extremely small area of effect powerful Skill. At the same time, such a Skill should also be a large toll on his Heavenly Energy. As a result, they were not in a rush at all. As the saying goes, there is a limit to one's energy, and the stronger his attacks, the faster he would decline.

Chapter 224 To be confirmed! (1)

Both of them still remained hand in hand, the unique characteristics of the Time Attribute flourishing to the max as the strange Time energy reverberations caused warping in time all around their bodies, occasionally causing tiny rifts in time and space about them. The lightning explosion attacks were indeed terrifying, but they were just unable to breakthrough their defenses.

All of a sudden, XiHua seemed to realise something. “Not good!” He exclaimed. Before Butterfly Orchid could understand what was going on, his Heavenly Energy flared up explosively, the sword in his hands drawing a circle in midair as he pulled on Butterfly Orchid, and both of them entered the circle. In a flash, they suddenly appeared outside of the area of effect of the lightning pearls.

As soon as they left the area, Butterfly Orchid quickly realised why XiHua would suddenly exclaim out like that.

Zhou Weiqing had been going all out in his attacks, and they were doing well in their defense against him. However, that was a 2v2 fight, not a 1v2 fight! Besides him, there was still that equally dangerous Tian'er! With their status in the Passion Valley, how could they not know where Tian'er was from? XiHua had suddenly thought about how both him and Butterfly Orchid were so focused on the explosions of the lightning attribute attacks, and thus had not sensed any danger from Tian'er, who had not been seen for so long. As a result, that instinctive sense of unease had caused him to not stint on using such a Skill to swiftly leave the area.

Currently, Tian'er had her God Spirit Staff held high above her head, a thick gold light rising into the skies. Behind her back, the illusory image of a six-winged angel was flickering into existence.

A Heavenly Skill Image Skill!

Without even thinking further into it, XiHua already knew that it was just too late to unleash a Skill powerful enough to fight against Tian'er's Skill in a direct clash. They had already given Tian'er just too much time to slowly gather and unleash that Skill.

The twisting energy fluctuations flowed in the air, forming the illusory figure of a strange creature that Zhou Weiqing had never seen before. As soon as the illusory image appeared, it did not continue to gather into a Skill, instead flying directly towards the six-winged Angel above Tian'er's head.

However, just as the illusory image flew out, the illusory image of a large, fat insect appeared in the path, blocking right in front of it and forcefully intercepting it. At the same time, a purplish red glow lit up at the other side.

As XiHua and Butterfly Orchid glanced to the side, they saw Zhou Weiqing grinning at them evilly. Above his head, the Heavenly Skill Image of the Demonic Dragon Lady was swiftly gathering.

Towards the reactions of XiHua and Butterfly Orchid, Zhou Weiqing was inwardly very impressed. Originally, his goal had been to use a continuous onslaught of powerful lightning pearls, forcing them to maintain a defensive state to allow Tian'er to gather a powerful Skill. However, though XiHua had not realised it at first, as soon as he did so he had not hesitated to use a powerful Skill to escape his attack range. In truth, Zhou Weiqing was rather envious of the Skill he had just used, which he recognized swiftly though he did not have it himself. It was a Skill called Spatial Shuttle, very similar to the Blink Skill he had, but not only was the range far greater, it also had greater flexibility in movement, and more importantly, it could bring someone along as well. Of course, the expenditure of Heavenly Energy was correspondingly much higher compared to the Blink Skill as well.

However, Zhou Weiqing's combat experience was just too rich. As soon as he saw XiHua's reaction, he counterattacked in a similar fashion, swiftly using the Time Attribute Heavenly Skill Image

Skill he had, the Time Reversal. Both sides were using the clash of Heavenly Skill Images to Neutralise the other's Skills, alas the mantis stalked the cicada, unaware of the oriole behind called Zhou Weiqing!

The crux of the situation was that Zhou Weiqing did not hesitate right after he had disrupted their Heavenly Skill Image Skill, instantly starting on the Dragon Silencing Seal right after.

At this point, one of the major advantages of Zhou Weiqing's Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation showed itself. The greatest difference between his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation and Long Shiya's Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation was that he could 'store' a Skill in each of the six 'angled' corners of the star hexagon, and with the resonance of the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, he was able to use his Heavenly Energy and activate them at a far faster rate than any other Heavenly Jewel Master.

To unleash any Heavenly Skill Image Skill was a great toll on any Heavenly Jewel Master, no matter if it was just for the purpose of the clash of Heavenly Skill Images. It was extremely difficult to use them in quick succession in such a chaining fashion, unless one's cultivation level had broken past the Heavenly King Stage, then it would become slightly easier.

In the first place, ordinarily speaking such Skills could only be used by Heavenly King Stage powerhouses and above. The four fighters right now could be said to be highly exceptional and talented, richly endowed by nature. With their mere cultivation stages of six or seven Jewels, they could all use such powerful Skills. However, it was only Zhou Weiqing who could continuously unleash Heavenly Skill Image Skills like that.

XiHua had just unleashed one, and it had been disrupted by Zhou Weiqing. In a short period of time, he would not be able to unleash a second one. Of course, Butterfly Orchid might be able to unleash one, but in the current state of things, she could only disrupt one! Under such a circumstance, no matter Zhou Weiqing or Tian'er, as

long as they could unleash their Skill, it would definitely put them in an unassailable advantageous position.

It could be said that from the start of the fight, both XiHua and Butterfly Orchid had fallen into Zhou Weiqing's trap. Of course, this was also because they were not familiar with his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, allowing such a circumstance to occur.

XiHua and Butterfly Orchid instantly exchanged looks. Both of them were also linked empathically, and their greatest strength was fighting together. Even if they were in such a disadvantaged position, they managed to instantly react.

In a flash, XiHua appeared behind Butterfly Orchid, both his hands pressing on her back. Instantly, with their bodies as the central focal point, a twisted light shook violently outwards, and Butterfly Orchid's eyes shone brightly at once.

A brilliant, gorgeous coloured butterfly image rose swiftly above her head, but she did not use it in a clash of Heavenly Skill Images. The beautiful butterfly quickly turned clear, and a clear sound rang from Butterfly Orchid's mouth as the white Consolidated Armour she was wearing flashed with a layer of white, forming a column of white light fusing into the giant butterfly image.

The butterfly was originally a faint blue colour, but as soon as the light column infused into it, many spots of light began to appear on its wings.

Butterfly Goddess of Light. In the world of the Heavenly Beasts, it was the most powerful amongst all Butterfly type beasts, and it was at the same level as the Demonic Dragon Lady, belonging to those which were one step from entering the Heavenly God Stage.

Although its name had the words 'Light' within, in truth the Butterfly Goddess of Light was actually a Time Attribute Heavenly Beast. With a brilliant flash along its wings, a faint, twisting light fell upon Zhou Weiqing, who was still in the midst of unleashing the image of the Demonic Dragon Lady.

In that moment, Zhou Weiqing felt as if everything around him turned unreal. Inwardly, he muttered to himself. No good! It was the Cage of Time Skill, able to cause the time he experienced to slow down. That was to say, the Dragon Silencing Seal he was unleashing would also be much slower.

It was not that Zhou Weiqing did not want to use his own Heavenly Skill Image to directly disrupt Butterfly Orchid's Skills, but she had just unleashed the Skill too quickly.

Such a powerful Skill, yet she had somehow managed to unleash it in barely the time it took for two breaths. Without question, this was because of XiHua's support. The couple had somehow managed to join their Heavenly Energy together perfectly, to unleash a Skill as one, before actually using the power of the Time Attribute to greatly increase the speed of using the Skill.

This had to be one of the exclusive secret arts of the Passion Valley. As one of the Great Saint Lands, how could they be so easily taken down after all.

A single Cage of Time had caused the Dragon Silencing Seal of Zhou Weiqing's to become so much slower. However, at this point, for Tian'er's side, she had finally completed her Skill.

The six-winged angel above Tian'er's head flapped its wings, and a wave of gold light floated out like a water wave, rushing towards Butterfly Orchid and XiHua.

Butterfly Orchid took a deep breath, and the Butterfly Goddess of Light actually flew out just like that, throwing itself into the sea of gold light.

A strange sight occurred next. The Skill which could summon the Heavenly Skill Image of the six-winged Angel was undoubtedly strong. However, when the Butterfly Goddess of Light touched the gold light, all of the light went through a strange change, fluctuating violently in the air, but it was just unable to fly towards XiHua and Butterfly Orchid.

No matter what a Skill's effect was, no matter how powerful it was, if it was unable to reach the target, then it would not be able to use its power... it would be useless.

However, one could clearly see that although the couple Butterfly Orchid and XiHua were working together, it was a major struggle for them to face up against Tian'er's Skill. Both husband and wives' faces were extremely bleak, and the Butterfly Goddess of Light in the air was slowly growing dim. However, the six-winged Angel above Tian'er's head was still brilliantly bright.

A faint purple light lit up in Tian'er's eyes, and the next sight that appeared was of immense shock to Butterfly Orchid and XiHua. The gold light that soared into the skies actually warped in a strange parabolic arc right back down to return to the six-winged Angel. In that next moment, it actually formed a sword of gold light in the angel's hands.

How was that possible?!

Shock flashed uncontrollably in XiHua and Butterfly Orchid's eyes. Being from the Great Saint Lands, they knew that currently the power that Tian'er was using was actual control of the Heavenly Skill Image, a power that only Heavenly King Stage powerhouses and above should be able to use. Furthermore, to be able to carry out control of such offensive nature, not only did it require a massive amount of Heavenly Energy, a sustained level of it, there was also a need for an extremely powerful Spiritual Force to maintain control. Otherwise, it could cause a severe backlash instead.

Tian'er had followed Zhou Weiqing for such a long period of time, and most of the time it was Zhou Weiqing fighting, and she had fallen into the role of supporting him, healing and boosting as required. As such, she had rarely shown her true powers.

Even for Zhou Weiqing, it was the first time that he had seen Tian'er in full power, and he had never expected that her combat

abilities were at such an astonishing level. No wonder she had taken so long to actually gather this six-winged Angel!

The blade of light in the six-winged Angel's hands flashed across the skies, a powerful divine aura spreading out at once, so powerful that even the ordinary audience members in the crowd of the ZhongTian Plaza could sense it. However, not only did this divine aura not harm them, it actually gave them a feeling of being perked up, rousing their vigor and energy. Any of the audience members who felt the aura couldn't help but reveal a light of devotion in their eyes, with some with lower willpower actually kneeling down right there.

Chapter 224 Divine Faith! (2)

If one observed closely in detail, they would discover that layer after layer of faint and indistinct gold light was continually being given forth by the six-winged Angel, spreading over the entire plaza. As the citizens felt the divine aura and the benefits it brought them, a large amount of gold light began to rise up from them, across the entire ZhongTian Plaza, gathering towards the six-winged Angel above Tian'er's head.

On the VIP Stand, Shangguan Tianxin couldn't help but stand up in shock, exclaiming involuntarily: "This... this is... the power of Faith!"

Tian'er's beautiful face revealed a sweet smile. By now, the six-winged Angel above her head was even more solid, and as the countless spots of light surged into its body from all directions, an unbelievably strong gold light burst forth from its body, so much so that no one could look directly at it, as the divine aura around it grew stronger and stronger.

In comparison, the Butterfly Goddess of Light was growing dimmer and dimmer.

In a flash of the blade of light, the Butterfly Goddess of Light disappeared totally, destroyed fully as it dissipated into the air.

In truth, when the Butterfly Goddess of Light had charged towards Tian'er, it had already unleashed a powerful Skill on Zhou Weiqing, before being forced to block Tian'er's attack. It could be considered to have been relatively weakened already. Furthermore, the six-winged Angel that Tian'er had released was far more powerful than anyone could have imagined. At last, the six-winged Angel flew up into the air, and in a flash, it appeared right above XiHua and Butterfly Orchid.

Tian'er's voice rang out casually. "Surrender now."

Butterfly Orchid still wanted to continue trying, but she discovered that behind her, XiHua had already removed his palms from her back, stepping forward with a helpless look on his face. With a sigh, he said: “I never would have imagined that you have already grasped the power of Faith. In this entire plaza, no one below the Heavenly King Stage can possibly be a match for you... perhaps not even the heir to the Boundless Infinitium Set.”

Tian'er stepped forward slowly, the six-winged Angel flew back to behind her, as if taking up a guarding position, silently standing there. At the other side, Zhou Weiqing had also broken free of the seal on him, although his Dragon Silencing Seal was no longer necessary now.

Did we win just like that? Zhou Weiqing's heart was filled with surprise, looking at the gold spots of light that were still continuously gathering towards Tian'er, filled with both curiosity and surprise.

Tian'er smiled at Zhou Weiqing, extended her hand towards him. In a single stride, Zhou Weiqing returned to her side, holding her hands. Instantly, an extremely thick and rich amount of Light Attribute Heavenly Energy began to rush into his body, startling him suddenly. He quickly formed the large Saint Energy whirlpool with Tian'er's help, and they began to transform the Light Attribute Heavenly Energy.

Tian'er's voice rang softly in Zhou Weiqing's ears: “The Divine Attribute's Faith is like the counterbalance to the Demonic Attribute's Devour, at the same level, considered the top powered Skill in their respective Attributes. I have only just comprehended and begun to grasp this ability in these few days of closed door cultivation with you. In fact, even Father has not comprehended this ability yet.”

“Simply speaking, Faith is not really a Skill, but a sort of attached Attribute to the Divine Attribute, and it can even be considered one of the top final forms of the Divine Attribute. Its greatest use is

actually when the Divine Attribute aura is released, improving it and causing feelings of respect and prayer in people, which will then imperceptibly invoke the Power of Faith, which will slowly infuse into any Divine Attribute Heavenly Jewel Master, strengthening their Skills and their Light aura. Once a Heavenly Jewel Master with such a Skill had sufficient followers, they could have a nigh-infinite source of Heavenly Energy. Unless one used a terrifying power far above their own to destroy them instantly, otherwise the Power of Faith would constantly sustain them, nearly forever.

Even for the Heavenly Snow Mountain, the Divine Attribute Faith had not appeared for more than a thousand years, and had almost been relegated to an object of legend. Who could have imagined that Tian'er would actually comprehend it so suddenly. With the six-winged Angel she had summoned, she decided to use the Divine Faith attached attribute for the first time, matching it with the Power of Faith, which was the reason why it had taken her so long to unleash the Skill.

In the ZhongTian Plaza, there were more than a million audience watching, with so many affected by the Divine Faith... one could imagine the sheer amount of Power of Faith provided.

Let alone XiHua and Butterfly Orchid, in the current situation, even if they added on TianFeng and TianMa to the opposing side, as long as they didn't use the Destruction Attribute to instantly kill Tian'er, they would eventually lose for sure.

Zhou Weiqing had never felt the Saint Energy whirlpool spin so quickly before. At the current moment, with the massive infusion of the Power of Faith, along with Tian'er and himself controlling the Saint Energy whirlpool with all their might, drop after drop of Saint Energy was constantly being churned out, and the drops of Saint Energy were automatically separated evenly, flowing into both their bodies.

After the major expenditure of Saint Energy from their previous

fight, through this process they were recovering rapidly as the concentrated and thick Power of Faith covered both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er with a layer of faint gold light.

...

The Divine Faith was only effective on those with relatively weaker wills, more accurately, those ordinary living beings that were not Jewel Masters or Heavenly Beasts. To unleash the Skill with so many ordinary people gathered together was normally an impossible occurrence. Perhaps, one could even call it a chance that could only occur once in a blue moon.

Of course, the Divine Faith power was a win-win situation; to be able to gain faith from the citizens, not only would there be any bad influence on the citizens, it would actually greatly improve their bodies and constitution, removing many impurities from them and was of great benefit to them overall.

This was the biggest difference between the Divine Attribute and the Demonic Attribute. The Demonic Attribute's strongest power was the Devour Skill that was absolutely a great benefit to oneself at a major cost to others. In contrast, the Divine Attribute was a great benefit to oneself, but also benefiting others as well, and was definitely much easily accepted.

...

As the affected citizens and audience sensed the benefits and comfortable sensations, the stronger the Power of Faith would grow. Very quickly, the Saint Energy transformed in Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's body had grown to more than a hundred drops.

Shangguan Longyin looked towards the VIP Stand, where Shangguan Tianxin's brow was slightly furrowed. Although this Divine Faith was a good benefit to the citizens, it was also not a good sign for the ZhongTian Empire's governing. After all, if their citizens really had a strong faith towards someone from the Heavenly Snow Mountain, that was a very dangerous and unstable

element deep within their borders.

Shangguan Tianxin gave an imperceptible nod towards Shangguan Longyin, who immediately understood. Clearing his throat, he said solemnly: “Heavenly Bow Battle Team has defeated the BaoPo Battle Team, advancing to the Top Four. This round is now over.”

His voice was low, but deep and resonant, instantly knocking Zhou Weiqing and Tian’er out of that mysterious state. The two of them looked at each other, but were helpless in the matter. Nodding to Butterfly Orchid and XiHua, they jumped off the stage to return to their Rest House. At the same time, Tian’er quickly recalled the six-Winged Angel as well.

Of course, the recalling process was as slow as possible. The longer they could draw in as much Power of Faith as possible meant another possible drop of Saint Energy, and she did not wish to waste such a rare opportunity to gain it.

By the time she had no choice but to end the Skill, the little Saint Energy whirlpools within them had grown back substantially, with almost two hundred drops respectively as they spun happily.

Chapter 225 Breakthrough! Saint Energy entering Death Acupuncture Point! (1)

An unexpected joy, a totally unexpected cause for celebration! Zhou Weiqing had certainly not expected it, and even the initiator of the Skill, Tian'er, had not expected it as well.

For a Heavenly Jewel Master with the Divine Attribute to comprehend and gain the Faith (sub)Attribute, it was almost as rare as a Demonic Attribute Heavenly Jewel Master to have the Devour Skill. Of course, the difference was that the Demonic Attribute Devour Skill was an inborn talent, while the Divine Faith was something that had to be comprehended and grasped after cultivation.

In truth, if not for the Saint Energy, Tian'er would most likely never be able to comprehend the profound mysteries of Faith, but she had already succeeded now.

In terms of actual 'usual' practical applications or effectiveness, the Divine Faith definitely seemed to pale in comparison to the Devour Skill. However, under unique circumstances like this, the usefulness of the Divine Faith was far more terrifying than even the Devour Skill.

Currently, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er realised that their gain was not just the two hundred drops of Saint Energy each; even their Heavenly Energy had increased greatly. In fact, Zhou Weiqing's Heavenly Energy had already been at the twenty fifth stage, although it had been for quite some time already, he had still been quite a distance from the twenty sixth stage. However, in just a matter of those few moments, he suddenly had a vague feeling of breaking through once more. Tian'er had pretty much the same sensation as Zhou Weiqing feeling was about the same, but due to the fact she was the one who had used the Divine Faith, the increase in Heavenly Energy was even greater for her. Previously,

she had been at the first level of the seven-Jeweled stage, and in that short period of time it had reached the maxed level.

However, this time, they could really not continue any longer. Although using the Power of Faith gained from the Divine Faith had given them so much in such a smooth fashion, the Power of Faith in their bodies was already packed to the brim. If they continued trying to absorb it, perhaps it would have an adverse effect or backlash. o

“Let’s go back.” Although the top eight fights had not ended, Zhou Weiqing could no longer wait. Both Tian’er and him needed to start cultivating as soon as possible to quickly transform all the energy they had just absorbed, and make it fully their own. Only at that time could they truly call all this energy their own.

Tian’er’s feeling was far deeper than Zhou Weiqing’s, and she quickly nodded without hesitation. Before the next fight even began, the Heavenly Bow Battle Team had stealthily left their Rest House, heading towards the inn.

As soon as they reached their inn, Zhou Weiqing and Tian’er quickly disappeared into their rooms.

The other four team members, including Crow and Ma Qun, gathered together instead.

“What happened in the ZhongTian Plaza just now? Does anyone know?” Ma Qun asked curiously.

Amongst the four, the one with the widest experience and knowledge was definitely Yun Li, and the other three instantly turned to look at him.

Yun Li gave a bitter smile and said: “Don’t look at me, if I knew what was going on, it would be the stranger thing. That fellow Zhou Weiqing is just too disgusting, even his wife is just as disgusting as he is! In the past, I still thought that Lady Tian’er was mainly focused on supporting, who could have guessed... only

today would we learn that her combat prowess is actually so strong, to such a shocking level. From the looks of things, perhaps even Zhou Weiqing cannot compare to her!”

Crow nodded in firm agreement, saying: “Just now, that gold light was gathering from all around the entire ZhongTian Plaza, the sensation was truly shocking indeed. This is truly something that no one can confirm... perhaps only those with the backgrounds of the Great Saint Lands might have any idea of what that was.”

Ma Qun grinned and said: “Heh heh, no matter what, it is still our Boss’ wife, the stronger she is, the better it is for us all! We have also managed to enter the top four already, and we can soon enter the Heavenly Jewel Island. Ahh, I wish we can hurry up and go up, I truly want to experience it for myself. Crow, didn’t you say there are many good things there? We have won quite some money this time, later you can go choose what you want, your beloved husband will buy it for you!”

For the Heavenly Bow Battle Team side, they were relaxed and easygoing. However, no one noticed that as they left, the Dan Dun Battle Team had also left stealthily.

There was one thing that Ma Qun had been correct. Only those from the Great Saint Lands could possibly recognize what Tian’er had unleashed.

...

Zhou Weiqing and Tian’er sat cross legged in a meditative position, their four palms held against each other. Naturally, the large Saint Energy whirlpool was necessary for their cultivation. No matter what type of cultivation they were undergoing, with the presence of the large Saint Energy whirlpool, it would bring a result of twice the result with half the effort.

As their Heavenly Energy circulated around their bodies at a crazy speed under their control, they began cultivation in their

own respective systems. As their Heavenly Energy crossed the path of the large Saint Energy whirlpool, the impurities in their Heavenly Energy were also swiftly stripped away, disintegrating in the power of the Saint Energy whirlpool.

At the same time, the smaller Personal Saint Energy whirlpool was also spinning swiftly. With the support of over two hundred drops of Saint Energy, the small whirlpool was clearly spinning at a much faster speed than before. Although it was still not able to form a proper full cycle that could generate Saint Energy by itself, as it slowly grew bigger, their own Heavenly Energy, bones, meridians, internal organs, almost every part was being strengthened slowly, bathed in the silver white light.

Even for Zhou Weiqing's body, which had evolved several times from the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, he could clearly sense that the Saint Energy was still slowly remoulding and improving his body. From this, one could imagine how powerful and overbearing the Saint Energy truly was.

The twenty five energy whirlpools of the Death Acupuncture Points were spinning crazily, at such speeds that his internal senses and inward vision could not distinguish the actual frequency of the spinning. Subconsciously, he had already entered the Dragon-Tiger Transformation state, the wings behind his back unfurled as it crazily devoured the various atmospheric energies.

As compared to Zhou Weiqing's crazed speed in cultivation, Tian'er was much slower and stable. With the Divine Faith ability, all Tian'er needed to do was to allow the devout Power of Faith to course through her body, enriching her and improving her. Compared to Zhou Weiqing, her physique and body state was definitely much weaker. Of course, that was only compared to the monstrous Zhou Weiqing, who else could dare say they had a stronger physique or body than a top bloodline Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger? In the entire world, perhaps Zhou Weiqing with his Dragon-Tiger Transformation was one of the rare few had the

right to do so.

Comprehension and understanding had already dawned upon Tian'er when she had first gained the Divine Faith, and she could now clearly sense that with the Divine Attribute, she would definitely gain a lot from the Power of Faith. As long as she continued allowing herself to bath and soak in the Power of Faith, then her future cultivation bottlenecks that other ordinary Heavenly Jewel Masters might meet would definitely be much smaller.

As such, as compared to Zhou Weiqing, Tian'er did not rush to breakthrough. Do not just look on the surface of Zhou Weiqing's Immortal Deity Technique and how it caused him so much pain or be on the verge of death all the time. However, it had also built up that steel clad will that he had, forging it in the fires of immense torture. The sheer toughness, strength and flexibility of his meridian channels and acupoints were also greatly improved through that. Although Zhou Weiqing was only at the six-Jeweled stage, his foundations were extremely stable, and with his physique, he did not need to worry about being able to withstand it at all.

Zhou Weiqing's Immortal Deity Technique was split into four sections, and currently he was at the later stages of the third section. Amongst all four sections, the third section had the greatest amounts of Death Acupuncture Points, fourteen in total, and they were all Death Acupuncture Points in the chest area. Currently, there were still the last two remaining before he would finally complete the third section of the Immortal Deity Technique and reach the fourth stage.

With a soft Puuu sound, Zhou Weiqing's entire body shuddered. Tian'er could clearly sense the changes within him. He had broken through!

At this moment, the tacit understanding between Tian'er and Zhou Weiqing showed itself. Without any hesitation, without any

prompting, she instantly stopped her own cultivation, fully sending her Heavenly Energy into the large Saint Energy whirlpool and allowing Zhou Weiqing to fully control and access the large Saint Energy whirlpool.

The thirteenth chest Death Acupuncture Point, the Zhangmen Acupuncture Point.

Position: Right at the median axillary line, at the front of the first costa fluctuantes ribs, at the point where the elbow would reach one's body.

Characteristics: The Liver Meridians, meeting the branch of the spleen meridian and jueyin meridian, considered the focal accumulation point of the abdomen front. Once struck, it would cause spleen and liver trauma, destroying the stomach muscles and even stalling blood flow in the area.

The Zhangmen Acupuncture Point was one of the more important Death Acupuncture Points, and once attacked could definitely cause death swiftly. Breaking the ribs where the Zhangmen Acupuncture Point was would instantly puncture the liver as well.

The Zhangmen Acupuncture Points on both sides of Zhou Weiqing's body broke through almost instantly, and in that moment, the entire room was filled with a silver white light, shining brightly.

Originally, the Saint Energy whirlpool which was only at Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's hands suddenly appeared outside, a massive silver-white whirlpool forming around the two of them entirely as it spun violently. The smaller Saint Energy whirlpool within Zhou Weiqing's body also began to spin faster and faster, and his entire body, including his wings, were stained a silver-white colour.

Zhou Weiqing began to shudder violently, but it only lasted the time to take three breaths before he stopped, the expression and colour of his face returning to his normal calm. Vaguely, one could

observe that all of his currently open Death Acupuncture Point, there was an energy whirlpool swirling around with the Saint Energy from the air, starting to turn a silver white colour.

Including the freshly opened two Zhangmen Acupuncture Points, one left and right, became part of this whirlpool. At the same time, the Heavenly Energy reverberations that Zhou Weiqing was giving off was obviously increasing.

To complete such a massive breakthrough of the Immortal Deity Technique, and at such a fast pace, allowing his cultivation level to increase dramatically... all of this, Zhou Weiqing had not dared to imagine. Although the pain of breakthrough was still extremely intense, it had only lasted for such a short time before the Zhangmen Acupuncture Point had completed its transformation. This was definitely the contribution of the Saint Energy.

Everytime Zhou Weiqing opened a new Death Acupuncture Point, his entire Heavenly Energy circulation would flow smoother and swifter, and each of the individual energy whirlpools of the respective Death Acupuncture Points would also have slight changes. Currently, he could clearly sense that when his Heavenly Energy had burst in such an increase, all of the silver white light of his meridian channels had grown stronger, especially that of his energy whirlpools in the Death Acupuncture Points. At the same time, the amount of Saint Energy in his own personal Saint Energy whirlpool had dropped by a hundred drops!

After discovering this situation, Zhou Weiqing was not startled or afraid, instead feeling overjoyed. He knew that this could only be a good thing for him. Having the Saint Energy fully infused into the Immortal Deity Technique meant that it would be able to support the cultivation of his Immortal Deity Technique, further improving his speed of cultivating Heavenly Energy. If he could, he would even be willing to infuse all of his Saint Energy into all of his Death Acupuncture energy whirlpools.

Of course, that was not possible at all. After some testing, Zhou

Weiqing quickly discovered that he was unable to accomplish that.

After gaining the Saint Energy, this was the second time that he had broken through in his Heavenly Energy stage. The previous time he had broken through, both he and Tian'er still had very little Saint Energy. This time, they had far surpassed the hundred drop mark, and he had a totally fresh and new sensation. After a few tries, Zhou Weiqing realised what it was.

In order to allow the Saint Energy to fully merge into his Death Acupuncture Points permanently, it could only be accomplished in that single instant when his Heavenly Energy was breaking through, right as the Immortal Deity Technique was taking the next step and breaking through one of his Death Acupuncture Points.

Chapter 225 Breakthrough! Saint Energy entering Death Acupuncture Point! (2)

This time, having infused and fully merged a hundred drops of Saint Energy into his Immortal Deity Technique and Death Acupuncture Points, would he be that far from his next breakthrough? However, that also meant that his requirement of Saint Energy was going to be far greater.

This entire experience also sparked a thought in Zhou Weiqing. As their cultivation level grew they drew more Saint Energy, his Heavenly Energy would also begin to take on more characteristics of the Saint Energy, as more and more of it was joined fully with him. Perhaps this might not actually increase his overall cultivation level, but with the same amount of Heavenly Energy, if it was mixed with some Saint Energy, or at least some characteristics, it would mean the power of any Skills used would increase dramatically.

At last, Zhou Weiqing finished his cultivation. Slowly opening his eyes, he saw Tian'er looking at him with a concerned look.

“How is it?” Tian'er asked.

Zhou Weiqing beamed as he said: “Success, beyond even my imagination! This Saint Energy is truly beneficial indeed, I love it so much! With it, my Immortal Deity Technique can now be cultivated without much danger. I have broken through the twenty sixth stage. Just one more stage, and I will have completed the third portion of my Immortal Deity Technique. Although at that point that will not reach the seventh Jewel yet, my overall power should still have quite some growth.”

As such, Zhou Weiqing began to describe the entire process of how he broke through and all the sensations and inspirations he had to Tian'er, not hiding anything from her. Although Tian'er was not cultivating the same Immortal Deity Technique, Zhou

Weiqing believed that when she broke through, she would meet with something similar in nature. This was the benefit of the Saint Energy after all.

Tian'er paid full attention to Zhou Weiqing's descriptions earnestly. This was yet another benefit for them cultivating together, especially since they shared the same source of the Saint Energy whirlpool, and they could exchange their thoughts and inspirations at any time. In this way, their understanding of the Saint Energy could grow at a much swifter rate.

For the next few days before the Heavenly Jewel Tournament Finals would begin, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er shut themselves in the room, cultivating all the time. Perhaps before this, they might not be just as hardworking, but the miraculous draw and feeling of the Saint Energy was just too attractive, so much so that they became twice as industrious as before.

Two days later, Tian'er's Heavenly Energy had also successfully broken through to the twenty ninth stage. Just like what Zhou Weiqing had expected, when her Heavenly Energy broke through, a hundred drops of Saint Energy also infused and merged into her Heavenly Energy. However, for Tian'er, the effect of the Saint Energy improving and evolving her body was even more obvious than for Zhou Weiqing. Although both of their cultivation levels only raised a single stage, their overall powers had an obvious and large growth.

...

Heavenly Jewel Island.

Early in the morning, the Heavenly Jewel Island Personnel who were in charge of receiving the guests were already fully prepared. This time, there were actually two dark horse teams in the top four teams. Besides the Heavenly Bow Battle Team, there was also the Hariott Battle Team from the Hariott Empire.

The Hariott Empire was actually an Empire only slightly bigger

than the Heavenly Bow Empire. However, for their team to be able to enter the finals as one of the top four, it was a totally different notion from the Heavenly Bow Battle Team. For them, it was truly due to some unbelievable good luck.

All the way, they did not even meet any truly strong teams. Of course, at the same time, the Hariott Battle Team was also far stronger than it had ever been before, and the combination of power, skill and lots of luck had somehow brought them into the top four... definitely becoming the luckiest team in the entire tournament. Of the traditional four Great Saint Land Battle Teams, this time only the ZhongTian and WanShou Battle Teams had actually entered the finals, a result that had truly come as a surprise to most. Of course, the reason why this had happened was totally due to the Heavenly Bow Battle Team.

In their entire procession up the Heavenly Jewel Island, Ma Qun's mouth never remained idle. Indeed, as a youth who was experiencing such majestic sights for the first time, how could he not be astonished and amazed. In comparison, Yun Li was much better off, but the shock in his eyes could not be hidden. Of course, compared to the others, for Yun Li to ascend to the Heavenly Jewel Island, there was another purpose besides the Heavenly Jewel Tournament. Naturally, that was to pay a formal visit to Little Miss Muddle's Master, the most famous God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master in the Consolidating Equipment Master world, Xing Tianyi. Only if he could gain this Master's approval could he truly be together with Little Miss Muddle.

The Heavenly Jewel Island was unchanged. Towards this area, Zhou Weiqing was almost familiar with it already. Led by their guide, they were soon brought coincidentally to the same location where the previous Fei Li Battle Team had stayed. Perhaps, this was also purposefully arranged by the Heavenly Jewel Island.

As soon as they ascended the Heavenly Jewel Island, Zhou Weiqing no longer had any thoughts of cultivating. By his side,

Tian'er could clearly sense his urgent feelings, clearly focused on a single name: Shangguan Bing'er.

Three years. Three years without meeting, and they would finally meet, how could Zhou Weiqing not be anxious?

After they had settled down, Zhou Weiqing quickly brought the team to the Heavenly Jewel Island Consolidating Equipment Pavilion. Clearly, this was the place that the entire team was most interested in.

“Go on in and have a look, as long as there are sufficient funds, you can just buy whatever you all need. Yun Li, the place you want to go is at the top level. You know how to get up there?” Zhou Weiqing turned his gaze towards Yun Li.

Yun Li nodded. This time, he had clearly made ample preparation. Little Miss Muddle had described everything to him so many times, and currently in his hands he had a plaque from her.

Looking at Yun Li who was clearly very nervous, Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “Don't worry, there is nothing to be afraid of. The three Senior God Consolidating Equipment Masters are all very nice. Your talents are no lower than anyone, and your feelings are there. You can definitely succeed, I believe in you. We will cheer for you!”

Yun Li nodded. Of course, it was impossible for him not to be nervous at all, but this was something he had to go through. After waving to the rest, he stepped forward resolutely, heading towards the top of the Consolidating Equipment Pavilion.

“You go too.” As they watched Yun Li leave, Tian'er said softly to Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing turned to look at her, an ashamed look on his face. However, he did not try to hide his thoughts. “Tian'er, I...”

Tian'er giggled and said: “What! As if I do not already know

about your playboy ways? Go then, you haven't seen Bing'er for so long, how can I possibly stop you? Even if I stop you once, can I stop you forever? Since it is impossible, why not just let you go directly, lest everyone ends up uncomfortable. Go on, just remember to return."

Seeing the sincere smile on Tian'er's beautiful face, Zhou Weiqing took a step forward and gave her a big hug. In front of everyone, he kissed her on her soft red lips before turning around.

Seeing his leaving figure, still feeling the lingering warmth on her lips, the smile on Tian'er's face did not disappear, growing richer instead. If she were to say she wasn't jealous, that would be impossible, as Tian'er was extremely clear about the place Shangguan Bing'er held in Zhou Weiqing's heart. However, so what if she was jealous? There was nothing she could do to stop it. However, Tian'er also had her own thoughts, just like he loved Shangguan Bing'er so much, didn't that mean he couldn't leave her as well? Although sometimes Tian'er might seem casual and careless outwardly, she was actually very sensitive inside. She could sense that Zhou Weiqing's feelings for her were not much lesser than Shangguan Bing'er, and that was enough.

...

As he walked out of the Consolidating Equipment Pavilion, Zhou Weiqing drew a deep breath, a light in his eyes. Currently, he did not know how to describe his feelings. If he did not get to see Bing'er anytime soon, he felt he would go crazy.

Bing'er, Bing'er, where are you!

Zhou Weiqing walked out of the Consolidating Equipment Pavilion, heading directly for the Heaven's Expanse Palace at top speed. Without question, Bing'er should be there, and if they did not allow him to enter, he would yell outside like the previous time. He did not believe that Bing'er would not be able to hear him.

Very quickly, he had reached the front of the Heaven's Expanse Palace. However, before he could enter, he was once again stopped by the guards.

“Halt.”

“I am here to see Shangguan Bing'er.” Zhou Weiqing forcefully suppressed the urgency in his heart, but his expression was not good.

Right at that moment, a low voice rang out. “Do you think you can see her just because you say you want to? Zhou Weiqing, defeat me first before we talk about that.” Zhan LingTian's tall figure stepped out stealthily from Heaven's Expanse Palace.

Compared to the previous time they had met, Zhan LingTian's expression was even uglier, as icy cold as the first time Zhou Weiqing had seen Shangguan Xue'er.

“Bro Zhan, do not make things difficult for me. I am really not in a good mood now. I want to see Bing'er.” If it were the normal Zhou Weiqing, he would definitely not speak in such a stiff manner. However, he was just yearning for Bing'er too much, to be unable to see his beloved despite being so close to her. Three years! His feelings and emotions were rather unstable right now.

Dark gold light flashed all about Zhan LingTian, and his Light-Dark Divine Spear appeared in his grasp. A strong enmity flashed in his eyes as he said: “I don't care what mood you are in now, as if I am in a good mood? Who do you think you are, you already have Lady Bing'er's heart, and its not enough for you? You actually still dare to provoke Fei'er and Xue'er? You should know my feelings for Xue'er, and I have waited so long for this opportunity. If you want to see Bing'er, you better defeat me first.”

Zhou Weiqing looked at Zhan LingTian, his aura suddenly surging out irritably. In his eyes, a faint red flashed, as his entire aura burst forth, in a brutal and overbearing fashion, causing all the nearby gods to pale in shock, stepping back subconsciously.

Even Zhan LingTian was startled by the sudden fighting spirit that burst out of Zhou Weiqing, and his face changed.

They had not met for a few years, and the current Zhou Weiqing was no longer the Zhou Weiqing of the past. These few years, Zhan LingTian had been training hard, and his cultivation level had improved. However, it was without a doubt that Zhou Weiqing's improvement was far greater.

“In that case, Bro Zhan, don't blame me for being too hard on you too.” Let alone Zhan LingTian, if there was a Heavenly King Stage powerhouse in front of him, Zhou Weiqing would not hesitate to take action. In his heart, there was a fire burning. Zhan LingTian's blocking was causing that fire to erupt.

Thick dark gold light sprang out one after the other around Zhou Weiqing, and the Dual Legendary Hammers appeared in his hands instantly. As the 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set appeared around him, in a flash he charged towards Zhan LingTian without any flourishes. He wanted to end it as quickly as possible, and he even released the Dragon-Tiger Transformation. The only difference was that the usually purple eyes were now bloodshot.

Chapter 225 Breakthrough! Saint Energy entering Death Acupuncture Point! (3)

Naturally, Zhan LingTian was not afraid of Zhou Weiqing as well. He had waited for this day for such a long time. He hated Zhou Weiqing, hated him for stealing the heart of Xue'er from him. Not long ago, when Shangguan Xue'er had returned to the Heavenly Jewel Island, Zhan LingTian had realised something had gone wrong. That was because Shangguan Xue'er's face had such a gentle expression. Furthermore, when she spoke with Fei'er about something, her face actually showed the youthful embarrassment of a young girl. Without question, that was not because of him.

Zhan LingTian was an extremely intelligent man, being one of the top geniuses in the entire younger generation, otherwise he would not have such high status in the Heaven's Expanse Palace. His associative imagination was definitely not weak at all, and after some devious roundabout questioning and tentative veiled references, he realised a shocking news. Zhou Weiqing, it was that Zhou Weiqing once more. He actually had such an unclear relationship with Fei'er and Xue'er as well! From that moment onwards, the fury and hate in Zhan LingTian's heart burned bright.

A few days ago, when Zhou Weiqing had ascended the Heavenly Jewel Island, he had already wanted to cause trouble for him. Alas, due to Shangguan Tianyue's sudden appearance, he had not succeeded. However, today he had calculated that Zhou Weiqing would definitely be coming to the Heaven's Expanse Palace, and he had long since been waiting here. He wanted to defeat Zhou Weiqing, to prove that he was the stronger one, more worthy one. He was not reconciled at all!

From a young age, he had always liked Shangguan Xue'er, and though the Shangguan Sisters had exact same features, the only

one in Zhan LingTian's heart was Xue'er. All these years, he had been training so hard, fighting with all of his might to gain a higher status in the Heaven's Expanse Palace. A big half of that reason was because of Shangguan Xue'er. Now, seeing the love of his life being stolen right in front of his eyes by someone else, how could he not be enraged?

What so great about Zhou Weiqing... with his looks, how could he match Xue'er! Furthermore, he already had the love of Lady Bing'er!

Towards Zhou Weiqing's playboy ways, Zhan LingTian was extremely dissatisfied. As such, now that they were here today, he had made preparations to totally defeat Zhou Weiqing, letting him not have the face to stay on the Heavenly Jewel Island.

Both men, filled with fiery passion and fighting for their love... clashing in that instant with dazzling fireworks.

Zhan LingTian's reactions were extremely fast; facing Zhou Weiqing's charge, the Light-Dark Divine Spear piercing forward, totally ignoring Zhou Weiqing's Dual Legendary Hammers as he made use of the length of the spear to aim directly at Zhou Weiqing's throat. A thick Light Attribute and Darkness attribute energy exploded out, the two opposing Attributes causing a violent shockwave, the terrifying energy fluctuations bursting forth from the Light-Dark Divine Spear instantly, a concussive wave that spread out towards the Dual Legendary Hammers.

Eight Jewels. Indeed, Zhan LingTian's cultivation level had reached the eight-Jeweled stage. When he released the Light-Dark Divine Spear, his Heavenly Jewels had already told Zhou Weiqing his cultivation level.

However, Zhou Weiqing did not change styles, instead using the Blink Still instantly. His Dual Hammers had already been smashing downwards, but with the aid of the Blink Skill, his body appeared abruptly right in front of Zhan LingTian.

The Light-Dark Divine Spear swept to the side, and without warning Zhan LingTian's body also moved to the side by three chi. Somehow, the Light-Dark Divine Spear was being used like a whip, slamming savagely into Zhou Weiqing's hammers.

A massive explosion, one so violent that almost the entire Heavenly Jewel Island could hear and even feel. The opposing forces and terrifying energy held within the Light-Dark Divine Spear exploded without any holding back. At the same time, Zhou Weiqing's Dual Legendary Hammers had been struck with all his strength behind it, also an equally terrifying power indeed.

In the violent explosion, Zhan LingTian's body staggered back a few steps. Of course, Zhou Weiqing did not fare much better, the Dual Legendary Hammers surrounded with gold and black light as he staggered back three steps as well, and he was forced to channel his Heavenly Energy to dispel the terrifying mix of Light and Darkness energies.

In terms of just pure destructive power, the Light and Darkness fusion held an inherent explosive capability that was actually above any single Saint Attribute. That was Zhan LingTian's strongest point. All his years of focusing on this area had allowed him to enter combat with these two attributes so easily, manipulating them at his beck and call. With the two terrifying energies merged together, it was more than enough to tear through any defenses of equal level.

Alas, today he was facing Zhou Weiqing. Although Zhou Weiqing's cultivation level was still no match for Zhan LingTian, in terms of pure strength, even two Zhan LingTians would be no match for him. With the five 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set pieces, his strength was already at a horrifying level. With his Heavenly Energy on top of that, even a Heavenly King Stage powerhouse would not dare to let him strike out at will so easily.

As such, Zhan LingTian was also forced back in their clash. Similarly, Zhou Weiqing had been affected by the opposing

energies of his Light-Dark Divine Spear... that was a pure union of Heavenly Energy and power of one's attributes. However, even though the Light and Darkness Attribute's Heavenly Energy reverberations were so tyrannical, when they met with the Saint Energy in Zhou Weiqing's body, they vanished like snow in springtime.

Zhan LingTian's Light and Darkness Fusion Attribute was definitely extremely power, however in terms of power and the stage it was at, it was still far from the pure Destruction Attribute that the Blood Red Hell had used. Even the Destruction Attribute had fallen to the Saint Energy, let alone Zhan LingTian's attack.

Despite that, it was clear that Zhou Weiqing's fighting capabilities were still greatly affected by it; at least not allowing him to swing a follow up attack quickly.

Zhan LingTian staggered back in a cross step, feeling an aching and tingling sensation in his arms. Though his emotions were in great agitation, it did not stop his heart from gripping in shock from that exchange of blows. This Zhou Weiqing's strength had already reached such a point? The pure strength he had was actually able to disregard the sheer gap between their power levels... This fight was not going to be easy at all.

However, Zhan LingTian had never planned to underestimate Zhou Weiqing, having known him for a time. In fact, he even felt that in terms of Stored Skills, he was definitely no match for Zhou Weiqing. After all, Zhou Weiqing had six Attributes, with even two Saint Attributes. If he tried to compare Skills with him, he would definitely be at a disadvantaged position.

As a result, even though his arms weren't in top condition, Zhan LingTian still launched a follow up attack as soon as he could, his left leg stomping on the floor savagely as he soared into the air, the Light-Dark Divine Spear bursting into millions of gold and black threads of light, enveloping Zhou Weiqing's body.

Since your strength is so startling, then I will use pure combat skills to defeat you!

Do not even think of underestimating these gold and black lights, each and every one of them held the fusion attribute of Light and Darkness. As long as they could pierce into their enemy, or met any obstruction, the protective layer around that energy would disappear, resulting in an explosion.

Facing Zhan LingTian's swift attack, Zhou Weiqing stood there, an icy cold look on his face. In that instant, the wings behind his back abruptly sprang wide open. On his Dual Legendary Hammers, bluish purple light burst out abruptly, the 'Flying Lightning God Technique' coming into play at once.

It was clear that Zhou Weiqing's 'Flying Lightning God Technique' was no match for Zhan LingTian's Light-Dark Divine Spear. However, all Zhou Weiqing wanted was to stall him for a moment.

When he had been knocked back from the clash earlier, Zhou Weiqing had not remained idle, instantly releasing the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation. It was only with the support of the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation could he maintain such a high level of combat and expenditure of Heavenly Energy without too much problems. This was even more so since they were on the Heavenly Jewel Island, as the concentration of Heavenly Energy in the atmosphere was just so high, allowing the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation to work to its maximum effect.

In the skies, a patch of crackling lightning that burst out like a angry roar. As countless lightning bolts crashed and exploded in air, dissipating. At this moment, a thick grey light sprang forth around Zhou Weiqing, warping into a strange layer of grey crystalline shield of light. He was actually attempting to purely defend against the Light-Dark Divine Spear that had just broken through his 'Flying Lightning God Technique'.

Looking for death! That was the only thought in Zhan LingTian's mind. A six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master was trying to block his Light-Dark Divine Spear's Thousand Light Strikes with just a defensive skill? That was preposterous! After all, his Light-Dark Divine Spear was exactly specialised in piercing through defenses.

However, that was just Zhan LingTian's thoughts. Naturally, Zhou Weiqing had his own plans as well. As soon as he saw the light from Zhan LingTian's spear about to land on him, the Dual Legendary Hammers swinging out as he totally ignored the incoming attack from Zhan LingTian. It seemed like he was going on [an attack that would burn stone and jade alike](#), directly striking at Zhan LingTian as well.

By this point, it was already too late for Zhan LingTian to change his attacks. If that happened, he would lose his first strike advantage. Furthermore, he had already struck out with his full might, and if he tried to change attack now, he would have to suffer the backlash of changing and sustain an injury. As a result, he could only grit his teeth and push his offense to the greatest. To Zhan LingTian, as long as his attack could land on Zhou Weiqing and injure him, then it would also automatically ward off his attacks. Furthermore, the length of the Light-Dark Divine Spear was beyond the Dual Legendary Hammers.

However, as the bouts of black and gold light began to land on the grey shield, Zhan LingTian's expression changed.

Bursts of energy and strange light began to spark upon the grey shield upon contact, but the Thousand Light Strikes which had already been weakened by the 'Flying Lightning God Technique' actually only caused the grey shield to ripple constantly upon impact, but did not seem to be able to break through.

How was this possible?! What kind of powerful defense was that?! Zhan LingTian's heart was filled with shock. However, at this point he no longer had any other choice. Biting down hard, the thousands sparks of light suddenly gathered together, forming a

single point as if warping into an extension of the Light-Dark Divine Spear, piercing forward as one.

Puuu A soft sound, followed by a series of violent explosions in the air.

The Ward of the Demon God had a truly startling defensive capabilities, but Zhan LingTian was no pushover. At last, with the merger of all the remaining Thousand Light Strikes and sheer power behind it, he had finally managed to break through the Ward of the Demon God, piercing towards Zhou Weiqing's chest.

"No!" Right at that moment, three female voices rang out at once. Both Zhan LingTian and Zhou Weiqing felt their hearts grip just as they were about to take action.

However, by this time, neither of the two fighters could stop themselves.

With the soft Puuu sound, Zhou Weiqing was pierced right through. However, it wasn't his body, but his wings. At the last possible second, his wings had wrapped around himself, blocking in front of his body, forcefully blocking the Light-Dark Divine Spear. The actual spear had been blocked, but the energy held within the spear still managed to pierce through.

A layer of black and gold light burst forth from Zhou Weiqing's chest, traveling around his entire body. At the same time, Zhou Weiqing grunted in pain at the impact.

Direct translation, basically means killing an opponent in a suicidal type attack

Chapter 226 Bing'er: But, I want... (1)

With the fight down to the last critical moment, at this point due to the cover of the wings, no one else could see the strange look on Zhou Weiqing's face. Gritting his teeth, a strange energy reverberation appeared in his eyes.

BANG Even as Zhou Weiqing was struck by Zhan LingTian's piercing attack, how could it be without any price to pay? The crying-face Hammer slammed savagely into his shoulders, and Zhan LingTian's entire body flew like a cannonball several hundred metres away. As for Zhou Weiqing, though his body was swaying, he still stood firmly there.

The wings behind his back slowly retracted into his body as he left the Dragon-Tiger Transformation state, and Zhou Weiqing pointed his Hammers towards Zhan LingTian, shouting coldly: "You have lost."

Indeed, Zhan LingTian had lost. Although he had a Legendary Set, one uniquely tailored for his Light-Dark Divine Spear... he had still lost.

His armour could not withstand the final blow, and as soon as Zhou Weiqing's savage hammer blow landed, it totally shattered the Consolidated armour around Zhan LingTian's shoulder. At the same time, his entire shoulder was smashed up, the Heavenly Energy in his body almost scattered totally by the blow. His defenses were far from being able to handle such a hit from Zhou Weiqing.

Zhan LingTian no longer had any capacity of fighting left within him. He had never imagined that even with such a mighty blow that held all his power, in the end he was still unable to defeat Zhou Weiqing. The damage from this final hammer blow, he would need to cultivate and recuperate for at least half a year to one year before he could fully recover. This was an estimate that

was even after the aid of the precious Heavenly Jewel Island medicines.

Zhou Weiqing had won this fight between love rivals, but as he spoke the words 'You have lost', his eyes subconsciously turned to the other side.

Three young women, looking exactly the same, with astonishing beauty that could topple kingdoms, were rushing towards them at a surprising speed. In a flash, they had appeared in front of Zhou Weiqing.

Perhaps the true tragedy was that these three beautiful women only had eyes for Zhou Weiqing, none of them even looking at Zhan LingTian who had been blown away.

"Little Fatty!" A voice... so familiar... one that he had dreamed of countless times... rang out suddenly. In that instant, Zhou Weiqing felt his entire soul shudder.

A rich, strong sense of yearning, filled with love. His body glowed in a flash as the Consolidated Equipment disappeared. Looking at the worried and concerned figure in front of him, he abruptly opened his arms, pulling her into his embrace.

However, in that instant, Zhou Weiqing's body slowly fell back, toppling down onto the ground even as the startled cries of the young girl rang out.

The other two beautiful young ladies could clearly see that at Zhou Weiqing's chest area, a scary looking 'flower' of blood slowly appearing. In that instant, it was as if they had lost their ability to breathe.

The three young ladies who had just appeared were naturally the three Shangguan Sisters. The news that Zhou Weiqing had ascended the Heavenly Jewel Island had traveled to them rather quickly, and Shangguan Bing'er's yearning and longing for Zhou Weiqing was no less than his! With her strong pleading, the three

sisters had rushed towards the inn where the Heavenly Bow Battle Team had settled in. Alas, Zhou Weiqing had been too urgent, having rushed out after the team settled in and bringing the team to the Consolidating Equipment Pavilion. As a result, the three sisters had missed the Heavenly Bow Battle Team totally.

After which, the three sisters had headed to the Consolidating Equipment Pavilion, but after walking through it once, they were still unable to find Zhou Weiqing. It was only until they met Tian'er there did they realise Zhou Weiqing had actually gone to the Heaven's Expanse Palace, thus delaying their arrival so much.

As Shangguan Xue'er and Shangguan Fei'er saw the spreading flower of blood at Zhou Weiqing's chest, both stared in shock momentarily before throwing themselves down, supporting him from each side.

This was the front of the Heaven's Expanse Palace, and the guards in front could only stare in shock, their mouths agape. Naturally, they recognized the three Shangguan Sisters, they were the three Princesses of the Heaven's Expanse Palace! However... they were actually currently... for the same man...This... this was something far out of their imaginations!

Shangguan Bing'er held onto Zhou Weiqing tightly, tears streaming down her face uncontrollably. Looking at the ashen complexion of Zhou Weiqing, she said anxiously: "Little Fatty, Little Fatty, don't scare me!"

Zhou Weiqing stared at Shangguan Bing'er, unable to tear his eyes off her. "Bing'er, I'm sorry, I'm sorry, I'm so sorry..."

After the three apologies, Zhou Weiqing fainted right in her arms.

Shangguan Bing'er held Zhou Weiqing tightly, tears streaming down her cheeks as she was sobbing uncontrollably.

Shangguan Xue'er and Shangguan Fei'er both had worried looks

on their faces. As Shangguan Xue'er's cultivation level was the highest, she started to infuse her Heavenly Energy slowly into Zhou Weiqing's body, and she could instantly sense the Light and Darkness energy still raging wantonly in his body. Luckily, it wasn't a large amount of it, and as Zhou Weiqing's Heavenly Energy circulated, it was slowly being dissipated by the energy whirlpools of the Death Acupuncture Points.

On the other side, although Zhan LingTian was severely injured, he was still able to barely stand up. Upon seeing the three Shangguan Sisters all surrounding Zhou Weiqing and ignoring him, he suddenly vomited a mouthful of fresh blood and also fainted. As the one who injured Zhou Weiqing, even if he was from the Heaven's Expanse Palace, at this current moment the three Shangguan Sisters did not sympathize with him, and the other Heaven's Expanse Palace members quickly supported Zhan LingTian away.

"That's not right! With his current combat abilities, how could he be injured so easily by Senior Brother Zhan?" After sensing the light and darkness energies in Zhou Weiqing's body slowly dissipating, Shangguan Xue'er couldn't help but say curiously.

Shangguan Fei'er did not have her usual demeanor of the Little Demon Girl of the Heaven's Expanse Palace, saying urgently: "What's so wrong about that? Didn't you see as we were rushing here, he was just trying to end the fight as quickly as possible so that he could see Bing'er quickly, so he actually used his body as bait to lure his opponent in."

Shangguan Xue'er nodded, the shred of uncertainty in her heart vanishing.

Shangguan Fei'er was indeed correct. At that time, when Zhou Weiqing had struck out at Zhan LingTian, he was prepared to use such a method of direct clashing to resolve their fight quickly; after all, Zhan LingTian was no easy foe, so it was considered a type of tactics to lure in the enemy. However, one thing she had

not realised was that Zhou Weiqing had actually purposely allowed the spear blow to hit him, and he had been willing to do so.

To accept Zhan LingTian's blow like that was not because Zhou Weiqing wanted to garner sympathy from the three Shangguan Sisters, but it was a form of self punishment. He felt that he had let down Shangguan Bing'er so much, three days he had not seen her, yet he had ended up having unclear relations with Tian'er, Fei'er and Xue'er one after the other. Now that he was about to see Shangguan Bing'er again, although he missed her so much, he did not know how to face her. As such, he had purposely let down his own guard and defenses, allowing Zhan LingTian to injure him. Of course, since it was under his control, that was not too serious an injury.

If not for him allowing that, with the Light-Dark Divine Spear of Zhan LingTian that had already expended so much energy, it would definitely not be able to break through his Immortal Deity Shield and the powerful physique and skin of him in the Dragon-Tiger Transformation state.

The three Shangguan Sisters carried Zhou Weiqing into the Heaven's Expanse Palace, directly entering Shangguan Bing'er's room. However, when they removed his shirt to check his wounds, they discovered that the previously severe looking wound on his chest was actually closing and healing at an astonishing rate, and the light and darkness energy Zhan LingTian had infused in had disappeared totally.

Seeing that Zhou Weiqing was no longer in any danger, the three Shangguan Sisters heaved a sigh of relief. In truth, at that time when Zhou Weiqing fainted, the wound on his chest was secondary. More importantly, when he saw Shangguan Bing'er he had been overly agitated, thus aggravating the wound in his chest, and he had thus lapsed into a short faint.

Although Shangguan Xue'er and Shangguan Fei'er really wanted to stay here to continue looking after her, in the end the two sisters

exchanged looks and left stealthily, leaving the room to Shangguan Bing'er, who had tears in her eyes.

Zhou Weiqing's physique was extremely powerful indeed, and it did not take long for him to slowly regain consciousness. As he woke up, Zhou Weiqing instantly sensed a small, soft hand gripping his own tightly, as if afraid that he would disappear as soon as it let go.

"Bing'er." As soon as Zhou Weiqing opened his eyes, he saw the beautiful, gentle eyes that were red from crying. The emotions and love in his heart burst forth, and he sat up abruptly, enveloping her in his embrace tightly. In that instant, it was as if he wished he could hug her so hard that they merged together.

It was just a normal, pure hug. With Zhou Weiqing's character, he actually did not make any further intimate contact with her, just hugging her tightly as the emotions and love surged in his heart. In his warm embrace, as if his entire chest was molten, Shangguan Bing'er felt as if she were melting right into him.

Zhou Weiqing held Shangguan Bing'er for a time, not even knowing how long he did so, until his feelings calmed down slightly. At last, he murmured: "I'm sorry, Bing'er. I..."

Bing'er moved her face to nuzzle Zhou Weiqing's neck closely, saying: "Don't say anymore, Little Fatty. If I really blamed you, would I come to see you now? I should be the one to apologise to you..."

"Ah?" Zhou Weiqing was given a fright, almost thinking that Bing'er was speaking in opposites. Subconsciously, he looked up at her, but all he saw was a pair of beautiful, gentle and loving eyes.

Lifting her hand to stroke Zhou Weiqing's cheek, Shangguan Bing'er said gently: "Little Fatty, it is my fault. I was not able to be by your side during your toughest times, to accompany you through that suffering. I only discovered what happened to our Heavenly Bow Empire not long ago when I came out of the closed

door cultivation... our homeland... your family... all destroyed; yet at that time I was not able to accompany you by your side. I can imagine how much you have suffered these three years, how much pain you must have been in... all the stress and pressure you must have been under, that you had to shoulder everything, all the responsibilities. I do not blame Tian'er, nor do I blame sisters. In that most difficult time, the pain and weakness in your heart, I can imagine that. As long as there was someone to accompany you and help you through it, I can only be happy and ashamed. I should not have chosen to stay here... at that time, I only thought that if I did not work hard and improve my strength, I would not be able to follow your footsteps any longer. I'm so sorry Little Fatty, can you forgive me?"

Seeing Shangguan Bing'er's apologetic look, Zhou Weiqing once again held her tightly in his arms, as he couldn't help but cherish her even more. With such a wife, what else could a man want? In that instant, Zhou Weiqing's heart was full of love and tenderness.

Indeed! She was his Bing'er, forever only thinking about him... even when he had other women, she had never complained or showed any 'colours' towards him, instead blaming herself... pulling all the burdens upon her own shoulders!

Chapter 226 Bing'er: But, I want... (2)

Zhou Weiqing held onto Shangguan Bing'er tightly, tears flowing uncontrollably from his eyes. Just like that, he held onto her, unable to speak for quite some time.

Still holding on tight onto Shangguan Bing'er, Zhou Weiqing slowly lay back down onto the bed, but he did not have any other actions, just holding her tightly like that as they lay down.

Shangguan Bing'er gently stroked his back. "Little Fatty, love me, okay?" As she spoke those words, her beautiful face turned a shy red.

Zhou Weiqing started momentarily, lifting his head to look at her. However, he shook his head, gently kissing her luscious red lips as he said: "Bing'er, I just want to hold you like this. I do not want you to think that my love for you, my feelings for you is just because of lust."

Shangguan Bing'er smiled and said: "Silly, how could I think that... do I still not know you well enough? I want it, I also miss you and want you, I like the feeling when you possess me. Three years... we have been apart for three years, and I also really want to feel like your woman again."

Luscious red lips moved forward of their own accord as she kissed him, and the love between the two burst forth like a volcano erupting.

...

Dawn.

The various members of the top four battle teams gathered early, led by the Heaven's Expanse Palace guides to the cloudy entrance area. The Heavenly Jewel Tournament was about to begin, and all of the battle team members were fully prepared

Relatively speaking, both the WanShou Battle Team and the

Battle Team from the HuaLuo Empire which had entered the top four for the first time in history were slightly more nervous. On the other hand, the leading Shangguan Sister seemed to be in an absent minded trance, not really paying attention to things around her. On the other side, the Heavenly Bow Battle Team was actually being led by Tian'er instead, and there was no sign of Zhou Weiqing at all. However, Tian'er's expression was calm and relaxed, with no sign of being nervous that he was missing.

“Where did that rascal Weiqing run off to?” Yun Li asked curiously. Compared to the others, today he was in extremely great spirits; clearly things had gone well for him. Yesterday, he had not only succeeded in meeting Little Miss Muddle's Master, he had even gained the approval of the God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master. The relationship between him and Little Miss Muddle was pretty much settled, and Master Xing Tianyi had even agreed that when they left, Little Miss Muddle could go with them. As ‘bride price’, Yun Li had even gifted three pieces of his God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scroll Legendary Set designs to Master Xing Tianyi.

Of course, due to the secrets and legacy of his own clan teachings, he naturally could not hand over the entire Legendary Set designs, but even gaining three pieces was already a great benefit to the three God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters of the Heaven's Expanse Palace.

Of course, in return as a betrothal gift, Master Xing Tianyi decided to personally create the Consolidating Equipment Scrolls of those three designs and gift them to Yun Li. With those three Legendary Set pieces, Yun Li's power would definitely have a massive leap and improvement; how could he not be overjoyed about it? Furthermore, Master Xing Tianyi had also promised that when the Heavenly Jewel Tournament was over, the three God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master would personally guide him for a short period of time in terms of Consolidating Equipment

Scroll creation. With such an opportunity, it was highly likely that in the near future, Yun Li could possibly ascend to one of the young generation God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters.

Hearing Yun Li's words, Tian'er smiled faintly and said: "That fellow is probably still immersed in the warmth of love. However, he should be rushing here soon." Although her words held a hint of sour tones, she had already been fully prepared in her heart, and her emotions were not influenced at all.

Right at that moment, from the Heaven's Expanse Palace, two figures appeared side by side. When the four Battle Team members saw clearly the swiftly approaching pair, their eyes couldn't help but widen in surprise.

Ma Qun swallowed hard on his saliva, muttering to himself: "This is the true state of attainment... we all came from the inn, but Boss actually came directly from the Heaven's Expanse Palace. This... this is true difference."

Indeed, the rapidly approaching pair was Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er, holding hands and walking in such an intimate fashion that even a fool could tell that their relationship was definitely extraordinary.

The WanShou Battle Team and the HuaLuo Battle Team members were especially surprised. Let alone the fact that Zhou Weiqing could actually come out from the Heaven's Expanse Palace, just the girl whose hands he was holding... that already drew all the eyeballs of the two teams.

Features that were exactly the same as the two Shangguan Sisters that were the Leader and Vice Leader of the ZhongTian Battle Team. What was going on?!

Although Shangguan Bing'er had appeared on the previous Heavenly Jewel Tournament, at that time the two Shangguan Sisters had not shown themselves. In truth, there were extremely few people who knew that the Shangguan Sisters were triplets.

Currently, looking at her for the first time, especially since she was holding hands so intimately with Zhou Weiqing, how could they not be surprised?

Zhou Weiqing's skin had always been extremely thick, and even as he was the center of so much attention, he did not feel anything; instead showing a smug look, and anyone could see the pride in his face.

In a flash, Shangguan Fei'er appeared in front of them, snatching Shangguan Bing'er from Zhou Weiqing. "Hmph!" She glared at Zhou Weiqing before pulling Bing'er back to the ZhongTian Battle Team.

"Bing'er, you are too good! Towards such a playboy like that rascal, you should teach him a lesson!"

Shangguan Bing'er laughed out loud, but she allowed Shangguan Fei'er to pull her without saying a word. However, her eyes never left Zhou Weiqing's figure.

Zhou Weiqing also returned to his own Battle Team, standing beside Tian'er. However, in the next instant, the smile on his face froze. Sneaking in from a position no one else could notice, a small white hand was now pinching the soft meat on his waist, unkindly giving a full one hundred and eighty degree ultimate style pinch.

Yet, the owner of this small hand was deliberately having a casual and relaxed expression, a sweet smile on her face, as if not paying any attention to what had happened.

From the side, Ma Qun sidled over to him and asked: "Boss, was that Bing'er just now?"

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: "At last, I have seen Bing'er again." All of a sudden, he felt an abrupt pain on his waist once again, causing him to be unable to speak. Of course, he still had to prevent himself from revealing any signs of pain.

Ma Qun grinned and gave Zhou Weiqing a big thumbs up. "Heh

heh. Boss, awesome, that is awesome. I am most impressed.”

Zhou Weiqing gave him an evil glare. “Would you die if you don’t cause trouble?”

Ma Qun gave an innocent look, as if he had been unjustly wronged. “How was I causing trouble? I am praising you Boss! So many unbelievably beautiful women falling for my Boss, you are truly impressive. Who else could possibly accomplish that?!”

Looking at his faux ‘I am not trying to cause trouble’ expression, Zhou Weiqing truly felt like giving him a tight slap.

Luckily, right at that moment, Shangguan Longyin appeared, along with a group of Heaven’s Expanse Palace Elders with the Spatial Attribute.

Shangguan Longyin first glanced at Zhou Weiqing, before turning to the rest of the present battle team members, saying solemnly: “The finals of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament are about to begin. Once again, the finals will be held in the Lustre Spatial Realm. As there are new teams this year, I will give a simple introduction to the Lustre Spatial Realm and the current situation.”

“The Lustre Spatial Realm... you can comprehend it as a certain type of unique power formation. This power formation has been handed down since ancient times, inscribed on the Heavenly Jewel Island. No one actually knows how it was formed, and when the ancestors and forefathers of the Heaven’s Expanse Palace first came to the Heavenly Jewel Island, it was already here.”

“From a certain perspective, the Lustre Spatial Realm can be considered a totally different Spatial Area that exists outside of our own realm. It isn’t that large in comparison, fully formed by a patch of primeval forest. Although we do not know how this Spatial Realm was created, I can tell all of you now that everything that happens in the Lustre Spatial Realm is indeed real. That is to say... if you die inside, then you will really die. It is no illusion.”

“In the primeval forest of the Lustre Spatial Realm, various different kinds of Heavenly Beasts live there... from the lowest ranked to the top most. Furthermore, there does not seem to be a pattern on how they live or appear in the forest, and no one can say for sure how what kind of Heavenly Beasts you will meet. Even our Heaven’s Expanse Palace members do not know for sure, as every time we access the Spatial Realm, the situation within will undergo all sorts of different changes.”

Speaking up to that point, Shangguan Longyin paused momentarily, his face growing bleak and serious. “What I am about to say next... I hope that all of you will remember it clearly. It is extremely important, with regards to your own precious life.”

“First of all, those Battle Team members whose cultivation level has not reached the six-Jeweled stage, I suggest that you do not join in the incoming finals. That is because your Heavenly Energy cultivation is not sufficient, and it is extremely likely that you will lose your life in the Lustre Spatial Realm.”

As soon as he said that, even Zhou Weiqing was caught by surprise. The previous words that Shangguan Longyin said was pretty much the same as what he had heard in the previous Heavenly Jewel Tournament, and he did not pay much heed. However, the last line caused Zhou Weiqing to perk up instantly and pay full attention. From Shangguan Xue’er, he had already learned previously that something strange was going on in the Lustre Spatial Realm, but as for what had really happened, no one knew. Since this time entering the Lustre Spatial Realm would be so dangerous, every little bit of extra information was crucial.

Shangguan Longyin’s expression was extremely grave as he continued: “Not long ago, we discovered that some unique changes were going on in the Lustre Spatial Realm. Due to the fact that entering the Lustre Spatial Realm is restricted to youths of less than thirty years of age, even if we wanted to enter to investigate all the changes, we were unable to do so. As a result, we will be

making use of the current Heavenly Jewel Tournament to invite you all to investigate. The team which brings out the most information will be awarded the final championship.”

“Since the finals this time will be far more dangerous and unknown compared to the previous rounds due to those changes, we have decided to discourage those Heavenly Jewel Masters below the six-Jeweled stage from entering the Lustre Spatial Realm, lest there be too many deaths. As for the others, we hope that you will be extremely careful. As soon as you feel that things are not going well, do activate the Lustre Gem as quickly as possible to leave the Lustre Spatial Realm. In summary, investigating the Lustre Spatial Realm is extremely important, but your lives are just as important too.”

Shangguan Longyin’s words did not have much use for Zhou Weiqing, as it did not differ much from what Shangguan Xue’er had already told him. Amongst the four Battle Teams, both the ZhongTian and WanShou Battle Teams were all made up of six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Masters and higher, and they naturally did not have any problems. However, for the Heavenly Bow Battle Team and the HuaLuo Battle Team, they were in a relatively miserable stage, with each only having three who could actually attend.

Zhou Weiqing thought for a moment before turning to Yun Li, who wasn’t far off, saying: “For this expedition, you do not need to join up. This time, Tian’er and I will go by ourselves.”

Yun Li looked at him with slight dissatisfaction. “Why so?”

Zhou Weiqing threw him a significant look, saying: “Do you want Little Miss Muddle to live in widowhood for the rest of her life?”

Chapter 226 Bing'er: But, I want... (3)

Yun Li's heart gripped tightly momentarily, as he instantly understood Zhou Weiqing's meaning. The Heaven's Expanse Palace had obviously already sent an investigative team previously, no matter what Shangguan Longyin had said, and it must have been the elites of the young generation from the Heaven's Expanse Palace. If even they had not been successful in their investigations, then Yun Li knew it would also be a difficult task for him. Furthermore, after entering the Lustre Spatial Realm, their positions would all be random, and not placed together. As such, if there were any sudden dangers, they would have to deal with it on their own without help from their team. Zhou Weiqing was thinking of his safety after all.

Although he was rather unwilling to do so, in the end Yun Li nodded in agreement. As for Ma Qun and Crow, they were also disappointed about not being able to participate, but they had no choice. After all, their cultivation level had not reached the required stage yet.

Shangguan Longyin waved his hands, and the Heaven's Expanse Palace personnel moved forward to present those Battle Team members who were entering the Lustre Spatial Realm with a set of Spatial Ring and Lustre Gem.

Nodding his head, Shangguan Longyin said: "In the Spatial Ring you just received, there is sufficient food and water for thirty days. Prepare yourselves now, the teleportation will now begin." As he said that, he lifted his hand and nodded towards the ten Elders behind him.

Ten white figures moved as one immediately, as they moved backwards in a flash, disappearing into the thick mist.

The mist around the Heaven's Expanse Palace slowly began to change colour, the original white taking on a faint silver hue as the

energy reverberations of the Spatial Attribute grew stronger and more obvious.

The rich Heavenly Energy around gave all of them an extremely comfortable feeling, and the silver colour of the mist grew stronger and stronger. Slowly, the silver mist began to swirl around Shangguan Longyin's body in a whirlwind.

Piercing silver light began to shine forth from the centre of the whirlpool, and slowly the silver began to turn to gold from within the centre, as if a door was being opened. If one focused hard enough, they could almost sense that another world lay behind the gold light.

As the gateway to the Lustre Spatial Realm was open, Zhou Weiqing subconsciously held onto Tian'er's small hand. Both of them exchanged looks, and nothing else need to be said, as they instantly understood each other.

As for the three Shangguan Sisters, their gazes all landed on Zhou Weiqing, though the three sisters had different expressions.

Shangguan Xue'er was her usual icy cold self, as if expressionless. However, if one who knew her well examined her closely, they would be able to see a slight hint of envy in the depths of her eyes.

Shangguan Fei'er had her lips pursed, looking at Zhou Weiqing with unfriendly eyes, while Shangguan Bing'er's eyes were gentle, without any reaction as looked at Zhou Weiqing holding onto Tian'er's hand.

Abruptly, Shangguan Longyin shouted out loud: "You may enter now, hurry up! Remember, no matter what, do not risk yourselves unnecessarily. As soon as you discover anything isn't right, immediately use the Lustre Gem to transport yourselves out..."

Zhou Weiqing, still holding onto Tian'er's hand, was actually the first one to step forward. In a bright flash, both of them disappeared into the Lustre Spatial Realm.

In a step, they entered the gold light. Instantly, both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er felt an indescribable sense of freedom filling them, and the entire world around them turned illusory. Next, a massive suction force began to pull upon their bodies, and in a swoosh, they felt as if they had moved an uncountable distance in a single instant.

Right at that moment, the immense force of the Lustre Spatial Realm attempted to separate the two, but at the same time, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er had been constantly keeping up the large Saint Energy whirlpool, and in that instant they circulated their Saint Energy to the greatest effect, unleashing it around them.

With Shangguan Longyin's warning, they naturally understood that entering the Lustre Spatial Realm this time would not be an easy task, and they would have to face large troubles. Under such a circumstance, if they wanted to investigate clearly what had happened, safety was their paramount importance first. To ensure that, being together was also of critical importance. As a result, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er had decided to give a try to see if they could still maintain their transport together.

The reason why Zhou Weiqing did not call upon the three Shangguan Sisters was not because they were on a different Battle Team, but because he did not have the confidence that this would work in the first place, let alone being able to protect so many others as well. However, if it were just him and Tian'er, that might be different.

As the large Saint Energy whirlpool churned rapidly, a layer of thick silver white light instantly encapsulated the couple. The rest of the world around them was still a misty gold hue, but as soon as the silver white light appeared, both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er felt the dragging sensation on their bodies disappear at once.

Their judgement had been accurate after all. The Saint Energy was an Attribute that was above all others, and even with the extremely powerful Spatial Attribute power of the Lustre Spatial

Realm, it was unable to influence them under the protection of the Saint Energy. This was a total difference in stage.

...

In a flash, the world began to reappear around them.

Unlike the previous time they had entered the Lustre Spatial Realm, this time Zhou Weiqing did not feel the sense of out-of-sorts discomfort. After all, not only was his cultivation level much higher than before, his body and ability to withstand pressure was also much stronger. More so, he was also much more familiar with the Spatial Attribute and the pressure, far beyond the state he had been in the previous time.

However, in the next instant, both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's expressions changed.

The sensation of searing heat instantaneously overwhelmed their entire bodies. It had to be known that they were currently at the sixth and seventh Jeweled stages respectively, and ordinary high temperatures would not easily affect them. Furthermore, both their physiques were far tougher and stronger than any ordinary Heavenly Jewel Master, and for them to actually feel such heat, one could imagine the sheer temperature in the Lustre Spatial Realm.

The truth of the matter was as bad as they had thought. As soon as the world came into clarity around the pair, both of them immediately saw a patch of hazy red in front of them.

Indeed, it was an entire hazy red. Besides red, in a short period of time, they actually could not see any other colours around.

Just around them, there were large amounts of trees which were burning up in violent flames, and all the smaller plants around were already dried and withered. All about them, they could see the earth was parched and even cracked. Terrifying Fire Attribute Heavenly Energy raged through the skies, wave after wave

bringing the heat continuously, as if wanting to turn them into mere fuel.

Facing such an environment, though both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er were surprised, it was still not sufficient to affect them much. Instantly, their Heavenly Energy released, forming a milky white shield of light around them, forcefully cutting off the flames and temperature from affecting them.

Zhou Weiqing's brow furrowed slightly and he said solemnly: "It looks like things have really gone seriously wrong in the Lustre Spatial Realm."

Tian'er nodded and said: "What do we do now? Which direction should we head?" Originally, she had planned to nag at Zhou Weiqing slightly once they were alone in the Lustre Spatial Realm. However, from the way things looked, the situation would no longer allow her to do so.

Zhou Weiqing paused to think for a while, before he finally said: "Wait here a moment, I'll fly up to have a quick look."

Tian'er was caught by surprise, saying: "You want to fly up? Haven't you forgotten what happened the last time?"

Zhou Weiqing gave a bitter smile and said: "We do not have much of a choice now with such an environment... While it might not be too harmful for us, it is just too difficult to navigate or find anything. Furthermore, since the Lustre Spatial Realm has become like this, I am certain it has something to do with the dragons. Besides the two Dragons, who else would have such power to turn the entire Lustre Spatial Realm into an ocean of fire? I need to fly up to have a look, at least determine what is going on in the surroundings first before I can make any decisions."

Tian'er nodded, convinced. However, she still said: "Alright then, but do be very careful. As soon as you think anything is amiss, use your Saint Energy to protect yourself."

Nodding, Zhou Weiqing did not speak any further, instantly entering the Dragon-Tiger Transformation State. The wings behind his back unfurled, beating hard abruptly as he soared into the skies.

The vegetation in the Lustre Spatial Realm were all extremely precious treasures. After all, it was obvious that such flames had been burning violently for much more than a day or two, yet the 'fuel' that these vegetation had become were still able to endure and hold on. Zhou Weiqing had to charge past a massive patch of flames before he finally reached the skies.

However, as soon as his body burst through the canopy into the skies, he was immediately stunned by the sight before his eyes.

Fire. Fire everywhere. As far as his eyes could see, the entire Lustre Spatial Realm was completely immersed in red flames. Even stranger, although the flames were everywhere, there was no smoke at all. The thick Fire Attribute energies in the air seemed to repel the existence of any other attributes. The temperature in the skies was surprisingly even higher than that of the ground, as the blazing flames engulfed the entire air wave after wave, making it truly look like an ocean of flames.

Zhou Weiqing drew a deep breath. Facing such a situation, even he did not have any bright ideas left. All he could do was to attempt to find a direction to advance towards, and see what they could find.

Right at that moment, Zhou Weiqing's expression abruptly changed as he suddenly felt an incomparable and terrifying spiritual pressure force down upon him.

Without any hesitation, the wings behind Zhou Weiqing's back wrapped around his body. Around the wings, he poured in his Saint Energy without thought about wastage.

Puuu A soft sound rang out, as the flames around Zhou Weiqing's body in a hundred zhang radius were instantly extinguished by the

massive blow, and his body plummeted down from the skies, smashing down onto the ground in a moment.

“Dragon... it’s one of the dragons...” Zhou Weiqing gasped out instantly.

Tian’er rushed to his side, holding Zhou Weiqing’s hand as the pair quickly established the large Saint Energy whirlpool to help him recover.

“What happened?” Tian’er asked concernedly.

Zhou Weiqing replied: “I am certain that it was one of the Dragons who attacked me. Just now, a powerful spiritual blow sent me falling down. If I hadn’t used the Saint Energy to protect myself, perhaps I would have been severely injured just now...”

The Dragons were Heavenly God Tier powerhouses, and their strength was definitely far beyond what Zhou Weiqing or Tian’er could handle.

However, even as he spoke about that, Zhou Weiqing’s brow furrowed as he continued: “I still think something is amiss. Although that spiritual pressure was definitely from one of the Dragons, but I could sense that its spirit was filled with craziness... as if from deep within, wanting to destroy everything. Previously, when we entered the Lustre Spatial Realm, even when their child was in trouble, they did not show any of such craziness. I am now absolutely certain that the core reason for the troubles of the Lustre Spatial Realm is because something happened to the Dragons.”

Tian’er also furrowed her brow, saying: “In that case, are we really going to look for them? It will be a huge risk... after all, in front of those Dragons, even if we have the Lustre Gem to teleport us back, it will still be a great danger. If we are not careful, we can be utterly destroyed even before we can activate it.”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “That might be true for

others, but since we have the Saint Energy to protect us, at least it should grant us sufficient time to activate the Lustre Gem and escape. Come on, just now I sensed the direction from which the spiritual pressure came from. We might as well investigate right now. After all, previously we have helped the Dragons, and as long as they have some lucidity and senses left within them, we should still be able to communicate.”

Right at this moment, Tian'er was placing Zhou Weiqing at priority and as a leader. As a woman, she wanted to support her man no matter what he did, and not try to assert herself over him.

Chapter 227 Mine, All Mine! (1)

Zhou Weiqing held onto Tian'er's hand as both of them used their 'Lightness' movement skills, swiftly moving towards the direction Zhou Weiqing had determined earlier.

...

As compared to Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er, the other Battle Team members who entered the Lustre Spatial Realm were not so lucky. The raging flames all about the Lustre Spatial Realm left them at a loss. In fact, just to endure the searing flames and temperature, they had to constantly use their Heavenly Energy to protect themselves.

Very quickly, some of the weaker members had run out of Heavenly Energy and were forced to use their Lustre Gem to escape.

...

Of course, Tian'er and Zhou Weiqing would not meet into such a problem. With their large Saint Energy whirlpool, they could still easily draw in the fire attribute energies to replenish themselves, something none of the others could do. Furthermore, with their current physiques, even if they did not use Heavenly Energy to protect themselves, the flames were not sufficient to actually injure them.

Zhou Weiqing's speed was extremely fast, especially with the wings behind his back supporting him, it was as if he was flying along at ground level, especially since he did not even bother dodging around those burning trees. Instead, with his powerful Heavenly Energy and the defense of the Immortal Deity Shield, he just smashed through in a straight line flight. At this point, he had just started carrying Tian'er in his arms to maintain the large Saint Energy whirlpool between them.

Slowly, the surrounding temperature around them began to rise, and Zhou Weiqing knew this was because they were getting ever so close to the Dragons. However, he still could not understand why the Dragons would release such powerful Fire Attribute energies without a care in the world, pretty much attacking anything indiscriminately in the Lustre Spatial Realm.

Time passed... second after second, minute after minute. Soon, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er had flown for more than two whole hours before he was actually forced to stop. The surrounding temperature was just too high, and the terrifying heat was so massive that even their Heavenly Energy expenditure was starting to take its toll, and they needed to stop to rest slightly.

After all, they were about to face a possibly insane Dragon or worse, and if they were not in top condition, it could possibly lead to their deaths unnecessarily.

Tian'er asked worriedly: "Should we really continue? Is it too dangerous?"

Zhou Weiqing shook his head resolutely, saying: "No, we must at least go over and have a look, I must try my best to help. The Dragons have helped me a lot, if not for the Solidified Dragon Spirit and the bloodline of dragons that he passed to me, allowing me to complete my Dragon-Tiger Transformation, I could never have beaten Gu Yingbing at that time in the Heavenly Snow Mountain. From a certain perspective, you could say that the Dragon was our matchmaker and benefactor. Now that they are in trouble, possibly in danger, how could I possibly sit back and ignore it?"

Tian'er nodded and said: "Very well, I'll listen to you."

In truth, Zhou Weiqing's heart was extremely worried. He was a very intelligent person after all, and though he had much gratitude and goodwill towards the Dragon Family, he knew that in this Lustre Spatial Realm, the Dragons were definitely the top of

everything, with ultimate power within. With such a terrifying Heavenly God Tier power, what could possibly anger them so much? To cause them to become so crazy? It definitely had to be a major matter, could it be that their child had once again gotten into some trouble... worse than the previous time?

Yet... in the Lustre Spatial Realm, who or what could even threaten the child of the Dragons? This was especially so since the Lustre Spatial Realm had the age restriction of thirty, and no powerhouses could enter! Ordinarily speaking, the Dragons should have more than enough capabilities to defend and protect their children.

With such analysis and thoughts, Zhou Weiqing could conclude that something else... strange... had definitely happened within the Lustre Spatial Realm.

Perhaps this situation ... even the Heaven's Expanse Palace would not be clear about. That meant... the possible danger might even be worse than he had imagined. Do not think that just because the Lustre Spatial Realm is a separate realm from the Boundless Mainland that it could pose no threat to the Heavenly Jewel Island. In truth, it was in an almost overlapping space with the Heavenly Jewel Island, and once this Spatial Realm broke apart, then it would be an absolute disaster for not just the Heavenly Jewel Island, but also the ZhongTian City right below.

Although Zhou Weiqing had never identified himself as a good person, but if the Heaven's Expanse Palace and ZhongTian Empire suffered such great trouble, then it would also greatly influence the future development of his own Heavenly Bow Empire. Without the support of the Heaven's Expanse Palace, how could he defeat the Blood Red Hell? All that aside, it was also the home of his loves, the Shangguan Sisters!

As such, since he had already come in, then no matter what he would give it his best, to try and find out what was the true problem behind the current Lustre Spatial Realm.

After a short rest, the duo had recovered their Heavenly Energy back to their maximum. Although the heat around them was extremely uncomfortable, the thick and pure Fire Attribute energy was actually beneficial to their cultivation.

After all, no matter what type of Attribute energy, the large Saint Energy whirlpool was able to draw in and transform it, and this pure fire attribute energy was naturally no different, perfect for their needs. Not only did they recover their Heavenly Energy, even their Saint Energy was slowly growing once more in this environment. If not for the fact that this was the Lustre Spatial Realm, and that there were possible major troubles ahead of them, Zhou Weiqing might even want to stay here to just cultivate as long as he could.

Once again, the pair continued their journey ahead, and the temperature resumed its constant rise as they did so. Due to the sheer heat, their sight of the environment around them was hazy and illusory, the warping of the air around them like ripples in a patch of water. As they walked on, the couple almost felt as if they weren't walking in a jungle, instead more like walking underwater.

The terrifying energy flow and ebb swirled around them in the air, but Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er continued walking forward resolutely.

Right at that moment, Zhou Weiqing abruptly stopped. Due to the aid of the large Saint Energy whirlpool, the Ice Cold Perception that he entered when he was in the Dragon-Tiger Transformation had been raised to the max, and he suddenly sensed that not far ahead from them, there were signs of life.

Whatever Zhou Weiqing could sense, Tian'er who was sharing the large Saint Energy whirlpool with him could naturally sense as well. Exchanging glances, they did not hesitate to release their Legendary Sets.

The ‘Hate Ground no Handle’ Legendary Set and God Vanquishing Heavenly Spirit Legendary Set appeared around them respectively. The power of the God Tier Consolidated Equipment was indeed extraordinary, and the energy reverberations that they gave off as soon as they appeared forced the fiery hot Fire Attribute energy to part before them.

The Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation appeared below Zhou Weiqing’s feet, and as he lifted his left hand, a thick green light flew out, warping into a large gust of wind, blowing apart the Fire Attribute energy and flames in a path towards the source of the life energy, as the pair looked in that direction.

Although they had not met any Heavenly Beasts since they entered the Lustre Spatial Realm, that did not mean they did not exist. Any Heavenly Beasts that could survive in such conditions definitely had respectable cultivation stages, and they needed to be very careful.

However, as soon as Zhou Weiqing’s eyes landed on the life forms that he had sensed earlier, he was overjoyed.

Three beautiful figures entered his sight, a layer of white icy mist covering the three figures as they stood still in the midst of the ocean of fire. However, the surrounding flames did not seem to be able to approach a five metre radius of them.

It was the three Shangguan Sisters!

At the same time, the Shangguan Sisters also discovered their presence, and both sides rushed towards each other.

“Xue’er, Fei’er, Bing’er, you all have come too.” Zhou Weiqing quickly greeted them.

Currently, they were all surrounding by the sea of fire, and though the four girls meeting had a slight awkwardness, under such a unique environment, it was no time for argument.

Shangguan Xue’er said exasperatedly: “Why did you run so fast! I

was planning to have you both join us in entering the Lustre Spatial Realm.”

Only then did Zhou Weiqing see the small icy blue pearl in Shangguan Xue'er's palm, and it was this pearl that was emitting a faint icy mist that was isolating them from the surrounding flames and heat.

Zhou Weiqing held onto Tian'er's hands as they walked into the range of the icy mist. Instantly, a cooling feeling spread across them, extremely comfortable as if washing off their entire body of raging heat.

The Heaven's Expanse Palace truly lived up to their name. This precious pearl in Shangguan Xue'er's hands was definitely a top level treasure.

“It is great to meet up with you all... where are the rest?” Zhou Weiqing asked curiously.

Shangguan Xue'er said: “The rest of our team have dispersed in the teleportation. I was only able to protect Fei'er and Bing'er using this Ice Heart Pearl Treasure to ensure we did not separate. Furthermore, the rest of the team would not be of great use. By now, you should have guessed, the changes in the Lustre Spatial Realm should be linked to the Dragons right?”

Sudden inspiration struck Zhou Weiqing and he said: “The Heaven's Expanse Palace knew about the situation? You can speak about it now right, what is actually going on?”

Shangguan Xue'er replied: “We only know very little about the situation, and are not clear about what actually happened. A few months ago, there was a sudden violent energy reverberation from the Lustre Spatial Realm, catching our attention. When we dispatched a team to investigate, we discovered that the Lustre Spatial Realm had already turned into such a state. The Lustre Spatial Realm was built up with a large number of Spatial Attribute Gemstones as a foundation, as well as an incomparable

amount of Heavenly Energy to maintain it. It must have taken at least four Heavenly God Tier powerhouses working together to create such an existence.”

“The Lustre Spatial Realm was created long before our Heaven’s Expanse Palace existed, and ordinarily speaking, it would be able to continue its existence in a stable state in the future, ensuring the existence of the realm. However, the current situation is extremely different... with such an explosive raging energy within the Spatial Realm, especially if it’s only a pure Fire Attribute, if this continues, it could possibly lead to the collapse of the entire Spatial Realm. Currently, in the massive formation that maintains the Lustre Spatial Realm, some of the Spatial gemstones have already started to show some cracks, and our Heaven’s Expanse Palace have actually been constantly swapping in the gemstones when some reached their limit... only then has it barely been able to continue lasting so long. However, this is definitely not a long term plan, and we can’t keep going on like this... after all, the number of Spatial gemstones that we have is limited. If this continues, in less than a year’s time, the Lustre Spatial Realm will definitely collapse.”

Zhou Weiqing drew a deep breath, staring fixedly at Shangguan Xue’er as he said: “If the Lustre Spatial Realm really collapses... what will the fallout be?”

Shangguan Xue’er’s expression turned grave. “If the Lustre Spatial Realm collapses, then the Heavenly Jewel Island will be finished as well. That is because the Spatial Formation not only maintains the existence of the Lustre Spatial Realm, it is also the core formation of the Heavenly Jewel Island. For such a massive island like the Heavenly Jewel Island to remain floating in midair, it is not possible just to be supported by the few pillars, and it is actually the powerful Spatial energy that is allowing it to balance so. Furthermore... right below the Heavenly Jewel Island is the ZhongTian City, with tens of millions of citizens living there. If the

Heavenly Jewel Island falls, it could possibly smash right into the ZhongTian City. That would be a disaster that could spell the destruction of the ZhongTian Empire. When that happens, it is not just our Heaven's Expanse Palace that will no longer exist, perhaps the entire government of the ZhongTian Empire will be in deep trouble.

Chapter 227 Mine, All Mine! (2)

Zhou Weiqing sucked in a cold breath. Although he had already guessed that the Lustre Spatial Realm would have an adverse effect on the Heavenly Jewel Island, he had not expected the effects to be so serious.

“Have you all discovered the root problem that caused the current situation? Also... is there any way to solve it?”

Shangguan Xue'er gave a bitter smile as she said: “In truth, the entire Heavenly Jewel Tournament finals entering the Lustre Spatial Realm was a major cover... the true goal was for one person to enter.”

Comprehension dawned upon Zhou Weiqing as he said: “You mean... me?”

Shangguan Xue'er nodded, saying: “Indeed, it is you. Currently, the problems that the entire Lustre Spatial Realm had gone into is a top level secret in our Heaven's Expanse Palace, and only the absolute core few know about it. Before entering, even Fei'er and Bing'er did not know the true situation. In order to maintain stability, we did not even let the Elders know that the Heavenly Jewel Island is actually facing such a potential major disaster and danger, otherwise undue panic might ensue. After much analysis, Father and Uncle think that you might be the only one who could possibly have a chance to solve the current problem.”

Zhou Weiqing nodded slowly. “I understand now... it is because of the connection between the dragons and myself right?”

Shangguan Xue'er nodded, saying: “Yes, exactly. With the current problem and situation the Lustre Spatial Realm is facing, there can only be one explanation... the Dragons. As Heavenly God Tier Heavenly Beasts, perhaps even peak level of such, their strength is without question. It could even be said that the entire existence of the Lustre Spatial Realm is actually to protect the last

bloodline of the Dragons. The Dragons living here are definitely the strongest of all Heavenly Beasts in the world. In the past, they always lived peacefully in the Lustre Spatial Realm, and for this to happen now, it can only mean that the Dragons are trying to break free of the Lustre Spatial Realm. Such searing flames, such terrifying Fire Attribute power... only the Dragons are able to release or manipulate it. They are using the powerful Fire Attribute to burn up the entire Lustre Spatial Realm, to destroy it and allow them to break free of the confines.”

Zhou Weiqing gave a bitter smile and said: “Do you really think I will be able to speak to the Dragons, let alone convince them?”

Shangguan Xue'er shook her head and said: “Perhaps not convince, but at least a chance to succeed... or just to buy time even.”

Zhou Weiqing said: “I understand, it is to make use of the connection between the Dragons and myself, to at least gain a chance to speak to the Dragons and find out the core problem. After all, the Lustre Spatial Realm has existed for such a long time, but they have never shown any signs of wanting to break free of the realm. There has to be an underlying reason for the sudden change, and you all want to borrow our connection to undergo negotiations, to see if we can help them solve the issues and stop them from the efforts... Right?”

Shangguan Xue'er nodded. They were all intelligent people, and there was no need to speak further, as it was clear that was the Heaven's Expanse Palace's goal. Looking at Zhou Weiqing, there was a hint of apology in her beautiful eyes. It was because the Heaven's Expanse Palace could not afford to allow the other members of the Heaven's Expanse Palace to know about the sheer danger of the Lustre Spatial Realm that they had used such a method of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament to get Zhou Weiqing into the realm, perhaps even using his feelings for the Shangguan Sisters.

Shangguan Xue'er knew it was so, but as the future heir of the Heaven's Expanse Palace, she had no choice but to help it achieve its goals. As such, she now looked at Zhou Weiqing with such apology in her eyes. However, though she wanted to say sorry, this was not a matter that could be solved by a simple apology. As for her clarification that both Shangguan Bing'er and Fei'er did not know about the situation earlier, it was because she was afraid it would affect Zhou Weiqing's feelings for her two sisters.

As for herself, Shangguan Xue'er tried not to think too much about it. In her heart, she would eventually have to remain in the Heaven's Expanse Palace. After all, she was the heir of the Heaven's Expanse Palace! Furthermore, as the elder sister, she still felt some resistance in stealing the loves of her two little sisters, even if both Shangguan Fei'er and Shangguan Bing'er were willing, as an older sister she was willing that Zhou Weiqing give more love to her sisters.

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: "Since things have already progressed to such a degree, there is nothing else to be said. No matter what, I am the son in law of the Heaven's Expanse Palace, how could I possibly sit back and watch the Heaven's Expanse Palace be destroyed like that? Furthermore, the Dragons have helped me in the past... This matter, I will definitely do my best."

Hearing Zhou Weiqing's words, Shangguan Xue'er started momentarily, her eyes reddening slightly. "You... you don't blame me?"

Zhou Weiqing looked at her in surprise, saying: "Blame you? Blame you for what? Why should I blame you, did you do anything wrong?"

Shangguan Xue'er looked at him and said: "But... I did not tell you the truth of the situation, and tricked you to enter such a dangerous place..."

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: "Don't use the word

tricked... it isn't that serious. I am a man after all, I'm not so petty. Furthermore, you are still the heir to the Heaven's Expanse Palace, there is no wrong in thinking about the Heaven's Expanse Palace right? Since I am going to be your man, naturally I have to think for you on your behalf, and also as your future husband, naturally I also have to help you solve your problems as well right? More so, I treat the Dragon Family as friends... since they might be in trouble, even if you did not ask me to come, I would also do so. You do not have to think so much..."

Hearing Zhou Weiqing's words, at the side, Shangguan Fei'er and Shangguan Bing'er breathed a sigh of relief. It was indeed true that they only knew the truth about the Lustre Spatial Realm after entering it, but they were extremely worried that Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Xue'er's relationship would be affected. They knew that because of their relationships, Zhou Weiqing would definitely help the Heaven's Expanse Palace, but they did not want this to cause any cracks in Zhou Weiqing's heart and affect the future feelings between the two. Hearing Zhou Weiqing's words now, they were at least more relieved.

Shangguan Xue'er looked at Zhou Weiqing, tears hazy in her eyes. If not for the fact there were so many people around, she really felt like jumping into Zhou Weiqing's arms and have a good cry. At this point, the way she looked at Zhou Weiqing seemed to be somewhat different than usual.

Although in the past she liked Zhou Weiqing, due to the responsibilities of the Heaven's Expanse Palace, she had always tried to keep a certain distance from Zhou Weiqing. Even when she had lost that bet, in her thinking, as soon as Zhou Weiqing met Bing'er again, it would all be fine. She had never really thought that she would really end up together with Zhou Weiqing, after all the responsibilities on her were just too heavy.

From the time she was born, she had been raised and trained as the future heir of the Heaven's Expanse Palace. All these years, it

could be said that almost everything she had done was for the Heaven's Expanse Palace.

This time, her heart had really been in despair, thinking that this would be the event that tore them apart... and she would never leave the Heaven's Expanse Palace again, continuing to be her heir.

However, she had never expected that when she was enduring all her sorrow and telling Zhou Weiqing the truth of the matter, all she got was just so simple and direct, an answer that caused her heart to shudder.

He had not tried to shirk the responsibilities, there was no anger, not even an admonishing look, but a full on support without questions. In that instant, Shangguan Xue'er felt like her heart was fully given, totally to Zhou Weiqing.

What did a person truly need? Especially someone like Shangguan Xue'er who was bearing such a heavy responsibility. What she needed was understanding. Those words by Zhou Weiqing were not tender words of love, but the understanding in them had touched her to the core.

Zhou Weiqing stepped up to her, hugging her tight abruptly. "Silly girl, what is there to cry about. If you are really touched by me, when we get out of the Lustre Spatial Realm, you can marry me then. I won't mind at all, heh heh."

Shangguan Xue'er lifted her head to look at Zhou Weiqing. At this moment, she did not look at all like the heir of the Heaven's Expanse Palace. In tears, she said: "You really don't blame me? Why would you trust me like that?"

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: "Why shouldn't I trust you? Since I have a chance to solve this issue, then you could have just told me about it before entering, using the three of you to lure me in. You did not have to enter alongside me, to risk yourselves, but all all came anyway without hesitation, to share the danger with me. Is there any need to speak any further? Furthermore, I

have already said everything I need to earlier, my trust in you all is absolute.”

Shangguan Fei'er had somehow appeared right next to Zhou Weiqing, giving his waist a savage pinch as she said: “You... naughty fellow... you really know how to steal someone's heart.”

Although her words were savage, her red eyes betrayed her true feelings right then.

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily once more, opening his arms and pulling both Fei'er and Xue'er into his arms. Looking towards Bing'er and Tian'er, he said tyrannically: “Mine, all mine!”

Such a shameless proclamation, it naturally induced the four girls to ‘treat’ him to a flurry of punches. However, none of them would actually say anything to rebut it. In this fiery red hot world, their hearts seemed to have been melted together as one. Originally, their nervous feelings from the danger had somehow relaxed.

With the painful yet joyful cries of Zhou Weiqing ringing in the air, the laughter finally stopped. The gazes of the four girls landed upon him, and Shangguan Xue'er blushed as she looked at him with a gaze that made him melt. “Alright, what do we do next, you take charge.”

Zhou Weiqing said: “I can sense the source of the flames. Let us head over there to look first. You all be very careful, as soon as anything seems amiss, I want you to immediately use the Lustre Gem to leave.”

The five of them continued on their journey once more, with Zhou Weiqing at the head of the party, and Tian'er beside him. With the protection of the Ice Heart Pearl, they no longer needed to use their Heavenly Energy to protect themselves from the temperature, and thus their speed of advancement increased greatly. The three shangguan Sisters followed behind the two of them, as they all advanced towards the source Zhou Weiqing could

sense.

As they moved along, the flames around them began to change in colour. The originally red flames turning darker, so much so that they were no longer able to see much around them, as if they were immersed in magma. The zone of icy mist around them from the Ice Heart Pearl was also starting to shrink around them, and Shangguan Xue'er actually had to start infusing her Heavenly Energy into the Pearl to ensure that it was sufficient to protect all five of them.

Chapter 227 Mine, All Mine! (3)

Knowing that they were about to reach their target, all of them carefully released their Consolidated Equipment. At this point, none of them had any mood to play around any longer, their faces bleak and serious. Zhou Weiqing could clearly sense the heart of the flames was extremely close, the sheer amount of energy bursting forth was just so terrifying.

The four girls did not hesitate to follow Zhou Weiqing, each of them releasing their respective Legendary Sets. As for the other three girls, Zhou Weiqing had actually seen their Consolidated Equipment previously, but this was the first time he saw Shangguan Bing'er's new Legendary Set Consolidated Equipment.

The familiar dark gold light sprang forth, and behind Shangguan Bing'er's back, a pair of dark gold wings appeared. However, in contrast to Shangguan Fei'er, her wings seemed much larger, even folded in behind her back, it could actually still cover her entire body from the back. Besides that, Shangguan Bing'er also had a beautiful looking breastplate covering her front, and though it was also dark gold in colour, the center of it had a faint green gemstone that was filled with a thick Wind Attribute aura.

Breastplate, girdle and war kilt, two pieces of Consolidated Equipment in total, yet Shangguan Bing'er's current cultivation level was at the [sixth Jeweled stage](#)

Zhou Weiqing was a Consolidating Equipment Master in his own right, and with a single look he could tell that the wings behind Shangguan Bing'er's back were not ordinary at all, actually made out of four Consolidated Equipment. It had to be known that those were all God Tier Consolidated Equipment! For the pair of wings to require four whole God Tier Consolidated Equipment to form, one could just imagine their strength. Furthermore, it looked like this was going to be an entire Legendary Set, perhaps nine pieces in total, or maybe even ten. Having been in closed door cultivation

for three entire years, although her cultivation level had not reached the seventh Jeweled stage, it was clear that she was catching up to the rest of her sisters. Besides a freak like Zhou Weiqing, it was only the Heaven's Expanse Palace which had the power to groom a Heavenly Jewel Master to such heights in just three short years, and even so, that must have taken an unimaginable amount of resources.

Seeing the dark gold light spring forth around the four girls almost simultaneously, each with their own gorgeous and brilliant Legendary Sets, added on Zhou Weiqing's own 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set, the worry in his heart was mostly dispelled. It could be said that the five of them were the top of the entire young generation now, With the five of them working together, even if they met a Heavenly King Stage powerhouse, they should be able to take him down.

"Fei'er, Bing'er, come here." Zhou Weiqing beckoned towards Shangguan Fei'er and Shangguan Bing'er.

Both girls headed towards him, and Shangguan Fei'er asked curiously: "What is it?"

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: "Heh heh, come, let me kiss you." As he said that, he did not even give her a chance to react as he pulled her into his embrace, kissing down onto her lips, which were opened from surprise.

Although Shangguan Fei'er was known as the Little Demon Girl, being kissed forcefully in front of her sisters and Tian'er, how could she not be embarrassed. However, she quickly realised that Zhou Weiqing was not just trying to be intimate with her.

A strange but thick and pure energy entered her mouth from Zhou Weiqing, and with a weird energy reverberation, she suddenly felt as if all of her pores opening at once, the soothing and comfortable feeling causing her eyes to widen in surprise, as she subconsciously put her arms around Zhou Weiqing's neck and

leaning into the kiss.

Right at that moment, Zhou Weiqing released her lips. “There isn’t anymore ohh... I’ll be squeezed dry like that, I still have to leave some for Bing’er.”

Shangguan Fei’er looked at that wicked smirk right in front of her, but she was unable to retort at all, as the energy that had entered her body was slowly circulating around towards her DanTian.

With a swipe of his arm, Zhou Weiqing pulled Shangguan Bing’er in his embrace. Similarly, kissing her red lips. She was even more embarrassed than Fei’er, trying to struggle free, but was tyrannically held in Zhou Weiqing’s arms.

Saint Energy. Naturally, Zhou Weiqing was infusing them with some Saint Energy. Of course, though it was possible to transfer the Saint Energy by holding hands, how could Zhou Weiqing give up a perfect opportunity like that to righteously be intimate with them?

After kissing Shangguan Bing’er and infusing her with Saint Energy as well, Zhou Weiqing restrained the wide smile on his face. In a serious tone, he said: “I have given each of you ten drops of Saint Energy, do not unwilling to use it or think it is a waste. When you use a Skill, if you infuse it with Saint Energy, it will greatly increase its power. This is not for you to attack enemies, but to protect yourselves. After all, the possible danger is just too great... but with the Saint Energy protecting you when you use any defensive Skills, you should have sufficient time to activate the Lustre Gem.”

Shangguan Fei’er looked at him exasperatedly and said: “If you dare surprise attack me like that again, I’ll bite you!”

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “Heh heh, if I were to spread the news about giving ten drops of Saint Energy for a kiss, who knows how many girls will flock over. Even if the condition was to marry

me, they would definitely agree.”

As soon as he spoke those words, he was in big trouble, stirring up ‘public’ anger. Four angry glares fixed on him, and all of a sudden, Tian’er who had been silent for most of the time spoke up: “I’m afraid at that time, even men will flock over to look for you.”

Zhou Weiqing also knew that he had spoken out of line, and he quickly put on a serious face, saying: “Come on, let’s head out.”

The instant his words landed, all of a sudden, the dark red world seemed to surge violently, and a powerful force abruptly struck at them from the front.

Zhou Weiqing was in the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, and the Ice Cold Perception it gave him. In terms of cultivation level he might not be the highest, but his reaction was actually the fastest.

His Dual Legendary hammers struck forward at once. Time was just too limited, and he did not have time to even use any Skills.

A resounding explosion, and a loud resonant dragon’s cry rang out in their ears. Zhou Weiqing remained standing, but in front of him a golden red fire dragon had been sent flying back.

However, Zhou Weiqing was not excited just because he had successfully blocked the attack. The golden red fire dragon was not a real dragon, just one formed out of pure energy.

“Fire Spirit?” Both Tian’er and Shangguan Xue’er exclaimed instantly. Zhou Weiqing did not recognize it, but the two girls who had come from a top level Great Saint Lands background instantly did.

“Fire Spirit? What is that?” Zhou Weiqing asked subconsciously, even as he prepared himself for another attack from the fire dragon.

Shangguan Xue’er said: “When there are flames that are raised to the maximum in both quality and quantity, it is possible to birth a Fire Spirit. They can be said to be the ultimate essence and core of

the flames. Although they do not have any intelligence, they are able to instinctively attack any enemies which enter their territory. The concentration and potency of the flames here have actually reached such a degree.”

As she spoke, the fire dragon once again charged towards the group. By now, the entire group could clearly see that the fire dragon was about a dozen metres long, baring teeth and fang aggressively. Besides being much smaller than a normal dragon, its appearance was no different from a real dragon.

Having clashed with it earlier, Zhou Weiqing had a clearer picture of this fire dragon’s power. Its offensive strength was equal to that of an ordinary seven-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master, and with the power of the ‘Hate Ground no Handle’ Legendary Set and its terrifying boost to his strength, he had been able knock the fire dragon back with relative ease. This time, however, he did not use his Legendary Hammers to face the incoming attack.

Holding both hammers in his left hand, Zhou Weiqing grabbed outwards with his right hand right towards the incoming flying fire dragon in an abrupt move.

The four girls only saw a sudden thick grey light burst forth from Zhou Weiqing’s body. In that instant, the dragon scaled tattoos around his body which appeared whenever he was in the Dragon-Tiger Transformation suddenly seemed to come to life. A thick grey swirl appeared in front of the fire dragon, and as it slammed into the grey, a strange dragon cry emitted from Zhou Weiqing’s mouth.

With the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, Zhou Weiqing had the purest bloodline of Dragons in his blood, and this fire dragon was clearly formed from the flames that the Dragons had unleashed. With this dragon’s cry of Zhou Weiqing’s, it actually had a pretty good effect in restraining the fire dragon.

In the next instant, the fire dragon was swallowed up by the grey

whirlpool. The Legendary Hammers in Zhou Weiqing's left hand suddenly disappeared as he grabbed Tian'er's small hand. Next, the three Shangguan Sisters could clearly see that where the duo's hands were connected had lit up with a silver white light.

As soon as the fire dragon entered the grey whirlpool, it immediately began to struggle violently. Alas, it was facing Zhou Weiqing... the strongest Skill of the Demonic Attribute, the Devour Skill.

Ever since Zhou Weiqing had gained the Saint Energy, especially after having summoned the Projection of the Demon God previously, his understanding of the Demonic Attribute and especially the Devour Skill had grown substantially, and he was growing to understand how truly tyrannical and powerful this Skill was.

If it was only him alone here, he would naturally not take the risk to attempt to Devour such a massive amount of Fire Attribute energy. After all, such a massive amount of extremely pure Fire Attribute energy, even if he tried to devour it, it would take far too long to absorb and transform it, perhaps causing adverse side effects to his cultivation and body.

However with the Saint Energy, especially with Tian'er's aid, it was very different. Although his and Tian'er's Saint Energy still could not be cultivated by themselves when they were alone, but when they joined hands to form the large Saint Energy whirlpool, any Attribute energy which entered it could only be absorbed, assimilated and then purified to become their own.

Earlier, when they had taken the short rest in the Lustre Spatial Realm, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er had already experienced the benefits of absorbing the thick fire attribute energies from the atmosphere, and how it had actually grown their Saint Energy. Currently, seeing that the fire dragon was not actually of real danger to them, how could Zhou Weiqing let go of such a perfect opportunity?

This time, Zhou Weiqing only infused a single drop of Saint Energy into his Devour Skill. This was a new method of using the Saint Energy that he had just discovered not long ago. By only infusing a single drop of Saint Energy when he was doing so, instead of doing so uncontrolled, he would no longer experience the uncontrollable drain of Saint Energy for the powerful Skills.

Even with just a single drop of Saint Energy, the power of the Devour Skill was greatly increased. Added on to the suppression of Zhou Weiqing's bloodline, although the fire dragon was still struggling violently, it could not break free from the whirlpool of the Devour Skill no matter how hard it tried.

Ever since his cultivation level had reached the sixth-Jewel stage, Zhou Weiqing no longer needed to touch his target with his palm to use the Devour Skill, and its power was slowly starting to really show itself.

At the start, the struggles of the fire dragon could still give Zhou Weiqing a little bit of trouble, but as the Devour Skill began to take effect, the struggles grew weaker and weaker.

By the time the fire dragon disappeared totally, both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er had expressions of being pleasantly surprised on their faces. That was because just this seven-Jeweled fire dragon alone had actually given them twenty drops of Saint Energy... each! The 'loss' of Saint Energy from infusing to Fei'er and Bing'er had been recovered just like that.

Zhou Weiqing's expression turned strange as he laughed heartily: "It looks like... danger is often accompanied by opportunity as well!"

The original text says four Jewels, but all the explanations point to it being six

Chapter 228 Mother Dragon! (1)

After Devouring an entire fire dragon of energy, both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er had some growth in their Saint Energy, causing them to be overjoyed.

Towards the cultivation of Saint Energy, it was a long and arduous task ahead of them. Not only did the two of them need to train hard in absorbing Saint Energy, they also needed to infuse into the three Shangguan Sisters. Even if they did not have a Saint Attribute of their own and would be unable to consolidate a Saint Core Nucleus, but with a large amount of Saint Energy within them, it would still be extremely beneficial to their cultivation and power.

“Hopefully, this fire spirit isn’t the only one.” Zhou Weiqing grinned wickedly.

However, before his words even completed, his expression changed abruptly. As the first fire dragon disappeared, the entire dark red world around them began to tremble violently, as if they had activated some mechanism. A thick dark red light began to fluctuate intensely, and a powerful pressure came from all around them.

With a loud cry, Shangguan Bing'er's massive wings spread out fully for the first time. Each wing was at least four metre long, and as they spread out, it instantly enveloped all five of them within.

On the massive wings, a thick green light sprang forth abruptly, the green light actually advancing as the wings shook, spreading out into a shield of green light that spread outwards.

This pair of wings that Shangguan Bing'er had was called the Wings of the Wind God, and it was a recent peak creation for Heaven's Expanse Palace three God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters. Each of the wings was made out of two God Tier Consolidated Equipment, and they could be considered a sort of

mini – God Tier Assembly Set in their own right within an entire Legendary Set, definitely a type of fresh invention in its own right. The power of these wings could not be underestimated, flying, attack and defense all in one. Not only did they allow Shangguan Bing'er's Ultimate Agility to be flourished to her maximum capabilities and beyond, they were also precious treasures that could protect her perfectly or used offensively. With this set of Wings of the Wind God, although Shangguan Bing'er's cultivation stage was only at the six-Jeweled stage, her speed was already comparable to any ordinary (non speed type) Heavenly King Stage powerhouses. From that alone, one could see the sheer power of these Consolidated Equipment.

As the green light spread outwards, the thick dark-red flames were temporarily pushed back. The rest of the team were finally able to see the surroundings about them, alas in doing so, the five of them all sucked in a cold breath.

Right around them in a radius of a hundred 'zhang', more than a hundred gold-red fire dragons were charging right towards them.

Unfortunately, they did not have much knowledge and understanding regarding these energy type beings. These Fire Spirits were 'born' from these ultimate flames around, and being the essence and core of these flames, they had a rather intimate connection with each other.

With one fire dragon being Devoured totally by Zhou Weiqing, it instantly drew all other Fire Spirits in the area to them.

It had to be known that these Fire Spirits were not actually summoned by the Dragons, but a byproduct creation of the flames that the Dragons had summoned, transforming into them.

Luckily, it seemed like Lady Fortune was still smiling upon Zhou Weiqing's group. These Fire Spirits had not been formed for a long time. If they had been given sufficient time to grow, then they would eventually all reach at least the Heavenly King Stage. By

that time, let alone Zhou Weiqing's group, even if the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord came personally, it would be extremely troublesome to deal with.

“[Crow mouth](#)!” The four girls instantly glared at Zhou Weiqing and cried out.

Zhou Weiqing gave an innocent look as he said: “This can't be my fault right... Dammit, Your Father, I, will deal with them. All of you, gather by my side.”

This was more than a hundred fire dragons! Even if they were only at the seven-Jeweled, in this world of flames, they were not easily dealt with in such numbers, even for a party like Zhou Weiqing's. At this moment, they had to either use the Lustre Gem to teleport out, or fight to the death.

Although Zhou Weiqing was afraid of death, he was not [miserly](#), especially in times of critical danger like this... being miserly would only mean their deaths.

A thick silver-white light sprang forth from Zhou Weiqing's body. In that moment, he dared not hold back at all, circulating Saint Energy to the max.

More than a hundred fire dragons, all of them Fire Spirits! Charging at them with crazed ferocity. Who knew what kind of combined attacks they would finally launch together.

As the saying goes, he who strikes first gains the advantage, and Zhou Weiqing naturally chose that route as well.

Holding onto Tian'er's hand, the large Saint Energy whirlpool began to spin at top speed crazily, and a thick grey coloured light began to burst out from Zhou Weiqing's body.

The current scene in front of them was strange. In this fiery red world, both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er turned silver white fully, the grey that was welling out of his body rising crazily. In moments, a giant grey whirlpool of almost ten metres in diameter

had grown.

The thick and pure fire attribute energies were being devoured swiftly by the giant whirlpool, and it began to grow continuously.

Zhou Weiqing dared not summon the Projection of the Demon God once more, as he did not know what kind of reaction the Projection would have to such a scene in front of them. Instead, he directly infused a hundred drops of Saint Energy into his Devour Skill, circulating all of his Heavenly Energy without holding back as he unleashed it with all his might.

With Tian'er to share his burden, both of them had infused the hundred drops to fully power up the Devour Skill, and fire attribute energy was now being drawn in like a whale sucking in water, transforming swiftly into pure Saint Energy to replenish themselves. The surrounding dark red colour about them was actually diminishing at a rate that was visible to their eyes.

Zhou Weiqing did not know something like this would happen. At this current moment, all that was in his mind was survival.

Although the dragons formed from the Fire Spirits did not have intelligence yet, they still had their base instincts. Sensing the terrifying power of the Saint Energy and Devour Skill, their charging bodies paused slightly.

Right at that moment, in Zhou Weiqing's senses, he had a strange feeling. He realised that after infusing a hundred drops of Saint Energy into the Devour Skill, the whirlpool of 'Devouring' that had formed... he could actually control it! However, during the process of control it would actually cost him additional Heavenly Energy expenditure.

Due to the fact that neither Tian'er nor himself could cultivate the Saint Energy individually, if they used it apart, it could be said to be a 'one-time use' energy, any Saint Energy used up would be gone for good. As such, ordinarily speaking he would definitely not use Saint Energy to control his Skills without a good reason,

otherwise his Saint Energy would be used up just too swiftly.

However, the current unique situation before him was a great chance. The sheer amount of fire attribute energies in the surroundings was continually being transformed to feed into him and Tian'er. Although the Saint Energy formed from this was not as much as their expenditure, it would allow him to last a lot longer.

With this discovery, Zhou Weiqing did not hesitate to seize control of the Devour whirlwind. His eyes abruptly turned the grey of the Demonic Attribute, and in a flash, a thick grey light burst forth from the Devour whirlwind, spreading across the space.

In just that short simple moment, a total of six fire dragons vanished, forcefully dragged by the grey light into the Devour whirlpool.

The Devour Skill with a hundred drops of Saint Energy was truly terrifying. In a matter of moments, the six fire dragons had totally disappeared into the whirlpool, and both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er felt a 'stuffed' or full sensation, a large amount of Saint Energy flowing into their bodies from the large Saint Energy whirlpool, instantly replenishing the Saint Energy they had used up.

With this discovery, Zhou Weiqing was delighted and overjoyed. These fire dragons in front of him no longer seemed like a threat, but a treat! The perfect supplements!

The grey light flashed once more. With the previous experience in mind, this time the grey light managed to hold on for a while longer, and more than a dozen fire dragons were swept in, fusing into the grey whirlpool before entering Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's bodies.

If it were any other Heavenly Jewel Master meeting such a situation, they would definitely not have it as easy as Zhou Weiqing. Alas, these fire dragons were formed from Fire Spirits,

made out of pure energy and without actual intelligence, without Stored Skills or Consolidated Equipment. Facing the Demonic Attribute boosted by the Saint Energy, they seemed to become mere lambs to the slaughter.

However, after Zhou Weiqing had swept through them twice with the grey light, the fire dragons seemed to react as well. In their instincts, there was no such thing as fear or terror, and they instead charged towards Zhou Weiqing in an all out attack.

There were still slightly more than a hundred fire dragons, and the sight of all of them charging together as one was definitely very horrifying. The sheer heat in the skies could possibly melt metal. However, since their attacks were all focused on the Devour whirlpool that was threatening their lives, the pressure was totally on Zhou Weiqing alone.

Puuu A mouth of fresh blood spurted out from Zhou Weiqing's mouth. No matter how tough his body was, facing such immense pressure, even he was finding hard to withstand.

“Little Fatty, all out!” Tian'er cried out, channeling all of her Saint Energy into Zhou Weiqing without reservation.

Originally, Zhou Weiqing still felt a little unwilling to use so much... but facing such immense pressure, he no longer had a choice. Survival was after all of utmost importance.

The large Saint Energy whirlpool in his body rose, their remaining Saint Energy and the freshly generated ones moving out again to infuse into the Demonic Devour whirlpool. They were now 'all in'; either they were destroyed or they would Devour all of the fire dragons.

In all five of their hands, they were holding their respective Lustre Gems. If Zhou Weiqing could no longer withstand it, he would give the signal to the four girls, and they would use the Lustre Gem to get out of the realm at once.

The faint glow of light, a cold look on Zhou Weiqing's face as the massive grey whirlwind exploded forth with full power. In that instant, it expanded to nearly a hundred metre diameter, soaring up into the skies. Behind Zhou Weiqing's back, a hundred metre tall grey illusory figure appeared in a flicker. It looked to be the Demon God that Zhou Weiqing had summoned previously. However, this time, it seemed to be just a Heavenly Skill Image, without signs of being revived.

The giant grey whirlpool burst forth with a powerful suction force. In that moment, Zhou Weiqing's powerful spirit energy showed its full use. If they tried to Devour so many fire dragons at once, perhaps the sudden influx of so much energy would cause them to implode from within, and even their large Saint Energy whirlpool might not be able to withstand it. There needed to be a progressive process in doing so.

Literal translation – basically means by speaking of something one caused an event of bad luck to happen

In this case, though he uses this word, its more in the sense of 'not afraid of wastage'

Chapter 228 Mother Dragon! (2)

The massive grey whirlpool seemed to shudder slightly, and the several dozen fire dragons in the center of it felt a massive suction power forcefully dragging them at a greater speed than the other fire dragons.

In the current moment, a huge energy reverberation was in the air. Zhou Weiqing and the four girls did not notice, but in that moment, in the eyes of the large grey illusory figure, a thick grey light also lit up.

The Demonic Attribute was extremely powerful indeed, and in the process of the absorption of power into the large Saint Energy whirlpool, everything had been raised to their ultimate stage. The immense pressure caused Zhou Weiqing to vomit blood once more, but he grit his teeth to hold on.

He was unwilling to leave this place unless absolutely forced to, and even then only at the last moment. Just like what he had said previously, danger was often accompanied by opportunities. If they could successfully Devour so many fire dragons at once, the benefit it would bring to him and Tian'er was unimaginable... perhaps at least a thousand drops of Saint Energy each! If they were to just slowly cultivate that amount, perhaps even ten years would not be sufficient to gain that much Saint Energy. Even if they tried the 'shortcut' method of Devouring Heavenly Beasts, without at least a hundred Heavenly King Stage beasts or higher, it would be unlikely they could gain so much.

Peng A soft crash as Zhou Weiqing was forced to kneel down on a single knee, the immense pressure he was under causing even him to be unable to stand stably. The 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set around him was glowing with a bright dark-gold light, clearly doing its best to help Zhou Weiqing reduce the pressure as much as possible.

The three Shangguan Sisters exchanged looks, and crying out in unison, they abruptly burst forth with their strongest ranged attacks towards the fire dragons. Only by helping Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er share some of the pressure would the chances for their final success be increased.

The large Saint Energy whirlpool was gaining an unprecedented huge infusion of power, and currently, where Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er were holding hands, their entire hand and arm was turning into to look like a transparent jade stone, the silver white light which was shining about their entire body turning translucent.

This was also because it was Zhou Weiqing's body, strengthened and far more flexible and tough from the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, allowing him to somehow resist the terrifying pressure. The accumulated pressure from all of these fire dragons had even reached the level of a single Heavenly Emperor stage powerhouse. Any other six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master, even one like Shangguan Xue'er... perhaps they would have already broken down in front of such terrifying pressure.

Zhou Weiqing felt as if all the bones in his entire body were creaking and rattling from the sheer intensity of the pressure. However, in that moment, the benefits were starting to roll in.

The large Saint Energy whirlpool was brighter than ever, the Saint Energy flowing in like a stream, separating into two flows towards Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's body.

However, at this moment, Tian'er actually stopped the flow of Saint Energy into her own body, reversing the flow and causing it to infuse into Zhou Weiqing's body instead.

After all, Zhou Weiqing was the one who was mainly facing the majority of the massive pressure, and although Tian'er was sharing some of it, it was much lesser, especially since the Devour Skill whirlpool was being fully controlled by Zhou Weiqing. In

Tian'er's heart, nothing was more important than Zhou Weiqing's safety after all.

With the major infusion of thick Saint Energy into his body, Zhou Weiqing did not need to control it at all, and the Saint Energy automatically flowed into his body and to his twenty six energy whirlpools of his Death Acupuncture Points, further channeled by them through all of his meridian channels and enriching his entire body.

As the Saint Energy flowed through his body, Zhou Weiqing instantly felt the pressure reduce on him, and he could finally stand up again. As for the fire dragons in the air, they were slowly and steadily being drawn into the terrifyingly huge Devour whirlpool, crazily eaten up and transformed into Saint Energy.

In that instant, Zhou Weiqing could only feel as if his entire body was turning into that translucent silver-white colour, the torture of the massive pressure slowly turning into an enjoyable comfort, as if his entire body and all his powers were being transformed and evolved by the Saint Energy. He was not even able to determine how much Saint Energy was in his body at that moment.

As the fire dragons disappeared one after the other, the thick dark red light in the air around them also dissipated mostly, at least in the nearby vicinity. The Devour whirlpool had not just Devoured all the fire dragons, even the fire attribute energies in the air was not let go.

The fire attribute energies in a several thousand metre radius had been swept aside, revealing the cracked, browned burnt earth below at last.

The four girls simultaneously heaved a sigh of relief. It looked like they had gotten past this first crisis for now, and their gazes all landed upon Zhou Weiqing. Having just Devoured so many fire dragons, the large whirlpool of the Devour Skill was slowly rescinding, and the look of satisfaction on Zhou Weiqing's face also

caused their hearts to settle down.

However, right at that moment, an abrupt howl of anger rose from nowhere. In the next second, a small red dot appeared in their sights, beginning to grow rapidly by the second. An even more terrifying pressure than the over hundred fire dragons abruptly appeared, bursting forth upon them at once.

At first, it was just a small red dot, but in moments, it had grown substantially in their eyes... it was an incoming giant fireball!

The size of the fireball was far beyond anything they had ever witnessed in their lives before, or even imagined... at least thirty metre in radius, almost fully consolidated like an actual solid ball, looking extremely terrifying. The air around the fireball was not even warped like the normal water-like symptom, instead with a patch of pitch-black darkness, clearly a sign of the space around it being torn apart. This was a fireball after all, not a spatial type attack... and this could only mean one thing... the power of this fireball was far beyond their recognition.

The four girls instantly executed the same action as one, various powerful lights of different colours springing forth around them. At this point, Zhou Weiqing had been having a face full of comfort abruptly stepped forward with his left foot, the surface of his feet causing a violent explosion as it struck the ground, causing the ground to crack viciously, as his right foot soon followed suit. Now, this was the truly terrifying one, as his pitch black right foot slammed savagely onto the ground, the entire air actually warped violently, an ear piercing screech ringing out as the four girls were sent back at the same time as his own body was sent flying towards the fireball like a cannonball.

As a man, how could Zhou Weiqing let his own women place themselves in danger in his place? None of them knew the source of the fireball yet, and under ordinary circumstances, he would definitely get everyone to use the Lustre Gem to escape this place immediately. However, in his current status, it was not normal at

all, as he had at least two thousand drops of Saint Energy or so in his body, feeling as if his body was stuffed full to bursting point, and the world was in his hands.

They had forged their way to this point with such difficulty, and he would not give up so easily. Otherwise, if they had to try to enter again, they would have to go through all the trouble once more. Furthermore, who knew how long more the Lustre Spatial Realm could last?

Zhou Weiqing's glowing silver-white body instantly appeared in front of the fireball, ready to receive it. The Devour whirlpool which had been slowly shrinking suddenly expanded once more. Against such a massive fireball, Zhou Weiqing had no other choice, the freshly recharged Saint Energy once again pouring into the Devour Skill without holding back.

In the blink of an eye, the grey whirlpool turned white, exploding to a hundred zhang radius, and the terrifying Devour power met the giant fireball.

At the same time, the illusory figure of the Demon God behind Zhou Weiqing suddenly floated forward together with him. Perhaps it was because Zhou Weiqing had suddenly infused a large enough amount of Saint Energy, in that instant, its body suddenly turned more solid, as it floated in front of Zhou Weiqing, its arms spreading wide as if holding the devour whirlpool, receiving the giant fireball.

Puuu A loud tearing sound caused the entire Lustre Spatial Realm to shake violently, but there was no explosion like one might expect for such a collision.

When the giant fireball smashed into the Devour whirlpool, it was like a snowball smashing into a red hot metal plate, with an ear splitting hissing sound, it vanished right into the massive whirlpool.

However, the attack was not over. The Projection of the Demon

God blocking in front of Zhou Weiqing turned red instantly, the temperature all about them raising to the max. In the next instant, the entire Devour whirlpool shattered, and Zhou Weiqing's body was suddenly sent flying back as if he had been slapped by a giant palm, smashing savagely into the ground with a sickening thud. What a terrifying blow.

The four girls who had been sent back by Zhou Weiqing charged towards him without thinking, and at the same time, a enraged howl rang out through the entire Lustre Spatial Realm.

“It's all you detestable and abominable humans again! All of you... die!!” In the distance, a massive figure appeared in their sights, a giant red dragon more than a hundred metres long, and a terrifying pressure blotted out the skies as it surged down upon them. Originally, the area around them had been cleared of fire attribute energies, but it now turned dark red once more.

Heavenly God Stage. A powerful Heavenly God Stage Heavenly Beast, pretty much top ranked in the world today. This was the reason why Zhou Weiqing was unable to fully dissipate its attack even though he had infused more than a thousand Saint Energy. In front of a Heavenly God Tier Heavenly Beast, just surviving its attack was something to be proud of already.

Zhou Weiqing did not stay long in the deep crater that was created when his body was smashed into the ground. At this time, though his entire body was hurting as if it was being torn apart, almost feeling like he was about to die at anytime, while his Heavenly Energy and Saint Energy was in disorder in his body.. However, he knew he had no other choice but to react as quickly as possible.

As his wings flapped, he forced himself to rise up again. At the same time, a resonant dragon's cry rang out from Zhou Weiqing's mouth, cutting through the air and spreading out. A thick bloodline aura spread forth from his body, boldly sweeping throughout the area.

The large red dragon had already shot out another five of those giant fireballs, some even larger than the original one. However, that dragon's cry that Zhou Weiqing issued out actually saved their lives.

The massive fireballs abruptly stopped in midair, and the originally crazed and enraged eyes of the red dragon were suddenly filled with curiosity as it stopped its attack temporarily.

Chapter 228 Mother Dragon! (3)

Zhou Weiqing dared not stop his dragon's cry. Currently, all four girls had reached his side, and they could clearly see blood streaming down Zhou Weiqing's mouth, nose and ears. Clearly, when he had blocked the previous fireball, he had already sustained severe injuries, and the flicker of silver white around him was now rather unstable.

Tian'er quickly grabbed onto Zhou Weiqing's hand, reestablishing the large Saint Energy whirlpool as quickly as she could, also infusing the last remnants of Saint Energy in her body to him.

When she sensed the Heavenly Energy reverberations in Zhou Weiqing's body, she couldn't help but draw in a cold breath.

The Heavenly Energy in Zhou Weiqing's body was extremely unstable, not only was his own energy raging about in an unruly fashion, a thick fire attribute energy was also slowly eating away at his insides. If not for the Saint Energy protecting him, perhaps he would have already been finished off by now. Even so, he was still forcing himself to continue the dragon's cry despite his condition.

In fact, Zhou Weiqing would have to thank his Immortal Deity Technique for his ability to do this. Ever since he started cultivating it, he had been constantly tortured and tormented with unimaginable pain, slowly increasing his resistance and willpower to far beyond any ordinary Heavenly Jewel Master. In the current situation, no matter how much pain he was in, the willpower that had been forged and tempered allowed him to pull himself together and do what he needed to do.

In the distance, the massive dragon slowly flew towards them. Zhou Weiqing's eyes were resolute and stubborn. Currently, with Tian'er's help, the large Saint Energy whirlpool was able to start siphoning away the terrifying fire attribute energy that was

causing destruction in his body, transforming it into Saint Energy. The pain within him was also slowly easing up.

Very quickly, the massive dragon stopped before them, its eyes fully dark red. They could clearly sense the violent emotions raging within it, though it was trying its best to control itself, the terrifying pressure still caused Zhou Weiqing and the others to fall to the ground.

Although Zhou Weiqing and the girls were at the top of the young generation, in front of a Heavenly God Tier powerhouse, they were no different from ants. If the massive dragon really wanted to kill them, perhaps a single claw would be sufficient to destroy them all simply. Even with the Lustre Gem in their hands, it was unlikely any of them could escape.

Zhou Weiqing's heart was actually extremely anxious. He was hoping that the four girls would use their Lustre Gem to leave this place swiftly. If it was just him alone, even if he was facing the dragon, he still had confidence in escaping with his lives. However, with the four girls here, how could he possibly leave on his own? As such, he could only continue maintaining the dragon's cry as he forcefully generated the bloodline aura from within him. However, he was still not clear if the dragon, clearly in a crazed state, was actually able to recognize him or not.

As the terrifying energy reverberations flowed through the air, Zhou Weiqing's gaze fixed upon the dragon, carefully lowering his dragon's cry.

The massive dragon's eyes were also fixed upon him, the crazed aura in its eyes filled with a hint of confusion. Just like what Zhou Weiqing feared, it seemed to be unable to recognize him fully.

As Zhou Weiqing slowly stopped the dragon's cry, his left hand was behind his back, waving frantically, motioning the four girls to step further away. However, at such a period of critical danger, how could the four of them be willing to allow him to stay there

alone? This was especially so for Shangguan Xue'er, and she was standing by Zhou Weiqing holding his arm, showing her resolve that she would live and die with him.

Although Zhou Weiqing had not felt that she was wrong at all, in Shangguan Xue'er's heart, she had let him down. Currently, facing the massive dragon, she was actually the one with the least fear in her heart. At least, if they really died here together, she would be able to die with him, and there was no longer any need to think about responsibilities.

As the fiery red light flickered around them, sweat beaded around Zhou Weiqing's head to fall constantly. How could he not be nervous? Especially now that he was being stared at by the massive dragon, the pressure on him was definitely the greatest.

"Bro Dragon, do you still recognize me? Do you remember three years ago when your child was born? We were there... We have no ill intentions... Can we talk?" Zhou Weiqing tried to have his voice as gentle as possible as he spoke slowly at the dragon. In fact, he even infused some Saint Energy into his voice as he spoke, filling it with a deep magnetization, and even the girls who heard his voice felt their emotions soothed slightly.

The confusion in the dragon's eyes slowly vanished, but the red in them did not. Its emotions were still clearly distraught and unstable. "Humans... you are humans... humans need to die... die... die..."

With that low angry howl, the pressure which had been held back suddenly increased once more, and Zhou Weiqing and the others suddenly felt their legs sink into the ground as blood spurted out from their mouths.

In front of the Heavenly God Tier powerhouse, no matter if it was just their pressure, it was like a natural disaster to them.

"Senior, please wake up!" Tian'er was right beside Zhou Weiqing, and as she cried out, her eyes turned purple as two bright purple

lights shot forth from them towards the dragon's eyes. Within the purple light, there was a faint hint of silver white as well.

The dragon was clearly not in sound mind, and for it to wake up, they had to calm down its emotions. Tian'er's Spirit Attribute was one of the four Saint Attributes, and as she released the two bouts of spiritual shocks, a gold light filled with divine aura shot forth from the God Spirit Staff in Tian'er's hands, landing on the massive dragon.

This was the Divine Attribute's Light of Healing, accompanying the spiritual shocks specialised to heal those whose spirits and minds are in trouble. Although dragons have a strong resistance and even immunity to many elements, this was after all healing, not an attack, and the resistance would be limited. Furthermore, Tian'er had infused some Saint Energy into these Skills, and even the dragons would also be affected by the Saint Energy.

The gold light and purple light landed on the dragon almost simultaneously, causing it to give off a low roar as it raised its head.

That really gave Zhou Weiqing a big scare, as the five of them stared into the dragon's eyes. If the dragon really attacked them, they would have to give a last ditch fight, and whether or not any of them could escape would be down to luck.

It seemed that luck was on their side after all. The dragon's attack did not come, and accompanying the low and pained roar was the sudden vanishing of the pressure on them. When the dragon lowered its head once more, they could hear heavy breathing from it, as drool dripped down from its mind. Although its emotions still seemed unstable, there was a light in its bloodshot eyes as a hint of consciousness had come to them.

Tian'er's choice definitely had her reasons behind it, as she had recognized that this dragon was not the final male dragon that had appeared last in the Lustre Spatial Realm, but the mother dragon

who had given birth to her child.

At that time, Tian'er had healed this mother dragon before, and she believed that the mother dragon would possibly recognize her Divine Attribute. As such, she attempted to use her healing to try and rouse the dragon.

“Such a familiar energy... a familiar aura. It's you?” The dragon's eyes landed on Zhou Weiqing once more, and the original enmity in them slowly dissipated.

“Senior, how are you. I do not know what happened, that you are in such rage?” Zhou Weiqing asked tentatively.

The dragon seemed to have fully awakened by now, but upon hearing Zhou Weiqing's words, its eyes were filled with pain and sorrow. Lowering its head, it looked at Zhou Weiqing, and sensing the strong dragon bloodline scent in him, the craziness in its eyes subsided slowly.

“My husband... my child... my husband... my child!!” The dragon's voice was actually trembling. Such a powerful Heavenly God Tier powerhouse, yet it was sobbing in sorrow, its emotions actually affecting all five of them.

Although it was just a few simple words, but Zhou Weiqing heard so many things within. It looked like the male dragon who had given him the Solidified Dragon Spirit and the dragon bloodline, as well as their child, had something happen to them. Yet... in this Lustre Spatial Realm, who could possibly even pose a threat to them?!

Was it humans? From the dragon's previous strong enmity, Zhou Weiqing immediately thought of the answer. However, that only increased the confusion in his heart. How could humans possibly threaten them? After all, in the Lustre Spatial Realm, only those below the age of thirty could enter!

The dragon's sorrow lasted a long time before it finally calmed

down once more; lifting up its head, a sorrowful dragon's roar burst forth, rumbling throughout the entire Lustre Spatial Realm, causing the entire realm to shake violently. The crazed aura that had just subsided began to rise once more.

Tian'er dared not risk it, quickly releasing her Divine Light of Healing to bathe the dragon once more, trying to calm its fury down.

The dragon's roar lasted for quite a while before finally settling down, as its head lowered, its gaze landed upon Zhou Weiqing and the others once more. "Come with me."

In the low voice, the dragon slowly turned around, its massive wings beating as it flew off. Zhou Weiqing quickly signalled towards the four girls before taking off in flight after the dragon. Although his body was still injured, he could still barely maintain flight.

The dragon was truly the lord of the Heavenly Beasts indeed. Wherever it passed, the thick fire attribute energies automatically spread aside, as if receiving their king or emperor, and the surroundings became clear once more.

The current Lustre Spatial Realm looked so different from the previous time they had entered, with burnt ground everywhere, and only some hills and mountains could be seen in the distance.

Led by the dragon, they flew almost an entire hour before they reached the foot of a tall mountain, and a massive cave entrance was before their eyes.

Although they would always be teleported to a different place every time they entered the Lustre Spatial Realm, Zhou Weiqing could recognize that this cave before his eyes was the exact same location where the mother dragon had birthed the dragon egg last time. A sudden feeling of unease suddenly entered his heart. What had actually happened?!

Chapter 229 To be confirmed! (1)

The mother dragon slowly landed before the cave, the air of sorrow about her was even thicker. It did not say anything, instead walking directly into the cave. Zhou Weiqing and the girls exchanged puzzled looks, but they followed suit into the cave.

The dragon's cave was extremely huge, the entrance alone was more than thirty metres in height. As such, even as the massive dragon entered it, the cave did not seem squeezey at all, instead Zhou Weiqing and the girls felt extremely tiny when they entered it.

They advanced nearly a thousand metres into the cave and deep into the mountain before the wings of the dragon suddenly flapped hard. Instantly, a fire rose up around them, lighting up the cave instantly.

When Zhou Weiqing and the girls saw the situation in the cave, they couldn't help but exclaim in shock involuntarily.

Right in the depths of the massive cave, another huge dragon lay down peacefully on the ground. However, there were no signs of life on it.

On this dead dragon, there were terrifying huge wounds all over. There was one final lethal blow that was on its neck, nearly half of it cut off by some unknown force. Although this dragon was clearly dead, the sheer presence of a powerhouse could clearly be sensed from it.

The entire floor was stained red with dragons blood, and the horrifying sight before their eyes rendered all five of them speechless.

No wonder the mother dragon was in such pain and sorrow. Her husband... that immensely powerful dragon, had been killed just like that... and the state of death was just so horrifying and tragic.

From one of the massive wounds in its belly, they could even see some innards poking out.

However, in this massive cavern, there seemed to be a strange force around. This dragon had clearly been dead for some time, but its corpse still looked fresh. Although there were no signs of life, the powerful dragon force had not dissipated.

“How did this happen? Who could possibly hurt the dragon?” Zhou Weiqing exclaimed out loud.

The mother dragons’ body lay down beside the body of her mate, using her head to rub against his softly and repeatedly as tears flowed down her eyes, her massive body trembling nonstop.

Only at this point did the five of them realise that on the mother dragon’s body, there were also many wounds, though they were not on any fatal or critical areas. No one could have imagined that the dragons in the Lustre Spatial Realm had actually been killed, and they finally understood the reason behind the explosive outbreak in the Lustre Spatial Realm.

The mother dragon’s emotions were clearly filled with anger and hatred, and she wanted to break free of the Lustre Spatial Realm, to take revenge for her love! It was obvious that her hatred was some humans from the outside world.

Zhou Weiqing and the girls fell silent. At this moment, though they understood the reason behind the troubles of the Lustre Spatial Realm, they found themselves even more confused. Who could it be who was actually able to hurt and kill the dragons? They really wanted to ask the mother dragon, but her sorrowful look affected them so much they couldn’t even bring themselves to do so.

As the large teardrops rolled down and splashed onto the ground, they seemed like small streams. The red colour returned to the mother dragon’s eyes, as if she was about to go crazy at any time again. Using her claws to gently stroke her husband’s body, the

sentiment, the unwillingness to let go, the sorrow... causing Zhou Weiqing and the girls' eyes to turn red. Subconsciously, it was as if they were thinking... what if the one who had lost his life was Zhou Weiqing, what would they do then?

Not willing to interrupt the mother dragon, the five of them stood there silently, watching.

All of a sudden, Tian'er seemed to remember something, and abruptly she flew forward towards the corpse of the male dragon, using her right hand to press upon it.

“ROAAAARR —” The mother dragon was enraged. How could she allow anyone to touch and desecrate her husband's corpse? The terrifying pressure burst forth instantly once more.

“Wait, wait! Perhaps there is still a chance to revive him.” Tian'er's voice rang out at once. At that point, Zhou Weiqing's heart was already in his throat. If the mother dragon really took action, none of them could possibly survive.

Hearing Tian'er's words, the mother dragon's massive body suddenly stood up in a swoosh, her eyes open wide as she exclaimed: “You... what did you say... he can still be revived?!” Her voice was trembling, and in that trembling tone there was a note of surprise and joy. The pressure instantly vanished again; from Zhou Weiqing's perspective, he could see her lower jaw trembling, teeth chattering. One could just sense how agitated her emotions were at that point.

Tian'er looked at the mother dragon seriously, nodding earnestly. “I cannot guarantee that it will work, but I can assure you that there is a chance that we can still revive him.”

PENG

The mother dragon's power legs suddenly bent down, that abrupt thud sound was that of her suddenly kneeling down. The scales around her body were trembling violently, making a soft

wengweng sound, and she just kowtowed down to Tian'er like that.

“Please, please I beg you, please save him. As long as he can come back to life, even if you want my life, I will give it to you. My Heavenly Core, my scales, my body... I can give you anything. As long as you save him, please save my husband.”

Her voice was weeping as she cried out: “We have been together for several tens of thousands of years. Without him, I already do not feeling like living... I beg you, please save him.”

As she spoke up to that point, the mother dragon began to cry, in such a human fashion.

Dragons, perhaps the proudest of all the Heavenly Beasts. Yet, the mother dragon was actually kneeling towards Tian'er. One could imagine how much it must have taken for her to do so, how much her love for her husband was.

Shangguan Bing'er was the first to lose control, bursting into tears and rushing into Zhou Weiqing's arms, hugging him as she cried. Sensing the mother dragon's sorrow, she suddenly felt afraid as if she would lose her Little Fatty.

The same feeling spread to the other girls as well. In that instant, any bit of jealousy and alienation vanished. Indeed! As long as the man they loved was alive, and loved them back... being able to see him everyday... what else was there to be jealous about? Was there anything more important than being alive together?

“Senior, please do not do so.” Although Zhou Weiqing did not cry out, but his eyes were reddened. He had always been a person who placed most importance on his emotions, and sensing the sheer sorrow from the mother dragon, he also set his resolve that as long as they had any chance, no matter the price to pay, he would definitely help her revive her husband.

“Senior, please get up, let us discuss how we can successfully

revive your husband.” Zhou Weiqing said gently.

The mother dragon slowly lifted her head, but remained kneeling there, unwilling to get up. “What do you need me to do, what will it take for you to save him?”

Tian’er returned to Zhou Weiqing’s side, saying: “Senior, can you please tell us what happened? Who was it who actually hurt and killed your husband? I can sense that there is an extremely powerful destructive power in his body, and it is this strange energy that has caused him to lose his life. Otherwise, with a Dragon’s strength and regenerative power, he should not die so quickly. However, his body is just too tough, and though that energy was able to destroy its innards, it was unable to cause it to rot. Your husband has been dead for some time, but there seems to be a unique power protecting his corpse, preserving it in near perfect condition as if he has just passed away, with the last bit of vigor still in his body. It is because of this that I say that we still have a chance to revive him. However, the first step is we have to think of a way to remove this destructive energy remaining in his body... otherwise even if we revive him, he will not last long again.”

“Alright, sure, I will tell you, I will tell you all everything.” The mother dragon said hastily.

Speaking up to that point, the mother dragon finally stood up, walking to the front of Zhou Weiqing and the girls before crouching them, with her head close to them. With a last sad look at her husband’s corpse, she began to explain the entire occurrence that had taken place to lead up to this point.

“Ever since our child was born, due to what had happened previously, my husband and I had always been staying by our child’s side, fully focused on protecting them during their gestation period and also helping them to get through this period as swiftly as possible...”

“Them?” Tian’er exclaimed, startled.

The mother dragon’s large eyes were filled with a gentle look. “Yes, them. Do you still remember? Three years ago when you all came, I had a difficult labour because the egg was just too big. That is because... in that dragon’s egg, there were two little lives! I am extremely certain that this was a pair of dragon twins! We were about to have two babies... this is extremely rare in the entire history of dragonkind!”

“Everyday, I could feel their life growing stronger... To me and my husband, that was an unbelievably happy time. Even if we were just watching our egg and not doing anything else, we could feel so peaceful and overjoyed. The gestation period of our dragonkind is very long, but around half a year ago, I could clearly sense that there were signs that they were about to break out of their shell. However, at that moment, a major shakeup occurred in the entire Lustre Spatial Realm.”

As she spoke the last line, her tone turned vicious, as anger, hate and venom flashed in her eyes once more.

“That day, I still remember very clearly. The weather was originally very good, with the air very suitable indeed. I could sense that in around ten days time, with my husband and I infusing energy into the egg, our children were about to come into the world. However, all of a sudden, the entire Lustre Spatial Realm underwent a massive change. At that time, I sensed the spatial realm begin to shake violently, in an unstable fashion... as if the entire space was about to shatter.

“Towards such a circumstance, both my husband and I weren’t that worried. Even if the entire space shattered, it would not be able to hurt us. With our power, we could definitely charge out in that instant and leave this place. Although the Lustre Spatial Realm is safe, we have also lived here for tens of thousands of years, and we have long been bored of it. Leaving this place was not a bad thing in our eyes. However, we did not understand why

the spatial realm would suddenly shake like that... it was not something that should happen in normal circumstances.”

“This Lustre Spatial Realm was created by the ancestors of our dragonkind... my husband is of the purest royal bloodline of the Dragon Tribe, and if the Lustre Spatial Realm was in any trouble, by right he should be the first to sense it. However, all along everything was calm and peaceful. We did not dare to take any action before knowing what was going on, instead staying by our children’s side to protect them. In that instant, high up in the skies, a massive rift appeared.

Chapter 229 To be confirmed! (2)

Hearing those words, surprise and shock flashed across Zhou Weiqing and the girls' faces. "Rift?!"

The mother dragon nodded, saying: "Yes, a rift... a pitch black rift like a tear in the skies. When it appeared, both my husband and I sensed a terrifying aura, one that was filled with destructive power, as if wanting to destroy the very heaven and earth. Such a horrifying aura and pressure, even we were not able to withstand it. After that... an evil sounding voice rang out."

"The voice, it did not seem either male or female, but it was definitely very arrogant, laughing for a time before saying: 'Finally, I have found it, to actually be hidden in such a deep corner. Now, let's see how you will run now.'"

"As soon as he finished speaking, a monstrous power descended from the skies, filled with that same terrifying destructive power that you talked about... instantly falling upon both myself and my husband... just like two pitch black lights, but that was definitely not the Darkness Attribute. Even with my own, and my husband's, cultivation of several tens of thousands of years, under the surge of energy, we were actually unable to move. We could actually feel our bodies being destroyed slowly."

"At that time, my husband somehow managed to drag himself in front of myself, using all his might to block that destructive attack... to protect me and my child! The terrifying destructive might lasted almost an hour before it vanished, and by that time he was already severely injured... even myself, protected by him, was also greatly influenced and injured, with my powers greatly reduced."

"Right at that moment, several dozen humans charged out from the black rift, launching attacks on us. Their attacks held the same destructive power as well, and all of them were at least what you

humans call the Heavenly King stage, with the four leaders being at the Heavenly Emperor stage. Under any normal circumstances, neither I or my husband would have cared about those few of them. However, at this time, both of us were severely injured, and we were unable to fight against them properly. My husband used the last of his breath and we killed seven or eight of them... but he..."

As she spoke up to that point, tears were once again streaming down the mother dragon's cheeks, causing the ground below Zhou Weiqing and the girls' feet to become wet. Without question, the male dragon had fought to the death to protect his wife and children, but the critical key of the matter was the two bouts of destructive black light after the spatial rift had appeared. It was those two streaks of light that had severely injured the dragon couple and caused their strength to fall sufficiently that those human enemies had succeeded in their attacks. Furthermore, those dozens of humans were definitely above thirty years of age, especially the four Heavenly Emperor stage powerhouses... for them to join forces to attack the two dragons... did even the Heaven's Expanse Palace have that many powerhouses?!

"My husband's final blow also critically injured the four Heavenly Emperor powerhouses, but when he died, I went berserk. I would rather die and take these enemies with me, instead of letting them hurt my children. At that time, I also thought I would definitely die. However, I do not know why but right at that moment, the black rift in the sky began to slowly shrink, as if the energy was insufficient to hold it up. Alas, while we were still locked in frenzied battle, one of the powerhouses sneaked behind me and stole our children. At that time, I had already lost control of my emotions, and I did not realise it until it was too late. In the end, I killed another five or six of them, but the rest of them managed to make their escape."

The mother dragon's body was trembling once more, this time

with sheer rage. Her husband had been killed, her children stolen from her... any female from any species would never be able to accept that!

“I want to take revenge, I want to find our children again. As such, I received the dragon spirit that was generated from my husband’s death, and began to attack the entire spatial realm in an attempt to break free. I had used two months of time to recover slightly from my wounds, before attempting to break free of this Lustre Spatial Realm. Only by first leaving this area will I be able to find those enemies of mine, and destroy them... taking back our children. I will never forget that black rift... those bastards managed to escape it because of that.

At last, Zhou Weiqing and the girls finally knew the entire happenings from the mother dragon’s description, but all five of them lapsed into deep thought.

One could imagine the shock they were in currently. What the mother dragon described was clearly a deliberate and planned action. Yet, let alone being able to gather so many Heavenly Emperor and Heavenly King stage powerhouses together, just the thought of the power needed to tear such a spatial rift alone caused their expressions to change.

It had to be known that this Lustre Spatial Realm was created by the combined efforts of four Heavenly God Tier stage powerhouses, and just like the mother dragon said, the power that tore open the rift and attacked the dragons was at a stage above them. Above the Heavenly God Tier... what kind of level was that? Could it be the legendary Heavenly Jewel Change?! Even so... why was this person targeting the dragons? With such a cultivation level, who in the world would be match for this person? All of them were filled with so many unanswered questions, so much puzzlement.

At last, Zhou Weiqing asked the mother dragon: “Is that destructive power still in your body as well?”

The mother dragon shook her head, her eyes filled with sorrow. “In the last moment before my husband died, he forcefully drained all the destructive power from me, allowing me to regain some portion of my strength. Otherwise, I would have probably died before the enemies left. Alas, I was still unable to protect our children... it’s all my fault, all my fault! If I had been able to stay calm and in control, to protect our children... they might not have been able to steal them before the rift closed!”

Once again, the mother dragon burst into tears, and sorrow lingered about the entire massive cavern, as if a tangible source even.

Zhou Weiqing looked at Tian’er and said: “Let us first take things step by step... no matter what, we should first try to save her husband before we decide on what to do next. Tian’er, what idea did you have, let us discuss it?”

Tian’er nodded her head and said: “As everyone knows, amongst the four Saint Attributes, our Heavenly Snow Mountain core bloodline has the Divine Attribute, which has the capability of Resurrection. Although the Resurrection Skill has not appeared in the world for a long time, it does truly exist. However, it only has a thirty percent chance, and cannot work on any life form that has passed away for more than two hours. At the same time, the Resurrection Skill itself does not have any healing capabilities. That means, we have to actually heal all the wounds of the corpse before it can work as well.”

Hearing Tian’er’s words, Shangguan Xue’er couldn’t help but draw in a cold breath. “Tian’er, to Resurrect a dragon of such power, how much energy would be required?”

Tian’er said resolutely: “No matter what, we need to try.” She had truly been touched by the mother dragon’s story. Furthermore, their Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger Tribe had always had strong connections with the Dragon Tribe since ancient times.

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: “I understand what you mean... we have to first heal the dragon’s corpse before we can even begin to Resurrect him. However, he has already died for such a long period of time... will that really work?”

Tian’er gave a bitter smile and said: “In truth, I also do not know... but from what I can tell, his body still has vitality within it. Dragons are one of the strongest Heavenly Beasts in the world, and it isn’t so easy to kill them. Furthermore, this Lustre Spatial Realm was originally constructed by the Dragon Tribe, and here, their life force is maintained and supported to the maximum possibility. As such, we should still have a thin thread of chance. More importantly, we have the Saint Energy... that is the real reason why I have some hopes that it will succeed. With the Saint Energy’s creation powers supporting my Resurrection Skill, the chances of success might be much higher than normal.”

Zhou Weiqing’s eyes flashed with resolution. “In that case, let us try. The problem of energy, I believe I can use the Devour Skill to solve.”

Tian’er nodded slightly, saying: “We can only do so then.”

After the simple discussion, they turned back to the mother dragon, and Zhou Weiqing said: “As you already know, Tian’er is of the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger bloodline. Our only chance now is for her to use the Resurrection Skill of the Divine Attribute to bring your husband back to life... but there is no guarantee of success.”

The mother dragon was overjoyed upon hearing that. “That’s right! Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger! She is a Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger with the Resurrection Skill! As long as you can Resurrect my husband, I can agree to any requests. He is already dead now, there can’t be any worse consequence. Please go ahead boldly and do what you need to do, even if it doesn’t succeed, I will not blame you. However, if that is the case, I can only continue to break free of the Lustre Spatial Realm to look for my children.”

Zhou Weiqing's brow furrowed and said: "If we can successfully revive your husband, can you two not break free of the Spatial Realm? If the realm is destroyed, the Heavenly Jewel Island will also be destroyed as well, and below the island there are more than tens of millions of humans living in a major city."

"Humans?" A thick hatred showed in the mother dragon's eyes. She really wanted to say that what do the lives of humans mean to me... however, these few in front of her who could possibly save her husband were also humans, and in the end she did not speak the words. "But... our children..."

Zhou Weiqing saw the sorrow in her eyes, and sighed inwardly, saying: "Nevermind, no matter what, let us first try to revive your husband. Whether or not we succeed or fail, I hope that you can give us a chance to discuss the matter first, to see what else can be done. That is all we ask."

Facing such a wife and mother in such dire straits, Zhou Weiqing could not bring himself to ask for any conditions. She had suffered too much. In truth, it rang deep into his own soul as well, as he did not know whether his own parents were still alive or dead, and he could fully understand how she felt at this moment.

The mother dragon nodded rapidly. "Very well, I agree. Please revive my husband first, we can always discuss with you. What do you need me to do?"

Zhou Weiqing thought for a moment before replying: "Reviving your husband is not something that can be accomplished in one simple strike, we need to do so step by step. When we need your help, I will definitely let you know. Earlier, your attack left me quite severely injured, so I need to first recover before we can begin."

A hint of embarrassed shame flashed in the mother dragon's eyes, but she did not say anything, just nodding towards Zhou Weiqing. Just like what Tian'er said, although her husband had

already passed away, in this Lustre Spatial Realm, his corpse would not easily rot away like that, and they could not rush things in order to ensure the greatest success rate.

Chapter 229 To be confirmed! (3)

Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er directly sat down where they were in a meditative position, knees facing each other as their hands met. The large Saint Energy whirlpool formed and began to spin.

The fireball from the mother dragon earlier had dealt a pretty serious blow to Zhou Weiqing, and even his tough meridian channels had been damaged in several areas. Luckily, the large Saint Energy whirlpool had been able to take care of most of the fire attribute energies earlier, otherwise his body might have broken down long since.

Currently, as the pair sat down cultivating, Zhou Weiqing's first priority was to nurse himself back to health, at the same time circulating the Saint Energy to recover their strength.

The three Shangguan Sisters also sat down by their side. With the mother dragon here, unless that rift she spoke about appeared again, they would not be in any danger in this place.

Zhou Weiqing had the bloodline of the dragons and the Dark Demon God Tiger, and his regeneration and recovery rate was so strong that it was more than comparable to the dragon tribes. Very quickly, his meridian channels were all repaired, and the energy whirlpools of his Death Acupuncture Points were also spinning at maximum speed, drawing in Heavenly Energy and replenishing his drained self. With the large Saint Energy whirlpool, Zhou Weiqing was able to gather the scattered Saint Energy in his body, returning it back to his personal Saint Energy whirlpool.

Although the Saint Energy was undoubtedly strong, against absolute power it was still not able to overcome it to victory. Just like earlier, the massive fireball had scattered most of his Saint Energy. Luckily, a lot of it was still scattered into his body, and one of the unique characteristics of the Saint Energy was it would protect its user. Currently, with Zhou Weiqing's circulation, the

silver white Saint Energy began to flow through his body like the flow of a stream, gathering back at his DanTian as Zhou Weiqing began to resume calculating his total amount.

Ever since he entered the Lustre Spatial Realm, Zhou Weiqing had Devoured at least three thousand drops of Saint Energy or so. Those fire dragons made from Fire Spirits were definitely a great nourishment to his Saint Energy, but the next two fights also forced him to use a large amount of Saint Energy. Currently, as he consolidated them together, he realised the remaining amount was really not much.

Even so, if it was compared to the amount that both he and Tian'er had before they entered the Lustre Spatial Realm, it was not a small increase. In the end, Zhou Weiqing found he had around five hundred drops of Saint Energy left in his DanTian, but in the previous process, a small portion of Saint Energy had already merged into his Death Acupuncture Point energy whirlpools, so the benefits he had received was definitely not to be underestimated.

A heavy Heavenly Energy reverberation raced through his body, and to Zhou Weiqing's surprise, his Heavenly Energy cultivation level seemed to have a decent rise as well, almost on the verge of breaking through once more as his twenty seventh Death Acupuncture Point seemed to be loosening.

The surprise was because he had just broken through the twenty sixth Death Acupuncture Point not long ago, perhaps not even ten days ago... yet, he was now on the verge of breaking through again. That was truly inconceivable.

It was clear that this was the benefit of the Saint Energy and his Devour Skill. The Devour Skill had not only helped the large Saint Energy whirlpool to gain so much Saint Energy, it had also drawn in a large amount of Heavenly Energy into his body, greatly increasing his Heavenly Energy cultivation level. The Saint Energy would in turn help purify the Heavenly Energy and prevent any

side effects from drawing too much Heavenly Energy in such a short time, able to fully use it to purely increase his strength.

This was just too fast right? While Zhou Weiqing was so pleasantly surprised, he was also extremely satisfied. The twenty seventh Death Acupuncture Point was also the last Death Acupuncture Point of the third portion of the Immortal Deity Technique, and though he would still be at the sixth Jeweled stage after this last Acupuncture Point, by completing this third stage of the Immortal Deity Technique, it would still advance his power a whole step forward. Not only would the speed of regeneration of his Heavenly Energy increase, his Immortal Deity Shield would also grow greatly in strength. Overall, this was definitely a good thing.

In truth, it was actually normal that Zhou Weiqing would be about to breakthrough. The fire dragons formed by the Fire Spirits were of the purest of Fire Attribute energies. Such a pure Fire Attribute energy was equivalent to the fire energy in the Dragons' bodies. More importantly, as Zhou Weiqing had infused so much Saint Energy into the Devour Skill, it had greatly improved it, turning all of the fire dragons back into Saint Energy. All of that Saint Energy had temporarily mixed with his Heavenly Energy, and with the enrichment, his Heavenly Energy had actually gone through a qualitative change... and thus breaking through to the next stage was like [a canal forming when water flows](#).

It could be said that Zhou Weiqing had totally profitted from that previous misfortune, but it was also the Demonic Attribute's Devour Skill once again showing its extraordinary power again.

Just like the 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set that Zhou Weiqing had, the greater one's cultivation stage, the greater the boost it would give.

Tian'er could naturally sense the changes in Zhou Weiqing's body immediately. While she was still pleasantly surprised, Zhou Weiqing had already begun slowly infusing the Saint Energy into

Tian'er's body, helping her enrich and improve her body as well.

However, this time both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er felt their cultivation had gone through some changes. They discovered that with the large Saint Energy whirlpool's movement, their own personal small Saint Energy whirlpool was also affected to spin along, and the five hundred drops of Saint Energy were no longer divided equally between the two of them, instead forming a full circulation between all three Saint Energy whirlpools across their bodies. Not only was it slowly recovering their Saint Energy, but also enriching and improving their bodies at the same time.

The reason such a situation was happening was simple, the massive gain in their overall amount of Saint Energy previously.

In the past, when their Saint Energy had broken past the hundred drop stage, the connection between them and the Saint Energy had changed. This had happened again when they reached three hundred drops. Previously, the highest amount of Saint Energy in Zhou Weiqing's body had already gone past two thousand drops, and it was natural that a similar occurrence had already happened, though he had not previously noticed it.

At the side, the three Shangguan Sisters could clearly see that both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's bodies were slowly turning a silver-white colour as they continued cultivating. The energy in the air was obviously growing thicker, and the Saint Energy aura that they were giving off gave them all a comfortable feeling, even the mother dragon was no exception.

The three Shangguan Sisters could sense that this was extremely beneficial to them as well, and they instantly began their own cultivation at the side as well. Feeling the aura of the Saint Energy around them, the Heavenly Energy in their bodies was clearly more energetic and reactive than usual.

The mother dragon looked at Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er, her eyes filled with surprise. Originally, she did not have a lot of hope

within her regarding the success of them reviving her husband.

After all, the difference in power levels was just too huge.

It still had some understanding regarding the Resurrect Skill of the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger. Ordinarily speaking, if the person using the Skill had a far higher cultivation level than the target, the chances of success would be much higher, but the reverse was also true. However, Tian'er's current cultivation was only at the seven-Jeweled stage, but her husband was a Heavenly God Tier stage, one far more powerful than ordinary as well. One could just imagine what the chances of success for the revival would be... but no matter what, she still hoped to try, even if there was just a slim chance of success, she was not willing to give up!

However, right at this moment, as she sensed the Saint Energy aura coming from Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er, she suddenly thought back on how Zhou Weiqing had actually blocked her attack previously. That should never have been possible for someone of their power level! Slowly, the mother dragon's heart began to heat up fervently... perhaps, they would really have a chance to succeed in reviving her husband! If that power that had killed her husband could be said to be full of the aura of destruction, then the current aura that these two youths were giving out was full of the power of creation.

They could succeed, they definitely could! The mother dragon just lay there, slowly closing her eyes, praying for them.

Ever since her husband had been killed, this was the first time she had really calmed down. A powerful sense of exhaustion overwhelmed her, and she actually fell into a deep sleep.

Although her wounds were relatively recovered, the crazy frenzy of her past weeks had taken a massive toll on the mother dragon's body as well. She did not resist the sleep, as it was the best way for any dragon to recover. She knew that when the time came to revive her husband, it was highly likely that they would need her

help, and the only way she could increase the chances of success was for herself to recover and be in tip top condition.

...

Time passed swiftly, especially when lost in cultivation.

The three Shangguan Sisters had already woken up and returned to cultivation several times over, each time they only ate and drank a little before resuming cultivation.

Bathed in the aura of the Saint Energy, their cultivation speed was far beyond their usual speed, even compared to being in the Heaven's Expanse Palace where the concentration of atmospheric energy was far higher. This was especially so since all three girls had been infused with Saint Energy by Zhou Weiqing previously, and it worked as a great primer for them, allowing them to accept the aid of the Saint Energy around them at a greater rate. This allowed their cultivation to grow at a much faster rate without sacrificing stability, improving all this time. Such a chance was not easy to come by for anyone.

As for Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er, they had entered a deep, profound mysterious state, not even needing to eat or drink, totally unknowing of the time around them.

The silver white Saint Energy traveled to every single corner of their bodies, enriching them. In the first day of cultivation, Zhou Weiqing had already broken through the twenty seventh Death Acupuncture Point, bringing his cultivation stage one higher. However, it had not ended there, and with the fresh circulation of the Saint Energy, their Saint Energy was actually increasing continuously at a rapid pace, much faster than their previous cultivation speed had been. It was only until the total Saint Energy between the two had reached over a thousand drops that the speed finally slowed down.

As compared to previously, both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's meridian channels were now all covered with a layer of faint silver

white light. Their bodies had been improved and reconstructed by the Saint Energy, as if their world had been turned upside down, and their cultivation levels had improved greatly as well.

The atmospheric energy in the Lustre Spatial Realm had always been higher than the outside world; after all this was a place for the dragons to live, and was also the core area of the Heavenly Jewel Island. It could be said that the sheer concentration of atmospheric energy in the Heavenly Jewel Island arose from the Lustre Spatial Realm, and it was through several powerful formations that drew in the atmospheric energy that the Lustre Spatial Realm could last until now. As such, as they cultivated here, they did not have to worry about atmospheric energy running out.

When they had entered the Lustre Spatial Realm, they had brought with them thirty days worth of food and water in the Spatial Ring that the Heaven's Expanse Palace had provided. Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er were not eating or drinking at all, and thus the group of them could easily last a long time here. Furthermore, since they were all cultivating, during that process, they would be enriched by the atmospheric energies, and even the three Shangguan Sisters only needed very little sustenance every day.

Literal translation, basically means success will come automatically when conditions are ripe

Chapter 230 Seven Jewels. Low Level Zong Stage! (1)

Heaven's Expanse Palace.

The two brothers Shangguan Tianyang and Shangguan Tianyue were seated face to face, their expressions bleak and sombre.

“Big Bro, it has been more than twenty days, why haven't they come out yet?” Shangguan Tianyue was clearly less able to maintain his composure.

Shangguan Tianyang shook his head and gave a bitter smile as he said: “How could I possibly know what is going on inside... neither of us are able to enter the Lustre Spatial Realm... we have no choice but to continue waiting for them.”

Shangguan Tianyue said worriedly: “Should we gather another team to go in to have a look?”

Shangguan Tianyang replied: “No, that isn't necessary. If even they are unable to accomplish anything, who else under the age of thirty can possibly succeed in their place? They are already at the top of the young generation... and if something happens to them, sending in anyone else is just sending them to their deaths. Tianyue, you must hold your composure, otherwise things will get messy. As you have seen as well, the current Lustre Spatial Realm has finally calmed down, and is no longer breaking down... this is still a piece of good news for us. Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing and the others all have the Lustre Gem... with their cultivation level, even if they meet the dragons, as long as they use the gem at once, they should not be in too much trouble.”

Shangguan Tianyue sighed, saying: “How could I not feel urgent? I only have those three daughters, and they have all been snatched away by that rascal Zhou Weiqing. I really don't know what's so good about that brat, that Xue'er, Fei'er and Bing'er would actually

all want to follow him. Sigh... I truly do not know if we have made the right choice in asking them to enter the Lustre Spatial Realm.”

Shangguan Tianyang said helplessly: “It is too late to say all that now... at least, his connection and relationship with the Dragons is good, and he has the best... perhaps our only, chance to help us resolve this critical danger. Relax, the heavens will bless those who do good, that brat Zhou Weiqing does not look to be the type who would come to a premature end. Haven’t you seen those companions of his remaining on the Island, none of them are worried at all... they even left a few days ago first.”

Shangguan Tianyue nodded, saying: “We can only continue waiting. Big Bro, I’ll go look for Xian’er first... Previously, I hid the fact that all three of our daughters would be entering the Lustre Spatial Realm, and these two days she has been so mad at me.”

Shangguan Tianyang couldn’t help but chuckle, saying: “You... ahh... you... being a playboy for half your life, but at least in the end you could not escape Xian’er’s clutches. Hurry up then. Tell Sister in law that they will be fine, the peace and calm of the Lustre Spatial Realm speaks volumes no matter what.”

Although his words were as such, how could Shangguan Tianyang really be that confident? If they were all fine, why didn’t they come out?

...

ZhongTian Empire. Main Road.

Five massive Ghost Demon Horses were galloping down the road

In the end, Yun Li had gained the approval of all three God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters, and during their stay in the Heavenly Jewel Island, they had given him directions and guidance for ten whole days. If not for the fact that Zhou Weiqing had left them a letter of instructions before entering the Lustre Spatial Realm, it was likely they would not have left the Heavenly

Jewel Island so early.

Zhou Weiqing's letter was simple - if he did not exit the Lustre Spatial Realm in fifteen days, he asked them to return to the Heavenly Bow Empire and listen to Ming Yu's arrangements.

After all, the Heavenly Bow Empire was still in the most important stage of development, and they were already originally lacking powerhouses. How could foresee when the Kalise Empire or Bai Da Empire would launch an attack against them? As such, these young powerhouses could not leave for too long.

Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing had played a little trick here, handing most of the money over the Yun Li to bring back. He had not paid back the hundred million gold that he had promised Shangguan Tianyang that time, and now that Yun Li had brought it all away, even if he wanted to pay back when he returned from the Lustre Spatial Realm, he would not be able to do so.

It was not that Zhou Weiqing did not want to pay a bridal price, but there were priorities of varying importance. The current Heavenly Bow Empire did not have much revenue or any avenues of earnings, and it was just too critical to get this sum of money. As such, after much thought, he decided to send the money back first to support the development of the Heavenly Bow Empire. As for the problem of their marriages, it was not something that could be completed or solved quickly. In the first place, without saving his parents, how could he have the mood to think about marriage! In the future, once the Heavenly Bow Empire was revived and built up, his parents safe, he could then start thinking about a fresh new bridal gift.

When Zhou Weiqing wrote that letter, he did not know the full extent of the troubles that the Heavenly Jewel Island was facing, otherwise he would not even feel troubled about the money. If he could save the Heavenly Jewel Island and solve their problems what was that mere hundred million gold!

...

Crescent City. Governor's Mansion Meeting Hall.

Ming Yu sat on the main seat, with all the various ranking officers of the Heavenly Bow Empire seated there. With Zhou Weiqing away, the entire Heavenly Bow Empire's military was now under his control, while the internal affairs was under the control of the original Vice Commander of the Peerless Battalion, Wei Feng.

For Ming Yu to be able to sit so stably at the head and commander position, it was not just because of Zhou Weiqing's strong support, but also his own proven capabilities.

In the beginning when he had first assumed the position, some of the Peerless Regiment officers were not fully convinced by him, feeling unwilling to submit so easily. However, as time passed, Ming Yu's arrangements and decisions, all that he had done, had brought him the respect and admiration in deserving that position.

The Fei Li God General was truly the Fei Li God General. In just barely half a year, the entire Heavenly Bow Empire army had now changed dramatically.

Originally, the Heavenly Bow Empire's true fighting prowess only came from the Peerless Regiment. However, at this point, the entire Heavenly Bow Empire now had a sixty thousand strong army, all of whom had the capabilities of fighting.

In the past, while he was still in the Fei Li Empire, despite his reputation, due to the fact that so many of the upper echelons of the government disliked him, he had been constantly held back, and his military talent had not been able to flourish to the maximum of his capabilities. However, now Zhou Weiqing had given him a real stage to perform on. Here, he was given the utmost support, and even if Zhou Weiqing was here, he would still have the full support behind all his decisions. As the saying goes, if you want to use someone, trust in them fully, otherwise don't use

them at all. In this area, Zhou Weiqing knew that while he had some minor talent in the area, his own military capabilities were far from being sufficient. Still, his knowledge of men, personality and human nature was quintessential.

Under Ming Yu's leadership, the current Heavenly Bow Empire had incorporated more than a dozen large forces of the original Heavenly Bow Empire army that had been scattered messily about the countryside, hiding as they attempted to do their own small rebellions in their own way. At the same time, he had also undergone major recruitment, thus forming the current situation.

When their army strength had reached a total of sixty thousand, Ming Yu had finally stopped their expansion. He knew this was already pressing the limit that the current Heavenly Bow Empire could sustain, and if he continued expanding the army, their finances would crumble under the weight of sustaining this military force.

In the next few months from their recruitment and gathering, these soldiers would experience what could be called training from hell, but a well thought system of supremely attractive prices as well as punishment was designed to give them optimum participation without any complaints.

In this, Ming Yu's system of punishment and reward followed the spirit of Zhou Weiqing's original directions against the Peerless Regiment, improved further before using it for the entire army. After all, Zhou Weiqing's original rewards were just too extravagant; if it were just the Peerless Regiment, it was still fine, but if the entire army used such a reward system, the Heavenly Bow Empire would crumble economically before long.

As for the Peerless Regiment, they had been broken apart by Ming Yu. The sixty thousand strong army was now six Regiments, and in each of them there was now a Peerless Battalion, with eight hundred Peerless Archers, as well as a five hundred strong Peerless Heavy Cavalry Battalion. This spread their forces uniformly

amongst all six of the new Regiments.

The Peerless Regiment Heavy Cavalry originally numbered two thousand official warriors and two thousand reserve warriors. With this rearrangement, three thousand of them were separated out into the six Regiments.

Besides that, Ming Yu also formed a new personal guard Battalion. This Battalion would be under his direct command, consisting of his original Personal Guard which was a thousand strong, a thousand Peerless Regiment Heavy Cavalry soldiers, as well as the five hundred Snow Deer Cavalry soldiers. Although it was called a Regiment, they were two thousand five hundred strong.

As such, the entire Heavenly Bow Empire army formation was fully set up, stationed in the various parts of the north of the empire, covering the current territory of the Heavenly Bow Empire.

At the same time, Ming Yu had also recruited city guards for each city, three thousand per city. With some simple training, they were basically used as city guards maintaining order and basic patrols and defense. This would also be an avenue for uncovering talent. With the help of Wei Feng, the current Heavenly Bow Empire was perfectly rounded up in both governing and military, prepared to enter war at any time.

“Commander, the latest batch of supplies from the Fei Li Empire have arrived, and the armaments and supplies from the ZhongTian Empire have also reached.” Wei Feng spoke, standing at the left of the main seat. On the other side was naturally Hua Feng.

Ming Yu smiled faintly and said: “The ZhongTian and Fei Li Empires are really going all out in their support for us.”

Wei Feng laughed lightly as he said: “The envoy from the Fei Li Empire even asked us when are we thinking of launching an attack towards the Kalise Empire again.”

Ming Yu said passively: “Tell them it is still the same answer. As soon as possible.”

As soon as he said that, all the officers couldn't help but laugh out loud. This was not the first time the Fei Li Empire had asked the Heavenly Bow Empire about counterattacking the Kalise Empire, but Ming Yu had always replied them with the same simple answer.

Ever since the Heavenly Bow Empire had stabilized itself and fortified its foothold, the Fei Li Empire had actually increased the sending of supplies to them by a substantial amount. To the Fei Li Empire, the south had always been a major threat that could cause them to lose sleep. The Kalise Empire did not amount to anything, but the Bai Da Empire was extremely troublesome. Furthermore, from the current situation of the mainland, the Bai Da Empire and Dan Dun Empire in the South of the Mainland was clearly preparing to ally together in major movements. Perhaps they might not dare to easily contest the massive ZhongTian Empire yet, but since they had already made an attack on the Geritimo Empire, how could they not dare to attack the Fei Li Empire as well? With the WanShou Empire in the north, if the south also erupted in war, this would be a empire destroying calamity for the Fei Li Empire.

Wei Feng said with some worry: “Commander, if we keep replying like this, will the Fei Li Empire break off their support to us?”

Ming Yu shook his head and said confidently: “As long as they are not fools, they will not do that. Even if we do not actually attack the Kalise Empire, we are still a natural barrier in the south for the Fei Li Empire. At least for the current situation, the stronger we are, the better it is for the Fei Li Empire. As such, they will definitely continue supporting us and helping us grow. If I am the leader of the Fei Li Empire, I would actually not want the Heavenly Bow Empire to attack... after all, defense is always far easier than

offense. They would still have to worry that we might get swallowed up by the Bai Da Empire if we attacked too hastily. As such, by holding back and waiting as we constantly build up our forces and train, the Fei Li Empire will definitely not feel dissatisfied. However, from the way that the ZhongTian Empire has also increased their material support for us, we can see that the situation in the south is really not good.”

Turning to Kou Rui, Ming Yu asked: “How is the situation in the Kalise Empire?”

By now, Kou Rui had followed Ming Yu for quite some time, and he had grown into a far more mature, capable and experienced scout now, no longer with the youthful naivety of a student. In terms of scouting and information gathering, he definitely had the talent, and had gained Ming Yu’s approval.

Chapter 230 Seven Jewels. Low Level Zong Stage! (2)

“Reporting, Commander. The Kalise Empire has established a defensive line in the north with a total of twelve Regiments of army strength, of which five come from the Bai Da Empire. I have already noted the position on the sand table map.”

As he said that, he pointed to the huge sand table in the middle of the meeting hall. “From the looks of things, the Kalise Empire does not have any intention of attacking us. In a similar fashion to us, their formations are all in defensive positions and arrangements. According to our scouts, the Kalise Empire do not have any plans to attack. In fact, the Bai Da Empire has stationed another six Regiments in the south region of the Kalise Empire, ready to reinforce the defensive lines at short notice.”

Ming Yu nodded before his gaze turned to Yan Zhexi. “Zhexi, when you return, I want you to begin recruitment of troops again. I will give you three months... I need you to recruit another forty thousand troops and begin their training.”

“Ahh?” Yan Zhexi was greatly surprised by the command. “Commander, if we do so... our supplies...”

Ming Yu smiled passively, revealing a look of wisdom with everything in his grasp. “Do not worry, just do as I say. I’m afraid that in the very near future, there will be massive changes coming to the south. Our previous deductions were not wrong at all, the Bai Da Empire has definitely come to an agreement with the Dan Dun Empire, and they are united in purpose at least.”

Pausing as he looked around at the confused and curious looks around him, Ming Yu continued: “The reason why I am so sure of that is by looking and analysing the situation from a military point of view. Simply put... if I am in charge of the Bai Da Empire, and I find a nail has pierced into my body... this Heavenly Bow Empire...

what would I do? I should definitely pull it out as quickly as possible, otherwise the damage the nail does will keep growing. However... the Bai Da Empire did not do such a thing, to gather a massive army to wipe us out as quickly as possible. What does that mean? That can only mean they have something more important to do..."

"Looking at the current situation as well as the map of the mainland... in the south, the Bai Da Empire is closely situated to the Dan Dun Empire. If there was anything important for them, it can only be two possibilities. One - they are about to start a war with the Dan Dun Empire. Second - They are allying with the Dan Dun Empire to accomplish something big. Clearly, the latter is what is happening now."

"The Dan Dun Empire is one of the stronger empires in its own right, especially with one of the Great Saint Lands, the Blood Red Hell. Added on to the Bai Da Empire, they pretty much already have the power to try and contest the ZhongTian Empire. With such a major power gathered in the south, I cannot believe that they will sit around doing nothing. It looks like the Geritimo Empire is in big trouble. This time, the Dan Dun Empire will not be giving them another chance to recover."

"With all those possibilities in mind, our existence and continued presence could possibly become the future defensive line that the Bai Da Empire and Dan Dun Empire chooses to breakthrough after... In such a circumstance, do you think that the ZhongTian Empire and Fei Li Empire would possibly reduce sending us as much resources as possible? Zhexi, this time, when you begin your recruitment, do not limit it to our Heavenly Bow Empire borders. Go to the various border cities of the Fei Li Empire and ZhongTian Empire, don't let either of them go. You can raise the pay and treatment promised slightly, but try to draw in more of their citizens to join in our army. Our Heavenly Bow Empire is just too small, and our population cannot sustain too much more

recruitment. Since they are using us as shields, we do not need to be too polite in this matter.”

Hearing the step by step analysis by Ming Yu, all the officials slowly revealed convinced looks. At the other side, Hua Feng smiled faintly and said: “I begin to understand why that rascal Weiqing was willing to leave full power in your hands. This is truly a wise and accurate decision. He is no match for you in this matter.”

Ming Yu smiled and stood up, his eyes shining brilliantly. “Heroes arise when times are troubled. All of us present here, myself included, we all wish to become the heroes for the Heavenly Bow Empire, even heroes for the entire Mainland. The Bai Da Empire and Dan Dun Empire are indeed powerful in combination, but this is also a chance for us. I love war, especially the sense of control I can feel in the midst of war. Let us use victory after victory to bring up our Heavenly Bow Empire together.”

As he spoke up to that point, Ming Yu’s voice paused for a moment as he looked into the distance in the direction of the ZhongTian Empire. After a while, he turned back to Hua Feng and said: “Teacher, you are wrong, it is not that Zhou Weiqing is no match for me... in truth, he is already standing in a position far above mine.”

Ming Yu’s face revealed a hint of mixed emotions, respect, disappointment and unwillingness, but it was quickly replaced with a faint smile. “Although I am not willing to admit it, that fellow is able to take a far and broad view from a much higher position than I have at an earlier time.”

Looking at the curious expressions on the officials faces around him, Ming Yu laughed and said: “Do you think I am exaggerating things or trying to flatter him? No, I have always been a person who speaks the truth bluntly, no matter for myself or others. This was also why I was not able to have a good time in the Fei Li Empire... in terms of military matters, I have never been a person

who was willing to be under others. However, I have to admit that Zhou Weiqing has earned my respect. Even for myself, all of what I said earlier was an analysis that I had come up with recently. Yet, have you all thought about who it was who brought all of you into the Heavenly Bow Empire in such a perfect timing. If he did not grasp the situation of the entire mainland, how could you all possibly succeed in grabbing a piece of pie from the Bai Da Empire's mouth so easily and build up your own power again?"

The entire meeting hall turned silent, as a look of helpless respect flashed across Ming Yu's face.

Only one person was the exception, looking nonchalant. Mu En's tiny frame was not obvious in the entire meeting hall at all, but he was thinking to himself secretly: What bullshit vision and vantage point... that little brat has just some insane luck!

...

Brilliant, eye-catching silver light soared into the skies, the boundless Saint Energy that seemed to encompass everything turning into circles and circles of light, spreading out everywhere. In the center of the light, two people slowly opened their eyes. Zhou Weiqing held onto Tian'er as they jumped up as one. Laughing heartily, he looked to his arms. On his wrists, the Icy Jade Physical Jewels and Alexandrite Cat's Eye Elemental Jewels swirled around beautifully, displaying the now seven Jewels each now.

Currently, he was not in the Dragon-Tiger Transformation state, but his skin was glowing with a layer of faint gold light. Within his eyes, a dim silver light could be vaguely seen.

One month. From the time they had arrived in the Lustre Spatial Realm up until now, it had been an entire month. Zhou Weiqing, Tian'er and the other girls had been cultivating non stop in closed door cultivation for this entire month.

After Zhou Weiqing's Heavenly Energy had broken through to

the twenty seventh stage, he did not stop as it continued rising. At last, in the previous moment, Zhou Weiqing had finally broken through to the twenty eighth stage, which was also the first successful Death Acupuncture Point in the head area for him. At the same time, his cultivation stage had finally reached the seventh Jewel.

It was not just Zhou Weiqing. Tian'er, as well as the three Shangguan Sisters who were just opening their eyes behind them... all of them had raised at least one level of Heavenly Energy.

Shangguan Xue'er had even stepped into the realm of the eighth Jewel.

The true strength and use of the Saint Energy was slowly presenting itself. At this moment, the Saint Energy within both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's body had reached six hundred drops respectively. Constantly bathed and nourished by this large amount of Saint Energy, their bodies were also undergoing constant evolving.

At that moment, a sudden feeling in their soul roused their attention. The mother dragon who had been in a deep sleep all this while slowly opened her eyes. "You all have finally awoken." Although she had just awoken from deep sleep, her eyes revealed an obvious restless impatience. Clearly, her sleep had not been a good one.

Although the mother dragon had been resting all this while, she had kept a threat of awareness focused on Zhou Weiqing and the others, awaiting the end of their cultivation so they could begin reviving her husband. If not for the fact that the Saint Energy reverberations that Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er were giving forth continually nourished her husband's body, allowing it to maintain its life, perhaps she would not have been able to resist waking them earlier.

She could definitely understand the principle that grinding a

chopper will not hold up the cutting process [1. Literal translation which is pretty much as it says, ie. more preparation usually quickens the speed in doing work], and was thus able to hold herself back until now.

“Senior, may I know how to address you properly?” Zhou Weiqing asked. At this current moment, he felt as if his entire body was filled with immense power, the sense of power and freedom upon breaking through gave him a bit more confidence towards reviving the dragon. Breaking through from the sixth-Jeweled stage to the seven-Jeweled stage could be said to be one of the major barriers for most Heavenly Jewel Masters, from the Zun Stage to the Zong Stage, tantamount to breaking past the ‘second-rate’ Heavenly Jewel Master into the ranks of the ‘first-rate’ ones. At the Zong Stage, their senses towards the atmospheric Heavenly Energy would increase drastically, and the strength of their physique as well as the ability to use atmospheric energy in their own Skills was all strengthened in an overall major power boost.

Previously, though Zhou Weiqing had been able to use the Demonic Change State, and later on the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, to increase his own power, that was still after all not an actual Zong Stage body. Now, he had full confidence that he could face any enemy below the Heavenly King Stage, even if they were top elites from any Great Saint Lands.

The mother dragon nodded towards Zhou Weiqing and said: “My name is Duo Si, my husband’s name is Hui Yao.”

Zhou Weiqing continued: “Duo Si, let us begin then. We will need you to act together with us.”

Duo Si nodded, her eyes filled with fervent glow as she looked towards her husband. Slowly, her giant dragon body got up, eyes filled with love. If she could revive her husband, even if it was at the expense of her life, she would be absolutely willing.

Zhou Weiqing continued: “There will be two steps to the revival

process. First of all, what we need to do is to draw out that destructive energy from your husband's body before we can actually revive him. However, the sheer power of that energy is far beyond what we can contain or withstand, as such, during this process of drawing it out, we will need to trouble you to control that power, and prevent the outflow of it from being too great. I will be using the Devour Skill to slowly draw it out with your aid, only then can we ensure safety."

Duo Si's eyes were filled with worry. "That energy... it is extremely terrifying. Even just a little bit of it isn't that easy to withstand. Are you certain you can handle it?"

Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er both exchanged looks before saying: "We have confidence. No matter what, we have to give it a try." Although Zhou Weiqing knew that Duo Si could have sensed a little about their Saint Energy, he did not wish to spell it out. The Saint Energy was of utmost importance, and he would prefer to keep it a secret as much as possible.

Looking at Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's resolute eyes, Duo Si felt her own confidence increase slightly. The massive wings behind her back unfurled, and in a single stride, she reached her husband's body, slowly wrapping her wings around them to embrace the still warm corpse of her husband.

...

Chapter 230 Seven Jewels. Low Level Zong Stage! (3)

At this point, she had no other choice, and she could only trust these humans in front of her. This was her last chance.

“Let us begin then, thank you all.” The last words were extremely earnest, her eyes filled with gratitude. In the next instant, a thick red light sprang forth from her body, slowly infusing into the male dragon, Hui Yao’s body.

When Duo Si released her Heavenly Energy, Zhou Weiqing and the others couldn’t help but feel shocked inside. The sheer terrifying presence of the Heavenly God Stage Heavenly Energy, even if it wasn’t directed against them, they could still feel the massive pressure.

With the infusion of Duo Si’s Heavenly Energy, Hui Yao’s body lit up with a faint red glow. In this instant, if they did not know he had long since passed away, none of them would have imagined this was actually a corpse. The aura that was emitting from Hui Yao’s body was just that terrifying.

Zhou Weiqing nodded towards Tian’er, holding her hand as they moved towards Hui Yao. Duo Si had already covered the majority of Hui Yao’s upper body with her wings, and Zhou Weiqing deliberated for a moment before he made his choice, placing his target on one of Hui Yao’s claws.

Taking a deep breath, Zhou Weiqing was in currently in tip top condition as he steeled himself. His right hand holding onto Tian’er’s hand, the large Saint Energy whirlpool forming between them, the dimming silver light springing forth once more around the two of them, especially around their joined hands, where the faint light of the whirlpool could be seen. In that instant, a faint aura rose about the two of them, and even Duo Si’s terrifying Heavenly God Tier energy reverberations were no longer able to

affect their aura.

Zhou Weiqing's left hand slowly rose up, a thick grey colour swirling around it, covering his entire palm. The aura filled with the Demonic energies caused his entire palm to turn a greyish crystalline state, and in the center of his palm, there was another small grey whirlpool.

A light flashed in Zhou Weiqing's eyes, and at last he placed his left hand onto the massive claw in front of him. The next moment, the wings behind his back unfurled instantly as he entered the Tiger-Dragon Transform, plunging into the Ice Cold Perception immediately to sense the changes in the dragon's body.

Within a moment, Zhou Weiqing could sense the destructive power that Tian'er had spoken about.

Originally, Zhou Weiqing was still suspecting if this destructive energy was similar to that of the Blood Red Hell disciples he had experienced previously. However, when he actually came into contact with this power, he knew he was wrong. At least, from his current senses, the terrifying power within the dragon's body was not on the same level as that of the Blood Red Hell disciples and their Destruction Attribute.

If one were to liken the Destruction Attribute of the Blood Red Hell disciples as full of destructive capabilities and excluding all other attributes... then the current energy in the dragon's body was truly the power that could destroy worlds, heaven and earth alike.

The purest black energy. There was no way to determine whether it was in a gaseous or liquid form, but just the slightest sense of the terrifying energy reverberations caused Zhou Weiqing to feel as if his entire body was plunged into ice cold water. Due to the fact he was in the midst of the Ice Cold Perception, his senses were so sensitive that in that moment, he felt as if his entire spirit was about to be doused by the terrifying destructive aura.

His own body shuddering violently, Zhou Weiqing felt his hand was almost 'bounced' away. In that instant, the large Saint Energy whirlpool activated, a thick Saint Energy suddenly infusing into every corner of his body, including his inner spiritual world.

A vast, boundless Saint Energy aura, filled with life and the power of creation, forcefully removed the terrifying destruction aura from his spiritual inner world.

In that moment, Zhou Weiqing could clearly sense that within the confines of Hui Yao's body, a pure red energy of fire suddenly enveloped the pitch black destruction energy. Clearly, Duo Si had taken action.

Without any other thoughts about having a lucky fluke, Zhou Weiqing instantly circulated the Saint Energy all around his body before infusing a large amount into his Devour Skill. Instantly, the grey and silver lights began to intertwine around his left hand, glowing brightly as the Devour Skill was unleashed. A strong suction force began to transfer into the massive dragon body of Hui Yao, drawing upon the destruction energy to begin flowing out slowly.

The Devour Skill truly lived up to its name as the most powerful Demonic Attribute Skill. Even Duo Si was unable to force out the destructive energies, but with the Devour Skill, the destructive energies began to shudder.

A trace of pitch black energy began to charge towards Zhou Weiqing's Devour Skill, along the dragon's massive blood vessels, as if sensing danger and retaliating. This thread of destructive energy might be small, but its offensive power was brutal and unreasonably powerful, as if it held life of its own.

Naturally, Zhou Weiqing dared not be careless and underestimate it. Gritting his teeth with full preparation, he began to draw the thread of destructive energy into his own body.

BANG

Just as the pitch black energy entered his body, Zhou Weiqing felt as if his entire body was about to explode. Just that tiny amount, a single thread, its power was already far beyond all of the Destruction Attribute power that the entire Dan Dun Battle Team had unleashed on them.

This was especially so in terms of the state and stage it was at, far beyond that of the Dan Dun Battle Team, especially since there was a shade of the Will of Destruction held within, almost causing Zhou Weiqing to break down instantly.

Standing behind Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er, the three Shangguan Sisters could clearly see that in that instant, Zhou Weiqing's clothes billowed out to almost bursting point, his twenty eight energy whirlpools of his Death Acupuncture Points expanding to their limits, and they could even clearly see the swirls of air current that these Death Acupuncture Point whirlpools were spinning and drawing in. In that moment, a layer of fine, black lined tattoos began to appear all around Zhou Weiqing's originally silver-white body. His appearance was horrific, as if about to break down at any moment.

Zhou Weiqing grit his teeth as he endured through it all, the Saint Energy within his body pouring out without any restraint. He knew that the start was always the most difficult, and if his Devour Skill could not take care of this first thread of destructive energy, he would not be able to survive. No matter what, he had to take the risk and use all he had to overcome this first barrier.

Luckily, with Duo Si's help, the vast majority of the destructive energy was imprisoned in Hui Yao's body, otherwise, if Zhou Weiqing continued Devouring, perhaps just another small thread entering his body simultaneously would be enough to cause him to disintegrate.

Still, Saint Energy was after all Saint Energy, and by now, both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er could clearly sense that the large Saint Energy whirlpool was beginning to spin at an unprecedented

speed. As for the Devour whirlpool that was around Zhou Weiqing's left hand, it was also spinning like a small scale Saint Energy whirlpool at breakneck speed, constantly eating away, and transforming the tiny thread of powerful destructive energies.

In such a short period of time, Zhou Weiqing was not only expending his own Saint Energy, even a large amount of Tian'er's Saint Energy had been expended. However, to their shock, under such a circumstance, their large Saint Energy whirlpool did not seem to shrink at all. This could only mean that the energy Devoured and transformed into Saint Energy was able to completely make up for their vast expenditure!

This was just a mere thread of destructive energy! For it to be able to turn into so much Saint Energy... could it be... this destructive energy was actually at a higher level than the Saint Energy?

How was that possible? The Saint Energy was already the final product of the four Saint Attributes, what other energy could possibly be above it?

Towards this problem, Zhou Weiqing quickly learned the answer. It was not that the destructive energies were at a stage above the Saint Energy, but rather the tiny bit of Will of Destruction within the destructive energy was perfectly married together, and more importantly compressing it to an unbelievable extent. As such, even a seemingly tiny thread of it was actually a horrifyingly huge amount. Although Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's Saint Energy was extremely powerful, the amount they had was after all extremely tiny, and they also had not truly grasped the full usage and underlying profound meanings behind the Saint Energy, only passively using some of its functions. With all of these reasons in mind, it was no wonder the Saint Energy seemed to be inferior to the destructive energies.

Even so, Zhou Weiqing could sense that these destructive energies were perhaps at the same level as the Saint Energy. Even

if it was slightly inferior, it was just a tiny half step behind. Compared to any single Saint Attribute, it was considered far superior already.

The black tattoos around Zhou Weiqing's body were slowly vanishing once more, and the silver-white light was brightening again. The facts had once again proven themselves... the combination of the large Saint Energy whirlpool and the Devour Skill was able to counter the destructive energies. If the current Zhou Weiqing or Tian'er had a Saint Nucleus Core, perhaps it would be extremely easy for them to Devour and Transform all of the destructive energies.

Their success not only allowed them both to breathe a sigh of relief... on the other side, the mother dragon Duo Si began to look at them with a greater hope. It was the terrifying destructive energies which had almost taken away both of their lives, and if these youths could truly take care of these energies, then it was clear that the chance to revive her husband was much greater.

With the first taste of success, Zhou Weiqing was able to continue Devouring with much more confidence. With a signal from him, Duo Si once again released another thread of destructive energies to be Devoured by Zhou Weiqing and into his own body.

Perhaps because they already had experience, this time both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er found it much easier to Devour and Transform the energies. Furthermore, they could now clearly sense that they were no longer 'breaking even' in terms of Saint Energy, but the overall amount of Saint Energy was actually steadily growing as they transformed the destructive energies.

The destructive energies were indeed terrifying and filled with offensive power, yet one had to admit its purity was equally astonishing. In terms of quality, purity and density, a single drop of this destructive energy was able to transform into ten drops of Saint Energy. This was the reason why Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er could not only maintain their Saint Energy but also have it begin

grow as they took on just a tiny amount of destructive energies.

Thread after thread... Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's Saint Energy continued growing stronger and stronger as time passed slowly.

Every cycle of suction, devouring, transformation... once that had been established into a rhythm, it all began to seem to simple. At least, now all of them could see hope in front of them.

As the Saint Energy within Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's body grew steadily, it was also being used constantly. In this process of usage and growth, the Saint Energy was also circulating throughout their bodies, nourishing them, improving and evolving their physiques. Their overall amount of Saint Energy and Heavenly Energy was also growing at an astonishing pace.

Chapter 231 Breakthrough! Breakthrough!

(1)

Perhaps, this was as the saying goes, good-heartedness often meets with unforeseen recompense. If they had been trying to train their Saint Energy by Devouring the Heavenly Energy of Heavenly Beasts, in order to gather three thousand drops of Saint Energy, who knows how long that would take. After all, even on the Heavenly Snow Mountain, the number of Heavenly King Stage Heavenly Beasts was still limited, and they could not just Devour recklessly and without a care in the world.

However, the amount of destructive energies in front of them was just too massive. Both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er could clearly sense that they were still barely beginning, and the large Saint Energy whirlpool between them was already growing larger and faster.

Wax and Wane. This phrase was perhaps a good way to describe their current situation; as their Saint Energy rose, the amount of destructive energies they could Devour at one go also increase, as did their speed and efficiency of Devouring.

Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er had both entered a state of complete obliviousness and selflessness. The Heavenly Energy within their bodies was slowly being replaced by the purest Saint Energy, and as the Saint Energy nourished their bodies, they were slowly improving and evolving.

The three Shangguan Sisters also gained many benefits, sitting behind them cultivating, and they could feel their cultivation level rising by leaps and bounds.

...

In this Lustre Spatial Realm, time no longer seemed to be an issue to them. They did not know how much time had passed when all of

a sudden, both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er shuddered violently, and their eyes opened.

Their sudden awakening gave both of them a surprise as well, but as they exchanged looks, the expression on their face was quickly replaced by joy. They suddenly realised that their entire bodies no longer had any Heavenly Energy at all. Instead, every single corner of their bodies was filled with Saint Energy, and it was continuously growing as well.

By now, more than half of the destructive energies in Hui Yao's massive body had already been Devoured by them. This was part of the reason why Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er were so overjoyed. At the same time, they couldn't help but feel secretly shocked inwardly.

After all, at this point, each of the two of them already had three thousand drops of pure Saint Energy! Under such a circumstance, there was still so much destructive energies that hadn't been Devoured... one could just imagine how truly terrifying the energies were.

However, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er also realised a new problem had cropped up... in that moment, they realised that their bodies could no longer hold any more Saint Energy!

Indeed... unable to hold anymore! When they had passed three thousand drops of Saint Energy, they felt as if their bodies were filled to the brim, almost to bursting point. Although their Saint Energy was still increasing slowly, their bodies were starting to even feel pain. This was clearly not a good sign at all. Furthermore, the Saint Energy did not seem to be starting to form a Saint Nucleus Core even though they had reached the three thousand drops point, not even a sign of it happening at all.

What was going on? Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er exchanged glances, both of them at a total loss. Alas, the Devour Skill was still ongoing, and their Saint Energy was still increasing. If this

continued, they would soon surpass their limit to true bursting point... possibly self-imploding from within. No matter how tough their bodies were, in front of the Saint Energy, they could not withstand it.

“Bing’er, quick, come here.” At this instant, Zhou Weiqing’s intelligence sparked an idea and he quickly called out.

The three Shangguan Sisters who had been cultivating behind the duo were caught by surprise, jolted out of their cultivation and opening their eyes one after the other. Shangguan Bing’er’s trust in Zhou Weiqing was absolute, and she quickly rushed to his side, her face filled with surprise and worry. “Little Fatty, what is wrong?”

“Kiss me, quick.” Zhou Weiqing said without hesitation.

Looking at the anxious and urgent look on his face, Shangguan Bing’er could not care about her shyness. She knew that at this moment, Zhou Weiqing could not possibly be joking around or just simply trying to take advantage of her.

Red lips moved forward, and their lips joined. Instantly, Shangguan Bing’er’s slim figure began to tremble, and her entire body was stained a silver-white colour as thick Saint Energy flowed right into her like a unstoppable stream, spreading throughout her body.

Indeed, the idea that Zhou Weiqing had swiftly come up with was simple and straightforward. Since their bodies could no longer contain any more Saint Energy, they couldn’t possibly waste it right? As such, he had thought of a good way to ‘drain off’ the excess Saint Energy, transferring the Saint Energy to the three Shangguan Sisters was definitely a good thing.

With Shangguan Bing’er joining in to share their ‘burden’, Zhou Weiqing and Tian’er felt the stress on their bodies instantly dissipate. As more Saint Energy continued flowing in, they continued Devouring and transforming the destructive energies

swiftly.

As Zhou Weiqing was afraid that infusing Shangguan Bing'er with too much Saint Energy at one shot would have an adverse effect on her, after around five hundred drops, he stopped and called Shangguan Fei'er to his side.

Shangguan Bing'er moved back, her face red in embarrassment. As Shangguan Fei'er stepped up, she was far more straightforward, actually taking the initiative to circle her arms around Zhou Weiqing's neck comfortably as she kissed him. It was her turn to take in more Saint Energy.

When Zhou Weiqing infused five hundred drops of Saint Energy to her as well and called upon Shangguan Xue'er, even the mother dragon Duo Si couldn't help but stare at him curiously, thinking to herself: Although this young human is very good, how could he have so many women!

Shangguan Xue'er was more shy and bashful than her two younger sisters, but with Zhou Weiqing's urgent calls, and with both Shangguan Bing'er and Shangguan Fei'er urging her on, she eventually moved right in front of Zhou Weiqing.

As their eyes met, Shangguan Xue'er subconsciously lowered her head shyly. Even so, she could see the gentle warmth in Zhou Weiqing's eyes. Suddenly, she drew in a deep breath of air, closing her eyes as she clumsily followed Shangguan Fei'er's example, arms encircling his neck as she placed her trembling lips onto his.

The thick Saint Energy began flowing into her, and in that instant, Shangguan Xue'er just looked so beautiful. Her exquisite face was blushing red. Although she had kissed Zhou Weiqing before, that was when they were alone. Currently, they were right in front of Tian'er and her sisters, and it took so much courage for her to actually accept such a kiss!

Their relatively cold lips were quickly warmed by the large amount of Saint Energy. All of a sudden, Shangguan Xue'er's eyes

widened in surprise, as a certain shameless fellow actually seized the opportunity as he was infusing Saint Energy to stick his tongue in as well, finding her little tongue to begin sucking on as well.

This rascal! This terrible rascal! Fei'er, Bing'er... they all are still watching! Shangguan Xue'er wanted to struggle, but was afraid it would affect Zhou Weiqing absorbing the destructive energies. In that instant, her entire mind was in a blank as she totally lost the capacity for thought. However, a strange sense of bliss was also flowing into her heart.

Having known Zhou Weiqing for so long, this was perhaps the first time Shangguan Xue'er had the awareness of being his woman. Since she could not avoid it, then she would enjoy it fully!

Transferring Saint Energy mouth-to-mouth, to Zhou Weiqing, this was an enjoyable experience that he would never grow tired of. Once each girl had five hundred drops of Saint Energy, he began anew from the start.

As the three Shangguan Sisters gained such a large amount of Saint Energy, they too began to have a totally new feeling. The warm Saint Energy did not clash at all with their Heavenly Energy, and they began to feel their bodies slowly go through an inexplicable and indescribable change.

At last, after four rounds of infusion by Zhou Weiqing ended, all of the destructive energies in Hui Yao's massive dragon body was finally Devoured. When the last thread of destructive energies was transformed into Saint Energy, the massive dragon body actually trembled slightly.

Naturally, this was not a sign of him coming back to life, but the body having a slight sign of life force returning. This was the powerful life force of the Dragon Tribe naturally.

The reason why Tian'er had a certain amount of confidence in reviving Hui Yao previously was exactly because of that, the Dragons had the most powerful bodies amongst all of Heavenly

Beasts. Even if they had passed away, their Dragon Bodies and Soul would not dissipate so easily, gathering in their Heavenly Core Nucleus. As for the life force and bloodline powers, it would take quite a long time before dissipating from their bodies as well.

A silver glow immediately appeared around Zhou Weiqing and the girls. Having ended this round of Devouring, all of them could be said to have been given a massive gift.

Within Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's bodies, they were still totally full of Saint Energy. As for the three Shangguan Sisters, they each had gained two thousand drops of Saint Energy!

Besides the pleasant surprise and excitement, Zhou Weiqing also felt a secret shock and a tinge of fear. What kind of terrifying destructive energies that was! To be able to transform into twelve thousand drops of Saint Energy in total. No wonder the mother dragon Duo Si had said that the destructive energies were far beyond their Heavenly God Tier.

If not for these destructive energies, with the power of the Heavenly God Tier dragon couple, how could they be injured or killed by the few attackers?

“At last, we are done.” Zhou Weiqing let loose a breath of relief. On the other side, Duo Si slowly spread her wings once more. As compared to the human youths in front of her who were all filled with energy, currently she was extremely exhausted, the light in her eyes much dimmer than before.

All this time while Zhou Weiqing and the others were gaining Saint Energy, Duo Si had to use all of her might to control the destructive energies. If not for the fact that Zhou Weiqing's Devouring and grown faster and faster, she did not know if she could have continued all the way. However, in order to help her husband revive faster, she had forced herself to last through this massive exhaustion.

Looking at Duo Si's exhaustion, Zhou Weiqing said: “Let us all

rest a while. At least, from the current situation, our chances seem to have increased substantially.”

Duo Si nodded, the great sorrow in her eyes seemed to have lessened slightly. Her gaze landed back on her husband as she slowly lay down beside his body, slowly watching the gaping wounds close.

Indeed, although he had already lost his life, Hui Yao’s massive dragon body had actually begun to heal slowly now that the destructive energies had all been drawn out. The regeneration was at a rather astonishing pace... This was truly the terrifying regeneration capabilities of the Dragon Tribe. If not for the fact that the entire ground was stained red with dragon blood, Zhou Weiqing might have thought this was a live dragon sleeping in front of him.

“When can we begin reviving him?” Duo Si asked Zhou Weiqing and Tian’er anxiously.

Zhou Weiqing said: “You are too exhausted now. When we begin the revival, we will still require your help. The power required to revive a powerful dragon like Hui Yao will likely take an unbelievable amount of Heavenly Energy, and even both Tian’er and myself added together will not have sufficient Heavenly Energy. When Tian’er and myself are unable to sustain it, we will need to make use of the Devour Skill on you to use your Heavenly Energy on the Resurrection Skill. As such, you need to recover to your best condition as quickly as possible. When you recover fully, we can begin the process.”

Chapter 231 Breakthrough! Breakthrough!

(2)

Duo Si nodded towards Zhou Weiqing as she slowly closed her eyes. Despite her exhaustion, her gratitude was clear.

The three Shangguan Sisters stood at the side, their cheeks blushing furiously. At the other end, Tian'er was smiling radiantly at them.

Zhou Weiqing looked at the four girls, and even he was slightly embarrassed as he said innocently: "What are you all looking at me for? Hurry up and cultivate... after gaining so much Saint Energy, you should fully integrate it into your bodies as quickly as possible."

Shangguan Fei'er giggled and said: "You thick skinned rascal, you also know how to be embarrassed? Hmph, just now when you were kissing us all, we could not see any bit of that oh?"

Zhou Weiqing immediately said uprightly: "Of course that was for the sake of Devouring the destructive energies. I'm going to cultivate now!" He knew that he was now one against four, and trying to argue would always be a losing position. As a result, he just sat down right away and began cultivating.

The Saint Energy in their bodies were already full, yet the Saint Core Nucleus did not form like they had expected. To Zhou Weiqing, this was a major problem. At this moment, the energy whirlpools of his Death Acupuncture Points were whirling as usual, full of Saint Energy, but he dared not continue drawing upon the atmospheric energy, otherwise he would face the same problem with being full to bursting point. That was to say... if he did not solve his current situation, he would not be able to continue cultivating.

Naturally, Tian'er was facing the same problem as Zhou Weiqing,

and she also sat down in a cross-legged meditation position to start cultivation.

Zhou Weiqing was not too impatient or agitated about the current situation, after all in a worse case situation he could just use some Saint Energy, and he would once again have 'cleared space' again. Of course, that was a last resort solution... it was such a rare opportunity that they had been able to gain three thousand drops of Saint Energy each, how could he possibly be willing to give it up just like that!

The energy whirlpools of his Death Acupuncture Points continued whirling. Even though Zhou Weiqing did not dare draw in more atmospheric energy, it was enough to just keep his Immortal Deity Technique running.

In his DanTian, the originally tiny personal Saint Energy whirlpool had grown several times over, almost comparable to the original size of the large Saint Energy whirlpool that was formed between him and Tian'er. However, this personal Saint Energy whirlpool was not able to produce 'new' Saint Energy on its own, let alone forming the Saint Nucleus Core.

Zhou Weiqing tried circulating the Saint Energy, and there were no issues. However, it still did not solve the problem of being unable to cultivate.

He attempted several different methods, but he was still unable to find a good solution for the problem. Slowly, he opened his eyes and looked towards Tian'er.

When he looked at Tian'er, he couldn't help but start in surprise, staring in shock.

At this moment, Tian'er was totally surrounded by a layer of thick Divine Light, the strong divine aura around her making her seem like a Saintess. That aura of divinity and inviolability caused even Zhou Weiqing to feel a sense of pressure.

Zhou Weiqing discovered that Tian'er was actually cultivating, and the sheer amount and speed of her drawing in atmospheric energy could be described as terrifying.

She had actually found the method to continue cultivation? How did she do so? Zhou Weiqing was instantly surprised.

Right in that moment, Zhou Weiqing abruptly noticed that the Heavenly Jewels around Tian'er's wrists which had been spinning rapidly suddenly slowed down. As a faint glow began to light up around her hands, coalescing into a solid form.

In that moment, Zhou Weiqing felt as if he had been struck by a bolt of lightning as he instantly understood, slapping his own thigh hard, he exclaimed: "Right! How could I be so stupid, such a simple solution, why didn't I think of it!?"

Indeed, Zhou Weiqing felt like slapping himself hard. Such a simple principle, yet he had overlooked it, instead overthinking things too much. In truth, the solution to their problem was the easiest and most straightforward one.

Indeed, both Tian'er and his own Saint Energy was totally full, but that was just for their meridian channels, not their entire body. More importantly, even though their Saint Energy was full, their own cultivation level and state of attainment was still far from being able to consolidate a Core Nucleus. As such, what they needed to do now was not increase their Saint Energy, but to use their Saint Energy to breakthrough to the next level! Only after reaching the Upper Level Zong Stage would they have the chance to consolidate the Saint Core Nucleus.

As soon as he thought of it, Zhou Weiqing suddenly felt fully refreshed, quickly returning back to cultivating, silently going through his Immortal Deity Technique once through, circulating his Saint Energy to begin breaking through his twenty ninth Death Acupuncture Point.

Different cultivation techniques would have different methods of

breaking through, and naturally some were difficult and some were easy. Of course, in terms of ‘simplicity’, there was likely no other cultivation technique that could compare with the Immortal Deity Technique, as all that was needed was to breakthrough the required Death Acupuncture Point.

All of the previous times that Zhou Weiqing had broken through his Death Acupuncture Points, even for the twenty eighth one, he had used Heavenly Energy to do so, and he had never tried directly using Saint Energy to do so. After all, before today, his Saint Energy had been always at an extremely low amount, and he was unwilling to use it up for breaking through! However, now that his body was only left with Saint Energy, he naturally could only use Saint Energy to do so.

Under Zhou Weiqing’s control, the silver white Saint Energy began to circulate around his meridians according to the Immortal Deity Technique, heading directly for the twenty ninth Death Acupuncture Point.

The fourth portion of the Immortal Deity Technique was targeting the Death Acupuncture Points in the head to neck area. The first Death Acupuncture Point which he had already broken through earlier was the RenYing Acupuncture Point, situated about one and a half inches from the throat area. Now, he was about to attempt to breakthrough the second Death Acupuncture Point at his head area.

FengChi	Acupuncture	Point.
https://baike.baidu.com/item/%E9%A3%8E%E6%B1%A0%E7%A9%I		

Situated below the occipital bone in the slight concave area, between the trapezius muscle and sternocleidomastoid muscle.

Normally, once struck, it would effect the body all the way through the bulbar center to the spine, causing one to be struck unconscious instantly.

With his Saint Energy circulating at full speed in his meridians,

the narrow and closed meridians were easily smashed through by the powerful Saint Energy without any delay. Furthermore, with the creation power of the Saint Energy, it continually healed up, fortified widened and strengthened the meridians, causing Zhou Weiqing to have no worries about breaking through the Death Acupuncture Point.

Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing also realised that when he began circulating his Saint Energy to breakthrough the Death Acupuncture Points, the 'full' feeling he had was beginning to dissipate as Saint Energy was being used up. Although the expenditure was not large, at least it was being used in the cultivation.

Puuu

In a suspense-less, swift sweep, the FengChi Death Acupuncture Point was broken through in no time. Much to Zhou Weiqing's shock, when his Saint Energy broke through the Death Acupuncture Point, he actually did not feel any pain at all, instead feeling his entire body lighten. In that instant, the Saint Energy within his body surged wildly, and an energy whirlpool formed in the FengChi Acupuncture Point fully formed of Saint Energy. Unlike all the previous times, there was no vent leakage of Heavenly Energy causing his own core energy to be dispersed, let alone any other danger.

This... it was complete just like this?

Zhou Weiqing could only stare in shock as his twenty ninth Death Acupuncture Point succeeded in breaking through. Looking at the large amount of Saint Energy entering the Death Acupuncture Point and its energy whirlpool, he could sense that it was further improving his body.

A whole three hundred drops of Saint Energy, vanishing just like that. At the same time, the full and bloated feeling that had plagued Zhou Weiqing had also vanished.

So... using Saint Energy to breakthrough was such a simple thing? Could it be... this Immortal Deity Technique of mine is created specially for Saint Energy?!

Chapter 232 Final Completion, Immortal Deity Technique! (1)

Was the Immortal Deity Technique designed with Saint Energy in mind? Or was it just a coincidence?

To breakthrough the twenty ninth Death Acupuncture Point so easily, without any pain or problems, Zhou Weiqing was left muddleheaded. After all, he had just broken through the twenty eighth Death Acupuncture Point, reaching the seven-Jeweled stage not long ago! Yet, he had just broken through to the twenty ninth stage like this? Besides feeling incredulous and finding it incomprehensible, Zhou Weiqing could think of nothing else.

Using Saint Energy to cultivate the Immortal Deity Technique, it seemed like there wasn't even a accumulation process. As long as he had sufficient Saint Energy, then breaking through seemed to be as simple as a hot knife through butter, seemingly with no issues at all.

Of course, this was also a massive toll on the Saint Energy. Without even testing it, Zhou Weiqing knew that it would likely take him much more Saint Energy to breakthrough the next Death Acupuncture Point. Even for this current one, three hundred drops of Saint Energy would not have been easy for him to gather without all that had happened in the Lustre Spatial Realm. Resisting the joy and urge to try to breakthrough once again, he slowly stopped his cultivation.

At this moment, he clearly did not wish to just keep breaking through without holding back. Although he still had a lot of Saint Energy left in his body, both he and Tian'er were going to revive the Dragon Hui Yao, and who knew how much energy that would take. Even if it was the Saint Energy, it would definitely be a massive drain. In order to not just stop short of success, he would naturally try to keep as much Saint Energy as possible, in order to

best support Tian'er during the revival process. As for his own cultivation and breakthrough, now that he had already learned about this, it was just a matter of time for him! After all, his plans had always included going to the Heavenly Snow Mountain. As such, it was still more important to settle the problems in front of them right now.

Currently, Zhou Weiqing discovered another intriguing, almost marvelous thing. After he had expended the three hundred drops of Saint Energy, it was almost instantly replenished by Heavenly Energy. However, at this point, it seemed like his Heavenly Energy no longer seemed like real Heavenly Energy, but filled with a thick scent and aura of Saint Energy... clearly it was not what his previous Heavenly Energy could compare to. However, it was definitely still far from being close to Saint Energy. Still, with his Saint Energy and this 'new' Heavenly Energy, he could vaguely sense that if he was fighting, as long as he didn't directly use his Saint Energy to activate Skills, it was likely he would almost never run out of Heavenly Energy.

Although his cultivation level was still at the seven-Jeweled stage, with so much Saint Energy, how could it be measured simply by a mere seven-Jeweled stage? In terms of actual combat power, even he was not too sure what he could currently measure up to now.

The mother dragon was still resting, and it would take her some time to fully recover. As such, after Zhou Weiqing opened his eyes, he called out to Tian'er softly.

Tian'er opened her eyes, and seeing the hand that Zhou Weiqing extended towards her, she instantly understood his meaning. Reaching out, the two of them joined their hands, and the large Saint Energy whirlpool formed once more.

Instantly, thick Saint Energy spread out in a steady reverberation from the duo. No matter the mother dragon or the three Shanguan Sisters, their bodies trembled slightly for a moment.

Bathed in the light of the Saint Energy, it was a pretty good boost for them.

Without Devouring any external energies, when Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er used the four Saint Attributes to form the large Saint Energy whirlwind to cultivate their own Saint Energy, in the past they would only be able to gather around ten drops of Saint Energy after an entire day of cultivation, and that was also dependent on the density of atmospheric energy around them.

However, this time, when they once again formed the large Saint Energy whirlpool, they were both pleasantly surprised again. They discovered that although the size of the large Saint Energy whirlpool did not change, it was several times more consolidated and denser than before. Added to the fact that the atmospheric energy in the Lustre Spatial Realm was far higher, it was being drawn into the whirlpool at an astonishing rate.

Although vast amounts of atmospheric energy was pouring into the large Saint Energy whirlpool, it was easily received. In the middle of the whirlpool, drop after drop of Saint Energy slowly formed.

Of course, one could not describe that speed as being fast at all, but compared to their previous cultivation speed, it was already like the difference between heaven and earth. Currently, after a single drop of Saint Energy formed, it took only five or so breaths before the second drop began to form again. Such a cultivation speed, perhaps they could even consolidate more than a hundred drops of Saint Energy in a day, or even more! If they could maintain this speed, even if they did not Devour Heavenly Beasts, it was sufficient for their cultivation!

In order not to disrupt the others' cultivation, Zhou Weiqing used Heavenly Energy voice transmission to inform Tian'er about how his Immortal Deity Technique seemed to react to the Saint Energy in terms of breaking through.

After hearing his description, Tian'er couldn't help but feel shocked. Staring at Zhou Weiqing for a moment, she lapsed into deep thought. At last, after a while, she replied silently: "Weiqing, I think you should continue trying to breakthrough. After all, Duo Si was overly exhausted previously, and I estimate that it will take her at least ten days to recover. At this point, our consolidation and gathering of Saint Energy is so fast that in ten days, it should be sufficient for us to sustain your consumption for breaking through. This is such a great opportunity, do not waste it! After reviving the Dragon, who knows how much Saint Energy we will have left... we might as well seize this opportunity to push your cultivation level up as much as possible."

Zhou Weiqing said: "What about you? Don't you have the same feeling? Like your cultivation level can be raised quickly?"

Tian'er shook her head and said: "No, my cultivation speed has definitely increased a lot, and I can sense that I am quite close to breaking through. However, it cannot be compared at all to your Immortal Deity Technique. It looks like once your Immortal Deity Technique is complete, and all of your Death Acupuncture Points have been broken through, you should have reached the nine-Jeweled stage. When that time comes, you can also start to experiment with consolidating the Saint Core Nucleus. Currently, both of us added together have at least six thousand drops of Saint Energy, even if it isn't enough, it should not be far. Everytime you breakthrough once, we can cultivate together for some time to recover some Saint Energy. This is really the best way... after all, In the future, we will have to face many more dangers. Furthermore, from the nine-Jeweled stage of the Upper Level Zong Stage to the Heavenly King Stage, you will need bring your Heavenly Energy from the thirty sixth stage to the fortieth stage. At that point, your Immortal Deity Technique has already ended at the nine-Jeweled stage... and you will need a lot more time to explore the way for yourself then."

With Tian'er's encouragement, Zhou Weiqing lapsed into deep thought for awhile before agreeing with her. However, as suggested, he would not use up all the Saint Energy in breaking through at once. After some discussion, they agreed that they would go through cultivation and gathering of Saint Energy after his every breakthrough, to ensure that they would maintain a level of two thousand drops of Saint Energy minimum each.

The second breakthrough continued swiftly soon after. Just like the previous time, when Zhou Weiqing circulated his Saint Energy according to the meridian paths of the Immortal Deity Technique, no matter if it was at the most sensitive head area, there was no impediment or delay at all. Just like that, the thirtieth Death Acupuncture Point was swiftly broken through without any problems. This time, three hundred and fifty drops of Saint Energy was expended. If not for the fact that he knew the Saint Energy wasn't really 'wasted', but spread throughout his body after breakthrough, Zhou Weiqing's heart would have ached at the sheer loss.

Pressing the advantage in one go, he began to breakthrough the thirty first Death Acupuncture Point as well. Originally, Zhou Weiqing wanted to stop to recover for a while before continuing, but he was stopped by Tian'er. From her hands, a thousand drops of Saint Energy flowed over, supporting him to continue breaking through as quickly as possible to reach the eighth-Jeweled stage.

...

When the thirty second Death Acupuncture Point was broken through, Zhou Weiqing felt as if the pores around his entire body was open to the max, all of his thirty two energy whirlpools of his Death Acupuncture Points seeming to spin at an insane rate. At the same time, the large Saint Energy whirlpool between him and Tian'er was also stronger and spinning even faster now, drawing in energy at an even greater rate. In nearly every three to four breaths, a single drop of Saint Energy was formed. Under such a

circumstance, their cultivation rate was nearly a hundred drops every two hours.

Heavenly Jewel Masters breathing was far different from ordinary humans, with their breaths far longer, and the time between each breath was also much longer than ordinary humans.

After he had successfully broken through the eighth-Jeweled stage, Zhou Weiqing had already used up a thousand five hundred drops of Saint Energy in total, causing his heart to ache a little. Luckily, it was a shared burden between the two of them, so they could still bear to accept it.

He did not continue breaking through, stopping to continue cultivating with Tian'er with the large Saint Energy whirlpool to recover as much Saint Energy as possible.

...

In truth, what all of them did not realise was that by this point, they had already entered the Lustre Spatial Realm for three entire months. Previously, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er had taken almost two months to completely Devour all the destructive energies from Hui Yao's body. Due to the fact that they were completely immersed in the mysterious profound state, both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er did not have much feeling about time passage.

Time passed day after day, and seemingly in moments, ten days had passed once more.

A low dragon's cry slowly rang out, startling the three Shangguan Sisters from their cultivation. When they opened their eyes, they saw the mother dragon Duo Si slowly stand up. Currently, her eyes had regained their usual lustre.

Right at that instant, a clear howl rang out from Zhou Weiqing's throat. Instantly, a bright silver-white light burst forth from around him and Tian'er, soaring into the sky like a silver pillar.

Releasing Tian'er's hands abruptly, under the shocked looks of

the onlookers, Zhou Weiqing's body began to levitate up into the air just like that... the bright silver-white glow around him slowly turning into a brilliant gold light.

As compared to the gold of Tian'er's Divine Attribute, the gold light around Zhou Weiqing's body was a tyrannical and overbearingly powerful aura. It was not just a simple imposing manner, but a unique quality in itself. The powerful gold light did not seem to have any inherent energy feel to it, instead seeming like an actual entity of its own.

In that moment, the gold light around his body slowly withdrew, and one by one, his Death Acupuncture Points began to light up as if stars in the sky slowly winking and appearing in the night sky. The gold light began to slowly shine once more, as Zhou Weiqing's entire body started to become a giant whirlpool, the atmospheric energy around them being drawn in crazily into his body.

"What... what is going on?" Shangguan Bing'er asked Tian'er worriedly.

Tian'er smiled faintly, a sign of happiness in her voice as she said: "His Immortal Deity Technique is finally complete."

Indeed, ten days of great effort between the two of them, ten days of breaking through and gathering Saint Energy. In this last breakthrough of the final Death Acupuncture Point, it had even taken a thousand drops of Saint Energy for Zhou Weiqing to succeed. After that, both he and Tian'er had cultivated together to bring their Saint Energy back to full state, holding back the last bit before joining all of the Death Acupuncture Points together in the final step of the Immortal Deity Technique. It was only after Duo Si had awoken that Zhou Weiqing finally relaxed and took the final step.

At this moment, all of his broken-through Death Acupuncture Points seemed to form a star-map in his body, all joined together to form a whole complete entity. The powerful and overbearing gold

light that was glowing around him was actually the Immortal Deity Shield that had risen to the next level, and it seemed like it was no longer just pure defense like before.

Chapter 232 Final Completion, Immortal Deity Technique! (2)

All of a sudden, Shangguan Fei'er exclaimed in shock. "Look at his wrists!"

The three Shangguan Sisters' eyes immediately widened in shock as their gaze turned to his wrist. Nine eye-catching Heavenly Jewels were spinning around Zhou Weiqing's wrist.

This had already surpassed their comprehension level. Just a mere short ten days had passed! Yet, Zhou Weiqing had somehow risen from the seven-Jeweled stage to the nine-Jeweled stage! More importantly, Zhou Weiqing was currently not even twenty two years old. In the entire history of the Boundless Mainland, it was not that there weren't any who had reached the Upper Level Zong Stage before the age of thirty, but it was considered as rare as phoenix's' feather and qilin's horns. More importantly, he was far younger than most who had done so even, and from his current situation, perhaps before he reached the age of thirty he would already reach the Heavenly King Stage.

As the gold light continued shining and being absorbed, Zhou Weiqing's entire body seemed to be undergoing a mysterious change, as if he had become a gold statue descending from the heavens, landing upon the ground. The previous overbearing aura had disappeared into his body, and soon everything seemed to turn normal. However, the four girls who were so familiar with him could sense that the current Zhou Weiqing was so different from previously, as if his world had turned upside down.

In the past, Zhou Weiqing could be said to be relatively average in terms of look, not considered suave. Currently, he now had an added wild attraction to him, his eyes filled with a strange light, like that of a treasured sword, keen and sharp. The feeling he gave others was like that of a powerful god weapon, ready to destroy

any enemies at given notice.

More shockingly, in just a matter of moments, all of the atmospheric energy in a several hundred square metres radius had actually been drained dry by Zhou Weiqing. Currently, the atmospheric energy was flowing back in from the other areas of the Lustre Spatial Realm, and the large energy reverberation that it caused gave all of them a deep impression.

Nine Jewels. Upper Level Zong Stage. To most Heavenly Jewel Masters, this was already the absolute peak that they could ascend to in their lifetimes. Zhou Weiqing had already accomplished it at such a young age, and the current him already had sufficiently power Heavenly Energy. Once he could complete his corresponding 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set pieces, his power would once again grow by leaps and bounds. At that point, even if he were to face any Heavenly King Stage powerhouse in single combat, it was likely he could hold his own.

"How is that possible?" Shangguan Xue'er couldn't help but mutter to herself as she stared at Zhou Weiqing, her eyes filled with a strange light.

As the heir to the Heaven's Expanse Palace, she had always known that she was outstanding, the top echelon amongst all of the younger generation Heavenly Jewel Masters. Yet, currently as she looked at Zhou Weiqing with his nine Heavenly Jewels, she knew that she was no longer on the same level as he was.

That was because after the short period of shock, Shangguan Xue'er quickly guessed the reason behind Zhou Weiqing's quick rise... it had to be the Saint Energy. What else could possibly have such a miraculous effect? Although she did not know why Tian'er did not have a similar raise, she knew that could be the only reason. More importantly, the Saint Energy was something that the three Shangguan Sisters could not cultivate, though Zhou Weiqing had shared it with them and it greatly benefited them, it did not change the fact they could not cultivate it on their own.

However, even though Shangguan Xue'er felt so surprised by the sudden power of Zhou Weiqing, she found that she actually did not even feel a tinge of jealousy or competitive spirit, only a deep joy.

Her heart gripped with sudden surprise. Could it be... I have truly started to think of myself as his woman, to just become his supporting cast? Looking at herself, her two sisters, then at Tian'er, Shangguan Xue'er couldn't help but think helplessly to herself. This scoundrel playboy!

...

Looking down at his own body, Zhou Weiqing felt as if his entire body was filled with a explosive power that could burst forth at anytime. Strangely, he discovered that the Saint Energy in his body had actually gone through some colour changes. The original homogeneous silver-white colour of the Saint Energy now had a layer of faint gold light, as if a membrane covering over the Saint Energy.

It had to be known that the Saint Energy was already considered the top of all energy forms, yet this layer of gold light was not assimilated by the Saint Energy... one could imagine that the power inherent within it had already reached an absolute top as well. This was the effect brought by the final completion of the Immortal Deity Technique, and even Zhou Weiqing did not know what it was or what its effects truly were, but he could clearly sense its powerful aura.

Zhou Weiqing was definitely not the first person to cultivate the Immortal Deity Technique, but he was definitely the first one to actually complete the Immortal Deity Technique and breakthrough all of the Death Acupuncture Points. In the process of the Saint Energy circulating, it was actually self-readjusting, and as he drew in all of the massive amount of atmospheric energy just now, Zhou Weiqing was surprised to find that the small Saint Energy whirlpool in his body had vanished. Only the energy whirlpools of his Death Acupuncture Points remained, but these

whirlpools had all become filled with pure Saint Energy, and as they spun swiftly, Saint Energy was actually beginning to circulate and generate. That was to say... the current him no longer needed to worry about using up his Saint Energy as he could now recover it. In the process of completing the Immortal Deity Technique, he had successfully and completely transformed all of his Heavenly Energy into Saint Energy permanently, and from now on he would only have Saint Energy, not Heavenly Energy.

Perhaps because of this exact change, the Heavenly Jewels around Zhou Weiqing's wrists had also undergone some unprecedented changes. The Icy Jade Physical Jewels on his right wrist had all turned into the silver-white of the Saint Energy, while the Alexandrite Cat's Eye Elemental Jewels on his left wrist remained the same, but were now covered with an additional layer of faint gold light.

Although Zhou Weiqing did not know to what extent his power had grown, there was one direct difference he could perceive. That was, when he looked at the mother dragon Duo Si, he no longer felt the powerful and overwhelming pressure.

The Immortal Deity Technique had brought him many benefits, but in order to cultivate it, Zhou Weiqing had gone through countless pain and suffering. Currently, he had finally completed the Immortal Deity Technique, cultivating it to its culmination. Although he did not yet know how he would continue cultivating from here on, at least he had accomplished this matter, cultivating the Immortal Deity Technique that no one else had ever succeeded in doing so. More importantly, the pain, suffering and worry that he had to undergo throughout the cultivation process would leave him for good. The sheer joy and sense of freedom of that suddenly caused him to raise his head and howl once more, as he felt an incomparable sense of comfort.

“Congratulations, young man. Even I am unable to fully see through your abilities now.” Duo Si's large dragon eyes were filled

with surprise, with a hint of joy. The more powerful Zhou Weiqing grew, it could only be great news to her, as it meant the chances of reviving her husband was even higher now.

“Let us begin then.” Looking at Duo Si’s hopeful gaze, Zhou Weiqing nodded towards her. After such a long period of preparation, they were all fully ready, and it was time to begin the revival of the Dragon Hui Yao.

Tian’er looked at Zhou Weiqing, her heart filled with pride. Although she was still at the late stages of the seven-Jeweled cultivation level, her man had already become so strong, and somehow she felt even happier than if it had been her cultivation level rising. Furthermore, she knew that even for her father, when he was at Zhou Weiqing’s age, he did not have such a cultivation level yet!

Holding hands, the pair walked towards the dragon Hui Yao’s body. Turning to Duo Si, Zhou Weiqing said: “Duo Si, I’ll have to trouble you to stay by my side. If our Heavenly Energy is insufficient to revive Hui Yao, I will need to borrow your strength.”

Duo Si took a single step forward, her giant stride bringing her massive body right beside Zhou Weiqing and Tian’er. Once again, she lay down on the ground as she said: “Thank you both once again. As long as my husband can be revived, no matter what price I have to pay, I am willing. You can draw from my strength as you need.”

As she spoke, she lifted a claw and placed it in front of Zhou Weiqing. Currently, she was actually extremely nervous, though she tried her best to hide it. As the saying goes, the greater the hope, the greater the possibility of disappointment. She did not know if this revival actually failed, would she actually breakdown.

Zhou Weiqing said earnestly: “Duo Si, do not worry, no matter what we will do our best to help you revive Hui Yao. Perhaps, we

might even be able to do so without borrowing your strength, I am currently filled with confidence that we can let Hui Yao stand before you once more.”

His words were not just all big talk. After all, the Saint Energy in his body was finally able to circulate and generate freely. That was of utmost importance in the following revival, as it meant he could substantially increase the amount of Saint Energy he could infuse to Tian'er. With a large amount of Saint Energy to support the Resurrection Skill, the success rate would naturally increase greatly as well.

Zhou Weiqing nodded towards Tian'er, saying: “Let's begin then.”

With a single thought, the large Saint Energy whirlpool formed between the two of them under Zhou Weiqing's lead. The current Zhou Weiqing gave Tian'er a totally different sensation, as if he was as vast and deep as the ocean, and with his lead, the large Saint Energy whirlpool did not seem to have an end or limit.

A series of dark gold light sprang forth one after the other in sudden brightness, as the God Vanquishing Heavenly Spirit Set appeared around Tian'er's body. With the Saint Energy casting light upon her along with the Divine aura around her caused the entire surroundings to be covered with a sheen of gold holy light.

Raising the God Spirit Staff up high, Tian'er began to chant a long series of strange and choppy incantations. This was in a language that Zhou Weiqing and the three Shangguan Sisters did not understand at all, but though they did not recognize it, the mother dragon Duo Si instantly recognized it as a sort of ancient incantation. It was nearly impossible to find anymore Heavenly Skills that actually required incantations to unleash now, but they were definitely inherently powerful. Sensing the powerful divine aura around Tian'er growing stronger and stronger, the hope in Duo Si's heart also grew larger.

Behind Tian'er's back, the illusory figure of the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger slowly appeared in midair. In just a few blinks of the eye, the illusory figure of the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger had actually turned seemingly solid, the massive tiger looking imposing in midair as it raised its head and gave a bone chilling howl, before its huge body abruptly charged downwards, actually speeding and entering right into Tian'er's body from her back.

Instantly, Tian'er's entire body burst forth with brilliant gold light, the divine lustre enveloping both herself and Zhou Weiqing. The thick Heavenly Energy reverberations in the air were raised to the maximum, and they could see tiger tattoos appearing on Tian'er's smooth skin. However, in contrast to Zhou Weiqing's usual tiger tattoos when he entered the Demonic Change State or Dragon-Tiger Transformation, hers seemed more decorative, causing her already absolute beauty to be given a wild nature.

In a stark contrast to the brilliant gold light of divinity around her, Tian'er's eyes had turned a deep purple, and purple light sprang forth from them in a powerful spiritual movement.

Chapter 232 Final Completion, Immortal Deity Technique! (3)

To the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger bloodline, using the Resurrection Skill took a great toll upon them, and it was also impossible without both the Divine and Spirit Attributes in unison. Even for the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord, if he wanted to use the Skill, he would have to be extremely careful. Of course, the amount of energy required for the Skill was also different depending on the revival target. For example, reviving a little ordinary mouse and a powerful dragon would definitely be extremely different in terms of the power required.

Tian'er grasped the God Spirit Staff tight in her right hand, slowly brandishing it as she chanted, and the God Spirit Staff arced through the air in a mysterious profound manner, as the gold light of the God Tier Consolidated Equipment began to form a complicated gold symbol in the air.

As the symbols appeared, they began to rise in the air, floating above the body of the dragon Hui Yao. Every time an additional symbol appeared, it would join the others, and another ray of gold light would be emitted from the respective symbol into Hui Yao's body.

At this moment, although he had already established the large Saint Energy whirlpool with Tian'er, he did not have much other sensations. After all, Tian'er was still using her Heavenly Energy to begin the Resurrection Skill; unlike him she had not fully transformed her Heavenly Energy into Saint Energy and formed a full cycle of creation. As such, when she used her Skills, she would still first prioritise Heavenly Energy.

The usage of the Resurrection Skill was far longer than either of them had imagined... almost two hours had passed before the one hundred and eighth last gold symbol was formed, and all of the

gold symbols began to rearrange themselves to form a large diagram of light in the air.

At this point, Tian'er paused for a moment, glancing at Zhou Weiqing. Instantly, Zhou Weiqing also grew nervous. He knew that it was time for the 'real' revival to begin; all of the preparatory work had finally ended.

Raising the God Spirit Staff up high, Tian'er's chanting instantly became faster, as if agitated or excited. Her entire body could no longer be seen from the outside, all that could be seen was the bright gold of the pure Divine Attribute.

Floating above the dragon Hui Yao's body, the one hundred and eight gold symbols seemed to be primed and activated, and a hundred and eight bright gold light rays instantly shot down from above into the Hui Yao's body.

Right at this moment, the atmospheric energy in the air began to fluctuate violently, and the God Spirit Staff also burst forth with a ray of brilliant gold light, shining up high into the air.

Instantly, the entire Lustre Spatial Realm began to shudder violently, as if due to that ray of gold light. Soon after, the one hundred and eight gold symbols began to flow towards the light, forming themselves around it as the central focal point.

In that instant, Zhou Weiqing could sense the Heavenly Energy in Tian'er's body surging out from her as if in torrents, being released crazily from the God Spirit Staff.

A layer of gold misty light surrounded the one hundred and eight symbols, slowly covering Hui Yao's body entirely. Its originally crimson red body was now fully a brilliant gold.

The Resurrection Skill was a Skill that could wrestle fortune from heaven and earth, and anyone who looked upon the Resurrection Skill as it appeared would have a different comprehension and understanding in their mind.

Zhou Weiqing slowly closed his eyes, his Immortal Deity Technique circulating fully again, and he turned into a gold coloured whirlpool once more. It wasn't exactly a gold whirlpool, just that when Zhou Weiqing's entire body turned gold, the atmospheric energy started to draw in a terrifying pace, forming the look of a giant whirlpool. Even the absorption rate of Tian'er's God Spirit Staff was no match for him.

It wasn't that the God Spirit Staff wasn't powerful, but Zhou Weiqing's completed Immortal Deity Technique was just too strong, especially since his cultivation now was above Tian'er by quite a substantial amount.

By this point, the light rays that the God Spirit Staff was emitting was now with a hint of silver white. Tian'er's Heavenly Energy was almost drained dry in such a short period of time, and she was beginning to infuse Saint Energy into the Resurrection Skill. However, as she did so, her face relaxed slightly.

As she switched the infusing Saint Energy into the Resurrection Skill, the drain lessened abruptly, a far cry from the previous massive drain on Heavenly Energy.

The mother dragon Duo Si was at the side, watching nervously. Her claw was already set in a stable position in front of Zhou Weiqing, ready to help at any moment's notice. Her other claw was now digging deep into the tough granite, showing how nervous she truly was.

The three Shangguan Sisters stood at the back watching nervously, not even daring to breathe too loudly. The most nervous was naturally Shangguan Xue'er; after all whether or not they could succeed in reviving Hui Yao would also determine the future safety of the Lustre Spatial Realm, and more importantly, the safety of the entire ZhongTian City and the millions of ordinary citizens. How could she not be nervous?

The gold light that shone upon Hui Yao's body continued seeping

into it, the body like a massive sponge as it absorbed the huge amount of Divine Attribute energy.

Even compared to Tian'er, the current Zhou Weiqing was actually the one who was working the hardest now. With the Immortal Deity Technique circulating at full power, the atmospheric energy was continually transformed into Saint Energy before being sent to Tian'er. Tian'er was more like a giant converter, infusing the Saint Energy that Zhou Weiqing sent her into the Resurrection Skill.

At this point, Tian'er's face had a faint smile. She had never imagined that once she had successfully completed the Resurrection Skill, the drain upon them was far lower than expected. Of course, whether or not it finally succeeded in reviving the dragon Hui Yao would be up to the heavens.

...

An entire day passed just like that. At this point, Zhou Weiqing's face was already very pale. Although he could recover his Saint Energy on his own, he could barely sustain the continued drain from the Resurrection Skill! Being able to last for an entire day, he had already gone all out with all his might, and it was already more than enough to prove how strong he was. Such a recovery speed, even a Heavenly King Stage powerhouse would not possess.

Abruptly, Zhou Weiqing's eyes snapped wide open, and he looked towards Duo Si.

Duo Si's gaze was currently fixed on Hui Yao. As his wife, Duo Si's senses towards Hui Yao was definitely the strongest, and she could clearly sense that her husband's life force was slowly recovering under the Resurrection Skill. She could even hear a very faint, weak beating sound of his heart slowly growing stronger.

Right at that moment, Duo Si's body shuddered violently. Turning to look, she saw Zhou Weiqing place his palm on her claw,

the grey swirl of the Devour Skill around his hand.

Duo Si nodded towards Zhou Weiqing, releasing her powerful Heavenly God Stage Heavenly Energy open without holding back, allowing Zhou Weiqing to Devour at will.

For Zhou Weiqing to persevere in sustaining the Resurrection Skill for an entire day was already far beyond her expectations, causing her to strongly admire the youth. She could clearly sense the terrifying amount of energy used thus far, yet this young human was able to last for so long. Even as a Heavenly God Tier powerhouse, she felt rather shocked and a little fear.

The Devour Skill began to do its work, and Zhou Weiqing's expression began to recover. After the completion of his Immortal Deity Technique, the thirty six Death Acupuncture Points and all of his meridian channels were far stronger and more flexible than any ordinary Heavenly Jewel Master. As such, as he began Devouring, he did not have to hold back at all, and he began to regain Saint Energy at an unbelievable speed.

Previously, Zhou Weiqing had Devoured Heavenly Energy from Heavenly King Stage Heavenly Beasts. However, if he compared those Heavenly Beasts to Duo Si, it could be likened to a difference between a frail ant and a powerful elephant. Duo Si's pure Fire Attribute energy was as deep and vast as the oceans, and though it could not be compared to Saint Energy, the purity and sheer amount of it was as if a boundless horizon. Zhou Weiqing's Devouring rate was already at an insane speed, but it felt like it was barely a drop in the ocean, not even affecting Duo Si slightly.

With such a guarantee backing him up, Zhou Weiqing immediately increased his infusion of Saint Energy to Tian'er. Tian'er had once told him before that once the Resurrection Skill was used, the faster it took to complete it, the greater the chance of successful revival. Since he no longer had any worries about replenishing his Saint Energy, he naturally decided to increase the overall speed.

Slowly but surely, Hui Yao's body began to undergo some strange changes. The massive body which had been stained gold by the Divine Attribute aura was now glowing, and they could see stars of gold light slowly rising up, and the giant body was also beginning to show signs of life force emitting.

Having reached such a stage, the Resurrection Skill could be considered to have completed the first portion in terms of reviving the body. What would follow next would be to call back and awaken his Soul. Only by having the Soul of Hui Yao return to his freshly recovered body would the actual revival be considered a success.

This was also the main reason why normally speaking the Resurrection Skill should only be used within two hours of death. That was because this was the period in which the Soul has not dissipated from the body. Of course, the powerful dragons had their Heavenly Core Nucleus which could help maintain their Souls, preventing them from dissipating too quickly. However, in the history of the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tigers, none had ever attempted to Resurrect a Dragon, so whether or not they could succeed was still unclear.

Tian'er's expression grew even more serious as she raised the God Spirit Staff in her hand once more, starting to draw another symbol which was far more complicated than all of the previous ones. As she began chanting in a low tone once more, the silver lines formed a rays of light, directly imprinting on Hui Yao's large forehead.

Instantly, Zhou Weiqing felt his Saint Energy being drawn from him at once, as almost half of his Saint Energy was immediately depleted. As the gold symbol imprinted on the forehead successfully, Hui Yao's giant head suddenly raised up. Right in the center of his eyes, on the bone of the forehead, a ball of brilliant glowing gold light burst forth.

Instantly, a terrifying energy reverberation shook through the

entire area, the powerful oppressive aura causing the three Shangguan Sisters standing behind to stagger back involuntarily.

Duo Si hurriedly summoned a barrier of red light, enveloping all the young humans within. Currently, her eyes were brightly lit as she stared at her husband's reared head. The claw that Zhou Weiqing was holding was trembling uncontrollably... the Resurrection Skill was clearly at the last stage, and her heart was nervous and anxious.

Tian'er pointed the God Spirit Staff outwards once more. By now, her body had also begun to tremble slightly. It was clear that she was reaching the limit of Saint Energy that she could endure.

Even so, Tian'er continued without stopping. As she summoned all of her might, she drew another gold symbol, glowing brilliantly as it was imprinted directly on Hui Yao's forehead once again.

The dazzling gold light was so blinding that they could barely open their eyes. However, in the next instant, the gold light abruptly vanished into Hui Yao's body as its giant head raised even higher.

Alas... just as the mother dragon Duo Si was about to cheer in joy, the massive dragon head of Hui Yao's slumped down on the ground once more.

Chapter 233 Hui Yao's Revival (1)

Bam!! Duo Si's heart almost broke into two when Hui Yao's head smashed viciously into the ground. Everyone's heart sank, as if Hui Yao's enormous body had returned to that of a large dragon corpse.

"No—!!" Duo Si cried out, grief stricken. She charged over, her enormous wings flaring open to cradled Hui Yao's large head in her embrace. A desolate dragon croon erupted as her head lifted high, pained tears continuously streaming out of her great eyes.

One step short of success? Destruction of hope? Duo Si's agonized heart could no longer take such blows.

Tian'er's charming face had drained of all color as she collapsed into Zhou Weiqing's embrace, but she kept her eyes unblinkingly fixed on Hui Yao's body.

Duo Si lowered her head and looked deeply at Hui Yao, then turning her gaze to Tian'er and Zhou Weiqing. Her tears suddenly stopped flowing. "Humans, I said before that no matter what happens, I still thank you for trying. I no longer have any strength to save our children. I beg you that when you leave, please help me save my children. I will follow Hui Yao into death, and this Lustre Spatial Realm will no longer continue fragmenting, so there is no longer any need for you all to worry. I really can't live on without him."

The look in her eyes turned gentle. The days of waiting and all being for naught in the end had utterly crushed the last hope in her heart. She was going to go with him. She would be with her husband even if it was in another world.

The three Shangguan sisters were weeping soundless tears at this point as they watched the dragon couple's tragic scene. They were caught up in a thick sense of grief.

Zhou Weiqing's brow was tightly furrowed. He wasn't able to voice any words that would discourage Duo Si. Even if he could stop her this one time, how would he continuously stop a woman taking her life to follow her husband, much less a mighty dragon!

Duo Si's enormous eyes began to close slowly, her strong life force just moments ago beginning to fade. She was closing off her soul, and when it was fully closed off, she would lose her life forever. Outsiders who wished to rob a dragon of its life would have to pay a heavy price, but it was very simple for a dragon to take its own.

Whether Zhou Weiqing, Tian'er or the Shangguan sisters, all parties present were extremely saddened in this moment. Such a strong and majestic lifeform was choosing to leave this world in this manner! How would they not be depressed?

"Duo Si, don't." A low and somewhat weak voice suddenly sounded out at this time.

Duo Si's rapidly dispersing life force suddenly halted when this voice rang out. The humans all widened their eyes, and everyone's gaze was focused on the enormous body on the ground. What was going on? What was happening?

In the next moment, an enormous and extremely frightening power suddenly exploded within Hui Yao's body. An eye-searing red light erupted like a volcano and tore through all bindings. Great energy spewed forth in the air, and the terrifying power of the heavens dyed the vicinity red.

Duo Si's closed eye suddenly snapped open as she lowered her head and looked at her husband's body.

Hui Yao's fallen body slowly began moving. He didn't move quickly, but did so steadily. First to rise was his proud head, followed closely by his enormous body as he slowly stood up.

The great dragon eyes opened slowly and thick, broad wings

unfurled to embrace Duo Si. A strong life-force rose steadily as his domineering dragon aura exploded in this instant to soar to the skies.

Yes, he had come back! The dragon Hui Yao who'd once controlled the Lustre Spatial Realm had come back!

A remarkable energy emanated from Hui Yao's body and transformed into five red rings, circling Zhou Weiqing, Tian'er, and the Shangguan Sisters in an instant.

All of them felt an odd pulse of energy drill into their brains via their foreheads, and their minds went blank in the next second.

There was no change to the power and strength in their bodies, but their spiritual energy was exploding beyond all of their expectations in this moment.

Hui Yao's gaze landed on his wife's body, finding her eyes and never looking away again.

Duo Si's life force began slowly rising again as her two claws gripped her husband tightly. She didn't dare relax her hold on him for anything. She was so afraid that everything in front of her was just an illusion. However, as she felt the dragon aura grow and recover in Hui Yao's body, she knew that her husband had come back at last. He'd returned to her side.

There was only one thought in their minds at the moment, and that it was wonderful to be alive. Even creatures who'd lived for tens of thousands of years as they still felt that life was terribly precious. Perhaps, it was even more so for them.

The red light slowly faded from the five youths, restoring the splendor in their eyes. They looked at each other with surprised delight as their spiritual strength seemed to have ascended to another level, and the strength of their souls as well. Zhou Weiqing was already at the nine-Jeweled stage, and he could vaguely feel that after this short enhancement in this short period

of time, his spiritual strength had already risen to the level of a Heavenly Emperor's. This held untold benefits for his cultivation to come, and would definitely be of enormous help for forming a Saint Core Nucleus in his future breakthrough.

With the strength of his soul combined with the power of his bloodline, he was confident that he wouldn't be overcome even if he had to face up against a Heavenly Emperor's aura now.

This was Hui Yao's repayment for their help. He'd used the core power of the dragons to elevate the souls of Zhou Weiqing and the others. This was a highly consuming matter even for a dragon such as him, which could affect him to the core.

The recovery of life force, the completely revival of Hui Yao, Tian'er's successful Resurrection Skill ... not only that, but Hui Yao had also gained a trace of the Saint Energy, which held great benefits for him as well. Most importantly, he was back alive again, able to see his beloved wife and children again.

"Thank you, young humans. You saved my life. Thank you all." Hui Yao's gaze finally shifted from his wife and landed on Zhou Weiqing and the others. A great sense of gratitude exuded from the dragon couple. Although they didn't say much, the raw emotions from two dragons was more than sufficient testimony.

"There is no need to thank us," Zhou Weiqing chuckled. "I just hope that you can continue to protect this Lustre Spatial Realm and not destroy it. That would be the greatest thanks to us."

Hui Yao looked closely at Zhou Weiqing. However, just as Duo Si who was by his side was about to slowly nod in agreement, he shook his head. In a solemn tone, he said: "I'm afraid we can't do that."

Hearing his words, Zhou Weiqing and the others were taken aback, their expressions changing as they looked at Hui Yao with incomprehension. They'd just saved his life! Why wouldn't he agree to this condition that really wasn't much of anything at all?

Hui Yao continued staring at Zhou Weiqing, not a hint of compromise present in his gaze. “My children have been taken, and I must destroy this Lustre Spatial Realm for their sake. I can only save them if I leave here. Even though you’ve saved my life, that won’t stop me from saving them. I can at most return my life to you after I rescue my children.”

Zhou Weiqing’s expression grew ugly, but he could not bring himself to voice any opposition. Indeed, if he was in Hui Yao’s position, as a father, how could he be willing to sit back if his children had been taken? He’d likely make the same decision himself!

“Is there no other way?” He smiled bitterly. “Or perhaps, we can rescue your children for you?”

Hui Yao looked at Zhou Weiqing, a red light dancing in the dragon’s eyes. Instantly, Zhou Weiqing felt as if he was being seen quite through, and a faint layer of golden light appeared around him. It seemed to have sensed a threat to Zhou Weiqing and automatically appeared.

“This... this is the energy saved me!” The dragon was astonished. “What, what attribute is it?”

“We call this the Saint Energy, it is actually refined from merging the four Saint Attributes: Divine, Time, Demonic and Spirit.” Zhou Weiqing didn’t hide anything.

Instantly, Hui Yao’s eyes lit up with a bright glow. “Saint Energy... for it to be refined from the four Saint Attributes...! But... how could this be? You’re just an ordinary human. And yet... perhaps it might actually be possible...”

Zhou Weiqing had been thrown for a bit of a loop by this seeming random response. “Senior, we’ll do our best to achieve your wishes as long as you don’t destroy this realm. Perhaps I’m not strong enough at the moment, but as long as I can coalesce a Saint Core Nucleus, I’m confident of being able to hold up against even a

Heavenly Emperor. Let us humans resolve human matters. I'll definitely try my best to save your children."

Hui Yao nodded slowly, the light in his eyes flickering. "Your strength is far from enough. Even I wouldn't dare say with certainty that I'd get our children back. That power... it is simply too terrifying, it's as if it's from..." A trace of fear actually appeared in the mighty dragon's eyes.

"From where?" Zhou Weiqing asked in surprise.

The dragon remained silent for a moment. "From the Nether Realm."

Zhou Weiqing stared blankly. "Nether Realm? What's the Nether Realm?"

Chapter 233 Hui Yao's Revival (2)

Hui Yao heaved a deep sigh. “You all saved my life, so there’s no harm telling you. The Nether is a place. You could say it doesn’t exist in our world. You see, it’s a reality like the Lustre Spatial Realm, another parallel world. Only this place is much larger and much more terrifying than the Lustre Spatial Realm. There are many nether creatures there. There is no light there, only slaughter and destruction. Simply put, within the Nether ordinary nether creatures are much stronger than you human Six-Jeweled Stage Heavenly Jewel Masters. If the Nether connects to your human world, your world will be thoroughly annihilated.”

Zhou Weiqing was dumbstruck by what the huge dragon, Hui Yao, had said. He’d never heard anything like that. His eyes shone with doubt.

Hui Yao of course could tell what Zhou Weiqing was thinking. “You don’t have to believe it,” he said flatly. The Nether Realm’s existence is real because the Lustre Spectre Realm was established by the Nether Realm. A hundred thousand years ago the Nether Realm barely managed to link up a portal to the human world. In those days there were a lot of huge powerful dragons like us, and with their help they managed to completely seal off the portal, and someone was assigned to guard it. Later us dragons took up guarding it. That’s why we rarely appeared in the world. The successive dragon clan leaders took charge guarding the Nether Realm. Us dragons paid a hefty price for guarding the Nether Realm. We were affected by energy from the Nether Realm, which made it difficult for future generations to procreate. So our ancestors set up the Lustre Spatial Realm and sent a young Dou Si and myself into it in order to preserve our dragon bloodline.”

Zhou Weiqing gasped. If what Hui Yao said was true, and the Nether Realm’s power was really what was behind the abduction of their children, then wasn’t the human world in danger?

“The force that caused a rift in space might have been from the Nether,” Hui Yao said. “Only the Lord of the Nether has the kind of power to rip open space. Even though it and the Nether creatures can’t come to our world, they can help its representative come here. It was they who captured my children. I don’t know what they want, but it won’t be good for you humans. Your cultivation is good for a human, especially your astonishing Saint Energy. However, I’m afraid it’s not near good enough to match the Nether Realm representative.”

Zhou Weiqing thought for a moment. “What is the Nether Realm representative?”

“Humans,” Hui Yao said without hesitation. Some of you humans thirst for power and will stop at nothing to get it. They can be tempted by the Lord of the Nether Realm and become his lackey. The Lord of the Nether Realm will give them a certain amount of power and have them assist the lord with various tasks. When an opportunity appears they will help the Lord of the Nether Realm in his assault on the portal seal.”

Zhou Weiqing’s eyes shimmered. “So then our world is in danger. Those nether creatures definitely can’t come to our world, right?”

Hui Yao nodded. “As long as the seal is not broken even the almighty Lord of the Nether Realm will not be able to come to your world. The most he could do is rend space every now and then and teleport some energy fluctuations. And he will have to pay a large price to do it. So in order to prevent the portal to the Nether Realm from opening up you must first resolve the petty matters of your world. Dou Si and I leaving the Lustre Spatial Realm is not a bad thing for you humans. We have keen insight into the Nether. I’m a descendent of the dragon emperor. The power of the dragon emperor that flows through my bloodline veins can guide me to these existences.”

Zhou Weiqing smiled wryly. “But, once you leave here it will be a

devastating blow for the entire human race. Perhaps you all don't know, but there is a place called Heaven's Expanse Palace on Heavenly Jewel Island within the Lustre Spatial Realm. At the south end of the island there is a huge city with a population of over ten million. Once the Lustre Spatial Realm is destroyed, the most populous city in the human world will be no more. That's why we have to do everything we can to stop you."

Hui Yao's eyes shut slightly as he thought. "There's nothing else to be done," he said flatly. "Our children have not yet hatched. No matter what those people want to use my children for, they just have to wait until they hatch. But without our husband and wife's powers there, no matter how they try to hasten it, it will still take about five years. It's already been over half a year. If you can help us out here within three years, we will still have a chance."

Shangguan Xue'er, off to the side, said, "Just tell us what you require and we'll do our best. Do you have a way to get out of here without destroying the Lustre Spatial Realm?"

Hui Yao nodded. "There's another way to do it besides breaking through space. Teleportation. Forcefully tear open space and teleport us out. Just like they tore open space in the past to teleport the humans."

Zhou Weiqing gasped. "Won't it take a hell of a lot of power to do that? I don't know if even a Heavenly God Tier Powerhouse would be able to do it."

"A lot of power is part of it," Hui Yao said. "If you can find a Spatial Teleportation Gem you can cut down on a lot of power. You can use your Saint Energy to open the Spatial Teleportation Gem. I can give you a coordinate. Just cut the coordinates into the Spatial Teleportation Gem. I'm not really sure how to activate it. After all, the Spatial Teleportation Gem is an incredibly precious object from the ancient past."

Zhou Weiqing looked at Shangguan Xue'er. "Do you know what

that is?” The richest place on the mainland was Heaven’s Expanse Palace. There were countless treasures there. Maybe there was a Spatial Teleportation Gem there?

Unfortunately, Shangguan Xue’er shook her head. “I’ve never heard of such a thing. But if it exists in this world we have a chance to find it.”

Zhou Weiqing looked at the gigantic dragon, Hui Yao. Even if the Nether Realm didn’t exist he would still do all he could to get it, so that the dragons wouldn’t destroy the Lustre Spatial Realm. But matters were very grave now. It was not as simple as the Nether Realm merely threatening ZhongTian City, but was now threatening the existence of the entire human race. What was he to say?

Zhou Little Fatty’s boldness emerged. He thought for a moment, then looked at Hui Yao. “Elder,” he said gravely, “what do you think about this. We’ll do this one of two ways. You give three years to do all we can to find the Spatial Teleportation Gem, and at the same time begin evacuating the people of ZhongTian City. If we are really unable to locate a Spatial Teleportation Gem by then, then you two can break open the Lustre Spatial Realm. That will give us time to evacuate its inhabitants. Of course it’s best if we can find it. If so, I will be the first to open up space and get you out of here.”

Without a doubt this was the best course of action they could hope for.

Hui Yao nodded. When he saw the look in Zhou Weiqing’s eyes he praised, “You are an intelligent human. We’ll do as you suggest. I’ll give you three years.”

Zhou Weiqing nodded. “Thank you, elder. Well then, we mustn’t let time go to waste. We’re leaving at once to help you search.”

“Wait,” Hui Yao said. “Before you go, absorb some of my Heavenly Energy. Otherwise, I can’t guarantee I will be able to

restrain my urge to go find my children.”

Zhou Weiqing was taken aback, but the dragon Hui Yao had already extended its dragon claw before him. Its eyes calm, but Zhou Weiqing knew what he intended. He smiled. “Then this junior will go ahead.”

Heavenly Jewel Island, Heaven’s Expanse Palace.

Shangguan Tianyang and Tianyue were standing before the Lustre Spatial Realm Opening Formation with awful looks on their faces.

Half a year had passed since Zhou Weiqing and them had entered the Lustre Spatial Realm. But there had been no activity whatsoever. The occasional energy fluctuations had not been as intense as before.

In a certain sense the existence of the Lustre Spatial Realm was clearly more important than the lives of Zhou Weiqing and the five of them. But, the three Shangguan sisters were the brothers’ only descendants! If they all perished in the Lustre Spatial Realm it would be a fatal blow to Heaven’s Expanse Palace. Plus there was Zhou Weiqing and Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord Xue Aotian’s daughter. In the past WanShou Empire people had also entered the Lustre Spatial Realm, but were all expelled due to the danger. They returned to the WanShou Empire and told of Tian’er entering the Lustre Spatial Realm. If they all died there then before long Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya and Lord of Heavenly Snow Mountain Xue Aotian would likely come looking. Heaven’s Expanse Palace was mighty, but they didn’t dare gang up on the likes of them!

Shangguan Tianyue knitted her brows. “Big Brother, send someone in there to go see. It looks like things have calmed down in there now. If they’re alive we will find them. If dead, we will find their bodies!”

Shangguan Tianyang sighed. “Second Brother, it’s all my fault. I

shouldn't have agreed to their requests and let them enter."

Shangguan Tianyue's eyes flashed with a hint of deep worry. He shook his head. "That's all over now. What's done is done. We can only pray for our children. Big Brother, I..." Shangguan Tianyue, the Heavenly Emperor powerhouse, cut himself off there as his eyes welled up.

Shangguan Tianyang didn't know how to console him.

Suddenly, the Lustre Spatial Realm fluctuated violently and the two brothers looked at the golden light shooting out.

Lights and shadows flashed and five figures appeared in mid-air. Another flash of light and the five were before them.

Chapter 233 Hui Yao's Revival (3)

Zhou Weiqing was in front, smiling. Except, he clearly looked different than when he had entered before. With their cultivation the two brothers could sense in the moment he appeared before them an intimidating aura. This was a shock to them. No doubt, this kid had had some adventures in the Lustre Spatial Realm.

Their eyes swept over Zhou Weiqing and landed on the three Shangguan sisters. Shangguan Tianyue teared up when he saw they were unharmed and he was before them in a flash, arms wide open, hugging them close.

“You all finally made it out. You worried your father to death.”

The deep worry in Shangguan Tianyang's eyes was swept away and he smiled at Zhou Weiqing. “You bum, you have some luck. Looks like you made out okay this time!”

Zhou Weiqing laughed. “You could say we helped Heaven's Expanse Palace resolve a big problem. You can count it as a dowry for Xue'er, Fei'er, and Bing'er.”

Shangguan Tianyang laughed. “You sly dog, you're just not willing to pay the hundred million in cash, right? Okay. If the Lustre Spatial Realm's danger has been averted then I'll let you off.”

Zhou Weiqing smiled wryly. “It's not completely settled.” He has just left the Lustre Spatial Realm, yet it was still very serious and he didn't want to delay, so he quickly told Shangguan Tianyang all that had happened while they were in there.

Shangguan Tianyue soon came over and joined in listening to Zhou Weiqing's story. The more they heard the more troubled they became, especially when he came to the part about the Nether Realm. They knitted their brows.

“Uncle, Father-in-law,” Zhou Weiqing said, “have you been to

the Nether Realm? Does it really exist? It all sounds so mysterious to me.”

Shangguan Tianyang frowned. “That gigantic dragon is not lying. Our Heaven’s Expanse Palace elders mentioned the Nether Realm in their ancient records, but there was not much detail. We never thought anything of it before. If it’s really like that dragon says, then we’re in for some trouble.”

“The Nether Realm is still far from us,” Zhou Weiqing said. “So let’s not worry about that for now. First let’s talk about the problem with the Lustre Spatial Realm. The dragon gave us three years, but that’s not really very long. Have either of you heard of a Spatial Teleportation Gem?”

Shangguan Tianyue shook his head, at a loss. Shangguan Tianyang, however, looked to be deep in thought. “I think I have read of it in some classical record. Well. You all go rest while I think carefully about where I read about it.”

Zhou Weiqing nodded. After all that time in the Lustre Spatial Realm, they really did need a rest.

This time Zhou Weiqing didn’t stay in the Heavenly Jewel Island Hotel, but stayed in the Heaven’s Expanse Palace instead. However, perhaps by the three Shangguan sister’s arrangement, Tian’er was dragged off by them, and our dear Zhou Little Fatty had to stand guard in his room all by his lonesome.

Despite that, Zhou Weiqing didn’t show the slightest sign of dissatisfaction with regards to this point. Instead, he’d worn a lascivious leer when he parted from the four girls.

It was no wonder he did so. After all, one had to know that he’d already completed Shangguan Tianyang’s demand.

After reviving Hui Yao, the dragon had offered to let Zhou Weiqing Devour his energy. As he continuously Devoured the dragon’s incredible power as well as the atmospheric energies

within the Lustre Spatial Realm, not just his own, but even Tian'er and the three Shangguan sisters were completely filled with Saint Energy. The four ladies had broken through in their cultivation once again. Tian'er had reached the eight-Jeweled Stage and was close to creating her own circulation path.

The three Shangguan sisters didn't possess any of the Saint Attributes and thus couldn't create a similar circulation path for Saint Energy like Zhou Weiqing. However, since Shangguan Tianyan's demands had already been met, Zhou Weiqing now had the right to marry the three sisters. This time, he was going to take them with him no matter what. It was only that he'd just left the Lustre Spatial Realm and hadn't had time to bring it up to Shangguan Tianyang yet.

Zhou Weiqing already had his plans and although he no longer needed to Devour Heavenly Beasts, he still needed to make a trip to the Heavenly Snow Mountain after departing from here.

According to Hui Yao's words, and his experience with the terrifying destructive power in Hui Yao's body previously, Zhou Weiqing had some speculations about the Nether Realm. Previously, when they'd been on the Heavenly Snow Mountain, Tian'er's mother Phelia had gifted Zhou Weiqing the the Nether State Skill. More importantly, from the conversations he had heard, she seemed to be keeping watch over a place, some sort of guard... and it was very likely connected to this Nether Realm. The Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord was the foremost powerhouse in the world, the only Heavenly God Tier amongst humans. He was definitely the most likely one to know about the existence of the Nether Realm.

As for the Spatial Teleportation Gem, Zhou Weiqing currently did not think of looking for it by himself. After all, with his just his own strength alone, it was akin to finding a needle in a haystack. It was more reliable to just ask the Heaven's Expanse Palace to bring all its considerable resources to search for it. While they did so, he

could still head to the Heavenly Snow Mountain and request the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord to help as well. If the two greatest Saint Lands in the world couldn't find the Spatial Teleportation Gem, then it was likely it was even more impossible for him to find it on his own. If he really couldn't find it, the only thing they could do would be to evacuate the citizens of the ZhongTian City. Although the destruction of the Heavenly Jewel Island would be an enormous blow to the Heaven's Expanse Palace, the preparation period of three years should allow them to deal with it properly.

...

Early next morning, disciples from the Heaven's Expanse Palace came to invite Zhou Weiqing to meet up with Shangguan Tianyang.

It was still that familiar palace, the ethereal white mist making it seem like a celestial realm on earth. The Shangguan Brothers, Shangguan Tianyang and Shangguan Tianyue were both present. The three Shangguan sisters and Tian'er were off to the side, looking rather close and familiar with each other, putting Zhou Weiqing at ease.

"Uncle, father-in-law." Zhou Weiqing was quickly getting familiar with calling out these titles.

Somewhat to his surprise, his future father-in-law didn't seem to reject these titles this time. However, the two Heaven's Expanse Palace Masters had somewhat stern expressions on their faces.

"Have there been no clues?" Zhou Weiqing frowned.

"We have found some clues, but things will be a bit troublesome," Shangguan Tianyang responded.

Zhou Weiqing's heart gripped as he snapped to attention. Shangguan Tianyang was after all the First Palace Lord of Heaven's Expanse Palace, one of the Great Saint Lands in the mainland. If even he felt things were tricky, it could only mean that the Spatial

Teleportation Gem could not be so easily obtained.

“My memories were correct,” Shangguan Tianyan recounted grimly. “There is indeed a record of the Spatial Teleportation Gem in my Palace’s ancient tomes. A Spatial Teleportation Gem once appeared, and it is the utmost treasure of the Xuantian Palace.”

“Xuantian Palace? What kind of place is that?” Zhou Weiqing was rather lost and confused. The five Great Saint Lands of the Boundless Mainland were the Heaven’s Expanse Palace, Heavenly Snow Mountain, Passion Valley, Blood Red Hell and Heavenly Demon Sect. He had never heard of this Xuantian Palace. However, if this place wasn’t one of the Great Saint Lands, why would Shangguan Tianyang place such importance on it?

Shangguan Tianyang continued: “Even I wouldn’t be too familiar with this place, let alone you... If I hadn’t looked through the historic archives, I would not even have remembered this place.” Pausing for a moment, he continued solemnly. “That is because the Xuantian Palace isn’t even on the Boundless Mainland.”

“Ah?” Zhou Weiqing looked at Shangguan Tianyang in surprise and bewilderment.

“In truth, apart from our continent, in this world, there is another smaller continent far out on the seas, called the Xuantian Continent. Very few people know of it because of its great distance from the Boundless Mainland. The only reason we know about it is because their people once came to our lands and conflict erupted. That was the reason why our archives recorded it. They also seem to have organizations similar to our Great Saint Lands, and the XuanTian Palace is their strongest one. The first time they came, they were defeated by an alliance between all five of the Great Saint Lands, but we could not cause them any serious problems because of the Spatial Teleportation Gem. In the end, we finally set a treaty that the two continents would not interfere with each other, and that powerhouses from the Great Saint Lands of each continent wouldn’t set foot on the other. However, this

was a millennia ago, so even amongst the Great Saint Lands, very few know of the existence of the Xuantian Continent now.”

“There’s another continent entirely?” Zhou Weiqing asked. “Is there a map? The oceans are so different from land. Setting aside the question of how many Heavenly Beasts there may be in the oceans between us, how can we even begin to attempt to reach the Xuantian Continent across the vast oceans if we don’t know where it is?”

“For that at least, you do not need to worry about it,” Shangguan Tianyue responded. “We once seized a detailed maritime map from their hands and the position of the Xuantian Continent is clearly labeled. It’s a large landmass after all, not a mere island, so it shouldn’t be too difficult to locate. Even so, it is tens of thousands of miles away from us, so it won’t be easy to reach. Not to mention that the treaty we made is still in effect. If we send someone to find that Spatial Teleportation Gem, it would not only worsen relations between the two continents, it could possibly start a war. We already have many matters to attend to in the Boundless Mainland, and it might be unwise to make more enemies.”

Zhou Weiqing was quick witted and immediately understood what the ramifications of what the brothers were saying, as well as their subtle hidden meaning. He chuckled and cut straight to the chase. “I’ll go. I’m not part of any of the Great Saint Lands, and my goal is more humble. Even if I can’t steal or rob them, I can still try to borrow it right?”

Of course, in his mind, there was no difference between this ‘borrowing’ and taking without a word.

Shangguan Tianyue was quite satisfied with this response and revealed the trace of a smile. Although his future son-in-law wasn’t a match for his daughter in the looks department, there were few peers in the younger generation that could measure up to his abilities.

Chapter 234 Eradicating a Heavenly King!

Little Fatty's Power (1)

Shangguan Tianyang stared at Zhou Weiqing, then said in a low voice: “Weiqing, for the sake of the Heaven’s Expanse Palace and for the sake of this continent’s very survival, I’m not going to stand on ceremony any longer. I have to admit that you are the most suitable person for this matter.”

Zhou Weiqing rubbed his head, then said, “But... there’s honestly a lot of things I need to handle. I probably won’t be able to head out just yet.”

Shangguan Tianyang said, “The Xuantian Continent is tens of thousands of kilometers away from us, and Xuantian Palace is also incredibly strong. To ‘take food from the tiger’s mouth’ from them won’t be easy. You will need a great deal of time, so I hope you begin to act as soon as possible. As for your other matters, leave them to us. This old man swears to you as the Palace Lord of Heaven’s Expanse Palace that before you return, I absolutely will not permit the Heavenly Bow Empire to suffer any harm at all. I’ll also take care of your father’s safety. Once you return, I’ll send people to support you in restoring the kingdom and in rescuing your family members. Before you go, Tianyue and I will also officially engage you to Xue’er, Fei’er, and Bing’er. What do you think?”

Shangguan Tianyang’s words were extremely enticing to Zhou Weiqing. He had never imagined that the Palace Lord of Heaven’s Expanse Palace would be so straightforward! Without question, Zhou Weiqing’s worries were centered around his family and the Heavenly Bow Empire. With this promise from Heaven’s Expanse Palace, he now had nothing to fear.

He had never imagined that his marriage to the three Shangguan sisters would be approved so handily as well. As he saw it, there

was definitely no problem with him marrying Bing'er, and he had a chance at Fei'er, but Shangguan Xue'er? Who was she? She was the heir and successor to the Palace Lord of Heaven's Expanse Palace! If he was going to be officially engaged to her, then that meant that Shangguan Tianyang was virtually handing over half of Heaven's Expanse Palace into his hands. In other words, the old man had shown the greatest amount of sincerity possible. It wasn't really a 'conditional offer'; something like this could only be described as 'sincerity'. Zhou Weiqing was truly surprised that Shangguan Tianyang would act in such a way towards a junior like himself.

The nearby Shangguan Fei'er couldn't help but say: "Senior Uncle, does Weiqing really have to go? We have no idea what is going on in the Xuantian Continent. It'll be very dangerous!" The other three women had ugly looks on their faces as well.

Shangguan Tianyang let out sigh. "Weiqing might not be a truly supreme powerhouse, but his future potential is limitless. This is especially true now that he has Saint Energy. Now that he has changed a misfortune into a blessing and broken through to the nine-Jeweled stage, on the whole he's just as strong as any Heavenly Emperor powerhouse. He's also extremely young. It'll be easy for him to hide himself in the Xuantian Continent and he won't be easily noticed. That's why I cannot think of a better choice than him."

Shangguan Tianyang was telling the truth. Although there were some other powerful Heavenly Jewel Masters outside the five Great Saint Lands, such as Zhou Weiqing's master the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya, they were incredibly rare. It would be very hard and time-consuming to find them, and even if they were found these Heavenly Emperor powerhouses wouldn't necessarily agree to act on the behalf of Heaven's Expanse Palace. Moreover, Zhou Weiqing was agile, clever, knew many survival techniques, and could use Saint Energy. There was no way the

others could compare to him in these regards. He was also on extremely good terms with Heaven's Expanse Palace!

Zhou Weiqing chortled. "I agree that I'm the best suited. Since you've made the request, Uncle, I'll move as fast as I can. I'll put down everything else I'm working on and head straight to the Xuantian Continent to take back that Spatial Teleportation Gem. However, I cannot guarantee that I will succeed. You need to make backup preparations at Heavenly Jewel Island and ZhongTian City."

When Shangguan Tianyang heard Zhou Weiqing accept, his face revealed a hint of a smile. "Weiqing, thanks in advance for the hard work. This matter involves our palace's very survival. Once we lose Heavenly Jewel Island, we'll soon no longer be considered the number one Great Saint Land of this continent. If there's anything you need done, just leave it to us."

Zhou Weiqing shook his head. "Aside from handling the dangers facing the Heavenly Bow Empire and my family members in Heavenly Bow City, there's nothing else I need done. I'll go by myself right away. You can simply update me on the situation a bit later."

"Unacceptable!" Right at this moment, all four of the woman shouted the same thing simultaneously.

Shangguan Tianyang and Shangguan Tianyue, the two brothers, couldn't help but stare at them in astonishment.

The four women's faces reddened slightly. In the end, it was the lively Shangguan Fei'er who gave the reason why. She gave Zhou Weiqing a hard look, then said: "This guy is a total playboy. What if he brings more girls back from the Xuantian Continent? That's why we have to go with him."

Shangguan Tianyang's face sank. "What nonsense! All of you are members of the Great Saint Lands. Are you going to have us go back on our word and the first to break our vows? Moreover,

sending additional people will make us more conspicuous. If Weiqing goes by himself, he'll also be able to slip away much more easily. He's also already reached the nine-Jeweled stage. This experience is also a chance for him to establish his path for advancing to become a Heavenly King."

Shangguan Fei'er pouted unhappily, but she was rather afraid of her Senior Uncle and didn't dare to say anything else.

Right at this moment, Shangguan Bing'er suddenly summoned all her courage and walked forward: "I'll go with Little Fatty. I don't belong to the Saint Lands, I've never promised to join the Heaven's expanse Palace, and I didn't grow up here either." After saying these words, she lowered her head in embarrassment. She had already been apart from Zhou Weiqing for three years. She truly did not wish to part with him again.

The nearby Shangguan Xue'er nodded. "I agree that having Bing'er go with Weiqing is more suitable. She can take watch over him and take care of his food and lodging. Bing'er is also skilled in speed; if anything dangerous happens, she would be able to escape alongside Weiqing."

As she said this, she turned to glance at the nearby Tian'er. Her opinion clearly carried a great deal of weight. If she insisted that she was going to go with Zhou Weiqing, it wouldn't be easy for Heaven's Expanse Palace to stop her. Once she joined forces with Zhou Weiqing, both would be strengthened.

Something unexpected happened. Tian'er actually nodded and said to Zhou Weiqing, "Letting Bing'er go with you is a good choice. However... Bing'er, don't be too merciful. Don't let this bad man bring another one back! I'll go back to Heavenly Snow Mountain to visit Father." The final sentence was aimed at Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing scratched his head. "I'm fine with whoever wants go with me."

Shangguan Xue'er said, "After you go, Fei'er and I will go to the Heavenly Bow Empire."

Zhou Weiqing naturally didn't know that the reason why Tian'er didn't insist on going with him to the Xuantian Continent was partially because the Saint Energy inside his body had already formed a perfect loop; there was now no longer any worry that it would wither away. The second, more important reason was because she wanted to demonstrate her friendship towards the three Shangguan sisters.

Without question, none of the four could bear to part with Zhou Weiqing. Three of them were sisters of the Shangguan family! Tian'er had the feeling that she was all by herself, and so it was important to her for her to build up good relationships with the others. Bing'er had also met Zhou Weiqing before she did. Although she wasn't really happy about this, in the end she managed to accept it.

Shangguan Tianyang nodded. "Excellent. It is settled, then! Weiqing, Bing'er, the two of you follow me. I'll tell you all the details of the situation in the Xuantian Continent."

They stayed at Heaven's Expanse Palace for a few more days. Zhou Weiqing disposed of all the things he needed to address, engaging in multiple secret conversations with Shangguan Tianyang and Shangguan Tianyue. As for what they discussed? Not even the three Shangguan sisters knew. However, they could guess that it had something to do with the destructive energies.

At the same time, Zhou Weiqing asked Shangguan Tianyang to escort Tian'er back to Heavenly Snow Mountain. Although Tian'er was at a level of cultivation where she didn't really need an escort, she was pregnant with Zhou Weiqing's child! Zhou Weiqing just felt uneasy when he wasn't by her side.

As for the Heavenly Bow Empire, Zhou Weiqing sent several letters addressed to Ming Yu, Hua Feng, and the others which he

had the Shangguan sisters deliver. Now that the two Head Drillmasters Shangguan Xue'er and Shangguan Fei'er were headed back, Zhou Weiqing wasn't too worried about the situation there. He wasn't really good at war or commanding troops; leaving these matters to Ming Yu and the others was far better than him handling it personally.

On the dawn of the third day, Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er secretly left Heavenly Jewel Island, departed from Zhongtian City, and began to hurry eastwards.

Zhou Weiqing was pulling Shangguan Bing'er by the hand, and every so often she would look at his rather ashen face. "Little Fatty, are you uncomfortable?"

Zhou Weiqing smiled. "I'm fine! My body's in perfect shape. Why would I be uncomfortable?" There was naturally no way he would tell her that in recent days, Tian'er had 'squeezed him dry' on the bed due to his impending departure. She had taught him a thorough lesson! But of course, to Zhou Weiqing this 'punishment' was a wonderful and pleasurable experience.

After leaving Zhongtian City, Zhou Weiqing released his Ghost Demon Horse and let Shangguan Bing'er ride in front of him. He himself wrapped his arm around her slender waist from behind while spurring the Ghost Demon Horse to gallop on the road eastwards.

According to the map which Shangguan Tianyang had given him, the Xuantian Continent was located east of their continent, and so they had to enter the ocean via the easternmost Mi Ou Empire and then keep pushing east.

For the sake of ensuring this mission's success, Heaven's Expanse Palace had not been stingy at all. Shangguan Tianyang had given Zhou Weiqing many fine things that were meant to handle all sorts of problems.

Zhou Weiqing was extremely curious about the Xuantian

Continent. It was a distant land past the seas, and it had been a thousand years since there had been any communication between it and the Boundless Mainland. The Xuantian Continent was definitely a very special place... and it would be no easy feat for anyone to steal one of the greatest treasures from a place like that!

After travelling just thirty or so kilometers out of Zhongtian City, Zhou Weiqing suddenly forced his Ghost Demon Horse to slow down. He lowered his head, resting his chin against Shangguan Bing'er's neck. His warm breath blew across her earlobes, causing her to feel itchy. She whispered, "Little Fatty, what are you doing?"

Zhou Weiqing laid a gentle kiss against her tender cheeks. Just as Shangguan Bing'er was beginning to think that this bad man was about to resort to his usual tricks, he suddenly whispered something into her ears. Her slender body trembled, and the charming look in her eyes instantly vanished.

The Ghost Demon Horse once more accelerated, but just a second later Zhou Weiqing suddenly disappeared from the back of the horse. Without any warning at all, he appeared in the air above a nearby copse of trees, then slammed both hands down. A terrifying blue light instantly came out of his hands, producing a purple-blue cloud of light. Thousands of Lightning Pearls instantly appeared, blanketing a spherical area of hundreds of meters.

Chapter 234 Eradicating a Heavenly King!

Little Fatty's Power (2)

It must be remembered that Zhou Weiqing's Flying Lightning God was now on a completely different level compared to the past. As his Heavenly Energy had been transformed into Saint Energy, all of his techniques were activated via Saint Energy.

The nucleus of every single Lightning Pearl was filled with dim, silvery-white light. When the thousands of Lightning Pearls exploded at the same time, they instantly tore the very air itself apart. Within that area of hundreds of meters, an enormous black hole appeared. Dimensional space itself had been obliterated by those thousands of exploding Lightning Pearls!

Right! Zhou Weiqing had sensed someone following him and Bing'er early on. In fact, he had sensed this person as soon as he had left Heavenly Jewel Island. If it wasn't for the fact that he had fused his Saint Energy and his Ice Cold Perception together, he never would've been able to discover those two hidden, faint auras. These two auras had followed from behind ever since he left Zhongtian City, and the faint murderous feelings emanating from them made Zhou Weiqing certain that they were not coming with good intentions. Thus, he had lured them here and then suddenly attacked.

As soon as Zhou Weiqing attacked, Shangguan Bing'er had drawn the Ghost Demon Horse into her ring. A pair of enormous wings appeared behind her back, and with a flick of her wings she instantly vanished. That way, she wouldn't be hit by Zhou Weiqing's terrifying Flying Lightning God technique.

Two haggard-looking figures were blasted out of the area where the Flying Lightning God had just exploded. They immediately unleashed an awesome aura of destruction, preventing more of the terrifying explosive power from hitting them.

Their bodies were emanating red-colored Heavenly Energy with the aura of the Destruction-attribute. Zhou Weiqing didn't need to ask who they were; he knew they had to be powerhouses from the Blood Red Hell. He never would've thought that during the entire half year he had spent at Heavenly Jewel Island, the Blood Red Hell had kept people stationed at Zhongtian City the entire time. Without question, their goal was to kill him. And... Zhou Weiqing was able to sense their levels.

Heavenly Kings! These two people secretly following him were Heavenly King powerhouses.

Indeed. Even the powerful Dan Dun Battle Team of the Blood Red Hell with its two promising young eight-Jeweled Destruction-attribute powerhouses had been defeated by Zhou Weiqing. If they wanted to be certain of killing him, their best chance lay in sending Heavenly King powerhouses.

Previously, Zhou Weiqing had only sensed that the people following him from behind were not weak. He never would've imagined that the two were actually Heavenly Kings! Although they were only low level Heavenly Kings, they remained Heavenly King powerhouses! As he laughed bitterly to himself, he continued to press the assault.

Heavenly Kings possessed the ability to fly. It wasn't very realistic for him to try and escape them, as that would only result in death. Zhou Weiqing was different from the past! Although his set of Consolidated Equipment wasn't complete, as a nine-Jeweled expert he was no longer the same Zhou Little Fatty who had been completely unable to resist Heavenly Kings at all.

The Hate Ground No Handle equipment instantly appeared on his body. As the Flying Lightning God exploded, Zhou Weiqing didn't pause at all in immediately charging towards one of the two Heavenly Kings of the Blood Red Hell.

It had to be said that the two Heavenly King powerhouses looked

to be in a sorry state. Holes had been blasted into their clothes by that terrifying explosion! Zhou Weiqing had simply moved too fast and had given them no warning at all, while the Flying Lightning God had been far more powerful than they had imagined. If it wasn't for the fact that Heavenly King powerhouses were able to vaguely sense danger, causing them to immediately unleash their own Consolidated Equipment, they probably would've immediately suffered severe injuries.

Even so, their situation was still grim. That explosive Lightning-attribute energy was causing wild havoc within their bodies, and the powerful numbing sensation caused their movements to be slowed. What astonished them the most was that their Destruction-attribute energy was actually unable to withstand the surging Lightning energy. How could they not be stunned by this?

The twisting light almost instantly shone upon one of the Heavenly King powerhouses. Zhou Weiqing's Blink skill was unleashed in a seamless, perfect fashion.

The Heavenly King powerhouse felt his entire body tense up as though everything around him seemed to slow down, while Zhou Weiqing's Dual Legendary Hammers came smashing down directly at his head.

Absolute Delay! Now that it was being used by Saint Energy, it was even more powerful than Zhou Weiqing could imagine. Even a Heavenly King powerhouse had no immunity whatsoever against his Absolute Delay. The Heavenly King powerhouse was only able to struggle to lift up his arms, using the longsword in his hand to block against Zhou Weiqing's Dual Hammers.

Alas, right at this moment, he saw Zhou Weiqing's eyes shoot out twin beams of purple-red light. The strange thing was, Zhou Weiqing's Dual Legendary Hammers had also instantly turned purple-red in color!

This had all happened without any warning. A beam of purple-

red light suddenly shot out of the Crying-face Hammer in Zhou Weiqing's left hand, shining down upon the Heavenly King. Under the effects of Absolute Delay, the Heavenly King had no chance to dodge at all. His Consolidated Equipment suddenly and silently vanished, and so he now had nothing he could use against Zhou Weiqing's Dual Hammers. Faced with tremendous danger, all he could do was to cross his arms and sluggishly attempt to defend against the oncoming strike.

BOOM! He let out a miserable scream as his arms were instantly torn apart into bloody bits of flesh by Zhou Weiqing's Dual Hammers. He still only had five pieces of the Hate Earth No Handle, which meant that they only multiplied his power by thirty-two times, but it must be remembered that Zhou Weiqing was now at the nine-Jeweled level. In other words, it was a nine-Jeweled level of power which was multiplied. This was thirty-two times the power of a nine-Jeweled Strength-type Physical Jewel, not the original six-Jeweled level. What did this mean? It meant that even a Heavenly King powerhouse who had lost his equipment and had to face this head-on would suffer miserably!

The Dual Hammers had destroyed his arms, then delivered a vicious blow to the Heavenly King's chest. His body was smashed into the ground, caving in the dirt beneath him. The Heavenly King spat out a mouthful of blood. Although he was still alive for now thanks to his mighty power, Zhou Weiqing's strike had thoroughly and heavily wounded him.

Even Zhou Weiqing himself was stunned by this, to say nothing of this Heavenly King. He never would've imagined that a Heavenly King powerhouse would crumple like paper before his strikes. Even if his attack was very powerful and very sudden, his opponent was still a Heavenly King! How was it that his foe had folded so easily before his strikes?

Right at this moment, a terrifying ripple of power coming from behind him caused him to feel a sense of shock. Not hesitating at

all, Zhou Weiqing spun in midair as he spun his Dual Hammers, a dense stream of silver light that forming a 'shield' behind him.

A loud explosion rang out. The sudden attack had actually been blocked by his shield of silver light! The powerful stab had sent sparks flying everywhere, but it was unable to breach the shield which Zhou Weiqing had Consolidated using Spatial Rend technique. The attacker was the second Heavenly King powerhouse!

When the second Heavenly King had seen as his comrade was heavily injured by a single blow from Zhou Weiqing, he had immediately felt a sense of amazement. He wasn't even able to see or understand how Zhou Weiqing had done this!

Two streaks of azure light suddenly shot out from the skies above, sweeping downwards. It was a pair of enormous wings, and it was like an azure tornado had suddenly swept across the Heavenly King.

Zhou Weiqing lifted up his Dual Hammers, shooting out yet another streak of purple-red light. Just now, he had used the same beam of light to dispose of the first Heavenly King. He was going to use the same technique again. What was it? It was the Dragon Silencing Seal, which had been used without first accumulating power at all!

The dazzling purple-red light flashed and then vanished almost instantly. The Heavenly King had just lifted up his longstaff to block the descending attack from Shangguan Bing'er, but all of a sudden he realized that his Consolidated Equipment had melted away.

However, he still had a few pieces of equipment left which he had used before the purple-red light had arrived. An enormous illusion of a turtle instantly formed behind him, glowing with thick red light that was intermixed with terrifying Destruction-attribute energy which formed a barrier of light which knocked away the

attack from Shangguan Bing'er.

However, in the next moment his technique vanished alongside the rest of his Consolidated Equipment. Zhou Weiqing's Dual Hammers had instantly appeared before him as well!

The Heavenly King finally understood why his comrade had been heavily wounded by Zhou Weiqing. This youth who they were targeting was able to instantly employ techniques without needing to build up power first. Worse, his techniques were vastly more powerful than they had imagined. Nine-Jeweled? How could he be nine-Jeweled?! Wasn't this target supposed to be just six-Jeweled?

Alas, there was no time for him to ponder these questions. In fact, he was given no chance to do anything at all. His entire body stiffened as countless streams of light simultaneously shot down upon him, and in that instant he discovered that they had transformed into a powerful binding force which immediately began to crush away at every single part of his body. He was a Heavenly King powerhouse, but he was actually unable to unleash any attacks at all!

Shangguan Bing'er was able to see everything perfectly. Zhou Weiqing's Dual Legendary Hammers had been used in conjunction with the Fetters of Wind, Absolute Delay, and Touch of Darkness. These techniques fell upon the Heavenly King in succession, causing it so that even the arms he wanted to use to defend against Zhou Weiqing immediately froze in position.

However, Heavenly King powerhouses were still Heavenly King powerhouses. The Heavenly King's movements had been completely restricted and the Dual Legendary Hammers were crashing down towards his head, but Zhou Weiqing suddenly saw the man's eyes become filled with a berserk aura of Destruction-energy.

"Not good." He once more used his Blink skill, no longer caring about attacking this opponent. Zhou Weiqing instantly reappeared

next to Shangguan Bing'er. He pulled her into his arms, then unfurled the wings of his Dragon-Tiger Transformation behind him to completely protect Shangguan Bing'er.

Just as he finished doing this, a surge of power filled with madness and Destruction-attribute energy suddenly exploded behind him. The Heavenly King from the Blood Red Hell instantly transformed to become a terrifying blood red color, then exploded in terrifying fashion. A ball of red fire exploded forth from his Dantian, then flew straight towards Zhou Weiqing's back.

He had actually managed to break free from the bindings of the Dragon Silencing Seal. This was because he had actually chosen to self-detonate, blowing up his Heavenly Core Nucleus! This was definitely the most powerful strike a Heavenly King powerhouse could unleash, and the aura of this strike was such that there was no way Zhou Weiqing could flee from it with Shangguan Bing'er.

The Heavenly King of the Blood Red Hell who had chosen to self-detonate his Core Nucleus had an insane look in his eyes. He had no choice but to do this. His comrade was clearly incapable of fighting any further, while he himself was unable to block Zhou Weiqing's bizarre attacks. Rather than let Zhou Weiqing kill him, he would rather fight to the very end. The Blood Red Hell had a secret technique that could allow someone to survive even a self-detonation of a Heavenly Core Nucleus, but it would take him ten years in order to slowly rebuild his body again. This was an agonizing price to pay, but it was much better than being killed.

When Heavenly Jewel Masters fought, they would generally try to end the battles quickly even if they were stronger than their foes. Unless you were significantly more powerful, if your foe managed to seize the initiative with his techniques he could end up killing you in a short period of time. Thus, he chose to immediately use a suicide attack to try and kill his foe.

His flaming red Heavenly Core Nucleus smashed directly into Zhou Weiqing's back, causing terrifying Destruction flames to

instantly erupt and cover both Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er, who was protected within his twin wings.

As for the Heavenly King of the Blood Red Hell, he collapsed to the ground, his entire body covered with countless bleeding wounds. The giant bloody hole in his Dantian was the most terrifying of all. All he was able to do was to just barely use the final scraps of his Heavenly Energy to try and seal his blood vessels. At the Heavenly King level, if you didn't instantly die then you could have a chance to survive even if you lost all of your blood.

However... his movements suddenly froze as a golden light appeared before him, filled with an aura of sharpness.

Chapter 234 Eradicating a Heavenly King!

Little Fatty's Power (3)

The terrifying Destruction-attribute attack had been so powerful that not even Heavenly Kings would've been able to tolerate it. And yet, the attack began to dissipate with incredible speed, revealing the unharmed figure of someone who should've been burnt to a crisp. A dazzling golden light had formed a membrane around his body, preventing any of the terrifying destructive power of the Heavenly Core Nucleus detonation from bypassing it.

"T-this is impossible..." the Blood Red Hell's Heavenly King rasped hoarsely. His disbelieving eyes were about to pop out of their sockets.

Silver light flashed. A light swishing sound could be heard, followed by the head of the first (and heavily-injured) Heavenly King being severed from his neck. Silver Emperor Wing Slash!

There was no way that Zhou Weiqing would make the second mistake twice. He chose to start with killing the first wounded Heavenly King, who was also in a state of disbelief. He certainly wasn't able to endure a second Heavenly Core Nucleus detonation!

The fiery light and the golden light vanished at the same time. Zhou Weiqing released his two wings which had been wrapped around Shangguan Bing'er, a strange smile appearing at the corner of his lips. It seemed as though his opponent was now unable to fight back. In fact, the Blood Red Hell's Heavenly King was no longer even able to staunch his blood loss.

"I've always been a really kind person. I know you are very puzzled, so I'll won't let you die and become an ignorant ghost. The thing I used to block your self-detonation was a defensive technique included in my cultivation technique which is known as the Immortal Deity Shield. See ya." As his final words came out, he remorselessly struck out with the crying-head hammer and

smashed the Heavenly King's head into a pulp.

Shangguan Bing'er stared at the gruesome sight before her, her face rather pale. Her eyes, however, were only filled with amazement. She turned to stare disbelievingly at Zhou Weiqing: "T-they were Heavenly King powerhouses?"

She couldn't be blamed for her disbelief. It must be remembered that her most important memories were of the Zhou Little Fatty who had become a Jewel Master alongside her! Back then, he had known nothing about Jewel Masters at all and needed to be taught so many things. But now, just a few short years later, he had eradicated two Heavenly King powerhouses with his Dual Hammers as easily as cutting cabbage. Not even a Heavenly Core Nucleus explosion had been able to injure him in the slightest. What sort of power was this?!

Zhou Weiqing panted loudly as he listened to her question, a streak of blood trickling out of his mouth. He was every bit as shocked as she was! Before this battle just now, if anyone had told him that he would be able to dominate and defeat a pair of low level Heavenly Kings, he would've thought that person to be insane. And yet, the truth was right in front of them. Those two low level Heavenly Kings hadn't even given him too much pressure.

W-was this the power of Saint Energy? A sense of deep understanding slowly began to rise within Zhou Weiqing's heart as a marvelous feeling suffused his entire body. He ignored the two corpses and shouted, "Bing'er, let's go. You control the horse!"

Shangguan Bing'er immediately released the Ghost Demon Horse. The two once more mounted the horse, with Zhou Weiqing handing over control of the horse to Shangguan Bing'er. He himself held onto her slender waist, eyes closed as he entered a state of meditation.

That battle had seemed to be very fast and very simple, with

Zhou Weiqing gaining a complete victory, but in truth he had immediately used all his power from the very start. This had allowed him to catch his opponents off-guard. Otherwise, there was no way he could've so easily defeated a pair of Heavenly Kings attacking in concert.

The other reason for his victory had been the Dragon Silencing Seal. He hadn't needed to accumulate power, nor was a Heavenly Skill Image manifested. And yet, it wouldn't be exaggerated to say that its power had increased tenfold. The two Dragon Silencing Seals had caused the two Heavenly Kings to temporarily lose their Consolidated Equipment and their Stored Skills. This was what had swung the fight!

After his Saint Energy was able to form a continuous loop, Zhou Weiqing realized that when he used the energy it gained some different properties, especially when activating techniques which produced a Heavenly Skill Image. Right! Even the Destruction-attribute members of the Dan Dun Battle Team had been able to avoid their Heavenly Skill Images clashing. What he was using was Saint Energy. Of course he could do the same!

He carefully meditated on everything. Soon, he discovered that his powerful skills could apparently be used in two different modes. The first mode was the old mode which could be used after accumulating energy. The second was instant mode!

Instant mode wasn't very powerful and it was roughly on par with his previous level of power, but its advantage lay in how the skills could be instantly used! Skills like the Dragon Silencing Seal might only be able to affect the foe for five seconds when instantly cast, but that was more than enough to gain victory.

The reason why the two Heavenly Kings had died by Zhou Weiqing's hands was all thanks to his Saint Energy. As a nine-Jeweled master, when he converted his Saint Energy and used it to cast techniques there were only strengths and no weaknesses when compared to actual Heavenly Kings. Saint Energy didn't conflict

with any attributes while dramatically strengthening all techniques. Although Zhou Weiqing had yet to form a Saint Core Nucleus, as a nine-Jeweled expert with Saint Energy he was able to fight Heavenly Kings as equals. This was why Saint Energy was described as the most powerful type of energy in the world!

As for the self-detonating Heavenly Core Nucleus of that Heavenly King of the Blood Red Hell, it had brought Zhou Weiqing quite a bit of trouble. Alas, that attack had primarily been fire-based, while Zhou Weiqing himself had fire immunity. Moreover, this was the first time he realized just how powerful the Immortal Deity Shield was.

When he had first gained the Immortal Deity Shield, he had felt that it was nothing more than an ordinary defensive technique. After upgrading it to the second stage, it didn't seem to become that much more powerful either. But... after he had fully mastered the Immortal Deity Shield, he discovered that its defensive prowess was so great that it could actually compare to the Assembly Set Shield of Lin TianAo!

It must be remembered that when a Heavenly King self-detonated his Heavenly Core Nucleus, even other Heavenly Kings would have to flee the attack. Zhou Weiqing had actually taken the strike head-on. He might have been injured, but his injuries were light. Just a short while later, he had already recovered considerably. His intrinsically strong body now healed faster than ever thanks to the Saint energy.

Zhou Weiqing began to carefully evaluate his current level of power. He felt certain that based on his current strength, he was actually able to compare to a middle level Heavenly King! In fact, he even had a chance to fight against high level Heavenly Kings. Didn't this mean that once he formed his Saint Core Nucleus, he would be able to battle even Heavenly Emperors?

Within this brief span of half a year, he truly had undergone some earth-shaking changes. It was precisely because Shangguan

Tianyang saw all of this that he had so stubbornly chosen for Zhou Weiqing to go to the Xuantian Continent as their best agent.

In truth, Zhou Weiqing didn't realize that his skyrocketing power had an important connection to the great dragon Hui Yao. If it hadn't been for the great dragon using his own Dragon Soul to enhance their spiritual strength, how could Zhou Weiqing have improved so quickly? He might not even be able to control his energies! Alas, he didn't have enough time to overhaul all of the Consolidated Equipment he could now use. Otherwise, given how his strength was being multiplied so much by the Hate Ground No Handle set, he truly would be able to face high level Heavenly Kings without being at a disadvantage.

In other words, after leaving the Lustre Spatial Realm Zhou Weiqing could now be considered a powerhouse of this era.

Shangguan Bing'er leaned into Zhou Weiqing's warm embrace as she sent the Ghost Demon Horse galloping forwards, her heart filled with serenity and warmth. Only one thought was in her mind: her Little Fatty had actually become very powerful!

During the next half month of travel, the two rarely dismounted to rest. It was all thanks to the Ghost Demon Horse's endurance that they were able to continue traveling at a gallop for such long periods of time. During this half month, Zhou Weiqing spent most of his time in a rather dazed state as he continued to ponder and meditate. Shangguan Bing'er didn't disturb him, simply ensuring that he was fed and clothed properly. What caused her to not know whether to laugh or cry was the fact that although he spent all his days in a meditative state, every single night he would immediately become as active and eager as a lusty dragon or a lively tiger...

Chapter 235 Sumeru Ring, Sea Emperors Shuttle (1)

The single-horned Ghost Demon Horse was indeed moving astonishingly fast, and as it galloped forwards Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er followed the fastest route out of the Zhongtian Empire and entered the Mi Ou Empire. They didn't pause at all as they crossed through the eastern provinces, finally reaching the strategic town of the Blue Ocean City, located on the eastern shores of the Mi Ou Empire.

They had spent nearly twenty days travelling. Although Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er had been travelling at maximum speed, this had been an extremely important period of time for Zhou Weiqing. He had made use of this period of time to slowly fuse together all of the powers he had gained within the Lustre Spatial Realm, making it so that he could make complete use of that power.

In addition, he realized that although he didn't have any follow-up cultivation techniques which would allow him to continue to train his Saint Energy, it didn't even seem necessary. Now that the Saint Energy had formed a perfect cycle, it would continuously loop through the cycle and draw upon the atmospheric energy of heaven and earth to replenish itself, strengthening his body in the process. The Saint Energy in his body was growing denser and denser. This upgrade process was slow but extremely stable. Zhou Weiqing even had the vague feeling that if he wished to form his Saint Core Nucleus, all he needed was to keep accumulating energy like this.

The two of them purchased large quantities of food and beverages at Blue Ocean, placing them within a Spatial Ring inlaid with a silver gem. This ring was one of the many treasures which Zhou Weiqing had acquired from Heaven's Expanse Palace. When

he saw the agonized look on Shangguan Tianyang's face, he had felt rather puzzled. It was just a ring, right? Heaven's Expanse Palace was extremely wealthy. Why would it care about a ring?

But after he actually used his Saint Energy to probe the ring and understand just how powerful it was, he completely understood why Shangguan Tianyang, an exalted Palace Master of Heaven's Expanse Palace, would have such a pained look on his face.

This Spatial Ring was called the Sumeru Ring, and it was able to contain an entire mountain within it! Simply put, if he wanted to use this ring to store grain, he would be able to keep an army of a hundred thousand soldiers fully fed for half a year without needing to be resupplied. The insides of Spatial Rings were completely sealed off from the outside world and were composed of perfect vacuums, making it very difficult for food placed inside to rot away.

Any item could become priceless if upgraded to the maximum level possible. The Sumeru Ring was no exception. It was likely that there was no finer Spatial Ring in all the Boundless Mainland. Obviously, it was unlikely that Zhou Weiqing would be willing to give up an item like this now that it was in his hands. This was why Shangguan Tianyang had such a helpless and pained look on his face! However, Zhou Weiqing was heading to the Xuantian Continent strictly for the sake of helping Heaven's Expanse Palace. Compared to the Heavenly Jewel Island, this ring was nothing at all. After all, no one could be sure how much time would be needed to traverse the great sea. With this ring, Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er could sail the seas for years without worrying about running out of food.

After buying enough food, water, vegetables, and fruits, the two of them departed from the Blue Ocean City and headed towards the shore.

It was dusk. The stars glittered in the skies, while the bright moon's reflection could be seen from in the waters of the sea. The

moon illuminated the waves, bringing a special sense of peace and quiet. As the two stared into the endless seas, they felt as though their hearts had become just as boundless.

This was their first time seeing the sea. No mere human construct could ever compare to the stunning natural majesty of the ocean.

Shangguan Bing'er leaned against Zhou Weiqing's shoulder, a dreamy look in her eyes. "A bright moon above the seas. This is such a beautiful image."

Zhou Weiqing chortled and said, "We're probably going to be spending months on these seas. By then, you probably won't think it is all that beautiful. I can't even imagine how many dangers are lurking within the ocean, waiting for us."

Shangguan Bing'er rolled her eyes at him. "You jerk. You have no sense of romance. Let's head out right now. The sooner we leave, the sooner we can return."

Zhou Weiqing nodded. He took a deep breath of the briny sea wind then waved his hand. The Sumeru Ring on his hand began to glow, followed by a strange object falling into the ground before them with a plonk.

The moon cast a pale glow across this object, which reflected the beautiful moonlight. It was roughly seven meters long and had two narrow ends and a round center. It was completely translucent and looked almost like an enormous crystal which had been carved into the shape of an enormous date seed. It had been engraved with certain special runes that looked like those of strange sea beasts, none of which Zhou Weiqing or Shangguan Bing'er had ever seen before.

Even Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but feel intoxicated as he stared at this thing. Regardless of its use or function, its design alone was enough to enspell anyone who saw it. It was simply too beautiful.

Not even Heaven's Expanse Palace had any records on what this thing was made out of it. The only record it had stated was that not even a full-strength blow from a Heavenly King would be able to damage it in the slightest. One could imagine just how terrifyingly tough it was!

The two ends of the shuttle tapered off into sharp spikes. One could vaguely see the scrawling, spiral shadows which lay hidden within it. There were some mechanisms inside, but the crystalline surface diffracted light in such a way that it wasn't possible to clearly see just what those mechanisms were.

This was the first time Zhou Weiqing or Shangguan Bing'er had ever gone out to sea. They had no guide and not the slightest scrap of experience when it came to seafaring. Why was it that Shangguan Tianyang would dare to let them sail tens of thousands of kilometers towards the Xuantian Continent? It was precisely because of this little bauble before them.

Zhou Weiqing flipped his hand over, glancing at the adorable little crystal in his palm. This octahedral crystal was covered with thousands of cross-sections, and as the moonlight fell upon the crystal it glowed with absolutely dazzling rainbow light.

Zhou Weiqing looked at Shangguan Bing'er, then chuckled. "Let's see just how useful this 'Sea Emperor's Shuttle' really is! Your Senior Uncle praised this little thing to the moon. He even insisted that we had to give it back to Heaven's Expanse Palace after we returned. What a cheapskate."

Shangguan Bing'er felt rather speechless. "Oh, you! Stop being so greedy. Still... for Senior Uncle to value it so highly means that it must be truly remarkable."

He sent a stream of Saint Energy into the crystal in his hand. Instantly, a faint sheen of golden light emerged from the crystal. Almost instantly, the golden light expanded to cover the Sea Emperor's Shuttle. With a clear 'ding' sound, a crystal lid slowly

began to rise up from the now-glowing central part of the Sea Emperor's Shuttle.

Zhou Weiqing was rather disappointed. "Is that it? We're supposed to sail for tens of thousands of kilometers in this little thing?"

Shangguan Bing'er said, "We don't have to use it, you know. We're both able to fly. As long as we can take the occasional break inside after flying for long distances, we'll be able to make it to the other side of the sea."

Zhou Weiqing shook his head. "Sailing the seas won't be as simple as that. How are we even supposed to tell which way we are going when we are flying? How are we supposed to even know where the Xuantian Continent is? Remember, a tiny mistake at the beginning can result in us being off by a thousand kilometers. Your Senior Uncle already told us that the maps are all inside this thing, alongside everything else we need. Let's go take a look first." As he spoke, he flew straight into the Sea Emperor's Shuttle.

The crystal seats within the shuttle emanated a cold aura that went straight through their bodies, but they were a bit too large. Even Zhou Weiqing found them to be slightly too large for him. As for Shangguan Bing'er, when she followed him inside and sat down on one of the giant throne-like seats, she appeared to be particularly miniscule.

Zhou Weiqing placed the crystal in his hand into the cavity in front of him. This was as Shuangguan Tianyang had taught him, but the crystal didn't have any response at all after he inserted it. Even the lid above them remained open.

"It's been in storage for ages. Maybe it's broken?" Zhou Weiqing was rather depressed.

Shangguan Bing'er glanced at him. "It's meant to be used in the ocean. Should we perhaps put it into the ocean first?"

Zhou Weiqing removed the crystal from the cavity. “Then you just keep sitting here. I’ll push it into the sea and give it another try.” As he spoke he hopped out of the shuttle, then moved behind it and gave it a push.

Zhou Weiqing had felt certain that given his power, this push would be enough to instantly shove the shuttle into the sea. However, the shuttle only advanced by a single foot. This thing was much heavier than he had imagined! It must be remembered that he was strong enough that even a casual push from him would contain a thousand kilograms of force. The Sea Emperor’s Shuttle looked very delicate and light, but he was only to push it forward by an inch across the soft sands of the beach.

“It’s really heavy!” Startled, Zhou Weiqing summoned his strength and pushed with both arms while shouting, “Move!”

This time, the Sea Emperor’s Shuttle finally slid all the way into the ocean. Zhou Weiqing was now certain that the shuttle had to weigh 1,500 kilograms at the very least, and most likely a bit more. Zhou Weiqing himself wasn’t sure how physically strong he had become, now that he had reached the nine-Jeweled level.

Chapter 235 Sumeru Ring, Sea Emperors Shuttle (2)

The shuttle slid into the waters, but it only sank into the waters by a tiny amount despite its great weight. Half of it remained floating above the surface, while the lid remained open. However, Zhou Weiqing could see that something was different this time. As soon as the Sea Emperor's Shuttle had touched the water, it began to emanate a hazy halo of light which made it look dreamlike and mesmerizing within the darkness of the night.

Zhou Weiqing once more entered the shuttle. This time, something marvelous happened as soon as he pushed the octahedral gemstone into the impression. The lid above them slowly slid shut, separating them from the outside world. As it completely closed and as the vessel completely sank down into the ocean, the insides of the entire shuttle suddenly lit up.

Line of dazzling blue light appeared within the interior of the Sea Emperor's Shuttle, creating a dreamlike world. The crystal screen in front of them suddenly became completely clear, seemingly magnifying everything in the outside world and making everything visible.

"How beautiful!" Shangguan Bing'er instantly let out a sigh of amazement as she stared at the blue light around her. No girl could possibly resist this sort of beautiful luster.

Zhou Weiqing's focus, however, was on something else. He had just noticed that after the cabin 'lid' had sealed, the shuttle had instantly stabilized. The waves of the sea didn't seem to have any effect on it at all, nor was there any sort of rocking sensation.

Right at this moment, a smooth crystal globe armrest slowly began to arise between the two. It was located right below Zhou Weiqing's right arm, and he could comfortably rest his entire arm atop it.

Zhou Weiqing was extremely clever. He instantly knew exactly what he had to do. He slowly tested out sending his Saint Energy into the crystal globe, and the scene around them instantly changed once more. The blue light inside the cabin dimmed, but the outside world suddenly lit up. It was night, but they were now able to see everything as clearly as though it was day. This wasn't simple illumination, it was some sort of unique luminescent transformation.

That wasn't all. An even greater marvel appeared in the form of a helmet-like object slowly descending from up above him, coming to a rest over Zhou Weiqing's head. Moments later, the chairs they were seated in began to transform as well. The crystal seats actually seemed to come to life, slowly shrinking as they molded themselves to their two occupants. The seats actually became so connected to them that it was as though they had been 'embedded' into the seats. Not only did they feel extremely stable, the crystal seats actually gave them a soft and comfortable feeling.

"So this is actually a thing?" Zhou Weiqing let out a loud, amazed sigh. Finally, he understood why Shangguan Tianyang had repeatedly emphasized that they had to return this thing to him. He had no idea how this thing had been built, but so long as it wasn't too slow then without question it could be described as a divine instrument for traveling across the seas.

Right at this moment the cold helmet sent a pulse of strange energy into Zhou Weiqing, startling him. A heartbeat later, he discovered to his astonishment that his mind and consciousness had been instantly expanded. It was as though this helmet had some sort of special psychic ripple within it that actually allowed him to link his mind into it.

Zhou Weiqing closed his eyes. He was now able to 'see' everything around himself with even greater clarity, but this time he wasn't just looking at what was ahead of him. It was more like he himself was outside the ship, with 'eyes' covering all 360

degrees around the Sea Emperor's Shuttle. He had no blind spots at all.

With a rumble, a strange new sense entered his mind. In that instant, Zhou Weiqing felt as though the Sea Emperor's Shuttle had transformed into part of his body. The pulse of strange energy had linked up with his mind, making it so that all of the secrets of the Sea Emperor's Shuttle became embedded into his consciousness. He now knew the history of the shuttle and how he was supposed to control it.

Apparently, the Sea Emperor's Shuttle had been fashioned from a Heavenly Core Nucleus harvested from one of the Terror Sea Dragons, the hegemons of the seas. This particular Terror Sea Dragon had been at the Heavenly God stage, and it was at the absolute top of the oceanic food chain. It had been so large that it was actually larger than the two giant dragons Zhou Weiqing had recently met. It had been nearly a thousand meters long! One could imagine how much energy its Core Nucleus contained.

For the sake of fashioning the Sea Emperor's Shuttle, the people of the Xuantian Continent had expended incalculable amounts of resources and manpower. They had first extracted very last bit of the Heavenly Energy from the Terror Sea Dragon's Core, then had begun the manufacturing process. Countless grandmaster artificers had worked together before finally succeeding in creating this unparalleled ocean-crossing 'vessel'. It had been meant for the Xuantian Palace to use, and alongside the Spatial Teleportation Gem they were the most supreme treasures the Xuantian Palace possessed.

When the Xuantian Palace had led people to the Boundless Mainland, they had been planning on fighting a grand war of conquest. However, the Boundless Mainland was far, far more powerful than they had predicted, and in the end they had suffered an utterly crushing defeat. They had only survived and escaped thanks to the Spatial Teleportation Gem, which was able to

teleport them to the location it had locked onto no matter how distant it was. After they fled, the Sea Emperor's Shuttle had been taken away by the Heaven's Expanse Palace as spoils of war. That was why it was now available for Zhou Weiqing to use.

Because the shuttle had been fashioned from the Heavenly Core Nucleus of a Terror Sea Dragon, the aura it emanated in the seas would be enough to cause the vast majority of sea beasts to stay far away from them. The shuttle itself was almost indestructibly tough, and it relied upon a Heavenly Jewel Master's Heavenly Energy to advance. It was incredibly fast, making traversing the seas a completely pain free prospect.

Not just that – the Sea Emperor's Shuttle also included records and maps of the sea within it. These were complete maritime maps which the forces of Xuantian Palace had created as they had travelled to the Boundless Mainland, and so they by following these maps they could avoid getting lost or taking any accidental detours. They would go straight to the Xuantian Continent!

“A divine artifact. This is definitely a divine artifact!” Zhou Weiqing put away his Saint Energy, while the helmet on his head retracted on its own. He didn't explain anything to Shangguan Bing'er, simply asking her to switch positions with him. Once she poured in her Heavenly Energy, she was able to sense everything for herself.

Everyone is filled with curiosity towards new items, especially young people like them. They then switched places again, pouring their Heavenly Energy into the sea maps and activating them. Thanks to the 360 degree vision the helmet provided, Zhou Weiqing was able to see everything around him with absolute clarity. He poured his Saint Energy into the shuttle in accordance with the imprinted mental instructions he had been given, instantly activating this marvelous artifact.

Zhou Weiqing discovered that when he filled the crystal globe with his Saint Energy, it was instantly magnified by the Sea

Emperor's Shuttle . This was the marvelous, powerful effect the Heavenly Core Nucleus of a Heavenly God-ranked Heavenly Beast would have. A light blue stream of fire instantly erupted out from behind the shuttle, sending it shooting through the seas like an arrow.

The Sea Emperor's Shuttle 'swam' through the seas like a fish, with the world around the two still perfectly clear and visible. Thanks to the special abilities of the Sea Emperor's Shuttle, Zhou Weiqing would be able to clearly see everything around him up to a distance of a thousand meters, even if he was in the deepest and darkest parts of the ocean. As for his senses, they stretched out even further.

The seawater almost seemed to be nonexistent for the Sea Emperor's Shuttle. As Zhou Wenqing sent the shuttle hurtling forwards with his mighty Saint Energy, it instantly sped up to an incredible pace which vastly eclipsed the galloping speed of the Ghost Demon Horse.

What was even more marvelous was that very little of Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy was being used! It was only depleting at a very slow, gradual rate. At the same time, the energies of the outside world didn't seem to impede the Sea Emperor's Shuttle at all. Instead it became purer as it went past the Sea Emperor Shuttle, allowing Zhou Weiqing to absorb it and use it to replenish his own Saint Energy. The Water-attribute energy of the sea was even able to transform into air, making it so that the insides of the Sea Emperor's Shuttle didn't feel stuffy at all.

The Sea Emperor's Shuttle was like a giant fish swimming through the seas under Zhou Weiqing's mental control. It was incredibly fast, and the feeling of perfect swimming control was quite refreshing as well. He was like a child who had just discovered a big new toy, and he continuously played around with all of the shuttle's marvelous functions.

Because the Sea Emperor's Shuttle strictly advanced underneath

the surface of the ocean, no events which were occurring above the surface would hinder its speed in the slightest. In the sea, there was no such thing as 'terrain' to worry about, and so they were able to send the Sea Emperor's Shuttle hurtling forward in a straight line as they hastened towards the Xuantian Continent.

After repeated tests, Zhou Weiqing quickly discovered that although there were Heavenly Beasts in the ocean, as soon as they sensed the faint blue aura and light emanating from the Sea Emperor's Shuttle they would swim away in terror. None of them dared to get in the way! Every so often, they would encounter some slower-swimming ocean beasts which were in their way. When this happened, the terrifyingly fast shuttle would almost instantly pierce straight through the beasts without even slowing down. Thanks to the incredibly tough 'shell', they suffered no damage from this whatsoever. As the water continued to surge past them, no traces of the beasts' entrails would be left.

At first, Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er were filled with curiosity towards the ocean. They had perfect visibility within the Sea Emperor's Shuttle, and so they would excitedly stare at the many marvelous scenes the ocean contained. To them, this was all completely new and fresh. The many marvelous sea-dwelling creatures were of particular interest to them. There were so many types of fish and coral reefs, and all of them were mesmerizing.

However, as time flowed on this sense of curiosity began to recede. By the fifth day, loneliness had replaced it.

Yes. When sailing the seas, their greatest enemy was not the sea beasts. It was loneliness.

Chapter 235 Sumeru Ring, Sea Emperors Shuttle (3)

Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er took turns controlling the Sea Emperor's Shuttle, with the other person using the time to train. In the vast and endless sea, time became an all but irrelevant concept. They just continued to advance through the sea in an unchanging straight line, doing and seeing the exact same thing every day. They didn't know how long they had travelled for or how far they had travelled. All they felt was a sense of unending repetition.

Zhou Weiqing really began to celebrate the fact that he had brought Shangguan Bing'er with him on this voyage. If he had to do this alone, he might well have gone crazy from the silence and loneliness. Thankfully, the two of them were able to chat with each other. When the loneliness was too much to bear, they'd 'park' the shuttle on top of the surface of the sea and enjoy the sun. They'd stare at the ocean, resting for a while before continuing their journey.

The amount of Heavenly Energy or Saint Energy they used up was irrelevant, as they had more than enough to keep the Sea Emperor's Shuttle advancing at maximum speed. However, it was becoming harder and harder for them to control their emotions as this sort of life continued.

Five days went past. Ten days. More. By the time they had spent a full month traversing the seas, they felt as though they were about to go mad.

"Bing'er, I can't take this any longer. How much farther away from the Xuantian Continent are we?" Zhou Weiqing complained miserably to Shangguan Bing'er while controlling the shuttle.

Shangguan Bing'er's face was rather ashen as well. She smiled bitterly as she shook her head and said, "All I know is that we've

been out here for ages. Even if we wanted to turn and go back, it would take us forever to return. We must have advanced at least twenty thousand kilometers. Let's continue. Little Fatty, if you really can't take it any longer let's rest for a while on the surface of the sea or take a nice nap."

Zhou Weiqing let out a sigh. "Forget it. Let's keep advancing. I never would've imagined that I would be almost unable to take it despite not having even reached the Xuantian Continent. Thank goodness you are here. If I didn't even have someone I could talk to, I probably wouldn't be able to last long enough reach it."

Shangguan Bing'er smiled warmly, reaching out to take him by the arm and giving him a gentle message. Her warmth against him caused Zhou Weiqing's mood to improve fractionally.

The vast sea was truly boundless, and they had no idea when this would all come to an end. Only now did Zhou Weiqing understand why some people claimed that the ocean was the most powerful of all forces. It was true! Human strength, in the face of nature's might, was absolutely miniscule.

"Little Fatty, why don't we fly in the skies for a while? The Sea Emperor's Shuttle has an automatic guidance system. Even if we go the wrong way, it'll be able to help us find the right path to take."

Zhou Weiqing's eyes lit up. "Great idea! We fly even faster than the Sea Emperor's Shuttle advances, and I'll feel much better with a fresh breeze blowing past me instead of staying inside here." He immediately accepted Shangguan Bing'er's suggestion, sending the Sea Emperor's Shuttle to the surface of the ocean and then removing the octahedral gem.

Once the gem was removed, the 'lid' over the cabin would automatically open while the faint blue light permeating the Sea Emperor's Shuttle would vanish.

Zhou Weiqing unleashed his Dragon-Tiger Transformation,

while Shangguan Bing'er summoned her enormous Wings of the Wind God. They put away the Sea Emperor's Shuttle and soared into the skies together.

The sea breeze blew against them, immediately refreshing their senses. Bathed by sunlight, the two felt much more comfortable than they were previously. They continued to follow the path the Sea Emperor's Shuttle had been taking, and after exchanging a glance they began to accelerate, transforming into streaks of light that advanced at high speed.

Zhou Weiqing was a nine-Jeweled cultivator, but in terms of flying speed Shangguan Bing'er was every bit his match. The Wings of the Wind God were formed from four pieces of God Tier Consolidated Equipment, after all. In terms of raw flying speed, there was probably no equipment which could surpass them.

Although the Sea Emperor Shuttle was extremely fast, you simply couldn't sail through the sea as fast as you could fly through the air. Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er moved through the skies like a pair of blurs, the waves of the sea quickly vanishing behind them as they pressed onwards.

Zhou Weiqing had incredible vision, but all he was able to see was at the horizon was the sea and the sky. The Xuantian Continent remained extremely far away, but the change in travel mode made them at least feel a bit better.

By now, they were deep in the ocean. The waves were all deep blue, and no other living creatures could be seen anywhere. There weren't even any birds flying in the blue skies, which stretched off into infinity. Below them were the endless waves. This feeling of being like an uprooted blade of grass that was just floating in the middle of nowhere was uncomfortable, but they had no other choices. All they could do was advance in a straight line.

As they were continuing to press onwards, a different color suddenly appeared before them in the form of dim light. Zhou

Weiqing was startled when he saw it. He hurriedly called Shangguan Bing'er over, and the two immediately slowed down.

They stared carefully, only to discover that a rainbow had appeared in the distant skies. This dazzling, seven-colored rainbow instantly drew their attention.

"A rainbow! I'm going to go take a look," Zhou Weiqing said happily. This month of utter loneliness and repetition had finally been broken by something new, causing both of them to feel happy. They were in desperate need of something new to break up the monotony and improve their moods. They sped up and soon managed to reach the source of the rainbow.

There was an enormous waterspout here, belching up enormous amounts of water from the surface of the sea which then fell back down. This was what was generating the rainbow. What was even more exciting was the fact that not too far away from the giant waterspout was a great ship.

Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er had seen a few ships when they were in the coastal waters of the Mi Ou Empire, but they were absolutely tiny compared to the great vessel before them. More importantly, a ship meant people! They couldn't help but feel excited at the prospect of seeing other humans.

However, this ship seemed to be in trouble. Streams of light were shooting out from the sides of the ship and blasting into the seas, while the waterspout coming out of the sea seemed to be targeting the ship.

The ship was protected by multiple layers of glowing barriers, making it impossible for the powerful waterspout to damage it. However, the ship was also clearly rather unsteady, and it rocked so heavily on the surface of the sea that it seemed ready to capsize at any moment.

"They've encountered a Heavenly Beast," Zhou Weiqing said.

Shangguan Bing'er responded, "Then what should we do?"

Zhou Weiqing chuckled. "Save them, of course. Bing'er, we're almost free. For us to see a ship here means that the Xuantian Continent can't be far away."

In truth, both of them had underestimated how fast the Sea Emperor Shuttle moved. The shuttle was an absolutely divine artifact when it came to crossing the seas, and it moved far faster than any ordinary ship possibly could. Although they had only been travelling for a month, they had travelled more than thirty thousand kilometers across the ocean. As Zhou Weiqing had said, they were extremely close to the Xuantian Continent now.

If they didn't have the help of the Sea Emperor Shuttle, they probably wouldn't have come this far even if they were given twice as much time. The auto-navigation system of the shuttle ensured that they didn't get lost, after all.

Right at this moment, an enormous ripple suddenly appeared in the seas before them. A dense aura of blue light erupted forth from the area around the giant waterspout, slowly solidifying in midair and then shooting out towards the warship. As this happened, an enormous head slowly began to rise up from beneath the waves.

Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er were in midair and so saw the whole thing clearly. When they saw that enormous oceanic Heavenly Beast, they couldn't help but take deep breaths.

This Heavenly Beast was simply terrifying in size. Its head alone was more than fifty meters in diameter, and it looked like a titanic turtle. After its head appeared, the enormous shell on its back broke the surface of the sea as well, making it look like a small island.

That thick pillar of water was coming from the giant turtle's mouth. Clearly, the turtle was feeling rather impatient. The deep blue light repeatedly slammed against the barriers protecting the ship, causing them to flicker dangerously. They were starting to be

damaged.

This had to be a Heavenly Beast which was at least a high level Heavenly King. Zhou Weiqing had a great deal of combat experience. Although he had never battled an oceanic Heavenly Beast, he was able to judge from the power of its aura as to roughly how strong it was.

“Little Fatty, shall we help them out?”

Zhou Weiqing nodded. “Let’s go give them a hand. However, we can’t fly over to them. As the saying goes, when you meet strangers only tell them 30% of the story. We still need to be cautious. It’s best to keep some things from them. Come, let’s go underneath the sea.” As he spoke, he released the Sea Emperor Shuttle and boarded it alongside Shangguan Bing’er. He affixed the octahedral crystal, causing the shuttle to sink into the sea and the lid to swing shut over them.

After spending more than a month commanding the Sea Emperor Shuttle, Zhou Weiqing was now able to control it like it was part of his own body. He sent the Sea Emperor Shuttle hurtling lightning-fast towards the source of the trouble.

The giant sea turtle suddenly came to a halt, perhaps because it was able to sense the aura emanating from the Sea Emperor Shuttle. It then completely submerged its giant body beneath the waves as it turned to stare at Zhou Weiqing’s direction.

A cold smile flickered across the corner of Zhou Weiqing’s lips. The Sea Emperor Shuttle was no mere tool of transportation. It also had tremendous power in combat. The thirty-six Death Acupuncture Points in his body began to activate, sending an enormous amount of Saint Energy out from his hands and into the Sea Emperor Shuttle.

Instantly, the faint blue glow surrounding the Sea Emperor Shuttle transformed into a gentle silver light. This silver light was able to illuminate a large amount of the sea around them... and

moments later, a barrel-thick beam of silver light erupted from the seas and shot straight towards the sea turtle.

The sea turtle was also one of the lords of the seas. For it to have reached such an enormous size meant that it had already become a Heavenly King-class Heavenly Beast. However, in terms of either power or purity of bloodline, it wasn't even close to being a match for a Terror Sea Dragon.

This is why it had instantly come to a shocked halt when it sensed the Terror Sea Dragon's aura and had immediately dove back into the seas. However, when it saw the Sea Emperor Shuttle it couldn't help but feel puzzled. Terror Sea Dragon's were terrifyingly large, even larger than the turtle itself was, but while the shuttle before him was tiny. Just as it was feeling puzzled, Zhou Weiqing launched an attack against it.

The Saint Energy was multiplied in power by the Sea Emperor Shuttle, unleashing a level of power that was ten times greater than normal. Unfortunately, the Sea Emperor Shuttle was only usable in the sea. Otherwise, if Zhou Weiqing was able to activate it on land he'd probably be able to challenge Heavenly Emperor powerhouses.

The enormous silver beam of light blasted against the sea turtle's enormous body without hesitation. Instantly, a muffled explosion rang out, and the sea turtle's enormous body was sent flipping backwards through the water. The enormous amount of water generated by its giant body flipping backwards actually created an underwater whirlpool! The terrifying whirlpool from this blast spread outwards, causing even the ship above them to continuously spin in circles. Thankfully, this ship was large and steady and thus was not destroyed by the powerful whirlpool.

This Saint Energy blast was incredibly powerful. The giant sea turtle had been alive for many years, and it was no fool. It could sense that it was in danger, and so it didn't hesitate at all, immediately fleeing and diving deeper into the sea.

If it hadn't been for the ship 'waiting' for them up above, Zhou Weiqing probably would've chased the turtle down. With the Sea Emperor Shuttle on his side, he was virtually invincible in the ocean. He might very well have taken this opportunity to Devour the giant turtle's Heavenly Energy! However, that wasn't where his attention was focused right now. The chance to meet other humans and escape the hell of loneliness was clearly much more enticing to himself and Shangguan Bing'er. He simply watched as the turtle fled, then murmured a few words to Shangguan Bing'er before opening up the Sea Emperor Shuttle.

The two soared out from the Sea Emperor Shuttle, put away their treasures, then began to float upwards towards the surface of the sea.

Chapter 236 The Pearl (1)

As the great ship on the surface began to spin around due to the power of the whirlpool below it, the people aboard the ship felt gripped by despair. Although their vessel was not lacking in powerhouses, they were deep in the ocean. They would be doomed if a powerful Heavenly Beast caused their ship to sink. Even Heavenly King powerhouses wouldn't be able to rely on themselves to fly all the way back to land.

However, after the ship spun about for a period of time it actually began to settle down once more. The giant turtle didn't actually launch an attack. What had just happened? Had the big creature chosen to give up on attacking them? Just as everyone was feeling puzzled, they suddenly heard people crying for help.

Floating above the ship was a gray-robed elder who looked like he was seventy or eighty years old. He had been the one controlling and maintaining the barrier protecting the ship. If it hadn't been for him, the ship would've been destroyed long ago. Next to him were ten-plus Heavenly Jewel Masters. When they heard the cries for help, the gray-robed elder immediately waved his hand and said, "Go take a look."

A number of people immediately ran over to the side of the boat and stared towards the ocean waters. They were vaguely able to make out two struggling figures that looked like they were at the verge of drowning.

"Grandmaster Guyu, there's two people in the sea. They look like they can't hold on for much longer," a sailor said hurriedly.

The gray-robed elder named Grandmaster Guyu frowned. "Two people? How could there be humans so deep in the sea? Save them first, I suppose." While speaking, he led his Heavenly Jewel Masters to the side of the boat and stared down as well. He had been worried that they might have encountered enemies in the

ocean, but when he saw Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er the worried look vanished from his face.

This was because he could immediately see how young the two of them were. A Heavenly Jewel Master's power was closely correlated to his age. Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er looked like they were less than twenty years of age. Even if they really were Heavenly Jewel Masters, how strong could they be? The old man immediately waved his hand, having someone throw down a rope to save Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er.

After the two climbed up and reached the decks, they couldn't help but sway and nearly fall. The people of the ship could see that they seemed to be extremely weak. The two of them had actually used Heavenly Energy to make their faces look rather ashen, but in truth the only thing they felt was excitement! Even though they were still on the ocean, the feeling of standing on something solid was absolutely wonderful.

Zhou Weiqing sat down on his rear and said in a sincere voice, "We've finally been rescued. Thank you. Thank you all."

The gray-robed elder looked at the two of them, puzzled. "My young friends, where are you from? Why are you so deep in the ocean?"

Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er had already settled upon a story. He didn't hesitate at all, smiling bitterly as he said: "My humble wife and I had come out to hunt ocean beasts, but our ship accidentally ran into a Terror Sea Dragon. Even though we were merely buffeted by its passing, our ship was completely destroyed. My humble wife and I have been drifting on the sea ever since. Thankfully, we're both Heavenly Jewel Masters and have far stronger bodies than ordinary people. Otherwise, we probably wouldn't have survived for as long as we did. Thank you all for saving our lives."

The gray-robed elder's eyes flickered. "You are also Heavenly

Jewel Masters?” He was the only person who still appeared calm and unperturbed. Everyone else’s faces turned completely ashen when they heard Zhou Weiqing say the words ‘Terror Sea Dragon’. It must be remembered that these creatures were like gods in this vast ocean. Running into one was the same as running into a god of death.

Zhou Weiqing nodded. “Right! My humble wife and I are both Heavenly Jewel Masters, but we’ve depleted a rather large amount of our Heavenly Energy. There’s no way for us to prove it to you right now. I’d like to ask you to bring us back to the continent. We’ll definitely repay you for this.”

While speaking, Zhou Weiqing kept a close look on the others around him. The gray-robed elder had an ordinary-looking face, but his eyes blazed with intelligence. His Heavenly Energy was reserved, but he was definitely a Heavenly King powerhouse. No wonder these people dared to venture deep into the sea. It was because they had a powerhouse like him standing guard over them!

But of course, this was only a preliminary conclusion based on the man’s appearance. While he was inspecting them, they were inspecting him as well. The sincere look of gratitude in his eyes caused their wariness towards him to diminish.

Zhou Weiqing wasn’t putting on a show in that regard. He was sincerely excited to meet these people! Just having other people he could talk to was a wonderful thing. He had spent a long period of time with just Bing’er in the ocean. Now that he had other humans in front of him, he was so happy he could cry. And it must be remembered that he had a very resilient spirit! Someone else might’ve broken down after just ten days.

The gray-robed elder slowly walked towards Zhou Weiqing, then reached out with a shriveled old hand. Zhou Weiqing was briefly startled but quickly understood what the old man intended. He reached out with his own hand as well, allowing the gray-robed man to feel his pulse.

A powerful surge of Heavenly Energy instantly surged from the gray-robed elder's hand into Zhou Weiqing's body, causing it to tremble slightly. The grateful look on his face became even more sincere.

Zhou Weiqing was protected by his Saint Energy and the ring which Tang Xian had given him all those years ago. For him to disguise his true power was simplicity itself. Not even Heavenly Emperors would be able to penetrate his active disguise and discover his true power without actually fighting him, to say nothing of Heavenly Kings.

A look of surprise appeared on the gray-robed elder's face after his quick inspection. "Kid, you aren't bad at all! You are very young but have already reached the five-Jeweled level. Your future potential is limitless! For us to meet here is a form of destiny. Since we've saved you, stay with us for now. Come! Someone give these two a room of their own, then give them some food. We'll talk after they settle in."

"Understood." A sailor immediately walked over, helping them to their feet. Shangguang Bing'er and Zhou Weiqing leaned on each other, stumbling slightly as they walked into the cabin.

When they finally vanished, the middle-aged man next to the old man named Guyu whispered, "Grandmaster, don't they seem suspicious to you?"

Guyu shook his head. "That young man trains in a very just and orthodox type of technique, and he isn't weak. Furthermore, even if our enemies wanted to send someone after me, there's no way they would risk the depths of the oceans to do it. It should be a coincidence. A five-Jeweled cultivation level... even if they come with bad intentions, they won't be able to cause my trouble. We were unlucky on this trip. I can't believe that we actually ran into a beast as terrifying as the Xuanwu Demon Turtle. Still, we've already profited enough on this trip. Order the captain to return."

“Yes, Grandmaster.”

Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er naturally had no idea what these people were doing here. Once they entered the simple cabin they were assigned to, they couldn't help but let out celebratory whoops and hug each other tightly.

Without question, they were now extremely close to the Xuantian Continent. They had even run into other humans! The loneliness they had felt was naught but a distant memory. Given how well he could hide his power, Zhou Weiqing felt certain that these people wouldn't pay too much attention to him. So long as they behaved in an honest and obedient manner, they wouldn't suspect too much. Riding this boat back to the Xuantian Continent was much more comfortable to them than travelling on their own. Besides... even if the people on this ship DID have evil designs, the two weren't afraid.

A short while later, someone came to deliver food to them. It was actually a steaming bowl of fish soup! Zhou Weiqing instantly felt even more well-disposed towards the people on this ship. When he had pretended to be in a dangerous situation, they had taken pity on him and 'saved' him.

The two lay there on the bed, taking a long rest. Although the cabin was rather crude, they were overwhelmed with delight when they saw the crude wood furnishings. This joy came from the very depths of their soul! Oftentimes, we only understand how valuable something is once we lose it.

The skies slowly darkened. Just as the two were about to doze off, someone began to bang on their cabin door.

Zhou Weiqing sat up and opened the door, only to see a young man he had seen earlier during the day standing outside. The young man said, “Come and follow me. Grandmaster Guyu wishes to see you.”

Chapter 236 The Pearl (2)

The youth's tone wasn't all that respectful, but he wasn't rude or distant either. The only thing in his eyes was curiosity when he looked at the two of them.

Zhou Weiqing immediately assented respectfully. When Shangguan Bing'er heard this, she rose as well. The two quickly cleaned themselves up and then exited the cabin.

When the youth saw Shangguan Bing'er after she had put on a change of clean and simple clothes, his eyes nearly popped out and he found it hard to even walk. It wasn't until Zhou Weiqing let out a gentle cough that the youth was awoken from his awe.

The youth hurriedly lowered his now-blushing face, leading the way rather embarrassedly. Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but secretly laugh. The kid had to be a young virgin! Bing'er's beauty was most effective at enticing young male virgins.

When Shangguan Bing'er had first followed Zhou Weiqing all those years ago, she was already quite dazzling. The only difference was that back then she had seemed a bit fresh and immature. As three years had gone by, she had fully blossomed into a truly peerless beauty. Although the three Shangguan sisters were identical, their auras were completely different. Shangguan Bing'er had a soft, gentle quality to her beauty that was the most enticing of the three. Right now, she was dressed in water-green robes and wearing no makeup. She looked like a young orchid, filled with grace and spirituality. Anyone who saw her would feel that her only 'fault' was that the only man in her eyes was Zhou Weiqing. She didn't seem to even notice the way the youth had stared at her just now.

The youth guided Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er into the interior of the ship. This ship was truly enormous, over three hundred meters long and eighty meters wide. Ships of such

enormous size were extremely uncommon in the Boundless Mainland, and they wouldn't even rock when beset by great waves in a storm. They were extremely stable vessels for venturing deep into the ocean. Although this ship couldn't match the Sea Emperor Shuttle in speed, it could hold far more than just one or two people!

The youth continued to guide them deeper into the ship until they finally reached an enormous cabin. This cabin actually had a banquet prepared within it, and the dishes prepared were all rather foreign and exotic to Shangguan Bing'er and Zhou Weiqing. Clearly, they weren't from the Boundless Mainland.

Grandmaster Guyu sat in the main seat, while a serious-faced man who looked to be in his forties sat next to him. Zhou Weiqing didn't see this man earlier during the day, but judging from his clothes he was probably an important member of the crew. It was very possible that he was the captain of the ship.

Three tables had been prepared in total. Aside from the Heavenly Jewel Masters he had seen earlier, the others were probably all important members of the ship's crew.

Guyu beckoned towards Zhou Weiqing and Bing'er, indicating that they were to join him at his table. Zhou Weiqing understood that it was time to put on a play. These people definitely wanted to figure out what their background was.

As soon as he entered, he had put a grateful look upon his face. When it came to acting, Zhou Weiqing was without a doubt one of the top figures in all the Boundless Mainland.

He pulled Bing'er over to Guyu's table, then bowed respectfully. "Grandmaster."

Guyu nodded towards them, indicating that they should sit. The two youths seated below Guyu had appeared earlier in the day, and they couldn't help but stare at Shangguan Bing'er. Although they didn't exactly look 'lascivious', they were pretty close. After

having changed her clothes, Shangguan Bing'er looked like an orchid hidden within a gorge. She put all the other women on this entire vessel to shame.

Shangguan Bing'er didn't even seem to notice their gazes. She simply lowered her head, moving slightly closer to Zhou Weiqing to indicate that every part of her belonged to him.

Guyu's gaze flickered across the two of them. He then smiled and said, "We were in a bit of a rush when we saved you earlier. Can I ask where you are from? Can you tell me a bit more about the disaster which befell you? I'm responsible for this entire ship's safety in this dangerous ocean, after all." His words were quite restrained, but he had made it unmistakably clear that he wanted to know more about Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er's backgrounds.

Zhou Weiqing nodded, a flicker of grief flashing through his eyes. Even Shangguan Bing'er, who knew that he was just putting on a show, couldn't help but feel moved by his incredibly realistic grief. How could the others not do so as well?

"Grandmaster, you and your friends rescued our lives. Of course we have to tell you about ourselves! My humble wife and I came from a small clan located near W'Batu Harbor. We were riding a great vessel when we went out to sea. Our clan fell long ago, leaving behind just myself and my humble wife. We had been hoping to hunt some sea monsters on this trip and claim their Heavenly Cores to make some money and improve our luck.

"We never would've imagined that we'd run into a Terror Sea Dragon, one of the rulers of the seas. I'm not even sure what happened. All I heard was someone scream the words 'Terror Sea Dragon', and in the next instant our ship was completely destroyed. We were fairly lucky, as we were swept away by the waves and sent drifting across the seas. If a few more days went by, we probably would've both died. Oh, right! My name is Zhou Weiqing, while my humble wife is Shangguan Bing'er. We are

tremendously grateful for having been rescued by everyone, and we'll find a way to repay you for saving our lives."

Zhou Weiqing spoke with what could only be described as 'absolute sincerity'. It was perfectly in keeping with his status as a disaster victim, and it also gave a clear explanation as to who he and his wife were. As for W'Batu Harbor, it was one of the other destinations that had been marked within the Sea Emperor Shuttle's maps. The only other name Zhou Weiqing knew was the 'Xuantian Continent' itself, and these people here obviously wouldn't suspect that he was from the Boundless Mainland. For him to simply report W'Batu to skip over this question was more than enough.

When they saw the bitter look on his face and heard him narrate his tale, most of the people present revealed looks of pity. The only one to be unmoved was Grandmaster Guyu. He said calmly, "In other words, you are independent cultivators? Judging by appearances, you are less than twenty years of age. For an independent cultivator of your age to become a five-Jeweled expert couldn't have been easy."

Zhou Weiqing let out a sigh. Not seeming to have heard the suspicions underlying Guyu's words, he explained, "Although my clan has fallen upon hard times, we've never lost our legacies and our cultivation techniques. Grandmaster, how about this? Since you saved our lives, if you wish I can hand over my clan's cultivation techniques to you. This is just a small token of gratitude from the two of us."

If there was anyone else who still felt suspicious of him, their suspicions were now completely allayed by his words. Everyone could sense his absolute sincerity.

In both the Boundless Mainland and the Xuantian Continent, ancestral cultivation techniques were incredibly valuable to any and all Heavenly Jewel Masters. Zhou Weiqing expressing willingness to hand his over was more than enough to demonstrate

his sincerity. Every single person's cultivation technique was unique in its own way, and it could be used to judge many things. For him to not even hold back on something as priceless as an ancestral technique meant that he was essentially laying himself completely bare.

Indeed, when Guyu heard these words his expression instantly became much friendlier. He waved his hand and said, "When we have some spare time, let's spar a little. For you to have reached the five-Jeweled level at such a young age means that you are a promising talent. This old man is willing to give you a pointer or two."

Zhou Weiqing's words were beautifully spoken, but Grandmaster Guyu wouldn't be so easily convinced. If you wish to offer up your techniques, then I'll first see for myself just how your techniques are. Besides, any technique which could allow a twenty-year-old to reach the five-Jeweled stage had to be a decent one.

The hidden verbal exchange between the two was 'invisible', but it was the most dangerous of all confrontations. If something went wrong, the two sides could instantly find themselves enemies. The reason why Zhou Weiqing was able to remain composed was because he truly didn't have any intentions of harming the people aboard this vessel. In addition, even if something did go wrong he didn't have to be afraid. So long as he had the Sea Emperor Shuttle, they would still be able to reach the Xuantian Continent. However, if they reached the continent via this vessel they would have a new, proper identity. They would also be able to learn many things regarding the continent, which would be of great use to them.

The meals on the ship were naturally centered around seafood. Large ships like this would only bring fruits, vegetables, and a small amount of dried meat and grains. The vast majority of their provisions, they had to catch for themselves from the sea. This was the only way for them to continue to sail for extended periods of

time.

However, this rather plain banquet was more than enough to awaken the appetites of Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er. Any sort of hot food would be unspeakably appealing after the month they had spent subsisting on grains! Their very voracity served as another testament to the terrible experience they had suffered at sea.

After the meal, Grandmaster Guyu didn't release Zhou Weiqing. Instead, he invited Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er to his private quarters.

Compared to Zhou Weiqing's residence, Guyu's cabin was much larger and better furnished. This single cabin took up all the space in the ship's highest level, and it even came with its own exercise area. From here, they had a superb vantage point to see the ocean around them.

Shangguan Bing'er waited outside, while Zhou Weiqing was ushered inside the cabin. The two peculiar-looking youths were Guyu's disciples, and they waited outside as well. They tried to strike up a conversation with Shangguan Bing'er and get closer to her. If it had been Shangguan Fei'er who was here, all their secrets would've been revealed in a snap. Bing'er, however, was different. No matter what they said, she simply listened with a smile while saying very little. This simply spurred them on, but they remained quite courteous and didn't act improperly at all.

Roughly an hour later, Grandmaster Guyu let out a startled cry from within his cabin. "This cultivation technique of yours is absolutely suicidal! For you to have reached such a level is just incredibly lucky. 'Immortal Deity Technique'? More like 'Doomed Deity Technique'!"

The door to the cabin swung open. Zhou Weiqing walked out with a rather helpless look on his face, Grandmaster Guyu by his side. Guyu had an absolutely stunned look on his face, and he

couldn't help but stare at Zhou Weiqing strangely.

As soon as Shangguan Bing'er heard this, she knew what had happened. She lowered her head and forced back her laughter as she walked over to stand next to Zhou Weiqing. The cute and reliant way she acted towards him filled the two youths with jealousy.

Guyu let out a long sigh. "Weiqing, this old man has honestly never even heard of a technique like this, nor can I give you any pointers. Go back to your cabin and have a rest. We're already on our way back. If we run into any enemies enroute to the continent, I'll need to ask the two of you to lend a hand."

Zhou Weiqing said respectfully, "Of course." His earlier performance had clearly won him Guyu's acknowledgment, and he was now a member of this vessel's crew.

Next came the long trip back. To the people on the boat, this was an extremely boring trip. All they did was occasionally hunt a few weaker sea beasts to add to their harvests. To Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er, however, this was a far better life than the one they had experienced on the Sea Emperor Shuttle. They didn't need to do anything at all, but they were still headed where they needed to go. Most importantly, they were learning many new things about the Xuantian Continent.

Zhou Weiqing was highly adaptable to any new environment, and he made friends very easily. He quickly began to learn a great deal of information through his conversations with the people aboard this ship.

Chapter 236 The Pearl (3)

The Xuantian Continent was really small compared to Boundless Mainland. It was about half the size of the Fei Li Empire and was much smaller than the Zhongtian Empire. Therefore, it had to rely much more on the sea for resources than the Boundless Mainland did, so when it came to oceangoing vessels they were a far cry from Boundless Mainland.

As for Heavenly Jewel Masters? Xuantian Continent had many sects, but they were different from Boundless Mainland's Great Saint Lands. Xuantian Palace stood alone on Xuantian Continent, and was the cornerstone for the Xuantian Empire's unification of the continent 1,300 years ago. There were no other nations on this continent, while the smaller Heavenly Jewel Master sects existed under Xuantian Palace's graces.

So it was very simple on Xuantian Continent. The Xuantian Empire and Xuantian Palace took center stage, and there wasn't too much quarreling. Xuantian Palace flourished for a time, but with no competition or foreign enemies the Xuantian Empire had also become complacent.

Of course, Zhou Weiqing wasn't really interested in any of that. The most useful information he obtained was about how to join Xuantian Palace.

Xuantian Palace was unsurpassed on Xuantian Continent. There were only two ways to join. The first way was to be selected by the Palace before the age of ten. Once selected you could directly join the Palace, at which point you had to undergo more screening to test your gift for cultivation and the state of your Personal Jewels Awakening. Only the most outstanding youths were given the the opportunity to enter Xuantian Palace's Inner Palace.

There was another way to join Xuantian Palace, but it was different from the Great Saint Lands of Boundless Mainland. The

Palace recruited independent cultivators, possibly because it was not worried about being infiltrated by enemies as it was the only Great Saint Land on Xuantian Continent. Naturally, they only accepted the most outstanding unaffiliated cultivators.

Every year Xuantian Palace held its annual Xuantian Trials.

The Xuantian Trials were first held in each major city in the Xuantian Empire. The top three independent cultivators in each major city were able to participate in the finals held at the capital Heavenly City. There was no set number of independent cultivators who would be admitted to Xuantian Palace each year; it was all determined by their strength and potential.

The first requirement which new admissions were subjected to was the age requirement. Generally speaking, only independent cultivators below thirty years of age were accepted into Xuantian Palace. Of course, they would only be placed in the Outer Palace first, where they would be able to accumulate merit points in order to acquire techniques from Xuantian Palace. If someone with exceptional potential appeared who managed to pass Xuantian Palace's various trials, they would also have a chance to join the Inner Palace.

But of course, the age restriction didn't apply to powerhouses at or above Heavenly King level. All who were at or above the Heavenly King level who wished to join Xuantian Palace would have to undergo a different set of trials. As for what they entailed, Zhou Weiqing wasn't able to find out aboard this vessel.

Without question, Shangguan Bing'er and Zhou Weiqing's ages meant that they could only attempt the 'second' method. To the Heavenly Jewel Masters of the Xuantian Continent, being able to join Xuantian Palace was not only an enormous honor, it was also enormously beneficial. Inner Palace disciples of Xuantian Palace could receive materials needed for Consolidation and Skill Storing without any conditions attached. Even Outer Palace disciples were given countless benefits.

In the Xuantian Continent, all Skill Storing Palaces belonged to Xuantian Palace. One could imagine how unbelievably massive and powerful Xuantian Palace was! Even the selection of each Xuantian Emperor had to be approved by Xuantian Palace.

Zhou Weiqing's target was the Spatial Teleportation Gem. After learning this information regarding Xuantian Palace, he realized that this meant he and Bing'er would become enemies of the entire Xuantian Continent! The difficulty involved in acquiring the Spatial Teleportation Gem was far greater than he had expected.

However, Zhou Weiqing had already thought of a solution. No matter what, he had to first join Xuantian Palace so that he would be proximity to his target. Only upon entering the organization would he have a higher chance of success. Otherwise, he probably wouldn't even be able to find out where the Spatial Teleportation Gem was even located.

The rest of their journey was uneventful, and the ship didn't encounter any difficulties at all. It had a Heavenly King Expert guarding it, after all! So long as it didn't encounter another terrifying sea beast like the giant turtle, it wouldn't be in any real danger.

Zhou Weiqing was an affable person, while Shangguan Bing'er was dazzlingly beautiful. They were quickly welcomed into the ranks of the Heavenly Jewel Masters, who were just as honored here as they were back home. The ordinary sailors didn't dare to show them any discourtesy at all.

This great ship was named 'The Pearl', and it was owned by Grandmaster Guyu himself. Grandmaster Guyu wasn't a member of Xuantian Palace; he was one of the very, very few clan leaders in the Xuantian Continent who ruled a powerful clan and yet was not part of Xuantian Palace.

But of course, all Heavenly Jewel Masters had to subordinate themselves to Xuantian Palace. If he did not, his fate would be

eradication. This particular ocean voyage had been a very profitable one. Their goal was to collect some valuable gifts which they could send to Xuantian Palace, so as to better the chances of their clan's children being granted admission into the Inner Palace.

In the Xuantian Continent, the various clans didn't try to compete in wealth or combat power. Instead, they competed in how highly placed their members were in Xuantian Palace. This odd phenomena was something which did not exist in the Boundless Mainland.

Grandmaster Guyu had been planning on accepting Zhou Weiqing and his wife into his own clan, but after learning about the 'Immortal Deity Technique' which Zhou Weiqing trained in, he gave up on that notion. No clan would be willing to accept and put resources into training someone who could die at any moment due to his own cultivation technique.

Thus, when Zhou Weiqing sought out Grandmaster Guyu and asked him to provide a letter for himself and his wife in support of them taking part in the Xuantian Trials, Guyu immediately agreed.

Zhou Weiqing performed beautifully aboard this vessel. Whenever he encountered middle-ranked ocean beasts, he would immediately fight with all his power to help the ship's defense along with the other Heavenly Jewel Masters. He never asked for the slightest bit of compensation. Each time, he would claim that this was all for the sake of repaying them for saving him. His behavior was perfectly proper, and he gave no excuse for anyone to suspect him of anything. As a result, Guyu was happy to do this favor for him. Zhou Weiqing's 'Immortal Deity Technique' wasn't necessarily guaranteed to result in failure, after all. If he truly did manage to succeed in mastering it, he would become a freakishly powerful figure.

Guyu had no idea, of course, that in the Boundless Mainland which was far larger than the Xuantian Continent, Zhou Weiqing

had long ago become viewed as an absolute freak of nature.

The ship spent a full month on the return journey. Slowly, a dark shore appeared on the distant horizon. They had all been at sea for far too long. Even the Heavenly Jewel Masters aboard the vessel couldn't help but let out whoops of glee when they saw the shore appear. To be able to survive the fickle oceans and come back safely was something worth celebrating for any seafarer.

Zhou Weiqing held Shangguan Bing'er by the hand. They stood on the deck of the ship, staring off into the distance. In this moment, their hearts were filled with boundless heroism as they silently celebrated. Xuantian Continent! We've made it.

An hour later, The Pearl slowly slid into the dock. By the time the ship came to a halt, the wharf had already become filled with countless noisy welcomers.

"Coming back alive is a wonderful feeling." Guyu's voice rang out from behind. Zhou Weiqing turned to look, only to see the Heavenly King powerhouse walk towards him.

During the course of their interactions, Zhou Weiqing had come to have a good impression of Guyu. Guyu was a very reserved senior, but his personality was extremely kind. He was a high-level Heavenly King powerhouse who had no chance of breaking through to become a Heavenly Emperor, but on the Xuantian Continent he was still a true powerhouse of his generation.

"Grandmaster, how could someone as powerful as you fear the ocean?" Zhou Weiqing said with a smile.

Guyu let out a startled laugh. "How could I not fear it? I don't want to be disrespectful, but even the current Palace Lord of Xuantian Palace would be just as cautious when traveling on the oceans."

Zhou Weiqing asked curiously, "Do the members of Xuantian Palace also voyage out into the oceans?"

Guyu nodded. “Of course. The ocean itself is a bottomless vault of treasures. I heard that long ago, when Xuantian Palace was first formed, it actually managed to kill a Terror Sea Dragon which had somehow suffered a heavy injury elsewhere. They made an absolute fortune from its corpse! In fact, it was this matter which jump-started them into becoming the pre-eminent Xuantian Palace which then expanded over the course of many years to their present heights.”

Zhou Weiqing smiled. “Grandmaster, I’m afraid we’re going to have to bid you farewell.”

Guyu nodded. “Stay safe. If things don’t work out at the Xuantian Trials, we’d welcome you here within our clan.”

“Thank you, Grandmaster.” Zhou Weiqing bowed again before leading Shangguan Bing’er off the vessel.

Guyu’s two disciples stood behind him. One of them said, “Teacher, I keep on having the feeling that this Zhou Weiqing fellow is a bit odd. He doesn’t seem to care about anything at all.”

Guyu smiled, nodding in satisfaction. “If you were able to notice that, you’ve improved quite a bit. Even I am unable to see through this youth, to say nothing of you! His background isn’t as simple as what he claimed. However, as far as we should be concerned, an extra friend is always better than an extra enemy.”

Zhou Weiqing had no way of knowing what Guyu’s evaluation of him was. He just led Shangguan Bing’er off the boat, then squeezed his way past the thronging crowd at the docks.

Whenever a great long-distance vessel such as The Pearl came back safely from a voyage, it would come laden with spoils. The countless people waiting at the docks were almost all merchants who wanted to try and buy some precious items from the vessel, then resell it at a higher price.

After squeezing past the grounds, Zhou Weiqing led Shangguan

Bing'er into this coastal city. The feeling of dry land underfoot was absolutely wonderful! They were once more able to sense the deep, rich Earth-attribute energy pulsing through the ground below them, and it felt like it had been ages since they had last done so.

“I really want to cast everything away and just stay here at the Xuantian Continent. No one recognizes us here, and I don't have to worry about all of those troublesome matters,” Zhou Weiqing said.

Shangguan Bing'er glanced at him, a not-quite smile playing around her lips. “Could you really bear to?”

Chapter 237 XuanTian Trials (1)

“Uh...” Zhou Weiqing swallowed hard. “Let us enter the city to look for the place where they are holding the XuanTian Palace Trials. Master Gu Yu said that the W'Batu City would have a place holding the trials.”

Shangguan Bing'er just smiled faintly at our dear Zhou Little Fatty's awkward and unsubtle changing of topics; she didn't call him out on it. Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but hold her hand tighter. Bing'er was always so thoughtful like that.

W'Batu City was a port city, and it was also the final destination transcribed on the maritime maps in the Sea Emperor Shuttle. They were feeling great now that they had finally reached their destination and actually stepped onto the XuanTian Continent.

The first thing Zhou Weiqing did was purchase a map of the continent. He did not have any XuanTian Continent currency, but Heavenly Cores were treasures everywhere. After selling a few Zun Stage Heavenly Beast Heavenly Cores, he had enough money for both himself and Shangguan Bing'er to spend for quite some time.

After wandering around idly in the city for a time, Zhou Weiqing discovered that it was actually pretty similar to the Boundless Mainland in many ways. Besides a few minor differences in attire, he could not see any other differences.

After looking for an inn to stay in, they simply asked around and quickly gained news about the XuanTian Trials.

W'Batu City was after all an important port city, and how could such a large and populated city miss out on holding the trials. It seemed like they were in luck, as this year's trial for the W'Batu City would be held in a month's time.

After learning about all the news, Zhou Weiqing decided to go into closed door cultivation for the duration. During this long

journey on the ocean, although they had not really faced any true danger, both he and Shangguan Bing'er had undergone several trials of their own, and they had their own individual understandings and comprehensions, leading to some increase in cultivation. It was a good opportunity for them to use this time to fully comprehend these understandings and merge them with their own cultivation.

Naturally, Shangguan Bing'er also began cultivating with Zhou Weiqing. By now, the Saint Energy in her body was full, and with Zhou Weiqing by her side to support her, she could actually directly use the Saint Energy in her training and cultivation. Once she used up a certain amount of Saint Energy, Zhou Weiqing could easily infuse some into her once more. This allowed Shangguan Bing'er's cultivation speed to rise rapidly. After only three days of cultivating, she had already broken through to the seven-Jeweled stage.

As for Zhou Weiqing, his own cultivation speed was just as quick as before. Although the Immortal Deity Technique was complete, the improvement of his Saint Energy did not show any signs of slowing down. In the process of gathering, transforming and cleansing, his cultivation seemed to grow naturally. At this point, his Saint Energy was already barely a step from the thirty seventh stage.

However, due to the fact he had completed the Immortal Deity Technique and did not have another cultivation technique, Zhou Weiqing still did not know how he would actually break through the thirty seventh stage. He could only continue growing, improving and gathering, hoping that in the process his Saint Energy would automatically breakthrough.

...

A month passed in the blink of an eye. Besides cultivating, both Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er would sometimes go out for walks to experience life in the new continent and to better

understand it.

Their closed door cultivation was indeed effective. In the past month, with the powerful aid of the Saint Energy, Shangguan Bing'er had managed to increase her cultivation by another level, directly reaching the twenty ninth stage. As for Zhou Weiqing, though he was not able to break through to the thirty seventh stage, after a month of meditation and comprehension, his Saint Energy had not only increased in amount but also quality, further compressed and purified. His own understanding towards the Saint Energy and its usage had also deepened. At this point, it seemed like there was just a mere paper thin barrier between him and the thirty-seventh stage, but Zhou Weiqing still did not know how he could puncture that barrier. However, he was extremely clear that as long as he continued improving and accumulating, he would definitely succeed eventually.

In the central square of W'Batu City, it was a big day for them, an annual event of sorts. The W'Batu Governor was already seated on the main platform. A stage which had been built temporarily for the trials was now surrounded by a crowd of excited onlookers, and it was only the presence of a large number of soldiers that maintained order.

“Governor, this is the name list of this year’s trial participants,” a servant reported, handing over a paper.

The W'Batu Governor Sang Tan received the list, but he did not even look at it. Instead, he passed it respectfully to an old man seated next to him. “Master Er Chun, for your perusal if you wish.”

“En.” The elder named Er Chun was wearing a blue robe with a silver crescent symbol embroidered on the left breast.

Opening the list, Master Er Chun swept his gaze through it swiftly before saying passively: “There are more than a hundred participants who have registered for these trials... that is far too many. Pass the order down: only those who are four-Jeweled and

above need stay; the rest will be disqualified.”

Sang Tan started momentarily before saying in an awkward tone, “Master... are you sure that’s okay? Previously, our rules stated that the participating limit was three-Jewels!”

Er Chun glared at him coldly, and Sang Tan instantly felt a cold chill run down his spine. “This Elder does not wish to waste so much time here. You just need to announce that this is the decision made by our XuanTian Palace. Do you think our XuanTian Palace needs to answer to those little independent cultivators? If their power is insufficient, what’s the point of joining the trials?”

“Yes, yes.” Sang Tan wiped away the sweat on his forehead, as he thought to himself inwardly. Of course your XuanTian Palace isn’t afraid, but I’m just the W’Batu Governor, I’m still afraid of these Heavenly Jewel Masters causing trouble!

The selection process for the XuanTian Trials was extremely harsh, and Physical Jewel Masters and Elemental Jewel Masters were rejected outright, with only Heavenly Jewel Masters allowed to participate. Originally, the criteria was for them to be below the age of thirty, and at the three-Jeweled stage or higher. This was already considered very strict prerequisites, yet they were now increasing it to the four-Jeweled stage! How could the independent cultivators not be resentful? Of course, they wouldn’t dare do anything about the resentment; after all who dared to offend the XuanTian Palace?

Indeed, after the news was proclaimed, it caused a large disturbance among the participants. Several of the young three-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Masters who were confident in their strength, Consolidated Equipment and Stored Skills were all complaining. After all, they had already paid to register for the Trials. Of course, just as the W’Batu Governor Sang Tan imagined, though they were dissatisfied and complaining, none of them dared to actually cause trouble. They would not dare offend the XuanTian Palace. This Master Er Chun seated beside Sang Tan was

merely the representative for the XuanTian Palace in their W'Batu City, yet his arrogance was already so high that his chin was almost touching the sky!

Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er were currently in the crowd of participants. Hearing the dissatisfied voices around them, Zhou Weiqing spoke in voice-transference to Shangguan Bing'er. "It looks like although this XuanTian Palace is extremely powerful in the XuanTian Continent, they do not own the hearts of the populace!"

Shangguan Bing'er replied in a similar fashion. "This is natural. Since the XuanTian Palace is so powerful that they have a monopoly, their disciples and subordinates will definitely be extremely arrogant. How could they gain the hearts of the normal populace? However, since they are suppressed by power, these folk will only dare be angry but not speak out or take action. Even so... if the XuanTian Palace does not take care and continues on this path, the XuanTian Empire could possibly fracture from within."

After the proclamation, the original number of participants of more than a hundred had shrunk by more than half, with only slightly more than thirty remaining.

On the VIP platform, Sang Tan asked Er Chun, "Master, can we begin now?"

Er Chun did not even move his head, just grunting out an "En".

Only then did Sang Tan stand up to proclaim, "Our annual XuanTian will officially begin now. Powerhouses of W'Batu City, please display your strongest prowess, and work hard to enter the finals and the chance to enter the Heavenly City! Alright, the first round shall begin, the Heavenly Energy test."

On the contestant stage, workers had carried in five stone pillars, each about one metre tall. On top of each pillar was a transparent crystal. Clearly, this was for the purpose of testing the participants' Heavenly Energy.

On the VIP platform, Master Er Chun slowly stood up. In a somewhat ‘show-off’ fashion, he strode into the air before landing on the stage. As soon as he appeared, the entire audience fell silent.

This arrogant elder put his hands behind his back as he instructed passively, “Those participants at the four-Jeweled stage and above, take turns to undergo the Heavenly Energy examination. Begin, five at a time. We will record the strength of your Heavenly Energy.”

Along with his entrance, a middle-aged man dressed in similar blue robes walked out from the side. If one examined both closely, the symbol embroidered on his chest was a silver star, and his status was clearly below that of Master Er Chun. He was holding a large book in his hands, which looked to be used for recording purposes.

Very quickly, the remaining thirty-odd participants began to ascend the stage in fives, led by assigned personnel.

Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing’er were both positioned at the back. As they watched, the first batch of five ascended the stage. As soon as the middle-aged man gave the order, the five of them immediately circulated their Heavenly Energy.

Instantly, the five crystals on the pillars lit up, giving forth a faint white light. As more Heavenly Energy poured into them, the white light slowly rose. By now, they could all see the differences. The white light would rise to a higher level for those with higher cultivation levels.

This continued for almost five more minutes, at which point the columns of white light were no longer rising. The one-starred XuanTian Palace executive member who was recording the results waved his hands, indicating that their exam was over. Soon, the second batch of five ascended the stage, undergoing the same test.

Zhou Weiqing smiled as he spoke to Shangguan Bing’er in a low tone, “That is rather interesting, to go through a Heavenly Energy

examination. However, if it's just a normal test on Heavenly Energy, it is still insufficient to determine how powerful a Heavenly Jewel Master is. I guess that there will be other tests after this."

Shangguan Bing'er nodded and was about to reply when all of a sudden, a disharmonious voice rang out from behind them. "Even if there are other tests, it will not have anything to do with people like you. You will never be selected."

This voice was rather sharp and piercing, giving them a very uncomfortable feeling. Zhou Weiqing's brow furrowed as he turned his head, only to see a youth of over twenty years of age, drooling as he stared at Shangguan Bing'er's pert buttocks. When he saw Zhou Weiqing turn to look at him, he immediately raised his head in an extremely arrogant fashion.

A cold light flashed in Zhou Weiqing's eyes before disappearing, but his face maintained its smile. "What do you mean by those words? We have not even gone through the examination; how would you know our cultivation isn't sufficient to be selected?"

Chapter 237 XuanTian Trials (2)

The youth was not very tall, only around 1.7 metres in height. He was skinny, with sunken eyes and almost greenish eye bags. His looks were actually decent, but any discerning person would be able to tell that this was a youth who had overindulged in debauchery. Previously, Zhou Weiqing had not even noticed him, and he could not imagine that such a person could actually attend the XuanTian Trials.

“What is there to know or not, this Young Master here will definitely be selected. You both aren’t locals right, otherwise you will definitely know who this Young Master is.”

Even as he was speaking, his perverted eyes were fixed upon Shangguan Bing’er, roving up and down her body. Alas, he did not know that this was already rubbing against Zhou Weiqing’s ‘reverse scale’.

Zhou Weiqing maintained his curious look as he said: “Isn’t the XuanTian Trials all about selecting talents for the XuanTian Palace? Everything depends on power, what has that got to do with status?”

The youth gave a disdainful humph, ignoring Zhou Wieqing totally. Instead, he grinned at Shangguan Bing’er and said: “Heh, this beauty here, you are looking good! After the trials are over, how about I treat you to a meal? This year’s selection quota have already been fixed, and you do not have any chance. However, you are still young, as long as I help you prepare in advance, you might have a chance next year. My father is the Governor of this City, and my name is Sang De. Let us get to know each other more.” As he said that, he actually reached out his hand in an attempt to hold Shangguan Bing’er’s hand.

He was successful in holding a hand. Alas, it was not Shangguan Bing’er’s small hand, but a large and powerful hand. Zhou

Weiqing's smiling face appeared right in front of him, shaking his hand vigorously as he said happily: "Oh, it is actually the Young Master of the Governor, forgive me for my ignorance."

"Bastard! Let go of my hand!" Sang De tried his best to pull his hand out, but realised that Zhou Weiqing's large hand was like a steel vice. No matter how much he circulated his Heavenly Energy, it was as if a clay oxen going into the sea, never to return. He found no matter what he did, he was unable to pull his hand out. Instead, Zhou Weiqing's hand continued tightening his grip, and soon an acute pain began to travel from his hand.

Right at that moment, a stern voice rang out. "What are you all doing, it is your turn to ascend the stage and take the test."

In the time that they spoken, several groups of five had already completed their tests, and it was their turn.

Only then did Zhou Weiqing release Sang De's hand. After all, this was their territory. More importantly, they needed to pass the XuanTian Trials to enter the XuanTian Sect. As such, he held himself back from exacting revenge. Of course, with Zhou Weiqing's character, he would definitely not let this Sang De go so easily.

Besides the three of them, there were still two others in front of them who would join them in the group of five. As they ascended the stage, each of them stood in front of a stone pillar.

That Master Er Chun stood there all along, his face impassive and expressionless, his hands behind his back as he did not even watch the participants closely. It was as if all of this had nothing to do with him.

As the personnel gave the sign to begin, the five of them began infusing their Heavenly Energy into the transparent crystal before them.

Zhou Weiqing did not rush to circulate his own Heavenly Energy,

instead turning his head to look at Sang De. To his surprise, this Sang De's Heavenly Energy level was not low, even with his body that was hollowed out by debauchery, he was still actually at the five-Jeweled stage. White light rose steadily in front of him.

Zhou Weiqing smirked to himself inwardly, knowing that for such a fellow, it was highly likely his Heavenly Energy was not fully cultivated by himself. Although the white light rose rather rapidly, it was clearly mixed and impure, a little weak and unstable even. That could only prove that his Heavenly Energy was most likely either raised with the help a lot of medicines, or with some experts using unique means to raise his cultivation level externally. Such a method was undoubtedly able to raise his cultivation level quickly, but it was detrimental to him in the long term. Everything else aside, it was probable that he would not even be able to pass the threshold between the Zun Stage and Zong Stage in the future.

Zhou Weiqing turned his head again, giving an imperceptible nod to Shangguan Bing'er on the other side. At the same time, he began to transform his Saint Energy into Heavenly Energy, slowly infusing it into the crystal, causing the white light from his crystal to begin catching up with Sang De. However, he did not overdo it, only releasing sufficient Heavenly Energy to maintain his position to be slightly higher than Sang De as they both raised up.

Right at that moment, Shangguan Bing'er's eyes flashed brightly, as a powerful Heavenly Energy reverberation burst forth from her body. A mass of shocked cries rose from the audience as they witnessed the ray of white light burst forth from the crystal in front of her at a shocking speed, the thick white light instantly surpassing the other four all the way to an unprecedented five metre height. With a sudden loud Peng, the crystal in front of her actually shattered, unable to withstand the massive Heavenly Energy.

Previously Er Chun was still impassive and unmoved, but he was

given a fright by the sight before him. Staring at the shattered crystal, he couldn't help but exclaim: "S-seven Jewels!?"

Currently, his expression no longer held that arrogance, as he looked at Shangguan Bing'er with a shocked gaze.

This young lady looked to be no older than twenty years or so, yet she already had reached a height of seven Jewels? How was that possible? Even for those young talents cultivated from young in the XuanTian Palace, they might not even have such a power right?

How could he know that Shangguan Bing'er's cultivation level was also considered the cream of the crop even amongst the younger generation of the entire Boundless Mainland. Although the XuanTian Continent was powerful, with the existence of a Great Saint Land like the XuanTian Palace, when it was compared to the Boundless Mainland, there was still some difference.

Shangguan Bing'er withdrew her tender small hands, smiling gently as if she had done something insignificant.

At this point, the radiance she emitted totally eclipsed all the other participants. A seven-Jeweled cultivation stage, in the history of the XuanTian Trials, it was not that this had never happened before, but it was definitely extremely rare. Even when it did, it was usually only at the final stages which was held in the Heavenly City, not a preliminary trial of a outskirts city. More importantly, those were usually powerhouses who were extremely close to the age of thirty. Not only was Shangguan Bing'er extremely beautiful, she looked like an ordinary young lady of twenty who was defenseless. With such a stark contrast to her powerful cultivation level, how could it not increase the shock value?

Taking a deep breath, Er Chun nodded to Shangguan Bing'er, saying: "May I ask, young lady, what is your name?"

Shangguan Bing'er smiled as she replied: "My name is

Shangguan Bing'er."

Hearing her name, Er Chun discovered he had no impression of such a name, and he could only nod without saying anything else. However, deep in his heart, he was feeling rather awkward.

Just like what Sang De had bragged about earlier, the current Trials that were being held were no more than a sham, a mere formality. In truth, Er Chun had already fixed the three selected participants under the table. Of course, that was because those three had already given more than sufficient bribes to him, and only those who had given the most would be given the positions. These people were not fools, as long as they could enter the XuanTian Palace, even if it was just an outer disciple, not only would they profit from it, just with the increase in status alone, would they be afraid of recouping those bribes?

Zhou Weiqing had his own plans in having Shangguan Bing'er reveal her true strength. After all, she was unable to control the appearance her own cultivation like he could, and instead of trying to hide things and invoke suspicion, they might as well show her cultivation. In this way, with the talents that Shangguan Bing'er had shown, they would be able to quickly enter the inner core of the XuanTian Palace. This would be a great benefit to them gaining the Spatial Teleportation Gem.

This was just the first step in Zhou Weiqing's plan. Whenever he acted, he usually only did so after proper planning, and all the future steps had already been arranged.

Very quickly, all of the participants had completed their Heavenly Energy examination.

Er Chun swept his gaze over the participants before he said impassively: "The top ten of the Heavenly Energy will go on to the second round. Announce their names."

As soon as he spoke, the participants burst into an uproar.

It had to be known that most of the participants had nearly the same cultivation level, and it was definitely unfair to just determine their suitability from Heavenly Energy cultivation alone. Furthermore, this was not the original rules of the trial!

“Master Er Chun, that isn’t proper right? Heavenly Energy is just one facet of the power of Heavenly Jewel Masters, and it can’t represent everything! Furthermore, according to the rules of the XuanTian Trials, the Heavenly Energy Examination should only to see if we have the qualification, not an actual elimination round.” One of the participants piped out.

Er Chun glared angrily at him. “Do you think this Elder needs you all to teach me how to do things? Each area has its own method of doing things, its own rules. In the W’Batu City, my rules are the rules of the W’Batu City. Remove his name.”

Instantly, the crowd was silenced. Although their feelings were still tempestuous, no one else dared to speak out.

“Do you see now, it is useless. No matter how strong you are, you will not be able to gain the selection spot.” Sang De stood by Zhou Weiqing’s side as he spoke mockingly. However, this time, he dared not use the same gaze to look at Shangguan Bing’er. The power she had displayed was far too terrifying for him. Although his father was the governor, he would not dare offend a Heavenly Jewel Master who had already entered the Zong Stage, especially one so young.

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily, nodding to Sang De as he said: “Let us wait and see then.”

Soon after was the proclamation of the ten names who would be able to enter the next round of selection trials. Naturally, Shangguan Bing’er would be in the list. As for Zhou Weiqing, he had maintained the appearance of his Heavenly Energy to be slightly higher than Sang De, and was still amongst the top few of the remaining ten. Besides that, Sang De had proven his words to

be accurate, smoothly entering the top ten without any problems.

As the ten stepped onto the stage to form a single row in front of Er Chun, the youngest there were clearly Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er. If anything, Zhou Weiqing's looks were actually more mature than his actual age.

Er Chun said passively: "If anyone thinks that my rules are not fair, you can choose to withdraw. If your Heavenly Energy isn't even able to reach the top ten, what right do you have to complain? Indeed, Heavenly Energy is just one facet when evaluating a Heavenly Jewel Master, but it is also the root of all Heavenly Jewel Masters. Without a strong Heavenly Energy at your core, even if you have some powerful Stored Skills, can you unleash it properly? There are only three positions, naturally I will be choosing them from those who have a good cultivation level and strong talents. Next, this Elder will be personally testing each of you ten."

Chapter 237 XuanTian Trials (3)

“If we use the original method of drawing lots to fight, not only will it take much longer, it can also be unfair due to the factor of luck in terms of drawing lots. This Elder would rather suffer a little to ensure the fairness of the XuanTian Trial. If anyone else dares question my decisions, you will be punished for being disrespectful to the XuanTian Palace.”

Er Chun’s voice was slightly overcast, filled with pressure. Towards the Heavenly Jewel Masters, this pressure was negligible, but to the common audience, it was more than enough. As soon as he finished speaking, the audience thought about it and felt he did make sense. Very soon, the discussion and dissent stopped naturally.

Er Chun motioned for the first participant to come before him, saying passively: “Later on, all of my testing will be the same. No matter what Skill you use, as long as you can receive a palm strike from me without falling off the stage, you will have passed the second round. If in the end, only three people succeed, then they will be the final three who will be selected. If more than three pass, then they will enter the third round.”

The ten participants all nodded to show they understood. Er Chun nodded towards the youth in front of him in a magnanimous fashion, indicating he should prepare himself.

Naturally, the youth did not dare to be careless. He was at the five-Jeweled stage, and he quickly released four pieces of Consolidated Equipment. As an independent cultivator, it was already not easy to get so many Consolidated Equipment. Once he had finished his preparation, he faced Er Chun, fully focused.

“Be careful.” Er Chun took an abrupt step forward, his Heavenly Jewels appearing around his wrists, nine of them glowing brightly. Without any further flourishes, he sent a straight punch flying

towards the youth.

The youth quickly blocked, unleashing an ice shield instantly, circulating all of his Heavenly Energy in a mighty effort.

PENG A muffled thump, and the ice shield shattered. At the same time, the youth's body flew back, landing directly on the ground outside of the stage.

On the side of the stage, Zhou Weiqing's mouth curled in a smirk, almost laughing out loud.

Such minor trickery, perhaps it could fool commoners, but how could it escape his eyes, that of a skilled actor and con man himself? On the surface, this test might seem fair, but was it really?

This Er Chun's power was not bad at all, at the Upper Level Zong Stage currently. However, with his nine-Jeweled power against a five-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master, could anyone really block a single blow from him? As for how much Heavenly Energy and strength he put behind the blow, wasn't it all up to him?

Under such a circumstance, there was no true 'fairness' at all, not even a single bit. Sang De's words previously, Zhou Weiqing totally believed it now. Of course, he had not expected that the XuanTian Palace would have become so corrupt and degenerate to such a degree. In comparison, the five Great Saint Lands of the Boundless Mainland would never allow such a thing to happen, and the situation was far better in that sense. At least, he had never personally heard of the five Great Saint Lands having such occurrences.

A single fist, a single punch. One after the other. In a matter of moments, four of the participants had already been knocked off the stage.

When it reached the fifth person, the situation changed abruptly. This was a youth that looked rather unassuming. As Er Chun

punched out, he staggered back several steps, but in the end he managed to barely stabilize himself just a metre away before he fell off the stage.

A faint smile flashed across Er Chun's face as he nodded, saying: "Not bad at all, a decent method of transforming and dissipating power. You have passed."

Zhou Weiqing's face twitched slightly. He almost couldn't help himself to scold out "What a damn fake!" Luckily, he managed to restrain himself in time.

Sixth was that Sang De's turn, while Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er were respectively placed in the eighth and seventh position.

As expected, Sang De also managed to 'accept' a fist without being sent flying, even performing better than the previous youth by a metre, gaining Er Chun's "smile" before being allowed to stay on the stage.

At last, it was Shangguan Bing'er's turn, and everyone's gaze, audience and participants alike, fell upon Er Chun. At the side, Zhou Weiqing watched with a spurious smile on his face. He truly wanted to see how this old fox Er Chun would deal with the 'problem' of Shangguan Bing'er. After all, she had already displayed the power of her seven-Jeweled cultivation, and out of all the other participants besides her, there weren't even any with six Jewels.

Er Chun looked at Shangguan Bing'er, and a sudden smile spread across his face as he said: "Lady Shangguan, being able to cultivate to the seven-Jeweled stage at such a young age, your talent must be extremely outstanding, and you definitely deserve a position. However, since Lady Shangguan's cultivation has far surpassed all of the ordinary participants, thus this Elder has decided to make an exception for you to have an additional guaranteed spot. Please wait below the stage, you will not need to continue joining the

further trials.”

Shangguan Bing'er started momentarily, and she couldn't help but look towards Zhou Weiqing.

On the other hand, Zhou Weiqing smiled broadly. This Er Chun was no fool either! In front of so many people, he dared not make his acting too obvious.

Sure enough, once the crowd heard Er Chun's words, even those who were harbouring feelings of dissatisfaction were not able to retort. Similarly, Shangguan Bing'er received a signal from Zhou Weiqing to follow Er Chun's instructions and head off the stage.

It was time for the eighth participant, and naturally that was Zhou Weiqing, with the last two behind him.

Er Chun had seen the signals between Shangguan Bing'er and Zhou Weiqing, but his expression remained impassive.

“Are you ready?” Er Chun asked Zhou Weiqing emotionlessly.

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: “I am ready, please go ahead.”

Er Chun looked at him with some surprise. That was because Zhou Weiqing had just casually replied him without even showing any signs of preparations at all. He had not even summoned a single piece of Consolidated Equipment.

Er Chun gave a cold smirk inwardly, but did not say anything. Similarly, he took a step forward, his fist careening towards Zhou Weiqing.

This time, the punch of his was filled with Heavenly Energy. Outwardly, it did not seem to have much power and presence behind it, but as the fist flew towards him, Zhou Weiqing could sense the powerful stress upon his chest, causing him to momentarily feel difficulty breathing.

Such an attack, let alone an ordinary five-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master... perhaps even one with a seven-Jeweled cultivation

might be sent flying from this punch. The difference in Heavenly Energy was just too huge.

A faint smirk crossed Zhou Weiqing's lips. Facing Er Chun's fist, he replied with a single slap of his palm.

PENG A loud sound rang out, and a sight occurred that caused everyone to stare in shock, jaw agape. Accompanying the explosive sound was the sight of Zhou Weiqing standing there, unmoved. Er Chun's fist had actually been slapped away by Zhou Weiqing's palm strike.

"En?!" Er Chun was given a huge shock. Once again, he looked towards Zhou Weiqing just to reaffirm he was not imagining things. Five Jewels... It really was five Jewels! As he looked upon Zhou Weiqing's wrist, he saw that it truly was five sets of Heavenly Jewels.

How could this be? He subconsciously wanted to punch out again, but Zhou Weiqing said: "Master, does that mean I have passed this round?"

Only then did Er Chun stop himself from punching out once more. With a curious look on his face, he asked Zhou Weiqing: "Young man, how did you manage to do that?" After all, that punch of his just now was not holding back like the others who had 'passed'.

Zhou Weiqing gave him a wide smile as he said: "Master, my physical strength has always been larger than normal. In the past, my folks back home always said I was born with superhuman strength."

Er Chun couldn't help but scold inwardly, but he did not think much further about it. After all, Zhou Weiqing had come together with that genius girl Shangguan Bing'er, and it was not suspicious at all that he had some unique qualities of his own. Nodding to him, he did not continue speaking to Zhou Weiqing, instead continuing the exam.

This was only the second round after all, and Er Chun did not believe that this variable, Zhou Weiqing, could foil his plans.

For the last two participants, one was eliminated, while one remained. Without needing to think, Zhou Weiqing understood that besides himself, the three remaining participants should have been ‘fixed’ long ago.

Er Chun looked at the four remaining on the stage, especially giving Zhou Weiqing a deep meaningful look. At last, he said: “Since you four have passed the second round, we will have to go on to the third round. In the previous round, you have all succeeded in blocking this Elder’s single punch, but that doesn’t mean you will succeed a second time. This third round will be similar to the second round, with this Elder personally take charge of the exam.”

Once again, the first two participants smoothly accepted Er Chun’s ‘attack’, and it was Zhou Weiqing’s turn once more.

Zhou Weiqing smiled as he looked at this so-called Master. Facing Zhou Weiqing, Er Chun’s expression was normal, as if everything was going on in a fair manner. He even specially told Zhou Weiqing: “Young man, be careful now.”

“Master, please.” Zhou Weiqing smiled as he said.

A cold light flashed in Er Chun’s eyes as he took a step forward, punching forward with his right fist directly towards Zhou Weiqing’s chest. An icy cold aura burst forth from his fist, but strangely the cold was concentrated and focused, not spreading out at all. It was as if an invisible field of ice was surrounding his fist as he smashed hard towards Zhou Weiqing’s chest.

A Skill? This old fellow actually activated a Skill against me? To be able to hide it so well, damn, he is truly a talent in his own right! Zhou Weiqing couldn’t help but think as he watched the incoming fist, the smile on his face unchanging. In an exact copy of his previous reaction, his palm slapped out once more.

PENG

Another massive explosion. This time, even Er Chun was totally stunned. That was because his fist was once again slapped away by Zhou Weiqing, who remained standing there as if nothing had happened, not even moving an inch.

“Thank you Master for being lenient.” Zhou Weiqing said cheerfully.

Er Chun looked at Zhou Weiqing. At last, he was finding it hard to tolerate as his face clearly turned cloudy. This young man was not simple at all, wasn't that strength just too overbearing? That punch earlier, he had even used eighty percent of his might, and even though he had hidden his Skill, causing some of its power to be lost, he was confident that even a seven-Jeweled powerhouse would not be able to take that blow easily. This inborn superhuman strength... wasn't it just too much?

In truth, Zhou Weiqing did not use much Heavenly Energy, keeping it at the five-Jeweled stage. However, do not forget that his physical strength had long since reached a terrifying level. His physique had always been far superior to any Heavenly Jewel Master, with the bloodlines of the Dark Demon God Tiger and the Dragons, the nine-Jeweled cultivation stage, Demonic Change State and having evolved several times due to the Saint Energy... all of these boosts added together had allowed his pure physical strength to reach a tyrannical level. As for the hidden Ice Attribute inherent in Er Chun's attack, in front of Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy, what could it possibly do?

With a gloomy look on his face, Er Chun continued the exam on the fourth participant. Naturally, it was another pass.

Four participants. Surprisingly, there were still the same four remaining on the stage, yet there were only three selection spots. Two consecutive rounds, yet these four had still remained. At this point, even if the audience did not find anything strange about it,

those Heavenly Jewel Masters below began to find something odd about it.

If one were to look on the surface appearance of things, the one which looked the most ‘fake’ was definitely Zhou Weiqing’s test. After all, both times he had not even moved a single step in receiving the attack. However, in the eyes of the perceptive, such an overly obvious fake instead looked to be the real one. After looking at the other three participants besides Zhou Weiqing, very quickly their identity and status were recognized.

Chapter 238 Instant Kill! (1)

One was the governor's son, another was the son of the W'Batu Financial Chief and the last fellow was the son of a great merchant. Not only did the Heavenly Jewel Masters below the stage recognize their identity, they were also aware of the strength of these three. After calming down, they became quite puzzled. Why was it that these three guys with such different battle capabilities could stay on the stage?

Er Chun's expression became quite unsightly. He naturally knew that the longer this went on, his sham regarding the trial selection would be easily exposed. Alas, there was nothing he could do. He used eighty percent strength earlier with that fist. For the guise of fairness, he simply couldn't use more heavenly power because the spectating Heavenly Jewel Masters weren't fools. Even though the XuanTian Palace on this continent had supreme authority, his own position wasn't that high, nor was he in charge of everything. If this matter were to be exposed, it would require an exorbitant amount of money to quell it. The losses did not make up for the gains.

After thinking it through, Er Chun decided to try one last time. If he still couldn't do it, he could only apologize to those paying fellows.

As he thought about it, he said in a leisurely tone: "Very good indeed, I am very happy and gratified to see you guys passing the third examination. Unfortunately, there are only three final spots, so, among you four, one must be eliminated. This next round is added by me for this purpose after deliberation, to be held between the four of you. I have thought of the best way for everyone to show their strength. By drawing lots, we'll decide the order of testing. The first chosen will be attacked by the other three to see how long they could last, and so on so forth. Just like that, the competitor who lasts the shortest amount of time against the

others will be eliminated.”

Zhou Weiqing stared amusingly at this Er Chun in his clumsy attempts to come up with a way to eliminate him. He decided to play along with the guy and didn't reveal anything.

Er Chun continued, “Everyone knows that a Heavenly Jewel Master can't use his full strength in a regular bout. Because of this, I will allow for everyone to go all out. As the judge, when I think someone can't handle it any longer, I will personally stop the fight. Okay, draw the lots now.”

Having said that, he turned towards the main platform and signaled at governor Sang Tan.

The two knew each other for a while now so Sang Tan understood his intention right away, while being secretly excited. This Er Chun guy might take an exorbitant fee but he was still quite capable. The only type to be afraid of are those bastards who take the payment yet fail to carry out their promise. My son might not be capable at all but if it is a three-on-one scenario, there should be no need to worry about taking that brat down.

Sure enough, after the drawing, Zhou Weiqing became the ‘lucky’ guy to go first against the surrounding attacks of the other three.

During this process of drawing lots, Er Chun used Weiqing's blind spot and gave the other three a sharp glare. These young masters weren't fools either so how could they not understand his meaning? Moreover, since they had been chosen by their respective clans to be groomed, though they were rather foppish, they definitely still had their own capabilities.

Weiqing didn't cry foul. After all, the entire thing had a guise of fairness over it. Even though many of the Heavenly Jewel Masters below could see that there was a problem, they were at most just angry without daring to speak up.

Er Chun stepped to the side and nodded his head towards Weiqing: “Young man, it is time to show off all your strength. Remember, with my protection, everyone is safe so no need to worry. Begin.”

Weiqing was mumbling curses in his mind. This old bastard, even at this point, he didn't forget to remind these young masters to kill me. Once they have killed me off, all he needed to do would be to give the excuse that he wasn't able to take action on time and just act apologetic.

Only three would be left once Weiqing was dead and there was no need to continue this competition. All three would naturally entered the final round. Such craftiness, huh! Plus, no one would criticize him for the sake of a dead kid even after it was exposed.

Unfortunately for Er Chun, it was Zhou Weiqing he was scheming against this time. How could he know that this youth ahead was the number one among the young generation of the Boundless Mainland, whose cultivation was even higher than his.

The three young masters immediately surrounded Weiqing on three sides after hearing the order, summoning out their Consolidated Equipment without hesitation.

Everything else aside, all three of these fellows actually had five full pieces of Consolidated Equipment. Sang De had the best among them, actually having a five piece Set. Besides a long sword as his weapon, he also had a chestplate, helm, waist protector, and a pair of gauntlets. This was a relatively decent set. The other two were a bit inferior but they at least had all five that their cultivation level could support currently.

They three fellows all knew each other and this wasn't their first time scheming against someone else. Sang De and another spear-user shouted before attacking Weiqing in unison.

Sang De's Elemental Jewel was of the Wind Attribute, and his long sword was accompanied with a Wind Blade. On the surface, it

seemed like it was pretty powerful, with a strong presence, and its area of effect was quite wide as well.

His cultivation might be unstable but under the empowerment of his Consolidated Equipment, his destructive capability was fairly extraordinary.

On the platform, Sang Tan watched his son showing his abilities on the stage with a satisfied smile.

The other young master with the spear had the Fire Attribute for his Elemental Jewel. His flame synergized with Sang De's Wind Attribute attacks as he thrust his spear at Weiqing's stomach. Along with his Agility Physical Jewel, his speed and destructive power was not bad at all.

Their Consolidated Equipment weren't bad either but in terms of their fighting capabilities and especially Stored Skills, it was rather lacking. Weiqing understood that this had something to do with their willpower. There was an integral relationship between a Heavenly Jewel Master and their willpower in terms of their success rate of Storing Skills. The stronger the willpower, the greater the chance for success. But for these foppish young masters, what willpower do they have to speak of?

Nevertheless, they were wily enough. Two of them launched a direct frontal assault while the guy behind Weiqing didn't make a single sound. He wielded an obsidian knife and slithered on the ground like a poisonous snake in order to close his distance in silence. This was their real killing move.

This was a Stored Skill from a Serpent Type Heavenly Beast, with extremely effective stealth effects. Moreover, his Elemental Jewel Attribute was the Darkness Attribute, and it was a very synergistical combination. These three normally conspired against others together so their teamwork was quite good.

Chapter 238 Instant Kill! (2)

It seemed like Zhou Weiqing did not notice the ambusher behind him and even looked apprehensive regarding the two frontal attacks, so much so that he actually took a few steps back. At this point, he could see the smug expression on Sang De's face. Alas, how could they be more gifted at scheming than Zhou Little Fatty?

Sang De and his allies were ecstatic at the sight, and in their excitement, their attacks became even stronger and faster as they charged towards Zhou Weiqing. In that moment, Weiqing acted as if he was flustered as he swung his right hand insectival in the air and stomped his right foot on the ground as if he had lost his balance.

A strange scene occurred, so swiftly that even that Master Er Chun couldn't react in time.

"Pluff! Pluff!" With two quiet sounds, inside a dazzling silver light, Sang De and his ally suddenly struck each other. Their body actually split in halves. The top half was frozen; there was still a gloating and ferocious expression since they were certain of victory. Their bottom half was still lunging forward despite this separation.

Blood and innards all gushed out.

Sang De felt this Weiqing person ahead becoming larger and larger. Moreover, his own body felt strange as if something was leaving it. He instinctively looked down before shouting with a miserable, inhuman scream that echoed across the sky.

It was even worse for the ambusher from the back. He was slithering on the ground but Weiqing's right stomp emitted an extremely terrifying force. This shockwave blasted through the ground all the way to his body. The reverberation shattered all of his bones and inner organs. With blood gushing out, the guy couldn't be any deader.

An instant kill! Just one second earlier, the other three had the upper-hand but now, they have been slaughtered by Weiqing in just a moment in such a terrible manner of death.

Both the platform and the spectators were completely speechless. City Lord Sang Tan seemed to be held by the throat as he couldn't utter a single sound. Er Chun was astounded before this scene as well.

"Sigh! Why did this happen? Why can't the three of you withstand a single blow? Master Er Chun, you should have realized that they couldn't handle it, why didn't you stop me!" Weiqing cried out in shock.

Shangguan Bing'er in the audience initially frowned after seeing this bloody scene on the stage. However, she almost burst out in laughter after seeing Weiqing's near flawless acting. This scoundrel...

Weiqing didn't come here to start trouble but Sang De's perverted eyes and Er Chun's nefarious act have enraged him. He was a person who never took things lying down. Thus, when these people schemed against him, it would be strange if it ended well for them. Moreover, he had other backup plans ready as well.

"You... you have actually killed them?" Er Chun reacted to Weiqing's scream while the crowd was in a clamor under the stage.

Weiqing put on an innocent and aghast expression as he replied, "I didn't know that it would end like this? Sir, didn't you tell us to go all out? With your cultivation, you should have been able to stop me, right!?" Despite being quite vague, he dumped all the responsibility back on Er Chun.

On the main platform, Sang Tan struggled to finally breathe but he still couldn't speak. In all of these years, he has given Sang De all of the resources he had embezzled from W'Batu City just so that his son could enter the XuanTian Palace. Alas, he didn't expect that this guarantee would actually develop in this sudden manner. His

only son was dead now; his eyes turned bloodshot even as he sat on the platform, glaring at Weiqing on the stage.

“Bastard, you came here, inciting trouble on purpose! This is the greatest provocation against our palace. Men, capture him!” Er Chun was also livid. Even though he had a pivotal position at W’Batu, the three dead brats were not commoners either. Moreover, he had already accepted the bribes.

With that, he didn’t care for anything else and instantly unleashed a palm strike at Weiqing. The temperature on the stage suddenly dropped. One could see snowflakes condensing in the air.

Weiqing didn’t bother dodging this coming attack while sneering: “Very good indeed, XuanTian Palace, how disappointing...”

A thick, yellow glow suddenly lit up with a loud explosion. Weiqing stood motionlessly without even lifting a single finger yet he managed to dispel Er Chun’s attack. Meanwhile, the Dual Legendary Hammers appeared in his hands.

“Consolidating Equipment God Protective Aura?!” Er Chun was a knowledgeable man as he exclaimed in shock. His attack also halted instantly.

A God Tier Consolidated Equipment was extremely rare in both the Boundless Mainland and XuanTian Continent. Weiqing has seen quite a few from the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, but do not forget, the ones who had the God Tier Consolidated Equipment were all incredible talents painstakingly groomed from the Five Great Saint Lands. For common Heavenly Jewel Masters, even an ordinary equipment was hard to come by, let alone those of this level.

Er Chun’s rage immediately paused as he stopped from any thoughts of revenge after suddenly seeing the Consolidating Equipment God Protective Aura, especially considering Zhou Weiqing’s young age. In the XuanTian Continent, those who could

have God Tier Consolidated Equipment must have an incredible background. Even as a representative of the XuanTian Palace to watch over this city, he still didn't have any Consolidated Equipment of this level.

Weiying slightly pursed his lips with disdain, "You know about Consolidating Equipment God Protective Aura? Then do you also know the Legacy of Strength?" He was the best at duping people. In the past, he once duped a Heavenly King powerhouse until he didn't dare to fight. At that time, Zhou Weiying's strength couldn't even begin to compare to his power now. Now that he was so much more powerful, he was far more confident and easygoing, and his natural trickery came into play once more. After all, it would be extremely strange if someone on the XuanTian Continent would be able to recognize the Legacy Of Strength.

Er Chun instinctively shook his head in confusion.

Weiying hummed with contempt, "You don't even know the Legacy of Strength. It looks like our branch of God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters have been forgotten by the world."

Before anything else, when Weiying uttered the words "God Tier Masters", even the downtrodden Sang Tan who wanted nothing more than to eat his flesh as revenge for killing his son suddenly calmed down after realizing something.

"What did you say? You are a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master?" Er Chun's eyes were full of disbelief. As an inner-disciple of the XuanTian Palace, the top sect of the nine continents, he knew quite a bit about these God Tier Masters. At the very least, he knew that they must be at least a low-level Heavenly King. This youth ahead was only at the fifth jewel cultivation level yet he called himself a God Tier Master with such forceful conviction.

"You don't believe me?" Weiying posed with both hands behind his back. He truly looked like a transcending cultivator under this

acting skill.

“I descended this time in order to befriend the XuanTian Palace in order to build a mutually beneficial relationship. Who would have thought that I would see these evil deeds from all of you right away. I’m too lazy to explain anything. Watch, the truth is better than any words.”

Having said that, he swung his left sleeve. A Consolidated Paper made from the softest and best quality material flew out. Just this thing alone was more than one hundred gold.

Gold was also the common denomination at Xuantian. However, the carved diagrams on their money was different from the Boundless Mainland.

This soft sheet of paper hovered before Weiqing while he acted quite dignified with his left hand behind his back. The reputation of a God Tier Master was too much. All eyes were on him at this moment.

Suddenly, no one saw how he did it. A silver glow suddenly flashed while the paper slightly trembled in the sky. One second later, this silver glow became dazzling. Weiqing swung his hand and this paper flew then fell before another Heavenly Jewel Master below the stage who came to participate in this selection.

He instinctively accepted the scroll. At the same time, his eyes widened as he shouted, “This, this is a Consolidated Scroll! Oh Lord! A Consolidated Scroll of the Great Master level.”

Just like Weiqing has said, the truth is better than any words. There was no need for him to say anything when reality was unravelling before everyone’s eyes.

This master lifted his head and crazily stared at Weiqing. Yes! He was a Heavenly Jewel Master. When someone like him face a Consolidated Master, this would undoubtedly be their emotions. Moreover, this wasn’t an ordinary Consolidated Master. This was a

God Tier Master, a near legend in XuanTian!

At the very least, this particular Heavenly Jewel Master didn't question Weiqing's identity at all. He casually threw out a Consolidated Scroll of the Grand Master level. Who else could do this outside of God Tier Masters?

Weiqing chuckled in response, "This scroll will be yours, just a little gift. However, I respectfully bid every Heavenly Jewel Masters here to be the witness. I spent twenty years immersing myself in the art of creating Consolidated Scrolls. In terms of cultivation, I am no match for Master Er Chun, so if I can't show up to the Xuantian selection's competition, I hope everyone will report what you have seen today to the Xuantian Palace. I trust that they will give a fair judgement towards a God Tier Master like me."

The Heavenly Jewel Masters in the crowd quickly agreed after hearing this. They were already unhappy about Er Chun. Weiqing, on the other hand, was a God Tier Master. Being recognized by one would mean a straight path paved with gold ahead for any Heavenly Jewel Master! Moreover, the crowd was above the laws. There were more than one hundred masters present, all with great status and background. Even if Er Chun was fierce with City Lord Sang Tan on his side, he still didn't dare to antagonize so many masters at the same time.

Chapter 239 Thousand Year Golden Pearl (1)

Er Chun's expression was incredibly dark, but he was unable to conceal the stunned surprise in his eyes.

As one of the Heavenly Jewel Masters present with the highest cultivation, he knew how difficult it'd been for Zhou Weiqing to create a master rank Consolidated Scroll in a split second.

Creating a Consolidated Scroll didn't only require the Spatial Attribute, but in terms of creating Consolidation Liquid, allocation of it, a proper management of time, as well as a good sense of the rhythm of changes. All of those were critical to the success of creating any Consolidating Equipment Scroll.

Zhou Weiqing had created a scroll with such utter speed, completely breaking through the requirements needed to craft a scroll in terms of rhythm. A Consolidating Equipment Master who could create Consolidated Scrolls at will in spite of the requirements, even claiming to be a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master... this was someone Er Chun had no choice but to take seriously.

After a series of changes in his expression, Er Chun finally managed to squeeze out an absolutely ghastly smile. "Honored God Tier Master, please forgive my earlier transgressions. It wasn't your fault that you were unable to save their lives. You've successfully entered the next round and have the right to enter the finals of the XuanTian Trials. I firmly believe that you will excel in the finals as well and enter XuanTian Palace."

He had no other choice. If his superiors knew of what'd occurred before, then his days in XuanTian Palace were at an end. Compared to the benefits that Governor Sang Tan and the other two offered, his position at XuanTian Palace was much more important. Not to mention, offending a God Tier Master? No normal person would do so. So no matter how dejected and vengeful he currently felt, he

could only swallow his blood, sweat and tears and display none of it.

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly. “That’s good. But Master Er Chun, are you feeling unwilling? Your reaction was rather slow.” After leaving that last mocking sentence behind, he drifted away casually, holding onto Shangguan Bing’er’s hand as they turned to leave.

He’d left the address of the inn he was staying at when he signed up, and someone would naturally be by with the paperwork for the finals.

The Heavenly Jewel Masters below parted before him, and the pair left under a sea of enthusiastic gazes.

Back on the judges’ panel, Governor Sang Tan had actually lapsed into a coma from his sheer rage. Er Chun didn’t dare harbor ulterior motives after what’d just happened, so he made his selection anew and picked two more for the finals, finally closing the curtains on this farce.

Shangguan Bing’er was a bit anxious after they returned to the inn. “Little Fatty, aren’t you being a bit too high profile? You’re not a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master yet! It’ll be too easy for you to be revealed after you go to XuanTian Palace.”

“Who said I am not?” Zhou Weiqing chuckled. “I can play at being a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master with the appropriate paper and materials. Although my cultivation isn’t yet at the Heavenly King level, it’s not too difficult to complete a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scroll with the aid of Saint Energy.”

Shangguan Bing’er fell silent in surprise, she really found it hard to believe Zhou Weiqing’s words. “Isn’t it too easy for you to be a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master? Don’t you need more experience?”

Zhou Weiqing shook his head. “You don’t get it. Because of Saint

Energy, I have a few Stored Skills that can absolutely become heaven defying throughout the course of crafting a Consolidating Equipment Scroll. When has your husband ever indulged in braggadocio? You'll see when the time comes."

Zhou Weiqing had come up with two plans after learning of the XuanTian Trials. The first centered around Shangguan Bing'er. With her cultivation level at Seven Jewels, it would be a snap of the fingers to become a core disciple of XuanTian Palace. She would be the key player then and he would be support, hidden in the shadows. There would certainly be a chance to investigate the matter of the Spatial Teleportation Gem within the palace. This was also a more conservative approach as well and less easy to be detected. The only problem was Shangguan Bing'er's captivating looks. Zhou Weiqing hadn't revealed his strength before because it was better for him to stay out of sight in the shadows and easier for him to make his moves.

Alas, who would've thought that they'd run into such depraved affairs during the Trials? If he still refused to take action, then he wouldn't even have the right to enter the finals. Besides, that Sang Tan had crossed his bottom line. Zhou Weiqing had just gone with the flow and disposed of the good-for-nothing disciples as well, picking the second plan.

The second plan was naturally the God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master identity that Zhou Weiqing had mentioned before. Compared to the other, this plan was much tougher to pull off, but also more watertight. With this identity, in the future if Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er were forced to use their God Tier Consolidated Equipment, it wouldn't elicit suspicion. Even though he would be entering as a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, Zhou Weiqing would still conceal his level of cultivation. This plan's only problem lay in that it was a high profile one. Entering XuanTian Palace as a God Tier Master would undoubtedly draw too much attention from the Palace's senior

executives. It'd be much more difficult to take any further action. But at the same time, there was higher likelihood that they would come into contact with the Spatial Teleportation Gem.

...

The W'Batu Governor Mansion.

"Master, are our kids dead for nothing?" Sang Tan's breathing was labored as he smacked his thick palm savagely on the table.

There were only four present. Aside from him and Er Chun, the other two had also lost their sons today.

Er Chun's facial muscles twitched as he pointed at the pile of wealth on the table. "I will return you these items. You have seen for yourself today... how matters weren't under my control at all. Your sons are dead, but..." Emphasis grew in his tone. "You're still alive."

He suddenly rose after this sentence and left, leaving behind three people with resentful expressions.

These three were heavyweights in W'Batu City, but at the moment, none of them could actually give voice to any of the rage and resentment they felt.

That was a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master! Was this someone they could afford to offend? Er Chun's last line had been correct. Although their sons were dead, they were still alive. If they dared seek revenge against a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, XuanTian Palace would never let them hear the end of it. XuanTian Palace was one that dominated XuanTian Continent, but even they only had two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters in residence. Those two were the absolute top existences within the Palace and had supreme positions. Even the current Palace Master had to treat them with all decorum.

Zhou Weiqing returned to his room with Shangguan Bing'er after dinner and was about to engage in a bout of lovemaking when a

respectful voice sounded from outside the door.

“God Tier Master, Er Chun requests an audience.”

Zhou Weiqing’s eyes darted around as he wiped off his leering expression towards Shangguan Bing’er. He became lofty and relaxed, almost as if he’d stepped into another body. He responded faintly, “Come in.”

Er Chun walked in with a respectful expression when the door opened. The awkwardness and arrogance from the day had disappeared. He was completely submissive and held something in his hands.

Zhou Weiqing sat down properly and didn’t invite him to sit. “Master Er Chun, what business do you have?”

“I’m not qualified for the title of master.” Er Chun responded hastily. “Please just call me by my name. I’m here to bring the finals qualifications to you and your wife.”

He handed over the items as he spoke. There were two red envelopes and two black medallions.

Zhou Weiqing didn’t even look at them before he stored them into his Sumeru Ring with a wave. “Is there anything else?” He said passively.

Er Chun sweated profusely. He’d offered to bring these things personally because he wanted to repair his image in Zhou Weiqing’s eyes. Otherwise he’d be done for if this God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master said a few bad things about him in the XuanTian Palace. He didn’t have much of a background within the Palace, otherwise he wouldn’t have been sent to a city so far away.

“Sir, I’ve already reported your appearance to the upper echelons. It was indeed my greed overcoming my reason this morning and clouded my eyes. However, I hope Master can understand that our lives aren’t well off in a forsaken place like

this! We need to come up with our own funds to purchase a Consolidated Scroll. We really have no choice. Your safety is of paramount importance and I wish to personally escort the two of you to the Heavenly City. Also... this is just a small gift. It's not much, I hope you will accept it."

Another box appeared in his hands as he spoke, as if he was turning a magic trick, and respectfully brought it up to Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing was slightly surprised when he took the box. A slight fragrance had wafted in the air when the box appeared. The unique scent was that of aloeswood.

Aloeswood was also present on Boundless Mainland, and some Consolidated Scrolls used it in their crafting. What was inside the box was definitely priceless given that the container was made out of aloeswood.

Ordinarily speaking, one didn't open a gift as soon as they received it, in front of the giver. However, Zhou Weiqing didn't have that concern at all. He flicked open the exquisite lock on the aloeswood box and opened it.

The box itself was rather heavy. It was a dense wood that would actually sink in water. As soon as the box was open, Zhou Weiqing's eyes widened with delight when he saw what was inside. Even someone as widely experienced as him was quite surprised when he saw what was inside.

There was a layer of yellow silk inside the box, giving the contents an additional noble feel. There were two pearls inside the size of an infant's fist, glowing with a soft, faint and gentle hue.

Even an ordinary pearl was priceless when that large and flawless. These two were golden in color, marking them as the rarest of pearls. Furthermore, they were almost the exact same sizes, making them rare, precious treasures.

Pearls were divided into white, black, and golden, going from most common to rarest respectively. Zhou Weiqing found himself even hard pressed to estimate how valuable these were.

Shangguan Bing'er's eyes were sparkling. All girls liked jewelry, especially when it was as precious and beautiful like these rare golden pearls.

Chapter 239 Thousand Year Golden Pearl (2)

Although the Heaven's Expanse Palace had many precious treasures, Shangguan Bing'er had after all grown up in the Heavenly Bow Empire, and had never been part of Heaven's Expanse Palace. Even now, she still considered herself a part of the Heavenly Bow Empire. Despite her gentle appearance, Shangguan Bing'er was the most stubborn among the three Shangguan sisters. Once she set her mind on something, there was no changing it. Just like her relationship with Zhou Weiqing. If Shangguan Tianyue insisted on getting in between them, she would definitely run off and elope with Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing held up one of the golden pearls, utterly fascinated. The pearl emitted such a gentle aura. It must have come from a clam that was at least a thousand years old! Such a large pearl didn't need to be paired with any other adornments. Just placing it in one's room would have a vitality consolidation effect.

However, that wasn't the reason why Zhou Weiqing was so interested in the pearl. He distinctly remembered Duan Tianlang telling him once that if he could find a thousand-year golden pearl he might have a chance to increase his 'Hate Ground No Handle' Legendary Set and allow it to thoroughly catch up to the level of the Boundless Infinitum Set.

Towards those blueprints of the 'Hate Ground No Handle' Legendary Set that Zhou Weiqing already owned, it was no big deal at all for Duan Tianlang to create them. However, ever since he had met Zhou Weiqing he had been hard at work researching how to further improve the 'Hate Ground No Handle' Set and surpass his predecessors. He had mentioned those golden pearls to Zhou Weiqing only because they were exceedingly rare; Zhou Weiqing had not even been able to purchase one in the Heaven's Expanse Palace. Naturally, he didn't expect to find one here.

Well, it was a different continent, after all. Just because it was rare in Boundless Mainland didn't mean it would be equally rare on XuanTian Continent. XuanTian Continent was not as vast as and had fewer resources than Boundless Mainland, but that actually resulted in its oceanic development being far superior to that of the Boundless Mainland. Clams containing golden pearls only existed in the deep ocean. Although they were still considered treasured objects in on XuanTian Continent, but they were not one of a kind here as they were on Boundless Mainland.

Er Chun was good at paying attention to the words and mannerisms of others. One look at Zhou Weiqing's reactions and he knew this young God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master was pleased with his gift. In his heart, he was delighted by the result, hastily saying: "I've built up a humble collection of the last few years. If the Young Master would like, I can present you with something else later on."

Belongings were important, but for a Heavenly Jewel Master what could be more precious than a God Tier Consolidated Equipment Scroll? Furthermore, Er Chun had his own views. With Zhou Weiqing's status as a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, all he had to do was to join the XuanTian Palace and he'd certainly obtain an incredibly high position. More importantly, he was still so young. Within the next hundred years, it was likely that his position within the XuanTian Palace would not waver. If he could play up to such a high 'branch', why would he care about the current items in his collection? He'd be able to find ten times, even a hundred times more if he succeeded!

Zhou Weiqing carefully placed the golden pearl back into its aloeswood box and handed it to Shangguan Bing'er. "An outstanding treasure. Er Chun, you have a good sense. I will overlook what happened today. However, you must restrain yourself. Understood?"

Er Chun was delighted. Running into a person with a passionate

sense of justice was what he feared most. He'd really be done for then. Since Zhou Weiqing accepted his gift so easily, it clearly showed he was not that sort of person. Someone willing to accept gifts was much easier to deal with.

Shangguan Bing'er hugged the aloeswood box close to her. She was ecstatic about the pair of golden pearls and looked down at the box. But she was forcing herself to restrain the laughter in her eyes. This Little Fatty was truly rotten. He was clearly still playing the role of a greedy official. No. Greedy God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master was more like it. Still, she would never go against it. This was after all the XuanTian Continent and what they took off them was the belongings of the XuanTian Continent, so what of it? They might as well just take it.

Just then, there was another knock at the door. Zhou Weiqing was puzzled. They had only just arrived in the W'Batu and did not know anyone else, who could be looking for them?

"Enter," Zhou Weiqing said passively. Er Chun also looked at the doorway curiously.

An old man appeared at the door. As soon as he entered, he said with a wide smile on his face: "My dear Zhou Little Brother, you really had me fooled there!" It was none other than Grandmaster Guyu from The Pearl.

Guyu's clan wasn't in W'Batu City, but was close by. Some members of his clan had actually participated in the XuanTian Trials today, and because Zhou Weiqing had gotten rid of those three dandys, a young disciple from his clan had been given another chance and had made it onto the participation list to the finals.

Guyu had been deeply remorseful once he learned that Zhou Weiqing was a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, and he had hastened over to express his goodwill. He knew that he couldn't be blamed for not thinking about such a possibility, after

all that Zhou Weiqing was just too young. Alas, he couldn't help but feel such regret... a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master had been released by him like that. If he had only known sooner he was a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, he would have roped him into joining his clan, even if he had to tie him up! With a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master amongst their ranks, perhaps in time they might actually have the chance to become another Saint Land! What depressed him most was the fact that he had been the one to write Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er's letters of recommendation.

That's it! No wonder such a beauty as Shangguan Bing'er would fall for such an ordinary-looking person like Zhou Weiqing: he was a great talent, a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master!

Of course, it was too late for regrets now. Since Zhou Weiqing had indicated he wished to join XuanTian Palace, Guyu didn't have the guts to try to stop him. That would only bring a heap of trouble onto his clan. Either way, he still needed to come here. No matter what, he had to deepen the friendly relations with this young God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master whose life he had saved. It would be greatly beneficial to his entire clan.

Zhou Weiqing smiled and stepped forward in a welcoming fashion when he saw it was Guyu. "So it's Grandmaster Guyu. Don't blame me for covering it up. After all, anything can happen on the open seas. I had to be careful. Don't worry, Grandmaster, Weiqing will never forget how you saved my life."

An unsightly look flitted across Er Chun's face momentarily when he saw it was Guyu. His cultivation wasn't at Guyu's level, but since he was from XuanTian Palace, he wasn't really afraid of him.

Only then did Guyu notice Er Chun was also in the room. He smiled faintly and said: "Brother Er Chun, you're here too. You're doing great things for XuanTian Palace this time!"

These two were both crafty old foxes. Plus the crafty young fox, Zhou Weiqing was here too, so just a few simple words between them was already enough to make their meanings crystal clear. Zhou Weiqing had relieved Guyu's heart, while the latter had expressed to Er Chun that he would not interfere with Zhou Weiqing.

Er Chun smiled. "My dear Guyu, you just mentioned saving Young Master's life. What's the story there?"

Zhou Weiqing laughed. "I was out in the oceans with my humble wife hunting ocean beasts to obtain Heavenly Cores to make Consolidating Ink. Who knew that we would actually run into a Terror Sea Dragon and were nearly lost at sea. Fortunately, we encountered Grandmaster Guyu's ship The Pearl and made it out alive. Isn't that saving our life? In fact, if not for this experience, I might not have steeled my resolve to actually enter the public world and approach the XuanTian Palace. A person's individual strength and resources are limited. If I want to continue researching how to make these Legendary Sets, I need a lot of financial backing. I figured that only XuanTian Palace could provide it."

"Legendary Sets?" Guyu and Er Chun exclaimed, nearly in unison. Shangguan Bing'er noticed them both gulp.

Zhou Weiqing smiled. "I've only recently joined the ranks of God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters. It's just that the materials needed to make Consolidating Ink are far too rare. That's not good for my cultivation."

Er Chun recovered himself and quickly put in, "Master, don't you worry, in the entire XuanTian Continent, our XuanTian Palace can definitely supply your needs, and with the best service. A respected God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master such as yourself will not encounter any restrictions."

Guyu sighed inwardly. It was too late to say anything now.

Luckily, Zhou Weiqing still remembered how he had saved his life. He thought about it and repressed the urge to beg for the desired Legendary Set. There was plenty of time for that later. If he got over-eager and asked now, Zhou Weiqing might not be able to do it even if he was willing, because he had just become a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master. He would wait until Zhou Weiqing was settled into XuanTian Palace first. In any case, with the favorable relations they had, whatever he asked for in the future would be like a repayment.

Neither of them wanted to be first to leave so they dawdled for a while with some small talk. They only took their leave when Zhou Weiqing said he had to cultivate. Er Chun set an appointment with him to leave tomorrow, where he would personally escort them to XuanTian Palace headquarters in the Heavenly City, and participate in the annual XuanTian Trials finals.

Zhou Weiqing didn't know what method of communication XuanTian Palace used, but it seemed to be very speedy. Early the next morning when Er Chun met them he told him that XuanTian Palace had already replied and said that he must see to Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er's safety. They also sent instructions to Lord of W'Batu City, Sang Tan, to suppress word that a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master had appeared. He had to keep it a secret.

A lavish horse carriage was prepared for them. It was wide and spacious, pulled by eight fine steeds. It had been sent specially for Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er. Including Er Chun, a total of eight XuanTian Palace members followed them. You could say W'Batu City's XuanTian Palace had sent its best and brightest.

After squaring things away with Zhou Weiqing the night before, Er Chun was more careful about his safety. Whether or not he would benefit by being with Zhou Weiqing, just by safely escorting a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master to the XuanTian Palace headquarters would already be a great achievement for him.

The carriage was extremely roomy, so much so that there would be no problem carrying ten people. The interior was upholstered in leather and was carpeted with soft animal pelts. There was a large bed in an inner compartment, a chair and table outside that. The table was stocked with food. This carriage was better than that one he had been in with Hua Feng from the Heavenly Bow Unit.

Climbing into the carriage, Zhou Weiqing chuckled to Shangguan Bing'er. "Er Chun knows how to enjoy himself, but it ends up benefiting us instead this time."

Chapter 239 Thousand Year Golden Pearl (3)

Who did not desire a little more comfort? Riding such a carriage would not disturb their cultivation. Zhou Weiqing had always felt that he was not far from breaking through into the thirty seventh stage of Saint Energy and naturally would not waste this opportunity to cultivate.

Under the protection of Er Chun and the others, once they left W'Batu City, they headed straight for the central plains of XuanTian Continent. According to Er Chun, they would reach the Heavenly City in an estimated 15 days at the fastest and 20 at the slowest.

Along the way, Er Chun's care for the young couple could be said to be extremely meticulous. Various delicacies of the XuanTian Continent were endlessly sent into the carriage that they were more than happy to enjoy. Besides savouring their meals and indulging in the scenery, the rest of their time was spent cultivating. This trip was really several times better than their journey through the ocean.

For the sake of escorting Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er to their destination as quickly as possible, the group seldom stayed in inns. Most of their time was spent on the road and new mounts would be exchanged at every relay station.

To Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er, this was not considered tough on them at all. Although it was slightly harder on the Heavenly Jewel Masters who were in charge of protecting them, they were able to push through by relying on their cultivation foundations.

They reached their destination in only fourteen days.

"Lord God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, we are about to enter Heaven City." Er Chun's voice was transmitted from outside the carriage.

“Noted,” Zhou Weiqing responded. He lifted the window curtains of the carriage and looked outside. He could already see the silhouette of a city in the distance. Compared to ZhongTian City, this Heavenly City was much smaller. Furthermore, it was not as bizarre as Heavenly Jewel Island. However, compared to most of the other cities he had visited, the Heavenly City was indeed still considered a large city and its scale was approximately equal to Fei Li City.

Zhou Weiqing had been rather depressed over the past few days. He had already felt that his Saint Energy was about to breakthrough when they reached the XuanTian Continent. Yet he was still stuck in a bottleneck after training for the past few days, and there was ultimately no breakthrough. Currently, he even started to reminisce the initial days of training the Immortal Deity Technique. Although breakthroughs were excruciatingly painful, the entire process was rather swift.

However, even after he had dedicated his efforts into cultivation for such a long time, he was still unable to advance to the next stage. More importantly, he still did not have a cultivation technique for his Saint Energy, and thus did not know how he should actually undergo that breakthrough. The only thing he could do was slowly accumulate power. It was only the first layer of Saint Energy after the nine-Jeweled Stage, and yet breakthrough was already so difficult. This naturally led him to think of how challenging it would be to condense a Saint Nucleus Core.

Of course, even if he was depressed, there was nothing else he could do. Shangguan Bing'er had also consoled him several times. After all, he was already at the nine-Jeweled stage. For any Heavenly Jewel Master, it was natural that progress after this level would definitely slow down. Why else would there be less Heavenly King Stage and above practitioners when compared to nine-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Masters?

Er Chun rode over on his horse and said to Zhou Weiqing, “Lord God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, should we head straight to our XuanTian Palace or find a place to stay first?”

Zhou Weiqing took a look at him and replied, “Why head directly to XuanTian Palace? We have not even participated in the selection finals, won’t it be bad to break the rules?”

Er Chun cursed to himself. You are a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, why is there a need to participate in the selection? However, he did not dare to go against Zhou Weiqing. In any case, they had already arrived at Heavenly City and his mission was mostly completed. Hence, he could only nod his head in response.

After entering Heavenly City and finding a rather luxurious inn to stay at, Er Chun did not dare to rest. He assigned his subordinates to protect the Zhou Weiqing duo in the inn while he headed directly to XuanTian Palace to report.

The luxurious room was two hundred square metres in area, and the various facilities within could be described as lavish. Zhou Weiqing leaned against the soft genuine leather sofa while a light flickered in his eyes as if he was deep in thought.

Shangguan Bing'er stood before the window as she looked outside. Although they were in another continent, it was after all still a world of men. In most areas, it was not much different from the Boundless Mainland.

“Little Fatty, what are we going to do next?” Shangguan Bing'er turned to Zhou Weiqing.

Sunlight shined in from outside the window, bathing her in a misty layer of gold. Zhou Weiqing's eyes could not help but sparkle as he watched her. He beckoned to her with his hand, indicating for her to come to his side.

Shangguan Bing'er walked to the sofa. In the next moment, she

fell into Zhou Weiqing's lap. Zhou Weiqing stealthily said to her, "Bing'er, we need to be careful when we speak from now onwards. From this point onwards, I don't really have a concrete plan yet and intend to take it one step at a time. For the time being, the top priority is to enter the inner section of XuanTian Palace."

Shangguan Bing'er looked at him in a puzzled manner as she replied, "In that case, why did you reject Er Chun when he asked if he should send us into XuanTian Palace?"

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly. "A transaction that is sent all the way to one's doorstep does not have much worth. We need to be somewhat aloof to make them value us more. Don't be anxious. Hasn't Er Chun already went to report? Someone will likely be sent to receive us later."

Shangguan Bing'er stifled a giggle and said, "You are really a swindler." After which, her expression suddenly became rather stern, "Little Fatty, promise me something. Whether or not we are able to succeed this time, don't take any risks, alright?"

Zhou Weiqing did not reply but instead gently kissed her red lips. On the giant sofa, he completely buried her slim and lovely figure in his embrace.

...

An hour later.

"Lord God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master." Er Chun's voice rang out from outside the door.

Having taken a bath and changed into clean clothes, Zhou Weiqing was currently seated on the sofa as he ate the fruit which Shangguan Bing'er had peeled. He said passively, "Enter."

The door opened and Er Chun walked in from outside. However, he had only taken a single step in and respectfully stood to one side as he made an inviting gesture.

Following his gesture, a tall elder walked in from outside. This

elder was a whole two meters tall. Although his white hair and beard indicated that he was not young, his back was rather straight and his muscular frame propped up his clothes. On a whole, he gave off a very vibrant feeling which did not lose to any youngster.

He too wore the long blue robes of XuanTian Palace, but Zhou Weiqing immediately saw a gleaming gold sun emblem on his left breast. It was very clear that this person's status in the XuanTian Palace was much higher than Er Chun's. In addition, the presence and aura given off by his body the moment he appeared was far beyond what Er Chun could compare to.

Zhou Weiqing was still seated on the sofa and showed no signs of getting up to receive the old man. The elder's gaze directly landed on his face as two sharp gazes seemed to stab towards him like sharp swords, while a powerful pressure instantly locked onto Zhou Weiqing's body.

Zhou Weiqing remained seated while he ate the fruit, as if he was unable to feel anything. This tiny bit of pressure was really nothing to him.

"Eh, he does indeed have some ability. Er Chun, is he the God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master you mentioned?" The elder also ignored Zhou Weiqing as he sent an inquiry towards Er Chun by the side. His low and deep voice brought with it an intense shock wave that made one's ear buzz.

"Yes, esteemed Elder. Lord God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, let me introduce you. This is Elder Fei Lun, one of the twelve Elders of our XuanTian Palace. He is in charge of external affairs."

Zhou Weiqing nodded and pointed towards the sofa. "Kindly be seated, Elder."

Fei Lun waved his hand. Er Chun quickly took the hint and withdrew, closing the door behind him. Fei Lun walked to the sofa opposite Zhou Weiqing and unceremoniously sat himself down as

the pressure from his body receded. “Young man, Er Chun tells me that you are a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master?”

Zhou Weiqing nodded, but he did not look at the elder and instead continued to eat the fruit from Shangguan Bing'er.

A flash of fury glinted in Fei Lun's eyes as he said in a low voice, “You are still so young, are you not afraid that your arrogant manner will bite you in the back?”

Zhou Weiqing glanced at him, faintly smiled and retorted, “Aspiration is not related to age. A hundred years of living without aspiration is the same as not living at all.” He purposely cast his gaze at the elder when speaking the latter half. With his Saint Energy cultivation and the presence Fei Lun had released prior, he was able to judge that this elder's cultivation was around the High Level Heavenly King Stage. The peak Heavenly King Stage was still rather far away from him.

Fei Lun's expression turned even uglier. However, he was after all an elder of XuanTian Palace and his capabilities were far beyond what Er Chun could compare to. He spoke in a low voice, “You should know what kind of price there will be to pay if one deceives XuanTian Palace. Of course, if you can really prove your identity as a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, let alone myself, even the Palace Grand Elder, no, even the Palace Master will welcome you with open arms.”

Zhou Weiqing smiled a little. “Does this mean that you are here to verify if I have the ability of a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master?”

Fei Lun did not beat around the bush and immediately nodded.

Zhou Weiqing heartily chuckled. “Right here and now? It looks like XuanTian Palace does not treat their guests very well! How can I prove my ability? Creating a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scroll should be the most direct right?”

Fei Lun replied, “Of course.”

Zhou Weiqing laughed coldly and suddenly stood up. “Since that is so, Elder Fei Lun can leave now. We will not be participating in XuanTian Palace’s selection any longer. Bing’er, let’s go.”

Fei Lun was taken aback. There were no gaps in Zhou Weiqing’s arrogant attitude. He hastily stood up and said, “What do you mean?”

Zhou Weiqing disdainfully snorted, “As a Consolidating Equipment Master, creating a Consolidating Equipment Scroll not only require materials and a blueprint, the environment is likewise of utmost importance. Places with dense atmospheric energy will allow the Consolidating Scroll to be more easily created. Your distinguished self cannot possibly not know of this right?” He no longer addressed Fei Lun as Elder.

Fei Lun subconsciously nodded his head. Although he was not a Consolidating Equipment Master, he had some knowledge of them.

Zhou Weiqing laughed icily. “Since Elder understands, yet you are still purposely trying to make me create a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scroll here? Is this the sincerity of your XuanTian Palace? Furthermore, if I really had the materials to create God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, why would I still need to come to your XuanTian Palace?”

“Uh...” Fei Lun was rendered speechless. He frowned a little and said, “Your distinguished self should know that if you are really a proven God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, absolutely no tests are needed to join our XuanTian Palace. We will treat you as an honored guest and even give you a top position. Therefore, no matter what, we still need you to display your abilities.”

Chapter 240 God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master? Monster?! (1)

A faint smile crossed Zhou Weiqing's lips as he swept his gaze across Fei Lun, but his expression turned cold in the next instant.

“Wanting to see me create God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scrolls... you still do not have the qualification. Return and tell your Palace Master, if he wants to test my abilities, that is no problem at all. I am not a unreasonable person; since I have come here, I will definitely show my sincerity. However, do you really think that with your capabilities, you can tell whether or not I have personally created a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scroll? With my techniques, simply swapping out a Scroll for you to see is not difficult at all. I will give you a list of materials, go back and prepare it. I would also require your XuanTian Palace to clear a suitable place for creating Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, and please invite the most outstanding Consolidating Equipment Masters then. Only Consolidating Equipment Masters have the qualification to examine other Consolidating Equipment Masters.

As he said that, with a flick of his wrist, a piece of white paper appeared in Zhou Weiqing's hands. Holding up the goose feather quill which had been ready in the inn, he began writing on the paper. In a matter of moments, he had written an entire long list, inscribed with the various materials needed for creating Consolidating Ink.

After he had finished writing, he passed the paper to Fei Lun and said passively: “You may leave now.”

Fei Lu received the piece of white paper. Although he felt like there was something stuck in his heart from being suppressed by Zhou Weiqing's actions, in the end he did not flare out. Without commenting on whether or not this youth was really a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, the pride and arrogance he

showed was definitely that of one. From the looks of things, he seemed to be too bold and confident, as if he truly had nothing to fear. Although Fei Lun was one of the Elders of the XuanTian Palace, if Zhou Weiqing was really a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, even he dared not offend him. As part of the upper echelon of the XuanTian Palace, he still had his family, his disciples, many of whom still needed Consolidating Equipment Scrolls!

“Very well, since that is the case, please wait for my return. I will report directly back to the Palace Master with your words.” After saying that, Fei Lun nodded towards Zhou Weiqing before turning to leave.

As the door closed behind him, Shangguan Bing'er could no longer hold back the wide grin on her face. Just as she was about to speak, Zhou Weiqing gave her a silencing motion, using voice transference he said quietly: “Don't say anything out loud, the walls may have ears.”

Shangguan Bing'er stuck out her cute little tongue as she looked at Zhou Weiqing, her eyes brimming with thick emotions. Her Little Fatty was becoming a powerhouse who could hold his own and take responsibilities on his broad shoulders. In the XuanTian Continent, the two of them were all alone, but from the beginning until now, Zhou Weiqing had been planning everything out without showing any signs of being flustered, easily taking things as they came and dealing with it, always calm and unhurried. Looking inwardly, Shangguan Bing'er had to admit that if she had been the one in charge, she could not have possibly done as well as Zhou Weiqing. Seeing her beloved devising strategies and looking like he had everything in hand, the love in her heart only increased greatly. It was as if when she followed by his side, even if it were in the undertaking of such a dangerous quest, she felt safe and unworried.

Of course, Zhou Weiqing did not truly have everything in his

grasp. However, since he was young, Mu En had taught him that to be a true scoundrel and rogue, no matter what happened, he had to first believe in himself, to truly believe that he was always correct. Even if he had been exposed, never admit it. It was this mentality which had been finely groomed in, one that allowed Zhou Weiqing to survive all of these years in the Boundless Mainland, especially in his early years. More so, it had definitely helped his current self grow to such heights. Although this XuanTian Continent was a totally different world to their own, the current Zhou Weiqing was also no longer his old self. With his Saint Energy and all his various powers, he could be said to have great confidence, and more importantly; to have the strength to backup that confidence. No matter what situation he would have to face, he had sufficient certainty that he would be able to get through it, and not allow his opponents to see through things so easily.

...

For the entirety of the following day, Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er mainly remained in their room to rest. During that period, he had also brought her out to have a walk along the streets, enjoying some of the street food and refreshments of the Heavenly City.

The food of the Heavenly City was rather different from that of the Boundless Mainland. For example, the flavour of all their foods were comparatively much stronger, and they also enjoyed a lot of spicy food. Both Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er had definitely enjoyed their 'food tour', inundating their taste buds with these different flavours. Besides that, they had also purchased some cheap but interesting handcrafted trinkets and baubles.

Whenever they left their room, they would be followed, naturally with the excuse of protecting them, though both of them knew it was also to keep watch on them. Of course, these XuanTian Palace personnel did not understand why this God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master would purchase these cheap baubles that even

they would spurn. Naturally, they did not know that Zhou Weiqing was buying some souvenirs for his friends and family. After all, this could be considered a totally different world, a fresh new continent; if he returned without bringing back anything, would those tough girls he had at home let him go so easily?

...

At last, three days after they had entered the Heavenly City, the XuanTian Palace sent someone to look for them again.

Once again, it was Fei Lun. This time, Er Chun was no longer present as well, perhaps he had already returned to the W'Batu City.

“Master, we have already prepared the items and place you requested. Please follow me.” As soon as Fei Lun saw Zhou Weiqing, he did not waste time on small talk, directly inviting him to move out.

The list of materials that Zhou Weiqing had provided had actually given the XuanTian Palace some trouble. Even though they dominated the entire XuanTian Continent, it was still not easy for them to look for so many precious materials. In truth, there were quite some differences between the XuanTian Continent and Boundless Mainland in terms of resources. Some of the more precious resources in the Boundless Mainland were more plentiful here, but at the same time, some of the relatively common resources in the Boundless Mainland were actually considered rare and precious here.

Zhou Weiqing nodded towards Fei Lun, and both he and Shangguan Bing'er walked out of the inn together, hand in hand.

A horse carriage was outside waiting for them. To Zhou Weiqing's surprise, after they boarded the carriage, it did not head towards the inner city, instead moving out of the Heavenly City entirely.

Of course, as the saying goes, those talented are often very bold, and Zhou Weiqing did not worry about it at all.

Fei Lun had also boarded the same horse carriage as them, seated facing the young couple, and his gaze constantly landed upon Zhou Weiqing.

For anyone else, if they were constantly stared at by a Heavenly King powerhouse, it would definitely not be a comfortable feeling, making them feel nervous. However, Zhou Weiqing was an exception. To him, if you liked to look, so be it. He even kissed Shangguan Bing'er's beautiful soft cheeks a few times, giving Fei Lun a provoking glance as he did so.

Naturally, Fei Lun pretended he did not see anything. In fact, through the entire journey, he did not even speak to Zhou Weiqing.

The horse carriage traveled for more than two hours. Seated within, they could sense that the path they were taking was slowly sloping upwards. Although they did not draw open the curtains to look outside, Zhou Weiqing could still sense that they were moving up a hill. Furthermore, every time they traveled for a distance, they would be stopped by a large number of guards, who would look at their horse carriage before allowing them to pass.

The XuanTian Palace is outside the Heavenly City?

Zhou Weiqing mused to himself inwardly, though his face remained expressionless.

At last, after about another hour of travel, the horse carriage finally stopped for good. Fei Lun nodded towards Zhou Weiqing, taking the lead to disembark, even helping him keep the door open as he descended.

Zhou Weiqing and Bing'er took turns exiting the horse carriage, and as their feet touched solid ground once more, both their faces couldn't help but reveal looks of surprise.

The scene before them was especially beautiful and moving. They were in a valley, fresh greenery all about them, with soft green grass carpeting the ground before them. All sorts of vegetation were growing all around, some of them were even precious treasures that even Zhou Weiqing could recognize. Since they were in a valley surrounded by flowers and greenery, the faint scent of flower fragrance mixed with cool fresh air entered their noses, giving them a refreshing and energetic sensation.

Just beyond the valley, Zhou Weiqing could sense more than twenty presences, with at least two Heavenly King powerhouses. One could imagine how important this place was to the XuanTian Palace in order to have such a strong guard. However, it was also extremely clear that this was not actually the XuanTian Palace itself.

The entire valley could be seen in a single glance, and the situation was thus clear to him. Deeper in the valley, the only man-made objects were a little wooden cabin right in the center of the valley, as well as three log houses. At most, they could house seven or eight people in total... how could this be the Headquarters of the XuanTian Palace?

Seeing the curious looks on both Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er, Fei Lun explained in a solemn tone: "The two honoured God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters of our Palace usually stay here. Since Master Zhou wanted a suitable place to create the Consolidating Equipment Scroll, after some deliberation, the XuanTian Palace has decided that this would be the most suitable spot. As such, we have invited Master Zhou here. The items you have requested are also in there."

Zhou Weiqing nodded, and he was just about to step towards the cabin when he was suddenly stopped by Fei Lun, and Zhou Weiqing gave him a questioning look.

With a deep and meaningful look, Fei Lun said slowly: "Master Zhou, this old man has heard of your deeds in the W'Batu City.

Even if Master Zhou isn't a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master yet, just the fact that you are able to create Grandmaster Consolidating Equipment Scrolls at will... you are still an outstanding talent. It is not too late for you to regret now, but once you step into the cabin to take the test and do not pass it... it will be too late."

His meaning was extremely clear. If Zhou Weiqing admitted that he wasn't a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master now; with all his talents, the XuanTian Palace would still place high importance upon him. However, once he actually entered the wooden cabin but failed the test; no matter how talented he was, the XuanTian Palace would not allow him to leave this place alive.

Zhou Weiqing did not say anything else, smiling widely as he pushed Fei Lun's hand aside lightly. Holding onto Shangguan Bing'er's hand, he walked directly to the wooden cabin.

Looking at his retreating back, Fei Lun's surprise was unconcealable. He couldn't help but think to himself: Could it be this young man was really a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master? If that was really so, then perhaps even in the entire history of the continent, of all Consolidating Equipment Masters, he would truly be a genius and prodigy amongst all prodigies!

According to Fei Lun's considerable knowledge, in the entire XuanTian Continent, the youngest God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master in history was still over fifty years old. That was a legendary figure in the past. Unless...

Time did not allow him to continue thinking, as Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er had almost reached the wooden cabin. In a flash, Fei Lun quickly rushed to catch up. As for the rest of the XuanTian Palace members who were around, they remained outside, none of them allowed into the deeper part of the valley.

As he walked to the front of the cabin and to the door, Zhou Weiqing's Ice Cold Perception had subtly raised to the maximum.

He could clearly sense that there were two life forces in the cabin, but to his shock, he actually couldn't sense their cultivation levels.

Although they hadn't actually met yet, his Ice Cold Perception was already at an extremely sensitive level especially with the boost from his Saint Energy. Even if it was just gossamer threads of a spider and the trail of a horse, he was still usually able to judge a Heavenly Jewel Master's cultivation from this distance. Yet, he was totally unable to judge that of the two within the cabin. This could only mean one thing... the cultivation stage of the two was at least at the Max Heavenly King Stage, or even higher.

Chapter 240 God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master? Monster?! (2)

Of course, by this point, it was already too late for regrets. Even if it was two Heavenly God Tier powerhouses in the cabin, Zhou Weiqing could only brace himself and enter.

Exchanging glances with Shangguan Bing'er, he held her hand as he pushed open the door and entered.

The wooden door was very light, and just a slight push was enough to open it. The illumination within was very good, as sunlight streamed in through the windows on all four walls, along with the fragrance of flowers.

As soon as he entered through the door, the first thing Zhou Weiqing saw was a broad desk. The entire desk was large, almost ten metres long, and it pretty much extended from one end of the cabin to the other. With a single glance, Zhou Weiqing could instantly tell that it was actually crafted from an entire piece of Fragrant Rosewood.

Fragrant Rosewood was also named *Dalbergia Odorifera*, and it had a unique scent. More importantly, this type of wood actually had an unique and interesting property towards Consolidating Inks. It was actually able to increase the success rate of creating Consolidating Equipment Scrolls by almost ten percent, and to Consolidating Equipment Masters, it could be considered an ultimate treasure.

Behind the large fragrant rosewood desk sat two people, and their gazes were currently fixed on Zhou Weiqing.

The one on the left looked to be around eighty years of age, an old man with white hair and a ruddy complexion, the wrinkles on his face almost able to clamp a fly to death. However, its eyes were as clear as that of a baby's, yet so sharp and piercing as if they

could see right into one's soul.

As soon as Zhou Weiqing met his eyes, he could feel a strange external pressure. Luckily, his spiritual energy had been raised by the dragon Hui Yao, so he did not lose his composure there and then.

Seeing that old man, Zhou Weiqing was not surprised. After all, for a pure Consolidating Equipment Master to reach a certain level, the sheer amount of effort and vigor one had to pour into the profession was just too immense. As such, it was common that they looked older than ordinary Heavenly Jewel Masters. Those who looked like Duan Tianlang, having eaten some unique medicinal treasures that enabled him to retain his youthful looks, were definitely the minority.

However, seated right beside the old man was a lady, and this time even Zhou Weiqing was caught by surprise. She looked to be around twenty six, twenty seven years of age. More importantly, he could clearly sense that this lady was not just using some unique treasures or arts to look young, but she was actually around that age. The active and lively youth brimming within her was not something that could be attained just from those treasures.

Regarding these two, Zhou Weiqing was totally unable to read them, and he could just imagine what kind of cultivation level they had. Of course, the most surprising was still that lady, as he could definitely say for sure that she was not beyond the age of thirty. Yet, her cultivation level had to be at least max level Heavenly King Stage. How could that be possible?! Even for himself, with all of his fortuitous encounters, luck and talent, he still dared not guarantee that he would reach the max level Heavenly King Stage before the age of thirty!

Besides her cultivation level, this lady was also especially attractive to Zhou Weiqing. He had seen many ladies with absolute beauty; after all, all of his own 'intimate' ladies were extremely beautiful. However, this lady in front of him gave him an

extremely different sensation. If one had to force a comparison, perhaps this striking lady in front of him could be associated with the combined qualities of Shangguan Xue'er and Princess Cai Cai.

Cai Cai's impressive, dignified and noble manner, along with Shangguan Xue'er's cold distinct beauty. Even though Shangguan Bing'er's looks and beauty were definitely no lesser than her, she somehow slightly lacked that unique quality.

As if unhappy that Zhou Weiqing had been staring at her, the lady gave a soft cough, furrowing her brow slightly at him.

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said, "I apologize, young Miss, you are just too beautiful and I lost myself. Much apologies." He did not attempt to hide his admiration as he nodded towards the lady.

Standing beside Zhou Weiqing, Shangguan Bing'er gave him an exasperated glare. She couldn't help but think to herself that it was definitely the right choice for her to follow him here. Otherwise, who knew how many more women this naughty rascal would bring back after this trip to the XuanTian Continent.

The lady said passively, "Your purpose of coming here is not just to praise me right? You did say one thing correctly that I agree with: only God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters have the qualification to examine another God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master. So... we invite you to present your abilities now."

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said, "Aren't you two going to introduce yourselves? Isn't that a little rude?"

The old man smiled faintly and said, "This old man has been in the Consolidating Equipment Master world for almost a hundred years, but I have never heard of this Legacy of Strength. If you have the capabilities, you will naturally know who we are soon. If you are unable to pass this test before you, then there is no reason to know who we are."

Zhou Weiqing smiled and said, “I still remember just a few days ago I spoke to Elder Fei Lun... Aspiration is not related to age, and a hundred years of living without aspiration is the same as not living at all. You might not know of the Legacy of Strength that I belong to, but that does not mean it does not exist.”

A bright light flashed in the old man’s eyes, but his aura did not change in the slightest. “Young man, are you trying to provoke this old man?”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily, a cold light flashing in his eyes. “So what if I am?”

The old man nodded. “It has been a long time since anyone dared to speak to me like this. If you are truly able to prove yourself and create a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scroll, then your words will be proven right. Otherwise, you should know the consequence.”

Zhou Weiqing had been observing the two of them closely. The reason why he spoke so bluntly was because he wanted to see if he could sense their character and reactions through this method. Without question, these two before him were the God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters of the XuanTian Palace. If he were to join the XuanTian Palace, whether or not he could gain the Spatial Teleportation Gem in the future would also be closely related to these two.

To his surprise, he discovered that when the old man was speaking, he would subconsciously glance towards the lady. Zhou Weiqing was extremely sensitive, and he immediately judged that of the two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters, it was actually the lady who was in the leading position.

“Begin then.” The lady pointed to the Spatial Ring on the Fragrant Rosewood table before she lapsed into silence.

Shangguan Bing’er quietly closed the door behind her. Although her cultivation level was no match for Zhou Weiqing, her body was

still filled with Saint Energy, and her spiritual energies and soul had also been boosted by Hui Yao previously. As such, she didn't care much about the oppressive aura drifting in and out of existence from the two in front of her.

Zhou Weiqing picked up the Spatial Ring from the table. Sweeping through it with his will, he could sense the materials were all present within. His eyes couldn't help but reveal a hint of gratified joy. The value of these materials could not be measured by mere gold!

Standing there, he slowly closed his eyes, entering a state of deep thought.

As the saying goes, as soon as an expert takes action, one would instantly be able to tell. The moment Zhou Weiqing closed his eyes, both the old man and the lady's faces revealed a hint of surprise. They could clearly sense that in that instant, Zhou Weiqing entered a state of absolute harmony with the world, as if one with the world.

It might sound like an easy thing to accomplish, but it was definitely extremely difficult to reach such a state. One with the world, this was a unique quality for Heavenly King stage powerhouses, but it was also a necessary quality for God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters to have. After all, when they were creating the highly complicated God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, they would have to be fully immersed in the process, not able to lose concentration for a split second or make a single mistake. Without a state of absolute harmony with the world, there was almost no possibility of success in creating a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scroll. This was also the most important reason why they were usually all Heavenly King stage powerhouses or higher.

As soon as Zhou Weiqing entered, these two powerhouses had already clearly sensed that he was only at the five-Jeweled stage of Heavenly Energy. This was the reason why they had been so sure

that he was definitely not a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master. However, as soon as he entered the state of harmony with the world, both their expressions finally changed. To be able to enter such a state at a mere five-Jeweled cultivation level, this could not be described with the mere word of genius. He was literally a monster amongst geniuses!

A one chi diameter crystal vat appeared in front of Zhou Weiqing, and his eyes snapped open. As they did so, there were no impurities within his gaze, just an infinite resolution.

Right in that moment, the other three in the room showed their different understanding towards Consolidating Equipment Masters. Shangguan Bing'er only stood by the side, watching silently. Although she did not make any sound, she continued staring at Zhou Weiqing without blinking an eye, and did not seem to have any change at all. However, the two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters seated instantly withdrew their aura, totally erasing their presence at once. It was as if they had become a mere speck of dust in the room, bringing any possible influence they might cause to Zhou Weiqing to an absolute minimum.

This was the tacit understanding between Consolidating Equipment Masters. Normally, for one to be able to withdraw and restrain their auras to such a degree, only a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master would be able to do so.

However, to both their surprise, the instant they withdrew their aura and presence, Shangguan Bing'er seemed to sense something. After glancing at them, in the next moment, she actually followed suit to erase her own presence and aura. Just like Zhou Weiqing, it seemed like it was easy for her to enter a harmonious state with nature.

In truth, the reason why both Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er were able to enter such a state that usually only Heavenly King stage powerhouses were able to do was naturally the power of

the Saint Energy. As the strongest Attribute existence in the world, since their bodies were full of it, they could also naturally integrate themselves into any environment. This was because their actual bodies were already beyond any environment or attribute.

Although the two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters were surprised at that sight, they did not show any emotions, instead turning their gazes back to Zhou Weiqing.

In that instant, Zhou Weiqing sprang into motion. His right wrist flickered, and three of the materials appeared from within the Spatial Ring.

The three materials were clearly from plants. One was a crimson red fruit, one was a black vine, while the last was an entire emerald green plant.

When the three materials appeared, Zhou Weiqing's left hand drew an arc in the air, a faint silver light glowing in the air abruptly to form a silvery round disc, as if it was about to hold the three materials. However, as soon as the materials touched the silver disc, they vanished like snow in the summer. Below the silver disc, only a layer of mixed liquid and powder remained. The powder looked like frosting on a cake, so fine that one could actually sense the exquisiteness of it with their eyes.

Chapter 240 God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master? Monster?! (3)

Such control! The approval in both the old man and the lady's eyes was not concealed at all. As God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters in their own right, they naturally had the Spatial Attribute as well, and they could easily tell that Zhou Weiqing was using the Spatial Rend Skill. However, for him to wield the Spatial Rend Skill to such a fine degree of control, with all subtleties within his grasp... not even wasting a single bit of materials. This was not something any ordinary person could accomplish. In that instant, they gained a much deeper understanding about Zhou Weiqing. This young man who claimed to be from this Legacy of Strength definitely had a powerful spiritual energy and soul; otherwise he could not possibly reach such a fine degree of control.

Next, two blocks of ores appeared in Zhou Weiqing's hands. One blue, one purple, both the size of a fist, each grasped in one of his hands.

A low shout rang out from Zhou Weiqing, and the two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters were surprised to see his sleeves shatter apart and scatter to the sides, revealing his muscled arms. The clear lines of his muscles were filled with the manly yang qi that had its own 'beauty', causing even the lady to suddenly blush.

His arm muscles clearly flexed as his hands gripped tight. In the next moment, the two tough ores in his hands actually gave out a cracking sound as they began to break apart quickly.

The lady's eyes widened in shock. What kind of strength was that?! Was this fellow really human? She naturally recognized the two ores; the blue was Kyanite, while the purple was Devil's Amethyst. Both were considered extremely tough precious rocks. Yet, he had just used pure physical strength to shatter them...

wasn't that just too terrifying?

At the same time, a one chi tall green whirlwind appeared right in front of Zhou Weiqing, silent and sudden. The entire whirlpool was an azure green, and though its surface area was small, all of them could see that it consisted of highly compressed powerful Wind Attribute energies. The azure green was so bright, almost as moving as the purest precious jade.

Zhou Weiqing's hands moved above the whirlpool, dropping the crushed stones into it. With the terrifying piercing winds whipping and slicing, when they came out from the pointed end, they had been ground into fine dust.

Standing to the side, Shangguan Bing'er was rather puzzled. Since the final result was to grind to such fine dust, why didn't he just use the Spatial Rend again for the same effect? Why did Zhou Weiqing choose to use another, seemingly more complicated, method?

She was not a Consolidating Equipment Master, and she naturally did not understand the profound secrets behind such a decision. However, for the two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters watching, the suspicion in their hearts had already been diminished by a large amount.

The reason why Zhou Weiqing had chosen to do so was exactly because of his understanding of the materials. Previously, when cutting the plant, fruit and vine, he could safely use the Spatial Attribute without any problems as they were all previously alive. However, in terms of the two ores, it was totally different. If he had used the Spatial Attribute to undergo the cutting, the ores which were already inherently filled with Spatial Attribute energies would definitely undergo some subtle changes, losing their original effects. As a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, how could one make such a mistake?

At the same time, since Zhou Weiqing's arms were now bared,

they could actually see his Heavenly Jewels for the first time.

Naturally, there was nothing too surprising about the Strength Attribute Physical Jewel on his right wrist, but on his left wrist, the rose red glow of the Alexandrite Cat's Eye Elemental Jewels caused even their hearts to grip in shock.

Alexandrite Cat's Eye.... that was the Alexandrite Cat's Eye Jewel! This... this meant he had at least four Elemental Attributes! Such a Jewel would glow a brilliant bluish green under direct sunlight, but at night or where there wasn't sunlight, it would glow a moving rose red. Though this room was lit by sunlight, it was only near the windows, and at the center where Zhou Weiqing was standing, the sunlight did not reach him directly. As a result, his Alexandrite Cat's Eye Jewels were the rose red colour.

Previously, these two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters felt that Zhou Weiqing was just too arrogant, but their expressions grew solemn. Putting aside the matter of whether or not he was really a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, just with these Elemental Jewels and what he had shown so far, he definitely had the right to be arrogant. Furthermore, he looked to be only around twenty years old; even if he wasn't really a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master yet, he was definitely one of the top geniuses and talents in the entire XuanTian Continent.

His hands still glowing with the light from his Heavenly Jewels, he held the crystal vat which now held the five materials, the five colours slowly mixing together. Zhou Weiqing's movements did not stop there, as one after the other, various precious materials were continuously taken out from the Spatial Ring.

From the looks of it, his speed was extremely fast, but if one examined his actions closely, they would be able to discover that his actions contained a unique rhythm of their own. Every single material that appeared had its strict sequence and its own method of being prepared. All in all, forty two materials were used, and by that time, the crystal vat had already been filled halfway.

After finishing this first step of his preparations, Zhou Weiqing slowly raised the crystal vat carefully with both hands, a thick Heavenly Energy clearly moving from both his palms, infusing into the crystal vat in a careful, well-distributed fashion. The forty two different powders or liquids formed by the materials began to slowly mix together, fusing as one under the activation of his Heavenly Energy.

In this moment, Zhou Weiqing actually closed his eyes. This time, it was as if he had become a giant vat, a unique aura enveloping the crystal vat and the mixed materials within, not allowing any of the slightest scent to spread out.

At this point, both God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters had their gazes fixed unblinkingly. Every God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master was different, with each having their own expertise, and even the God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scrolls they created would have some differences. Even the compounding ratio of each Consolidating Ink would be different. Previously, when Zhou Weiqing was concocting his Consolidated Ink, they had tried their best to record the sequence and process. To their knowledge, this was the first time they had seen this style of concocting Consolidating Ink, and without question it was a new type of Consolidating Ink as well. Since it required so many precious materials, one could imagine what type of Scrolls it would be used to create.

As Zhou Weiqing infused more Heavenly Energy, his actions became more and more gentle. Slowly, the Consolidated Ink in the crystal vat began to swirl, forming a small cyclone in the vat. A faint glow began to emit from below, and in the continued process, the glow began to strengthen.

This was a glow of silver light. It seemed as if silver mercury was being dissolved and solvent, the faint silver light filled with an overbearing feel. Although the aura was not being leaked out, the two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters could still sense

the violent mania within.

At last, Zhou Weiqing's action stopped totally. The crystal vat had already been raised above his head. In that instant, his eyes snapped open and he gave a great shout.

A thick silver light soared above from the crystal vat, warping into a silver flame as it burst through the confines of the roof and into the skies.

A strong fragrance began to spread, and it wasn't just the few of them in the room that could smell it, but even those powerhouses guarding outside began to smell the fragrance that seemed to refresh the mind.

It was a fragrance that would even cause one's soul to tremble, and all of those who smelled it instantly felt as though their pores had burst open. It was truly a strange feeling, and even the Heavenly Energy within their bodies seem to circulate faster than normal. Of course, this phenomenon only lasted for a split second, and as the silver flame extinguished, the fragrance also disappeared silently.

Towards the strange happenings in the wooden cabin, the XuanTian Palace powerhouses outside did not do anything. After all, there were often such strange happenings in the cabin, and their duty was just to guard the area and not allow any outsiders to enter, and definitely not to disturb those within.

As soon as the silver flame vanished from the silver vat, only then did the other three in the wooden cabin clearly see the situation. Originally, the half vat of liquid was now reduced to barely a thin layer at the bottom. A faint silver liquid, looking as moving as the silver galaxies above, drawing their attention as if they couldn't bear to tear their eyes from it.

As soon as the two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters saw that, they drew in a cold breath. They knew that Zhou Weiqing had indeed succeeded in creating Consolidating Ink that

was used for the creation of God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scrolls. Furthermore, the entire process had barely taken an hour. Both of them were experienced God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters, especially the old man who had been one for almost forty years. However, even he had to admit that if it was up to him to use so many treasured materials in creating Consolidating Ink, he could not be as quick as Zhou Weiqing. After all, as long as any single step failed, the entire vat of precious materials would be destroyed and wasted. Those were not any ordinary materials, all precious treasures! Just that small vat of liquid had cost an estimated minimum of several million gold coins, and many of those treasures could not even be purchased even if you had the money.

Zhou Weiqing also breathed a sigh of relief inwardly. Naturally, he wasn't a real God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master yet. At least, not before today. However, he had the Saint Energy to aid him, and possessing it meant possessing an unparalleled tool for cheating.

He always had the knowledge on how to create God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, but when he was still in the Boundless Mainland, he never had the time to delve deeper into it without practice and research. Even so, as the greatest hope of the Legacy of Strength, Duan Tianlang would still find some time to teach and guide him, especially in the creation of his 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set. After all, Duan Tianlang did not know when he would actually pass away.

However, this was Zhou Weiqing's actual first attempt in creating a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scroll. Although it seemed like he had such perfect rhythm in merging all of those materials earlier, in truth he had made so many mistakes. If the two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters actually tried following his methods, they would never be able to learn it.

In the end, the only reason why the treasured materials could

actually succeed in merging together perfectly was solely the merit of the Saint Energy. In the final step when Zhou Weiqing was infusing his Heavenly Energy, causing the contents of the silver vat to turn silver, within his transformed Heavenly Energy he had hidden some Saint Energy.

Chapter 241 Controllable Reverse Time! (1)

Regardless as to whether or not he made any mistakes in terms of process or procedure, his Saint Energy ensured that the precious materials fully obeyed his will. This made fusing them together as one much simpler.

A faint smile appeared on Zhou Weiqing's face as he looked at the faintly flickering light emanating from the Consolidating Ink within the crystal vat. He had at least finished the first step, and everything had been more or less what he had expected.

He didn't continue with the creation process. If he did, his behavior would be too different from what a five-Jeweled cultivator like he appeared to be could accomplish. He instead sat down into a cross-legged position, beginning to gather his vitality. He had to at least give those two the false impression that he needed to recover his Heavenly Energy.

The two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters were rather puzzled. Why didn't Zhou Weiqing first put away that precious Consolidating Ink? It must be remembered that the more precious a Consolidating Ink was, the quicker it would evaporate. Thus, after creating Consolidating Liquid, they would usually put it into a sealed bottle right away to preserve it.

A short while later, they let out amazed sighs. This was because the silver Consolidating Ink which only took up a small fraction of the space inside the basin didn't appear to be evaporating at all. The rays of the sun were shining down upon it through the windows, but the dazzling astral luster of the ink didn't change in the slightest.

How was it this stable? The two exchanged a glance, nodding at each other. Even if Zhou Weiqing wasn't an actually God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, for him to be able to do this much meant that he had already passed the XuanTian Palace's test.

Without question, he was an absolute genius of the Consolidating Equipment world. The XuanTian Palace, at least, had never been able to produce such a tremendously talented figure before!

In the faint, flickering light, Zhou Weiqing spent nearly an hour recuperating. He then finally rose to his feet, and as he did so he once more entered the 'one with the world' status.

He had yet to say a single word since he had begun, but the two watching God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters felt as though they were mentally spent. This was because they didn't dare to be the slightest bit negligent in watching Zhou Weiqing's every movement.

Even masters like themselves had to constantly learn and improve. A God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master who was capable of creating a nine-piece set was on a completely different level from one who was only able to create an eight-piece set. As for one who was able to create a ten-piece Legendary Set? That represented one which had reached the ranks of legends even amongst the God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters. As for eleven-piece sets? It had been a long, long time since anyone on the XuanTian Continent had ever been able to produce such a thing.

When Zhou Weiqing once more rose to his feet, he readjusted the crystal vat before him. The two carefully memorized even the slightest of motions he made. He took a deep breath, a focused look once more appearing in his eyes. He waved his hand, causing the highest-quality piece of Consolidating Paper to appear atop the yellow rosewood table in front of him.

This table was extremely flat, and it was almost as slick as a mirror. The Consolidating Paper completely stuck onto the surface. Every single sheaf of Consolidating Paper of this quality was worth above a hundred gold coins, and even then it couldn't be found for purchase. This was because in order to create it, more than ten different types of precious Spatial Attribute materials had to be consumed. Not even God Tier Consolidating Equipment

Masters would use such precious materials until they were completely certain that they would succeed, as there was no place to buy them!

Zhou Weiqing flipped his hand over, producing a Consolidating Pen that glowed with dazzling silver light. When they saw this pen appear, the two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters could no longer restrain themselves and immediately rose to their feet.

The Consolidating Pen in Zhou Weiqing's hand was a bit over one foot in length, and it tapered off into an extremely slender tip. It was completely silver in color, and its tip seemed to be a single whole that was one with the shaft. As soon as he had produced the pen, it had instantly emanated a thick Spatial Attribute aura that was highly condensed and focused around the tip of the pen.

Cream of the crop! This was definitely a treasure amongst treasures. As God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters, these two were both Heavenly Kings and could clearly see the ancient-looking characters on the silver pen which spelled out the phrase, 'Legacy of Strength.'

So this Legacy of Strength actually existed?

They had no idea that it had been Duan Tianlang who had gifted this pen to Zhou Weiqing. It had been Duan Tianlang's most beloved treasure for many years. There had only been three such pens in the entire history of the Legacy of Strength. Zhou Weiqing currently had one, the second had gone missing, while the third was still in Duan Tianlang's possession.

This Consolidating Pen had been created from the bones of a Heavenly God Stage Heavenly Beast of the Spatial Attribute, with the tip having been created from the crushed bones of that beast.

That type of Heavenly Beast had long ago gone extinct in the Boundless Mainland, while the people of the XuanTian Continent had never even heard of such a creature. This sort of Consolidating Pen could definitely be described as a priceless divine artifact to

the Consolidating Equipment world. The yellow rosewood table in front of Zhou Weiqing paled in comparison to it.

A flicker of greed instantly appeared in the eyes of the elder God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, while the woman next to him cast him a reflexive glare. Only then did the old man manage to extricate himself from his greed for that pen, a feeling of awe replacing it. It must be remembered that for someone like him, there was virtually nothing which he could not acquire in the XuanTian Continent. It had been countless years since he had even felt the emotion of 'greed'.

Faint light flickered in front of Zhou Weiqing, whose face was covered with a faint smile. He held onto the shaft of the Consolidating Pen using his right hand, once more closing his eyes.

The two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters couldn't help but stare wide-eyed at him again. There were three critical steps in creating a Consolidating Scroll. The first was the creation of the Consolidating Ink, which could involve many different mysterious formulas. Every single God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master had his own secret legacy and formulas which he would never pass down to outsiders, only people in his own direct line of descent.

The second step lay in designing the scroll. A powerful God Tier Consolidating Scroll was extremely complicated to design, and not the slightest mistake could occur. As for the final step, called 'sketching', involved the actual creation of the entire scroll. Not a single mistake could be made in any of these three steps, as a mistake would immediately invalidate all the previous work.

Of these three steps, the most important step of all lay in the 'design' portion in the second step. So long as you had a working design, any talented Consolidating Equipment Master would be able to use it to calculate and allocate the materials needed for the Consolidating Ink. The most difficult step, 'sketching', was actually the least important as it merely tested the Consolidating

Equipment Master's power and the degree of his control.

For Consolidating Equipment Masters, any design diagram for a Consolidating Scroll created by a different God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master was a priceless treasure. When they saw that Zhou Weiqing was about to design his diagram, how could they give up such a wonderful opportunity?

This time, Zhou Weiqing kept his eyes closed for much longer than the previous two times. He simply stood there, maintaining a perfectly firm and stable grip over the Consolidating Pen. He didn't budge at all for the time needed to burn half a stick of incense.

Just as the two were beginning to feel rather impatient, Zhou Weiqing suddenly took a deep breath. As he did so, he seemed to have transformed into an enormous vortex which began to gather all of the energy of the world into his body.

The Personal Jewels in his hands began to light up. Although he was still just a five-Jeweled cultivator, in that instant his aura suddenly began to skyrocket.

The two naturally had no idea why Zhou Weiqing had chosen to suddenly increase his power at a time like this, but they didn't dare to disturb him in the slightest even though they were a bit curious. One had to be fully focused and detail-oriented when designing a scroll. If this was a scroll which he had already designed and used long ago, by all rights this should be the quickest of the three steps... but why did it look like he was pouring all of his power into it? And he even seemed to be using some sort of secret technique that temporarily raised his Heavenly Energy to a level which vastly surpassed his actual cultivation level.

They had no idea that Zhou Weiqing was doing all this just to put on a show for them. They watched, completely stunned, as Zhou Weiqing suddenly dipped his Consolidating Pen deep into the crystal basin, staining its tip with the silver starry Consolidating

Ink.

W-what was he doing?! The two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters were completely stunned. There was no way someone would use Consolidating Ink to simply design a scroll. W-was he actually going to skip the 'design' stage and go straight into creating the scroll itself? B-but this was impossible!

Although these two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master were completely confident in their techniques for creating Consolidating Scrolls they had never before created a God Tier Consolidating Scroll without even going through the design phase. They had this kind of ability, but they would only use it for creating ordinary Consolidating Scrolls. The materials needed for creating God Tier Consolidating Scrolls were simply too precious. If you didn't use a design diagram, your chances of failure would skyrocket. No talented God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master would take such a foolish risk... but the youth before them clearly was about to.

Zhou Weiqing's left wrist trembled, splashing the ink from his pen across the surface of the paper before him. The silver ink instantly began to form a sketch. His movements were very slow, but his fingers and his wrist were extremely stable. All of his feelings and emotions seemed to have vanished as he became one with the Consolidating Pen he held as well as the Consolidating Paper he was sketching on.

He's insane. He's completely insane! The two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters exchanged a glance. Finally, they had been completely and thoroughly stunned by Zhou Weiqing.

Dense streams of silver light began to spill out of Zhou Weiqing's body. This was the Spatial Attribute Heavenly Energy which he had converted. The silver light flowed down his arm, pooling together within the Consolidating Pen within the palm of his hand before coming together with the Consolidating Ink at the tip of the

pen as it continued to slowly sketch.

Now was the time for the yellow rosewood and the godlike Consolidating Pen within Zhou Weiqing's hands to reveal their importance. The Consolidating Paper was kept extremely steady by the yellow rosewood table, while the Consolidating Liquid which was sketched onto the paper would completely bond together with the paper in an extremely short amount of time. Zhou Weiqing's cadence didn't change at all, as though he had already found his own rhythm.

Chapter 241 Controllable Reverse Time! (2)

For the sake of not revealing his design diagrams, he actually chose to skip it in the creation process. He's definitely going to fail! Both of these two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters came to the same tacit conclusion. But... would Zhou Weiqing actually fail?

The answer... was yes! Of course!

Yes. Just after Zhou Weiqing's pen had completed two arcs, before he had finished even a single complete part of the sketch, a few mistakes appeared.

As had already been explained earlier, even the tiniest of mistakes made during the creation of a Consolidating Scroll would result in immediate failure. Every single stroke of this God Tier Consolidating Scroll sketch was finer than a human hair. The entire scroll would only be completed after hundreds on thousands of sketched lines.

He failed. He failed already. I knew he was no God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master! The two stared wide-eyed in surprise at the quick failure... but for some reason, they also felt a sense of relief in their hearts. Perhaps they subconsciously were unwilling to believe that there really was an incredible genius who was just at the five-Jeweled level and twenty-something years of age, yet capable of becoming a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master.

But... just as they were about to let out sighs of relief, they suddenly stopped breathing entirely, and their relaxed bodies tensed up once more.

As soon as Zhou Weiqing's pen had made that tiny mistake, something marvelous happened. The illusory figure of an odd-looking meaty bug suddenly began to slowly appear behind his back. A strange type of energy rippled out from it, causing

everything within the entire wood cabin to twist and distort.

The strangest thing was, once the big translucent bug appeared, it gave a bizarre wiggle and caused a stream of silver light to be released from Zhou Weiqing's body.

Everything began to happen in reverse. Although only a few seconds were reversed, it was enough to go back to the moment before Zhou Weiqing had made the mistake.

"Time Attribute!" This time, the old man was completely unable to hold himself back. He almost instantly blurted these two words out, jumping to his feet in sheer astonishment, no longer able to maintain the slightest bit of calm. As for the woman next to him, she had been completely stunned as well.

Given their cultivation levels, they were naturally able to tell what Zhou Weiqing had just done. Time Attribute! Only the Time Attribute could've produced such an effect! Although they didn't know what technique or Skill Zhou Weiqing had used, just now he had clearly used it to reverse time and cause his pen to return back to the moment just before he had made that mistake, allowing him to continue sketching.

Is this for real? Suddenly, the two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters felt as though everything they thought they knew about how the creation of Consolidating Scrolls worked had been completely overturned. Not just them – even Shangguan Bing'er, who had come here alongside Zhou Weiqing, stared wide-eyed at the sight.

When they had first arrived, Shangguan Bing'er had actually felt extremely nervous. She understood Zhou Weiqing very well and knew that in recent years, he had almost spent no time on creating Consolidating Scrolls. How could he possibly be God Tier? She wasn't able to accurately judge just how strong the two people in front of them were, but she could sense that they were at a level beyond what she and Zhou Weiqing could handle. If Zhou Weiqing

wasn't able to pass the test, it would be hard for them to leave this place, much less acquire the Spatial Teleportation Gem.

If it wasn't for the fact that Zhou Weiqing had repeatedly assured her that he would pass this test, Shangguan Bing'er probably wouldn't have even permitted him to come here.

However, Shangguan Bing'er had only grown increasingly astonished by what she saw here today. That state of becoming 'one with the world' didn't matter, as she knew the mysteries involved. But when Zhou Weiqing first began to create the Consolidating Ink, she immediately realized that she didn't know nearly enough about her Little Fatty.

Zhou Weiqing had a completely focused look on his face. Even though he wasn't all that handsome, but a woman would always be captivated by the look of her man when he was completely absorbed in his work.

When she saw this, Shangguan Bing'er finally understood why Zhou Weiqing said that he would be able to produce a God Tier Consolidating Scroll. It might look as though he was relying upon the Time Attribute, but Shangguan Bing'er knew that the key of the matter was actually the Time Attribute Skills being infused with his Saint Energy.

On the journey over to the XuanTian Continent, Shangguan Bing'er had gained a clear understanding of all the many techniques and Stored Skills which Zhou Weiqing had available to him. This Stored Skill he had used just now was actually his highest-class Time Attribute Skill, the 'Time Reversal'.

This technique had once saved Shangguan Fei'er's life, which was why Shangguan Bing'er remembered it so clearly. However, normally speaking a technique like Time Reversal would cause time to go backwards by a full hour. Even if Zhou Weiqing improved his cultivation level, he would at most be able to gain enough control to extend it to a day or perhaps even longer, not

shorter. More importantly, once used the Time Reversal technique started the user would be unable to stop the process, much less change midway through the process. As such, despite its great power, its practical effects were less so.

However... Zhou Weiqing had somehow succeeded in controlling it. Without question, he must have relied on his Saint Energy to cast the Time Reversal, causing this relatively useless Heavenly God Tier Skill to suddenly become truly monstrous in power.

Zhou Weiqing was no God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master in practice, but he had the knowledge. Now, thanks to this 'Time Reversal' technique, he was able to slowly complete a God Tier Consolidating Scroll one step at a time. So what if he made mistakes? He'd just reverse time and fix it! So long as he could successfully complete one stroke at a time, he'd eventually succeed in finishing the entire thing.

As for the expenditure in Saint Energy? To Zhou Weiqing, he only needed to use a tiny amount to keep the effect active. The energy expenditure was virtually negligible. He was after all a nine-Jeweled cultivator. However, even if he really was just a five-Jeweled cultivator, the low energy expenditure meant that he should still be able to sustain this process.

Little Fatty, you really are brilliant. The only thing which Shangguan Bing'er felt was approval. Her Little Fatty was simply too brilliant. Clearly, he had already come up with this plan when he first proclaimed himself a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master. He had prepared everything.

Zhou Weiqing continued with his manufacturing process. By now, the two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters were completely stupefied. Yes, his manufacturing technique was absolute 'cheating'; they could see this right away. But... he had the Time Attribute! This was an innate gift, an absolutely extraordinary innate gift!

The attributes which Zhou Weiqing had already demonstrated included wind, space, and time. When you combined these three mighty attributes together, they allowed an incredibly powerful and incredibly talented God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master to arise.

When Zhou Weiqing had first learned of Consolidating Scrolls and had been learning from Huyan Aobo, Huyan Aobo had been absolutely overwhelmed with joy to discover that he had all three of these attributes. Now, Zhou Weiqing had transformed this ‘overwhelming joy’ into ‘overwhelming shock’ and delivered it to the two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters of XuanTian Palace.

Most importantly of all, they didn’t even recognize the Time Reversal technique which Zhou Weiqing was using. Even if they did, they wouldn’t believe that it was the same ‘Time Reversal’ technique, as Zhou Weiqing’s version allowed him to fully control time within a specific duration. If this technique wasn’t used for creating a Consolidating Scroll and was instead used in battle... how terrifying would that be?!

What they didn’t know was that even when activated via Saint Energy, Zhou Weiqing was only able to reverse time by five seconds while maintaining ‘absolute control’ over it. In addition, it wasn’t quite as easy as Shangguan Bing’er had thought it to be. Although it was true that this process took up very little Saint Energy, it consumed an enormous amount of mental energy. Zhou Weiqing himself hadn’t expected this.

Thankfully, he wasn’t actually a five-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master, but a nine-Jeweled one. In addition, his mental energy far surpassed that of an ordinary person’s! Given the above, Zhou Weiqing was able to continue with the manufacturing process despite the intensity of it.

Time continued to tick away. Zhou Weiqing’s forehead became beaded with sweat, but there was no way he would ever let that

sweat drip down upon the Consolidating Paper. A layer of strange spatial energy had already formed directly above it, flicking away anything besides the pen which fell down upon it.

This was the first time Zhou Weiqing had so seriously and determinedly worked on putting together a Consolidating Scroll, one stroke of the pen at a time. The scroll he was working on was naturally for the equipment he was most familiar with – the ‘Hate Ground No Handle’ Legendary Set. He was creating his seventh Consolidated Equipment, which he was desperately in need of.

He had already reached the nine-Jeweled stage, but he only had five pieces of the Hate Ground No Handle set. If you factored in the Overlord Bow, he only had six pieces of Consolidated Equipment in total. If he was able to create another part of the Hate Ground No Handle set, his cultivation power would explode once more as he doubled in strength.

It must be remembered that his physical strength had already reached a terrifying level. If it was doubled once more... Zhou Weiqing felt absolutely confident that he could battle even high level Heavenly Kings! He might be able to given even max level Heavenly Kings a fight.

As for Heavenly Emperor powerhouses? He didn’t even want to think about them, nor did he want to test them out.

Time continued to flow on. Zhou Weiqing had arrived at dawn, but by now it had already begun to darken outside without him realizing it. His skin had lost its luster, transforming to become rather sallow, but the determination in his eyes had never wavered in the slightest.

By now, he had reached the very final stages of creating this Consolidating Scroll. Not much of the Saint Energy in Zhou Weiqing’s body had been used up, but he could feel that his mind and spirit had been all-but drained empty. Maintaining this process was causing him to feel an ear-splitting headache. If it

wasn't for the fact that his willpower, tested repeatedly by the Immortal Deity Technique, was incredibly strong... he probably would've collapsed long ago.

The process of creating a God Tier Consolidating Scroll allowed for brief pauses, but it didn't allow for any complete halts. If you truly stopped, all of your earlier work would be for nothing. This was yet another reason why God Tier Consolidating Scrolls could only be created by Heavenly Kings.

Chapter 241 Controllable Reverse Time! (3)

Heavenly Kings not only had a terrifying amount of Heavenly Energy, they also saw their mental energy and spiritual energy skyrocket to an unprecedented new level which was more than enough to sustain the costs incurred by creating a God Tier Consolidating Scroll. Even so, God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters generally were in poor physical shape, precisely because the process of creating God Tier Consolidating Scrolls was just so incredibly taxing.

Zhou Weiqing wasn't too bad off, because the Consolidating Scroll he was creating was for the sixth piece of his Hate Ground No Handle set. If he was trying to make the final piece, the process of creating the tenth Consolidating Scroll would be terrifyingly exhausting. This was the reason why Duan Tianlang had taught so many things to Zhou Weiqing. He wasn't sure if he would be able to stay alive after helping Zhou Weiqing finish the tenth piece of the Hate Ground No Handle set.

In the past, Zhou Weiqing didn't really understand this. Now that he was truly creating a God Tier Consolidating Scroll of his own for the first time, he gradually began to understand what Duan Tianlang's intentions were. The damn thing is really a pain in the ass!

Can he succeed? Can he succeed?! The two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters looked just as wan and pale as Zhou Weiqing himself, as if they were using up an enormous amount of mental energy as well. They were firmly memorizing every single stroke of the Zhou Weiqing's pen, but with Zhou Weiqing occasionally employing Time Reversal to replicate certain strokes, it made the memorization process even more difficult.

Of course, they were also able to tell that Zhou Weiqing had reached the final stages of creating this Consolidating Scroll. It was about to finish.

Faint light flickered across the scroll as Zhou Weiqing's face turned increasingly solemn. He knew that his mental energy was at the brink of collapse, but this actually spurred on his innate, bone-deep stubbornness even further. He gritted his teeth. No matter what, he was going to persevere.

It wasn't just for the sake of completing this God Tier Consolidating Scroll. It was also a way for him to demonstrate mastery over his own willpower. So long as he could complete this, it would be very beneficial for his future cultivation. Zhou Weiqing also had the vague feeling that if he could complete this God Tier Consolidating Scroll, then he would also be able to break through to the thirty-seventh stage of Saint Energy, which had vexed him for so long.

How could he possibly resist such an alluring prize? If he gave up this chance, who knew how long it would be before he would make his Saint Energy breakthrough? Once the Saint Energy broke past the thirty-sixth stage, each further upgrade could no longer be achieved simply through hard work and motivation. Fate and fortune both played a role. Chances like today were few and far between!

The world outside slowly began to grow dark, but the three people inside the room didn't light any candles. They were afraid that even the tiniest of movements would disturb Zhou Weiqing and cause his creation of this scroll to fail.

The dim light from the scroll flickered across Zhou Weiqing's sweat-covered face. Only a tiny dab of Consolidating Ink was left within the crystal basin.

The final stroke. He had finally come down to the final stroke. Zhou Weiqing's eyes suddenly narrowed to tiny slits as the Consolidating Pen in his hand began to tremble slightly for the first time. The atmosphere inside the entire room became oppressively heavy, while Shangguan Bing'er clenched her hands into fists.

Boom! Failure. Just as Zhou Weiqing finished his final stroke, the Consolidating Paper instantly exploded beneath him. The Time Reversal effect once more took place, but this time Zhou Weiqing's body shuddered. The intense mental strain he was under caused even his mighty body to suffer serious repercussions. Blood began to spill out from his nose, mouth, and ears. It looked absolutely terrifying.

I must succeed! Zhou Weiqing repeated these words to himself, his right hand once more transforming to become silvery-white, causing his trembling hand to instantly stabilize.

He was willing to sacrifice many things for the sake of completing this God Tier Consolidating Scroll. Even if he had to reveal some of the secrets behind his Saint Energy, he still had to complete this. Otherwise, this failure could well result in his future advancement in Saint Energy coming to a complete halt.

Prior to actually embarking on the process of creating this God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scroll, Zhou Weiqing had been very confident in his chances. He had the Time Reversal Skill, and his nine-Jeweled stage of Saint Energy, which when combined was an unparalleled tool for creating Consolidating Equipment Scrolls. He had felt certain that he was absolutely the equal of any Heavenly King God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, but when he actually began the process he finally understood just how difficult it was to actually create a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scroll. If it hadn't been for the Time Reversal Skill, he would've failed more than a hundred times by now. Ordinary God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters couldn't afford a single mistake, needing to finish it all at once!

In other words, an absolutely gaping chasm in skill existed between Zhou Weiqing and genuine God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters. However, he was relying on Time Reversal to forcefully bridge that gap!

Thankfully, the two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters

didn't notice the change in the attribute of 'Heavenly Energy' which Zhou Weiqing had just released. Their gazes were completely focused on that nearly-finished scroll which had just undergone Time Reversal once more.

The final stroke of a pen from a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master... this gave onlookers the highest chances to suddenly be enlightened. These two were no exceptions. Thus, they chose to completely ignore the silvery light glowing from Zhou Weiqing's arm and the unique aura of the Saint Energy, which whisper that it was the heart of the very world itself. Those things were irrelevant to them, after all. Zhou Weiqing had also produced so many miracles that they simply relegated 'Saint Energy' into the category of a secret art which the Legacy of Strength possessed.

Silver light flashed as the tip of the Consolidating Pen in Zhou Weiqing's hands sketched outwards. Blood covered his entire face, dripping downwards and giving him a rather terrifying appearance.

Suddenly, dazzling silver light exploded forth from the Consolidating Paper, transforming into an incomparably dense silver aura. The blood dripping from Zhou Weiqing's face was instantly evaporated, while he himself staggered several steps backwards. He only managed to remain upright thanks to Shangguan Bing'er supporting him.

The ball of silver light atop the yellow rosewood table only grew brighter and brighter as the atmospheric energies around it rose to an incredible density. It all furiously poured into the scroll atop the table, which seemed to have come alive.

Consolidating Equipment Scrolls of any level, when first formed, would absorb atmospheric energies from the natural world. The only difference lay in the amount being consumed. Middle level or high level Consolidating Equipment Scrolls only absorbed a tiny amount of atmospheric energies, so little that Heavenly Jewel

Masters wouldn't even be able to sense it. Grandmaster Tier Consolidating Scrolls would absorb a noticeably greater amount of energy, while God Tier Consolidating Scrolls would absorb an absolutely terrifying amount. If one had to give a specific 'amount' of energy, any such scroll would at least need to absorb all the energy from the Heavenly Core Nucleus of a Heavenly King in order to be completed.

Thus, any God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master would choose to let his new scroll absorb atmospheric energies in order to complete it. This was an important reason why Heaven's Expanse Palace was able to recruit its three God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters. There were very few places in all the Boundless Mainland which had densities of atmospheric energies comparable to Heaven's Expanse Palace. Of course, Heavenly Snow Mountain was also another such place, but when compared to Heaven's Expanse Palace? Not only was the Heavenly Snow Mountain consisting and ruled by other races, its level of atmospheric energies was still slightly weaker in comparison.

This place, without question, was also such a place with an extremely high density of atmospheric energies. As soon as Zhou Weiqing finished creating the scroll, he himself could clearly sense that an enormous amount of atmospheric energies was rushing out from the gorge around them and flooding into this wooden room. This caused the previously-ordinary levels of atmospheric energy to instantly skyrocket to an incredibly dense level.

Although Zhou Weiqing didn't know why or how this was happening, it was obvious that the atmospheric energies here were formed by nature itself. There was no way any human force could create it.

The silver glow slowly began to transform into a faint gold color, which then slowly began to transform into a crystal clear gold. At the very end, it finally transformed into deep and highly concentrated dark-gold color.

Suddenly all of the light retreated into the scroll, no longer emanating outwards. As for the torrent of atmospheric energies which had been flooding into the room, they instantly vanished as well.

Everything fell completely silent. The two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters who had jumped over to the other side of the table returned to their seats, slumping exhaustedly into them while closing their eyes. Their chests silently rose and fell as they breathed deeply. Clearly, they were completely exhausted as well.

Zhou Weiqing had an absolutely ear-splitting headache right now. He watched as the dark-golden scroll atop the yellow rosewood table slowly floated up into the air, filled with a strange aura. Only then did he finally let out a sigh of relief... and then collapsed into Shangguan Bing'er's embrace.

In all of recorded history, there had never been a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master who was merely twenty or so years of age, much less someone who was able to create a God Tier Consolidating Scroll the way Zhou Weiqing just did. However, he had succeeded. He had truly succeeded.

Shangguan Bing'er half-carried the fainted Zhou Weiqing over to a nearby chair, helping him sit down. The Saint Energy in his body remained as full and abundant as either, and it was even able to maintain his false 'five-Jeweled stage'. As a result, she knew that her man was fine. He was simply mentally drained to the point where his body could no longer take it, causing him to lapse into slumber.

After roughly the time needed for half a stick of incense to burn down, the other two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters slowly opened their eyes. The first thing they did was to turn and stare at the scroll hovering above the wooden table.

The woman slowly rose to her feet. She was extremely tall, half a

head taller than even Shangguan Bing'er. She slowly reached out with her right hand, causing the scroll to drift into it and then unfurl.

She lowered her head to stare at the complicated, abstruse sketches and runes covering the scroll, her beautiful eyes revealing a hint of being mesmerized by what she saw. The old man was standing next to her, staring carefully as well.

“This is, without question, a true and genuine God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scroll. It isn't a Pseudo-God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scroll.” The old man quickly came to this conclusion after just a few glances.

The young woman nodded. “He cannot be simply described as a ‘genius’. He's a freak of nature, an absolute monster, a genius without peer.” She turned, her gaze falling upon the face of the still-fainted Zhou Weiqing.

Shangguan Bing'er had already wiped the blood off of Zhou Weiqing's face, and he continued to slumber deeply in her embrace.

Shangguan Bing'er lifted her head up and glanced at them. Rather puzzled, she asked, “What's a Pseudo-God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scroll?”

The woman blinked. “He didn't tell you?”

Shangguan Bing'er shook his head. “I'm not a Consolidating Equipment Master, and I never disturb him with such questions.”

Chapter 242 Breaking Through (1)

The woman explained, “Pseudo-God Tier Consolidating Scrolls are also a lower ranked type of God Tier scrolls. Previously, we would thought that no matter how talented or outstanding he was, he would at most be able to create a Pseudo-God Tier Consolidating Scroll. Even so, his future prospects would definitely be superior to ours, given how young he is.”

Shangguan Bing'er laughed coolly. “Aren't you young as well?”

The woman blinked, then slowly shook her head. A strange look flickered through her eyes. “No. I'm different from him. Anyway, Pseudo-God Tier Consolidating Scrolls will only appear when used to create the first few pieces of a legendary set, and even Zong Stage Consolidating Equipment Masters stand a chance at creating them. This is because each piece of a legendary set is more powerful than the last. If the very first piece of a legendary set is a true God Tier Consolidating Scroll, then the total number of pieces in the set will have to be dramatically lessened. Thus, the first three or four pieces of most legendary sets are usually formed from Pseudo-God Tier Consolidating Scrolls.”

Shangguan Bing'er now understood. “So that's how it works.”

The woman picked up Zhou Weiqing's completed scroll. “I can tell that this should be part of a legendary set, but it definitely isn't just a Pseudo-God Tier Consolidating Scroll. It has to be either the sixth or seventh piece of a legendary set. Considering the fact that he is at the five-Jeweled level, the sixth piece seems more likely.”

If Zhou Weiqing was conscious, he would definitely let out a sigh of admiration for the accuracy of her guesses and her judgment. Although she wasn't correct on all the underlying facts, she had actually managed to come to the correct conclusion thanks to her keen judgment. This scroll was in fact the sixth piece of his own ‘Hate Ground No Handle’ Legendary Set, which could only help

further confirm the fact that Zhou Weiqing had a five-Jeweled cultivation base.

The way in which both the woman and the old man viewed Zhou Weiqing had completely changed. Shangguan Bing'er could now see a degree of esteem in their gazes, the esteem owed to an expert.

“Please take him over to the room next door to recuperate. We can speak after he wakes up.” The woman walked over to Shangguan Bing'er while speaking, handing the scroll for the sixth piece of the Hate Ground No Handle set to her.

Shangguan Bing'er stared at her, rather astonished. “Don't you want it? You provided the materials, after all.”

The woman smiled slightly, and the majesty of her smile caused even Shangguan Bing'er to feel momentarily inferior. Shangguan Bing'er was just as physically attractive as this woman, but she lacked the woman's self-confidence. The woman's aura emanated a type of absolute self-confidence. Even after encountering a genius like Zhou Weiqing, her confidence in herself hadn't been lessened in the slightest.

“Our XuanTian Palace isn't that stingy. These materials are nothing more than a first meeting gift to Master Zhou.”

Shangguan Bing'er naturally wouldn't refuse, and so she immediately took the scroll and nodded at the woman. Suddenly, she felt as though the way in which the woman was staring at Zhou Weiqing seemed a bit peculiar.

“After he wakes up, please tell him that my name is Dreamwake. They all call me Master Dreamwake. This person is Master Nie Han.” After speaking, she turned and exited the wooden room. As for the old man named Nie Han, he followed her and departed as well.

“Dreamwake?” Shangguan Bing'er repeated this name a few times. Clearly, this young female God Tier Consolidated

Equipment Master was using a pseudonym.

The nearby wooden room was laid out just as simply as the last one. It had a table, two chairs, and a slender wooden bed. However, if you took a closer look you would discover that all of these things were actually constructed out of yellow rosewood. The entire room was filled with the faint, delicate floral scent of yellow rosewood and sandalwood.

Shangguan Bing'er carefully laid Zhou Weiqing onto the bed, but before she even had a chance to sit down, a large and strong arm snaked around her waist, pulling her down into a warm embrace.

"You woke up?" Shangguan Bing'er said, surprised and delighted.

Zhou Weiqing didn't open his eyes, but he tightly pressed Shangguan Bing'er's soft body against himself. He sent via voice transference, "I would never dare to slumber for too long in a place like this. What's the situation?"

Shangguan Bing'er sent back, "You already passed their test. They gave us the scroll as well."

Zhou Weiqing said, "Excellent. I'll rest for a bit longer then." He had forced himself to wake up by suppressing the aching pain in his head, precisely because he was afraid that there might have been trouble. Now that he knew that they were safe for now, he finally relaxed and allowed himself go back to sleep.

He had used up an absolutely enormous amount of mental energy. However, this process had been tremendously beneficial to him. Even though he was now asleep, his lips were still curved into a smile. The Saint Energy bottleneck which had bedeviled him for so long had finally been broken through in the instant that he had completed the God Tier Consolidating Scroll.

Zhou Weiqing had been in complete control of himself, ensuring that none of the other three in the room had noticed a thing. In

truth, however, his internals had undergone an absolutely astounding transformation.

The thick silver Saint Energy had previously been swirling rapidly around his thirty-six Death Acupuncture Points, but not it actually began a new filtering and purifying process which further refined his entire body.

This wasn't a process which Zhou Weiqing himself had to maintain, as it was all carried out naturally by the Saint Energy. Breaking through the bottleneck had allowed him to reach a completely new stage. After he finally allowed himself to truly fall asleep following his conversation with Shangguan Bing'er, he could sense that a completely new Saint Energy had appeared within Dantian.

After this breakthrough, his Saint Energy had transformed to become a completely pure silver color. It had transformed, much like how when he had completed the God Tier Consolidating Scroll the scroll had instantly turned silver.

This pure silver light was filled with sparkling flashes of silver star-light. This pure silver had completely replaced the original silvery-white color. However, it did not become tougher to control due to the higher degree of compression, instead it actually became even gentler. As it flowed through his Dantian, it generated a faint, comfortable warm feeling.

The transformation process was still ongoing. At a time like this, staying asleep was clearly the best choice for Zhou Weiqing, as the self-protective powers of Saint Energy ensured that he didn't need to worry about any problems appearing within his body.

The Saint Energy was continuously flowing through Zhou Weiqing's body, transforming it. This new, highly purified liquid silver Saint Energy first appeared within Zhou Weiqing's Dantian and head. Shangguan Bing'er was in Zhou Weiqing's arms. Although she wasn't able to sense the transformations occurring

within his body, her own Saint Energy was affected and began to circulate on its own.

This wasn't the first time Shangguan Bing'er had experienced this happening to her Saint Energy, but in the past the process had been incredibly slow. She herself didn't have any of the Saint Attributes after all, and so she lacked the 'key' needed to truly guide and control the Saint Energy in her body. However, since she was currently in Zhou Weiqing's arms, the higher-level Saint Energy in his body began to 'guide' hers. The speed at which her Saint Energy was condensing and purifying made her feel as though she was racing a thousand kilometers each day.

So it was possible to train while sleeping? Shangguan Bing'er wanted to laugh. Alas, she herself didn't dare to fall asleep. They were in a different land, after all. More than that – they were in the headquarters of the XuanTian Palace. How could she lower her guard while Zhou Weiqing was asleep?

Zhou Weiqing actually remained asleep for three full days. During this period of time, servants came to offer them delicacies, fruits, and beverages. Shangguan Bing'er didn't need to do much for Zhou Weiqing; all she had to do was to stand guard by his side.

Master Dreamwake and Master Nie Han came twice. They weren't surprised by Zhou Weiqing's deep slumber, as even they themselves would be exhausted and weakened for a period of time after successfully creating a God Tier Consolidating Scroll. This should be doubly true for Zhou Weiqing, given the absolutely unearthly techniques he used to accomplish it.

They seemed to have fully accepted and approved of Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er. Both times they came, they demonstrated great friendliness. Indeed! A five-Jeweled cultivator had successfully become a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master. When he reached the Heavenly King stage, he would then be able to create God Tier Consolidating Scrolls with ease, right? How could XuanTian Palace not take him seriously?

It wasn't until the third day that Shangguan Bing'er, who kept her body pressed tightly against Zhou Weiqing's, suddenly sensed her own transforming Saint Energy (which was being guided by his) suddenly accelerate dramatically before coming to a halt. A strange energy ripple stealthily emanated out of Zhou Weiqing's body, one which only someone who also possessed Saint Energy like herself could possibly sense. In that brief instant, a strange insight suddenly appeared within her mind.

Zhou Weiqing slowly opened his eyes, only to discover that everything around him seemed to become more clear and distinct. He could now see even the finest of grains on the wood ceiling above him with ease.

His long slumber had been dictated by the Saint Energy in his body. After three days, his Saint Energy had finally completed its breakthrough from the thirty-sixth stage to the thirty-seventh stage.

Ever since he had entered the nine-Jeweled stage, everything seemed to have changed for him. Even though he had simply risen by one cultivation stage, once again Zhou Weiqing saw a brand new world in front of him. The Saint Energy in his body hadn't been completely transformed, but to him this was already an enormous surprise.

All thirty-six of his Death Acupuncture Points had gained a mass of silver Saint Energy that glowed like the light of the stars. It was like they were 'cores' located inside the acupoints. As for the rest of the Saint Energy, it swirled outside these Saint Energy 'cores' and became increasingly dense. Both the transformed pure silver Saint Energy and the previous silvery-white Saint Energy had all become a dense liquid which now flowed twice as fast as before. All it took was one thought to activate the Saint Energy inside.

What was even more marvelous was the fact that Zhou Weiqing could clearly sense that his mental energy had expanded dramatically. And, thanks to the Saint Energy in his body, he was

also able to clearly sense all ripples in atmospheric energy and Heavenly Energy for thousands of meters around him.

This mountain gorge seemed to have been naturally formed into the shape of an atmospheric energy point. It would naturally generate a strong devouring force which was applied to the outside world. So long as anything happened to the atmospheric energies within the gorge, the entire gorge would begin to rapidly draw upon the atmospheric energies of the world outside.

When Zhou Weiqing started to sense all of these things, he felt as though he had essentially become part of those atmospheric energies... and that any atmospheric energy he detected could be controlled by him. The Saint Energy in his body didn't even need him to activate it; they naturally began to flow and train on their own. This training process seemed to expand the starry silver 'rivers' inside of his thirty-six Death Acupuncture Points.

Chapter 242 Breaking Through (2)

Heavenly Dao Energy! Awestruck, Zhou Weiqing suddenly realized what was going on. Right! When his Heavenly Energy broke through to the thirty-sixth stage it remained Heavenly Xu Energy, but this breakthrough had allowed him to truly enter the realm of Heavenly Dao Energy. No – to him, it would be Saint Dao Energy.

After accumulating four more stages of Saint Dao Energy, he would be able to Consolidate his Saint Core Nucleus. It was exactly like how the power of Heavenly Dao Energy could form a Heavenly Core Nucleus. However, upon reaching the Saint Dao Energy state, he had already eclipsed the vast majority of high-level Heavenly Kings. Countless high-level Zong Stage experts had been trapped at the thirty-sixth stage! Now that he had comprehended and gained the Saint Dao Energy, his chances of being able to form a Core Nucleus had just skyrocketed.

This had been a supremely important step. For any Heavenly Jewel Master, this was a step that was incredibly dangerous but filled with tremendous possibilities.

Zhou Weiqing had always trained in the Immortal Deity Technique and had broken through swiftly, which was why he felt as though he had been ‘trapped’ and bottlenecked at this stage for months, and plagued by how slow that was. If other high-level Zong Stage experts found out about this, they’d probably spit out mouthfuls of blood directly into his face. Some of them could go decades without being able to bypass this bottleneck!

Heavenly Dao Energy was energy which came from the Ways of Heaven. It grew and multiplied without end, and it was part of the Ways of Heaven themselves. This single stage of advancement had caused him to reach a completely new level. Only now did the Saint Energy in his body form a true and continuous loop. Thanks to his Saint Energy, Zhou Weiqing was absolutely confident that he

could battle anyone below the Heavenly Emperor level. Even if an actual Heavenly Emperor powerhouse wanted to kill him, it definitely wouldn't be an easy feat.

“Little Fatty, are you alright?” Shangguan Bing'er said, rather worried. Although she had been able to sense Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy continuously improving, she knew that he had fallen unconscious due to how much mental energy he had used up.

Zhou Weiqing slowly reached out with his right hand, clenching it into a fist. He could feel the atmospheric energies in the palm of his hand naturally compress. “Heavenly Dao Energy. Bing'er, I've broken through.”

Shangguan Bing'er was momentarily startled. Her eyes then revealed flickers of complicated emotions. Even though she had known many years ago that her Little Fatty was extraordinarily talented and would definitely become a true powerhouse of his generation, she never expected that all this would happen quite so quickly.

From start to finish, Zhou Weiqing had only been training for six or seven years. And yet, his cultivation had securely advanced towards the Heavenly King level... one with Saint Energy!

Zhou Weiqing sat up and took a deep breath. Even while doing so, he was able to sense the atmospheric energies furiously gather around him, much like when he used the Devour Skill. If it wasn't for the fact that he was on XuanTian Palace's territory, he really felt like using the Saint Energy to activate his actual Devour Skill, just to see what would happen. He wanted to see if he could use it to Devour enough atmospheric energies from the world around him to train. That would definitely be an incredible sight!

This breakthrough had resulted in Zhou Weiqing being strengthened in every aspect. Saint Energy, physical strength, mental strength... he had improved greatly in each area. Simply put, he had taken a step into a completely different world.

“Did they say anything?” Zhou Weiqing asked Shangguan Bing’er.

Shangguan Bing’er shook her head.

Zhou Weiqing chortled. “Time to let them know that I’m awake. However, let me Consolidate that scroll first.”

Five pieces of ‘Hate Ground No Handle’ had already been enough to increase his base physical strength by 32 times. Six pieces would result in an increase of 64 times. He had painstakingly constructed the scroll for his sixth piece of the ‘Hate Ground No Handle’ Legendary Set. Once he finished Consolidating it, the sheer boost to his raw physical strength alone would result in his overall power skyrocketing dramatically.

News that Zhou Weiqing was awake quickly spread to XuanTian Palace. Nobody came to bother them on that first day, but early the next morning Zhou Weiqing suddenly halted his cultivation and slowly opened his eyes. “They are here.”

He threw on some clothes, left the bed, then walked out of the wooden room with the neatly attired Shangguan Bing’er. After they exited the room, Zhou Weiqing simply stood outside the doorway without going forward to greet their guests. Only three people had come to this gorge, and they were headed straight to Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing only recognized one of these three people; Elder Fei Lun, who had brought them to XuanTian Palace. Next to him was an old man who had a single sun emblem on his chest which showed that he had roughly the same status as Fei Lun. The third was their leader, a man who had three sun emblems on his chest.

This person was very tall, and his body was covered by long blue robes. He had a head of long black hair which cascaded down his back, and a wide azure mask that covered his face. Not even the skin around his neck was revealed. He was covered up very tightly.

Three sun emblems? Zhou Weiqing was slightly startled.

The three quickly arrived in front of the wooden room. The leader came to a halt, then spoke in an extremely androgynous yet highly pleasing voice, “Master Zhou, greetings. I’m honored that you came to our XuanTian Palace. I am Palace Master Dong Fang of the XuanTian Palace.”

Zhou Weiqing secretly exclaimed to himself, “I knew it!” He smiled and took a single step forwards, then nodded. “Hello, Palace Master Dong Fang.” This time, Elder Fei Lun didn’t make any snide comments about Zhou Weiqing’s cultivation level. As soon as Zhou Weiqing had proven himself a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, he had earned the right to act pridefully.

Zhou Weiqing carefully scanned this Palace Master Dong Fang. However, he quickly realized that it was as though he was trying to scan the ocean itself; there was no information coming back to him! All he could sense was that Palace Master Dong Fang’s aura was extremely deep and profound. Just by standing there, he made Zhou Weiqing feel as though his own linkage with the atmospheric energies nearby had been lessened significantly.

Dong Fang said calmly, “I am extremely amazed to see that Master Zhou, despite being at such a young age, already has the ability to create God Tier Consolidating Scrolls. Masters Nie Han and Dreamwake have already informed me of your situation. XuanTian Palace has always been extremely welcoming to geniuses like yourself. If there is anything you need, just speak and I shall do my best to fulfill it.”

Zhou Weiqing smiled slightly. “I don’t have anything I need per se. I’ve come to join XuanTian Palace because I wish to have the chance to gain a better understanding of the crafting of Consolidating Scrolls. Thus, I’d like for the Palace Master to provide me with various types of materials. Also, I don’t have the time to make Consolidating Scrolls for just anyone. Don’t send low-ranked people to come bother me. In addition, I would like to

join XuanTian Palace as a visiting scholar, as I don't wish for other people to order me around. But of course, if you need me to do anything, Palace Master, I won't decline."

If anyone else had made these requests, the Elders behind Dong Fang would've long slapped that man flying without needing for Dong Fang himself to make a move. However, for these requests to come from a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master was a completely different matter.

Dong Fang nodded. "Naturally. I accede to your requests, Master Zhou. So long as XuanTian Palace can find the materials you want, you shall have free usage of them. However... I would like to ask that a portion of the completed works be handed over to me to use as I see fit."

Zhou Weiqing said without hesitation, "We'll give you all of the items that neither myself nor my wife need. However, I cannot guarantee my success rates. Please don't blame me if I waste many materials!"

Dong Fang smiled calmly. "That shouldn't be a problem for our XuanTian Palace. Is there anything else you need, Master Zhou?"

Zhou Weiqing said, "I'm a bit different from other God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters. Possibly due to my fairly young age, I enjoy a bit of liveliness. Quiet and secluded places like this don't really suit me. I hope, Palace Master, that you can find another place in the XuanTian Palace for me to live in."

When the two Elders behind Palace Master Dong Fang heard these words, their faces twitched uncontrollably. Fairly young age? You jerk! You are barely twenty years old and already a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master. The rest of us are humiliated in comparison.

Dong Fang nodded. "That's fine, of course." His tone suddenly sharpened as he murmured to the two Elders behind him, "On my orders, Master Zhou is now one of the Consecrated of our palace.

He is to be treated just like a Grand Elder, while his wife will be given the rank of Elder.”

“Understood,” both Elders said respectfully. Fei Lun took out a tray out from his own Spatial Ring and presented it to Zhou Weiqing. It had two sets of clothes on it.

Dong Fang then nodded towards Zhou Weiqing once more. “Tonight, I shall host a welcoming banquet in honor of Master Zhou joining our palace. All of the important members of our palace shall take part in the welcoming ceremony. Master Zhou has been in seclusion for many years and might not be fully aware of the situation within the palace. Elder Fei Lun, you are to stay behind and introduce the palace to Master Zhou. I have other matters to attend to. I’ll depart for now.”

“Alright.” A flicker of a smile flashed across Elder Fei Lun’s face. An opportunity to ingratiate himself with Master Zhou was clearly a wonderful assignment.

The Palace Master Dong Fang turned and departed with the other Elder. Zhou Weiqing played his role perfectly, bowing slightly as the Palace Master left. Although he didn’t say any flattering words, his actions indicated that he had accepted himself being a part of the XuanTian Palace.

Zhou Weiqing himself secretly felt rather amused. He never would’ve imagined that just like this, the first Great Saint Land he joined would actually be on a different continent.

Fei Lun had long ago discarded the arrogance he had displayed when first meeting Zhou Weiqing. Smiling, he said, “Don’t be offended, Master Zhou. This gorge is actually one of the most secluded and private places in the entire Palace. Normally, only the other two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters are permitted to enter and exit this place freely, unless someone else gets a specific command from the Palace Master. This is why the Palace Master only brought the two of us with him.”

Zhou Weiqing let out a chuckle. “I understand. For the Palace Master to come in person is a testament to his sincerity. Please be seated, Elder. I know nothing at all about XuanTian Palace. I’ll have to trouble you to explain it to me.”

A wide smile crossed Fei Lun’s face as he said: “It would be my honor to do so.”

Chapter 242 Breaking Through (3)

The three returned to the wooden room and sat down before the yellow rosewood table inside of it. There were attendants who were dedicated to taking care of this valley, and they were all women of roughly forty years of age. Someone quickly came in to serve tea and snacks.

Fei Lun drank some tea, then said with a smile, “In the future, I’ll have to address you as ‘Consecrated’, sir. Let me introduce XuanTian Palace to you. I’ll start with our members. XuanTian Palace’s supreme leader is naturally his lordship the Palace Master. Below him are the four Grand Elders, who share the same level of status as our three ‘Consecrated’ God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters. Both are given two sun emblems.”

Zhou Weiqing interrupted, “What cultivation level have these Grand Elders reached? Are they Heavenly Emperors?” Judging from how Fei Lun was a Heavenly King, it seemed likely that Grand Elders had to be on an even higher level than him.

Fei Lun nodded. “Our Grand Elders are all Heavenly Emperor powerhouses and they serve as our greatest combat assets. However, it has been many years since the four Grand Elders have been involved in worldly affairs. They rarely leave XuanTian Palace.”

Zhou Weiqing asked curiously, “Then what level has the Palace Master reached? Heavenly God?”

Fei Lun hesitated a moment, rather startled, then shook his head. “No one knows what level the Palace Master has reached. There are certain rules which all Palace Masters have been forced to follow – they must wear a mask, and they will be the ones to choose and secretly train their successors. Thus, no one knows what level the Palace Master has reached.”

Puzzled, Zhou Weiqing said, “If that’s the case, how does anyone

know if the new Palace Master is strong enough for his position?”

Fei Lun said, “That’s not too difficult to explain. After each new Palace Master is chosen, he or she has to be secretly tested by all four Grand Elders. Only if he is viewed as sufficiently well-rounded and at a sufficient level of power would he be allowed to formally succeed in the role of Palace Master. We sometimes talk about this privately. Based on what we know, our Palace Master has to be at least at the Heavenly Emperor stage, if not the Heavenly God stage. Otherwise, how could he convince the Grand Elders to submit wholeheartedly?”

Zhou Weiqing smiled. “If the rank of Palace Master is one which is passed down from generation to generation, is the same true for the Grand Elders?”

Fei Lun shook his head. “No. Grand Elders are chosen according to their power. Anyone who can become a Heavenly Emperor is able to become a Grand Elder. This rule helps to motivate our other members to improve. Let me continue. Below the four Grand Elders are the many Elders, all of whom are also chosen in accordance with their power. All Elders have to be Heavenly Kings, and there are currently twelve of them.”

“These are the most powerful members of XuanTian Palace. Aside from them, we have various departments which are administered by different individuals. I won’t go into detail regarding those levels. All of them will obey your orders when they see you. All you need to know is that their specific ranks are shown by the number of ‘moons’ or ‘stars’ they have. The more they have, the higher-level they are.”

XuanTian Palace was an extremely stratified place, but it was done in an easily recognizable way. The emblems worn across the chest displayed a person’s rank.

Next, Fei Lun gave Zhou Weiqing a simple introduction to the current situation XuanTian Palace was in. Thanks to this

introduction, Zhou Weiqing learned that XuanTian Palace's headquarters was located within this mountain range. To outsiders, this mountain range was strictly off-limits. Not even XuanTian Palace's members were permitted to enter unless they were at a high enough level.

XuanTian Palace normally didn't get involved in the governance of the XuanTian Empire, but any of their members who were responsible for a certain area would have status higher than that of the highest local official. This was why Er Chun had completely surpassed W'Batu's governor, Sang Tan, in power.

There was very little else that needed to be explained. XuanTian Palace had an extremely venerated status in the XuanTian Continent which no other power could compete against. Thus, they could essentially do as they pleased here. This was also the reason why XuanTian Palace only maintained loose oversight of their people.

"Elder, what do I need to do usually everyday?" Zhou Weiqing asked Fei Lun, who was still telling him more information about XuanTian Palace.

Fei Lun chuckled. "Consecrated, your status in XuanTian Palace is second only to that of our Palace Master's. Aside from him, no one can force you to do anything. Even the Palace Master himself would first take your opinions into consideration. Normally, you can do whatever you wish. If there is anything you need, you can just ask for it. People will acquire it for you. Your freedom won't be restricted at all, and you can go wherever you please. However, when our Palace is in grave danger, you have to intervene to help us. But of course, the chance of that happening is virtually zero."

Zhou Weiqing beamed. The 'Consecrated' truly were treated excellently. It seemed as though his plan had been a success. Now that he had such a transcendent position within XuanTian Palace, it would be much easier for him to hunt down the Spatial Teleportation Gem.

Zhou Weiqing asked no further questions. He was a new member of XuanTian Palace; to immediately ask about the Spatial Teleportation Gem would just be too obvious, and extremely foolhardy. He had to handle things stably, step by step, and gain XuanTian Palace's trust. Besides... given his current status, who knows he might even be granted direct access to the Gem!

After Fei Lun finished giving Zhou Weiqing a rundown of XuanTian Palace, he quickly departed. However, while doing so, he hinted that if Zhou Weiqing needed someone to carry out a mission, he would be willing and able to do it.

To Zhou Weiqing, his first step of joining XuanTian Palace had been a perfect success. Not only had he successfully joined, he had also been given an exalted position. This dramatically increased his chances of gaining access to the Spatial Teleportation Gem. Now that he had also proven his status as a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, he might be able to gain even more trust and ask for the chance to study the gem. If that was possible, it would be simply perfect.

After Fei Lun left, Zhou Weiqing didn't immediately bring Shangguan Bing'er outside for a stroll. Instead, he continued to train within the wooden room to stabilize himself at his new level of cultivation.

Shangguan Bing'er told Zhou Weiqing about what she had felt cultivating next to him as he had been passed out. The two tried it out once more, only to discover that so long as she was cultivating within a meter of him, her own Saint Energy would resonate with his and be guided by it.

Now, Zhou Weiqing's circulating Saint Energy and the way he absorbed atmospheric energies ensured that Shangguan Bing'er's body was continuously improved as well, and the rate at which she improved was so fast that even she herself was astonished by it. It must be remembered that when she had re-encountered Zhou Weiqing, she had merely been at the six-Jeweled level. Now, she

was already at the middle of the seventh-Jeweled level. It had only been a few short months! Although this rate of improvement couldn't compare to what Zhou Weiqing experienced when he Devoured the energies of the Heavenly God-Tier Dragon, it was still absolutely shocking.

Zhou Weiqing came to a daring conclusion: when his Saint Energy was finally consolidated into a Saint Core Nucleus, perhaps he would finally be able to help the three Shangguan sisters in forming Saint Cores as well. Even though they lacked the Saint Attribute, their bodies were filled with Saint Energy!

Around dusk that same day, two 'Executors' who each had a crescent moon emblem came to invite him to a banquet. Only then did the two of them halt their cultivation.

This time, they didn't ride a carriage. When they exited the gorge, the two Executors gave Zhou Weiqing a quick report before guiding him forwards. They didn't move too fast; clearly, they were accommodating Zhou Weiqing, who only had the 'five-Jeweled' cultivation base.

This time, Zhou Weiqing finally had a chance to see the entire mountain range for himself. He wasn't able to see much because the mountains blocked his vision, but his powerful senses still allowed him to discover just how vast these mountains were. He was able to get a rough sense for the local geographical layout, but he wasn't able to actually sense past the borders of these mountains. The gorge he had been in was most likely located in one of the fairly outer regions of the mountains.

They advanced while following a bluestone road. Zhou Weiqing was intrigued by the verdant and lush vegetation here, some of which was similar to what could be seen in the Boundless Mainland but some which the two of them had never encountered.

Every so often a breeze would blow past, carrying with it the dense fragrance of plants and flowers. It was quite enjoyable. In

addition, the deeper they advanced into the mountains the denser the atmospheric energies became. This was different from the gorge, where one had to actually summon the atmospheric energies.

Zhou Weiqing mused to himself, “No wonder XuanTian Palace is so powerful. The atmospheric energies here are so dense that it is probably on par with Heavenly Jewel Island! In addition, XuanTian Palace is different from Heaven’s Expanse Palace in that the former reigns absolutely supreme here. Not only are they are able to make full use of the entire continent’s resources, even the ocean’s vast resources are at their disposal. At the same time, they are also able to recruit talents from across the entire continent. If a single Great Saint Land from the Boundless Mainland had to compete against them, perhaps only Heavenly Snow Mountain might be able to stand against them, due to the thousands and thousands of powerful Heavenly Beasts the latter controlled. Not even Heaven’s Expanse Palace could match them.”

Although Heaven’s Expanse Palace was ranked above Heavenly Snow Mountain in the Boundless Mainland, this was because the ranking was purely based off of Heavenly Jewel Masters. It didn’t factor in the various Heavenly Beasts which Heavenly Snow Mountain controlled. Of course, the Heavenly Beasts wouldn’t leave the Ten Thousand Beast Heavens, as this would result in them being surrounded and assaulted by powerhouses of the entire mainland. Thus, Heavenly Snow Mountain’s total power should be considered a bit greater. After all, when Zhou Weiqing was there personally, he had seen more than one Heavenly Emperor-stage Heavenly Beast there, while the only Heavenly Emperor powerhouses in Heaven’s Expanse Palace were the two Shangguan brothers. Of course, the Heaven’s Expanse Palace had the advantage of many top human powerhouses, including dozens of Heavenly Kings. This was quite a bit more than what XuanTian Palace appeared to have thus far.

Thus, Zhou Weiqing came to the conclusion that Heavenly Snow Mountain's total combat power was probably enough to give XuanTian Palace a good fight, but its chances of success were not extremely high. At least two of the five Great Saint Lands of the Boundless Mainland would have to join forces in order to stand a chance of beating XuanTian Palace... and that was before factoring in XuanTian Palace's lower-ranked Heavenly Jewel Masters. Based on Zhou Weiqing's estimations, the XuanTian Palace probably controlled far more Heavenly Jewel Masters than all five Great Saint Lands combined. Although their process of recruitment resulted in a mixture of good people and bad people, the five Great Saint Lands of the Boundless Mainland had the opposite problem of being too proud and stringent in their recruitment. They virtually never accepted new disciples from outside into their ranks...

Chapter 243: XuanTian Citadel (1)

It was no wonder that the XuanTian Palace had actually escaped relatively unscathed from the Boundless Mainland. Their overall power was indeed astonishing.

The party continued deeper along their journey, and though the two guides were not moving at an exceptional speed, it was still around that of a five-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master. As such, the scenery around them flew past quickly. In around an hour, they had already reached deep into the mountain range.

As they continued walking, all of a sudden the terrain around them became extremely steep and precipitous, almost at a seventy degree upward slope. Luckily, there were small steps cut into the wall of the cliff, and it was still relatively easy for them to climb. Of course, this 'ease' was expressed towards Heavenly Jewel Masters; any ordinary human would find it extremely difficult to climb up.

As they continued up the steep cliff, it was almost a thousand metres before the terrain grew gentle once more.

By this point, the biting mountain winds had grown especially chilly; as they had almost reached the layer of clouds, the winds not only brought the bitter cold, they also brought swirls of moisture.

As they continued forward for another eight minutes, they reached a zone where the ground before them lay desolate, with not a single plant in sight. When Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er saw the sight before them, they could not help but be fully surprised.

Indeed, anyone who saw the scene before them for the first time would definitely be just as shocked, as it was one that was just so unexpected and surprising.

There was no longer any road in front, instead a sheer cliff downwards into a bottomless chasm. All they could see was the clouds and mist of the mountain range, and even with their vision they could not see the bottom. Such a strange topographical arrangement advanced from both sides to form a large, circular formation.

It could be said that this place looked like a large and terrifying crater that had been blown in by a huge cannon. Right smack in the center of this bottomless abyss, which was the round sheer precipice, a single mighty pillar stood alone there. Most miraculously, right at the top of that pillar, there was actually a castle, a pure white, highly fortified castle.

Neither Zhou Weiqing or Shangguan Bing'er could have imagined that the headquarters of the XuanTian Palace would be situated in such an extreme and isolated area. If one did not have the power of flight, if the castle blocked off all access and routes, then it would be a nigh impossible task to leave this place.

Recollecting their thoughts after a while, only then did Zhou Weiqing and Bing'er realise that the XuanTian Citadel was actually joined to the outer cliffs by metal chains. There were at least a hundred of these metal chains, directly linked to all four cliff walls in all directions. However, even with these chains, if one's cultivation was not sufficient, it would not be easy to cross to the other side.

The two guides looked at Zhou Weiqing. Although they did not speak, their meaning was clear; asking if Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er would be able to cross on their own. In truth, even a three-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master should be able to cross as long as he was being very careful. Of course, that was regarding the difficulty; there was still a bottomless abyss below them, and if one's psyche and willpower was not strong enough, being able to cross successfully would be another matter.

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly, using his actions to reply them.

With a tap of his feet on the ground, he disappeared in a flash, appearing on one of the metal chains. A faint green light surrounded his back as the Wind Attribute energies pushed his body along, as if he were sliding along the metal chain at a fast pace. The Wind Attribute energies would also protect him from the powerful mountain winds, dissipating them before they reached him.

To the two guides, Zhou Weiqing had clearly used a Stored Skill. However, if they could have seen his wrists below his sleeves, they would definitely be shocked to see his Heavenly Jewels were not even summoned.

This was the power of the Heavenly Dao Energy stage. Zhou Weiqing was just using the Wind Attribute energies in the air to push his body along, not his own internal power. Currently, it was as if his entire body had transformed into the wind.

Ordinarily speaking, when a Heavenly Jewel Master broke through to the Heavenly Dao Energy state, his greatest expertise would be in controlling the atmospheric energies of his own Attribute. Of course, now that Zhou Weiqing had reached such a height, his advantage was even clearer than ever. After all, he had six Elemental Attributes!! Furthermore, he was used to the powerful existence of the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, his communication and control of the atmospheric energies would naturally be far greater than any ordinary Heavenly Jewel Master.

From the edge of the cliffs to the XuanTian Citadel, there was about a thousand metres. However, just by sliding along like that, it was a matter of moments before they reached the other side.

At the entrance of the Castle, there were two familiar figures waiting for them. Their blue robes, adorned with the two symbols of the sun each. They were the two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters that had given Zhou Weiqing his examination the other day, Dreamwake and Nie Han.

Although it was not his first time seeing Dreamwake, Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but feel his heart grip as he looked upon her breathtaking features. Currently, he was actually wearing the same robes as the two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters, with the two suns embroidered on the chest area.

“Greetings.” Zhou Weiqing greeted the two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters, but his gaze seemed to only land on Dreamwake. After all, the love of beauty was just human nature, especially this rascal Zhou Little Fatty had always had a strong libido, and his eyes were just too quick to reveal their lascivious light.

Towards his gaze, Dreamwake did not seem to mind much. With a faint smile, she said: “Congratulations, Master Zhou, for joining our XuanTian Palace as a Consecrated. Please, come in.” Being personally received by both God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters, that already showed the importance the XuanTian Palace placed on Zhou Weiqing. Today's gathering and feast was indeed held for his sake.

The two guides who had brought them here bowed respectfully before leaving.

As soon as they entered the XuanTian Citadel, Zhou Weiqing's eyes lit up. The interior was not decorated especially luxuriously, but all of the constructions and decorations were crafted from a type of jade stone. He had never seen such a jade stone before, but he could vaguely sense that it had an effect of gathering atmospheric energy.

As Zhou Weiqing continued walking in together with the other two, he said smilingly: “The atmospheric energies here are truly thick. Do both of you stay here often?”

Dreamwake nodded, saying: “Normally, when we are cultivating, we will stay here in the castle. However, when we are researching or creating Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, we will go to that

previous valley Master Zhou had visited previously. After all, it is much quieter there, and more suitable in that regard. In the future, we will be colleagues, so Master Zhou can just call me by my name.”

As she spoke, she turned to look at Zhou Weiqing with a brilliant smile, her beautiful sapphire eyes seemed to be able to speak, causing Zhou Weiqing’s little heart to beat wildly abruptly.

A sudden piercing pain came from his back; it was Shangguan Bing’er using her nails to lightly poke into his back. Only then did Zhou Weiqing break free of his reverie. With a wide grin, he said: “Heh heh, in the future, both of you please call me by my name as well.”

While they spoke, the group had already reached the second floor. The massive door was already open, revealing the wide hall inside.

There were already quite a number of people gathered in the large hall, and as soon as they saw Zhou Weiqing’s party, they all stood up. Besides the four who were standing in the deepest ends of the halls who remained silent, the others all bowed down respectfully in greeting.

“Greetings, three honoured Consecrated.”

Zhou Weiqing had already been through so much, having seen various aspects of society including the upper echelons. As such, he just smiled faintly and nodded. Dreamwake and Nie Han did not have any other expressions, just leading him and Shangguan Bing’er into the hall.

Zhou Weiqing swept his gaze casually around the hall, but he was inwardly surprised.

There were at least a hundred people in that large hall, most of which were seated behind. Right in the center, there were around twenty or so seated. From the symbols on their chest, those seated

in the middle were likely all Elders. As for the four old men who were in the depths of the halls, the four who had stood up earlier but not bowed down, they all had an astonishing Heavenly Energy reverberations around them. Without question, these were definitely the four Grand Elders of the XuanTian Palace.

However, one could not just underestimate those present who weren't Elders. For them to actually be here at this point in time, they had at least two crescent moons embroidered on the front of their robes. In the entire hall, out of the more than hundred people, there was not a single person who was at a cultivation stage lower than the Zong Stage. Even those seated at the edges, with the lowest cultivation levels, were at least lower level Zong Stage, with seven Jewels! One had to know... these were all Heavenly Jewel Masters!

What kind of massive and terrifying power they held! If these people were to move out together, they could crush most of the smaller Empires in no time at all. This was especially so for the four Grand Elders, as they could give Zhou Weiqing a rather intense pressure.

Led by Dreamwake and Nie Han, both Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er were brought to the deepest seats. Surprisingly, their seats were even further in than the four Grand Elders.

There were a total of four seats, and Dreamwake got Zhou Weiqing to sit at the first one on the left hand side, with Shangguan Bing'er having the second seat beside him. As for Dreamwake and Nie Han, they would be seated on the opposite.

From the seating positions, they could see that the God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters' status in the XuanTian Palace was actually higher than the Grand Elders. Of course, this was perhaps just on the surface, when it came to matters of internal affairs and deciding things, it was likely that the Grand Elders would have more say in things. However, this was still more than enough to show how much importance the XuanTian Palace placed

on God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters.

“Palace Master has arrived.”

Upon hearing the announcement, the XuanTian Palace powerhouses that had already seated all rose once more. On the side door, under the escort of four guards, the XuanTian Palace Master Dong Fang walked in front the back, all the in until he stopped at his place.

“Greetings, Palace Master.” Including the four Grand Elders, all of the XuanTian Palace members called out formally.

At this moment, the different ranks and statuses were shown clearly. Those XuanTian powerhouses at the edges who were not Elders were all kneeling on the ground. As for the core Elders, they were bowing respectfully. The Grand Elders were also bowing, but at a much lesser degree. Even the God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master Nie Han had inclined in a short bow. However, the greatest surprise for Zhou Weiqing was actually Dreamwake. Although she had stood up, she did not have any other actions, just standing there silently.

“Everyone, rise.” The XuanTian Palace Master, Dong Fang, waved his hands, and his rather neutral voice rang out.

Without knowing why, although this was actually the second time he had heard the voice, Zhou Weiqing was rather curious to find that it felt somewhat different to him. Yet, he could not tell what was the actual difference.

Dong Fang did not sit down, smiling as he remained standing there speaking: “Today is a great day for our XuanTian Palace, and I have some good news to share with all of you. All these years, although Masters Dreamwake and Nie Han have done their best, cracking their brains to help us, alas our Palace still lacks quite a lot of high quality Consolidating Equipment Scrolls.”

Chapter 243: XuanTian Citadel (2)

Pausing momentarily, Dong Fang continued: “This time, we have been lucky to invite a young talent from the Legacy of Strength Sect, who has remained reclusive for so many years, to join us. With the addition of God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master Zhou, the overall strength of our Palace will definitely rise to the next step. As all of you can see, Consecrated Zhou is still extremely young, the youngest God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master in all the history of our XuanTian Palace, perhaps even the entire Continent. I believe that even in the Boundless Mainland far away, there will not be a God Tier Consolidating Equipment as young as Master Zhou.”

“From now on, I ask that all of you treat Consecrated Zhou with the same respect as you treat me. Of course, I also hope that Consecrated Zhou can create more God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, and that is closely interrelated with everyone here. Come, let us raise our cups to celebrate this historic moment.”

On the table near their seats, there were all sorts of food and drinks, refreshments, wine. Under the leadership of the XuanTian Palace Master, all those present stood up, raising their cups as they said respectfully to Zhou Weiqing: “Congratulations Consecrated Zhou for joining the Palace.” This time, even the other two Consecrated and the four Grand Elders also stood up together to join in the toast to Zhou Weiqing.

As they drank together, the XuanTian Palace Master Dong Fang looked at Zhou Weiqing. However, his mask covered even the eyes with a crystalline object, and thus Zhou Weiqing could not see his eyes.

“Consecrated Zhou, how about giving us a few words?” The Palace Master smiled.

Zhou Weiqing smiled in return, nodding. Holding his wine glass, he turned to the other XuanTian Palace powerhouses and said: “Thank you everyone for your wishes. My name is Zhou Weiqing. Although I am lucky to have reached the realm of God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, I am still after all very young. In terms of cultivation stage, I am far from being able to compare with all of you present. Even in terms of creating God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, I am definitely inferior when compared to Consecrated Dreamwake and Nie Han.” At this point, he paused for a while, leaving the people below rather confused.

No one could understand why Zhou Weiqing would suddenly speak such words, to actually disparage himself to such a degree.

“However, perhaps there is one point I have an absolute advantage in. That is, the speed that I can create Consolidating Equipment Scrolls. As long as I have enough materials, then I am confident in saying that in this entire world, there is no one faster than I in creating Consolidating Equipment Scrolls. Not in the entire history, and even in the future, will that be surpassed.” His words were calm, spoken in a tranquil tone, but clear and full of resolution.

As soon as his words rang out, even though the XuanTian Palace Master was present, the entire hall burst into an uproar.

Arrogance. This was absolute arrogance. As the saying goes, step back a little then soar ahead; with the self-abasement at the front, and that absolute confidence and arrogant proclamation... such a mix caused the entire XuanTian Palace upper echelons to burst into a commotion. Even the four Grand Elders couldn't help but furrow their brows. Zhou Weiqing had bragged too greatly, without even leaving any leeway for himself.

Turning towards the XuanTian Palace Master, Zhou Weiqing bowed slightly and said: “Forgive me Palace Master, but since today's dinner is a reception for myself, then I would like all the XuanTian Palace seniors here to have a greater understanding of

myself. I would like to demonstrate my skills; after all, empty words are useless, and I prefer to use actions to speak for me.”

The XuanTian Palace Master hesitated for a moment, but very quickly he nodded towards Zhou Weiqing, giving him an inviting gesture.

Seated to the side, both God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters had their eyes glowing in interest. Ever since Zhou Weiqing had entered the XuanTian Palace, although he appeared arrogant, the power he had shown had also deeply shocked these two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters. As such, now that Zhou Weiqing personally requested to show his strength once more, the two of them were naturally happy to watch.

Compared to the other upper echelons of the XuanTian Palace, there was totally no competitive spirit between these God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters. That was because no matter what, any and every single God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master would enjoy an unshakable position and status. In contrary, it was important that they had a good relationship, only by constant communication and research together would they be able to improve their individual and overall Consolidating Equipment Scroll creation skills and techniques. As such, they were more than happy to see Zhou Weiqing display greater strength and skills, as it would only benefit them too.

Seeing the Palace Master nod, all of their gazes turned to focus on Zhou Weiqing, especially those powerhouses seated on the outer regions who had not reached the Elder status yet; their gazes on him were especially heated and enthusiastic.

It had to be known that usually the God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scrolls that these Masters would create would naturally be prioritised for those upper echelons. Besides the Palace Master, it would be the Grand Elders, the most talented core disciples, Elders, so on so forth... There were only two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters, and the higher level a God Tier

Consolidating Equipment Scroll, the more effort, vigor, resources and time it took. As such, these powerhouses who were just below the Elder status were in the awkward position of pretty much being impossible for them to gain any of the two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters' works. However, with the addition of Zhou Weiqing, perhaps this would change. After all, the addition of one more person would greatly increase the speed and total numbers of creation.

Of course, that was not to say that they were hoping to gain God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scrolls from Zhou Weiqing; that was not a realistic dream at all. However, even if it were Grandmaster or Zong Stage Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, those created by a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master would be far superior to those created by ordinary Grandmaster Consolidating Equipment Masters. As such, when Zhou Weiqing said his creation of Consolidating Equipment Scrolls was the fastest in history, how could these XuanTian Palace powerhouses not look at him in a new favourable light?

Of course, all of this was easily seen through by Zhou Weiqing. Of course, the reason why he was speaking so arrogantly was so that he could gain the recognition and approval of the XuanTian Palace upper echelon. Although the Grand Elders had higher status and recognition, to Zhou Weiqing perhaps these Elders and lower had a greater meaning to him. After all, these powerhouses would be easier to win over. As long as he could display sufficient power, he could gain their approval in a short period of time, allowing him to better complete his quest in the XuanTian Continent.

"Bing'er, come." Zhou Weiqing beckoned towards Shangguan Bing'er.

Shangguan Bing'er got out of her seat and walked towards him. Zhou Weiqing's mouth moved silently, as he spoke to her quickly in voice transference. Shangguan Bing'er nodded subtly, walking towards him before turning around, leaving her back to him.

As the onlookers watched in puzzlement, Shangguan Bing'er bent over slightly, her hands propping herself up on her knees.

This was truly a strange position indeed, as her round pert buttocks, covered only with the blue robes of the XuanTian Palace, were now lifted and pointed perkily at Zhou Weiqing.

Although Shangguan Bing'er knew that in such a setting and occasion, Zhou Weiqing would know how far to go, and would definitely not do anything excessive, such a position was just too embarrassing, causing her to blush.

Perhaps in terms of visual impact, Shangguan Bing'er did not give the same kind of stunning and breathtaking reaction as Dreamwake, it was more because of her disposition than her beauty. Dreamwake had the sort of noble aura like Princess Cai Cai, while Shangguan Bing'er had a more gentle, sweet aura, like that of a girl next door. The difference between the two also meant that Shangguan Bing'er gave others a more approachable feeling, perhaps even easier to move others, causing them to want to protect her, whereas Dreamwake would easily become a dream goddess of men.

As such, as the upper echelon powerhouses all saw Shangguan Bing'er's actions and the blush on her cheeks, they couldn't help but feel a favourable impression towards her. These powerhouses were mostly rather advanced in age, and far past the youthful age of being rash and impulsive towards the opposite sex. Perhaps it was more a deep, inner liking.

However, in the next instant, that 'liking' expression disappeared from their faces, replaced with shock. Absolute shock.

Four thick rays of dark gold light sprang forth from Shangguan Bing'er's body, like surging waves billowing out. At the same time, a massive pair of dark gold wings sprouted out from behind her back.

When they sensed the powerful Heavenly Energy reverberations

rolling forth, the two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters and four Grand Elders who were closest to her stood up abruptly, a fierce aura instantly pressing down on Shangguan Bing'er.

“Stop.” A cold, clear shout rang out. Only then did the four Grand Elders' auras stop pressing down on Shangguan Bing'er. The one who had spoke was Dreamwake, but although the Grand Elders did not take action, their full attentions were still focused on the pair of wings that spread out behind Shangguan Bing'er's back.

God Tier Consolidated Equipment. Without question, the four rays of dark gold light had told everyone that these massive wings behind Shangguan Bing'er's back were actually all God Tier Consolidated Equipment.

Those with slightly lower cultivation levels could only perceive it with their five senses, but for those Elders at the Heavenly King stage and above, the shock was even greater. That was because they could clearly see that the pair of giant wings extending behind Shangguan Bing'er was not just as simple as being God Tier Consolidated Equipment, but it was actually a Set. More so, it was an Assembly Set! Amongst the God Tier Consolidated Equipment, this was considered extremely highly ranked, nearly on the same level as Legendary Sets. Furthermore, it was possible her four-piece Assembly Set Wings might even be part of a Legendary Set. If that were true, then just that single fact alone would place it amongst the absolute top of all God Tier Consolidated Equipment.

Naturally, Dreamwake and Nie Han were the ones able to tell the quality of the goods. As soon as she shouted to stop the Grand Elders from attacking, Dreamwake subconsciously looked at Nie Han, and she was able to see the same shock in his eyes that she was feeling.

Both of them clearly knew that in order to create such Consolidated Equipment, just in terms of material, it was definitely not easy to collect and gather. Furthermore, this was

definitely not an accomplishment that a single God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master could perform on his own. Even if it were the two of them working together in fully unity, with all materials abundant, without several years of preparation, they would not be able to create such a level of God Tier Consolidated Equipment.

The large wings spread open, added together they were nearly ten metres long. Since Shangguan Bing'er was bent over slightly, it was as if the two massive wings were spread open right in front of Zhou Weiqing.

Shangguan Bing'er had after all accompanied Zhou Weiqing here, and to all the other onlookers, it was natural that Zhou Weiqing was about to display this unique God Tier Consolidated Set of Wings.

However, Zhou Weiqing used his following actions to tell them that this was all just a beginning.

Chapter 243: XuanTian Citadel (3)

Both of Zhou Weiqing's hands waved at once, and sheet after sheet of Consolidating Paper flew out from his hands to land on Shangguan Bing'er's immense wings. The wings were glowing with a layer of green light, which engulfed the Consolidating Paper, causing them to land on her spread wings, glued close to them and in neat order.

Along the ten metre broad Wings of the Wind God, there were now a total of fifty Consolidating Papers lined up.

With Zhou Weiqing's cultivation level, he naturally did not need Shangguan Bing'er's help. However, he was now displaying a power level of a five-Jeweled stage, and he could not show off too much. Hiding his cultivation stage was definitely necessary; otherwise if he showed that he had already entered the Heavenly Dao Energy stage, he would definitely be looked upon as even more of a monster, and they might even grow wary of him.

What was he doing? Fifty pieces of Consolidating Paper? Was he going to use them all to create Consolidating Equipment Scrolls? How long would that take? Would there even be a point to today's gathering?

Although all present were filled with doubts and confusion, at this point no one would try to stop Zhou Weiqing. They were more than happy to see this new God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master show off his strength, to see if he truly deserved the position of Consecrated.

Once again, Zhou Weiqing waved both hands. This time, fifty small crystal bottles appeared, each holding different types of Consolidating Ink. The bottles landed on a Consolidating Paper each. Of course, once again it seemed like Shangguan Bing'er was using her Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy to help him in doing so.

This time, neither Dreamwake nor Nie Han could remain seated.

Almost simultaneously, both of them stood up and walked from behind the table, standing at a position not far from Zhou Weiqing's back. That was because both of them could tell that those Consolidating Equipment Scrolls that Zhou Weiqing was about to create were actually fifty different kinds!

Zhou Weiqing turned around, smiling to Dreamwake as he said: "Dreamwake, can you please lend me two Consolidating Pens? I only have the single one on my body currently."

Dreamwake nodded, not questioning him at all, just handing him two Consolidating Pens without any hesitation. Although the two were not as high quality as the one Zhou Weiqing had used previously on the test day to create the God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scroll, they were definitely high quality ones.

With the two Consolidating Pens in hand, Zhou Weiqing turned back to Shangguan Bing'er's back. With a Consolidating Pen in each hand, he lifted his arms slightly, closing his eyes.

As the center of attention of the entire hall, as soon as Zhou Weiqing made that action, all of them could sense his aura suddenly change.

Zhou Weiqing was a mere five-Jeweled cultivation level to those present, and in their eyes, such a cultivation stage amounted to nothing. However, in that instant, the feeling he gave them all was that of an insurmountable mountain they could only look up to. His entire aura and presence seemed to have raised to a state that was far above anyone present. This was not a martial presence, but a unique quality that seemed to come from within. Just like a mountain range, or the flowing clouds in the skies, not able to be suppressed externally.

Dreamwake stood at the closest position to Zhou Weiqing, and she just able to see his side profile.

Although Zhou Weiqing was not especially handsome, but the unique quality and aura that he emitted, especially the state of

being one with the world, actually caused the heartstrings within her that had never been moved before to shiver slightly.

A strong and confident man was absolutely attractive, especially one who had such peerless talent and genius; that was an irresistible attraction indeed. This talent was further exacerbated by the fact that he was just so young. Compared to those suave and handsome fellows who were merely [pewter spearhead that shines like silver](#), only a man like Zhou Weiqing had the greatest draw to those women with real inner beauty and intelligence.

It was exactly because of this fact that Zhou Weiqing had so many beauties surrounding him, falling for him. If not for his talent that far surpassed everyone, allowing him to emerge and prove himself amongst all the other young geniuses in the Heavenly Jewel Tournament, perhaps he would not even have had the chance to meet Shangguan Fei'er and Shangguan Xue'er. Furthermore, if not for the fact his bloodline and Attributes had such a strong attraction for Tian'er, they would not have met, and not have the chance to be together.

The reason why Zhou Weiqing could draw the attention and favour of so many girls, besides that 'bad-boy' look that was perhaps easier at making them notice him, was the strong resolution and willpower deep in his bones, his sense of justice, his own power and sheer talent, as well as his heart and deep sincerity.

Even a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master like Dreamwake couldn't help but subconsciously feel attracted to him. Of course, it was merely an admiration due to his strong talent, but it was clear that at least he had left a deep impression in her mind.

Naturally, Zhou Weiqing did not know that his outstanding performances had already given Dreamwake a different feeling towards him. Instead, currently he was actually fully immersed in a unique, almost miraculous state.

Ever since he had graduated from Huyan Aobo's teachings, Zhou

Weiqing had actually not spent much time and effort on the creation of Consolidating Equipment Scrolls. Even so, the time he had spent with Huyan Aobo and his teachings had left him with a very solid foundation. At that time, in order not to hold up Zhou Weiqing's cultivation, Huyan Aobo had just transferred all of his knowledge to him in one fell swoop, many of which he asked Zhou Weiqing to just memorize first.

Zhou Weiqing's memory was extremely good, and at least in the past few years he had not forgotten anything he had learned from Huyan Aobo. As such, even though he had not spent much time and effort on Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, in terms of knowledge, he was at least no less than Yun Li. Furthermore, the first time he had been in the Heavenly Jewel Island, he had also been taught and guided by the three God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters for a period of time. As such, his outlook and horizons in that sense were more than sufficient to reach that of a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master. Do not forget that he had personally witnessed the three God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters helping him create all those God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scrolls.

As his Saint Energy had reached the nine-Jeweled stage, it had greatly improved his senses and mind; in this short period of time he had managed to integrate all of the knowledge he had memorized in the past.

To a genius, especially one with Saint Energy, it was always a bountiful harvest to absorb the summarized experience of their predecessors. In truth, when Zhou Weiqing was taking The Pearl to reach the XuanTian Continent, he had already begun absorbing knowledge, to prepare to create some for himself and Shangguan Bing'er. In this regard, Shangguan Bing'er did not know. This was also one of the strongest points of Zhou Weiqing compared to most others, his sense of the big picture as well as preparing himself for the future. As such, he might not be a good general, but he had the

potential to become an outstanding commander. The only thing was he did not focus his time and energies on military matters.

The creation of that God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scroll a few days ago had indeed helped Zhou Weiqing corroborate, verify and further affirm much of the knowledge he had begun to understand, allowing him to fully master and comprehend it thoroughly at last. In the next few days after his deep sleep, Zhou Weiqing had a whole new feeling, as if he had truly become a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master. Of course, this new God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master currently still required the use of his 'cheating' Time Attribute to fully succeed.

All of the XuanTian Palace powerhouses consciously slowed their breathing and withdrew their auras, causing the entire massive hall to silence instantly, afraid they might affect Zhou Weiqing and leave a bad impression to this young God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master.

Zhou Weiqing did not make them wait too long. Within the time it took for three breaths, he began moving.

Along his wrists, five sets of Heavenly Jewels appeared silently, the Alexandrite Cat's Eye Elemental Jewels on his left wrist instantly drawing all attention.

A thick green light and silver light appeared simultaneously on his hands, causing the two Consolidating Pens to glow brilliantly.

In a few steps, Zhou Weiqing reached Shangguan Bing'er's spread wings. With a flip of his wrist, two bottles of Consolidating Ink were opened instantly.

Zhou Weiqing's actions could only be described as quick as lightning, yet his speedy actions did not give others the impression that he was moving blindly just for speed. On the contrary, every action he made seemed to have a unique rhythm, a feeling that was just so enjoyable to watch. Every movement so harmonious and in accord, as if with everything under control, yet at such an

unbelievable speed.

The two Consolidating Pens dipped into their respective Consolidating Inks. In the next moment, a scene occurred that caused everyone, even the two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters behind him, to be totally shocked.

The two Consolidating Pens actually landed on two different Consolidating Papers, beginning to move and draw respectively at a swift speed on their respective Papers.

It had to be known that the Consolidating Inks that Zhou Weiqing had brought out were all different; this meant they were suitable for different types of Consolidating Equipment Scrolls.

True Multitasking? Creating two different Consolidating Equipment Scrolls at the same time? Even for a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, this was a task that was nigh impossible.

When a Consolidating Equipment Master was creating a Scroll, one of the most important requirements was to grasp the rhythm perfectly; only then could he or she complete the entire process in a single go without errors. What Zhou Weiqing was doing now seemed to be violating this basic principle. After all, every different Consolidating Equipment Scroll's creation process would also have very different rhythms. At this very instant, he was actually showing the use of two different rhythms at once!

The silver and green colours began to mix and merge together on the tip of the Consolidating Pens. Zhou Weiqing actions, even those surrounding top ranked Heavenly Jewel Masters couldn't see clearly. It seemed like just a mere twitches of his hands, simple circles, simple strokes, and in moments, two rays of light shone forth from both Consolidating Papers.

When the moving light appeared, even the XuanTian Palace Master seated at the head seat couldn't help but exclaim. That was because all of them could clearly see that the brilliant light

signaled the completion of Consolidating Equipment Scrolls!

Although they could tell from the light that they were just Grandmaster level Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, but Zhou Weiqing's speed had been just too quick. The entire process had barely taken him two breaths, including the dipping of Consolidating Ink.

Such speed was truly unbelievable, and even the two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters behind Zhou Weiqing believed that if they were just creating a single Grandmaster Consolidating Equipment Scroll, they still wouldn't be able to complete it at such speeds, let alone like Zhou Weiqing creating two totally different Scrolls simultaneously. To them, this looked like an impossible task.

To sketch it all out within a single breath, multitasking to do so for two; this was not simply a matter of skill derived from experience.

impressive looking but useless in the end

Chapter 244: Fastest Consolidating Equipment Scroll Master in History (1)

Before he began making Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, the vast majority did not quite believe Zhou Weiqing's claim of being the fastest Consolidating Equipment Scroll Master in history. But now, all doubts and questions had disappeared like a puff of smoke with his performance.

And this was just the beginning. As the radiance of the two Consolidating Equipment Scrolls spilled out, Zhou Weiqing had already slid over three chi, the Consolidating Pen in his hand faintly swishing back and forth, the remaining Consolidating Ink had already been shaken off, none remaining. This was the wonder of a top-grade Consolidating Pen, able to be fully controlled at will with the skill of the Consolidating Equipment Master.

His Consolidating Pen moved again and opened two completely different bottles of Consolidating Ink, but his penmanship was as smooth and natural as before. The radiance of the first two Consolidating Equipment scrolls had not even completely faded as two more rays of light began shining.

It was too dazzling. As everyone watched, they could see two rays of shimmering dark gold light glittering from left to right on Shangguan Bing'er's wings, like waves billowing to and fro.

From left to right, Zhou Weiqing made fifty Consolidating Equipment Scrolls in only half the time it took to drink a cup of tea. By the time the last two rays of light soared into the air, he was already back at the first scroll, his left hand flourishing, sweeping up every completed scroll into his hand.

The dark gold light faded and Shangguan Bing'er straightened up.

There was total silence. Zhou Weiqing scanned the crowd; he

could clearly see almost every XuanTian Palace powerhouse's jaw hanging open.

When had they ever seen such a terrifying Consolidating Equipment Master?

Yes, the word they were all thinking of to describe Zhou Weiqing right now was indeed 'terrifying'. Even the other two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters of the XuanTian Palace had never had this effect on them.

Before, in the eyes of these Heavenly Jewel Masters, God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters were mysterious and formidable. But Zhou Weiqing had completely upending that preconception.

When one had real and formidable power, his arrogance was no longer arrogance, but was the showing of self-confidence and actual power. Zhou Weiqing had proven himself and made these high-level XuanTian Palace people truly recognize him for the first time.

Never mind the Heavenly Jewel Masters, even the two God Tier Masters behind Zhou Weiqing has been rocked to the core. Dreamwake was still relatively okay, but Nie Han was currently staring wide-eyed, unable to help himself.

In such a short amount of time fifty Consolidating Equipment Scrolls were made using fifty different Consolidating Inks. What kind of power and latent potential was this?

Originally, Nie Han had felt that it was due to luck and shameless reliance on his Time attribute that had enabled Zhou Weiqing to produce a God Tier Master Consolidating Equipment Scroll. This young man's latent potential was superb, but his foundation was perhaps barely stronger than an ordinary Grandmaster Consolidating Scroll Master.

However, Zhou Weiqing's display just now had fully shown that

he had more than just latent potential. The use of different Consolidating Inks and production methods for the fifty different scrolls proved without a doubt that he was a true Consolidating Equipment Master with training and legacy.

Applause rang out. The first to clap was XuanTian Palace Master Dong Fang.

Only then did the Heavenly Jewel Masters of XuanTian Palace genuinely react, launching into thunderous applause, spurred on by the two God Tier Masters and the four Grand Elders.

The four Grand Elders looked at Zhou Weiqing much more kindly now, and they now completely overlooked Zhou Weiqing's age. In this world, if you really had power, nothing else really mattered all that much.

The Master of XuanTian Palace smiled. "Stunning. I can only use stunning to describe that performance. I'm convinced no one present harbors any doubt about you any longer. From now on, Consecrated Zhou is one of the cornerstones of XuanTian Palace going forward. Now I will announce for the banquet to formally begin."

After Zhou Weiqing's performance the banquet became animated; The XuanTian Palace Master personally went to Zhou Weiqing and toasted him. With this initiative, more and more followed in coming up and offering him a toast. Fortunately, ranks were obvious in XuanTian Palace. Only those Elders and above ranking dared to come and toast him. As for the high-level members on the periphery, they just raised their cups from a distance with scorching hot gazes.

It wasn't just Zhou Weiqing who was offered drinks. Shangguan Bing'er's position increased greatly as well due to her display. At her age, having a seven-Jewel cultivation stage, as well as those four God Tier Consolidated Equipment Assembly Set Wings. Her rank as Elder had now been solidified. After all, to reach the seven-

jewel stage at such a young age, it was not out of the question for her to reach the Heavenly King stage. Especially since she had Zhou Weiqing, such a formidable God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, for a husband.

Everyone present was a powerhouse, and thanks to their robust Heavenly Energy it was not easy to get them drunk. So even though the atmosphere at the banquet was quite festive, no one had too much to drink.

“Weiqing, let me offer you a toast.” Dreamwake appeared before Zhou Weiqing, holding her cup, looking at him with her pretty, sparkling eyes.

Zhou Weiqing clinked glasses with her and drained it. The alcohol was having some effect on him, so much so that his eyes were starting to roam. As the saying goes, it’s easier to alter mountains and rivers than alter a person’s characters. It’s just who he was. When he saw a pretty girl he couldn’t help but get restless.

Dreamwake seemed not to notice Zhou Weiqing’s wanton gaze. She smiled. “Weiqing, if I’m not mistaken the reason you were able to make a Consolidating Equipment Scroll before was because you merged the Wind attribute with the Space attribute. But, can you tell me why you have such strong power of control? How can you be so accurate while working so fast? I didn’t sense you using the Time attribute.”

Zhou Weiqing shrugged. “Practice makes perfect. With that much practice normally, I have already committed all these ordinary Consolidating Pen strokes to muscle memory, so when the time comes, it is only natural that I can work effortlessly.”

He would never tell her it was his Saint Energy guiding him that made him so perfect. With his Saint Energy present, any other attribute could be fused without affecting his Consolidating Equipment Scroll making in any way. Plus it was only a Grandmaster Consolidating Equipment Scroll, nothing difficult to

him.

Dreamwake frowned. “Is that so? I wonder if I can come to you some time and learn the secrets of your scroll making?”

Zhou Weiqing chuckled. “Of course. You’re welcome any time.”

...

The banquet came to a successful close. At that moment you could say Zhou Weiqing had finally been formally accepted into XuanTian Palace. His Consolidating Equipment Scroll performance at the banquet had had a large effect. At the very least, no one would ever again doubt his ability.

Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing’er stayed at XuanTian Citadel, where they were set up in the highest power position right in the center of the Citadel. Alas, his quarters made Zhou Weiqing feel a bit helpless.

The interior of XuanTian Citadel was vast. Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing’er had been set up on the sixth floor of the seven-storey XuanTian Citadel. On the seventh floor was XuanTian Palace Master’s quarters and the place where the highest-level meetings were convened, dubbed the Heavenly Hall. All important XuanTian Citadel matters were decided in the Heavenly Hall.

Aside from the seventh floor, the highest-ranking members lived on the sixth floor. Zhou Weiqing was of course delighted to be so close to core of the XuanTian Citadel. However, the problem was, he wasn’t the only one living on the sixth floor. The four Grand Elders also lived there. As for the other two God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters, Nie Han and Dreamwake actually even move back into this level to stay after Zhou Weiqing arrived.

Surrounded by six supreme powerhouses, Zhou Weiqing didn’t dare act recklessly. He wasn’t too clear about Nie Han and Dreamwake’s cultivation, but they were at least top level Heavenly King stages. And thinking about the four Heavenly Emperors being

present here made his blood run cold. How was he supposed to have room to scout around for the Spatial Teleportation Gem? Extending his senses to scout out wouldn't work; those four Grand Elders would definitely sense it right away.

With no other choice left, Zhou Weiqing could only settle down first. He was newly admitted; a probationary period of supervision was unavoidable. Anyway, he had plenty of time. He might as well relax a bit. Aside from cultivating, he could spend each day researching Consolidating Equipment Scroll making, and exchange pointers with Nie Han and Dreamwake.

The higher levels of the XuanTian Citadel had extremely thick atmospheric energies, even surpassing that of the Heaven's Expanse Palace. Cultivating here would naturally lead to twice the gains with half the effort.

...

A month passed in the blink of an eye. Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy had thoroughly stabilized at the thirty-seventh stage, and was beginning to steadily increase. More importantly, the rate of increase was even faster than before. Zhou Weiqing could sense that this time there shouldn't be a bottleneck every stage like in the past, at least before he consolidated his Saint Core Nucleus. After all, he had formally entered the Heavenly Dao Energy stage.

In fact, if anyone learned how he had broken through to Heavenly Dao Energy they'd likely die of envy. A mere several months had been enough time for him to successfully breakthrough, how could that even be considered a bottleneck?! Of course, this was the natural advantage of Saint Energy.

As compared to his advancements in cultivation, on the Consolidating Equipment Scroll-making front, Zhou Weiqing could only describe his advancement speed as a major leap. He had originally gained the legacy and teachings of the Legacy of Strength Sect from Huyan Aobo and Duan Tianlang, and

Dreamwake and Nie Han were also God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters. With the three of them trading pointers together on Consolidating Equipment Scroll making, it was definitely an invaluable experience for Zhou Weiqing. The Consolidating Equipment Scroll Masters on the XuanTian Continent had some different ideas about making Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, compared to those on Boundless Mainland. You could even say they had forged their own path. This was actually a huge help to Zhou Weiqing. At the same time, although he often had a different point of view than the other two God Tier Masters, since he was known to be from the ‘reclusive sect’ of the Legacy of Strength, it wouldn’t lead to any suspicions.

Chapter 244: Fastest Consolidating Equipment Scroll Master in History (2)

The days passed by just like that, one after the other. It had been a long time since Zhou Weiqing had enjoyed such a relaxed life. Each day was very fulfilling and full of constant self improvement. Of course, he would also create several Consolidating Equipment Scrolls. However, because of his cultivation level, no one forced him to create God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scrolls. For XuanTian Palace, it was clearly more important for them to treat him as a backup God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master to groom for the future.

Zhou Weiqing was more than happy with this. However, for the sake of proving his value, he would still create and submit ten sets of Grandmaster Consolidating Equipment Scrolls and a set of Zong Stage Consolidating Equipment Scrolls.

Compared to Zhou Weiqing's constant improvement, Shangguan Bing'er's progress was actually even more obvious. She was not a Consolidating Equipment Master and did not need to spend her attention on other things. In her daily life with Zhou Weiqing, besides making love to him, all of her time and effort was invested into cultivation. With the impetus from Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy in addition to her own hard work, the rate of her cultivation growth shocked even Zhou Weiqing. In fact, she had already started to advance towards the upper level seven-Jeweled Stage. At this rate, Zhou Weiqing estimated that there was a possibility of Bing'er attempting to breakthrough the eighth-Jeweled Stage in less than three months. One must know that even Shangguan Fei'er, who had lived and cultivated in the superior environment of the Heaven's Expanse Palace since young, had not yet reached the eighth-Jewel Stage.

...

“Weiqing, we have to head to Heavenly Hall for a meeting.” Dreamwake’s melodious and pleasant voice was transmitted from outside the door.

Every dwelling in this XuanTian Citidal’s six levels was completely independent, extremely spacious and each room was separate. Without the owner’s permission, even the other high level XuanTian Palace executives that stayed here did not dare to enter someone else’s territory.

Upon hearing Dreamwake’s voice, Zhou Weiqing rushed over to open the door.

Today, Dreamwake was wearing a long light-purple dress and looked even more graceful than usual.

Zhou Weiqing had become rather familiar with her over the past month or so. The attractiveness of this beautiful God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master was even greater than he had imagined. Besides her remarkable beauty, she was also endowed with great intelligence. This smart lady was extremely knowledgeable and could be said to be both a helpful teacher and a knowledgeable friend to Zhou Weiqing in the field of Consolidating Equipment Scrolls. Dreamwake was also his most frequent visitor. In contrast, Zhou Weiqing had not caught a glimpse of the XuanTian Palace Master since the banquet party.

With regards to the contact between Zhou Weiqing and Dreamwake, Shangguan Bing’er only said a single sentence to him, “Elder sisters will never agree to you bringing back another one. You should be very clear about this.”

Zhou Weiqing’s answer was, “Admiration, it is purely admiration only...” Of course, the expression on his face was very splendidly unique when he gave this answer. At the same time, he really did warn himself daily to restrain himself, to no longer get involved with any other girls. H also tried his best to practice this in reality. Besides matters related to Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, he

seldom interacted with Dreamwake, and never attempted to inquire about Dreamwake's personal affairs. All he knew about her was that she was not married and was twenty nine years old this year.

As Zhou Weiqing involuntarily took a few more glances at Dreamwake's body, he curiously asked, "Meeting? What meeting?" Even after so much time here, he had not visited the seventh level.

Dreamwake resolutely said, "Quickly follow me. Every time a meeting has been called in the Heavenly Hall, it is definitely regarding matters of paramount importance."

"Okay." Zhou Weiqing responded. He only followed Dreamwake out after notifying Shangguan Bing'er, who was cultivating in the room.

Zhou Weiqing walked shoulder to shoulder with Dreamwake as he asked in a puzzled manner, "How are we going up to the seventh storey?"

Dreamwake faintly smiled as she replied, "Just follow me. Only the Palace Master has the authority to open the seventh storey. It will naturally be opened when there is a meeting in Heavenly Hall."

While she spoke, she had already brought Zhou Weiqing to the center of the sixth storey. This place was normally an empty circular space. However, there was now a strange symbol on the ground.

Zhou Weiqing was surprised when he saw this symbol, because it was actually so similar to his own Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation. The symbol was that of a six pointed star, but there was an additional circle on the outermost layer.

"Come." Dreamwake took the lead and walked onto the six pointed star symbol. Zhou Weiqing knew that this was likely to be

a type of Teleportation Formation. No wonder he had never seen the seventh storey before.

When the two of them stood on the six pointed star, Dreamwake infused some Heavenly Energy into the formation. Light flashed, and they had already appeared in another location.

It was an enormous hall, and the most peculiar thing about it was the dense light of treasure around them. Reverence emerged in Zhou Weiqing's heart. It seemed that this seventh story of XuanTian Citadel was not an actual place, but a domain similar to the Lustre Spatial Realm. Although it was nowhere near as gigantic, complete and real, the possession of such a domain that was similar to the Lustre Spatial Realm was enough testament to how powerful XuanTian Palace was.

There was an oval table at the center of the hall. The four Grand Elders were already seated on the left, while God Tier Master Nie Han sat alone on the right, at the second seat opposite them.

The master seat was still empty, but that giant high-back chair there quickly drew Zhou Weiqing's gaze.

This high-back chair was enormous. The back of the chair alone was already slightly over ten feet tall. It was made entirely from an unknown material that was akin to extremely transparent black crystal, and was carved into the shape of a giant black dragon. The dragon's head was located at the middle of the chair's back. Two red fist size gems were embedded on the head as its eyes. The flickering red light gave it a rather bewitching aura.

Giant black dragon? Zhou Weiqing had never heard of this before. He secretly pondered in his heart. Was this a Terror Sea Dragon? It can't be. A Terror Sea Dragon should not be black, but deep blue.

Dreamwake silently walked to the most front seat on the right side of the oval table and sat down, while Zhou Weiqing naturally sat on the third seat.

The eyes of the four Grand Elders facing him naturally fell on his body. Under the attention of for Heavenly Emperor Stage experts, even Zhou Weiqing could not be completely comfortable.

Like how the Heaven's Expanse Palace or any of the other five Great Saint Lands, each of them possessed a specialization. Naturally, the XuanTian Palace also had a specialization of its own, namely the Tenebrous Attribute. That's right, Tenebrous, not Darkness. There was a difference between the two.

The Tenebrous Attribute seemed to be unique to XuanTian Palace, and every high level core executive had it amongst their Jewel Attributes. This included the Elders, Grand Elders and even Dreamwake and Nie Han. Zhou Weiqing could be said to be the exception. However, if one considered it, he did actually have a rather unique connection to this Tenebrous Attribute indeed.

As for the difference between the two attributes, the Tenebrous Attribute was half a rank higher than the Darkness Attribute, and the former had several innate properties similar to the Demonic Attribute. It could be said to be a new attribute made from the fusion of the Darkness and Demonic attributes. Of course, compared to the true Demonic Attribute, its power was still somewhat inferior.

Moreover, none of those seated here had single attribute Elemental Jewel. Besides the Tenebrous Attribute, the four Grand Elders opposite Zhou Weiqing had the Water, Fire, Earth and Wind Attributes respectively. Hence, the members of XuanTian Palace normally called them Water Elder, Fire Elder, Earth Elder and Wind Elder. In contrast, ordinary Elders were known by their names.

Nie Han's Jewel Attributes were naturally the Spatial and Tenebrous Attributes. On the other hand, although Zhou Weiqing could be considered to be most familiar with Dreamwake out of all the XuanTian powerhouses, he was actually not fully aware her Elemental Jewel Attributes. He only knew that her Elemental

Jewel was actually the same as his own, the Alexandrite Cat's Eye Jewel. This meant that Dreamwake also had at least four Elemental Jewel Attributes. Perhaps this was the reason why her status was even higher than Nie Han even though they were both God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters.

Zhou Weiqing had always been rather curious with regards to Dreamwake. She was only twenty nine years old! Yet, her cultivation was already at least at the Heavenly King Stage. How the hell did she cultivate? In the entire Boundless Mainland, he had never even heard of a Heavenly King under the age of thirty.

This place was the so-called Heavenly Hall. The four Grand Elders seated opposite Zhou Weiqing wore rather solemn expressions. From this, one could tell that the agenda for the meeting today was important to XuanTian Palace. This point caused Zhou Weiqing to be extremely puzzled. What was so important to the upper echelons of XuanTian Palace? One must know that they did not have anymore external enemies in the entire XuanTian Continent. In fact, their overwhelming power allowed them to be an overlord. Even if some of the lower ranks were discovered to be corrupt, the upper echelons did not need to be so serious.

In addition, Zhou Weiqing discovered some unusual points. The God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master Nie Han seated beside him also seemed to be clueless about what had happened, and was likewise somewhat dazed like himself. However Dreamwake's expression was just as grim as the Grand Elders. She was clearly aware of what was going on. Since they were all God Tier Masters, why was only Dreamwake aware of the important internal matters of XuanTian Palace beforehand?

While such thoughts swirled in Zhou Weiqing's heart, a shadowy figure stealthily appeared in the master seat. It was the masked XuanTian Palace Master.

Everyone hastily rose and bowed slightly towards the XuanTian

Palace Master.

The XuanTian Palace Master waved his hands, “No need to be overly polite.” His masked face turned towards Zhou Weiqing, “How is Consecrate Zhou adjusting to life within XuanTian Citadel?”

Zhou Weiqing smiled as he inclined his head, “Life is not bad. There are plenty of resources for me to use. It is much better than before when I had to personally search for materials to craft Consolidating Equipment Scrolls. Moreover, I can seek advice from Consecrate Dreamwake and Nie Han. I am very happy with my decision to join XuanTian Palace.”

The XuanTian Palace Master nodded, “That's good. Everyone be seated.”

Everyone sat down again as the XuanTian Palace Master continued in a low voice, “Let us go directly into the heart of the matter. A Terror Sea Dragon has recently been active in the coastal regions, and it has destroyed over a dozen ocean faring ships. This is a huge loss for us. If we do not take action, it will likely grow even more rampant. Everyone, let me know if you believe we should directly take action.”

Zhou Weiqing was instantly stunned upon hearing the three words, Terror Sea Dragon. I couldn't have jinxed it right? I can't believe a Terror Sea Dragon has appeared at a sea bordering continent like the XuanTian Continent. At the same time, he was inwardly thankful that he had not encountered this fellow on his trip across the sea. However, he now understood why the upper echelons of XuanTian Palace were so serious. It was indeed exceedingly difficult to deal with a Heavenly God Stage beast that was even in its most familiar territory, the ocean.

Chapter 244: Fastest Consolidating Equipment Scroll Master in History (3)

The Water Elder, who sat in the main position among the four Grand Elders, spoke gravely: “This matter isn’t easy to deal with. The Terror Sea Dragon is almost an invincible existence in the ocean. Even with our palace’s might, it is still virtually impossible to kill it. Even a successful attempt would definitely result in grievous losses that do not justify the gains. It is better to come up with some other method to chase it away.”

The Fire Elder frowned slightly, “Chase it away? How are we going to chase it away? Will that thing even listen to us? It’ll most likely retaliate with wanton attacks instead. In my opinion, if the plan is sound, it’s not like we don’t have a chance to kill it. If our predecessors could get it done, why not us? Hunting this dragon is definitely dangerous but once we get it done, the benefits towards our palace will naturally be incredible too.”

The two Grand Elders firmly represented two conflicting opinions.

The Earth Elder also voiced his thoughts: “This Terror Sea Dragon might be an offspring from the one killed back then by our predecessors, thus it hates us so much. Once it find out that we use the Tenebrous Attribute, it will most likely be impossible to chase it away. At that point, if we don’t kill it, we might even all perish. We have to deliberate this more carefully.”

Zhou Weiqing chimed in: “Aren’t we able to temporarily pull back on this business from the oceans? Anyway, that Terror Sea Dragon won’t easily go on land either or its power will be greatly reduced.”

Everyone here naturally didn’t think Weiqing would speak during his first meeting. All eyes fell on him as if he was a fool.

Dreamwake helped him out again and said, “Consecrated Zhou, it isn’t that simple. Our Xuantian Continent is vast, but the arable land suitable for farming is extremely limited. Our geographical landscape is mainly rocky mountains and hills which aren’t suited for growing food. For many years, in order to maintain the livelihood of the ordinary citizens, we have always ventured into the oceans for much of our food and other important goods. It was so much so that the materials near the coast aren’t enough to satisfy the entire continent’s demands any longer. As a result, each year, we send at least one hundred large ships further into the oceans in order to bring more resources back. This is for the people’s welfare, if we can’t fish or treasure hunt anymore, I’m afraid starvation will rear its ugly head eventually.”

“Ah, I see! Excuse me, I rarely dealt with outside matters so I wasn’t clear. Please continue, gentlemen.” Weiqing quickly closed his mouth.

Luckily, the four Grand Elders didn’t become suspicious of him, evident by their friendly smiles. In their eyes, he was still too young. Despite his natural talents, he still lacked maturity.

The XuanTian Palace Master said, “Wind Elder, what do you think?”

The Wind Elder was a thin and tall old man. Weiqing has been here for one month and this person has been the closest to him among the four Grand Elders. The reason was naturally due to Shanguan Bing’er’s Wings of the Wind God.

“If we can guarantee a safe escape as a backup plan, I think we should try to hunt it. Not only would it bring about great benefits, it would also scare the other experts in the oceans. Every years, there are always losses to our fishing expeditions. If we back off this time, not just that dragon but the other powerful ocean sects and creatures might also push it further as well. That might be a devastating blow to us.”

After hearing this, Elder Huo and Dreamwake both rubbed their chins musingly. The Earth Elder grimaced without voicing his concerns, his brow furrowed. However, the Water Elder shook his head as he said: “It is easy for you to say, but how can we guarantee a safe retreat? In the ocean, even if the four of us are together and fighting in unison, we still won’t be able to stop one all-out attack from that Terror Sea Dragon, especially since it can utilize the ocean’s power. Our strength is indeed at the apex on land but we are only drops of salt once in the ocean.”

Meanwhile, Nie Han’s eyes were closed while sitting by Weiqing’s side as if all of this had nothing to do with him.

Weiqing could guess that the ones in charge of deciding were still the four Grand Elders. Consecrated God Tier Masters like them enjoyed great status but truly lacked real power to make decisions compared to these Grand Elders.

The Palace Master glanced at Nie Han and asked, “Consecrated Dreamwake, what’s your take on this?”

His question prompted the four Grand Elders to stop their conversation.

Dreamwake answered with a serious expression, “I agree with Wind Elder. This battle against the Terror Sea Dragon is inevitable. Currently, it is already invading the oceans close to our shores to attack the ocean-going ships, a clear provocation towards us. Instead of waiting for greater losses, we should deal with it swiftly. And Water Elder has asked how will we avoid death or injuries? In my opinion, this is what we should be thinking about instead of debating whether to fight or not.”

The Palace Master who has been silent on the matter thus far rubbed his chin, nodding slightly as he said, “Gentlemen, any ideas?”

The Water Elder glanced at Dreamwake, sitting directly in front of him and contemplated for a bit before answering: “There are

indeed some methods. If we really want to do it, we need to make two preparations. First, we definitely have to invite that One. If He is willing to help, that will guarantee our offensive potential. Next, we have to take out the Spatial Teleportation Gem in order to build a Teleportation Formation. If things do not go well, we can use that to retreat with haste.”

After hearing the words Spatial Teleportation Gem, Zhou Weiqing almost lost his cool and had to struggle to calm down while shouting in his mind. Yes! Please! Take that thing out so I will finally have a chance!

The Fire Elder Huo continued: “I’m afraid that’s not possible. Whether we can ask that One to come is a big issue in-and-of itself. Moreover, the Spatial Teleportation Gem can only be used two or three more times before shattering. The previous Palace Masters have ordered that unless it was a matter of life and death, we can’t use our most defining treasure so easily. Moreover, a Teleportation Formation’s energy drain on the Spatial Teleportation Gem is based on the number of lives. If we are hunting this Terror Sea Dragon, we will need many people... so how can the Spatial Teleportation Gem withstand it? What if the Spatial Teleportation Gem breaks in our hands just like that?”

The Water Elder glared at him angrily, “You old thing, you were the one who wanted to fight and now you’re the one thinking about this and that, being indecisive? Besides these two methods, please tell me, what other methods can be used to stop that Terror Sea Dragon and guarantee our safe return? Without that One helping, if we try to fight the Terror Sea Dragon, it is the same as foolishly walking to our deaths. And if that Terror Sea Dragon is pushed to the edge by us and goes berserk, even if we can kill it, its final throes of death is not something we can withstand so easily. Who would dare fight without the backup of the Spatial Teleportation Gem? Even if we fought in that state, no one would dare to go all out either... which is once again courting death. As

for me, these old bones still wish to live for several more years.”

The Fire Elder snorted in response, “You’re already so old yet still afraid of death. It is no wonder you can’t reach the Heavenly God State despite being so much more talented than me!”

“You!” The Water Elder glared angrily at him.

“Okay, okay, Elders, this is not the time to argue.” The Palace Master exclaimed calmly. Only then did the two Grand Elders calm down for now.

Once again, he asked, “Consecrated Dreamwake, what do you think about Water Elder’s suggestion?”

Dreamwake thought about it before answering, “Before we can even decide whether or not to use the Spatial Teleportation Gem, we will need to see if that One will agree to our plans first. Without His help, we won’t be able to deal with the dragon, then the entire point is moot. If He refuses, we might have to reformulate our entire plan again.”

This time, all four Grand Elders nodded; they clearly agreed with Dreamwake’s opinion regarding that.

Weiqing naturally didn’t say anything. His skills in terms of creation of Consolidating Equipment Scrolls had already won everyone’s acknowledgement, but in terms of power, he was at the bottom of the barrel in this place, and was not in any position to talk. As such, he decided to keep silently. Nevertheless, he had finally got news about the Spatial Teleportation Gem. Though it wasn’t clear whether he could actually see them, it did prove that the XuanTian Palace actually had the object. At the very least, he hadn’t wasted all his time coming here.

The Palace Master saw that a consensus has been reached and inclined his head as he said: “In that case, let us go meet that One then.”

He swiped his hands in the air as he spoke. Zhou Weiqing did not

know what he had done, but he instantly felt the surrounding space fluctuating, and in the next instant they all appeared again at the Formation on the sixth floor.

The Palace Master walked in front with the four Grand Elders right behind him. Dreamwake came next to Weiqing and whispered: “Weiqing, stay by my side. Whatever you see later, do not stray more than three meters away from me.”

“Okay.” Weiqing agreed; as he did so, he noticed that Dreamwake’s eyes were a bit different, a strange light in them.

The group of eight left the XuanTian Citadel, heading to the iron chains that connected the citadel to the outside world. Where are they going? To meet whom? Weiqing had so many questions in his mind. He clearly knew that this person the upper echelon wanted to meet must be quite powerful, even above everyone here including the Palace Master. Otherwise, they wouldn’t all be going at the same time. He became more cautious and channeled the Saint Energy in his body in order to strengthen his disguise.

When he thought everyone was about to cross the iron chain ‘bridges’, the Palace Master suddenly stepped forward directly into the empty space, dropping down towards the bottomless abyss, giving Zhou Weiqing a big scare.

Next, the four Grand Elders actually did the same. All five figures instantly disappeared into the thick fog down at the abyss.

Nie Han smiled at Weiqing before jumping down as well. Dreamwake grabbed Weiqing’s right arm as she said: “We’ll go down too, don’t be scared, I’ll protect you.”

Having said that, she gently pulled him forward. He felt a supporting power around him as both of them fell into the abyss.

The person they wanted to meet was at the bottom of this abyss? Although Zhou Weiqing was extremely startled, the thought instantly came to mind. At this point, the most important thing he

had to do was to fully act in accordance to the current cultivation stage he had shown, in order to avoid arousing any suspicion. This was his intention in his heart, but in reality, his actual actions were...

Chapter 245: See above (1)

“Ah——” A utterly shrill and desolate scream echoed around the abyss of XuanTian Citadel, alarming the entire building in a split second. As for the source of it, a certain someone in midair had come to his senses, clinging solidly to another certain someone beside him as if he were an enormous octopus.

Dreamwake had never thought that this young God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master Zhou, who had acted so coolly composed, self assured, and wise during the dinner, would actually react like this once she brought him off the cliff and into the abyss with her.

She'd been so startled by Zhou Weiqing's scream, enough so that when he suddenly bear-hugged her, she didn't have enough time to stop him. Before she knew it, the strong musk of a man filled her nostrils.

Dreamwake's cultivation was exceedingly high, but at that point, she almost failed to control her body, almost sending them both plunging into the abyss uncontrollably.

“What are you doing?!” Anxious and embarrassed, she tried to struggle free of Zhou Weiqing's grasp, but he had a death grip on her, and despite her best efforts she was unable to break free. Alas, that also had the unfortunate side effect of causing the speed of their descent to increase even more rapidly, forcing her to switch her attention to controlling the air currents to support their bodies to prevent them from free-falling to the bottom.

Holy shit yeah! Zhou Weiqing was grinning from ear to ear inwardly. He was currently hugging Dreamwake tightly and his face was also stuck tightly to her smooth and tender face. He could vaguely sense a certain energy in her body that seemed to be a great match for his own.

Domineering cliff faces surrounded them, and the light dimmed

continuously as they descended. Dreamwake really wanted to smack this wretched fellow to death, but she could clearly feel from his increasing heartbeat that Zhou Weiqing really seemed very afraid. Her heart softened and she sighed to herself. The guy was only Five Jewels, and although he had great talent in terms of creating Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, he was after all only at the Zun stage. It was normal to be afraid when jumping off a cliff. Things are already like this, let's handle it when we get to the ground.

Even though she was already twenty nine, Zhou Weiqing was the first man who'd been so physically close to her in her life.

After a span of around twenty breaths, when the surroundings had grown extremely dim, Zhou Weiqing could feel their momentum slow. They set foot on solid ground in the next moment.

For some reason, Zhou Weiqing felt very cold all over as soon as they landed. The temperature here was much colder than up there, but with his physique and constitution, he shouldn't be affected by temperature at all.

He raised his head subconsciously and met looks of indescribable strangeness.

All four Grand Elders were staring open mouthed, their jaws gaping so wide that one could shove a dragon's egg into their mouths. Even the XuanTian Palace Master was looking at Zhou Weiqing a bit stiffly. Nie Han's expression was rather odd, as if he wanted to laugh, but didn't dare to. The entire group was surrounding Zhou Weiqing and Dreamwake, staring at them.

Indeed, it must be very weird for a large, buff man to be clinging onto a beautiful woman, with the position and posture of an octopus. Not to mention that he was clinging onto Dreamwake, the head of the three God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters in the XuanTian Palace.

“Eh...” Zhou Weiqing made an embarrassed sound. Slowly, he began to put his legs down first, before slowly peeling himself off of Dreamwake. He could even feel Dreamwake’s full peaks slowly bouncing back into position as he leveraged himself off her. Of course, what also bounced to attention were his ‘important bits’.

Zhou Weiqing barely managed to hold his breath to force his face to start turning red, to look like he was blushing from embarrassment. Otherwise, with his usual thick skin, what did he care about being seen like that...

Dreamwake stood there blankly, staring off into space as her face flushed, her expression changing from red and white and back. The always elegant and noble Dreamwake was now breathing unsteadily, as if she would fly into a rage at any time.

“You—” Dreamwake’s right hand suddenly drew back as terrifying power exploded from her. The immense aura forced Zhou Weiqing back a few steps until he fell onto his buttocks on the ground.

So strong! Even though he was currently putting on a act, he could still clearly feel how strong Dreamwake was at this moment. She was vastly stronger than he’d imagined.

If this palm landed, there wouldn’t even be bone dust left of him if he really was a Five Jewel Master.

“Mercy!” The four Grand Elders walked forward and spoke urgently. Such a young genius as Zhou Weiqing was absolutely rare throughout the land.

But, as Zhou Weiqing observed coolly, he noticed another strange point. Although the Grand Elders pleaded for mercy, none of them were really moving to stop Dreamwake. Even the Palace Master was standing there without saying a word.

Dreamwake took a deep breath, her upraised hand shaking twice before she slowly put it down. Her beautiful eyes were locked onto

Zhou Weiqing and seemed like they would spit fire. At last, she just snorted angrily and stalked into the depths of the cavern.

The Palace Master shook his head with resignation and followed Dreamwake, seeming to transmit a message via voice-transference to her.

The four Grand Elders heaved a sigh of relief, then looked at Zhou Weiqing's utterly terrified look. They didn't know whether to laugh or cry, finally they could only just sigh before turning to follow the first two with a flourish of their robes.

It was Nie Han who walked over and pulled Zhou Weiqing up from the ground. He spoke in a low tone: "Weiqing, you're quite bold eh! You even dare to take advantage of Dreamwake."

Zhou Weiqing responded awkwardly: "I thought she was committing suicide with me. It was just too sudden; I've never jumped down from a cliff. It was too terrifying!"

Nie Han chuckled and sent him an understanding look. "You probably didn't know that Heavenly King powerhouses can already fly with their own power. Alright, now follow me. Later on, try not to set her off again. Otherwise, even the Palace Master won't be able to save you if she really loses her temper."

"Okay." Zhou Weiqing nodded honestly. He'd already taken advantage of her anyway.

Chapter 245: When a Man Hangs onto a Woman (2)

As Nie Han walked at the front, Zhou Weiqing first sniffed at his hand, smelling the faint fragrance on it before grinning as he followed behind. As he did so, he began to scan and observe his surroundings.

In this deep valley, the aura was rather dank and gloomy, even the surrounding rocks were black, as sunlight was unable to shine directly into the valley. The entire valley seemed void of vegetation, only surrounded by jagged rocks of grotesque shapes.

Zhou Weiqing discovered that in this valley, there were two Attributes which were the most vibrant and lively, both of which he was extremely familiar with. The sheer thickness of the two was almost equal to that of the Lustre Spatial Realm when the mother dragon Duo Si had been driven insane and was unleashing Fire Attribute energies without restraint. The two Attributes currently was that of the Darkness and Demonic attributes.

Indeed, there was actually a large amount of natural Demonic Attribute present. Although it was extremely mixed and impure, it was still such a rare sight, one that Zhou Weiqing had never witnessed before.

Although the terrain was extremely rough, it could not affect the powerhouses of the XuanTian Palace, and their speed of advancement was extremely quick. As they advanced deeper, following Dreamwake and the XuanTian Palace Master's lead, the Darkness and Demonic Attributes grew even stronger and livelier.

All of a sudden, Dreamwake stopped in her tracks, allowing the four Grand Elders to overtake her, returning to Zhou Weiqing's side. However, the usual faint smile on her face was no longer present, left with a stern and chilly manner.

“Err.... Dreamwake, I ... it was not on purpose.” Zhou Weiqing stammered an explanation in a low tone.

Dreamwake glared at him savagely before saying: “Follow me closely, do not stray five metres apart from me.

As she said that, a sudden familiar and warm aura appeared around her, enveloping both herself and Zhou Weiqing. As soon as this unique aura appeared, the Darkness and Demonic Attributes around them were actually blocked off, no longer reaching either of them.

The terrain abruptly flattened, and right in front, the Palace Master Dong Fang halted in his tracks. The four Grand Elders arranged in a single file behind him, while Dreamwake actually brought Zhou Weiqing to the front to stand beside Dong Fang.

Right in front where the terrain flattened out, there was a thick black mist covering the entire area. If they entered the mist, Zhou Weiqing did not doubt that they would not be able to even see their own fingers if they waved their hands in front of themselves.

As they reached this spot, both the Darkness and Demonic Attribute energies were clearly even stronger, and purer. However, they did not seem to be purer individually, instead somehow fused together while becoming purer.

Tenebrous Attribute? Zhou Weiqing’s heart jerked in sudden realisation, as he instantly thought about what Dreamwake had described to him previously. That important personage living here that they were here to visit should definitely be well versed in this Tenebrous Attribute. Of course, for all of the XuanTian Palace powerhouses to place such importance on him, one could just imagine what his cultivation level was at.

The XuanTian Palace Master looked at Dreamwake, who nodded at him. With a flip of her wrists, a large black crystal appeared in her hands, giving a stark visual contrast to her small tender white hands.

With a flick of her wrists, black light began shining brightly, and in a flash the crystal flew right into the black mist.

Zhou Weiqing turned to look at the four Grand Elders and Nie Han behind them, discovering that they all had a respectful expression on their faces.

Not much time had passed when abruptly, a fierce pressure exploded from the black mist, filled with a bitter cold, filling the entire area at once. The thick black mist billowed out furiously towards all of them.

“Do not move.” Dreamwake’s voice rang out in Zhou Weiqing’s ears. In the next moment, the thick black mist had already enveloped all eight of them. Only then did Zhou Weiqing understand why Dreamwake had asked him not to leave her side in the radius of five metres. In that radius, the aura around Dreamwake’s body actually isolated them from everything happening outside.

He had just treated her in such a fashion, but she was still concerned about his safety. Zhou Weiqing couldn’t help but feel the favourable impression in his heart towards her increase greatly. Of course, towards such a beauty, his favourable impression was always there...

The thick black mist spread all around the air, the entire surrounding was obscured even for their vision. Since he was in Dreamwake’s aura, Zhou Weiqing dared not extend his senses, though he was fully focused and wary. Vaguely, there seemed to be an aura influencing his bloodlines within the thick black mist, making him feel like his blood was boiling and ready to fight.

“What is it?” A low, melodic yet magnetic male voice rang out from all directions. The terrifying aura that even the XuanTian Palace powerhouses had to be careful of also disappeared at the same time.

The XuanTian Palace Master said respectfully: “Sir, along the

west coastal seas, a Terror Sea Dragon has recently been appearing in the area. It has caused much destruction to our ships, and seems to be specially targeting us, lingering around the area without moving back. After some discussion, we are thinking of taking the initiative to attack and deal with it, and we hope that you could aid us in that matter.”

“Terror Sea Dragon?” The resonant male voice had a hint of surprise. Falling into silence for a moment, he finally continued: “Do we know its specific circumstance?”

The Palace Master shook his head, saying: “We’re still not clear regarding that. The news was passed to us via Spatial Transmission. Alas, anyone who has actually seen it is already dead.”

An angry humph rang out. “A Terror Sea Dragon dares encroach upon the coast, it is looking for death!”

The XuanTian Palace Master asked tentatively: “[I’m afraid it is trying to provoke your awe and prestige](#). Alas, with just our strength alone, especially in the ocean, we are unable to deal with it. As such, we have come to ask for your help.”

“If you are able to lure it to shore just like the previous time, I can help you kill it. However, in the oceans, even I am unable to help.” After a slight pause, the rich male voice rang out once more.

Hearing its words, the expressions of all present changed. Dreamwake said rather recalcitrantly: “Is a Terror Sea Dragon that powerful? Didn’t our ancestors kill one before?”

The resonant male voice spoke solemnly: “That was because the slain one was a rash and impetuous one, actually daring to chase them onto land. As such, we managed to work together to kill it. Even so, we had paid a heavy price. In the world today, the Terror Sea Dragon is one of the most powerful of the Dragon Tribe still alive, its core bloodline is a legacy that is second only to that of the Dragon Emperor Bloodlines, an existence that can reach the Mid

Level Heavenly God Tier. More importantly, when it is In the oceans, it is able to borrow the powers of the oceans. Even if the Dragon Emperor fights against it in a one versus one fight in the oceans, it may not be match for the Terror Sea Dragon.”

Dreamwake’s brow furrowed as she said: “But... are we just going to allow it to run wild in along the coastal regions? That will have a terrible effect on us all. Even if we can’t kill it, we need to at least find a way to chase it away. Don’t tell me that even you are afraid of it?”

To Zhou Weiqing’s surprise, towards Dreamwake’s rather rude query, that powerhouse hiding in the mist did not grow angry. Instead, his voice grew gentler instead: “Naturally, I’m not afraid of it. However, if we were to fight in the oceans, I can definitely escape if the fight goes badly, but you all won’t be so lucky. With just my strength alone, it will be difficult to chase it away. If this Terror Sea Dragon is really here to target you all, then it must have some close connection with the one we killed a long time ago. In that case, it would not have dared come to cause trouble without some preparation. Furthermore, that also means it will be even more difficult to draw into onto shore.”

The Fire Elder said: “Sir, what if were to use the Spatial Teleportation Gem? With it as a backup assurance, we can all ensure we attack at full power. With so many of us gathered together at full power, under your leadership, we should be able to critically injure it.”

“Spatial Teleportation Gem...?” The resonant male voice paused for a moment. “That is not a bad idea indeed. However, the number of attackers cannot be a lot. The Spatial Teleportation Gem’s power is currently a far cry from its previous self, and it can at most be used three more times. More importantly, each time it can only sustain the teleporting of ten life forms or less. If we are only injuring the Terror Sea Dragon, it is not worth using it. But... if we can kill it, then it will be worthwhile. Alright.. Fine... even if

I have to risk sustaining severe injuries, I will accompany you all. However, if we succeed in killing the Terror Sea Dragon, I want its Heavenly Core to help me recover. If I can drain its Heavenly Core, I will have the chance to enter the Mid Level Heavenly God Stage, or perhaps even higher.”

Dreamwake’s brow furrowed as she said: “We can’t give you the entire thing, just a portion.”

“Little girl, you are being too greedy.” The resonant male voice was clearly a little unhappy, yet even in that dissatisfaction, Zhou Weiqing could still sense some feelings of doting fondness.

Abruptly, the black mist in the front began to part. Although the surroundings were still dark, they could now vaguely see some shapes within.

Two strange, glowing balls appeared, giving forth a thick aura of the Tenebrous Attribute, shining brightly in the thick darkness.

What was that?! Zhou Weiqing’s heart skipped a beat as he looked at it. Under the strange, demonic shining red light, he quickly saw the vague figure of a massive body stand up several hundred metres away.

Black scales, just like piece after piece of black crystals inlaid on the body. The massive body, it was at least forty metres long. Giant wings spread apart slowly as it slowly stood up, and at last Zhou Weiqing saw that the strange red light was actually its eyes.

It was a Dragon... it was actually a huge Dragon!

In that instant, Zhou Weiqing felt as if his throat had been gripped tightly by an invisible hand. He was actually looking at a dragon, and from the looks of things as well as the behavior of the XuanTian Palace powerhouses, he could clearly see that this massive dragon was definitely an absolute powerhouse that guarded the XuanTian Palace.

The pitch black scales, that thick aura of Tenebrous Attribute.

This was clearly a Tenebrous Demon Dragon, a powerful Low Level God Tier Dragon.

The XuanTian Palace truly lived up to its name as the only Great Saint Land on the entire XuanTian Continent! It actually had a Tenebrous Demon Dragon, such a powerful Heavenly God Stage presence, living in the heart of headquarters, guarding them. Added on to the XuanTian Palace's own might and resources, even if the five Great Saint Lands of the Boundless Mainland joined forces to cross the oceans to invade the XuanTian Continent, they might not come up on top in the end.

Only now did Zhou Weiqing finally understand why the five Great Saint Lands of the Boundless Mainland would actually sign the non-aggression pact. The XuanTian Palace definitely had the weight behind it to deserve such respect.

At the same time, he felt a chill run down his spine as a light sheen of cold sweat began to form around his body. Luckily, he had not tried anything during his time here. Perhaps, in front of a Heavenly Emperor, he would still have the chance to escape. However, if he were to face a Heavenly God Tier powerhouse, he would not even have the qualification to attempt running, let alone succeeding.

Although the Tenebrous Demon Dragon did not specifically release its aura, just the presence of it standing there had a massive pressure upon all of them. Zhou Weiqing abruptly discovered the bloodline in his body was boiling and raging, as if in severe unrest, causing his entire body to be in a state of excitement and stimulation.

“Ehh?” All of a sudden, the huge red orbs that were the dragon's eyes, looking like large lanterns, turned to focus on him...

He is using the honorary term here to address

Chapter 246: Tenebrous Demon Dragon's Uncertainty (1)

The sudden irascible restlessness of his bloodlines gave Zhou Weiqing a big surprise, and he quickly circulated his Saint Energy to suppress it. It was even more startling when the Tenebrous Demon Dragon gave that curious sound, causing his heart to jump and grip.

With his current situation, stuck in this place with all of the top powerhouses of the XuanTian Palace, including this Heavenly God Tier Tenebrous Demon Dragon... as soon as he came under suspicion, he would not even have a chance to escape. That would be a feat that surpassed the difficulty of climbing up the heavens. Furthermore, even if he could escape, what would happen to Shanguan Bing'er, stuck in the XuanTian Citadel as she was?

Luckily, the Tenebrous Demon Dragon only gave out the curious 'Ehh', but did not continue with any actions.

"Who is this young man? A new core disciple that you have groomed? From his body, it is as if I can sense a familiar and affectionate aura." The Tenebrous Demon Dragon said curiously.

Hearing those words, Zhou Weiqing heaved a sigh of relief inwardly. He had already prepared his excuses regarding that; attempting to run was not realistic at all, and even if he could, he still had his mission to consider. Even if his cultivation level was discovered, he still had a chance to talk his way out of things. After all, he was from another continent totally, and in this XuanTian Continent, no one could actually find any evidence that he had any plots against the XuanTian Palace.

Dreamwake looked at Zhou Weiqing in surprise, as she couldn't help but repeat the words: "Familiar and affectionate aura? Could you have sensed wrongly? He is not a new disciple that we have groomed. After all, those who are able to come here into your

presence are naturally only the most upper echelons of the XuanTian Palace. Let me introduce you, this young man is Zhou Weiqing, he is a Consecrate rank who has newly joined the XuanTian Palace as a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master.”

“God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master?! A six-Jeweled God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master?!” Indeed, under the cover of the Saint Energy, not even this Heavenly God Tier Tenebrous Demon Dragon was able to discover Zhou Weiqing’s true cultivation level.

Dreamwake looked at Zhou Weiqing with much surprise: “You have broken through?”

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “Heh, I’ve only just entered the six-Jeweled stage not long ago.” He had slightly raised his ‘cover’ cultivation stage, in order to better hide his true strength. This was especially so because he knew they might be going after the Terror Sea Dragon, and thus he had carefully adjusted his display of aura and power.

Dreamwake continued looking at him with some surprise before finally nodding to the Tenebrous Demon Dragon, saying: “He used his own power to prove that he truly is a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master. Consecrated Zhou’s spiritual energy is extremely outstanding, far beyond anyone of his level... almost reaching that of a Heavenly God Tier powerhouse. Furthermore, his Elemental Jewels include the Wind, Spatial and Time Attributes. These three are the perfect combination for a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, especially with a powerful Skill of the Time Attribute to help control the creation of God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scrolls, allowing him to reverse time in a very short period, preventing himself from making any mistakes. As such, he is barely able to create a true God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scroll, and we have deemed him to be a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master. Consecrated Zhou is barely twenty years of age, and his future is extremely promising and

limitless.”

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon did not let Zhou Weiqing because of Dreamwake’s words. Looking him once over with his strange red eyes, he said: “Young man, can you tell me... what is that strangely familiar and comforting feeling you give me... where does it come from?”

Although he was still under Dreamwake’s protection, in that moment, under the dragon’s fixed stare, Zhou Weiqing could still sense an unparalleled pressure pushing down upon him. This was a pressure that came from the spirit itself.

It looks like if he didn’t reveal some secrets this time, it would not be possible to get past this stage.

Zhou Weiqing said respectfully: “Zhou Weiqing greets Senior. I believe I know why you can sense a familiar and comforting feeling from me. Perhaps, that is because my Elemental Jewel Attributes are in sync with yours.”

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon said: “In sync with mine? My Attribute is the purest of the Tenebrous Attribute, but yours is the Wind, Time and Spatial Attributes... how could it be the same or be in sync?”

Zhou Weiqing grinned. Whenever he faced such massive pressure, that was the time his brain was the clearest, his finest moments. He also had a unique quality about him, that was he would never back down from fear. In the past, when he was facing the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord, it was also the same, similar to this time. Long before he had even become a Heavenly Jewel Master, Mu En had taught him that the more danger you were in, the calmer you had to be. The more confidence and calmness you showed, the safer you would be.

“Senior, Consecrated Dreamwake only mentioned a portion of my Elemental Jewel Attributes. Originally, this is my greatest secret, but in front of Senior, I guess it is impossible to hide this

secret any longer. This junior has a unique cultivation technique, I would like to invite Senior to please advice me.”

As he said that, he took a grand step forward, actually moving out of Dreamwake’s protection.

As soon as he left Dreamwake’s protective aura, Zhou Weiqing instantly felt the pressure on him increase dramatically, almost causing him to be unable to breathe. However, he still stood upright, back straightened, forcefully accepting the pressure.

Dreamwake’s expression was not too good at this point, and her gaze at Zhou Weiqing was slightly angered. Wasn’t this rascal so cowardly that he had to hug her because they jumped off the cliff? Yet, facing a Heavenly God Tier powerhouse like the Tenebrous Demon Dragon, he could actually dare to walk out of her protective aura in such a calm and unhurried manner... would he actually be afraid of jumping off a cliff? This... this naughty rascal!

If not for it being such a unique circumstance now, perhaps Dreamwake would have given him a tight slap right now. However, she couldn’t help but admit that when Zhou Weiqing walked out of her protective aura with his head held high, to face the Tenebrous Demon Dragon alone, it was very manly indeed!

Releasing his Heavenly Jewels, six sets appeared on each wrist. When the Alexandrite Cat’s Eye Elemental Jewels appeared around his left wrist, the Tenebrous Demon Dragon’s eyes clearly narrowed.

With a wave of his left hand, the six Alexandrite Elemental Jewels rose into the air. In that instant, they all changed colours instantly.

Wind, Lightning, Darkness, Spatial, Time, Demonic.

The most shocking thing to all those present was naturally the fully grey Demonic Attribute that accompanied the other Saint Attribute, Time.

With a flourish of both hands, two triangular formations seemed to form naturally, and under the shocked gazes of the onlookers, his six Elemental Jewels began to slowly join together.

WENG

A thick Heavenly Energy reverberation, and in the midst of that, a bright light began to shine. The six different lights rose up into the skies, naturally forming a shield of light, enveloping Zhou Weiqing's body. In that instant, the pressure he was enduring clearly dropped. As Zhou Weiqing's hands swung down once more, the now six-sided star began to descend, stopping beneath his feet. The six lights began to rise once more, and in the pitch black darkness of the zone, they just seemed so brilliant and eye catching.

“This is...”

Even though all present were far superior in terms of cultivation level, when they saw the appearance of the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, they were all caught by surprise, unable to restrain the looks of shock and wonder on their faces.

The higher one's cultivation was, the more they could see in the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, to notice how truly unique it was, especially the high powered self resonance, enabling the six Attributes to be balanced so perfectly in unison. This truly toppled everything they knew about how Elemental Jewels could work. Furthermore... this was six Attributes!!

Zhou Weiqing's eyes lit up, and in the next instant, his entire body was surrounded by six different lights.

Wind Blade, Lightning Pearl, Spatial Compression Bullets, Time Delay, Ball of Corrosion and the Demonic Pearl of the Demonic Attribute.

These were all the most basic Skills of all the six Attributes, but to unleash six different skills from six different attributes

simultaneously... especially in an instant-cast; that was a totally different meaning. All of them could easily see that such a talented Heavenly Jewel Master like Zhou Weiqing would never Store such low level Skills. Yet, he was able to unleash them... what did that mean?

Right at that moment, Zhou Weiqing spoke, surrounded by the six low level Skills as he was.

“My six Attributes are the Wind, Lightning, Darkness, Spatial, Time and Demonic Attributes. I believe that the reason why Senior feels such familiarity and closeness to me is because I have both the Darkness and Demonic Attributes, which would form a connection to Senior’s Tenebrous Attribute.”

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon seemed to be extremely interested in Zhou Weiqing. Withdrawing its pressure to the lowest, it lowered its head to look directly at him, saying: “Then... what is this self-resonant Skill you are using?”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “This is the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation that I created. When I learned I had six Elemental Attributes, I had been thinking all along, how I could use the power of my six attributes and unleash them to maximum effect. As such, I went through various different experiments, trying out many things. At last, not long ago, when I broke through the six-Jeweled stage, through some coincidence and luck, I created this formation. The profound secret behind this Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation is in imitation and guiding. It is able to guide the atmospheric energies in the air to greatly increase my recovery speed of Heavenly Energy, allowing my fighting capabilities to be greatly extended and sustained. Furthermore, with this Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, I am able to imitate any Skills of my attributes which are at six-star rated and below. However, I have only just created it, so I will still need a lot more time to properly work it out and use it properly. However, I believe that as my cultivation increases, its power will

only improve.

Self-creation? As soon as he spoke those words, Zhou Weiqing could clearly hear loud sounds of deep breaths being drawn.

Dreamwake looked at Zhou Weiqing strangely. Originally, they had all thought that Zhou Weiqing was just extremely talented in the Consolidating Equipment Master arts. Now, it looked like it was not just in this matter, but even in terms of cultivating, he was also an absolute genius level talent! Six Attribute Elemental Jewels... and this Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation of his? Furthermore, he was barely over twenty years old... who dared to say that he wouldn't become a top powerhouse in the future?

“Hmm, it really is the Demonic Attribute. It has been years since I have seen such a pure Demonic Attribute. Very good, it looks like the future of the XuanTian Palace is truly bright indeed. Who knows, you might even reach the same level as I am now. Alas, you are still too young now, otherwise you could be of great help against the Terror Sea Dragon this time.”

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon did not hide its approval of Zhou Weiqing, nodding repeatedly. His Tenebrous Attribute was even slightly inferior to Zhou Weiqing's Demonic Attribute, and sensing the Demonic Aura from his Heavenly Energy reverberations, his appreciation for this young human grew rapidly.

Zhou Weiqing said respectfully: “Although this junior's cultivation is still low, since I have already joined the XuanTian Palace, I consider myself a part of it. I wish to join Senior and the other XuanTian Palace powerhouses to fight against our enemies.”

Dreamwake furrowed her brow, saying: “Are you looking for death?”

Chapter 246: Tenebrous Demon Dragon's Uncertainty (2)

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly, saying: “It is not necessarily looking for death. For me to have achieved what I have today, I have experienced many dangers in my life, but I am still alive now. I think that if I am able to witness Senior Tenebrous Demon Dragon killing the Terror Sea Dragon, it will be of great help to my future cultivation.”

This was truly patting the horse's ass, oh, no, [it should be patting the dragon's ass](#). This was truly an art-form in its own right, and Zhou Weiqing had done so subtly, without leaving any trace. Added on to the fact that the Tenebrous Demon Dragon already approved of him, it nodded repeatedly and said: “With this Dragon's cultivation, although I may not be able to win the Terror Sea Dragon in a one versus one fight, it should not be a problem to protect one person. Since you wish to go, then go ahead. It will definitely be a great help to your future. If we can succeed this time, I will allow you to Store a Skill from me. Although it would be a waste to Store it for your Demonic Attribute, but it will be extremely good to add to your Darkness Attribute.”

“Many thanks, Senior.” Zhou Weiqing said delightedly. This was not acting at all; to be able to Store a Skill from a Heavenly God Tier Heavenly Beast, that would definitely be a great help to him.

Dreamwake stared at Zhou Weiqing in front of her dazedly, and she couldn't help but think to herself. This fellow doesn't seem to be as arrogant as he did before! However, his talent was truly at a point that made her speechless. Even with her own background and cultivation, she was unable to stop herself from being a little jealous.

The XuanTian Palace Master said: “Since Senior is willing to go along, then we should properly plan our next step. We must ensure

that we guarantee absolute success.”

“En. The rest of you can return first. Dong Fang, you and Dreamwake stay.” The Tenebrous Demon Dragon said solemnly.

Zhou Weiqing glanced reluctantly at Dreamwake before turning to leave with the four Grand Elders and Nie Han. Originally, he had thought of taking advantage of her again on the return trip. With the revealing of his six Attributes and skills earlier, he believed that even with Dreamwake’s high position in the XuanTian Palace, she wouldn’t dare to finish him easily. He could still remember the softness in his arms earlier. Her body seemed so soft and flexible, if he could just... heh heh...

Of course, he was just thinking it only. That was what he told himself.

This time, it was Nie Han who brought Zhou Weiqing to fly back up. As soon as they returned to the XuanTian Citadel, Nie Han gave him a big thumbs up, before they returned to their respective rooms.

When Zhou Weiqing returned to his room, Shangguan Bing’er was still cultivating as usual. Hearing his return, she opened her eyes.

“What happened?” Shangguan Bing’er asked via voice-transference.

Zhou Weiqing also replied with the entire story, similarly with voice-transference.

Hearing that they had finally heard about the whereabouts of the Spatial Teleportation Gem, Shangguan Bing’er was overjoyed. Although she had never thought of herself as part of the Heaven’s Expanse Palace, she was still happy to be able to protect the Heavenly Jewel Island and the ZhongTian City. It was after all a major issue.

“Little Fatty, what are you preparing to do? Although the Spatial

Teleportation Gem might appear then, but there will also be just too many powerhouses around at that time. It will not be easy to take action.”

Zhou Weiqing nodded silently before saying solemnly: “No matter what, I have to give it a try. Perhaps, this is our best chance, and may be our only chance. From the words and manner of speaking of that Tenebrous Demon Dragon, the Terror Sea Dragon is not so easily taken care of. At that time, perhaps it might end up with both sides sustaining great losses. If that happens, my chance will come. The Tenebrous Demon Dragon will definitely be in the thick of battle, and should not be able to break away to deal with me. As for the others, as long as I am determined to flee, even a Heavenly Emperor powerhouse might not be able to catch up. If I succeed in gaining the Gem, then I will use the Lustre Speech Gem to inform you. You bring the Sea Emperor Shuttle

Shangguan Bing'er's expression was worried as she said: “But... won't it be too risky and dangerous?”

Zhou Weiqing replied confidently: “Do not worry. Without absolute confidence, I will not easily take action. Furthermore, they are currently not clear about my true power. I have some level of confidence. On the other hand, I am most worried about you. If I do not guess wrongly, as soon as we leave, you will definitely be left here. With a ‘hostage’ here, only then can they be totally confident and relaxed about me. After all, we are still new. As such, as soon as we make a move, and there is a chance that shows itself, you should leave this place as soon as you can. At that point, there should only be some Heavenly Kings left to guard this place, and with the Wings of the Wind God, escaping should not be a big problem.”

Shangguan Bing'er nodded, saying: “I guess we have no other choice. You do not need to worry about me. If... just in case...”

As she spoke those words, before she could continue, Zhou Weiqing held her in his arms, kissing her heavily. “Silly girl, there

is no in case. Compared to your safety, the Spatial Teleportation Gem is nothing.”

As he said that, he had already lifted her up. In a flash, they appeared in his favourite place once more, the bed...

...

In the following period of time, the atmosphere in the entire XuanTian Palace had obviously grown rather nervous. Everyone seemed to be [wildly beating gongs and drums in preparation](#) for the upcoming fight, but there was no rush to take action. It was obvious that this time the XuanTian Palace wanted everything prepared perfectly, after all they only had the one chance at success. As for what exactly they were preparing, Zhou Weiqing was not too clear.

The nervous atmosphere did not affect Zhou Weiqing at all. His status in the XuanTian Palace was extremely high and respected, as a Consecrated God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master. Naturally, he would not need to join in the preparation works.

As such, both Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er spent the days cultivating with all their might. In such a place with such rich and pure atmospheric energies, it was a breeze to cultivate, gaining twice the results with half the effort. Zhou Weiqing's cultivation rose steadily, and though the speed was no match for when he was cultivating the Immortal Deity Technique, he could still sense the steady increase which would definitely lead to breakthrough in the future. Furthermore, he still needed to familiarize himself with the usage of the Heavenly Dao Energy.

...

“Weiqing, are you in?” A knocking sound rang from the door as Dreamwake's gentle voice came from outside.

Ever since they had met the Tenebrous Demon Dragon a few days ago, Zhou Weiqing had not seen Dreamwake since. Originally, he

thought she was angry with him, but currently from her tone, he could not hear any of that.

Shangguan Bing'er walked to open the door, greeting: "Consecrated Dreamwake, please enter."

Dreamwake smiled as she shook her head, saying: "I won't be entering now. We are about to go against the Tenebrous Demon Dragon soon, and I am here to invite Weiqing to come discuss our plans with the others."

At this point, Zhou Weiqing also walked over. He did not know why but when he saw the gentle smile on Dreamwake's face, he suddenly felt a chill run down his spine.

"Is it necessary for me to be there for the strategy discussion? Anyway, I am just there to watch." Zhou Weiqing scratched his head awkwardly.

Dreamwake laughed heartily, saying: "How could you say that? In our eyes, you are a genius unparalleled in history, and will remain unmatched in the future. Furthermore, as you said, you are going there to learn and experience, so this strategy meeting will be of good use to you too. Come on." As she said that, she turned to leave.

Zhou Weiqing gave Shangguan Bing'er an assuring glance before following behind Dreamwake.

Dreamwake walked at the front, not speaking to him at all. Very quickly, both of them arrived at the teleportation formation of the sixth storey.

Zhou Weiqing thought to himself: Could I have guessed wrongly? Are we really going to the Heavenly Hall to have a meeting?

Dreamwake continued her silence, and before Zhou Weiqing could think further, the twisting light of being warped flashed, and their figures vanished instantly.

However, very quickly, Zhou Weiqing realised something was

wrong. When they reappeared once more, it was not in the Heavenly Hall like the previous time. Instead, it was in a broad open space.

The floor seemed to be paved with asphalt, but there seemed to be a strange illusory quality to the entire area, though it seemed so vast that even Zhou Weiqing could not see an end.

No good! I've been tricked! Zhou Weiqing's heart gripped. Towards Dreamwake's true power, he did not have a good grasp. Furthermore, in this new spatial zone, he did not know how to leave. If any problems arose, that would be extremely troublesome.

Having reached her destination, the smile on Dreamwake's face had vanished, her gaze turning cold.

"Zhou Weiqing, die!" An abrupt pressure, as massive as a mountain smashing down upon him, burst forth from Dreamwake's body, accompanying her right palm striking forward, a thick Heavenly Energy reverberation descending from the skies like a massive palm down towards his head.

Oh crap, has she discovered my identity? This was the first notion in Zhou Weiqing's heart. This palm strike from Dreamwake was clearly far beyond what a six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master could withstand.

A silver flash of light, as Zhou Weiqing activated his Blink Skill, appearing more than a dozen metres away from his original position. In a massive explosion, the place he had been standing at a split second ago exploded with a loud bang, the resulting shock waves actually causing him to fly back further.

"Dreamwake, what are you doing? Are you crazy?!" Zhou Weiqing yelled in shock and fury. The acting was perfect, voice, tone and even the expression on his face. At the same time, his mind and heart was spinning like crazy as he tried to think of a solution as quickly as possible.

The first thing he needed to judge was whether or not Dreamwake really knew about his identity. If that was the case, then this was a fight he could not avoid. The only thing he could do then was to capture Dreamwake; that would be his only ticket out of the entire situation. Furthermore, Bing'er was still in the XuanTian Citadel!

Dreamwake's first attack had failed, but she instantly launched a second one. A thick white Heavenly Energy coalesced itself into a longsword in midair, the tip of the sword lancing towards Zhou Weiqing's chest in a flash of white light.

Taking a deep breath, Zhou Weiqing had made a resolute decision instantly. Shouting angrily: "Come kill me if you want!" He actually stood there, not even attempting to dodge any further.

The white sword glare reached his chest instantly. In that moment, Zhou Weiqing's heart had risen up to his throat. Even if he did not make any attempt to dodge or block it, he had the confidence that this sword strike would not kill him outright, or even critically injure him. However, if that really happened, then it meant his worst fears had come true, and Dreamwake had discovered his identity and was adamant on killing him. This would greatly affect his entire plan. As such, this could be said to be one last key bet that would influence his entire quest to the XuanTian Continent.

In a flash of light, the sword abruptly stopped just half chi away from his chest, the keen sword qi even causing goosebumps to appear on his chest area. The Immortal Deity Shield was already gathered at his skin level; if not for Zhou Weiqing suppressing it with his Saint Energy, it would have already erupted out to protect him automatically.

Patting the horse's ass is the literal translation for flattery, just like 'licking one's boots' in english. TJSS is making a pun here on that

intense publicity campaign in preparation

Chapter 246: Tenebrous Demon Dragon's Uncertainty (3)

“Why aren’t you dodging anymore?” Dreamwake said coldly.

Zhou Weiqing said angrily: “You are at least at the Heavenly King stage or higher. Being able to dodge once is already a miracle, but can I keep dodging? Furthermore, this is in a Spatial area of your choosing... no matter what, the final result is death, right? In that case, I might as well die in a straightforward fashion instead of wasting time. Come on then, kill me.”

Closing his eyes with his head held high, hands behind his back, Zhou Weiqing looked the picture of a heroic martyr accepting his death bravely.

Dreamwake said coldly: “Don’t you want to know why I wish to kill you?”

Naturally, Zhou Weiqing would not fall for such a tactic. His eyes remained close as he retorted: “Dying is dying, what is the point of knowing all that? Hurry up, make it quick and painless.”

Suddenly, the stabbing pain on his skin vanished. Zhou Weiqing opened his eyes once more, only to see that the sword-light in front of him had vanished without a trace.

Dreamwake stared at him hatefully. “Zhou Weiqing, you bastard. You dared to molest me! Even if I can’t kill you, I’ll definitely make you pay a price for what you did. Don’t say I gave you no chance at all. I’ll only use the six-Jeweled cultivation level to fight you. If you can beat me, I’ll send you out of this place. Otherwise, I really will kill you.”

Zhou Weiqing actually calmed down when he saw that angry look in her eyes. As he had thought, it was because of what had happened the other day. She hadn’t discovered his true identity after all. It made sense! He didn’t make any mistakes at all; how

could she have discovered who he was?

“Then what if I win?” Zhou Weiqing’s eyes spun craftily as he said this.

Dreamwake said coldly, “If you win, then we’ll just forget about what happened the other day.”

Zhou Weiqing snorted. “If you only use the six-Jeweled cultivation stage, you probably won’t be a match for me. However... who can guarantee that you won’t cheat? Your cultivation stage vastly surpasses mine, after all.”

Dreamwake was enraged. “What type of a person do you think I am? I’ve never gone back on my words before!”

Zhou Weiqing didn’t hesitate at all. “Swear an oath! If you cheat and use more than a six-Jeweled cultivation base, you have to spend a night with me.”

“You...!” Dreamwake was so enraged she nearly vomited blood. “You bastard, you shameless bastard! I completely misjudged you.”

Zhou Weiqing shrugged. “And how am I shameless? You want my life. All I’m asking for is your body. Actually, come to think of it, it feels like you are the one taking advantage of me! And besides, you are the one who instigated this fight. If you aren’t willing to swear an oath, that’s proof that you are already planning on cheating.”

“Fine! I’ll swear the oath! Zhou Weiqing, I’m definitely going to kill you today. This ‘bet’ is nothing more than me giving myself an excuse to do just that. I, Dreamwake, swear that if I use more than the six-Jeweled cultivation stage in my upcoming duel against Zhou Weiqing, then... then...” She repeated the word ‘then’ twice, her face turning red. She finally gritted her teeth and spat it out: “Then I’ll spend a night with him.”

Zhou Weiqing roared with laughter. “Come on, then! Don’t regret what you just said.” While speaking, he leapt off the ground

and retreated backwards while a dark-gold aura suddenly emanated from his body.

Even though Dreamwake had already guessed that he definitely had access to a God Tier Consolidated Equipment set, when she actually saw those six pieces of dark-gold light flicker she couldn't help but narrow her eyes. But of course, she didn't know that Zhou Weiqing actually had a total of seven pieces of Consolidated Equipment, with the final piece being the Overlord's Bow.

The Dual Legendary Hammers appeared within Zhou Weiqing's hands. Zhou Weiqing felt as though his entire body was filled with absolutely terrifying power. The two hammers, the Yin-Yang Giant Spirit Palms, the breastplate with pauldrons, and the layered war kilt which protected his waist came together to form the six pieces of his Hate Ground No Handle set. Powerful dark-golden light gleamed from him, causing his entire body emanate an aura of weighty power.

Dreamwake let out a cold snort as six beams of dark-golden light suddenly shone from her body as well. The aura, however, was completely different from the mighty, overbearing aura of Zhou Weiqing's 'Hate Ground No Handle' set. Her Legendary Set was more like a set of scales.

The breastplate was the first to appear, and at its center was a series of outwards-protruding diamonds, with a dark-red diamond-shaped rune imprinted at the middle. The pauldrons were long and sleek, stylized to have draconic heads appear to each side which completely covered her fragrant shoulders. The scaled armor stretched to cover her arms all the way to her hands, which now appeared like a pair of sharp draconic claws. Not just that – the armor also stretched down her flank to cover both her legs as well.

It could be said that aside from her head, Dreamwake's entire body had been covered by this Legendary Set.

Zhou Weiqing stared wide-eyed. How was this possible? This was

just a six-piece set of God Tier Consolidated Equipment. How could it cover her entire body? He also had six pieces, but his legs remained uncovered. Unless... unless...

Dreamwake slowly lifted her right hand up. Zhou Weiqing's heart instantly clenched. Her Jewels were actually the same as Shangguan Fei'er's; they were Dual Physical Jewels! They granted flexibility and strength. No wonder her Legendary Set was able to cover such a wide area! Even though she only had six pieces, it covered her entire body. If she managed to get all ten pieces of her Legendary Set, then... the seventh piece would be the helmet, but what would the rest be? All weapons? But her draconic claws were already weapons!

Dual Physical Jewels and Alexandrite Cat's Eyes. This girl's innate gifts were every bit as amazing as his own! No wonder she was so confident that she could defeat him even if she limited herself to the six-Jeweled stage.

However... when Zhou Weiqing saw how powerful she was, his competitiveness was stimulated. Both of them were limiting themselves to the six-Jeweled stage. Was he really supposed to be inferior to her?

He slammed his Dual Hammers together in front of him, producing a deafening explosion as the light of the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation spread out, transforming into a six-pointed star that appeared beneath his feet.

Dreamwake narrowed her eyes, but her movements didn't slow down. She didn't use any techniques at all, simply shooting forward lightning-fast to pounce towards Zhou Weiqing with explosive speed and strength, revealing the power contained in her body.

Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but feel his heart shudder when he thought back to how he had once held his arm around her soft, almost boneless waist. So her gentle, supple body actually was

capable of unleashing such terrifying levels of strength?

However, Zhou Weiqing didn't let his thoughts slow down his movements. He knew that if he lost this battle, even if the enraged Dreamwake didn't kill him, she'd tear him to shreds.

Faced with Dreamwake's attack, Zhou Weiqing took a step forwards with his left foot, sweeping upwards with his Dual Hammers while roaring, "Open!"

His Dual Legendary Hammers were absolutely enormous. When Zhou Weiqing made this movement, his hammers struck in succession in a way which completely blocked and sealed off Dreamwake's attack zone.

Dreamwake's draconic claws almost instantly fell upon the two enormous hammer-heads of the Dual Legendary Hammers.

"Eeeeeek?!" A surprised squawk rang out as her body almost instantly begun to spin in midair. She wasn't doing this on purpose; it had happened because of the tremendous power the Dual Hammers had applied to her.

Dreamwake had originally simply wanted to test Zhou Weiqing's power. Although she was merely using the six-Jeweled cultivation level, that wasn't factoring in her physical strength and might. The fact that she had dual Physical Jewels had given her tremendous confidence in her physical strength. She felt that she didn't need to use any techniques at all; Zhou Weiqing definitely wouldn't be her match! However, when she had reached out with her draconic claws towards Zhou Weiqing's hammers, something completely unexpected had happened.

The laughing-face hammer had avoided her full-strength claw attack, while the crying-face hammer had unleashed a terrifying amount of power which completely surpassed her expectations. One side had been 'empty', while the other side had been 'real'. This disparity in force and momentum sent Dreamwake's body spinning uncontrollably through the air.

How could Zhou Weiqing give up such a fine opportunity? He lashed out with his right leg like a whip, sending it sweeping towards Dreamwake. At the same time, he activated his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, unleashing a hundred Lightning Pearls without any notice at all and sending them towards the path which the still-spinning Dreamwake was sure to take as she descended. His opponent was a true Heavenly King; there was no way Zhou Weiqing could hold back against her! Now that he was lucky enough to seize the initiative, he was going to follow his normal combat style and press the assault until he won.

However, right at this moment, Dreamwake revealed her own formidable skills. She almost instantly seized control over her body, managing to curl into a ball as she flew through the air while kicking out with her leg. Her kick intersected with Zhou Weiqing's own kick, and as this happened a layer of blue light suddenly burst out of her body. The light was extremely soft and gentle. It didn't go 'block' the Lightning Pearls, but instead 'covered' them and then tossed them far away. In doing so, it completely severed the connection between them and Zhou Weiqing.

What powerful control! Zhou Weiqing was secretly impressed. Right at this moment, their two legs clashed viciously against each other.

BOOM! An explosion rang out, and it was still Dreamwake who was the worse for the wear. Her curled-up body was kicked over thirty meters away by Zhou Weiqing, and when she landed she had to stumble seven or eight steps back before stabilizing herself.

Dreamwake stared at Zhou Weiqing, a stunned look on her face. Naturally, she couldn't accept this outcome. Her Physical Jewels included the strength attribute, and she had dual Physical Jewels! By all rights, she should be stronger than Zhou Weiqing, especially with her legs being covered by her Legendary Set while Zhou Weiqing's right leg was unprotected. And yet, she had actually lost this test of strength. Her own right leg actually felt numb. How

could she not be shocked?

When Zhou Weiqing saw that stunned look on her face, he knew what had her puzzled. He chuckled: “Dreamwake, have you forgotten my background? I come from the Legacy of Strength. The word ‘strength’ isn’t just for show! I’ll be honest and tell you the truth – my Legendary Set is named ‘Hate Ground No Handle’ and focuses exclusively on increasing strength. Each additional piece will cause my power to double. Six pieces means that I am now sixty-four times stronger! Even in a normal fight with you using Heavenly King-level strength, I still wouldn’t fear you in a test of pure strength, to say nothing of right now with you having restrained your own cultivation level.”

But of course, this was also with Zhou Weiqing suppressing his own cultivation level. Otherwise, if he poured his Saint Energy into his real strength, he would dare to fight even Heavenly Emperor powerhouses in a head-on collision.

Chapter 247 – Battling Dreamwake (1)

“Hate Ground No Handle? The Hate Ground No Handle set... what an impressive Legacy of Strength!” Dreamwake’s eyes lit up. She didn’t display any hint of anger at having suffered a loss just now; instead, her beautiful eyes turned cold and calm.

A calm opponent was the most terrifying of all. Zhou Weiqing was quite wary of her ‘transformation’ and thus said probingly, “Why don’t we just let it end here? Let’s consider it a draw?”

Dreamwake’s reply was hard enough to sever iron and chop nails: “In. Your. Dreams.”

As soon as her words came out, Dreamwake once more charged forwards. This time, she was even faster! She appeared before Zhou Weiqing with a flicker, then suddenly vanished before Zhou Weiqing even had the chance to lift up his two Dual Legendary Hammers.

Spatial Shuttle!

The Spatial Attribute was absolutely necessary for a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master. Dreamwake naturally had access to techniques like Spatial Shuttle.

Zhou Weiqing didn’t dare to hesitate at all. As soon as Dreamwake vanished before him, he himself used Spatial Shuttle as well. Two streaks of silver light flashed past each other in quick succession, with Dreamwake’s dragon-claw attack sweeping through Zhou Weiqing’s previous position just a moment after he vanished, tearing through the shadowy blur left behind by his Spatial Shuttle.

As soon as Zhou Weiqing reappeared, he lifted up his dual hammers and spun them around himself. This decision was the correct one, because as soon as he appeared Dreamwake had already moved right next to him. She didn’t really have many

options for dealing with the overwhelmingly superior power of the Dual Legendary Hammers, and so she bent over backwards to dodge like a reverse bow. It looked as though she didn't have any bones in her body! As she did this, she delivered a flying kick with her right foot. This kick came in right within the empty space between the two hammers and was aimed at Zhou Weiqing's chest.

A thunderous explosion rang out, followed by Zhou Weiqing staggering three steps backwards. Dreamwake wasn't any better off, as she was sent flying backwards as well.

By now, Dreamwake had a thorough understanding of the tremendous power the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation possessed. As her kick had landed against Zhou Weiqing's chest, dozens of Lightning Pearls had gathered across his chest. Her kick had landed atop those Lightning Pearls, causing a tremendous explosion which had blasted her and Zhou Weiqing apart. Her kick, which should have guaranteed her victory, was forced to retract as well.

The way in which the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation allowed for techniques to be instantly cast could be described as 'freakishly powerful', especially given how little Heavenly Energy it used.

The Flying Lightning God technique was Zhou Weiqing's favorite technique. As soon as the two had been blasted apart, Zhou Weiqing released a second instant-cast technique. Once again it was the Flying Lightning God, but this time the Lightning Pearls were transformed into bolts of lightning. Over a hundred bolts of lightning appeared simultaneously, shooting straight at Dreamwake.

The flashing lightning was simply too fast, and they had all been insta-cast. There was no way to dodge them at all! With no other options available, Dreamwake summoned a buckler of black light over her head. A series of explosions could be heard as all of the lightning bolts slammed into the black shield of light and then

disappeared. However, this ensured that Dreamwake was unable to press the attack against Zhou Weiqing.

Dreamwake had completely discarded her previous contempt towards Zhou Weiqing. This extraordinarily talented fellow was even harder to deal with than she had imagined! This was especially true for the instant-cast skills of his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, which could be used to block her attacks at the most critical moments. If she was able to use her full power the formation wouldn't pose any problem, as she could overwhelm him with her might. However, she was only able to use the six-Jeweled cultivation level, which meant that she didn't dare to use many energy-intensive skills. In addition, the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation insta-cast skills far too quickly. She couldn't guarantee that her skills wouldn't be disrupted.

Zhou Weiqing was just as surprised as Dreamwake was. Dreamwake was a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master. How could she have this much combat experience? Zhou Weiqing felt certain that he himself was extremely experienced in battle, but Dreamwake seemed to be just as experienced. She had instantly discovered the speed-related weakness he had when he used attacks of raw power, and she had been flexible enough to very nearly defeat his defenses. More importantly, thus far both sides were still just launching 'probing' attacks, with neither having launched any full-power attacks yet.

Although both had suppressed their cultivation levels to the six-Jeweled stage, this was still an extremely fair fight. Although Zhou Weiqing hadn't reached the Heavenly King level yet, he had Saint Energy. If he used his Saint Energy, even if Dreamwake was a Heavenly King powerhouse she still wouldn't be able to gain an advantage against him. For them to both suppress their cultivation bases made for a fair and safe fight.

After the black buckler dispersed the lightning bolts, the two stared at each other silently. Neither continued to press the attack,

as they both stared vigilantly. Their auras were completely locked onto each other, ready to attack at any moment.

Zhou Weiqing narrowed his eyes slightly, the two Legendary Hammers to each side of his body drooping downwards slightly. In his heart, he was celebrating. Thank goodness that Dreamwake's two Physical Jewels didn't represent a pairing of 'flexibility' and 'speed'! If it had, he would be in an even more passive situation. It would be hard to defeat her while hiding his true power.

Dreamwake suddenly blew out a long breath, causing Zhou Weiqing to instantly sense as though the surrounding area had become much cooler. Specks of blue light began to fly out from Dreamwake's body, almost instantly covering an area of hundreds of square meters.

Was this an aura? No. This was Heavenly Dao Energy being used to influence the local atmospheric energies.

"You are cheating!" Zhou Weiqing glared at her.

Dreamwake stared back at him coldly. "And how am I cheating? I only said I'd limit myself to the six-Jeweled cultivation level. I never said I would refrain from using the techniques I'm skilled in!"

Zhou Weiqing stared at her, rather speechless. "This is an effect caused by Heavenly Dao Energy manipulating the atmospheric energies. How is it not cheating?"

Dreamwake snorted. "All I said was six-Jeweled cultivation level. It's not my fault that my will and my senses are superior. It's your own fault for being weak! Why don't you go ahead and summon atmospheric energies as well, if you can?"

Although they were in a separate Spatial area, this place was still filled with abundant atmospheric energies. For her to use Heavenly Dao Energies to summon atmospheric energies in this manner meant that she had an almost unlimited amount of energy.

Her attacks might be limited to the six-Jeweled level, but she would be able to unleash an unlimited amount of said attacks! Although Zhou Weiqing was strengthened by the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, he couldn't use it in the way she just had. More importantly... he might have the ability to sense and use Heavenly Dao Energy, but he didn't dare to actually employ it!

"You are being a bully," Zhou Weiqing complained angrily.

A hint of laughter flashed through Dreamwake's eyes. "Yes, and I'm going to bully the hell out of you." As her words came out, she shot forwards towards Zhou Weiqing once more. This time, it was completely different from her previous attacks. The coldness in the air instantly increased in strength, with countless streams of frost wrapping themselves towards Zhou Weiqing as Dreamwake attacked. The cold energy began to furiously drill deep into his body.

Although they wouldn't have an impact on him right away, given enough time they would result in his movements growing stiff and cumbersome, while he would use up far more Heavenly Energy as well.

Originally, Dreamwake hadn't been planning on doing this. However, Zhou Weiqing's tremendous strength paired with his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation was quite troublesome for her to deal with. She absolutely had to win this battle. It wasn't just out of anger; she wanted to suppress Zhou Weiqing and prove her superiority. Even she herself didn't fully understand why she had brought Zhou Weiqing here today. Was it really just because she was angry over what happened the other day? No. She wasn't willing to admit that that her heart, which had been untouched for thirty years, had grown restless as of late.

Light flickered in Zhou Weiqing's eyes as he swept out with his Dual Legendary Hammers swept out. As they shot out, his body became covered with a dense layer of azure light. He hurriedly retreated while lifting up those hammers, then delivered a vicious

downwards blow with them.

Dreamwake was startled by Zhou Weiqing's sudden acceleration. This was a speed-enhancing technique of the Wind Attribute. So his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation was even able imitate support techniques like this?

A thunderous explosion rang out, causing nearly the entire Spatial area to shudder violently. The overwhelmingly powerful shockwave from the blow blasted apart the majority of the atmospheric energies which had been summoned by Dreamwake while halting her attack as well.

Such incredible power! Dreamwake narrowed her eyes. Only now did she truly understand how terrifyingly strong Zhou Weiqing was. He hadn't been bragging at all; even if she did use Heavenly King-level strength, she still probably wouldn't be able to match the power of the blow he had just dealt to the ground with his dual hammers.

A heartbeat later, Dreamwake suddenly felt a strong sense of danger in her heart. She stared, astonished, as a streak of purple-red light shot out from behind Zhou Weiqing, transforming into a strange creature that hung in the air above him.

Heavenly Skill Image?

Dreamwake was shocked. Zhou Weiqing was only at the six-Jeweled level and had just recently reached that level. As far as she knew, someone at that level couldn't possibly be able to access a powerful technique which would result in a Heavenly Skill Image appearing! In addition, she felt a tremendous sense of danger coming from the aura of this attack.

She didn't hesitate at all. A Heavenly Skill Image instantly appeared behind Dreamwake as well. She didn't even give Zhou Weiqing to clearly see what the image was before sending it flying straight towards the image of the Demonic Dragon Lady above Zhou Weiqing.

The Heavenly Skill Images clashed against each other. Alas, Zhou Weiqing had prepared for this long ago. After having suffered at the hands of 'Lion Prince' Gu Yingbing all those years ago, he had pondered over his painful experiences and decided that he would never again use his Heavenly Skill Image unless he was completely sure of his chances! He let out cold snort, followed by yet another streak of purple-red light flying out. This time, it was aimed directly at Dreamwake's image! The two streaks of light collided in midair, then disappeared simultaneously.

He actually had two Heavenly Skill Image techniques?! Dreamwake was shocked, but her reaction was incomparably fast. She didn't continue to try and clash with Heavenly Skill Images... because she had the feeling that Zhou Weiqing was almost done with his technique.

A streak of black light suddenly burst out of Dreamwake's body. The sense of danger she felt forced her to unleash some of her own special techniques.

The freezing aura in the air suddenly became moody and sinister. Dreamwake's body was now covered with a layer of thick black fog, and there was something writhing within the black fog which Zhou Weiqing wasn't able to see clearly.

Chapter 247 – Battling Dreamwake (2)

Right. Zhou Weiqing's Dragon Silencing Seal was about to finish. If Dreamwake could cheat, so could he! He poured a tiny bit of his Saint Energy into it, causing the rate at which it formed to increase dramatically. After enduring just one clash from the opposing image, it became fully formed.

Purple-red light flashed past him, then disappeared. Zhou Weiqing could already see a violet-red vortex appearing about Dreamwake's head. Heh heh! Easy. Once I make it temporarily impossible for you to use your Stored Skills or your Consolidated Equipment, you won't stand a chance against me!

However... just as that purple-red light shot out, Dreamwake suddenly pointed her draconic claws at Zhou Weiqing, causing a streak of black light to shoot at him. Zhou Weiqing wasn't able to dodge either.

The two streaks of light landed simultaneously. Dreamwake's body trembled, followed by all of her Legendary Set items vanishing without a trace. Zhou Weiqing wasn't much better off. He discovered, to his amazement, that he had lost connection to his Hate Ground No Handle set. Although the set remained on his body, it had lost all of its strength-multiplying effects. And... he didn't seem to be able to summon any further techniques at all?

No way. That's a crazy coincidence. Shocked, the two stared at each other with rather strange and puzzled looks in their eyes.

Although there were differences in the techniques they had just used, the effects had been essentially the same. Both made it temporarily impossible to use Consolidated Equipment and Stored Skills.

Dreamwake's technique was a bit faster than Zhou Weiqing's Dragon Silencing Seal, but Zhou Weiqing's Dragon Silencing Seal could be used multiple times. It was hard to say which technique

was superior.

Since he had lost his connection to the Hate Ground No Handle set, Zhou Weiqing went ahead and discarded it. He stared suspiciously at Dreamwake. “What was that technique just now? How could you use such a powerful technique without needing time to accumulate energy?”

Dreamwake snorted coldly. “And why should I tell you?”

Zhou Weiqing shrugged his shoulders helplessly. “If you don’t want to explain, just forget about it. However... this is just the beginning.” He suddenly leapt off the ground with his right leg, shooting straight towards Dreamwake. It was quite the coincidence, or perhaps some sort of unspoken accord, as Dreamwake did exactly the same thing as Zhou Weiqing made his move.

In truth, the two were thinking the exact same thing. Neither knew how long the enemy technique would last for, and once their own sealing techniques wore off the opponent would be able to regain their Consolidated Equipment and Stored Skills. If that happened, doom would be swift and certain. It was best to seize the advantage and deal a game-ending blow before that happened.

Without their Legendary Sets, both were now far slower and weaker. The speed at which they used Heavenly Energy, however, was just as fast. In the end, Dreamwake was a bit faster and she delivered a clawing strike with her right hand towards Zhou Weiqing’s head.

Zhou Weiqing wasn’t able to use any techniques, and even his Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation having been sealed by Dreamwake. In the face of this attack, he only revealed a faint, odd smile on his face.

He didn’t dodge. Instead, he struck out with twin claws of his own. It looked as though he was aiming at Dreamwake’s shoulders, except... they seemed to be inching downwards slightly. This was a

direct ‘attack’, which naturally would be faster than a sweeping attack. This meant that Zhou Weiqing’s strike would land first.

“You pervert!” Dreamwake was enraged. She leapt upwards, delivering a kick towards Zhou Weiqing’s flank. Both were fighting at the six-Jeweled cultivation level. Although they were now slower than previously, they were still quite fast.

Zhou Weiqing didn’t dodge, instead lifting up his own right leg and using it to block Dreamwake’s kick.

A hint of a cold smile appeared at the corner of Dreamwake’s lips. Previously, when you had the Hate Ground No Handle set, I was indeed weaker than you. But now that you aren’t strengthened by any set, do you still think that you are stronger than me when I have the benefit of dual Physical Jewels?

Boom! Their legs collided in midair. A piercing pain spread throughout Dreamwake’s entire body from her right leg, which had just dispelled that earlier feeling of numbness. Once more, she retreated lightning-fast.

She had lost again. She could clearly sense that Zhou Weiqing’s right leg didn’t just vastly surpass her in strength, it was also incredibly tough. She felt as though she had just kicked a steel pillar! Although her leg wasn’t broken by the collision, it had suffered a significant injury.

How was this possible? Unfortunately, Zhou Weiqing didn’t give her any chance to consider this question. After winning in that clash of kicks, he used his right leg to propel himself off the ground and pounce like a hungry tiger towards Dreamwake. If he actually managed to land this pounce... ehehehe. Not even Shangguan Xue’er had ‘survived’, much less a Dreamwake who was limited to the six-Jeweled stage. Zhou Weiqing’s lecherous skills were quite outstanding.

Dreamwake’s eyes suddenly narrowed and darkened. Until now, she had yet to truly view Zhou Weiqing as a worthy adversary for

herself. Even though she had lowered herself to the six-Jeweled stage, she still innately viewed herself as a Heavenly King powerhouse. By all rights, she should vastly surpass Zhou Weiqing in both battle experience as well as understanding how to apply Heavenly Energy.

However, reality had proven that this fellow was even harder to deal with than she had anticipated, and there was clearly something strange about his right leg.

Dreamwake's power suddenly increased explosively. As Zhou Weiqing pounced at her, Dreamwake suddenly flew backwards and launched a vicious kick at the ground with her left leg. She borrowed from the counter-force to spin through the air to dodge Zhou Weiqing's pounce, then used her right hand to deliver a chop at the back of Zhou Weiqing's neck. At the same time, she delivered a lightning-fast kick with her left leg at Zhou Weiqing's waist. Her long, lithe leg stretched out, allowing her left foot to 'hook' itself around his waist and fasten herself to him.

Her flexibility was simply incredible! Zhou Weiqing hurriedly lowered his head, dodging Dreamwake's chop. However, by now Dreamwake had already moved into close-combat range thanks to her hook-foot.

Clearly, it wouldn't be easy to throw her off. Dreamwake had already begun to make her move. She twisted downwards, sending Zhou Weiqing flying in the opposite direction while latching onto the clothes on his back and sending him smashing into the ground.

In truth, Zhou Weiqing should've celebrated the fact that Dreamwake still wasn't able to use any strength with her right leg. If she was, it wouldn't have been a simple grapple/toss.

Crack! Zhou Weiqing was sent smashing into the ground, quite dazed. He skidded over ten meters forwards before finally managing to come to halt. Dreamwake didn't press the attack, because she was still feeling tremendous pain pulse into her from

her right leg. She had to temporarily pause and press both hands against her right leg, sending pulses of faint blue light into it which made her feel a bit better.

How could his muscles and his bones be even tougher than mine? I'm...

She stared intently at him as he skidded away. This was the first time Zhou Weiqing had come off the worse in their battle, and a questioning look was in Dreamwake's eyes. His actual combat ability had been far stronger than what she had imagined. She was absolutely certain that not even a max level six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master would be able to gain an advantage over him in combat. How many secrets did he contain?! He was a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, but it didn't seem as though he had used some sort of special technique to increase his powers. How could he have so much actual combat experience?

Zhou Weiqing flipped to his feet. Given his toughness and tenacity, this fall wasn't able to injure him at all. However, he felt a bit depressed. In terms of close combat ability, he still wasn't able to match those who had flexibility-enhancing Physical Jewels. Fei'er had dominated him in a similar fashion long ago, and now history was repeating itself.

Both had their own thoughts, but neither lessened their wariness of the other. She continued to rub her leg, while he quickly replenished his own Heavenly Energy. They were both hoping for the other's sealing skill to disperse, allowing them to put on their Legendary Sets once more.

Alas, this entire exchange had taken less than ten seconds. Their respective skills weren't even close to being finished.

Zhou Weiqing's eyes spun craftily, a naughty and delighted smile appearing within them. He stood there without moving, simply flipping over his left hand and producing a long bow within it. This wasn't Consolidated Equipment, it was nothing more than an

ordinary and real longbow that had been fashioned from Star Wood.

He nocked the bow with three arrows, almost instantly pulling the bow to a full draw. Then, with an ear-piercing twang, he sent all three arrows towards Dreamwake at lightning speed.

At such close distance, Dreamwake wouldn't be able to dodge even if she used her Heavenly King cultivation base. She had no choice but to strike out with both palms, unleashing an awesome flood of Heavenly Energy which formed a shield to block those three arrows.

These first three arrows were simply intended as a probe. As they shot out, he hurriedly retreated backwards while shooting out one arrow after another. Some he shot into the skies, some he shot straight at her, while some he shot in arcing curves. Every single one of the arrows filled the skies with ear-piercing whistles as they shot out. Every so often he would use the Twisting Bowstring Archery Skill, pouring his powerful Heavenly Energy into the arrows to give them even greater destructive force.

After just a few brief seconds, Dreamwake was unable to defend any longer. She never would've imagined that Zhou Weiqing had this sort of technique at his disposal. His archery skills could only be described as 'godly', as no matter where he fired the arrows would invariably come crashing down towards her at the most penetrating angles. In addition, the arrows were filled with Zhou Weiqing's Heavenly Energy. Since both of them were limited to six-Jeweled Heavenly Energy, the only way for her to block these penetrating attacks was to use an even greater amount of Heavenly Energy. Zhou Weiqing's arrows were so fast and densely aimed that she didn't even have the chance to use her Heavenly Dao Energy to absorb atmospheric energies to replenish her own energies.

This bastard! Dreamwake was enraged, but there was nothing she could do.

“You forced me to do this,” Dreamwake roared angrily. Suddenly, a surge of dense black energy exploded forth from her body. The dense Tenebrous Attribute energy instantly skyrocketed in power, forming an enormous black globe of light around her. When the endless stream of arrows Zhou Weiqing fired at her entered the range of that black globe of light, they fell completely silent and then were instantly corroded to the point of disappearing.

Chapter 247 – Battling Dreamwake (3)

What was going on? Wasn't she unable to use any techniques? Just as Zhou Weiqing was feeling rather puzzled, the Tenebrous energy around her suddenly retracted. When Zhou Weiqing saw her body, he couldn't help but let out a startled cry: "Transformation?!"

Yes. Dreamwake was now completely different from earlier. All of her clothes had vanished, and replacing them was a dense layer of black reptilian scales. The scales actually looked quite similar to her Legendary Set. The strangest thing was, her eyes had become a devilish, blood-red color. Zhou Weiqing felt as though he was staring into the eyes of the Tenebrous Demon Dragon once more.

An enormous pair of wings had already spread out behind Dreamwake. Her entire body was filled with a sense of both beauty and power. She seemed to have become much taller, and her face was now covered with a mask that completely hid her features. All he could see was her devilish, blood-red eyes.

One final arrow landed, and Dreamwake didn't even move to dodge. Clank! The scales on her body were able to easily deflect the power of Zhou Weiqing's arrow.

"You bastard. There's no way I'm going to spare you today." Even Dreamwake's voice seemed to have grown colder than before. She suddenly flashed forwards, moving twice as fast as she previously did as she instantly swooped over to Zhou Weiqing. Her two hands had already transformed into draconic claws as well, and they tore at his shoulders.

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon Transformation was one of Dreamwake's greatest secrets. Not even the Grand Elders had such a powerful ability as this. The Tenebrous Dragon Transformation doubled her speed and strength while quadrupling her defensive power. This was a supremely powerful transformation technique.

Although she was currently unable to use any of her Stored Skills, this didn't mean she was unable to use the power of her bloodline.

Zhou Weiqing was completely dumbfounded. He punched out with twin fists, seeking to block Dreamwake's claws, but the Tenebrous Demon Dragon Transformation gave her power that was beyond what he could possibly withstand. A loud explosion rang out, followed by Zhou Weiqing being knocked backwards as though he had been shot out of a cannon.

Dreamwake's wings flapped hard, allowing her to speed up once again as she launched a rainstorm of powerful attacks while chasing after Zhou Weiqing, causing him to let out a series of miserable howls. Thankfully, Dreamwake wasn't actually trying to kill him and she was holding back slightly. Although she made Zhou Weiqing feel agony, it wasn't enough to injure him too badly.

"Are you seriously trying to kill me?!" Zhou Weiqing said angrily.

"Who told you to be so shameless and lecherous! Yes, I'm going to kill you!" Dreamwake replied, her icy voice echoing nonstop while she continued to launch attacks without any slowdown at all.

"Fine, then I'll go all-out as well! Do you really think you are the only one with a transformation?!" A tremendously cold aura suddenly burst out from Zhou Weiqing's body as well, and all of a sudden he once more launched twin punches against Dreamwake's claws.

A loud explosion rang out once more... and this time, it was Dreamwake who was sent flying backwards. Dreamwake felt as though an utterly enormous surge of power had just slammed into her, sending her backwards.

How did he suddenly become so powerful? My seal should still be active. A heartbeat later, Dreamwake saw that Zhou Weiqing had changed as well.

Zhou Weiqing's clothes had been torn to ribbons, and his body seemed to have actually swelled in size. A dazzling yet evil aura emanated from his body as the tiger tattoos began to pulse through his body as though they were alive. On his forehead, the symbol for 'King' appeared, emanating an aura of dominance. His eyes had become red, while a pair of enormous wings spread out behind his back. His entire body emanated a dense gray aura of energy. He slowly lifted up his right leg, which had actually transformed into the shape of a hook.

What's this? He can transform as well? Dreamwake could vaguely make out the translucent image of a great tiger appearing behind Zhou Weiqing's back.

The Demonic Change State! That's right. Zhou Weiqing used the Demonic Change State, not the Dragon-Tiger Transformation.

When he saw her Tenebrous Demon Dragon Transformation, he was able to tell that within her veins flowed the blood of the Tenebrous Demon Dragon Bloodline. He himself, however, definitely was not going to casually reveal his own draconic lineage, because his lineage stemmed from the Dragon Emperor Bloodline of Hui Yao. The Dragon Emperor Bloodline didn't belong to this continent; it belonged to the Boundless Mainland. The Tenebrous Demon Dragon had mentioned this before. If he displayed the Dragon Emperor Bloodline, wouldn't that be the same as telling everything that he wasn't from the Xuantian Continent? And so, his only choice was to use the Demonic Change State.

Thanks to the power of his Saint Energy, it wasn't too hard for Zhou Weiqing to separate his transformation to use the Demonic Change State once more. This transformation focused on providing him with strength, allowing him to increase his power fourfold. His defenses would also be enhanced, but it wouldn't be by as much as the Tenebrous Demon Dragon Transformation provided. But of course, his Ice Cold Perception wasn't something

the Tenebrous Demon Dragon Transformation could provide.

On the whole, it looked as though the Tenebrous Demon Dragon Transformation was slightly stronger than the Demonic Change State... but even so, its appearance gave Dreamwake quite the shock. The way in which she looked at Zhou Weiqing instantly changed as well.

Zhou Weiqing made Dreamwake feel as though she was staring at an enormous treasury. There was an endless number of secrets she could ‘excavate’ from him, and those treasures all whispered of tremendous power or genius talent.

“What transformation is this?” Dreamwake stared at Zhou Weiqing, puzzled.

Zhou Weiqing chuckled. “Have you forgotten that I possess the Demonic Attribute? This is a first-generation Demonic Attribute at that. This transformation is naturally the Demonic Change State, a Controllable Demonic Change State. Ever heard of it? Do you perhaps feel tremendous awe towards me now?”

Dreamwake smirked, but she had to admit that Zhou Weiqing had stunned her immensely. “Do you really think your Demonic Change State can withstand my Tenebrous Demon Dragon Transformation?”

Neither side hesitated. At exactly the same moment, pillars of dark-golden light shot out into the air. Apparently, their various seals had been exhausted at the same time, and so they didn’t hesitate at all in releasing their Consolidated Equipment.

Both were dressed in dark-gold Legendary Sets and had used their respective transformations. As far as Dreamwake could tell, both had unleashed the maximum amount of power they had access to. As soon as they donned their Consolidated Equipment, they simultaneously shot out at tremendous speed to charge at each other. They didn’t didn’t choose to use any techniques and instead chose to simply clash against each other in a furious head-

long collision, neither having the advantage over the other.

“Zhou Weiqing, you are very strong. A bit stronger than I had imagined.” Dreamwake panted slightly as she stared intently at Zhou Weiqing.

Both had used up an enormous amount of Heavenly Energy. Even though Dreamwake had a nearly inexhaustible supply of energy, Zhou Weiqing had unleashed one strange attack after another. After he had used the Demonic Change State, his power had increased fourfold... and that was after his equipment strengthened him by sixty-four times! Although she was able to rely on her innate flexibility and agility to dodge, his attacks were still tremendously dangerous to her. And so, in their latest clash she had used up far, far more Heavenly Energy than Zhou Weiqing had.

His strength was simply incredible. She only had access to the six-Jeweled cultivation stage, while she had to deal with the strength of a Heavenly King. How was she supposed to fight him? The only way she could win was if Zhou Weiqing’s Heavenly Energy was depleted.

Zhou Weiqing chortled. “I could say the same about you! You are limiting the strength of your Heavenly Energy, after all. Dreamwake, why don’t we just call it a day and count this as a draw? We’ll just treat it as a sparring match.”

Dreamwake let out a cold snort. “In your dreams. Do you think you won?” As she spoke, she slowly lifted her draconic claws up high, then sent an awesome burst of Heavenly Energy out from her body. It remained at the six-Jeweled level, but for some reason it seemed to be a bit different.

Zhou Weiqing could vaguely sense that her body seemed to have grown a bit larger... or perhaps it would be more accurate to say that the Legendary Set she wore had actually fused together with her Tenebrous Demon Dragon Transformation.

What type of ability is this? Zhou Weiqing stared, wide-eyed. He had never before seen anyone who had the power to fuse their transformations with their Consolidated Equipment.

Dreamwake stared at him coldly. “This is the second form of the Tenebrous Demon Dragon Transformation, the Tenebrous Demon Dragon’s True Form. Feel proud. I won’t lose. Now that I’ve used the Tenebrous Demon Dragon’s True Form, all my attributes and powers have been doubled. In this state, even if I merely use the six-Jeweled cultivation level, I can hold off even a Heavenly King powerhouse for a time. You might be very strong, but you are still nothing before my Tenebrous Demon Dragon’s True Form. The Tenebrous Demon Dragon’s True Form grants me the power of the Tenebrous Demon Dragon for a brief time. Of course, I’ll merely be a six-Jeweled Tenebrous Demon Dragon... but that will be more than enough to deal with you.”

As she spoke, she quickly transformed to unleash a dense miasma of darkness energy from her body. She had actually transformed into an enormous dragon, except in a miniaturized form.

If he hadn’t seen this with his very own eyes, he would never have believed this. Although he also had a second form of his Dragon-Tiger Transformation, ‘Like Dragon Equivalent Tiger’, it only transformed a part of his body. There was no way it could result in something like Dreamwake had just done, transforming into an actual dragon!

Xuantian Palace had just become an even more mysterious place in Zhou Weiqing’s eyes. How many marvelous techniques did this mighty Saint Land possess?

He couldn’t wait any longer. Zhou Weiqing didn’t want to wait, and he didn’t want to let his opponent maul and dominate him. Dreamwake probably hadn’t called him out simply to test him; there had to be another reason behind it. If he lost, not only would she look down upon him, he’d probably suffer a severe injury.

Red light flashed through his eyes. Before Dreamwake had fully completed her Tenebrous Demon Dragon Transformation, Zhou Weiqing made his move. He instantly pounced towards her.

Dreamwake stared at him, a disdainful look in her eyes. She snorted, “It’s useless. While I am transforming into the Tenebrous Demon Dragon’s True Form, I’m in a completely invulnerable state. The only way to break it is if your cultivation level surpasses that of my original level, which means you have to at least be a Heavenly Emperor. Otherwise, there’s no way you can stop my, my... hey, w-what are you doing?!”

Chapter 248 Dragon Claws...(1)

Her voice changed midway through her previously-confident words. Zhou Weiqing's Dual Legendary Hammers had somehow vanished, and as he charged towards her he instantly used one of his supreme techniques.

[It was the legendary 'Something Something' Dragon Claws.](#)

Dreamwake's transformation wasn't complete. Although her legs were nearly in full dragon form, her upper body was still mid-transformation. Zhou Weiqing's clawing 'attack' made her feel so humiliated she could die. Worse, she could sense an incomparably powerful devouring ability sweep out from Zhou Weiqing's two hands. A dense stream of Heavenly Energy rapidly began to sweep out of Dreamwake's body and pour into Zhou Weiqing's, and her Tenebrous Demon Dragon's True Form transformation actually came to a halt.

Zhou Weiqing grinned cheekily at Dreamwake, up close and personal. "Everyone has a few protective abilities up their sleeves. If you actually managed to finish your Tenebrous Demon Dragon's True Form, I probably wouldn't be a match for you. However, this transformation takes a bit too long. The 'invulnerability' only prevents me from harming you, but it doesn't prevent me from touching you. Right?"

Dreamwake's eyes bulged out as she stared at Zhou Weiqing, unable to speak. Not only did her chest feel numb from his 'claws', what was even worse was that she could sense how the Heavenly Energy was being sucked out of her body faster and faster. The Tenebrous Demon Dragon's True Form was actually unable to keep up with the rate at which she was losing energy. It wasn't sustainable. Worst of all was that she wasn't just losing a six-Jeweled cultivation base, she was losing her natural Heavenly Energy!

Zhou Weiqing himself was shocked by what he was absorbing. Dreamwake's Heavenly Energy was far more terrifying than he had imagined. A vast sea of Heavenly Energy was flooding into him, and it rapidly transformed into Saint Energy before then being converted into that astral, starry Saint Energy halo of light.

Just ten seconds of sucking made Zhou Weiqing feel as though his Saint Energy had improved far more than it had during his previous month of cultivation.

Heavenly Emperor! She was actually a Heavenly Emperor, not a Heavenly King! Zhou Weiqing was thoroughly stunned.

Dreamwake was stunned as well. The Tenebrous Demon Dragon's True Form vanished, and even the Consolidated Equipment which had merged into her Tenebrous Demon Dragon's True Form vanished. The powerful Devour skill's sucking power was causing her to lose Heavenly Energy at an incredible rate.

"Y-you..." Suddenly, a terrifying burst of energy swept out of Dreamwake's body. Zhou Weiqing felt his entire body tremble. His Devour skill was forcibly interrupted as he was sent flying backwards for several hundred meters before slamming into the ground.

Even if he had used all his power and reinforced it with Saint Energy, he wouldn't necessarily be able to stably Devour the energy of a Heavenly Emperor, to say nothing of right now when his cultivation base was suppressed to the six-Jeweled stage.

Dreamwake quickly covered herself with a set of long robes. After losing the Demon Dragon's True Form, she had become completely nude. After dressing herself, this mighty Heavenly Emperor powerhouse actually collapsed on the ground, panting heavily as her entire body shuddered uncontrollably.

Zhou Weiqing lay on the ground, feeling stunned. Although Dreamwake had sent him flying, she had simply knocked him a

way instead of actually releasing enough energy to kill him. Although the fall was a severe one, given his physical strength it wouldn't result in him suffering any severe injuries.

A twenty-nine year old Heavenly Emperor? How was this possible? He had stunned Dreamwake many times today. Finally, Dreamwake had stunned him as well.

No wonder the four Grand Elders of Xuantian Palace and Master Nie Han had all treated her so respectfully. Her cultivation base had actually reached an incredible level!

The empty space gradually fell silent. No sound could be heard save for the two of them panting.

Dreamwake's arms were folded protectively in front of her chest, her graceful body trembling nonstop. That strange, indescribable feeling continued to spread out from her chest and into every part of her body.

Kill him. I should kill him. But she wasn't able to summon any power at all and had no real desire to kill him. Her entire mental state was quite unsteady.

Zhou Weiqing lay there, huffing and wheezing, without rising to his feet. He didn't wish to endure the fiery rage of a Heavenly Emperor, nor would he try to incite Dreamwake by mentioning how she had gone against her oath.

They quietly lay there for the time needed to boil a kettle of tea. Finally, Dreamwake recovered her senses and slowly rose to her feet. As she stood straight, her slender figure couldn't help but sway one more time.

She glared at the distant Zhou Weiqing, who remained lying on the ground, then viciously tossed a black crystal at him. In the next instant, her body turned illusory then vanished without a trace.

As soon as Dreamwake vanished, the distant Zhou Weiqing quickly clambered back to his feet. He hurriedly switched to a

different set of clothes, then adjusted himself. He didn't want Bing'er to notice anything suspicious. After doing all of these things he picked up the black crystal which Dreamwake had given him, then looked at his arms.

Heavenly Energy poured into the black crystal. Light flared, and when it vanished he had once more reappeared within the sixth level of Xuantian Castle.

Dreamwake had long ago vanished without a trace. After secretly celebrating the 'fun' he just had, Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but feel a bit helpless. This time, he had thoroughly offended her. It would clearly be quite difficult for them to regain their previous camaraderie. Still... it hadn't been completely fruitless. At least he now knew just how powerful Dreamwake really was.

A Heavenly Emperor powerhouse, one which was able to use the Tenebrous Demon Dragon Transformation! Zhou Weiqing knew that if Dreamwake used all her power, she would have the ability to cause the very heavens to shudder.

In truth? Our dear little Zhou Little Fatty, always so confident in his own talent, had been badly rattled and disheartened. A twenty-nine year old Heavenly Emperor! He himself knew that unless he encountered more marvels, there was no way he could reach that stage so soon.

He returned to his room. Shangguan Bing'er hadn't been training; this entire time, she had been waiting for him to return. Zhou Weiqing's duel against Dreamwake didn't take too long, and so he actually came back quite quickly. Even though he had cleaned himself up a bit, he still looked rather bedraggled.

"What did she summon you for?" Shangguan Bing'er eyed him, puzzled.

Zhou Weiqing let out a bitter laugh. "To kick my ass. She wanted to test out my power... or perhaps she felt jealous of me when I revealed my six Attributes in front of the Tenebrous Demon

Dragon. Or perhaps she is suspicious of us.” He didn’t dare to tell the truth.

Shangguan Bing’er didn’t suspect the truth. She said, worried, “Are you alright?”

Zhou Weiqing shook his head. “I’m fine. She just wanted to test my power, and so she battled me while keeping her power down to the six-Jeweled level. However... she’s even more powerful than I had suspected. A Heavenly Emperor... a twenty-nine year old Heavenly Emperor!”

“What?!” Shangguan Bing’er was shocked as well. “That means there are at least six Heavenly Emperor powerhouses here, plus that Heavenly God Tenebrous Demon Dragon. This level of power completely eclipses our Heaven’s Expanse Palace!”

Zhou Weiqing nodded. “It does seem to be the case. They have been the sole rulers of the Xuantian Continent, after all. It makes sense that something like this occurred. However, you don’t need to worry. We’re from the Boundless Mainland and we’ve given them nothing to be suspicious about. So long as we don’t attack, we can continue to stay here in peace. It seems we’ll need to be extra, extra careful when dealing with this Terror Sea Dragon.”

Shangguan Bing’er nodded, deeply convinced. “Little Fatty, Father and Uncle both said that our safety is paramount. They should have already completed their preparations for Zhongtian City. Your safety is what really matters right now. It is better for us to return empty-handed than for you to take on too much risk.”

Zhou Weiqing chuckled. “It’s too early to say such things. We still have plenty of time. Let’s take things one step at a time. Staying here a bit longer isn’t a bad thing for us. This place has all the atmospheric energies we need, which is beneficial to our cultivation. Just now, I Devoured some of Dreamwake’s Heavenly Energy. Let me first digest it all.”

He returned to the bed and sat down to meditate. With but a

thought, he entered his state of cultivation. This was one of the benefits of having Saint Energy. He didn't need to worry about suffering from any cultivation deviations. The Saint Energy in his body circulated naturally, and Zhou Weiqing was able to clearly see how at the core of his Dantian, the starry Saint Energy had increased in amount. The starry light within the cores of his thirty-six Death Acupuncture Points had clearly strengthened as well.

Indeed, Devouring was the fastest way to improvement! During the final moments of his battle against Dreamwake he had only been given a brief moment of time to Devour her energies, but she was still a true Heavenly Emperor! That brief instant had granted him an enormous benefit.

Devouring the Heavenly Energy of a Heavenly Jewel Master was completely different from devouring that of a Heavenly Beast. Even the most powerful of Heavenly Beasts would have a hint of impure bestial elements in their Heavenly Energy, no matter how vast and distilled it was. After absorbing it, he would have to repeatedly filter and expel all of those impurities. In addition, Heavenly Beasts trained in a completely different way. Thus, after their Heavenly Energy was filter out only a small fraction would be available for Zhou Weiqing to use.

Dreamwake was different. She was a genuine Heavenly Jewel Master who had reached the Heavenly Emperor stage. The Heavenly Energy within her body was so pure, Zhou Weiqing had to sigh in awe. Although it was of a different Attribute from Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy, after he Devoured it he didn't need to filter it at all. He simply needed to convert it into a replenishing source for his Saint Energy.

The 'real name' of this technique is 'Titty-Squeezing Dragon Claws'. It comes from an old Hong Kong quasi-satirical martial arts TV series that had some really ridiculous techniques in it.

Chapter 248 Dragon Claws...(2)

In addition, Zhou Weiqing had only Devoured a tiny part of her energy. He hadn't actually affected Dreamwake's core essence. Dreamwake would only need a few days to recover, as her core essence would allow her to quickly reach her normal peak power.

If he truly managed to devour a Heavenly Emperor's Heavenly Energy and core essence then convert it into Saint Energy, Zhou Weiqing's cultivation base would probably instantly skyrocket into the Heavenly King stage.

But of course, this was a virtually impossible task. First of all, his body might not be able to endure it, and more importantly there was no way he could resist a Heavenly Emperor powerhouse.

Even so, he had benefited enormously from today's battle. After completely transforming the Heavenly Energy he had Devoured from Dreamwake into Saint Energy and then fusing it into his own Saint Energy, Zhou Weiqing realized that he had saved at least three months worth of hard cultivation.

In truth, if Dreamwake had immediately acted to employ her Heavenly Emperor energy to resist Zhou Weiqing, the latter would've only been able to employ his Devour skill for a brief instant. However, she had a bet with Zhou Weiqing! She had also been thoroughly shocked by the perverted Zhou Little Fatty using his 'Something Something' Dragon Claws. Not only had this resulted in her 'allowing' him to Devour her energies for an extended period of time, she had nearly lost control over herself from the provocations to her body. She had wanted to take revenge on Zhou Weiqing by challenging him to this fight, but instead the one who came out the worse was herself, a Heavenly Emperor.

After this day, Zhou Weiqing didn't see Dreamwake for the next month. It was for the best. That way, he wouldn't be beaten again. He had to suppress his energy when he fought her and he couldn't

even use his Saint Energy, which was a miserable feeling. He thus chose to instead stay in his room and continue to cultivate alongside Shangguan Bing'er.

Although it wasn't as effective as when he cultivated with Tian'er, the Saint Energy in his body had after all already formed a complete circuit. He still improved quite quickly... but after reaching the nine-Jeweled stage, each breakthrough required an enormous amount of Heavenly Energy. To break through from the thirty-seventh level to the thirty-eighth level required an enormous accumulation of energy.

Zhou Weiqing also obliquely scouted about for information. Ever since they had met and spoken with the Tenebrous Demon Dragon, the entire Xuantian Palace had been in a state of bustling preparation. All ships that had been preparing to go out to sea were temporarily grounded, as the entire Xuantian Palace leapt into high gear.

"Consecrated Zhou." A familiar voice rang out from outside. It wasn't Dreamwake's voice.

Zhou Weiqing opened his door, welcoming in his fellow God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, 'Nie Han'.

Nie Han glanced at Zhou Weiqing, then chuckled. "Consecrated Zhou, you are very good at enduring boredom! Ever since you entered Xuantian Palace, you have yet to leave a single time. You usually don't even go outside. It is rare for young people like yourself to be able to endure boredom and train so hard. No wonder you've reached your current level of accomplishments."

Zhou Weiqing smiled. "Compared to yourself and the various Elders, I'm still far from being a match. How can I not train hard?" But in his heart, he actually thought something different. What's the point of leaving? To simply make Xuantian Palace's people follow and spy on me? Compared to the Boundless Mainland, the Xuantian Continent is quite lacking. If it wasn't for the Spatial

Teleportation Gem, who would be willing to come to this place? Besides, I might end up needing to fight these powerhouses of Xuantian Palace at a moment's notice. If I don't train hard, how am I going to be able to safely survive all these dangers?

"Consecrated Nie, are you prepared to go hunt the Terror Sea Dragon? I've been eagerly looking forward to it. We've been preparing for quite some time," Zhou Weiqing said.

Nie Han said, "I've come to notify you that five days from now, we'll head out to hunt down that Terror Sea Dragon. The Palace Lord's opinion is that it is best for you to stand guard at home." Although Nie Han didn't say it aloud, Zhou Weiqing could tell that they were worried that he was too weak.

Zhou Weiqing chuckled. "Chances like this come once in a lifetime. That senior, the Tenebrous Demon Dragon, promised to protect me. If I chose to retreat at a time like this, how would that senior view me? I'm definitely going to go. Don't try to dissuade me, Consecrated Nie. However, my humble wife won't be accompanying us."

Nie Han nodded. "Very well. I came to notify you of what is about to happen. Since you have made up your mind, make your preparations. We are heading out in five days. I need to go discuss our strategies with the other Grand Elders."

Zhou Weiqing watched as Nie Han left, then closed the door. His eyes then flickered briefly. Finally. They had waited for so long, but the day had finally come.

Shangguan Bing'er walked over to Zhou Weiqing. She took his large hand into her own, then sent mentally, "They seem to think very little of you. They aren't even inviting you into their discussion as to how to handle the Terror Sea Dragon. Little Fatty, I keep on having a bad feeling about this. I think you shouldn't go with them."

Zhou Weiqing wrapped his arms around her, placing a tender

kiss upon her red lips. “Silly girl. So many powerhouses will be present. If push comes to shove, I’ll just avoid taking part. Do you really think that your husband isn’t even strong enough to protect himself?”

Shangguan Bing’er raised her head, staring at him earnestly. “Little Fatty, I need you to remember something. If you die, I definitely won’t live on by myself.”

Zhou Weiqing’s heart clenched hard. His grip around Shangguan Bing’er instantly grew a bit tighter as well.

Five days passed in the blink of an eye. On the morning of the sixth day, Nie Han personally came to summon Zhou Weiqing. All of them headed to the cliffs outside Xuantian Palace.

Shangguan Bing’er came to send them off as well. Often times, men would make decisions that their women couldn’t stop. Even though she felt rather uncomfortable about this, she didn’t try to dissuade him any further. She too believed that given Zhou Weiqing’s cultivation, it wouldn’t be too hard for him to extricate himself.

The others who had appeared at the cliff included the powerhouses of Xuantian Palace, including Palace Lord Dong Fang, the four Grand Elders, and the twelve Elders. Dreamwake, who Zhou Weiqing hadn’t seen for many days, naturally was present as well. However, Dreamwake didn’t even seem to recognize him. She didn’t so much as look at him. Given how many people were present, Zhou Weiqing couldn’t exactly run up to her and greet her either.

After seeing that everyone was ready, the Palace Lord said in a low voice, “Give the signal.”

The Water Elder lifted up his hand, unleashing a streak of black light that bound into the depths. Moments later a low draconic roar rang out from below them, then began to rise upwards. The atmospheric energies around them instantly began to grow

restless.

The Elders of Xuantian Palace all grew solemn, their faces filled with respect. Less than ten seconds later, the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's vast body suddenly shot into the skies above them. Its vast wings looked like giant black stormclouds, propelling its great body into the skies. It circled around the people present, then gradually descended before them.

The Xuantian Palace Lord led everyone in calling out loudly, "Greetings, Lord Demon Dragon."

"Mm." The Tenebrous Demon Dragon let out a snort, its enormous draconic eyes actually focusing on Zhou Weiqing. It nodded at him briefly, then said in a thunderous voice, "All of you, climb aboard."

"Understood," the Xuantian Palace Lord said, then led the others in vaulting onto the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's back.

Zhou Weiqing, however, discovered that not all the Elders boarded the dragon. Only six of the twelve Heavenly Kings boarded, with the other six remaining in front of Xuantian Palace. Clearly, they were going to stay behind and stand guard.

Although Zhou Weiqing felt surprised, he didn't reveal it. He just turned to glance at Shangguan Bing'er, giving her a look.

Zhou Weiqing had originally judged that given how powerful the Terror Sea Dragon was, Xuantian Palace would send out all of its forces to fight it. Xuantian Palace didn't have any foes in the Xuantian Continent, after all; it didn't need too many powerhouses to defend its home. If this was the case, then once Zhou Weiqing acquired the Spatial Teleportation Gem he would immediately notify Shangguan Bing'er. If she wanted to leave, the remaining guards would be hard-pressed to stop her. However, now the situation was different. There were six Heavenly King powerhouses standing guard. Given her cultivation base, even with her Wings of the Wind God it would still be rather hard for

her to escape. Zhou Weiqing's glance was meant to tell her to be careful.

Shangguan Bing'er nodded casually.

Although Xuantian Palace hadn't fully mobilized, they had definitely unleashed the brunt of their power. Xuantian Palace Lord Dong Fang led this squad, which included three God Tier Consolidating Equipment Masters (including Zhou Weiqing), four Grand Elders, and six ordinary Elders. The fourteen of them, when matched with the Heavenly God Tenebrous Demon Dragon, definitely constituted over 90% of Xuantian Palace's full power.

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon's body was more than large enough to seat ten-plus people without anyone feeling cramped for space. It beat its enormous wings, instantly sending itself soaring into the western skies.

Although this wasn't the first time Zhou Weiqing had seen a great dragon, this was his first time riding on a great dragon's back. The Tenebrous Demon Dragon's back was covered with many protruding ridges, with just enough space for each of them to sit between the ridges. Given their respective cultivation bases, they were able to remain seated quite stably atop the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's back.

This was the first time Zhou Weiqing had been in such close proximity to a Heavenly God powerhouse. As the Tenebrous Demon Dragon soared into the skies, his heart was filled with awe.

As the Tenebrous Demon Dragon soared upwards, it became surrounded with many dark storm clouds. Zhou Weiqing was able to use the powerful sensing abilities granted by his Saint Energy to clearly discern that the clouds were naturally generated within the atmosphere, rather than summoned by the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's power.

Of course, these were not real 'storm clouds'. Instead, it was pure Darkness Attribute energy mixed with Evil Attribute energy,

which formed Tenebrous Demon Clouds which materialized due to the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's natural energies. It was as though this vast dragon had become the absolute hegemon of the world around it.

As for the wind? They could only support the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's great bulk, not resist it or blow against it in the slightest.

This was what truly mighty power was like! Even though the Tenebrous Demon Dragon was carrying at least six Heavenly Emperors on its back, Dreamwake included, Zhou Weiqing could clearly sense that before a Heavenly God, Heavenly Emperors were like children who had just learned how to walk. All of them combined wouldn't be a match for this Tenebrous Demon Dragon.

Chapter 248 Dragon Claws...(3)

No wonder Xuantian Palace was so terrified of the Terror Sea Dragon and needed to make such lengthy preparations. The Tenebrous Demon Dragon was already horrifyingly strong, and the Terror Sea Dragon was probably even above it in cultivation! They would also be fighting it in its chosen environment, the sea. No one who didn't personally witness it in action would understand how powerful it was.

Zhou Weiqing's cultivation level was the lowest of the group, and so he was located right in the middle of the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's back. In front of him was Palace Lord Dong Fang and Dreamwake, and by accident or design Dreamwake was less than a meter away from him.

Viewing this dazzling woman from behind was quite a pleasing sight. Dreamwake was a classic beauty, with slender shoulders and long, neat black hair which cascaded down her back like a waterfall. As the wind blew past them, her long hair would quietly drift upwards to reveal her fine waist, as well as the round and firm arcs which jutted out below her waist.

Firm and perky! He hadn't noticed before, but her backside was quite intoxicating as well. Zhou Weiqing unconsciously swallowed a mouthful of saliva.

Right at this moment, Dreamwake's icy voice rang into his mind: "If you keep staring at me with those filthy eyes of yours, I'll tear them out."

Zhou Weiqing lowered his head in resignation. Fine, fine. I won't stare. Every so often though, he did sneak a peek. Thankfully, Dreamwake didn't actually attack him.

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon flew with astonishing speed. Even though they were high in the air, none of them were able to make out the scenery below with clarity.

The dense tenebrous demon clouds around them blocked out the warmth of the sunlight. From afar, the Tenebrous Demon Dragon looked like a black arrow that was shooting through the skies.

Less than two hours later, they were able to see the vast and boundless ocean appear on the horizons. The light of the sun shone down upon the surface of the sea, causing it to sparkle.

The weather was particularly fine today. There weren't too many waves, and they were able to see from up high how the light blue of the water at the seashore gradually grew darker as they went deeper into the ocean.

The atmospheric water energies around them clearly grew denser. Even the naturally-forming tenebrous demon clouds around the Tenebrous Demon Dragon were affected considerably, as they grew noticeably sparser.

This was the power of nature! Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but exclaim to himself. No wonder even the Tenebrous Demon Dragon was afraid of fighting the Terror Sea Dragon in the depths of the seas. The seas was the Terror Sea Dragon's domain.

Right at this moment, Dreamwake's mental voice reached out to him once more. "Use your Demonic Change State to stay far away from the battle. No one will have the time or energy to take care of you."

Zhou Weiqing chortled and sent back, "You care about me that much, eh?"

Dreamwake didn't respond.

Zhou Weiqing continued, "Honestly, it was all a big misunderstanding. I just didn't want to die, right? I did what I did to stay alive. That's why I saved that trump card for the very end."

Dreamwake could no longer stay silent. "Misunderstanding? Was what happened when we jumped down the cliff also a misunderstanding? Your Demonic Change State is able to produce

wings that allow you to fly. How could you possibly be so terrified when falling down a cliff?”

Zhou Weiqing was a grandmaster at finding excuses. He said reasonably, “That was a different situation. It all happened to suddenly. Besides, everyone has a fondness for beautiful things. You were right next to me, so I unconsciously clung to you in my fear. By the time I recovered my senses, I was already holding onto you. If I released you then, it would look like I was just pretending to be honorable, right? That’s why I just kept on hugging you. You can’t blame me! It’s your own fault for being so comfortable to hug.”

Dreamwake was nearly enraged to the point of laughter. This scoundrel was clearly in the wrong, but insisted on trying to argue his way out of it. He had clearly taken advantage of her, but now he was making it sound as though he had suffered a grave injustice. She had been feeling a bit nervous at the prospect of facing the Terror Sea Dragon, but Zhou Weiqing’s nonsense actually resulted in her relaxing slightly.

“I can’t be bothered with you. Just know that you’ll have to watch out for yourself later, because no one else will,” Dreamwake said irritably.

Zhou Weiqing chortled. “Does that mean you aren’t mad anymore? Y’know, you’ve been avoiding me for so many days that I really was heartbroken. I missed you so much I could hardly sleep.”

Dreamwake said angrily, “Shut your mouth. Every day and every night, you ‘busy’ yourself with your wife. Miss me so much that you can’t sleep? Do you take me for a fool?”

Zhou Weiqing stuttered, “Uh, well... I can miss you while being frisky with my wife, right?”

His voice was quite small when he said this, and Dreamwake was already in a fine rage. As a result, she somewhat misheard his

words. She angrily turned to glare at him and said viciously, “You bastard! You actually dare to think about me when you are being frisky with your wife?!”

“Uh, t-that’s not what I mean,” Zhou Weiqing hastily replied.

None of the rest could hear what they were saying, but as absolute powerhouses everyone who was seated on the Tenebrous Demon Dragon’s back was able to tell that the two were engaging in a mental conversation. When they saw Dreamwake turn her head to glare at him with an embarrassed look on her face, the various elders couldn’t help but reveal rather odd looks.

Everyone was able to tell that something ha been going on between the two of them ever since Zhou Weiqing arrived. It was especially obvious when the two of them were together. The supreme powerhouses of Xuantian Palace were all wily old foxes. Although their faces remained impassive, it was hard to judge what they thought of all this.

Given how Zhou Weiqing was a handsome and talented youth, as they saw it he would be a good match for Dreamwake in a few years once he grew stronger. The problem was, he had come with a wife in tow!

Zhou Weiqing immediately lowered his head after Dreamwake glared at him, putting on show of being honest and aggrieved.

This was the first time Dreamwake had seen such a look on this fellow’s face. She couldn’t help but stare in shock. In her mind, this bad man was always proud, arrogant, and self-confident! She couldn’t help but soften when she saw him look like this, and so she let out a snort and then turned back, no longer paying him any attention.

By now, the Tenebrous Demon Dragon was flying over the deep ocean. The surface of the sea beneath its feet had transformed into a deep blue color, while the tenebrous demon clouds around it had suddenly vanished. It wasn’t because of how dense the

atmospheric water energies were; rather, it was because the Tenebrous Demon Dragon had voluntarily dispelled it.

What is it up to? Zhou Weiqing was intrigued.

They continued to fly for an hour, venturing even deeper into the ocean before the Tenebrous Demon Dragon slowly began to come to a halt. All of the Xuantian Palace experts on the Tenebrous Demon Dragon suddenly retracted their auras as well, as though by unspoken accord.

Zhou Weiqing hadn't taken part in the discussions over how to handle the Terror Sea Dragon, and so he didn't know what they were going to do. All he could do was watch.

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon said in a rumbling voice, "Let's begin. I can vaguely sense its aura. I will mask your energy ripples as best as I can, but you need to move quickly."

Xuantian Palace Lord Dong Fang nodded, then led the others in rising to their feet atop the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's back. Zhou Weiqing rose to his feet as well. He asked the Palace Leader, "Palace Leader, what do you need me to do?"

Dong Fang replied, "Just wait for us here. Once the battle erupts shortly, retreat and just watch from afar. We don't need you to get involved."

"Alright." Zhou Weiqing immediately agreed. Watching as dragons fought from afar was quite a pleasing experience.

The many Xuantian Palace experts began to move in unison. The weakest was at least a Heavenly King, and the thirteen of them flew separately towards different directions. They each flew nearly a thousand meters before slowly landing on the surface of the sea. From Zhou Weiqing's perspective, they had all transformed into tiny black dots.

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon hovered motionless at its original location, a strange spiritual ripple spreading out from its body.

Heavenly Gods truly were impressive. Almost instantly, its powerful spiritual ripple completely covered all of the powerhouses of Xuantian Palace.

Streaks of black light simultaneously rose up off in the distance. Although Zhou Weiqing's visual acuity was incredible, they were still too far away for him to tell what the Xuantian Palace powerhouses inside those beams of light were doing. All he could sense was that they were emanating ripples of incredible power.

“Senior, what are they doing?” Zhou Weiqing asked curiously.

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon clearly had a favorable impression of him. “Preparing to deal with that Terror Sea Dragon, of course. Terror Sea Dragons are incredibly powerful, and we're fighting it in the ocean. If we simply try to clash against it head-on, even if we win we will suffer enormous losses in the process... and we can't avoid the possibility that it might end up escaping. What they are doing right now is setting up a Tenebrous Demon Sealing Formation. It is an ancient formation which requires twelve powerhouses who are at or above the Heavenly King level and who have the Tenebrous Attribute to establish. Once this formation is established, not even a Heavenly God who enters it will be able to escape. All of the people who created the formation will have to be slain in order for the trapped person to break free. Within the Tenebrous Demon Sealing Formation, all types of Attributes aside from the Tenebrous Attribute will be forcibly kept at bay. We'll do our best to lessen the amount of energy Terror Sea Dragon can borrow from the sea.”

Zhou Weiqing finally understood. “So they spent all this time preparing for this formation! It seems this grand formation requires an enormous amount of materials to establish.”

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon nodded. “This formation can also increase my power. For the sake of dealing with the Terror Sea Dragon, Xuantian Palace has brought out over half of their complete stockpile of Tenebrous Crystals. During the past month,

they've been carving the formation onto the Tenebrous Crystals and linking them to their own bloodlines. Only by doing this can they cause the power of the Tenebrous Demon Sealing Formation to rise to its maximum power. Later, you should fly away and stay out of the range of the Tenebrous Demon Sealing Formation. So long as you remain outside, you shouldn't be hit by the shockwaves."

"Thank you for the guidance, Senior," Zhou Weiqing said respectfully.

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon suddenly let out a low chortle and then whispered to Zhou Weiqing, "Hey kid. Have you fallen for that lass, Dreamwake?"

Chapter 249 Tenebrous Demon Sealing Formation (1)

“Huh?!” When Zhou Weiqing heard the Tenebrous Demon Dragon suddenly ask him if he had fallen for Dreamwake, his jaw dropped and his eyes popped out. He never would’ve imagined that a powerful figure like the Tenebrous Demon Dragon would actually be such a nosy busy-body.

He scratched his head, then let out an awkward laugh. “Senior, don’t make fun of me. I’m merely an upper level Zun Stage, while Dreamwake is a Heavenly Emperor. How could she possibly take any interest in me?”

“Enough, enough. Don’t try to hide it from me. Although you are only at the six-Jeweled cultivation level, this entire time I’ve been able to sense a whiff of danger emanating from you. That means that your actual, full power isn’t as low as the level of power you are displaying. Although Dreamwake didn’t say too much about you, she did mention that you are even more talented than her. And... I’ve watched her ever since she was a little girl. Aside from you, I’ve never seen her take a second glance at any man.”

Zhou Weiqing blinked. “But... I already have a wife?”

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon snorted coldly. “Just divorce her. Let me tell you something, kid. If you dare to mistreat that girl Dreamwake in any way... heh heh heh...”

Although the dragon didn’t release its terrifying aura upon Zhou Weiqing, the mere fact that a Heavenly God powerhouse was threatening him was enough to cause his heart to turn clammy. However, he really didn’t understand why this great dragon had suddenly decided to play matchmaker.

Divorce Shangguan Bing’er for the sake of Dreamwake? Impossible. In Zhou Weiqing’s heart, Shangguan Bing’er occupied

a special position which was irreplaceable. Even though he also loved Tian'er, Xue'er, and Fei'er, and had a fling with Little Witch, there was no way he would abandon his Bing'er for anyone.

But of course, he wouldn't say that to the Tenebrous Demon Dragon. That'd be asking for trouble. Zhou Weiqing said, a miserable smile on his face, "Senior, all this is talk for later. Marriage isn't something I can decide upon myself. You should ask Dreamwake for her opinion as well, right? Let's finish dealing with the Terror Sea Dragon first."

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon said rather unhappily, "Kid, are you seriously trying to gloss over this topic with me? Fine, then. I'll first deal with the Terror Sea Dragon, then deal with you. That girl Dreamwake isn't getting any younger. She needs to find a man, if only for the sake of Xuantian Palace's future. I've taken a liking to you. You have six different Jewel Attributes, which means that the children you two have will be even more extraordinarily talented."

Zhou Weiqing felt completely speechless. He really wanted to say to the Tenebrous Demon Dragon, "You might be planning things out a bit too far ahead."

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon continued, "Kid, if you can win Dreamwake's heart and take her as your bride, I guarantee that within three years, I'll ensure that you skyrocket to become a Heavenly King and Consolidate your Heavenly Core Nucleus."

"Huh?!" Zhou Weiqing was shocked. "It's possible to 'help' someone else upgrade their cultivation level?"

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon let out a chortle. "Why wouldn't it be? There are many things in this world that you have no clue about. The Tenebrous Bloodline has access to a unique, secret technique which allows for the transfer of power. So long as we can acquire the Terror Sea Dragon's Heavenly Core Nucleus, after I use it to evolve I'll use the remainder of the power within the core

to help you upgrade. It won't be too hard. You'll be a Heavenly King, kid! Spend some time and think carefully about this."

Rising in cultivation to become a Heavenly King was an enormously alluring prospect for any Heavenly Jewel Master. Alas, the Tenebrous Demon Dragon had chosen the wrong person to make this pitch to. Zhou Weiqing was already at the nine-Jeweled stage and had access to Saint Energy. He didn't need this sort of help at all. However, the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's words had accidentally given Zhou Weiqing a great deal of information. For example, he now knew that Dreamwake had probably received such an energy transfer thanks to the Tenebrous Lineage, which was why she had such enormous power.

When Zhou Weiqing realized this, he immediately felt much better about himself. If Dreamwake had purely relied upon her own innate talent to train to the Heavenly Emperor level at age twenty-nine, Zhou Weiqing would've suffered a severe blow to his own self-confidence. Zhou Weiqing knew that while this sort of external help could grant you tremendous power within a short period of time, the bottlenecks you later encountered would be far sturdier and tougher than those which normal cultivators had to face. Although Dreamwake had become a Heavenly Emperor at a very young age, it would probably be incredibly hard for her to breakthrough to become a Heavenly God.

As Zhou Weiqing continued to chat with the Tenebrous Demon Dragon, he suddenly felt his skin feeling a bit cold. He glanced downwards unconsciously, only to be shocked by what he saw.

The sea below the Tenebrous Demon Dragon within the region surrounded by the thirteen experts of Xuantian Palace had actually turned black as ink, making it impossible to see to the bottom. The dense Tenebrous Attribute energy continued to rise upwards from the region.

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon's scales rose upwards slightly as it began to absorb that dense Tenebrous Attribute energy into its

body. Zhou Weiqing could clearly sense that the aura and might of the Tenebrous Demon Dragon was rising at a furious pace.

So this was the Tenebrous Demon Sealing Formation? What incredibly strong ripples it is generating! Zhou Weiqing was secretly shocked by this. This grand formation was able to counter even Heavenly God powerhouses. Its might was unquestionable! The Terror Sea Dragon might be powerful, but it was facing the full might of a Great Saint Land. From what he was seeing, it seemed very possible that Xuantian Palace would succeed in slaying the Terror Sea Dragon!

This was not, however, what Zhou Weiqing wanted to see. If Xuantian Palace won a complete victory, he probably would stand no chance of even seeing the Spatial Teleportation Gem.

To him, the ideal outcome was one where both sides were wounded. Only then would there be a chance that the Spatial Teleportation Gem would be used. Only then would he have a chance to acquire it.

This was an incredibly important battle for Xuantian Palace, and the same was true for Zhou Weiqing. He had already made a full analysis of all potential outcomes, and had fully prepared for all of them.

On the whole... although Xuantian Palace's lower-level cultivators were very corrupt and decadent, Zhou Weiqing could tell that the high-level members were all quite decent. If at all possible, he would prefer to take away the Spatial Teleportation Gem without causing Xuantian Palace any harm. He would slip away with Shangguan Bing'er.

But of course, that was just an ideal outcome. Actually achieving it wouldn't be easy.

The Tenebrous energy below was growing stronger and stronger. He was now able to clearly see that the twelve distant streams of black light had grown increasingly dense. What surprised Zhou

Weiqing the most was that the only person of the thirteen who hadn't entered the Tenebrous Demon Sealing Formation was Dreamwake, rather than the Xuantian Palace Lord. She flew from one position to another, seemingly giving orders to do something.

Zhou Weiqing frowned slightly. He didn't reveal any traces of an expression on his face, but a few strange ideas were beginning to come to mind.

It took them two full hours to completely set up the Tenebrous Demon Sealing Formation. Finally, those twelve pillars of black light began to slowly vanish, while the Tenebrous energies below began to dissipate as well. The sea returned to its normal deep blue color, as though the enormous power which had circulated through it earlier had never been there.

Zhou Weiqing could clearly sense that the Tenebrous Demon Sealing Formation hadn't failed; rather, it had been completed. However, he didn't know what technique they had used to retract and mask the formation's aura so perfectly. The only reason why he was able to sense the formation was complete was because the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's aura didn't weaken despite the water below it having gone back to 'normal'.

A shooting star seemed to streak out of the seas, dazzling Zhou Weiqing. In the next instant, a second person was atop the dragon. It was Dreamwake. The other twelve had already disappeared from the surface of the seas.

"Our preparations are complete." Dreamwake nodded at the Tenebrous Demon Dragon.

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon said, "Go ahead. Weiqing, you can step back now."

Dreamwake flashed forwards to land atop the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's head. The Tenebrous Demon Dragon had a single thick and sturdy horn on its head, and Dreamwake was standing right in front of him, her back leaning against it. Her heroic, bold posture

wasn't that of a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master's at all. This was clearly the posture of a dragonrider!

"Why haven't you beat it yet?" Dreamwake couldn't help but frown when she saw Zhou Weiqing staring dazedly at her, and so she barked out at him.

"Oh." Zhou Weiqing nodded, his body flickering as he unleashed the Demonic Change State. He flapped the two wings which appeared on his back, then flew off the Tenebrous Demon Dragon and off into the distance.

Dreamwake watched as he flew out of the reach of the Tenebrous Demon Sealing Formation. Only then did her face turn soft.

"Little lass... if memory serves, humans tend to prefer gentler women. If you really like him, be a bit nicer to him."

Dreamwake's face sank. "What the hell are you babbling about?"

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon chortled. "I'm not 'babbling' about anything. Do you really think I can't tell that you rather like him? This is the first man that you've liked. I don't think it's just because of his talent and his abilities."

Dreamwake's face turned slightly pink. Clearly, she had thought of some unspeakable memories. "We're about to deal with the Terror Sea Dragon. You actually are in the mood to speak of such nonsense?"

The Terror Sea Dragon let out a sigh. "You cheeky, impudent girl. From a bloodlines standpoint, I should be considered your uncle and senior. When your father departed from this world, he asked me to take good care of you. You aren't getting any younger. Am I, your uncle, not supposed to help you find a good husband?"

Dreamwake blinked, her gaze becoming much gentler than before. "Uncle, stop wasting your time worrying over this. He already has someone he loves. I can tell that his feelings towards his wife are genuine and deep."

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon said in an absolutely dominating manner, “We’ll just have him divorce her. If he dares to disobey, I’ll kill him. Or, I’ll just kill his little wife.”

“You can’t!” Dreamwake was shocked, and she hurriedly spoke out to object. “Uncle, you absolutely cannot do this. If he’s the type of person who would be willing to abandon his own wife, do you think his feelings towards me could possibly be genuine? In fact, if you kill his wife, it’ll be even less likely that we can be together.”

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon fell silent. Dreamwake took a deep breath, calming her stirred emotions. “Let’s make our preparations, Uncle.”

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon suddenly suggested, “How about... you marry him as well? I just feel that this is letting the kid off too easy.”

Chapter 249 Tenebrous Demon Sealing Formation (1)

Dreamwake was momentarily speechless, then said angrily, “Stop worrying about my business, alright? I’m not going to marry him. Did we really come all the way here to talk about this?”

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon actually seemed to be slightly afraid of Dreamwake. It hurriedly said, “Fine, fine. Let’s deal with the Terror Sea Dragon first. Are you ready?”

Dreamwake took another deep breath, then slowly nodded. An aura of tremendous power suddenly burst out from her, followed by rays of dark-golden light shining from her body. She went directly into the Tenebrous Demon Dragon Transformation.

Although Zhou Weiqing had flown very far away, he was still able to clearly make out Dreamwake’s figure atop the Tenebrous Demon Dragon. He watched as enormous dragon wings emerged from Dreamwake’s back as she put on the Legendary Set she had displayed before him previously.

The pieces of dark-golden scale armor appeared in front of her. Soon, all six pieces had appeared. The seventh piece, as he had guessed, was the helmet. Her helmet looked like a dragon’s maw. It didn’t have any feminine beauty at all, but it was filled with an aura of might. It completely covered her beautiful features. Alas, Zhou Weiqing was so far away that he couldn’t see her face at all. If he could, he would’ve realized that her mask was actually identical to that of Xuantian Palace Lord Dong Fang’s.

Seven pieces. This Legendary Set already had seven pieces. However, this clearly wasn’t Dreamwake’s limit. Moments later, the eighth piece appeared as well. The eighth piece sprouted out from her waist, and it flashed with powerful dark-golden light. The eighth piece actually wasn’t to be worn per se; rather, it connected her to the Tenebrous Demon Dragon’s draconic horn

which was behind her, securely latching her to the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's head. The dark-golden armor continued to ripple downwards, actually connecting together with the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's head.

A terrifying Tenebrous Attribute energy swept out from the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's body. A furious, dense flood of Tenebrous energy flowed out of the horn and into Dreamwake's body.

A ninth beam of dark-golden light appeared. This time, the piece of armor actually appeared on the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's back. Now, the dark-golden armor reached down from Dreamwake's legs to securely 'lock' her legs atop the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's head. The scales spread downwards across the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's neck, covering the reverse scale at the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's lower neck, which was its weak spot. It then continued to spread downwards until the entire neck was covered.

Good heavens! What type of Legendary Set IS this?

Zhou Weiqing stared stupefied at this sight. He could hardly believe what he was seeing. There was actually a Heavenly Jewel Master whose Legendary Set allowed her to completely merge together with a Heavenly Beast, and a great dragon at that?! Right now, Dreamwake and the Tenebrous Demon Dragon looked as though they were a single entity. The only thing Zhou Weiqing could sense was a single, awesome Heavenly God aura. No other energy ripples were present.

He swallowed hard. If he hadn't seen this personally, he never would've believed or imagined that this type of Legendary Set could be created. Dreamwake's ninth piece could clearly only been released when making use of the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's energy. Otherwise, there's no way it could've covered such an enormous area. In addition, the Tenebrous Demon Dragon was now much safer now that its 'reverse scale' had been covered, and

its combat power had undoubtedly increased dramatically.

The ninth piece. Was it over? Of course not. How could this mysterious, dazzling Legendary Set possibly have just nine pieces?

The tenth beam of dark-golden light flared. This time, the dark-golden light flew out from Dreamwake's head, and accompanying it was a long, leisurely draconic roar from the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's mouth. The powerful draconic roar caused enormous waves which were three hundred meters high to rise within the seas around them.

The dark-golden pillar of light soared upwards. Dreamwake lifted her right hand, and as she did so an eleventh beam of dark-golden light appeared! The eleventh beam of dark-golden light shone from her entire body!

A giant dark-golden longsword had appeared in front of her. The longsword was roughly seven meters long, and it was thick in the middle but sharp at both ends. It was completely black but covered with the carvings of two giant coiling dragons, with a dazzling red gem located between the dragons where their bodies intersected.

Dreamwake lifted her right draconic claw, gripping the entire double-headed longsword by the center. Boom! An enormous rumble spread out, causing the entire sea to groan as an utterly terrifying aura burst forth from the combined entity that was Dreamwake and the Tenebrous Demon Dragon.

A dazzling, blood-red light instantly replaced all of the dark-gold light. A blood-red sword, blood-red scaled armor... even the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's horn had become blood-red in color. What did this mean? This meant the Legendary Set was complete. Eleven. This was an eleven-piece set! An unbelievable eleven-piece Legendary Set!

Even in the Boundless Mainland, only the number one Legendary Set, the 'Boundless Infinitum' set, was comprised of eleven pieces. In the Xuantian Continent, however, Zhou Weiqing had the

chance to once again witness an eleven-piece set coming together, the Tenebrous Demon Dragon set. This was truly the Tenebrous Demon Dragon set, and it required one to join together with a Tenebrous Demon Dragon in order for its full power to be released.

From a certain perspective, the Tenebrous Demon Dragon set was slightly inferior to the Boundless Infinitum set, as it required the Tenebrous Demon Dragon to be used. However, in terms of actual power it probably actually surpassed the Boundless Infinitum set... because the set's master was riding a Heavenly God Tenebrous Demon Dragon!

Dreamwake, in her current state, would probably be a match for even the lord of Heavenly Snow Mountain. Although Zhou Weiqing had sparred against Dreamwake and had a very high opinion of her skills, when he actually saw her transform into a dragon rider he finally realized that he had still underestimated her.

Dreamwake was at a level of power where even without the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's help, Zhou Weiqing probably wouldn't be a match for her. No wonder even Xuantian Palace Lord Dong Fang had chosen to enter the Tenebrous Demon Sealing Formation while letting her remain outside and stand atop the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's head. She was actually their ultimate combat power in this battle, as her strength had become one with the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's strength.

A terrifying burst of energy exploded across the surface of the sea, while the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's draconic roar grew louder and louder. This was a challenge, an incomparably powerful challenged aimed at the Terror Sea Dragon.

Zhou Weiqing flapped his wings, sending himself a bit higher into the air so that he would have a better vantage point for this battle. A valuable experience like this was priceless for his future cultivation, but he didn't want to end up becoming collateral damage to the shockwaves.

After briefly feeling stunned, he actually felt a bit disappointed. The power demonstrated by the merger of Dreamwake and the Tenebrous Demon Dragon, especially when reinforced by the trickery of the Tenebrous Demon Sealing Formation, meant that even if the Terror Sea Dragon was a bit more powerful than the Tenebrous Demon Dragon, it was still probably going to end off the worse for the wear.

Given the situation, it seemed likely that there would be no need to use the Spatial Teleportation Gem. How was he supposed to accomplish his goal?

But of course, he couldn't change things just by wishing it. All he could do was keep watching and hope for an opportunity to arise.

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon's enormous wings were flapping hard, keeping its ponderous bulk aloft in the air above the sea. It blasted out its invincible aura without holding anything back, and its originally-clear draconic roar became thunderous and keening as its terrifying draconic might swept out to cover the world.

The distant Zhou Weiqing was nearly knocked out of the air by the might of this draconic roar. For an instant, it seemed as though the entire world was filled with dark Tenebrous Demon Clouds that were all filled with Tenebrous energy.

Was this the power of a Heavenly God? Even though Zhou Weiqing had previously seen the great dragon Hui Yao and the lord of Heavenly Snow Mountain, he had never before seen what a Heavenly God who was preparing to do battle looked like. As the Tenebrous Demon Dragon released the full weight of its might, Zhou Weiqing gained a brand new understanding of what it meant to be a Heavenly God.

Right now, he felt as though the Tenebrous Demon Dragon had already become the master and ruler of all it surveyed. Even the sea before it had to submit to him. Everything, from the heavens to the seas, seemed to have transformed into an incomparably vast

pool of Tenebrous energy, with the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's great form serving as the center of this pool.

Zhou Weiqing felt that he himself was tiny in comparison. If he didn't release his Saint Energy, his body could be torn to pieces at any moment. Even a glance from the Tenebrous Demon Dragon would be enough to destroy anything around it.

As for Dreamwake, who proudly stood atop the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's head, she was even more dazzling to behold. The blood-red light completely covered her body, and she held the seven-meter dragon spear up high. Her location was actually where the Tenebrous Demon Dragon was releasing the most terrifying amount of energy.

They were issuing a challenge to the Terror Sea Dragon, demanding it come to them! Although this was a simple, almost clumsy method, it was actually quite effective against Heavenly Gods.

All Heavenly Gods were incomparably proud. They viewed their dignity as being more important than anything else. The sea was the domain of the Terror Sea Dragon, and there was no way it would not respond to a challenge issued within it. If it really failed to come, then in the future it would never be able to raise its head up proudly within the seas.

Zhou Weiqing grew inexplicably nervous. How could he not be? Heavenly Gods were about to do battle before him. Although Xuantian Palace had made ample preparations, this was still the ocean. The Terror Sea Dragon wouldn't be easy to deal with... and Zhou Weiqing himself had to be ready to seize the Spatial Teleportation Gem at all times. What discomfited him the most was that Xuantian Palace had treated him very well, especially Dreamwake. He had taken advantage of her, and although she had tried to take 'revenge' upon him, Zhou Weiqing could sense that she cared about him. Even after he had assaulted her chest in that special Spatial zone, she had never truly evinced the desire to kill

him.

And so, Zhou Weiqing's ideal outcome was to somehow acquire the Spatial Teleportation Gem without harming Dreamwake or these other people.

Chapter 249 Tenebrous Demon Sealing Formation (1)

This was just the type of person he was. He'd repay kindness and treachery in like coin. He wasn't comfortable repaying kindness with treachery!

And so, Zhou Weiqing was feeling rather conflicted. He knew that this was the best chance he would have, but he wouldn't necessarily actually intervene. It would all have to be based on how the situation developed. He had even considered revealing his true identity. Would Xuantian Palace perhaps agree to loan him the Spatial Teleportation Gem? Probably not. The Grand Elders had already stated earlier that the Spatial Teleportation Gem didn't have many uses left. To try and borrow it at a time like this was rather unlikely.

Forget it. I'll play it by the ear. While considering his options, Zhou Weiqing carefully kept watch on the surrounding area. This entire place had been blanketed by the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's mighty Tenebrous energies and its spiritual power, making it so that Zhou Weiqing didn't dare to fully unleash all of his own senses. If he did, if he was unlucky he might suffer a heavy wound. And so, all he could do was watch with his eyes.

Zhou Weiqing was located a bit further back in the direction they had come from, with the Xuantian Continent behind him. The Terror Sea Dragon lived in the deep oceans, after all. If he waited here, it was unlikely that the Terror Sea Dragon would suddenly appear next to him.

This entire time, the Tenebrous Demon Dragon had not halted its roar. Its proud, mighty draconic roar only grew louder and louder, while the aura bursting from its body only increased in dominating might. It wasn't just summoning the natural Tenebrous atmospheric energies, it was also enhancing its own posture and

aura.

At the Heavenly God level, every single clash was filled with incredible danger. Even the slightest of mistakes could result in a battle being lost.

Right at this moment, Zhou Weiqing suddenly narrowed his eyes. Far away, a surge of absolutely terrifying power had begun to manifest itself. Zhou Weiqing was actually able to see it clearly when it appeared, because the dark storm clouds which had covered the skies and blocked his vision had actually been swept away like the waves. They left behind not the azure-blue sky, but rather a vast, boundless killer wave that rose up to cover the heavens themselves.

That's right. It was a wave! This terrifying wave was nearly connected to the highest reaches of heaven itself, and it swept out with incomprehensible speed as a horrifying ocean tsunami which hurtled towards them.

It really was the ruler of the seas. This was the power of the Terror Sea Dragon, right? Zhou Weiqing felt tremendously shocked, and he sent himself hurriedly backwards as well.

He could vaguely see that in the exact center of that vast wave, there was an enormous draconic head formed out of ocean water that was bellow ferociously. It was like the roar of the sea itself, and it actually managed to forcibly overwhelm the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's roar.

Such incredible power! The color of the sea almost instantly turned a clear blue color, as though all other colors had been pushed off to one side. The entire sea itself seemed to roil and shudder as the terrifying giant wave rose higher and higher. The dense Water Attribute atmospheric energies burst forth like a geyser, furiously driving away the Tenebrous energies nearby.

This was the ocean, after all. The strongest, densest Attribute here remained Water! In addition, the Terror Sea Dragon's

cultivation base was above the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's to begin with. As their energies clashed against each other, the aura which the Tenebrous Demon Dragon had just established moments ago quickly began to weaken.

However, the Tenebrous Demon Dragon didn't back down in the slightest. Although it gradually halted its draconic roar, the storm clouds in the air above it solidified to become nearly physical. They continuously clashed against that distant, awesome tidal wave, with flickers of light being generated with each collision. All of the various elemental Attributes in the world were trembling violently.

This was a battle between Heavenly Gods. The sea or the storm clouds... both represented the mighty power of nature. These Heavenly Gods were able to summon the mighty power of nature to do battle against each other.

Zhou Weiqing watched, his eyes shining excitedly. He probably wouldn't have many chances to see battles like this in his life. Even the tiniest bit of energy or experience he managed to gain out of this would be of tremendous benefit to his future cultivation.

The towering tidal wave suddenly came to a halt, roughly three thousand meters away. The tidal wave slowly parted, revealing to Zhou Weiqing an incomparably massive figure which appeared within the crystal-clear blue waters of the sea.

Terror Sea Dragon. So this is a Terror Sea Dragon? The Tenebrous Demon Dragon looked quite savage, but compared to the Terror Sea Dragon the Tenebrous Demon Dragon was definitely a 'handsome lad'.

The Terror Sea Dragon's body was far larger than the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's. It was over a hundred meters long, but it had no wings. Its entire body was long and round, but it was covered with deep blue spikes. The spikes around its head in particular were very large, with each being at least half a meter wide. The spikes

matched its open maw in ferocity and ugliness, but they also gave it a sense of limitless majesty.

“You finally came? You are no longer going to hide away in that gorge of yours?” The Terror Sea Dragon’s voice sounded like that of a strong man’s, and its tone was full of disdain.

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon’s gaze was extremely focused. As it had suspected, this Terror Sea Dragon had reached an even higher cultivation base than itself had... and it had yet to enter the Tenebrous Demon Sealing Formation’s reach.

“You’ve been bringing storms and calamities to the seashore, bringing misery to the masses. Are you not afraid of divine punishment? You should know that our level, we need to be prepared for punishment from the heavens at all times,” the Tenebrous Demon Dragon said coldly.

“Ahahaha...” The Terror Sea Dragon seemed to have heard the funniest joke in the world, and it laughed with abandon. “Divine punishment? You speak to me of bringing misery to the masses? By what right? And that human on your head... humans bring more misery to their fellows than anyone else! How much profit do you humans take from our vast oceans each year? How many seawelling creatures do you slaughter? You speak to me of misery? Of divine punishment? Not even the heavens are necessarily able to subdue me! Tenebrous Demon Dragon, years ago my father was lured onto land and murdered by Xuantian Palace with your help. After all these years, I’ve finally achieved my cultivation goals. So long as I live, the people of Xuantian Palace can forget about making a living off of my seas.”

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon’s eyes turned even colder. “Your father? It wouldn’t have died if it wasn’t so damn arrogant. Don’t forget what it did! It used sea beasts to lure in Heavenly Jewel Masters, then devoured them to strengthen itself. It actually devoured many Heavenly King-level Heavenly Core Nuclei! It aroused the wrath of all Jewel Masters, which is why Xuantian

Palace intervened. In the end, we paid a great price to deal with it. Are you planning to follow in its footsteps?”

The Terror Sea Dragon said disdainfully, “Don’t give me that nonsense. You should know that our world is one where the strongest rule as kings. Humans? Humans are nothing more than insects. If it wasn’t for the fact that they have an affinity for cultivation which far surpasses that of us Heavenly Beasts, they wouldn’t even be able to survive in this world. The ocean is mine! I am the lord of the entire ocean. For you humans to encroach upon the sea is the same as insulting me. Today, I’ll first wipe out the lot of you, then go deal with the humans on Xuantian Continent. If my cultivation base progresses one step further, it would be possible for me to overturn the entire Xuantian Continent.”

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon coveted the Terror Sea Dragon’s Heavenly Core Nucleus, but the Terror Sea Dragon coveted the Tenebrous Demon Dragon’s as well! This Terror Sea Dragon probably knew a great deal about the Xuantian Continent. The only one in the entire Xuantian Continent capable of withstanding it was this Heavenly God-level Tenebrous Demon Dragon. Once it killed the Tenebrous Demon Dragon, the entire Xuantian Continent would be ripe for the plucking. After that, it might even be in a position to lust after the distant Boundless Mainland. But of course, for now that was just a passing fancy. It would have to seriously consider all of its options before actually heading to the Boundless Mainland, as that was the place where the Dragon Emperor Lineage came from.

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon’s wings slowly spread open as it stared at the wave-shrouded Terror Sea Dragon, then growled, “Since you are determined to persist in the error of your ways, today shall be the day of your death. You’ll share the same fate as your father.”

After speaking, the Tenebrous Demon Dragon let out a furious roar, then sent its ponderous body shooting into the air. Moments

later, the Tenebrous Demon Clouds in the air suddenly pulled back to instead surround the Tenebrous Demon Dragon.

Just a blink of an eye later, an enormous streak of black light slammed right into the great wave on the opposite side.

The black light was completely formed out of Tenebrous Demon Clouds. As it shot out, it began to reveal the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's form within it. The sky-blotting Tenebrous Demon Clouds suddenly and completely vanished, which meant that this strike had actually consolidated all of the power of those clouds.

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon knew just how powerful the Terror Sea Dragon was in the ocean, and so it immediately attacked with maximum power. The enormous streak of black light completely solidified into the form of the Tenebrous Demon Dragon, but it was still a pure energy construct. This terrifying burst of energy flashed forwards, smashing thunderously into the great wave.

The Terror Sea Dragon shook its great head within the wave. Instantly, an incomparably vast draconic head formed from the waves of the sea soared into the skies, clashing fiercely against the cloud-formed Tenebrous Demon Dragon.

Boom! Zhou Weiqing felt as though his soul itself was shaking. He actually plummeted straight into the ocean as his soul seemed to explode. The pressure shockwave from that terrifying collision had actually blasted him into the ocean!

If Zhou Weiqing had been any other six-Jeweled Heavenly Master, he probably would've been killed by that shockwave. Thankfully, he had an incredibly strong body and Saint Energy.

A collision between Heavenly Gods was definitely enough to destroy the world around them!

Moments later, the real energy shockwave from that collision completely exploded. The sea itself was thrown into turmoil. By

the time Zhou Weiqing's head popped up above the surface of the sea, he saw the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's vast body hurtle backwards. Clearly, it had come off somewhat the worse in that clash.

A beam of blood-red light suddenly shot out from the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's head. That light had been unleashed from the dragon spear in Dreamwake's hands.

Something strange happened. That arrogant Terror Sea Dragon revealed a rather nervous look when it saw the blood-red light. It ceased its pursuit and instead sent its vast bulk diving deep into the ocean.

Chapter 250: Zhou Weiqings Choice (1)

As the blood-colored streak of light pierced into the ocean waters, this time there was no accompanying explosion. Instead, the entire patch of ocean water instantly turned into a brilliant red, as if stained by fresh blood.

Currently, Zhou Weiqing was in the ocean water, rather far from the actual battle ground. However, in that instant, he felt as though the entire waters around him was turning cold; the terrifying energy fluctuations so strong that it felt as if his entire body was being torn apart.

What kind of energy was this?

Vaguely, Zhou Weiqing could sense that the icy power was filled with both the Darkness and Demonic Attributes. Besides that, there was also a strange destructive power that seemed to bring a tearing sensation.

A Fusion Skill. This had to be a Fusion Skill.

Zhou Weiqing immediately made the judgement. Furthermore, this was a true Fusion Skill between the Darkness and Demonic Attributes. Zhou Weiqing had six-Attributes of his own, and more importantly, he was the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya's disciple. In that short period of time, he had already accurately assessed this blow from Dreamwake and analysed it thoroughly.

The blow that Dreamwake's Dragon Spear had released was indeed the Tenebrous Attribute, but it was not as simple as that. Instead, it was a subtle sublimation and evolving, tantamount to a true Fusion Skill of the Darkness and Demonic Attribute.

As for what this Skill was exactly, he was not clear. However, he understood that if the target had been himself, when that spear pierced down, and he did not have proper preparation, even the

Saint Energy would not be able to save him.

Dreamwake's power was actually so strong to such a degree. Even that arrogant Terror Sea Dragon had been forced by the single blow to duck back into the ocean.

“ROAR---” A ferocious dragon howl rang out, filled with utter rage. At the same time, a dark blue ray of light soared out from the ocean waters abruptly, splitting into countless water arrows shooting out at lightning speeds.

Instantly, they shot towards the Tenebrous Demon Dragon and Dreamwake in midair.

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon's wings spread out, and a massive purplish black whirlpool appeared below its body. The water arrows all slammed into the whirlpool, vanishing into nothingness at once.

The Dragon Spear in Dreamwake's hands pierced out once more. This time, a total of twelve streaks of blood-colored light shot forth one after the other, actually splitting up into different directions.

Without even another second of thought, Zhou Weiqing flew out from the ocean waters once more, flying back as quickly as he could in retreat. Previously, it was just a single spear strike, and it had already affected him despite the distance. This time, it was twelve spear strikes, and he could just imagine how terrifying the power behind those strikes added up would be. He did not want to become the misfortunate hapless one again.

The alarming amount of energy in the air rose constantly, and a resplendent light abruptly rose from the oceans to meet it.

It was a bright blue shield of light, forcefully blocking all twelve piercing streaks of blood-coloured light.

However, a strange sight occurred next. The seemingly solid blue shield of light was actually unable to fully block the piercing of the twelve streaks of blood-coloured light. Instead, twelve small holes

were forcefully pierced in it, causing it to shatter.

It was no wonder the Terror Sea Dragon had been so afraid of the previous streak of blood-coloured light. Even when it released a Heavenly God Tier defensive Skill, it was still unable to block them. Was this the true power of Dreamwake's full eleven-piece Legendary Set, fusing her own strength with that of the Tenebrous Demon Dragon? Eleven pieces of Legendary Set God Tier Consolidated Equipment! Their strength truly lived up to their name indeed.

Zhou Weiqing's heart was slightly envious. After all, although his 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set was also extremely powerful, it currently had the limit of being a ten-piece Legendary Set. Just thinking about the power boost he would gain from completing ten pieces of his own Legendary Set, Zhou Weiqing could vaguely guess the sheer terror that would be this eleven-piece Set, and what it granted to both Dreamwake and the Tenebrous Demon Dragon.

The oceans water parted, almost as if split apart, and in a massive clashing sound, the Terror Sea Dragon rose from the ocean, soaring into the skies. Although it did not have wings, as a Heavenly God Tier powerhouse, how could it not be able to fly?

Horrifying energy reverberations exploded from its body instantly, its ferocious body pouncing directly at the Tenebrous Demon Dragon. At the same time, all of the spikes on the Terror Sea Dragon's body turned a sapphire blue colour, and more than a thousand rays of blue light shot forth in all directions.

The speed of the blue light was just too quick. Although Zhou Weiqing saw it extremely quickly, it was already too late to dodge it. That was because as soon as the blue light appeared, the water attribute in the atmosphere was actually frozen solid, causing his entire body to be freeze and harden in midair.

This was not even the Terror Sea Dragon purposely targeting

him, but the power of a Heavenly God Tier was just too great, and even a casual swipe could cause the entire world around to shake.

Not good! Zhou Weiqing exclaimed in his heart. Left with no choice, he could no longer hide the Saint Energy, forced to use it to protect himself.

Just as he was circulating his Saint Energy and preparing to protect himself, to break free of the Water Attribute Fetters.

All of a sudden, the Tenebrous Demon Dragon turned slightly in midair, swooping down in a sloping fashion. At the same time, tens of thousands of the blood-coloured lights sprayed forth from Dreamwake's Dragon Spear.

Instantly, the world itself seemed to distort around them. However, to Zhou Weiqing's surprise, all of the blue light that was in his direction were now blocked by a ray of blood light.

She is doing this to save me! Zhou Weiqing's heart shook, as a strange warmth rose in his heart.

Even as they were facing such a powerful foe like the Terror Sea Dragon, Dreamwake was still looking out for him at such a distance. Putting their power levels aside, just this sentiment alone had seared itself deeply into Zhou Weiqing's heart.

Although this rascal Zhou Weiqing was definitely a perverted and wretched fellow, he placed much importance on feelings and emotions. When someone treated him well, he would pay back ten times in return. Dreamwake herself did not know that just this subconscious action of hers had caused Zhou Weiqing to have a sudden rise in approval and opinion of her.

PENG

For the very first time, the two massive bodies of the Terror Sea Dragon and the Tenebrous Demon Dragon slammed savagely into each other.

In terms of absolute strength, the Tenebrous Demon Dragon was

definitely no match for the Terror Sea Dragon. Its body was sent flying by the impact, and it was also struck by more than a hundred rays of the blue light, causing scales and blood to spray from the air.

However, the Terror Sea Dragon did not get off easy as well. If it were just facing the Tenebrous Demon Dragon alone, then it would definitely be able to tear the Tenebrous Demon Dragon to shreds by paying a certain price. However, standing on the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's head, Dreamwake was actually posing a far greater threat than even the Tenebrous Demon Dragon itself.

By this point, more than forty spikes on the Terror Sea Dragon had actually been vaporised from their attacks, and its injuries were no less than that of the Tenebrous Demon Dragon. Although with its powerful defense, it could still normally block Dreamwake's attacks, when it seized the chance to injure the Tenebrous Demon Dragon, Dreamwake's Dragon Spear had also reach the front of its face.

Naturally, it did not want to use its own body to accept a blow from that terrifying Dragon Spear. After all, the Dragon Spear in Dreamwake's hands was a fusion piece of the last two pieces of her Legendary Set. In any Legendary Set, the Consolidating Equipment Scrolls of the later pieces were definitely harder to create, and their power was correspondingly stronger. Furthermore, this was even a fusion of two pieces... that of an eleven-piece Legendary Set! Added on with the power of the Tenebrous Demon Dragon, one could just imagine the sheer power behind this spear.

The reason why the Terror Sea Dragon was so afraid of this Dragon Spear was because in the past, its father had perished to this very spear. The power of this spear... even a Mid Level Heavenly God Tier powerhouse like itself would not be able to accept so easily.

The terrifying energy reverberations shook throughout the air around them. Zhou Weiqing did not know what the Terror Sea

Dragon was thinking, but in that clash, it seemed like it did not gain any advantage.

The massive body of the Tenebrous Demon Dragon spun in midair, a magnificent dragon roar emitting from its throat. Previously, the successful blow they had landed caused its confidence to grow. It had been a long time since it had fought in unison with a companion with the full Tenebrous Demon Dragon Legendary Set. In fact, it had almost forgotten the true power of that Dragon Spear. Even it had not imagined that Dreamwake could wield that Tenebrous Dragon Slaying Spear to such a degree.

That scary Dragon Spear pierced forward once more, and the bloodshot eyes of Dreamwake did not seem to hold any emotions as her attention and spirit were fully locked onto the Terror Sea Dragon.

The Terror Sea Dragon gave an enraged roar, its body beginning to glow brightly once more. This time, it was not just its body, even the ocean beneath it began to glow. A shocking amount of Water Attribute energies gathered instantly, forming a huge cage of atmospheric power, forcefully enclosing the Tenebrous Demon Dragon and Dreamwake in it.

The Tenebrous Dragon Slaying Spear pierced out several times in succession, and the Tenebrous Demon Dragon also launched several powerful attacks simultaneously. However, as soon as the attacks touched the icy blue cage, they actually disappeared just as swiftly. Even if it was damaged slightly, the constantly gushing water attribute flowing from below would quickly replenish and repair the damage done.

Having unleashed this powerful skill, the Terror Sea Dragon clearly showed signs of fatigue, but its eyes were extremely excited.

“This is my Domain, so what if your combined powers can match mine? You will never be able to match the power of the entire oceans. Die, all of you... die! Hahahaha... once your Tenebrous

Attribute energy is expended, that will be the time you will remain forever in my oceans.”

Right at that moment, Dreamwake’s eyes suddenly lit up. She lifted the Dragon Spear high above her head, and a ball of blood-coloured light shone from the tip of the spear, forming the semblance of a petal.

The blood-red petal did not destroy this Ocean Cage that the Terror Sea Dragon had summoned. Instead, in the next moment, twelve pillars of pitch black light suddenly soared into the skies from all directions.

The Tenebrous Sealing Formation that had been prepared for such a long time had finally been activated.

Both Dreamwake and the Tenebrous Demon Dragon had known that even with their joined forces, they would never be able to actually kill the Terror Sea Dragon in the middle of the ocean. To be able to fight it to a standstill and retreat fully intact would already be a feat in itself. However, they had come fully prepared for this! The Tenebrous Sealing Formation, this was a ‘gift’ they had prepared specially for this Terror Sea Dragon. It could be said that all of the previous fighting, all the changes and variances, while real, was all bait for the Terror Sea Dragon. The true reason was for it to enter the boundaries of the Tenebrous Sealing Formation. Once that happened, it would truly become the meat on their chopping board, easy pickings for them to slay.

As expected, when the twelve pillars of black light rose into the sky, the Terror Sea Dragon started in surprise. Soon, that surprise turned into alarm, even panic, as its massive body shot forward in a flash. A thousand metres was a distance that could be covered in a mere blink to a powerhouse like it, but alas as soon as it reached the borders of the formation, it smashed savagely into one of the pillars of light and was sent bouncing back.

Chapter 250: Zhou Weiqings Choice (2)

With the XuanTian Palace Leader Dong Fang at their head, the four Grand Elders, six of the strongest Heavenly King powerhouse Elders, and the God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master Nie Han, the twelve of them formed this Tenebrous Sealing Formation together.

This was a Killing Formation completed by five Heavenly Emperors and seven Heavenly Kings! Such a massive gathering of power, even if they were to take on the Terror Sea Dragon head-on, though they would never be able to win, they would be able to hold it off for some time. Furthermore, they had spent so much time and resources preparing for this moment, using many precious treasures... all of it for this instant, the chance to finish off the Terror Sea Dragon.

The Terror Sea Dragon was sent flying back into the ocean waters. Alas, as it dove deep into the waters, they were no longer the same as before.

The pitch black ocean waters was no longer translucent at all, and as soon as it was immersed into the waters, the Terror Sea Dragon could clearly sense its own body being enveloped by a massive amount of Tenebrous energies. The pressure that gave it a suffocating feel was instantly pushing at it from all directions. Originally, the surroundings had been full of water attribute energies, but they had now vanished totally. Instead, the surrounding waters seemed to have totally become liquid formed from Tenebrous Attribute energies.

Without Water Attribute energies, without the support of the ocean, how could the massive Ocean Cage continue holding the Tenebrous Demon Dragon?

“Hahahaha, bet you never imagined this right? Although we knew it would be impossible to lure you to the shores just like the

previous time, we still have this method. Now, in the Tenebrous Sealing Formation, how much of your power can you actually use?”

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon laughed smugly. The Terror Sea Dragon had finally fallen for their trap, the painstaking efforts they had gone through had indeed paid off. This Tenebrous Sealing Formation formed by so many powerhouses, even if the Tenebrous Demon Dragon wasn't within as well, it would take the Terror Sea Dragon quite some effort to break out of it.

The effect of the Tenebrous Sealing Formation was formidable indeed, with the thick Tenebrous Attribute energies within causing the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's power to greatly increase. As the saying goes, as one waxes, the other wanes. The original inferior position had been reversed to a vastly superior one now.

hwalala The sound of water falling rang out as the massive body of the Terror Sea Dragon burst out of the ocean waters. In that instant, its entire body seemed to become transparent, somehow turning into a bluish crystalline state. This was its method of pushing its cultivation to the maximum. With its Heavenly God state of power, even without the aid of the ocean, its power was not to be underestimated. At the same time, a unparalleled loud and resonant dragon cry resounded from its throat.

To the surprise of all the Xuantian powerhouses, although it was in a tight corner, the Terror Sea Dragon did not seem panicked at all.

The Tenebrous Sealing Formation might be able to trap its body, to block out all of the Water Attribute energies, causing it to be filled with Tenebrous energies... but it was unable to block out its penetrating voice.

“No good! Quick, take action now, we need to kill him now! I'm afraid he has a companion!” Even hidden behind her mask, Dreamwake's expression changed. With her intelligence, how

could she not see through what was going on?

Even when driven to such a tight corner, the Terror Sea Dragon did not seem worried or anxious, instead giving out such a resounding cry. The only explanation that made sense could only be that. Furthermore, its companion was definitely of high cultivation as well, otherwise it wouldn't remain so calm.

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon and Dreamwake were emphatically connected, and with a thick mass of Tenebrous Attribute energies, they charged towards the Terror Sea Dragon like a flash of lightning.

At such levels of power, many Skills had already lost their meaning. Their powerful bodies could even withstand some Heavenly God Tier Skills without too much issues. Only by using their Personal Fusion Skills to launch attacks could they actually deal serious injuries to their opponents.

PENG

Once again, the two massive bodies slammed savagely into each other in midair.

The Tenebrous Sealing Formation's effect was definitely strong indeed, and the previously arrogant and all-powerful Terror Sea Dragon was actually sent flying back this time. The Tenebrous Dragon Slaying Spear in Dreamwake's hands directly left a row of holes on its body.

However, the life force of a Dragon was just too strong. Despite its injuries, it gave off a furious roar before launching a flurry of crazed attacks at both the Tenebrous Demon Dragon and Dreamwake.

A Heavenly God Tier powerhouse was a Heavenly God Tier powerhouse after all! With the Terror Sea Dragon going berserk and going all out in a desperate fight, even though the Tenebrous Sealing Formation giving the two of them an absolute advantage,

both Dreamwake and the Tenebrous Demon Dragon could not possibly kill it in such a short period of time. Naturally, with this advantage, given enough time they could easily drag it to death. Without replenishment from atmospheric energies, its berserk fighting style would never be able to last for a long period of time. Alas, since it had chosen this method of fighting, it definitely had no fear and was likely emboldened by its incoming companion! No matter Dreamwake, the Tenebrous Demon Dragon, or the other Xuantian powerhouses, they couldn't help but feel a vague sense of unease.

The power fluctuations in the Tenebrous Sealing Formation was extremely violent, and each exchange of blows caused a strong shockwave that resulted in the twelve pillars of black light also shuddering.

In the end, it was Zhou Weiqing who was entirely outside of the formation that was now the most comfortable. With the separation of the entire Tenebrous Sealing Formation, he was not even the slightest affected.

Once again, he flew out from the ocean waters. At last, he had the feeling of watching two tigers fight from a hilltop.

Although the Terror Sea Dragon was pitting its life in a desperate fight, it was clearly much weaker in the Tenebrous Sealing Formation. Zhou Weiqing could only watch on helplessly. It looked like it would not be able to last too long.

The most critical issue was the Tenebrous Dragon Slaying Spear in Dreamwake's hand. It was just too powerful, and every time it struck out, it would leave an injury on the Terror Sea Dragon's body. What kind of level had its offensive power reached? Zhou Weiqing could not even begin to imagine it, but he knew that if this continued for much longer, the Terror Sea Dragon would definitely die. That was to say.. Perhaps he might not even get to see the Spatial Teleportation Gem.

Right at that moment, Zhou Weiqing suddenly felt his soul pulse strongly in warning. Subconsciously, he looked into the distance, and as soon as he did so, he drew a cold breath as goosebumps appeared all over his body, his hair standing on end.

Far in the distance at the horizon, a clear, eye-catching 'shoreline' was speeding towards their direction. When he looked closer, Zhou Weiqing realised that was not any shoreline, but an immense wave that seemed to reach the skies! Outside of the Tenebrous Sealing Formation, his senses were once again heightened to the max, and he could clearly feel a terrifying pressure appear once more. Although it was slightly weaker as compared to the first appearance of the Terror Sea Dragon, since there also wasn't the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's aura to help counter it, Zhou Weiqing felt as if the new, powerful aura was pressuring so hard that he could barely breathe.

If it were any other time, even if it was today before he witnessed the fight, perhaps Zhou Weiqing's judgement would be slightly inaccurate. However, having just witnessed the clash between the Heavenly God Tier powerhouses, which had left such a deep impression on him, how could he forget?!

Heavenly God Tier! That pressure was actually from another Heavenly God Tier powerhouse! How... how could this be?!

Alas, the facts spoke for themselves. In this world, never deem anything impossible. That massive wave that soared to the skies was indeed speeding towards them at a nearly impossible rate.

Since Zhou Weiqing had seen it, naturally those within the Tenebrous Sealing Formation had also seen it.

"Damn. What is going on?! How could there be another Terror Sea Dragon?" The Tenebrous Demon Dragon howled in both shock and anger. Another resounding explosion, as his huge tail flung out, slamming into the trapped Terror Sea Dragon once more, causing it to be slammed into the barrier of the Tenebrous Sealing

Formation again.

“Hahahaha! You all never imagined this right? Today will mark all of your death anniversaries. Did you really think I was so foolish to make the same mistakes as my father? Since he fell to you contemptible humans and your trickeries in the past, This Dragon has naturally made preparations. If not for the fact I was waiting for my little brother to also reach the Heavenly God Stage, would I have waited until now? Although he has only just reached this stage, and hasn’t properly stabilized it fully, it is more than enough to take care of you all. Your rubbish formation might be difficult to break out of, but if it is attacked from outside...? Hahaha, you are all dead!”

The Terror Sea Dragon snarled hysterically, its berserk state growing instead of receding. Although it would sustain great injuries and hurt its primordial qi, as long as it could endure until the incoming Terror Sea Dragon reached them and destroyed the Tenebrous Sealing Formation, with the combined might of the two of them, none of those present, not even the Tenebrous Demon Dragon, would be able to survive.

Indeed, this trapped Terror Sea Dragon’s judgement was extremely accurate. The Tenebrous Sealing Formation was targeted towards those trapped within, and even a Heavenly God powerhouse would not be able to break free so easily. However, if one attacked from outside... the situation would be vastly different.

In order to greatly increase the internal defenses, the majority of the power of the Tenebrous Sealing Formation was naturally focused within. Once an external attack came, it would be much easier to injure those who were made out the structure of the formation. If that other Terror Sea Dragon really reached them, all of them would definitely die. Without the Tenebrous Sealing Formation, the trapped one would even recover its full power; even though it was already injured, both Dreamwake and the

Tenebrous Demon Dragon had expended a lot of energy to deal those injuries. The end result would be a single Heavenly God powerhouse against two... Naturally, let alone defeating them, even surviving would be an issue unless they made use of the Spatial Teleportation Gem.

The mantis stalking the cicada, alas unaware of the oriole behind. This Terror Sea Dragon actually had its own cunning scheme! Despite all their preparations, the Xuantian powerhouses were now facing the awkward situation of their possible incoming deaths!

If those two Terror Sea Dragons really succeeded, then the highest power in all of the Xuantian Continent would be destroyed in one fell swoop. Just like what the Terror Sea Dragon said earlier; if that really happened, even if they were Ocean Heavenly Beasts, they could still conquer the entire Xuantian Continent easily. After all, they were still Heavenly Gods!

How fast could a Heavenly God powerhouse move? In just the short period of time, the Terror Sea Dragon in the distance had already closed half the gap. If not for the fact that it had been hiding its aura and not wanting the Tenebrous Demon Dragon and the other Xuantian Palace powerhouses to discover it, and if it chose to hide much closer, perhaps they would already be facing their deaths right now.

Dreamwake gritted her teeth as she continued attacking in unison with the Tenebrous Demon Dragon. At the same time, she asked it: "What should we do now?"

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon was currently feeling slightly panicked. Although it had lived for more than ten thousand years, it still did not wish to die now!

Chapter 250: Zhou Weiqings Choice (3)

“Fight with everything you have. Before the other one arrives, let’s injure this one as much as we can. Every second matters right now. Once the Tenebrous Sealing Formation is broken apart, don’t hesitate; immediately use the Spatial Teleportation Gem to depart. ‘So long as the mountains remain, there will always be firewood to harvest’ – as long as we can make it out, we’ll have a chance. If we are too slow, we won’t be able to escape.”

Dreamwake was feeling extremely conflicted. So long as the core components of the Spatial Teleportation Gem remained undamaged, it could at most teleport away a total of ten living beings at once. The choice of the ten had to be made within a certain range, which meant that not only would they have to sacrifice several of the Elders, even the distant Zhou Weiqing would be doomed. He wasn’t within the range of the Spatial Teleportation Gem.

Once the Tenebrous Sealing Formation was broken... unless Dreamwake and the Tenebrous Demon Dragon immediately flew over to him and ensured he was in range, he would without a question perish.

However... if she did this, what would happen to the powerhouses of Xuantian Palace? Even though they had five Heavenly Emperors, it was virtually guaranteed that they would die when facing a pair of Heavenly God Terror Sea Dragons!

The distant Terror Sea Dragon was drawing closer and closer. Although the one within the Tenebrous Sealing Formation was suffering more and more wounds, there wasn’t enough time for the Tenebrous Demon Dragon and Dreamwake to deal a truly lethal injury to it. Looks of terror appeared simultaneously upon the faces of the Xuantian Palace powerhouses who had set up this formation. The Grand Elders weren’t as worried, as they knew that they wouldn’t be abandoned once the Spatial Teleportation Gem

was activated... but that wasn't the case for the six ordinary Elders. If a few people had to be abandoned, it would definitely be some of them! Their trembling hearts and minds even caused the Tenebrous Sealing Formation which they were maintaining to grow a bit unsteady.

Dreamwake was agonizing over what to do, but she had no idea that someone outside was even more agonized than her. Dreamwake needed to consider whether or not she would rescue Zhou Weiqing, but Zhou Weiqing needed to consider far, far more things.

He was already able to clearly see their distant new visitor. Yet another Terror Sea Dragon had appeared within his field of vision, ensconced by the awesome tidal wave. Compared to the previous Terror Sea Dragon, it was noticeably smaller and weaker. It was only eighty meters long... but even so, it was already at the Heavenly God level! Even though it was just a new Heavenly God, there was no way a Heavenly Emperor could be a match for it.

What to do? Zhou Weiqing was already beginning to panic. Yet another Terror Sea Dragon had appeared. Without question, it was his chance to seize the Spatial Teleportation Gem... but would he really be able to survive, even if he did manage to acquire it? Even if he did survive, Dreamwake and the others would probably all die here!

Zhou Weiqing's heart was filled with many contradictory impulses. The worst part of it was, he didn't have any time to really think things over.

He took a deep breath, finally making a decision. Even though he knew this decision was perhaps rather unwise, he also knew that this was the only choice he wouldn't regret later on.

His enormous wings flapped. Moments later, six dark-golden beams of light simultaneously emanated from different parts of his body. The wings propelled him forward like a streak of dark-

golden light, and he headed straight towards that awesome, heaven-covering wave.

Right at this moment, Zhou Weiqing's voice rang out within the Tenebrous Sealing Formation. "Dreamwake, kill that Terror Sea Dragon as soon as possible. I'll help you hold off the other one for a while."

Zhou Weiqing's voice was fairly calm and not many emotions could be detected within it, but when the experts of Xuantian Palace heard this voice, all of their eyes turned red. Dreamwake was no exception.

As the saying goes, true friendship is revealed through adversity. As far as they knew, Zhou Weiqing was nothing more than a six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master! They were now facing great danger, but instead of being scared silly or fleeing for his life, he stepped up and moved into the path of danger for the sake of buying them what would probably be just a fleeting moment.

Prior to this day, the Elders respected Zhou Weiqing, but only for his Consolidating skills. His voice wasn't that loud, but when the Elders heard it they gained a completely different view of him. No matter what his real cultivation base was and regardless of if he would be able to actually block the Terror Sea Dragon for even an instant, for him to be able to say something like that at a time like this instantly ignited the fighting spirit of all the Xuantian Palace powerhouses.

Several of the Elders had been filled with nervous fear, but their spirits instantly blazed up. Even a weak little six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master was able to view death with such aplomb, to have the courage to face the other Terror Sea Dragon by himself. What did the rest of them have to fear?!

Dreamwake gritted her teeth so hard, they sank deep into her lips. She had always been calm and noble, but in this instant she let out a throat-rending scream. "BASTARD!!! YOU BETTER STAY

ALIVE...!" Her voice was extremely loud and shrill, but anyone who heard it would sense the powerlessness within it.

How could a six-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master possibly survive an encounter against a Heavenly God Terror Sea Dragon?

Tears uncontrollably fell down Dreamwake's face. Regret like she had never felt before had completely suffused her heart.

She regretted having gone back on her oath. She still clearly remembered what she had sworn on that day, and if she was given another chance she would've given herself unhesitatingly to this man. She knew she liked him. Why did she have to be so conservative and keep herself at a distance? Why?!

Was everything which was now happening due to the heavens punishing her for breaking her oath?

No... no... Weiqing... you have to live! Grief transformed into power. Within the Tenebrous Sealing Formation, it was no longer just the Terror Sea Dragon which had gone crazy in fighting for its life. Dreamwake had gone berserk as well, and she led even the Tenebrous Demon Dragon in erupting with all its power.

The terrifying darkness instantly transformed into a bloody crimson. Starting from Dreamwake's position, the blood color began to stretch downwards across the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's body, almost instantly reaching out to cover every inch of it.

An incomparably terrifying aura caused the Tenebrous energies within the Tenebrous Sealing Formation to wildly pour into the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's body. So much energy was being drained out of the powerful formation that it actually grew weaker and brittle.

The Terror Sea Dragon's writing body came to a sudden halt. Mad. They've gone mad. They are clearing igniting their core essences! The Tenebrous Demon Dragon had set its vital essence

alight. It was already advanced in years, and by igniting its core essence it had caused its remaining lifespan to instantly drop by a hundred years!

That dense blood-colored aura instantly locked onto the Terror Sea Dragon. Dreamwake's teeth had almost completed embedded themselves into her lips. If he dies... then... all of you will accompany him into death!

Was Zhou Weiqing dead? No, he wasn't. At least, he wasn't yet.

When he made that decision, he discarded all other thoughts from his mind. When he flew out, he no longer held any more reservations.

None of the powerhouses in Xuantian Palace so much as glanced at Zhou Weiqing. In their hearts, he was already a dead man. As a result, they didn't see that stream of silvery-white light which burst from Zhou Weiqing's body, carrying with it a halo of astral light. The Tiger Tattoos on his body had completely transformed into scales, and an incomparably mighty aura swept out from him as he charged towards the terrifying tidal wave that was crushing all before its path. He was like a sharp sword soaring through the air, pressing rapidly towards the swiftly approaching Terror Sea Dragon.

How could Zhou Weiqing dare to use less than his full strength when dealing with a Heavenly God? He was now in absolute peak condition and had unleashed everything he had. When that silvery-white light appeared, even the waves which had been under the complete control of the Terror Sea Dragon began to slightly shudder. The vast tidal wave was actually split apart by the awesome aura emanating from Zhou Weiqing. A Heavenly God's pressure was actually only able to slide past his body, rather than exterminate him.

Zhou Weiqing had a solemn look in his eyes. This was probably going to be the most difficult fight he would ever have in his life.

He wasn't sure how long he would be able to last, but he was going to try and buy the people within the Tenebrous Sealing Formation as much time as he could. Of course, he wasn't going to gamble his life away on this. If he truly felt that he could no longer hold on, he would immediately flee from this place at maximum speed. However, he absolutely could not do that just yet. No matter what, he had to at least try his best.

For some reason, when he made the choice to charge at the second Terror Sea Dragon, his mind and his will became incomparably pristine and clear. Suddenly, his mental strength seemed to have broken through to a new level. This feeling of his spirit being so clear throughout his entire body was indescribably comfortable. It was as though perhaps facing off against an incredibly powerful Heavenly God wasn't all that frightening after all.

The Terror Sea Dragon was startled by Zhou Weiqing attempting to block it, and it couldn't help but briefly pause its charge. The power of Saint Energy caused it to feel a sense of tremendous danger. It discovered, to its astonishment, that part of the dense Water Attribute atmospheric energies in the range of Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy was no longer obeying its commands.

How was this possible? We Terror Sea Dragons are the lords of the oceans! How could this human actually possess a power which is capable of influencing Water energies to the point of preventing me from using them?

It had no idea that it was Saint Energy, which transcended all other Attributes. Saint Energy's might was capable of assimilating any other Attribute. After Zhou Weiqing's cultivation broke through to the Heavenly Dao Energy level, his Saint Energy's effectiveness was finally put on true display. Zhou Weiqing was merely in the ocean, which was filled with Water Attribute energies. Even if Zhou Weiqing was within the Tenebrous Sealing Formation, he still would've been able to convert the Tenebrous

Attribute energies and make use of it himself. This was what made Saint Energy so marvelous. It was suitable for any battlefield, and it allowed him to unleash 100% of his power no matter where he was.

Even Heavenly God powerhouses wouldn't dare to be overconfident when they faced an Attribute disadvantage. The amazed Terror Sea Dragon didn't know what Zhou Weiqing's cultivation base was. He was a human and had clearly come alongside the other powerhouses of Xuantian Palace. For this human to suddenly appear by himself and challenge the Terror Sea Dragon meant that he clearly wouldn't be easy to deal with.

Chapter 251: Heavenly God Self-Detonation

(1)

Zhou Weiqing could see how the Terror Sea Dragon in front of him had actually slowed down due to the Saint Energy he had unleashed. He knew that he had startled the creature... and in truth, all he could was to do his best to scare and deter it, preventing it from daring to act too rashly. Once the battle actually began... given his cultivation base, he couldn't possibly resist a Heavenly God powerhouse even if he did have Saint Energy reinforcing him.

And so, Zhou Weiqing didn't hesitate at all. He immediately unleashed a technique. An enormous Image of an angel of darkness appeared above his head. As soon as it appeared, this pitch-black, six-winged Hell's Angel completely unleashed a terrifying aura of power from its body.

Zhou Weiqing poured his Saint Energy into it, holding nothing back. The Hell's Angel quickly began to materialize, almost instantaneously transforming to become violet-black in color. Now, half of the sea which had been controlled by the Terror Sea Dragon had turned black.

At this moment in time, Zhou Weiqing was emanating an aura of power that was just as strong as any Heavenly God's. Even the people who were battling within the Tenebrous Sealing Formation could sense the changes.

Xuantian Palace Lord Dong Fang and the other Elders all turned to stare, their mouths hanging open. Good heavens! What type of power was this? Had it come from Zhou Weiqing? How did he have such incredible power?

Zhou Weiqing's actions had completely upended their view of the world... but right now, the only emotion the Xuantian Palace experts felt in response was unmitigated joy. Zhou Weiqing

choosing to reveal his true power at such a dangerous moment was like the coming of a savior!

The only ones who didn't realize what had just happened were the Tenebrous Demon Dragon and Dreamwake. Both had become completely consumed with this battle, and they were pouring everything they had into assaulting the Terror Sea Dragon within the Tenebrous Sealing Formation.

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon's entire body was blood-red, and it was at least twice as strong as it had been earlier. This was the result of its own strength being combined with the vast majority of the Tenebrous Sealing Formation's strength. It could be said that it had absorbed the majority of the energy from the twelve Xuantian Palace powerhouses as well.

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon had already enhanced its combat power to an incredible level, especially when combined with Dreamwake's overwhelming might. The two caused the Terror Sea Dragon to suffer one grievous wound after another. It wasn't no longer a match for the Tenebrous Demon Dragon, even in a raw physical fight.

As for the oceans outside the formation? Judging from Zhou Weiqing's aura, it seemed as though he had completely stopped the enemy Terror Sea Dragon. However, he himself knew that he was nothing more than a paper tiger that could be torn apart at any moment.

It had to be said that Zhou Weiqing was an extraordinarily lucky person. Right now, his luck was on full display as the Terror Sea Dragon he was facing had just recently reached the Heavenly God stage. It didn't have a full grasp of what a Heavenly God's abilities were, and its father had died in the hands of Xuantian Palace. Thus, it felt a great sense of dread towards Xuantian Palace's powerhouses.

As a result, as soon as it sensed how Zhou Weiqing was

unleashing such a terrifying ripple of energy, it no longer dared to act rashly. Instead, it completely unleashed its own powerful Heavenly Energy and engaged in a stare-down with Zhou Weiqing.

The fully materialized Hell's Angel slowly drifted in front of Zhou Weiqing, taking up position there. Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy was now far stronger than it had been in the past. He could maintain the Hell's Angel Revival with ease.

“My lord, I am willing to do battle on your behalf.” The voice of the Hell's Angel boomed out within Zhou Weiqing's mind. Even he himself felt a bit bedazzled by the mighty power pulsing through it. Originally, he had only wanted to borrow the mighty aura of the Hell's Angel, but he never would've imagined that the Hell's Angel he summoned would actually be this powerful.

Due to his mental connection to the angel, Zhou Weiqing could clearly sense that the Hell's Angel he had just summoned had the power of a true Heavenly Emperor. Perhaps it wouldn't be able to last too long in battle, but for Zhou Weiqing it represented his combat power increasing several times over.

This was all due to the Saint Energy! Zhou Weiqing was overjoyed, and he locked his gaze on the distant Terror Sea Dragon. He naturally wasn't in a rush to send his Hell's Angel out to attack; so long as he could maintain this deadlock, this battle of auras, that meant the Terror Sea Dragon would be unable to disrupt the Tenebrous Seal Formation. That was Zhou Weiqing's goal. He definitely didn't believe he could rely on his Saint Energy to battle against an actual Heavenly Emperor.

The opposing Terror Sea Dragon's waves came to a halt as well. It stared at the distant Hell's Angel, rather hesitant. The aura emanating from the Hell's Angel was tremendously powerful... but what was even more worrisome was the human who had summoned it.

Zhou Weiqing was now completely covered in silvery-white light,

making it impossible for the Terror Sea Dragon to see him clearly. The Saint Energy barrier made it impossible for the dragon to determine exactly what Zhou Weiqing's cultivation base was, but it could clearly sense that the silvery-white light definitely had the power to annihilate it. Its very soul shuddered at the Attribute of that light.

What type of energy was this? The Terror Sea Dragon had resided in the oceans for countless years, but this was the first time it had ever seen Saint Energy.

Over ten seconds passed as it hesitated. It could be said that Zhou Weiqing had already managed to buy the Tenebrous Demon Dragon and Dreamwake, who continued to battle within the Tenebrous Sealing Formation, some absolutely precious time.

A desolate, aggrieved roar suddenly rang out from within the Tenebrous Sealing Formation. The enormous Terror Sea Dragon's body suddenly slammed hard against the formation as a streak of blood-red light shot out through its tail. A powerful energy shockwave exploded within the formation. The only reason why the Terror Sea Dragon had managed to avoid being destroyed by this attack was because it had used some of its own core essence as well.

“Gwaaaaaawr!” The Terror Sea Dragon in front of Zhou Weiqing could hold back no longer. If it didn't go help out, its brother was going to perish within that Tenebrous Sealing Formation. After that happened, what if the humans all turned to focus on it? What could it do?

The enormous, thousand-meter tidal wave swept forwards once more, spinning through the air to transform into an enormous image of a Terror Sea Dragon which was completely formed by seawater. It reached out, claws bared, to attack Zhou Weiqing and the Hell's Angel which he had revived.

This attack was one of the most powerful techniques the Terror

Sea Dragon was capable of it. This 'dragon' it had created wasn't simply made out of ocean water; rather, it was completely comprised of pure Water Attribute energies. Only Heavenly Gods were capable of creating such enormous bodies out of energy.

Zhou Weiqing's face instantly grew ugly to behold. Unfortunately, he had no other options; the Terror Sea Dragon had already launched the attack.

The Hell's Angel shot forwards like a black streak of light, moving a thousand meters past Zhou Weiqing in an instant. It pointed down with its two hands, causing the black stormclouds to instantly press downwards from the skies. Dense Tenebrous Attribute energies exploded forth as a series of enormous Tenebrous balls of light that were tens of meters in diameter began to fall out of the skies like rainwater towards the head of the enormous water dragon.

Enormous explosions rang out. Every single enormous dark-violet globe of light kicked up an enormous spray of water as it exploded across the giant water dragon's body, corroding and destroying small parts of it. Unfortunately, the water dragon was simply far too vast. Even though many balls of violet-black light were smashing against it, they remained unable to damage its true body.

It reached the Hell's Angel in the blink of an eye... and it was at this moment that the Hell's Angel which Zhou Weiqing had summoned revealed its true, terrifying power.

Its enormous airborne body suddenly began to glow as dense, violet-black demonic clouds began to rise up and swirl around it. It emanated no sounds, but its body suddenly swelled up in size, transforming to become a black globe that was hundreds of meters in diameter which smashed directly against the water dragon.

Chiiii! An ear-piercing screech rang out, causing Zhou Weiqing to grow dizzy. He could clearly see how the distant water dragon

caused that terrifying dark-violet energy to melt away as though it had never been. The Hell's Angel had used its own body and life to block this attack for Zhou Weiqing.

It looked as though it should've been an even clash, but the end result was clearly not the case. Zhou Weiqing's Hell's Angel had used all of its power just now, while the Terror Sea Dragon's water dragon had merely been a probing attack. The Terror Sea Dragon's greatest power lay in its body.

When the Terror Sea Dragon saw how the summoned Hell's Angel had just been wiped out with ease, it was briefly startled. Finally, it began to understand that this human didn't seem to be quite as tough as it had imagined!

It instantly began to move its giant body forwards. To powerhouses like the Terror Sea Dragon, a distance of thousands of meters could be traversed almost instantly. However, just as it began to unleash its full power to destroy Zhou Weiqing and then assault the Tenebrous Sealing Formation, it suddenly felt a strange sensation that caused its entire body to shiver.

Once again, the terrifying energy radiated from Zhou Weiqing. It was something which rejected the vast heavens themselves, a powerful aura which was ready to annihilate the entire world.

An enormous figure that was many hundreds of meters tall stood up. This figure was pure gray in color. It looked illusory and insubstantial, but as soon as it appeared the world itself changed.

The surface of the entire ocean had turned completely gray. Even the heavens had turned gray. Gray... nothing but endless gray, and incomparably evil and cold energies.

As soon as the vast gray image appeared, the formerly unruly waves instantly turned as calm as the surface of a giant mirror. Not even the slightest ripple could be seen.

The airborne Terror Sea Dragon which had been floating above

the waves instantly dove down towards the ocean. Its very soul was quivering, and all of its courage had been completely frozen and dissipated.

Chapter 251: Heavenly God Self-Detonation

(2)

Zhou Weiqing continued to hover in midair. He was located right in the chest of that enormous gray figure, which seemed to be like his background. Heaven and Earth had turned gray, while the light of the sun and moon both vanished. The only thing which filled the vast sea was a boundless Demonic energy.

Yes. Zhou Weiqing had once more summoned the Demon God to descend upon the world.

The Demon God. The Ward of the Demon God had summoned the Demon God. Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy had been virtually exhausted, but he could clearly sense that this Demon God was completely different from the ones of the past.

Last time he had summoned the Demon God, a mere image of it had appeared for an instant. This time, he had suffered the true projection of the Demon God. It no longer was limited to just a single second.

The enormous image of the Demon God stood silently behind Zhou Weiqing, but this was already enough. What surprised Zhou Weiqing was that when the Demon God had appeared, all of the Saint Energy in his body had completely evaporated and then poured into the Demon God. But of course, once the Demon God had actually appeared, all Attributes of atmospheric energies in the sea and in the heavens began to flood towards the Demon God's body with terrifying, inconceivable speed. Zhou Weiqing was impacted by this as well. The Saint Energy in his body had already been squeezed dry, and now it greedily absorbed all these disparate types of atmospheric energies and furiously converted them to replenish his own stores.

The Saint Energy in his body actually seemed to be turning even purer as a result. The astral silver light now glowed even more

dazzlingly, while the thirty-six Death Acupuncture Points no longer rotated so madly. Instead, they transformed into thirty-six holes of pure devouring power which swallowed all types of atmospheric bodies into his body.

In truth, Zhou Weiqing himself didn't realize that the reason he was able to accomplish this wasn't because of the Saint Energy's revival abilities. Instead, it was because of his own bloodline.

Zhou Weiqing's own body contained the Dark Demon God Tiger Bloodline. This was a bloodline which was on par with the Dragon Emperor Bloodline... and the most powerful aspect of the Dark Demon God Tiger's Bloodline was the strand of the Demon God Lineage. It could be said that under this tremendous pressure, all of Zhou Weiqing's latent power had been fully activated. He had been able to merge together that strand of the Dark Demon God Lineage into his own Saint Energy, and as a result was able to summon a true projection of the Demon God.

This was the true Demon God, something which eclipsed all Heavenly Gods. Even though it was a mere projection which couldn't actually fight on Zhou Weiqing's behalf, its appearance caused all atmospheric energies to obey its bidding unless an aura which was on par with it appeared.

Right. This Demon God projection couldn't even help Zhou Weiqing with a single attack, which the projections he had summoned when he was young and weak were capable of. However... its aura and majesty was that of the true Demon God's. It didn't NEED to launch any attacks. As soon as it appeared the Terror Sea Dragon dove into the seas, completely overwhelmed by fear. It didn't dare to launch any further attacks against Zhou Weiqing.

At this moment, Zhou Weiqing himself was immersed in a marvelous state. Just ten seconds later, all of the Saint Energy he had exhausted was completely replenished, and it was actually increased by a certain degree. More importantly, his Saint Energy

had become even purer. He could vaguely sense that he could 'touch' the edges of the thirty-eighth level.

Demon God. Have I truly revived the Demon God? However, he quickly realized that he was wrong. He was completely incapable of maintaining any sort of connection with the Demon God which had appeared behind him. In fact, there wasn't even a voice in his mind like there had been the previous time.

Zhou Weiqing felt a bit depressed, but the entire battlefield had changed due to the Demon God he had summoned.

First of all, the Terror Sea Dragon that was responsible for reinforcing the first one had been terrified into diving deep into the oceans. It didn't even dare to try and flee. Instead, it curled up into a ball within the sea, releasing all of its energies to try and resist the terrible, corrosive power of the Demon God.

On the other side, the Tenebrous Sealing Formation was partially formed from the Demonic Attribute. Now that the world outside suddenly became suffused with the Demonic Attribute, the sealing formation's power almost instantly skyrocketed. The Terror Sea Dragon within it had already been at a disadvantage; now, the sudden increase in pressure put it in an incredibly dangerous position.

However, the Tenebrous Demon Dragon and Dreamwake had finally realized what was going on at Zhou Weiqing's side. When they saw the all-encompassing gray figure which had appeared outside the Tenebrous Sealing Formation and Zhou Weiqing standing within it, they couldn't help but slow down their attacks.

He actually managed to stop the Terror Sea Dragon. What power is this? How can it be this terrifying? None of the Xuantian Palace powerhouses knew how Zhou Weiqing had done this. They were no longer capable of evaluating exactly how powerful he was... and right at this moment, the Terror Sea Dragon in the Tenebrous Sealing Formation finally exploded with power.

Any creature, when faced with certain death, wouldn't just lie down for its killers. This was doubly true for Heavenly Gods.

As the Tenebrous Demon Dragon and Dreamwake paused for a moment in shock, an incredibly dense streak of deep blue light suddenly shot out of the centermost part of the Terror Sea Dragon's body.

This blue light looked completely different from anything else. No one had ever seen this blue color, and it gave off a feeling of coziness and clarity. A terrifying ripple of energy instantly spread outwards, and with each transformation of the energy the Terror Sea Dragon's giant body would shudder. Layers of this azure light blasted out unabated from within its body, while the terrifying aura emanating from it seemed about ready to tear through the recently-strengthened formation.

What was this?!

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon cried out in shock, "Not good. It is going to self-detonate its Heavenly Core Nucleus. Quick, stop it!"

At a time like this, Dreamwake and the Tenebrous Demon Dragon didn't dare to hold anything back at all. If the Terror Sea Dragon succeeded in this self-detonation, most likely no one within the Tenebrous Sealing Formation would survive.

Dense bloody light shot into the air, while the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's body almost instantly lost its luster. However, the blood-red light instantly poured into Dreamwake's body, then flooded into the Tenebrous Dragon Slaying Spear.

"Die!" Dreamwake cried in her lovely voice, letting the Dragon Spear explode with incomparably dazzling light. The devilish blood-colored light grew brighter, while the Dragon Spear shot out of Dreamwake's hands and instantly transformed into an enormous spear which was fifty meters long and glowed with blood-red light. It instantly traversed the distance between her and the Terror Sea Dragon.

The Terror Sea Dragon had chosen to self-detonate its Heavenly Core Nucleus at the very last moment, while the Tenebrous Demon Dragon and Dreamwake had activated this attack called 'Extermination'.

Previously, they had held back and not used it. Even when the other Terror Sea Dragon had appeared and posed an enormous risk to them, they still hadn't used it. This was because once they used this attack, Dreamwake and the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's power would instantly drop by 90%. To them, this was essentially an attack that came from their core essence.

Once 'Extermination' shot out, victory or defeat would be determined. It had set alight all of the Heavenly Energy within Tenebrous Demon Dragon and Dreamwake, which had been poured into this single attack. You can imagine how incredible it was!

An ear-piercing screech rang out as the Terror Sea Dragon made its response. Although it had yet to truly activate all the energies within its Heavenly Core Nucleus, it still chose to self-detonate. Otherwise, once it was hit by this 'Extermination' attack, it wouldn't even have the chance to self-detonate.

Anyone watching from afar would be able to see with clarity how the entire surface of the sea suddenly shuddered violently. All of the black light within the enormous Tenebrous Sealing Formation suddenly contracted as an incomparably terrifying explosion blasted out of it.

Even though it had suffered from the 'Extermination' attack and had been locked away by the Tenebrous Sealing Formation, this remained a Heavenly God powerhouse's self-detonation!

The terrifying explosive force caused all living beings to shudder. In an instant, an utterly vast azure mushroom cloud that was completely formed from water and a thousand meters tall suddenly appeared within the sea.

The terrifying azure light contained a mixture of black, gray, and blood-colored light, and it instantly expanded outwards. All living beings within a hundred meters were almost instantly crushed into dust and killed by this terrifying power, leaving nothing behind.

Utter misery. This was true, utter misery for all living beings. As for the giant gray figure that had towered over all things, it too was annihilated by that terrifying blast.

The Demon God projection only had the Demon God's aura; it wasn't capable of enduring any attacks at all. Given Zhou Weiqing's cultivation base, how could he possibly summon the actual power of the Demon God, even if he did use Saint Energy? The point of this Demon God projection was to make it so that your enemies wouldn't even dare to think about attacking you.

However, once the Terror Sea Dragon's self-detonation appeared the Demon God projection was destroyed. Thankfully, its brief appearance had been summoned by Zhou Weiqing via the Ward of the Demon God. As soon as that terrifying blast had appeared, all of the Demonic energy quickly wrapped around Zhou Weiqing and did its best to protect him.

It was at times like this that Zhou Weiqing's natural toughness revealed itself. Dragon-Tiger Transformation. Immortal Deity Shield. Ward of the Demon God. All of these powerful defensive techniques overlaid on each other. Although he was sent flying by that terrifying explosion of energy, he didn't suffer any actual injuries. Of course, this was also because the Terror Sea Dragon's self-detonation hadn't been fully successful in drawing out all the energy within its Heavenly Core Nucleus, and it had also been weakened by the 'Extermination' attack and the Tenebrous Sealing Formation. Otherwise, the field of death wouldn't have been a mere hundred kilometers in size.

Heavenly God powerhouses were, by nature, figures with unearthly levels of power! The death of such a figure could unleash an absolutely indescribable amount of destructive energies.

Simply put... if this had happened on land, the self-detonation of something as powerful as a Terror Sea Dragon would've been able to wipe out at least half the Fei Li Empire. You can imagine how powerful it was!

Chapter 251: Heavenly God Self-Detonation

(3)

This terrifying blast of energy rose higher and higher into the air as it built in power, causing everyone's heart to shudder with fear.

When the explosion had occurred, Dreamwake and the Tenebrous Demon Dragon clearly suffered the most as they were at the very center of the blast. At the critical moment, the Tenebrous Demon Dragon used its two wings to completely protect Dreamwake, using its own Heavenly God body to protect her as best as it could. Dreamwake's full set of Tenebrous Demon Dragon equipment came to good use as well, which was why she wasn't blown to bits.

Even so, the terrifying explosion blasted everyone into the air. The powerful shockwave scattered them hundreds of kilometers across the sea.

All six of the Heavenly King Elders were transformed into dust. At a time like this, the differences in cultivation strength were put on full display. All five Heavenly Emperors survived, albeit heavily wounded. They had been able to just barely protect themselves thanks to the Tenebrous Sealing Formation.

Nie Han had also managed to survive. Although he didn't have a Heavenly Emperor's cultivation, he was still a high-rank Heavenly King. More importantly, he had a nine-piece Legendary Set on him. In terms of defensive strength, he vastly outstripped the ordinary elders.

However, that terrifying explosion had knocked even the other Terror Sea Dragon flying into the air. They had all been heavily injured by the blast, and they had their wits scrambled by it and were all separated.

That terrifying explosion had caused even the sea level to

instantly dip by hundreds of meters at the epicenter. Even the mud at the bottom of the sea had caved in... and moments later, an absolutely titanic wave arose.

The powerful shockwave, followed by the titanic tidal wave, had come almost instantaneously. Even the ones who didn't have their brains scrambled by the attack were now unable to see any of their peers.

Although Zhou Weiqing hadn't been truly injured by that terrifying explosion, the Demon God he had summoned had been reduced to nothing. He could also vaguely sense that he had lost his connection to that Bloodline. For at least a short while, he probably wouldn't be able to summon the Demon God again no matter how much Saint Energy he poured into it.

The last vestiges of the Ward of the Demon God's energies had been used to protect him, but it hadn't been able to prevent the explosion from blasting him away. Everything around him seemed to turn unreal as he was sent hurtling into the waves of the deep sea, then back above sea level, then into the sea again. It wasn't until quite some had passed that everything calmed down.

Although the powerful shockwave hadn't injured Zhou Weiqing, it had still rendered him completely unconscious.

No matter how terrifying the explosion had been, the sea remained the sea. To the vast and endless ocean, no 'level' of destructive energy would ever be more than literally just a drop of water in the ocean.

A fairly short period of time later, the sea once more regained its usual calm. Everything turned calm and quiet.

After an unknown period of time, Zhou Weiqing felt as though something was touching his face. His mental energy had slowly recovered, allowing him to instinctively open his eyes.

However, as soon as he did so he immediately shut his eyes again.

This was because, when he opened his eyes the first thing he saw was the piercing light of the sun.

He used his hand to cover his face. After growing accustomed to the powerful sunlight, he finally opened his eyes once more. Because he was using his hand to block the sunlight, he wasn't able to clearly see everything around him. His mind and his memories came back to him, and he finally remembered what had just happened. What surprised him was that he seemed to be lying on the ground, not floating on the ocean.

Between his fingers, he could make out a female body. A dressed one, of course! He immediately turned over and sat up, instantly filling his entire body with Saint Energy. Zhou Weiqing's cultivation base hadn't weakened much, and so a halo of silvery-white light instantly covered every inch of him.

The person seated facing him didn't seem to respond to his movements. When Zhou Weiqing was finally able to make out who it was, he couldn't help but blurt out in surprise, "It's you."

Seated not too far away from him was a beautiful figure whose ashen face had a mixture of joy and other, more complicated emotions on it. It was Dreamwake, of course. And... aside from Dreamwake, there was no one else here.

Dreamwake had already changed into a set of clean clothes, but her face was terrifyingly pale. Clearly, she was in an extremely unhealthy state right now. She leaned against the beach, looking completely weak and powerless. It was as though a mere breeze could topple this dragon-slaying warrior princess.

When she saw that silvery-white Saint Energy flash over Zhou Weiqing's body, her lips curved up slightly. She said in a clearly mocking manner, "You finally woke up."

Zhou Weiqing instantly felt his cheeks burning when he saw how heated her gaze was, despite her obvious weakness. By now, he naturally wasn't going to be able to hide his cultivation any longer.

“Where are we?” Zhou Weiqing rose to his feet and glanced around him, only to discover that he was on a small island. This island didn’t seem to be very large, but the area behind him was covered with boulders and stones. As a result, he wasn’t able to see the entire island’s appearance. In front of him was the vast, endless ocean. The ocean was now quite calm, as though nothing had happened.

The sun had already begun to set in the western skies. When they had battled the Terror Sea Dragon, it had been in the morning. It seemed as though he had been passed out for five or six hours.

“This should be a small island located in the deep seas. As for how far from the continent we are? I’m not sure. I only woke up an hour before you did.” Dreamwake’s voice was very calm and completely devoid of all inflection. It sounded uncomfortably stiff.

Zhou Weiqing squeezed out a smile. “As expected of a Heavenly Emperor powerhouse. You recovered much more quickly than I did.”

Dreamwake suddenly laughed. Even though her face was extremely pale and her hair was completely tousled, none of this could hide her superb beauty and her natural nobility. “Heavenly Emperor powerhouse? Right now, even a three-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master could kill me with ease. At least 60% of the meridians inside my body have been destroyed, while I have less than 10% of my Heavenly Energy.”

Zhou Weiqing was startled when he heard her say this. Although he had guessed that Dreamwake was wounded, he didn’t expect her to injuries to be quite this heavy.

Dreamwake’s gaze suddenly sharpened, and her eyes blazed as she glared at Zhou Weiqing. “You, however, are truly powerful! Without any help, you not only managed to tie down a Heavenly God Terror Sea Dragon, you even escaped without suffering any significant injuries. How should I address you? The Right

Honorable Mr. Spy?”

The muscles on Zhou Weiqing’s face twitched slightly. “What do you mean, ‘Mr. Spy’? I don’t know what you are talking about. I admit that I was hiding some of my power, but that was just a protective ability.”

Dreamwake suddenly sat up straight. This caused her injuries inside her body to worsen, and so a flicker of pain appeared on her face. Zhou Weiqing hurriedly moved to help her, but she immediately screeched, “Don’t move!”

Zhou Weiqing halted his footsteps.

Dreamwake slowly raised her hand, spreading them wide to reveal a ring. Zhou Weiqing stared for a moment, then quickly lowered his head to stare at his hand. Only then did he realize that his Sumeru Ring was missing.

Dreamwake said angrily, “You still want to deceive me? You know better than me what this ring holds inside it. I might not recognize the other items, but do you think I wouldn’t recognize the Sea Emperor Shuttle? Many years ago, the Sea Emperor Shuttle disappeared within the Boundless Mainland. Do I need to continue?”

This time, Zhou Weiqing’s face turned completely stiff. No matter how he might try to explain it, the incontrovertible proof before him rendered him helpless. He let out a bitter laugh, then shook his head with resignation. “Fine. Since you’ve discovered it, there’s no point to me disguising myself any longer. You are right. Bing’er and I came from the Boundless Mainland, and we came via the Sea Emperor Shuttle.”

Dreamwake stared at Zhou Weiqing coldly. “The despicable Great Saint Lands of the Boundless Mainland. Have you forgotten the oaths you swore all those years ago? Are you two really the only ones who came?”

Zhou Weiqing said, “Only the two of us came. And, you are mistaken. We don’t belong to any of the Saint Lands.”

“You are still lying!” Dreamwake was enraged.

Zhou Weiqing shrugged his shoulders. “What would be the point of lying to you? You said it yourself – even a three-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master would be able to take your life with ease. Do you really think I’m weaker than a Shi Stage cultivator? If it wasn’t for the oath that was sworn, it wouldn’t have been people like us who came on this mission. You saw it for yourself – although I hid my power, I am still at just the nine-Jeweled level. If it wasn’t for our agreement, the five Great Saint Lands of the Boundless Mainland could’ve easily sent several Heavenly Emperors over.”

When she saw that earnest look in Zhou Weiqing’s eyes, Dreamwake couldn’t help but begin to believe him.

“Fine. Even if you don’t belong to the five Great Saint Lands of the Boundless Mainland, what is your purpose here? Is your goal to join our Xuantian Palace? Would you dare to claim that you are not a spy?”

Zhou Weiqing let out a sigh, then walked over to Dreamwake and sat down facing her. “Yes, I am a spy. And you are right, I lied to you. I came for the Spatial Teleportation Gem.”

Dreamwake’s eyes instantly narrowed. Just as she was about to burst with rage, Zhou Weiqing’s next words rendered her speechless. “But what about you? Are you trying to tell me you didn’t lie to me? Should I address you as ‘Dreamwake’, or as the ‘Xuantian Palace Master’?” Zhou Weiqing’s voice was very peaceful, and his features had once more turned calm.

Dreamwake turned her head away, not meeting his gaze. She muttered, “I don’t know what you are talking about.”

Zhou Weiqing chuckled. “I’m not an idiot. Your words clearly

hold more weight than the ‘Palace Lord’ named Dong Fang. Perhaps the Elders don’t know your identity, but the four Grand Elders and Master Nie Han clearly do. Whenever there were any important decisions to be made, you were always the final person to speak. And, whenever any problems arose, they would all subconsciously turn to you for answers.”

Chapter 252: No Regrets (1)

“If this isn’t enough to be considered evidence... then I point to how, when we were preparing to battle the Terror Sea Dragon, even ‘Palace Lord Dong Fang’ was assigned to assemble the formation, while you were the one responsible for joining together with the Tenebrous Demon Dragon. You became the most important combat force on our side.

“Also. Other things can be faked, but there’s no way the Tenebrous Demon Dragon Set could be faked. An eleven-piece Legendary Set! In our Boundless Mainland, the only set which matches it is the Boundless Infinitum Set. Not even Palace Lord Dong Fang had such a set, but you did. Isn’t that proof enough?

“I don’t think Dreamwake is even your real name. Although I lied to you, my name really is Zhou Weiqing. It’s clear that both of us are liars, so I think we’re even. Fair enough?”

As Dreamwake listened to his analysis, she once more turned to look at him. She didn’t rebut Zhou Weiqing’s words, just looked at him earnestly.

“Can you tell me why you chose to save us at that critical moment? Were you just bluffing or were you really capable of blocking the Terror Sea Dragon?”

Zhou Weiqing looked into her rather determined eyes, then let out an awkward smile. “Do you want to hear the truth or a lie?”

“The truth of course,” Dreamwake said irritably.

Zhou Weiqing chuckled. “Tell me your real name and I will tell you.”

Dreamwake blinked. She nibbled on her lips, then whispered, “My name is Dongfang Hanyue.”

“Dongfang Hanyue? A good name. It suits you,” Zhou Weiqing praised. [1. Hanyue means cold moon.]

Dongfang Hanyue said, “Time for you to tell me the truth.”

“The truth is, I don’t know,” Zhou Weiqing said honestly.

Dongfang Hanyue stared at him in astonishment. “That’s your answer?”

Zhou Weiqing said, “It is the most honest answer I can give. I don’t know why I chose to save you guys either. To me, the best course of action would’ve been to wait until both you and the Terror Sea Dragons were badly injured. Faced with great danger, you would’ve used the Spatial Teleportation Gem. That would be my best opportunity. I had a 70% confidence level that I would be able to escape after seizing the gem. I guess you can just say that I went momentarily stupid... but I don’t regret it.”

When she heard Zhou Weiqing say the words ‘I don’t regret it’, the rage and fierceness in Dongfang Hanyue’s eyes vanished. She stared intently at him, seemingly in a daze.

“I’m going to find some food.” Zhou Weiqing rose to his feet, walking towards the seashore. He needed to calm down. Right now, he essentially was facing a second chance at the choice he had made. And... this would probably be the last chance.”

He felt 80% certain that the gem was on ‘Dreamwake’, whose real name was Dongfang Hanyue. She was the true controller of Xuantian Palace! They were on a deserted island, and she was so weak that he could take the gem from her without needing to injure her. He could then leave with Bing’er, this mission complete.

But... could he really be so determined as to do something like this? If he could, he wouldn’t have told Dreamwake so many things.

He walked over to the side of the sea, allowing it to go past his feet. Zhou Weiqing spread out his senses, but he wasn’t able to discover any other living creatures within the vast sea.

“Goddamnit! I want to eat some seafood to make myself feel better, but there’s none here. This is inhumane!” Zhou Weiqing roared angrily towards the sea.

He took a few steps back, then helplessly squatted down on the beach. He used his hand to draw a few circles in the sand. “Zhou Little Fatty, you old softy. It’s all because you are emotionally weak! Weak!”

He drew one circle after another, but the resigned look on his face didn’t abate at all. For him to bully a heavily wounded woman, one who had treated him extremely well... he couldn’t do it. He really couldn’t! If Xuantian Palace and Dongfang Hanyue had treated him poorly, he probably would’ve acted long ago. But, he could still clearly remember how, when danger descended, she didn’t forget to protect him even though she was still angry with him. She had even risked suffering injuries to herself to do this.

He suddenly rose to his feet and strode straight towards Dongfang Hanyue.

When she saw the truculent look on his face, Dongfang Hanyue’s own face turned even paler than before. She unconsciously covered her chest with hands while inching backwards in the sand.

Zhou Weiqing only halted when he came to stand before her.

Dongfang Hanyue was like a frightened little kitten. “W-what are you doing.”

Zhou Weiqing lowered his head angrily. “Gimme the Spatial Teleportation Gem.”

A stubborn look appeared in Dongfang Hanyue’s eyes. “I won’t. Kill me if you want.”

“Fine then. Forget it.” Zhou Weiqing let out a long sigh, a helpless smile appearing on his face. He then flipped over and lay down next to Dongfang Hanyue.

Dongfang Hanyue once more turned stiff. Just now, when Zhou

Weiqing had demanded the Spatial Teleportation gem, she had been so petrified that her heart had nearly leapt out of her throat. But in the end, this guy had done nothing besides say that simple sentence.

“So what do you want?” Dongfang Hanyue couldn’t help but ask. She had no idea what this bad man was thinking.

Zhou Weiqing lay there, head leaning against his hands. “This was a perfect opportunity. I had to at least make an attempt, otherwise it would have all gone to waste. By asking, I can say that I made the attempt. You weren’t willing to give it to me, so I had no choice but to just give up. This bro is a real man. I can’t bully a weak little girl like you on this desolate island. Hurry up and recover. After you recover, I’m going to leave.”

“You don’t want the Spatial Teleportation Gem any longer?” Dongfang Hanyue asked, puzzled.

Zhou Weiqing laughed bitterly. “Of course I want it. That’s my mission. But, I’ll figure out another way to get it. Keep a close watch over your treasures. Don’t let me take it too easily.”

“Hmph.” Dongfang Hanyue let out a snort, struggling to sit up. She then closed her eyes and quietly began to train. As she sat up, her lips curved upwards into a faint smile... but Zhou Weiqing, who was lying down, wouldn’t be able to see it.

Zhou Weiqing could sense that Dongfang Hanyue had entered a cultivation state. Utterly bored, he stared into the skies and cursed himself mentally. Zhou Little Fatty, you really are a stupid-nice person. Would you act like this if she wasn’t a beauty? Absolutely not. Like hell you would! You perverted lecher! Still... no matter what, I’m a genuine scoundrel. That’s better than being a false gentleman, right? Ugh. My beautiful Hanyue, you really disappoint me. Even if you don’t repay me by offering me your body, you should at least give me a kiss or something. I treated you so well. Can’t you be the slightest bit moved by it?

Although his heart was filled with perverted musings, he rose to sit up behind Dongfang Hanyue, pressing his hands against her back. I'm not doing this to help her recover, I'm doing this to feel her wonderful figure for myself. This was what Little Fatty told himself as he sent his silvery-white light into their bodies. Well, if you are going to be a good guy, be a good guy all the way.

Dongfang Hanyue hadn't exaggerated her injuries at all. Not only were her meridians all badly damaged, some had been disordered. Any ordinary person with these injuries would've died long ago, but she was a Heavenly Emperor powerhouse and thus was still barely managing to hang on.

Clearly, she wouldn't be able to recover from her injuries quickly. But, Zhou Weiqing helping out changed everything.

The gentle Saint Energy slowly poured into her delicate body, which shuddered. That warm energy passed through his two hot hands into her back and then spread out through the rest of her body. This was an extremely strange feeling. Dongfang Hanyue felt her entire body turn a bit soft, but as that gentle energy entered her body the energies in her chaotic meridians were actually all assimilated by it.

As the gentle energy advanced, her damaged meridians were gradually covered by the silvery-white light. There was no feeling of pain at all. She only felt as though her body was submerged in warm water. It was indescribably comfortable.

She gave up on her self-healing efforts and discarded any wariness, giving completely control over her body to Zhou Weiqing and allowing his Saint Energy to roam freely.

Gradually, Dongfang Hanyue was actually lulled to sleep by that comfortable feeling. Her sleep was incredibly peaceful. Ever since she had taken on the crushing pressure of being responsible for Xuantian Palace, she had never again slept so soundly.

"What the hell? You can't do this. I'm not a 'good guy', you

know.” Zhou Weiqing, still seated behind Dongfang Hanyue, was instantly depressed. Isn’t this girl afraid that I’m going to seize this opportunity to do something to her? Even if she hid the Spatial Teleportation Gem somewhere else, she can’t act like this. Doesn’t she know just how lethal a weak, helpless little girl is to any man’s self-control? I can’t take this!

Night gradually enveloped the island, bringing silence with it. A campfire was the only source of light within the island. Zhou Weiqing was seated before the campfire, cooking some grains.

The Sumeru Ring was on his finger once more. This ring contained a prodigious amount of food and water. Even though there was no seafood to eat, they wouldn’t go hungry.

Every so often, the campfire would crackle. Although grains made for a simple meal, cooking them made them quite tasty.

Zhou Weiqing did his best to prevent his gaze from turning towards the other end of the campfire. Under the light of the campfire, Dongfang Hanyue’s ruddy, fragrant face was simply far too enticing. Although Zhou Weiqing was by nature an extremely lascivious man filled with dirty thoughts, no matter what he wouldn’t allow them to overcome his morality and his conscience. However, that didn’t mean he liked it.

Zhou Weiqing wanted to leave as soon as Dongfang Hanyue’s meridians had been healed, but when he realized that he didn’t know where the second Terror Sea Dragon was located, he simply couldn’t bring himself to abandon her and leave on his own.

He’d wait until she woke up. It had been a long time since he had felt himself at the verge of losing control... but he had to admit, this mission had spun completely out of his control.

Chapter 252: No Regrets (2)

Perhaps because of how good the freshly-cooked grains were, Dongfang Hanyue's nose twitched and she slowly opened her eyes.

She couldn't help but feel tremendously shocked at what had happened to her internal meridians. All of the damaged meridians had been healed. Given her cultivation base, even without actually cultivating she had been able to recover a large amount Heavenly Energy once her meridians had been restored. And, she could vaguely sense that the unshakable bottleneck she had faced due to her having using that unique cultivation-enhancing method had actually been loosened. A glow of faint, silvery-white light covered her internal organs, which seemed to be stronger than before.

"Mm..." Dongfang Hanyue stretched her muscles, a series of gentle cracking sounds popping from her body. Her four limbs and her bones felt filled with strength and vitality. A look of pleasure appeared on her slender face without her even realizing it.

Gulp. Zhou Weiqing's cooked rations fell into the campfire, his eyes nearly popping out of their sockets. Dongfang Hanyue's lazy stretch had put her alluring figure on full display, and her mesmerizing little moan almost instantly caused Zhou Weiqing's blood to start pumping with bestial desire.

"Can you not do that? This is total entrapment," Zhou Weiqing said while gulping down his saliva.

"Nope." Dongfang Hanyue cast him a sidelong glance.

Zhou Weiqing was instantly rendered speechless. He once more took out two rations of grains and dried meat to cook them over the fire.

Dongfang Hanyue sat on the other side of the campfire, her arms hugging her knees. She didn't look at Zhou Weiqing as she murmured, "Tell me more about the Boundless Mainland and of

yourself.”

“Alright,” Zhou Weiqing said. A reminiscent look appeared in his eyes. He didn’t lie, nor was there anything to lie about. He simply narrated his tale. “I was born in a small country known as the Heavenly Bow Empire in the Boundless Mainland. Originally, I wasn’t even supposed to become a Heavenly Jeweled Master, but then one day...”

Although he was only in his twenties, he had a very rich history. He compressed the story as much as he could, but it still took him four full hours to tell his tale. By now, it was very late at night, and the two of them had already eaten quite a bit of food. Zhou Weiqing didn’t even know how many times he had added more wood which he had acquired from the trees behind them.

“Then why do you need to take the Spatial Teleportation Gem of our Xuantian Palace?” Dongfang Hanyue asked curiously.

Zhou Weiqing had narrated almost all the important events of his life. He didn’t even hold back on the details between him and his female ‘friends’, but he hadn’t spoken of why he needed the gem.

Zhou Weiqing shook his head and smiled. “That’s a secret. If you give me the gem, I’ll tell you.”

“In your dreams.” Dongfang Hanyue snorted. “Forget it then.”

The two briefly fell silent. The only sound which could be heard was the crackling of the fire as it broke down the wood.

“Compared to you, my history is much simpler. Weren’t you curious as to how I gained the power of a Heavenly Emperor and also became a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master?” Dongfang Hanyue said in a low voice.

Zhou Weiqing nodded. He was indeed extremely curious.

Dongfang Hanyue murmured, “Actually, there’s no need for you to doubt your own talent, because it far surpasses mine. I’m

absolutely certain that if I had to train by myself, even if I was several years older than you I still wouldn't have your current level of power. The vast majority of my cultivation base was given to me."

"Given to you?" Zhou Weiqing's eyes were filled with surprise.

Dongfang Hanyue said, "You should've been able to tell that every high-level member of Xuantian Palace has a legacy which grants us Tenebrous energies. In truth, that's because of the Tenebrous Demon Dragon Bloodline which flows through our veins. Xuantian Palace, especially its leaders like myself and my ancestors, is composed of the progeny of a human who joined together with a Tenebrous Demon Dragon. Thus, from a certain perspective, I'm not a pure human being. I'm a Draconian."

"My dragon ancestor was able to take human form due to his transformation technique. He married a human woman, resulting in our lineage being created. We have the physique of Tenebrous Demon Dragons, but the wisdom and talent of humans. That was what the foundation of Xuantian Palace was built on, and so we were able to develop and thrive. We have always had the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's aid. That is where our Tenebrous Attribute comes from.

"As a result, we named ourselves 'Demon Draconians'. Our race has a special legacy technique. Once the previous Palace Master is about to perish, he can transfer his cultivation base to the next Palace Master. Although not everything can be transferred, this legacy is still enough to ensure that the next Palace Master will become extremely powerful within a short period of time. Only those of us in the direct line of descent have the purest Bloodline necessary to engage in this ritual. I am the legacy inheritor of this generation. My father heavily injured himself as he forcibly tried to break into the Heavenly God level, and before he died he transferred his cultivation base to me."

"Although this transfer process allowed me to quickly gain the

power of a Heavenly Emperor, it also came too easily. I didn't need to go through the process of accumulating power, and so I shall be limited to the Heavenly Emperor level for my entire life."

Upon hearing this, Zhou Weiqing finally understood where Xuantian Palace came from. Dongfang Hanyue was basically telling him all of Xuantian Palace's secrets without holding anything back at all.

"Then who is 'Palace Master Dong Fang'? Is he also a Grand Elder?" Zhou Weiqing asked.

Dongfang Hanyue shook her head. "She, actually. She is my mother. In order to temporarily assist me in overawing the Elders, my mother and I are temporarily managing Xuantian Palace together. However, I am still the leader. The first 'Xuantian Palace Master' you encountered was actually me. After that, I only appeared in my position as 'God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master Dreamwake', at which point you only saw my mother."

Zhou Weiqing finally understood. "No wonder I felt something was off after the second meeting with her. So it was a different person. However, that mask of yours is truly marvelous. I couldn't even tell if 'Dong Fang' was a man or a woman."

A dreamy look appeared in Dongfang Hanyue's eyes. "In many people's eyes, the Xuantian Palace Master is forever a lofty and exalted figure. However, they don't know how lonely this position is. Your background took hours to narrate, but mine only took a few sentences. If I could choose, I would rather choose to be an ordinary person."

Zhou Weiqing said, "Although destiny has chosen you for certain tasks, you can also choose to try and change destiny."

Dongfang Hanyue laughed bitterly. "Change? How? I bear the burden of my entire Bloodline's legacy and have shouldered the responsibilities of managing Xuantian Palace. All I can do is to ensure that Xuantian Palace remains powerful."

Suddenly, an incomparably powerful aura swept out of her body. Dongfang Hanyue slowly rose to her feet, her gaze turning sharp as she stared at Zhou Weiqing. “I have already recovered completely.”

Chapter 253: Let The Storm Rage Harder (2)

Previously, a certain someone only had eyes for her smooth, alabaster jade body. He had been completely mesmerized by her body, and so he didn't notice until now that Dongfang Hanyue was actually wearing this.

He subconsciously reached out to stroke it... and instantly, he shivered as though he had been goosed. He hadn't been able to tell just by looking at it, but when he used his hand to touch it he discovered to his astonishment that within this diamond jewel there was an incomparably powerful ripple of Spatial Attribute energy.

Zhou Weiqing himself possessed Spatial Attribute energy and also had Saint Energy. As a result, he had extremely keen senses with regards to any type of energy. Although he didn't know how the metallic 'shell' of the necklace was created or how it had completely masked the Spatial Attribute energy inside, as soon as he touched it he instantly realized how marvelous it was.

W-what was this? Zhou Weiqing stared blankly, then stared greedily at the necklace. His hand, however, slowly dropped away from it and instead moved to rub Dongfang Hanyue's chest. Even when this lecher was thinking, his behavior never changed.

He let out a soft sigh, then murmured softly to himself, "Ugh. You are the Xuantian Palace Master, while I have to go back to my world. There's no way you'll go with me. At least destiny brought us together for this one night. I should leave you something to remember me by. Who knows if we'll ever have the chance to meet again?"

As he spoke, his big hand ceased its naughty movements across Dongfang Hanyue's chest. A thick surge of Saint Energy slowly emerged from his palm and entered her body, stealthily passing through her meridians and gathering within her Dantian.

If anyone else did this, Dongfang Hanyue's massive store of Heavenly Energy would immediately reject it. Zhou Weiqing could clearly sense that at the very center of Dongfang Hanyue's chest, there was an absolutely enormous energy cluster. This was probably her Heavenly Core Nucleus!

However, this wasn't the right time to analyze the mysteries of her Heavenly Core Nucleus. Besides, the Heavenly Core Nucleus was different from his own goal, which was to create a Saint Core Nucleus. Thus, he simply guided his Saint Energy into Dongfang Hanyue's body.

One of the unique things about Saint Energy was that it wouldn't be rejected by any other Attributes at all. This was because pure Saint Energy contained no destructive potential at all. Only when it was used in techniques and converted into other Attributes to unleash attacks would its powerful effect be made plain.

As a result, when the Saint Energy entered Dongfang Hanyue's body, her own energies didn't reject it in the slightest. In fact, her own energies actually parted way before the Saint Energy, allowing Zhou Weiqing to easily pour it all the way into her Dantian and then condense it.

Given Zhou Weiqing's current cultivation level, he was now far better at pouring Saint Energy into another person than before. In addition, he wasn't stingy at all when pouring it into Dongfang Hanyue. He even activated his purest energies, the astral silver Saint Energy.

The Saint Energy slowly formed a small astral whirlpool within Dongfang Hanyue's Dantian, which quietly began to spin and take on a life of its own. Although it wouldn't grow stronger the way Zhou Weiqing's energies would, this pure vortex of Saint Energy in her body would serve as an 'energy boost' for when she tried to break through to become a Heavenly God in the near future. The formerly-impossible bottleneck would no longer be a problem.

He maintained careful control over his Saint Energy as he formed the whirlpool. By the time he finished, his forehead was matted with sweat. This was his first time directly creating a whirlpool of Saint Energy for another person, especially with the most highly distilled and pure Saint Energy he had. Although he didn't give her all of it, he still gave her an enormous amount. He wouldn't be able to fully recover without at least two weeks of rest.

After finishing his task, Zhou Weiqing revealed a hint of a smile. "You are now my woman. I've done right by you. I left you a little gift, so it wouldn't be too excessive if I took a souvenir of my own, right?" Of course, he was only talking to himself as Dongfang Hanyue was still sleeping soundly in his arms.

As he spoke, he carefully removed the necklace from her neck, then hung it around his own. A satisfied, guilt-free smile was on his face as he murmured, "There are some things in this world which you can find a second copy of, but my Saint Energy is absolutely unique."

As he spoke, he carefully lifted Dongfang Hanyue out of the crook of his arm, then gently placed her down on the blanket.

He let out a long sigh, then dressed himself in fresh clothes. He wanted to leave, but was still a bit reluctant to. He returned to Dongfang Hanyue's side, giving her face a kiss and squeezing her softest parts a few times before turning and walking towards the sea.

His dragon-tiger wings spread out as he suddenly unleashed the Dragon-Tiger Transformation. With a gentle flap of his wings, he soared into the skies and began to fly out into the sea.

Right after he flew away, the 'slumbering' Dongfang Hanyue slowly opened her eyes and looked up from the blanket. An embarrassed, irritated look was on her face as she muttered to herself, "That bastard. He just had to take advantage of me before leaving. He really is a jerk. A bastard. A pervert."

She rose to sit up, dressing herself while sitting on the blanket. When she accidentally saw the spot of dark crimson color on the blanket, her cheeks instantly turned even more crimson.

“You know, jerk... I don’t regret it either. Honestly. I really don’t.” She could sense the astral whirlpool within her body. Although it didn’t contain a particularly large amount of energy, the energy it did contain was incredibly pure and seemed to transcend all other Attributes. It was utterly beguiling.”

A spellbound look was in Dongfang Hanyue’s beautiful eyes. As the Palace Master, she had always received the finest tutelage and was by nature a supremely clever person. However, she still couldn’t resist falling for that bad, bad man.

She simply continued to sit there, completely absorbed in her memories.

The first time she saw him, she had been beguiled by his effortless self-confidence. Even though he wasn’t all that handsome, his talent, his self-confidence, and the focused look on his face when he created that God Tier Consolidating Equipment Scroll had left an extremely deep impression in her heart.

During the many days that followed, he had displayed incredible abilities in many different areas. Even though she herself was also acclaimed as a ‘genius’, she couldn’t help but feel a bit ashamed of her inferiority. If it wasn’t for her father’s legacy, she would probably be inferior to him in every way.

Finally, there came the day when that bad man actually took advantage of her as they leapt off the cliff. At first, for a very brief instant, she really did want to kill him. However, she just couldn’t do it. The excuse she gave was that she couldn’t kill a genius like him... but was the answer really as simple as that? The real answer was, he was the only man she had ever taken a liking to.

Perhaps young maidens would care more about a man’s physical appearance, but as the Xuantian Palace Lord, Dongfang Hanyue

had seen far, far too many handsome men. The only thing she truly cared about were inner qualities. Although Zhou Weiqing had shown himself to be a pervert and a lecher, none of that was able to wipe away his absolutely astonishing talent.

For a long period of time after that, she had completely ignored Zhou Weiqing. It was partially because she was angry, but also because she felt a bit lost.

Perhaps it was when she took him into that separate Spatial region to spar with him that everything changed.

Dongfang Hanyue never would've imagined that she would end up losing a battle in what she believed to be the only area she surpassed Zhou Weiqing in. She had already been able to sense a portion of the power within Zhou Weiqing's Bloodline, and the final Devour Skill had caused her to feel a sense of fear.

And so, she lost the bet. Even after what had just happened last night, she still wasn't sure what she felt in her own heart. She had still been telling herself that she didn't want to owe this fellow anything, and so she sacrificed her body to him.

Now, however, she knew the truth.

The moment she had first fallen for him was the moment when he had won their bet. When Zhou Weiqing had gained victory, he had also won something in her heart. However, what truly made her love him was his behavior when they had battled those two powerful Terror Sea Dragons. At the most dangerous moment, he didn't hesitate at all to charge out and fight the second Terror Sea Dragon.

Sometimes, you only needed a single moment to fall in love with someone. That moment was the moment he had conquered her heart.

It didn't always matter how a man normally behaved. If he could rise up and step forward at critical life-and-death moments to

sacrifice himself for his woman, that meant he was a responsible man who was worthy of that woman's love.

In that moment, Dongfang Hanyue had cried behind her mask. She finally knew her own heart. She knew that she had fallen for this bad man, and there was no way out.

Even after she saw him display a level of power that was beyond what she believed he possessed, and even after she realized why he had come to the Xuantian Continent, Dongfang Hanyue didn't feel the slightest bit of anger towards him for his deceptions. Instead, she had only fallen even more madly in love with him.

He came here for the Spatial Teleportation Gem. There was no need for him to get involved at all. Even if he didn't flee, he could just stand there and watch. When Dongfang Hanyue was forced to the brink, she would've had to use the Spatial Teleportation Gem and even would've tried to rescue him. That would've been the perfect moment to seize the gem.

But... he didn't do that. He had chosen to do something incredibly stupid. After they had arrived here, he had even told her everything.

His actions definitely were not without risk. This was obvious from how that enormous thing he had summoned had instantly been destroyed. He had been gambling with his life! If the Terror Sea Dragon had attacked without pause, he probably wouldn't have been able to survive.

Chapter 253: Let The Storm Rage Harder (1)

“I have already recovered completely.” Dongfang Hanyue slowly rose to her feet as she said these icy words, and the awesome presence of a Heavenly Emperor instantly swept out to crush down upon Zhou Weiqing.

It could be said that Zhou Weiqing had been caught completely off-guard. He never would’ve imagined that Dongfang Hanyue would suddenly act against him at a time like this. As they had chatted, she had already completely recovered her Heavenly Energy.

Zhou Weiqing continued to sit there, not moving in the slightest. He could clearly sense that if he made even the slightest of movements, the response would be an absolute brutal, tempestuous attack from Dongfang Hanyue.

A hint of a bitter smile played across his lips as he looked at her. “Does this count as repaying kindness with treachery?”

Dongfang Hanyue snorted. “Have you shown me kindness? And even if it is repaying kindness with treachery, so what? This is a deserted island. Who would even see it?”

Zhou Weiqing said in an aggrieved, lamenting voice, “Alas! Being a good guy really isn’t easy. Still... I guess this counts as you giving me a chance and an excuse to seize the Spatial Teleportation Gem?”

Dongfang Hanyue stared at him, rather surprised. “You seem quite confident in yourself.”

Zhou Weiqing chortled. “So long as you have confidence in yourself, you’ll always have a chance. If you don’t even have confidence, how are you supposed to keep living?”

A powerful killing intent instantly burst out from Dongfang Hanyue’s body. The terrifying pressure actually caused Zhou

Weiqing's body to slowly sink down into the sand.

When Heavenly Emperor powerhouses released all of their power, they were quite terrifying. However, Zhou Weiqing was no longer maintaining the façade of a six-Jeweled cultivation. He simply sat there in the face of Dongfang Hanyue's pressure, staring at her composedly. He didn't have the slightest bit of enmity in his gaze, which actually turned extremely gentle. It was like he was watching his wife throw a minor tantrum.

"I'm going to attack!" Dongfang Hanyue said viciously, taking a step forward as her aura grew even more threatening.

"Go ahead." Zhou Weiqing spread his arms wide, a smile on his face. It was as though he was a martyr welcoming death.

"You really aren't afraid of dying?" Dongfang Hanyue slowly raised her right hand as she stared at Zhou Weiqing. Dense Tenebrous energies were flickering in her hand. A full-force strength from a Heavenly Emperor could completely destroy even this beach with ease.

"Of course I'm afraid of death. I'm terrified of death! Who isn't? I haven't had enough of life yet, and there are so many beautiful women waiting for me. Buuuuut... you won't kill me. You can't bear to." Zhou Weiqing beamed merrily as he looked at Dongfang Hanyue.

She took a deep, sharp breath. Complex emotions flickered through her eyes, and she slowly retracted her uplifted hand to press it against her own chest as she nibbled at her lower lips.

Right at this moment, the dark storm clouds in the skies suddenly parted. The dazzling moon was high in the sky, casting its gentle moonlight upon the world. When the light of the moon shone down upon the vast sea, Zhou Weiqing's gaze instantly turned rather dazed.

A bright moon over the ocean... a fairy maiden standing on the

sands... this was a stirring image that caused his heart to begin thumping.

Dongfang Hanyue once more took a step forwards. Finally, she made her move... except, it wasn't against Zhou Weiqing.

Riiiiip! The high-pitched sound of fabric being torn wasn't unpleasant at all to hear. Instead, it was as though some sort of barrier holding these two people apart had been instantly shredded.

What now appeared in front of Zhou Weiqing, bathed in the pristine light of the moon, was a body that seemed to have been forged from alabaster jade. It was flawless and beautiful, and it seemed to be bathed in holy light.

She took another step forward.

Zhou Little Fatty swallowed hard. Even he himself felt that this wasn't real. He mumbled, "Don't play so rough, alright?"

Dongfang Hanyue glared hatefully at him. "Not alright!"

She pulled outwards with her two hands, causing the sound of fabric ripping to appear once more. This time, a bronzed chest which looked as sturdy as a steel wall was revealed. Her lips searched for his, almost frantically.

When their lips actually locked together, he could clearly sense that her icy lips were trembling. This probably represented her genuine emotions right now. Her actions had been quite wild. She had pushed Zhou Weiqing down onto the sand, then seized his hands and held them down... but to an old hand like him, her kiss showed that she was actually extremely shy and inexperienced.

This was an absolutely breathtaking kiss. It felt as though the kiss would last until the seas dried up and the stones turned to dust, and it caused bestial feelings to pump through a certain someone's veins. It wasn't until the two of them finally had to breathe that the kiss temporarily came to an end.

Dongfang Hanyue's lithe body pressed down against Zhou Weiqing. She was soft, lithe, yet incredibly agile and flexible, causing a certain someone to nearly let out a moan.

Both of them were panting for lack of breath. Due to the panting and heaving, certain parts became pressed even more tightly against each other.

After panting for a while, Dongfang Hanyue stopped moving and fell silent. A certain someone who was filled with bestial instincts could no longer hold himself back. Being pressed down like this was pretty fun, but for it to stop midway rendered him a bit speechless.

"Uh... so should we continue?" Zhou Little Fatty asked probingly.

Dongfang Hanyue clung tightly to his chest, still panting slightly. "Didn't you tell me not to play rough?"

"Um..." Zhou Weiqing chuckled. "Actually, what I really wanted to say was, 'let the storm rage even harder'." He suddenly raised his head, only to see that Dongfang Hanyue's beautiful face had turned as red as an apple. She stared at him, rather lost, then said in a whisper, "B-but I'm not sure what to do..." As she said this, she slightly loosened her tight grip over Zhou Weiqing.

Wasn't this exactly how a man's bestial instincts were aroused? Zhou Weiqing didn't know how others might react, but he himself felt as though he truly had transformed into a Dark Demon God Tiger.

In the next instant, the positions of 'attacker' and 'defender' were suddenly reversed. The female Demon Draconian finally became the 'defender', while the Dark Demon Tiger God acted as though it had just caught a delicious little lamb to feast up. Rain, thunder, lightning... the storm raged indeed.

The dark storm clouds drifted across the bashful moon, turning

the seas dark. The only things within the darkness were the seas, the barren island, the sands, and an absolutely stirring mixture of draconic moans and tiger growls.

Even though she was twenty-nine years of age, this was her first time being together with a man. This was the first man who had entered both her heart and her body.

I owe him this. I lost the bet. At first, Dongfang Hanyue repeatedly told herself this excuse, but when a certain someone's strong, muscular, scorching hot body took control over her, she completely lost the capability for rational thought. The only thing left was her cries, which varied between high and quavering, between loud and soft.

He had said he didn't regret it. What about her? She didn't regret it either. Even if she knew they had no future together, and that she might in fact lose this man right away, she still didn't hesitate to give herself to him.

Perhaps this was madness... but the most beautiful memory in Dongfang Hanyue's entire life was this night of madness. Sometimes, you didn't need a perfect ending to the story. Enjoying the story itself and gaining an indelible, unforgettable memory was sometimes even more beautiful than finding a happy ending.

Dongfang Hanyue had never imagined that she could become so soft and weak. She felt like she was a small boat that was being tossed about by the waves, rising and falling and then rising again.

The night of madness only came to a gradual end when the sun rose. Dongfang Hanyue was in an very deep sleep, her head nestled against Zhou Weiqing's firm shoulders. She was utterly exhausted, but her slender and beautiful face had an unwavering, sweet smile on it.

Zhou Weiqing wasn't able to fall asleep. Beneath them was a very soft blanket, which Zhou Weiqing had originally prepared for himself and Shangguan Bing'er to use as they traversed the oceans

to Xuantian Continent via the Sea Emperor Shuttle. He didn't expect that it would be put to use at a time like this.

His entire body felt incredibly comfortable, even after he had displayed the ferocity of a tiger and the spirit of a dragon. Still, he had a rather puzzled look on his face. How could he not? He had come to this place for the sake of the Spatial Teleportation Gem. It could be said that he was an enemy of Xuantian Palace... but somehow, the Xuantian Palace Lord was nestling in the crook of his arm.

In addition, the energies of this beautiful Heavenly Emperor had caused the Saint Energy within his own body to advance dramatically. Dongfang Hanyue had four Attributes and was incredibly powerful, as could be seen from how she had worked together with the Tenebrous Demon Dragon to subdue the Terror Sea Dragon. Zhou Weiqing's cultivation base had dramatically after he took her virginity and gained her vital Yin essence. Indeed, how could it not? He was now actually at the verge of breaking through the thirty-eighth stage. Normally speaking, even though Saint Energy had the mighty ability to assimilate other Attribute energies, there was no way he would've been able to break through without another half-year.

Still... Dongfang Hanyue had benefited even more from Zhou Weiqing. She had only risen to become a Heavenly Emperor due to her father's Heavenly Energy, which meant that her own bottleneck was far greater than that of any ordinary Heavenly Emperor's. After Zhou Weiqing had healed her and then intertwined his spirit and flesh with hers, she had been baptized by Saint Energy and her invisible bottleneck had been significantly lessened. Even she herself never would've imagined this.

"Mm..." Dongfang Hanyue let out a low moan, nearly setting Zhou Weiqing's ardor alight once more. She snuggled in his arms, trying to find a more comfortable position.

"Eh? What's this?" Suddenly, Zhou Weiqing discovered that

something was pressing against his arm. He unconsciously glanced down, only to see that it was a small pendant.

The slender string was made of a silvery-white metal, and it was attached to a large diamond-shaped jewel that hung around Dongfang Hanyue's slender neck.

Chapter 253: Let The Storm Rage Harder (3)

Was he actually a good person or a bad person? To Dongfang Hanyue, this no longer mattered. Even if she knew that there was no future for them, she didn't hesitate to give herself to him. She had even purposefully put on that necklace.

When she thought back to the time they had spent together in recent months, crystalline tears began to slide down her fragrant, tender cheeks.

"You jerk. Will you even remember me after you go back? Why are things always so unfair. The most precious gift you gave me wasn't this 'Saint Energy', it was the memories!"

Just as Dongfang Hanyue was murmuring to herself, her slender form suddenly shuddered. The grief in her eyes was instantly replaced with a sharp, murderous look.

"Not good!" She didn't hesitate at all, instantly rising into the skies and unleashing the Tenebrous Demon Dragon Transformation. The vast dragon wings propelled her towards the direction Zhou Weiqing had taken at maximum speed.

.....

After leaving the island, Zhou Weiqing had felt rather lost. To be honest, he really couldn't bear to leave this place. Not only was he already missing Dongfang Hanyue's body, he felt a heavy feeling in his heart that he couldn't quite explain.

Possibly because he was feeling guilty, he didn't immediately reach out to contact Shangguan Bing'er. He didn't even pay attention to where he was headed. He simply flew dazedly through the skies.

After flying for a while, he suddenly sensed an utterly terrifying aura of power burst forth from the sea below him.

Zhou Weiqing's reaction speed was quite fast, but this creature

had clearly been building up power for quite some time. An enormous waterspout slammed straight into him, smashing him skyward.

At this moment, Zhou Weiqing's tough natural defenses played a critical role once more in keeping him alive. He didn't need to activate the Immortal Deity Shield, as it automatically sprang up to cover his body in a blurry field of golden light. At the same time, his silvery-white Saint Energy exploded out from his body.

This waterspout was created by Water Attribute energies. Even though the collision contained tremendous power and was formed by incredibly dense Water Attribute energies, as soon as it touched the Saint Energy it was partially dispelled. Only a remainder ended up slamming into Zhou Weiqing.

In the end, this waterspout simply contained too much energy. The collision actually blasted Zhou Weiqing over three thousand meters into the air, and he immediately vomited blood while flying upwards.

It didn't seem as though the giant waterspout was going to let him off easily. It actually transformed midair to become a giant claw which latched onto him and began to viciously drag him down into the sea.

The waters below him had actually separated as the vast, 800-meter body of the second Terror Sea Dragon began to slowly rise upwards. Its savage spikes flickered with dark blue light, while its enormous eyes were filled with hatred.

Its elder brother had died. This had been a tremendous provocation for the Terror Sea Dragon. It had been blasted away by that terrifying explosion as well, and when it woke up it knew that it had been deceived by Zhou Weiqing. It had furiously swam back, but alas it found nothing save for the carcass of the self-detonated Terror Sea Dragon.

The Grand Elders of Xuantian Palace, including Dongfang

Hanyue's mother, had immediately fled after recovering from being blasted away. They had returned to the Xuantian Continent, precisely because they feared running into the other Terror Sea Dragon.

The Terror Sea Dragon had been swimming around for quite some time now, but it still didn't dare to actually chase towards the continent itself.

In the end, the person it hated the most was probably Zhou Weiqing. If Zhou Weiqing hadn't summoned that image of the Demon God to frighten it, it would've been able to reach the Tenebrous Sealing Formation and prevent its elder brother from dying.

Just as the Terror Sea Dragon had began to leave, filled with frustration and bile, it caught a glimpse of Zhou Weiqing flying through the air.

As a Heavenly God, its spiritual senses were incredibly acute. It could sense everything within hundreds of kilometers, and so as soon as it discovered Zhou Weiqing it immediately went into hiding and began to prepare to unleash that sneak attack.

A sneak attack from a Heavenly God-level Heavenly Beast... even if Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy was much stronger than it was currently, there was no way he would be able to detect it in advance. Indeed, he was at an immediate disadvantage from the start.

Zhou Weiqing knew right away what he had encountered when that waterspout had arisen. All his hair stood up on end as he felt a sense of absolutely lethal danger! If he wasn't careful, he'd probably be forever trapped within these seas.

But the more dangerous the situation was, the more level-headed Zhou Weiqing would be. Although he had been injured by that great collision, his injuries weren't all that serious.

This was the first time he had unleashed the full defensive prowess of the Immortal Deity Shield after mastering it. Although this Heavenly God powerhouse hadn't been able to use its full power as it had wished to remain hidden, the Immortal Deity Shield had still been able to block the attack. This was a testament as to just how defensively tough it was.

The Immortal Deity Shield had instantly weakened the power of that terrifying strike, while the Saint Energy in Zhou Weiqing's body had weakened the remainder. The combined effect was that although Zhou Weiqing's injuries weren't light, he was far from being too injured to fight back.

Faced with the pressure from that terrifying claw of sea water, Zhou Weiqing unleashed a halo of faint silvery-white light from his body. Something odd happened. The terrifying Water Attribute energies, which had been suppressing his soul and pressuring him to the point of preventing him from moving at all, was suddenly melted away by the silvery-white light.

Although only part of it was melted away, to Zhou Weiqing it was essentially a life-saving effect. Silver light flickered, and in the next instant he reappeared over a hundred meters away.

Using Saint Energy to cast the Spatial Shuttle increased its powers dramatically. This was the main reason why Zhou Weiqing was never worried about anything he might encounter after coming to the Xuantian Continent.

Thanks to his Saint Energy, he was able to consecutively cast Spatial Shuttle within a certain period of time to flee a tremendous distance. Although this was extremely taxing to his Saint Energy, at critical moments like this it was without a doubt a peerless life-saving measure.

The first usage took him outside the enormous well spout. Zhou Weiqing didn't dare to tarry at all, immediately using Spatial Shuttle eight more times in a row to move over a thousand meters

away.

However, this wasn't enough against a Heavenly God. As Zhou Weiqing teleported a thousand meters away, which he had thought to be a safe distance, an incomparably awesome pressure suddenly came crashing down upon him from the skies. It was as though the heavens were collapsing! This terrifying pressure shoved Zhou Weiqing into the sea, and it disrupted his ninth Spatial Shuttle.

Saint Energy could ignore any influences from Heavenly God-class Water Attribute energies, but if Zhou Weiqing wished to use a technique he would have to convert it into another Attribute. Just now, all other types of Attributes save for the Water Attribute had been severed away within a very wide region.

Facing off against this Heavenly God by himself, for the first time Zhou Weiqing truly understood how terrifying his foe was. It was like he was the one now trapped within the Tenebrous Sealing Formation. All of his power and abilities were suppressed and unable to leave his body. Even his Saint Energy flowed much slower than before.

Yes. He relied on converting Saint Energy into other types of energy in using techniques, but these techniques were limited in that they couldn't go without the Saint Energy.

The local atmospheric energies were now completely unusable. Before a Heavenly God like this Terror Sea Dragon, his own level of Heavenly Dao Energy was nothing more than a joke. He could no longer use techniques like the Spatial Shuttle.

One dark-gold beam of light after another appeared on his body. This was his Hate Ground No Handle set. He actually grew calmer and more focused, as he knew that there was no way to escape. Only by fighting to the bitter end would he have a chance at surviving.

"Human, you caused my brother to die. I won't let you die an easy death. I'll let you taste the torments of a thousand tortures as

I slowly kill you.” The Terror Sea Dragon’s enormous head rose out of the sea, staring with viperous hatred at Zhou Weiqing. It wouldn’t be tricked again. Zhou Weiqing was like meat on the chopping board just waiting to be devoured.

Zhou Weiqing laughed coldly. “Who knows which one of us will actually be the one to die, you stupid sea slug. Killing me isn’t going to be easy.” He took a deep breath, his eyes suddenly transforming to become an incandescent silver color. Moments later, a strange aura instantly shot out of his body.

This was an aura which came from his Bloodline, and he was releasing it to the maximum with his Saint Energy.

It was quite odd. When he released this aura, the enormous amount of Water Attribute energies which had sealed off this region actually shuddered repeatedly. As for the Terror Sea Dragon, its eyes widened as the savage spikes across its body instantly transformed into a crystal blue color.

“The Dragon Emperor Bloodline?”

Zhou Weiqing said arrogantly, “So you know of the Dragon Emperor Bloodline, eh? I am the heir of the Dragon Emperor. If you dare to act against me, I’ll summon my comrades and they’ll instantly crush you into pieces.”

Zhou Weiqing’s body did in fact contain the pure Dragon Emperor Bloodline within it. It also contained the Dark Demon God Tiger Bloodline. With the support of his Saint Energy, he fully unleashed the aura of his Dragon Emperor Bloodline. Although it wouldn’t directly enhance his combat abilities, it was still the most exalted Bloodline amongst the dragons that surpassed even the Terror Sea Dragon Bloodline in status. As a result, even the Terror Sea Dragon’s power would be slightly affected once this Bloodline’s aura was unleashed.

“Bullshit. Despicable human, don’t think you can fool me a second time. A noble dragon like myself will never fall for the same

trick twice. This is the ocean! Even if other descendants of the Dragon Emperor were to truly arrive, what could they do to me? Die!”

As it spoke, its body flashed with blue light as the Water Attribute atmospheric energies grew even denser, squeezing hard around Zhou Weiqing.

“Screw you, do you really think I’m scared of you?” Zhou Weiqing could tell that escape was virtually impossible, but this just stirred up his innate stubbornness.

The Saint Energy in his body was fully unleashed, causing even his Hate Ground No Handle set to temporarily turn silver. However, the surrounding Water Attribute energies were simply too dense. Zhou Weiqing simply wasn’t able to form the technique he wished to unleash.

Chapter 254: Possession of the Demon God

(1)

Facing the severe pressure from the controlled water of the Terror Sea Dragon, Zhou Weiqing was left with no choice but to withstand it with his Saint Energy, holding out against the external pressure. With the assimilation effect of the Saint Energy, he was just barely able to hold on.

If not for the fact that the Terror Sea Dragon hated him so much and wanted to torture him slowly, perhaps it would have activated a far stronger, far more terrifying Skill now.

It was in no rush to kill Zhou Weiqing. It wanted to torture him, to see him suffer, and be lost bit by bit to endless terror.

The pressure that a Heavenly God Tier powerhouse could emit was just too horrifying. It was not just on the body, but right deep into the soul as well.

Zhou Weiqing could only feel that if he let up for even just a split second, he would instantly be smashed into smithereens by the massive Water Attribute energies pressing up against him. Not even the slightest fragment of his soul would remain.

All he could do now was just hold on... endure...

If he used the Saint Energy to activate the Ward of the Demon God, perhaps he could solve the current problem, but that was a method of last resort. Even with his cultivation stage, he would have to pay a severe price in terms of Saint Energy to summon the Image of the Demon God to descend upon the world. More importantly, he was not able to control it.

If things happened the way it happened last time, where the Demon God looked impressive and caused all of the atmospheric attribute energies around to be suppressed, but in the end was unable to withstand any attacks... then it was of no meaning to

him at all. Once the Terror Sea Dragon destroyed the Image of the Demon God and focused its pressure back on him, he would no longer have any chance.

As such, Zhou Weiqing was waiting. Waiting for the moment that the Terror Sea Dragon launched its final finishing blow. In that moment, if he summoned the Image of the Demon God, perhaps there would still be a chance for him to escape.

Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing still had a few follow-up unique aces up his sleeves, to be used only if he really had no other choices. As such, although he was facing such a terrifying pressure, he did not panic. A chance might show itself at any time.

As the external pressure continued rising, Zhou Weiqing did not even need to control the Saint Energy in his body, which was circulating and accelerating throughout his own body under the pressure.

The thirty six energy whirlpools of his Death Acupuncture Points had linked up as one, spinning crazily at an astonishing rate.

Such immense external pressure was not without its benefits. Zhou Weiqing could at least clearly sense that as he continued facing such pressure and held out against it, he was slowly beginning to reach that threshold of the thirty-eighth stage of Saint Energy. He was about to reach the state of breakthrough at any moment.

Of course, given the immense gap in power between him and the Terror Sea Dragon, even if he broke through the thirty eighth stage, it would not be of much use.

It was also at this moment that this locked-out space was shaken by a violent explosion. This explosion obviously didn't come from the Terror Sea Dragon, and the only function it served was to instantly double the pressure from the Water Attribute energies which were squeezing around Zhou Weiqing.

The Terror Sea Dragon wanted to slowly torture Zhou Weiqing to death, and thus it had not been using its full strength. At the same time, Zhou Weiqing had been waiting for an opportunity. Alas, the explosion had been just too sudden, and he had been unable to react quickly enough.

The pressure which had already been straining his limits was now doubled... what did this represent? Doom! Zhou Weiqing could only use his Saint Energy to summon the Ward of the Demon God as quickly as possible. In the next instant, the terrifying pressure almost completely swallowed him.

A blood red figure pierced right through the thick water attribute 'wall', and the slim and long Tenebrous Dragon Slaying Spear flashed like bloody lightning as it struck straight towards the Terror Sea Dragon.

Dongfang Hanyue had arrived, wearing her entire Tenebrous Demon Dragon Legendary Set, and the previous explosion had been caused by her.

Although Dongfang Hanyue did not have the Tenebrous Demon Dragon with her to fight together, she was still different from the current Zhou Weiqing. At least she was a true Heavenly Emperor powerhouse, and one with an entire top-end eleven-piece Legendary Set at that!

The power of the Tenebrous Dragon Slaying Spear was so great that not even the previous previous, more powerful Terror Sea Dragon did not dare to accept a head-on blow, let alone this one.

Its massive body jerked up suddenly, ten spikes on its back abruptly shooting forth a ray of blue light which gathered together in a ball that slammed directly into the Tenebrous Dragon Slaying Spear. Only then did it manage to stop her attack.

Dongfang Hanyue was not Zhou Weiqing. Thanks to the support of her full Legendary Set, even though the Water Attribute lockout still had some influence on her, it was not too large.

A top level Legendary Set was never just as simple as being good looking. Eleven pieces of God Tier Consolidated Equipment forming together as one Legendary Set meant that it was already one of the strongest things in this world.

In the Boundless Mainland, the Heavenly Snow Mountain Xue AoTian was overwhelmingly powerful, the only Heavenly God Tier in the entire continent. Yet, the Heavenly Snow Mountain was still not considered the first in the five Great Saint Lands. What was the reason?

Naturally, it was because of the Boundless Infinitum Set! Although the God Vanquishing Heavenly Spirit Set was also extremely powerful, if it was compared to the Boundless Infinitum Set, the difference was just too clear. With the Boundless Infinitum Set, even though Shangguan Tianyang was only at the max level Heavenly Emperor stage, he was at least able to fight to a standstill with the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord. Of course, he was still unable to defeat him.

Dongfang Hanyue had not reached the max level of the Heavenly Emperor stage, but since she had inherited the powers from her ancestors, along with her own hard work training and cultivating, she had already reached the High Level Heavenly Emperor stage. On land, she could face off against this Terror Sea Dragon all by herself, especially since it had only just reached the Heavenly God Tier stage. As the real Xuantian Palace Master, how could she be so easily disposed of?

Just now, she had been on the beach recalling all that happened between her and Zhou Weiqing. All of a sudden, she sensed a powerful energy fluctuation from the oceans, and she immediately realised what Zhou Weiqing must have met with, and so had rushed here as quickly as she could.

As the saying goes, a good man shall be repaid with good rewards. If Zhou Weiqing did not help Dongfang Hanyue recover fully, this current situation where she was able to rush over to save

him would not happen.

The sheer destructive power of the Tenebrous Dragon Slaying Spear was sufficient to instantly free Zhou Weiqing from the massive pressure of the Terror Sea Dragon.

However, it was also right at this time that Zhou Weiqing's body began to undergo some strange changes.

He closed both eyes, his entire body trembling slightly. Gray light began to appear and disappear over his Hate Ground No Handle set, making him look as though he was a crystalline entity that was constantly blinking with light. The energy ripples coming from his body were clearly extremely unstable.

Dongfang Hanyue naturally had no clue that this was happening to Zhou Weiqing due to the enormous, terrifying pressure he had faced earlier. Her actions had caused him to suffer that tremendous pressure, but she didn't have any time to check on his condition. She just cast him a worried glance, then charged down to face the all-encompassing attacks unleashed by the Terror Sea Dragon.

During the battle against the previous Terror Sea Dragon, although Dongfang Hanyue had borrowed the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's power, its main purpose had been to suppress the aura of the Terror Sea Dragon and to resist its attacks. Dongfang Hanyue, however, was meant to attack.

The Tenebrous Dragon Slayer Spear was a purely offensive weapon. Everything in her Tenebrous Demon Dragon Set was meant to launch the offensive. In terms of raw attack power, not even the complete Boundless Infinitum Set would necessarily be a match for her set.

In addition, the Terror Sea Dragon before them had just recently reached the Heavenly God stage. Compared to its brother, it was considerably weaker. Given that its brother had died by Dongfang Hanyue's hands, how could it not feel a sense of fear? As a result,

this clash ended up with Dongfang Hanyue's enormous blood-red attack actually seizing the offensive upper hand.

The previous battle against the stronger Terror Sea Dragon had given Dongfang Hanyue experience in battle against these creatures. Her cultivation was at a higher level than it had been during that fight, and her body had now been strengthened and remade by Zhou Weiqing's pure Saint Energy. The current Dongfang Hanyue actually had a higher level of combat power than during the previous battle, and her attacks were even smoother. She also discovered to her surprise that the Saint Energy vortex in her Dantian caused the rate at which she absorbed atmospheric energies to noticeably increase, even though it didn't give her any other special abilities like Zhou Weiqing's unique Saint Energy did.

Dongfang Hanyue actually had an even greater advantage against the Terror Sea Dragon than the Tenebrous Demon Dragon did. Her advantage lay in the fact that she herself had the Water Attribute in her Jewels as well. This allowed her to fight much more smoothly in the ocean, as it wasn't as taxing for her as it would be for powerhouses who didn't have the Water Attribute. Now that she was supported by that vortex of Saint Energy, she was able to rapidly absorb the Water atmospheric energies to sustain herself far longer in battle. This was an advantage which not even Zhou Weiqing had.

Although the Terror Sea Dragon's overall power remained far above Dongfang Hanyue's, she was able to lock onto its greatest weakness - its fear of death.

Dongfang Hanyue was exceedingly clever. When those two Terror Sea Dragons had appeared at the same time, this one had been so terrified by Zhou Weiqing that it had allowed the first one to perish. It could've taken a gamble and launched an attack against the Demon God which Zhou Weiqing had summoned, but it didn't do so. Why? Because it was afraid of death.

Thus, when she launched her attack she strictly used suicide attacks that would result in harm to both sides. She completely ignored her own defenses and poured her full power into each attack. She didn't 'care' about protecting herself, she only cared about injuring her foe.

This way, although the Terror Sea Dragon remained far more powerful than Dongfang Hanyue, it was also being smacked silly and completely suppressed. When it wasn't careful, it suffered a few deep injuries from the Tenebrous Dragon Slayer Spear.

However, it was exactly because of these few wounds that the wild ferocity of the Terror Sea Dragon was ignited. Its enormous body suddenly rose up as all of its spikes straightened. It unleashed hundreds of dense beams of blue light into the skies, aimed not at Dongfang Hanyue but at the airborne Zhou Weiqing, who was in that rather strange state.

Chapter 254: Possession of the Demon God

(2)

Given that the Terror Sea Dragon was able to train to the Heavenly God stage, it wasn't a fool. It was afraid of death, yes, but it wasn't a fool. Dongfang Hanyue had charged here to rescue Zhou Weiqing – this much was obvious. It had been caught flat-footed by Dongfang Hanyue's attacks, and what it needed was a chance to regain its footing. Sometimes, the best defense was a good offense. This all-out attack was primarily focused on Zhou Weiqing. Either this attack would succeed in forcing Dongfang Hanyue backwards, or it would succeed in destroying a potentially dangerous threat.

Although the Terror Sea Dragon was disdainful of Zhou Weiqing's cultivation level, the Dragon Emperor Bloodline aura emanating from his body caused the Terror Sea Dragon to feel extremely nervous.

Indeed, when she saw the Terror Sea Dragon suddenly switch its attacks to Zhou Weiqing, Dongfang Hanyue abandoned her attacks and instead used flapped wings to fly over to Zhou Weiqing and protect him. The Tenebrous Dragon Slayer Spear in her hand spun like an impenetrable whirlwind, becoming a red 'shield' which blocked all of the dragon's attacks.

The spear was incredibly powerful, but it also used up an enormous amount of Heavenly Energy. Now that it was being used to defend in such a manner by Dongfang Hanyue, her own Heavenly Energy began to drop rapidly.

Her eyes, hidden behind the mysterious mask, had turned hard and incisive. If this continued, both of them would probably die here. They couldn't continue this fight. They had to leave first. The Terror Sea Dragon wasn't a true threat; once the Tenebrous Demon Dragon recovered, she would join forces with it to slay this thing.

As she came to this conclusion, Dongfang Hanyue used her right arm to brandish the Dragon Spear while using her left arm to grab Zhou Weiqing and take him with her as she fled. Given her cultivation, if she fled at full speed not even the Terror Sea Dragon would necessarily be able to stop her from fleeing with its attacks. They were fairly close to the Xuantian Continent, after all.

However... when she grabbed Zhou Weiqing, something queer happened. A supremely cold sensation appeared behind her back, and it caused Dongfang Hanyue to shiver uncontrollably. She nearly lost control over the defensive web she was weaving with the Dragon Spear.

It must be remembered that she was dressed in the full Tenebrous Demon Dragon Set. For her to be fully armored and yet still shiver due to a cold aura... one could imagine how terrifying that energy was!

A moment later, the cold, Demonic Attribute-filled energies behind her suddenly vanished. However, she couldn't look backwards and so she didn't see how Zhou Weiqing had changed.

Moments earlier, when she had grabbed Zhou Weiqing, his body had finally stopped alternating between those ephemeral flashes of gray light. Behind him appeared a gray figure that was just as tall as he was, and it took a step forwards and merged into his body.

Right at this moment, the Hate Ground No Handle Set on his body changed. Its dark-gold color changed to become a translucent, crystalline gray. His entire aura underwent an utterly earthshaking change as well.

Lonely, ancient, cold, remorseless... and boundlessly evil.

In this instant, Zhou Weiqing's eyes finally opened. His eyes were filled with that unlimited evil gray, and he himself seemed to be bathed in evil.

He stepped forward, moving out from behind Dongfang Hanyue.

His body had been completely changed as well. The Dual Legendary Warhammers in his hands had actually transformed into a gray liquid that instantly merged into his arms, while the Yin-Yang Giant Spirit Palms also transformed. The right side transformed into a tiger paw, while the left side transformed into a draconic claw. He had instantly transformed to become much larger. He had actually gone straight into the second mode of the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, 'Like Dragon Equivalent Tiger'.

His right leg still transformed into a hook, but this time it was a completely gray hook. A wave of gray light instantly burst out of his body, transforming him into a gray meteor that smashed straight towards the Terror Sea Dragon.

This time, he didn't have the terrifying aura of the Demon God... but when he flew forwards, the Water Attribute energies in his path which had previously stifled him actually melted away on their own, revealing a truly empty 'tunnel' in the skies.

By the time Dongfang Hanyue saw him, he had already traversed nearly half the distance to the Terror Sea Dragon. His entire body lashed out in a strange arc, using some sort of simply inconceivable movement to spin around and launch a vicious kick with his right leg against the Terror Sea Dragon.

After entering the 'Like Dragon Equivalent Tiger' mode, all of Zhou Weiqing's physical attributes had increased by a terrifying amount. In this state he was unable to use the vast majority of his techniques, but his physical prowess had risen to an utterly terrifying level.

The Terror Sea Dragon's attention had been completely focused on Dongfang Hanyue. Zhou Weiqing's sudden attack had caught it completely by surprise. However, as a Heavenly God powerhouse it still was able to quickly react with an absolutely explosive level of power.

The Water atmospheric energies instantly condensed,

transforming into many barriers of ice that appeared in front of Zhou Weiqing. At the same instant, the Terror Sea Dragon's enormous body swiveled violently, sending its thick draconic tail smashing out at Zhou Weiqing.

"You dare!" Dongfang Hanyue turned pale. She naturally knew just how much power a physical attack from a Heavenly God powerhouse possessed. She poured out the Heavenly Energy from her body, using almost all of the power in her core essence and filling the Dragon Spear with it. The Dragon Spear then shot out like a bolt of red lightning that hurtled towards the Terror Sea Dragon.

The blood-red Dragon Spear dramatically increased in size, expanding to become thirty meters long. It hurtled down through the skies like a flash of bloody lightning, carrying an aura of indomitable sharpness.

However, Dongfang Hanyue was just a bit too slow. The red lightning simply couldn't catch up to Zhou Weiqing's speed or the Terror Sea Dragon's attack.

The Terror Sea Dragon chose to steel its resolve. It had to first kill Zhou Weiqing, even if it meant fleeing with heavy wounds. This was the ocean, after all. Without the Tenebrous Sealing Formation, it could leave whenever it wanted and there would be no way Dongfang Hanyue could stop it.

The previous Zhou Weiqing would've been frozen in midair by the awesome freezing energies. But... the current Zhou Weiqing was clearly in a very strange and marvelous state. When the freezing energies around him touched that blurry layer of gray light, they vanished on their own without being able to impede him in the slightest. Moments later, his attack slammed right into the Terror Sea Dragon's thick tail.

Zhou Weiqing's right leg and the Terror Sea Dragon's draconic tail were on completely different levels of size, but when they

collided against each other they actually produced an absolutely shocking explosion.

Zhou Weiqing's body was blasted away like a cannon ball and sent flying into the air. But... but! Dongfang Hanyue stared wide-eyed at what she saw before her.

After blasting Zhou Weiqing away, the Terror Sea Dragon actually froze in its attack pose. Even when the Dragon Spear pierced through its body, leaving behind an enormous gaping wound, it still maintained that frozen pose.

Moments later, a thunderous explosion rang out yet again. This time, it actually came from the Terror Sea Dragon's body.

Its thick, powerful draconic tail actually exploded as a fist of gray light blasted it apart, sending blood and flesh flying everywhere. More than a third of its entire tail had been blasted apart.

A horrified, agonized howl rang out from the Terror Sea Dragon's maw. Its vast body instantly dove deep into the ocean, not hesitating in the slightest. Protected by an awesome tidal wave, it began to flee for its life.

Even a Heavenly God powerhouse would suffer heavy injuries when struck by these combined full-strength attacks from Zhou Weiqing and Dongfang Hanyue. Why would this cowardly creature even pause for a second?

Dongfang Hanyue flashed over to the midair Zhou Weiqing. She reached out to touch him. By now, the gray aura had completely vanished from his body. Even his Legendary Set had vanished, and his face was as pale as paper, while his aura was almost gone. Beads of blood were dribbling out of his mouth. Thankfully, his heartbeat remained strong and vigorous. Otherwise, Dongfang Hanyue would've believed him to be dead.

Holding onto his body, she carefully tested pouring her own Heavenly Energy into him. However, she was absolutely shocked

by what she found.

The thirty-six Death Acupuncture Points in his body were slowly swiveling. As soon as her Heavenly Energy entered his body, it was instantly assimilated into Saint Energy. And, judging from his internal condition, Zhou Weiqing's internal organs and meridians were actually completely unharmed. He was simply suffering from agitated blood and energies. That silver-white energy was constantly roaming his body, protecting it from harm.

How did he do this? Dongfang Hanyue stared at the man in her arms, completely lost. That strike just now... it had to be just as strong as my own strike with the Tenebrous Dragon Slayer Spear. What was that gray light? Even though he was now unconscious, his attack had clearly caused a Heavenly God-stage Heavenly Beast to be injured! What type of level of power had this person reached?!

.....

By the time Zhou Weiqing slowly woke up, he discovered that he was on a wooden bed. He himself didn't know how long he had been sleeping for. This seemed to be a very ordinary wooden room, and it actually stank of fish.

His mental strength restored, the first thing he did was to examine his body. I broke through? This was Zhou Weiqing's first reaction. Indeed. The Saint Energy in his body had actually broken through the thirty-eighth stage, and so he was now officially at the second stage of Heavenly Dao Energy.

It must be understood that after gaining Heavenly Dao Energy, each new stage represented an enormous advance. This was particularly true after the fortieth stage, where each stage represented an entirely different level.

It had been just a few short months, but he had actually broken through yet again. Even though this came at a price of having to face numerous powerful opponents, he was still alive. Being alive

was a victory of its own.

As badass as ever! Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but smile smugly. He lay there, not even moving. Although his Saint Energy had recovered, his head was killing him. Even trying to think simple thoughts made him feel as though his brain was being stabbed by needles.

Chapter 254: Possession of the Demon God

(3)

What happened that day? He vaguely remembered that something unusual had happened to his body due to the enormous pressure the Sea Terror Dragon had brought. It had resulted in some sort of unique technique being born which had then unleashed an attack alongside the 'Like Dragon Equivalent Tiger' transformation. As for what happened after that? He had no clue.

He summoned his Personal Jewels, and upon doing so he immediately noticed something strange.

Originally, Zhou Weiqing had fully stocked his first four Elemental Jewels with Stored Skills within them. Later on, the Six Ultimate Emperor Long Shiya had told him not to casually store Skills unless they were particularly exceptional, because he had too many Attributes. Once his Skills became too many for him to fully take in, it would actually have a negative impact on his cultivation.

Since then, Zhou Weiqing had only Stored a single Skill. It was the 'Nether State' Skill that Tian'er's mother, Entropic Nether Tiger Phelia had gifted him, and it had been stored in his fifth Elemental Jewel.

Right now, however, Zhou Weiqing realized that his sixth Elemental Jewel had changed. It was actually no longer an Alexandrite Cat's Eye Jewel. Instead, it had turned into a pale gray gem.

When he poured his Saint Energy into it, he made an even more shocking discovery. He found to his amazement that his sixth Elemental Jewel now completely rejected his other five Attributes. It could only hold the pure Demonic Attribute... and it already had a Skill Stored within it.

This wasn't the first Demonic Skill Zhou Weiqing had inherited

from his bloodline powers. His Ward of the Demon God was a Demonic Skill, and it didn't even take up any space in his Elemental Jewels; it was a unique thing of its own. He did also have other Skills which took up space, such as the mighty Devour Skill or the Fusion Skill Dark Demon God Lightning.

This new Skill was now his fourth Demonic Skill, but Zhou Weiqing was absolutely certain that this would definitely become his strongest Skill of all. He could vaguely sense that this was a Skill which had come via something within his Bloodline being activated, something which belonged to the Dark Demon God Tiger. The name of this Skill was: Possession of the Demon God.

Actually, Zhou Weiqing's guess wasn't 100% correct. Yes, the 'Possession of the Demon God' was a Skill that was related to the Dark Demon God Tiger, but it completely surpassed it.

The Dark Demon God Tiger Bloodline which Zhou Weiqing had inherited contained a strand of the Demon God Bloodline. This was why he had a connection to the Demon God and was able to summon its image... but, please do not forget that the Dark Demon God Tiger didn't have a supreme Attribute like Saint Energy!

Zhou Weiqing had on multiple occasions used his Saint Energy to activate his Demon God Bloodline. When he had battled against the Terror Sea Dragon and was in mortal danger, his Demon God Bloodline, in an attempt to protect itself, had actually transformed and upgraded.

In other words, the Demon God power within Zhou Weiqing's Bloodline was now vastly superior to that of the Dark Demon God Tiger. It had reached a brand new level, which was why this new 'Possession of the Demon God' technique had appeared. This was a Skill which didn't belong to the Dark Demon God Tiger.

It was all thanks to this Skill's power that he had managed to injure the Heavenly God-level Terror Sea Dragon.

Is this for real? Zhou Weiqing chortled to himself in a silly

manner. In fact, he was grinning so hard he couldn't keep his mouth closed. He had trained for so very long and had encountered many marvels, but this was the first time he encountered something wonderful like this.

Although he wasn't sure as to just how powerful the Possession of the Demon God was, the very fact that he was still alive and had seemingly managed to injure the Terror Sea Dragon was proof of how terrifying the Skill was. Even though using it had resulted in this absolutely miserable headache, it was all worth it! This was now an absolute killer trump card of his.

The door swung opened and a maiden walked in. She looked to be seventeen or eighteen years of age and had a plain face, with a few blotches on her nose. When she came in, she saw Zhou Weiqing lying there while grinning like an idiot. She was badly startled. "Eek! Has he become retarded? What should we do?"

Zhou Weiqing's smile instantly froze. His face twitched, not sure whether to laugh or cry. "What do you mean, retarded? I'm perfectly fine." While speaking, he massaged his temples. Although the Possession of the Demon God was quite powerful, its side effects were just as noticeable. He wouldn't be able to recover just yet.

The maiden patted her chest in relief, then smiled. "You scared me. I thought you turned retarded. If you did, I don't know how I would've been able to explain things to that beautiful big sister."

When he heard the maiden's guileless words, Zhou Weiqing asked, rather puzzled, "Where am I? A beautiful lady sent me here?"

The maiden nodded. "This is Jimu Village, a small fishing village. You've been sleeping for two days. That beautiful big sister gave me money and said to let you rest here. She'd come back as soon as possible."

Zhou Weiqing subconsciously reached out towards his own chest.

The necklace with the Spatial Teleportation Gem was still there. Then... why did Dongfang Hanyue leave him here and then depart? Did she have something important to take care of?

“Are you hungry? I can give you some food,” the maiden said to Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing nodded. “Great! I’ll have to trouble you to do just that.”

The maiden smiled bashfully, then turned and left.

After sitting for a while, Zhou Weiqing noticed that his headache had seemingly improved quite a bit. He couldn’t help but sigh. Perhaps it was for the best that Dongfang Hanyue had left. He really didn’t know how to face her. He had taken away her palace’s most important treasure, but she didn’t retrieve it from him. Perhaps she had left to avoid any awkwardness between them. He had completed the mission. It was time to go back and resolve the problems facing the Luster Spatial Realm. This would save Heaven’s Expanse Palace quite a bit of labor; they’d no longer have to worry about how to evacuate Zhongtian City.

While considering this question, he plucked out a silver-white jewel from within his Sumeru Ring. This was a ‘ten thousand kilometer voice transmission stone’. Although it couldn’t actually send messages from ten thousand kilometers away, a few thousand kilometers was still possible. Zhou Weiqing had taken it from Heaven’s Expanse Palace. Both he and Bing’er each had a piece, for fear that they might lose contact with each other in the Xuantian Continent.

He infused his gentle Saint Energy into the voice transmission stone, causing it to instantly light up. A dense Spatial Attribute energy ripple flew out, causing Zhou Weiqing’s right hand to become rather blurry. Faint silver-white light scattered everywhere, causing that strange Spatial energy to instantly cover Zhou Weiqing’s body. The voice transmission had begun.

“Bing’er. Bing’er,” Zhou Weiqing called softly. They had tested this thing out long ago. It was quite effective and very convenient. But... when he called out, there was actually no response at all. Zhou Weiqing’s heart sank. He called out once again, but there was still no response.

By now, that maiden from the village had returned with food. When she saw how Zhou Weiqing’s entire body was glowing with silvery-white light, she was so shocked she couldn’t help but gape with her mouth open.

Zhou Weiqing waved at her, gesturing for her to leave. Being unable to reach Shangguan Bing’er had put him in a state of unease. He was in no mood to explain, much less eat.

He left the bed and stood up on the ground. He tried several more times to contact Shangguan Bing’er, but his calls disappeared like a rock plummeting into the sea. There was no response whatsoever.

What is going on? Why isn’t Bing’er responding? He had admonished her long ago that if they were ever separated, she had to keep her voice transmission stone by her side at all times! That way, he could contact her and bring her back at any time.

Something’s wrong. Something has to be wrong. As the saying goes, when you cared about someone you would panic if anything happened to them. Zhou Weiqing was no longer able to remain calm, and he began to turn restless and uneasy.

The two of them had come to the Xuantian Continent with a specific goal in mind. Shangguan Bing’er was back in the Xuantian Palace headquarters. If anything happened, it had to be something major.

Zhou Weiqing began to frantically pace back and forth within his room. He couldn’t be sure as to what had happened. Had Dongfang Hanyue regretted her choice and was unwilling to let him leave with the Spatial Teleportation Gem? Or did something else happen?

No. Impossible. Although they had only known each other for a fairly brief period of time, Zhou Weiqing was still able to tell what type of a person Dongfang Hanyue was. She was very intelligent, but she wasn't very rational. In fact, she was a very emotional person... and she really did like him.

When he thought of this, another possible flickered through his mind. Could it be... that Dongfang Hanyue was afraid of losing him and also afraid that he would refuse her request to stay behind, and so she had imprisoned Bing'er and was there waiting for him to go back and find her?

Yes. This was entirely possible. A bitter smile appeared on Zhou Weiqing's face as he felt a sense of powerlessness. He slapped himself, hard. "Oh, Zhou Little Fatty. This is your fault. You sow the seeds of love wherever you go. Now, even Bing'er is in trouble because of it. I can't stay here, I need to go to Xuantian Palace immediately. As the saying goes, 'rivals in love can be deadly foes'. What if Hanyue can't resist taking action against Bing'er? That'll be troublesome."

When he thought about Shangguan Bing'er possibly being injured, Zhou Weiqing began to panic even more. However, he was still a person who had experienced many things. He knew that given his current state, even if he returned he wouldn't necessarily achieve his goals. He had to at least recover and reach peak condition first.

He walked over to the table, picked up the food the maiden had given him, and began to eat.

The most common food in a fishing village was, naturally, fish. Although the fresh fish soup wasn't exquisitely made, it was still extremely tasty. Mix in a few grains and vegetables and it made for a sumptuous meal. Alas, Zhou Weiqing didn't have any appetite at all. Even the finest of foods tasted like ash in his mouth.

He wolfed down the food, then immediately returned to the bed

and sat down to meditate, entering the cultivation state.

One of his Saint Energy's finest properties was that he didn't really need to worry about being disturbed. He could end his cultivation state whenever he wanted, and so he didn't go out to tell that maiden not to disturb him. He needed to return to peak condition as soon as possible, then go rescue Bing'er.

The Saint Energy in his body began to circulate. Zhou Weiqing wasn't sure how he was supposed to replenish his mental energies, but he was certain of one thing – his Saint Energy could do anything.

His belief was verified. As the thirty-six Death Acupuncture Points in his body had reached the thirty-eighth stage, his Saint Energy had only become even purer. As it circulated through his body, it constantly reduced the pain from the headache he was suffering.

This was Zhou Weiqing's first cultivation session after reaching the thirty-eighth stage. He realized that the Saint Energy in his body had increased markedly. On the whole, it had become even purer than before.

Chapter 255: Dont Make Me Bathe The Xuantian Citadel In Blood! (1)

The Saint Energy didn't start flowing that rapidly but even the slightest fluctuation had a great attraction towards the external atmospheric energy. He could feel his cultivation increasing bit by bit. During this process, the atmospheric energies were transforming into Saint Energy while continuing to compress into astral form.

This process couldn't be considered fast but the majority of Heavenly Jewel Masters in the nine continents would dream about something like this.

Zhou Weiqing has been meditating for one day already. When he opened his eyes the second time, his spirit had been rejuvenated.

The room had been cleaned up, with a new meal ready. Weiqing showed no reservation and quickly ate before leaving behind the payment. He didn't say goodbye to the fishing girl. After leaving the room, he decided on a direction before leaping up and unleashed his Dragon-Tiger wings before heading towards the Xuantian Palace at maximum speed.

How could he not be anxious when Shangguan Bing'er's life was on the line? In his mind, the Spatial Teleportation Gem was nothing compared to her well being. Nothing was more important than her in his mind.

Xuantian Citadel, seventh level.

The upper echelons of the palace were seated. However, the atmosphere was quite somber at this moment.

This time, Dongfang Hanyue sat in the master seat while her dazzlingly beautiful middle-aged mother, the previous 'Palace Master', was sitting where 'Dreamwake' used to.

Dongfang Hanyue had just recently returned after receiving the

news.

After Weiqing became unconscious, she originally wanted to bring him back to the palace. However, the moment she returned to the Xuantian Continent, she heard the news from the palace.

Her mother and the Grand Elders all returned. Of course, they first subdued and captured Shangguan Bing'er. This was the important reason why Weiqing couldn't contact her.

The palace also has an item similar to the long-range voice transmission gem. Hanyue's mother, Dong Fang, used this item to confirm Hanyue's safety as well as telling her that they had contained Bing'er.

Hanyue was naturally worried and told her mother to release Bing'er. Alas, she was refused. She didn't dare to bring Zhou Weiqing back and so she had to leave him behind in the fishing village and ran back herself to deal with this matter. Even though she didn't know the extent of the relationship between those two, Bing'er was still Zhou Weiqing's woman! If Bing'er was hurt in the palace, Weiqing would probably immediately turn against her. This wasn't the development she wanted to see.

As a result, Weiqing guess wasn't quite correct. It couldn't be, given the complexity of the situation.

"Release Shangguan Bing'er right now!" Hanyue commanded without hesitation.

The Water Elder slightly frowned, "Palace Master, you need to calm down first. We need to discuss this more."

Dongfang Hanyue furiously stated, "What else is there to talk about?! Not only is Zhou Weiqing a Consecrated of our palace while Bing'er is an Elder, the fact is that during our moment of greatest peril, Zhou Weiqing came and saved all of us. We shouldn't be treating him like this."

The Water Elder sighed and said, "Yes, Zhou Weiqing did save us.

But Palace Master, have you thought about it? Why did this Zhou Weiqing try to hide his power so much? Moreover, none of us were able to detect it. Why is that, and what was the technique used back then? Even a Heavenly God expert's aura was suppressed by him. That technique might not be an offensive one, but it does reveal that he had the power to threaten us."

"How old is he? Only around twenty, yet he is already at the nine-Jeweled level and has a type of strange Heavenly Energy. You can't tell me that there is nothing odd going on here. Moreover, he isn't the same as you, having inherited a legacy. I'm afraid he had other plans in joining us. While it's true that we are indebted to him, for the sake of the palace I really must ask you to think it through. We must carefully investigate this matter and wait until Zhou Weiqing returns before making a decision. Shangguan Bing'er is an important card we now hold. And, don't worry. We are not mistreating her."

Hanyue's expression became quite unsightly, fluctuating between red and white. She had to admit that the elders were right, since she knew what he had come for. However, if he actually returned, would the elders spare him? What should I do now? How do I deal with this?

"Who gave the order to put Shangguan Bing'er under house arrest? You all dared to be so bold in my absence?" Dongfang Hanyue's voice was quite awe-inspiring, and she had a murderous glint in her eyes. Her mind was slightly disordered at this moment since she still hadn't decided how she should handle the issues between her and Weiqing. And now, something like this had happened at the palace?

"It was me." Dong Fang, who had been quiet the whole time, finally spoke with a serious tone.

After hearing her mother's voice, Dongfang Hanyue paused for a moment before saying, "Mother, how can you do this? Isn't this forcing Zhou Weiqing to be our enemy?"

Dong Fang frowned. "Hanyue, you are not thinking clearly because you are too deeply involved. It seems like Zhou Weiqing has actually won you over. If he remains our Consecrated, I won't object to the relationship, but it now seems his background is unclear. How can we not investigate this? You are the Xuantian Palace Lord and can't act so rashly. Carefully reconsider, our action is necessary due to the overall situation. Moreover, we are only keeping Shangguan Bing'er under house arrest. This is only something the people sitting here know about. There's no way Zhou Weiqing can know. Once he comes back, as long as we have investigate everything clearly and can see that he really doesn't bear any malice towards our sect, then everything will be fine."

Hanyue could be angry towards the elders but not towards her own mother. Despite being the Palace Master, she had only recently inherited this position. If her mother and the Grand Elders stood together, her influence would be far from enough to change these decisions.

The Water Elder reminded: "Palace Master, no need to be angry. We old men all remember that Zhou Weiqing has saved our lives and we are not the type to show ingratitude to a friend. However, we must think of the palace before all else. We have lost six elders, a terrible loss. If we have internal problems as well, we would suffer a truly grievous blow. We spent quite a bit of time considering this issue before coming to this decision."

Dongfang Hanyue became quiet. The elders and her mother weren't being unreasonable. If she could stay calm, she would naturally think that their action was correct. Zhou Weiqing was an outsider, after all. Alas, he had an unshakable position in her mind since she had already given him her most precious thing. Given this situation, she had already chosen to stand by his side.

Rather than say they won this effort against the Terror Sea Dragon, it was more accurate to say that neither side won. Even though the more powerful dragon was killed, there was still

another one alive. Moreover, the one dead chose to self-destruct so they didn't get anything good from it, but instead they had lost six of their top Elders. It made sense that the four Grand Elders would tread so carefully.

After taking a deep breath, Dongfang Hanyue managed to calm her emotions. She gritted her teeth as she made a decision. It was better to make a few things clear instead of letting them play the guessing game.

"There is no need to investigate, I know his background," Dongfang Hanyue sighed and said quietly.

Dong Fang looked at her in astonishment, "You do? How?"

Dongfang Hanyue smiled wryly and said, "Because after the self-destruct, we were blown away to the same place. We drifted to an abandoned island and met there. I had the same questions as everyone too and even wondered if he would attack me, because when we met I had been heavily wounded and had less than ten percent of my strength."

The group was shocked when they heard this. When they saw her return, she had been completely fine so they thought that she hadn't suffered any injuries at all. Dong Fang and the elders had relied on their powerful cultivation and the Tenebrous Sealing Formation to protect themselves. Even though there were some injuries, they still came out relatively unscathed due to being Heavenly Emperors. After hearing her story, they suddenly remembered that Dongfang Hanyue had been at the core of the explosion, since she was the main offensive power against the dragon!

Dong Fang hurriedly asked: "Did he do anything to you?"

Hanyue sighed in response: "Mother, if he wanted to do anything, I wouldn't be sitting here right now. Not only did he not hurt me, but he also used his marvelous Heavenly Energy to cure my wounds. He called this power, Saint Energy. He didn't need

long to treat my injuries, allowing me to recover to peak condition.”

“I forced him to answer about his history. He didn’t hide anything. He told me everything without hiding.”

Afterward, Hanyue carefully told everyone of Zhou Weiqing’s background. Everyone’s expressions changed after hearing that Zhou Weiqing was actually from the Boundless Mainland while not belonging to any of the Great Saint Lands.

“... He came for the Spatial Teleportation Gem. Back when we were dealing with the Terror Sea Dragon, if he just stood to the side and wait for the right moment... given his cultivation, I imagine all of you know what his chances for success were. If it wasn’t for him, we would have been facing two dragons! But he didn’t take advantage of the situation and chose to help us instead, risking his life against the second dragon. I admit that I was moved by him at that moment. It was in that instance that I realized that I like him.”

Chapter 255: Dont Make Me Bathe The Xuantian Citadel In Blood! (2)

Dong Fang and the elders fell silent after hearing Dongfang Hanyue's words.

“Zhou Weiqing didn't hide anything from me. I also voiced my suspicions and asked him why he did it. He said he didn't know why... but, that he had no regrets.”

She took another deep breath, glistening teardrops appearing in her eyes, “Elders, your worries were correct. Zhou Weiqing came with a goal in mind, the Spatial Teleportation Gem. However, has he done anything to harm our palace? No, on the contrary, he saved all of us. And us? We've suspected him and even acted against him. I can't accept something like this... and I have given him the gem already.”

The four Grand Elders became aghast after hearing the last sentence. Dong Fang exclaimed: “What!? You actually gave him the gem? Hanyue, how could you do this?”

Dongfang Hanyue answered calmly, “Why can't I? At the very least, I am still the Palace Master right now. According to the rules, the Master can use all of the palace's resources. Think about it, how old is Zhou Weiqing right now? Moreover, he isn't like me, who relied on inheriting legacy to gain power. He only relied only on his own cultivation talents. Yes, he is from the Boundless Mainland and will return there for sure. But, isn't befriending someone who is almost guaranteed to reach the Heavenly God realm in the future far better than keeping a gem that can't be used many more times? I hope to befriend him. Who knows what kind of support he will give us in the future? By choosing to capture Bing'er, you've ruined all of my sacrifices and plans. Maybe I can't convince everyone here but you can't convince me either. I can accept no longer being the Xuantian Palace Master, but if you wish

to act against Zhou Weiqing I absolutely refuse to take part.”

Her eyes became quite fierce as she added, “One last thing. Zhou Weiqing didn’t get the gem for free. He gave a part of his Saint Energy to me, and I can feel that with its magical power, the bottleneck from father’s inheritance shouldn’t be a problem any longer.”

With that, she stood up and left decisively in order to find and talk to Shangguan Bing’er.

The faces of the five people remaining turned ugly after seeing her leave.

Dong Fang sighed and said, “A girl’s heart eventually leaves home! This foolish girl, does she not know that they can’t become a couple?”

The Water Elder smiled wryly, “It looks like we need to carefully consider our Palace Master’s words. We can’t lose our relationship to her over a stranger. Besides, it’s not like she didn’t make sense! Maybe she is the one with the better vision.”

A musing glimmer appeared in Dong Fang’s eyes. “If Hanyue could actually reach the Heavenly God level, that would be far more valuable than a Spatial Teleportation Gem.”

Zhou Weiqing naturally didn’t know what has transpired back at the palace as he used his fastest speed to return.

He could already see the distant mountain range where the Xuantian Palace was located, and his fury burned brighter and brighter. He had repeatedly tried to communicate with Bing’er to no avail. That seed of anxiety had transformed into a fiery rage. For the sake of his love, he wouldn’t mind doing battle against the entire world.

Alas, regardless of his current mood, he just couldn’t find it in him to be angry at Dongfang Hanyue. What was he going to do now? Sneak into the citadel? No, that’s virtually impossible.

If the people from the palace have captured Bing'er, they would be expecting me to come rescue her secretly. With their numerical advantage as well as the Tenebrous Demon Dragon, a secret rescue would be impossible. If that's the case, then I might as well act a bit more brashly.

Having thought to this point, Zhou Weiqing didn't slow down and continued flying towards the citadel. The Saint Energy seemed to be boiling inside his body. With his current cultivation, flying long distances in the winged Dragon-Tiger form wasn't a great burden on his body. The Saint Energy remained 'full' from start to finish.

The palace eventually appeared in sight. Right at this moment, shouts rang out, and over a hundred shadows rushed into the skies in order to stop Zhou Weiqing.

He wasn't too clear on just how powerful Xuantian Palace was in combat, but as the only Great Saint Land in the Xuantian Continent, how could they not be strong?

He stopped in the sky and looked down carefully. Those who were flying up weren't just Heavenly Jewel Masters, they were riding Heavenly Beasts as well. The beasts' cultivation varied but they were all powerful flying creatures. The weakest was around the Zun Stage while the masters were all at the five-Jeweled level and above. Clearly, they had immediately rushed up after detecting Weiqing.

He calmly floated there and let this aerial 'army' surround him without moving. He shouted towards the citadel's direction, "Dongfang Hanyue, come out here or don't blame me showing no mercy."

Energy came from his dantian to empower this shout. With his Saint Energy and nine-Jeweled cultivation, the flying beasts in front of him all were all blasted backwards, one after another. The overbearing and furious voice resounded across the valley and

echoed back.

These Heavenly Jewel Masters still haven't attacked him... because some of them recognized him.

When joining the palace, Zhou Weiqing had revealed his brilliance during his welcoming banquet and shocked all of the upper echelon members. These commanders of the aerial army had participated in that party as well, so they naturally recognized him as Consecrated Zhou.

The palace has been keeping Shangguan Bing'er's matter a strict secret, and so these people didn't know what has happened between Zhou Weiqing and their sect.

"Consecrated Zhou, what are you saying? Please calm down first." A nine-Jeweled master controlled his mount and flew before Weiqing. He respectfully saluted him and smiled. At the same time, his eyes were full of amazement.

The large wings behind the Dragon-Tiger Transformation spread out wide, and his skin was covered with violet draconic runes which pulsed with dominating power. More importantly, Zhou Weiqing no longer hid his number of Jewels. He had nine Jewels in each hand! This was an immense difference compared to the five Jewels he had back at the party. How could these experts not feel shocked?

Zhou Weiqing smiled calmly. "This isn't your problem. As long as you don't attack me, I won't hurt you."

The commander felt a bit speechless. He couldn't help but think to himself, "We have more than one hundred men on top of supporting Heavenly Beasts. Even if this guy is as strong as nine oxen, how could he hurt us?"

Despite thinking this, he didn't dare to issue a command to attack. Who knew why this was happening? What if it was only a misunderstanding? If they hurt Consecrated Zhou, how were they

going to report this to their superiors? Moreover, he was a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master as well. Everyone wanted to be on his good side for further benefits!

Zhou Weiqing's loud shout was effective. Within the citadel, at least ten more Heavenly Jewel Masters all came out. Among this cluster were Dong Fang and the four Grand Elders.

Zhou Weiqing's expression sank after seeing this. His rage surged even more. Dongfang Hanyue still won't come out to see me? Is she feeling guilty?

"Consecrated Zhou, please come down and talk." The masked Dong Fang beckoned at Weiqing.

Surrounded by the aerial army, Zhou Weiqing slowly descended. He stared at the other side of the abyss, staring towards Dong Fang and the others. He said coldly, "Are you the fake or real palace master? The only person I want to talk to is the person who is in charge?"

Dong Fang frowned slightly. "Consecrated Zhou, calm down first. We are very appreciative of your help during the crucial moments of the disaster. What are you trying to do right now?"

Zhou Weiqing smiled brightly. "Appreciative? Really? Then where is my wife? Your way of repaying me is to capture her? I'll have you know, if even a strand of hair from Bing'er is missing, I will bathe the Xuantian Citadel with blood and and erase your palace from this continent."

This response enraged Dong Fang. She had originally discussed this over with the four Grand Elders previously and decided to repair their relations with Zhou Weiqing for her daughter's sake. Moreover, they thought that Hanyue's perspective made sense as well. The Spatial Teleportation Gem was already in his possession. If he actually chose to abandon Shangguan Bing'er, not only would they lose him, but they would also have made an enemy out of this young man, who would definitely become a peerless powerhouse

in the future. Thus, it was simpler to return Bing'er to him in order to improve their relationship and let him leave quickly. He had to return to the Boundless Mainland anyhow, so even if he caused trouble it wouldn't be here at the Xuantian Continent.

Alas, no one expected for Weiqing to act so arrogant at this moment. Dong Fang might not be the real Palace Master, but given her position, she was only below one person and above all others at the Palace. Given her prestige, she has never been yelled at so aggressively by anyone. Not even Hanyue would dare to do so!

Even though her heart had turned cold after realizing that Zhou Weiqing was aware of them having placed Shangguan Bing'er under house arrest, she was also enraged by his behavior.

Even if you are have incredible potential, it is still just potential. You brat, you aren't even a Heavenly King yet. You dare to boast about bathing the Xuantian Palace in blood?

Chapter 255: Dont Make Me Bathe The Xuantian Citadel In Blood! (3)

Dong Fang was so enraged that she laughed, “Good, good, good. Let me see just how you will bathe my XuanTian Palace in blood. I’ll have you know that your wife has already been killed by me.”

These words had been blurted out in a fit of anger. However, they were like thunder in Zhou Weiqing’s ears. At that very moment, Zhou Weiqing was rooted on the spot with a blank expression.

Of the XuanTian Palace air force surrounding him in the sky, those facing him could clearly see Zhou Weiqing’s eyes rapidly take on a blood red color that made their hearts shiver with fear.

Zhou Weiqing’s entire body trembled as an extremely unstable energy fluctuation suddenly rippled from his body.

This energy fluctuation could no longer simply be described as terrifying. It was boundless, deathly still and even had traces of grief. Densely packed creaking sounds could be heard from every bone in Zhou Weiqing’s body, while the originally slowly flowing Saint Energy within started to circulate at an astonishing speed.

An intense silver-white radiance swirled around Zhou Weiqing’s body. This radiance was akin to the light of the stars, making him look as if he was filled with an earth shaking aura of oppressiveness.

Bing’er was dead? This could no longer be described as a mere blow to Zhou Weiqing. At this time, Zhou Weiqing had really hit a brick wall. No wonder Dongfang Hanyue did not dare to come out and see me. It turns out that they had actually killed Bing’er.

Bing’er, my Bing’er.

The thought of Shangguan Bing’er dying in this foreign land, together with the fact that he could not even find her corpse, made

Zhou Weiqing felt as if his heart was about to explode.

When a person was pushed to the breaking point, he would usually fall into a state of madness. He would perhaps no longer have any reason in such a state, nor the ability to think. However, this state would definitely evoke all the potential within him.

“Bing’er, I will offer the entire XuanTian Palace as a burial sacrifice to you.”

“Ah——”

A howl that was shrill and forlorn to the extreme exploded forth from Zhou Weiqing’s mouth, while a silver-white halo tainted with the heavy smell of blood abruptly erupted from his body.

At this very moment, all of Zhou Weiqing’s most terrifying power had been brought out. It wrapped around him, and the XuanTian Palace air force, that originally had no intentions of attacking, instantly fell from the sky.

A terrifying bloodline aura exploded from Zhou Weiqing’s body, filled with the scent of annihilation and destruction. How could these flying Heavenly Beasts that had not even reached the Heavenly King Stage possibly withstand it? The XuanTian air force never imagined that Zhou Weiqing would actually dare to attack them first, and were immediately caught off guard.

Zhou Weiqing did not even look at these people. Ray after ray of dark gold light continued to spring from his body. In the next instant, his right hand grasped the rhombus-shape object hanging on his neck and forcefully pulled it off.

“XuanTian Palace, XuanTian Palace, this will not end until one of us is dead.”

“Who dares to speak such big words. Let me see just how you will annihilate the XuanTian Palace.” A deep and powerful voice suddenly rang out from the abyss as an enormous black figure slowly rose from the darkness. Titanic wings abruptly lifted as a

powerful force caught the XuanTian air force that were falling from the sky, allowing them to smoothly land on the ground.

Tenebrous Demon Dragon, the Tenebrous Demon Dragon had actually appeared.

Standing in front of XuanTian Citadel, Dong Fang was a little alarmed when she saw Zhou Weiqing's sudden change. However, the swift appearance of the Tenebrous Demon Dragon quickly made her feel relieved.

He was a mere brat that had not even reached the Heavenly King Stage. No matter how angry he became, just what would he be able to do alone? The current Dong Fang had already planned to detain Zhou Weiqing. Given how arrogant he was, if he was allowed to leave today, XuanTian Palace's reputations would surely suffer a huge blow. No matter what, they had to catch him first. As for exactly how he would be dealt with, it was not urgent.

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon's appearance immediately suppressed and forced back the terrifying aura emanating from Zhou Weiqing's body. However, the Tenebrous Demon Dragon was still secretly shocked. Like the Terror Sea Dragon, he also detected the Emperor Dragon Bloodline contained within the aura from Zhou Weiqing's body. In addition, there was also another bloodline power, seeming to be even greater than the Emperor Dragon Bloodline, now fused together with the Emperor Dragon Bloodline.

Although his senses told him what it was, all of his mind told him that such a thing could not possibly exist. Yet, the evidence was right before his eyes, and the Tenebrous Demon Dragon had no choice but to accept it.

Zhou Weiqing's Dark Demon God Tiger Bloodline was originally weaker than the Emperor Dragon Bloodline. However, ever since he had activated the pure Demon God Power within the bloodline, the Dark Demon God Tiger Bloodline had undergone a

transformation.

Zhou Weiqing's expression remained unchanged even as he gazed at the Tenebrous Demon Dragon. Instead, the intense bloodshot color of his eyes grew even deeper. It now looked somewhat similar to the dark red eyes of the Tenebrous Demon Dragon.

"No one can stop me, not even you." Zhou Weiqing's ice-cold voice was emotionless. He lifted the right hand containing the Spatial Teleportation Gem, as Saint Energy that was as silver as the stars itself frantically surged towards it.

What was he going to do? This was the question in the minds of everyone who could clearly see Zhou Weiqing's actions.

His words had been so bold and arrogant, how could he possibly be using the Spatial Teleportation Gem to leave this place?

Still, that should be the normal response. What chance would he have in the face of so many powerful experts?

However, Dong Fang did not plan on letting Zhou Weiqing leave. Once he left, he would surely become a mortal malady.

"Stop him Senior Demon Dragon, we cannot let him escape." Dong Fang said in a somewhat anxious manner. Meanwhile, the four Grand Elders and her also rose into the sky and headed straight for Zhou Weiqing.

Terrifying energy undulations rippled in the sky. The simultaneous explosion of Heavenly Energy from five Heavenly Emperor Stage experts was a very terrible sight. Even a Heavenly God Tier expert would not dare to be careless in the face of such a lineup.

Zhou Weiqing silently hovered in mid-air as if he was oblivious to everything that was happening around him. Under the strong infusion of Saint Energy, the pendant in his hand shone with dazzling silver light. It was just like a silver sun, emitting incomparably intense rays that no one dared to look directly at.

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon had been heavily injured after the battle with the Terror Sea Dragon. It was only logical that it had not recovered after a short few days. The reason why it had appeared was because it had been startled by Zhou Weiqing's earliest shout. To think that someone actually dared to yell Dongfang Hanyue's name at XianTian Citadel. Moreover, the rudeness of this person. How could the Tenebrous Demon Dragon not have been shocked? How powerful must one be to say such words!

Thus, he had flew over immediately. What he found, was Zhou Weiqing. The Tenebrous Demon Dragon did not have any malice towards Zhou Weiqing. In contrast, it had a rather good impression of the latter. After all, Zhou Weiqing did save him back then. If not, it would not even be able to appear alive here today.

However, it could tell that Zhou Weiqing was clearly in a state of madness. Although the Tenebrous Demon Dragon did not know what had happened, it was better to capture him first. The members of XuanTian Palace would naturally handle the aftermath.

Pitch-black light caused the color of the land to change as an enormous curtain of darkness silently descended. It covered the area within a thousand meter radius.

Tenebrous Sealing Formation. That's right. It was the Tenebrous Sealing Formation once more.

This was one of the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's strongest techniques. Back then, it had needed to borrow the power of the Tenebrous Sealing Formation to deal with a powerful existence like the Terror Sea Dragon. As for Zhou Weiqing, although the Tenebrous Demon Dragon was gravely injured, once he used this technique it should be more than enough to take him down.

Upon seeing the curtain of black light engulf Zhou Weiqing, Dongfang and the four Grand Elders breathed out in relief. If this

brat was allowed to leave, there would surely be a calamity in future. It was so serious that it could even be said to be a ticking time bomb for Xuantian Palace.

As long as the Tenebrous Demon Dragon was able to control the Tenebrous Sealing Formation and the cultivation level of the person activating the Spatial Teleportation Gem did not exceed it, it would be impossible to leave via teleportation.

Zhou Weiqing's gaze remained frosty as he continued to release his Saint Energy. He did not seem to care about anything that was happening in the outside world. The only things that mattered were the thick bloody light at the bottom of his eyes and the frightening will that seemed to lean towards dying together with his enemies.

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon said in a low voice, "Young man, I do not know what has happened, but you need to calm down. I will not tolerate your arrogance. Your cultivation level is already very good amongst the younger generation, but it is still impossible for you to teleport away inside my Tenebrous Sealing Formation. Surrender now. We can always discuss everything."

"Surrender?" Zhou Weiqing's heart had completely descended into a half-crazed state, "You do not have the power to make me surrender. Do you really believe that the Tenebrous Sealing Formation can affect me? It's too late."

Hearing his icy voice felt like falling into a snow pit, a feeling that made one tremble all over. It was as if that malicious killing intent was so strong that it was almost visible, making it seem as if a blood-coloured light was actually emitting from his body.

For the sake of his wife, he had come here alone and challenged the entire XuanTian Palace. Such courage was already very admirable. Even in the face of the Tenebrous Demon Dragon, his presence and aura did not seem to be the slightest bit inferior to the former. All of this caused the watching XuanTian Palace

experts to be dumbfounded.

It was precisely at this moment that a clear cracking sound suddenly emerged from Zhou Weiqing's hand. An intense silver light shot out and dashed into the skies.

The Tenebrous Sealing Formation might have been able to seal this silver light and prevent it from escaping. However, in the next moment, the silver light had already filled the entire space of the formation within a several thousand meter radius, pushing it to its limits.

A titanic and complicated symbol diagram emerged in the air. The powerful Spatial Attribute Energy fluctuations caused the surroundings to distort.

“Not good, he was not trying to teleport himself away, but do a summoning.” The Tenebrous Demon Dragon cried out in alarm. With a sudden flap of its wings, powerful Tenebrous Attribute energies surged towards the silver light.

Chapter 256: Summoning? Great Dragons? Two Of Them?! (1)

However... just as Zhou Weiqing said, he was too late.

Not even a Heavenly God was able to prevent Zhou Weiqing's actions at a time like this. When the black light landed atop the silver light, it actually bounced off. The Tenebrous Attribute was actually unable to breach that incredibly dense Spatial Attribute.

Moments later, that powerful silver light began to twist and distort, transforming impossibly fast into an absolutely enormous vortex. Even the Tenebrous Demon Dragon blanched at this vortex. It frantically beat its wings to stay aloft, while Dong Fang and the other Heavenly Emperors didn't dare to relax either. They could all tell that this was a Spatial Chaos Rift!

This was no mere technique. It was a true Spatial Chaos Rift. Anyone trapped in the center of it would instantly be ground apart and killed. Even Heavenly Gods wouldn't be willing to touch that thing. Although Heavenly Gods had tough bodies, who knew where a Spatial Chaos Rift might lead?

Right now, there was no one capable of holding Zhou Weiqing back. The silvery-white light emanating from Zhou Weiqing only grew stronger. As the creator of this Rift, he wouldn't be affected by it because it was all being generated by his Spatial Teleportation Gem.

Terrifying ripples of energy burst out wildly, causing the absolutely awesome Spatial Chaos Rift to widen even further. The dense Heavenly Energy ripples caused the entire Xuantian Citadel to shudder. Moments later, an enormous figure suddenly flew out from the very center of the Spatial Chaos Rift.

It was a dragon. A giant dragon. This dragon was over a hundred meters long, and its wings were the size of giant stormclouds. This

was an enormous dragon whose entire body was a fiery red.

Xuantian Palace's powerhouses were all stunned. None of them ever would've imagined that Zhou Weiqing would be able to use the Spatial Teleportation Gem to summon an enormous dragon. And... judging from the size of the thing, it was far beyond the Tenebrous Demon Dragon's capabilities! Zhou Weiqing actually had a card like this? He was even able to summon a great dragon? No wonder he had come for the Spatial Teleportation Gem. He actually had an incredible secret technique to use it with! None of them knew that the Spatial Teleportation Gem could actually be used like this.

Judging from its size, this newly arrived great dragon was enough to be a match for all of the other Xuantian Palace powerhouses combined. Regardless of who won or lost, this would be an apocalyptic blow for Xuantian Palace. It was impossible to defeat such a powerful creature without paying a catastrophic price.

This was what Dong Fang was thinking, but the person who was the most shocked wasn't her. It was the Tenebrous Demon Dragon. This was because the Tenebrous Demon Dragon could clearly sense that the great dragon before it had the most pure and exalted Dragon Emperor Bloodline. In other words... this was one of the true progeny and descendants of the Dragon Emperor!

It had once stated that even the progeny of the Dragon Emperor wouldn't necessarily be able to defeat the Terror Sea Dragon in the oceans, but that was just hypothetical. Amongst the dragons, without question the descendants of the Dragon Emperor were the most powerful of all. And... this great dragon was clearly an adult one!

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon knew very well that the majesty of the Dragon Emperor Bloodline's aura meant that there was no way it could last long in a fight against this great dragon. This would've been true even back when it was at the height of its

power... and now, it had just recently suffered severe injuries. Good heavens! What sort of harbinger of doom had Xuantian Palace offended? He had actually summoned a great dragon like this!

If the arrival of the great dragon had caused Xuantian Palace's forces to feel incomparable awe and horror... then what happened next drove them to absolute despair.

The enormous silver vortex that was the Spatial Chaos Rift didn't close after the great dragon emerged. After it appeared, it flew straight behind Zhou Weiqing, and the very first thing it did was to lock its gaze unhesitatingly upon the Tenebrous Demon Dragon. A powerful draconic aura instantly swept forth.

In the next instant, yet another enormous figure began to slowly emerge from the Spatial Chaos Rift. When it appeared, the ambient temperature of all the mountains around Xuantian Palace actually began to skyrocket. The Tenebrous atmospheric energies were actually the first to vanish, and the Tenebrous Sealing Formation evaporated like smoke.

Yes. This was another great dragon, and this one was actually twice as large as the first one! When this terrifyingly large dragon emerged, the Tenebrous Demon Dragon nearly fell down from the skies when it sensed the second dragon's aura. The terrifying draconic aura alone was nearly enough to wipe out all four of the Heavenly Emperors.

T-this is...

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon's eyes bulged out, and it couldn't prevent its wings from shuddering. It recognized the second dragon. It genuinely recognized it. Is this the Dragon Emperor...?

Dong Fang and the four Grand Elders were completely stupefied. They were Heavenly Emperors, which meant they were supreme powerhouses amongst humans. Even Heavenly Jewel Masters wouldn't dare to breathe loudly in their presence. But... when they

saw those two enormous Heavenly God-level dragons which seemed to be even more terrifying than the Terror Sea Dragons (while not being weakened on land) they finally felt complete despair.

Bathed in blood. So he wasn't just speaking out of anger when he said he would bathe us in blood. He's actually able to do just that. If it had been just one great dragon, then the concentrated forces of Xuantian Palace might be able to just barely match it... but facing them was two adult great dragons!

Worse, the largest great dragon was emanating an aura that was probably close to that of a peak Heavenly God's. Something like this would be able to kill the Tenebrous Demon Dragon with ease, much less them.

When the second great dragon appeared, it fluttered its wings and actually sent its great bulk flying into the skies. It then flew over to stand behind Zhou Weiqing, lifting him up onto its draconic head and then raising its head proudly. A dense beam of red light shot out, covering Zhou Weiqing within it. Its majestic draconic eyes were filled with a look of excitement.

Why had Zhou Weiqing come to Xuantian Palace to acquire the Spatial Teleportation Gem? It was because he needed to use it to bring forth these two great dragons, so that they wouldn't have to destroy the Luster Spatial Realm and wreck the entire Heavenly Jewel Island. If he simply needed to bring them out... he could do that whenever he wanted, right?

However, prior to this Zhou Weiqing wasn't absolutely certain about doing this. This was going to be his final, ultimate trump card. When the second Terror Sea Dragon had appeared, he had considered doing it, but he wasn't sure if it would work. The Xuantian Continent was tens of thousands of kilometers away. Would he even be able to summon those two great dragons here? The Spatial Teleportation Gem didn't have many uses left. Unless absolutely necessary, he wouldn't casually risk it.

But the situation was now completely different. Bing'er was dead, and Zhou Weiqing had been driven mad with grief. Given the situation, how could he remain rational?

He wanted to gain revenge for Bing'er, but he himself wasn't even close to being strong enough to do this. How could he be a match for Xuantian Palace? And so, he was left with no other options. He immediately made the seemingly-insane decision to summon the dragons... and his success had proven him right.

When Zhou Weiqing had first left the Luster Spatial Realm, the great dragon Hui Yao had placed its location marker within Zhou Weiqing's mind and also told him the method needed to summon itself and Duo Si.

Zhou Weiqing had been worrying a bit too much. From a certain standpoint, it could be said the two great dragons didn't quite exist within the Boundless Mainland. They existed in a separate realm entirely, and so 'distance' didn't really come into play when moving from one realm to another. As a result, Zhou Weiqing succeeded. He actually managed to summon both of these great dragons.

Hui Yao's eyes flashed with lightning. It had already recovered fully, and its majestic gaze became locked onto the Tenebrous Demon Dragon as well. "Thank you, Weiqing. You helped us escape. It seems you have met with some trouble. Speak. What do you need us to do?"

Hui Yao's voice was very low, but when it spoke it caused the mountains to tremble. Everything around it slowly began to turn red.

This was completely different from how the Tenebrous Demon Dragon or the Terror Sea Dragon used atmospheric energies. When they used atmospheric energies, they clearly had to rely on their own energies to do it. This great dragon Hui Yao, however, had given off a completely different feeling. It was as though the

atmospheric energies had voluntarily submitted to it, naturally allowing it to command them.

When the Tenebrous Demon Dragon heard Hui Yao's words, it felt despair. Dragons were extremely proud, and they would never allow humans to command them without a good reason. The reason he remained here and protected Xuantian Palace was because Xuantian Palace consisted of the descendants of the Tenebrous Demon Dragon Bloodline. However, these two great dragons who had the Dragon Emperor Bloodline actually seemed to be submissive towards Zhou Weiqing. This was simply unbelievable.

None of them had any idea that Zhou Weiqing had actually saved the lives of these two great dragons! If it wasn't for him and his women, Duo Si probably would've died long ago, and none of her children would've survived. If it wasn't for them, Hui Yao wouldn't have been revived either. Thus, although these great dragons were incredibly proud figures, they treated Zhou Weiqing as an absolute equal. He was a friend, a comrade, an ally.

Chapter 256: Summoning? Great Dragons? Two Of Them?! (2)

Zhou Weiqing took a deep breath. Just as he was preparing to give the order to kill them all, a shrill voiced suddenly shrieked out. “Weiqing, don’t! Bing’er isn’t dead!” The voice was followed by two figures charging out of Xuantian Palace at high speed, and they immediately moved over to Dong Fang and the four Grand Elders.

This time, it was Zhou Weiqing’s turn to be dazed. Although his gaze had become clouded by bloodlust, he was still able to clearly see who had just come flying out of Xuantian Citadel.

Dongfang Hanyue was dressed in a long green dress, and next to her was Shangguan Bing’er in a long white dress. It looked like she was perfectly fine and as beautiful as always.

Dongfang Hanyue pulled Shangguan Bing’er forwards, her beautiful eyes wide open in shock.

All of this was technically due to a misunderstanding. When Zhou Weiqing had arrived here and started to shout, Dongfang Hanyue had heard him from within Xuantian Citadel. She didn’t realize that Zhou Weiqing already knew for certain that something had happened to Shangguan Bing’er. When she heard him shouting like that, she felt a bit angry. She had given him the most precious thing she had. Did he still view her as being less worthy than his wife? And so, she didn’t immediately emerge.

In addition, just yesterday Dong Fang and the other four Grand Elders had already acceded to Dongfang Hanyue’s suggestion of releasing Shangguan Bing’er. Dongfang Hanyue had casually strolled over to Shangguan Bing’er. When she saw Shangguan Bing’er, she even joked to Bing’er and told her not to rush out right away. They wanted to make that bad man feel impatient and anxious for a time.

She had been afraid that Shangguan Bing'er would hold a grudge, and so she had spent quite a bit of time over the past two days chatting with her. The two had discussed many things, but she had forgotten to return Shangguan Bing'er's Spatial Ring to her. This was why Zhou Weiqing hadn't been able to reach Shangguan Bing'er this entire time.

This all took time to describe, but in truth mere moments had passed between Zhou Weiqing first arriving at Xuantian Citadel and the two great dragons being summoned. By the time Dongfang Hanyue led Shangguan Bing'er in speeding out of Xuantian Citadel, Zhou Weiqing's side was already prepared for war.

The words 'kill them all' were stuck inside Zhou Weiqing's throat, unable to come out. It must be remembered that both Hui Yao and Duo Si had flared their auras and were waiting for the signal. Once he actually ordered for them to kill everyone before him, they would carry it out without hesitation.

That terrifying suppressive aura continued to hang in the air, but Zhou Weiqing just stared wide-eyed. The ancient, deathly aura emanating him melted away like frost in the sun, while the redness in his eyes gradually receded as well.

Bing'er isn't dead. Bing'er isn't dead. Zhou Weiqing was unable to control himself, and his tears began to slide down his face while his body began to shake even harder.

"Give Bing'er back to me and I'll spare you," Zhou Weiqing said hoarsely. His voice didn't sound threatening at all... but he had those two great dragons by his side.

Dongfang Hanyue finally came back to her senses. When she looked at Zhou Weiqing's pathetic, sniveling face, she couldn't help but feel a sourness in her heart. She forgot that she was the Xuantian Palace Lord and, in this moment, became nothing more than a little girl. If I was the one who was in trouble, would he be this anxious?

“I refuse. Go ahead and kill me.” Dongfang Hanyue raised her head and stared coldly at Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing was dazed. When he saw that Shangguan Bing'er was fine, he suddenly went through yet another mood swing, soaring from the depths of depression to the heights of joy. By now, he no longer felt that much enmity.

When he heard Dongfang Hanyue refuse, he actually didn't know what to say. He didn't know how he was supposed to handle this situation. Only, when he saw that stubborn look on her face he couldn't help but feel a bit sorry for her.

In the end, it was Shangguan Bing'er who resolved this deadlock. “Little Fatty, what the hell are you doing? Hanyue has been treating me wonderfully. I'm fine!” As she spoke, she summoned her Wings of the Wind God and flew over towards Zhou Weiqing.

Clearly, no one was going to stop her. Dong Fang and the four Grand Elders had completely shut up. They could clearly sense that if anything was to actually happen to Shangguan Bing'er, Zhou Weiqing probably really would've ordered these two enormous great dragons to level Xuantian Citadel. No matter how crafty they were, they had no solutions for dealing with these two leviathans.

The Wings of the Wind God were incredibly fast, allowing Shangguan Bing'er to almost instantly appear before Zhou Weiqing. Ignoring the fact that so many people were present, Zhou Weiqing immediately pulled her into his arms while using both hands to roam around her body shamelessly. Only after making sure that she was completely unharmed did he finally and truly relax.

Even though many people were watching, Shangguan Bing'er didn't resist in the slightest. She just tightly held onto his waist, pressing her face tightly against his chest.

Although she and Dongfang Hanyue had arrived just moments ago, the conversation outside the citadel had been carried out

using Heavenly Energy. Thus, even inside the citadel she knew exactly what was happening.

For her sake, this man had been willing to face down the entire Xuantian Palace. He was going to bathe it in blood, all by himself. How could she not feel moved? This was her man, her Little Fatty!

Dongfang Hanyue stared at Zhou Weiqing, who was standing atop the enormous head of Hui Yao. Her eyes couldn't help but redden, because she knew that a few days from now she might never see this man again. She was jealous of Shangguan Bing'er, jealous of the fact that she could be with him while Dongfang Hanyue herself had to shoulder all those responsibilities by herself. Her father's legacy, Xuantian Palace's future... they were the heaviest shackles she had to bear.

Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er cuddled together for quite some time before slowly separating. None of the Xuantian Palace powerhouses actually dared to disturb them. The awesome presence of the two Heavenly God-level great dragons was simply too terrifying. At a time like this, they no longer worried about Xuantian Palace's fate. They were worried about Xuantian Palace's continued survival.

"Little Fatty, you were wrong in blaming big sister Hanyue. She treated me very well and she told me many things. Previously, Xuantian Palace did in fact temporarily confine me to my quarters because they weren't certain as to why we had come, but they didn't hurt me. When big sister Hanyue heard the news, she immediately came back to persuade them otherwise. I was planning to come out and search for you today."

Zhou Weiqing scratched his head, sighing mentally to himself. He felt as though his life was changing far too rapidly. He then turned to stare at the distant Dongfang Hanyue, feeling rather awkward.

"So, uh, Hanyue... um... I guess this was a misunderstanding?"

Zhou Weiqing stuttered.

Dongfang Hanyue bit her lower lips, struggling to prevent her tears from falling down. However, she simply couldn't stop them.

Zhou Weiqing spread his wings and flew towards Xuantian Palace. The great dragons Hui Yao and Duo Si simply remained where they were, waiting for him. They were certain that no one would dare to cause trouble for Zhou Weiqing with them present.

Shangguan Bing'er didn't head over, she just remained on Hui Yao's head, a rather odd look on her face.

Dongfang Hanyue hadn't held anything back in her talks with Shangguan Bing'er, including what had happened between her and Zhou Weiqing and the feelings she felt for him. At first, Shangguan Bing'er had blamed Zhou Weiqing for this. No matter how gentle she was, she was still a woman... and she had two sisters back home! This Little Fatty, he really does have a lover in every port. Even when he goes to a different continent, he still won't stop! But when Zhou Weiqing had risked everything to challenge Xuantian Palace today, that bit of resentment vanished from her heart. Now, she actually sympathized with Dongfang Hanyue.

Dongfang Hanyue was Xuantian Palace's Palace Lord. There was naturally no way she could return with Zhou Weiqing to the Boundless Mainland. She liked him, but she couldn't be together with him. This was the most agonizing type of feeling there was. In comparison, Bing'er was much more fortunate.

Dong Fang and the four Grand Elders were now thing more than spectators. In truth, they mostly felt admiration for Dongfang Hanyue. Even though she might've guided by her feelings, her evaluation of Zhou Weiqing was spot on. Who would've imagined that this young man could actually summon two great dragons?

If it hadn't been for Dongfang Hanyue bringing Shangguan Bing'er out, there would probably be no way to return from what was about to happen. Xuantian Palace's foundation, built up over

thousands of years, probably would have been completely destroyed!

Shangguan Bing'er was now back by Zhou Weiqing's side, metaphorically speaking. Judging from the looks of things, this wasn't going to result in a fight after all. Dong Fang let out a slight sigh, then waved her hand and led the four Grand Elders back into Xuantian Citadel. She did this partially because their presence here was superfluous, and partially to show that Xuantian Citadel didn't have any hostility towards Zhou Weiqing. Dong Fang wasn't a fool. Letting Dongfang Hanyue chat privately with Zhou Weiqing was actually the best choice right now.

Chapter 256: Summoning? Great Dragons? Two Of Them?! (3)

Zhou Weiqing dispelled his wings, landing before Dongfang Hanyue. When he saw the tears streaming down her face but that stubborn look remain in her eyes, his heart instantly softened.

“Hanyue, it was all a misunderstanding. This was all my fault, but I never suspected you personally, I just thought that Xuantian Palace was going to do something bad to Bing’er. No matter what, it was all my fault.” Daring to admit fault was one of Zhou Weiqing’s exemplary personal traits.

Sometimes, there were many problems between a man and a woman which were caused by both sides being stubborn and hard-headed. If one side could voluntarily admit fault, even the most serious of disputes would be easily resolved. But of course, this was only if both truly loved each other.

When Dongfang Hanyue saw that sincere look on Zhou Weiqing’s face, she suddenly leapt forwards and threw herself into his arms, sobbing loudly.

She wasn’t crying because he apologized, she was crying because after today, she probably would never see him again. She couldn’t bear to let him go!

His arms around Hanyue’s smooth and supple frame, Zhou Weiqing couldn’t help but feel excited. He couldn’t help but blurt out, “Yue-yue, come with me.”

Dongfang Hanyue continued to cry without stopping, unable to reply right away. She was very happy that Zhou Weiqing had said these words, but... could she actually leave? She bore far too many burdens on her shoulders. The entire Xuantian Palace needed her!

Thus, after hearing Zhou Weiqing’s sincere invitation, she only cried all the harder, using her hands to pound against Zhou

Weiying's chest.

As for the Tenebrous Demon Dragon, it was extremely uncomfortable due to the two Dragon Emperors staring at it. It said tentatively to Hui Yao, "If you are willing, you can rest a while at my place. It seems this was all nothing more than a misunderstanding."

Hui Yao glance calmly at it, then said, "We'll just stay here. We wouldn't want to disturb your rest or cultivation. Since this was all a misunderstanding, everything will be fine once all has been explained. We'll be leaving soon. I don't think this place is the Boundless Mainland."

The Tenebrous Demon Dragon secretly let out a sigh of relief. It was better if the two didn't come to its place. These two were capable of summoning an overwhelming amount of Fire Attribute atmospheric energies, while his own residence was filled with Tenebrous energies. If they actually came to visit, it would probably take him forever to restore his lair to its usual appearance. The only reason it had extended the offer was to demonstrate its sincerity.

"Yes, this place is the Xuantian Continent. We're tens of thousands of kilometers away from the Boundless Mainland," the Tenebrous Demon Dragon said respectfully.

A flicker of deep concern appeared within Hui Yao's eyes. When Zhou Weiying had summoned them, they had been filled with excitement as they were finally going to return to the outside world and wouldn't need to destroy the Luster Spatial Realm. That was a place their ancestors had established, after all. If they could avoid destroying it, that would be ideal.

But, after a few brief moments of excitement, they became filled with concern for their children as well as towards that nameless, powerful enemy. Even if they were able to find that opponent, would they be able to bring their children back safely?

Zhou Weiqing caressed Dongfang Hanyue's back. He said softly, "Stop crying, Hanyue. My heart breaks when I see you cry. I don't want to part from you either! But... just like you, I bear many burdens and responsibilities. I need to go back to save my parents, and there are many other tasks I have to accomplish as well. I want to stay behind with you, but I..."

"Say no more." Dongfang Hanyue lifted up her head, staring at Zhou Weiqing with her reddened eyes. "I just want to ask you one thing. Once everything is settled, will you come back for me?"

When he saw that stubborn, hopeful look in her eyes, he didn't hesitate in saying, "Absolutely! Of course I will! Anywhere between five and ten years from now, I'll come back here and find you. Not only am I going to come and seek you out, I'm going to take you away. I'm confident that by then, no one in the Xuantian Continent will be able to stop me. I'll take you away, even if I have to kidnap you to do so."

Zhou Weiqing's words were extremely dominating. Dongfang Hanyue's heartbroken face finally revealed a hint of happiness. "Really? Don't lie to me. Otherwise, I'm going to lead Xuantian Palace in attacking your Boundless Mainland."

Zhou Weiqing laughed bitterly, "My strongest point is also my weakest point. I'm soft-hearted! Especially towards my women. Don't worry, I'll do what I promised."

Dongfang Hanyue nodded slowly. "I'll wait for you. Five years, ten years... even twenty years or longer, I'll wait for you. No. If you don't come back to me in ten years, I'll assume you are dead. I'll personally lead all the powerhouses of Xuantian Palace to the Boundless Mainland to avenge you."

Zhou Weiqing's heart trembled. When he saw that stubborn look in her eyes, he grew all the more reluctant to part with her. Even though they had only been together briefly, he could tell from her eyes that she cared just as deeply for him as any of his women did.

This was a woman who was worthy of his love!

“Don’t worry. I’ll definitely stay alive. For your sake, and for the sake of my wives, I’ll definitely stay alive.”

Dongfang Hanyue snorted. “I heard from Bing’er that you are a total lecher. Hmph. I’m the last one, you hear me? Otherwise, once you bring me back I’ll kill the extras that came after me. Five to ten years! I might be able to become a Heavenly God by then. I’m not kidding around with you.”

“I wouldn’t dare. I really wouldn’t.” Zhou Weiqing scratched his head. I don’t even know how I’m supposed to explain you to the others when I get back. It seemed he really would have to keep himself under control in the future. No matter how beautiful the women he met were, he would keep a respectable distance from them. Otherwise, these women would eventually tear him limb from limb!

When she saw Zhou Weiqing nodded his head obediently like a scolded child, Dongfang Hanyue couldn’t help but let out a giggle. The next moment, tears once more began to cascade down from her beautiful eyes.

“G-go on. Beat it. I’m afraid that if you don’t leave right away, I won’t be willing to let you leave at all.” Dongfang Hanyue cast him a final lingering glance, then slowly turned with her back facing him. She didn’t want to watch him leave.

Zhou Weiqing took a deep breath, just barely able to control his emotions. He gritted his teeth, then stepped forward to pull Dongfang Hanyue over towards him, planting a deep kiss on her lips which completely melted her.

Silver light flashed. A heartbeat later, Zhou Weiqing appeared in the distant skies, landing on Hui Yao’s head once more. “Let’s go.”

Hui Yao and Duo Si exchanged a glance, then simultaneously spread their enormous wings and soared into the skies, flying far

away.

Dongfang Hanyue watched them leave, a lost look in her eyes. “Weiqing, you have to come back! I’ll wait for you.”

Zhou Weiqing stood on Hui Yao’s head, unable to control his emotions for a long time. Shangguan Bing’er stood off to one side, not disturbing him. She was a truly good girl who would always be considerate of the feelings of others. She could clearly sense how much it had hurt Dongfang Hanyue to part with him. Hadn’t she felt the same way when she parted with her Little Fatty?

Hui Yao and its wife flew westwards. Their movements seemed very slow, but in reality they were travelling incredibly fast. It had taken Zhou Weiqing two full days of flying to reach Xuantian Citadel, but it took them just a few hours on the way back before they saw the sea once more.

Hui Yao retracted its wings slightly, allowing its ponderous bulk to descend upon the ocean. “Weiqing, why did you come to the Xuantian Continent? If at all possible, Duo Si and I would like to avoid flying through the skies above the ocean. The Water Attribute atmospheric energies above the ocean are extremely dense, which is not good for our cultivation. In addition, if we were to fly through the skies of the ocean, the marine life below would be heavily impacted by us. Some might be so terrified that they’ll die on the spot. I do not wish to see this.”

Zhou Weiqing had finally recovered. He thought for a moment, then said, “We do have a way back which is fairly fast, but... what should we do with the two of you? Your bodies are so huge...”

Hui Yao smiled. “You don’t need to worry about that. Have you forgotten the Spatial Teleportation Gem? We can temporarily reside within it and slumber. If you need anything, you can summon us out as you please. That gem doesn’t seem to stable, so I’ll make use of the time to fix and remake it. Otherwise, this priceless treasure will be useless after a few more activations.”

Zhou Weiqing chortled. “That’s perfect. Very well then, I’ll put you two inside.” While speaking, he flicked his wrist and sent the Sea Emperor Shuttle flying out to land within the ocean, its ‘lid’ opening up.

Just as Hui Yao had said, if the two of them were to fly across the sea it would cause the waters below them to turn a faint red color. Their natural, dense aura of Fire Attribute energy had already caused countless fish to die and come floating up to the surface, completely cooked. No wonder Hui Yao was unwilling to fly across the sea. Even creatures as mighty as dragons were unwilling to commit too much pointless killings.

Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing’er entered the Sea Emperor Shuttle. Hui Yao exchanged a glance with its wife. The thick red aura suddenly vanished around them as their giant bodies transformed into two streaks of fiery light that shot into the Spatial Teleportation Gem over Zhou Weiqing’s chest. It felt like an absolutely enormous amount of energy had just poured into it. Before Zhou Weiqing even had a chance to get a clear picture of the energies involved, Hui Yao and Duo Si both completely vanished. As they vanished, the world around them went back to normal and no more red color appeared in the seas.

Zhou Weiqing closed the lid to the Sea Emperor Shuttle, then turned over to look at Shangguan Bing’er. It had been nearly a year since the two had come out on this expedition. They had finally completed their mission. It was time to come home.

Zhou Weiqing held Shangguan Bing’er’s slender hand, then said in a piteous way, “Bing’er, I know that I was at fault. I was wrong. I swear, she’ll be the last one. I’ll never touch another woman again, ever. Alright?”

Shangguan Bing’er let out a soft sigh. “Just keep control of yourself. Little Fatty, I just want to tell you that there are far, far too many wonderful women in the world. You can’t make all of them yours. I can forgive you... but back home are my two sisters

and Tian'er, and also that Little Witch who sacrificed herself to rescue you.”

Zhou Weiqing scratched his head. “I know, I know. It’s all my fault. This time, when I go back, if I get into another relationship with any other women, you can go ahead and castrate me. I won’t voice a word of complaint.”

Shangguan Bing'er let out a startled laugh. “You said it. Don’t go back on your word.”

“Uh... can I take it back? And besides, could you really bear to?” Zhou Weiqing chortled naughtily.

Shangguan Bing'er snorted. “Why wouldn’t I? All you ever do is bully us.”

Zhou Weiqing pulled her into his arms. “You can’t call this ‘bullying’. The term for it is ‘love’. See, its been ages since I’ve loved you. I feel as though you are a stranger. Let me see if my Bing'er was mistreated recently in Xuantian Palace. Let’s see if you’ve grown thinner...”

Chapter 257: Do not think you have already won! (1)

With this delay, another two hours passed just like that. At last, the two of them finally activated the Sea Emperor's Shuttle, speeding off directly into the deep ocean waters.

This entire year in the Xuantian Continent could be said to be extremely rewarding for Zhou Weiqing. Not only had he completed his mission, his own cultivation had improved greatly, with his Saint Energy actually reaching the thirty eighth stage, one step closer to his Saint Core Nucleus. Zhou Weiqing could vaguely sense that if he really managed to consolidate the Saint Core Nucleus, his power would rise qualitatively again. Then, perhaps he could even take on Heavenly God Tier powerhouses without being too afraid, let alone Heavenly Emperors.

The speed of the Sea Emperor's Shuttle was already extremely fast, and with Zhou Weiqing infusing as much Saint Energy as it could take, it sped along like a bolt of lightning cutting through the oceans. If they kept up such speeds, Zhou Weiqing estimated that they would take only around two months or so before they could return to the Heaven's Expanse Palace.

Very quickly, a day passed, and they submerged the Sea Emperor's Shuttle deeper into the ocean.

Even as Zhou Weiqing was continuously infusing Saint Energy into the Sea Emperor's Shuttle, abruptly the ocean waters in front of them seemed to undergo a strange change. Since Zhou Weiqing was using his Saint Energy to activate the Sea Emperor's Shuttle, his senses had been extended out a great distance and with maximum sensitivity, as if the Sea Emperor's Shuttle was part of his body. At this moment, the entire Sea Emperor's Shuttle felt as if it had slammed into a giant, invisible net, the powerful constraints causing their speed to slow drastically.

When they looked out, everything seemed normal, the ocean waters still as clear and as beautiful as ever. However, the sense of being bound up was just too strong, and as the Sea Emperor Shuttle continued slowing, it actually seemed like it was about to stop.

Not Good!

Zhou Weiqing cried out inwardly, abruptly bursting forth with as much Saint Energy as he could infuse. In that instant, the Sea Emperor Shuttle exploded with a piercing silver-white light. Instead of moving forward, it began to rise in a wild, meteoric fashion. In a swoosh, it burst free from the ocean waters.

Right as they left the ocean, a terrifying huge mouth slammed shut where they had been an instant ago. If Zhou Weiqing had not reacted swiftly enough, they would have been swallowed entirely by those giant jaws.

In midair, both Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er had jumped out of the Sea Emperor Shuttle, swiftly withdrawing it back into his Sumeru Ring.

The two of them immediately brought their wings into play, soaring higher into the sky as they focused their vision downwards.

Currently, on the surface of the ocean a massive whirlpool of almost thousand metres in diameter had formed. At the same time, a low, venomous voice rang out from that whirlpool.

"I never really expected that it would be you. Little brat, this time let's see who can save you."

A giant, ferocious head slowly poked out of the center of the whirlpool. It was the surviving Terror Sea Dragon that had been wounded by Zhou Weiqing and Dongfang Hanyue.

When Zhou Weiqing saw it, he couldn't help but be stunned momentarily. This fellow was just like a ghost haunting him,

always appearing inexorably and seeking vengeance. He had already been pushing the Sea Emperor Shuttle at an extreme speed, yet he had still been intercepted by it. This luck, it was really...

If the situation had been similar to their journey to the Xuantian Continent, Zhou Weiqing would definitely not have overlooked this critical detail, possibly taking a long way around. However, this time he was accompanied by the two great Dragons, and thus he had not bothered trying to hide, just taking the most direct route. Who would have imagined that he would really meet this Terror Sea Dragon once more.

It had barely been a few days since they had last clashed, but it looked like this fellow had not only recovered fully, it had also become larger and stronger. It seemed like its cultivation had even grown severely.

In truth, it was Zhou Weiqing's own folly in this matter. If he was not using the Sea Emperor Shuttle, in the vast oceans, no matter how powerful the Terror Sea Dragon was, how could it possibly discover them? However, the Sea Emperor Shuttle was after all created using the Heavenly Core of the Terror Sea Dragon's father, and the aura it gave off was just too familiar to it. How could it possibly not be able to sense it?

Suddenly sensing such a familiar presence, this Terror Sea Dragon had naturally rushed over to investigate. As for the reason why its cultivation had risen so suddenly, it was actually not that it had gained some inspiration or benefit in the big fight, but rather because after the fight, although its brother had self-detonated its Heavenly Core Nucleus, it had not fully succeeded. As such, a portion of its Heavenly Core had remained, sinking to the depths of the oceans. Since the ocean was its domain, how could this Terror Sea Dragon not be able to find it?

It was exactly because it could depend on the remnants of its brother's Heavenly Core that it was able to recover in such a short

period of time, and improve its cultivation level as well.

“It looks like your luck is really not bad at all,” Zhou Weiqing said to Shangguan Bing’er beside him, totally ignoring the Terror Sea Dragon. The only thing he continued to do was soar higher with Bing’er, attempting to draw open the gap between themselves and the Terror Sea Dragon.

Currently, Shangguan Bing’er was definitely very nervous. After all, the Terror Sea Dragon was a Heavenly God Tier powerhouse, a hegemon over the oceans. Furthermore, its look was so savage and ferocious.

“Is that the Terror Sea Dragon?” Shangguan Bing’er asked worriedly.

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said: “Yes, but do not worry. Relax, I will handle it.”

Seeing the two young humans continue soaring into the skies, the Terror Sea Dragon was not anxious at all. Its massive body actually sprang out of the waters. Although it did not have wings, with its powerful cultivation, flying in the air was naturally not a problem.

In the oceans, its senses and perception were extremely powerful. It had been looking out for Dongfang Hanyue, and it had long realised that this time she was not following Zhou Weiqing. As for the other human beside him, she was even weaker, and it dismissed her at once, not worried at all.

The Terror Sea Dragon hated Zhou Weiqing to the core. If it was not able to torture him to death, it would not rest. As for the period of torture, it had decided to lengthen it further.

Both Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing’er flew extremely fast, and they soon soared to more than a thousand metre height. The Terror Sea Dragon was following behind them. Currently, the skies were an azure blue as the Water Attribute energies grew

stronger all about them, beginning to exert a binding force upon them that grew stronger by the minute, causing their speeds to slow down as time went by.

This was actually because the Terror Sea Dragon wanted them to slowly feel fear, bit by bit. After all, Zhou Weiqing was now 'alone', and though he had launched a surprisingly strong attack previously, what kind of existence was the Terror Sea Dragon? Naturally, it sensed a temporary eruption of power. This time, not only had it grown stronger, it was also fully prepared, ready to squash Zhou Weiqing like the little bug he was.

The terrifying energy reverberations flowed in the sky. At this moment, even Zhou Weiqing was feeling rather nervous. However, this nervousness was not regarding whether or not they could escape from the Terror Sea Dragon, but whether or not they could successfully kill the Terror Sea Dragon before it escaped.

“Little brat, today you will not have any other chances. I will tear your skin and break all your bones, letting you die bit by bit. Ohh, it looks like the energy within your body is rather unique, perhaps it will have some use to me. I will definitely have a good meal and digest it properly. Do not bother with your puny resistance any longer.”

The pressure from the water attribute energies was steadily increasing, the energy fluctuations growing more violent. In an abrupt increase of power, both Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er found they were no longer able to continue flying upwards.

The Terror Sea Dragon had grown to almost a hundred metres long, and it soared arrogantly in the skies near them. Since it was just Zhou Weiqing, it naturally did not deem it necessary to immerse its body in the oceans. Furthermore, this was in the skies above the oceans, and the Water Attribute energies in the atmosphere was still relatively high.

All of a sudden, Zhou Weiqing began to laugh at the Terror Sea

Dragon. “Big fellow, do not think you have won like that. This is just the beginning.”

Of course, Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er were no match for the Terror Sea Dragon. If they took into account the dangers of the oceans, he would not choose such a straight-line fashion to travel back to the Boundless Mainland. However, he was currently so bold because he was now able to rely on others, and his confidence was far greater now, even compared to when he was in the Xuantian Palace. After all, at that time, he did not know if the summons would actually succeed, but now he had no such worries.

Two balls of red light swelled out from Zhou Weiqing's chest. One in the skies, one further below near the ocean. Even the powerful Terror Sea Dragon did not have time to react as the skies began to change colour instantly.

In truth, when the Terror Sea Dragon first appeared, Hui Yao had already contacted Zhou Weiqing. With the sudden appearance of a Heavenly God Tier, how could the two dragons not pay attention to it and attach great importance to the matter? Zhou Weiqing luring the Terror Sea Dragon into the skies was actually a suggestion from Hui Yao. He knew that if the Terror Sea Dragon was in the oceans, although they could still easily defeat it, it would still not be easy for them to stop it from escaping. After all, the geographical and attribute advantage was just too obvious. However, once they were all in the skies, the situation would be vastly different. Although it was still above the oceans, the skies were the realm of the Emperor Dragon bloodlines, and how could they all remain arrogant in their domain!

When the terrifying red light descended, covered the skies and blanketed the area, the Terror Sea Dragon began to panic. Subconsciously, it began to dive down back for the safety of the ocean.

“Back.” Duo Si's disdainful voice rang out. A violent explosion, and the massive body of the Terror Sea Dragon bounced back

upwards.

When the red light appeared, a searing hot energy enveloped Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er. In the next moment, both their bodies soared higher into the skies, and they were no longer able to see the situation below clearly. All they could see was an endless sea of red.

Chapter 257: Do not think you have already won! (2)

Vaguely, both Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er were able to clearly sense the violent energies clashing below behind the cover of the red light. Of course, it was just the fluctuations, as in their position they would not be affected at all.

The fight between three mighty dragons was undoubtedly extremely exciting, but in order to ensure the safety of the two young humans, and also to prevent the Terror Sea Dragon from being a cornered dog that leaps over the wall in desperation[1. Literal translation, depicting a cornered beast often doing anything desperate. In this case, probably referring to it suicide killing Zhou Weiqing], Hui Yao did not allow them to watch.

Very quickly, ten minutes had passed, and the surging energies below the red cloud began to calm down. Abruptly, silence reigned as the red light withdrew, revealing the scene below to Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er.

The originally brutally unmatched Terror Sea Dragon no longer seemed like a Heavenly God Tier powerhouse. Although its body was huge, it paled in comparison to Hui Yao.

Currently, Hui Yao's front claws were grabbing the Terror Sea Dragon by its neck and back, just lifting it up like that in midair. Its body had shrunk by a third, its entire tail end had vanished, and there were terrible burn marks all over its entire body. Of all the ferocious looking spikes on its body, more than two thirds had been broken or clipped. In front of two mighty Dragons with the Emperor bloodline, especially now that they were in midair, it naturally had no chance at all.

The Terror Sea Dragon was still alive, but it was fully restricted by Hui Yao's powerful dragon powers. Currently, its eyes no longer held any venom; all that was left was utter terror.

Zhou Weiqing spread his hands and shrugged, saying: “I told you long before that I have the Emperor Dragon bloodline, but you refused to believe me. This time, you can’t escape right? Well, this time we did snatch the Spatial Teleportation Gem from the Xuantian Palace, but we have in turn helped them solve this big problem, so it isn’t too bad for them at all. Senior Hui Yao, could you please finish him off, lest this big fellow causes trouble in the oceans once more.”

Hui Yao laughed heartily and said: “There is no rush to finishing it off, it still has a good usage.” Although they were both considered dragons, but they were separated into different tribe groups. Furthermore, Hui Yao was of the highest and proudest of the Emperor Dragon bloodlines, and he had been helped by Zhou Weiqing so many times. He had always wanted to return the favour, and this was a perfect opportunity.

“Good usage? Could it be that Senior wants it to carry us back to the Boundless Mainland?” Zhou Weiqing asked curiously.

Hui Yao shook its head, saying: “How could that be possible? Don’t look at its dejected posture now. Once it returns to the ocean, that will change instantly. The greatest innate talent of the Terror Sea Dragon is that it is able to draw upon the powers of the oceans to heal its wounds. It may be severely injured now, but once it re-enters the oceans, it can use its secret arts to escape instantly. Before long, it will be back spry and alive again. As such, we cannot allow it to touch the ocean once more.”

Hearing Hui Yao’s words, the Terror Sea Dragon in his claws couldn’t help but reveal a look of despair. Currently it was fully under Hui Yao’s control, even if it wanted to self-detonate its Heavenly Core, it was already too late.

Zhou Weiqing asked wonderingly: “Then... Senior’s meaning is?”

Hui Yao laughed heartily and said: “You little brat, sometimes you can be so unbelievably intelligent, yet you can also be so slow

at times. Such a perfect opportunity and target, it isn't so easy to look for. Do you think your Devour Skill is a mere decorative tool?"

Hearing his words, Zhou Weiqing's heart trembled. The Devour Skill... Hui Yao had kept the Terror Sea Dragon... all for him to use the Devour Skill?

When they were still in the Lustre Spatial Realm, he had used the Devour Skill on both Hui Yao and Duo Si. However, that was just a very tiny portion of their power, fully under the control of both dragons. At that time, Hui Yao had said that after Zhou Weiqing's Devouring, he would need a few years to recover. Now, it seemed like that was just a joke, to allow him to search for the Spatial Teleportation Gem without worrying too much.

It was exactly because he had once Devoured these two mighty Dragons before that Zhou Weiqing knew how terrifying a Dragon's Heavenly Energy was. That was not just a mere tiny sum of energy! Furthermore, if he was using the Devour Skill on the Terror Sea Dragon, he did not even need to consider any qualms or scruples at all, and could just directly Devour its life force as well. The entirety of a Heavenly God Tier Heavenly Beast's Heavenly Energy, life force and core primordial qi... what kind of terrifying power was that? Even for Zhou Weiqing, he found it hard to imagine it.

Hui Yao nodded to him and said: "Don't stand around being amazed. Start now. I have already sent my senses through your body. Your cultivation has improved again, and your body has evolved to be strong and flexible enough... there should be no problems Devouring this Terror Sea Dragon. If the energy is too much, you can also share some with this little girlfriend of yours."

Zhou Weiqing had never been a shy or conventional person, and he did not hide his excitement and joy. After bowing towards Hui Yao, he appeared in a flash in front of the Terror Sea Dragon.

When the Terror Sea Dragon saw Zhou Weiqing approach it, the

venom in its eyes returned. Ever since it had met this human, it had been plagued with constant bad luck. What was he going to do now?

Before the Terror Sea Dragon could think more, a sudden pain on its neck, and a terrifying pressure caused it to have no chance to move at all, let alone resist.

In order to ensure Zhou Weiqing's safety, to prevent the Terror Sea Dragon from possibly countering him, Duo Si also flew over to the other side of the Terror Sea Dragon, grabbing it in a painful grip to stabilize its position in the skies.

With the two mighty Heavenly God Tier Dragons wielding the full force of their pressure on it, let alone this Terror Sea Dragon, even if it were its big brother, or its father here instead, there would still be no difference. This was the absolute pressure of two Emperor Dragon bloodlines!

Zhou Weiqing flew all the way to the front of the Terror Sea Dragon before stopping; at the same time he motioned Shangguan Bing'er to hover by his side. As soon as the energy Devoured was too much, he would be able to infuse Saint Energy into Shangguan Bing'er's body, to help him share some of it.

Although Zhou Weiqing's cultivation stage had already reached nine Jewels, this trip to the Xuantian Continent could be said to be wracked with dangers. No matter entering the Xuantian Palace, or facing the Terror Sea Dragons several times... all of those powerhouses had the abilities to finish him off!

Now that he was about to return to the Boundless Mainland, he knew its current situation was even more complex and complicated than the Xuantian Continent. In the past, Zhou Weiqing might not have met so any powerhouses at once when compared to his time in the Xuantian Continent, but if one considered the total amount of powerhouses, the truth was the Boundless Mainland definitely had a far greater amount.

Furthermore, there was still the owner of the Destruction energies; no one knew who he was or where he was hiding. Not to mention the future threat of the Nether Realm.

As such, he really needed to improve his own strength so much. With such a great opportunity in front of him, he would definitely not let it go. In this world, there were not many people with the same fortune as he had.

Just the Devour Skill alone meant he was matchless in the entire Boundless Mainland in that area... added on to the help of the two dragons. Even a top powerhouse like the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord would not have met the same situation!

In the end, Zhou Weiqing simply stood on the Terror Sea Dragon's massive head, his hands extended, each grasping one of the sharp spikes on its head that hadn't been broken.

These spikes could once shoot off the terrifying water attribute shots. Alas, with Hui Yao and Duo Si pressuring it and keeping it under control, they were like dead objects.

Zhou Weiqing drew in a deep breath, letting himself calm down first. At the same time, he began to circulate the Saint Energy in his body first in preparation.

He did not rush into using the Devour Skill, as he knew the incoming flow of power would just be too huge. If he was not careful, it might actually have an adverse effect. Zhou Weiqing was an intelligent person, and he would not make such an obvious error in judgement.

It took him nearly fifteen minutes before Zhou Weiqing brought his entire body and powers to tip top condition, staying in the Dragon-Tiger Transformation state. A silver-white light was shimmering faintly under the surface of his skin, the creation aura of the Saint Energy releasing from his body.

The feeling of this power did not seem very distinct or powerful,

but there was a breadth, a gentle strength to it. As the energy circulated, even the Terror Sea Dragon that was about to be Devoured did not sense any threat. It just did not understand what Zhou Weiqing was trying to do. However, in the next instant, it was sent sinking into abject terror.

The gentle silver-white light abruptly changed colour, and a vague illusory figure began to appear behind Zhou Weiqing's back. It was the image of the Demon God.

Zhou Weiqing's hands had turned a pure grey, and a thick grey light was swirling about in the air. A thick Demonic Attribute aura spread out, giving forth a terrifying pressure, as a suction force appeared at Zhou Weiqing's hands, beginning to draw out the pure Heavenly Energy from within the Terror Sea Dragon and into Zhou Weiqing's body.

When one's cultivation reached the Heavenly God stage, the Heavenly Energy in their body would be at the purest form. The entire Terror Sea Dragon's body was like a massive energy block. Even with the support of his nine-Jeweled Saint Energy, although Zhou Weiqing's Devouring speed was quite fast, compared to the vast amounts of energy in the dragon's body, it was like a slow trickle.

Just like what Hui Yao had said earlier, the current body of Zhou Weiqing was far above what he had previously. Although at the time Zhou Weiqing had managed to Devour the Heavenly Energy from the two Dragons to increase his cultivation to the nine-Jeweled stage, that was just a direct increase, reaching the ultimate limit that his body could withstand.

As his Immortal Deity Technique had completed, his Saint Energy had completed a circulation path within his body. Now, a year after the Devouring, Zhou Weiqing's body had constantly been improved and evolved by the Saint Energy. In this process, his body had not only grown stronger, but cleansed and purified. All the impurities in the body were constantly assimilated or

destroyed, expelled from the body. It could be said that the current Zhou Weiqing's internal primordial qi was as clean and pure as that of a baby. Just his body alone and its toughness... even many Heavenly Kings or Heavenly Emperors would not be able to match it.

This was one of the more important reasons why he had managed to survive without any serious injuries when he had first faced up against the Terror Sea Dragon.

As the body constantly improved and evolved, the meridian channels were naturally one of the most important areas as well. Currently, the sheer power that his meridian channels could transport was astonishing, able to even withstand pure power in the solid state!

The Saint Energy was the strongest attribute that could even 'steal' the power and fortune of the world, and how could its effect be compared to any ordinary energies? Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing also had the fusion bloodline of the Emperor Dragon bloodlines and the Dark Demon God Tiger Bloodlines. Not long ago, his Dark Demon God Tiger Bloodline had even evolved in a baptism of fire from the Demon God, allowing his Saint Energy to rise to a whole new height.

Under such a circumstance, Zhou Weiqing's cultivation could be said to be slowly and steadily increasing day by day in a subtle manner. His body's toughness had also reached a state where even he was unclear about the limits.

Chapter 257: Do not think you have already won! (3)

Two masses of powerful Heavenly Energy began to flow into his body from his palms. However, this time, Zhou Weiqing did not feel the same sensation that he previously had when Devouring from Hui Yao, that of discomfort and being unable to withstand it.

This purest Heavenly Energy, as it flowed into his body, it was immediately absorbed and divided by his thirty six Death Acupuncture Point energy whirlpools. As the energy was broken down, the thirty six Death Acupuncture Point whirlpools started acting like thirty six funnels, swiftly undergoing the transformation process respectively.

This was the greatest benefit of his cultivation increase. Originally, when Zhou Weiqing was Devouring from the mighty dragon Hui Yao, it was just the one large, and one small personal Saint Energy whirlpool that was working the transformation. Currently, the thirty six Death Acupuncture Point energy whirlpools might not be as large as the one he formed with Tian'er, but the sheer numbers were just too great and the transformation speed was astonishing indeed.

At the same time, the Astral Saint Energy that had been gathered in Zhou Weiqing's Dantian began to circulate swiftly, quickly taking the freshly Devoured and transformed Saint Energy as its own, merging together without any hesitation. To Zhou Weiqing's surprise, when this Astral Saint Energy began to spin, it seemed to form the thirty seventh energy whirlpool right smack in the middle of his Dantian.

However, this Super Saint Energy Whirlpool was not merely absorbing, it actually began a second filtration process.

Indeed. A second filtration process. The Saint Energy that had already been a product of the Heavenly Energy broken down,

filtered, compressed and transformed... drop by drop they were going through another similar process. One by one, cleansed and condensed, and drop after drop of Astral Saint Energy began to appear from the bottom of the new whirlpool before fusing right into the whirlpool to become a true part of it.

The Heavenly Energy of a Heavenly God Tier powerhouse was indeed immense and pure, but after the double filtration and transformative process within Zhou Weiqing's body, the quantity had dropped obviously.

The sensation of this process was just too miraculous for Zhou Weiqing. Every single second, he could actually feel his cultivation and power rising.

Furthermore, this rise in power was totally without any drawbacks or side effects, totally unlike the inherited legacies that Dongfang Hanyue had gotten from her father.

This was once again the power of the Saint Energy! Without its existence, even if Zhou Weiqing was able to Devour from a Heavenly God Tier powerhouse to increase his own cultivation, it would leave a certain amount of latent problems within his body, just like Dongfang Hanyue's case, or perhaps even worse.

However, the Saint Energy could be considered the base, the absolute core of all energies in the world. It could be said that all attributes were transformed from Saint Energy. As such, when these external energies were absorbed and purified by it, there were no impurities left. As for Zhou Weiqing's body, having been immersed by the Saint Energy for such a long time, his entire body had become like a massive smelting furnace for the Saint Energy. In such a circumstance, he naturally did not need to fear any problems occurring.

Hui Yao had been observing Zhou Weiqing's situation all the time. With his cultivation level, he could naturally sense all of the changes within Zhou Weiqing's body, and his shock and surprise

was not small at all. After all, the speed which Zhou Weiqing was Devouring was far beyond the time when he was Devouring from Hui Yao, yet when the massive amount of pure Heavenly Energy entered Zhou Weiqing's body, the final transformed Saint Energy became such a small amount. Such a terrifying amount of Heavenly Energy could only become that little bit of Saint Energy! To what degree did it have to be purified and compressed for this to happen!

Although the current Zhou Weiqing's cultivation was still far from Hui Yao, in that instant, Hui Yao could only think that in the future, when Zhou Weiqing entered the Heavenly God stage, what kind of power level would he reach? Perhaps, any Heavenly God Stage powerhouse of the same level... even ten of them, might not be a match for him.

The truth might indeed be so. Simply put, Zhou Weiqing was currently at the nine-Jeweled stage. If ten Heavenly Jewel Masters of an equal level were in front of him now, what could they even do to him? Even if it were Heavenly King stage powerhouses, comparing to the current him, it was likely they would not be able to gain any advantage at all. With the power of the 'Possession of the Demon God', Zhou Weiqing even had the chance to challenge a low level Heavenly Emperor.

...

As Zhou Weiqing continued Devouring, the grey illusory figure behind his back slowly grew more solid, more real. Although the face of the illusory grey figure was still not visible, as it continued consolidating, the aura it emitted was starting to give even the two dragons a strange pressure.

Hui Yao and Duo Si exchanged startled looks, able to see the shock in each other's eyes. It had to be known, they had barely parted from Zhou Weiqing a year ago! Yet, in this short year, Zhou Weiqing's power had grown in such a massive leap, not just quantitatively, but also qualitatively! This was especially so for

that grey aura... that pressure... not even a Heavenly God Tier should be able to have that. Although Zhou Weiqing could only be said to have activated a small portion of it, not able to wield it as his own, just the fact he was able to come up with such pressure was more than enough to show what kind of levels he would reach in the future.

...

The Devouring continued. Zhou Weiqing was carefully controlling the Saint Energy within his body. Although this sensation of constantly improving so quickly was extremely comfortable, giving him much excitement, but this was still Devouring a Heavenly God Tier powerhouse. How could he afford to be careless?

In the continued non-stop Devouring process, he slowly began to separate the freshly transformed Astral Saint Energy, infusing it into the other thirty six energy whirlpools. In this way, he could maintain the thirty seven whirlpools in a delicate balance. The output of the thirty six Death Acupuncture energy whirlpools would perfectly match the transformation speed of the thirty seventh whirlpool.

Below Zhou Weiqing, the Terror Sea Dragon's body was trembling. When the Devour Skill had begun, its eyes were already filled with terror.

What kind of power was that? To actually be able to forcefully draw out his own Heavenly Energy. Zhou Weiqing's current Devour speed, even for a Heavenly God Tier powerhouse, it was still considered quite fast. Although the Terror Sea Dragon's body would automatically try to replenish itself by drawing from atmospheric energies, its recovery rate could not possibly keep up with Zhou Weiqing's Devouring speed.

The silver-white light around Zhou Weiqing's body was growing stronger and stronger. At the same time, the grey illusory figure

behind his back was also growing clearer and more solid. By this point, the Terror Sea Dragon had lapsed into a sort of deep sleep. Facing the pressure from the Demon God, it did not even have a chance to withstand it, especially since its Heavenly Energy was being lowered steadily. In this process, its own life force was also weakening dramatically.

The Devour Skill had never been just as simple as Devouring Heavenly Energy, even life force was not given up on! All energies were fair game to this terrifying Devour Skill.

This was especially so since Zhou Weiqing had no qualms in this Devouring, not holding back anything at all. In such a circumstance, there could only be one final ending for the Terror Sea Dragon... being drained to death.

...

Day passed, slowly entering the dark of the night... then back into the day.

Zhou Weiqing was still continuing his Devouring.

The Terror Sea Dragon truly lived up to its name as a Heavenly God Tier powerhouse, especially since it had just recently swallowed its brother's remnant Heavenly Core to become its own energy. As such, the sheer quantity of dragon Heavenly Energy it had was just too massive.

Time passed in a non stop flow, and before long, three days had just passed like that.

In these three days, Zhou Weiqing was not interrupted in the slightest. With the two mighty dragons holding the fort, even the world around them was fully under their control.

Shangguan Bing'er had been watching to the side nervously. Although she was unable to directly Devour, just the powerful Saint Energy that Zhou Weiqing gave out subconsciously while he was Devouring was quite a big aid to her already. She did not even

need to do anything, and the Saint Energy within her body would automatically circulate, at a faster speed than even her normal cultivation! This was also the reason why she was able to sustain the Wings of the Wind God for such a long period of time without feeling too tired.

...

Three days, and another three. Zhou Weiqing had already been Devouring the Terror Sea Dragon for a total of nine days!

As the ninth day arrived, the Terror Sea Dragon's body had already lost all of its lustre. Its Heavenly Energy had almost been drained dry.

Currently, Zhou Weiqing seemed to have undergone a total overwhelming change compared to nine days ago. This was perhaps the clearest to Shangguan Bing'er who had been watching from the side all the while. She was surprised to find that her Little Fatty seemed to have become more handsome and suave. The original bronzed skin had become a healthy, glowing white, a faint light swirling beneath his skin. Even though he was still in the Dragon-Tiger Transformation, his skin no longer had the original scale patterns.

Of course, that was not the only change. The most obvious change was the illusory figure behind his back and the Saint Energy surrounding him.

His Saint Energy had all been transformed into Astral Saint Energy, forming lines of light spinning around his body. Currently, Zhou Weiqing seemed to have become the heart of a galaxy, with everything revolving around him.

As for the grey illusory figure behind Zhou Weiqing's back, it had currently hidden subtly. It had not actually vanished, but had soared higher into the sky. At the same time, it had reached the height of a hundred zhang!

Although Hui Yao and Duo Si could sense there was no enmity in the illusory figure, but they still felt an unparalleled pressure from it. Luckily, they were linked to Zhou Weiqing, and the illusory grey figure did not show any signs of animosity towards them. Otherwise, they truly suspected if they would be influenced and affected.

Zhou Weiqing's eyes had been closed all this time. However, the Astral Saint Energy around him was glowing brighter and brighter. Vaguely, they could see that around his chest there was a cluster of stars circling around, as if echoing with the Astral light around his body. As he breathed, his entire body seemed to follow the rhythm, glowing with a faint and indistinct light.

At this point, Shangguan Bing'er did not even dare to breathe loudly. Although she was not clear what level Zhou Weiqing had reached, she could still sense that he had reached a critical point.

The Terror Sea Dragon's Heavenly Energy was almost drained dry. Currently, Zhou Weiqing was actually drawing out its primordial core from its Heavenly Core.

Devour. Perhaps, this would be the final day. And to Zhou Weiqing, this was also the most important day.

As his cultivation level increased constantly, his body constantly undergoing improvement and evolving... Devouring for nine entire days. However, it was only yesterday when his body started to feel an overly 'full' sensation.

Just like what Shangguan Bing'er had seen, all of Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy had actually transformed into Astral Saint Energy. When all of the Saint Energy had completed this transformative process, Zhou Weiqing began to feel like his body was already too full of energy.

Once he was full to the brim, the first to change was the 'new' thirty seventh energy whirlpool.

This energy whirlpool no longer continued its energy transformation. It was no longer necessary. After all the assimilation, the thirty six Death Acupuncture energy whirlpools were already able to directly transform the Devoured Heavenly Energy into Astral Saint Energy!

Chapter 258: Saint Core? Astral Core? (1)

This thirty-seventh vortex slowly rose up from Zhou Weiqing's DanTian, almost like it was floating up through the air. This was very slow, and it was only rising because Zhou Weiqing's body had accumulated an even more massive amount of Astral Saint Energy.

At the same time, the other vortexes within Zhou Weiqing's body began to transform as well. They originally had been spinning at a very fast pace. Now, not only did they begin to absorb energies more slowly, the rotation speed itself became slower.

Zhou Weiqing himself could sense as though his body was filled with quicksilver, dense and highly sticky quicksilver, which was slowly spinning. Even if he wanted to stop, he wouldn't be able to. His body was like a statue that had become completely solidified inside. His blood flow had already slowed down to an incredibly low rate. If Shangguan Bing'er put her fingers beneath his nose, she would find to her amazement that Zhou Weiqing had completely stopped breathing.

Right. He wasn't breathing, but this didn't mean Zhou Weiqing was dead. He was in a very marvelous state which was filled with opportunity and danger.

Due to it only be possible to train to the thirty-sixth stage of the Immortal Deity Technique, Zhou Weiqing hadn't had any suitable cultivation techniques for him to train in after he entered the nine-Jeweled stage. As a result, he was constantly improving his own Saint Energy. What was happening right now was something he had never even heard of. He had no idea what was going on, and could only continue according to his imagination.

In truth, even if he wanted to stop he couldn't. A Saint Core. Was he really about to consolidate a Saint Core Nucleus? Although Zhou Weiqing wasn't able to move his body, his head was blazing with flames. Six days ago, his Saint Energy had already broken

through to the thirty-ninth stage. He had spent five days devouring energy, resulting in his Saint Energy being fully converted into Astral Saint Energy, which also took a full day. After that, he hadn't seemed to make any further breakthroughs at all. He had no idea how his Saint Core Nucleus would be consolidated.

It must be remembered that he had Devoured the full Heavenly Energy of a Heavenly God-level Heavenly Beast! However, he still wasn't able to break through to become a Heavenly King. One could imagine how harder the breakthrough requirements were for Saint Energy than any other Attributes.

According to what the great dragon Hui Yao believed, this time Zhou Weiqing's Devour Skill should've at least allowed him to rise to the early Heavenly Emperor level. However, it now looked as though it would be good if he could even rise to the Heavenly King level. The only thing remaining of that Terror Sea Dragon was its final core essence.

Although the energy within the core essence was the purest of all, there just wasn't enough of it. It was hard to say if it would be enough to help Zhou Weiqing break through to the Heavenly King stage.

The Saint Energy in Zhou Weiqing's body continued to climb upwards. Although the process was slow, it was still agonizing to his body, as his meridians were full.

His bones and his meridians were all straining in pain due to being completely full. As for the thirty-seventh vortex, it had already risen to his chest as well. As it did so, it halted its rise and began to continue spinning once more. This time, however, it didn't seem to be interested in drawing in anything else. And yet, Zhou Weiqing had a very special feeling about it as it continued to slowly spin.

This was an unclear, unspeakable level. When the vortex in front

of his chest began to spin, he vaguely gained insight into a certain something. In that instant, everything around him seemed to undergo an utterly earth-shattering transformation. It was as though he wasn't even in the Boundless Mainland.

This sensory world of his mind had become completely dark, but within the darkness there were countless specks of light. These specks of light slowly began to gather around him, spinning and forming a vortex around him.

More and more of the light appeared, slowly coming together into a series of long ribbons. As for Zhou Weiqing himself, his light around his consciousness began to grow stronger and stronger, as though transforming into a giant astral cloud.

Zhou Weiqing had never studied astronomy before, and he had no clue what this state was. He just had the vague feeling that aside from the atmospheric energies, there was another sort of energy that came from an incomparably distant world which was pouring into his body. What was this energy? It seemed to come from the skies. This was the energy of the Big Dipper constellation!

Zhou Weiqing's emotions were currently quite stable. Although he didn't know what was going on, upon entering this marvelous state all of his earlier pain vanished. The only thing left in his heart was enlightenment.

As more of those light ribbons accumulated, the entire astral cloud continued to spin at a pace which was neither fast nor slow. The astral cloud itself didn't rise upwards; in fact, it actually began to shrink inwards. During this process, the ribbons of light began to gather around the larger cloud of astral light, causing it to grow brighter and brighter.

Zhou Weiqing didn't know that when he had entered this state, the people outside were terrified.

Almost the very first thing he had done was to fully absorb all the final core essence of the Terror Sea Dragon. Then, his body

suddenly unleashed an incomparably dazzling silver light. When this light appeared, an enormous gray image actually descended from the heavens and entered Zhou Weiqing's body. But, even as it merged it wasn't able to change the silver light which was glowing across his body.

Even if the Terror Sea Dragon didn't have Heavenly Energy, its body remained at the Heavenly God level. However, just as Zhou Weiqing's body began to emanate a strong aura of starlight, the dragon's great corpse began to tremble nonstop. It was as though its flesh and blood had also transformed into energy and had been swallowed away by Zhou Weiqing. In the next instant, the two great dragons latched onto the Terror Sea Dragon and instantly reduced the body to dust.

Right at this moment, the specks of light around Zhou Weiqing's body suddenly became incomparably tough. They began to rotate rapidly, exploding with a terrifying aura was simply indescribable. Hui Yao's first reaction was to draw Shangguan Bing'er into its own body, while its wife fled far away from Zhou Weiqing.

It wasn't incapable of resisting this energy, but if it tried to resist by force it could end up hurting Zhou Weiqing. What type of energy is this? A sense of indescribable awe appeared within Hui Yao and Duo Si's minds. They had no idea what level Zhou Weiqing had just reached.

In the next instant, something even more stunning occurred. Originally, the two great dragons had completely controlled the weather in this area, ensuring that nothing disturbed Zhou Weiqing's cultivation. However, the heavens suddenly changed.

The bright day suddenly transformed into night, while the skies became incomparably translucent. Not a single cloud could be seen.

They were able to clearly see that every single star within the skies was shining with radiant light. As for Zhou Weiqing, he

floated there like the stars above the waters. The lustrous light emanating from him actually resonated with the astral light in the skies, and a few dim strands of astral light actually gathered within his body.

Not even the long-lived dragons held any memories of such a strange phenomenon, despite their ancient histories. That sense of pressure vanished, but the two great dragons could no longer sense Zhou Weiqing either. It was as though he had completely fused into the stars of the night sky and was no longer a mere human.

Shangguan Bing'er had been covering her lips this entire time, shocked. She was a human, and her senses were different from those of the two great dragons. In this instant, she suddenly felt as though her Little Fatty was no longer on the same level of existence as her. This wasn't something which came from a disparity of power, it came from an indescribable intrinsic quality he now possessed.

The astral light emanating from Zhou Weiqing grew even denser and thicker, and it coiled around him faster and faster. The ribbons of light sped up to an inconceivable amount, with all of the light suddenly vanishing within Zhou Weiqing's body.

In the next instant, a burst of terrifyingly bright light which couldn't be stared at blasted out from Zhou Weiqing's body. This light stretched out for thousands of kilometers, and in that instant all of the stars in the skies turned dim.

The mighty light didn't have a powerful aura to it, but even so, the two great dragons simultaneously could sense a spiritual pressure pushing them down into the sea.

W-what type of power is this?! The two great dragons were completely stunned. They had no idea what Zhou Weiqing was doing.

In truth, not even Zhou Weiqing himself knew what he was doing. He had the feeling that all of the astral light had merged

into his body, which seemed to have immediately exploded. His thoughts and senses sped up to an incredible rate, but the only thing he could sense was that boundless astral light.

He didn't sense any energy, but Zhou Weiqing realized that almost everything in the starry skies seemed willing to follow his lead. This was an extremely strange feeling. In that instant, Zhou Weiqing discovered to his astonishment that his Saint Energy had completely disappeared. Right. All of the Astral Saint Energy had completely vanished.

When he noticed this, he finally sensed that his thoughts had returned to his own body. The Astral Saint Energy had vanished, but something else had appeared within his body. It was a faint golden pearl that was perfectly smooth.

This pearl hovered within his chest, and the strangest thing about it was that it was actually surrounded by slender little ribbons of light that circulated around it. Zhou Weiqing scanned himself and instantly realized that he seemed to have undergone an earthshaking change. His body no longer seemed to exist, while everything within the world was available for him to command, including the endless starry night sky.

I-is this my Saint Core Nucleus? Zhou Weiqing felt incomparably stunned.

Outside his body, the night sky finally turned back into day. Everything quickly went back to normal... but the great dragon Hui Yao couldn't help but let out an astonished cry.

What could cause a Heavenly God-level great dragon, especially one who was a progeny of the Dragon Emperors, call out in shock? One could imagine how truly stunning this scene was! "Forty-nine days? It was actually forty-nine days?!" Hui Yao stared dazed as it mumbled to itself.

Puzzled, Duo Si asked, "What do you mean, forty-nine days?"

Chapter 258: Saint Core? Astral Core? (2)

Hui Yao looked at her. “Go ahead and sense the changes in our bodies. After being bathed by that astral light, our bodies seemed to have benefited from it. Not just that. Although that night sky only appeared for a brief period, I can sense that in reality a total of forty-nine days have gone past.”

They were Heavenly Gods whose senses regarding the natural world were far more acute than the senses of ordinary humans, especially with regards to time. They often went into long periods of slumber, after all. If they couldn’t sense the passing of time, they wouldn’t even know how old they were!

When Duo Si heard Hui Yao say this, Duo Si immediately unleashed its own senses. A moment later, Duo Si’s jaw dropped open in surprise. Hui Yao was right. Forty-nine days had gone past during that brief moment of astral light accelerating and disappearing.

What was going on? They had no idea, but when they looked at Zhou Weiqing they no longer saw that simple, ordinary human youth.

Zhou Weiqing continued to float there, all the light having been completely withdrawn into his body. The only difference was that on his chest, a ball of light seemed to emanate ephemeral flickers.

There weren’t any particularly powerful energy ripples. Zhou Weiqing looked like a very ordinary person, but the wings on his back had already vanished. He himself, however, continued to hover in the air.

His skin had turned as pale as ivory, and it glowed with sleek, glossy light. His features were never particularly handsome, but right now they felt almost holy and sacred. He seemed to have become translucent. As he hung there in the sky, he was like part of the air itself rather than a human. If you closed your eyes, you

wouldn't be able to notice he was there. Not even the two Heavenly God dragons could sense his presence.

Hui Yao let out a long breath, draconic eyes spread wide. If in the past he could easily sense how Zhou Weiqing's cultivation was changing, even for a powerhouse like him Zhou Weiqing had now turned into an enigma. There was no point in using any type of senses to try and scan him.

Zhou Weiqing, still floating in the air, slowly opened his eyes. When they saw his eyes, the two great dragons and Shangguan Bing'er couldn't help but stare.

Zhou Weiqing's eyes weren't glowing with dazzling light as they had imagined. In fact, it was just the opposite. His eyes looked a bit glossier than the eyes of others, but there was nothing particularly powerful to them.

Heavenly Jewel Masters were different from ordinary people. The more powerful a Heavenly Jewel Master was, the more powerful their auras and their gazes would become. And yet... Zhou Weiqing seemed to have completely lost these Heavenly Jewel Master abilities. It was as though he was just an ordinary person... but could that really be true? How could an ordinary person float in the skies?

As he opened his eyes, the dazzling ball of light in his chest grew dim. It was as though everything had gone back to normal.

Zhou Weiqing bowed down in midair, offering his respects to Hui Yao and Duo Si. "Thank you, seniors, for assisting me. Weiqing shall never forget your help."

His voice didn't seem to have changed, but it now had a certain charisma that felt extremely comfortable. Hui Yao smiled and shook his head. "No, this was your destiny. You did good deeds and so reaped a good reward. In addition, we benefited from your ascendance as well. I really want to know what cultivation level you have reached."

Zhou Weiqing chuckled. “To be honest, I’m not sure either. I think I’m a Heavenly King, but I don’t know what stage.”

The two great dragons were both rather shocked to hear him say he was a Heavenly King. As they saw it, no Heavenly King could’ve caused those phenomena which Zhou Weiqing had just displayed. Clearly, his Attributes had mutated somehow.

However, Shangguan Bing’er had a different interpretation when she heard this. A twenty-three year old Heavenly King! This was a speed of cultivation which was unequalled in past, present, and future in the Boundless Mainland... and the man who did it was her man.

A deep sense of pride pervaded Shangguan Bing’er’s heart. The feeling was quite marvelous. She spread her wings, discarding her embarrassment and throwing herself into Zhou Weiqing’s arms.

Zhou Weiqing held Shangguan Bing’er in his arms. He was every bit as excited as Shangguan Bing’er, but he didn’t reveal it. It seemed as though his mentality had transformed and grown just as much as his cultivation had.

Shangguan Bing’er nestled herself into Zhou Weiqing’s arms. She felt that he smelled extremely good right now. She couldn’t explain what he smelled like, but she felt that it was refreshing and comfortable.

Zhou Weiqing said to Hui Yao and Duo Si, “Seniors, I wasted quite some time. Let’s continue on our journey.”

Hui Yao nodded. He exchanged a glance with his wife, then the two transformed into balls of fire that flew into the Spatial Teleportation Gem around Zhou Weiqing’s neck.

Once they actually entered the Spatial Teleportation Gem, they discovered to their astonishment that the gem, which had teetering at the brink of collapse, had actually been fully repaired. Now only was it now extremely sturdy, its Spatial power had

increased countless times over.

Zhou Weiqing hadn't repaired it. Clearly, when Zhou Weiqing had made his breakthrough, the Spatial Teleportation Gem had been repaired by the energies he had emitted. One could simply imagine how marvelous Zhou Weiqing's Attributes were!

Zhou Weiqing himself had the deepest understanding as to what had happened. To put it simply, only Heavenly King-level Saint Energy was 'real' Saint Energy.

The Sea Emperor Shuttle once more descended from the skies into the sea, with Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er hopping into it. They closed the lid, then Zhou Weiqing hugged Shangguan Bing'er and said with a smile, "Bing'er, I think we'll arrive home a bit earlier."

Shangguan Bing'er said, "Little Fatty, do you know how much time you used up after Devouring that thing and then breaking through?"

Zhou Weiqing shook his head, puzzled.

Shangguan Bing'er said, "Nearly two months."

"WHAT?! That long?" Zhou Weiqing had thought that it had been half a month at most. He didn't imagine that two months would have gone by in the blink of an eye.

"Then let's hurry up and go back. The two seniors are waiting for us to return so they can rescue their children." When he thought of coming back, Zhou Weiqing felt as though he needed to go home immediately. He had temporarily discarded everything else to come here, but in truth he needed to do many, many things. His most important task was to rescue his parents and the others, then re-establish the Heavenly Bow Empire!

Zhou Weiqing didn't use his hand to press the crystal into the indent. Instead, he just willed it and the Sea Emperor Shuttle instantly shot forward like a bolt of lightning, diving into the sea

and disappearing.

This sudden acceleration badly startled Shangguan Bing'er, even though her body didn't suffer from it. Zhou Weiqing's body glowed with a layer of faint golden light which captured her as well, sending the Sea Emperor Shuttle hurtling through the seas like an arrow.

Chapter 258: Saint Core? Astral Core? (3)

The water flowing past them turned almost illusory. None of it seemed real. Save for the hazy blue skies, she couldn't see a thing in the outside world at all. What level of speed was necessary for something like this? This was probably far faster than when she was travelling with her Wings of the Wind God.

In truth, she didn't need to try and connect to the outside world. Zhou Weiqing doing it was enough. Zhou Weiqing suddenly reached out stealthily with his thoughts. He wasn't using his own strength right now at all.

His will was infused into the Astral Saint Core Nucleus in front of his chest, and a strange pulling force emanated from his body. He seemed to have become a true star, causing the energies of the sea to instantly transform into his subordinates. It was the powerful atmospheric energies of the sea itself which was propelling them forwards. Otherwise, how could they be going this fast?

In addition, thanks to the influence of Zhou Weiqing's Astral Saint Core Nucleus, all sea creatures within a thousand kilometers fled in terror. Thus, nothing would impede their path.

Without question, the Astral Saint Core Nucleus was what had guided Zhou Weiqing to become a Heavenly King. He himself wasn't sure just how strong he was after having condensed this Astral Saint Core Nucleus, but what he was seeing had proven a few things.

First, after gaining the Astral Saint Core Nucleus, he was able to truly employ Heavenly Dao Energy to control atmospheric energies. However, he was different from other Heavenly Kings. Any Heavenly Jewel Master, be it Heavenly Kings, Heavenly Emperors, or even Heavenly Gods, had their own domains which they were best suited for. These domains were determined by their Attribute.

Simply put, a Heavenly Jewel Master who had the Fire Elemental Jewel would definitely be able to summon the most atmospheric energies if he was in a place like the mouth of a volcano. The sea would naturally be most advantageous to Water Attribute Heavenly Jewel Masters, which was why Terror Sea Dragons were so powerful in the ocean.

Zhou Weiqing was different. He didn't have the Water Attribute, but when he unleashed the aura from his Astral Saint Core Nucleus, he had an even greater control over the ocean than a Heavenly King who DID have the Water Attribute.

This essentially meant that his Astral Saint Core Nucleus would allow him to summon atmospheric energies in any situation, allowing him to use it as though he had that affinity. In other words, he could use atmospheric energies as he pleased. He would always be on 'friendly terrain', no matter where he fought.

What was even more important, however, was that the amount of atmospheric energies Zhou Weiqing was able to summon was somewhere between ten times to a hundred times greater than what an ordinary Heavenly King could use. As for exactly how much, he wasn't sure yet. Most terrifying of all was the fact that the atmospheric energies could actually be converted into Saint Energy in the outside world and used to cast techniques. He no longer had to first compress it and convert it within his body.

This was Saint Energy, true Saint Energy. After gaining the Astral Saint Core Nucleus, Zhou Weiqing's power had risen to an unprecedented level. Forget about Heavenly Kings, even ordinary Heavenly Emperors wouldn't necessarily be a match for him.

The Sea Emperor Shuttle's speed was raised to its truest heights. In truth, they were moving so fast that Zhou Weiqing could clearly sense that if he accelerated any further, this divine seafaring artifact which had been created from a Terror Sea Dragon's core might end up damaged. Thus, he kept the speed within a manageable zone instead of really giving it his all.

What rendered Shangguan Bing'er speechless was... while they were hurtling through the seas at such a terrifying speed, Zhou Weiqing still had the presence of mind to 'bully' her. And... his body was now even more freakishly strong than before! Each time, he wouldn't stop 'bullying' her until she repeatedly begged for mercy... and judging from the look on his face, he clearly wasn't all that satisfied.

For the first time, Shangguan Bing'er began to think that having a few extra sisters might not be a bad thing.

This journey of tens of thousands of kilometers was completed in just half a month. They could now see the outlines of the Boundless Mainland.

If someone had previously told Zhou Weiqing that they would be able to travel from one continent to another in just half a month, he never would've believed it. Now, however, it had just happened in front of him.

The Sea Emperor Shuttle gradually slowed down. Zhou Weiqing hadn't simply been trying to travel fast, he also wanted to familiarize himself with his Astral Saint Core Nucleus. The better he understood it, the more stunned he became. He was now certain that after gaining the Astral Saint Core Nucleus, he was definitely amongst the powerhouses of the Boundless Mainland.

They finally reached the shore. Zhou Weiqing sent the Sea Emperor Shuttle rising back to the surface, then popped the lid open. He took a deep breath, inhaling the moist air of the seashore. Both of their spirits were invigorated.

This had been a much shorter trip, and the sense of loneliness didn't really set in as much. Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er leapt onto the sand with his arm around her shoulders. He waved his right hand, causing a wave to push the Sea Emperor Shuttle to him. It flashed as it entered his Sumeru Ring. This feeling of having complete control over Heaven and Earth was absolutely

marvelous.

Two balls of fire suddenly burst out of Zhou Weiqing's chest. Accompanying the dense Fire Attribute energies were the great dragons Hui Yao and Duosi, who appeared next to Zhou Weiqing.

"I really didn't imagine we'd be back so soon. Even if we flew all the way, we wouldn't have been any faster. Weiqing, your Saint Attribute is truly marvelous!"

Despite Hui Yao's power, he couldn't help but let out a congratulatory sigh. In his heart, Zhou Weiqing's status rose even higher.

Zhou Weiqing chortled. "Seniors, what do you plan to do next?"

Hui Yao said, "I'm extremely grateful for you having released us from the Luster Spatial Realm, but we cannot continue to stay by your side. We can vaguely sense where our children are, and we need to go find them. Take this." Hui Yao opened his draconic mouth, shooting out a streak of red light towards Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing lifted his hand up and accepted it. He lowered his head, seeing that it was a dark-red scale.

Hui Yao said, "This scale contains my Bloodline Aura. This is how you use it..." His voice disappeared as he instead mentally transmitted the method to Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing nodded. "Thank you, senior."

Hui Yao shook his head. "We should be the ones thanking you. Alright, let's part ways here. I trust we'll meet again in the future." After finishing, he sent his great bulk soaring into the skies and disappeared.

Duo Si nodded towards Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er, then flew after her husband.

Zhou Weiqing watched as the two dragons vanished, then said, "Bing'er, let's go."

Shangguan Bing'er said, "Where should we go first?"

Zhou Weiqing said, "We naturally need to return to your Heaven's Expanse Palace first. We need to tell my father-in-law the good news, that we've already summoned the great dragons back. Then we'll head straight to Heaven's Bow. It is time to save my parents."

He had finally broken through to become a Heavenly King and consolidated his Astral Saint Core Nucleus. Zhou Weiqing was tremendously confident in his chances of rescuing his parents. The sooner he saved them, the sooner he could relax.

While chatting, he pulled Shangguan Bing'er into the sky and began to fly forwards. Given his current cultivation level, he no longer needed to rely on horses. Flying didn't consume too much of his energy, and they didn't even need for Bing'er to use her Wings of the Wind God.

A gentle breeze brushed past the two of them. As they rose into the air, they began to hasten westwards. To prevent others from noticing them, Zhou Weiqing even summoned some clouds to cover them. They flew forward above the clouds, almost like Immortals or Gods.

Even though Shangguan Bing'er had already experienced how powerful Zhou Weiqing had become while they were riding the Sea Emperor Shuttle, she was stunned once again as they flew. The wind seemed to have become their servant, supporting them, pushing them, and even covering and protecting them. The wind seemed to have become part of Zhou Weiqing's body, and even high in the air they could still clearly see just how fast they were travelling judging from the land below them.

It only took a few days to go from the eastern seas to the Zhongtian Empire. Just a few more days after that, they saw Heavenly Jewel Island and Heaven's Expanse Palace appear in the distant horizon.

Given Zhou Weiqing's cultivation, he could've led Shangguan Bing'er to head inside directly. There were now very few people, even in Heaven's Expanse Palace, who could stop him. This might incite some squabbling, but it wouldn't cause any real problems.

However, Zhou Weiqing didn't do this. For some reason, after his level had increased his entire mindset seemed to have changed as well. Simply put, he had become much more peaceful and calmer. His spirit had been upgraded, allowing him to reach a brand new level. Compared to the previous him, instead of growing more arrogant he actually became much more reserved.

Shangguan Bing'er had noticed this the most. If Zhou Weiqing previously shone like a dazzlingly sharp sword, he was now like a treasured blade hidden within the sheath.

The two landed outside Zhongtian City, following the Heavenly Pillars upwards. Shangguan Bing'er's face was more effective than any writ of passage. Everyone knew the three Shangguan sisters! Besides, Zhou Weiqing himself did have a writ, and so they were unimpeded as they reached Heavenly Jewel Island.

As soon as they reached the island, the two were shocked. There were now two people waiting for them there. It was the mother and father of the three Shangguan sisters, Second Palace Lord Shangguan Tianyue and his wife Tang Xian.

However, it looked as though Shangguan Tianyue still had yet to fully win his wife's heart back. Tang Xian stood four or five meters away from him, but when she saw Shangguan Bing'er she charged out like a gust of wind and pulled her daughter into her arms.

When parents had many children, even when they strove to be fair they couldn't be completely impartial. Without question, of the three Shangguan sisters, Tang Xian doted on Bing'er the most, as she had viewed Bing'er as important as her own life for many years. Otherwise, she wouldn't have come to wait here alongside Shangguan Tianyue as soon as she heard the news.

“Mother...” Shangguan Bing'er's voice caught in her throat as she threw herself into her mother's arms like a baby sparrow.

Shangguan Tianyue stood off to one side, watching them with eyes filled with warmth and gratification. He then turned to look at Zhou Weiqing.

“I didn't expect you to succeed after just a bit over a year. Huh?” Shangguan Tianyue's eyes lit up, and the way in which he gazed at Zhou Weiqing changed a bit.

Zhou Weiqing said curiously, “Milord father-in-law, how did you know that I completed the mission?”

Shangguan Tianyue didn't answer. Instead, his gaze grew increasingly stunned as he stared at Zhou Weiqing. “Kid, your cultivation...”

Shangguan Tianyue felt as though Zhou Weiqing was nothing more than an ordinary person. The kid didn't even seem to be a Heavenly Jewel Master, and didn't even seem to have any Heavenly Energy ripples emanating from his body. But how could he possibly be an ordinary person? If he was, how could he have so easily and calmly ascended the towering Heavenly Jewel Island? If he didn't lose his cultivation, then... the answer had to be the exact opposite.

Shangguan Tianyue was a Heavenly Emperor, after all. If even he couldn't see Zhou Weiqing's true level, how could he not be surprised?

Zhou Weiqing chortled. “I was lucky enough to break through. Father-in-law, you can no longer refuse to acknowledge me as your son-in-law, right?” While speaking, Zhou Weiqing strode forwards, his body lifting up off the ground for a brief moment before coming back down again. Being able to physically fly was one of the hallmarks of a Heavenly King.

An amazed light flashed through Shangguan Tianyue's eyes, but

he didn't pursue this line of questioning. "Let's go. We're going to go visit my big brother. Xian'er, take Bing'er and have her get some rest." He doted dearly on his daughter, but as for this son-in-law? Hmph. This damned brat managed to steal all three of my daughters. 'Tired' isn't a problem for him.

Shangguan Bing'er's eyes were rather reddened. She turned to look at Zhou Weiqing, while Tang Xian said unhappily, "Silly girl, do you think he's going to abandon you? Hmph. Zhou Weiqing, you son of a bitch, don't go anywhere. I'm not done settling accounts with you."

It had indeed been a long time since he had seen his mother-in-law. When he heard her say 'settling accounts', he couldn't help but stare.

Tang Xian did something completely unexpected. She released Bing'er's hands, then charged over to Zhou Weiqing. She reached out with her right hand, her palm instantly transforming to become fiery red as she slapped out at Zhou Weiqing's chest.

Tang Xian had never been a mild-mannered woman. Otherwise, she wouldn't have left for so many years due to Shangguan Tianyue's playboy ways. All three of the Shangguan sisters had lied to her, not daring to tell her that all three of them had fallen for Zhou Weiqing. This was why she had never shown herself. Alas, in the end paper could not smother fire. The three Shangguan sisters had grown closer and closer to Zhou Weiqing, while Shangguan Tianyang and his brother had already begun to prepare for their wedding ceremonies. They couldn't hide all of this from Tang Xian, right?

Chapter 259: Beating Up Father-In-Law? (1)

When Tang Xian realized that Zhou Weixing was actually about to marry all three of her precious darlings, she was instantly enraged. She had caused a huge ruckus at Heavenly Jewel Island, cursing Shangguan Tianyue senseless. This was the reason why she was standing apart from him just now.

Although Shangguan Tianyue had an exalted status, Tang Xian was the woman he had loved the most in all his life, and he had always felt rather guilty towards her. Thus, although Tang Xian caused a huge ruckus, there was nothing he could really do.

When Zhou Weiqing ascended the island, Tang Xian and Shangguan Tianyue had immediately received word and so they had both come out. She missed her daughter, but she was also enraged by the fact that the little bastard Zhou Weiqing was going to take advantage of all three of her baby girls. Whenever she thought of this, she was so angry she had to hit something...

And so, we now have before us the sight of the mother-in-law drubbing the son-in-law.

Zhou Weiqing was rather astonished by Tang Xian's sudden attack, but as a clever person he immediately knew what was going on. Shangguan Bing'er let out a startled cry, but Zhou Weiqing didn't dodge or block. He allowed Tang Xian to land that palm on his chest.

A sickening thud sound rang out, followed by a dense blast of Fire Attribute energies exploding. That wasn't all. Tang Xian was by nature an impulsive woman. When she saw how Zhou Weiqing neither dodged nor blocked, she instantly took it the wrong way. Is this little brat belittling me? I still have a nine-Jeweled cultivation base!

Rage filled her heart, and so her next attack showed very little mercy. She struck out with both palms, landing a total of eighteen

blows across Zhou Weiqing's chest.

Shangguan Tianyue had just learned that Zhou Weiqing had broken through to become a Heavenly King, and so he wasn't too worried about Tang Xian's attacks. For a mother-in-law to whack her son-in-law a few times wasn't that big of a deal. If this resulted in Tang Xian calming down, it would actually be a good thing. And so, he didn't intervene.

But once Tang Xian actually attacked, Shangguan Tianyue's eyes bulged out. She was holding back nothing at all! Her two hands blazed such scorching energy that they turned a red-gold color. This was her supreme technique, the Crimson Inferno Palm. It was a type of a technique, but it was an internal technique which accumulated Fire Attribute energies to an extremely dense degree, allowing for an incredibly powerful attack. Not even Shangguan Tianyue would dare to allow her to strike him with this palm.

"Xian'er, show mercy!" By the time Shangguan Tianyue reacted and said these words, Tang Xian had already finished unleashing her eighteen palms.

In his heart, Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but think disparagingly to himself about his father-in-law. What's the point of saying it now? She already hit me.

Shangguan Bing'er flew over, hugging her mother from behind. Just now, Tang Xian had blocked her and so she didn't manage to see what sort of technique she used to attack Zhou Weiqing. All she had heard was a series of muffled booming sounds.

Tang Xian immediately felt some regret after finishing her eighteen palms. She had heard that Zhou Weiqing had reached the nine-Jeweled level and so she didn't worry too much about her attacks at first. She was one of the first to know that Zhou Weiqing had six Attributes, and so she understood that his cultivation level couldn't be weak. But, who would've thought that the kid would just stand there without even blocking, allowing all eighteen palms

to land? Although she didn't use her full power, her Crimson Inferno Palms were able to melt gold and steel alike. It wasn't that easy to take!

What Zhou Weiqing did next stunned everyone present. After taking all eighteen palms, he continued to smile. Suddenly, he fell down on his knees and kowtowed three times respectfully towards Tang Xian. "Mother-in-law, your humble son-in-law greets you."

Shangguan Tianyue had wanted to go help heal Zhou Weiqing, but his uplifted hand slowly froze in midair. Tang Xian's eyes bulged out. "A-aren't you hurt?"

The kid didn't seem to be hurt at all, no matter how she stared at him. His breathing was even, he had a smile on his face, and most shockingly of all... her incredibly hot Crimson Inferno Palms hadn't even managed to leave a mark on his clothes. But she had clearly sensed her palms exploding into his body!

After finishing his kowtowing, Zhou Weiqing stood up and said honestly, "I wouldn't dare to be hurt. If I did, I wouldn't be able to live up to the favor of Xue'er, Fei'er, and Bing'er."

"You..." Tang Xian had just calmed down a bit, but upon hearing these words her rage built again. If it wasn't for Shangguan Bing'er holding her tightly from behind, she would've attacked again. "You little son of a bitch! You came here to piss me off, right?!"

Zhou Weiqing smiled bitterly. "Mom, I would never dare to piss you off! If you are still angry at me, you can hit me a few more times. Your humble son-in-law wouldn't dare to dodge."

Shangguan Tianyue ambled over, casting Zhou Weiqing an unhappy glance before saying to Tang Xian, "Should I do it?"

"Fuck off already. I'm going to teach this brat a lesson. This is none of your business. You aren't any better than him. The two of you are birds of a feather."

Shangguan Tianyue's jaw dropped at the berating. I was asking

for that, wasn't I? Why the hell did I get involved in you teaching your son-in-law a lesson?

Tang Xian charged back towards Zhou Weiqing angrily. "You little son of a bitch, the only thing you ever learned was how to be a playboy. Was my Bing'er not good enough for you? You ended up sleeping your way through half the world. Did you think it was easy for me to give birth to my three daughters? And now, you bastard, you've taken all three of them. If you don't give me a good response right now, I'll never let you hear the end of it!"

Zhou Weiqing's heart clenched. He scratched his head, then knelt down once more and said sincerely, "Milady mother-in-law, please allow me to marry Xue'er, Fei'er, and Bing'er. I'll definitely treat them well."

"THIS is your response?" Tang Xian nearly laughed out of rage. As the saying goes, no one reaches out to slap a face which is smiling at you. The brat had put on a show of being completely filial and obedient. It was as though he was saying, 'Come and hit me, I definitely won't fight back or argue with you. As long as you give me your daughters, you can do whatever you want.'

Zhou Weiqing's skills in shamelessness had definitely improved by leaps and bounds. Most importantly, he was able to be shameless in such a sincere way!

Zhou Weiqing nodded sincerely. "Mother-in-law, aside from this response, I don't know what else I can say. I just hope that you can marry Xue'er, Fei'er, and Bing'er to me. I'll agree to any request at all."

Tang Xian glared at Zhou Weiqing, but her anger seemed to have subsided a bit. "Any request at all? You said it yourself."

Zhou Weiqing could tell that she was easing up on him. He hurriedly nodded obediently, as though he was a little chicken.

Tang Xian pointed a finger at the nearby Shangguan Tianyue.

“Fine. My request is simple. Go over there and kick his ass, and I’ll let my three daughters marry you.”

“Huh!?” Zhou Weiqing stared stupefied at Tang Xian.

Tang Xian snorted coldly. “What? Are you afraid or are you unwilling to obey? I’ve wanted to kick his ass for a long time now, but I can’t beat him. If you can beat him up for me, I’ll accept this!”

Zhou Weiqing turned to look at Shangguan Tianyue awkwardly. Sweet father-in-law, say something!

Shangguan Tianyue said irritably, “What are you staring at? If you have the courage to offend your superiors, step up! I’ve been wanting to kick your ass as well. You seduced all three of my daughters. Did you think that didn’t piss me off?”

Right at this moment, a stately voice boomed out. “Enough. Haven’t you embarrassed yourselves enough? Come back to the palace, all of you!”

Upon hearing this voice, even the enraged Tang Xian toned herself down slightly. This was the voice of Shangguan Tianyang, and Tang Xian still felt several degrees of respect for this Palace Lord of Heaven’s Expanse Palace. She snorted, then pulled Shangguan Bing’er as she headed towards the palace.

Chapter 259: Beating Up Father-In-Law? (2)

Shangguan Bing'er glanced apologetically at Zhou Weiqing, then shrugged helplessly and obediently followed her mother away.

Zhou Weiqing stared blankly, then cast his father-in-law a sidelong glance. Both of them hunched over slightly, looking like a pair of roosters who had just been beaten as they followed the two women into Heaven's Expanse Palace.

Heaven's Expanse Palace. The meeting hall.

Shangguan Tianyang was seated up high. Because Tang Xian and his daughter were both present, Shangguan Tianyue didn't sit down. Instead, he led Zhou Weiqing over to stand nearby.

Shangguan Tianyang looked at Zhou Weiqing, then smiled. "Weiqing, I didn't expect you to complete the mission so soon. Just a short while ago, the Luster Spatial Realm became completely calm. It seems as though we can cease our preparations for the evacuation of Zhongtian City. Tell me about what happened at the Xuantian Continent. I'm very interested to hear what happened."

Only now did Zhou Weiqing understand that it was the changes in the Luster Spatial Realm which resulted in them knowing he had succeeded in summoning the two great dragons. He immediately began to narrate the story, starting with him and Bing'er sailing the vast seas. He told the story simply, but he naturally held back on the affair between himself and Dongfang Hanyue.

The Shangguan brothers couldn't help but reveal looks of amazement as they heard Zhou Weiqing's story. According to what Zhou Weiqing had just said, Xuantian Palace's total power was probably above the Heaven's Expanse Palace. If nothing else, they had six Heavenly Emperors and a Heavenly God-level Tenebrous Demon Dragon. Those alone made it impossible for Heaven's Expanse Palace to compare to them, as it didn't have any Heavenly

God powerhouses.

But of course, if the two Great Saint Lands were to actually battle each other, it wouldn't be easy for Xuantian Palace to win. In Heaven's Expanse Palace, Heavenly Kings were as common as the clouds. This was the main reason why they were able to suppress Heavenly Snow Mountain in might.

Shangguan Tianyang nodded repeatedly as he listened to Zhou Weiqing's story. "Weiqing, I shall thank you on behalf of Heaven's Expanse Palace. What you accomplished was something incredible for Heaven's Expanse Palace and the entire Zhongtian Empire. Even though I've always viewed you as one of us, I cannot let your accomplishments and the merits you rendered go unrewarded. If there is anything you need, just tell me. So long as Heaven's Expanse Palace can accomplish it, I definitely will not refuse."

He was the Palace Lord of Heaven's Expanse. If others were to hear Shangguan Tianyang saying such words, the entire Boundless Mainland would be stunned.

Zhou Weiqing chuckled. "Can I make two requests?"

Shangguan Tianyang smiled. "Go ahead. I won't give you any money, but everything else is negotiable."

Zhou Weiqing secretly cursed the man for being a sly old fox. He said I can ask for anything I want, but apparently we still have to negotiate it. He really has an airtight defense!

"First, I wish for the Zhongtian Empire to support the Heavenly Bow Empire. When we need aid, I hope that the Zhongtian Empire won't be stingy with it."

Shangguan Tianyang nodded without even hesitating. "Fine. I accept." Helping their minor ally, the Heavenly Bow Empire, gradually become strong was to the benefit of the Zhongtian Empire. There was no excuse for him not to agree.

Zhou Weiqing said, "Second, I would like to solemnly offer a

proposition of marriage. Please officiate the wedding ceremony for myself and Xue'er, Fei'er, and Bing'er."

When these words came out, Tang Xian's first response was to glare wide-eyed at Zhou Weiqing. As for Shangguan Tianyue, he frowned slightly but didn't say anything. Be it due to Zhou Weiqing's achievements, his existing relationship with the three, or his talent and his unfathomable future prospects, there was no excuse for Shangguan Tianyue to refuse this marriage proposal.

But... of the three Shangguan sisters, Fei'er and Bing'er weren't an issue, while Shangguan Xue'er was the heir to the Heaven's Expanse Palace. To marry her to an outsider wouldn't necessarily be a good thing for the palace.

Shangguan Tianyang hesitated slightly, then said, "Weiqing, from a practical standpoint, I have no reason to refuse. Everything you have done for Heaven's Expanse Palace, combined with the fact that they already love you, would normally compel me to agree. However... as you know, Xue'er is our choice to be the next Palace Lord. As a result, she is extraordinarily important to Heaven's Expanse Palace's future. If she marries you, who shall be the heir to Heaven's Expanse Palace?"

Zhou Weiqing chortled. "That's actually easy to solve. You and milord father-in-law are as healthy and hale as you were in the spring of your youth. You should be able to live for another century or two with no problem at all. Although Xue'er is your heir, she won't have to assume the position anytime soon. If you agree to let her marry me, I agree that the first child I have with any of the three can be the heir to Heaven's Expanse Palace."

The faces of the two Shangguan brothers instantly turned rather odd. This little bastard really knows how to take advantage of someone. It sounded like what he was saying was reasonable, but if that really happened then it meant the next Palace Lord of Heaven's Expanse Palace would be his child. It would be fair to say that he would essentially be in control of Heaven's Expanse Palace!

Shangguan Tianyue let out an irritated snort, while Shangguan Tianyang laughed. “It isn’t impossible for us to take your suggestion into consideration... but Xue’er, Fei’er, and Bing’er are the children of my second brother and his wife. I can’t make this decision on my own. How about this? As long as you can convince your mother-in-law, I won’t object.”

Upon hearing this, Zhou Weiqing’s eyes bulged out. Damn you. Isn’t this legendary technique, ‘throwing the hot potato to someone else’? But there was nothing he could do save to turn and look pitifully at Tang Xian.

Tang Xian glared at him. “Don’t even think about it, unless you do what I just asked you to do and kick that old fart’s ass. Hmph.”

This was a clear refusal. Shangguan Tianyue had been famous for many years and was an awesome figure even amongst Heavenly Emperors. He had recently ascended to become a middle stage Heavenly Emperor. Zhou Weiqing didn’t have any desire to go beat up his father-in-law, but even if he did, how could he possibly be strong enough to?

Tang Xian was getting increasingly unhappy with this brat, which was why she had made such an unreasonable demand. Shangguan Bing’er could see that Zhou Weiqing’s face was growing increasingly ugly, but she herself could do nothing but pull at her mother’s clothes nervously. Tang Xian, however, didn’t seem inclined to back down at all.

In the end, it was Shangguan Tianyang who broke the silence. “Sister-in-law, don’t hold a grudge against my second brother. I suggest we resolve this matter like this. Weiqing is a junior; there’s no way we can have him go beat up my second brother. Let’s have them spar instead? If he can withstand my second brother for a joss stick of time without being defeated, the two of you shall no longer make trouble for him and let all him marry all three of them. If he isn’t able to hold on for that long... well, we can’t completely tear their relationships apart. I’ll make the decision on

behalf of Fei'er and Bing'er and still allow Weiqing to marry them, but we'll keep Xue'er behind to inherit my position as Palace Lord. What do you think?"

When he saw that 'honest' and 'selfless' look on Shangguan Tianyang's face, Zhou Weiqing really did want to flip this 'Senior Uncle' the middle finger. It sounded like he was being reasonable and trying to find a middle ground for both sides, but in reality he was trying to befriend Zhou Weiqing while keeping Xue'er as his heir. Zhou Weiqing's demonstrated abilities had become increasingly dazzling, after all, and he didn't want to offend Zhou Weiqing too much. An extra enemy like him could cause tremendous trouble for the palace in the future.

In addition, preventing a marriage wasn't something you could simply do at will. What if all three of the Shangguan sisters ended up running away? They would've ended up with neither the chicken nor the egg! Shangguan Tianyang had long ago decided to marry Fei'er and Bing'er to him, but as for Xue'er? She herself was something who knew the importance of keeping an eye on the big picture. Just a short while ago, Shangguan Tianyang had a long private talk with her, and Shangguan Xue'er had expressed her willingness to remain at Heaven's Expanse Palace and continue to be his heir.

It could be said that ever since he had returned, Zhou Weiqing had fallen into Shangguan Tianyang's trap. It couldn't be said that this was a fait accompli, but the writing was on the wall.

Tang Xian didn't say a word. She was a clever person, and she knew what Shangguan Tianyang's intentions were. Keeping at least one of her precious girls safe was better than the alternative!

The Shangguan brothers exchanged a glance. Shangguan Tianyue naturally knew what his big brother was intending. He nodded slightly... and so, everyone's gazes were focused upon Zhou Weiqing. They were awaiting his response.

In truth, even Shangguan Tianyang was a bit nervous. If Zhou Weiqing was to refuse and left in a huff, Heaven's Expanse Palace would be in a very tricky situation. No matter what, he had been their major benefactor. If Zhou Weiqing was angered and didn't marry the three Shangguan sisters, then in the future the Heavenly Bow Empire probably wouldn't be on good terms with the Zhongtian Empire. In addition, the mainland had undergone earthshattering changes during the year in which he had been gone. Even the Zhongtian Empire was in grave danger. They were in desperate need of an ally like the Heavenly Bow Empire.

Zhou Weiqing narrowed his eyes as he sensed everyone look at him. He balled his hands into fists, and a hint of golden light flickered within his calm, glossy eyes. "Very well. I accept."

Chapter 260: Battling Father-In-Law, Winning a Wife (1)

“Very well. I accept.”

When Shangguan Tianyang heard Zhou Weiqing said these four simple words, Shangguan Tianyang felt as though he had been relieved of an enormous weight. He couldn't help but reveal a hint of a smile.

“But.” Zhou Weiqing suddenly added, “I hope that there will be no further alterations to our agreement. Otherwise, I won't be needing your permissions in marrying Xu'er, Fei'er, and Bing'er.”

Zhou Weiqing's words were extremely aggressive. He wasn't made out of clay, to be molded as others saw fit. In addition, even a real clay man had 30% of the earth's toughness. Although Heaven's Expanse Palace was mighty, there was no way Zhou Weiqing would let it repeatedly bully him.

Tang Xian raised an eyebrow. Just as she wanted to say something, Shangguan Bing'er tightly pulled at her hand. She could sense how frantic her daughter was, which startled her for a moment. In the end, she didn't say anything. As the saying goes, a daughter's heart will invariably be with her husband. If this really did end up causing such a bitter fight that Zhou Weiqing stormed off with all three of her daughters, she wouldn't even have a chance to regret her actions.

Shangguan Tianyue lowered his head slightly, as though he hadn't heard Zhou Weiqing's words. Although on the surface it seemed as though he had been acting against Zhou Weiqing the entire time, in truth this 'father-in-law' cared about him the most and had been helping him out in secret. The ever-smiling Shangguan Tianyang was actually the toughest one to handle, as he was the true controller of Heaven's Expanse Palace.

Shangguan Tianyue didn't respond to Zhou Weiqing's aggressive words, because he knew that Shangguan Tianyang really was bullying him a bit too much. Before Zhou Weiqing had left for the Xuantian Continent, Shangguan Tianyang had already made a vague promise to allow all three Shangguan sisters to marry him. Now, he was putting up new roadblocks. Anyone would be unhappy with this.

Shangguan Tianyang lived up to his reputation as the Palace Master. His smile didn't change at all, despite Zhou Weiqing's rather provocative words. He nodded and said, "We were waiting for you to return in order to finalize these things. There's naturally no way that there shall be no further alterations. Weiqing, would you like to rest first?"

Zhou Weiqing shook his head. "No need. If I don't handle this, I won't be able to fall asleep. Where shall we do this?"

Shangguan Tianyang smiled. "Right here at the Drill Grounds of Heaven's Expanse Palace."

Zhou Weiqing had never before visited the drill grounds here, and he couldn't help but feel secretly surprised at what he saw. It was a large, empty area filled with swirling clouds that was actually a miniature spatial plane of its own.

Zhou Weiqing was no longer at the same level he had been in the past. He didn't know what sort of mechanism Shangguan Tianyang had activated, but he was sure that they had been teleported to this place.

Aside from everyone else who had been within the meeting hall, Zhan LingTian was also here in the drill grounds. Or, to be more precise, Zhan Lingtian had been training here. When Shangguan Tianyang saw him, he gestured for him to remain and watch. Zhan Lingtian was also Shangguan Tianyang's disciple. The chance to view this battle would have varying levels of benefits for any Heavenly Jewel Master.

Although this was a flat plane, it didn't seem to be different from the Boundless Mainland. The sun shone in the skies as it would anywhere else, but the clouds swirling around it made it look like an Immortal realm.

Shangguan Tianyang brought Tang Xian, Shangguan Bing'er, and Zhan Lingtian over to stand and watch from afar, then nodded at Shangguan Tianyue. At the same time, his lips trembled slightly as though he was saying something to this little brother of his.

Shangguan Tianyue frowned slightly, but then nodded slowly. As for Zhou Weiqing, his lips curved upwards slightly. He didn't even need to guess; he knew that Shangguan Tianyang was telling Shangguan Tianyue not to show any mercy and to defeat Zhou Weiqing with all his power, ensuring that Xue'er would remain their heir.

A long stick of sandalwood joss incense flew out from Shangguan Tianyang's hand and hovered in the air. He was the Palace Lord, after all. There was no way he would permit for any cheating.

Shangguan Tianyue and Zhou Weiqing had already walked over to the drill grounds and were staring at each other. Shangguan Tianyue said calmly, "Use all the power you have. I won't show any mercy."

Zhou Weiqing respectfully bowed towards Shangguan Tianyue. "Go ahead, father-in-law."

Shangguan Tianyue was very satisfied with Zhou Weiqing's respect. All my hard work wasn't for nothing, at least. In truth, if it wasn't for his hidden support, there was no way that Heaven's Expanse Palace would've supported Zhou Weiqing and the Heavenly Bow Empire at such an early stage. In fact, it wouldn't even have given him the chance to meet with the three Shangguan sisters on so many occasions. It could be said that the person who favored Zhou Weiqing the most was actually Shangguan Tianyue. The constant complaints he directed at Zhou Weiqing were meant

to prevent the kid from becoming too complacent and smug. Now, it seemed, Zhou Weiqing finally understood what his intentions had been, which was why the kid was now so respectful.

But of course, none of that had anything to do with this battle. They had to fight this duel, and Shangguan Tianyue was going to fight with all his power. His brother was watching. If he showed any mercy, it would be discovered. That would just cause more trouble. However... Shangguan Tianyue was thinking something else to himself. Oh, dear brother... did you really think Zhou Weiqing would be this easy to handle?

As soon as Zhou Weiqing had reached the island, Shangguan Tianyue had personally tried to sense just how powerful the kid had become. Alas, he had been unable to do so. It might seem common for a person to be unable to detect how powerful a second person was, but what if the first person was a Heavenly Emperor? What level of power had Zhou Weiqing actually reached for that to happen?

Now, Zhou Weiqing only needed to hang on for the time it took for the stick of incense to burn, not actually win. It wasn't completely impossible. Although Shangguan Tianyue felt a bit conflicted as to whether or not he really wanted to let this little brat take such advantage of him and steal all three of his precious daughters, he was also a bit eager to test Zhou Weiqing's strength.

The two, prospective father-in-law and son-in-law, stared at each other from afar. A vast aura that was as awesome as the sea had already begun to emanate out of Shangguan Tianyue's body... but the strange thing was, he didn't cause any disturbances in the world around him.

Zhou Weiqing quickly scanned the area and learned why this was so. These drill grounds were rather unique. They were completely cut off from the atmospheric energies of the outside world, which meant that neither of them would be able to borrow energy from it. They would have to rely on their own cultivation bases to fight

each other. That way, the power of their attacks would drop dramatically. Otherwise, if a Heavenly Emperor's power was to actually explode forth on Heavenly Jewel Island, even the Zhongtian City would be affected by the shockwaves.

In the face of the Heavenly Energy ripples emanating from Shangguan Tianyue, Zhou Weiqing simply stood there unmoving. He looked as calm as ever, almost as though he was nothing more than an ordinary person.

Zhan Lingtian watched from Shangguan Tianyang's side, staring unblinkingly at Zhou Weiqing. He had heard long ago that Zhou Weiqing had made yet another breakthrough, and so he himself had been training like a madman. Just a short while ago, he himself had broken through to the nine-Jeweled stage as well. He was filled with enmity towards Zhou Weiqing, his romantic rival, and this had served as motivation for him to train harder.

Although he didn't know what had happened, the fact that Zhou Weiqing was actually facing up against Shangguan Tianyue caused Zhan Lingtian to feel stunned. Shangguan Tianyue was a Heavenly Emperor! Forget about surviving for the time of a joss stick to burn, even a casual blow from the man would be beyond what Zhan Lingtian could withstand. Did this mean that Zhou Weiqing was now at a level where he could actually block attacks from someone like the Second Palace Master? This was impossible, right?

Shangguan Tianyang felt just as shocked. He was a Max Level Heavenly Emperor, and Zhou Weiqing's calmness caused him to feel incomparably stunned. Just like Shangguan Tianyue, he was actually unable to see through this youth.

"Let us begin," Shangguan Tianyang said. He waved his right hand, causing the joss stick in front of him to light up. A wisp of smoke began to rise from it.

Zhou Weiqing wasn't in a hurry to attack. He took a half-step

back with his left foot, staring intently at his father-in-law.

Shangguan Tianyue naturally knew what this meant. He snorted, then struck out with his right palm, sending a fierce burst of Heavenly Energy towards Zhou Weiqing. It could be said that he was the first to attack.

Zhou Weiqing chuckled, bringing up both hands. His Personal Jewels were already gleaming, and when Shangguan Tianyang and Zhan Tianling actually saw the ten sets of Heavenly Jewels glistening around his wrists, they couldn't help but stare wide-eyed.

Heavenly King. He's actually a Heavenly King! In this instant, Zhan Lingtian's heart plummeted. He had thought that after reaching the nine-Jeweled level, he once more had the right to challenge Zhou Weiqing. Now, it seemed, the distance between them had become as vast as heaven's moat. He had grown up in Heaven's Expanse Palace and so he naturally knew how enormous the difference between a nine-Jeweled cultivator and a Heavenly King was. Simply put, Heaven's Expanse Palace had many powerhouses, but it had less than a tenth as many Heavenly Kings as it did nine-Jeweled cultivators. This was just a single step's difference, but it represented a distance as vast as the starry sky! In addition, Zhou Weiqing was much younger than him.

Right at this moment, Shangguan Tianyue actually attacked. As he had said, he didn't show Zhou Weiqing any mercy at all. An incomparably mighty aura came blasting out of his body. The Boundless Infinitum Technique was, by nature, a technique which carried boundless majesty and weight. This powerful pressure he controlled instantly condensed around Zhou Weiqing, completely focusing on him.

This showed the difference between a Heavenly King and a Heavenly Emperor. Heavenly Kings also had tremendously powerful auras, but there was no way they could actually control their auras the way Heavenly Emperors could.

A dim layer of golden light emanated from Zhou Weiqing's body in response to the enormous pressure. Aside from him and his opponent, the only person present who understood what was happening Shangguan Tianyang, because only he was at a level high enough to understand it.

Although Tang Xian didn't understand how this duel between the two worked, she could tell that the ever-present, calm smile on Shangguan Tianyang's face had suddenly vanished without a trace. What had he just seen?

He saw that when Shangguan Tianyue's incredibly dense aura had pushed down upon Zhou Weiqing, it had simply parted and rolled past him without having any effect at all. The faint golden light emanating from Zhou Weiqing looked very weak, but with it covering him it resulted in something not even Shangguan Tianyang could understand.

Shangguan Tianyue didn't release his Consolidated Equipment since Zhou Weiqing wasn't using his either. As a senior, how could he possibly summon his equipment first? This impacted his honor as an expert.

Chapter 260: Battling Father-In-Law, Winning a Wife (2)

When he saw how easily Zhou Weiqing had deflected his pressure aura, Shangguan Tianyue's eyes flickered with a hint of approval. His right hand gestured in midair, causing a stream of fog to condense into an arrow which then shot out towards Zhou Weiqing's chest.

Shangguan Tianyue was using the purest Heavenly Energy for his attack. It had no Attribute at all, but it was incredibly compressed.

Zhou Weiqing was very calm. He didn't move, just lifted up his hands and then slowly pushed out in front of his chest. A halo of faint golden light spread out from his palms, forming an extremely slender translucent light barrier before him. Pop! A soft sound rang out, and the arrow actually transformed back into mist after hitting the shield, then began to dissipate.

This didn't seem to be an especially remarkable clash, but after the mist dissipated and swept outwards a series of howling sounds filled the entire drill grounds. Shangguan Tianyang had to wave his hand and establish a barrier in order to block the chaotic, distorted mist. This was proof as to just how powerful that attack was.

"Ehhh?" Shangguan Tianyue let out a surprised sound. In the next instant, he appeared in front of Zhou Weiqing. He struck out with both hands with an attack that seemed neither fast nor slow, and which didn't seem particularly fierce... but space for dozens of meters around him and Zhou Weiqing suddenly began to twist and distort.

Zhou Weiqing's face turned much more solemn. Golden light flashed, followed by a pair of faint golden wings unfurling behind his back. The wings spread out to wrap around him, covering him and protecting him. He had finally been forced to use the Dragon-

Tiger Transformation.

However, those who were familiar with Zhou Weiqing's abilities would be able to tell that his Dragon-Tiger Transformation had undergone an absolutely overwhelming transformation. Aside from gaining a pair of wings and the gold light emanating from his body growing a bit brighter, he didn't seem to have changed at all. He no longer had any of that powerful, dominating appearance he possessed in the past.

Boom! Shangguan Tianyue's twin palms slammed unhesitatingly upon Zhou Weiqing's wings. Instantly, Zhou Weiqing shot backwards as though he had been fired out of a cannon. Even in midair, he still emanated that aura of golden light.

This time, Shangguan Tianyue's face actually tightened. If the earlier attack had been nothing more than a test, this last one had contained 60% of his Heavenly Energy. Even though he didn't use any Consolidated Equipment or any special Attributes and techniques, it still represented a tremendous strike from a Heavenly Emperor!

And yet, he could clearly sense that when he launched this attack, its power had been deflected in waves by Zhou Weiqing's wings. It looked as though Zhou Weiqing had been sent flying, but in reality he hadn't been able to injure Zhou Weiqing at all.

What sort of power was this? This was the first time Shangguan Tianyue had encountered such a freakishly powerful defense. He felt certain that not even his own big brother would be able to withstand an attack like this head-on without counter-attacking to weaken the strike!

Zhou Weiqing's body flew nearly a hundred meters backwards before coming to a halt in midair. His wings were completely unfurled, and a hint of a smile appeared on his face. His foe was his father-in-law; thus he had already held back for three stances to show courtesy, fully relying on his freakishly strong defenses

alone. It looked to Shangguan Tianyue as though Zhou Weiqing had endured the attack with ease, but in reality he had endured quite a bit of pressure from this attack.

He himself didn't know what was the maximum amount of punishment he could take. The experience he had gained from the last few attacks let him know that although he knew he had reached a very high level of power after consolidating his Astral Saint Core Nucleus, he had still underestimated himself. In other words, his current level of strength was even stronger than what he thought it would be.

“Be careful, father-in-law.” Zhou Weiqing's voice rang out. Clearly, he wasn't injured at all. His hands came together before his chest, each drawing out a triangle. Moments later, the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation had formed beneath his feet.

Unlike the past, the current Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation had more than just six Elemental Jewels appearing six different corners. There were also the four remaining Jewels hovering above Zhou Weiqing's head, gleaming with breathtaking light.

Zhou Weiqing was quite crafty. He wasn't going to use his Legendary Set, as his Hate Ground No Handle set was still incomplete. As such, it absolutely could not compete against Shangguan Tianyue's full Legendary Set. So long as he himself didn't use his own Legendary Set, given Shangguan Tianyue's status, the man naturally wouldn't release his own Legendary Set either. That way, the massive difference in power between the two would be slightly lessened.

It had been three attacks already. Zhou Weiqing wasn't going to hold back any further. Being able to rely on his physical defenses alone to endure three attacks had already stunned everyone present, but this was just the start. Zhou Weiqing pointed with his right hand, causing the strange Image of a feline Heavenly Beast to flicker before him, then bound towards Shangguan Tianyue. He didn't seem to need to first accumulate power at all.

Shangguan Tianyue waved his sleeves. Now that Zhou Weiqing had used a technique, he himself wasn't going to be overly courteous any longer. A icy blue longsphear shot out and flew straight towards that feline Heavenly Beast.

Was this a Heavenly Skill Image? No. Zhou Weiqing's technique didn't have the aura of a Heavenly Skill Image at all.

Something marvelous happened. When the feline Heavenly Beast collided against the icy longsphear, its body twisted slightly... and in the next instantly, the icy spear actually flew through it. The feline, however, was landing in front of Shangguan Tianyue.

Chapter 260: Battling Father-In-Law, Winning a Wife (3)

“Eh?” Shangguan Tianyue had a stunned look in his eyes. He quickly sensed his entire body turning slow and sluggish.

Zhou Weiqing’s left hand suddenly struck out as well. The air behind him was broken apart, with silver light flashing and then disappearing. Boom! The extremely dense longspear of ice transformed into countless specks of light, then disappeared. This was what happened when Saint Energy was used to activate the upgraded version of Spatial Rend, Spatial Collapse.

As for that feline Heavenly Beast, it was the evolved version of the control technique, ‘Absolute Delay’!

When Zhou Weiqing released Skills, he no longer emanated particularly powerful auras from his body. He looked just like an ordinary person waving his hand, but the process didn’t slow down in the slightest.

After sweeping out with his arms, he didn’t retract them. Instead, he took advantage of the brief moment where Shangguan Tianyue was affected by the Absolute Delay to rapidly point with both hands, his fingers stabbing out like butterflies drifting through flowers. Over on Shangguan Tianyue’s side, a series of azure lightning bolts began to light up. Twelve consecutive Fetters of Wind landed upon him!

What sort of casting speed was this?! Although this looked like the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation which Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya had developed based on the Six Ultimate Heavenly Dao Formation, in reality Zhou Weiqing was relying on his Saint Energy. The way in which he used these techniques was completely different from how Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya used them.

Simply put, the same Fetters of Wind technique was now at least four times more powerful in Zhou Weiqing's hands than those of an equivalent-level Heavenly Jewel Master. This was a 7 Star rated technique which when used by him had the effect of a 10 Star technique. When these twelve Fetters of Wind fell upon Shangguan Tianyue, it wasn't easy for him to break free even though he was a Heavenly Emperor.

Although it was impossible for him to summon atmospheric energies from the outside world here, the local atmospheric energies were still quite dense. Zhou Weiqing didn't pause after unleashing twelve Fetters of Wind. He flipped over his palms, then placed them facing each other. The spectators could all see the blue-violet light shining between his palms. In the next instant, an enormous lightning dragon burst forth from his palms and shot straight at Shangguan Tianyue.

The lightning moved incredibly fast. Even though it was now in the shape of a great dragon, it didn't lose this intrinsic property.

Shangguan Tianyue had been caught off-guard and thrown off-balance by the Absolute Delay and the Fetters of Wind. Before he had managed to completely break free, Zhou Weiqing's lightning dragon had arrived.

At this moment, he put his power as a Heavenly Emperor on full display. Although he had yet to fully extricate himself from the Fetters of Wind, his eyes flashed and a translucent, crystalline shield of ice appeared before him. This ice shield was three meters in diameter, and it securely covered his entire body. Just because he couldn't move didn't mean he couldn't cast Skills.

However, Zhou Weiqing's control over his lightning dragon technique wasn't that simple either. Right as the great lightning dragon was about to collide against the ice shield, it suddenly twisted aside to dodge the shield and still blasted against Shangguan Tianyue.

An enormous explosion rang out. A layer of blue-violet light appeared across Shangguan Tianyue's entire body. He had finally managed to break free from the Fetters of the Wind, but now a powerful numbing sensation pervaded his entire body.

This lightning dragon technique was something Zhou Weiqing had created after simulating and testing out multiple variations of Lightning Suffering. Not even Long Shiya, who had the Lightning Attribute, would be able to do this because he wasn't strengthened by Saint Energy!

Black light suddenly descended upon the area. This black light had actually come from beneath Shangguan Tianyue's feet, and it manifested itself in the form of a six-cornered black star.

Shangguan Tianyue, as a Heavenly Emperor, had an incredibly tough body. Although Zhou Weiqing had landed the attack, it didn't actually injure him. However, this black light was simply too fast. He hadn't had a chance to break free from the numbness. A black-red light suddenly flashed about his head, coming together to form a strange glyph.

This was the Curse of Doom. Of course, it had also been strengthened.

Zhou Weiqing didn't even pause as he used these techniques. It can be said that they all came out one after the other, and each of them was tremendously powerful.

After the Curse of Doom, his movements slowed down for just a brief moment as he pressed his hands together across his chest, then pushed them outwards in an arc while unleashing a dense blast of silver light. By the time his hands were completely unfolded, a Silver Emperor suddenly flew out. It instantly accelerated through the skies, piercing forward at lightning speed. Next, a Silver Emperor Wing Slash fused with the Spatial Rend to produce the Fusion Skill, Silver Emperor Spatial Rend. It almost instantly charged over to Shangguan Tianyue.

The joss stick had only burned down a tiny amount thus far, but during that brief period of time Zhan Lingtian's back had already been drenched by sweat. Aside from awe, he was unable to feel any other emotions. No matter what, he never would've imagined that Zhou Weiqing would reach such a level that he could actually suppress Shangguan Tianyue. He wasn't a weakling, and he was very familiar with the two Palace Masters. He could tell that aside from not using the Legendary Set, Shangguan Tianyue wasn't holding back at all. And yet, he was still being suppressed by Zhou Weiqing!

Shangguan Tianyang, who stood next to Zhan Lingtian, hadn't revealed a smile after his first one had vanished. His understanding of the battle was naturally much deeper than Zhan Lingtian's. These techniques Zhou Weiqing were using... although they were his, they were completely reliant upon being cast through the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation. In other words, these were all simulated techniques but just as strong as the real ones.

A dazzling streak of golden light suddenly burst forth from Shangguan Tianyue's body. The light appeared around his chest, causing him to be filled with a godlike aura. It actually managed to instantly dispel the numbing effect as well as the Curse of Doom. His eyes flashed with divine light as he spat out a streak of golden light which transformed into a golden knife that clashed head-on against the Silver Emperor.

An enormous explosion rang out, resulting in the Silver Emperor falling backwards while Shangguan Tianyue's shoulders trembled slightly. He had been at a disadvantage and had just barely managed to unleash that Skills, and so he didn't manage to actually destroy the Silver Emperor.

Zhou Weiqing didn't let up with his attacks at all. After the Silver Emperor flew out, his hands and his back actually began to glow with two completely types of light.

The light coming from his back was purple-red, while his two hands were glowing dark-purple. As these two streaks of light were formed and flew out, his movements finally paused for a moment. However, his technique was completed just as Shangguan Tianyue beat back the Silver Emperor.

Six wings flapped violently as the Hell's Angel soared into the skies. This was what had been materialized from the dark-purple light, and as emerged it came to hover five meters in front of Zhou Weiqing. Countless globes of dark-violet light burst from it, smashing towards Shangguan Tianyue as the Silver Emperor attacked a second time from the side.

Just at this moment, a human figure with a serpent's tail and a devilish face suddenly flew out from Zhou Weiqing's back. A beam of violet-red light shot out from its eyes and burst towards Shangguan Tianyue.

This had all happened in mere seconds. Zhou Weiqing had actually successfully revived the Silver Emperor, Hell's Angel, and the Demonic Dragon Lady. These three powerful creatures simultaneously launched attacks at Shangguan Tianyue.

Zhou Weiqing's attacks finally came to a temporary pause after he completed these three revivals. Reviving the Hell's Angel and the Silver Emperor was easy, as both were at the Heavenly King stage. Given his cultivation, he could complete their revivals with ease. The Demonic Dragon Lady, however, was a Heavenly Beast who was a Max Level Heavenly Emperor. Reviving it had been quite taxing for Zhou Weiqing. Even the Astral Saint Core Nucleus in his chest dimmed slightly.

However, this actually showed how powerful Zhou Weiqing was. Although the Astral Saint Core Nucleus in his chest had dimmed slightly, the golden aura around his body had grown markedly stronger. All types of atmospheric energies in the air were being pulled into him at incredible speeds. In fact, not even the two Heavenly Emperors were far from being his match when it came to

controlling atmospheric energies.

When Shangguan Tianyue pushed back the Silver Emperor and then saw the Hell's Angel and the Demonic Dragon Lady appear, he momentarily felt as though the person he was facing was the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor himself.

This was supposed to be a contest to see if Zhou Weiqing could survive for the time needed to burn a joss stick, but this entire time it was Shangguan Tianyue who was being beaten up. He wasn't trying to hold back on purpose! Zhou Weiqing's techniques simply came out far too quickly, and they included so many different Attributes. He also was able to control all of the techniques perfectly, allowing him to keep Shangguan Tianyue completely off-balance.

His mindset had originally been that of a senior providing guidance to a junior, but now it had completely changed. This kid was far more freakishly talented than he had imagined.

Ordinary Heavenly Kings would probably be terrified even before the battle started if they knew they had to face a Heavenly Emperor, but Zhou Weiqing was not. He had just returned from the Xuantian Continent. Forget about Heavenly Emperors, he had even battled Heavenly Gods. In his heart, he didn't feel the slightest bit of nervousness.

Zhou Weiqing himself had been suppressing his temper for quite some time. Heaven's Expanse Palace wanted to use this sort of trickery to prevent me from wedding Xue'er, right? Fine. I'll use my power to shut their mouths.

A layer of blurry golden light shot out from Shangguan Tianyue, blocking the Hell's Angel's attack. At the same time, Shangguan Tianyue folded his hands together, then spread them apart. His right hand now had a long golden sword within it.

The longsword was around 1.1 meters long and three fingers wide. An image of an enormous dragon appeared behind

Shangguan Tianyue as well, and it spat out golden light which blocked the Dragon Silencing Seal which the Demonic Dragon Lady had shot out from its eyes.

Shangguan Tianyue's Elemental Jewels were also of many different Attributes, but the strongest one without question was 'Light'. The sword in his hand and the light dragon behind him were his most powerful techniques, Skills which he had Stored from a Heavenly God-level Heavenly Beast, the Holy Light Dragon. The Holy Light Dragon was the guardian Heavenly Beast for Heaven's Expanse Palace, and its position was similar to the Tenebrous Demon Dragon of Xuantian Palace.

Thanks to this mighty technique, he finally managed to find his footing and defend against Zhou Weiqing's consecutive attacks.

A true Heavenly God Stored Skill was naturally not something a pseudo-Heavenly God like the Demonic Dragon Lady's could compare to. In addition, the Demonic Dragon Lady herself was partially a Darkness Attribute creature, as was the Hell's Angel. Both were countered to a certain degree by the Light Attribute. Shangguan Tianyue's aura suddenly increased in might, sweeping out and transforming into a layer of almost physical golden light which thundered towards those two revived Heavenly Beasts.

Shangguan Tianyue didn't immediately attack, which was why Zhou Weiqing had been able to catch him off-guard with a series of attacks. He needed to first catch his breath. This was especially true with Zhou Weiqing furiously sucking the atmospheric energies from the surrounding world. If he wasn't able to assert some control, he probably wouldn't be able to replenish his energy at all.

The Silver Emperor flew towards him from the side, while the Demonic Dragon Lady and the Hell's Angel were standing in front of Zhou Weiqing. What was Zhou Weiqing going to do?

His hands were slightly crooked and began to form an arc before

his chest, maintaining a circle within his hands at all time. The glowing light on his body grew even stronger, and the golden ribbons began to spread out from Zhou Weiqing's body and coiled around him.

Even though Shangguan Tianyue's Heavenly God technique was able to continuously emanate an aura of might, it didn't have any effect on Zhou Weiqing at all. As the ribbons of light appeared, the entirety of the drill grounds began to shudder.

Shangguan Tianyang was badly shocked. He hurriedly exerted his Heavenly Energy to protect this plane, but he could clearly sense that a terrifying sucking power had exploded from Zhou Weiqing's body which was draining away even his own Heavenly Energy.

Shangguan Tianyue was even more stunned, because as the surrounding plane had trembled, he found that he was actually unable to draw upon any of the atmospheric energies from this region. It was as though they had found a master, and they were all furiously pouring to him.

A Heavenly Emperor just had all the local atmospheric energies stolen away by a Heavenly King. This had completely upended Shangguan Tianyue's understanding of the world.

He didn't dare to continue to try and recover. Without atmospheric energies replenishing him, he wasn't able to recover much strength at all. Regardless of how Zhou Weiqing had done this, the best solution was for Shangguan Tianyue to end this as soon as possible.

Gold light flashed. Shangguan Tianyue charged towards the Demonic Dragon Lady and the Hell's Angel, meeting their unceasing attacks. The powerful aura of this Holy Light Dragon made it so that he was able to completely dominate these two revival techniques in terms of aura.

An absolutely awesome blade of light slashed out, slicing through

the Hell's Angel and causing it to vanish within the light. This was what often happened when darkness and light clashed, and the difference in cultivation levels made it impossible to overcome.

However, even as the Hell's Angel fell beneath this sword, an absolutely awesome wave of Demonic energy instantly exploded from behind it.

Shangguan Tianyue had relied on his Holy Light Dragon's supportive aura to give him the absolute advantage, as it prevented the Hell's Angel and the Demonic Dragon Lady from using their full power. However, right at this moment, Shangguan Tianyue felt all of the energies in his body suddenly come to a halt. A Demonic aura which caused the deepest parts of his soul to quiver had just appeared out of nowhere, smashing down upon him like a staff.

What was this? Shangguan Tianyue's face had a look of complete shock on it. Was this the Demonic Dragon Lady's aura? Impossible, absolutely impossible. Even if the actual Demonic Dragon Lady was here, she wouldn't be a match for him, much less generate such a terrifying energy ripple. But if it wasn't the Demonic Dragon Lady, then who was it?

Right behind the Demonic Dragon Lady was a gray figure which was slowly increasing in size. By the time the gray figure had truly emerged, the entire drill grounds seemed to quiver slightly in terror.

Zhou Weiqing continued to hover there. They could clearly see that those ribbons of light swirling around him were continuously sucking in atmospheric energies, including the energies of this very plane. The Demonic energy was coming from his back, and as it took form the dim golden light that had been around Zhou Weiqing suddenly turned completely gray, but it was still tinged with astral specks.

Even the Demonic Dragon Lady behind him had actually been

stained the same color of gray. The Demonic Dragon Lady was trembling slightly, an extremely excited look on her face as her aura skyrocketed explosively. She no longer feared the Holy Light Sword in Shangguan Tianyue's hands or the Holy Light Dragon's aura.

“Milord father-in-law, please be careful,” Zhou Weiqing said leisurely, and then those purple-red beams of light shot out from the Demonic Dragon Lady's eyes once more. This time, the Holy Light Dragon's light was actually unable to stop it, allowing it to descend upon Shangguan Tianyue.

Chapter 261: Possession of the Demon God, Injuring Tianyue? (1)

The purplish red light flashed once and disappeared. In the next instant, a large purple symbol appeared on Shangguan Tianyue's head, and the Holy Light Dragon Possession effect was dispelled.

Such a seemingly simple strike, yet the effect was remarkably different. Why was this so? Tang Xian, Shangguan Bing'er and Zhan LingTian could only stare in shock with jaws agape. They could not understand what had actually happened to allow the Demonic Dragon Lady that Zhou Weiqing had summoned to breakthrough the defense of a Heavenly God Tier Skill.

Only Shangguan Tianyang was able to see through some of it. After the blow, the body of the Demonic Dragon Lady instantly turned illusory once more, slowly vanishing into the air. It was without question that with the single blow of its Dragon Silencing Seal, it had already unleashed all of its power. However, that was not the key. The critical key was in the powerful Demonic Attribute aura that Zhou Weiqing had given off. Not only did it deter Shangguan Tianyue, it had also boosted the Demonic Dragon Lady's power in that instant.

A Skill to boost another Skill? Furthermore, it was boosting an already powerful that had already stepped into the realm of the Heavenly God Tier. What kind of insanely terrifying Demonic Attribute power was required to do that?

Just as the audience were surprised, the wings behind the floating Zhou Weiqing's back flapped abruptly. His entire body shot forward towards Shangguan Tianyue like a rocket. As he flew along in midair, ray after ray of dark gold light continued appearing around his body. From the start of the fight until now, he had finally summoned his Consolidated Equipment.

This little rascal was just too cunning. This was the single shared

thought amongst the entire audience.

Previously, he had not used any Consolidated Equipment at all, and without a doubt it was because he was afraid that if he used any, it would give Shangguan Tianyue an excuse to use his own as well. Now that Shangguan Tianyue was temporarily sealed by his Dragon Silencing Seal, and was unable to use his Consolidated Equipment or Stored Skills, he no longer hesitated to summon it all, boosting himself to the maximum.

That was not the only thing. The giant grey illusory figure behind Zhou Weiqing's back had also charged along with him. As it chased him in midair, it somehow warped into a bout of grey light, streaming directly into Zhou Weiqing's body. In that instant, Zhou Weiqing's entire body, even his 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set, all turned into a crystalline grey colour, glittering and translucent.

His Dual Legendary Hammers raised up, slamming directly towards Shangguan Tianyue's head. At the same time, ray after ray of lights lit up around Shangguan Tianyue without any pause.

Absolute Delay. Fetters of Wind. Curse of Doom. Spatial Collapse. All focused on control and restriction, as well as powerful single target Skills. It could be said that in this very moment, Zhou Weiqing was tantamount to six or seven Heavenly King powerhouses unleashing all their Skill simultaneously, the density of fire so high that one could only sigh in admiration. Even Shangguan Tianyue had to admit to himself that he could not accomplish this.

In that moment, Shangguan Tianyue's body actually turned 'multi-coloured', each colour representing various restrictions, boosts, causing him to be unable to dodge anything at all despite having the full power of a Heavenly Emperor. In the end, he could only forcefully lift his arms, circulating his Heavenly Energy with all his might in an attempt to block Zhou Weiqing's attacks.

Zhou Weiqing's eyes had turned grey and overcast, filling the entire area with the ice cold demonic aura, causing the temperature to drop by at least several dozen degrees.

BANG

The Dual Legendary Hammers slammed directly into Shangguan Tianyue, without any flourishes. To everyone's surprise, even with Shangguan Tianyue's powerful physique and thick Heavenly Energy, he was actually sent flying by the hammer blows of Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing's right foot stomped down hard on the ground, his entire body charging towards Shangguan Tianyue's flying body in an unforgiving chase. At the same time, his right leg was swirling in the air in an illusory figure, and over a hundred crystalline energy pearls appeared all around Shangguan Tianyue. In the next instant, they all plastered themselves onto him, exploding with a terrifying accompaniment.

This was not so simple as mere Lightning Pearls! Each and every single pearl was glowing with Blue, Black and Grey. It was the Dark Demon God Lightning that he had not used for such a long time. In the past, he had used this Dark Demon God Lightning to defeat Shen Little Demon for the first time, when he was only at the three-Jeweled stage. Currently, more than a hundred of these pearls had appeared, and with his Heavenly King stage cultivation, one could just imagine the collective power of these Dark Demon God Lightning pearls.

Shangguan Tianyue's body was still flying in midair, giving a muffled grunt. His clothes were already torn in many areas, and current Zhou Weiqing's Dual Legendary Hammers were once again reaching him, slamming into his chest once more.

PENG

This time, Shangguan Tianyue was slammed directly into the ground. The drill grounds existed in another small spatial

existence, but even so, his tall and large figure was drilled into the ground. A mouth of blood spurted out from his mouth.

“Tianyue!” Tang Xian cried sorrowfully. She no longer cared about any rules, charging towards him in a flash. While in midair, she did not forget to give a savage kick towards Zhou Weiqing, who had just completed his attack.

Naturally, Zhou Weiqing did not dodge, even purposely moving his hammers away, allowing his mother in law to kick him in the chest. With his insane defense, how could that swift quick even injure him.

Tang Xian did not have the time to care about Zhou Weiqing, she had already reached Shangguan Tianyue. Currently, her face was pale, the pain in her eyes was clear despite the tears flowing out.

Shangguan Bing'er could only stand there, struck silly, her hands covering her mouth in horror.

Everything had happened just too quickly. From the time that Zhou Weiqing had given a warning, to Shangguan Tianyue falling on the ground critically wounded. All of it had happened in the barely the time it took for a few breaths.

Tang Xian's hand was carressing Shangguan Tianyue's chest where it had caved in slightly. Turning her head around to glare at Zhou Weiqing savagely, she snarled: “You bastard, how could you treat your father in law like that, to strike him so brutally. You...”

Zhou Weiqing said with an innocent look on his face: “Isn't that what you taught me? When I first met you, you taught me to learn as many Control Skills as I could. Earlier, you also told me to beat up Father in Law. I was afraid that if I did not exert myself, you would not allow Xue'er, Fei'er and Bing'er to marry me. You can't blame me for this!”

Tang Xian was instantly struck speechless. Since Shangguan Tianyue was injured so seriously, she did not bother caring about

Zhou Weiqing any longer. Turning back, she carefully carried Shangguan Tianyue out of the hole he was stuck in.

Feeling Tang Xian's warmth and gentleness, as well as how careful she was treating him, the pale face of Shangguan Tianyue forcefully squeezed out a smile. "Xian'er, I am alright. I lost fair and square, it is just that I never expected I would lose to that little brat. That brat Weiqing, to be able to have such power at such a young age, it looks like we can set our minds at ease to leave our daughters to him. Don't blame him, what he said was right... you were the one who asked him to beat me up. Now, is your anger assuaged? All these years, you know I really wanted to say sorry to you, to repent sincerely in front of you. However, you never gave me the chance..."

"Don't speak anymore. How are your wounds?" Tang Xian's eyes were complicated, but it was without question, the majority of her feelings shown was worry and concern.

Shangguan Tianyue shook his head, holding onto her hands. "My injuries are not important to me at all. Xian'er, do you know? Those years you left me, I was in so much more pain than I am now... every single day, suffering. It was only until you returned that it got better. However, you still continued ignoring me, and I continued suffering everyday. If you do not forgive me, then I will just stay here and refuse treatment, I might as well just die now. I really cannot endure this emotional and mental torture any longer. I really miss my gentle, loving Xian'er!"

As he spoke up to this point, Shangguan Tianyue began weeping bitterly. Such an age, he was actually crying so bitterly, and he was still coughing out blood at times.

"I forgive you, I forgive you, I won't ignore you any longer. Tianyue, don't scare me." Tang Xian held onto Shangguan Tianyue tightly, the emotions she had kept bottled up for so long finally exploded out.

At this point, Shangguan Bing'er finally broke out of her reverie, and she was just about to charge forward to examine her father's injuries, but Zhou Weiqing grabbed hold of her.

"Let go of me." Shangguan Bing'er said angrily.

However, Zhou Weiqing just held on tighter, giving her a silencing gesture as he winked at her.

Shangguan Bing'er started momentarily. Although she was extremely worried about her father's injuries, when she saw Zhou Weiqing's wink, her mind suddenly cleared up. Indeed! No matter how reckless Little Fatty was, for her sake, he would never hurt her father! Could it be... there was some secret issue?

In the time she was thinking, Zhou Weiqing had turned to Shangguan Tianyang. Looking at the sandalwood incense that hadn't even burned to a half point, he smiled faintly and said: "Uncle, I think there is no need to continue with this competition right? I think I should have the victory."

A smile also crossed Shangguan Tianyang's face, and he nodded, saying: "A girl has to marry out of the family eventually, since I have already spoken the words, I will definitely hold up my end of it. Today, let us settle the betrothal matters."

Standing beside Shangguan Tianyang, Zhan LingTian was unable to say anything to stop it. Looking at Zhou Weiqing, his eyes were filled with disbelief. It was not too long ago when he was far above Zhou Weiqing, and he had felt a strong sense of superiority. Yet... now? Zhou Weiqing was no longer even on the same level as he was.

Just the fact he had already reached the Heavenly King stage was shocking enough, but now he had even used his Heavenly King stage powers to defeat a Heavenly Emperor Shangguan Tianyue in actual combat. Although he had also resorted to some trickeries to do so, for example manipulating Shangguan Tianyue into not using his Legendary Set, but the power and strength he had

displayed was obvious to everyone's eyes. What else could he say? Could he even say that he deserved Shangguan Xue'er more?

Although Zhan LingTian was extremely proud, but his character was honest and upright, a real man. He would not speak out in such a way out of character, and could only sigh inwardly as he lowered his head. He knew he had finally lost forever to this fellow in front of him.

Upon hearing Shangguan Tianyang's words, he bowed respectfully. "Thank you Uncle for fulfilling our wishes."

Shangguan Tianyang glanced at the couple of Shangguan Tianyue before he said with a sweep of his sleeves. "Come, let us move to another place to speak."

In a flash of light, under the aid of Shangguan Tianyang, the rest of them disappeared from the drill grounds. Of course, this did not include Shangguan Tianyue and Tang Xian.

As they returned to the grand meeting hall, Zhan LingTian did not follow them, instead leaving silently. At this point, there were only the three remaining, Shangguan Tianyang, Zhou Weiqing and Bing'er.

Chapter 261: Possession of the Demon God, Injuring Tianyue? (2)

“You two planned it all beforehand right? I never expected that Second Brother would make such a decision.” Shangguan Tianyang gave a faint sigh even as he said passively.

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “I knew our act would not fool Uncle’s eyes.”

Shangguan Tianyang shook his head and said: “This has nothing to do with fooling me or not. Although you all have planned it out very well, I was still able to see that the actual fight was not faked. Tianyue had indeed lost, even if he released his Legendary Set as soon as he came out, he would not be able to beat you in the time for an incense stick to burn. Weiqing, you are truly far stronger than I had dreamed. From today onwards, in the entire Boundless Mainland, you have a spot amongst the powerhouses.”

Shangguan Bing’er stood at the side, looking at them questioningly. In a low tone, she said to Zhou Weiqing: “Why do I not understand what you both are talking about?”

Zhou Weiqing laughed once more and said: “I will explain to you in detail later. Uncle, since you have also seen that the fight is real, don’t go back on your words!”

Shangguan Tianyang gave a bitter smile as he said: “Your threat was effective after all. Rather than let you run off and elope with these three precious nieces of mine, I might as well agree in a straightforward fashion and let you all be happy. However, you must remember what you said. Out of the three of them, no matter who has the first child, he or she must become the heir to the Heaven’s Expanse Palace. It looks like this old fellow here will have to toil for a few dozen more years.”

Zhou Weiqing said laughingly: “That is no problem. Uncle, that

is called able people should do more work.”

Shangguan Tianyang’s expression grew serious once again as he said: “Alright, so this matter is fixed, and I will settle it. However, you will need to begin to return and settle your own issues soon. In the year that you have left, there have been many changes in the entire mainland, some not small at all.”

Zhou Weiqing’s expression changed. “My Heavenly Bow Empire...?”

Shangguan Tianyang waved his hand and said: “Do not worry, your Heavenly Bow Empire is fine, and all is normal. Their progress and development is pretty good. The reason why Xue’er and Fei’er aren’t here is because they have gone to assist the fight in the Heavenly Bow Empire. Currently, the majority of the old territory of the Heavenly Bow Empire has already been reclaimed, and your armies are currently outside the Heavenly Bow City having a standoff against a combined army of Kalise and Bai Da Empire forces. However, they have not started their attack yet... and it will be a good time for you to return as soon as you can, to take care of it.”

Hearing his words, Zhou Weiqing heaved a sigh of relief. “Then... when you said there were great changes in the mainland, what were you referring to? Could it be... the WanShou Empire has some large actions again?”

Shangguan Tianyang sighed and said: “If it was the WanShou Empire, we would not be so afraid. Although the WanShou Empire is extremely powerful, there is still us and the Fei Li Empire, Bao Po Empire to hold out against him. It is nearly impossible for them to succeed in actually breaking through and entering our inner territories. The real problem has come from within!”

“The Dan Dun Empire has made their move?” Zhou Weiqing said with some surprise.

Shangguan Tianyang nodded. “Not just made a move... but a

huge move. The Geritimo Empire has been wiped out totally.”

“What?!” Hearing those words, Zhou Weiqing couldn’t help but be caught by surprise. Although a portion of the Geritimo Empire had indeed been invaded and seized by the Dan Dun Empire, the ZhongTian Empire had intervened to mediate soon after. The Dan Dun Empire had also gone silent after that, without any other movement. However, now that the Geritimo Empire had actually been destroyed, that could only mean one thing... the Dan Dun Empire no longer cared about the opinions of the ZhongTian Empire, or perhaps one could even say they stood opposed to the ZhongTian Empire!

It had to be known, the Geritimo Empire was one of the large and powerful Empires in the Boundless Mainland, and its total strength would not lose to the Fei Li Empire. For them to be totally wiped out in such a short period of time, one could imagine how powerful the Dan Dun Empire had grown... definitely enough to challenge and begin to threaten the ZhongTian Empire.

“Does that matter include the involvement of the Bai Da Empire?” Zhou Weiqing asked what he was most worried about.

“Yes, indeed. Not only that, the situation is already very clear.” Shangguan Tianyang’s eyes clearly showed his worry. “Almost at the same time as the Geritimo Empire was destroyed, the Bai Da Empire made a declaration that they would be changing their name to the Bai Da Kingdom, and they would now be part of the Dan Dun Empire as a vassal state. It can be considered that these two large Empires have officially joined forces, with the Dan Dun Empire at the head. Furthermore, since they have now occupied Geritimo’s territories, their total landmass would now surpass even our ZhongTian Empire. Currently, they are invading and swallowing up the various smaller countries between themselves and our ZhongTian Empire, and are thus continuously growing larger and stronger.”

Zhou Weiqing could only stare with jaw agape as he listened to

Shangguan Tianyang's words. He had never imagined that in just a mere span of a year, so many important changes would occur. The Dan Dun Empire could be said to have risen so rapidly, using a brutal and tyrannical force to forcefully unite the entire south of the Boundless Mainland.

“Hasn't the ZhongTian Empire done anything regarding this matter?” Zhou Weiqing said with disbelief.

Shangguan Tianyang gave a bitter smile as he said: “The majority of our forces are on the northern border. Even if we move them out, we can only protect ourselves, and not those smaller Empires. My greatest worry now is that once the Dan Dun Empire has finished conquering the South, they will turn their attentions to us. More importantly, they can seize the opportunity of the annual winter attacks of the WanShou Empire to launch a surprise pincer attack on us. If that happens, I'm afraid that even our ZhongTian Empire will be in serious trouble.”

What he did not mention was that if not for the fact the situation in the mainland was so grave, perhaps he might not have agreed so quickly to the marriage between Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Xue'er... perhaps even rejecting it. However, in such a critical moment, the ZhongTian Empire truly needed the aid of the Heavenly Bow Empire. It had been growing stronger all this while, and was in the perfect position to tie down the southwestern forces of the Dan Dun Empire. If they lost this important ally in this time, then the ZhongTian Empire would have its back and belly exposed to their enemies.

Zhou Weiqing furrowed his brow slightly as he said: “It looks like I have to rush back to the Heavenly Bow Empire.”

Shangguan Tianyang nodded and said: “Weiqing, in terms of military manpower, our ZhongTian Empire is currently facing the situation where we are exposing our elbows when we fasten our jackets, and we are unable to help you on that end. However, in terms of resources and supplies, you do not need to worry at all. I

will get Tianxing to ensure that the supplies will flow continuously to you in a steady fashion. I hope that you can begin your move as quickly as possible. Not just to save your family, but also to act out in the southwest region. If you have any conditions, you can ask for it right now.”

After some thought, Zhou Weiqing shook his head and said: “I do not have any conditions, but I would like to have Bing’er, Fei’er and Xue’er remain by my side. Only when they are close to me can I feel at ease. Furthermore, I have already reached the Heavenly King stage. If I fought against the Bai Da Empire, I’ll need your help to interfere with the judgement of the Heavenly Jewel Masters in the continent.”

Shangguan Tianyang nodded and said: “That is no problem at all, naturally I will handle it. After all, the Blood Red Hell has shown signs of that Destructive Attribute energies, and it might possibly be related to the Nether Realm. In terms of public opinion, you do not need to worry. However, you must be careful. The Blood Red Hell will definitely not sit back, and they will also send powerhouses after all of you. In this matter, I will also be unable to give you any support. Currently, more than half of our ZhongTian powerhouses have already been mobilized to the southern borders to prepare to faceoff against the Dan Dun Empire. That will be our main battlefield, and we cannot afford to make any mistakes there.”

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly, saying: “As long as I am able to use my full strength, I have absolute confidence.”

Shangguan Tianyang said: “With the current situation, even if I wanted you to hold back, it is impossible for us.”

Zhou Weiqing replied: “In that case, we will leave the Island as quickly as possible and return to settle things as soon as possible. Do not worry, in less than a month, we will definitely launch an attack against the Kalise and Bai Da forces.”

Shangguan Tianyang smiled in return. “It doesn’t really have to be that quick. You two have just returned, let Bing’er, Tianyue and her mother have a few days of reunion before you leave.”

Zhou Weiqing grinned wickedly as he said: “I’m sure that my dear Father-in-Law is currently unable to focus on his daughter. It is better that I leave soon, otherwise my mother-in-law might suddenly appear to ‘visit’ me. After all, this time I have played the role of the villain.”

Hearing his words, Shangguan Tianyang couldn’t help but chuckle in amusement. “Well, it isn’t like you didn’t gain a great benefit yourself from playing the villain right? In any case, it is good to see my brother’s family get back together again, and at least I can rest easy in that matter.”

Zhou Weiqing smiled as he said: “In that case, we will take our leave now.” His heart was truly eager to go home. With his forces ready to siege his homeland and reclaim the most important Capital City, to complete the revival of their Empire, his feelings were definitely very complicated. No matter what, the most important thing now was to rescue his family.”

Holding onto Shangguan Bing’er’s hands, they bade farewell to Shangguan Tianyang before leaving the Heaven’s Expanse Palace. This time, Zhou Weiqing did not hold back, hugging Shangguan Bing’er in his embrace as he soared into the skies, flying to the southwest and to his home.

“Little Fatty, did you plan all of that out with my father?” Shangguan Bing’er was no fool, and after listening to the discourse between Zhou Weiqing and her uncle, she could already guess what had happened.

Zhou Weiqing chuckled and said: “It can be considered as that, though the details of the plan was a little derailed by the changing circumstances. Do not worry, I am finally your official husband, how could I possibly dare to truly hurt your father? He did sustain

some injuries, but those were more self inflicted than naught.”

Originally, when Zhou Weiqing met up with Shangguan Tianyue, both of them had exchanged words via voice-transference. Of course, no one else had noticed that.

This cunning ruse of self-injury to regain Tang Xian’s favour was a plan concocted after the father and son (in-law) duo’s discussion.

Shangguan Tianyue knew about Shangguan Tianyang’s original intentions for Zhou Weiqing. However, he did truly care for the youth and placed high importance on him. More importantly, do not forget that he was a father! On the surface, for Xue’er to inherit the Heaven’s Expanse Palace and become the future Palace Master was a great honour, making her one of the most important person in the entire world. However, Shangguan Tianyue was extremely clear what was most important to a woman.

As such, he would rather risk some unhappiness from his brother and still informed Zhou Weiqing of some issues.

After that, all that had happened was naturally part of their plan. However, Shangguan Tianyue did not expect that Zhou Weiqing’s true power was already more than sufficient to actually fight equally with him.

When they had first started fighting, Shangguan Tianyue had been prepared to take it easy on him. However, as Zhou Weiqing displayed his full power and held the upper hand, up until the end Shangguan Tianyue was already defending with nearly all his strength. Alas, he had already lost the first strike opportunity and was too far on the back foot, especially since he had not even used his Consolidated Equipment, thus losing to Zhou Weiqing in such a seemingly easy fashion.

Chapter 261: Possession of the Demon God, Injuring Tianyue? (3)

When Zhou Weiqing had used the Possession of the Demon God in the clash against Shangguan Tianyue, the first strike had been real, but the second was actually fake. Simply put, the first strike had been using the ‘crying-face’ Hammer, while the second was with the ‘smiling-face’ Hammer. As for the reason why Shangguan Tianyue looked so critically injured, naturally the majority of it was self inflicted.

Previously, Shangguan Tianyue had already informed Zhou Weiqing that he could handle the severity of his own injuries.

The reason why Zhou Weiqing had gone all out in the fight against Shangguan Tianyue was twofold. Firstly, he was afraid that Shangguan Tianyang would see through their act if he held back too much. Secondly, he also wanted to test his strength, to see how far he had come. With a Heavenly Emperor willing to fight against him without malice, this was naturally a good opportunity.

The facts had once again proven that old ginger is always the spiciest. Despite the realism of their fight, due to Shangguan Tianyue’s actions at the end, Shangguan Tianyang had still managed to see through their act. Luckily, he did not stop them and they had walked away.

Previously, when he was watching Shangguan Tianyue’s emotional revealing and speech to Tang Xian, Zhou Weiqing had almost laughed out loud. Who said my acting was so great? Compared to my father-in-law, I still have much to learn!

Shangguan Bing’er stared at Zhou Weiqing with jaw agape as he explained the situation, and she couldn’t help but wear a strange expression as conflicted emotions rose through her.

Zhou Weiqing grinned and said: “Heh, they won’t have time to

worry about you now, so let's leave quickly. Otherwise, if mother-in-law comes to look for me, I won't be able to do anything! For the sake of your father's happiness, this time I have taken the rap. In the future, I still don't know how to explain things to her..."

Shangguan Bing'er's beautiful eyes widened. "You terrible fellow, you actually teamed up with my father to lie to mother. You two are just too bad!"

Zhou Weiqing sighed and said righteously. "How can this be considered a real lie? This is a kindly white lie... Do you really want to see them be in the state of 'cold war' forever? Can't you see how much your father was suffering? Isn't this much better now, once that barrier between them was pierced open, who knows what fire and lightning would rain down. You never know... you might even gain a little brother or little sister soon!"

Shangguan Bing'er blushed as she said: "You rascal, stop speculating about my parents' matters." Although she said those words, she sighed in relief inwardly.

A girl's worst fear was that her husband would not have a harmonious relationship with her family, which looked to be the case today when Zhou Weiqing hurt Shangguan Tianyue so badly. In that instant, Shangguan Bing'er was at a total loss. Now, she found out that it was all a show, and she could set her mind at ease.

Of course, now that she no longer had to worry about her parents, her mind couldn't help but wander. Although she did not voice it out, she was truly surprised. Little Fatty had already grown to such a level of power?

The two made their way at full speeds. Along the way, Zhou Weiqing barely rested at all, and even their meals were eaten in mid flight.

Shangguan Bing'er did not bring up the matter of resting. Although Zhou Weiqing was always smiling and cheerful, the worry deep in his eye was clear to her. In such a situation, she

would definitely support her man with her body, heart and soul.

After a mere three days of travel, they had already arrived in the Heavenly Bow Empire. After stopping to ask for directions, they quickly grasped where their army was now.

Just like what Shangguan Tianyang had said, the Heavenly Bow Empire's armies were camped in the Stars Forest, just outside the Heavenly Bow City. They had surrounded the Heavenly Bow City in a semi-circle, and looked to be ready to launch an all out assault. As for the details regarding both sides' military might, it was not something that could be discovered by simply asking around.

After grasping this news, Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er headed straight to the frontlines.

Their speed of flight was just too quick, and the Heavenly Bow Empire had never been large. In less than a day, they could already see the encampment of the Heavenly Bow Empire armies.

Under cloud cover, Zhou Weiqing was not afraid of being discovered. Since he had the superior vantage point from above, he would be able to study the camp easily.

In just a few moments of studying the camp, Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but be greatly impressed. Ming Yu truly lived up to his title as the Fei Li God General. Zhou Weiqing had to admit to himself that he would not be able to arrange his forces in such a formation.

From their vantage position in the skies, there were at least a hundred thousand men camped outside the Stars Forest. There was also a portion of their forces camped directly in the forest, but he was unable to determine their exact numbers.

The entire camp was set up to ensure they could cover each other. There were watchtowers erected in all positions, and groups of patrolling cavalry weaved in and out of the camp areas. Once there was any suspicious stirrings, the entire army could be

mobilized easily in this formation without being in a mess. Furthermore, no matter if it was the soldiers going through drill practice, or the various patrols, it was clear that they were orderly and disciplined.

It had to be known. From the time that Ming Yu had joined up with the ZhongTian Empire, barely two years had passed. In this short period of time, he had forged the Heavenly Bow Empire armies into its current state, to have such powerful combat abilities. If Zhou Weiqing had been the one in charge, he did not have the confidence to say he could duplicate this result.

Currently, their Heavenly Bow Empire army did not merely have the strength to revive their Empire, even counterattacking was not an issue at all.

“Little Fatty, let us go down.” Shangguan Bing’er said gently.

Zhou Weiqing nodded in agreement, holding her by her slim waist. The young couple descended from the skies, but they did not fly directly into the camp to prevent any unnecessary misunderstandings. They landed outside the camp before walking in the direction of the camp.

“Who are you?” Before they had walked a hundred metres, four soldiers burst out from the two sides to surround them.

Naturally, Zhou Weiqing had noticed them long before. However, if it was just using vision alone, the four of them had been well hidden and out of sight.

Now that they had left their hiding spots, only then did Zhou Weiqing see it was because they had dug four holes in the ground, with plenty of cover on top. There were also grass and thatch woven onto their shields, thus allowing them to remain hidden in the ground without being discovered.

This was their hidden guards.

Looking at the four blades gleaming with cold light, Zhou

Weiqing laughed heartily. “Stand down, we are on the same side.”

“Same side?” One of the guards, clearly the leader, looked questioningly at Zhou Weiqing. When he moved his gaze to Shangguan Bing'er, he shuddered. With a thud, he knelt down on one knee, saying respectfully to her: “Greetings Drillmaster, this subordinate is Sun Pao. We are scouts from the Fourth Regiment, Twenty-seventh Company.”

The other guards followed suit to greet Shangguan Bing'er.

Zhou Weiqing rubbed his nose in embarrassment, saying with a wry grin: “It looks like this Commander in Chief isn't as well known as you, Drillmaster!”

Shangguan Bing'er giggled, saying: “Who asked you to be so lazy and not reveal your face in public more often? This also proves that my sisters are toiling so hard on your behalf.”

Zhou Weiqing grinned in delight, saying: “Alright, everyone stand up. To prevent any other misunderstandings, two of you guide us into the camp to meet Ming Yu.”

Previously, Zhou Weiqing had not lowered his voice when speaking to Shangguan Bing'er, and the guards had naturally heard him. Commander in Chief? What did that mean? They were all confused. They had seen Shangguan Bing'er before from a distance, and they knew their Drillmaster's fame and reputation in the entire camp was rivaled only by Commander Ming Yu. So... who was this young man beside her?

Seeing the hesitant looks on the four guards, Zhou Weiqing said helplessly: “Nevermind, I'll do it myself.” He was rather impatient to find out about the current situation and did not wish to waste anymore time.

As he spoke, Zhou Weiqing raised his right hand and slapped it into the air. Instantly, the air began to rumble agitatedly. A massive dragon formed from lightning coalesced into existence,

soaring into the skies as the four guards watched with bulging eyes. An ear-splitting crash of lightning accompanied the strong energy reverberations, spreading out far and wide.

The lightning dragon spun around in the air before emitting a series of thunder and lightning. At last, it slowly vanished.

Before the piercing glow of the lightning had faded away, the main Heavenly Bow army camp had already responded. A hundred figures rose into the skies from the main camp, rushing over to the area of disturbance at top speed.

Although they were still a distance away, Zhou Weiqing could already see that this hundred men were all from his familiar Peerless Air Force!

They had been apart for a year, and seeing this Peerless Air Force that he had personally trained and forged, he instantly felt the warmth of home.

The hundred-strong Air Force soon arrived, their Consolidated Bows drawn to full crescents. Shockingly, all hundred of them were Jewel Masters, at least of a five-Jeweled stage. Their leader was Kou Rui.

They had not flown together from the same direction, and now that they were in the air above, their formation had scattered to ensure a semi circular surrounding of them. With a hundred Jewel masters locking down upon the area, it was filled with a strong pressure.

Kou Rui was position right in the center. His cultivation had already reached the five-Jeweled stage.

“Kou Rui, come down here now.” Before Kou Rui could even look closely to see who it was, a powerful suction force came from the ground, dragging him down forcefully.

Kou Rui paled in fright and subconsciously fired his arrow. As soon as he did so, all hundred of the Peerless Air Force members

also followed suit without hesitation. The shrill sounds of the arrows slicing through the air gave the four guards standing in front of Zhou Weiqing and Shangguan Bing'er a big fright.

A hundred Peerless Air Force powerhouses shooting at once. Just the explosive effect from their Consolidated Bows was sufficient to turn this entire area in a hundred metre radius into a deep crater!

However, in the next moment, they were all stunned silly.

The shrill sounds only lasted for half the distance before it stopped. A hundred arrows, yet they all froze in mid air abruptly. The most astonishing thing was that they actually flew back, landing right back in their quivers, with not a single one missing the mark!

Kou Rui had been brought directly onto the ground, landing right in front of Zhou Weiqing.

“We have only just met again after so long, and you already can't wait to give me a gift? You little brat, can't you look clearly before you act?” Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily.

At first, when Kou Rui saw their arrows had all been blocked so easily, his heart had grown cold and he thought they were finished. However, in the next moment, when he finally saw who it was who pulled him down, that terror turned into joy and excitement!

Chapter 262: The Full Hate Ground No Handle Set?? (1)

“Boss, you came back!” Kou Rui was so overjoyed, he immediately charged over to give Zhou Weiqing a bear hug. However, a heartbeat later he suddenly came to his senses. He hurriedly released Zhou Weiqing, then stepped over to block for him while calling out, “Don’t move! He’s one of us!”

Actually, even if the Peerless Air Force soldiers in midair wanted to attack, they weren’t able to do so. They were all completely frozen in the air, unable to resist in the slightest.

Zhou Weiqing waved his hand, releasing them from their bonds. Only then did the Peerless Air Force land on the ground.

Kou Rui didn’t hug him again. Instead, he took several steps back and then went down on one knee. He said respectfully, “Kou Rui greets you, Commander.”

Zhou Weiqing waved his hand, sending out a gentle stream of energy which lifted him off the ground. “We’re brothers. No need to stand on such ceremony. Besides... I might be your ‘Commander’, but I’m an idle guy who doesn’t do anything.”

The Peerless Air Force had landed on the ground. Ordinary scouts might not recognize Zhou Weiqing, but how could the Peerless Air Force not recognize him? The vast majority of them had been brought here by Zhou Weiqing from the Zhongtian Empire!”

“Our Boss! Our Boss came!” they called out as they gathered around him. They had all come out of the Ruffian Battalion, and Zhou Weiqing had never been a person to put on airs. They were amazed to see him, and in their excitement they forgot about paying their respects and instead charged straight towards him.

However, after taking a few steps they all came to a halt, a

terrified look on their face. They said respectfully, “Greetings, Drillmaster.”

Zhou Weiqing stifled his laughter. “What did the Drillmaster do to you? Look at how terrified you are.”

Kou Rui chortled, “Nothing much. She just occasionally inspects us and finds a few of us to spar against her.”

Zhou Weiqing instantly felt speechless. Without question, the person they were talking about had to be Shangguan Fei’er. Shangguan Xue’er wouldn’t do something like this. “Enough, let’s go back to base. Tell me about what the situation has been in my absence.”

“Alright.” Kou Rui led the Peerless Air Force members in escorting Zhou Weiqing back to base.

It wasn’t until fifteen minutes after their departure that the four scouts finally recovered. They exchanged glances, not knowing what to say. However, they clearly remembered the members of the Peerless Air Force, who they respected immeasurably, referring to that man as ‘Boss’. Commander Kou Rui had actually referred to the man as their Commander in Chief. Who was he?

“Could that be our legendary leader who never shows himself, Commander Zhou?”

When Zhou Weiqing had left, he gave the position of Commander in Chief to Ming Yu. He himself had taken on the honorary position of Military Director, but in the Heavenly Bow Empire his position was completely unshakable, especially in the eyes of the eldest members. And so, every still referred to him as ‘Commander Zhou’. Now they had two commanders – Commander Ming Yu and Commander Zhou.

As they headed back to base, Kou Rui began to narrate a simple report regarding what had happened during the past year to Zhou Weiqing.

During this past year, the Heavenly Bow Army had stabilized for the first half year, but during the second half it began to mobilize. In an extremely short period of time, it had taken back the majority of the Heavenly Bow Empire without meeting any resistance.

Ming Yu had chosen the perfect time to mobilize. It was right when the Dan Dun Empire had begun to battle against the Geritimo Empire. The Kalise Empire and the Bai Da Empire relied on guarding Heavenly Bow City without actually mobilizing against the Heavenly Bow Empire.

To date, the Heavenly Bow Army had already had the fully regimented First Legion of a hundred thousand soldiers, as well as the not-fully-regimented Second Legion of seventy thousand. In total, they had a hundred and seventy thousand. Because they didn't have to worry about defense, a hundred and fifty thousand had been sent out by Ming Yu and stationed here.

The former Peerless Air Force had been fully integrated into the First Legion and had been reorganized anew. The First Legion had ten Regiments within it, each of which had two hundred Peerless Air Force members and two hundred Peerless Heavy Cavalry. The rest of the Peerless Air Force and Peerless Cavalry was personally commanded by Ming Yu and served as the most elite force of the entire legion.

In total, there were 4000 Peerless Air Force members and 3000 Peerless Heavy Cavalry. Ming Yu had arranged them so that the Berserker Tribe and Gold Crow Tribe's equipment were also updated. The Peerless Cavalry's total numbers had increased to more than 4000, while both it and the Peerless Air Force were given uniform equipment. The Snow Deer Cavalry had been folded into the Peerless Heavy Cavalry, and the five hundred of them were also given the same treatment as original members, receiving special purpose-built armor and weapons.

Ming Yu's original plan was to attack a month ago, but due to

some new variables he had temporarily paused the offensive. This new variable had come from the Blood Red Hell.

The Blood Red Hell had sent a Heavenly King-level Darkness Attribute Heavenly Jewel Master who now stood guard over Heavenly Bow City. He didn't take part in the war, but the Kalise Empire had already sent word that if the Heavenly Bow Empire dared to attack, they would pay any price to get rid of the Fate Defying Seal which Admiral Zhou Shuiniu had set down, and then kill the Royal Family of the Heavenly Bow Empire.

Although that Darkness Attribute Heavenly King would pay an enormous price if he did this, the Heavenly Bow Empire wouldn't be able to endure the losses either.

Although some the Heavenly Bow Army had been brought here by Zhou Weiqing from the Zhongtian Empire, more had been recruited from the original Heavenly Bow Empire's army and the local militiamen. If the Royal Family was completely annihilated, the blow to the army's morale would be indescribable. Thus, even though Ming Yu was a decisive attacker, he still didn't dare to launch the order to attack casually. Most importantly, this involved the survival of Zhou Weiqing's parents. Even if he gave such an order, it probably wouldn't be carried out.

And so, both sides were locked into a stalemate.

Ming Yu knew what the Bai Da Empire and the Dan Dun Empire were thinking. They were trying to buy time for the Dan Dun Empire to unify the south under its rule, then integrate it into their empire. Then, they would naturally reach out to attack the Heavenly Bow Empire as well. The Dan Dun Empire had never cared about the Heavenly Bow Empire; to them, the Heavenly Bow Empire was nothing more than a small shrimp which wasn't worthy of consideration.

Upon hearing Kou Rui's words, Zhou Weiqing couldn't help but frown. The Dan Dun Empire truly was diabolical; it actually sent

just a single person over, but still managed to tie down more than a hundred thousand troops.

“Don’t worry, Boss. The Great Ancestor has already come back. Even if you didn’t return, we’d mobilize in the next few days.”

Zhou Weiqing’s heart leapt. He naturally knew who the ‘Great Ancestor’ Kou Rui spoke of was. It was his teacher, Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya! He said delightedly, “Master is back?”

Kou Rui nodded, then chuckled, “The Great Ancestor returned just a few days ago. The two of you really are on the same page.”

When Zhou Weiqing heard that his master was back, he really felt eager to meet him. It had been so long since he had seen Long Shiya, and he really did miss the man. Mu En, Hua Feng, or Long Shiya... these were the people he respected the most, and were some of the most important people in his life. He had long ago come to view them as family, as his most important family members.

“Alright. Let’s hurry up. I want to pay my respects to Master right away.”

Just as Zhou Weiqing was speaking, a deep voice boomed out: “So you finally remembered to come back, you brat! You are excellent at giving others work while doing nothing yourself.”

Six streaks of light flashed and vanished. Now, an extra person was amongst their ranks. It was Long Shiya. Long Shiya was as chubby as always, while his face was ruddy and smooth. Although he spoke in an accusing way, he had a beaming smile on his face.

“Great Ancestor.” Kou Rui hurriedly rushed forward to bow, while the Peerless soldiers all began to chortle. They were all very familiar with Long Shiya. Remember, before Long Shiya had left, his biggest hobby when bored was to run over and get himself into drinking competitions with the Peerless soldiers. Long Shiya was

someone who never put on airs, and so the Peerless warriors liked this ‘Great Ancestor’ very much.

“Master.” Zhou Weiqing excitedly took two steps forward, then knelt down on the ground and prepared to kowtow. Shangguan Bing’er, by his side, hurriedly knelt as well.

Long Shiya reached out to lift Zhou Weiqing up by the shoulders. “Why are you kneeling? Since when have I cared about these customs? Why have you become one of those kowtowing bugs in the year or so we’ve been apart.”

Zhou Weiqing laughed as he stood up, then rubbed his nose. “I had to at least pretend, right?”

Long Shiya gave him an amused swat. “You brat. You are as irritating as ever. Ehhh?” At first, Long Shiya had been extremely happy to see Zhou Weiqing, but suddenly his face hardened and became extremely ugly to behold. A dense azure light instantly exploded from his body, causing powerful Fetters of Wind to fall upon Zhou Weiqing. He then reached out to claw at Zhou Weiqing’s face.

This sudden action completely surprised Zhou Weiqing and the others. No one could’ve imagined that Long Shiya would actually attack Zhou Weiqing. Just a second ago, the two had been laughing and chatting!

Zhou Weiqing was the most shocked of all. In the past, he never would’ve been able to dodge this grab from Long Shiya, but he was no longer the same person he was in the past. As soon as the Fetters of Wind bound him, the Astral Saint Core Nucleus in his body immediately reacted, unleashing a barrier of thin golden light. The azure Fetters of Wind were almost instantly melted away without a trace. Silver light flashed as Zhou Weiqing used a Blink to retreat three meters away.

Long Shiya didn’t say a word. After his grab missed, his face turned even harder. He took a step forward with his right foot,

causing the entire world to emit a deep groaning sound. He didn't retract his right hand, instead converting it into a fist that punched straight at Zhou Weiqing's chest.

Chapter 262: The Full Hate Ground No Handle Set?? (2)

Six streaks of dazzling light formed around him, transforming into an enormous globe which smashed straight at Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing had already been put on the defensive. Now, he could do nothing but passively defend against Long Shiya's overwhelming power. Long Shiya was also a Heavenly Emperor, but he gave Zhou Weiqing a far greater amount of pressure than Shanguan Tianyue had. It must be remembered that he had been given the title of the number one expert below the Heavenly God level!

Zhou Weiqing had no choice but to block with his two hands in front of his chest. Instantly, his palms transformed to become completely gray. A round gray vortex quietly formed in front of him. Once Long Shiya's six-colored globe of light collided against that gray vortex, it was instantly melted down to a third of its original size, then collided against Zhou Weiqing's palms.

Anyone else aside from Long Shiya, including other Heavenly Emperors, who didn't use Consolidated Equipment or Stored Skills would've seen their attacks completely melted away by Zhou Weiqing's Devour Skill. Long Shiya, however, was different. He had six different types of Heavenly Energy. Although the Devour Skill could still dissolve his attack, it wasn't able to dissolve all of it.

A boom rang out, followed by the light around Zhou Weiqing's body growing markedly stronger as he staggered ten steps back before just barely able to find his footing.

"Master, what are you doing!?" Only now did Zhou Weiqing finally manage to speak.

Long Shiya was briefly startled when he saw that gray vortex

appear between Zhou Weiqing's hands. He didn't press the attack, but his face was still quite ugly to behold. "Speak! Who are you, that you dare to pretend to be my disciple?"

Zhou Weiqing had a helpless look on his face. "I'm your darling disciple, Little Fatty! Why would anyone pretend to be me?"

Long Shiya said angrily, "Bullshit! Even if that brat Weiqing managed to increase his cultivation, he wouldn't have been able to become a Heavenly King after just one year. Who do you think you are fooling? I'm going to rip that human-skin mask off your face!"

Long Shiya had originally come because he had sensed the energy ripples of a Heavenly King. He was worried that the Peerless soldiers wouldn't be able to handle it, which was why he came. And yet, as soon as he arrived he saw Zhou Weiqing. He had been so delighted that he forgot all about the reason why he had come.

But... as soon as he had swatted Zhou Weiqing, he felt that something was wrong. Zhou Weiqing's body actually unleashed a counter-force, and it seemed as though even the atmospheric energies in the air had wanted to impede his slap. This was something only a Heavenly King could do! How old was Zhou Weiqing? No matter what, Long Shiya wouldn't believe that this brat had been able to reach this level in such a short period of time. In addition, he actually wasn't able to see through Zhou Weiqing's aura of energy. This was why his face had suddenly changed and why he wanted to capture this 'imitator'.

However, Zhou Weiqing's Demonic Attribute and his Devour Skill had confused Long Shiya even further. Although this Devour Skill was far more powerful than it had been in the past, it was still fundamentally the same thing. Long Shiya had never seen anyone save for his darling disciple who was capable to use this technique, the Devour Skill. This was why he had paused his attacks.

Zhou Weiqing stared at Long Shiya. He didn't know whether to laugh or to cry. "Master, you are being unreasonable! Others all

hope for their disciples to grow stronger. Why do you hope for me to be weak?! Other things can be faked, but this can't be, right? This is something which only I have.”

As he spoke, he drew his hands in a circle before him, forming two triangles which intersected and unleashed the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation.

When Long Shiya saw the six dazzling streaks of light appear below Zhou Weiqing's feet, Long Shiya's ashen face instantly froze. Zhou Weiqing was right. Other techniques could be feigned, but the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation definitely could not!

Zhou Weiqing's Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation was based on Long Shiya's own Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation. This supreme technique required one to have six Attributes, and only Long Shiya and his disciple knew the method for training it.

Even if someone could imitate Zhou Weiqing's appearance, his Attributes couldn't be mimicked. Zhou Weiqing's six combination specific Attributes were unique to him. Combined with the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation, it was enough to prove who he was.

“Are you really Little Fatty?” Long Shiya asked, puzzled.

Zhou Weiqing's face twitched. “Master Big Fatty, I'm none other than your Little Fatty! It's true that I've grown more powerful. You should at least give me the chance to tell you what's happened!”:

Long Shiya's eyes flickered. “Wait a second. Tell me. When you fused the Dragon-Tiger Bloodline at the mouth of the volcano, who ended up being the sacrifice?”

Zhou Weiqing was instantly speechless. He glanced sideways at Shangguan Bing'er, then said helplessly, “It was Little Witch, Wu Yuehan. You told me to be responsible for her afterwards.”

Upon hearing this, Long Shiya was truly stunned. The thick

murderous aura surrounding him dissipated. He stepped forward, staring at Zhou Weiqing with a look of disbelief.

“You brat. You absolute brat! You actually became a Heavenly King? Goddamn the heavens, that’s so completely unfair! When I became a Heavenly King, I was in my fifties. How old are you?!”

Zhou Weiqing laughed bitterly. “Since when is a master jealous of his own disciple? Master, you are in the wrong here.”

Long Shiya startled to chortle, his laughter causing the meat on his face to bunch up around his eyes, making them nearly invisible. “Come here.”

Zhou Weiqing snorted. “I refuse. What if you hit me again?”

Long Shiya cursed with a laugh, “Get the hell over here, brat! If I want to hit you, I will. I’m your teacher! Can’t a teacher discipline his disciple?”

Zhou Weiqing helplessly walked back to Long Shiya, who glanced at him and then started to laugh again. “Very nice. As the saying goes, a heroic father will produce a manly son. You are indeed my disciple! Let’s see how that old bastard Xue Aotian is going to brag to me in the future. My disciple not only took away his daughter but also became a Heavenly King! Haha! Ahahahahah!”

When Zhou Weiqing saw his teacher roar with laughter in an absolutely shameless manner, he couldn’t help but feel awkward. What the hell! He had finally met his master again, but the first thing his master did was to suddenly attack him. Thankfully, he had just barely managed to defend. Otherwise, those two hits from his master would’ve been quite painful.

Zhou Weiqing wasn’t the only one to feel awkward. All of the Peerless soldiers felt their hearts twitching as they stared at this, especially Kou Rui. However, Zhou Weiqing and Long Shiya joking around wasn’t that shocking. Long Shiya, however, had just stated that Zhou Weiqing was actually a Heavenly King! Boss is actually a

Heavenly King!

In the entire Heavenly Bow Army, only Long Shiya and Duan Tianlang were at or above the Heavenly King level. Technically, however, they didn't really 'belong' to the Heavenly Bow Army; they were honored guests and allies. The greatest weakness of the Heavenly Bow Empire was that it didn't have enough powerhouses of its own, especially at the highest level. Now that Zhou Weiqing had become a Heavenly King, things were completely different. The Heavenly Bow Empire finally had a Heavenly King of its own!

"Let's go back to the base first. I need to show off in front of old Duan, haha! The best decision I made in my entire life was to accept you as my disciple."

The Six Ultimates Emperor had always acted as he pleased. He was never one to hide his feelings. If he was happy, he was happy. Frankly speaking, the smug look on his face made even the Peerless soldiers feel that this Big Fatty needed a beating. But of course, no one dared to say anything.

After these affairs, everyone returned to their respective camps. The first thing Kou Rui's did was to report to the high level members of the Heavenly Bow Empire, while Long Shiya led Zhou Weiqing and Shanguan Bing'er to go meet Duan Tianlang.

"Oho! Weiqing, you rascal. You returned." Duan Tianlang was extremely surprised and happy when he saw Zhou Weiqing. Zhou Weiqing wanted to bow to him, but he was stopped.

"I'm just glad you are back. The Heavenly Bow Empire really can't be without you, its spiritual leader. The most important battle in the revival of the Heavenly Bow Empire is about to begin. You came back right in the nick of time. Uncle-Master has already completed the things you need." While speaking, Duan Tianlang waved his hand. Three boxes appeared on the desk. Without question, they held God Tier Consolidated Equipment Scrolls.

"Thank you, Uncle-Master. You must have exhausted yourself,"

Zhou Weiqing said sincerely. The respect he felt towards Duan Tianlang was every bit as great as the respect he felt for his master. For the sake of the Legacy of Strength, Duan Tianlang had paid an enormous price. He had helped Zhou Weiqing out greatly in a completely selfless way.

Long Shiya chortled off to the side, “Old man Duan, your Legendary Set isn’t good enough.”

Duan Tianlang blinked. “Not good enough? Why isn’t it good enough? Weiqing is already at the nine-Jeweled level, right? When he left, he was at the six-Jeweled level. I have exactly three more pieces, one for each level!”

Long Shiya lifted his hand up, then wagged a finger in an absolutely shameless manner. “Nine-Jeweled, nonsense! He’s the personal disciple of myself, the Six Ultimates Emperor. It’s been a full year. How could he still be at the nine-Jeweled stage? He’s at the ten-Jeweled stage!”

When Shangguan Bing’er saw how Long Shiya was acting, she couldn’t help but let out a giggle. It must be remembered that just moments ago, Long Shiya had actually attacked Zhou Weiqing due to disbelieving that the latter could have possibly improved so quickly. Now, he was pretending it was all as he expected.

Despite how arrogant Long Shiya was behaving, Duan Tianlang was indeed shocked. He stared dumbly at Zhou Weiqing. “Weiqing, you are a Heavenly King? Already?”

Zhou Weiqing chuckled. “I was lucky.”

Duan Tianlang’s facial expression became extremely odd. “You brat, you really are a talented freak! Thankfully, I didn’t waste this past year either. I wasn’t planning to give this to you right away, as I wanted you to work harder towards becoming a Heavenly King. Now, it seems, I can give it to you in advance.”

As he spoke, he lifted up his right hand and produced two more

wooden boxes on the table.

This time, it was Long Shiya's turn for his smile to freeze. "Old man Duan, you completed the Hate Ground No Handle Set?" It must be remembered that Zhou Weiqing already had five pieces of the Hate Ground No Handle Set. These five additional pieces meant that he now had a full ten-piece Hate Ground No Handle Set!

Chapter 262: The Full Hate Ground No Handle Set?? (3)

Duan Tianlang snorted. “When someone asks you to help out, you need to work hard. I’m not like a certain someone who blabbers about being a ‘teacher’ while actually doing nothing at all, spending all his days running off to god-knows-where to relax. Xue’er and Fei’er came back from Heavenly Jewel Island with the materials I needed, and so I immediately started working hard. Weiqing only needed one scroll of each in order to fully consolidate. Otherwise, I really wouldn’t have been able to accomplish it.”

Zhou Weiqing’s eyes instantly moistened as he looked at Duan Tianlang. When he had first met Duan Tianlang, this Uncle-Master of his had still looked fairly young. Now, after just a few short years, his hair had turned white. Although his eyes were still bright, they held deep within them an unmistakable exhaustion. Zhou Weiqing couldn’t help but feel his heart ache in pain.

“Uncle-Master.” Zhou Weiqing stepped forwards to grip Duan Tianlang by the man’s big hand.

Duan Tianlang used his other hand to pat him on the shoulder. “We’re family. In fact, you can be considered half my apprentice as well as the heir to my Legacy of Strength. Although you’ve never really developed as a Consolidating Equipment Master, I naturally did what I promised you I would. Besides... completing the full Hate Ground No Handle Set was my one of my greatest dreams. Now that I’ve finished both Hate Sky No Handle and Hate Ground No Handle, I have no regrets left.”

Zhou Weiqing held onto Duan Tianlang’s big hand. He could clearly sense that although his Uncle-Master looked normal on the surface, his vital essence was extremely weak. He could die at any moment.

Tears began to drip down from Zhou Weiqing's face. He couldn't help but reach out to give Duan Tianlang a very, very big hug.

Long Shiya could no longer keep smiling. He stared at his old friends, his own eyes filled with deep worry. He knew better than anyone else what Duan Tianlang's body was like. He had actually left for the purpose of finding Duan Tianlang some precious ingredients which could be used for him to repair his body, but he didn't imagine that Duan Tianlang would have finished the Hate Ground No Handle Set so quickly. Now that he had already completed his life's work, his vital essence would probably splutter out! The treasures Long Shiya had brought back would probably be useless.

Right at this moment, a faint golden light came out of Zhou Weiqing's body. Something strange happened. Specks of golden light actually flew out of his body, causing the entire tent to become filled with a strange, munificent aura. Starlight glittered, transforming the insides of the tent into the starry skies. The specks of astral light flew out in each direction, then circled towards Duan Tianlang. They weren't that fast, but each time one of them entered his body he couldn't help but tremble slightly.

"Weiqing, don't!" Duan Tianlang cried out involuntarily. However, he could no longer stop Zhou Weiqing, whose arms were around him. It was actually impossible for him to move.

In terms of cultivation base, he was naturally above Zhou Weiqing. He was an old and experienced Heavenly King, after all. But Zhou Weiqing was no ordinary Heavenly King. He had Saint Energy! If Duan Tianlang was still able to break free after being grabbed like this, Zhou Weiqing would have no face left.

Dense Saint Energy ripples spread through the air as the specks of astral light continued to pour into his body. Duan Tianlang discovered to his astonishment that his spluttering heart meridians, which were at risk of shattering at any time due to him having exhausted his vital essence, was actually beginning to

slowly turn firm and strong again. Every single cell in his body was being awakened by those specks of astral light, which didn't cause his body any damage at all. In fact, even his own Heavenly Energy welcomed this foreign energy in a very natural manner.

The specks of starlight began to appear within the Saint Energy inside his body. Duan Tianlang felt as though his entire body had been submerged in a hot spring. It was indescribably comfortable. Everything within his body seemed to be waking up. His organs, his bones, his meridians... at this moment, they seemed to be going through a new spring. Zhou Weiqing didn't give him his own vital force; rather, he used a strange technique to rebuild Duan Tianlang's body.

The human body was something created by nature. What Zhou Weiqing gave Duan Tianlang was this sort of creative vitality. In doing this, he actually used up far more energy than he would in merely enhancing Duan Tianlang's vital essence.

Duan Tianlang's eyes turned rather distant. He felt as though he had returned to his youth. His heart, which had sunken into a deathly melancholy, actually come back to life. He felt as though he could now do many of the things he did in his youth.

He suddenly thought of a joke Long Shiya had told him in the past. Back then, Long Shiya had told him what brotherhood meant. "What are brothers? Brothers are those who, when you are sick in bed and unable to rise, will pour water and boil tea for you, feed you, and wash you. Even if you no longer care for such matters, during your final days your brother will bring a pair of beauties to meet with you. At that point, you'll definitely say, 'Help me up. I'll give'm a shot.'"

Perhaps it really was time to give it a shot.

The sparkling astral light continued to do its work for ten minutes before slowly returning into Zhou Weiqing's body. Zhou Weiqing relaxed his grip, smiling at the Duan Tianlang, whose eyes

were still rather hazy.

Long Shiya had been standing nearby and watching. He knew better than anyone else what had happened, because he saw with his own eyes how Duan Tianlang's white hair managed to slowly, miraculously turn black again, starting from the roots and all the way upwards. The skin and muscles on his face began to firm up again. He seemed to have instantly become ten years younger!

Long Shiya stared, dazed, at Duan Tianlang as the latter grew younger and younger. He crept over to Zhou Weiqing and then sent through voice-transference: "Weiqing, are you alright? Did that exhaust you much?"

Zhou Weiqing chuckled and shook his head. "I'm fine. That was nothing. I used atmospheric energies, converted it into Saint Energy, then revitalized Master-Uncle's body. Although he didn't actually grow decades younger, it'll be easy for him live for several more decades. Heh heh."

"Are you sure it didn't cost you too much?" Long Shiya widened his beady little eyes which were hidden within those folds of flesh.

Zhou Weiqing nodded. "Don't worry, Master. I always know what I'm doing."

Long Shiya's smile suddenly turned rather flattering. "Then, uh, when do you think you'll have the time to do the same for Master? Master wants to be young too! Maybe I'll end up finding someone for you to call Master-Wife."

Zhou Weiqing laughed out loud. He wrapped an arm around Long Shiya's shoulder and said, "Of course! How could I forget about you? You'll definitely get a chance as well."

Saint Energy truly was filled with endless mysteries. After his Astral Saint Core Nucleus took form, it continued to give Zhou Weiqing more and more abilities. Just now, everything which Zhou Weiqing had done for Duan Tianlang had simply come out of

his excited emotions. It was actually something of an experiment, and it was proven to be a success. Duan Tianlang's vital essence really had been revived by him.

After this test, Zhou Weiqing realized that he actually had the special ability to help others extend their lifespan. It must be understood that such an ability was an indescribable bit of good fortune for developing the Heavenly Bow Empire!

Long Shiya clapped Zhou Weiqing on the back, very satisfied. Although he had been rather joking when he made the request, in his heart he couldn't help but sigh. Not too long ago, when he had first met this disciple of his, the kid's cultivation base had been as low as an ant's. Now, just a few short years later, he had become someone who even Long Shiya himself had to treat with as an equal. He also had this extremely marvelous ability. This could no longer be described as unnaturally blessed with talent; this was him being Heaven's favored son!

Duan Tianlang was dazed for ten full minutes before slowly recovering. When he looked at Zhou Weiqing, his gaze became rather odd. He sighed softly, "Weiqing, why did you do this? Although I don't know what power you used, will it cause you any harm?"

Zhou Weiqing hurriedly shook his head. "Definitely not. Look at me, don't I look like I'm filled with vitality? 'Creation' is a special property of my Saint Energy. You sacrificed so much for me, Uncle-Master. I'm not harmed, but even if I was I wouldn't regret it. Besides... I need you to produce another marvel for me."

Duan Tianlang said, amazed, "Produce another marvel? What sort of marvel?"

Zhou Weiqing said solemnly, "Uncle-Master, during my recent trip to the Xuantian Continent I discovered an eleven-piece Legendary Set." He immediately gave a brief narration of his trip to the Xuantian Continent while describing Dongfang Hanyue's

Tenebrous Demon Dragon Set.

Duan Tianlang's eyes were filled with amazement when he heard this story. "To become one with a dragon? The Xuantian Continent actually has such a marvelous Legendary Set?"

Zhou Weiqing nodded. "The Xuantian Palace Master merely had the cultivation of a middle-stage Heavenly Emperor, but this Legendary Set actually allowed her to battle against a Heavenly God powerhouse like the Terror Sea Dragon. You can imagine how effective and powerful this set was! Our Legacy of Strength lineage has existed for many years. Why can't we produce a similar eleven-piece Legendary Set? Our predecessors were able to follow up on the Hate Sky No Handle Set to create the Hate Ground No Handle Set. I believe, Master, that you can definitely create an eleventh piece of this set."

Zhou Weiqing understood Duan Tianlang's personality perfectly. He didn't wish for his Uncle-Master to feel guilty for having received his aid, and he also wanted to give Duan Tianlang a reason to keep living. Without question, applying his efforts to another Consolidating Scroll was the best option.

Duan Tianlang nodded slowly, but a pained smile was on his face. "Adding another piece onto a ten-piece set isn't going to be easy! In fact, it'll be much more complicated than creating a ten-piece set."

Zhou Weiqing chortled. "Uncle-Master, I've always believed that so long as you are determined, nothing is impossible. Look at me. I've never trained too hard in Consolidating Scrolls, but I've still become a God-Tier Master."

"Huh?" Both Duan Tianlang and Long Shiya couldn't help but let out startled shouts.

"You are now God-Tier?" Duan Tianlang immediately stepped forward to face Zhou Weiqing, gripping the latter's shoulders. His face was filled with wild, indescribable joy. In fact, he was now far more excited than he felt after having his body improved and

gaining ten years of life.

Chapter 263: Before the Final Battle (1)

When he had inherited the learnings of the Legacy of Strength, his greatest regret had always been that he had not taught a disciple who reached the God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master stage, to continue the line of the Legacy of Strength. It could be said that if Zhou Weiqing could really become a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, it would hold an extraordinary meaning to Duan Tianlang.

Zhou Weiqing nodded, describing the process on how he had become a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master.

Duan Tianlang's temper had always been gentle and peaceable, but when he heard the entire process on how Zhou Weiqing had actually become a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master, he couldn't help but curse rudely: "Your sister! This is just not fair at all! Do you know how much effort I poured into becoming a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master in the past? This is truly a case of comparisons being truly odious Ahhhh! Fatty Long, my greatest regret now is that I did not snatch Weiqing over from your hands. At that time, I only thought that he had the six Attributes, such a rare opportunity, and I also had other disciples... so I let you have him. So... Weiqing's talents in the Consolidating Equipment Scroll world is no less than his talents in cultivation!"

At this point, Long Shiya was already grinning so widely that his eyes could barely be seen.

Right at this moment, noisy footsteps could be heard outside.

"Weiqing." The person had not reached, but the voice had already traveled in. Soon after, a white figure dashed into the tent, ignoring everyone else as it flew right into Zhou Weiqing's arms. Wasn't it Tian'er?

A year had already passed, but time did not seem to have left any signs on Tian'er. Instead, she looked even more attractive than

ever. Currently, her face was filled with tears, streaming down like rain, causing everyone to feel for her.

Zhou Weiqing had left for an entire year! How could she not miss him? Holding him tight around his waist, it was as if she was afraid he would disappear again.

Behind Tian'er, Shangguan Xue'er and Shangguan Fei'er also walked in. Shangguan Xue'er's face wore her usual chilly expression, but Shangguan Fei'er's lips were pursed slightly as she watched Tian'er embracing Zhou Weiqing, clearly a little jealous.

Behind them, Mu En, Hua Feng, Ming Yu and the other Heavenly Bow Empire upper echelon had also come. With Zhou Weiqing back at last, they naturally put everything down immediately and rushed over.

Instantly, Duan Lingtian's tent was filled with people.

Under the gazes of so many people, Tian'er finally released Zhou Weiqing, her cheeks stained red in a blush. However, Zhou Weiqing did not let her go, lowering his head to whisper something in her ears.

Tian'er's beautiful face turned even redder, but she finally nodded at him, causing Zhou Weiqing's face to be instantly filled with excitement and joy.

Shangguan Fei'er walked over, pull Zhou Weiqing back and enveloping Tian'er in her own embrace. "Bad fellow, you better watch out. Tian'er is under our protection, you're not allowed to hug her."

What Zhou Weiqing had just asked was whether or not the pregnancy of Tian'er was verified.

After gaining her confirmation, knowing that he would be a father, how could he not be excited?

Ming Yu glared savagely at Zhou Weiqing, saying exasperatedly: "You still know to come back!"

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily as he walked forward, giving him a huge hug.

Ming Yu instantly gave a helpless look, pounding Zhou Weiqing's back with a fist. At last, he couldn't help but smile as well. No matter what, it was great that he was finally back. He was the spiritual pillar and leader of the entire Heavenly Bow Empire! All of the Heavenly Bow Empire upper echelons were pretty much drawn in by him and were following him. If he continued with his disappearing act, although Ming Yu could still command the army without problems, there were still many other things he could not control. After all, he did not have the rightful name to lead the entire Heavenly Bow Empire!

After hugging Ming Yu, Zhou Weiqing turned to the Shangguan Sisters and gave them each a big hug as well. He then proceeded to give everyone in the tent a bear hug as well, without exception.

When he finally walked to the last person who was hiding in a corner, he couldn't help but be stunned for a second. Still, he spread his arms out wide similarly. "Big Sis RuSe, it has been tough on you."

That person was indeed Xiao RuSe. However, her current complexion wasn't too good, pale and ashen, though she still walked forward into Zhou Weiqing's embrace.

Zhou Weiqing could vaguely hear her mumble softly: "I'm born before you were born, when you were born, I am already old." These simple words, but they caused Zhou Weiqing's heart to tremble violently. Although he knew he could no longer afford to enter yet another relation, to incur another debt of love... he could not help but feel great pain in his heart. All the memories of him growing up with Xiao RuSe flashed in his mind.

The entire process was over very quickly, but Zhou Weiqing felt his originally excited feelings had grown heavy. As he hugged Xiao RuSe, he somehow said in a low tone: "Time is not a problem, age

is never a barrier.”

Xiao RuSe’s eyes lit up instantly, but they quickly dimmed again as she broke free of his embrace and stepped to the side.

Indeed, Xiao RuSe was quite a few years older than Zhou Weiqing. Currently, she had just stepped into her thirties, but Zhou Weiqing was barely in his young twenties. The years of fierce battles and a hard life had left its mark on her, and she was no longer that same level of beauty like the Shangguan Sisters or Tian’er. It was no wonder she did not feel worthy at all.

There were just so many people in the crowded tent that Zhou Weiqing couldn’t chase after her. In the end, he turned around and face the crowd, giving a deep ‘ninety-degree’ bow. “All of you, you have worked hard. Weiqing thanks you sincerely.”

It was a simple line, a few words, but many of those present had their eyes redden.

Ming Yu’s feelings ran the deepest, and he sighed inwardly as he thought. The mark of a true leader! This fellow truly had all the markings to make a great Emperor! Although he thought highly of his own talents, in the end he could only be a great General or Commander. In that area, Zhou Weiqing was perhaps not his match, but that personality and charisma... it was something that he did not possess. This was the reason why he was able to gain the support of so many different people.

From the time the Heavenly Bow Empire had been vanquished, to their current development today... it might seem like Zhou Weiqing had not really done much in terms of actual deeds. However, all that he had done was the most critical areas. He was the true soul of the current Heavenly Bow Empire!

Ming Yu gave a polite cough and said: “Let us relocate somewhere else to speak, lest we disturb Master Duan.”

Duan Tianlang laughed heartily and said: “I don’t mind this

minor disturbance, it's just that my place is so small, so Weiqing won't be able to be close to you all. Haha."

Everyone couldn't help but join in the laughter.

As they left Duan Tianlang's tent, the entire party headed towards the main headquarter tentage of the army. Ming Yu invited Zhou Weiqing to sit at the main seat, but he refused obstinately, wanting Ming Yu to sit there instead. In the end, they left it empty, instead having two chairs brought below it for them.

After a round of small talk, they finally began to speak of the important matters. Naturally, Zhou Weiqing did not wish to speak of all of his experiences, so he just gave a brief summary before leading the discussion to the current situation of the Heavenly Bow Empire.

Ming Yu's accounting was far more detailed than Kou Rui, including much of his own analysis and opinions. According to Ming Yu, the Heavenly Bow Empire looked to be in a great situation, but in truth they were in grave danger. Of course, their backs were secure, but the problem was with just their army of over hundred thousand men, if they had to face against the full might of the one behind the Kalise Empire, the Bai Da Empire... could they really withstand it? Towards this point, even Ming Yu did not have full confidence. All he could guarantee was to do everything to the best possibilities.

Currently, the matter of greatest importance was the upcoming war that could break out at anytime. The invasion of the Heavenly Bow City was absolutely critical, especially since they needed to save the Royal Family of the Heavenly Bow Empire, as well as Zhou Weiqing's own family. However, this also posed the greatest problem to them now. A forceful siege was not possible. Even if they ignored the fact that Zhou Weiqing's family was there, none of the Heavenly Bow Empire warriors would be willing to risk the destruction of the Royal Family to enter the Heavenly Bow Empire. If they gave the order to attack just like that, the morale of the

soldiers would definitely be greatly affected.

“... Weiqing, you need to make a final decision as soon as possible.” After describing their current situation, Ming Yu prompted him.

Zhou Weiqing nodded, asking: “What is the exact enemy military might in the Heavenly Bow City and the surroundings?”

Hearing that question, Ming Yu’s expression turned ugly. “Those bastards from the Kalise Empire and Bai Da Empire, they are utilizing the strategy of fortifying the city and clearing the surroundings. Since the Heavenly Bow City isn’t particularly large, they are unable to station too many troops in the city itself. As such, they are mainly using the Heavenly Bow City as a central base of operations, heavily fortifying it while they constantly clear out the Star Forest around it. Already, a large number of Star Trees have been chopped down and transported away. Currently, their military force consists of around fifteen Regiments, but their actual combat might is definitely no match for us directly. Out of the fifteen Regiments, ten or so will belong to the Kalise, a force they have built up over all these years. As for the rest, they should be from the Bai Da Empire. Currently, from the state of things, they do not show any signs of sending more reinforcements. It is clear that their main purpose is to hold us down here, to delay us until the Dan Dun Empire and Bai Da Empire have completed their moves in their region, and can take the time to finish us off.”

Zhou Weiqing’s eyes narrowed, but he did not speak out directly. Those closest to him, especially the ladies, could easily tell from the look in his eyes that their Little Fatty was truly enraged.

To Zhou Weiqing, having his homeland invaded and conquered was already a great insult. Now, these invaders were destroying his homeland, destroying the Star Forest, and using the lives of his family to threaten and prevent him from counter attacking them. One could just imagine the sheer rage in his heart now.

Chapter 263: Before the Final Battle (2)

There were over a dozen people in the meeting hall, but the entire tent was eerily silent that even a pin drop could have been heard. All of their gazes were fixed on Zhou Weiqing, awaiting his decision.

Zhou Weiqing remained silent for five minutes before he finally lifted his head once more, a light glinting in his eyes as he gave the order: “Commander Ming Yu, if we are to start attacking now, how long will it take you to prepare?”

Without hesitation, Ming Yu replied: “Everything is ready, and we can launch our attack at any time.”

“Good.” Zhou Weiqing shouted. He stood up abruptly, the light in his eyes glowing brightly. In that instant, the entire meeting hall of officers could sense the powerful pressure from him.

“Since that is the case, I will give you all one last day of preparations. Tomorrow night, we will launch our attack. As for the actual plan of action, we will discuss it now.”

A light of admiration flashed through Ming Yu’s eyes. As they saying goes, indecision invariably leads to trouble. For Zhou Weiqing to make such a difficult decision in such a resolute fashion, especially in this short period of time, it was definitely an attribute that a good leader needed to have.

Ming Yu got the majority of the officers to leave first, with only the core upper echelon members remaining here with Zhou Weiqing to discuss the detailed plans of the battle.

Just like what Ming Yu had said earlier, in order to invade and reclaim the Heavenly Bow City, he had already prepared for several months. In terms of ability, they could already move out at any time, and they had even come up with plans for the various directions and modes of attacks.

The core group discussed for four hours before they ended their meeting.

Shangguan Bing'er was dragged away by Shangguan Xue'er and Shangguan Fei'er, leaving Zhou Weiqing to Tian'er. From Bing'er, they had already learned what happened to Zhou Weiqing. Furthermore, when they were departing for the Xuantian Continent, Tian'er had allowed Bing'er to accompany Zhou Weiqing alone, and they would wish to repay her kindness. After all, they would all be living together for the rest of their lives, and it was important to keep relationships cordial between them all.

Tian'er held on Zhou Weiqing's hand as they headed to her tent. She could still clearly sense the anger and sombre feelings within his heart.

"Little Fatty, we can definitely do it." As soon as the door was closed, Tian'er threw herself into Zhou Weiqing's embrace, speaking gently.

Zhou Weiqing held her gently, as if afraid to harm her. Stroking her long hair, he said: "I am fine. I, too, believe that we will definitely succeed. Tian'er promise me one thing alright?"

However, Tian'er actually shook her head. "If you are trying to ask me not to join in the battle tomorrow, you do not need to speak it out. I will definitely be joining the fight. Otherwise, how could I face your parents in the future?"

Zhou Weiqing gave a bitter smile as he said: "Tian'er, you are wrong. If my father knows that you are fighting together with me when pregnant, that will be the very thing he won't forgive me for! Please listen to me babe, my precious Tian'er, do not join in this battle. With Master following me, how can you still be worried about me?"

Tian'er pursed her lips in a pout, moving unwillingly in his embrace as she said: "No, I must go this time. Xue'er, Fei'er and Bing'er are all so outstanding, and they are also going with you to

rescue your parents. If I do not go this time, how will they look at me. The first impression is always the most important, don't you know? Dear husband, just let me go. Please, I beg you, even Father says I will be fine."

As soon as Tian'er called him 'Dear Husband' in such a sweet tone, it caused Zhou Weiqing to go half numb. If not for the fact that he was in such a solemn mood due to his family being in such danger, and the fact that they were so close to them... especially with the Heavenly King powerhouses of the Bai Da Empire threatening their lives at any moment, perhaps he might have 'taken' her there and then.

"Tian'er, when you returned to the Heavenly Snow Mountain, what did father-in-law say?" Zhou Weiqing had not been able to accompany her to the Heavenly Snow Mountain, and he held Xue AoTian's opinion in high regard. Everything else aside, Tian'er was bearing his child although they weren't actually married yet, this was no small matter! After all, she was the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord, Xue AoTian's only daughter. However, from the fact that Xue AoTian had actually allowed her to come here, he should not be too angry.

Hearing Zhou Weiqing mention her father, Tian'er stuck out her tongue and said: "Father was quite furious. I was almost unable to return here. That was really the first time I saw father's expression change so much, being in such a rage yet having that helpless look on his face. Luckily, he was unable to endure my constant coaxing and pestering, so I managed to return. However, Father said that if you return to the continent and do not look for him, he will come to see you personally."

Zhou Weiqing's face twitched slightly. He could totally imagine Xue AoTian gritting his teeth as he spoke those words.

"This... dearest... you also know that I can't leave at this moment. After I rescue my parents, I will definitely visit father-in-law to fix our date of marriage."

Tian'er said gently: "I know. You should complete these important matters first. Anyway, even if Father really comes, he won't be able to really do anything to you. After all, we already have our child..." As she said that, she caressed her flat abdomen, with a radiant smile on her face.

Zhou Weiqing quickly asked: "What did father-in-law say about our child? When will our precious be born?"

Looking at the anxious look on Zhou Weiqing's face, Tian'er giggled and said: "It is still too early; at least three more years. My memory was right previously, our Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger bloodline always takes a long time to give birth to our children. Furthermore, with the inheritance of our bloodlines and now, with the addition of the Saint Energy, Father says that our child's defenses will be even stronger than us. My stomach cannot be injured so easily!"

"Uhh... there is actually such a thing possible?" Zhou Weiqing stared at her in shock, jaw agape.

Tian'er said proudly: "Of course, for our Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger bloodline to survive from ancient times up until now, we naturally have our various means and secrets. Whenever a female from the Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger bloodline has a child, our bloodline will transform into a unique energy and fuse with the child, to protect him or her. Furthermore, I now have the Saint Energy. Father also said that with both our bloodline inheritance nurturing him, especially with the nourishment and protection of the Saint Energy, our child's defense will be so strong that even his own attacks will not be effective. What else do you have to worry about? I will definitely join the fight tomorrow. Do not forget, I am the child's mother, do you think I love him any less than you? Without Father's assurances, I would never dare to ask for this."

Zhou Weiqing saw the stubborn resolution in Tian'er's eyes and could only say helplessly: "Alright then, but without my permission, you are not to take action easily, okay?"

“Okay!” Seeing that he had finally agreed, Tian’er instantly agreed happily.

Zhou Weiqing continued: “Regarding the Nether Realm, what did father-in-law say?”

The smile on Tian’er’s face instantly vanished as she said: “Father is also very worried about that matter. The reason why he wants to meet you, besides our own personal issues, is exactly because of this matter. He did not speak much about the Nether Realm, but he asked me to tell you that the real reason why my mother has always been unable to stay by my side is because she is one of the guards of the entrance to the Nether Realm. Even with my mother’s cultivation, she is not even a true guard, but a vassal to the true guardians.”

Hearing Tian’er’s words, Zhou Weiqing’s expression instantly changed. He was extremely clear that the Entropic Nether Tiger Phelia was a low Level Heavenly God Tier powerhouse. Even compared to the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord Xue AoTian, she was only slightly inferior. However, even a powerful Heavenly God Tier powerhouse like her was just a vassal, then what kind of power did those true guardians of the Nether Realm have? Perhaps... it was even at the Max Level Heavenly God stage!

With such a force of powerhouses as guardians, it indirectly proved the existence of the Nether Realm, and the sheer terrifying power in withheld. It looked like the misfortune of the dragon family was, like he had guessed, a conspiracy by the Nether Realm. Worse still, it looked like the Nether Realm had some connections with some of the powers in the Boundless Mainland. Of course, from the current situation, all signs pointed to the Blood Red Hell being the power in question. The destructive attribute energies they had displayed during the Heavenly Jewel Tournament was the greatest proof. Furthermore, the sudden explosive aggressiveness they now displayed also showed their ambitions. However, were things as simple as that?

If it was just the Dan Dun Empire and the Bai Da Empire, with the support of the Blood Red Hell, and they were in the midst of some massive conspiracy, then would the ZhongTian Empire, Heaven's Expanse Palace, WanShou Empire and Heavenly Snow Mountain just sit back and watch? Zhou Weiqing always believed that there was no such thing as 'enemies forever', only 'mutual benefit forever'.

Once the Blood Red Hell's existence could threaten the survival of the rest of the Boundless Mainland, there was always the possibility of the Heaven's Expanse Palace and Heavenly Snow Mountain becoming allies!

As such, the underlying truth should not be as simple as it seemed on the surface. A single Blood Red Hell would not dare to act out so boldly just like that. If the Nether Realm had connections to the entire Boundless Mainland, perhaps there would be more situations cropping up soon. All of the current issues was due to the Dan Dun Empire and the Blood Red Hell jumping out to reveal themselves, but this was just the beginning.

It looked like no matter whether it was for Tian'er's sake, or for the entire continent's sake, he definitely had to make a trip to the Heavenly Snow Mountain. At least, the current war between the WanShou Empire and the ZhongTian Empire needed to be paused temporarily, to clarify everything first.

Having thought through all that, Zhou Weiqing did not remain to accompany Tian'er much longer. He had just returned, and they were about to undergo a major military operation tomorrow; naturally he still had many things to deal with.

...

Throughout the rest of the day, Zhou Weiqing did not rest at all. Besides continuous meetings with the Heavenly Bow Empire upper echelons, he also joined Ming Yu to prepare for the major battle the next day. Of course, they also had to ensure that confidentiality

was enforced and that their enemies would not gain information about the incoming attack.

Chapter 263: Before the Final Battle (3)

Towards the influence Zhou Weiqing had just as soon as he returned, Ming Yu could sense it the strongest. All of the high ranking officers, no matter those from the original Heavenly Bow Empire army who had joined up with them, or the original Peerless Regiment that had been gathered by Zhou Weiqing personally... all of them had a personal solo meeting with Zhou Weiqing.

Of course, the news of the attack was restricted to only the few with highest ranks. Zhou Weiqing only told most of the officers that they would be launching their final attacks soon, but without giving the exact time. At the same time, he assured them that the safety of the Royal Family would be of utmost priority, and that they would definitely be rescued.

Naturally, the time he spent with each person individually was not too long, but Ming Yu was easily able to observe that any officer that was spoken to by Zhou Weiqing revealed their absolute trust in him. To most of the officers, although they respected and admired Ming Yu for his abilities, he was still considered an outsider. However, Zhou Weiqing was absolutely different. In the Heavenly Bow Empire, he could be considered to have a high status. The Godson of the Emperor, the son of Admiral Zhou. More importantly, everything that the current Heavenly Bow Empire had achieved could be said to have the mark of Zhou Weiqing. His own family was also trapped in the Heavenly Bow City, and they knew he would never treat his parents' lives as a joke. As such, they could place absolute trust in him.

In just half a day, Zhou Weiqing had completely resolved any possible morale issues for the officers. As for the men below them, he would naturally leave it to these officers to handle.

After this most critical issue was resolved, it was already after lunch on the next day. Zhou Weiqing brought the three Shangguan Sisters and Tian'er to his room to enter a temporary closed door

cultivation while they waited for the final moment to arrive. At this point, Ming Yu turned into the busiest person, issuing military order after order from the main headquarter tent.

Ming Yu found that he was increasingly liking this partner he had in Zhou Weiqing. Indeed, he had always looked at Zhou Weiqing as a partner, a comrade that would fight together with him, and the Heavenly Bow Empire was the perfect platform for him to display his own military genius.

Although Zhou Weiqing did not appear often, and looked to be irresponsible on the surface, Ming Yu knew he could not be without him in this matter. Zhou Weiqing's 'big picture' and 'long-term' visions, his exceptional charisma and interactions with others, as well as his own considerable military talents... all of them were crucial to the rise of the Heavenly Bow Empire. The thing that satisfied Ming Yu the most was that Zhou Weiqing would not try to micromanage him in terms of how he commanded the military, placing absolute trust in him.

The final battle for the Heavenly Bow Empire was about to begin; naturally there were no explanations required regarding the sheer importance of the battle. No matter Zhou Weiqing or Ming Yu, they could not afford to lose.

As evening approached, the skies darkened, leaving a faint layer of remaining red glow to cover the Heavenly Bow City.

The Heavenly Bow City had been known as one of the most beautiful cities in the Boundless Mainland, and the only one which stood right in the middle of a forest. Alas, it currently looked rather broken down.

All around the Heavenly Bow City, vast areas of Star Trees had been chopped down, with the timber being shipped to the Kalise Empire and Bai Da Empire. The result of which was ugly patches of empty ground all around. At least, if one looked outward from within the city, there was no longer any cover within a ten li

radius. This was one of the tactics they used to ensure no surprise attacks could be launched.

Inside the city was a bleak and desolate sight. Near the north gate, as well as along the city walls, they were full of army troops. The city gates had been sealed shut for a long time. Currently, the population within the city was less than a third of what it had been during the Heavenly Bow Empire's rule. Those who could escape had already done so, especially when the Heavenly Bow Empire had begun its revival of their territories, many of the Heavenly Bow Empire citizens had chosen to flee to the territories which the Heavenly Bow Empire had reclaimed.

With the mass exodus of the Heavenly Bow City citizens, the Kalise Empire had no choice but to seal the gates, preventing the further escape of the remaining citizens. Even so, the current situation in the Heavenly Bow City remained as such; with all the citizens hiding out indoors, refusing to leave their houses. This resulted in the entire city turning into an empty, desolate looking one. However, all of the citizens were secretly hoping and waiting for the day the Heavenly Bow Empire armies would return to reclaim this city.

The Heavenly Bow Empire Royal Palace seemed so lonely and desolate in the midst of all the empty streets, lit up by the fading glow of the evening sun. The main hall of the Palace, where the court was usually held in the past, was the biggest hall in the entire Palace, but it was currently engulfed in the darkness.

In that patch of darkness, there was a layer of faint blood-light. Only during the day, in the period where the sunlight was the strongest, could the faint outline of the palace be seen.

In front of this palace hall, three people stood there, dressed in the traditional fineries.

Amongst the three, the one in the center was an old man dressed in a long black silk robe adorned with an embroidered gold dragon.

He had a sinister looking countenance, his cold eyes filled with arrogance. At his sides, the other two men looked to be even older than he was. Their features were rather similar, quite clearly a pair of brothers, and they were dressed in fiery red robes. It was also clear from their manner that they were extremely respectful towards the black-robed old man in the center.

The black robed old man said passively: “How goes the arrangements?”

The red robed old man on the left said respectfully: “Reporting, Heavenly Emperor. Everything has been arranged. The news that we have spread is that only a single Darkness-Attribute Heavenly King has arrived. If those Heavenly Bow Empire fellows dare to come, we will ‘leave’ them here forever.”

The red robed old man on the right laughed heartily and said: “Heavenly Emperor, do not worry. I really do not understand why they would trouble you to make a trip down here personally. Although the armies of the Heavenly Bow Empire are not bad, they do not have any top level powerhouses. As such, they aren’t much to be feared at all. This time, we have already activated six Heavenly Kings for this battle, and with you, a Heavenly Emperor, holding down the fort here personally, it is truly overkill.”

The black robed old man said passively: “We can’t be careless. In the frontlines here, we only have this amount of troops, as most of our armies have been assigned to the other southern battle lines. For the sake of the overall plans of the Empire, we cannot allow any problems to crop up here. Otherwise, although this Heavenly Bow Empire armies aren’t strong in numbers, they will be able to march in without any resistance. If the Kalise Empire is destroyed, and our Bai Da Empire lands are being attacked, it will affect the entire war situation. As such, we only need to simply defend this area without thinking too much. Such an easy task, what is there to be dissatisfied about?”

“Of course not, of course not.” The two old men said hastily with

a bow.

The black robed old man turned around, looking at the huge palace hall behind him. With a furrowed brow, he said: “A mere ninth-Jewel, and he dares to use a Skill like the Darkness Attribute Fate Denying Seal. Even this Heavenly Emperor would have some troubles actually undoing this Seal. Well, it isn’t a bad thing to have this Seal here, it ended up turning into a good way to hold the Heavenly Bow Empire back at bay. Otherwise, before we secured control over the majority of the continent, we aren’t able to easily make a move against normal armies.”

This black robed old man’s name was Meng Gui, known as Heavenly Emperor Meng Gui. He was originally an independent cultivator just like the Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya. However, Long Shiya was usually more active in the north, while this Heavenly Emperor Meng Gui was more active in the south. He was known for his Darkness Attribute skills, trained and refined to the peak. In the independent cultivator world, he was rather well known, though no one knew that he had actually joined up with the Dan Dun Empire.

The two red robed old men were indeed a pair of brothers, and they originated from the Blood Red Hell. Their names were Huo Li and Huo Mei respectively, and they were powerhouses groomed by the Blood Red Hell.

Besides them, around the main hall of the Heavenly Bow Empire, there was another four Heavenly King powerhouses, each guarding a single side of the palace. It could be said that this palace was so heavily defended that it should be impregnable.

According to their investigations, the current Heavenly Bow Empire had at least one Heavenly King powerhouse holding down the fort; the God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master Duan Tianlang. Originally, that assassin who had tried to kill Zhou Weiqing was sent by the Blood Red Hell. They had judged that the death of Zhou Weiqing would cause the rising Heavenly Bow

Empire to just collapse internally, and their defense of the west would naturally be a simple task. Although the Fei Li Empire was also a large Empire, a large majority of their forces would usually be tied up at their north border by the WanShou Empire. As long as they did not attack first, the Fei Li Empire would also be unwilling to attack first. Furthermore, they had already stationed a almost two hundred thousand strong army here in the Heavenly Bow Empire, and even if the Fei Li Empire attacked, they might not be too successful.

Alas, who could have guessed that the assassination would actually fail. After that, Ming Yu had led the Heavenly Bow Empire armies in growing stronger. Added on to the fact that they had lost so many forces in that bloody battle in the Crescent City, their overall military might had dropped so much that they were actually no match for the Heavenly Bow Empire armies now.

Of course, to the few Heavenly Kings and Heavenly Emperor here, they did not really care much about this. If not for the fact that the Heavenly Jewel Master agreement restricted them from joining in the fight against common soldiers, how could they be afraid of the Heavenly Bow Empire armies. The only reason they continued staying here in a defensive position was because they had to take in the entire warfront into account. Of course, the other reason was they did not want to alarm the Heaven's Expanse Palace too quickly, and even the Heavenly Snow Mountain further away. This was not the time for them to reveal all their aces yet.

Right at that moment, the black robed old man who had been surveying the Fate Denying Seal and the palace behind abruptly lifted his head to look into the skies. Two rays of cold light shot forth from his eyes like bolts of lightning as he shouted: "Get down here!"

"Do you think you have the qualification to order this old man around?" A disdainful voice rang out in the skies. In an instant, the entire space above the palace lit up, dazzling light of six different

colours spreading out like fireworks bursting in the skies, descending upon the ground to envelop the Fate Denying Seal.

In the skies, a large fat man stepped out, stopping right above the palace. His hands waved in a pressuring action as he shouted: “All of you, move here now!”

The six lights spread out in all directions. The strange thing was that these lights seemed to have eyes of their own, ignoring all the buildings and leaving them intact.

Four figures appeared in a flash from the four directions even as the brothers Huo Li and Huo Mei rose into the skies. Instantly, the six of them had surrounded the large fatty in midair.

Meng Gui’s eyes narrowed. “Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor, Long Shiya. Fatty Long, you dare to stand against our Blood Red Hell?”

This large fatty who had just appeared so suddenly was indeed Long Shiya. Hearing Meng Gui’s words, Long Shiya said with great disdain: “What so great about the Blood Red Hell? Has this old man feared anyone before? I have even gone up the Heavenly Snow Mountain many times to visit that old fellow Xue AoTian so many times. Meng Gui, you were an independent cultivator who trained up to the Heavenly Emperor state on your own, yet now that you are old, you actually went to become someone else’s dog? Aren’t you ashamed of yourself?”

Meng Gui took a step forward, and in the next instant, he appeared in the air about twenty metres from Long Shiya, facing off against him.

Seeing the eleven Heavenly Jewels circling Long Shiya’s feet and head, he had no choice but to release his own aura to withstand the pressure from him.

“Fatty Long, others might be afraid of you, but I am not. Your Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation might be miraculous, but

you are here alone. Don't think you can have it easy here. Where is that 'old flame' of yours, Duan LingTian? Why don't you call him out as well?"

As soon as Meng Gui appeared in the air, the six Heavenly Kings felt the pressure on them ease greatly, and they secretly sighed in relief. Long Shiya was well known as the strongest powerhouse below the Heavenly God tier, and that was not without reason.

Long Shiya said contemptuously: "Facing an old wretch like you, and this pathetic motley crew, do I still need Old Duan to help me? You think too highly of yourself."

Meng Gui gave a cold humph, but his face remained impassive. "There is no point fencing with words here. It has been a long time since I have experienced your Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation. Today is a good opportunity for me to try it once more, to see if you have improved over these years."

As he said that, the skies around him abruptly darkened, actually forcefully pushing back the six-coloured lights of Long Shiya. In the darkness, there was clearly a thick sense of frenzied insanity.

"Ehh? I see, looks like it is as I expected. I was wondering how the Blood Red Hell could possibly get you on their side... looks like it really is that bullshit Destruction Attribute." Long Shiya was not too surprised as he stood there, hands behind his back casually. Even though he was surrounded by so many powerhouses, his expression remained unchanged.

Chapter 264: Awe-inspiring Demoniac Attribute (1)

Meng Gui said passively: “Do not cry about that, you sound like sour grapes. Fatty Long, the Destruction Attribute is an existence above even the Saint Attributes; your Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation might be miraculous, but I’m afraid I’ll have to leave you here for good today.”

As soon as he spoke, six rays of Destruction Attribute energies rose from all six directions, filled with insanity and a frenzied feeling. The thick destruction attribute aura actually beginning to suppress the six coloured lights of the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation, especially with the support of Meng Gui’s direct clash from the front. In an instant, Long Shiya was left at the disadvantage.

Long Shiya’s expression changed slightly. Although he had heard Zhou Weiqing speak of the Destruction Attribute, he had not imagined that it would be that disgusting. If these bunch of people in front of him did not possess the Destruction Attribute, he would not have even begun to take them seriously. Alas, the current situation was obviously different.

A cold smirk crossed Meng Gui’s face. “Looks like you never expected this, Fatty Long. The Destruction Attribute is not only powerful, the more users of it there are wielding it simultaneously, the stronger it becomes. If we were just using our own powers and attributes against you, we will naturally be unable to hold you down here. However, with the Destruction Attribute, we now have common points to work together, and with its superimposing effects, you won’t even be able to dream of leaving this place. I have long heard that you accepted a disciple, so this formation here today is specially prepared for you. Today, I’ll let you come here, but not leave this place!”

Under the onslaught of a Heavenly Emperor and six Heavenly Kings unleashing the Destruction Attribute to suppress him, even Long Shiya's Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation was pressured to a mere few metres radius around his body, and this boundary continued shrinking. Once the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation was unable to protect him, then he would receive the finishing blow from these seven powerhouses.

However, to Meng Gui's surprise, Long Shiya was actually able to laugh out loud, even with a hint of disdain.

A pitch black figure appeared stealthily to the back of one of the Heavenly Kings at the back, and no one actually noticed its arrival.

This Heavenly King from the Blood Red Hell was circulating his Destruction Attribute with all his might, and he did not even have the slightest inkling that the figure had appeared behind him.

Even a Heavenly Emperor like Meng Gui did not notice that this person had appeared, let alone how.

A thick, powerful palm grasped onto the Blood Red Hell Heavenly King's neck. To the Heavenly King, this happened just so suddenly. However, he was after all a Heavenly King powerhouse, and his Heavenly Energy exploded out as soon as he received the sneak attack.

Furthermore, this Blood Red Hell Heavenly King was savage and ruthless enough. Without the slightest hesitation, he chose to self-detonate his Heavenly Core Nucleus instantly.

To be grabbed from the back onto the neck without the slightest premonition. What did that mean? It proved that this person's cultivation and power was far beyond his own, and the only thing that could possibly have any effect would be to self-detonate his Heavenly Core Nucleus, to launch this most powerful attack. If he could cause that unknown enemy to show some fear, perhaps he might just barely survive. When one reached the Heavenly King stage, even their intelligence would increase along with their

cultivation. He had made the best decision possible in that situation without pause.

Alas, though the decision was indeed correct, the situation did not develop as he hoped.

A terrifying Devouring force caused the Blood Red Hell Heavenly King to instantly feel as if his body was in the ocean... in a whirlpool. His attempt at using his will to self-detonate his Heavenly Core Nucleus was instantly frozen, before his Heavenly Energy gushed out of his body. His Heavenly Core Nucleus seemed to be no longer under his control, that unbelievable suction force keeping it in place, unable to move.

With one ray of Destruction Attribute suppression energies suddenly disappearing, Long Shiya's six-coloured lights naturally strengthened again. As for the rest of the Blood Red Hell party, it was only at that point when his power strengthened explosively that they realised something had gone wrong.

In unison, their gazes turned to the Heavenly King powerhouse that had been ambushed. However, by the time they reacted and wanted to jump to his aid, it was already too late.

With the Heavenly King powerhouse's body as cover, they could not actually see what he had encountered. The only thing they saw was his body flying back in retreat, disappearing into the distance.

At this point, all these Blood Red Hell powerhouses dared not act. After all, the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor had his reputation there, and his power could not be underestimated at all. It took all of them joining forces to barely suppress him. Even if it was Meng Gui, he was only at the Mid Level Heavenly Emperor stage. If he were to fight alone against Long Shiya, he would not even last five minutes.

The Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor was famous for his sustained combat capabilities. After all, no matter what, having six Elemental Attributes alone was not something ordinary Heavenly

Jewel Masters could compare with. The reputation of being the first below the Heavenly God stage was not given for nothing. Even any ordinary three or four Heavenly Emperors would not be a match for him, and the only reason he was being suppressed now was because of the Destruction Attribute.

“Everyone, be careful.” Meng Gui shouted out loud. The relaxed expression on his face had vanished, and his heart was filled with worry and hesitation.

The Heavenly King powerhouse who had been ambushed had now disappeared, vanishing into the depths of the Heavenly Bow City.

Meng Gui’s hesitation was because he was wondering if they should launch their attacks against Long Shiya now, instead of just continuing this stalemate. The reason why he had originally chosen this method of continuous pressure on him was to ensure their losses would be at the minimum. Otherwise, if Long Shiya was allowed any small chance to counterattack, they would have to pay a heavy price. This was especially so for him, as he would be the first target of Long Shiya.

With the constant suppression method using the Destruction Attribute, as long as they didn’t take action, if Long Shiya was the first to attack, he would only be led along by them, falling deeper and deeper under the pressure of their auras. Eventually, his energy expenditure would be far more than theirs, and in the end he would have no chance of any comebacks.

Alas, who could have known that such a sudden ambush would appear just like that, instantly lowering the pressure on Long Shiya, increasing the time this Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor could hold out. Of course, if they continued with their method, they could still pressure him for the final result, besides taking a longer time. However, none of them knew how powerful this hidden enemy was, and he was still lurking about.

However, no matter how Meng Gui thought about it, he could not understand how the Heavenly Bow Empire had another powerhouse like that. Duan Lingtian was a powerhouse in his own right, but he was still just a Heavenly King. He did not have the strength to grab a powerhouse of the same level without alerting any of them! To be able to sneak behind a Heavenly King without being detected, even an ordinary Heavenly Emperor might not be able to do so.

A mocking look flashed across Long Shiya's face. In truth, a large portion of the surprise and nervousness was all acting on his part. Naturally, these enemies in front of him were powerful, but he had purposely stepped right into this trap. Without this huge 'magnet for trouble' that he was playing, it would be extremely troublesome to finish off all of these enemies. However, in the current situation... would these fellows dare to lax off in their suppression of him?

Right at this moment, another Heavenly King powerhouse on the other side also gave a muffled grunt, as his body flew back.

In that moment, Meng Gui's expression changed greatly. Without hesitation, he gave the order. "Attack!"

The powerful Destruction Attribute suppression instantly turned into actual attacks. The greyish light mixed with intense flames burst forth from all four Heavenly Kings. At the same time, constantly glows of Consolidated Equipment appearing around their bodies appeared, as they began to unleash their full power.

In that instant, Meng Gui had already made the judgement. If the first Heavenly King being ambushed successfully could be explained away as them being careless, then the second Heavenly King being ambushed successfully was not just so simple as that. This hidden enemy was definitely extremely powerful. If they continued on like this, although their numbers were superior, but facing these powerful enemies on the front and back, it would be difficult to say who would be the final victor. Their best choice

now was to finish off Long Shiya as quickly as possible before hunting down the hidden enemy.

At the same time as the four Blood Red Hell Heavenly Kings launched their attacks, Meng Gui disappeared in a flash, appearing right in front of Long Shiya. Covered with pitch black light, his hands were each covered with a Consolidated Equipment, a two chi long devil claw spike.

This devil claw spike was specially designed to break all kinds of protective Heavenly Energies. Added on to the berserk Destruction Attribute, this charge of his caused the air itself to be shredded, leaving a long black hole in his wake. Without question, he had also used his strongest attack.

With the prior suppression of the Destruction Attribute aiding them, this joined attack of theirs was indeed extremely powerful. As long as this could injure Long Shiya severely, the following fight would be much easier. Meng Gui even had the confidence of killing Long Shiya on his own if that happened. When that happened, he could dispatch the four Heavenly Kings to surround them to defend against that hidden enemy, who they could turn their full attentions to after killing off Long Shiya. That would be a perfect victory.

Alas, many times, the progression of events would never be the same as some people's expectations.

A Heavenly Emperor and four Heavenly Kings, with the same Attribute stacked multiplicatively, attacking simultaneously. Their offensive power was undoubtedly overpowering, but could they really critically injure Long Shiya? In the next moment, the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor gave them the answer.

When his enemies were making their move, naturally Long Shiya also made his own. His hands gave a light circle at the sides of his body. The six-coloured lights actually withdrew back two metres, before bursting forth once more.

This time, when the six lights burst forth explosively, six illusory figures actually appeared around Long Shiya's body.

The six illusory figures looked just like him, but with the colour representation. A red figure representing the Fire Attribute, green for Wind Attribute, blue for Water Attribute, yellow for Earth Attribute, gold for Light Attribute, and black for the Darkness Attribute.

Chapter 264: Awe-inspiring Demonic Attribute (2)

The six different-coloured Long Shiyas appeared at once, making the same action simultaneously. Almost instantaneously, the Blood Red Hell powerhouses felt as if they were facing six Heavenly Emperors at once.

A massive explosion. Five figures flew in all directions. Long Shiya had used his own strength to send the five Blood Red Hell powerhouses flying back, while he remained standing in his original position leisurely. Of course, the six illusory figures vanished as well, 'sacrificed' to accomplish this major victory.

Pursing his lips, Long Shiya did not chase forward. "What bullshit Destruction Attribute, it isn't much after all."

"That's not possible!" As Meng Gui was sent flying back, he couldn't help but cry out in shock. Out of the six illusory figures that Long Shiya had summoned, two of them were used to take care of him, the Light and Water Attribute figures. Their powerful offensive strength seemed no lesser than Long Shiya himself, able to deal a single strike of his full power. As such, even though Meng Gui had attacked with his full power, boosted by the Destruction Attribute as he was, he had still been sent flying back, his vital energy and blood roiling within his body. More importantly, Meng Gui was not able to understand as Long Shiya's attacks seemed to contain a strange energy and aura which was actually able to scatter his own Destruction Attribute, not allowing it to come into full effect.

Long Shiya laughed heartily, saying: "Little Meng Gui, in this world, there is no such thing as impossible. It is merely you being short sighted. What bullshit is this Destruction Attribute; in front of the Saint Attributes, it is still nothing."

In truth, to be able to accept such a blow, it was not fully

dependent on his own strength. Long Shiya was indeed of higher cultivation level, and his power was definitely considerable, especially with his six Attributes fusion, he did not really need to be too afraid of the Destruction Attribute. After all, once he fused his own six natural elemental attributes, even the four Saint Attributes could not suppress him. Moreover, Zhou Weiqing had infused his body with the true Astral Saint Energy. With its support, one could just imagine the sheer power that Long Shiya had just unleashed. In front of the Saint Energy, how could the Destruction Attribute release its full power?

As such, even though the exchange was over in a split second, Long Shiya had been able to resolve the situation of being surrounded.

Meng Gui's plan had not been a bad one. Alas, he was facing up against Zhou Weiqing, this young but cunning fellow, and there was too much of a gap between them. After all, Zhou Weiqing had been playing around with such plots and schemes for such a long time.

All of this was fully under Zhou Weiqing's calculations. Meng Gui could have never imagined that two hours ago, Zhou Weiqing had already arrived, fully scouting out the place. With the power of his Astral Saint Core Nucleus, even a Heavenly Emperor like Meng Gui was unable to detect his presence.

After gaining full knowledge of his enemies position and plans, how could Zhou Weiqing leave them with the slightest chance?

Just as Meng Gui exclaimed out in surprise, out of the four Heavenly Kings who had been sent flying, another vanished once more.

The situation here was just too strange. All the other three Blood Red Hell Heavenly Kings' expressions changed once more. They no longer cared about attacking Long Shiya, gathering together instantly, back to back, scanning the surroundings warily.

Long Shiya flew in mid air, arms crossed, eyes filled with pride. That pride was not targeted at himself, but his precious disciple.

In just a short period of time, the one who had silently finished off three Heavenly Kings... without question, it was Zhou Weiqing!

Although Zhou Weiqing was only at the Heavenly King stage, with his Astral Saint Core Nucleus and his massive number of boosts, he could even clash against a Heavenly Emperor powerhouse. Originally, when he had defeated his father-in-law in the Heaven's Expanse Palace, although that was with some trickeries, most of the entire process was actually real. These Heavenly Kings were facing immense pressure from Long Shiya and were thus quite preoccupied, and thus his ambushes were easily successful.

Rays of dark gold light lit up in the darkness, and in the glow of the dark gold, a figure appeared slowly in the dark, wings spread behind his back.

With no more chances left to sneak attack, Zhou Weiqing did not attempt to hide himself any longer, revealing his presence at once.

Currently, his entire body was covered with a powerful looking armour, even his legs. It was his 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set.

Before coming here today, he had already finished Consolidating the last few pieces of his 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set, successfully reaching nine pieces, with just a single piece left to complete the entire Set.

When he released the 'Hate Ground no Handle' set, the light around his body seemed to warp, a terrifying energy reverberation swirling through the air. The only thing he lacked now was a helmet.

Around his Dual Legendary Hammers, the dark gold light flickered, the 'crying-face' and 'smiling-face' symbols shimmering

as they exchanged places at lightning speed. The strangest thing was that his chest area was actually glowing, the light brightening and darkening in a rhythmic pulse, as if it was displaying his heartbeat for all to see.

“Who are you?!” Meng Gui exclaimed in shock and anger. He could not tell what Zhou Weiqing’s cultivation level was, but looking at this seemingly young man in front of him nearly fully fitted out in a Legendary Set, it looked like his cultivation was not that far from Long Shiya! More importantly, that soundless and stirless attacks were just too terrifying. Just that ability to remain hidden, even the strongest assassin in the world could not compare to him!

Zhou Weiqing whirled the Dual Legendary Hammers in his hands, each drawing a dazzling triangle in the air. The two triangles superimposed on each other, forming the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation. At the same time, his ten Heavenly Jewels appeared into the formation.

Although the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation was slightly different from the Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation, the important essentials were similar. In a single glance, anyone could see that his connection with Long Shiya was definitely close.

“This is my precious disciple. Well, how is it, I bet you never imagined this right. A Heavenly King before the age of twenty three. Does your Blood Red Hell have anyone like this? Hahahaha.” Even at this point, Long Shiya did not forget to brag about his precious disciple. In truth, if it was anyone else who had a disciple like Zhou Weiqing, who wouldn’t be proud and brag about it?

“You are Zhou Weiqing?!” Meng Gui stared at Zhou Weiqing with a surprised and doubtful look. He had heard this name many times, mostly regarding his display in the Heavenly Jewel Tournament. Originally, Zhou Weiqing had been at a mere three-Jeweled stage when he first defeated Shen Little Demon, who had been at the six-Jeweled stage at that time, even leading the Fei Li

Empire into gaining their first championship of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament. More so, one year ago, he had once again joined the Heavenly Jewel Tournament and defeated the brothers Tian Feng and Tian Ma. It had to be known, in the Blood Red Hell, even though Meng Gui was a Heavenly Emperor, his actual status was still lower than the two brothers. They were after all the future heirs to the Blood Red Hell.

Meng Gui also knew the reason why the Heavenly Bow Empire could even have a chance of revival was all because of this young man. However, he had never dreamed that in just a year, the originally seven-Jeweled Zhou Weiqing would actually appear in front of him as a Heavenly King. Such a cultivation speed, wasn't it just too terrifying? Even though the current Blood Red Hell could be considered experts in grooming powerhouses, they could not possibly bring up a Heavenly King in such a short period of time!

The brilliant light in Zhou Weiqing's eyes flickered as he looked coldly at those powerhouses in front of him. Currently, he had entered a different state. The casual beautiful feeling he had when returning with Shangguan Bing'er had vanished, replaced with a billowing monstrous demonic aura. His entire body was filled with a demonic look.

It was no wonder he was acting like this. These Blood Red Hell powerhouses in front of him wanted to deal with his home, his family! When he had first reached the palace and saw it covered with the Fate Denying Seal, his heart was aching so much that he almost couldn't breathe. It was these bastards from the Bai Da Empire, Kalise Empire... they had invaded and destroyed his homeland, leaving his father with no choice but to use this near-suicidal method to protect the last Royal Family bloodlines. As such, against these enemies, how could he possibly show any mercy?

The first three Blood Red Hell Heavenly Kings had already been drained dry to death earlier. He had even Devoured the Heavenly

God Tier Terror Sea Dragon previously, and he would naturally help himself easily on these mere Heavenly Kings. With the Astral Saint Core Nucleus, his Devour Skill had reached another level totally. Let alone Heavenly Kings, even if he was fighting against a Heavenly Emperor, he could still affect him to a certain degree with the Devour Skill.

In truth, when Zhou Weiqing had completed his Astral Saint Core Nucleus, he had already become an existence that could challenge the heavens. The greatest mistake of the Blood Red Hell was that they shouldn't have given him the time and chance to grow at all. When he was below the Heavenly King stage, although Zhou Weiqing was still disgustingly monstrous, he was just much stronger than those of the same level, but there was still a limit. Alas, once he had broken through to the Heavenly King stage, fully grasping the Heavenly Dao Energy, even a Heavenly God Tier powerhouse would find it difficult to actually kill him off.

After a short period of shock, Meng Gui slowly calmed down. Although he did not know what methods Zhou Weiqing had used to ambush his subordinates, when he saw that Zhou Weiqing was still at the Heavenly King stage, he gave a secret sigh of relief. If there were two Heavenly Emperors here, they would definitely have no chance at all. However, since Zhou Weiqing was only a Heavenly King, it would be a relatively easier problem to solve.

“So what if both of you master and disciple have six Attributes? We have four people here. Even if the three of them can't defeat you two, they can still hold you off for a short time. If you know what's best for you, you better retreat now. Otherwise, this Fate Denying Seal will just take me a second to destroy. Once that happens, there won't be anyone left alive inside.”

When Meng Gui spoke those words, he had joined up with his other three companions. Destroying was always easier than creating, and what he said was indeed true. As long as he was given some time, and he was willing to pay the price, he could easily

destroy the Fate Denying Seal below them now. After which, any simple Skill of his would be able to wipe out all those within the Seal. After all, being in the Fate Denying Seal for so long, those inside would be extremely weak. This was especially so for Zhou Weiqing's father, Admiral Zhou. It was close to certain that if the Seal was broken, he would instantly lose his life. After all, the Seal was built upon and dependant on his life force to maintain.

Zhou Weiqing walked slowly to the front in midair, as if there were actual steps in the air. His face looked calm, but every step he took caused the grey swirls of air around his body to thicken. The powerful demonic aura around him caused even the Blood Red Hell members' Destructive Attribute aura to tremble.

How could this be possible? He is just a Heavenly King, why is his aura so terrifying? Including Meng Gui, this was the current thought in all of the Blood Red Hell powerhouses.

"Master, leave these guys to me." Zhou Weiqing said passively. However, his words were resolute. At this moment, his emotions had reached a unique state. There were only the enemies in his eyes, and he needed to vent. Indeed, the flames burning in his heart needed a place to vent out!

"Little Fatty, don't be rash." Long Shiya said solemnly.

Chapter 264: Awe-inspiring Demonic Attribute (3)

Zhou Weiqing shook his head, back still to Long Shiya as he said: “Master, do not worry. I am not being rash, but I will not give these fellows any chances. I will not allow my family to be hurt. The rest, please, I will depend on you.”

Long Shiya looked at Zhou Weiqing’s tall and stalwart back, and he sighed inwardly. This child, he is no longer the young man that had just become his disciple those years ago! The playful exterior he usually had on could no longer hide the steady, profound and overpowering nature he had. Of course, this was a good thing for him. He had already grown up. It looked like after this matter, he will no longer need my protection. From today onwards, in the Heavenly Jewel Master, there will definitely be a place for him.

“Alright then, you be careful.” Long Shiya did not try to persuade him further. This was a battlefield, and he chose to place absolute trust in him.

Indeed. Absolute trust. This was the best recognition and approval he could give to Zhou Weiqing’s power.

The terrifying energy reverberations burst forth from Zhou Weiqing instantly, such a terrifying explosiveness that caused the entire area to turn grey.

Ming Gui was given a shock. “Is that little brat actually trying to face the four of us by himself?”

On the other side, Long Shiya’s six-coloured lights spread forth again; this time they enveloped the entire palace hall. Without question, the master disciple pair had chosen to divide up the work. Long Shiya would ensure the Fate Denying Seal was not disturbed or broken, and the four Blood Red Hell powerhouses would be the targets of Zhou Weiqing’s attack.

Zhou Weiqing raised his Dual Legendary Hammers in hands, both glowing with various different coloured lights. The left hammer was glowing black, while the right was a purplish red. In the next instant, two giant figures appeared at each side of him as he waved his hammers. It was the Hell's Angel and the Demonic Dragon Lady.

This is? Heavenly Skill Image? But... how could one summon two Heavenly Skill Images at once... and they looked so real too?

Zhou Weiqing had only just begun his move, and the abilities he displayed were already beyond their knowledge.

A terrifying dark purple light and dark red light both started glowing at once. The Hell's Angel and the Demonic Dragon Lady were both summoned by Zhou Weiqing, and the order he gave them was simple: Attack. Balls of dark purple light were sent flying towards all the Blood Red Hell powerhouses. At the same time, the Demonic Dragon Lady began flashing with purplish red light, sending Dragon Silencing Seals shooting forth one after the other. From appearance, she was just like that Terror Sea Dragon, her body full of spikes.

This attacking style of the Demonic Dragon Lady was indeed what Zhou Weiqing had learned in his fight against the Terror Sea Dragon. Of course, he did not have the Water Attribute, and was unable to Store Skills from the Terror Sea Dragon. However, he was still able to learn from its attacking styles.

This type of attacking style was undoubtedly extremely energy consuming. However, do not forget, he had just Devoured three Heavenly Kings dry of all their Heavenly Energy. Furthermore, the current Zhou Weiqing, would he actually be afraid of expending too much energy?

The three Blood Red Hell Heavenly Kings instantly raised their defense, as Heavenly Skill Images also lit up around them.

The Dragon Silencing Seal was an absolute-effect type Skill, but

the precondition was that it actually had to hit its target. The three Blood Red Hell Heavenly Kings were by no means weak, and they had their own powerful Skills as well, especially with the Destruction Attribute. Facing the abrupt explosive attacks from Zhou Weiqing, they naturally blocked it in an instant. After all, the Hell's Angel and the Demonic Dragon Lady were just summonings, not true existences.

In that moment, Meng Gui melded into the darkness. In truth, no one knew that Meng Gui was the real top assassin in the world. However, he had attained that rank fifty years ago, and after reaching the Heavenly Emperor stage, he had retired from the assassin world. However, his current level was naturally far more dangerous than he had been then.

Meng Gui did not have the Spatial Attribute, nor did he have any Skills like the Blink Skill. However, hidden in the darkness, his ability to conceal his aura was no weaker than Zhou Weiqing.

In midair, Zhou Weiqing suddenly took a step to the left. As his body flickered, the pitch black devil claw spike swiped across the space he had just been. Where it passed, the air was split apart instantly. If Zhou Weiqing had still been there, even with his Legendary Set and the protection of the Immortal Deity Shield, he might still have sustained a severe injury.

As his body moved, the 'crying-face' hammer in his hand did not hesitate to smash outwards at Meng Gui's hands.

Meng Gui did not dodge at all. His fingers spread wide, and the devil claw spike actually twisted around to grab towards the incoming hammer.

Meng Gui was after all a Heavenly Emperor powerhouse, and any Heavenly Emperor would have absolute confidence in themselves. When Zhou Weiqing said he would deal with the Blood Red Hell powerhouses by himself, he had almost blown his top. What did this little brat treat him as?! No matter how talented and

outstanding he was, he was still just a mere Heavenly King. Yet, he dared to brag about taking down all four of them?!

Indeed, the two summons of the Hell's Angel and the Demonic Dragon Lady by Zhou Weiqing had given him a shock, but that did not mean Meng Gui would feel Zhou Weiqing was stronger than him. As such, he did not even bother dodging, wanting to use his own Skills in a hard direct clash to defeat Zhou Weiqing.

Meng Gui's Consolidated Equipment were all pitch black, barely entering the realm of the 'Legendary Set'. This was an eight-piece set, amongst which two were the devil claw spikes in each hand respectively. He had always been an offense orientated Heavenly Jewel Master.

A earsplitting explosion, as the devil claw spike clashed with the 'crying-face' hammer. In the next instant, a look of utter disbelief crossed Meng Gui's face.

His body curled up into a ball, flying back at lightning speed as if he had become a large black cannonball. He had actually been sent flying back by the impact of Zhou Weiqing's hammer!

What was Zhou Weiqing wielding... the Legendary Dual God Strength Hammers! As his 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set had already reached nine pieces, what kind of boost to his strength did that give? His physical strength had already reached a truly terrifying state. Let alone Meng Gui, even Long Shiya with his full 'Hate Sky no Handle' Legendary Set... in terms of just pure physical strength, he might not be comparable to Zhou Weiqing. Even an ordinary Heavenly God powerhouse, perhaps if he was clashing directly in terms of strength with Zhou Weiqing, he might be disadvantaged!

This time, Meng Gui had definitely taken a huge disadvantage. Furthermore, on the crying-face hammer of Zhou Weiqing's, there was an extremely powerful suction 'Devour' power. In just the short moment where they had clashed, it had already drained a

substantial mass of energy from Meng Gui.

Meng Gui gritted his teeth against the violent pain, forcing himself not to cry out. When he realised he had lost the clash, he changed strike to a push, using Zhou Weiqing's power to fly back as best he could, trying to shift as much of the power from landing on his own body. However, Zhou Weiqing's strength was just too terrifying, at least several hundred thousand jin in power. That hammer blow, no matter how high Meng Gui's cultivation was, even if he used the Darkness Attribute energies in the atmosphere to protect himself, he was still at a massive disadvantage.

The right devil claw spike had actually been shattered, along with his right arm. That was the price Meng Gui had to pay to prevent the power from smashing his body. His entire right arm was vaporized into a blood mist explosively before he managed to shunt away the rest of the power from Zhou Weiqing's strike.

Zhou Weiqing's full power, could it be as simple as just the surface Heavenly King stage he showed?

Sending Meng Gui flying with a single hammer blow, Zhou Weiqing's expression did not change at all, as if he had already guessed the result of this exchange. The dual hammers in his hands swung around, and a massive grey figure slowly appeared behind his back.

The three Blood Red Hell Heavenly Kings were indeed powerful; in the short time that Zhou Weiqing and Meng Gui had exchanged blows, they had already destroyed the Hell's Angel, and had also forced the Demonic Dragon Lady back in a retreat. Once they could destroy the Demonic Dragon Lady, they would be able to join hands with Meng Gui and kill off Zhou Weiqing.

Alas, Zhou Weiqing did not give them such a chance. When the horrifying demonic attribute aura burst forth once more, the Demonic Dragon Lady's entire body seemed to grow stronger, her own power and influence strengthening dramatically. An

unparalleled, dazzling purplish red light shone forth in a single direction in a large and indiscriminate attack.

The Demonic Dragon Lady had actually chosen to self detonate when her aura had reached the strongest point. Self detonation could also be a type of attacking method, and she was able to use her self detonation to boost all of her powers. Naturally, the Demonic Dragon Lady's greatest power was without a doubt her Dragon Silencing Seal.

When Zhou Weiqing's cultivation had raised to the Heavenly King stage, the Dragon Silencing Seal could already undergo area of effect attacks. Currently, with the boost of the Demon God that Zhou Weiqing had summoned, the power of the Dragon Silencing Seal was once again heavily boosted, especially with the boost of the self-detonation, it had already reached an unbelievable state. Although the three Blood Red Hell Heavenly Kings their own powerful defenses, in that instant, none of them could escape the fate of being struck by the Dragon Silencing Seal.

In that instant, all three of the Heavenly Kings were stripped of their Consolidated Equipment, their Stored Skills also Sealed from their use. Such an abrupt and surprising change caught them off guard, causing them to start momentarily.

In the same moment that the Demonic Dragon Lady self detonated, Zhou Weiqing's body also vanished. The Blink Skill.

The next second, the three Blood Red Hell Heavenly Kings felt as if the space around their bodies collapsing. Soon, one after the other, Control Skills began to land on them. Even with their cultivation levels, without their Consolidated Equipment or Stored Skills, how could they possibly break free of Zhou Weiqing's Control Skills, boosted by his Astral Saint Core Nucleus as they were.

Chapter 265: Astral Feedback (1)

On the other side, Meng Gui had already recovered from the temporary debilitating pain. A Heavenly Emperor was after all a Heavenly Emperor, and he was able to forcefully suppress his injuries, sealing his blood flow. However, when he looked at Zhou Weiqing once more, at the three companions that he had placed his hopes in to hold the youth off... he could only see several hundred bright three-coloured lightning pearls covering those three 'naked pigs'[1. TJSS is referring to how they have been stripped of all their Equipment and powers].

A dark gold figure appeared once more in front of Meng Gui. Zhou Weiqing's gaze was unbelievably cold, and in the same instant as he appeared, a massive explosion sounded at the other side.

There weren't even screams, and the three Heavenly Kings had been vaporized into nothingness.

Witnessing the sight before him, a chill ran down Meng Gui's spine. If one were to describe his previous feelings regarding Zhou Weiqing's arrogance as anger, now... there was only horror and terror left in his heart.

The display of power Zhou Weiqing had shown was just too great... reaching a level that he could not even imagine. Was this really something a young man barely over the age of twenty could pull off? Meng Gui felt as if he would rather face the familiar Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor, Long Shiya, rather than this demonic youth in front of him.

"It's your turn." The wings behind Zhou Weiqing's back spread, the giant grey figure behind his back suddenly rushing and merging into his body. Next, a demonic aura that was so powerful that it rose into the skies burst forth, turning Zhou Weiqing's entire body grey.

Currently, Zhou Weiqing was like a massive grey whirlpool, a terrifying suction force warping the air, Devouring all of the atmospheric energies around, leaving Meng Gui with nothing to draw on. At the same time, it also sealed off all his possible escape routes.

Without any atmospheric energies to rely on, even if he was a Heavenly Emperor, Meng Gui could not depend on his physical speed alone to escape Zhou Weiqing's pursuit. All he could do now was to fight it out with Zhou Weiqing, to the death.

Looking at Zhou Weiqing, Meng Gui's face was pale and ashen. Ever since he had reached the Heavenly Emperor stage, this was the first time he had been forced into such a wretched and miserable state. He had never imagined he would ever fall to such a youthful foe.

Although Zhou Weiqing was only a Heavenly King, the aura he was emitting was already fully suppressing Meng Gui totally, causing him to be unable to unleash his full power. Furthermore, when one reached the Heavenly Emperor stage, their body was already fused with their spirit and soul to form a powerful weapon. Now that Zhou Weiqing had taken off an arm from Meng Gui, it could be said to have broken his primordial qi and base power. Meng Gui was now only able to use around seventy percent of his normal power. In the current situation, it would be difficult for him to actually defeat Zhou Weiqing.

However, Meng Gui quick recovered, displaying a psyche that none of the other Blood Red Hell Heavenly Kings could compare to. Facing Zhou Weiqing's immense pressure, he slowly calmed down.

“Young man, don't go too far. You have won today, but if you want to try to leave this old man here, you better be prepared to pay a hefty price.”

Meng Gui said in a bitter, sinister manner. The calm expression

on his face was a stark contrast to the increasingly crazed frenzy in his eyes.

“Ohh?” Zhou Weiqing revealed an interested expression on his face. “I am rather interested... what kind of price would I have to pay to leave you here?” At this point, he did not seem to be in a rush to take action against Meng Gui.

Meng Gui said coldly: “This Heavenly Emperor is still a Heavenly Emperor after all. At this stage, our Heavenly Core Nucleus would undergo a qualitative change. Regarding this, you can ask Fatty Long. If I self-detonate my Heavenly Emperor Core Nucleus, perhaps you and Fatty Long can escape without any issues, but this entire city will definitely be destroyed. Not just the citizens, even your family and the Heavenly Bow Royal Family will also go up in smoke.”

Zhou Weiqing’s expression changed, as he took an involuntary step back, looking at his Master hovering in midair.

Long Shiya nodded towards Zhou Weiqing. This Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor had not fully recovered from his sheer shock. He had been watching the entire process of Zhou Weiqing dealing with all the Blood Red Hell powerhouses, and the shock in his heart was already at the maximum. These were all Heavenly Kings with the Destruction Attribute! With the three of them joining forces, Long Shiya had to admit to himself that even if he wanted to take care of those fellows, it would take him some time. Furthermore, there was still that Heavenly Emperor Meng Gui at the side. However, Zhou Weiqing had forcefully used his own power to kill three enemies, with Meng Gui injured. Of course, some part of Meng Gui’s injuries could be attributed to his own mistakes and underestimation of Zhou Weiqing, but in the end this young disciple of his had to have the power to back it up and actually make use of those mistakes.

The both had nine pieces of Legendary Set Equipment boosting their strength, but Long Shiya did not think he could compare

with Zhou Weiqing's physical strength any longer. Although his base cultivation was still higher than Zhou Weiqing by an entire Jewel, just in terms of physical strength he was no match for him. The Dragon-Tiger Transformation that held the two imposing bloodlines... this was something that Long Shiya could not match, let alone the existence of the Saint Energy.

His precious disciple had already reached such a power level. Long Shiya did not even dare guarantee that in a one versus one fight, he could actually defeat Zhou Weiqing. This was a mere year that they had been apart! This Little Fatty had already grown to such a degree. If he was given some more time, perhaps even the top powerhouse Xue AoTian would have to give up his seat as the strongest in the world right?

However, this was clearly not the time to ruminate over such matters. The Heavenly Emperor Meng Gui's words, Long Shiya had naturally heard them. Indeed, Meng Gui had not been lying. When one reached the Heavenly Emperor stage, their Heavenly Core Nucleus would undergo a qualitative transformation. If self-detonated, even Long Shiya would not dare to take it full on. Let alone this city below... one which the Heavenly Bow Empire could not afford to abandon and lose.

Getting the signal from his Master, Zhou Weiqing's ferocious demonic aura began to slowly withdraw slightly, and Meng Gui breathed a sigh of relief. Of course, he could choose to self-detonate; in that case the Heavenly Bow City would be destroyed, and it would be a heavy blow to the entire Heavenly Bow Empire. At the same time, that would achieve the target of blocking the Heavenly Bow Empire's path to the south. However, Meng Gui was also human, especially a top powerhouse like him, who would be willing to give up their life just to fulfil such a mission! Cultivating for over eighty years to reach the Heavenly Emperor stage; the higher level one has reached, the more they would treasure their lives. A Heavenly Emperor Heavenly Core Nucleus detonating was

far more destructive indeed, however as compared to a Heavenly King self-detonating, where they still had a small chance of survival, the Heavenly Emperor would definitely perish together with their Heavenly Core Nucleus.

As such, if it was not a matter of last resort, he would never make such a choice.

Zhou Weiqing's expression was rather ugly, and he gave a short sigh before saying: "It looks like I have no choice but to let you off today. However, if I let you go, my powers will be revealed to the Blood Red Hell. That will be far too detrimental to the future of the Heavenly Bow Empire."

Seeing that he had relented, Meng Gui's heart was overjoyed. Hastily, he said: "In this regard, you do not have to worry. I can swear on my Heavenly Core that I will never reveal the powers that you displayed today. I am willing to leave the Blood Red Hell and live in seclusion, hidden from them. I will no longer interfere in the matters of the Boundless Mainland."

Zhou Weiqing pursed his lips, his brow furrowed deeply. After some thought, he finally nodded solemnly, saying: "Alright. Swear your oath then."

Only then did Meng Gui finally heave a sigh of relief, knowing that his threat had finally succeeded, secretly he was thinking to himself: This little brat might be extremely powerful, but he is still too young and naive! Hastily, he said solemnly: "I, Meng Gui, swear upon my Heavenly Core Nucleus. Once I leave this place, I will leave the Blood Red Hell and resume my status as an independent cultivator. I will never reveal what happened today, if I break this oath... What are you doing?!"

As Meng Gui was speaking his oath, he suddenly saw Zhou Weiqing's chest light up without warning. Although there was no energy fluctuations, just the abrupt lighting up of his chest was just too strange.

It was a ball of light about the size of a human fist. Around the ball of light, circles of strange lights revolved around it, just like tentacles writhing around. At the same time, Zhou Weiqing whose entire body had been giving off the demonic aura... suddenly gained a weird aura and quality about him that Meng Gui had never seen before.

His skin turned a crystalline white, almost like pure jade, as his entire body seemed to become transparent, almost like a shining star in the skies, glowing dazzlingly.

Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly, pointing into the skies. “Look above.” As he said that, he lifted up his head.

Although he could see the strange changes in the light Zhou Weiqing was giving off, the suppression and ‘locking-on’ sensation had long vanished. As such, Meng Gui subconsciously followed Zhou Weiqing’s gaze above. Alas, as soon as he did so, he was given a such a fright that shook him to the soul.

In the pitch black skies, he did not know when but there were millions of shining, flickering stars. Wasn’t it a patch of brilliant stars? Yet, the form the stars took, it seemed exactly like the light glowing in front of Zhou Weiqing’s chest.

“You...” Even as he spoke that word, Meng Gui did not hesitate to circulate all his power, trying to hide into the shadows once more.

Unfortunately, it was too late.

Zhou Weiqing’s right hand pointed out in a single finger, and the light that seemed to have formed from the astral rivers appeared silently. Meng Gui did not have any chance to dodge before his entire body seized up, unable to move.

Just as his blood ran cold, rage returned to him and he was about to self-detonate his Heavenly Core Nucleus. Alas, he could only see the light at Zhou Weiqing’s chest abruptly glow resplendently. A ray of astral light fell perfectly on his chest, as if linking the two of

them through this ray of light.

His Heavenly Core stopped moving, and even Meng Gui's heartbeat seemed to become the same as Zhou Weiqing's.

Zhou Weiqing's head had not looked down at all, still staring into the sudden beautiful night sky. Passively, he said: "Every Heavenly Core Nucleus is like a star, and what I own is the core of the stars... an Astral Core. Your unformed star... in front of a Astral Core, how could it self-detonate? I will return it to the skies. Good bye, Heavenly Emperor Meng Gui." The brilliant illusory stars in the skies lit up in sudden blinding brilliance, as if merging with Zhou Weiqing as one. In the next instant, Meng Gui did not even have time to scream as he evaporated into thin air.

The powerful astral light caused Long Shiya to close his eyes, not daring to stare at it. The astral light did not give off any powerful aura, but the entire world's energies seemed to have vanished when this strange light appeared.

The Heavenly Emperor Meng Gui had vanished totally, leaving only his Heavenly Core Nucleus there hovering in the air, glowing in gold. As Zhou Weiqing lifted up a hand, it flew into his grasp.

Chapter 265: Astral Feedback (2)

Zhou Weiqing's eyes were glowing with that same strange light as he stared into the skies, silent. It was as if he had entered a state of unique comprehension.

He lifted his right hand, beckoning into the heavens. The six Heavenly Core Nucleus of the Heavenly Kings he had just slain flew in from different directions. The Dark Demon God Lightning had blown up the three Heavenly Kings, but their Heavenly Core Nucleus still remained. Six Heavenly Core Nucleus, warping into six rays of light, shooting into the skies towards the light, as if six stars rising into the heavens.

As the six stars soared up, from up above, six rays of faint gold astral light shone down upon Zhou Weiqing, staining his body, still wearing the dark gold 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set, with a brilliant gold astral light.

As Zhou Weiqing bathed in this astral light, in the distance, Long Shiya could sense the energies within his body growing rapidly. This could also be seen visually as the glow on his chest was growing brighter and purer.

Soon after, another gold light was released from Zhou Weiqing's hands. It was the Heavenly Emperor Meng Gui's Heavenly Core Nucleus. This time, the speed of the gold light rising was far faster than the previous six lights. It was almost as if in a gold flash, it had reached the heavens, and the corresponding astral light shone upon the Zhou Weiqing in the next instant.

This time, the gold light almost formed a pillar, with a half metre radius. Bathed in the astral light, Zhou Weiqing's body shuddered, and the aura he was emitting underwent a qualitative transformation.

Breakthrough... he had broken through just like that?!

Watching in shock, the fat on Long Shiya's face almost fell off in disbelief. Since when could Heavenly Jewel Masters breakthrough just like that? Speed aside... wasn't this entire process just too miraculous?!

How could he know that this was the true profound secrets of the Astral Saint Core Nucleus. Of course, this also had a strong connection to Zhou Weiqing's Devour Skill.

The Saint Energy held the Power of Creation. This was not as simple as humans creating something, but the greatest Power of Creation in the world. The entire world was constructed by this most purest and original of energies, and the stars in the skies were also formed from this.

What Zhou Weiqing had said was indeed true. Every Heavenly Core Nucleus had the potential to become a star in the skies, however this required a incomparably long process of evolution and development. These Heavenly King and Heavenly Emperors' Heavenly Core Nucleus were naturally not real stars, but they held the same attributes and auras as stars.

Zhou Weiqing's Astral Saint Core Nucleus was consolidated and formed from this core origin Saint Energy. The words Astral Core was not named for nothing. A Heavenly Core Nucleus was only the embryonic form of a star, but his Astral Core Nucleus was truly the core of the stars. Any true star had its own astral core!

As such, Zhou Weiqing's Astral Core Nucleus was at a far higher level than even any Heavenly God's Heavenly Core Nucleus.

Of course, with his current cultivation, he was far from being able to wield the full power of the Astral Saint Core Nucleus. Limited by his own cultivation, the Astral Saint Core Nucleus would be limited in terms of its evolving for now.

However, that would not stop him from borrowing the power of the Astral Saint Core Nucleus. What he had just done earlier was to use his Astral Saint Core Nucleus to activate the astral power of the

stars in the skies, causing echo and resonance to feedback back into itself. After that, when he released the energy of the six Heavenly Kings and one Heavenly Emperor Heavenly Core Nucleus, it was tantamount to sending this purest Astral energies into the skies, before gaining the resonant Astral power in return.

Perhaps the total power of this Astral power was far below that of the seven Heavenly Core Nucleus, but it was the purest Astral power without any impurities, able to be used directly and infused into his Astral Saint Core Nucleus. Added on to the fact that Zhou Weiqing had already Devoured such a large amount of Heavenly Energy just now, the two factors had combined to push him from the Mid Level Heavenly King stage to the High Level Heavenly King Stage. If the Devour Skill could be considered the top method of increasing one's cultivation in the human realm, then this Resonance Method of the Astral powers could be considered the top method in the realm of gods, one that defied the heavens!

When Zhou Weiqing had first consolidated his Astral Saint Core Nucleus, he had gained some of this understand. However, at that time it had not been too deep and profound. However, after this entire process, he was slowly beginning to grasp the true meaning and understand of the Astral powers and the Resonance method.

The final ending of the Heavenly Emperor Meng Gui could be said to be fully under Zhou Weiqing's calculations. With the Possession of the Demon God, Zhou Weiqing had sealed Meng Gui's senses towards the outside world. At that time, Long Shiya could actually clearly sense the atmospheric energies all around having a strange reverberation.

Zhou Weiqing had continued speaking with Meng Gui, and that was all to delay for time. For the current him to use the Astral powers, it actually required a rather long build up time. It was thus extremely difficult to use while in actual combat. Originally, when he had consolidated the tenth set of Heavenly Jewels, his tenth Elemental Jewel was already filled with Astral powers. In this case,

it was similar to the seventh Jewel, unable to Store any other Skills. However, it was the source of him being able to activate the Astral Resonance Method.

The final result had proved that Zhou Weiqing had succeeded. When the Astral powers were really activated by him, let alone the already injured Meng Gui; in such a situation, an uninjured Heavenly Emperor would not be able to withstand the power of the Astral powers, and even a Heavenly God might have to escape instead of taking it head on.

The greatest weakness of the Astral power was its extremely long build up time. Of course, that was also because of Zhou Weiqing's current cultivation, and at least currently it wasn't pragmatic in function.

"Master, please move back a little." Zhou Weiqing said respectfully to Long Shiya.

Currently, Long Shiya still felt as if this was all a dream. Subconsciously, he back off, opening the space above the palace hall.

Zhou Weiqing withdrew his 'Hate Ground no Handle' Set, his hands crossing in front of his chest. His entire body once again turned transparent, lighting up as the gentle astral light shone down from above slowly covering the Fate Denying Seal.

A miraculous sight occurred, under the effect of the Astral powers, the Fate Denying Seal was slowly breaking down and dissolving. Indeed, dissolving, just like ice meeting water, the speed of the dissolving was not too fast, but it was steady indeed.

At the same time, the diamond locket at Zhou Weiqing's chest was glowing with a brilliant silver light, bursting forth to land right down below, forming a giant formation.

Human figures after human figures began to slowly rise from the formation; slowly several thousand had appeared.

Zhou Weiqing's hand slashed downwards, and a ray of astral power swept through the large patch of figures. A young lady of absolute beauty, in a white dress, rose up into the air to hover by his side. It was Tian'er.

At this point, even as he was circulating the Astral powers with all his might, Zhou Weiqing's face revealed a nervousness. Looking at Tian'er, he nodded solemnly.

Those years ago, he had ran away from home with Shangguan Bing'er to join the Heavenly Bow Empire army. After that, he had entered the Heavenly Bow Unit, and then to the Fei Li Royal Family Military Academy. When he had led the Fei Li Battle Team to win the Heavenly Jewel Tournament championship, his first grand achievement in his life, he had suddenly learnt of the bad news of his homeland falling. To Zhou Weiqing, that blow had been just too huge.

However, he did not fall into despair. Instead, he braced himself and began working to revive the Heavenly Bow Empire. With his own hard work and power, he had brought the Heavenly Bow Empire back in a rise, to heights far beyond its original strength.

This day, this moment... he had finally returned. Returning to this beloved homeland that he had been away for too long. Returning to the skies above the Heavenly Bow City.

This was the time to undo the Seal. Once they reoccupied the Heavenly Bow City, it would also mean the final revival of the Heavenly Bow Empire had succeeded.

The three thousand figures below were naturally the finest warriors of the Heavenly Bow Empire, the elites of the Peerless Regiment. One thousand Heavenly Cavalry soldiers, two thousand Peerless Archers. After they had been teleported here, they began to find the most suitable position for themselves.

Within the Heavenly Bow City Royal Palace, there were no Kalise armies stationed. After all, the top powerhouses of the Blood Red

Hell were guarding it, and the aura of the Fate Denying Seal would have some detrimental effects on ordinary humans.

Currently, the Kalise Empire armies outside had already heard the commotion in the palace, but they did not launch any attacks as the powerhouses had been stationed there. As such, these three thousand men that Zhou Weiqing brought in were able to station themselves properly in the Royal Palace, ready to protect Zhou Weiqing while he spent all his efforts in saving his family.

With the illumination of the astral power, the Darkness brought by the Fate Denying Seal was slowly being eaten away. However, in the process, Zhou Weiqing's expression showed his constant emotional fluctuations.

As he continued breaking down the Fate Denying Seal, he was able to sense the auras within the Seal. It was filled with despair, vexation, anger, killing intent, bloodlust... all sorts of negative emotions, even fear and terror. It was no wonder that even a Darkness Attribute Heavenly Emperor like Meng Gui did not dare to easily try to break down the Seal. Once he attempted doing so, these negative emotions would swell up and counterattack him at once. Even if he could withstand it, it would leave a mark on his soul, possibly causing future harm to his cultivation. This was the truly terrifying part of the Fate Denying Seal.

Of course, Zhou Weiqing would not be influenced by these negative emotions. Let alone the Astral powers he had summoned along with his Astral Saint Core Nucleus allowing him to be unafraid of the counterattack of the Fate Denying Seal, just his resolute willpower alone could withstand these negative emotions! This was his father's final move, and despite all of those external emotions, he could only feel a deep sorrow.

Chapter 265: Astral Feedback (3)

The darkness around the palace hall was diminishing, the light of the stars in the skies growing brighter. Tears began to stream down Zhou Weiqing's face involuntarily. Currently, he could clearly see the tall, large figure barely five metres from the front of the palace, hovering in midair.

The broad shoulders, the straight and proud stature, the pitch black armour, and that strong spirit that would never admit defeat. That was his father, the once-strongest powerhouse in the entire Heavenly Bow Empire. Admiral Zhou, who had been willing to give everything for his homeland, his country.

In the faint black shield of light, there were still many other people. Next, Zhou Weiqing saw his mother, Ling Zihan. She was not far from her father. He then saw his godfather, the Emperor of the Heavenly Bow Empire, Di Fengling. However, currently Di Fengling was in a position that left Zhou Weiqing in utter disbelief. He was actually kneeling down before his own father. At the same time, those kneeling down included Xiao Ru Se's father, the Prime Minister of the Empire, the Finance Minister Xiao Yun, and all the other upper echelons of the Heavenly Bow Empire. They were all kneeling down in front of his father in prayer.

The Astral power abruptly stopped its dissolving of the Seal. In a flash, Zhou Weiqing appeared in front of his frozen father.

Even when facing three Heavenly Kings and a Heavenly Emperor, Zhou Weiqing had been calm and unflurried. However, at this point, his entire body was trembling uncontrollably.

As soon as the darkness of the Fate Denying Seal approached his body, the Astral Saint Energy around him would automatically take care of it. His father was right in front of him, eyes still filled with unyielding determination. Abruptly, Zhou Weiqing opened his arms and embraced his father.

“Tian’er!”

A call rang out into the skies, filled with choking of sobs. In the next instant, the entire heavens and earth were filled with a brilliant, blinding gold light.

The instant Zhou Weiqing embraced his father, his Astral powers circulated at full strength. The darkness brought by the Fate Denying Seal had totally disappeared. In the next instant, the stars in the skies faded away, replaced by a massive gold illusory Angel.

Six wings flapping, a thick gold light mixed with silver-white Saint Energy descended from the skies. The palace hall which had been covered in the pitch black darkness for several years, filled with a dark gloomy aura, was now covered with a layer of Divine gold light.

The Divine energy reverberations flowed in the air, forming sparks of gold starlight spreading down to all those below, causing them to be covered with a layer of gold mist.

The Divine energy slowly fused into their bodies, slowly removing the Darkness Attribute energies in their bodies due to the Fate Denying Seal. The Saint Energy filled with the power of creation slowly nourishing and replenishing their bodies, reinvoking their life force.

There was only one exception. Admiral Zhou, who was still in Zhou Weiqing’s tight embrace.

Admiral Zhou’s Elemental Jewel was originally of the Darkness Attribute, and it had a certain aversion and repulsion towards the Divine Attribute. Furthermore, as the person who had actually cast the Fate Denying Seal, under normal circumstances, as soon as the Seal was broken, the others might still be alright, but he was supposed to definitely die. With Tian’er’s cultivation, she was still unable to save this father-in-law that she had seen for the first time.

If it had been Long Shiya, his cultivation would have been more than sufficient. Alas, his Attributes were even worse off. The Healing of the Light Attribute would be like poison to one with the Darkness Attribute, tantamount to accelerating his death. As for the Water Attribute, perhaps it might be able to extend Admiral Zhou's life for a while, but as for how long it would be tough to say. At least, Admiral Zhou would become a cripple.

As such, Zhou Weiqing definitely had to take action personally. With the Astral powers, there still remained a chance at least.

In that instant that he had protected his father, Zhou Weiqing had dispersed all of his other Attributes, leaving only the purest Astral Saint Energy which slowly and carefully infused into his father's broken down body, clearing out the negative energies from the Fate Denying Seal.

Currently, Admiral Zhou was like a building crudely made from wooden blocks, tilting precariously and on the verge of breaking down at anytime. At the same time, Zhou Weiqing's Astral Saint Energy was like a cover, tying the wooden blocks together and not allowing them to move about or change shapes, thus forcefully preventing the breakdown.

That was not all; the Astral Saint Energy continually infused into Admiral Zhou's body, this purest energy and Power of Creation helping him rebuild his body from ground up.

Indeed. It was rebuilding, not healing.

After Admiral Zhou had unleashed the Fate Denying Seal, his body could be said to have already begun breaking down. To be able to maintain this current state was because he was fully in the Seal. Now that the Seal had vanished, he was about to vanish from the world. The only reason Zhou Weiqing had the chance to rebuild his body was because Admiral Zhou's soul was still there for now.

Tian'er was still in the midst of releasing the Divine energies, but

she could clearly sense a massive amount of atmospheric energy welling towards Zhou Weiqing, even including her own energy she was releasing. At the same time, Zhou Weiqing's own Astral Saint Energy was being expended at an astonishing rate.

This was not a simple matter like 'creating' the Hell's Angel in energy form when unleashing his Skills. It could be said that Zhou Weiqing was currently building an entire new body for a soul!

Although it was with Admiral Zhou's original body as a base and blueprint, but this entire creation process was fully powered by his Astral Saint Energy alone. Only by doing this would he prevent leaving any terrible side effects behind. For his father's sake, how could Zhou Weiqing hold anything back just to conserve his power?

The three thousand Peerless Regiment elites had already found and stationed themselves in proper defensive spots. With the Royal Palace as their defensive 'fort', they would be defending externally.

That was not the only thing. As Tian'er had risen up so high in the skies, even the Heavenly Bow Empire armies in the distance could see her, let alone the Kalise Empire and Bai Da Empire troops.

The Divine Faith power that could compare with the Devour Skill was beginning to come into effect. In midair, Tian'er continued to transform the power of faith into the purest Divine Attribute energies, spreading it down to continue healing the Heavenly Bow Empire officials. At the same time, she was supporting the massive energy drain of Zhou Weiqing.

The three Shangguan Sisters were currently with the rest of the Peerless elites. However, the Kalise and Bai Da Empire soldiers did not seem to show any signs of wanting to attack. As such, they did not feel any pressure at present.

The order had actually been given previously by the Heavenly Emperor Meng Gui, that no matter how much activity there was in

the palace grounds, the ordinary soldiers were not to intervene. In truth, those who could cause a stir in the area had to be at least Heavenly Kings or higher, and ordinary soldiers attacking would only be marching to their senseless deaths. As such, his order was not wrong at all. Of course, that just meant the warriors that Zhou Weiqing had brought along could only relax.

Shangguan Xue'er nodded towards Shangguan Fei'er and said: "Give the signal."

Shangguan Fei'er nodded in agreement. Lifting her right hand, a ray of light shone into the skies. As it reached the highest point, it burst into brilliant fireworks. This was the signal they had agreed upon to show that the battle to rescue the Royal Palace had succeeded. As for how the rest of the army would undergo the siege, how the military forces were deployed, that was up to the Heavenly Bow God General Ming Yu!

Shangguan Xue'er looked up into the skies at Zhou Weiqing, who was fully focusing on saving his father, her expression slightly vacant.

It was not so long ago that his cultivation level was far below mine! Yet, now... he has already reached a degree that I can only look up to. A Heavenly King... several years younger than I am, but he has already become a Heavenly King... one which has the Saint Core Nucleus!

Shangguan Bing'er had already told Shangguan Xue'er regarding the bet between Zhou Weiqing and the brothers Shangguan Tianyang and Shangguan Tianyue.

When Shangguan Xue'er learned about how Zhou Weiqing had to face such pressure for a sake, actually winning such a fight, finally even succeeding in removing that burden of responsibility that had always weighed upon her shoulders... she couldn't help but stare blankly for several hours, stunned.

These few days, she had been avoiding Zhou Weiqing, not daring

to see him. Her emotions were in turmoil, and she did not know how to face him. Perhaps, there was some self blame. For the sake of the Heaven's Expanse Palace, she had once thought of giving up this love between them! Amongst the three Shangguan Sisters, her time together with Zhou Weiqing was the shortest, but that did not mean her feelings for him were any less than her two sisters.

On the contrary, since she had been training in isolation since a young age in the Heaven's Expanse Palace, it could be said that her heart was like white paper, blank, even naive. Now that Zhou Weiqing had left a trace on it, then, on that white paper, there was no longer any other space.

Zhou Weiqing had used all of his might to finally gain the chance to be with her. However, what had she done in the past? She had only been running all the time, accepting the fate that her father and uncle had given her. For the sake of that responsibility, she had thought of leaving him several times... but he had never given up on her.

All these complicated and contradictory feelings, even her sisters did not know about them. Perhaps only when she had thought through everything and straightened herself out would she be able to walk out from that guilt.

However, there was one point that Shangguan Xue'er no longer needed to be in a twist about; that was, she was no longer the heir to the Heaven's Expanse Palace. Now, she wanted to place all of her heart and mind on her man. Wherever he went, she would follow.

...

Outside the Heavenly Bow City, Ming Yu stared at the distant glow of the Divine Attribute light above the city, waiting silently.

At last, the giant fireworks spread in the air, and a smile crossed his face involuntarily.

It was not just him. All of the military officers, even all the

soldiers, burst out in deafening cheers. Even if they alerted the defending Kalise Army soldiers, they did not care at this point.

An hour ago, Ming Yu had given the order that the rescue operation was under way. At the same time, he had informed all of the military officers that once the fireworks signal was shown, it meant the rescue was a success. The officers had naturally passed down the information as well.

This was a little ploy by Ming Yu, exactly making use of this juncture of the Heavenly Bow Empire Royal Family being saved to raise the morale of the Heavenly Bow Empire armies to the maximum.

The exultant, loud cheers told him clearly that his plan had indeed succeeded.

“Move out.” Ming Yu waved his hand as he gave the order to attack.

The Heavenly Bow Empire armies moved out as one. They did not directly launch their attacks, instead spreading their formations as they passed through the Stars Forest, slowly advancing upon the Heavenly Bow City.

Chapter 266: Arise! Heavenly Bow Officials!

(1)

Seeing the brilliant holy light in the skies, although it was currently night, the morale of the Heavenly Bow Empire soldiers were at the max. This was especially so for those original soldiers of the old Heavenly Bow Empire. To them, they had waited for this day for too long, way too long.

Three thousand figures rose up silently into the night sky. Under cover of the darkness, they flew towards the Kalise and Bai Da army encampments surrounding the Heavenly Bow City.

Amongst the ten thousand Peerless Army elites, the Peerless Archers numbered five thousand. Zhou Weiqing had already brought away two thousand of them, and the remaining three thousand had now been gathered together by Ming Yu.

Ever since they returned to the Heavenly Bow Empire, the Peerless Archers' flying capabilities had never been displayed in the battlefield. The main reason was exactly because it was being saved to be the critical factor to defeat their enemies in this final battle.

Three thousand figures, hidden in the night skies, soon rose to around a thousand metres height. At this point, let alone it being night time, even if it was in the day, as long as they were not looking specifically for it, it would be extremely difficult to detect them.

Ming Yu's second order soon passed down. "First, Second, Third, Fourth and Fifth Power Archer Battalions, prepare! Peerless Heavy Cavalry, Snow Deer Cavalry, move out. First, Second Heavy Cavalry Regiments, advance."

Ming Yu had gained quite some inspiration from Zhou Weiqing, and towards the Heavenly Bow Empire armies, he had mainly

focused on true quality over quantity. Although in such a short period of time he could not possibly develop their forces to the same level as the Peerless Regiment, with the support of Zhou Weiqing's massive wealth and the resource support from the Fei Li Empire and ZhongTian Empire, it could be said that the current Heavenly Bow Empire armies were armed to the teeth.

The so-called Power Archer Battalions were not just simply equipped with normal longbows, but powerful, well-crafted Purple Dawn Bows.

Furthermore, each one of these archers were also prepared with a hand crossbow. As soon as they entered any fight, their hand crossbows would be prepared with a bolt. No matter if it was for self protection or offense, it would greatly improve these archers' overall combat prowess.

These archers were also armoured with leather; in a battlefield such defenses might not seem to amount to much, but if they were supported with Heavy Infantry soldiers and Cavalry soldiers, that was a different matter altogether.

In the Heavenly Bow Empire, the military branch that lacked the least was definitely archers... after all, it was the Heavenly Bow Empire! As such, out of the entire over dozen Regiments in the army, Ming Yu had specially chosen the finest five thousand to form the five Power Archer Battalions. Besides them, there were still five entire Regiments of Archers, numbering about a third of the entire army. Of course, the other formations of troops were also well trained elite warriors.

In the current Heavenly Bow Empire, there wasn't a true 'light-armoured' infantry, and they only had one type of infantry soldiers - Heavy Infantry. In fact, these Heavy Infantry soldiers were also outfitted with their own horses, to ensure their movement speed in the battlefield. Of course, their training was still different from the Heavy Cavalry soldiers, and their horses were not armoured.

As for light cavalry and heavy cavalry, that was Ming Yu's speciality after all. With the Peerless Regiment leading the others, the actual formation and training was not difficult at all. Of course, having steady and abundant supplies was of utmost importance, otherwise Ming Yu could not have possibly formed such a powerful army in such a short period of time.

The entire Heavenly Bow Empire armies had already made their move according to Ming Yu's arrangements, advancing along in neat formations. Although they were all currently excited and in high morales, none of them dared to charge forward foolishly and break ranks. This was the effect of military discipline.

In the air, the three thousand figures had already slowly reached their goal. Ming Yu had his head lifted as he constantly watched them.

The Kalise and Bai Da Empire armies had already long since been alerted by the commotion deep in the city. Their commander was no fool, and he knew that since the Heavenly Bow Empire Royal Palace seemed to have met with some problems, it was likely that the Heavenly Bow Empire armies would act soon. He had quickly roused all of his soldiers from their rest and organized them in their own formations.

Alas, in the end one side had been fully prepared, while the other was rushing to prepare. The difference was indeed clear. Furthermore, who else could have expected that the Heavenly Bow Empire armies would actually attack so swiftly. Their threat had been given for quite some time, and the Heavenly Bow Empire armies had remained quiet for so long. All of this had happened without any warning at all.

Abruptly, large patches of black, foul smelling objects fell from the skies. Soon after, the Kalise and Bai Da army encampment began to sound out with cries of agony.

The jarring sound of things shattering broke the silence of the

army camp.

“What is this thing! It smashed right into my tent!” Along with the shattering sounds came the accompanying exclamations.

“This smell... so pungent! Wait... why does it smell like oil? ... No good... Run!” This one was an intelligent fellow, at least he was able to distinguish what it was in moments.

Alas, even as the black, sticky substance was falling from the skies, a large patch of fire light lit up the skies.

Naturally, the Kalise and Bai Da forces had their own scouts, and if the Heavenly Bow Empire armies advanced too close, they would be quickly discovered. Alas, this sneak attack came from far above, and no matter how outstanding or well trained their scouts were, they could not possibly be keeping watch at the skies!

Three thousand fire arrows descended from the heavens. There was no need to aim at all, just shooting in the general direction of the oil containers they had thrown down.

Three thousand Peerless Regiment Archers, each of them had carried four oil containers into the skies, throwing them in a scattered way, specially looking for those tents or other objects that could possibly be flammable.

Such oil was already extremely flammable, and when those fire arrows shot down from above, within a few breaths the entire Kalise and Bai Da encampment was blazing in towering flames.

This was a camp of more than hundred thousands of troops! In the first place, the Stars Forest was not large, and these forces were all arranged to protect the Heavenly Bow City. As such, their camp was very tightly packed, with each tent squeezing several soldiers within.

The major blaze had arisen so explosively in such a short period of time, and the entire camp seemed to have caught fire at once. In such a moment, most of the soldiers had only just woken up and

received their orders, preparing to gather in their defensive formations. Alas, it was all too late.

It was inherent human nature to be afraid of death, and such a sudden huge blaze caused these soldiers who were still drowsy from sleep to go into panic. They weren't specially elite soldiers; the Bai Da Empire soldiers were still relatively better, but on the Kalise Empire side, they had fallen into absolute terror and panic. In a short time, the entire camp was filled with shouts and screams as trampling, burning... the entire camp had turned into disorderly chaos.

“Kill!” On the other side, Ming Yu's cold voice rang out. Soon after, the same order was passed down throughout the entire army.

These soldiers had been waiting for this day for just too long. For this day, Ming Yu had made so many preparations, coming up with at least three concrete, full plans. In order to accomplish this, he had sent the Peerless Air Force to scout the enemies from the air so many times.

As the saying goes, water and fire are merciless. This sudden fire attack had truly caught the Kalise and Bai Da forces by surprise. In the midst of the conflagration, how could they still have the morale and heart to fight? In such a circumstance, how could they possibly withstand the ferocious attacks of the highly spirited Heavenly Bow Empire armies?

The vanguard of the Heavenly Bow Empire armies had already reached the enemy scout positions. However, the scouts were currently dumbfounded. The camps behind them were all aflame, was there even a point sending news back now?

Some of the scouts went back, but even more actually chose to flee now. At least, they were still able to find routes of escape from their position.

The first to reach the front lines were naturally the Peerless

Heavy Cavalry.

Besides the one thousand Peerless Heavy Cavalry that Zhou Weiqing had brought along, there were still three thousand more Berserker Tribe and Gold Crow Tribe warriors that formed the Peerless Heavy Cavalry, as well as the five hundred Snow Deer Heavy Cavalry.

By now, the Snow Deer Tribe's equipment was no different from any of the other Heavy Cavalry troops, with only their mounts and weapons differing. The Snow Deer Tribe Heavy Cavalry mounts were naturally their powerful Snow Deer Heavenly Beasts, even stronger and larger than Ghost Demon Horses. As for their weapons, it was a sort of large and heavy deer antlers.

Chapter 266: Arise! Heavenly Bow Officials!

(2)

The Snow Deer Cavalry were considered the top three in the entire WanShou Empire, and one could just imagine their sheer strength. The Peerless Heavy Cavalry had competed with them before, and they actually needed two or more Peerless Heavy Cavalry soldiers to deal with a single Snow Deer Tribe Heavy Cavalry soldier. Perhaps, in terms of pure strength, both sides were pretty equal. However, in terms of Cavalry fighting techniques, the Snow Deer Heavy Cavalry soldiers were far stronger than the Peerless Cavalry soldiers.

Currently, these three thousand five hundred Heavy Cavalry soldiers were lined up in a single file formation, slowly advancing to the frontlines.

Between every two Heavy Cavalry soldiers, there was about five metres of space. This was not empty, as five Heavy Infantry soldiers filled the vacant space. Behind these Heavy Infantry soldiers, there would be five of the Power Archer Battalion archers.

The Kalise Empire armies were already in a mess, even as the Peerless armies slowly advanced as one. Let alone the Kalise armies, even the Bai Da armies would be hard pressed to form a proper defense against them. Even if it was under normal circumstances, facing such an elite troop like these Heavenly Bow Empire forces, could they even hold out?

From the distance, one could see large numbers of soldiers streaming out from the burning camp in a fluster. At this moment, a shrill cry rang out.

The Power Archer Battalions and the Peerless Archers above had begun the slaughter.

Land and air, the criss cross of arrows perfectly locked on to all

the enemy figures that could be seen, piercing them instantly.

The terror in the hearts of the Kalise and Bai Da soldiers was unimaginable. In this direct clash on the battlefield, Ming Yu had only sent nearly three Regiments of soldiers out. Of course, these three Regiments were the finest, most elite warriors of the entire Heavenly Bow Empire.

Besides them, all of the other light and heavy cavalry, and archers, had been split into two groups before they even moved out, taking a long route to flank the enemies.

They had all been prepared with mounts, and the Heavy Cavalry soldiers had even seized the opportunity last night to route around a long distance. Ming Yu's goal was clear; this battle, he did not just want a victory, he wanted a crushing victory, to kill off all the enemies.

In truth, as soon as the Kalise and Bai Da encampment went ablaze, there was pretty much no more suspense about the victory of this battle. The total army strength of the Kalise and Bai Da forces combined was around two hundred thousand, but they were now fully surrounded by the one hundred fifty thousand strong army of the Heavenly Bow Empire. The die was cast, and the outcome was already a foregone conclusion.

...

Inside the Heavenly Bow City. In front of the Royal Palace.

Bathed in the Divine energies, one by one the officials of the Heavenly Bow Empire slowly awoke from the deep sleep the Fate Denying Seal had placed them in.

The gentle warmth of the Divine energies were nourishing and enriching their bodies, causing to feel an indescribable comfort. When they opened their eyes, they were surprised to see that they were in a strange, gold and brilliant world. Due to the gold light being too powerful, they were not able to see what was outside

clearly at all.

The passage of time of these few years... to them it was just like the dream of nanke. In one instant, they had just seen Admiral Zhou using the Fate Denying Seal and sacrificing himself. In the next instant, they had just woken up so suddenly.

Di Lingfeng looked around, his gaze still rather confused. Seeing all his government officials there, still recovering, in that moment he was rather stunned, unable to speak.

His emotions were still at the point where Admiral Zhou was resolutely choosing to unleash the Fate Denying Seal. Sorrow and pain rose in his heart, and he muttered: "It's all my fault... this Emperor was just too useless. Admiral... Big Bro..."

Subconsciously, Di Lingfeng looked around in search for Admiral Zhou, but all he saw was the patch of gold all around.

Ling Zihan had also woken up at this point, looking in astonishment at the gold light surrounding them. "Could it be, we have already ascended to the heavens? This doesn't look like hell right? Shui Niu, Shui Niu, where are you?" The last few words, she was literally shouting out loud.

Thinking about how her husband had chosen to use the Fate Denying Seal to preserve the last strand of hope of the Heavenly Bow Empire, Ling Zihan's eyes welled up in tears.

"Sis-in-law, calm down first. The situation doesn't seem right!" Di Lingfeng quickly stepped forward to support Ling Zihan, who had almost fallen down in her haste to go look for Admiral Zhou.

Di Lingfeng was after all an Emperor, and he quickly calmed down far faster than any ordinary person. He had just pinched himself savagely, the pain telling him that they were still alive. Although they were surrounded by this brilliant golden glow, as he looked around, it was still his familiar palace hall!

Right at that moment, the surrounding gold light slowly faded,

revealing the pitch black night skies. The Heavenly Bow Empire officials involuntarily stared up into the skies, and the first thing that entered their eyes were a beautiful goddess in a white gown, hovering in midair. It was Tian'er.

Silver hair, purple eyes, glowing with gold light. Wasn't this a goddess descended from the heavens? Furthermore, that blinding gold light was retreating in her direction.

In that moment, all of the Heavenly Bow Empire officials couldn't help but stare, stunned.

Did she rescue us? Let alone the officials, even Di Lingfeng almost knelt down in obeisance upon sensing the thick divine aura from Tian'er.

At this moment, a vigorous booming voice rang out. "Do not kneel." In the air, six coloured lights appeared suddenly, and the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya appeared beside Tian'er, supporting her. Without her Skills active, Tian'er's current cultivation was not sufficient for her to fly.

It had to be known, the original Heavenly Bow Empire's strongest Heavenly Jewel Master was Admiral Zhou. Before using the Fate Denying Seal, his cultivation had only just broken through the nine-Jeweled stage. As such, the Heavenly Bow Empire officials had never seen a powerhouse flying on their own power. In that instant, they did not know if the current situation was good or not.

Di Lingfeng was still considered rather calm, his gaze quickly finding Admiral Zhou. However, currently Admiral Zhou was in someone's embrace, and they were both surrounded by brilliant astral light. This was clearly not something they could interfere in.

"May I please ask who Senior is?" Di Lingfeng asked respectfully towards Long Shiya.

The reason why Long Shiya asked them not to kneel was naturally because of Tian'er. If a father-in-law and mother-in-law

actually knelt down and paid obeisance to their daughter-in-law, wouldn't it cause an awkward situation in the future?

Long Shiya laughed heartily as he supported Tian'er down to the ground to land in front of them. "You all do not to be so anxious, there is nothing to worry about. I'm that little brat Zhou Weiqing's Master, and I'm here together with him to help him save the Heavenly Bow Empire."

Such a simple sentence from Long Shiya, but Di Lingfeng's entire body shook as he was totally stunned.

It was real... they were really here to rescue us?

Ling Zihan's eyes widened, as tears welled up. "Weiqing, my Little Fatty, where's my Little Fatty? Sir, where is Weiqing?"

Long Shiya pointed into the skies as he said: "There, isn't he right there? He is currently saving his father. You are Weiqing's mother right? You have given birth to an amazing son."

Long Shiya's age was more than enough for him to be Ling Zihan's grandfather, but due to his relationship with Zhou Weiqing, he treated her as one of the same generation. Of course, the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor had never really cared about such things.

All their gazes simultaneously turned to the glowing ball in the skies. Ling Zihan subconsciously gripped her fists, biting her lips. These were the two most important men in her life!

Right at this moment, three figures dashed over at high speeds. Almost in a flash, they appeared by their side.

Seeing the three of them, Tian'er's expression changed slightly, but she quickly recovered. These three who had come so swiftly, wasn't it the three Shangguan Sisters?

Seeing the three Shangguan Sisters, Ling Zihan started. Naturally, she could recognize Shangguan Bing'er, but seeing three of her all of a sudden, how could she not be caught by surprise?

Shangguan Bing'er nodded to her two sisters, bringing them forward to curtsy respectfully, saying: "Greetings Your Majesty, Greetings Aunty."

Di Lingfeng was also taken aback, dumbfounded. Shangguan Bing'er had been the hope of the Heavenly Bow Empire! Yet, how was there three of her in front of him right now?

Ling Zihan looked at one, to the other, and was truly unable to tell the difference between them.

Shangguan Bing'er quickly said: "Aunty, I am Bing'er. These are my elder sisters, Shangguan Xue'er and Shangguan Fei'er."

"Ohh, ohh, very good. Very good, child. How long as it been?"

Ling Zihan asked the question that was also burning in Di Lingfeng's heart.

Shangguan Bing'er sighed faintly, saying: "Your Majesty, Aunty, ever since the Heavenly Bow Empire was attacked until now, three years have passed. You have all been Sealed in the Fate Denying Seal all this time. Under Weiqing's leadership, we have finally gathered enough power to counterattack the Heavenly Bow Empire. Our armies are now launching their attack against the Heavenly Bow City to reclaim it. I believe that in within the next few days, we will have reclaimed our Empire once more."

"You... what you said is real?" Di Lingfeng looked at Shangguan Bing'er agitatedly. He could hardly believe all of this was real. It just felt like a few moments ago, he had been in utter despair, Emperor of a dead Empire!

Shangguan Bing'er nodded seriously, saying: "It is real. You will be able to see for yourselves soon."

At that moment, the glowing ball of astral light in the skies began to descend slowly, landing in front of them all. Instantly, their conversation stopped, as their gazes focused on that ball of light.

The light rescinded slowly, and Zhou Weiqing slowly relaxed the

arm holding his father, taking a step back. Currently, his heart was filled with emotions.

He had done everything he could have possibly done. Whether or not his father could survive... this was the final moment of truth!

The astral light retreated and dimmed, slowly revealing Admiral Zhou's body. On his dignified face, the muscles twitched slightly.

Chapter 267: Heavenly Demon Sects Calamity! (1)

At this very moment, all gazes were focused on Admiral Zhou, as such they would definitely be able to catch even the slightest change in his body.

When they saw his face muscles twitching, it was as if their hearts stopped beating as they held their breaths, watching unblinkingly.

The most nervous was naturally Zhou Weiqing, his mother and Di Lingfeng. To them, Admiral Zhou's safety was of utmost importance. If he failed in saving Admiral Zhou, then what was the meaning behind all Zhou Weiqing had done? He had already done his utmost, exhausting all of his abilities, and was truly afraid it would all come to naught. If that was so, he was afraid he would not be able to take it.

Admiral Zhou's face muscles twitched once more. Soon after, his body began to tremble lightly. Upon seeing that, Zhou Weiqing held onto his mother tightly, almost not daring to continue watching. After all, his father's body had pretty much fully broken down from the Fate Denying Seal, and under such a circumstance, how could the recovery be so easy? He had done all he could with the Astral Saint Energy, filling his father's body with the Power of Creation. Whether or not it would actually help his father, even he was not clear, so how could he not be nervous?

"Xuuu..." Admiral Zhou seemed to take a long breath as the trembling of his body stopped. Slowly, his eyes opened, a faint layer of black air emitting from his body, as a pure Darkness Attribute energies began to revolve around his body, as his nine set of Heavenly Jewels appeared around his wrist.

It was only at this point that Zhou Weiqing could finally heave a sigh of relief, and the expressions of those surrounding also eased

up.

Admiral Zhou's eyes were still hazy and confused. Looking around at the surrounding people, he was stunned for some time before he finally said in a hoarse voice: "Where is this? Am I still alive?"

"Father, this is our Heavenly Bow Empire! Of course you're still alive, we all are still alive." Zhou Weiqing let go of his mother, taking two quick steps forward. With a thud, he knelt down before his father, holding onto his leg as he burst into tears.

His emotions had been repressed for just too long, and he had finally accomplished the task he first set out to do, saving his father, and saving all of the officials of the Heavenly Bow Empire. As his emotions finally relaxed out, the suppressed sorrow, depression bottled up in his heart was released all at once. Even though he had been so strong just a second ago, able to kill a Heavenly Emperor powerhouse, but currently he was just an ordinary young man who had finally found his parents again.

Admiral Zhou truly lived up to his name as Admiral Zhou, recovering quickly. Looking at his son, now taller and bigger, hugging his leg and crying, his face darkened, and he grabbed onto Zhou Weiqing's shoulder and pulled him up. "What are you crying about, Your Father, I, have not died yet. Tell me, what happened?"

His heart was filled with uncertainty and confusion, just like all the others who had just been released from the Fate Denying Seal. In fact, knowing that he had unleashed the Fate Denying Seal, he should have died, but not only was he alive now, his son had also returned. What was going on?

"Old fool, can't you be gentler? Without our son bringing people to save us, we wouldn't be alive right now. My son is the hero of the Heavenly Bow Empire."

Looking at Admiral Zhou treating Zhou Weiqing in the same old way, Ling Zihan instantly protested, stalking in front in anger, as if

forgetting how she was almost crying in worry for her husband just a few moments ago.

“Bringing people to save us? Weiqing, you little brat, tell me what happened? Didn’t your father, I, taught you before that good men will bleed before they cry right?”

Being scolded like this by his father, Zhou Weiqing could no longer continue crying. Currently, his heart was just too filled with happiness and joy; perhaps even if his father gave him two slaps now, he would feel extremely comfortable.

“Father, it’s like this. Originally, I was still in the Heavenly Jewel Island when I learned about our Heavenly Bow Empire being vanquished, and I went to the ZhongTian Empire. After that, I returned to our Heavenly Bow Empire to reform our army, gathering our original Heavenly Bow Empire soldiers and finally counter attacking the Heavenly Bow City. With everyone’s help, we attacked and reclaimed the city, vanquished our enemies and also took down your Fate Denying Seal.”

Zhou Weiqing used the shortest, simplest summary of these last few years. Just a simple description, but how could it show all that he had gone through, the trials and tribulations he had forged his way through; but he was indeed unwilling to do so.

As he spoke, Zhou Weiqing pulled his father to the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya, saying: “Father, let me introduce you. This is my Master, the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor, known as the strongest under the Heavenly God Stage, Master Long.” Naturally it was not proper etiquette for him to speak out his master’s full name, and he could only speak as such.

Although Long Shiya had already withdrawn his Heavenly Energy, he was still a Heavenly Emperor, and the quality of aura he displayed was definitely incomparable. Admiral Zhou was after all already a nine-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Master, and he could clearly sense Long Shiya’s terrifying power. Quickly, he bowed

down respectfully, saying: “Many thanks Senior for rescuing our Heavenly Bow Empire from our troubles and disaster.”

A Heavenly Emperor powerhouse. Just these words alone were more than enough to shock all of the Heavenly Bow Empire officials. They had never met any powerhouse of such levels before!

Long Shiya laughed heartily, saying: “You have a very good son indeed. Since I am his teacher, let us speak as one of the same generation. You do not need to call me Senior, this old fellow is called Long Shiya.”

To be honest, Admiral Zhou was not familiar with the name Long Shiya, in fact it was the first time hearing of it. After all, with his cultivation level, in the past he did not have the qualification to know of the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor.

“Even so, many thanks Senior for rescuing us all.” Admiral Zhou bowed once more. He was not doing so for himself, but for his Emperor, and his son as well.

Long Shiya’s massive body disappeared in a flash, not accepting this bow. “Admiral Zhou, you are mistaken. It is not this old man who rescued you all, but someone else.”

When Admiral Zhou heard those words, he started. Was it not this old senior here? However, he knew the power of his own Fate Denying Seal, even a Heavenly King powerhouse would have difficulty taking it down. Since Zhou Weiqing was able to invite a Heavenly Emperor here, it should clearly be this Senior who rescued them! Looking around, he could not see anyone else who had the power to break through his Fate Denying Seal.

“Senior, please do not joke around with me. Besides you, who else could rescue our entire Heavenly Bow Empire from the disastrous state we were in?” Admiral Zhou said uncertainly.

Long Shiya laughed heartily, saying: “Isn’t that simple? As the

saying goes, Much water runs by the mill that the miller knows not of. It is your precious son! This old man did not do much, and he pretty much single handedly rescued your Heavenly Bow Empire. If you want to thank someone, you can thank him. Truthfully speaking, your entire Heavenly Bow Empire really needs to thank him properly.”

“Weiqing?” Admiral Zhou’s face was filled with disbelief, and he couldn’t help but think inwardly: This son of mine, how could I not know what he is like? That little brat, although he has become a Heavenly Jewel Master, what cultivation can he be now? How could he possibly break my Fate Denying Seal?

At this point, Di Lingfeng had walked to Admiral Zhou’s side. “Big brother, let us not speak of this now, they are still fighting outside. Let us finish dealing with all matters first before we chat about it.”

Admiral Zhou nodded hastily, saying: “Weiqing, bring me to the battlefield.”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily as he said: “Father, do not worry, I have already arranged everything. This fight, you do not need to take action already. You have only just been released from the Fate Denying Seal, and the most important thing for you to do now is to rest and recover. Godfather, why don’t you get the guards and servants to tidy up the palace first? After that, you just need to wait for our warriors to finish up and return with news of our resounding victory. Ohh, right! My dear wives, come quickly, greet your father-in-law and mother-in-law.”

The three Shangguan Sisters and Tian’er quickly walked forward, curtsying towards Admiral Zhou and Ling Zihan. “Greetings, Uncle, Auntie.”

Admiral Zhou stared with jaw agape at the four young absolute beauties in front of him, in that moment he was totally unable to react. Lifting his hand to point at Zhou Weiqing, he said: “Stinking

brat, they... they are all your...”

Zhou Weiqing grinned wickedly and said: “Heh heh, that’s right Father, they are all mine. That is, they are all your daughter-in-laws. How is it, your son is great right?”

Admiral Zhou glared at him, but he only said gently: “Young ladies, stand up please. When all of this is over, I will entertain you all.”

The four girls had heard from Zhou Weiqing how his father’s temper was no good, but now they saw this future father-in-law seemed to be very nice at least, and they sighed in relief. Curtseying once more, they moved back to the side.

Di Lingfeng also sprang into action. Luckily, all of the high ranking officials of the Heavenly Bow Empire were gathered here, along with large numbers of guards and servants who had still been in the palace. Furthermore, the entire Palace had been Sealed, and was not damaged at all, and tidying up was no trouble at all.

Zhou Weiqing said to Di Lingfeng: “Godfather, I’ll head out to have a look first. I believe that our armies should be killing their way in now.”

Just like what Zhou Weiqing had said, although the fighting was still fierce outside, there was pretty much no suspense about the ending anymore.

The critical key in this fight had been in its sheer surprise. Although the Kalise and Bai Da combined forces had started trying to react, their first thought was that it was the internal Heavenly Bow City which was in trouble. However, the ranking army officers all knew that there were so many powerhouses guarding the palace, and thus they had not been too worried at first. However, by the time the Heavenly Bow Empire armies had started their attack, the raining oil and fire from above had already sealed the deal for this fight.

All along, the Peerless Regiment was a powerful force in its own right, one that could change the entire battlefield by themselves. When they had fought in the northern borders, even against the powerful WanShou Empire armies, they had been able to slaughter vast numbers of enemies without losses. As time had passed, their overall strength had only continued growing. And this time, the entire Peerless Regiment had joined in this battle!

Chapter 267: Heavenly Demon Sects Calamity! (2)

The Peerless Heavy Cavalry's nigh invulnerable defense could be said to allow them to be invincible in front of the Kalise and Bai Da forces. As for the Peerless Archers, even in the dark of the night, their accuracy was still decent. In such a situation, every salvo of arrows would take away the lives of several thousand enemies. With such terrifying lethal killing offense, the entire battle ended in only two hours.

Ming Yu's commands and directions in the battle were precise and exact in every particular way. With the main force of the army flanking all the way around to the back, the enemies did not even have the chance to escape. This was a complete victory, an absolute success indeed.

The true fighting only last around two hours, and the rest of the time was sweeping the battlefield.

The blazing flames lasted until dawn before they slowly extinguished, and the battle finally ended for good.

When Ming Yu personally led the Heavenly Bow Empire military officers into the Heavenly Bow City, it signified the final revival of the Heavenly Bow Empire. At least, they had finally recovered all of their territories.

In the next few days, all of them were toiling away busily. After all, not all of the Kalise and Bai Da forces were killed, and they had to deal with the prisoners, sweeping the battlefields, as well as reclaiming some of the last few smaller cities near the Heavenly Bow City, all of these had to be done.

Ming Yu used three days to complete all these tasks. During this period of time, Zhou Weiqing remained in the Royal Palace, describing all of his experiences in the past few years to his father

and the Emperor Di Lingfeng.

“Princess Difuya is here.” A guard’s voice rang out in the meeting hall, and their gazes turned towards the entrance.

Currently, in the meeting hall, only Di Lingfeng, Zhou Weiqing, Admiral Zhou, Xiao Yunchen and a few other top ranking officials were there.

Previously, Difuya had been left in one of the safer cities in their backlines, and did not join the battle. In truth, Zhou Weiqing had never really placed much importance on this princess, and only when they had achieved victory did he order someone to escort Difuya back to the Heavenly Bow City.

Hearing that his daughter had returned, Di Lingfeng’s face showed a rare excitement. However, very quickly the excitement was replaced by anger, and he sat there on the throne unmoving, a dark look on his face.

“Father Emperor!” With a wail of sorrow, Difuya rushed in from outside, almost charging to her father’s side, holding her father’s legs as she sobbed, just like how Zhou Weiqing had held Admiral Zhou’s legs the other day.

Di Lingfeng sat there without moving, allowing her to hug him though he remained silent.

Admiral Zhou sat at the side, his brow furrowed, before he glanced at his son.

After Zhou Weiqing had described all of his experiences to his father, Admiral Zhou’s attitude towards his son had gone through a subtle change. The previous stern and severe attitude had vanished, replaced with a gentle amiable feeling. Just like what the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya had said, no matter who it was, with a son like this, it was definitely something worth being proud of!

Regarding Princess Difuya breaking the betrothal, Admiral Zhou

was slightly unhappy in his heart. In the past, he did feel that his son could not match up to the princess, but now? His son was the youngest Heavenly King powerhouse in the world, how could he not be a match for her?!

Towards Difuya, currently Admiral Zhou did not think much of her.

Difuya was indeed of the Royal bloodlines! However, when the Heavenly Bow Empire had been in trouble, it was his son who had battled through all odds, experiencing wind and rain before finally succeeding in reviving the Empire. As the Princess of the Empire, what had she done? Perhaps she had not only not contributed, she had even dragged his son back. Such a daughter-in-law, it's fine if they didn't get her, since the betrothal was already broken then so be it.

"Get lost, I don't have a daughter like you!" Di Lingfeng suddenly raised his leg, sending Difuya tumbling to the ground.

Difuya was totally stunned by her father's actions, not even climbing up. Ever since she was young, the father who had doted on her the most had actually treated her like this?

Di Lengfeng stood up abruptly, saying to Admiral Zhou: "Big Bro, I have no more face to have this girl join your Zhou Family. Let me beat her to death now, lest she insults the connection between us." As he said that, Di Lingfeng drew his longsword, taking a step forward as he slashed downwards at Difuya.

"Your Majesty, no!" Everyone cried out in alarm.

In a flash, Zhou Weiqing held onto Di Lingfeng. "Godfather, what are you doing. Difuya did not do anything wrong. Even before our Empire fell into the mishap, she had not loved me. Everyone has their own likes, and her not liking me does not mean anything. Forced love does not last, furthermore she has already found her own happiness now. Our Heavenly Bow Empire has just revived successfully; these few years she has suffered enough,

don't blame her anymore.”

Di Fengling's expression was still ugly, but as he was hugged by Zhou Weiqing, he could not break free at all. Under such a circumstance, he could only stop, looking coldly at Difuya, saying: “Get out. I don't want to see you again. From now on, the Heavenly Bow Empire no longer has you as a Princess.”

Difuya was in shock, looking at her emotionless father, she wept bitterly as she turned and ran out.

Zhou Weiqing sighed inwardly. Although he did not like Difuya at all, perhaps even hated her a little, he did not wish to see her end like this. However, Di Lingfeng was currently in a fit of anger, and he knew trying to persuade him was not going to make a difference now.

Difuya left, and Di Fengling's expression slowly calmed down. Sighing heavily, he said: “Weiqing, godfather has let you down! It's all my fault, I never taught her properly since young.” His current emotions could only be described as highly conflicted. If Difuya could really marry Zhou Weiqing, then he could accept all that Zhou Weiqing had done easily. After all, Zhou Weiqing and Difuya's future child would then inherit the future throne of the Heavenly Bow Empire. But now?

These few days, Di Lingfeng had already learned clearly the current situation of the Heavenly Bow Empire. It could be said that the Heavenly Bow Empire was in its strongest state in all of history. However, as an Emperor, how much power did he have left? It was not only him, even Admiral Zhou was the same. Although Zhou Weiqing had handed over the all the power in his hands, they were still clear that no one else but Zhou Weiqing could really command the army.

Di Lingfeng sat there in a daze momentarily. After a while, he seemed to make up his mind. Abruptly, he lifted up his head, looking at Zhou Weiqing and said: “Weiqing, Godfather has

already decided. Amongst all my children, there isn't a single one that is up to the mark, that is the reason why I have not chosen a heir up until now. From today onwards, you will be the crown prince of the Heavenly Bow Empire. After a few days, I will officially pass the throne to you."

"Ahh?" Zhou Weiqing was given a fright, and he could only stare with jaw agape at Di Fengling. On the other side, Admiral Zhou knelt down with a thud. "Your Majesty, that's absolutely impossible."

Zhou Weiqing also hurriedly knelt down in front of Di Fengling. "Godfather, all that I did was what I was supposed to do. You can't do that, and there is no need to. Furthermore, that is not my inclination. If you were to pass such a large Empire to me, what freedom would I have left? Do not worry, I will handle the army. As long as you do not change the commander, put absolute trust like I did in Admiral Ming Yu, then I can guarantee that the Heavenly Bow Empire will only grow stronger."

Di Lingfeng shook his head, pulling Zhou Weiqing and Admiral Zhou up to their feet. With kindly eyes, he looked at Zhou Weiqing as he said: "Child, I know your heart, but you have already done so much for the Empire. If I do not hand anything over, how could I face the world, the people? You do not need to say anything more, my mind is set. I also believe that if the Heavenly Bow Empire is under your rule, we will eventually become one of the strongest Empires in the entire Boundless Mainland."

Not only did Zhou Weiqing have the highest popularity in the Heavenly Bow Empire, he had a close connection with several of the larger Empires, including some of the Great Saint Lands. If he were to rule the Heavenly Bow Empire, it would definitely be of greatest benefit to the empire. After some struggle in his heart, Di Fengling made the best decision. After saying those words, he felt as if a load had been lifted from his heart.

Zhou Weiqing gave a bitter smile as he said: "No, Godfather,

please listen to me. Although I'm not willing to rule the Heavenly Bow Empire, that does not mean I will give up on exerting myself for her sake. This is my consideration. Why is the ZhongTian Empire and WanShou Empire so strong, so powerful? That is because behind them, they have the support of a Great Saint Land. In that case, why don't we have a Great Saint Land of our own?"

"Great Saint Land?" Hearing those words, Admiral Zhou and Di Lingfeng's eyes lit up.

Zhou Weiqing nodded, saying: "That's right, a Great Saint Land. Perhaps from the current outlook of things, our power is far from being sufficient. However, the number of Jewel Masters we now have is no less than any large Empire. Of course, we can't compare with the ZhongTian Empire, but at least we have already surpassed the Fei Li Empire."

"As long as we continue grooming them, we can only grow stronger and stronger. With Master and I holding down the fort in a Great Saint Lands, at least in terms of the highest end powerhouses we should be able to hold our own against the other Great Saint Lands. As time passes, I believe we can grow stronger. Furthermore, I am also a God Tier Consolidating Equipment Master already, and I am also able to help those older Heavenly Jewel Master powerhouses extend their lives. Once that news spreads, I believe that it will not take long for us to reach the proper scale of an actual Great Saint Land. Of course, how to actually form and build this up, that will be my problems. As for the Empire, it is still best left to you. Otherwise, wouldn't I be guilty of plotting to usurp the throne? As a citizen of the Heavenly Bow Empire, what I have done so far was all necessary. Don't let me bear such an infamy!"

Hearing those words, the resolve that Di Lingfeng had just set was shaken once more. Indeed, if the Heavenly Bow Empire was able to gain a Great Saint Land of its own, that was truly the power to hold their own against those large Empires!

After some thought, just as Di Fengling was about to nod in agreement, all of a sudden a person dashed in from outside, not even waiting to be announced as he barged into the main hall.

“Weiqing, no good, something has come up. Greetings Your Majesty, Admiral Zhou, please excuse Ming Yu’s breach of etiquette, but I am here to look for Weiqing on highly urgent matters.”

The person who had just rushed in was indeed Ming Yu; only he would not be stopped by the guards!

Chapter 267: Heavenly Demon Sects Calamity! (3)

Zhou Weiqing had never seen Ming Yu with such an expression on his face. Currently, his entire face was pale and ashen, his body actually trembling. Clearly his emotions were extremely agitated, almost to the point of losing control.

“What is going on Ming Yu, don’t be anxious, speak slowly.” In a flash, Zhou Weiqing appeared beside him, supporting his body as he infused some Saint Energy into his body.

With the support of Zhou Weiqing’s Saint Energy, Ming Yu managed to calm down slightly, but he was still panting heavily.

Looking at Zhou Weiqing, Ming Yu’s eyes were filled with a confused, conflicted light. “Weiqing... Weiqing, our Heavenly Demon Sect... the Heavenly Demon Sect has been exterminated...”

“What?!” Zhou Weiqing was caught by surprise, his eyes widened in utter shock.

The Heavenly Demon Sect had been exterminated? What kind of notion was that? Even though the Heavenly Demon Sect was the weakest out of the five Great Saint Lands, it was still an existence of a Great Saint Land. In order to exterminate a Great Saint Land, especially to do so without news traveling... what kind of insane power was required to do so? Even the Heaven’s Expanse Palace might not be able to accomplish such a task right?

“What happened? Speak clearly.” Zhou Weiqing grabbed onto Ming Yu’s shoulder, his heart filled with worry.

Currently, his heart instantly thought of Little Witch, her sweet smile appearing in his mind’s eye.

Can any eggs remain unbroken when the nest is totally ruined? If the Heavenly Demon Sect was totally exterminated, what would happen to Little Witch?

Ming Yu's expression was bitter as he said: "It is the Blood Red Hell, the Blood Red Hell members did it. I just received news... it was only just a few days ago. A large number of Blood Red Hell powerhouses launched a surprise attack on our Heavenly Demon Sect headquarters in the Bai Da Empire. Our entire headquarters was destroyed, and only very few managed to escape. Currently, I still do not know the exact situation there, but I can be sure that our Heavenly Demon Sect has taken severe casualties."

Zhou Weiqing's brow furrowed deeply. The Blood Red Hell had actually chosen such a time to take action against the Heavenly Demon Sect; more so they had actually succeeded in exterminating the Heavenly Demon Sect. Does that mean they already had the power to match against the Heaven's Expanse Palace?

Ming Yu sighed and said: "Originally, our Heavenly Demon Sect had been planning to wait for our armies to invade the Bai Da Empire, to work in collusion internally to totally destroy the Bai Da Empire. Who would have known that before we could even take action, we would be attacked by the Blood Red Hell so suddenly."

Zhou Weiqing said: "What do you need me to do now?"

Ming Yu shook his head in confusion, totally at a loss. "I also don't know. Currently, we aren't even clear of the exact situations, and we can't even do anything."

Zhou Weiqing took a deep breath before saying: "Ming Yu, don't be too anxious first. No matter what, our Heavenly Bow Empire will be behind your Heavenly Demon Sect. First, you need to try to contact all the survivors of the Heavenly Demon Sect to come over here, they can reorganize and regroup the sect here. This grudge, we will definitely take revenge."

Ming Yu nodded, saying: "Very well, that's the only thing we can do now. I hope that the Sect Master and the others can survive. Otherwise, the Heavenly Demon Sect is truly finished. Thank you Weiqing, I'll head off first."

As he said that, he bowed once more to Di Fengling and Admiral Zhou before leaving distractedly, as if his soul had been drained from him.

Looking at Ming Yu's retreating figure, Zhou Weiqing stood there without moving, his mind whirling at top speed as he continued thinking.

The Heavenly Demon Sect had been exterminated, and this was definitely not good news at all to the Heavenly Bow Empire. One of the reasons why Zhou Weiqing had been confident of building up a Great Saint Land in the Heavenly Bow Empire was because of the promise he had with the Heavenly Demon Sect previously.

With the original plan, when the Heavenly Bow Empire grew stronger, the Heavenly Demon Sect could come over to assist them. With the presence of the Heavenly Demon Sect, Zhou Weiqing could begin developing his own Great Saint Land without worrying about their overall strength being insufficient. At least, before they fully developed, the high end powers of the Heavenly Bow Empire could be supported by the Heavenly Demon Sect.

Alas, now that the Heavenly Demon Sect had been destroyed, this was definitely a bad thing for the Heavenly Bow Empire, but it could also be an opportunity for them. Perhaps, it might even allow them to have a Great Saint Lands of their own, raising their own power to a certain extent.

Di Fengling did not mention Zhou Weiqing inheriting the throne anymore, as he realised that Zhou Weiqing had long since reached a height that he could no longer see. It could be said that the lands of the Heavenly Bow Empire would not hold much draw to him.

The Heavenly Bow Empire's lands had been fully reclaimed in the next half a month. They had achieved an absolute victory in the battle of the Heavenly Bow City, slaughtering almost seventy thousand enemies and capturing nearly a hundred thousand prisoners. Of them, a large portion had actually been recruited and

incorporated into their own forces, while some of the more stubborn and inflexible ones were killed off. In this way, the Heavenly Bow Empire gained nearly hundred thousand troops.

Of course, these troops still needed time to train and fully integrate together, scattered into the original formations of the Heavenly Bow Empire armies.

It had to be known that the entire landmass of the Heavenly Bow Empire was barely just the size of one of the provinces in the Fei Li Empire, but now they had an army of more than two hundred thousand strong, many of which are elites.

...

One month later, the Heavenly Bow Empire's Emperor Di Fengling gave the official order for their armies to move out, heading directly to the Kalise Empire.

The main force of the Kalise Empire had mostly been lost in the Heavenly Bow Empire, and the Bai Da Empire did not give them any other support. In just a month, the entire Kalise Empire had been destroyed, and the Heavenly Bow Empire had doubled in size.

With the Kalise Empire destroyed, it also meant the rise of a new Empire. The Heavenly Bow Empire also stationed more than a hundred thousand troops at their new border, positioned to threaten the Bai Da Empire at any time. Of course, the truth of the matter was that at least in a short period of time they would not be able to attack.

Having just invaded and occupied the Kalise Empire, the Heavenly Bow Empire now needed to recuperate and recover, to assimilate their new lands and also continue recruitment and training.

The ZhongTian Empire and the Fei Li Empire supplies flowed continuously into the Heavenly Bow Empire, allowing them to rest assured about their supplies. However, in order to maintain such a

large troop, they first needed to become self sufficient. According to Di Fengling, Zhou Weiqing and the others' discussions and plans, in a short period of time they would not launch any large scale attacks. Of course, it was just a matter of time before they attacked the Bai Da Empire eventually.

In these two months, the rest of the mainland seemed peaceful, with no other wars happening in other places. However, even in the midst of the calm, Zhou Weiqing felt as if it was just the calm before the storm.

"Weiqing." Ming Yu walked in from outside, his expression overjoyed. Currently, they were both in the Heavenly Bow City. Although the majority of the armies were stationed in the original borders of the Kalise Empire, Zhou Weiqing and some of the other leaders had returned. That was because there was an important matter that they needed to deal with.

"How is it?" Zhou Weiqing asked Ming Yu. He had returned to Admiral Zhou's mansion to stay, and so did his four paramours. However, to Zhou Weiqing's depression, ever since their return this time, the four girls had seemed to come to an agreement. At night, their doors were all kept shut, none of them allowing him to enter.

Of course, if he really wanted to force his way in, it was not impossible. However, Zhou Weiqing was afraid the other girls would be jealous! Furthermore, during this period of time, there had truly been just too many things to deal with, and it was only recently that everything had gone on the right track. Even so, to the Heavenly Bow Empire, this was just the beginning, and they still needed a lot of time to integrate everything together and grow. It was a necessary process to grow into a powerful Empire, and could not be accomplished in a short period of time. Their main problem now was their current foundation was still quite shallow and unstable.

Ming Yu nodded to Zhou Weiqing, saying: "They are already

here, waiting outside. Only two of them.”

Zhou Weiqing said: “Quick, invite them in. Oh, nevermind, I will go out with you to receive them.”

As he said that, Zhou Weiqing and Ming Yu headed out. As soon as they exited the door, Zhou Weiqing halted in his tracks, his eyes staring to the front.

Little Witch was clearly much thinner than before. She had never been fat by any means, but now she was so thin and delicate, her face pale and ashen. By her side was a tall old man.

The old man looked to be around sixty years of age, with a commanding and dignified air, though there was a cold aura about him.

As soon as she saw Zhou Weiqing, Little Witch obviously started momentarily. In the next moment, her eyes reddened, but she gritted her teeth, not saying anything.

Being fixed on with those sorrowful and bitter eyes, Zhou Weiqing’s heart gripped tightly. Originally, in the volcano, although his memory was not full, he had after all possessed this young girl in front of him now! After that, the Heavenly Demon Sect had not come after him or even said anything, let alone looking for trouble with him. In fact, these few years, Little Witch had not even come looking for him.

A sudden strong sense of guilt rose in his heart the moment he saw her, and he quickly took a few steps forward in front of them. Bowing slightly to the old man, he greeted: “This Junior, Zhou Weiqing, greets Heavenly Emperor.”

The black clad old man looked at Zhou Weiqing, a faint smile flashing across his face. “In truth, I should have come to see you a long time ago, but never found an opportune time. I’ve heard many good things about you, and now that I am seeing you personally, you truly live up to your reputation. Even I am unable

to see through your cultivation, it is no wonder that even one as proud as Ming Yu is willing to serve you.”

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily and said: “You flatter me, serve is not the right term. We are friends, partners and comrade-in-arms.”

After saying that, his gaze turned directly to Little Witch. After a slight pause, he said in a low tone: “Sorry, I... I should have gone to look for you.”

At last, Little Witch couldn’t help but cry, turning into the black clad old man’s embrace as she began to sob.

Zhou Weiqing was embarrassed, scratching his head awkwardly. He was most afraid of situations like this, and no matter his intelligence, he did not know how to deal with it.

The black clad old man sighed and said: “Weiqing, aren’t you going to invite us in?”

“Ohh, ohh, this Junior has been rude. Please come in, Senior.”

As he said that, he guided the black clad old man and Little Witch into the meeting hall of the Admiral’s mansion.

Without question, this black clad old man was the Heavenly Demon Sect Master, The Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue, leader of one of the five Great Saint Lands, and also one of the rare Heavenly Emperors in the mainland. He was also Little Witch’s father.

A few months ago, the Heavenly Demon Sect had been the target of a brutal sneak attack from the Blood Red Hell, one that had destroyed them. In that disaster, less than a third of the Heavenly Demon Sect had actually managed to escape.

Chapter 268: A betting fight with the Blood Red Hell (1)

At the same time, the Demonic Emperor had sustained severe injuries in that battle, and in their process of fleeing, they had met with several dramatic turns and tribulations before successfully escaping into the Heavenly Bow Empire, settling down in the Heavenly Bow City. It was also exactly because of meeting the Demonic Emperor that Zhou Weiqing and Ming Yu had rushed back from the frontlines.

Little Witch's crying slowed and finally stopped, but she still did not look at Zhou Weiqing, remaining seated silently at the side with her head lowered.

Zhou Weiqing's gaze would occasionally sweep over. Perhaps if not for Wu Yunyue's presence, he would have already pulled her into his embrace to comfort her tenderly. Of course, with her father there, he would not do such a reckless thing no matter how much of a rogue he was.

Wu Yunyue looked at Zhou Weiqing again and sighed heavily, saying: "Weiqing, I believe you already know about what happened to our Heavenly Demon Sect. This time, I have come to discuss something with you."

"Senior, please speak." Zhou Weiqing dragged his gaze from Little Witch as he looked towards Wu Yunyue.

Wu Yunyue continued: "My proposal is very simple. I hope that you can take over my position to become the Heavenly Demon Sect Master."

"What?!" The shocked exclamation came from Ming Yu, but Zhou Weiqing was also left stunned. Although he had several guesses regarding the reason why the Demonic Emperor would come here, he had never expected that this Demonic Emperor

would actually speak such words so directly.

As the saying goes, a starving camel is still larger than a stout horse. Although the Heavenly Demon Sect had suffered such a calamity, they still had a third of their power. Especially since they still had this Demonic Emperor, a Heavenly Emperor powerhouse, they were still a force to be reckoned with. As long as the Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue still lived, who would dare say that the Heavenly Demon Sect had truly been exterminated? Yet, Wu Yunyue was currently wanting to gift away this entire influence, how could Zhou Weiqing and Ming Yu not be surprised?

Little Witch looked as though she had already known about her father's decision beforehand, and she remained seated at the side, head down, silent.

Zhou Weiqing drew a deep breath, saying: "Senior, why do you say that? Do you have any requests?"

Wu Yunyue shook his head, saying: "No, I do not have any difficult or awkward requests at all. All I hope is that once you inherit the position of Heavenly Demon Sect Master, you can lead the Heavenly Demon Sect to grow back to a position of power. At the same time, I hope that your future child with Hanyue will inherit the Heavenly Demon Sect in the future as well. Those are my two simple requests, and I do not need you to do anything else."

The two requests that Wu Yunyue had brought up were flawless and impeccable indeed, almost exactly the same as the conditions that Zhou Weiqing had proposed to Shangguan Tianyang previously in the Heaven's Expanse Palace. The only difference was that Wu Yunyue actually wanted to pass the entire Great Saint Land to him, while on the Heaven's Expanse Palace end, Zhou Weiqing had been forced into action. One could just imagine the sheer difference between the two.

Zhou Weiqing gave a bitter smile as he said: "Senior, you think

too highly of me. Do you really think I am capable of controlling a Great Saint Lands?”

Wu Yunyue smiled faintly as he said: “Of course you can. In truth, before I actually met you, I was still very hesitant about this decision of mine. However, now I can set my resolve with ease. In the first place, you have the Demonic Attribute, and it is even the purest first generation Demonic Attribute. I believe that with the Heavenly Demon Sect in your hands, it can only grow stronger. At least, it will be far better than heading towards destructions in my hands. If you are willing to be the Heavenly Demon Sect Master, I am willing to be your assistant. At the same time, I can guarantee that all your orders will definitely be obeyed by everyone in the Heavenly Demon Sect, myself included. How does that sound?”

Looking at Wu Yunyue, Zhou Weiqing eyes still showed some hesitation. At this point, Little Witch slowly raised her head, her eyes, still red from sobbing, subconsciously look at him... and he could clearly see the hope in them.

If Zhou Weiqing really accepted the Heavenly Demon Sect, that would mean she truly had a chance. The past few years had not been kind to her at all. Ever since that time when Zhou Weiqing had taken her, she had been waiting for him to go look for her. Alas, she had not even seen a trace of him. Little Witch also understood that he definitely had many things to take care off, and thus even though she was so agitated that she cried upon seeing him, she did not truly blame him.

Having grown up in a Great Saint Lands, she naturally knew what was most important to a man like him. If not for this calamity that befell the Heavenly Demon Sect, perhaps she might not even meet him that soon.

Wu Yunyue sighed softly, saying: “Weiqing, although the remaining strength of the Heavenly Demon Sect is far from our peak, greatly weakened, but I believe that we can still be of great use to your Heavenly Bow Empire. As long as you are willing to be

the Sect Master, that means the entire Heavenly Demon Sect will be fully joining the Heavenly Bow Empire. I am sure that this is of extreme importance to you as well. If you have any other requests, you can also bring it up now.” In truth, Wu Yunyue did not have any other choice. This was actually a very intelligent choice. On the surface, it might seem like he was just giving away the Heavenly Demon Sect, but this was the only way the Heavenly Demon Sect could truly survive.

If he passed on the Heavenly Demon Sect to other Great Saint Lands, then it would not be days before even last traces of the entire Heavenly Demon Sect would vanish. However, Zhou Weiqing was different. He was just a single person, at most with his Master, the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor. Even after handing the reins over to Zhou Weiqing, Wu Yunyue would still have some influence. Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing was definitely a young talent of limitless potential... a Heavenly King at twenty three years old! He had even heard from Ming Yu that he was able to fight against a Heavenly Emperor! Under his leadership, the Heavenly Demon Sect could only grow stronger.

Furthermore, there was the connection between Zhou Weiqing and Little Witch to consider, and if the child of his daughter and this young man were to inherit the Heavenly Demon Sect, then wouldn't it still be eventually passing down to his own bloodline?

Wu Yunyue did not hide his thoughts, and he had already stated things out explicitly. However, the more that was so, the more Zhou Weiqing had to think things through.

The Heavenly Demon Sect might be a force to be considered, but never forget that the name of the Heavenly Demon Sect was not good at all, and they were even discriminated against by the other Great Saint Lands. Furthermore, should Zhou Weiqing chose to accept the Heavenly Demon Sect, his relationship with the Heaven's Expanse Palace and the Heavenly Snow Mountain might turn tricky. Furthermore, it also meant he would now have to deal

with the possibility of the Blood Red Hell turning their full attentions on them, with the possibility of being attacked at any time. All of these were pressures and burdens that would be extremely heavy for the current Zhou Weiqing.

Taking a deep breath, Zhou Weiqing looked at Wu Yunyue and said: “Senior, I can agree to your terms, but only on one condition.”

At the side, Ming Yu couldn’t restrain himself as he said angrily: “The Sect Master is already giving you his position, what other conditions do you still want? Weiqing, you...”

Zhou Weiqing raised his hand, giving him the signal to calm down as he said to Wu Yunyue: “Senior, that condition is very simple. I hope that the Heavenly Demon Sect will change its name.”

“Change names?” Wu Yunyue started momentarily. “Why? I cannot possibly agree to this condition.” Wouldn’t changing the name mean that the Heavenly Demon Sect would vanish from here on?

Zhou Weiqing said solemnly: “Senior, please do not rush to judge it first, please let me finish my explanation. The reason why I want the Heavenly Demon Sect to change its name is not because of any personal desires, but for the sake of the Sect’s future. Have you ever wondered why all these years, the Heavenly Demon Sect could be discriminated against by the other Great Saint Lands, and most of the Heavenly Jewel Masters would shun the Sect, just upon hearing the name?”

“That is because our name contains the word ‘Demon’, especially with the rumours of the Demonic Attribute which have been greatly exaggerated. All of this has resulted in the current situation. To be honest, even if I take over as the Heavenly Demon Sect Master, and I do not change this, then the Sect will still be heading towards destruction. The only way to change this will be

to make major changes from the ground up, to first get the ordinary people to accept the existence of this Great Saint Land of ours... only then can we begin to flourish and grow once more.”

Hearing Zhou Weiqing’s words, Wu Yunyue lapsed into silence. Although he was unwilling to admit it, Zhou Weiqing’s words rang with truth.

Zhou Weiqing continued: “I can promise you that the future heir of the Great Saint Land will be the child of mine and Little Witch. However, if you really want me to take over the Heavenly Demon Sect, the name must definitely be changed.”

When he spoke about a child with Little Witch, she immediately lowered her head once more, a blush staining her beautiful cheeks.

Wu Yunyue said in a low, solemn tone: “Weiqing, this is a very serious matter, and the name of a Great Saint Land can’t just be changed so easily. I admit that what you said is very true. The reason why the Heavenly Demon Sect had become a Great Saint Land in the past was because the first Demonic Emperor and Sect Master was the strongest power during his time. However, if we were to change our name now, would the other Great Saint Lands even acknowledge our existence? Furthermore, I still have to account to all of the Sect members.”

Zhou Weiqing said: “Senior, although this might not sound good, I have to say it. With the current situation of the Heavenly Demon Sect, even when the other Great Saint Lands gather once more, would they actually acknowledge the existence of the Heavenly Demon Sect?”

Wu Yunyue’s expression changed. This was actually something he was most worried about. Slowly, he stood up, his brow furrowed deeply as he said: “I will have to go back and discuss this matter in detail with everyone else before I can give you my answer. Yuehan, you stay here as our liaison.”

Little Witch’s body trembled slightly, but she did not make any

other response.

Zhou Weiqing quickly stood up and sent Wu Yunyue to the door. Wu Yunyue stopped before saying: “Weiqing, please treat my daughter well. Whether or not you are willing to take over the Heavenly Demon Sect, I still hope that Yuehan can find her happiness with you. At least in that regard, I can feel at ease.”

Zhou Weiqing nodded. “Do not worry, I have let her down, but from now on I will not let that happen anymore.”

Wu Yunyue nodded and said: “You do not need to send me off any further. Go back, Ming Yu can send me off the rest of the way.”

Zhou Weiqing watched as Ming Yu and Wu Yunyue left, before he returned to the meeting hall, to see Wu Yuehan still sitting there as she toyed with the corner of her clothes.

Slowly, he walked to her before standing firmly there. Lifting his arms, his hands paused momentarily in the air before landing on Little Witch’s shoulders.

Feeling the heat from his large hands, Wu Yuehan’s body trembled slightly. Zhou Weiqing carefully pulled her up from her chair, enveloping her in his embrace.

“I’m sorry, it’s all my fault. You have suffered.”

“Scoundrel... I... I’ve missed you...” Wu Yuehan hugged him back tightly, tears flowing uncontrollably onto Zhou Weiqing’s shirt.

Chapter 268: A betting fight with the Blood Red Hell (2)

Zhou Weiqing could barely feel any weight in his arms even as Wu Yuehan was in his arms. The state of her body was clearly not in good condition, the meridian channels within her body entangled, and it was obvious she had just recovered from severe injuries.

Zhou Weiqing carefully infused Saint Energy into her body, helping her body regulate itself properly. Just as Zhou Weiqing was about to console her properly, his eyes abruptly changed and his gaze snapped outwards suddenly.

A red glow shot in with lightning speed, as if a meteor slamming into the moon. Zhou Weiqing's gaze turned cold, and the red light seemed to slam into a barrier, slowing down abruptly before coming to a stop in front of Zhou Weiqing.

It was a letter, the entire piece of paper a fiery red. Right in the center of the of it was a ball of black flames, giving off a demonic and overpowering aura.

As he was still embracing Little Witch, Zhou Weiqing did not rush off to chase after the person who had shot in the letter. However, his expression darkened considerably.

Little Witch quickly sensed something was wrong, and when she lifted her head, she noticed the letter. She instantly cried out in shock: "Blood Red Hell!"

Ever since the Heavenly Demon Sect had received the nearly fatal blow from the Blood Red Hell, she was like a bird startled by the mere twang of a bowstring, and just seeing a letter from the Blood Red Hell so suddenly, how could she not be surprised?

Zhou Weiqing waved his hand, and the letter flew into his palm. The red paper with the black flame was indeed the symbol of the

Blood Red Hell.

Opening the letter, he saw that it only contained a single sentence: Noon tomorrow, a final decisive battle outside the Heavenly Bow City. Otherwise, we will slaughter all in the city.

A simple line, filled with an overpowering threat and pressure. The words were unrestrained and arrogant, and to make Zhou Weiqing feel this way, it definitely had to be written by a powerful Heavenly Jewel Master indeed.

The light in Zhou Weiqing's eyes turned ferocious. "They have come quickly indeed!"

Little Witch let go of Zhou Weiqing, worry clear in her eyes as she said: "Weiqing, we have caused trouble to you. I never thought that the Blood Red Hell would come so quickly. What should we do now? We are no match for them. They are indeed ruthless, truly planning on exterminating us!"

Zhou Weiqing embraced her once more as he said: "Do not worry, I will settle it. Who says that we are no match for them? This is the Heavenly Bow Empire, not the Bai Da Empire. Relax, I will handle the situation."

How could Little Witch not be anxious? The impression that the Blood Red Hell left upon her was just too deep. She muttered: "Weiqing, you don't know the extent of their power... they have many top powerhouses in the Blood Red Hell. That day, when they surrounded and attacked our Heavenly Demon Sect, there were three Heavenly Emperor powerhouses! Otherwise, we would not have lost so terribly. Since they have dared to come here, they must have full preparation. We... we..."

Zhou Weiqing smiled passively as he said: "Of course I know they have come prepared. They are planning to end things here once and for all; they are not just here to finish off the rest of your Heavenly Demon Sect, they are also planning to crush the core of our Heavenly Bow Empire. With that accomplished, there will no

longer be anyone left in the west that can restrain them. Their plans are lofty and high reaching indeed, but their calculations might not be too accurate. Can they really win?”

Zhou Weiqing had long since guessed that once the war had reached a certain stage, the Blood Red Hell would make an appearance. Of course, he had not expected that they would actually reveal themselves so quickly.

The arrival of the Blood Red Hell powerhouses also revealed a piece of news to him. That was the Dan Dun Empire was truly planning on moving against the ZhongTian Empire. Otherwise, they would not be in such a rush to finish off the Heavenly Bow Empire.

Fortunately, these Blood Red Hell powerhouses had still chosen to uphold the honour and dignity as powerhouses, and they did not take action directly against the Heavenly Bow Empire armies, otherwise the consequences would be disastrous.

In that case, since they had already come, it was not a bad thing after all. The Blood Red Hell would not be able to focus all of the power here. That also meant that while it was a chance for the Blood Red Hell to exterminate their side, wasn't it also a great opportunity for them to greatly weaken the power of the Blood Red Hell?

Zhou Weiqing naturally had his own thoughts and opinions. Previously, in the battle for the Heavenly Bow City Royal Palace, he had not allowed any of the six Blood Red Hell powerhouses to escape. The main reason for that was because he did not want the Blood Red Hell to have a proper understanding of the true power on their side. Even if they knew he had reached the Heavenly King stage, so what? The power range of a Heavenly King was just too huge, and it was unlikely that they could even imagine that he had already reached a stage where he was able to fight against a Heavenly Emperor.

Thinking up to this point, Zhou Weiqing turned to Little Witch and said: “Yuehan, hurry up, lead me to chase after father-in-law. We will need to plan properly. Since the Blood Red Hell powerhouses have come, there is no need for them to leave this place forever.”

Wu Yuehan saw the confidence in Zhou Weiqing’s eyes, and her own emotions were soon influenced by him. She realised that this fellow who had been inferior to her previously had now come into his, growing into a true powerhouse that had his place in the world. The warm and gentle Saint Energy that Zhou Weiqing infused into her body had also helped her heart calm down. Nodding, she pulled on his hand as they walked out.

At this point, whether or not the Heavenly Demon Sect changed its name or not was not the important issue. They had to first deal with the threat of the Blood Red Hell first. Once the situation was resolved, if the Heavenly Demon Sect still survived, then everything was possible.

Zhou Weiqing held great anticipation for this upcoming battle. The chances for both sides were equal. If the Blood Red Hell emerged victorious, then the pieces would all fall into place for them, and they would not leave any of them alive. At the same time, if Zhou Weiqing’s side were to emerge victorious, he would be able to display his own power to the Heavenly Demon Sect powerhouses. Under such a circumstance, it would be easier for him to establish his own Great Saint Land and incorporate the Heavenly Demon Sect under him.

...

A day passed just like that in the blink of an eye. When the sun rose to the center of the skies, the time for the agreement had arrived.

The weather was exceptionally fine today, the blue skies clear and cloudless. The bright sun shone upon the Star Forest, and

though it had been ruined, it seemed to breathe fresh life into the forest.

However, in the midsts of the forests, there was a disharmonious colour.

More than twenty people stood there, each of them dressed in a similar fiery red outfit. In the green of the forest, it was just too great a contrast.

These people were not young at all, on the surface even the youngest looked to be around forty years or more. Amongst them, there were four old men who were standing at the front, looking to be in their eighties. However, their age had not dulled their edge, and their eyes were filled with strong killing intent.

The others stood behind them, giving prominence to the four old men's status.

“It is already noon. They actually dare not to come?” One of the four old men said coldly.

These four old men were the four Grand Elders of the Blood Red Hell. They usually lived deep in the Blood Red Hell for many years, and had not appeared in the mainland for a long time. However, their rank and status in the Blood Red Hell was extremely high, and even the current Blood Red Hell Lord was a generation younger than them.

Without question, these four were all at the Heavenly Emperor cultivation state, the mainstay pillar of strengths in the Blood Red Hell. Just a few months ago, two of them had actually been the ones who led the attack on the Heavenly Demon Sect.

The one who had just spoken was the Third Grand Elder. Amongst the four, his temperament was the most volatile.

The First Grand Elder said passively: “If they dare to not show up, then they better be prepared to accept the consequences of our fury.”

The Fourth Grand Elder said: “Big brother, are we really going to slaughter the entire city? If we do so, we will definitely stir up discontent from both the Heaven’s Expanse Palace and the Heavenly Snow Mountain. It is not yet time for us to reveal all our cards.”

The First Elder remained calm and unflurried as he said casually: “Do we have to be afraid of revealing our hand? Do you think that if we don’t take action, the Heaven’s Expanse Palace will not take action against us? As soon as we resolve the issues in the west, we can focus our attentions on the Heaven’s Expanse Palace.”

The Second Grand Elder gave a cold humph as he said: “That worthless trash Meng Gui, if not for him, would we need to make a trip all the way down here. Who knows if that trash ran off or was killed. Such outsiders like him are just too unreliable.”

The First Grand Elder glanced at him and said: “Enough. Just do what we’re supposed to do. Do not underestimate the Heavenly Bow Empire. Meng Gui’s cultivation was not weak, and even with the support of the six Heavenly Kings, he was still defeated here in this Heavenly Bow City. They must have some secret hidden powers lying within the Heavenly Bow Empire.”

The Third Grand Elder said disdainfully: “It doesn’t matter what hidden powers they have. Since us four brothers have come, let alone a mere Heavenly Bow City, if we really wanted we could easily destroy the Fei Li Empire. I believe that the previous defeat of Meng Gui has to do with the Heavenly Demon Sect. Just the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor alone would not have been able to deal with so many at once.”

At this point, the First Grand Elder said: “They are here.” As he spoke, his long fiery red brow raised up. Without any other instructions from him, the over twenty Blood Red Hell powerhouses behind them spread out, releasing their powerful auras without holding back.

One after the other, figures appeared in the sight of the Blood Red Hell powerhouses. There were three figures right at the front, but to the surprise of the Blood Red Hell powerhouses, amongst the three, the one in the center position was not the Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue nor the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya, but a young man.

This young man looked to be only around twenty years old, dressed in black. On the surface, he looked just like an ordinary young man who had just become a Heavenly Jewel Master, and the Blood Red Hell powerhouses did not sense any threat from him.

Six others followed behind them, all dressed in grey. These six were the last powerhouses of the Heavenly Demon Sect, six Heavenly Kings. In total, there were only nine of them.

On the side of the Blood Red Hell, besides the four Heavenly Emperors, the rest were not all Heavenly Kings. Eight of them were Heavenly Kings, the rest were nine-Jeweled and eight-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Masters.

After all, even if the Blood Red Hell had been preparing for a long time, it was not that easy to groom a Heavenly King powerhouse. The threshold of Heavenly King and the Heavenly Core Nucleus was just too difficult to pass.

It was not that the Heavenly Demon Sect didn't have any eight or nine-Jeweled Heavenly Jewel Masters left. However, none of them had appeared this time, and only these nine had come.

The four Grand Elders of the Blood Red Hell had very ugly expressions currently. Since only these nine had come, did that mean they were underestimating them? Or had the subordinates of the Heavenly Demon Sect already fled?

Chapter 268: A betting fight with the Blood Red Hell (3)

This time, they had chased all the way to the Heavenly Bow Empire for the exact reason that Zhou Weiqing had guessed - to totally resolve the problems in the west. Not only was their target the remainder of the Heavenly Demon Sect, but also the upper echelons of the entire Heavenly Bow Empire. No matter how powerful an army was, without an outstanding commander, they would not be able to flourish their full strength. Furthermore, without the top end offensive strength, any powerhouses taking action could easily destroy the several hundred thousand strong army of the Heavenly Bow Empire, or at least cause them to stall in their tracks.

The youth walking in between the Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue and the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya was naturally Zhou Weiqing. Currently, his face was wearing a faint smile, as if he was here on a holiday. The trio walked all the way to barely thirty metres from the Blood Red Hell powerhouses before stopping.

The Fourth Grand Elder of the Blood Red Hell said coldly: “Wu Yunyue, does your Heavenly Demon Sect only have these few people left? In that case, this old fellow will give you a last chance. As long as you are willing to bring your remaining Heavenly Demon Sect members to surrender and join our Blood Red Hell, I will let bygones be bygones and forgive you for your past transgressions.”

When Wu Yunyue saw the Blood Red Hell powerhouses, his eyes turned red. However, he was after all a Heavenly Emperor, the Demonic Emperor, and he held back the rage in his heart. In a cold voice, he said: “Old Four, stop dreaming. Who knows which of us will end up victorious today. Since you have arranged this final

battle now, let us get on with it.”

The Fourth Grand Elder laughed heartily and said: “With just you mere few, you think you have the qualifications to fight against us? A bunch of ants.”

At this point, Zhou Weiqing spoke. Taking two steps forward, he surpassed his own lines as he spoke with a smile: “This Junior Zhou Weiqing greets Seniors. Since the letter of challenge was written by you all, then you should give us an accounting right? To be honest, this Junior is a person who is really afraid of death, and I do not wish to die at all. How about we make a bet? If you all win, we will all surrender to the Blood Red Hell, lest we lose our lives.”

When the Third Grand Elder of the Blood Red Hell heard those words, especially seeing that fawning smile on Zhou Weiqing’s face, he couldn’t help but laugh heartily. “So, you are that Zhou Weiqing? So, you are just a mere cowardly junior. Our Blood Red Hell will not easily accept any trash.”

The smile on Zhou Weiqing’s face did not diminish as he continued: “Senior, those words aren’t too accurate. Although this Junior isn’t some great talent, at least I have reached the Heavenly King stage at the age of twenty over, so I believe I still have some potential left. Furthermore, when I said surrender, I did not just mean just the few of us, but the entire Heavenly Bow Empire. As you all know, the Heavenly Bow Empire’s revival was totally led by me, and thus I am still able to make such a decision. The only thing is... would Seniors dare to take this bet?”

The Third Grand Elder was about to speak once more but the First Grand Elder held up his hand to stop him. Passively, he looked at Zhou Weiqing and asked: “How do you want to make this bet?”

Zhou Weiqing grinned as he said: “Heh, since you all have arranged this battle, naturally the bet will be regarding our power. You have more people than us, so how about this, we’ll just fight a

few rounds. I believe all of you should know the Heavenly Jewel Tournament right? Why don't we have a fight using the rules of the Heavenly Jewel Tournament to decide the final victor? My apologies, I have joined the Heavenly Jewel Tournament twice, and both times I defeated the Dan Dun Empire to enter the top four, finally gaining the championship. As such, I am still most familiar with this style of fighting."

Fighting according to the Heavenly Jewel Tournament rules? Wasn't that four single combat fights and a two versus two fight?

These Blood Red Hell powerhouses had naturally once been young talents, and many of them had indeed joined the Heavenly Jewel Tournament in their time. As such, they were all familiar with the tournament rules.

This suggestion of Zhou Weiqing's drew the interest of quite a number of them. After all, no matter how one looked at it, the few numbers that Zhou Weiqing had could not possibly threaten the Blood Red Hell. Furthermore, from the way Zhou Weiqing was acting, it seemed like it was just an excuse to surrender without losing too much face.

The First Grand Elder said passively: "What if we do not agree? With just the mere few of you, you do not have the qualification to name conditions."

Zhou Weiqing spread his hands in a helpless fashion as he said: "Well, if you do not agree, then we can only leave without making a deal. Although our powers may not be a match for all you Seniors, but if we really wish to run, I don't know how many of us can Seniors actually catch."

A light flashed in the First Grand Elder's eyes. "Does that mean to say that if I agree to this bet of yours, you all will not run?"

Zhou Weiqing nodded, saying: "Of course, if you win, we will be surrendering. Once we surrender, I trust that the Blood Red Hell will treat us well, so why should we run?"

The First Grand Elder's eyes swept across the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor and the Demonic Emperor. "A Junior like you can make the decision here?"

The Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue forcefully restrained the anger and venom in his heart. Nodding strongly, he said: "That is the result of our discussion."

The Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya did not even bother speaking, just nodding.

The First Grand Elder smiled and said: "Very well, in that case I shall agree to your bet. In that case, you can send your first fighter now."

"Wait a second." Zhou Weiqing continued: "This Junior has another suggestion."

The hot tempered Third Grand Elder said angrily: "You little brat, why do you have to speak so much rubbish."

Zhou Weiqing laughed heartily: "This Junior is merely giving some personal suggestions, whether or not it is implemented will depend on the Seniors here. My meaning is, since this is a bet that will determine our fate, then we should not restrict the number of appearances for the contestants. In short, we do not restrict everyone to only fighting once in the fights. Also, since your side has more people, a five match total would be unfair to your Blood Red Hell side, and this Junior would not want to take this advantage. How about going for a seven-match series instead? Two of them can be two versus two matches, while the rest still single combat. The side with more victories would be the final victor."

The Blood Red Hell First Grand Elder stated momentarily. Previously, he was highly guarded against the smiling youth. He just had the feeling that this youth was setting a trap for them to jump into. Even so, with the sheer power at their disposal, he did not care about any trap, and thus had just agreed to the bet, planning to seize this opportunity to resolve all problems in one

go, so they could return to the Blood Red Hell as quickly as possible to deal with other issues.

However, this current suggestion from Zhou Weiqing had caused him to change his mind. That was because it seemed like this proposal was just too beneficial for the Blood Red Hell side. After all, they had four Heavenly Emperors, while Zhou Weiqing's side only had two. The more times they could join the fights, the better it was for them naturally. Although the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya was extremely powerful, these four Grand Elders of the Blood Red Hell were also not ordinary Heavenly Emperors. Not only did all four of them have the Destruction Attribute, the First Grand Elder was even at the Max Level Heavenly Emperor stage, and he did not think he would lose to Long Shiya.

Furthermore, in a clash of Heavenly Emperors, it was nearly impossible to hold back at all. In such a circumstance, even if one defeated their opponent, it should be nearly impossible for him to fight against another foe, at least for some time.

As such, this First Grand Elder began to feel that Zhou Weiqing was truly just giving himself a reason to surrender, giving them all a logical reason to join the Blood Red Hell.

If they could really take in and incorporate the Heavenly Bow Empire, that would definitely be great news for the entire Dan Dun Empire, and they could then focus all their efforts on the main battlefield.

“Very well, as you wish.” The First Grand Elder did not hesitate to agree to Zhou Weiqing's request.

“Send your first fighter then.”

Although the First Grand Elder had relaxed his guard, he was still a wily old fox, and he would not make the mistake of underestimating the opposing side. As such, he still insisted on Zhou Weiqing's side dispatching their fighter first, so they could

respond strategically.

Zhou Weiqing gave a bitter look on his face as he complained: “Senior, that isn’t too good right? If it is always our side sending out our fighters first, then we definitely won’t have a chance at all. How about this, for the first round we will send out our fighter first, and the next round will be your side’s turn, and so on so forth. How about that?”

The four Blood Red Hell Grand Elders were getting a little irritated. This Zhou Weiqing was constantly asking for so many requests, yet he was still smiling and polite. Although both sides were enemies, with their status, they would not fuss over such minor details.

The First Grand Elder nodded and said: “Very well. Begin.”

Zhou Weiqing took another step forward and said: “In that case, I will be the first to fight. May I know which Senior will be giving me a lesson first?”

The four Grand Elders started momentarily. Although they had already gained news that Zhou Weiqing had entered the Heavenly King stage, and he had also just admitted it earlier, they did not think too highly of his current power levels. No matter what, his age was still there, and even if he had entered the Heavenly King stage, he should not be able to fight against their older Heavenly Kings.

The Heavenly Demon Sect might be considered the weakest of all the five Great Saint Lands, but in terms of personal combat abilities, their fighting strength was definitely high up there. In the eyes of the Blood Red Hell powerhouses, any of the Heavenly Demon Sect’s Heavenly Kings would be far superior to Zhou Weiqing, and they did not understand why this young Zhou Weiqing would be sent to fight first.

The First Grand Elder waved his hand, saying: “Tianlei, you go.”

From behind the four Grand Elders, a tall, slender old man who looked to be in his sixties walked out.

This old man had a cold, sombre gaze, and his face was expressionless as he walked out from behind the four Grand Elders. After bowing to them, he walked towards Zhou Weiqing, facing up against him.

The four Grand Elders naturally felt that facing such a young man like Zhou Weiqing, it would not do for them to personally take action. Even so, the First Grand Elder had sent one of their stronger powerhouses, famed even in the Blood Red Hell. This old man was at the High Level Heavenly King stage, and he still had a bright possibility of entering the Heavenly Emperor stage in the future. In doing so, he was considered to have already placed quite a high importance on Zhou Weiqing.

With a faint flicker of light around him, Zhou Weiqing smiled faintly. Giving a respectful fist palm salute, he said: “Junior Zhou Weiqing here, Senior, please advice me well.”

Tianlei swept him with a cold gaze as he said: “Enough rubbish. Fight.” As he said that, he actually placed his left hand behind his back. From the looks of things, he was actually using a single hand to face up against Zhou Weiqing!

Chapter 269: The true meaning of being crafty (1)

In truth, Tianlei was thinking exactly that. Amongst all the Heavenly Kings from the Blood Red Hell, he was considered one of the top few. However, he did have one flaw. That was his arrogance.

Whenever he was facing an opponent that was weaker than he was, his favourite thing to do was to play around with the foe before killing them in a cruel fashion. Even in the Blood Red Hell, his personality was one that garnered hatred. Currently, facing a young man in his twenties like Zhou Weiqing, he truly could not imagine that he could possibly lose. Added on to the fact that he wanted to impress the four Grand Elders, he decided to battle with only one hand.

Zhou Weiqing's smile did not even waver in the slightest. However, it was Long Shiya who was standing behind Zhou Weiqing, whose fat cheeks began trembling as he had to focus all of his concentration not to break into a wide grin.

In fact, ever since Zhou Weiqing started to bargain with his opponents and arrange the bet, Long Shiya had wanted to burst out laughing.

Just yesterday, when Zhou Weiqing had met with the Demonic Emperor for the second time, he had invited his own teacher along to discuss how they could deal with the Blood Red Hell's attack. Without question, they were all clear that the Blood Red Hell's goal here was to fully exterminate the Heavenly Demon Sect, with the secondary goal of wiping out the Heavenly Bow Empire as well. Under such a circumstance, the number of Blood Red Hell powerhouses here would definitely be a large number.

In a direct head-on clash, their chances of victory was just too small.

Yet, this fight was also unavoidable. Still, how exactly they could handle it, even the Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue did not have any idea.

As such, the leadership role fell into Zhou Weiqing's hands, and the entire plan was constructed by him.

Without question, he was setting a trap for the Blood Red Hell. However, this trap was fully based on his own personal power. Anyone who had ever bet with Zhou Weiqing would have known what was the result of betting with him.

That was the reason why Long Shiya felt like laughing so much. Seeing his precious disciple blowing smoke and setting such an elaborate trap, and the opponents were just jumping headfirst into that.

Zhou Weiqing's strategy was actually very simple and straightforward; to gradually weaken their strength. He would continue doing so, weakening them bit by bit until both sides reached a similar power level, then... heh heh...

Indeed, this type of betting system and tournament style fighting was the best method to weaken the enemy slowly and steadily. More importantly, the unlimited participation was exactly tailored for himself. With the Devour Skill, how could his sustained fighting capabilities be compared to any ordinary powerhouses?

Looking at how this Tianlei was looking down upon his precious disciple, Long Shiya's heart had already marked him with the death penalty in this fight.

On the other side, Wu Yunyue's feeling was vastly different. He had heard many stories regarding Zhou Weiqing, but this was the first time he was actually working alongside this young man. Although he was still not too familiar with the heights Zhou Weiqing's strengths had actually reached, at least he was able to stand there speaking so nonchalantly despite the disparity in strength between both sides, even manipulating their opponents to

follow his thoughts... this was more than enough to deem him a talent. At least, Wu Yunyue had to admit that when he was still at the Heavenly King stage, he would not have been able to leave his ego aside and smile obsequiously like that. It could be said that Zhou Weiqing did not seem to have self awareness as a top powerhouse.

However, people like that were often the most dangerous ones. After all, a top powerhouse who was willing to resort to all means in accomplishing tasks... they were definitely far trickier than any of their peers.

A faint smile crossed Zhou Weiqing's lips. In contrast to Tian Lei's arrogance, he gave the impression that he was a little scared, even as he bowed slightly to his opponent.

With Tianlei's pride, he naturally would not launch an attack at Zhou Weiqing at such a time. If he did not even have this amount of judgement, Zhou Weiqing must have been screwing around all this time.

Tianlei said cockily: "Come on then."

Before he had even finished his sentence, Zhou Weiqing disappeared from his sight. Even as he did so, he was still in the same slightly bowed position he had been in.

Zhou Weiqing loved it when his foes underestimated him. Facing such enemies, he did not feel any pressure at all.

Tianlei was caught by surprise by Zhou Weiqing's sudden disappearance, but he was after all a powerful Heavenly King powerhouse from the Blood Red Hell, and he managed to react as quickly as possible. A thick wave of Fire Attribute energies mixed with the Destruction Aura burst forth from his body, and his entire body seemed to become an exploding fireball. Such an explosive force caused his Heavenly Energy to have the effect of an indiscriminate attack all around.

Everyone else from both sides had already retreated far away before the fight had begun. A clash between Heavenly Kings and above would affect a large area, and no one wanted to be caught up in the crossfire.

In the instant that Tian Lei flared out, his body had turned around. According to normal logic, when an opponent disappeared in front of him, they would most likely reappear behind him. Even at this point, Tian Lei was still planning to fight with only a single arm. As such, when he turned around, his right hand moved with a swirl of a fiery dragon appearing, twisting and moving around his body. This fire dragon would protect his body in the meantime, and as soon as he spotted Zhou Weiqing, it could then be used to strike a fatal blow against Zhou Weiqing.

Furthermore, Tianlei was pleasantly surprised to feel that he had indeed struck his young foe even in the midst of turning around.

The truth was indeed as such. The explosive Fire Attribute energies that burst forth from Tianlei's body smashed savagely into Zhou Weiqing, who had appeared behind him. When Tianlei turned around to see, he even saw the shock on Zhou Weiqing's face.

Without question, with Tianlei's character, a smug expression instantly crossed his face.

Subconsciously, Zhou Weiqing made an action to protect himself, his hands pushing forward. From the looks of things, it was as if he was half wanting to resist, half waiting to be hit.

Tianlei's fire dragon had also smashed forward without holding back. Although they had called it a tournament style fighting, with the current relationship between both sides, killing their opponent was undoubtedly the simplest and most direct method, which would also serve to break the other side's morale.

The fire dragon slammed into Zhou Weiqing's body without the slightest deviation, bursting into brilliant flames.

On the other side, the Demonic Emperor had closed his eyes. He had not imagined that Zhou Weiqing would be so weak. Wasn't he supposed to be already at the Heavenly King Stage? How could he possibly be unable to dodge a mere subconscious strike from the opponent?

However, in the moment he closed his eyes, he suddenly heard loud gasps in unison.

Zhou Weiqing's hands seemed to land on Tianlei's body in a gentle fashion. The shock on his face remained unchanged, but Tianlei's body was now frozen in place, his eyes filled with utter disbelief.

What did Tian Lei see? He had seen Zhou Weiqing getting hit by both his attacks, totally without any Consolidated Equipment. Yet, he had then step out of the flames, and his palms had just landed on his own chest. Since his own flames had covered the incoming palms, Tian Lei did not even have enough time to react.

A terrifying suction force welled up from Zhou Weiqing's palm, and Tianlei felt his Heavenly Core Nucleus shudder violently. Next, all of his Heavenly Energy seemed to pour out of his body in a flood.

Furthermore, Tianlei found his body totally unable to move, and he was unable to break free no matter how hard he tried. In that instant, nearly ten Fetters of Wind Skills landed on his body.

Without even calculating the existence of the Saint Energy, Zhou Weiqing's energy levels were already at the same level as Tianlei. In that instant, with ten of such Control Skills stacked upon each other, how could Tianlei possibly break free in a short period of time? As his Heavenly Energy flowed out of his body, the chances of breaking free with his own strength grew lower and lower.

Poof A soft sound as Zhou Weiqing's hands actually sank right into Tianlei's chest. In the next moment, his body was sent flying back almost dozen metres like a cannonball, before slamming into

the ground, clearly dead as a doornail.

Zhou Weiqing stood there, as if totally stunned, looking as his hands in a look of utter disbelief, with a hint of confusion mixed in there.

He seemed to be at a total loss, not knowing what had happened; as if the victory had just been gifted to him without warning.

Such an abrupt change, all of the Blood Red Hell powerhouses were caught by surprise. All they had seen was Zhou Weiqing being attacked by Tianlei, and in the next moment, the fight had ended. However, none of them had seen that under the cover of the Astral Saint Energy, a Heavenly Core Nucleus had been swiftly and silently kept by Zhou Weiqing.

The four Blood Red Hell Grand Elders were also left stunned. Although they were all at the Heavenly Emperor stage, and had been watching the fight closely, all of those changes had happened just too swiftly. Before they could even react, the fight had ended. From the way Zhou Weiqing looked, it seemed that it was an accident.

Chapter 269: The true meaning of being crafty (2)

Two Blood Red Hell powerhouses rushed to carry Tianlei's body back to their side. There was a large hole in his chest, and his heart had already been shattered, blood staining his entire body. There were no signs of life left in the corpse.

Rage flashed in the eyes of the four Blood Red Hell Grand Elder. Naturally, they could tell that Tianlei had been careless from the beginning. Although they still did not understand how Zhou Weiqing had won, it was 'without question' that if Tianlei hadn't been so arrogant and careless, this current result would not have occurred.

The Third Grand Elder's actions were the most direct. With a swift kick, he sent Tianlei's corpse flying away. "Trash! Why would we even need you?!"

The First Grand Elder gave a cold humph, before the Third Grand Elder finally gave up the notion of continuing to desecrate the corpse.

At this point, Zhou Weiqing seemed to come to his senses. Turning around, he said with a helpless look on his face: "I... I also don't know what happened? Seniors, you can't blame me for this. This Senior's power was too strong, and I had no choice but to use my full power in reaction. Who could have imagined that his defenses were so weak. Ahh, I understand... perhaps it is because I am born with a natural immunity to fire. As a result, this Senior's Fire Attribute energies did not have any use on me. Furthermore, he did not use any Consolidated Equipment... This is just luck... too much luck..."

Natural Immunity to fire? Right! Wasn't this immunity to fire already proven previously?!

Previously, in the northern borders, Zhou Weiqing had once faced off against a Heavenly King of the Blood Red Hell. It was exactly because of his Fire Attribute immunity that he had managed to escape. This news was well known to all the Blood Red Hell members, just that none of them had actually thought of it earlier.

The Blood Red Hell First Grand Elder's face muscles twitched uncontrollably. Although the death of a Heavenly King was not a huge deal to the Blood Red Hell, it had still taken a lot of resources to groom such a powerhouse. Yet, this fool had gifted his own life away without even using a single piece of Consolidated Equipment. The rage in the First Grand Elder's heart was no lesser than the Third Grand Elder. If this Tianlei had fought with all his might at the start of the fight, with his powerful Heavenly Energy, even if Zhou Weiqing was immune to fire, he would not be able to escape death.

Zhou Weiqing said embarrassedly: "In that case, this first round is considered our victory. For the next two rounds, Seniors, please send your fighters."

The Blood Red Hell First Grand Elder's brow furrowed deeply. Losing this first round had caught him by surprise, and it had also added many variables to his calculations. Naturally, he could no longer afford to easily lose this second fight. Turning to the Second Grand Elder, he gave a signal as he said: "Second Brother, you go."

The Second Grand Elder nodded. Towards the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya or the Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue, none of them would dare be careless. Amongst all the Heavenly Emperors, these two were famous for a long time, having reached the stage for many years. This was especially so for the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya, being known as the top Heavenly Emperor under the Heavenly God Tier, and that reputation was definitely not without justification. Amongst the four Grand Elders, in terms of cultivation, the First and Second

Grand Elders were naturally the strongest. By sending out the Second Grand Elder, even if the other side sent out Long Shiya, even if the Second Grand Elder was not able to defeat Long Shiya, he should be able to force it to a stalemate with both sides injured. At least this would mean Long Shiya would not be able to continue fighting in the ‘tournament’.

In the Grand Elder’s eyes, even if the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor and Demonic Emperor both won their fights, that would only be a total of three losses. As long as they could critically injure them, the next four fights would undoubtedly be their victory.

To be able to recruit and incorporate two Heavenly Emperors into their forces was definitely of great interest and attraction to the First Grand Elder. If they could succeed, the power of the Blood Red Hell would grow considerably. When that happened, would they even need to worry about the Heaven’s Expanse Palace any longer?

Seeing the Second Grand Elder slowly walk forward, Zhou Weiqing retreated back to his side instead. Walking to Long Shiya’s side, he whispered a few lines, before repeating the process to the Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue.

Just as everyone thought that Long Shiya would be the one to fight, Zhou Weiqing stepped up once more. With a smile on his face, he said: “The result of the previous fight was truly an accident, and since your side has lost a person, we have decided that we will forfeit this round as an apology.”

Forfeit? When they heard Zhou Weiqing’s words, all of the Blood Red Hell powerhouses started. None of them could understand what Zhou Weiqing was thinking, nor could they fathom the deeper meanings behind his actions.

Could it be that they were really just acting out this competition as a formality? After all, do not forget that their current competition format was that anyone could fight repeatedly, so

there was no such thing as using strategy to ‘use a weaker person to waste a stronger opponent’s turn’. This forfeit by Zhou Weiqing was tantamount to just gifting the Blood Red Hell a victory for nothing!

Zhou Weiqing scratched his head helplessly as he said: “Senior, then shall we dispatch our fighters for the third round?”

The Second Grand Elder was clearly still slightly at a loss, and he could only nod subconsciously.

Zhou Weiqing continued: “Since we are using a seven round match format, this third round should be a two versus two fight, the fourth round a single combat round, the fifth another two versus two, and the last two rounds will be decided by single combat as well. In this third round, our side will be my Master and myself fighting. As the saying goes, [a father-son combination works best](#).”

Long Shiya took a step forward to stand by Zhou Weiqing’s side. Passively, he said: “Which of you will be fighting?”

All of this happened just so quickly, so much so that many of the Blood Red Hell elders were still unable to react properly. They had just won the second round just like that? Although they would need to face up against Long Shiya in the third round, this Zhou Weiqing that was teaming up with Long Shiya looked to be just a mere ‘extra’, an insignificant presence that would not be of any threat at all.

However, just to be safe, the First Grand Elder still nodded towards the Fourth Grand Elder.

To send two Heavenly Emperors to face up against Long Shiya and Zhou Weiqing, in his eyes, that was already to take into account Long Shiya. After all, no matter even if Long Shiya was more powerful than he was, facing up against two High Level Heavenly Emperors, he might not fare well at all. Furthermore, the Second Grand Elder was already a top powerhouse who had

reached the Max Level Heavenly Emperor stage as well.

The Fourth Grand Elder also stepped forward to stand abreast with the Second Grand Elder. Both Elders did not even look at Zhou Weiqing, focusing their gazes on Long Shiya. With a palm-fist greeting, they said: "Greetings, we have heard of your great reputation."

Long Shiya nodded in acceptance. After all, his age, hierarchy and status was indeed above the two of them. Passively, he said: "Enough nonsense, let us begin. If you all want this old man to submit to the Blood Red Hell, you will need to show some real abilities first." As the saying goes, since they were acting, they had to go all out. In order to match Zhou Weiqing's scenario, the proud Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor was actually willing to say those words of submitting to others... Of course, it was all only based upon a possibility, not a guarantee!

Zhou Weiqing's expression displayed extreme nervousness, as he lagged half a step behind his Master. Everyone present could clearly sense that Zhou Weiqing was afraid of the threat the two Heavenly Emperors posed.

Long Shiya's brow furrowed as he glared at Zhou Weiqing in exasperation, grumbling: "Can you not be so useless? What have I taught you all this time? I really don't know how I could be so blind in the past to actually accept you as my disciple."

Zhou Weiqing said with a flattering, fawning look on his face: "Isn't it because I am just like you, with my six Attribute Elemental Jewels?"

Hearing his words, the First Grand Elder suddenly felt that this brat was a little slow witted. Previously, he had stated his unique quality of being immune to fire without thinking, and currently he was just spouting off about his Elemental Jewel Attributes. Although the Blood Red Hell powerhouses had already known news about this, they were all after all on opposing sides, yet he

had just revealed his own powers like this. If this wasn't slow witted or naive, then what was it?

As Zhou Weiqing spoke to Long Shiya, he huffily released his Consolidated Equipment one after the other, the rays of dark gold light shining one after the other. In moments, the nine pieces of his 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set had coalesced around his body. All of this just further displayed the lack of self confidence in his heart.

However, on the other side, the Second Grand Elder and Fourth Grand Elder did not dare be negligent. They might be disdainful of Zhou Weiqing, but Long Shiya was a totally different matter. The name of the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor was just too great, and these two Heavenly Emperors did not dare to underestimate him. Both of them moved back as well, releasing their own respective Legendary Sets.

With their status in the Blood Red Hell, they naturally had the best Consolidated Equipment. However, outstanding Legendary Sets were just too few and far between. Both of their Legendary Sets were only eight-pieces. Of course, that was already extremely powerful, but it was still a distance from the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor's 'Hate Sky No Handle' Legendary Set.

Once Zhou Weiqing had released his Legendary Set, in a flash, he dodged behind his Master's back.

Facing two Heavenly Emperors, Long Shiya also did not dare to be careless. Similarly, he released his nine-piece Legendary Set. At the same time, he also summoned his Six Ultimate Skill Manipulation Formation.

Behind Long Shiya, Zhou Weiqing also summoned his own Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation. With master and disciple both releasing their respective formations, they were glowing with brilliant six-coloured lights. No matter how much the Blood Red Hell powerhouses disdained of Zhou Weiqing, they had to admit

that when the master disciple pair released such brilliant lights together, it was truly a bedazzling sight.

Six Attribute Elemental Jewels! Such outstanding talents... up until now in the Boundless Mainland, only this master disciple pair of Long Shiya and Zhou Weiqing had it!

The Blood Red Hell First Elder shook his head inwardly, thinking to himself: This Zhou Weiqing's talent is truly not bad at all, no wonder the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor would select him. Alas, his character isn't good enough. No matter how talented a person is, if he doesn't have a strong character and resolute willpower, he will never amount to much. In any case, as long as we can achieve victory for this, and better still, critically injure Long Shiya, the entire situation in the west can be easily resolved today.

At this point, he even breathed a sigh of relief. After all, Zhou Weiqing's actions thus far had caused him to be unable to place any importance on the youth.

The Chinese have a saying that 'One day as Master, forever like a Father'. There is a large difference in their case between a normal student/teacher relation and a Master/Disciple relation.

Chapter 269: The true meaning of being crafty (3)

The Legendary Sets of the Second and Fourth Grand Elder of the Blood Red Hell were both a crimson blood red in colour. This was the unique quality that would appear when an entire Legendary Set was complete.

Their Legendary Set was exactly the same. After all, the designs for Legendary Sets were extremely limited, even for a Great Saint Land.

The eight pieces were still insufficient to cover their entire bodies, but at least the majority of it was covered. In truth, their Legendary Set seemed to be rather similar in terms of looks to the Terror Sea Dragon that Zhou Weiqing had seen previously, full of spikes all around. However, these spikes were all fiery red instead. The weapons in their hands was both long blood-red spears. As soon as their Consolidated Equipment gathered around them, they lifted their spears, pointing towards the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor. The unique pressure of the Heavenly Emperor powerhouses burst forth, focusing fully on Long Shiya.

A terrifying energy reverberation spread throughout the battleground. The contrast between the previous fight between Zhou Weiqing and Tianlei, and this current match, was like the difference between heaven and earth.

The two Blood Red Hell Heavenly Emperors' pressure exploded forth, it was as if their presence had almost solidified. Shockingly, the entire space behind them had turned red, with their bodies as the focal point.

A thick Destruction Aura mixed with the terrifying Darkness Attribute energies was rising even under the cover of flames. Through the spears in their hands, they were able to focus their pressure into a consolidated ray, directed totally at Long Shiya. As

for Zhou Weiqing, who was hiding behind Long Shiya, he did not even need to endure a single bit of the pressure.

The Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor truly lived up to his name; even as he was facing the impressive pressure from two Heavenly Emperors, Long Shiya's expression remained unfazed. In his hands, the Octagon Plum Blossom Warhammers crisscrossed in a guard, and using his own might alone, he was able to withstand the immense pressure from these two powerful foes. Long Shiya's entire fat body seemed to be glowing with six coloured lights.

Neither side was willing to rush to attack. At their level, a clash of pressures like this was even more dangerous than a direct attack. Once a single side revealed any signs of weakness, the final decisive clash would then happen in a short period of time.

Despite facing up against the pressure of two powerful opponents, Long SHiya did not back down at all. In contrary, the six coloured lights around him grew stronger, the eyes hidden behind layers of fat glowing brightly as he constantly shifted his body around in minute adjustments.

On the other side, the Second and Fourth Grand Elders were doing the same thing, each of them constantly shifting their positions slightly in order to influence the pressure, hoping to cause their enemy to reveal a weak point.

Towards Long Shiya's power, the Blood Red Hell First Grand Elder was secretly shocked. He was now certain that he would not be able to compare to Long Shiya alone. If not for this battle being two versus two, it would be extremely difficult to actually defeat him.

Although Long Shiya was currently suppressed to be in a fully defensive position, he was after all facing off against two enemies on his own! Zhou Weiqing was not even helping his Master in the slightest. Even so, despite being forced to take a defensive position, Long Shiya was actually not in a disadvantageous position.

Defending did not seem to be a problem for him, and if any opportunity presented itself, he could easily switch from defense to offense at anytime.

The Second and Fourth Grand Elder clearly understood this as well, and they knew it would be nearly impossible to actually cause Long Shiya to make a mistake or reveal his weakness just with their aura pressure alone. Exchanging glances, they seemed to come to an understanding, and in the next moment, they both shouted loudly, their bodies warping into two blood red flashes of light in the air, charging towards Long Shiya.

Their speeds were just too quick. One could barely see a flash of blood-red light and the two of them had already reached Long Shiya.

Similarly, Long Shiya gave an explosive shout. "Open!" The Octagon Plum Blossom Warhammers in his hands smashed out simultaneously towards his two opponents.

At their levels, it was no longer necessary to use ordinary skills. With their powerful protective layers of Heavenly Energy, these ordinary Skills would not have any effect on them. The only ones which would have any effect would be those with the Heavenly Skill Images. However, the act of using those would cause their aura pressure to waver and expose weak points, and in a direct clash it was actually better for them not to use it.

In truth, the higher level battles got, the simpler and more direct they would be. This current one was exactly such. It was a pure clash of energies; no flourishes or showy moves, fully a show of strength and energy consumption.

An abrupt explosion, and the two blood-colored lights separated, flying back. Long Shiya was left remaining there, hovering in the air. With a sudden cough, a mouthful of blood spurted out him, which immediately vaporized into a ball of strange black flames. That was the power of the Destruction energies.

However, the two Blood Red Hell Grand Elders were no better off, having been sent flying off in the air, they each coughed out a mouthful of blood as well. The condition of their bodies were no better than Long Shiya.

Originally, the attacks they had launched were just probing and exploratory in nature. However, they had not expect Long Shiya to use his full strength in the first strike. By the time they had realized this and tried to shore up their attacks, it was already too late. Naturally, with their strength added together, it should have been above Long Shiya. However, under such a situation, not only did they not gain the advantage, they ended up with both sides sustaining injuries. On the surface, it seemed that Long Shiya's injuries were slightly heavier.

The Second and Fourth Grand Elders did not stop, as their bodies turned around in mid-air and charged toward Long Shiya once more. This time, they used a different strategy, the blood-red spears in their hands piercing through the skies in a myriad formation, bringing forth a cascade of light to descend upon Long Shiya.

Long Shiya's 'Hate Ground no Handle' Legendary Set would boost his physical strength immensely. If they were to just clash directly, Long Shiya could depend on this pure power to compensate for the difference in energies between him and the two Heavenly Emperor powerhouses. As such, the highly experienced Second and Fourth Grand Elder had chosen to switch to attack with their techniques now.

A six coloured light shield began to revolve around Long Shiya's body, as his expression grew grave. Facing the full powered attacks from both Grand Elders, his choice of action was truly unexpected.

Turn, charge. He actually totally gave up on the attacks from the Second Grand Elder, instead brandishing his Octagon Plum Blossom Hammers as he charged towards the Fourth Grand Elder. At the same time, the six coloured lights around his body expanded

explosively, covering the entire area and permeating the air with various attribute energies, causing the entire atmosphere to become filled with violent energies, totally covering the blood red light of the Fourth Grand Elder's attacks.

A single final blow, one that threw the helve after the hatchet, with all stakes in the basket. In just a single round of attacks, this Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor had actually chosen such a desperate fighting style!

How could this be possible?! The Blood Red Hell First Grand Elder had a look of disbelief on his face as he yelled: "Old Fourth, be careful!"

Long Shiya was indeed extremely powerful. In such a last ditch type attack, the Fourth Grand Elder would not be able to easily take such a blow. However, at the same time, such an attacking style also meant that he had given up on defense, and on the other side the Second Grand Elder, who was even stronger than the Fourth Grand Elder, was attacking him! Such an opportunity, naturally the Second Grand Elder would not give up on it!

That was to say, the final result could possibly be that Long Shiya might not even be able to kill the Fourth Grand Elder, but he would die to the attack of the Second Grand Elder. Who would actually use such a foolish strategy like that? Yet, Long Shiya had actually done so... and it was exactly because it was so unexpected that it had caught everyone by surprise.

The Fourth Grand Elder could sense the terrifying pressure descend upon him, and he began to panic. After all, Long Shiya's cultivation base was far higher than his own. More importantly, in this sort of 'betting-his-all' type attack, the power that Long Shiya unleashed was such that even a Heavenly God Tier powerhouse would have to be careful in receiving it.

Almost without the slightest hesitation, the Fourth Grand Elder gave up on his attack, withdrawing the blood-red Spear in his

hands as he focused all of his Heavenly Energy fully on his defense. All he needed to do now was to endure this round of attacks from Long Shiya. As long as he survived, they would have won the fight.

On the other side, the Second Grand Elder did not remain idle. His own Junior Brother was facing critical danger, and he naturally burst forth with his full power as well. Charging at the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor with his top speed, he knew that the faster he moved, the less time the Fourth Grand Elder would need to endure the attacks.

Alas, in that instant, the Second Grand Elder saw a grinning face in front of him. A figure had suddenly appeared between him and Long Shiya. It was Zhou Weiqing, who had not joined the battle right until this point.

Facing Zhou Weiqing, the Second Grand Elder did not have any reactions. In his eyes, for Zhou Weiqing to dare block him was tantamount to asking for death. At most, he would be able to block him for a mere split second, and that would not prevent him from continuing to attack the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor after that.

Zhou Weiqing brandished his Dual Legendary Hammers in front of his chest. In the next moment, a huge black figure appeared in front of him, blocking the Second Grand Elder's attack. It was the Hell's Angel.

The Hell's Angel sprang into action without any pause as soon as it was summoned by Zhou Weiqing. As the Second Grand Elder's blood-red spear pierced into its body, it instantly self-detonated.

Another massive explosion, and the Second Grand Elder's body halted in midair. In that short moment, a pair of massive wings sprouted out from behind Zhou Weiqing's back, as he spun a half circle in mid air, the Dual Legendary Hammers slamming savagely towards the Second Grand Elder's head.

Another massive explosion, as if a thunderclap resounding in the skies. Zhou Weiqing's entire body flew back, causing him to turn

head over heels several rounds before he finally regained his balance.

The opposing Second Grand Elder was worse off. This hammer blow from Zhou Weiqing had smashed him savagely from the skies, and worse still, caused him to be totally unable to save the Fourth Grand Elder.

All of the acting and hiding had been leading to this single moment. This was also the first time since Zhou Weiqing had reached the Heavenly King stage that he was actually facing off against a Heavenly Emperor wielding his full power and Consolidated Equipment.

In terms of overall power, perhaps Zhou Weiqing was still weaker. However, his powerful physique and defenses allowed him to remain uninjured in such a direct clash. After all, the Second Grand Elder had been going all out in that attack. Although he had been somewhat affected by the Hell's Angel, the offensive power was still not to be underestimated, and even ordinary low level Heavenly Emperors would have difficulties accepting such a blow.

As Zhou Weiqing successfully blocked the Second Grand Elder's attack, on the other side, the clash also occurred.

Pooof

The entire sky exploded in a mist of blood as the Fourth Grand Elder's body instantly disintegrated, vanishing forever.

Returning to the scene just a moment ago, just as the Fourth Grand Elder was prepared to defend himself against the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor's attack... a purplish red figure stealthily appeared behind his back. As the pressure Long Shiya gave him was just too immense, he actually did not notice the figure.

The purplish red light warped into a ray to land upon the Fourth Grand Elder a split second before Long Shiya's attack struck. In

that instant, all of the Consolidated Equipment around his body vanished, leaving him nigh naked and vulnerable.

If he was focusing fully on defense, perhaps this all-out attack from Long Shiya might not be able to kill him. After all, he was still a High Level Heavenly Emperor. Alas, without his Stored Skills and Consolidated Equipment, what could he depend on to defend himself so suddenly?

That purplish red figure... wasn't it the Demonic Dragon Lady? Of course, it wasn't just summoned by Zhou Weiqing. Instead, before the fight had even started, he had already secretly summoned and hidden it away. In this critical moment, as Zhou Weiqing blocked the advance of the Second Grand Elder, he had used the Spatial Teleportation Gem to bring it onto the battlefield.

The reason why Long Shiya had used such a seemingly suicidal style of attack; wasn't it exactly because this master-disciple pair had planned it out beforehand? All that had happened were within Zhou Weiqing's calculations.

A High Level Heavenly Emperor powerhouse had been killed off just like that. The power gap between both sides had instantly been closed dramatically.

The Demonic Dragon Lady did not vanish after the attack. As the Fourth Grand Elder exploded in death, the Demonic Dragon Lady warped into countless beams of purplish red light rays targeted at all of the Blood Red Hell powerhouses. Each of them contained a Dragon Silencing Seal. As long as a beam hit, the powerhouse would definitely temporarily lose their Consolidated Equipment and Stored Skills.

After the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor had finished off the Fourth Grand Elder, the six coloured lights around him flared brilliantly in an explosive manner, and rays of light arrows shot out, mixing together with the Dragon Silencing Seal rays in an array towards the Blood Red Hell powerhouses.

What was the true meaning of being cunning? Zhou Weiqing used his actions to tell everyone. Of course, this was just the beginning.

The Second Grand Elder had been sent flying back right in the direction where the Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue and the six Heavenly Kings of the Heavenly Demon Sect were.

As he crashed to the ground, the Demonic Emperor had already entered the Demonic Change State. At the same time, he had already summoned his entire Legendary Set of God Tier Consolidated Equipment. His weapon, the Heavenly Demon Blade, slashed forward with his strongest attack right towards the Blood Red Hell Second Grand Elder.

Tournament? Bet? All of that was merely staged; all the acting, the fawning, the hints of wanting to surrender... all of that was part of Zhou Weiqing's cunning plan. Facing so many Blood Red Hell powerhouses, if they attacked at once, Zhou Weiqing's party would definitely be no match. The only they could possibly do at that time would be to attempt to run away. However, if they managed to take down just a few enemies first, then the end result might just be totally different.

Chapter 270: Creation vs Destruction (1)

Do not just consider the fact that the Blood Red Hell had four Heavenly Emperors on their side, while Zhou Weiqing only had two on his side. One still had to bear in mind that even if the four Blood Red Hell Heavenly Emperors had the Destruction Attribute, both Long Shiya and Wu Yunyue were also formidable existences of Maximum Level Heavenly Emperors. As such, they might not be able to fight one against two, but if it were just one against one... heh heh.

After being struck by Zhou Weiqing's hammer, the Second Grand Elder's entire body went numb. More importantly, Zhou Weiqing's Astral Saint Energy had broken through the protective layer of Heavenly Energy, sending the Absolute Delay Skill right into his body.

In a battle between Heavenly Emperors, even a slightest difference could determine the victory. More so, at this point, the Second Grand Elder had his back facing the Demonic Emperor, and with his mind set on the 'tournament fight', he would never imagine that the Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue would actually attack him from behind without thought of his own status.

In truth, at this point Wu Yunyue would hardly care about his status or prestige. The Heavenly Demon Sect had almost been wiped out by these Blood Red Hell powerhouses! If not for that, how could his talks with Zhou Weiqing be at such a disadvantage, where Zhou Weiqing held all the cards? He truly hated the Blood Red Hell, and as long as he could have his vengeance, who would give a damn about face now!

The Heavenly Demon Blade slashed down, and behind Wu Yunyue's back, a cloud of misty lights burst forth. The mist seemed to be formed out of countless grey threads.

This was a Core Natal Plant that was of the Life Attribute. Wu

Yunyue's Core Natal Plant was named the Despair Hibiscus, one that did exist naturally in the wild. It did not have a poisonous nature, but upon contact with it, its inherent Demonic nature would burst forth with a powerful Demonic Venom, one created out of the Demonic Attribute. It was similar in nature to the Dark Demon God Lightning that Zhou Weiqing had, and was filled with vicious malice.

Previously, Zhou Weiqing had told Wu Yunyue that he would create an opportunity for him to strike. As such, Wu Yunyue had been fully prepared to do so at any time. The Demonic Change State, Legendary Set Consolidated Equipment, Despair Hibiscus... all of his full powers focused in this single blow.

The Second Grand Elder could naturally sense the looming threat incoming from below. Alas, he was still affected by the Absolute Delay, and his reactions were slowed down too much. He was barely able to turn his body, pointing his spear downwards with all his Heavenly Energy.

BANG. The Heavenly Demon Blade clashed savagely with the blood-red spear of the Second Grand Elder. Just comparing both their cultivation levels, Wu Yunyue already had the advantage, let alone now with the Second Grand Elder in such a disadvantageous position, being unable to use more than eighty percent of his power.

An ear-splitting explosion, shaking the heavens and earth. The Second Grand Elder vomited a mouthful of blood. His layer of defensive Heavenly Energy had already been broken through and scattered by Zhou Weiqing in that previous blow, and now the Despair Hibiscus seized the opportunity to slide forward, enveloping the Second Grand Elder's body.

A heart rending cry rang out as the Second Grand Elder shouted with sheer rage, unwillingness and dissatisfaction. "You dare to launch a sneak attack! You shall all die with this old fellow here now!"

Facing Wu Yunyue's ambush, he was extremely clear he no longer had any chance to escape with his life. Even if the First and Third Grand Elder tried to save him, they would never be able to make it in time.

Under such a circumstance, the Second Grand Elder did not hesitate to ignite his Heavenly Emperor Heavenly Core Nucleus. Instantly, the zone around him began to form an existence like that of a black hole. Once a Heavenly Emperor self-detonated, the area affected would be immense, and even the far off Heavenly Bow City would likely be affected. If that truly happened, the sheer amount of casualties would not be limited to just these few of them here.

Without hesitation, Wu Yunyue vanished in a flash, leaving the battlefield as quickly as he could. The self-detonation of a Heavenly Emperor exceeded three times that of his strongest attack, and Wu Yunyue did not wish to die here like that. Furthermore, once a Heavenly Core Nucleus was ignited, the process was irreversible, and self-detonation was almost a certainty. Since this Second Grand Elder was definitely dying, how could he allow himself to be claimed as a 'burial companion'.

However, almost in the same instant, a massive hammer appeared right behind the Second Grand Elder's back, a warped and twisted light swiftly enveloping the body in midst of self-detonation.

That kid is insane! Wu Yunyue thought to himself. He could clearly see that Zhou Weiqing had just appeared behind the Second Grand Elder. No matter how outstanding and talented he was, that was self-detonation of a Heavenly Emperor! Was he looking for death?!

However, in the next moment, Wu Yunyue could only stare, stunned. That was because the Second Grand Elder's self-detonation was halted just like that. The space around Zhou Weiqing and the Second Grand Elder seemed to distort itself

violently momentarily before everything returned to its normal state.

Time Reversal. The Skill notorious for being useless, yet Zhou Weiqing had his own ways of utilizing it. Ever since he had formed the Astral Saint Core Nucleus, he had just started to truly master this skill.

Currently, the Time Reversal no longer needed such a massive amount of energy, and it was also no longer restricted to reversing time for two hours. With the aid of his Astral Saint Energy, Zhou Weiqing was able to fully control the amount of time reversed as well as the area of effect. Of course, if it was being used on an enemy, he would have to first remove all the defenses on the target first.

Since the Second Grand Elder was already going to self-detonate, what defenses would be left on him? As such, in just one single attempt, Zhou Weiqing had succeeded.

Previously, after sending the Second Grand Elder flying back with his strike, Zhou Weiqing had already guessed the possible sequence of events that could occur. As such, he had already prepared the Time Reversal Skill as quickly as possible, before using a Blink Skill to reach at a perfect timing. However, when he had arrived behind the Second Grand Elder with the Blink Skill, it had nearly been influenced by the black hole deviation caused by the process of self-detonation, causing Zhou Weiqing to break out in cold sweat. Luckily, he had still managed to succeed.

Naturally, his Dual Legendary Hammers were not just for the purpose of imbuing and strengthening his Stored Skills as he had just used! Such a heavy hammer blow, it had also shattered a large portion of the bones on the Second Grand Elder's back. At this point, even if he wanted to re-ignite his Heavenly Core Nucleus and self-detonate once more, he would no longer be able to do so. In that moment, the light cloud of the Astral Saint Core Nucleus began to shine forth from Zhou Weiqing's chest area.

Having sustained such critical injuries, how could the Second Grand Elder possibly fight off Zhou Weiqing now? As Zhou Weiqing withdrew his hammers, he used his Yin Yang Giant Spirit Palms to claw savagely at the Second Grand Elder's back, activating the Devour Skill once more. At the same time, the sky darkened as he released the full powers of his Astral Saint Core Nucleus.

On the surface, Zhou Weiqing had defeated a Heavenly Emperor so easily. In truth, this was the combined full force of himself and the Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue joining hands to defeat the Second Grand Elder, especially with the elements of surprise and much scheming. Being the recipient of such a comprehensive nefarious plan, the Second Grand Elder naturally had a tragic ending. It could be said that the main reason why he had ended up in such a state was largely due to the series of Zhou Weiqing's actions and acting.

Th..this is actually possible?! Wu Yunyue's eyes widened in shock. However, there was not much time for him to contemplate this strange power of Zhou Weiqing's, as on the other side, the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor was in trouble.

If a single sentence had to be used to describe the battle on the other side, 'a wild turbulence that collapses heaven and earth' would be rather appropriate.

Although the Demonic Dragon Lady had self-detonated to release so many Dragon Silencing Seals, not all of them were able to take effect. The First and Third Grand Elders of the Blood Red Hell might have taken a second to react, but they were still able to raise a defensive energy space, blocking the majority of the Dragon Silencing Seal rays. Only about seven or eight of the eight and nine Jeweled Blood Red Hell powerhouses were actually struck by the Dragon Silencing Seal.

When the Fourth Grand Elder had been smashed and destroyed so savagely by Long Shiya, both the First and Third Grand Elders

had been shocked to the core. No matter how powerful Heavenly Emperors were, they were still human, and this sudden unexpected change had been a huge blow to their hearts.

The four Grand Elders of the Blood Red Hell had grown up together, living closely together since a young age, and they were definitely very close to each other. Due to the previous agreement of this being a tournament match, as well as their hopes to gain Long Shiya and the others' surrender, they had not intervened when Long Shiya had launched such a suicidal move. In their eyes, even though the Fourth Grand Elder was no match for Long Shiya, they were both Heavenly Emperors, and it should not be possible for Long Shiya to kill the Fourth Grand Elder with just a single blow.

The appearance of the Demonic Dragon Lady was just too abrupt. Up until the point when she had self-destructed, they had still not figured out whether it was a Heavenly Beast or just an energy construct.

With the death of the Fourth Grand Elder, both the First and Third Grand Elder fell into a rage. Naturally, they would no longer care about the bet, and as one they charged towards Long Shiya. However, in that moment, the Demonic Dragon Lady self-detonated.

With the First and Third Grand Elder's cultivation, even if they were struck by the Dragon Silencing Seal, it would not have a great effect on them. However, they could not ignore the subordinates behind them. The Demonic Dragon Lady was after all a Max Level Heavenly Emperor-tier Heavenly Beast, and the Dragon Silencing Seals released from its self-detonation would not be easy to withstand, even for a Heavenly King. If they allowed the rays to strike, it could be said that nearly all of their subordinates would lose the majority of their combat powers. With the death of the Fourth Grand Elder, their great advantage had already lessened considerably, and although they were in a great rage, they could

not possibly ignore their subordinates. As such, they could only release their Consolidated Equipment and defend against the rays. Of course, this had also given the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor the chance to launch his own attacks.

The entire sky had turned into six colours. Water, Fire, Earth, Wind, Light, Darkness. Six Attribute energies burst forth explosively under the perfect command of Long Shiya.

Since Long Shiya had accepted Zhou Weiqing as his disciple, this was the first time he had really displayed his full strength. As rays of lights of the various six colours shot forth as if automatically, if one really examined them closely, there was actually a faint shadow behind every arrow of light... a faint illusory image of Long Shiya! One could imagine the sheer terrifying power of these light arrows!

Ten Thousand Quiescence Godslaying Arrows.

This was one of the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya's ultimate moves. Not only did it gather all of his own power, it drew in massive amounts of atmospheric energies.

Long Shiya's greatest advantage now was that he had the first strike advantage. Heavenly Emperors were all able to manipulate atmospheric energies at will, and even as he drew in so much to launch that powerful attack of his, he still maintained a connection to the atmospheric energies. As such, after launching his attack, the First and Third Grand Elder were not able to access as much atmospheric energies as they would have liked, as the energies in the area around them were much thinner and diffused.

At this moment, if anyone had the fortune to witness the scene, they would be able to see a miraculous sight in front of them. The skies were filled with the six colours, while on the ground, it was red, making it look like an ocean of blood, mixed with a layer of terrifying destructive energies, swirling in black amidst the red.

Chapter 270: Creation vs Destruction (2)

The terrifying explosion reverberated throughout the battlefield like countless thunder roars. The First and Third Grand Elder instantly summoned up a Barrier of Destruction Attribute energies to defend against Long Shiya's attack. Behind them, the other Blood Red Hell powerhouses also moved swiftly, gathering behind the two Grand Elders as they released their Consolidated Equipment.

At this moment, the true power of the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya was put on display. The Ten Thousand Quiescence Godslaying Arrows of his, even if the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord was facing it, he had to be extremely careful, lest he get struck by the multitude of arrows. Currently, although the attacks were rather spread out, the destructive power was far beyond the expectations of the First and Third Grand Elders.

The Destruction Barrier that the First and Third Grand Elders had erected was now riddled with holes from the attack. Although both of them were not injured, they had been forced down from flight back to the ground, totally losing any chance of saving the Second Grand Elder.

Not only that, since the Destruction Barrier was pierced through and broken, the other Blood Red Hell powerhouses at the back were in trouble. The first to bear the brunt of attacks were naturally those who had been struck and inflicted with the Dragon Silencing Seal. They were not even able to unleash their Consolidated Equipment, so how could they possibly defend themselves against Long Shiya's powerful attacks? Those who had been struck by the six coloured light arrows had their entire bodies warped into six lights, before vaporizing and scattering into the air.

It was not just them, even the others did not have it easy. At least over a dozen of the other powerhouses were struck, and despite

their defenses, blood spurted from their mouths as they sustained severe injuries. Even the four Heavenly King powerhouses were no exception. After all, it was the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor's strongest attack, how could it be so easily withstood?

To withstand the Second and Fourth Grand Elders' attacks, executing a full out attack to slaughter the Fourth Grand Elder, then launching this unbelievably powerful attack right after... amongst all the Heavenly Emperors, perhaps only the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya was able to accomplish it.

Energies filled with destructive aura swirled around. After that blow, Long Shiya gave a muffled grunt as he suffered the backlash, spurting out a mouthful of blood. After all, no matter how powerful he was, he was a single person clashing against so many powerhouses. Even if it were the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord here instead of him, he might not fare that much better.

The First and Third Grand Elder shouted out loud, warping into two rays of blood coloured light that soared into the air. They truly hated Long Shiya to the core, and this was the perfect opportunity where the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor had overextended himself on offense, and was off balance without being able to recover in time, and was even injured. As long as they could seize this chance to finish off Long Shiya, they had absolute confidence in killing off Zhou Weiqing and the others as well.

A terrifying dark red light shot forth into the skies, filled with an overbearing Destruction aura, almost instantaneously covering an area more than several tens of thousands of square metres. In the entire area, the short tree stumps that remained after the Stars Trees were chopped down, along with all the uncut Stars Trees were actually vaporized at once, and the earth actually collapsed and sank in several dozen metres, as all of the Blood Red Hell powerhouses launched their attacks as once.

In this moment, the power of the Blood Red Hell showed itself. Although these Heavenly King powerhouses and Zong Stage

powerhouses would not pose any threat at all to the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor individually, but they all had the Destruction Attribute. As they poured out their Heavenly Energy as one into the Destruction Barrier, not only did they mend the Destruction Barrier, they greatly boosted it once more, allowing the First and Third Grand Elder to wield the terrifying amounts of Destruction energies against Long Shiya.

Originally, when the Heavenly Demon Sect had been attacked by the Blood Red Hell, their strength was extremely powerful. However, they had been greatly disadvantaged by this exact same Destruction Attribute energies, and the ability of it to merge and stack together, forming a tyrannical power that could not be resisted. The two Low Level Heavenly Emperor Vice Sect Masters self-detonated in that battle, and it was only their sacrifice that allowed Wu Yunyue to escape with a small portion of the survivors. At that time, the Blood Red Hell First Grand Elder had not even joined the battle, and only the Second, Third and Fourth Grand Elders had taken action. The only reason the First Grand Elder would appear here now was because of Long Shiya and his reputation. At this point, they were going all out, and even one as powerful as the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor found himself shocked at the terrifying aura pressure he was facing.

At this point, Wu Yunyue and the six Heavenly Demon Sect Heavenly Kings had reached Long Shiya's side. However, the eight of them had different attributes, and they were unable to merge and stack their powers together. All they could do was to bring forth their most powerful defensive Skills individually to receive the incoming attacks from the First and Third Grand Elders.

Boom

The skies darkened. Indeed, the entire skies turned black in the moment of the collision of both forces.

Naturally, that was not nightfall.

A massive black hole with a thousand metre diameter appeared out of nowhere, hovering in the skies. In the vicinity of the black hole, all of the atmospheric energies were being drawn in instantly, forcing both parties to be separated.

Far off in the distance, more than half of the Heavenly Bow Empire's walls actually collapsed in that moment. This was only the result of the energy reverberations. Luckily, after receiving the letter of challenge, Zhou Weiqing had given the order for the troops and citizens to move to the other side. Otherwise, who knew how many lives the energy fluctuations alone would have taken.

Once again, the First and Third Grand Elders were forced back onto the ground, the blood-red coloured light ball of Destruction energies clearly much dimmer now. The black hole created from the collision of both forces was just too terrifying, and even the energies of the Heavenly Emperors were being sucked in. No one dared to actually approach and touch it.

Although the Blood Red Hell powerhouses' attacks had been stopped successfully, the situation for the Heavenly Bow Empire side was dire indeed.

Including the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya and the Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue, all eight of them spurted blood from their mouths, the fresh blood vaporizing into mist as the eight of them were sent flying back.

Long Shiya's injuries worsened, and his face turned pale with an ugly expression. He had not imagined that these Blood Red Hell powerhouses would actually be able to work together with such symmetry, unifying their powers in such a perfect merge. Even with the aid of the Demonic Emperor and his Heavenly Kings, they had not been able to withstand the attack, being put at a severe disadvantage.

Worse still, the Destruction energies had forcefully charged into

their bodies, and they needed to expend a large amount of Heavenly Energy to withstand it, preventing themselves from being affected.

After the entire series of events and clashes, the Blood Red Hell had definitely suffered severe losses. The Fourth Grand Elder had perished in battle, and in Zhou Weiqing's hands, the Second Grand Elder was not far from death as well. Furthermore, several Heavenly Kings had been critically wounded, and a large amount of the Zong Stage powerhouses had been slaughtered. It could be said that their total fighting capabilities had been halved at least.

However, the Heavenly Bow Empire side was also in deep trouble of their own. Although none of them had died, Long Shiya was now critically injured. At the same time, Wu Yunyue was also greatly injured; in the first place, his previous injuries had not fully recovered. As such, the two Max Level Heavenly Emperors did not retain much of their usual combat strength. The six Heavenly Kings had also taken different levels of injuries, and added on to the fact that the remaining Blood Red Hell powerhouses could actually join forces in such unison to launch their attacks, everything considered the Blood Red Hell side was still the one with the advantage. However, to be able to draw things so close from their original position of great weakness, the Heavenly Bow Empire side could already be extremely proud.

Alas, that pride was of no use at this current point. This was after all a fight to the death, and there would only be one end result for the loser.

The Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue had a solemn, tense expression on his face. Although he did not wish to admit it, he was clear that the situation in front of them was akin to the original tight spot the Heavenly Demon Sect had been in when they had been attacked by the Blood Red Hell.

The Blood Red Hell's Destruction Attribute was indeed overbearing and tyrannical. If it were in a one versus one fight, he

was confident that with his Demonic Change State, he could still handle it. The Heavenly Demon Sect's Core Elemental Attributes were the Demonic Attribute, Darkness Attribute and Life Attributes, three mighty Elemental Attributes. As the Sect Master, he had all three of them. In terms of power, even if Wu Yunyue could not compare to the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya, only a fine line divided their power levels. That was the reason why the Heavenly Demon Sect was still able to survive all these years despite being suppressed by the other four Great Saint Lands.

However, the problem was that they were no longer facing their enemies in single combat. They had already fully fallen out with the Blood Red Hell, so how could they possibly give them any other chances? Currently, both he and Long Shiya were severely injured, especially himself with fresh injuries added to his old ones, while Long Shiya had gotten injured several times over the course of this short but ferocious battle. At this level of fighting, it would not be realistic to place any hopes on the six Heavenly Kings they had brought along.

The Blood Red Hell First and Third Grand Elders were no simple fellows. With the support of so many powerhouses, and the ability to merge and stack of the Destruction Attribute, their combat prowess was just too terrifying. Wu Yunyue dared to venture a guess that even if it were the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord facing up against these Blood Red Hell powerhouses on his own, it would still be tough for him.

This was a difference in level and state of the Attributes themselves. After all, the Destruction Attribute was definitely comparable to any Saint Attribute, perhaps even at a higher level. More importantly, there were actually so many people in the Blood Red Hell who had this Attribute, and it was the fusion merger and stacking prowess of this Destruction Attribute energies that was the truly fatal combination.

A savage light crossed Wu Yunyue's face. With the situation they were in currently, it would be extremely difficult to escape once more. Furthermore, as the Sect Leader of the Heavenly Demon Sect, he had his own pride and dignity! To be forced to flee like a coward again and again, this was a humiliation he was unable to take again. He had already set his resolve that even if he had to self-detonate his Heavenly Core Nucleus, he would not back down today. He would fight these Blood Red Hell foes to the death, to take as many of them along with him.

In stark contrast to him, Long Shiya's expression was totally different. Although his injuries were just as severe, this Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor was still smiling, an interestingly ruminating and savoring smile. Perhaps Wu Yunyue might feel some regret over following Zhou Weiqing's plan today which had led to their current situation, but Long Shiya would not. That was because he understood his precious disciple too well. Without an eighty percent certainty or higher, he would not act rashly. This fight today, it was planned and calculated after questioning about all of the possible powerhouses that would come today from Wu Yunyue. How could he possibly make a fatal mistake like this so easily?

No matter the Heavenly Demon Sect or the Heavenly Bow Empire side, all of them had neglected one small detail. That was, Zhou Weiqing's true power. All of them were still underestimating this precious disciple of his.

In any ordinary circumstance, Zhou Weiqing's defensive capabilities were comparable to a High Level Heavenly Emperor, while his offensive capabilities could possibly equal a Mid Level Heavenly Emperor. However, all of those estimates was not considering the fact after he had activated the Astral Clouds. Once he had successfully done so, then Long Shiya was certain that he would become the most powerful person on their side. Indeed, even more powerful than Long Shiya himself.

The Blood Red Hell First and Third Grand Elders were currently focusing all their attentions on the two Heavenly Emperors once more, and they were fully negligent about how Zhou Weiqing had actually managed to block the Second Grand Elder's full out attack without death or injury!

Chapter 270: Creation vs Destruction (3)

The black hole in the skies dividing slowly shrank, but when it finally vanished, the Blood Red Hell powerhouses were suddenly surprised to see that the six coloured lights of Long Shiya's had disappeared as his injuries were critical, but they were replaced by another set of coloured lights.

The disappearance of the black hole did not take away the darkness, only revealing the specks of star light that had been previously covered by the black hole.

Day seemed to have turned into night totally, the dazzling starlight in the skies forming a spinning spiral shaped cloud. The cloud of light seemed to give forth a gentle energy reverberation, and as the star light shone down, the Destruction Barrier of the Blood Red Hell was somehow unable to maintain its position in the skies.

Zhou Weiqing's Astral Saint Energy was considered the purest power of creation. Creation and Destruction were antonyms, naturally opposing. However, even so they would only be able to restrict each other if they were equal. The Blood Red Hell powerhouses did have the Destruction Attribute, but it was only a small portion of their energies, added on to their original Attributes, and was rather impure. As for Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy, it was the purest possible, and was clearly not on the same level.

By activating the Astral Cloud, it also meant that Zhou Weiqing was directly linked to it. Leaving aside the strength and power of the energies, just the aura pressure of the Astral Saint Energy alone was enough to suppress the Destruction Attribute energies.

Without the fusing and overlaying stacking capabilities of the Destruction Attribute energies, it would be impossible for the Blood Red Hell powerhouses to activate attacks that were fused

together so perfectly. With just his attribute aura, Zhou Weiqing had caused these Blood Red Hell powerhouses to lose their greatest strength.

The Blood Red Hell First and Third Grand Elder were stunned. At this point, they finally looked at Zhou Weiqing in the distance.

The Astral Cloud swirled, lighting up around Zhou Weiqing's chest. His entire person hovered high up in the skies, the Second Grand Elder still held in his right hand, though his body hung limply there, without any signs of life.

It was as if Zhou Weiqing could not see the powerful enemies in front of him. Currently, he seemed to have entered a state of profound mysteries and understanding, his face calm and expressionless like nothing could bother him. Under the faint glow of the astral star light, his entire look became that of a king surveying his domain.

The aura of the Astral Saint Energy was not particularly strong, but the faint energy reverberations seemed to mute all of the attributes of those present, enemy and allies alike. More importantly, they were no longer able to connect to the atmospheric energies around them. In their eyes, it was as if Zhou Weiqing had become one with the heavens.

Wu Yunyue's eyes widened. His appraisal of Zhou Weiqing had already been extremely high, no matter in terms of intelligence, cunning or just strength, this youth was definitely top in the world. However, at this point, he realised that his judgement of Zhou Weiqing was still far from reality. The aura that he was giving off now was already far beyond his recognition.

How could this be possible?! What kind of energy was that!

Both sides were totally stunned. On the side of the Blood Red Hell, the First Grand Elder could clearly sense the Astral energies in the skies, and he dared not make a move easily. The rage from the deaths of the Second and Fourth Elder cooled slightly as he

calmed down.

As the saying goes, if things seem strange, something might be going wrong. Their greatest advantage had just been suppressed, and let alone facing off against Zhou Weiqing, even the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor and Demonic Emperor in front of them would not be so easily defeated. All of the Blood Red Hell powerhouses could clearly sense that the Destruction Attribute within their bodies were totally suppressed, and they could not unleash it properly. Ever since they had gained access to this powerful attribute, this was the first time this had happened. The Destruction Attribute actually seemed to be afraid of the Astral energies!

This news was just too important to the Blood Red Hell. The existence of a person like Zhou Weiqing was undoubtedly an immense threat to the entire Blood Red Hell and their future. At this point, both the First and Third Grand Elders were considering if they should dispatch someone to send news back to the Blood Red Hell at once. The reason why the Blood Red Hell had risen so swiftly and actually dared to contest the Heaven's Expanse Palace was because of this Destruction Attribute! If the power of the Destruction Attribute could be suppressed and limited, the affect it would have on the entire Blood Red Hell's power was not insignificant. Having accumulated strength for so many years to unleash their full power at this time, if they were to fail now, then the Blood Red Hell would be doomed.

Zhou Weiqing hovered in midair. The plan had been constructed by him, and everything was naturally still in his grasp. Killing the Fourth and Second Grand Elder, having his Master and the Demonic Emperor block the enemy's combined attack... all of this was to give him the time to activate and connect with the Astral Cloud.

This was only the second time Zhou Weiqing had actually used this ability in battle. Although the power of the Astral Cloud was

immense, being Zhou Weiqing's current strongest ace; in truth the entire process was long and he could not be interrupted during the whole thing, otherwise it would fail.

Alas, the Blood Red Hell powerhouses suffered the major disadvantage in that they did not know Zhou Weiqing at all. When the black hole had formed after the clash between both sides, it had also successfully concealed the energy reverberations of Zhou Weiqing activating and summoning the Astral Cloud. All of those reasons combined were required for his success. Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing had Devoured a Heavenly King and a Heavenly Emperor powerhouse one after the other, and as he swiftly transformed it to his own Saint Energy, it also allowed him to summon the Astral Cloud at a much faster speed than the previous time.

Eight beams of golden light came crashing down from the heavens at Zhou Weiqing's call. They simultaneously landed upon Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya, the Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue, and the six Heavenly Kings of the Heavenly Demon Sect.

The eight of them simultaneously felt an enormous amount of energy that was overflowing to the extreme, while lacking any elemental Attribute, enter their bodies. This power was simply too pure, and its greatest advantage lay in the fact that it was also very gentle, allowing them to absorb it directly.

This pure power also contained a unique energy reverberation. When it circulated through their bodies, their wounds were all healed considerably.

At the same time, Zhou Weiqing used a stance with his right hand. Dense light suddenly exploded in midair and then flew straight into his hand, while the Second Elder in Zhou Weiqing's other hand also vanished into a cloud of light. These two clouds of light were actually the Heavenly Core Nuclei of the Second and Fourth Grand Elders.

This were the Heavenly Core Nuclei of Heavenly Emperors! In the next instant, two rays of gold light soared into the skies, directly headed for the Astral Cloud. In the air, both Long Shiya and Wu Yunyue did not hesitate any longer, charging towards the Blood Red Hell powerhouses with full power.

With the support of Zhou Weiqing's Astral Saint Energy, not only were their wounds recovered, their greatly expended Heavenly Energy had now been recovered to a large degree.

It had to be known that after Zhou Weiqing activated and summoned the Astral Cloud, he could be considered the god and ruler of this patch of the world. Under such a circumstance, no one else could even dream of drawing the atmospheric energies here to replenish themselves without his permission. In contrast, the Heavenly Bow Empire powerhouses had his Astral Saint Energy to replenish their powers, and in terms of energy levels they undoubtedly now had an advantage.

Of course, even though they were not able to activate the atmospheric energies for their attacks, these Blood Red Hell Heavenly Kings and Heavenly Emperors were still extremely powerful. In that instant, another large battle exploded into action.

Right at this moment, two rays of gold light descended from the skies, the brilliant gold making it seem as if there were two sky pillars joining the heaven and earth, shining directly on Zhou Weiqing one after the other. Instantly, Zhou Weiqing's entire body turned a brilliant gold, countless star light welling into his body from the gold light.

Zhou Weiqing brandished his left hand once more. The Heavenly King Tianlei's Heavenly Core Nucleus appeared in the air before him. Although at this point Zhou Weiqing did not really place much importance on the feedback power of a Heavenly King Core Nucleus, even a fly was still meat, and the energies that consolidated a Heavenly Core Nucleus was not bad at all. As the

saying goes, many a little makes a mickle.

To raise one's cultivation in a battlefield was definitely something that was avoided for Heavenly Jewel Masters, as one would be at their frailest during the process of leveling up.

However, Zhou Weiqing was a totally different case. In the first place, his abilities were extremely unique. At this current moment, he had full control of the world around. Let alone the Blood Red Hell powerhouses would be hard pressed to send someone against him from the main fight; even if they could manage to get someone to attack him, it would not be easy to affect him at all.

At this level of fighting, Zong Stage powerhouses were totally useless. As such, although the Blood Red Hell side still had several of these Heavenly Jewel Masters, they dared not enter the fight. The side energy reverberations and repercussions from the clash between Heavenly Emperors would be enough to destroy them if they got too close.

The remaining strongest powers of the Blood Red Hell were the two Heavenly Emperor Grand Elders, as well as the seven Heavenly Kings.

If not for the Astral Cloud in the skies, with their fusion Destruction Attribute energies, they would definitely be able to beat the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor and Demonic Emperor's side easily.

Alas, the current situation had been reversed. Without the Destruction Attribute, they could only fight individually. On Long Shiya's side, they also had two Heavenly Emperors and six Heavenly Kings. Although they had one less Heavenly King, do not forget that the Heavenly Demon Sect had always been known for their single combat prowess, usually being stronger than those of the same level. The six Heavenly Kings also hated the Blood Red Hell powerhouses so much, and even though they were fighting six against seven, they seemed to be slightly on the advantage.

Sweat began to bead on the First and Third Grand Elder's foreheads. Currently, they will still be able to hold their own for now, as Long Shiya and Wu Yunyue were after all injured and unable to unleash their greatest powers. However, do not forget that there was still the existence of Zhou Weiqing up in the skies.

At this point, Zhou Weiqing had not started attacking them, but that did not mean he would hold back forever! With such a powerhouse hovering in the skies above them, the pressure it brought to the Blood Red Hell powerhouses could be imagined.

The only thing that the First and Third Grand Elders were praying for was that Zhou Weiqing could not maintain the Astral Cloud in the skies for too long. As long as this pressure and suppression on their Destruction Attributes vanished, they might even have the chance of reversing the situation and winning once more.

Alas, it did not take long for those hopes to be dashed.

The two golden glows in the sky did not actually last for a long time. As the golden glow slowly vanished, the original faint gold color that Zhou Weiqing's body had become grew stronger and overbearing, now turning into bright brilliant gold. The Astral Saint Energy surrounding his body had obviously become denser. By using Astral Feedback from the Heavenly Nucleus Cores of the two Blood Red Hell Heavenly Emperors, Zhou Weiqing had actually upgraded his cultivation base to the Maximum Level Heavenly King stage in this short period of time.

Chapter 761: Any Flames Would Be Meaningless (1 | 2 | 3)

(Lisa's Note: No, you didn't skip chapters. Just that the previous translation stopped at the previous chapter, and the other group continues at this chapter number. You didn't miss anything.)

The Saint Energy Galaxia was a form of Creation Energy. The fact that Zhou Weiqing managed to possess such an attribute could be absolutely described as 'complete madness'. Given the condition when the Heavenly Nucleus Core was sufficient, the upgrade speed of his cultivation base was just absurd. From the moment he possessed the Saint Energy Galaxia, he was no longer in the same power ranks granted by Dark Demon God Tiger.

It was due to the Destruction Attribute in the Heavenly Nucleus Cores of the Second and Fourth Elder, as well as the draining of a significant amount of energy from the purification of Star Reflection. Otherwise, with the concentration of Heavenly Energy by the Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouses, it would not be as simple as a mere upgrade to the Maximum Level of the Heavenly King Tier.

Although things had only progressed until that state, it was sufficient for Zhou Weiqing. A bright golden light had showered a layer of dazzling colors onto his dark golden Ringless Ground Purging Set. The rich Saint Energy wave soared in the sky, while healing and upgrading effects took place once again as eight starlights were released. With Zhou Weiqing's support, Long Shiya and the rest felt exuberant in an instant and suppressed their enemies below them steadily. They instantly felt motivated and suppressed their enemies into a state of disadvantage. Without a doubt, if the events unfolded according to the current situation, there would be no chance given to these Blood Red Hell

powerhouses at all.

In the air, Zhou Weiqing took a step out and arrived right above the battlefield. The Blood Red Hell's First and Third Elder glanced at each other. The First Elder nodded hard while the overbearing Heavenly Energy erupted, whereas the Third Elder's body expanded abruptly. Self-detonation - that was what the Third Elder was going for. Encountering the powerful Zhou Weiqing, they were left with no other option. If they did not do that before Zhou Weiqing acted, it might be difficult for them to find the opportunity to self-detonate. The Third Elder intended to give the First Elder and the rest a chance to survive by sacrificing himself. Besides, he could tell that Zhou Weiqing had completed his upgrade from their Heavenly Nucleus Cores. As long as his self-detonation succeeded, there would naturally not even be a Heavenly Nucleus Core remaining.

"Trying to self-detonate? You'll have to ask if I'll allow that to happen." Zhou Weiqing smiled lightly in the air while the glow of the nebula on his chest started spiraling intensely out of nowhere. Then, a golden light pillar descended onto his body, engulfing the body of the Third Elder within it altogether.

As the beam of the golden pillar did not possess any ability to attack, the Third Elder could not defend against it no matter how vigorous the Heavenly Energy on his body was.

In the next moment, the Third Elder was so shocked that he almost screamed out loud. He had found out that the Heavenly Nucleus Core he had been activating with all his might had calmed down just like that. Under the illumination of the golden light, it seemed to have gotten very comfortable.

That was his Origin Energy! However, at that very moment, the Third Elder found out that he had begun to lose control of it. Although it was not a complete loss of control, at least from what he was looking at, it was no longer possible for him to self-detonate. Furthermore, at least more than 30% of his power had

decreased.

Pu —

To create the opportunity for the Third Elder to self-detonate, the First Elder had been fighting against the combined attacks of the two Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouses by himself. There were the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor and Demonic Emperor who had just received upgrades from Zhou Weiqing. he could not possibly defend himself for an extended duration. At that moment, he spewed a large amount of blood. While he had been shot and flung toward the back, he happened to see the Third Elder being enveloped by Zhou Weiqing's galaxy light, along with his expression of not being to self-detonate.

'What kind of energy is that?' he thought. At that moment, the First Elder had fear in him. Although Zhou Weiqing had never performed any powerful attack skills since the beginning, his existence had completely suppressed all of the Blood Red Hell's powerhouses. If it was not for him, how would they be losing the battle that they had the absolute upper hand to? The First Elder hated Zhou Weiqing to the bone but there was nothing that he could do anymore. Moments later, he spewed blood again. The First Elder roared in rage when all of the sudden, a striking dark red flame exploded from his body. Even though as the terrifying dark red flame was out, the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor and Demonic Emperor dared not proceed with their attack and backed off immediately.

Long Shiya could not help but exclaim with a deep voice, "This guy's insane. He has actually burnt his own Heavenly Nucleus Core. These are the Flames of Life ignited by one's soul and Heavenly Nucleus Core."

Every Heavenly Jewel Master with the Fire Attribute possessed the Flames of Life which offered them a temporary elevation in their power by burning through their life force. However, a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse's Flames of Life was different

from those of an ordinary Heavenly Jewel Master.

While the Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse's Flames of Life might not erupt into a terrifying energy like how the self-detonation of Heavenly Nucleus Core did; the duration of its combustion was longer. Besides, it was not just the burning of Heavenly Nucleus Core. The soul was burnt together as well. Therefore, its impact was even more horrifying. Once the enemies had been scorched by the flames, the person's soul would be set ablaze as well.

This was the reason why Long Shiya and Wu Yunyue dared not pursue their pursuit. The Blood Red Hell's First Elder was putting his life on the line! With the differences being associated with their powers, the Flames of Life of an ordinary Heavenly Jewel Master could be stopped anytime. However, once a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse's Flames of Life had been ignited, it would be impossible to extinguish. Under such a condition, death would be certain upon making this choice. Furthermore, the soul would be disintegrated, which was far worse than self-detonating one's Heavenly Nucleus Core.

The First Elder witnessed Zhou Weiqing restricting Third Elders' self-detonation. He asked himself and thought his cultivation base was far higher than the Third Elder's, but he was unsure if Zhou Weiqing had the ability to restrict him for the second time. The death of the Second and Fourth Elder had a major impact on him. Besides, looking at the current situation, the worst case scenario would result in the total defeat of the Blood Red Hell! He then became radical and ignited his own Flames of Life.

As Long Shiya and Wu Yunyue retreated, the First Elder suddenly had no more opponents. He did not pursue the two Heavenly Emperors. Instead, he leaped into the air and dashed towards Zhou Weiqing. Eliminating Zhou Weiqing would be the only possibility for the Blood Red Hell to turn the tables around. The First Elder who was burning in dark red flames looked absolutely evil, like a

massive fireball. His clothes, hair, and skin were burning with the terrifying Flames of Life. He no longer exhibited the appearance of a human being. However, there was no doubt that he was the most overbearing one amongst all the Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouses.

"Be careful, Weiqing, " Long Shiya shouted and rose into the air immediately to chase after the First Elder. Wu Yunyue was just one step behind him. Although they were on the case, both of them did not dare to get close. They had only launched long-distance attacks in their attempt to stop the Blood Red Hell's First Elder. However, the First Elder was now in a state where did not mind losing his life anymore. With the support of the Flames of Life, his speed had peaked as he arrived before Zhou Weiqing almost instantly.

The nebula that was spiraling in the sky was now engulfed in a layer of faint dark red. One could only imagine how overbearing the energy that the First Elder released was. Zhou Weiqing's initial casual expression had now turned serious. Not only was he going to receive the full-blown attack of the First Elder, the Third Elder beneath him would possibly successfully perform self-detonation if he failed to put him under control. By then, nobody could guarantee the Heavenly Bow City's existence from the impact of a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse's self-detonation. His families and friends were in there - how could he possibly allow the Third Elder to complete his self-detonation?

The First Elder was very determined, which allowed him to find this opportunity that he did not see when everything seemed to be hopeless. The Dual God Strength Hammers appeared in Zhou Weiqing's hands, while the overbearing Saint Energy Galaxia covered his body with dazzling golden color. The nebula on his chest was spinning at full speed, making Zhou Weiqing look like as if his entire being was being enveloped by a layer of starlight. A layer of dark golden light then exploded from within his body.

Facing the First Elder who was ignited by the Flames of Life,

every single skill would not work on him at this moment. The only thing Zhou Weiqing could do was to fight him by force. He lifted up the dual hammers and swung them. At the same time the Saint Energy Galaxia erupted, he did not forget to retain the Third Elder who was beneath him. Although it sounded slow from the description, he had collided with Zhou Weiqing when the First Elder ignited his Flames of Life. However, their collision this time did not invoke any deafening sounds or energy waves, but only a soft sound as they collided.

Dark red flames abruptly combusted and engulfed Zhou Weiqing's body, along with the hysterical laughter of the First Elder.

"Kid, I'll have you die along with me, I'll burn you to death, and make these destructive flames explode on its own. All of you must die, every single one of you must die—"

"Are you daydreaming?"

The outsiders could not gauge the situation between Zhou Weiqing and the First Elder clearly. Amidst the terrifying destructive flames, Zhou Weiqing's Dual God Strength Hammer had struck onto the First Elder's shoulders accurately. However, the strange thing was that his brutal force did not manage to affect the First Elder who was burnt by the Flames of Life in any way at all. Instead, he was stuck with the First Elder's Flames of Life. The terrifying flames then engulfed Zhou Weiqing's entire body through the Dual God Strength Hammers.

The First Elder's face had been burnt to ash-black. The only thing that was visible was his eyes, filled with a grudge. Upon witnessing Zhou Weiqing being swallowed by the fearsome destructive flames, his heart sang with joy. At this point, how could he not figure out who the cause of all these events was? He had been tricked by Zhou Weiqing and was led by his nose. It was safe to say that the First Elder hated this young man immensely, that he absolutely had brought him along to his grave.

"Sigh —", a faint long sigh came from Zhou Weiqing who was being enveloped by the destructive flames.

The First Elder was stunned at that moment before he heard a deafening sound. A massive gush of energy waves flowed from beneath, propelling him and Zhou Weiqing higher into the sky.

As he looked downward subconsciously, the First Elder could not help but released a heart-wrenching cry, "Third—"

The Third Elder of Blood Red Hell could no longer answer him as his body had been smashed into a ball of meat.

Third Elder had never expected that the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor and Demonic Emperor who had leaped into the sky all ready to rescue Zhou Weiqing would suddenly alter their direction. They launched a full-blast attack on him instead. Just like what Zhou Weiqing was concerned about, he was ready to self-detonate anytime. His eyes turned completely red when the First Elder ignited his Flames of Life. Among the Four Elders, he had the worst temper. He had no room to bother about anything else anymore, seeing that all three of his brothers would die. As long as he could self-detonation successfully, the people of the Blood Red Hell could definitely escape. He wished to live and die along with his brothers. It would be best to kill Zhou Weiqing and all of his people here.

Therefore, he was all ready. As soon as Zhou Weiqing loosened his control on him, he would proceed to self-detonate without any hesitation. Unfortunately, the events did not unfold according to the wishes of the two Elders of Blood Red Hell. The two Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouses who were on the way to rescue Zhou Weiqing had suddenly changed directions and launched a full-blast strike towards the Third Elder. He now had no way of defending himself against the two Maximum Level Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouses even if he had anticipated their attack, let alone be caught unaware!

The Demonic Emperor and Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor had their powers elevated by Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy Galaxia while the Third Elder had been draining his energy all this while. Furthermore, he was being showered by Zhou Weiqing's Galaxia nebula glow; it was equivalent to his Heavenly Nucleus Core being controlled by Zhou Weiqing's Starcrux Saint Nucleus Core. Under such circumstance, how much of his powers could he release?

It made sense that the Third Elder had failed to complete his self-detonation and was crushed into a ball of meat under the assault of the two Heavenly Emperor-tier. Naturally, he launched his final attack and made Long Shiya and Wu Yunyue spew blood again. It was definitely a great deal to kill a Heavenly Emperor-tier in exchange for such a minor sacrifice.

Was it Long Shiya and Wu Yunyue's real intention to kill the Third Elder instead of rescuing Zhou Weiqing? Naturally, that was not the case. To them, Zhou Weiqing's life was far more important than the Blood Red Hell's Third Elder. They decided to do that as they heard Zhou Weiqing's telepathic message!

Two balls of dazzling starlights exploded in the sky, followed by a loud thud. The screams of the First Elder was heard along with the abrupt emergence of the Flames of Life. As the starlight rotated, Zhou Weiqing appeared in everyone's field of vision again. It seemed like he was not hurt at all as he held the Dual God Strength Hammers in his hands and floated majestically midair.

"Impossible, that's impossible..." First Elder's voice was filled with unwillingness. He remained in the appearance of a ball of flames, but his bodily functions were weakening from the combustion. As he was hit by Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy Galaxia, he was no longer able to deliver a strike as powerful as he did before.

"I shall explain everything to you and let you die in peace then," Zhou Weiqing smiled softly, "If you choose the other option, which is to pull everything on the line and attack me, I would be gravely

injured even if I was able to defend it, After all, I've yet to master this Star Energy of mine perfectly. What a pity! Why did you blame Tian Lei previously? You've forgotten that I'm immune to Fire Attribute - a pure immunity at that. As for the Destruction Attribute embedded in your Flames of Life, how is it an opponent of my Creation Saint Energy?"

"Sigh it's such a pity that this Heavenly Nucleus Core of yours isn't bad. Goodbye, dear Elder."

Rich Saint Energy Galaxia flowed from Zhou Weiqing's dual hammer and engulfed the remnants of First Elder's Flames of Life within it. As the nebula spiraled, the First Elder's life had vanished within a short period of time. Unfortunately, Star Reflection could not be conducted on his Heavenly Nucleus Core as it had lost much of its components due to the combustion of Flames of Life. Otherwise, with the First Elder's cultivation base, his Heavenly Nucleus Core would absolutely allow Zhou Weiqing to be upgraded further.

Looking at the battlefield below, Zhou Weiqing held his dual hammers by his side in a horizontal manner. As the Galaxia Saint glow was stone, it transformed into seven beams of light pillars and enveloped the remaining Blood Red Hell's seven Heavenly King-tier powerhouses within it as if it had grown a pair of eyes. The glow was slightly darker than the one that was used on the Third Elder but it was sufficient to handle these Heavenly King-tier powerhouses. What Zhou Weiqing was doing was to not leave any opportunity of self-detonation to them. The disability to self-detonate left them no way to escape. What he said to the First Elder had demonstrated his determination of not leaving anyone alive.

"Kill." A cold voice came out from Zhou Weiqing's mouth. With the restriction by Saint Energy Galaxia in place, his people no longer had any concerns and had launched their mightiest attack.

After Long Shiya and Wu Yunyue had conveniently gotten rid of

a few remnants attempting to escape, they had entered the main battlefield. With the presence of the two Heavenly Emperors, what chance would these Blood Red Hell powerhouses have?

Beams of starlight shot high up into the sky toward the dazzling nebula. It was a sign that this was the end of the battle. Looking at the disastrous scene and the bunch of crushed meat all around, the people from Heavenly Demon Sect had a feeling as if they were in a foreign world. Ming Yu and Ming Hua's father, Ming Wu, were among the six Heavenly King-tier powerhouses of Heavenly Demon Set. Everyone had their eyes on Zhou Weiqing, who was in the sky. They had a burning passion in their eyes. The mixed emotions of admiration, astonishment, and envy fluctuated intensely within their hearts.

All of the Heavenly Demon Sect's Heavenly King-tier powerhouses realized that they would definitely die when they saw so many people from the Blood Red Hell. As they followed Zhou Weiqing, Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue and Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya, they had no idea what tactics the former had in store, so it was only natural for them not to feel confident at all. If it was not for their absolute obedience to the Sect Master's orders and their dignity as Heavenly King-tier powerhouses, some of them would have long desired to escape.

Before the battle begun, Zhou Weiqing's series of charms, negotiation, and bets had confused these Heavenly Demon Sect powerhouses even further. They had no idea what this young man wanted. They did not even know what the level of Zhou Weiqing's cultivation base was and neither had Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue informed them of it. Wu Yunyue had his thoughts all laid out. If they happened to survive and win this battle, he would agree to any of Zhou Weiqing's terms. If they did not, what was the point of talking about all these?

The Heavenly Demon Sect powerhouses were shocked as they watched the series of performances exhibited by Zhou Weiqing.

They could not imagine a young man who looked only in his twenties to display various strong abilities including cunningness, power, and strategic calculations. Not only had he tricked his opponents into confusion, the two Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouses on their side had been following his commands. It was his very command which had led the people to victory.

They won, they had really won - it was an absolute victory! Although they had not sustained zero injuries, there was not a single person who was dead or crippled on their side.

Their opponents were the four Elders and eight Heavenly Kings of the Blood Red Hell who were blessed with the Destruction Attribute! Even without taking the Heavenly Zong-tier powerhouses into account, these forces were so much more powerful than the ones who had attacked their Heavenly Demon Sect back then. Furthermore, this key of absolute victory relied on Zhou Weiqing alone. The dazzling glow released from Zhou Weiqing had even led them to ignore the presence of Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya.

Without taking other factors into account, Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy Galaxia alone had completely suppressed the Destruction Attribute and this had filled the hearts of these Heavenly Demon Sect powerhouse with elation. Without the suppression and integration of Destruction Attribute, they were able to release their power at full potential. Why would they fear the people of Blood Red Hell anymore? The final battle had also completely rectified this issue.

Zhou Weiqing remained floating mid-air while beams of gold from the Star Reflection shone on him one after another. At that moment, the people could see roughly that there was blood flowing out from the corners of his lips. They could not help themselves from being concerned about him. Encountering the Blood Red Hell's Destruction Attribute, his Star Energy was the only thing that could fight against it! If anything were to happen to

him, would they still be able to defend themselves against these Blood Red Hell powerhouses?

The sudden uprising of the Dandun Empire had a significant connection with the Blood Red Hell. The Blood Red Hell's ability was not restricted to those people that they sent. Although this time the Blood Red Hell was in devastation, nobody could guarantee how many Blood Red Hell powerhouses would they encounter next time.

Yes, Zhou Weiqing was wounded. He was injured when the First Elder ignited his Flames of Life. That was right. No matter how powerful the First Elders' flames were, it could not break Zhou Weiqing's immunity to Fire Attribute as long as it did not exceed the powers of one who was at the Heavenly God Tier while the Destruction Attribute was suppressed by the Saint Energy Galaxia. However, one should not forget that the overbearing Flames of Life that was released with the will to kill could attack a human's soul.

Zhou Weiqing's injury came from the ones he sustained in his soul. However, he had been enduring the pain earlier as he was afraid to affect his morale. Now that the battle was over, he could not help but spew a mouthful of blood after releasing Star Reflection. He was seeing black, and his floating body was unstable due to the dizziness that he felt. Fortunately, Zhou Weiqing's soul had long entered the Heavenly Emperor-tier or even higher. He had no idea to what extent of strength had his soul evolved to. With the help of the dragon Hui Yao as well as his self-upgrade from consolidating the Saint Nucleus Core, it had caused his Soul Energy to elevate continuously. Moreover, he killed the First Elder within the shortest period of time. Although he was wounded, it was not fatal.

However, Zhou Weiqing's body started to shiver vigorously in the air at the next second. A series of unstable golden glows exploded from within his body. Oh no, even Zhou Weiqing was a

little scared this time. He suddenly realized that he should not have used Star Reflection on the Heavenly Nucleus Cores of these Heavenly Kings as well as the three Elders at that time. It was because he had already arrived at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly King Tier. With the Heavenly Emperor and seven Heavenly Kings' Star Reflection, his cultivation base had instantly escalated to the next level, which was the Heavenly Emperor.

Yes, Zhou Weiqing's cultivation base was upgrading to Heavenly Emperor-tier when his soul was wounded. Naturally, it was good if he was being upgraded to Heavenly Emperor-tier under the usual circumstance. The power of the new level of Saint Energy Galaxia could only be told after Zhou Weiqing tested it. However, it was extremely dangerous to level up in his current condition.

No matter the breakthrough from a cultivation base of nine jewels to the Heavenly King Tier or from the Heavenly King Tier to the Heavenly Emperor Tier, it was not a simple upgrade of cultivation base, neither was it mere changes in the Heavenly Nucleus Core. It was an evolution from the inside out, from the head down to the toe, from within the soul to the body outside, and from the meridians to the skeletons. It was a total upgrade to the body.

In such a process of evolution, although the pain inflicted was not too much, it was an escalation process nonetheless. For a damaged soul to be upgraded, there was a risk of his soul collapsing!

'What should I do?' At that moment, Zhou Weiqing was stunned as he had never encountered such a situation so it was only natural for him not to know how to handle the matter. It was impossible to reject the Star Energy reflected at him and his body had already begun to transform. His soul had also started to evolve along with the excruciating pain. Zhou Weiqing could only feel that his consciousness was fading. While his spiritual whirlpool was going through an intense spiral, cracks appeared one after another in the

depths of his soul, resulting in the fading of his consciousness.

The Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya and Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue had been observing Zhou Weiqing. From their perspective, the golden glow on Zhou Weiqing had become brighter and brighter since the Star Reflection. A faint layer of red began to surface on top of the dazzling golden glow and fused to become an even more colorful reddish gold. The aura radiating from his entire being had become more and more overbearing.

'Is he leveling up? Into Heavenly Emperor-tier?', Long Shiya and Wu Yunyue were stunned as they watched. One must know that when the battle had just begun, his cultivation base was nothing more than that of an Upper-Level Heavenly King-tier powerhouse. He had just upgraded to the Heavenly Emperor Tier just like this right after a single battle. On the other hand, they had spent tens of years to complete their evolution to achieve Heavenly Emperor-tier. Zhou Weiqing's upgrade speed had completely surpassed their knowledge of Heavenly Jewel Masters.

"This isn't right. Something's not right about this." Long Shiya naturally knew his beloved disciple more than Wu Yunyue did and found out about the changes in Zhou Weiqing's situation as soon as it happened. Although Zhou Weiqing was in the progress of upgrading, his face was as pale as paper, while his body did not stop shivering. His body floating in the sky and the reddish golden glow radiating from his body was extremely unstable. It exuded a feeling that he would collapse any minute.

This was definitely like the conditions exhibited during the regular process of a Heavenly King Tier being upgraded to a Heavenly Emperor Tier. Long Shiya's facial expression changed immediately. To him, even the annihilation of the entire Blood Red Hell could not be compared to the safety of his beloved disciple! Long Shiya could also roughly guess that Zhou Weiqing must have had encountered some problems during his previous fight with the First Elder. Although he could not pinpoint the exact

issue with Zhou Weiqing, there were wounds on his body.

Furthermore, destructive disaster could be brought upon a Heavenly Jewel Master who was forcing his way to an upgrade, even if the injury was minor.

What caused the greatest pain to the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor was that in such a situation, there was no way for him to help Zhou Weiqing at all. If Zhou Weiqing's cultivation base was lower, for instance, the time when he was still breaking through to the Seventh Jewel from the Sixth Jewel cultivation base, Long Shiyu would still be able to aid him with his cultivation base. However, he was now upgrading to the Heavenly Emperor Tier, albeit a Heavenly Emperor Tier with Saint Energy Galaxia. In such conditions, Long Shiyu knew that there was nothing he can do for Zhou Weiqing. The evolution of Zhou Weiqing's cultivation base might very well be an incomparable existence. He would only accelerate the crisis and even be devoured by Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy Galaxia if he were to interfere during the process.

Just as Long Shiyu was losing his patience, two silhouettes dashed from the sky like lightning from far away. The two silhouettes were extremely fast and they looked like they were connected. A massive pair of green golden wings flapped continuously and soon arrived above the battlefield.

"Who's that?" Wu Yunyue shrieked and had almost failed to restrain himself while Long Shiyu held onto him immediately.

"They're one of us. They're here to assist Zhou Weiqing in his breakthrough. Everyone, please don't act hastily," Long Shiyu's words managed to calm the group of Heavenly Demon Sect powerhouses.

Soon, the two silhouettes arrived before Zhou Weiqing. The owner of the gigantic pair of green massive wings swung hard at Zhou Weiqing as another person that was in his embrace was flung. It was strange that Zhou Weiqing's powerful golden Saint

Energy did not reject the two outsiders. It was a lady who was flung away. She then floated in the sky with her white dress, looking like a goddess on earth.

In a flash, she appeared before Zhou Weiqing. Without hesitation, she stretched her arms out wide and hugged Zhou Weiqing's neck tightly. At the same time, she lifted her head and kissed his lips. The two ladies who came out of nowhere were naturally Shangguan Bing'er and Tian'er. Although they did not join the battle, they had been watching closely with the Heavenly Bow Empire powerhouses. As everything was over and done with, the loud thuds had naturally vanished but the glow from the nebula in the sky was still there.

Right at that time, Tian'er had an extremely intense feeling out nowhere. She could sense that something was wrong with Zhou Weiqing's condition. As the both of them cultivated their Saint Energy together, it was only natural for their hearts to be connected, more so within such a close distance. Therefore, Tian'er had asked Shangguan Bing'er to send her here immediately. As soon as Tian'er kissed Zhou Weiqing, his shivers became even more vigorous. However, he then held Tian'er's slender waist while an immense reddish golden glow that surrounded the both of them started rotating. It was so strong that even Shangguan Bing'er was swept along.

Naturally, the Saint Energy Galaxia would not harm the two ladies as their bodies were filled with Saint Energy as well. Although they were not as powerful as Zhou Weiqing was, how would this energy of the same source and with the similar nature of Creation Energy harm each other?

Shangguan Bing'er had also gotten used to cultivating along with Zhou Weiqing during their travels together to the Mysterious Heavenly Mainland. Naturally, she would not miss such an excellent opportunity. She stretched her wings out wide and kept her body afloat as she began to cultivate while feeling the powerful

Saint Energy Galaxia surrounding her.

On the other hand, it was a different situation happening to Tian'er and Zhou Weiqing. Almost without hesitation, Zhou Weiqing had channeled the massive Saint Energy Galaxia, which was about to be upgraded, to Heavenly Emperor-tier into Tian'er's body.

With a large amount of energy injected from Zhou Weiqing, Tian'er's body instantly turned into a reddish gold shade. Zhou Weiqing began to lose consciousness now. Furthermore, he was being led by Tian'er where he had no idea if the baby in Tian'er's tummy would be hurt by them doing so. He had lost his ability to judge, and all he was doing was to find a way to vent subconsciously.

Something even odder happened next. As Tian'er's body turned a reddish gold as well, Tian'er's belly had actually lit up. A layer of mysterious white color that had never been seen before appeared on her tummy. It was a small ball of glow which appeared to be pure white. As white color appeared, the powerful Saint Energy Galaxia of Zhou Weiqing had actually dimmed and lost its color. All of the reddish golden colors seemed to appear more harmonious in an instant. It was no longer circulating around Zhou Weiqing, but instead, it started circulating the tiny ball of white glow with that as its center.

Zhou Weiqing was finally relieved that the massive amount of upgrading Saint Energy had left his body. His soul started to be stable again. All he needed now was time to heal his soul, which was not difficult. As he opened his eyes by instinct, Zhou Weiqing saw himself being kissed by Tian'er. Suddenly, his body shook vigorously while his eyes were filled with surprise and pain. How did he inject such an abundant amount of energy into Tian'er's body?

If Tian'er was not pregnant, what he did would benefit Tian'er as she would gain her energy from it. As the Saint Energy was created

by the both of them, Tian'er did not reject any of the Saint Energy at all. However, it was a different situation now as she was pregnant now. Would receiving this massive amount of energy impact injure the baby? If that was the case, Zhou Weiqing would definitely regret for the rest of his life.

However, Zhou Weiqing soon found out that something was not right. He was surprised to discover that a unique energy that made him comfortable, much as if he was back in the core of the universe, was continuously released by Tian'er who was in his embrace. The gush of energy was weak but it was no doubt a supreme energy. At that moment, all of the Saint Energy Galaxia seemed to become its people. Even the nebula in the sky had stopped spiraling at that moment. A massive amount of Star Energy was poured from the sky, covering Zhou Weiqing, Tian'er, and Shuangguan Bing'er within it.

'Isn't this Star Energy from the Star Reflection's energy?'. However, Zhou Weiqing did not use the Heavenly Nucleus Core to conduct Star Reflection this time! This energy was completely gifted to them from the countless stars in the sky. The gentle energy first rotated around Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er as it surrounded them. Under the gush of Star Energy, Zhou Weiqing's broken soul had recovered to its normal state almost immediately.

Zhou Weiqing found out that the gush of Saint Energy was different from the Star Reflection that he released earlier. There was a faint white within the golden starlight. Although the white was faint, it was the one that recovered his soul quickly. Otherwise, Zhou Weiqing might not even realize the existence of such a unique energy. Next, the reddish gold that he inserted into Tian'er's body was poured out and injected back into him. That filled Zhou Weiqing's body with reddish gold glow once again.

As Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's bodies were against each other, Shangguan Bing'er who was in the sky not far away from them was the only one who witnessed the odd white glow that was released

from Tian'er's tummy.

Chapter 762: The Evolution to Heavenly Emperor! (1)

However, they did not even have a chance to feel shocked as the Saint Energy Galaxia descended from the sky and continuously rained on them. It eliminated all the impurities in their bodies. With the support from the energy of the mysterious Star Reflection, the two ladies' cultivations increased at a shocking speed.

Because Shangguan Bing'er had followed Zhou Weiqing to the Mysterious Heavenly Mainland, her cultivation base was higher than Tian'er. However, her current cultivation speed was no match for Tian'er.

Followed by a soft moan from Tian'er, a faint starlight radiated from her body. Striking colors mixed with nebula energy also appeared on her chest. The striking starlight was circulating at a high speed. With every spin, it absorbed as much Saint Energy Galaxia in the air as it could. She had also absorbed a portion of the reddish golden energy released by Zhou Weiqing during his elevation process.

Long Shiya's jaw almost dropped when he witnessed the scene in the sky. He exclaimed, "Heavens! The two ladies are solidifying their Heavenly Nucleus Core. We've been living our lives in vain. If they succeed, there'll be three Heavenly King-tier powerhouses in their twenties."

He could see that Zhou Weiqing's condition had stabilized with Tian'er's assistance.

Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue said bitterly, "It's not three Heavenly King-tier powerhouses. It's two Heavenly Kings and a Heavenly Emperor in his twenties. Heavenly Emperor! Do you know how much I feel like yelling at someone right now? What the f*ck! Why didn't I meet this youngster earlier? If I did, there's a

possibility that he might wind up being my disciple instead."

Long Shiya spared a glance at Wu Yunyue and said gleefully, "You've no choice in this. I'm luckier, and I have a better eye for discerning people with great talent. Now, no one can snatch my beloved disciple away from me. On the mainland, no one else is qualified to be his teacher anymore. Wu, it's not yet time for us to rest. Ask your Heavenly King subordinates to leave. We'll protect the three of them. As long as they succeed in upgrading, we'll no longer have anything to worry about even if Blood Red Hell sends another batch of their men here."

Although Wu Yunyue was really jealous of Long Shiya, he was in high spirit at this moment. When he was looking at Zhou Weiqing who was about to evolve into a Heavenly Emperor, he came to a conclusion. He felt relieved after the decision had been made. It had been a long time since he was in such a great mood.

He said while laughing out loud, "Brother Long, what's your purpose of becoming a Heavenly Emperor or Heavenly King-tier powerhouse? Even if the Blood Red Hell has been concealing much of their powers all these years, they'll definitely be dealt a fatal blow this time. Moreover, since we've annihilated all of them, who knows how long it'll take for the news to reach them. Besides, I believe that even if Blood Red Hell has gotten hold of the information, they won't dare to send anyone here. The Heavenly Bow Empire is different from the Heavenly Demon Sect. Zhou Weiqing has good relationships with the Heaven's Expanse Palace and the Heavenly Snow Mountain. Blood Red Hell has already failed the first time. Even if they wish to invoke another battle, they have to take the power of those two Great Saint Lands into consideration as well."

As he was speaking, Wu Yunyue had already relayed his order to dismiss the remaining few Heavenly Kings. At the same time, he and Long Shiya guarded the place together as they observed the miraculous scene of Zhou Weiqing's breakthrough. At that

moment, Wu Yunyue and his six Heavenly Kings had an odd feeling. All of the injuries on their bodies were healing at a terrifying speed. Apart from that, there was a faint feeling that their personal cultivation base was rising as well. Without a doubt, this was all due to the Saint Energy Galaxia that Zhou Weiqing released into their bodies. Due to the infusion of energy, their personal energy had improved significantly.

They developed a deep admiration for Zhou Weiqing and no longer had any doubts because of the wonders that Zhou Weiqing had demonstrated. Wu Yunyue believed that his decision would not encounter any obstacles at all. The starlight in the sky remained for a day and a night before it gradually dimmed. The first few whose glow started to dim were Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er. It took Zhou Weiqing a very long time to advance to the Heavenly King Tier back then. However, he had the Star Reflection's support in the sky this time. The fact was that this breakthrough was fueled by the Star Reflection energy that he had accumulated himself. That was the reason why the speed of his breakthrough was a lot faster. The most important factor was Tian'er. The mysterious energy that radiated from Tian'er allowed Zhou Weiqing to complete the qualitative changes of his own nebula in such a short period of time.

At that moment, the Starcrux Saint Nucleus Core in Zhou Weiqing's body changed. The ball of Starcrux Saint Nucleus Core had turned into an actual nebula. Although there was a nebula in his body previously, the Starcrux Saint Nucleus Core was the core while the Saint Energy Galaxia revolved around it. However, it was now a complete Starcrux Saint Nucleus Core that was in the form of a nebula completely. Apart from that, Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy Galaxia underwent the biggest change. Its original golden color had changed into a reddish golden color. The changes in color also signified the qualitative changes in his power as well.

Zhou Weiqing could not tell the extent of improvement the

power in his cultivation base. All he knew was that if he was to judge in terms of energy strength, his current level was definitely not at the Lower-Level Heavenly Emperor Tier but at least at the Mid-Level Heavenly Emperor Tier. The reason why it rose to such a degree at once was due to the Star Reflection brought upon by Tian'er.

The benefits Tian'er gained were much greater than what Zhou Weiqing had gained. Initially, she still had a long way to go before reaching the Heavenly King-tier cultivation base. However, she managed to break through this time and upgraded instantly. The progress was so simple that even Zhou Weiqing was a little envious of her. Her breakthrough was even faster than the time Zhou Weiqing had his breakthrough on the Mysterious Heavenly Mainland.

When Zhou Weiqing regained his consciousness, he first looked at Shangguan Bing'er who was nearby. She was still in the process of upgrading. He also saw Shangguan Xue'er and Shangguan Fei'er but he had no idea when they had gotten here. At that moment, they were both being condensed within the Saint Energy Galaxia in the sky. After that, he started caressing Tian'er's tummy.

"Tian'er, how is it? Is our child all right?"

Upon hearing Zhou Weiqing's concerned voice, Tian'er instinctively looked at her tummy. To be honest, she did not think about it too much when she and Shangguan Bing'er came to rescue Zhou Weiqing. All she had on her mind was to rescue him and to help him complete his breakthrough. Tian'er had only realized the danger when Zhou Weiqing released a massive amount of Saint Energy into her body. What if the massive amount of energy that entered her body was harmful to the child?

However, Tian'er made up her mind at that moment. They could always conceive another child but she would never get her husband back if she lost him. Therefore, at that instant, Tian'er decided to bear the pain in her heart and stayed on. Something

happened as soon as she made that decision. As if her body could feel the sadness in her heart, her tummy moved slightly and Saint Energy that was even more powerful than Zhou Weiqing's appeared. Tian'er was very sure that the changes in the nebula, as well as her tremendous breakthrough, came from the gush of energy in her tummy.

As she gently caressed her tummy, Tian'er was still stunned as she mumbled, "The child is fine. Better than before. The child seems to be absorbing a lot of Saint Energy Galaxia! I couldn't feel his life aura previously but I can feel it clearly now. If I'm not mistaken, the child may arrive earlier than the date father gave us."

Zhou Weiqing was relieved to hear that the child was fine. At that moment, he was so emotional that he was completely speechless as he hugged Tian'er tightly. The nebula in the sky was fading gradually, it was a sign that it was disappearing. Zhou Weiqing looked up at the sky, a reddish gold glow flashed in his eyes as a dazzling reddish golden starlight emitted from his body and enveloped the Shangguan Triplets within it.

Shangguan Xue'er and Shangguan Fei'er had arrived late. They were not here to take advantage of the situation but to help them if something went wrong because they had Saint Energy in their bodies as well. Although Shangguan Xue'er could not fly yet, with the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor's help, she could float in the sky temporarily. The two sisters were ready to inject Saint Energy into Zhou Weiqing whenever he needed it.

Perhaps it was true, no good deed goes unrewarded. Although they did not get the first course, they did not miss the main course. Taking in the powerful Saint Energy Galaxia in the air and the Saint Energy's reaction in their bodies, they naturally would not give up such a great opportunity because they were smart. The only downside was that they were late so it was impossible for them to break through to Heavenly King Tier now. Nevertheless,

both of them had reached Maximum Level Ninth Jewel.

Under the protection of Zhou Weiqing's reddish-gold light, Shangguan Xue'er and Shangguan Fei'er soon woke up from their cultivation. They would not fall with the protection of Zhou Weiqing's reddish-gold Saint Energy. Zhou Weiqing found out that if before this he could control Atmospheric Energy and even the Atmospheric Energy that Heavenly King and Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouses were controlling when he was at Heavenly King Tier, then now he could directly control the Saint Energy within heaven and earth.

He could not feel it at all when he was at Heavenly King Tier. Breaking through to the Heavenly Emperor Tier had increased his perception immensely. His ability to sense became broader in scope and was more detailed. He could clearly feel all the energy waves in the air. He could even sense the trace amount of Saint Energy that existed on heaven and earth. The Saint Energy had been lingering in the air ever since the world was created. Its amount was one-thousandth of normal Atmospheric Energy. Even a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse would not be able to sense its existence. After Zhou Weiqing had broken through to the Heavenly Emperor Tier and his Nucleus Core transformed into an actual Nebula Saint Nucleus Core, he could finally feel the pure Creation Energy. The Perception would greatly benefit his cultivation in the future.

Chapter 763: The Evolution to Heavenly Emperor! (2)

Shangguan Bing'er needed some time to wake up as it was difficult to upgrade to the Heavenly King Tier after all. She did not have the extremely pure Saint Energy like Tian'er, hence she needed some time. Zhou Weiqing brought the three ladies down from the sky and he let out a long sigh after they descended to the ground. He held Tian'er tightly in his arms and kissed her softly on her forehead. If Tian'er did not get to him in time, he would have been badly injured even if he did not die. As soon as something went wrong with his soul, no matter how miraculous his Saint Energy was, it could have resulted in death for him. Although the Star Reflection was good, it also had to be used at the right time!

Although the upgrade was successful, Zhou Weiqing was exhausted at the moment. It might seem like he had everything under control in the battle today. However, the reality was he had expended a lot of effort. He could not afford to make any mistakes or else it would be disastrous. Especially in the beginning, if he did not bait them by surrendering as a whole, it would have been impossible for him to get the opportunity to fight one-on-one with the people from Blood Red Hell.

Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya and Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue approached him together. Long Shiya's eyes were sparkling when he looked at his beloved disciple. He could not be more satisfied with him. Wu Yunyue smiled and bowed slightly to Zhou Weiqing, "Weiqing, thank you very much. I agree with the suggestion that you mentioned earlier."

Zhou Weiqing forced out a smile and said, "Alright, let's talk about it when we get back. I need to rest."

The three ladies around him felt sorry when they saw how exhausted he was. Shangguan Xue'er looked at Shangguan Fei'er

and said, "Go back with Tian'er. We'll stay here to look after third sister."

"Alright." Zhou Weiqing nodded to them. At that moment, he felt like he could not open his eyes at all. The energy drain and the upgrade overwhelmed and exhausted him. All he wanted to do at that moment was to get a good sleep.

When he got back to the Heavenly Bow City, Zhou Weiqing fell asleep almost as soon as he went into his room. He slept for a day and a night. The Heavenly Bow Empire went to work immediately. They locked down all information regarding the battle earlier so that Blood Red Hell would only receive the news at a later time. At the same time, Shangguan Xue'er personally wrote a letter to the Heaven's Expanse Palace to inform them about what happened. However, it was hard to guess what Shangguan Xue'er's priorities were because she neglected to inform them of the most important news; Zhou Weiqing had broken through to the Heavenly Emperor Tier. Perhaps she had subconsciously treated him like family ever since he had helped in alleviating her stress.

Shangguan Bing'er's breakthrough was still ongoing. It had not ended even after Zhou Weiqing had woken up from his sleep.

"That felt so good." Zhou Weiqing woke up from his sleep and stretched his body with all his might.

"Wait, that's not right." He hid his aura instinctively and looked at his surroundings. Tian'er who was lying next to him was woken up by his actions. She could not help but burst out laughing when she looked at Zhou Weiqing.

"Our bedroom might turn into ashes if you continue stretching a little longer."

Since Zhou Weiqing had just entered the Heavenly Emperor Tier, he had yet to have control over his aura. The simple act of him

stretching had caused a rampage in the Atmospheric Energy where massive amounts of Atmospheric Energy rushed towards him. If he did not stop in time, the building might have collapsed directly from the overly rich and dense Atmospheric Energy.

Zhou Weiqing pulled Tian'er who was laughing into his embrace softly. "Thank you, Tian'er. If it wasn't for you the other day, perhaps..."

Tian'er rolled her eyes with annoyance, "Do we need to thank each other? Just don't leave me behind next time when you head out."

Zhou Weiqing then placed his hand carefully on Tian'er's tummy, "Is our child really alright?"

Tian'er nodded and placed her hand on top of Zhou Weiqing's. There was a motherly glow on her beautiful face.

"Not only is our child fine, it's a lot more active than before. It didn't move at all previously but now it'll move occasionally. What's with the Saint Energy the other day? How did our child release such a pure energy? It seems like it's even purer than your Saint Energy after upgrading to the Heavenly Emperor Tier."

Zhou Weiqing forced out a smile and said, "I've no idea but I'm sure if I can trade my Saint Energy with an energy so pure, I'll definitely surpass a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse. I've always thought that I'm talented but it seems like there's a huge gap between me and our child! This little fellow is already so powerful even before it's even born. Won't it surpass my ability once it's born?"

The both of them looked at each other, feeling confused. They found it hard to believe that a child that was just born would possess an ability that was beyond that of a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse. However, the extremely pure Saint Energy it gave off could not be simulated. Zhou Weiqing knew even his father-in-law, the Mountain Lord of Heavenly Snow Mountain, pure energy

that the child released seemingly out of nowhere.

Zhou Weiqing lay down with Tian'er in his embrace. He started touching her as he lowered his head next to her ear and said, "My dear, I want to go inside and see our child."

"You're so naughty..." Tian'er was so shy that her face turned red.

"I'll be careful. Look, none of you accompanied me these past few days. I've been miserable! Come here..."

A faint scent of arousal was released into the air. A pregnant woman could get sexually aroused as well, in fact sometimes even more than a normal woman. Zhou Weiqing took her gently as the scent of arousal filled the entire room.

In the Heavenly Bow Empire Admiral meeting room, Zhou Weiqing instructed someone to get the Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue to see him. The most important battle had ended so it was time to settle the other matter. Besides, that was also the main reason why Zhou Weiqing came back this time. What he said to Di Feng Ling was not a joke, it was his goal.

Although the Heavenly Bow Empire now possessed a powerful army, it was still a small country after all and the foundation was not deep enough. Zhou Weiqing was not greedy but he sure hoped that his homeland could grow. It was absolute, like how greatness was dependent on one's ability. If the Heavenly Bow Empire could have a Saint Land of its own, who would dare to casually invade in the future? Not only that, Zhou Weiqing wanted to build places like a Storing Palace and a Consolidated Pavilion in the Heavenly Bow Empire. Perhaps it would not instantly attract many Heavenly Jewel Masters here. However, it was crucial for a country's development.

Wu Yunyue was all smiles as he walked into the room and said to Zhou Weiqing, "Weiqing, you've gotten your rest? I hope all is well with you."

Zhou Weiqing chuckled, "My rest wasn't bad or I wouldn't have invited you here so soon."

The truth was Wu Yunyue had long noticed that Zhou Weiqing was up when he released a wave of Heavenly Emperor-tier energy as he woke up. This kid took almost four hours to get here, how was that considered soon?

Naturally, Wu Yunyue did not expose him. To him, this Zhou Weiqing kid had his share of flaws, being promiscuous in particular. However, in this world, every powerhouse had a companion from the opposite sex with them. It was the same in the Heavenly Beast world. The more powerful a Heavenly Beast was, the more companions it would have. Zhou Weiqing was undoubtedly powerful. Wu Yunyue would have found it strange if he only had one woman.

Wu Yunyue instantly cut to the chase as he said, "Weiqing, I've told you the other day that I agreed with your suggestion. Ever since we've defeated the Blood Red Hell, I've discussed this with everyone. Everyone agreed to you taking over our Heavenly Demon Sect."

Zhou Weiqing chuckled and said, "Sir, you're too kind. If that's the case, there's naturally no problem on my side. Regarding the new name of our Heavenly Demon Sect, do you have any suggestions on what we should change it to?"

Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue smiled even wider when he heard Zhou Weiqing said the word 'our'. He had given up on managing the Heavenly Demon Sect, why would he still bother with the matter of who should rename it?

"Sect Master, it's better if you come up with the name. However, I'd love to be the Deputy Sect Master! Hehe."

Zhou Weiqing smiled secretly. It made sense that this sly fox still could not relinquish all of his power.

"I've thought about it before. I started off by depending on the Peerless Unit. It was then renamed as the Peerless Regiment. Although Physical Jewel Masters occupy most of the Peerless Regiment, the Peerless Unit is made up of Jewel Masters. Since we've decided to merge the Heavenly Demon Sect, let's just call it Peerless Sect. What do you think?"

"Peerless Sect?" Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue sighed secretly. He knew that as soon as he gave his consent, the Heavenly Demon Sect would be history. However, he had no other choice now. He could at least keep some of his dignity and preserve the Heavenly Demon Sect's legacy if he collaborated with Zhou Weiqing. If he gave this collaboration up, the other Saint Lands might not show mercy to the Heavenly Demon Sect and Blood Red Hell might attack them.

Zhou Weiqing was calm as he watched the Demonic Emperor struggle with his emotions. Nobody would be happy to have a Saint Land of an entire generation change its name.

"Father-in-law, there's another matter that I need to discuss with you. Yuehan had given her body to me so I'll definitely take responsibility for that. Besides, I like her very much. All of my wives come from Saint Lands so I can't be taking sides. This is my plan. It won't be long until the next Saint Land competition. I'm planning to organize my wedding directly after the competition and marry all of them. They'll all be on equal standing. There won't be a ranking system and the matter of who comes first. What do you think?"

Chapter 764: The Evolution to Heavenly Emperor! (3)

Zhou Weiqing had completely awakened Wu Yunyue by addressing him as his father-in-law. Yes! This young man was his son-in-law after all. What more could he ask for since the heir of the Heavenly Demon Sect would be his grandchildren if he passed the sect down to Zhou Weiqing? Besides, even though this young man's future was unpredictable, he was sure that as long as Zhou Weiqing was alive, he would definitely surpass the Mountain Lord of Heavenly Snow Mountain one day and would need his guidance.

"Sure. It's all set then. My child Yuehan has her heart set on you since the beginning. Weiqing, please treat her well. I'll call you by your name in private but in public, I'll address you as Sect Master."

Zhou Weiqing chuckled and said, "Then our Peerless Sect shall be established today. Dear father-in-law, I know you feel sorry because this is something you've built throughout your life. I can guarantee that you won't regret the decision that you made today. Very soon in the future, the Peerless Sect will definitely become the most powerful in the Boundless Mainland. It would truly be the No.1 Saint Land."

Wu Yunyue's body shivered slightly and there was a sparkle in his eyes. He nodded to Zhou Weiqing and said, "I'll wait for that day to come. I'll get Ming Yu to pass you the name list of the members who survived. From now on, they're all your subordinates."

"Thank you, father-in-law, for fulfilling my wish." Zhou Weiqing then bowed at Wu Yunyue.

Wu Yunyue stood up and left after nodding at him. He needed time to heal the wound in his heart. It was a tough decision for him to make but he strongly believed that his decision was right. At least among the Saint Lands, he was the only one who merged with

Zhou Weiqing. Perhaps since his daughter would only come after the rest of his wives, his sincerity was incomparable to the Heaven's Expanse Palace and Mountain Lord of Heavenly Snow Mountain. Perhaps things would prove itself in the Saint Land competition that was happening soon.

"The discussion is over?" Long Shiya's magnetic voice sounded. His plump body appeared in the room in a flash.

"Master." Zhou Weiqing greeted his teacher. He helped Long Shiya to the main seat as he chuckled.

"Why is it that I feel that your smile is very cunning!" Long Shiya teased.

Zhou Weiqing chuckled again, "How is it even cunning? Even if it is, I learned it from you! I'm your disciple after all."

Long Shiya said in an annoyed voice "Oh please, I didn't teach you this. Your mischievous behavior was taught by Mu En. I'm considered kind because I didn't teach him a lesson. Though I must admit, your father has a broad vision. Although you bastards are always doing embarrassing things, at least your survival skills will grow even stronger. Tell me, what do you need from me. Stop smiling at me like that. I'm scared."

Zhou Weiqing switched to a playful expression, "Master, you know me so well! Actually, it's nothing much. It's just that I think you're not young anymore. It's not good for you to wander around. I'll need to plan for your retirement as your disciple! Why don't you stay here? Don't leave anymore. I'll do my best to get my wives to give birth to some children to entertain you. What do you think of that?"

Long Shiya burst out laughing and said, "Oh, please. Don't think that I don't know what your plans are. You want me to support you in the Peerless Sect now that you've gotten the Demonic Emperor to hand the sect over to you."

Zhou Weiqing pretended to be shocked, "Master, can you predict the future? However, I don't expect you to manage the sect for me! All I want is to be filial. Please give me this chance. Moreover, what's mine is yours as well. As long as you're willing, you'll naturally be the Peerless Sect Master."

"Pfft, please. Aren't you taking away my freedom by asking me to be the Sect Master? I won't, and I don't want to do it. I've been enjoying freedom all my life. Why would I work for you, you little bastard? Especially when I'm already so old."

Long Shiya rolled his eyes and ignored Zhou Weiqing's begging. He knew this kid too well so he did not want to fall into his trap. The Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor was a free bird. Almost all of the Saint Lands had invited him but none had piqued his interest. Moreover, his disciple had matured now. He did not think he would be able to help even if he stayed. However, he was interested in the retirement plan that Zhou Weiqing mentioned. After all, he was not young anymore. Even though Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy had rejuvenated him, his mentality was no longer young.

Zhou Weiqing looked at his master and suddenly turned ferocious, "Master, please don't force me."

Long Shiya was stunned to see such an expression on Zhou Weiqing's face that seemingly came out of nowhere. He scoffed and teased, "Stop pretending. So what if I'm forcing you? I'll still force you no matter what."

"So you're forcing me to perform my ultimate move!" Zhou Weiqing was enraged.

Long Shiya then looked at him in shock, "What kind of ultimate move can you perform to make me obey you? Please show me! I'd love to see it. I don't believe anyone can threaten me. No one has been able to threaten me all my life. Bastard, could you be the exception?"

Zhou Weiqing then put away the rage on his face and sighed,

"Alright then, seems like you're better than me. In that case, forget about it. I was planning to have one of my children take your family name Long and give it to you as your grandchild. But... since you're unwilling to stay, I think I won't be able to be filial to you. You can leave if you want to. Since you want your freedom, as your disciple it's not nice for me to stop you."

"That sounds about right." Long Shiya smiled gleefully. Suddenly, his face turned stiff. He turned around and grabbed Zhou Weiqing who was about to leave, "Wait, wait a minute. What did you say just now? What grandchild and grandfather. I didn't hear you clearly."

His head was clouded with happiness since he thought there was no way that Zhou Weiqing could threaten him. He did not pay attention to what Zhou Weiqing was saying, and now he was stunned when he recalled what Zhou Weiqing said.

Zhou Weiqing smiled happily and said, "Nothing, nothing. Since you're leaving, it doesn't matter if I tell you or not. It's alright if you didn't hear me. I still have things to do, Master."

"You bastard, how dare you mess around with me? Tell me now, or don't you dare blame me for hurting you. Hmph." Long Shiya showed him his plump fist. Naturally, even he himself did not think it was threatening. That aside, it was possible that he could not even handle Zhou Weiqing with his current cultivation base.

Zhou Weiqing turned around and faced his master. This time, he put away the smile on his face and knelt before Long Shiya. He then said with utmost sincerity, "Master, I really hope that you'll stay. It's not that I want you to support the Peerless Sect. You're over 100 years old now and you've been a wanderer all your life. I wish to give you a home, please stay. It's safe to say that without you, I wouldn't have been able to achieve what I've achieved. You only have disciples but not children. I'm your son, and my children will be your grandchildren. Please stay so that I can serve you. You don't need to do anything. All you have to do is enjoy your life. I'll

have one of my sons bear your family name. He'll be your grandson and inherit your family name. Can I do that?"

Long Shiya looked at Zhou Weiqing blankly. Naturally, he could feel that Zhou Weiqing was being sincere at the moment. He placed one of his hands on Zhou Weiqing's shoulder. Zhou Weiqing was shocked to find that Long Shiya's hand was trembling despite his cultivation base. He then looked up at him immediately.

"Master, are you alright?"

Long Shiya looked at him with tears in his eyes. His lips were trembling but no words were coming out from his mouth.

"Master, you're scaring me!" Zhou Weiqing got closer to him and patted Long Shiya's chest immediately as he carefully infused Saint Energy into his body.

Long Shiya shook his head, "Weiqing, you're not just saying that to make me happy right? Are you being serious?"

Zhou Weiqing did not know if he should laugh or cry as he said, "Master, since when am I so mean? I'm being serious. How can I be joking?"

Long Shiya said in annoyance, "You looked sincere when you were cheating the people from Blood Red Hell the other day and they were fooled by you."

"How can you compare yourself to them! Master, I'm really not joking with you. All I want is to serve you until you're old."

Long Shiya lifted both his hands and grabbed Zhou Weiqing's shoulders tightly. Tears were streaming down his face, "Thank you, boy. It's been almost 90 years since I last felt like I was at home. My old life shall depend on you now."

"Teacher..."

Zhou Weiqing was over the moon, and he gave Long Shiya a big hug.

Long Shiya seemed to have calmed down and he said after wiping his tears, "Go, your Junior Master Duan is looking for you. You're now a Heavenly Emperor. Finish the last Ringless Ground Purging Set as soon as possible."

"Junior Master is looking for me?" Zhou Weiqing let go and looked at Long Shiya who had calmed down and immediately said, "Master, then I shall leave now."

The respect Zhou Weiqing had for Duan Tianlang was not any less than the respect he had for his master. He did not dare to delay when he heard that his Junior Master Duan was looking for him since it was rare for his Junior Master to look for him. Long Shiya waved, motioning for him to leave. Zhou Weiqing turned around and heard an indescribable chuckle behind him as he stepped out of the door, "Hahaha, hahaha, finally I'll have grandchildren. I have an heir now. Hahaha."

Zhou Weiqing was stunned when he heard the sound but soon after, he revealed a genuine smile. He knew his master too well. Although Long Shiya desired to be free, not having a family and love had always been his biggest regret. As a disciple, it was only natural that Zhou Weiqing would ease the regret for his master! How could lack children when he had five wives? Moreover, even if the son bore the Long family name, he would still be Zhou Weiqing's son.

Chapter 765: The Eleventh Piece of the Ringless Ground Purging Set? (1 | 2)

"Junior Master," Zhou Weiqing stood in front of Duan Tianlang's door. He lightly knocked the door and said respectfully.

"Come in," Duan Tianlang said from inside his room, but his voice sounded like he was exhausted.

Zhou Weiqing was startled for a little. It was only several months ago that Duan Tianlang was rejuvenated with his Saint Energy. Even though his physique could not compare to his prime, he should still be full of life, not as weak as he is currently!

Puzzled, Zhou Weiqing entered the room.

As soon as he saw Duan Tianlang, Zhou Weiqing was shocked. "Junior Master, what happened to you?" he said as he dashed beside Duan Tianlang. Zhou Weiqing grabbed Duan Tianlang's arm and started transferring his reddish-gold Saint Energy into Duan Tianlang's body.

Duan Tianlang's condition at that moment could be described as horrendous. His face was in a tint of grey, his black hair turned white, and his face was crawling with wrinkles. His eyes were dull and without life, no matter how Zhou Weiqing looked at it, he was like an old man on the brink of death.

Receiving Zhou Weiqing, Saint Energy, Duan Tianlang's body trembled as his condition improved. His life force was restored, and under the cleansing of the Saint Energy, his physical functions started to rejuvenate from its waning state.

Zhou Weiqing was aghast as he healed Duan Tianlang. He could clearly feel that if his cultivation base had not been elevated to Heavenly Emperor tier, he could at most delay Duan Tianlang's imminent death for a few months with his Saint Energy Galaxia. Saint Energy was not omnipotent, there were things that cannot be

reversed. Fortunately, his reddish-gold Saint Energy was purer than before and could save Duan Tianlang from death.

The effects of his Saint Energy was immediate, Zhou Weiqing could see that Duan Tianlang was slowly recovering. The dullness in his eyes was slowly replaced by a hint of surprise.

An hour later, with Zhou Weiqing's diligence, Duan Tianlang had finally recovered enough to compare to a few months ago when Zhou Weiqing last helped him.

"Weiqing, you've improved again. I really thought I was done for this time. However, I was not doing it on purpose, it's beyond my control! Haha, you're really my lucky star!"

Duan Tianlang laughed, but Zhou Weiqing was livid, he glared at Duan Tianlang angrily. He said angrily, "Junior Master, what have you done? I had just nursed you back to health, how could you take such bad care of yourself? What exactly did you do, your body had almost fallen apart!"

Listening to Zhou Weiqing's reprimand, Duan Tianlang scratched his head embarrassedly. He sighed, "It's an old problem. I can't help it, it's so ingrained in me. Once I entered the state of researching Consolidated Equipment Scrolls, I can't stop. I think this time around I have not slept for more than a month."

"What? More than a month? Without rest? You..." Zhou Weiqing was out of words.

When Duan Tianlang said he had not slept for more than a month, it was not only that he did not sleep, he had been awake every minute of the day for a month researching Consolidated Equipment Scrolls. If it were not for that, how would Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy have depleted so quickly?

Duan Tianlang said apologetically, "It's entirely my fault. However, Weiqing, let's not talk about this. Look at what I've done here."

As he was speaking, Duan Tianlang leaped up like a groom about to be married and pulled Zhou Weiqing to his work desk, on which a scroll with meter-long sides was spread.

On the unfurled scroll, the first thing Zhou Weiqing saw was grey lines interwoven tightly. These lines were outlined with a special pen, the scroll was made of good quality sheepskin, which is known for its durability.

Zhou Weiqing had wanted to talk to Duan Tianlang, however, when he saw the scroll, he was stunned.

In the eyes of normal people, those grey lines would give them dizzy spells. However, Zhou Weiqing was not normal people! As his cultivation base was raised to Heavenly King and then to Heavenly Emperor tier, he could finally be called a God Tier Master.

As the large scroll appeared in front of his eyes, the only emotion he could feel was a shock.

Yes, it was a design of a Consolidated Equipment Scroll, its patterns were more complicated than any other Consolidated Scrolls Zhou Weiqing had ever seen. There were many segments where it was slightly messy, but following the lines, Zhou Weiqing still squealed every once in a while.

Duan Tianlang stood beside him, reading along. The difference between him and Zhou Weiqing was that his eyes only exude fascination. It was as if he was looking at the most beautiful woman in the world, and occasionally, he even caressed the sheepskin scroll, he was practically living in his own world.

"Junior Master! Junior Master, you did it! My goodness, this is a miracle, it can only be called a miracle," Zhou Weiqing squealed, unable to hold back.

His head snapped up and looked at Duan Tianlang. Even though Zhou Weiqing was not as persistent as Duan Tianlang in creating

Consolidated Equipment Scrolls, he was still a God Tier Master and an heir of the Strength Legacy. How could he not marvel at an epic creation like this particular Consolidated Equipment Scroll? He could not imagine how a scroll like this could actually be designed, some concepts in it could only be described as a masterpiece.

"Yes, I've succeeded. Even I didn't think I could succeed," Duan Tianlang murmured. "Perhaps, perhaps it was because I have walked to the edge of the realm of the Dead, I've kept my heart calm enough and brave enough to abandon everything else, that the Heavens finally presented me with such glorious achievement."

Even after finishing the Ringless Ground Purging Set, Duan Tianlang had not once mentioned the word 'achievement', but at this moment, pride was written all over his face.

"Junior Master, you've succeeded, you have! This, this is the design for the eleventh piece of the Ringless Ground Purging Set! If we could finish this piece of Consolidated Equipment Scroll, the Ringless Ground Purging Set could very well surpass the Boundless Infinitum Set, becoming the strongest armor set in existence!"

Nodding lightly, Duan Tianlang's tears were struggling to roll down his face, "In the past month, my inspiration had not stopped, and I barely ate, I never slept, but even if I knew I might die, I still wouldn't stop. Weiqing, I beg of you. No matter what, please create this scroll when I'm still alive. I have the power to design it, but I cannot build it. Only you, with your mastery over Time and Spatial Attributes, could build this piece of armor. If I'm not wrong, you are now a Heavenly Emperor tier, aren't you?"

Zhou Weiqing nodded enthusiastically and said, "Junior Master, don't you worry. I will definitely do my best in building this piece. Junior Master, I can say this without any worry now, you're the finest God Tier Master in the Strength Legacy, even more so than the ancestor who created the Ringless Ground Purging Set. At the same time, you are the greatest, strongest God Tier Master in existence, no one would be able to surpass your achievement."

"Hahaha, I think so too, hahaha!" Duan Tianlang laughed heartily. Usually calm and collected, he had finally shown his wild side.

Duan Tianlang's biggest dream had been to be able to see the design of the Ringless Ground Purging Set, it was Zhou Weiqing who helped him achieve that, and he even managed to build the legendary armor set. He was the first God Tier Master who had built both the Hiltless Sky Purging Set and Ringless Ground Purging Set in the history of the Strength Legacy. Not only that, he had actually designed the eleventh piece of armor for the Ringless Ground Purging Set. It could be said that this design was not only born of his talent but also external variables like luck. Duan Tianlang could say with confidence that if he were to do it over, he would not succeed in a hundred years.

With this eleventh piece of design, not even the three God Tier Masters from the Heaven's Expanse Palace could say they had the better achievement. Master Xing Tianyi only preserved what was created, while Duan Tianlang was creating. As soon as this design was finished, he had officially stepped onto the altar of Consolidating Equipment Masters. No one in the current generation could claim to be better than him.

"Weiqing, the next segment will be your part," Duan Tianlang smiled. "This design was finished, but I still need to do a little adjustment. I've already prepared the formula for the Consolidating Ink, we still have most of the ingredients we require from what you brought back from Heavenly Jewel Island, but there is one thing I need you to procure."

"Junior Master, what is the ingredient that not even Heavenly Jewel Island has?" Zhou Weiqing asked curiously.

Duan Tianlang said, "By the eleventh piece of legendary armor sets, there are too many required ingredients that clash with each other. To completely merge these ingredients without the clash, we need to use certain special materials to fuse them. Your Saint

Energy could be a good choice, but it is still an external force. Even if we succeeded, it would affect the quality of the Consolidating Ink, which would then affect the scroll-making process. Therefore, we will not be using a pure internal energy as a blending solvent.

At this point, Duan Tianlang paused before continuing, "The blending solvent must have strong Attributes to it so it completely covers the other ingredients before it could succeed. So you need to look for the Elven Queen's blood. Not much is needed, three drops should be more than enough."

"The Elven Queen? Who's that?" Zhou Weiqing had not heard of this character, but with a title of 'Queen', she must not be a weak character.

Duan Tianlang smiled slightly, he said, "It's not unusual that you don't know about her, it takes hundred-year-old geezers like me to have heard of the Elven Queen. The Elves are an ancient race, they existed even earlier than us humans in this world. Eons ago, the rulers of the mainlands are the Dragons, the Elves, and several other extinct races. Humans at the time were still very primitive, suitable only to be their slaves."

"As time goes by, human intelligence and the ability to cultivate slowly developed. In addition, humans' reproductive abilities are stronger than the other races, so we slowly dominated the mainlands. The few races that had extinct almost always had something to do with humans. The Elves and the Dragons were still pretty close to us humans, especially the Dragons. Their reproduction was too slow. Therefore, for some time, they even treated humans as their spokesperson. However, the development of the human race had far exceeded the dragons' expectations to the point that they could not control anymore. By that time, the mainlands slowly belonged to the humans, and the original ruling races had either weakened or gone into seclusion. You've seen dragons before, how many would you say there were on this mainland? Far too rare, isn't it?"

Zhou Weiqing said, deep in thought, "That means, the Elves were pretty much the same with the Dragons? Did they go into seclusion too?"

Duan Tianlang nodded, saying, "It would be more appropriate to say that they have sealed themselves in. The Elves were the favored race of nature, they can merge with nature and easily use any ability of the Nature Attribute. They don't have Heavenly Jewels like us, only the power to control the nature. To avoid being taken over by the humans, The Twelve Elders of the Elves at the time combined their powers to isolate a space for them to live in on this mainland. The Humans at the time had also made an agreement with the Elves. The Elves would not leave the Sealed Land, and us Humans would not invade their space."

"This was a long, long time ago. After that, the Elves had actually withdrawn from the history of this mainland, no longer appearing in front of the Humans. This was also why you had not heard about this race at all. The Elves did not come into our world, but there were records of humans journeying into the world of the Elves. After many years of being in seclusion, the Elves had become much stronger than before. However, Time had diminished their wanderlust as a race, they don't even want to leave the Sealed Land, and they are friendly to the Humans. Some humans who had gained their approval could even gain many benefits from their visits."

"The Elves are the children of nature, the purest Nature Energy lies within the bloodline of the Elven Queen. If we could procure three drops of her blood, this final process to create the Consolidated Equipment Scroll would be as easy as pie, and the Consolidating Ink would be at its optimal capacity."

Zhou Weiqing scratched his head and said, "Junior Master, this mission would not be easy to complete! Do we even know where the Elves hid? Also, the Elven Queen is the leader of the tribe. It would not be easy to get her blood. If the Elves are strong even for

you, it wouldn't be easy for us to carry out this task."

Duan Tianlang laughed heartily, "Other people may not be able to, but you're different, you have already created so many miracles by yourself. What comes next would be on you. As for the position of the Elves, it's even easier. You only need to ask those wives of yours, they must know about this. The Elves could be left alone for so long by the Human world, they would naturally have a connection here in the Human world. The one with whom they have the best relationship is Heaven's Expanse Palace. Did you think the Boundless Infinitum Set would not need the special blending solvent for their final piece? They did not need the blood of the Elven Queen, but it was also a precious item that was only produced by the Elves."

With Duan Tianlang's hint, Zhou Weiqing had finally understood a little better. The Heaven's Expanse Palace had a good relationship with the Elves, it would mean it was not impossible to ask the Elven Queen for her blood. 'If the Heaven's Expanse Palace could build a relationship with the Elves, why couldn't my new Peerless Sect do it?'

The Elves were an ancient race, if Zhou Weiqing could build a good relationship with them, it would be very beneficial to his Peerless Sect.

At the thought of that, Zhou Weiqing nodded and replied, "I'll do it, Junior Master. But promise me, before my return, please don't damage your own body again. If anything happened to you, I would seal this design up and will never touch it again."

Duan Tianlang smiled, nodding yet again, "I would not die before I witness the creation of this eleventh piece of Ringless Ground Purging Set, so don't worry about me and go. However, be careful, if it could not be done, don't force it. The Elves could be stronger than what I had imagined. Even though they didn't appear on this mainland, I'm guessing there are plenty of powerhouses among the Elves."

Zhou Weiqing grinned and nodded. He was not that worried about the powerhouses of the Elves. One's confidence would increase the stronger they get. Currently, Zhou Weiqing was no longer the original Zhou Weiqing, he had become a Heavenly Emperor tier powerhouse. With his reddish-gold Saint Energy Galaxia, there were not many people he would be scared of. If he had to rob her with his power, he would still be confident that he would succeed.

After leaving Duan Tianlang's room, Zhou Weiqing immediately left town. With his current cultivation base, the limitation of distance to Blink was pretty much nullified, he could reach anywhere immediately with just a thought about his destination, as long as his destination was within several thousand meters in displacement.

Shangguan Xue'er and Shangguan Fei'er had been keeping their eyes on Shangguan Bing'er who was cultivating in mid-air. It had been several days, but Shangguan Bing'er had been absorbing the Atmospheric Energy non-stop, her aura was also becoming stronger and stronger.

Chapter 766: Sleep With Me And You Can Achieve A Breakthrough (1)

However, Shangguan Xue'er and Fei'er could clearly feel that the Nucleus Core that Bing'er was about to solidify was most likely different from Zhou Weiqing's Starcrux Saint Nucleus Core. This was because even though the aura that Bing'er radiated was filled with the energy ripples of the Saint Energy too, it did not have the kind of purity that Zhou Weiqing possessed. It was apparent that there was some Wind attribute energy ripple mixed in with her Saint Energy.

This was obviously because she did not possess any Saint Attribute in the first place. It was impossible to form a true Saint Nucleus Core without any Saint Attribute in the body.

However, this did not mean that Shangguan Bing'er was not powerful at all. The nourishment that Zhou Weiqing gave her was not in vain. When she was solidifying her Nucleus Core, her body was entirely filled with the Starcrux Saint Energy that Zhou Weiqing transfused into her body. Just that alone would make her Nucleus Core far superior to the other Heavenly King-tier powerhouses.

In truth, as far as Shangguan Bing'er was concerned, even if her Nucleus Core was not entirely made from pure Saint Energy, it was still beneficial to her as long as she could solidify the Nucleus Core successfully. This was because after her Nucleus Core was successfully formed, she would be able to devour the Atmospheric Energy on her own to replenish her energy during her cultivation. There would be no need for her to rely on Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy anymore for her cultivation.

In other words, even if her Saint Energy was not entirely pure, it was at least still part of the Saint Energy. She could also solidify it by filtering the energies from the outer world. To a certain extent,

Bing'er's Saint Nucleus Core was actually a sub-Saint Nucleus Core, and it was still far superior compared to the other ordinary Heavenly King-tier powerhouses.

Right at this moment, the space in front of the two girls suddenly distorted without any warning. Two huge hands appeared out of thin air and grabbed onto each of them.

Both Xue'er and Fei'er had already reached the Ninth Jewel Tier. Coupled with their originally mighty strength, they reacted almost instantly. Just as they were about to unleash their techniques to attack the offender, they suddenly realized that the space around them had abruptly collapsed. A powerful Spatial Energy bound them tightly, and it left them with no space to move at all.

Within seconds, a familiar figure stepped out of the distorted space and planted a heavy kiss on both of their red lips before he released the two women from the constraint. With a slide, that figure leaped a few meters away from them. Very quickly, the collapsed space immediately returned to its normal state.

At first, Xue'er and Fei'er were completely taken aback because they thought they had encountered a very strong enemy. The moment they finally caught a clear glimpse of the person, they were immediately filled with wrath. This thief who had just stolen their kisses was none other than that evil bastard — Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing smiled cheekily at both girls as he asked, "Hi, ladies, why don't you properly welcome your husband?"

Fei'er snorted coldly, "Who's your wife? Stop being so full of yourself! Hmmp!"

Xue'er did not speak a word at all. Her face remained cold as usual.

Dejectedly, Zhou Weiqing came closer to them as he asked, "What are you two trying to do? Just tell me directly if there's anything that you feel unhappy about. Don't just keep it in your hearts. Yes,

it's all my fault! I was too occupied recently, to the point that I've been ignoring you all. I'm willing to accept any punishment from you two."

Fei'er scoffed loudly, "Ignore us? You haven't only been ignoring us for one or two days, you know. Ever since you've established that Peerless Battalion, I've worked my ass off helping you to take charge! And you? You keep disappearing whenever you like! Fine, I won't hold you to that, but let me ask you, what the hell's with the issue of this Little Witch? And what's going on with that Heavenly Demon Sect? You better explain to us clearly. Otherwise, the three of us will return to the Heaven's Expanse Palace once Little Sis is done with her breakthrough!"

When Zhou Weiqing saw how enraged Fei'er was, he stepped forward to give her a hug. However, she pushed him away roughly with all her might. Although Xue'er remained silent, a look of doubt could be seen in her eyes.

Zhou Weiqing scratched his head. "Please let me explain, alright? The story about Little Witch is like this..." Zhou Weiqing was indeed smart. He knew very well that sometimes white lies were good, but at times like this, it would be better to just tell the truth. Otherwise, he would lose the love of the girls.

At that moment, he sincerely retold the story about him and Little Witch. Of course, he deliberately emphasized how deeply in danger he was during that ordeal, and how he was not in his right mind when he slept with Little Witch. Other than that, he more or less told them the truth regarding the entire incident.

"... Well, as you know, I'm not really a good person. But for the sake of my cultivation, or you can even say, my life, she did sacrifice a girl's most important thing for me. Not only that, Teacher was there as well during the whole process. So at the very least, I need to be responsible for the things I've done to her. This is all my fault. I'm to blame for not being able to find you all in time. Otherwise, there would've been no need for me to do that

with Little Witch at all. That time, Teacher even told me that Lady Luck was on my side, and at least I got myself a good girl that day. Otherwise, he would have caught a sow to become my sacrifice."

The moment they heard Zhou Weiqing's last sentence, the two Shangguan sisters could not help but burst out in laughter. They just could not resist it when they imagined Zhou Weiqing being together with a sow. With just this laugh, the tense atmosphere between the three of them lifted almost immediately.

Fei'er snapped as she glared viciously at Zhou Weiqing, "You bastard! How dare you flirt as you like everywhere you go. See! There are already five! Let me be frank with you, if there's a sixth one, I'm going to castrate you without any hesitation!" She even made a furious slicing motion with her hand.

Horried, Zhou Weiqing quickly covered his lower body with his hands. "Never again! Your Majesty! I'll never do that again!"

Creases formed between Shangguan Xue'er's brows. "Then what's going on with the Heavenly Demon Sect? We understand your action of joining forces with the Heavenly Demon Sect to fight against Blood Red Hell. However, you're now letting them stay at the Heavenly Bow Empire! Not only that, it seems like you're trying to be a part of the sect as well. Weiqing, even if you don't consider our position as people who were raised in the Heaven's Expanse Palace, you should at least know how bad the Heavenly Demon Sect's reputation is in the Boundless Mainland. None of the countries dare to formally take them in. Are you trying to make the Heavenly Bow Empire a common target for scorn and ridicule?"

Smiling faintly, Zhou Weiqing leaned forward and forcefully took Fei'er into his arms before he used another hand to wrap around Xue'er's waist. "What Heavenly Demon Sect? I did not agree to join them. If I join a Saint Land, naturally I'll join the Heaven's Expanse Palace! Three of my wives were all born there after all!"

Xue'er allowed him to hug her, yet the same expression remained on her face. "Weiqing, you really have to draw a line on this matter. Perhaps you don't care much about your reputation, but the Heavenly Bow Empire is totally different. I dare say that if the news about Heavenly Bow Empire accepting the Heavenly Demon Sect spreads out one day somehow, the Fei Li Empire will most likely stop supplying resources to us immediately. Not only that, we'll probably be shunned by the public as well."

Zhou Weiqing smiled. "The Heavenly Demon Sect will never exist in the Heavenly Bow Empire. Xue'er, I'm being serious about this. Oh yeah, there's something that I'd like to discuss with you two. I'd like to invite you two beautiful women to join me in my newly founded Peerless Sect and become the wives of the sect leader. What do you guys think?"

"Peerless Sect?" Xue'er looked at him with a puzzled face.

Zhou Weiqing nodded his head. "Yes, the Peerless Sect. Me, this useless guy, is the sect leader of the Peerless Sect. My teacher, the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor, will be the Supreme Elder advisor of our sect. All of the original members of our Peerless Regiment who have a cultivation base of Sixth Jewel and above will become teachers in the Peerless Sect. Although we're still slightly lacking in terms of mighty powerhouses now, I dare say that once our Peerless Sect is established, it'll definitely become the Saint Land with the most Jewel Masters in this mainland."

Shangguan Fei'er's eyes lit up immediately. "Little Fatty, you want to establish a Saint Land? Seriously? Are you sure you can do that?"

Zhou Weiqing found what she said funny, so he planted a kiss on her nose. "As a man, how can I say that I can't do it? Don't forget that your husband is a Heavenly Emperor now. Not only that, with my Saint Energy cultivation base, no other ordinary Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouses can be compared to me. Why am I not qualified to set up a Saint Land? We'll have to slowly build up the

history and heritage anyway. Oh yeah, there's another thing that I have to tell you. The Heavenly Demon Sect has already been completely removed from the world. From now on, there's no more Heavenly Demon Sect. All we have now is the Peerless Sect!"

Now that Zhou Weiqing had made it so clear, if the two women still did not catch his underlying meaning, then they were not worthy of calling themselves the descendants of the Heaven's Expanse Palace anymore.

Xue'er, who was always calm and composed, had her cherry-red lips wide open. Her face was completely filled with shock.

Zhou Weiqing stole a kiss from her soft pink lips. When he recalled how he was sent flying from her slap after he kissed the wrong person previously, a gush of warmth filled his heart immediately.

"Do you admire your husband now?" Zhou Weiqing chuckled.

Shangguan Xue'er stared at him. "D-Did you.. you really buy over the Heavenly Demon Sect? How could they possibly agree to it?"

Zhou Weiqing replied with a face full of triumph, "Well, I have the ability to do that. Do you know why the Demonic Emperor came to the Heavenly Bow Empire in the first place? At that time, I was not even a Heavenly Emperor yet, but he came with the purpose of asking me to join the Heavenly Demon Sect. Not to join the Heavenly Demon Sect per se, but to take over his position as the Heavenly Demon Sect leader instead. Just from his action, it's obvious that the Demonic Emperor is a lot more sincere than your uncle, you know. However, I didn't agree to his request at all. Well, the first reason is naturally that I was thinking for all of you, and the second one lies with the problems of the sect."

"In truth, I've long had a plan of setting up my own Saint Land. A man needs to have his own career after all. When everything on the mainland has gone back to being calm and normal, we should also have a home of our own. Marrying a Saint Lord would not be

too bad for you all either."

When Zhou Weiqing saw that there were looks of slight disbelief on the two women's faces, he said in a slightly dejected voice, "Well, I guess it's normal that you all don't believe it. Even though the Heavenly Demon Sect has fallen, there's still at least one Heavenly Emperor and six Heavenly King-tier powerhouses. Do you find it hard to believe that I can command them with the power I possess now?"

Shangguan Xue'er did not say a word. Shangguan Fei'er, on the other hand, nodded her head without any hesitation. There was no need for her to hide anything from Zhou Weiqing.

Chapter 767: Sleep With Me And You Can Achieve A Breakthrough (2)

Zhou Weiqing chuckled, "Well, that's because the both of you underestimated your hubby's strength too much. Do you know how many Blood Red Hell powerhouses we faced that day?"

Although he had told many people about the fight between them and the Blood Red Hell powerhouses, he did not mention the number of his opponents at all. Of course, he was unsure as well but he had a rough estimate. However, he feared his ladies would be worried to death about him so he decided to keep this to himself. During the battle, the bloodcurdling energy ripples that were released were so strong that Heavenly Jewel Masters who were below the Heavenly King Tier could not even watch in close distance.

"That day, four Heavenly Emperors from the Blood Red Hell were present during that battle. Their lowest cultivation base was at least at the Mid-Level of the Heavenly Emperor Tier and two of them were at the Maximum Level. Not only that, there were eight other Heavenly King-tier powerhouses and a few Heavenly Zong-tier masters."

"As for the results, the both of you should know best since you all witnessed it yourselves. We won beautifully and naturally, the key player in that battle was none other than your husband, me!"

The moment they heard about the number of Blood Red Hell powerhouses who came for the battle, the two girls were completely stunned. Even though they had their own estimates regarding the number of people who came, it never crossed their minds that it would actually be this many. They did not put much thought into it after the battle had ended. After all, Zhou Weiqing and his group managed to achieve a beautiful win in that battle. They really thought that the enemies could not be that strong.

Zhou Weiqing smiled, "I also managed to achieve my Heavenly Emperor cultivation base after that battle. I'll just be frank with the both of you, I might not lose even if I'm going against a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse now. So, do you still think that I won't be able to suppress the Heavenly Demon Sect?"

Shangguan Xue'er gently shook her head. The shock in her eyes was gradually replaced with a puzzled expression. It was not that long ago when Zhou Weiqing was just a small unknown person, and she was the heir of the Number One Saint Land in the world. At that time, the gap between them was very huge. However, in just a few short years, he had already possessed the power to start his own Saint Land. The leap was so huge to the point that it shook her to the core.

Right now, Zhou Weiqing had reached a place where they had to lift their heads up just to look him. It was a position that was evenly matched with a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse. That was right! He was now qualified to start his own Saint Land. On top of that, the power of this Saint Land was not weak as well.

Even if one did not take into account the number of Jewel Masters in the Peerless Battalion that was at the Sixth Jewel cultivation base or higher and there was still a huge number of mighty powerhouses. They had the three great Heavenly Emperors; Zhou Weiqing, Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor and the Demonic Emperor. Apart from that, they also had the six Heavenly Kings who were originally from the Heavenly Demon Sect. Bing'er was also about to become a Heavenly King. Let's not forget about Duan Tianlang, the God Tier Heavenly King. One could say that Zhou Weiqing's Peerless Sect had already met all the requirements to create a Saint Land. Not only that, he also had the support of the Heavenly Bow Empire that had just expanded its territory into an area twice its original size. He could easily command and mobilize hundreds of thousands of troops anytime he fancied. In fact, the current Zhou Weiqing was gradually becoming one of the top

powerhouses in the mainland.

Shangguan Fei'er was not as shy as Shangguan Xue'er. She wrapped both of her arms around Zhou Weiqing's neck and said, "Little Fatty, I never thought that you'll become so powerful!"

He gently stroked her delicate face as he replied, "Fei'er, thank you for working so hard in these few years. Don't worry, I'll use my remaining years to make it up to all of you. From now on, I won't leave you all for no good reason. I've also worked equally hard in these few years. The Grand Tournament of Saint Land that'll be held in six months time will be the Peerless Sect's time to shine. I'll leave it to you all to decide whether you want to remain in the Heaven's Expanse Palace or join the Peerless Sect with me."

Shangguan Fei'er chuckled happily as she said without any hesitation, "Of course I'll join the Peerless Sect. I'm the wife of the sect leader after all. Not only that, I also want to become the chief instructor of the Peerless Sect. Can I?"

Zhou Weiqing laughed out loud. "Of course you can!" As he was answering Fei'er, his eyes fell on Shangguan Xue'er.

Shangguan Xue'er immediately understood what he was thinking. With a small sigh, she asked, "You've already won me over from my uncle so why are you asking me this now?"

Zhou Weiqing released Fei'er's hand and walked forward to pull Xue'er into his arms. "Of course I have to ask you. I'll never force you to do anything you don't want to do. Even if you decide to inherit the Palace Master position in the Heaven's Expanse Palace, you'll still have my full support. However, if that's really the case, then in ten years time, I'll definitely lead the Peerless Sect over and take over the Heaven's Expanse Palace so that you'll once again return to my side."

Arrogance could be heard in Zhou Weiqing's last sentence. Shangguan Xue'er and Fei'er could feel a supremely powerful aura emitting from his body. He did not purposely emit the restrictive

aura, it was an inherent trait. They would never doubt the veracity of Zhou Weiqing's statement.

Shangguan Xue'er's body trembled slightly as she glared at him speechlessly. "Aren't you forcing me to follow your way now?"

Zhou Weiqing chuckled, "No, no, this is totally different! What I'm most concerned about now is when will the both of you consummate your marriage with me! Or, should we all do it together? Yes?"

"Go to hell!" The two women lifted their foot up at the same time and sent a certain someone flying with their kicks.

At this moment, a strong energy ripple could be felt coming from the sky. It prompted the three of them to look up at the same time.

An intense silverish white light mixed with a faint green light suddenly rushed towards Bing'er in a frenzy. A halo could be vaguely seen forming slowly as it emitted from the center of her chest.

The color of the halo was extremely strange. The center was silverish white but the outside was green in color. It looked a little similar to Zhou Weiqing's Heavenly King-tier Starcruz Saint Nucleus Core. Instead of Saint Energy, the thing that was surrounding the Saint Nucleus Core was Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy. However, this Wind Attribute Heavenly Energy was also mixed with a silverish white halo. It was very beautiful and pleasing to the eyes. There was also a faint golden light in the center of the Saint Nucleus Core.

"Done!" Zhou Weiqing stepped out. And in the next second, he was already in mid-air, standing 100 meters away from Shangguan Bing'er. He did not get too close to her in fear that the aura from his body would affect her last absorption.

Shangguan Bing'er undoubtedly had also become a Heavenly King.

Zhou Weiqing silently breathed in the energy ripple that was radiating out of Bing'er's body. Based on his knowledge of cultivation base and Saint Energy, he immediately knew what was going on.

After another 15 minutes, Bing'er who was hovering in mid-air slowly opened her eyes. A faint greenish and silverish sparkle could be seen gleaming in her beautiful eyes. At that instance, she looked as graceful as a fairy. It was as if her entire being had merged with the air, soaring freely in the sky.

The wings behind her retracted at once. Her delicate body swayed gently before she threw herself into Zhou Weiqing's warm arms. She could not contain the excitement in her heart.

"Little Fatty! I made it! Yes! I've succeeded! I've also advanced now!"

Zhou Weiqing hugged her before he lowered his head to kiss her on the forehead. "Congratulations, Bing'er."

The two of them slowly descended from the sky and landed next to Xue'er and Fei'er. Embarrassed, Bing'er quickly pulled herself out of Zhou Weiqing's embrace.

"Little Fatty, my Nucleus Core seems to be a little peculiar. I have a feeling that I can merge with the air. What's going on?" Although Shangguan Bing'er had already succeeded in solidifying her Nucleus Core, she did not seem to understand much about it.

Zhou Weiqing chuckled, "Well, technically, it shouldn't be called a Nucleus Core. Instead, it's a Saint Nucleus Core. However, it's not as pure as the real Saint Nucleus Core. You didn't have any Saint Attribute in your body when you were solidifying it. It was all thanks to the Saint Energy I infused into your body. Your own attribute is not repressed by it, that's why the Saint Nucleus Core that you have right now is a mixture of the Wind and Saint Energy that has evolved. For this reason, the Wind Attribute that you possess is no longer the conventional Wind Attribute but one that's

infused with the Creation Energy. To put it simply, at the very least, your Wind attribute will not be subdued by the Destruction Attribute of the Blood Red Hell. Not only that, the range and power of your Wind Attribute are also much greater than the average Wind Attribute Heavenly King. As for how you should use it, you'll have to slowly explore on your own. Although it's not a true Saint Nucleus Core, at the very least it has some of the traits of a Saint Nucleus Core. It's something like a sub-Saint Nucleus Core. Since it has merged with your Wind Attribute, let us call it Wind Spirit Saint Nucleus Core."

Bing'er obediently nodded her head. A gentle smile could be seen on her delicate face.

Both Shangguan Xue'er and Fei'er who were standing by the side was green with envy.

Fei'er leaned towards Zhou Weiqing as she grabbed onto his right arms and gave it a good shake, "I don't care! I'm going to become a Heavenly King too! You must help me!"

Xue'er burst out laughing as she watched them. The coldness on her face immediately melted into a warm smile. "Silly girl, do you even know what a Heavenly King is? You think it'll come so easily to you?"

Zhou Weiqing chuckled, "Well, even though it won't come so easily, breaking through to the Heavenly King Tier is not that difficult since we're all a family. I have the easiest way for you to become a Heavenly King in the shortest time possible."

Once he finished his sentence, let alone Fei'er, even Xue'er could not help but be interested as well. They blinked their wide eyes as they looked at him hopefully.

Zhou Weiqing replied solemnly, "Actually, this method is very simple. As long as you do THAT with me, you'll break through almost immediately."

"Go to hell!" Without warning, Fei'er gave him a hard shove. She wanted to fiercely push him away. However, Zhou Weiqing was no longer the Little Fatty Zhou that was easily pushed around by other people. He stood firmly on the ground without moving an inch.

Xue'er stared at him with a look of disdain as well. "Ugghh! You only have those dirty things in your mind all the time!"

Zhou Weiqing replied with an innocent face, "What dirty things? Why don't you ask Bing'er whether it's true that you'll be able to elevate your cultivation base just by sleeping with me? Hey, I'm a Heavenly Emperor now, you know. As long as I take a little care when we're doing that, I can transfuse the essence of my Saint Energy into your body in the most direct way. With the exchange between our Yin and Yang, you'll really be able to make a breakthrough. I really am not lying to any of you! You can always give it a try, you know. And if this method fails, I'll let you hit me any way you like."

Just as Fei'er was about to agree to it, Xue'er suddenly pulled her over and whispered to her, "Should we even try? We're just letting him take advantage of us if we agree to it!"

Shangguan Fei'er finally came to her senses. Embarrassed and slightly annoyed, she gave him a few hard punches.

Zhou Weiqing said helplessly, "Well, you can't blame me for not helping the both of you then. Okay, how about this? I'll ask Little Witch to give it a try first for your sake. After you've seen the results, you can always look for me anytime you want. Hehe!"

Chapter 768: Sleep With Me And You Can Achieve A Breakthrough (3)

Indeed, what he spoke of was the truth. Along with the elevation of his cultivation base, his body had completely evolved into the purest form of Saint Energy. It could be said that in some ways, he could no longer be categorized as a human being. Sleeping with him would definitely allow one to gain great benefits from him.

Shangguan Fei'er rolled her eyes at him, "Sister is right. Your mind is only filled with all those filthy and dirty things! I'll just ignore you!"

Zhou Weiqing chuckled and said to Shangguan Xue'er, "Xue'er, I've another thing to ask you. Do you know where the Sealed Land of the Elf Tribe is located?"

"Huh? What did you say?" Shangguan Xue'er did not catch on to his meaning. Not long after, her face suddenly lit up in surprise, "H-How do you know about the Elf Tribe?"

Fei'er and Bing'er who were both standing by the side appeared to be confused about their conversation. It was obvious that they did not know about the existence of the Elf Tribe.

Zhou Weiqing shrugged. He had no plans of hiding anything. "Junior Master was the one who told me that your Heaven's Expanse Palace has something to do with the Elf Tribe. Junior Master managed to come up with a design for the eleventh piece of the Ringless Ground Purging Set. However, we need the Elven Queen's blood, which is the most important ingredient, to make Consolidating Ink. That's why I'll have to make a trip to the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land and look for the Elven Queen's fresh blood. Xue'er, if you feel like I'm putting you in a difficult position, I'll make a trip to the Heaven's Expanse Palace and ask our father or uncle about it."

Shangguan Xue'er shook her head gently, "Weiqing, I can tell you where the Elf Tribe's Sealed land is but I wish that you won't go there."

"Why?" Zhou Weiqing asked in confusion.

She replied, "The Elf Tribe's Sealed Land is not dangerous but your purpose in going there is definitely dangerous."

Zhou Weiqing stared at her in surprise as he waited for her to continue.

She continued, "The Elf Tribe's reproduction cycle is quite similar to the Dragon Tribe. They're both very slow in reproducing. This is also why they're suppressed by human beings in the first place. However, now that many years have passed, the Elf Tribe has already regained their strength. It's true that the Heaven's Expanse Palace has some relations with the Elf Tribe but it's only for mutual benefits. We've given our words that we'll never allow any human nations to attack the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land. In return, we gained their friendship and to some extent, we also obtained some of their possessions. Still, this doesn't mean that the Elf Tribe has complete faith in us. They still remain slightly hostile towards human beings."

"The Elven Queen is the supreme being of the Elf Tribe. Every drop of blood from the Elves is an essence of nature, particularly the Queen's. On top of that, a part of the Elf's body is actually made of energy. This is why the blood in their body is extremely rare. The amount of blood in the Queen's entire body is most likely only around 100 drops and this was the result of countless years of accumulation. Wanting three fresh drops of blood from the Queen is equivalent to becoming an enemy of the entire Elf Tribe. Unless you can charge your way in ruthlessly and win against the Elven Queen, it's almost impossible to accomplish your mission."

Zhou Weiqing understood immediately why Xue'er had that kind of astonished and worried expression on her the moment she

heard that he wanted to get the Elven Queen's blood.

"It seems like it'll be unlikely for me to obtain the Elven Queen's blood in a peaceful manner then."

Shangguan Xue'er immediately replied without any hesitation, "That's impossible. And if I bring you into the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land with my Heaven's Expanse Palace's identity, the Heaven's Expanse Palace and the Elf Tribe's friendship will most likely be destroyed. We'll most likely cause the Elf Tribe to be more hostile towards human beings. For this reason, you have to be extremely careful okay, Little Fatty?"

Shangguan Xue'er usually addressed him as Weiqing. With just these two words "Little Fatty", he immediately felt a sense of numbness all over his whole body. A smile instantly crept onto his face.

"Rest assured, I'm not a reckless person. Xue'er, with your understanding of the Elf Tribe, what do you think about the extent of their strength?"

After a moment of silence, Xue'er replied, "I'm not afraid to scare you so I'll just tell it to you directly. The Elf Tribe are the guardians of nature so they're naturally born with Natural Energy. Each of the tribesmen of the Elf Tribe is a born warrior. They're good in archery and they master at least four natural element energy — Water, Fire, Earth, and Wind. Some of the more powerful elves can even master the Light and Darkness attribute. There are at least several dozens of those elves who had mastered six different attributes in the Tribe. Can you imagine that? They have several dozen powerhouses who possess the same attributes as Senior Long. Can you imagine what their cultivation base is? As for the Elven Queen's cultivation base, even we have no idea how powerful she really is. However, in the ancient times, the Elven Queen had always been strong enough to fight against the Dragon Emperor."

After listening to Shangguan Xue'er's words, Shangguan Fei'er and Bing'er both were stunned. How powerful must she be to be able to be on par with the Dragon Emperor? A Heavenly God Tier? She had to at least be a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse right?

Zhou Weiqing's heart sank immediately. However, how could he possibly back out from the plan now? Naturally, it would be impossible.

Junior Master had spent a lot of effort to come up with the design for this Consolidated Equipment Scroll, to the point that he almost lost his life. It was indeed true that Duan Tianlang had sacrificed too much for him. If he could not craft this Consolidated Equipment Scroll successfully, Duan Tianlang's soul would not be in peace even after he died. This was his Junior Master's greatest wish after all. At the same time, Zhou Weiqing also wished that he would become much stronger. He had no other choice.

"I must go to this Elf Tribe. Xue'er, are you willing to tell me where exactly is the Sealed Land located?" A determined look could be seen in his eyes. It was obvious that he had already made up his mind the moment he said those words.

Shangguan Xue'er sighed. She knew that she would not be able to stop him from going.

As Shangguan Xue'er lifted her head up to look at him, she sighed again, "Weiqing, will you give me a few days to think about it?"

Zhou Weiqing did not force her. He gently nodded his head as he reassured her, "Xue'er, you don't have to put yourself in such a difficult position. If you really don't want to tell me, I won't force you at all. I'll just go ask uncle myself. It won't take long for me to reach the Heaven's Expanse Palace with my current cultivation base."

"No! You can't let uncle know!" Shangguan Xue'er quickly shook her head, "Otherwise, he'll definitely stop you from going. But, Weiqing, even if we really go to the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land, I hope

that we'll try to resolve this matter peacefully and not rush into a battle straight away. Is that okay?"

Zhou Weiqing nodded his head solemnly, "I promise you."

Waiting for a few days was nothing to Zhou Weiqing. He needed time to consolidate the tenth piece of his Ringless Ground Purging Set anyway. As long as he had completed his last helmet, his Ringless Ground Purging Set could be considered as complete. As for how his set would look like once the eleventh piece was added on to it, it was not something he had to worry about for now. Being able to put on all ten pieces of his Ringless Ground Purging Set would definitely make his strength increase again.

In fact, even the Mountain Lord of the Heavenly Snow Mountain, Xue Ao'tian's God Vanquishing Heavenly Spirit Set only possessed ten pieces of equipment.

Zhou Weiqing was a little curious. When the three Shangguan sisters came back, they called Tian'er and Little Witch away with them. At first, Zhou Weiqing wanted to go with them but all of them pushed him away at the same time.

That kind of situation made Zhou Weiqing worried yet happy at the same time. Although he hoped that all five women would be able to get along well so that he would not have any trouble with them, at the same time, he feared they would gang up and go against him. How would he dare to mess with them? He did not even dare to mess with just one of them!

For this reason, Zhou Weiqing decided to spend his day cultivating to set up a firm foundation for his cultivation base and complete the tenth piece of the Ringless Ground Purging Set tomorrow.

...

When it was time for dinner, Zhou Weiqing had his dinner together with his five wives and their families. What shocked him

the most was after their dinner ended, under the urging of the other four girls, Little Witch actually followed him all the way to his bedroom while she held onto the corner of his shirt with her head lowered.

Looking at Wu Yuehan's innocent and delicate face that was flushed with embarrassment as she closed the door after she had followed him into the room, Zhou Weiqing literally widened his eyes. The first thing that crossed his mind was, "Is this a test from the five of them?"

Since she came here, it was obvious that Little Witch was in the pink of health. Zhou Weiqing had used his Saint Energy a few times now to help nurse her back to health.

Her pink face was flushed with a crimson red. Among the five girls, Little Witch was the youngest. She was barely a few years older than Zhou Weiqing. With her cute and girlish features, the embarrassed expression on her face made her look even more enticing and lovely.

Zhou Weiqing asked tentatively, "Yuehan, what are you doing?"

Little Witch's head was hung so low that it was almost buried in her own chest as she muttered, "S-Sister Xue'er and Fei'er told me to take care of you."

Zhou Weiqing was a smart guy. She had already hinted at it so strongly, if he still did not catch on to her meaning then he was not worthy of being the descendant of a scoundrel and a drunken rogue.

Zhou Weiqing took a step forward and held her hands before he pulled her into his embrace. He chuckled as he asked, "Don't tell me that all of you have already discussed this and decided to take turns and have one person accompany me every night?"

"No, no!" Little Witch quickly shook her head. Looking at her right now, she no longer had that heroic and cheeky spirit that had

almost destroyed the entire Fei Li Battle Team previously. Instead, she currently looked more like the shy little girl next door.

"What is it then?" Zhou Weiqing asked curiously.

Little Witch muttered in a very low voice, "S-Sister Fei Li told me to do some experiment or something."

At this moment, Zhou Weiqing finally understood what was going on. Shangguan Xue'er and Fei'er were trying to test the validity of the things that he had told them during the day. Could it be that if he really could help them make a breakthrough to the Heavenly King Tier, they would be willing to do that with him?

Even though his heart was filled with excitement, Zhou Weiqing's eyes turned a little colder than usual. It was obvious that he was somewhat displeased with the situation. It seemed like his charm was not as attractive as having their cultivation base elevated! This was not right! Even if Xue'er and Fei'er wanted to elevate their cultivation base, they should not act in this manner towards him. Based on his understanding of them, he was sure that Xue'er and Fei'er were not this kind of people. There must be something going on with them!

However, at this time, Zhou Weiqing did not give it another thought. After all, why would he reject a lamb that offered herself to him?

With a bit of an evil smirk, Zhou Weiqing put his arms around Little Witch and led her to the edge of the bed before sitting down. He pulled her body that was as light as a feather and as soft as a pillow down on his thighs. He chuckled, "Yuehan, do you know what kind of experiment they want you to do?"

Chapter 769: Spring Has Come for Fatty Little Zhou (1)

Little Witch's face turned red when she heard what Zhou Weiqing asked. She kept shaking her head. "I... I don't know."

Zhou Weiqing then said sternly, "You're lying. A liar must be punished."

"Ahh..."

It felt like the world was spinning as Little Witch was pressed on the bed by someone who was heavy. When she looked at the mischievous face that was inching closer to her own face, Little Witch's heart started beating three times faster than usual. She clenched her hands and dared not look at him as she closed her eyes. However, she was not averse to what was happening to her at the moment, and there were some anticipatory feelings even though she was nervous.

In another room, Shangguan Xue'er, Fei'er, Bing'er, and Tian'er were sitting together.

Shangguan Fei'er looked at Bing'er and Tian'er and asked with a curious expression on her face, "Is it possible to elevate our cultivation base by having sex with him?"

Tian'er rolled her eyes at Fei'er and said, "This is the 21st time you've asked that. Why don't you try it to see if it works?"

Shangguan Fei'er's beautiful face turned red. "I'm shy. It's that idiot Little Fatty's fault. Why would he want to go to the Elf Tribe for no reason? Otherwise, we won't be taken advantage of. The Elf Tribe is very dangerous. How can we help him if we don't raise our cultivation base? Do you think this is a wicked plan that the idiot came up with?"

Tian'er burst out laughing and said, "Oh, please. I think you've been wanting to do that since the beginning. We've known each

other for so long. Do you want me to teach you a technique or two to make him surrender to you?"

She then got closer to Shangguan Fei'er's ear and said something to her softly. Suddenly, Shangguan Fei'er's face turned red like she had too much to drink. "You! You're so bad. I don't want to talk to you anymore. Sister, Tian'er bullied me."

The blush on Shangguan Xue'er's face was not any lesser than Shangguan Fei'er's. Although Tian'er had lowered her voice, with their cultivation base, how could she not hear what was said?

Tian'er giggled and said, "You're all shy now, but you'll have to do it with that idiot sooner or later. If you don't believe me, you can ask Bing'er."

"Don't, don't ask me. I know nothing." Shangguan Bing'er lowered her head. However, judging from the way she reacted, it seemed like Tian'er had spoken the truth.

Shangguan Xue'er and Shangguan Fei'er's eyes met and their beautiful faces turned red.

They had the thought of having sex with Little Fatty Zhou. How could it be possible that they did not have other intention apart from elevating their cultivation base so that they could help him get to the Elf Tribe? In their hearts, Zhou Weiqing was their man since the beginning. Did they not want to secure his heart by giving their most precious things to him? Moreover, Tian'er, Bing'er, and even Little Witch had already had sex with him. At this point, they were worried. Would his feelings towards them fade if they did not have sex with him? Although it sounded unfair, there was nothing that they could do, since they had fallen in love with that meanie. If Zhou Weiqing knew what they were thinking, perhaps he would be so happy that even his anus might expand...

In the morning, a soft little lamb was woken up from her sweet dreams by the touch of a pair of warm and big hands. From the blush on her face, one could tell that they had intense sex last

night. Even until now, the heat between them had not dissipated. In reality, that was the truth. Little Witch's wisdom was not inferior to the other women's. Although she looked weak, she was still a Heavenly Jewel Master with Seven Jewels cultivation base after all. Her body could not be compared to ordinary females'. Zhou Weiqing was over the moon because of the good time they had last night and was still energetic after being up the entire night.

"Hey, don't mess around. I've just fallen asleep and here you go again." Little Witch buried her head in his arms and dared not look at him.

Zhou Weiqing chuckled and said, "You seductive little devil. You're the one that seduced me. How can you blame me?"

"Who seduced you? Hmm? 'Smooch'" Little Witch lifted her head up in disdain, but her lips were kissed by Zhou Weiqing once again. However, her eyes were wide open.

Zhou Weiqing noticed something was wrong and freed her lips immediately. "What's wrong, Hanyue?"

Wu Hanyue looked at the brightly lit room and exclaimed in surprise, "It's already morning. Oh, no. They're still waiting for me to go back. What should I do? It's all your fault." She punched Zhou Weiqing's broad chest a few times before she turned around. She then quickly flipped herself over and tried to run out after putting on her clothes.

"This silly girl. It's already morning. Do you think they waited for you until morning!?" Zhou Weiqing pulled her over. Because he had a strong physique, he would not be exhausted even if he had sex for a month without stopping. Even then, he still could not get enough of it.

Little Witch begged, "Please let me go. My dear husband, they'll blame me if I don't go back to them."

Zhou Weiqing was aroused by her calling him 'dear husband'. Eventually, he let her go. At that moment, he began thinking to himself that he had to get a bigger bed in the future. What would it feel like to be able to sleep with all of them under a blanket? Hehe.

Little Witch ran back to her room and bumped into Tian'er before she could get inside.

Tian'er looked at her teasingly and laughed with her voice lowered, "You must be on cloud nine. We were waiting for you until late at night."

Little Witch was embarrassed as she replied, "I, I fell asleep. I'm so sorry." She did not have the urge to compete with Tian'er anymore. Tian'er was already carrying Zhou Weiqing's child. Since Tian'er and Zhou Weiqing were both cultivating Saint Energy, she had the highest position among the five of them.

Tian'er giggled and pushed her into the room. "You wait here. I'll get them to come over."

A while later, Tian'er brought the Shangguan triplets over. Shangguan Xue'er was shy, but Shangguan Fei'er could not wait to ask, "How was it, Little Witch? Did it work?"

Little Witch was stunned for a moment before she snapped out of her shock. "I, I forgot to feel it. Give me a second."

Last night was a crazy night. She had indeed forgotten to feel what she and Zhou Weiqing were doing last night. She felt like she was a small boat in the midst of an ocean storm, as if she was being thrown up and down like she was wandering between peaks and valleys. Now that Shangguan Fei'er asked, she finally remembered that it was an experimental mission.

As Little Witch thought about it, her body lit up while a layer of light reddish gold halo emanated from her body.

"Ahh? What's this?" Little Witch was shocked when she found that her original Heavenly Energy had completely changed. It was

now thicker, stickier, and became a massive force that she was unsure of.

As the Heavenly Energy was released, her seven Heavenly Jewels were naturally released as well.

"It's still seven!" Shangguan Fei'er said in a sorry manner. She was slightly disappointed.

However, in the next moment, some changes happened to Little Witch's body. Her seven Heavenly Jewels became reddish gold in color as the reddish gold Heavenly Energy was released. Little Witch suddenly had a change in her facial expression as she sat on the ground with her legs crossed. The reddish gold energy that surrounded her body began to fluctuate. All of her Heavenly Jewels were shining brightly, releasing life, darkness, and demonic aura interchangeably.

The other four women's cultivation base was higher than the Little Witch, so they could clearly sense that Little Witch's cultivation base was increasing tremendously.

"It really works?" Shangguan Xue'er and Shangguan Fei'er looked at each other with shock written on their faces.

Tian'er was the one who understood Zhou Weiqing's ability the most, so she burst into laughter and said, "Of course it works. That meanie's Galaxia Saint Energy has already evolved into the Nebula Saint Energy. He definitely won't be stingy when it comes to us. Actually, he doesn't even need to do anything. All he has to do is convert the Heavenly Energy in Yuehan's body into the evolved Nebula Saint Energy. With the level of pureness and richness of the Saint Energy, it'll naturally cause a change in Little Witch's body. I guess the level-up this time will be big."

"Didn't I tell you all yesterday? He's right. If you all come with him, there'll be a lot of benefits under the merging of Yin and Yang. It's possible to break through to the Heavenly King Tier. To put it simply, our Little Fatty is the best tonic in the world right

now. I've thought it through. To prevent him from seducing other women, we'll have to work together to drain him. Which of you will be going with him tonight?" Tian'er had a mischievous expression on her face when she said that.

She went over to Shangguan Fei'er and embraced her as she said, "Or why don't the both of you go together? Little Fatty is good in this. Since the both of you will be doing it for the first time, you might not be able to handle him on your own."

"Tian'er, you're so naughty..."

Naturally, Zhou Weiqing had no idea what the five of them were talking about. In reality, he did not really do much last night. However, anyone who had sex with him would naturally be affected by the rotation of his Nebula Saint Energy. The tiniest trace of Saint Energy on the heavens and earth had been tempering Zhou Weiqing's body. It was the same even when he was breathing, so when he was having sex with Little Witch, the Nebula Saint Energy would naturally enter her body and synchronize with her original Heavenly Energy. Moreover, Little Witch was absorbing Zhou Weiqing's essence all night, so it made sense that her body was filled with Nebula Saint Energy.

Furthermore, one should never forget that she was different from the Shangguan triplets because she possessed Saint Attribute as well. Although her Demonic Attribute was incomplete, she had the Saint Energy foundation. This made it easier for her to accept Zhou Weiqing's Nebula Saint Energy.

After washing up, Zhou Weiqing went to look for the five women to have breakfast. To his surprise and disappointment, none of the five women were there. He had no idea what they were doing.

Chapter 770: Spring Has Come for Fatty Little Zhou (2)

Feeling helpless, Zhou Weiqing returned to his room after having breakfast on his own. With his position in the Heavenly Bow Empire, as long he was unwilling, nobody would dare to interrupt him. He did not look for his wives because he could guess that they had private matters to discuss. Shangguan Xue'er and Shangguan Fei'er were unwilling to meet him, as they were still shy. Would there be anyone who would spend the night with him tonight? Zhou Weiqing became even more aroused as he thought about that. He then let out a long sigh into the sky. "I'm lonely, I'm all alone, I'm horny!"

After venting out his emotions, he closed the door. He had things to do today. He had to consolidate the final piece of the Ringless Ground Purging Set. Even though he had Nebula Saint Energy and was extremely familiar with Consolidated Equipment Scrolls, he was still nervous. As a God Tier Master, he knew very well what completing the whole legendary armor set meant. It would multiply the set's power more than one fold since the Ringless Ground Purging Set that he was wearing was a ten-piece set and it suited his Strength Attribute the best. Once it was completed, the upgrade that he would obtain would be tremendous.

He had been waiting for this day for many years. Naturally, he had the thought in his mind. If the other Heavenly Jewel Masters were to hear what he said, they might feel like beating him up. It had only been less than 10 years since he started his cultivation. However, Zhou Weiqing was going to obtain the last piece of his legendary armor set soon. One might not dare to say that no one had ever achieved what he achieved, but in the Heavenly Jewel Master world, he was definitely the first one who achieved that.

He carefully took out the wooden box that contained the last

Consolidated Equipment Scroll and placed it on the table. Zhou Weiqing's facial expression instantly turned serious. He turned around and bowed respectfully in the direction where Junior Master was staying at and then opened the wooden box. The Consolidating Paper for the tenth Consolidated Equipment Scroll was a lot bigger than the normal ones, and the patterns on it were very complicated. Before Zhou Weiqing reached the Heavenly Emperor Tier, he was sure that it would be impossible for him to craft the Consolidated Equipment Scroll even if he used Time and Spatial Energy and the increase in his Saint Energy. The technique that was required could not be completed using outer energy.

It was all Junior Master's hard work. Zhou Weiqing held the Consolidated Equipment Scroll in his hand and with a flicker of his thoughts, eleven of his Heavenly Jewels appeared on his wrists. The 11 Physical Jewels filled both of his hands while rich Saint Energy Wave lit up the entire room with a light reddish gold color. Perhaps because the Consolidated Equipment Scroll in Zhou Weiqing's hand felt his Saint Energy, it was releasing a dark gold glow. Meanwhile, the nine Physical Jewels that were consolidated into the Ringless Ground Purging Set were emitting a light buzzing sound. It seemed like they were calling out for the arrival of their comrade.

After taking a deep breath, Zhou Weiqing took the last step without any hesitation. The eleventh jewel which represented the Heavenly Emperor-tier cultivation base floated out of his body. It floated in the air under the light of the dazzling reddish gold glow. Then, Zhou Weiqing shook his wrist as Divine Light shot out of his eyes. The Consolidated Equipment Scroll turned into a streak of dark gold light and dashed towards the Physical Jewels. Rich Saint Energy waves were boiling intensely in the room. At that moment, it was impossible for anyone to interrupt Zhou Weiqing unless that person had a cultivation base that was higher than his.

Nobody knew when Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya

had appeared at Zhou Weiqing's door. He had even brought his own stool and had taken a seat at the side. He held a wine bottle in his left hand and was popping peanuts into his mouth with his right hand. He could not be more relaxed. However, if someone was to go near him, they would be taught a lesson from the famous Six Ultimate Heavenly Path Formation.

Consolidating Physical Jewels was not difficult for Zhou Weiqing since his cultivation base had long surpassed the First and Second Jewel tiers. He also depended on his multiple attributes as well as the Dark Demon God Tiger Bloodline ability that helped him complete the consolidation by only using one Consolidated Equipment Scroll.

At this moment, he was naturally using the Nebula Saint Energy. Saint Energy was also Creation Energy. Although Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy was different from the pure energy that was released by the baby in Tian'er's tummy, it was considered an extremely pure energy in this world. With the help of the Nebula Saint Energy, there was no problem in his consolidation. An hour passed by in the blink of an eye. Long Shiya, who was sitting outside, suddenly stopped drinking and stood up to look into Zhou Weiqing's room. His tranquil expression disappeared and his eyes lit up.

As someone who also possessed a Ringless Ground Purging Set, he naturally hoped to see what the completed Ringless Ground Purging Set would look like. At that moment, there were no more energy waves in Zhou Weiqing's room. Zhou Weiqing's huge body appeared before Long Shiya's eyes as the door opened

"Teacher." Zhou Weiqing obviously knew Long Shiya was out there. He welcomed him with a smile on his face. However, Long Shiya could see that he was suppressing his excitement behind that smile.

"It's done?" Long Shiya could not wait to ask.

Zhou Weiqing chuckled and said, "When has your apprentice ever failed? Now I'm anticipating the eleventh Consolidated Equipment Scroll that Junior Master is crafting. Consolidating the tenth one is not difficult for me!"

"Will you die if you don't boast for once? Quick, show it to me. I want to see what the Ringless Ground Purging Set looks like."

The completed legendary armor set was naturally different from those that were incomplete. Besides the physical form that went through a few changes, the original color of the armor set would be shown as well. Just like how the color of Long Shiya's Ringless Ground Purging Set was silver.

Zhou Weiqing chuckled and said, "Teacher, don't be jealous of me, alright? Watch carefully."

A bright, golden light exploded out of Zhou Weiqing's body as he spoke. His Consolidated Equipment God Protective Aura had changed from dark gold to bright gold. Then the Ringless Ground Purging's accessories appeared on his body one by one. Every one of them was the perfect combination of strength and beauty. The dazzling, golden glow shone and covered the majority of the space in the room.

Long Shiya's mouth was wide open as he mumbled, "It's gold in color! Such a showoff."

Yes, Zhou Weiqing's Ringless Ground Purging Set could definitely be described as a showoff. When they appeared on him, the air around him seemed to implode on itself. There was a black glow around his body when he moved. That was the black hole created from the Spatial Rend.

It was one of the special effects of the completed Ringless Ground Purging Set. How could the attacks from his enemy not be significantly discounted when there was a layer of Spatial Rend that seemed like a black hole around him all the time? Patterns that were not there previously also appeared on the completed

Ringless Ground Purging Set. There were patterns of roses on the bright golden armor. Coupled with the different shades and intensity of the color gold, it complemented the legendary armor set, making it even more beautiful.

It was definitely the most beautiful legendary armor set that Long Shiya had ever seen. Even the Mountain Lord of Heavenly Snow Mountain Xue Ao'tian's God Vanquishing Heavenly Spirit Set lost to the beauty of Zhou Weiqing's Ringless Ground Purging Set. What made it seem flashy was the scarlet cloak on Zhou Weiqing's back when the armor set was completed. It seemed like he could not be described as a showoff any longer. No matter where he went, the bright golden armor together with the scarlet cloak would definitely be in the spotlight!

"Teacher, don't you think I'm like a bright sun that shines in the limelight, making all other lights lose their beauty?" Zhou Weiqing asked proudly.

Long Shiya replied in an annoyed manner, "Oh, please. What sun are you talking about? You're such a narcissist."

The Dual God Strength Hammers in Zhou Weiqing's hands had changed as well. The gigantic hammers became two times bigger, and the crying face had turned into a big smiley face. An image of a rose was also imprinted on top of both the hammers. When Long Shiya saw the hammers, he felt embarrassed to bring out his Silver Octagon Plum Blossom Hammer. Compared to the Ringless Ground Purging Set, his hammer was nothing.

"The image of the rose must be a symbol of love from the senior who created the Ringless Ground Purging Set for his lover."

A sigh could be heard from Duan Tianlang. Nobody knew when he arrived outside of Zhou Weiqing's room. As a God Tier Master, how could he not feel the energy wave from the completion of the Ringless Ground Purging Set?

Zhou Weiqing respectfully gave a bow to Duan Tianlang. "Thank

you, Junior Master."

Duan Tianlang chuckled and said, "You look glorious in this Ringless Ground Purging Set. Don't listen to what your teacher said. I believe you'll definitely be able to showcase its power perfectly. Wait until we complete the eleventh one. At that point, even the Boundless Infinitum Set will have to step aside."

Zhou Weiqing gently swung the hammers in his hands. Suddenly, the surroundings turned dark. It was the scene of Spatial Collapse. After the Ringless Ground Purging Set was completed, the increase in its strength was too terrifying. It was so terrifying that even the space around him could barely handle it. Under such a situation, it would be difficult to fight Zhou Weiqing with brute strength.

Long Shiya looked at Duan Tianlang sadly. "Lao Duan, I'm jealous. Quickly invent the tenth piece of the Hiltless Heavenly Purging Set for me. What do you think?"

Duan Tianlang rolled his eyes at him and said, "Do you think it's that easy? You might as well put me in a coffin. Compared to the Ringless Ground Purging Set, I'm no longer interested in your Hiltless Heavenly Purging Set. Let's face it."

"Do you even have any humanity in you?"

"No."

Chapter 771: Spring Has Come for Fatty Little Zhou (3)

When Zhou Weiqing saw the both of them arguing, he put away his Ringless Ground Purging Set. He looked up at the sky and took two deep breaths. The clouds in the sky shook vigorously from his breathing alone. That was the ability of a Heavenly Emperor Tier powerhouse. He was the emperor of the heavens and earth.

After Zhou Weiqing bade his teacher and Junior Master goodbye, he went out and found an empty place so he could get used to the changes in the Ringless Ground Purging Set. He only returned when the sky turned dark. Even after he had eaten, he still did not see the five women. Could it be that Yuehan did not benefit from his Saint Energy? That was impossible. It should have helped her breakthrough from the Seventh Jewel to at least the Eighth Jewel!

Zhou Weiqing returned to his room as he continued pondering about the matter. As he opened the door, he felt like he was showered with immense love. The Shangguan triplets were in his room. They were sitting together and talking softly among themselves. When they saw Zhou Weiqing entering the room, the three women started blushing. Shangguan Xue'er instantly stood up and pulled Shangguan Bing'er with her as they ran out of the room like they were running for their lives.

How could Zhou Weiqing not understand what they were trying to do? Naturally, he did not stop them and let them escape before he closed the door. Shangguan Fei'er sat there with her head lowered. At that moment, she did not seem like the Little Demon Girl of the Heaven's Expanse Palace anymore. She was so shy that even her neck turned red.

Zhou Weiqing was not in a hurry as he took off his outerwear and put it aside. He walked towards her in a leisurely manner and sat down next to her.

"Beauty, why are you here?" Zhou Weiqing chuckled as he asked.

Shangguan Fei'er moved her body as she attempted to avoid his hand that was reaching for her waist. "Don't you dare touch me, you idiot."

Zhou Weiqing chuckled again and said, "Aren't you here for me to touch you? Fei'er, I've been waiting for this day for a long time. Don't worry, I'll be gentle."

Shangguan Fei'er looked up and showed a pitiful expression, "Master, will you really be gentle?"

His beastly blood was boiling! Zhou Weiqing's desire rose when he heard her calling him 'master' and he pounced on her like a tiger. Shangguan Xue'er giggled and turned around. Her amazing flexibility was fully displayed as she escaped from Zhou Weiqing's pounce.

Zhou Weiqing blinked his eyes as he went closer to her, "Let's not wait anymore, Fei'er, I can't take this anymore."

Shangguan Fei'er said in disdain, "Look at you! You're so promiscuous. Tell me, did you fool around with Little Witch all night?"

Zhou Weiqing subconsciously nodded.

Shangguan Fei'er scoffed and said, "You playboy, I definitely won't let you off today. You can have your way with me but you'll have to listen to me."

Zhou Weiqing quickly said without any hesitation, "Yes, my queen. I'll do whatever you want me to, I won't resist."

Shangguan Fei'er felt a sense of satisfaction as she said, "That's right. Go lie on the bed."

Zhou Weiqing used Blink to get to the bed while he salivated. If the Heavenly Beast who created that skill knew that Zhou Weiqing used Blink for something like this, it would probably be so angry

that it would be spitting blood. Shangguan Fei'er walked to the bed and proceeded to straddle Zhou Weiqing. She held on tightly to Zhou Weiqing's chest as she vigorously tore his clothes apart. She lowered her head and bit onto his muscular chest as her bouncy little ass rubbed against Zhou Weiqing's stomach intensely.

"Ahh... Ohh..."

Shangguan Xue'er who was hiding outside heard the sound that was coming out of the room. She could not help but ask Shangguan Bing'er, "What are they doing? Why are there howling noises?"

Shangguan Bing'er giggled playfully and said, "Yes, that's a howl. A satyr's howl."

At that moment, Zhou Weiqing thought to himself, 'Too wild! This is too wild. Even Tian'er who's a Divine Heavenly Spirit Tiger is not as wild as Shangguan Fei'er! I'm having sex with a strong woman!'

"Give it to me. Let the storm grow wilder."

Shangguan Fei'er's character had always been different from the others. In the beginning, she was extremely shy. However, the Little Demon Girl of the Heaven's Expanse Palace took over and she became wild and enthusiastic. Unfortunately, due to the fact that she was inexperienced, she became a little lamb that was delivered into a fierce tiger's mouth during the critical moment.

However, it was Shangguan Fei'er's first time after all so Zhou Weiqing held himself back. He loved Shangguan Fei'er, and she could be considered as the person who had sacrificed the most for him in all these years. It was impossible for Zhou Weiqing to build the Peerless Sect without her. Zhou Weiqing felt like he owed her the most. Therefore, he was extremely gentle tonight and he really treated her like a queen. He could be considered as someone who was rich in experience so he showed his San Shou 108 that brought harmony to the both of them.

In the morning.

"Liar, you liar! Where's my breakthrough? I'm going to teach you a lesson."

"You don't even have a child yet, why are you calling yourself a mother?"

"I don't care. I'm telling sister. You're such a liar."

"I didn't lie to you. Aren't we almost there? You must know that your body won't absorb the essence if you leave it like this. It'll be difficult for you to break through. A treasure like that will have the best effect if you eat it."

"You're so disgusting. Go away."

"I'm telling the truth. I'm not human if I'm lying."

"You're not human anyway."

"It's okay if you don't believe me but I'm telling the truth. The effect is instant and you'll break through immediately. I'm definitely going to the Elf Tribe. I won't dare to bring all of you with me if you all are not Heavenly God Tiers. Otherwise, it'll kill me if I put any of you in danger."

It was quiet for a while.

"I'll bite you if I find out that you're lying..."

"I'm a decent man. Why would I lie to you?"

"Hmph... Then, close your eyes. No, cover yourself with the blanket."

"Ahh... Ooh..." Soon after, howls could be heard again. However, the noise was muffled this time because they were under the blanket.

Shangguan Xue'er and Shangguan Bing'er had gotten up early and they waited nearby for Shangguan Fei'er to come out. As it happened, they heard Zhou Weiqing howling again. The sisters

looked at each other. Let alone Shangguan Xue'er, even Shangguan Bing'er had a hard time trying to understand that. Could it be that they were having sex all night? Little Fatty was really too much. It was second sister's first time after all. The both of them had been waiting outside for an hour when suddenly, a rich Saint Energy wave spread out from Zhou Weiqing's room. They could clearly feel all the Atmospheric Energy of the heavens and earth rushing towards Zhou Weiqing's room.

What was that? Shangguan Xue'er's eyes were opened wide in shock. Was it truly successful? Such an intense wave of Saint Energy! Apart from that time when Zhou Weiqing was training, it only happened...

At that moment, Zhou Weiqing walked out of the room in a relaxed manner. He had satisfaction written all over his face as he smirked at Shangguan Xue'er and Shangguan Bing'er. His eyes were trained on Shangguan Xue'er, and he was looking at her with a playful expression.

"Bing'er had reached a critical juncture. She's finally starting to break through. Please look out for her. I'm going to get something to eat. I'm exhausted from helping her to break through the entire night!"

Shangguan Xue'er was speechless as she looked at him. She would believe anyone else who helped an Upper-Level Heavenly Zong-tier to breakthrough to Heavenly King Tier but did Zhou Weiqing do it without fooling around last night? Nobody would believe that.

Shangguan Bing'er pulled a funny face at Zhou Weiqing, "Pretending to be innocent after taking advantage someone. Look at you. Are you really tired?"

Zhou Weiqing walked towards them, and as he was walking pass Shangguan Xue'er, he softly said, "I'll be waiting for you tonight." He walked away with 110% satisfaction after saying that.

Happiness, that was happiness! That was a blessing indeed!

Zhou Weiqing had never felt this happy in a very long time. His family had been rescued, the Heavenly Bow Empire was growing and the enemy had been defeated. He had completed the consolidation of the legendary armor set and he was together with all his wives. Perfect. His life could only be described as perfect right now. If he did not have to handle that matter, he really wished that he could enjoy his life like this forever. Marrying the five women and becoming the emperor of the Heavenly Bow Empire.

However, for the most part, when one experienced extreme joy, unexpected things might happen due to God's jealousy. It was said that extreme pleasure was followed by sorrow. When Zhou Weiqing returned to his room excitedly after breakfast, he was ready to tease Shangguan Xue'er. He could not wait to spoil the eldest sister of the Shangguan triplets. However, he was speechless when he found Shangguan Xue'er sitting outside his room. She seemed to have entered a trance. The Atmospheric Energy in the air was entering her body.

'Why! God, why do you have to mess with me like that? I've yet to have sex with her. Why did you let her breakthrough? I, I...'

When Zhou Weiqing was having breakfast, perhaps it was because the triplets were connected by heart, they sensed their sister's breakthrough again. Moreover, Shangguan Xue'er's cultivation base was higher than Shangguan Fei'er. She went into the breakthrough state as the shyness in her heart was negated by the energy wave that instantly enlightened her.

However, Zhou Weiqing noticed that something was wrong when he returned. The problem lay with Shangguan Xue'er. Perhaps it was due to her shyness, she was hasty and entered the breakthrough state directly after the enlightenment. However, she forgot the two most important things. One, she would need a lot of Atmospheric Energy to break through. Shangguan Fei'er was

already in the process of breaking through. Now that Shangguan Xue'er was also in the process of breaking through, she would take away a portion of the Atmospheric Energy.

Chapter 772: The Elf Tribe's Sealed Land (1)

The Atmospheric Energy was limited within a certain area. For two Heavenly King Tier powerhouses to breakthrough at the same time, it was best if they were surrounded by mountains and water or used a unique way to gather Atmospheric Energy from afar to ensure success. However, they were clearly nowhere near those places.

On the other hand, Shangguan Xue'er's hasty breakthrough caused her aura to be impure. Moreover, her cultivation ability was different from Shangguan Fei'er. She was affected by Shangguan Fei'er's energy wave. The attributes in her body did not completely react with the energy wave which caused her own energy aura to be in a mess.

Zhou Weiqing sighed. In the end, he still did not fulfill his dream of having sex with the triplets because his work was unfinished. Zhou Weiqing stood next to Shangguan Xue'er wistfully. Naturally, his cultivation base would not affect Shangguan Xue'er. When Zhou Weiqing saw her frowning, he waved his right hand in the air. It was different from when he summoned the starry sky. This time, a sparkling Galaxia appeared when day turned into night within seconds.

Ever since leveling up to Heavenly Emperor Tier, Zhou Weiqing's Galaxia had been greatly enhanced. However, he could not use the majestic Galaxia that he summoned to attack his enemies directly. In order to do that, he had to combine it with his own abilities. Its main function was to assist him.

Under the guidance of Zhou Weiqing's right hand and the appearance of the galaxy in the sky, the density of the Atmospheric Energy in the air multiplied just in time. That solved the first issue that Shangguan Xue'er and Shangguan Fei'er had encountered. Next, Zhou Weiqing simultaneously released all six of his attributes as six colored glows shone upon him. Under the reddish

golden glow, the Heavenly Energy in Shangguan Xue'er's body began functioning as they were supposed to at once.

With a light pat, a rich and pure Galaxia Saint Energy was sent into Shangguan Xue'er's body. It flowed to the middle of her chest where the Heavenly Core Nucleus was in the process of solidifying. She was finally on the right path of her breakthrough. Shangguan Bing'er could not help but laugh when she noticed the disappointment on Zhou Weiqing's face.

"Seems like you won't get to sleep with her. Sister is so talented that she even managed to break through on her own. Hehe."

Zhou Weiqing approached Shangguan Bing'er and pulled her into his arms. Naturally, he knew that with Shangguan Bing'er's character, she did not need to have sex with him to break through. Perhaps he would not be able to get what he wanted in this short period of time.

"You should pay your sister's debt. I'll be eating you tonight. Hehe."

Shangguan Bing'er did not have the intention to avoid him at all. On the contrary, she leaned into Zhou Weiqing's arms fondly. She really cherished her time with him. No matter how generous she was, she still had to share her man with the others after all. Feeling Shangguan Bing'er's affection, Zhou Weiqing's expression became much softer as he patted her head and held her softly while enjoying her affection.

The Shangguan sisters' breakthrough took exactly three days. Moreover, it was under the condition that they had the help of Zhou Weiqing's Galaxia Saint Energy. Meanwhile, the Heavenly Bow City had not seen daylight for three days consecutively. However, it did not cause any fear to the people. On the contrary, the bizarre scene in the sky brought a lot of benefits to the people of Heavenly Bow City. One must know that under the condition where the Galaxia appeared in the sky, the Atmospheric Energy

had given extra energy to the Heavenly Bow City. It even benefited the body of people who were not Heavenly Jewel Masters. At the same time, Heavenly Jewel Masters seized the chance to cultivate since one day of cultivation was equivalent to a couple of days of cultivations.

On the fourth morning, six people flew up to the sky and headed out of the Heavenly Bow City silently as they stepped in the air. The six people were none other than Zhou Weiqing and his five wives. Apart from Little Witch, the remaining four women had broken through to Heavenly King Tier and possessed the ability to fly. Shangguan Bing'er had used the Wind Spirit Saint Nucleus Core. Judging from her flying speed alone, she was comparable to a Heavenly Emperor Tier powerhouse.

Naturally, Zhou Weiqing carried Little Witch with him. Although she had not broken through to Heavenly King Tier, with the help from Zhou Weiqing's Galaxia Saint Energy, she had entered the Ninth Jewel Realm. She had never imagined she would possess such a cultivation speed. Zhou Weiqing's Galaxia Saint Energy was indeed magical. However, it was impossible to use it regularly. The reason why he did not mind draining his energy was because the five women were the closest to him. The entire time he was helping them break through to the next level, not only were there no improvements to his cultivation base, he had even wounded his Qi. That was why he did not help Little Witch to break through to Heavenly King Tier. That would have to wait for now.

As they flew in the sky, Zhou Weiqing would occasionally look at Shangguan Xue'er. He had an unwilling expression on his face. However, Shangguan Xue'er did not even look at him as she coldly continued flying in front of him. However, upon closer inspection, one could see that she was secretly smiling intermittently.

Shangguan Fei'er who was flying next to Shangguan Xue'er did not bother with Zhou Weiqing as well. That bastard did something

so bad to her the other day. Although she broke through eventually, Shangguan Fei'er still could not accept what he did to her. Meanwhile, Tian'er and Shangguan Bing'er were flying together. The four women were flying in front, Little Witch was the only one by Zhou Weiqing's side.

Zhou Weiqing spoke to Shangguan Xue'er telepathically, "Xue'er, actually, it'll be beneficial for you if you do it. The first time is the most beneficial. Although you've broken through to the Heavenly King Tier, there's still a long way for you to go before you get to Heavenly Emperor Tier. If we do it often, perhaps you'll be able to break through to Heavenly Emperor Tier soon. At that time, you'll be able to wear the complete Boundless Infinitum Set! That's the best set in the world. With the help of the Boundless Infinitum Set, our Peerless Sect's ability will increase tremendously."

Shangguan Xue'er turned around and glared at him, "Idiot, how is it possible for me to wear the Boundless Infinitum Set! Although our Heavenly Expanse Palace is financially rich, the Boundless Infinitum Set is exclusively reserved for the Palace Master of the Heavenly Expanse Palace. Nobody is allowed to own that apart from the Palace Master of the Heavenly Expanse Palace. I already have a couple of them on me but that's an exception. Uncle will definitely not allow me to wear the Boundless Infinitum Set. Look at you, you already have the four of them. Why are you still thinking about doing that with me? You should think about how you're going to handle the matter of the Elf Tribe. Although our abilities have been upgraded, our Consolidated Equipment isn't complete yet. Not all of them have been imprinted. It definitely won't work if we try to enter the Sealed Land by force. Besides, you promised me that you won't kill any of the Elf Tribe's people."

After listening to Shangguan Xue'er's words, Zhou Weiqing was not angry at all. On the contrary, he was over the moon. Shangguan Xue'er had said that she would not be able to wear the Boundless Infinitum Set. Did that not mean that she had already

decided to stay by his side and relinquish her position as the Palace Master of the Heavenly Expanse Palace. Although Zhou Weiqing had an inkling of her thoughts, the feeling was different when he heard it directly from her mouth.

Zhou Weiqing flew next to Shangguan Xue'er and looked deeply into her eyes.

"Xue'er, don't you worry. I'll solve the problem of your legendary armor set. After this Elf Tribe matter is over, I'll bring all of you to participate in the Saint Land competition. We'll return to the Heavenly Expanse Palace after the competition is over."

"Why are we going back?"

Zhou Weiqing chuckled, "Of course to propose the wedding and to bring a wedding gift. The three of you are as beautiful as flowers. The most precious darlings of the Heavenly Expanse Palace are married to me, how can I not give a wedding gift that's worthy of you all!"

This time Zhou Weiqing did not speak telepathically so the other women heard what he said clearly.

Shangguan Fei'er said angrily, "Are you really that kind-hearted? I think you're just going there to ask for the dowry."

Zhou Weiqing was stunned and thought to himself that Fei'er definitely read his mind! He smiled awkwardly and said, "Fei'er, can you not understand me so well! How do you know what I'm thinking?"

Shangguan Fei'er scoffed, "How can I not know based on your filthy character? When have you ever put yourself in an unfavorable position?"

Zhou Weiqing laughed, "I'm asking for the dowry for all of you anyway. Since the Heavenly Expanse Palace is marrying off their daughters, they should give a complete set of equipment. I guess it's not too much to get legendary armor sets for all of you. While

we are it, we can imprint some skills for all of you."

Shangguan Fei'er did not say a word. It was obvious she agreed with what Zhou Weiqing had said.

Zhou Weiqing looked at Shangguan Xue'er and said, "I have my own way of settling Xue'er's Boundless Infinitum Set. Nothing is impossible. I believe that uncle will be understanding if I show enough sincerity."

Shangguan Xue'er said to him softly, "Little Fatty, don't sacrifice too much for me. I can ask the God Tier Masters to remove the Boundless Infinitum Set and pick another legendary armor set."

"There's no need for you to do that. Believe in your husband." Zhou Weiqing dismissed her plan immediately.

It was a fact Shangguan Xue'er had always used the Boundless Infinitum Set since she was young to cultivate her foundation. It was safe to say that her most powerful ability came from the Boundless Infinitum Set. If she was to change her legendary armor set, it was easy to imagine what an impact it would have on Shangguan Xue'er. How could Zhou Weiqing allow that to happen?

"Xue'er, now that we've departed, you can tell us about the Elf Tribe's situation."

Although Shangguan Xue'er had agreed to help Zhou Weiqing look for the Elf Tribe, up till now, she still had not told Zhou Weiqing where the Elf Tribe Sealed Land was located.

Shangguan Xue'er nodded lightly and said, "The Elf Tribe Sealed Land is located on the east of the Blancpain Empire that intersects with the Mi Ou Empire. It's pretty far from our Heavenly Bow Empire. Even the Blancpain Empire has no idea where their exact location is at."

Zhou Weiqing thought about it and said, "The Elf Tribe's so-called Sealed Land means that the Elf Tribe is sealed in there or there's a layer of seal outside that prohibits human from entering?"

Shangguan Xue'er shook her head and said, "You're wrong on both counts. If the situation is like as you said, humans would have discovered the Elf Tribe since the beginning. It would've been impossible for them to hide for so many years in peace. To put it simply, the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land is the same as our Heavenly Expanse Palace's Luster Spatial Realm, a parallel realm that our mainland built with the help of a powerful force."

Chapter 773: The Elf Tribe's Sealed Land (2)

"Another parallel realm?" Zhou Weiqing was shocked as he looked at Shangguan Xue'er.

Shangguan Xue'er nodded and said, "Compared to the Luster Spatial Realm, the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land is much bigger and much more stable. Even a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse can't easily break in. After all, the Luster Spatial Realm is created by just a couple of gigantic dragons while the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land is made from the Elf Tribe's Life Tree's core and the entire tribe was also involved in its creation. As long as the Life Tree isn't destroyed, the Sealed Land will remain until the end of time. Besides, there's an advantage to creating this Sealed Land. Because it's in another realm, the territory is naturally limited. The Natural Element aura that the Life Tree releases is naturally also restricted to the territory. The realm absorbs the Boundless Mainland's Atmospheric Energy while it continuously makes pure Natural Energy internally. Therefore, cultivating in there would be significantly beneficial to the Elf Tribe. It also stimulates the tribe's reproduction."

Zhou Weiqing finally had a rough understanding of this Sealed Land after hearing Shangguan Xue'er's explanation.

"So how do we get into this Sealed Land?" Zhou Weiqing asked.

Shangguan Xue'er said, "It's very difficult to get in. It's impossible to enter by force. The only way to enter is with the guidance of the Natural Element. We have the Natural Heart that the Elf Tribe gave as a gift in the Heavenly Expanse Palace's collection. One can enter the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land anytime they want but we can't do that. Therefore, everything depends on our luck when we get there. Weiqing, you must remember not to enter the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land by force with your cultivation base. If you do that, the Elf Tribe will treat you as their enemy."

Zhou Weiqing then said in dismay, "It's already a problem whether we can enter or not, let alone obtaining the Elven Queen's blood."

Shangguan Xue'er said helplessly, "I didn't think that our mission this time has any meaning because it's almost impossible for you to obtain the Elven Queen's blood."

Zhou Weiqing chuckled and said, "Xue'er, why don't we have a bet? If I managed to, you'll have too... You know what I mean."

Shangguan Xue'er rolled her eyes at him and said, "I'm not making a bet with you."

Zhou Weiqing was stunned, "Why?"

Shangguan Xue'er calmly said, "First of all, I know you very well. Although I don't think you'll succeed, with your character, you'll never simply bet on things that you're not confident in. So many people have fallen into your trap. Didn't Ling Tian'ao lose to you? I'll lose my life to you if I accept the bet. Secondly, there's nothing good for me even if I win."

Zhou Weiqing said helplessly, "Why not? You'll win me as a prize! If you win, I'll marry you!"

Tian'er said calmly, "Dear sisters, let's kick this shameless fellow down. Who agrees with me?"

Five small hands were raised up almost at the same time, and five long legs kicked at Zhou Weiqing, including Wu Yuehan whom he held while they were flying.

With Zhou Weiqing acting as the mood-maker, their journey to the Blancpain Empire was not dull. Moreover, even though the five of them were flying, in reality, the women were depending on Zhou Weiqing's strength. They had no idea how fast their flying speed was. Due to Zhou Weiqing's Galaxia Saint Energy, they could not feel any external impact while they were flying.

Traveling from the Heavenly Bow Empire to the intersection of

the Blancpain Empire and Mi Ou Empire was almost equivalent to traveling from the west to the east of the mainland. It was safe to say that it was like traveling across the entire mainland so one could imagine how far it was. Zhou Weiqing had to take care of the women apart from helping them with flying. Therefore, even with his Cultivation Base, they flew for exactly seven days just to get to their destination.

A lush forest could be seen from far away, and it was endless. Floating on top of the green ocean, they could feel the rich Life aura. Little Witch felt it the most intensely because she had the Life Attribute in her body. She revealed an indulgent expression on her pretty face.

Zhou Weiqing chuckled and said, "The elves sure know how to pick the location. They chose to build the Sealed Land on this prehistoric forest. Naturally, they'll be able to absorb a large amount of life force. Xue'er, where's the entrance?"

Shangguan Xue'er said helplessly, "It's somewhere in this forest, it could be anywhere. This is the reason why I said it'll be difficult to enter this place."

Zhou Weiqing was surprised and said, "Do you mean the entrance to the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land is mobile?"

Shangguan Xue'er nodded, "That's right. We can easily find the entrance if we have the guidance of the Natural Heart. We'll need the Natural Heart to cover us with Natural Energy for us to enter the Sealed Land."

Zhou Weiqing frowned. However, he suddenly smiled, "I understand now. Xue'er, perhaps you meant this piece of prehistoric forest would be completely destroyed if we enter by force. If that's the case, then the entrance will naturally appear if we use force. With my cultivation base, it's not difficult to enter by force."

Shangguan Xue'er said immediately, "Weiqing, we can't do that.

If we do that, we'll be dead to the Elf Tribe."

Zhou Weiqing chuckled. "Don't worry, I'll definitely keep my promise to you. Let me try looking for the location of the entrance," Zhou Weiqin said as he slowly closed his eyes.

He released his Divine Thought and spread it across the forest. The five women who were hovering around him could clearly see that his body was emitting a splendid reddish gold light almost immediately. His clothes could not cover the glow that was radiating from his body.

Circles of reddish gold halos spread out from his head and headed towards to the forest like fans. That was the greatness of Saint Energy. Regardless of the attributes of the Heavenly Energy, the most it could do was to forcefully train one's Soul Energy to produce Divine Thought. Divine Thought could only be increased from cultivation base.

However, it was different for Saint Energy because it was completely integrated into the Divine Thought. It was a part of the Divine Thought, and it could increase the Divine Thought directly. With the help of Nebula Saint Energy, Zhou Weiqing managed to expand his Divine Thought extremely quickly. What was peculiar was that the Divine Thought that was supported by the Nebula Saint Energy could absorb the Atmospheric Energy in the air to strengthen itself so it could cover a broader area.

An ordinary Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse could use Divine Thought to sense slight energy waves that were within the radius of tens of miles. Meanwhile, Zhou Weiqing expanded the perception coverage to at least 10 times more with only the Nebula Saint Energy. The forest was huge but it still had its limit after all. With Zhou Weiqing constantly scanning, as long as he kept changing his location, he would definitely find it sooner or later.

Shangguan Xue'er looked at Zhou Weiqing in shock. Without a doubt, Zhou Weiqing definitely did not know much about the Elf

Tribe' Sealed Land. The only information he had was what she had described to him. What he was doing right now right now was simple and even stupid. It would not work at all for other Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouses because the Sealed Land's entrance would randomly move. It would be too difficult to look for it using Divine Thought.

However, the coverage of Zhou Weiqing's Divine Thought could be described as terrifying. Under such circumstances, the dumbest way became the most effective one. As he scanned using Divine Thought, Zhou Weiqing brought the five women with him and flew around the sky. In less than 15 minutes, a smile appeared on his face.

"Found it." Zhou Weiqing opened his eyes suddenly and waved his right hand. A tendril of light made from Nebula Saint Energy covered the six of them. Soon after, their bodies were like meteors headed towards a direction at the speed of light.

During the journey, Zhou Weiqing had always guided the five women to fly at a stable speed. They were chatting and laughing along the way. The women did not feel the speed at all. However, the recent acceleration of their speed by Zhou Weiqing made them realize the difference between him and them. The air around them became distorted suddenly. In just a couple of breaths, they arrived at another place.

What kind of speed was that? It could definitely be compared to traveling through space. It was so fast that even the air around them was distorted.

At that moment, Zhou Weiqing had landed on the ground with the five women. Zhou Weiqing's eyes were trained on a tree that would require a couple of people to circle it with a hug not far away from them. All the women, with the exception of Little Witch, had leveled up to Heavenly King Tier and their perception was pretty powerful. Moreover, all of them had Saint Energy in them. As they followed the direction of Zhou Weiqing's gaze, they

discovered something odd with the big tree.

Looking at it with their eyes, it was just an ordinary old tree in the forest. However, under the probing of Divine Thought, one could see that the air around the old tree was slightly distorted. To their surprise, it was made from Life Energy. The old tree seemed to sense that it was being probed by the people's Divine Thought. As if it was sentient, it disappeared in a streak of silver light.

"Trying to run away?" Zhou Weiqing smirked as the corner of his lips curled upwards. Next, the silver light shot towards Zhou Weiqing and the women, enveloping them in the glow. As the glow flickered, they were teleported elsewhere. It was a group Blink. The point was that even after the Blink was complete, the old tree that was made from Life Energy still remained in sight.

Chapter 774: The Elf Tribe's Sealed Land (3)

As the former heir of the Heavenly Expanse Palace, Shangguan Xue'er naturally had broad knowledge. At that very moment, all she could think of was it was the Spatial Law. Yes, only one who had mastered the Spatial Law could do what Zhou Weiqing just did. It was clear that the old tree was the entrance to the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land. The entrance did not avoid them when they arrived earlier. However, it was time for it to randomly move.

Zhou Weiqing brought the five women to look for it again. It seemed easy but in reality, it was extremely difficult. There was only one way to find the exact location of the spatial transporter. It was to utilize Spatial Law and feel the spatial waves from an exact location within the area. It was an exclusive skill of a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse who possessed the Spatial Attribute.

There was only one known Heavenly God-tier powerhouse currently on the Boundless Mainland, and that was the Mountain Lord of Heavenly Snow Mountain, Xue Ao'Tian. However, the Mountain Lord of the Heavenly Snow Mountain did not possess the Spatial Attribute. If Zhou Weiqing boasted that he was comparable to a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse, Shangguan Xue'er would have doubted him. However, she would believe him now. Zhou Weiqing's abilities had indeed surpassed her expectation.

Naturally, Zhou Weiqing was clueless about the changes in the women's thoughts. He slowly approached the tree and touched it with his hand in a testing manner. Suddenly, an intense aura of rejection burst out. Even with Zhou Weiqing's strength and cultivation base, his hand still recoiled.

'This is a Heavenly God-tier energy wave,' Zhou Weiqing almost said that out loud. Nevertheless, it was merely a Heavenly God-tier energy wave. It was not that Zhou Weiqing could not destroy it if he wanted to. However, it would cause a significant damage to the

entire Sealed Land's parallel.

The five women stood in a semicircle behind Zhou Weiqing. Shangguan Xue'er said, "Without the Natural Energy, it's impossible to enter the Sealed Land. There must be a perfect combination of Water, Fire, Earth, Wind, Light, and Darkness Attributes to create a bizarre energy wave that was sufficiently balanced enough to enter the Sealed Land.

Zhou Weiqing chuckled and said, "Why do I feel like you're talking about teacher's Six Ultimate Heavenly Path Formation! Doesn't teacher have the six attributes?"

Before leaving the Heavenly Bow Empire, Zhou Weiqing had made arrangements for many matters. Now that the Heavenly Demon Sect had become the Peerless Sect, Ming Yu naturally decided to stay. It was not his call to leave. To keep his words, Zhou Weiqing would not bother Long Shiya if it was not urgent.

Shangguan Bing'er said, "Perhaps even Sir Long might not be able to enter. The unique wave that's made out of the six attributes must be aligned with the interior of the Sealed Land. Moreover, the wave is ever changing. We have all the six attributes between the six of us, let's just try our luck and experiment with it."

Zhou Weiqing laughed and shook his head, "It's not that troublesome. Just watch your husband."

As he spoke, Zhou Weiqing waved his right hand and enveloped the six of them in rich reddish-gold Nebula Saint Energy. With the Nebula Saint Energy, they levitated off the ground and hovered an inch above the ground. From far, the six of them looked like a big, reddish gold light sphere. Zhou Weiqing controlled the big light sphere and headed towards the Sealed Land's entrance slowly.

"Weiqing, I don't think that's going to work..." Shangguan Xue'er was shocked. Just when she thought Zhou Weiqing was going to enter by force with the help of Nebula Saint Energy, something bizarre happened. The tree that was made of energy did not reject

the Nebula Saint Energy's reddish-gold glow. The surroundings became distorted suddenly, followed by a green light that covered the outside of the Nebula Saint Energy. As the glow blinked, they appeared in another place in the next second.

It was a place that looked like a dream. The five of them had appeared on a hill so they could see far away. The sky was blue. It was so clear that it was flawless. There were no paths here. The only thing available were some strange plants. The shortest tree was over 30 meters in height. It was Zhou Weiqing's first time seeing so many different types of trees. If the forest earlier was filled with Life aura, then this was an ocean of Life aura.

The most breathtaking thing was the oval quiet and little lake that was a few hundred meters ahead of them. Even though it was a few hundred meters away, they could see how clear the lake was. It was like the highest grade of a blue precious stone was mounted there. As the sun shined on it, it would reflect the light, and in turn, creating a water wave halo on the mountain that was on the other side. What they were looking at was too mind-blowing. The air was so fresh that it almost opened up their pores.

"What a beautiful place." Zhou Weiqing turned around and looked at his wives. He found that they were still in shock. The other four women were looking at the scenery but Shangguan Xue'er was looking at him. Her slightly stunned expression was just too tempting. Her red lips were slightly parted and there was a blush on her beautiful face.

"Muah." How could Zhou Weiqing let such a great opportunity slip away? He gave her a kiss immediately.

Shangguan Xue'er snapped out of her shock from his kiss, "Weiqing, how, how did you do this?"

Zhou Weiqing chuckled, "It's simple! Isn't your husband great? Actually, I only had the confidence to do this when I heard about how magical the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land is from you earlier. No

matter what kind of energy, all of them came from the same place. Whether it's Natural Energy or Saint Energy, they're all in the same category. Although my Saint Energy can't compare to the real Creation Energy, it's one of the purest energy in the world. It also has the ability to create, similar to the Creation Saint Energy. It's safe to say that the other attributes will have been integrated with it with it. Although I didn't use Natural Energy, at the very least it shouldn't reject my Saint Energy. The level of my Saint Energy is actually superior to the Elf Tribe's Natural Energy. Based on the fact that I'm using my Saint Energy to enter, what basis do they have to reject me? This is an attribute advantage. Actually, you guys should be able to do it now as well."

All the women had experienced the greatness of Saint Energy but their experience was not comparable to Zhou Weiqing's experience. Even Tian'er who had solidified the Starcrux Saint Nucleus Core was not comparable to him as well. Her Starcrux Saint Nucleus Core was still a distance away from Zhou Weiqing. That was due to the differences in the individual's absorption and receiving abilities.

Zhou Weiqing owned a body that had the protection of the Dragon-Tiger Transformation and Immortal Deity Shield. Naturally, Tian'er's body could not compare to his body. Therefore, the energy that he absorbed when he was solidifying the Starcrux Saint Nucleus Core was a lot more. That was the reason why he took such a long time to break through at that time. Although Zhou Weiqing did not dare to say that he understood the Saint Energy completely, he did have quite a thorough understanding of Saint Energy. Otherwise, it would have been impossible for him to master Spatial Law.

At that moment, Little Witch who was standing at the side jumped in excitement, "It's just too beautiful here. Such rich Life aura! Weiqing, it'll be amazing if we can live in somewhere like this in the future. This is heaven on earth."

Zhou Weiqing chuckled and said, "No, this is the Elf Tribe's heaven. We might be able to open a parallel realm ourselves. Perhaps I'll have the ability to do that when my cultivation base is upgraded to the Heavenly God Tier one day."

"Really?" Little Witch grabbed Zhou Weiqing's neck and kissed his face. Ever since they had gotten together, Little Witch had let down her guard and her cheekiness was slowly coming back.

Shangguan Xue'er let out a soft sigh as she looked at Zhou Weiqing with an odd expression on her face. "If you said you could open up a realm before we came here, I would have thought that you were lying but I believe it now."

A person would have to at least have a cultivation base at the Heavenly God Tier to open up a parallel realm. Moreover, not any ordinary Heavenly God-tier powerhouse could do it because the size of the realm depended on the cultivation base. Usually, it would take at least four Heavenly God-tier powerhouses who possessed Spatial Attribute to control the Spatial Law. However, Zhou Weiqing had mastered the Spatial Law even though his cultivation base was only at the Heavenly Emperor Tier. It would not be a lie if he said that he could open a realm when he reached the Heavenly God Tier.

Tian'er burst out laughing and said, "Little Witch, you'll know when he's opening up the realm. It's not easy to build something like what the Elf Tribe has. Having the ability to open up realms doesn't necessarily means having the ability to create a world like the one that we're looking at right now. God knows how many years of hard work it took to create this. It must've taken the Elf Tribe thousands of years. All of the mountains, lakes, and trees here are actually transferred from our world and cultivated here. You've been to the Lustre Spatial Realm on the Heavenly Jewel Island. Everything there is formed naturally. It's different from here."

Shangguan Xue'er smiled and said, "Tian'er is right. However, if

we own a parallel realm of our own, we can complete all of the arrangements in there! If we don't have to concern ourselves with the matters on the mainland, don't you think it'll be amazing if we can spend the rest of our days in a world that we created?"

All the women had sparkles in their eyes as they nodded continuously when they heard what Shangguan Xue'er said. A world of their own. A parallel realm that only they could enter. All the rich had was just a house but what they might have is a realm of their own! The thought of that had gotten them all excited. Looking at the glow on the five women's faces, Zhou Weiqing made a silent promise that he would fulfill their dream in the future. Besides, he also had the same thoughts as them. If he could own a realm of his own, he could even place the Peerless Sect in there. It would be such an amazing thing.

Chapter 775: The Elven Princess (1 I 2 I 3)

As the five women expressed their dreams of having a parallel realm, their eyes unknowingly fell onto Zhou Weiqing. Yet, that certain somebody kept pushing with the topic with his own ideals, "Creating a parallel realm of our own is pretty good. With just our family in it, we could live primitive lives. For instance, we could all be nude, use the sky as a blanket and the ground as our bed. Nobody would see us anyway. Let's all sleep together under one blanket. This is my dream!"

After listening to his words, all five of them had different expressions on their faces. Speechless, Tian'er said, "I can't imagine how shameless some people can be!"

Shangguan Bing'er, on the other hand, was so embarrassed that she could not even utter a word. Little Witch was chuckling with her hand over her mouth by the side, while Shangguan Xue'er, at the other side, glared at Zhou Weiqing fiercely.

In the end, it was Shangguan Fei'er who came up with a conclusion. After exchanging looks with the other four girls, she looked at Zhou Weiqing with a smile before saying, "Get him!"

Just like that, the five women instantly turned into feline predators and leaped towards a certain somebody.

That somebody's response was extremely simple. With his hands clasped above his head, he crouched down and balled up his body, showing a look of resignation as he shouted, "Don't hit my handsome face!"

Perhaps the powerful strength that Zhou Weiqing displayed was too surprising, as even Shangguan Xue'er who was initially very worried had now felt at ease. No matter what, with Zhou Weiqing and their cultivation bases, even if they weren't able to get their hands on the Elven Queen's blood, they could at least still flee from the scene without complications. On top of that, Zhou Weiqing

had agreed that he would not hurt any of the Elf Tribe's clansmen at all.

As the six of them were laughing and having fun, a clear loud voice suddenly resonated in the air.

"Who are you guys? Why haven't I seen you guys before?"

Upon hearing this voice, the six of them were in a state of shock. It was because they did not notice the arrival of whose voice it belonged to.

Automatically, the six of them turned and looked towards the direction of the voice. On top of a big tree not far from them, sat a very clean-looking, fair little girl.

The little girl appeared to be very young, about six to seven years old. Her pink face was flushed and dewy, looking entirely succulent. A curious look could be seen in her bright huge eyes. Long powder-blue hair cascaded behind her shoulders, with two pointy little ears protruding out from her hair.

What struck them as most peculiar was the pair of transparent wings behind her back.

Seeing her, let alone Zhou Weiqing's five women, even Zhou Weiqing himself had the urge to go up to her for a hug and a kiss. This little girl was simply just too cute.

"Is this an Elf?" Zhou Weiqing whispered as he asked Shangguan Xue'er.

The coldness on Xue'er's face had already vanished without a trace. Right now, she was looking at the little girl with extreme gentleness in her eyes. Gently nodding her head, she replied, "The Elves are actually very kind. They're beautiful and they have a long lifespan too. She may look very young but she is most likely much older than us all. An Elf would only reach their adulthood when they hit 100 years old, which is equivalent to our 18 years of human age."

Seeing an Elf for the first time, not to mention such a lovely one, made Zhou Weiqing much fonder toward this tribe even more. With a smile, he said to the little elf, "Hey little girl, we're Elves too!"

With her head tilted, she stared at Zhou Weiqing, "You're a liar! We Elves have wings! You don't have any!"

Zhou Weiqing chuckled, "Who says that I don't have any? I just hide them away. See?" As he spoke, he bent his body forward and at once, a huge pair of wings spread out behind him. It was the Dragon-Tiger Transformation's wings.

The moment she saw the wings on his back, the little Elf gaped with her mouth wide, "Whoa! Your wings are so huge! And it's even more beautiful than mine! What are those purple lines on them for?"

Zhou Weiqing took a few steps forward before quickly sitting on the tree branch in a flash. The little Elf was not afraid; she did not even flinch. Spreading his wings out in front of her, he said, "Go on, touch it."

Curiously, the little Elf pinched his wings before turning her head again to look at his ears, "But you don't have any pointy ears!"

Zhou Weiqing smiled again. He squeezed his ears and pulled up his ears at once, making them sharp and pointy in an instant. With his abilities, it was easy for him to make physical changes in his body.

The Elf stared blankly at him, "Ah, could it be that... Are you a mutated Elf? But, mummy told me there haven't been any mutated Elves for many years now."

Under the tree, Shangguan Fei'er had her arms over Tian'er's shoulders as she whispered, "This bastard Little Fatty! Don't tell me he's trying to go for this little girl now instead!"

Tian'er burst out laughing in an instant, "I don't think he'd be

that nasty."

The five girls laughed out loud at once. Right at this time, they heard Zhou Weiqing who was sitting on the tree telling the little Elf, "Little girl, you're so beautiful! Will you marry my son later in the future? I'll give you some candies!"

The little Elf's eyes lit up at once, "Candies? Human's candies? Oh yes, that's great!"

The five girls who were still laughing at him were immediately horrified by the turn of events. The three Shangguan sisters and Little Witch could not help but had their glances land on Tian'er's tummy immediately.

At a loss for expressing herself, Tian'er shouted out angrily at Zhou Weiqing who was still sitting on the tree, "You bastard! We don't even know whether the baby is a boy or girl yet, alright? How can you get a girlfriend for him so fast? Do you want him to become like you in the future?"

Zhou Weiqing chuckled, "Well, this is what we mean by 'repairing the house before it rains'. Isn't it extremely normal for a father to find a wife for his son? It isn't that hard for me to 'work' a little harder and get a few sons, is it?"

In truth, he really liked this little girl in front of him. This little girl gave him a feeling of being completely at one with nature. Not only that, there seemed to be not even an ounce of negativity in her emotions. She was indeed a very pure little girl. Adding on to the fact that she was already so beautiful at such a young age, he was sure that she would definitely grow up to become a gorgeous beauty in the future. As the saying goes, 'it's better to keep the goods within the family'. Wouldn't it be better to keep this particular 'goodie' for his son instead?

Just as Zhou Weiqing was teasing the little girl with a delighted heart, all of a sudden, a strangely distorted halo appeared right above the little girl without warning.

Immediately afterward, with a 'whoosh', the little girl was sucked into the distorted light - just like that.

Everything happened in just a blink of an eye. Even Zhou Weiqing could not react in time as he had his guard down at that very moment.

When the distorted halo appeared just now, he actually thought that this was the energy ripple that was being emitted out of the little girl herself. By the time it started to unleash its Suction Energy, it was already too late for him to do anything about it. All he could do was to just attach part of his Divine Thought onto her as she left.

"What's the matter?" The five girls below whose motherly instincts were triggered and were just about to come up to the tree to have a chat with the little girl were stunned as well. Zhou Weiqing, on the hand, who was still on top of the tree immediately had a gloomy look on his face.

The reason why he only had reacted now was because of the energy ripple earlier.

The Elf Tribe was very good in Natural Element magic, Water, Fire, Earth, Wind, Light, and Darkness. These were all the elements that they mastered. However, the distorted halo was clearly from the Time Attribute. How could there be a Time Attribute energy in the Elven territory? On top of that, it had actually kidnapped the little girl. At the last moment when the little girl was being taken away, Zhou Weiqing could clearly see the look of horror on her face.

Leaping down from the tree at once, he had a terribly horrified look on his face. After all, a person had just been kidnapped right in front of his watch. How could he not feel frustrated at all? Besides, he really did not wish for any danger to befall the girl at all.

Just as Zhou Weiqing was about to unleash his own power and

search for the piece of his Divine Thought, the whole realm suddenly resonated with a crisp, loud sound of bell chimes.

The silver bell-like chiming sound was very pleasant to the ears. However, at this moment, all of them could clearly feel that in this infinite realm, a violent natural element energy ripple suddenly erupted without warning. In the distance and in the vicinity, several hundreds of shadows rose to the sky at once. And, they only had one goal in mind: Zhou Weiqing and the gang.

"W-What has just happened?" Xue'er stared at Zhou Weiqing in shock.

Zhou Weiqing replied, "The little girl was kidnapped by a Time Attribute energy and it seems like the Elf Tribe had been alarmed now. Hold your horses, guys! Don't just fight back even if they appear to be hostile to us. Let's try to communicate with them first."

Just as they were talking, hundreds of figures had descended from the sky while some of them still remained hovering in the air. The six of them were completely surrounded with no way of escape now.

All these people were Elves. It was apparent that these Elves had a much larger body compared to that little Elf. Although they had a slightly smaller build compared to human beings, each of them was extremely good looking. The men were handsome and the women were beautiful. Unfortunately, right now, they were all completely filled with wrath. They looked like they could not wait to get their hands on Zhou Weiqing and his company to shred them alive.

A male Elf who appeared to be much older glared at Zhou Weiqing and the girls with fury as he bawled, "Despicable intruders! Hand Her Royal Highness Princess over now!"

"Her Royal Highness Princess?" The moment they heard of such a title, the six of them immediately thought of the little girl that they

had just met before. At once, horror dawned on their faces. They really meant no malice during this trip of theirs. It had never crossed their minds that the cute little girl just now was actually the Elven Princess. What upset them was the fact that they were now made into a scapegoat of the kidnapper who took the princess away.

"We did not kidnap the Elven Princess. All six of us are here right before you. If it's really us who took her away, would we still be waiting for you to apprehend us right here?" Zhou Weiqing tried his best to talk to them in a calmer tone.

The male Elf fumed, "You intruders invaded our territory. So what good intentions could you possibly have coming here? Grab them all!"

Just as he finished his sentence, the several hundred Elves who were surrounding them immediately began to launch their attacks.

Distinctly, multiple colors that represented the Natural Elements soared up into the air at once. The energy elements of nature instantly filled the entire atmosphere. From far, one could see a gigantic balloon-like halo forming right there. And now, Zhou Weiqing and the five girls were right in the middle of the colorful light orb.

A powerful aura rose up at once, suppressing the six of them to the point that they started to feel difficulty in breathing.

When the Elves had just arrived just now, Zhou Weiqing already did a quick scan on their cultivation bases and found that none of them had cultivation base of a Heavenly King Tier and above. Yet, the strength that had erupted when these Elves joined forces turned out to be surprisingly powerful. Even a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse's aura might not necessarily be stronger than theirs.

They even went as far as to unite each of their attributes through the force of nature. Even if they were all of different attributes, they could still work seamlessly with each other. Perhaps it was

only the Elf Tribe that could do such thing. Not only that, Zhou Weiqing could vaguely feel that this must have something to do with the Sealed Land of theirs. Over here, all Natural Elements were magnified and enhanced. The Elves themselves seemed to be part of the Natural Element, thus allowing them to be more powerful when they control the Natural Element.

As instructed by Zhou Weiqing before, the five girls did not attack but remained quietly beside him. Though the suppressing force was tremendous, it was still not much of a threat to all of them who possessed the Saint Energy.

The male Elf who gave the order just now was also taken aback by the sight. He was very clear of the strength of the pressure that his other Elves had released. At first, he thought that these young humans would instantly lose their resistance in the face of such a strong suppressing force. Yet, to his surprise, they did not seem to react to this at all. Were they really this powerful?

Zhou Weiqing said in a grave voice, "Elven friends, please don't attack us. How about this? We'll follow you to meet the Elven Chief and explain the situation to you. It was true that we did come across Her Royal Highness Princess, but she seems to be taken away by some special Time attribute energy. You can't do anything to us but I'm still willing to go back with you. What do you think?"

Of course, the reason why he explained so patiently was not because he was afraid of these Elves. Instead, he just did not want the kidnapper to get away so easily. On top of that, he also wanted to rescue the Elven Princess as soon as possible. Putting all other factors aside, based on his fondness towards the little girl alone, he really had to rescue her.

The male Elf who was also the leader shouted in fury, "Let us seal your cultivation base first then!"

A cold glimpse flashed across Zhou Weiqing's eyes as he asked nonchalantly, "Do you really think that I'm afraid of you?"

As he spoke, a pure solid gold Nebula Saint Energy instantly erupted from his body, forming a solid gold light orb inside a gigantic colorful light orb. At the same time, the golden light orb emitted a dazzling brilliance. The Elves who surrounded Zhou Weiqing could all feel the Natural Elements in the air and instantly rushed toward the golden orb frenziedly. The Natural Elements that seemed to be a part of their body had instantly abandoned them.

The golden color that was glittering with the nebula began to shine even more brightly under the enhancement of the Natural Elements. Though it did not give off any coercing pressure, the original encirclement of the Elf Tribe was instantly suppressed. Some of the Elves who had weaker cultivation base even fell from the air without warning.

The pure golden light slowly spread out to become a gigantic cushion before they caught the fallen Elves from below.

The Heavenly God-tier-like suppressing formation built by the several hundred Elves was instantly crushed by Zhou Weiqing in just a blink of an eye. Even though these Elves could not actually use their joint force to cast a Heavenly God-tier attack, but with the existence of the strong coercion force itself, even an ordinary Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse would be slightly suppressed.

Unfortunately, in terms of attributes, Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy had completely suppressed them all at once. It was simply ridiculous to want Zhou Weiqing to bow down to them with just such small amount of Heavenly God-tier aura.

Their formation scattered at once. A look of panic could be seen on most of the several thousands of Elves' faces. Although it was good enough that the Elves could control the energy of nature, they did not have actual combat experience at all since they lived in the Sealed Land since they were young. It was still relatively good if they were able to suppress their opponents but if the tables were turned for them to be victims of suppression instead, things

would start to look meek for them.

Zhou Weiqing cast a cold glance at the Elves who were surrounding him; these people seemed to want to do it the hard way instead. To think that the Elf Tribe who claimed to be the most peaceful and freedom-loving tribe would turn out this far from their expectation. One could easily imagine how important power was in this world. As long as you had a strength that was majestic enough, only then would you be able to gain the right of having a voice in any part of this world.

Zhou Weiqing did not proceed to launch an attack. He had already promised Xue'er that he would not harm any of them and he would definitely keep to his words. On top of that, he was a very smart person. If he hurt any of the Elf Tribe members, wouldn't that be akin to admitting that he kidnapped the Elven Princess? It was not that he feared the revenge from the Elves but it was just that he was not willing to be a cannon fodder for the person behind this.

"You can bring me to meet your chief now, can't you?" Zhou Weiqing had his eyes on the male Elf leader.

The male Elf was staring at him with his mouth wide open. Till now, he still had not returned to his senses yet. In his eyes, Zhou Weiqing was only a human who was still in his twenties - this was why he decided to attack him before. The Elves were born with the ability to control nature and life; they were also endowed with a natural ability — the Qi Observation Technique that allowed them to see the true age of a person. There was no doubt that Zhou Weiqing and the girls were only in their twenties. For this reason, the male Elf thought that wanting to catch them would be a piece of cake. Who knew that in the end, Zhou Weiqing was able to release such a horrifying power. For a moment, he fell into slight despair.

At this moment, more Elves were making their way towards them. Though the elves' transparent wings did not allow them to

fly too fast, the fact that they were able to fly alone already gave them a huge advantage over the humans.

Moreover, most of the Elves were holding bows in their hands. Seeing them, Zhou Weiqing could not help but felt a sense of familiarity towards them. The only thing he did not know was if his Peerless Battalion were stronger than the Elves if they engaged in battle.

"My patience is limited. It looks like I'll have to call the Elf chief on my own now, wouldn't I?" Seeing the hesitant on the male Elf face who seemed like he did not know what to do now, Zhou Weiqing could not help but feel a little disappointed in the Elf Tribe. It appeared that they had been staying in this peaceful world for too long and had long forgotten their ability to fight.

A faint light flashed across the sky. A faint deity light lit up on Zhou Weiqing's face at once. With his hands clasped tightly in front of his chest, a glimpse flashed across his eyes as a brilliant galaxy belt soared up to the sky. A huge phantom image could be seen faintly forming from Zhou Weiqing's back.

When this phantom image appeared, even Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy Galaxia that was originally pure gold in color was instantly dyed grey. The grey color dazzled and at once, the gigantic phantom behind him, more than a thousand feet high, emitted an incredibly tremendous pressure as it soared up straight to the sky, all the way up piercing through the atmosphere.

When this tremendous pressure appeared, be it the Elves who were already present at the scene or those who were making their way there, all of them felt a sense of suffocation immediately. Fortunately, this tremendous pressure was projected up to the sky. Otherwise, if it was aimed at them, all of these Elves would have probably fallen from the sky, or worse, be directly crushed and destroyed by this bloodcurdling pressure.

"The Demon God's aura?" A woman voice of shock resonated in

the air. At the next moment, a peculiar event suddenly took place. In all directions, numerous faint green lights rushed up all at once. Without warning, another phantom image that was also a thousand feet tall emerged out of nowhere in the sky.

The phantom that appeared behind Zhou Weiqing was indeed the Demon God. However, this Demon God was no longer the same as the one that he used to summon.

The first apparent change that could be seen was the clarity of the phantom image. The Demon God that was summoned with the help of Zhou Weiqing's Nebula Saint Energy was wearing a black long robe that covered his entire body. His grey hair was so long that it was scattered all over the ground. A bright dazzling grey gem was embedded right in the middle of the chest of his robe. Not only that, this time, even his facial features could be seen clearly now.

That was an extremely handsome facial feature. On his pale face was a pair of grey eyes. Still, there was a faint red bloody line that ran down from the middle of his forehead all the way down toward his brows. A devilish aura was constantly being exuded out of his gigantic body. On top of that, an atrocious energy ripple was emanating off his body continuously - an energy that could even make the Elf's Tribe Sealed Land shiver in fear.

Right in front of the Demon God was another phantom image being solidified not far away. This image was much more superfine and gorgeous. It was an image of a woman in a long, green dress. Almost all of the accessories on her body was made from plants. A slender waist was exposed, attractively revealing her navel. The full mounds on her chest were overflowing with delight. The delicate skin was tinted with a healthy, fair color. Long azure-green hair hung loosely behind her back. Though it was not as exaggerated as the Demon God, with her thousand-feet tall height, her long hair was as dazzling as a turquoise waterfall.

This woman also had extremely beautiful facial features. The

pair of azure blue eyes were filled with an endless breath of life. Behind her were three pairs of transparent wings. An intense breath of life was constantly being emitted from her body, stopping the Demon God's evil breath from spreading to the atmosphere.

What a powerful life energy; Zhou Weiqing was slightly taken aback. The next moment, a strange scene unfolded itself almost immediately. Zhou Weiqing waved his sleeve and under the shroud of Zhou Weiqing's pure golden Galaxia Saint Energy, he and the five girls suddenly vanished into thin air without a trace. Just like that, they merged into the body of the gigantic Demon God.

Immediately afterward, a humane smile suddenly appeared on the handsome Demon God's face, giving off a devilish vibe, along with his peculiar trait.

A light gleamed in the woman with the long green dress's palm. Without warning, a scepter that was much taller than her body appeared in her palm as well. As she swung it around gently, all of the Elves that were on the ground were completely swept away, leaving her all alone at the scene.

"The Nature Goddess?" A chilly voice sounded from the Demon God. There was no weapon in his hand at all. From the beginning until this point now, he was completely empty-handed, yet, just from his crushing aura itself, it was apparent that the Demon God was having the upper hand now. After all, from the level of God itself, the Nature Goddess was far more inferior than the Demon God. But looking at this stalemate scene in front, there was one thing that was apparent. The summoner of the Nature Goddess was actually much stronger than the summoner of the Demon God.

"Wow, there's actually a human being who can summon the real Demon God and merge himself into it? This is definitely not something that the Heavenly Demon Sect that you humans created, could do. Hand me my daughter and I'll let you all go in

one piece. Otherwise, this Sealed Land will become your place of burial!"

Without a doubt, the Elven Queen was the one who summoned this Nature Goddess. Right at this moment, Zhou Weiqing who was controlling the Demon God phantom image was stunned with astonishment. After all, it was all thanks to his Saint Energy that he could summon the Demon God. It looked like the Elven Queen must have possessed a special ability for her to be able to summon the Nature Goddess. What a strong power this was! If the Nature Goddess was summoned based on only her cultivation base, she would most likely have a cultivation base that was much higher than the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord. Perhaps, she would almost be on par with Hui Yao's strength as well.

"Let me tell you for the last time. We didn't kidnap your daughter. We have no malicious intents toward the Elf Tribe at all. Otherwise, before you arrived just now, I could have wiped out this place completely just with my strength alone. I don't have to explain anything to you. I'm afraid you'd have to try harder if you really wanted to keep us here!"

A trace of human emotions could be seen flashing across the Nature Goddess' face that was summoned by the Elven Queen. Creases crept up between her brows as the pair of azure blue eyes stared at the Demon God before her.

"Yes, you did indeed show mercy just now. However, if you plan to use my daughter to threaten me, then you had never been so wrong before. Do you really think that you could use the Demon God to threaten me? That's right, though the Demon God is much more superior than the Nature Goddess, I'm afraid you haven't fully mastered the Demon God's ability yet. The more powerful the projection of the God is, the more strength is required to control it. Just by gaining the upper hand on the aura itself does not mean anything at all. After all, this is the Sealed Land of the Elf Tribe that is backed by an almost endless supply of the breath of life.

When I say you're not allowed to leave, you will certainly not be able to leave!"

Slightly gloomed, Zhou Weiqing asked, "Are all Elves this rigid in personality?"

The Elven Queen roared, "Hand over my daughter and stop everything that you're doing now. Or else, don't blame me for being merciless!"

Zhou Weiqing began to feel annoyed as well. Coldly, he replied, "Come get me then. I really want to see how merciless you can be!" Since things had become like this now, unless he could use his power to bend the other party to his will as it looked like they were unwilling to listen to his explanation at all. Even if he could not defeat the Elven Queen, he at least wanted to let him know that his strength was not something that she could destroy so easily.

At once, the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land transformed its appearance immediately. A vibrant green world appeared behind the Nature Goddess while a greyish world brimming with an evil aura emerged behind the Demon God. Even the plants by his side were also blanketed with a faint devilish aura. In truth, Zhou Weiqing had already tried with all his might to control his power so as to minimize the impacts on the environment here. After all, he himself also liked this Elf's land a lot. He really did not want to annihilate it.

The Nature Goddess slowly lifted up the scepter in her hand and at once, an intense green light of Life Energy poured towards the Demon God like a gush of a river, aiming to envelop him completely.

Her purpose was very simple — to exhaust Zhou Weiqing's energy with the help of the tremendous Life Energy in the Elf's Tribe Sealed Land. In her opinion, as long as his energy was reduced to the state where it could no longer maintain the Demon God summoning, Zhou Weiqing would obviously lose this battle to

her.

The coldness in the Demon God's eyes turned a few shades chillier. A gray brilliance glimpsed across his grey eyes and at the very next moment, the long robe on his body swayed suddenly despite no wind present. Without warning, a grey light blade appeared out of nowhere in mid-air. Yet, all this while, the Demon God did not so much as lift a finger at all.

A faint 'pop' sound could suddenly be heard resonating in the air. The green light belt suddenly flew all over the sky like small butterflies. The grey light blade stirred up a surprisingly long rainbow and earth-shattering demonic aura as it charged forward toward the Nature Goddess.

When the look on her face dimmed a little, the Nature Goddess lifted up the scepter in her hand up high and faced the grey light blade directly head-on. With a crash, ripples of energy fluctuated and spread out in the air all at once. While the Nature Goddess slightly swayed, the Demon God still remained standing motionlessly.

At this time, the Elven Queen who summoned the Nature Goddess was completely filled with bewilderment and shock. It had never crossed her mind that Zhou Weiqing's strength could reach such a surprising level. When she arrived, he was about to summon the Demon God, so he had yet to merge with the Demon God behind his back. Even an ordinary Elf possessed the Qi Observation Technique, so the royal Elf family's successor would definitely come to possess a much stronger Qi Observation Technique as well. With a glance, it was apparent to her that Zhou Weiqing's cultivation base was roughly about the same as the Heavenly Emperor Tier.

Without a doubt, such a cultivation base was considered as a top presence in the human world but in the Elf tribe, it was not even enough to stir a storm. The Elven Queen believed that he must have used a hidden technique to summon the Demon God's

Illusion. Though this illusion was so clear to the point that it had shaken her to the core, it still did not mean that this Demon God had an actual combat strength. Just with this point alone, the Elven Queen was much stronger than all the other enemies Zhou Weiqing had faced before. For the reason that she was able to induce the Nature Goddess to emerge by using secret techniques, she had a more profound understanding of this technique compared to the rest of the people.

However, watching such a scene before her, the Elven Queen noticed that her initial judgment seemed to have gone very wrong. Not only did this Demon God possess the ability to attack, its energy was actually derived from the true Demon God's immense power itself. How was a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse able to do that at all? This left her extremely puzzled. No wonder he dared to kidnap her daughter; his strength was this powerful after all.

As the saying went, 'act first and talk later', the Elven Queen had completely thought that Zhou Weiqing's purpose was to kidnap her daughter first before laying out the conditions for her later.

This was also the reason why Zhou Weiqing had to launch his attack despite his unwillingness to do so.

The Nature Goddess scoffed coldly. Once again, she waved the scepter in her hand. The long slender scepter suddenly transformed into a long whip before it lashed out at the Demon God. The rich breath of life turned to become a long river in the air and countless of green light spots gushed forward towards the Demon God, along with the whip.

At once, a strong binding force appeared around the Demon God.

Another glimpse could be seen flashing in the Demon God's eyes. This time he finally moved. The gigantic body took a step forward in the sky. At the same time, his right hand grabbed onto the thin air and another peculiar scene unfolded itself. A layer of the grey

air stream that brought about numerous dazzling nebulas materialized from the air. The moment the green binding light in the air came into contact with the grey nebulas, they dissipated easily in a blink of an eye. Some had even merged into the grey stream of air.

A cold glare burst out without warning. A hint of anger appeared out of provocation and could be seen gleaming faintly in the Demon God's eyes.

Within seconds, in the void, a long sword suddenly slashed open the realm and revealed itself on top of the Demon God's head.

"T-The Demon God Sword?" The Nature Goddess cried out loudly in surprise. A hint of panic could be heard in her cries.

Just like the Nature Goddess' scepter, the Demon God Sword was the weapon of the Demon God. However, the latter was still far above the Nature Goddess when it came to hierarchy. The Nature Goddess that was summoned by the Elven Queen could be said as the enlarged version of her own power. Everything was under her own control.

On the contrary, this was not the case for the Demon God. As one of the most powerful gods in the world, even his mere projection could not be entirely controlled even if it was summoned. For this reason, the anger that appeared in the Demon God's eyes was actually not the embodiment of Zhou Weiqing's emotions. Instead, it was the wrath of a superior that was being provoked by the small little Nature Goddess.

As a result, the Demon God Sword appeared outside Zhou Weiqing's control.

At this time, Zhou Weiqing was feeling equal in pain as well. This was because the Nebula Saint Energy in his body was being consumed at a terribly horrifying speed. It was a good thing the other five girls were by his side because other than Little Witch, the girls had already solidified their Saint Nucleus Core. Among

them all, Tian'er's was just as pure as his own Saint Nucleus Core. With their support, Zhou Weiqing could still withstand the consumption with all his might. At the same time, he was constantly using his Saint Energy to absorb the Nature Elements to replenish his own body as well.

The Demon God Sword in the air was not very long; it was still slightly shorter than the Nature Goddess' scepter. Still, it did not descend and fall into the Demon God's hand. Instead, it kept hovering on top in mid-air.

Be that as it may, as soon as the sword appeared, the whip that was transformed from the Nature God's scepter immediately cracked and broke into pieces. It then turned into innumerable spots of light in the sky before finally transforming back into a scepter and fell back into the hands of the Nature Goddess.

The chilly devilish aura suddenly erupted in the air. At this moment, everything in the air and the ground had become a horribly fearsome grey. Right at this moment, even Zhou Weiqing could feel the bloodcurdling suppression aura being emitted by this grey sheen. Even he, the summoner, started to feel out of breath now.

Now that the Demon God's Illusion was no longer under his control, he did not know what was going to happen next.

Such an unforeseeable situation was still at least predictable but what left Zhou Weiqing speechless was the fact that although the Demon God's Illusion was launching the attack by itself, the energy that it was exhausting was actually from his own body.

Still, this situation was not entirely unfavorable to Zhou Weiqing. He noticed very clearly that when the Demon God was absorbing his Nebula Saint Energy and transforming it into Evil Energy, it was also using his Nebula Saint energy to assimilate the surrounding energy. Without a doubt, such a peculiar operation of energy was even more effective than Zhou Weiqing's control of the

Nebula Saint Energy now. Otherwise, with Zhou Weiqing's current cultivation base, it was basically impossible to master the Demon God's weapon, even if he did possess the Saint Energy.

What Zhou Weiqing could do now was to silently keep this trajectory in mind and also pray for the Elven Queen at the same time. He really did not have the intention to kill anybody who stepped foot here at all.

Chapter 776: Demon God Sword (1)

Heavy fluctuations of saint energy circled in the air, while a surly and unyielding pressure exploded instantly. At that moment, Zhou Weiqing felt his mind go blank.

But in the eyes of the Goddess of Nature, everything had turned to grey.

The overwhelming force of death instantly appeared in the Elven Queen's heart. Almost a moment later, a loud shriek exploded from the Goddess of Nature's throat. A strong green light wrapped her body into a large green crystal. At the same time, twelve cracks formed out of thin air not too far away from the crystallized body and twelve elderly figures appeared behind the crystal. Then, twelve rays of green light simultaneously entered the crystal.

"Ding!"

The sound caused the Elf Tribe's sealed land to tremble, even causing the enclosed space around it to rattle.

The handle of the Demon God Sword, which Zhou Weiqing was unable to take a good look at, seemed to disappear into thin air. At most, he could sense a grey shadow and the green crystal containing the Goddess of Nature gentle touch, before disappearing.

Then, the Demon God summoned by Zhou Weiqing followed suit and disappeared into thin air, exposing all six of their bodies.

Zhou Weiqing's face drained of color. The string of fights may have happened very quickly, but they were rather complex to him. Ever since he reached the Heavenly Emperor-tier, this was the first time he had experienced such a great depletion. He almost could not withstand it.

The crystal and the twelve figures in mid-air seemed to be frozen in place.

Zhou Weiqing looked unhappy. He could already guess that the Elven Queen must be at the stage of Heavenly God. Besides, the twelve figures that appeared behind her, at least four of them would be at the apex of the Heavenly Emperor Tier if they were not already Heavenly Emperors.

The members of the Elf Tribe only reach adulthood by their hundredth year, and at one glance, one could tell that these elders already had one foot in their graves. How long had they lived for, to be at that age? The power of the Elf Tribe was far more terrifying than what Shangguan Xue'er had described. At this moment, the strength depletion between him and his five wives was no small number. If this Elven Queen could still maintain her Goddess of Nature state, and continue her attacks, it is highly likely that he could only use the air nebula to escape as soon as possible. After all, he could not just sit here and await death.

Just as Zhou Weiqing's heart began a string of changes, the large crystal in the sky began to display a hint of change.

One soft bursting noise was heard, but it came out of the twelve figures at the same time. Their bodies flew backward, and every one of them began spitting out grey-colored breaths. That's right, they were not spitting out blood, but grey breaths. The sight of it was certainly bizarre.

Then came an ear-piercing, shattering noise. Cracks began appearing on the green crystal. That was a hundred foot tall, rhombus-shaped crystal! Imagine the mind-blowing shock they all had as they witnessed the thick, long, snake-like cracks appearing continuously.

Finally, following a violent blast, numerous green lights turned into thick breaths of life had emitted into the air. A figure came into view in mid-air.

It was no longer the silhouette of the Goddess of Nature, soaring ten feet high, but a six meter tall, dainty and exquisite girl with

two transparent wings on her back.

She had long ears, long aquamarine hair just like the Goddess of Nature, and dark blue eyes. Even her clothes were exactly alike. At one glance, she looked like a miniature version of the Goddess of Nature. Even her features were no different from the Goddess of Nature.

Except, she now looked extremely unsightly — pale and white like a piece of paper, worse than how Zhou Weiqing looked. Her body swayed in the air, and the wings behind her expanded. This forced her to control herself from falling to the ground. Her beautiful, dark blue eyes were now filled with shock.

Zhou Weiqing heaved a large sigh of relief. Based on the current situation, it was obvious that the Elven Queen has suffered quite a substantial loss. Meanwhile, at the same time, a sense of pride rose spontaneously. After all, the opposition was at the stage of Heavenly God! Furthermore, it was not at the simple basic level either. In the end, she even summoned twelve Elf Tribe elders for help in order to forcibly block the Demon God Sword's attack. To top it off, he was only a Heavenly Jewel Master at the Heavenly Emperor Stage. To have achieved such a result in battle certainly deserves a sense of pride.

Of course, Zhou Weiqing knew it himself. That Demon God Sword cannot be summoned whenever he wished. However, after experiencing the Demon God Sword's terrifying power, a flame was ignited in his heart. If, one day, he was truly able to control the power of the Demon God Sword, then what else would he be, besides invincible?

"What are you? How could you possibly have control over the Demon God Sword? Not even the Heavenly Demon Sect Master would ever be able to do it." The Elven Queen's voice rang aloud. At the same time, she waved her fair hand in the air, and a scepter appeared in it. A faint green light appeared once again. It was just like she said, this was the Sealed Land of the Elf Tribe. It held a

great amount of life energy. In one quick sweep, she enveloped herself and the twelve Elf Tribe elders within. It was clear for all to see, that a large amount of life energy was entering their bodies continuously. No one knew if it was to heal their wounds or to replenish their cultivation base.

Honestly speaking, it was Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy that provided a rather large influence. If it were to be another Heavenly Jewel Master, he would never have been able to absorb the Natural Element in a place like this, especially when faced with the Elven Queen. Only Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy could utilize this stage and forcibly absorb it all.

As for the Demon God summoned by Zhou Weiqing earlier on, it was not through the immediate usage of Star Energy, but also due to this parallel space. He wasn't sure of whether he could truly summon Star Energy in this parallel space, and use it for battle. So, he thought of the Demon God. After all, his cultivation base had now entered Heavenly Emperor stage, and would clearly have greater power in controlling the Demon God and the following battle had proved this. Except, unfortunately, he still had no way to truly control the Demon God into entering battle. Far from the Elven Queen's control over the Goddess of Nature.

"My name is Zhou Weiqing, hailing from Heavenly Bow Empire. Your Majesty, may we speak peacefully? As you can see as well, I may not be able to defeat you all, but, if we wish to leave, I believe you would not be able to stop us."

Zhou Weiqing's cordial but independent voice rang throughout the vast space. At the same time, a faint, pure gold light illuminated from within his being, enveloping him and his five wives in its radiance.

He had no choice but to release his Star Energy, for he was brazenly stealing the Natural Elements in the air from the Elven Queen, for his own recovery. Otherwise, if everyone on the opposing team were to achieve full recovery, and if his party

members were still depleted, he may not be able to escape at all.

Seeing the pure gold Star Energy surrounding Zhou Weiqing, the Elven Queen violently narrowed her pupils. She murmured, "Zhou Weiqing? Zhou Weiqing. This name is very familiar. I seem to have heard it before. You are... Could this be... Ah! I remember."

The Elven Queen began muttering to herself continuously, even Zhou Weiqing was unable to make sense of the matter. It was also this moment when the Elven Queen looked as if she had come to a realization, and her eyes, gazing upon Zhou Weiqing, softened.

"Do you know Phelia?" The Elven Queen's words shocked Zhou Weiqing at the same time.

Zhou Weiqing stared at her in astonishment, "Of course I do. She's my mother-in-law."

Tian'er could not contain herself, "Your Majesty, you know my mother?"

At that moment, the Elven Queen's expression glowed with warmth. She looked at Tian'er and nodded, "You must be Tian'er."

Tian'er quickly nodded, staring at the Elven Queen with surprise, "You've really met my mother?"

The Elven Queen gently nodded her head. Gazing upon Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er, her eyes were filled with disbelief, "You actually managed to cultivate Saint Energy. This is simply unbelievable, and your cultivation base had even reached this stage. When I met Phelia a year ago, she only told me that you had a chance at finding a way to cultivate Saint Energy. I never expected this. I really never expected this at all."

"Your Majesty, could you tell me where my mother is?" Tian'er asked with a hint of impatience.

To any child, the loss of a mother's love at a young age is the greatest pain of all, and Tian'er's longing for her mother's love was incomparably strong.

The Elven Queen gently shook her head, "I'm sorry, but I cannot tell you where she is. Even if I did, you would not be able to get there. However, since you now have Saint Energy, perhaps you can help us."

Zhou Weiqing's gaze shifted when he heard her say 'us', instead of referring to Phelia in particular.

As she spoke, the Elven Queen led twelve sick-looking Elf Tribe elders and descended from the sky, landing in front of Zhou Weiqing and the rest.

The oldest-looking Elf Tribe elder shuffled closely behind her and whispered, "Your Majesty, the princess..."

The Elven Queen shook her head and said, "Since she is Phelia's daughter, she couldn't possibly have taken my daughter away. Besides, can't you all tell? This human, Zhou Weiqing has always shown mercy. He's never truly harmed any of our tribe members."

Zhou Weiqing laughed bitterly, "Yes, Your Majesty. We may be here with a request, but we mean no harm. We have indeed seen the princess earlier on, I hope that you'll give us a chance to explain."

Seeing as she was acquainted with his mother-in-law, Zhou Weiqing had to be courteous. Besides, the Elf Tribe's powers were far stronger than his estimation. If they really wished to risk their lives, they might not be able to defeat the powerful Elf Tribe. Zhou Weiqing did not truly have the ability to summon the powers of the Demon God Sword.

Chapter 777: Demon God Sword (2)

The Elven Queen frowned, "What happened? Also, why have you come here?"

Zhou Weiqing did not hold back, and immediately summarized his reasons and his experiences after arriving in the Elf Tribe.

Upon hearing his explanation, the Elven Queen instantly replied, "That explains why you were able to enter the Sealed Land of my Elf Tribe. You had Saint Energy. Naturally, the Natural Energy would not have stopped you. Young man, you are also the most outstanding human I've ever met. To have achieved so much in your cultivation base, at such a young age... You've even managed to draw the Demon God's projection. It looks like you'll surpass Phelia's husband very soon."

The Elven Queen's expression remained the same. However, the twelve Elf Tribe elders looked very displeased when they heard how he had come for the Elven Queen's blood. They clearly looked hostile.

Zhou Weiqing replied exasperatedly, "You flatter me, Your Majesty." He sighed, "I did not expect to encounter such matters when I arrived. Your Majesty, the current situation may be unclear but I'm willing to help you find your daughter. Even though it all happened so suddenly and neither was I able to stop her nor do I know how she managed to do it but I left a Divine Thought on your daughter, which may help in finding her."

If this came from anyone else, the Elven Queen would never have believed them. It was an extremely difficult feat to place a Divine Thought on anyone's body. Even she, a cultivator at the Heavenly God stage, never dared to guarantee that she could do it herself. However, Zhou Weiqing was different. He had Saint Energy and she had also sensed the power in his Saint Energy a while ago. Without the Saint Energy, how could he, a cultivator at the

Heavenly Emperor stage be able to stand against her, a cultivator at the Heavenly God stage?

In this world, the Mountain Lord of Heavenly Snow Mountain, Xue Ao'tian was not the only one at the Heavenly God stage. Simply put, a few reclusive Heavenly Beasts at the Heavenly God stage were just as powerful and that includes her, the Elven Queen as well. However, cultivators at the Heavenly God stage were not invincible, for the Heavenly God stage had levels as well.

The Elven Queen nodded as she stared at Zhou Weiqing's earnest face, "That's great. Previously, I was in the midst of cultivation when I sensed energy fluctuations from the outside world in the Sealed Lands. Then, my daughter's aura disappeared. It's likely that she's no longer in the Elf Tribe land. So I'll have to trouble you now."

Zhou Weiqing smiled and said, "Your Majesty, please be rest assured. The reason why I want to help you isn't because I want your blood. I only hope to befriend the Elf Tribe. As for my reasons for coming here, if it's possible, let's discuss it after I've saved your daughter. We'll see if we can arrange a trade with something I have on hand. You know just as well what an eleven-piece Consolidated Equipment set means to us humans."

The elders behind the Elven Queen looked significantly unhappy. Naturally, they could tell, that Zhou Weiqing was not going to give up on his goals so easily. Except, it was best for them to stay out of it at a time like this. Even though they did not like these foreign humans, Zhou Weiqing did say that he had placed a Divine Thought on the little princess. He would not make this up, based on his cultivation base. This matter concerns the heir to the Elf Tribe, so they had no choice but to swallow their temper. Saving the little princess was now more important than anything else.

The Elven Queen looked at Zhou Weiqing and nodded, an odd splendor flashed across her eyes. At this very moment, no one knew what she was thinking. Aside from the odd look in her eyes,

she was deeply worried about her kidnapped daughter.

After Zhou Weiqing had spoken, he immediately sat cross-legged on the ground, closed his eyes, mobilized Saint Energy, and entered a definite state.

Even though the Elf Tribe has done away with their animosity, his close female friends still surrounded Zhou Weiqing instinctively. The women's cultivation base was not weak either, and they all had Saint Energy within their bodies. If the Elf Tribe truly wished to attack again, they could still defend it.

Pure gold colored Nebula Saint Energy circled around Zhou Weiqing, gradually moving upwards. Then, carefully, under his control, entered into his soul.

Generally speaking, the soul was an existence near the human brain that contained a bizarre energy. You could say that it was a part of life. If most Heavenly Jewel Masters did whatever Zhou Weiqing was doing, it would be no different from committing suicide. The human brain is very fragile, even the slightest injury would result in death.

However, Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy was not the same. Even if he directed Saint Energy into the brain, the Saint Energy would bring protective effects, and would not harm him at all. Saint Energy was a creation, not a destruction.

A layer of pure gold light slowly dispersed from Zhou Weiqing's head. You could see it very clearly — a strange 'king' symbol appeared on his forehead. However, what was even more miraculous, was under the 'king' symbol, was a faint dragon-shaped vein. Powerful soul fluctuations exploded instantly.

When Zhou Weiqing released his Divine Thought, the Elven Queen and the Elf Tribe elders jumped in shock. The fluctuations from the Divine Thought were simply too powerful. Even if this were the Sealed Lands of the Elf Tribe, they would never have been able to release such a powerful Divine Thought.

The powerful Divine Thought, could not increase one's power in attacks, nor could it be instantly made to attack. However, this means a greater control, and an above average exploration ability. In simpler terms, if a Heavenly Emperor cultivator at the same cultivation base as Zhou Weiqing had one exploration distance, then, Zhou Weiqing, with the support of Saint Energy, would have the exploration ability of ten. This was also a vital reason behind his success in finding the Sealed Land of the Elf Tribe.

The Elven Queen curbed her own Divine Thought, to avoid interrupting Zhou Weiqing's exploration. But she could sense that Zhou Weiqing's exploration was focused on a certain direction as if something was calling out to him.

He had indeed left a Divine Thought on her daughter; the methods in Zhou Weiqing's exploration proved this.

After a short while, Zhou Weiqing rose to his feet, and nodded at the Elven Queen, "Your Majesty, perhaps we should take a walk?"

The elders who stood behind the Elven Queen did not look happy. The leading elder hurriedly exclaimed, "Your Majesty, I'm afraid that this is inappropriate, what if..."

Zhou Weiqing was intelligent. So naturally, he sensed their worries, and calmly replied, "There are no what ifs. I will leave my wives here. Only Her Majesty and I will go and save her."

The Elven Queen nodded, hinting at the elders to keep calm. She gestured in an invitation to Zhou Weiqing, "Then I thank you."

Zhou Weiqing smiled. Similarly, he had many ideas as well, since experiencing the greatness of the Elf Tribe. Besides, there were undoubtedly many mystical places in the Sealed Land of the Elf Tribe. He had only just established the Peerless Sect. How could he not rope the Elf Tribe in as well? So naturally, he would not let such a good opportunity to bridge the gap, go to waste.

A pure gold light flashed in Zhou Weiqing's eyes, and the Elven

Queen nodded, "Then please excuse me." As the crowd watched in shock, Zhou Weiqing took the Elven Queen's little hand. Then, in a silver flash of light, the space around the two caved in, and they disappeared in a flash of light, traveling through space.

The Elf Tribe elders were completely stunned, Zhou Weiqing's close female friends did not look very happy either. Shangguan Fei'er exclaimed sulkily, "That naughty Little Fatty, he would even take unfair advantage of the Elven Queen."

Shangguan Xue'er shot her a look, "Don't spout nonsense. Zhouqing is trying to protect Her Majesty. Do you think that traveling through space is easy?"

Tian'er spoke leisurely, "Even if that's true, sisters, we must be careful. Heaven knows if this dirty bastard has any pervert intentions. He's always enjoyed fraternizing."

Shangguan Bing'er didn't say much, as she was unable to contain herself from laughing.

The Little Witch laughed softly, "Personal character! His personal character has always been unworthy of trust."

Like Shangguan Xue'er said, Zhou Weiqing held the Elven Queen as they traveled through space in order to protect her. Otherwise, if they were to lose their way upon entering a strange space, it would be difficult to find a way out. It was still a pretty big threat to a Heavenly God cultivator.

The Elven Queen's tiny hand was a little cold but was supple as if boneless. It was very comfortable to hold.

When Zhou Weiqing held on to the Elven Queen's hand, he clearly felt her body shudder slightly but she did not struggle. Obviously, she understood his objective.

Zhou Weiqing's heart did not really have much of an evil desire. Committing vulgar acts towards the Elven Queen in the Elf Tribe's territory? He would never do such a crazy thing. Besides, after

having five wives, he was able to moderate himself a lot more now. After all, as a man, he must be responsible, despite already having quite a lot of responsibility. He did not dare provoke any further. Besides, the Elven Queen was a Heavenly God. Zhou Weiqing did not wish to create trouble, nor did he think that he had great charm anyway.

For the Elven Queen who had her hand held by Zhou Weiqing, this was another feeling altogether. There were shyness and a sense of novelty. In the Elf Tribe, she held a position of the highest supremacy, and wouldn't normally leave the Sealed Land of the Elf Tribe. The Elf Tribe's ways of passing traditions were different from humans. They did not need to mate. You could say that she became pregnant with her daughter through his blood, along with some unusual methods. Forget about human men, even the Elf Tribe men have never touched her before. The Elven Queen was not just the most supreme of all in the Elf Tribe, she also represented purity and holiness, and could only exist in the purest and most holy of all. This was the only way for her to have that kind of contract with the Goddess of Nature.

Chapter 778: Demon God Sword (3)

At this moment, with Zhou Weiqing holding her hand, and breathing into the special manly scent from Zhou Weiqing at a close proximity, the Elven Queen wouldn't have too many ideas, naturally. However, this experience to her was similar to an old unmarried woman encountering a sedan. A stimulating novelty.

Besides, after entering the spatial realms, the Elven Queen could only sense a soft aura with mildly supreme dignity enveloping her body. This energy had completely outmatched the existence of her Natural Energy. She and Zhou Weiqing were surrounded by pure gold brilliance. Zhou Weiqing was now undoubtedly using Saint Energy to protect them both as they traveled through the spatial realms.

Zhou Weiqing achieved Spatial Travel by using Blink. The most important point is to lock down onto a target. For example, the last time he brought his wives on a collective Blink through the skies, all he needed was a position within his sight for a successful Blink. This was the power of Saint Energy. Naturally, it was also due to his strong cultivation base.

However, this was different. This was Zhou Weiqing's first try at this sort of Spatial Travel. He was entirely relying on the Divine Thought placed on the Elven Princess to determine a target. If he succeeds, then not only would they be able to travel back and forth immediately from the Elf Tribe's sealed land, and return to the Boundless Mainland, they could even appear right in front of the Elven Princess. This was obviously the most efficient method.

Besides, Zhou Weiqing was not at the least bit afraid of the Divine Thought disappearing from the Elven Princess' body. First of all, he was confident in his own Divine Thought. Secondly, he had locked down their position prior to their transmission. Even if they lost the Elven Princess' coordinates, he could still take the Elven Queen back to their starting point. So, he was extremely confident.

The feeling of traveling through space was very fascinating. Zhou Weiqing could clearly sense the rapid depletion of his Saint Energy. This depletion was faster than when he was flying, especially when he returned to Boundless Mainland, crossing from the Elf Tribe's lands with Spatial Travel. That was when the depletion of Saint Energy was greatest as if he had used up around ten percent of his Saint Energy in an instant.

However, what Zhou Weiqing did not know was that at this moment, the Elven Queen's was rather amazed. The Elven Queen herself did not have any Spatial Attributes. Naturally, she could not use Spatial Travel. However, this did not mean that she didn't understand Spatial Travel.

The Elven Queen had lived in this world for nearly a thousand years, so she had definitely seen a great deal. She herself could not travel through spatial realms, but she had encountered cultivators with this ability. To her knowledge, even when a Heavenly God Cultivator had received comprehension of the spatial laws, Spatial Travel cannot go on any longer than five seconds. Otherwise, even a Heavenly God cultivator with such powerful Heavenly Energy would be consumed and exhausted and end up being lost, staying in a separate realm forever.

However, when Zhou Weiqing took her into Spatial Travel, this one moment of labor was already more than five seconds, even though she did not calculate it all precisely.

'Is this the magic of Saint Energy?' The Elven Queen secretly exclaimed in her thoughts.

The reality of it appeared to be that way; the pure perfection of Saint Energy allows Zhou Weiqing to experience a far smaller depletion in his energy when using Spatial Travel than the average Heavenly Jewel Master. Regardless of the situation, Saint Energy would automatically absorb the surrounding attributes to replenish him. During the process of traveling through a separate realm, it has naturally absorbed Spatial Energy. In turn, this

lessened Zhou Weiqing's personal consumption of his energy. Otherwise, Zhou Weiqing would not have been able to withstand the strain long ago.

However, even so, during the short travel time, Zhou Weiqing still released his own Dragon-tiger Transformation twin blades. The twin blades splayed out from his back, to better absorb the Spatial Energy, increasing the possibilities for him to remain in a separate realm for a little while longer.

Because the Elven Princess' kidnapping had only happened a short while ago, the opposition has already taken the Elven Princess far away from the Elf Tribe's sealed land. Zhou Weiqing could obviously tear out of the spatial realms to rest for a moment before a second transmission, but that would be so embarrassing! He was already planning on showing off his power to the Elven Queen in order to receive the Elf Tribe's cooperation. So, how could he not let her witness his power? How would he know that the Elven Queen's impression of him had already completely exceeded his Cultivation Base? The Elven Queen has instantly recognized him to be more powerful than she was. Simply put, an overestimation.

"Found her." Zhou Weiqing softly exclaimed with excitement. Just as the Elven Queen was still in shock over this fellow's ability to talk while traveling through spatial realms, the pair tore out of the spatial realms in a flash, and once again returned to the normal world.

In the middle of the sky, a crack appeared all of a sudden. Then, two figures tore out, coincidentally blocking the way of a man in black, flying through the sky in a hurried manner.

The man in black was flying very fast, but his powers of perception were rather substantial. He realized that something wasn't right at once, as the spatial realms in front of them tore all of a sudden. Then, two figures emerged out of thin air, thoroughly giving him a fright. His instinct was to escape in a flash, trying to

avoid the two by continuing his flight. Unfortunately, he was their target.

"Still trying to escape?" Zhou Weiqing hated the fellow bitterly. This bastard made him the scapegoat, and he nearly started a war with the Elf Tribe. The dark gold light illuminated around him like waves, equipping him in Ringless Ground Purging set. His figure flashed, as though migrating from a different realm. At the same time when his body reappeared in thin air, the Dual God Strength Hammers came smashing towards him. At that moment, Zhou Weiqing was using a hundred percent of his strength.

The man in black was not ordinary either. Faced with Zhou Weiqing's close range of attack, his expression changed, and he raised both arms at the same time, creating a whirling move. A layer of bizarre and twisted, shapeless halos immediately appeared, blocking Zhou Weiqing's Dual God Strength Hammers.

Time Attribute. Zhou Weiqing had already known that this fellow had the ability of Time Attribute. Seeing the opposition use a skill that had a similar effect to space-time turbulence to block his hammer, the corners of his lips curled into a cold smile.

That's right, the Time Attribute was one of the Four Great Saint Attributes, and a powerful destructive force at best. Generally speaking, physical attacks would be useless when faced with space-time turbulence and would be pushed aside. However, were Zhou Weiqing's Dual God Strength Hammers that easy to deal with?

After assembling the Ringless Ground Purging Set, Zhou Weiqing was already included with an extra ability after the set was completed. For example, the ability to eradicate everything. In other words, the power of the Ringless Ground Purging set can collide with any attack from any energy or attribute, rendering the effects from the enemies' energy skills useless.

A loud bang rang aloud in the clash, and the black shadow groaned, like a cannon blast, and smashed heavily downwards.

You could even hear the bones in both his arms crack.

The power of the amplified Ringless Ground Purging Set was absolutely terrifying, even a Heavenly God Cultivator would not willingly clash with Zhou Weiqing. This was the first time the set was ever displayed; no one had ever laid eyes on it. The bright gold armor was not simply for a dazzling sight. It contained a powerful destructive force; even ten legendary armor sets would be considered second best.

The man in black, aside from feeling shocked, had his body suspended in mid-air, twisted into different angles. Suddenly, his figure retreated one kilometer away, and his newly broken arms suddenly returned to normal.

"Eh, Time Reversal?" Zhou Weiqing exclaimed in shock. That's right, the enemy used a Time Reversal and judging by his looks, he's managed to control Time Reversal. He managed to manipulate it well, to time travel to a few seconds before the attack. Thus, he not only managed to avoid Zhou Weiqing's next attack but restored his arms as well.

As a Saint Attribute, how could the Time Attribute lack its own special mystical properties?

Unfortunately, he had crossed paths with Zhou Weiqing, and the latter also had the Time Attribute. So, he naturally knew how to deal with Time Reversal. The enemy was about to use Time Reversal once, but if he allowed him to continue using it this way, wouldn't the enemy turn into a hard-to-kill cockroach?

Just as Zhou Weiqing was about to make his move, the Elven Queen had already attacked. Both of them appeared from thin air and faced this man in black. Naturally, the Elven Queen would know that her daughter had fallen into this fellow's hands. Zhou Weiqing launched the first attack, and in the next moment, a layer of soft, green light was already released from the Elven Queen's body.

This green light was not directed towards the enemy straight away but dispersed in all directions. At that moment, the surrounding turned completely green, giving off a feeling infused with vitality.

However, this did not give the man in green a wonderful feeling at all. The feeling of vitality was still there, but in the air, aside from the six types of natural attribute elements, the other elements and attributes were expelled. Naturally, this included the Time Attribute. Besides, for the natural attributes within the green spatial realm, only the Elven Queen held control. He would not be able to amplify anything.

This is the Natural Divine Territory of the Elven Queen. After her cultivation base had reached the Heavenly God stage, the largest difference she had from Heavenly Emperor stage, was that she could solidify environmental effects in the outside world. This type of solidification became a special ability, known as Divine Territory. Every Heavenly God cultivator had their own exclusive Divine Territory.

In the Elven Queen's Divine Territory, you could fight back against the effects of her Divine Territory, only if you had Divine Territory abilities and were able to contend against her. Alternatively, the only other way was to breakthrough out of it, or defeat the Elven Queen in her Divine Territory.

When the fearsome aura from the Demon God was previously far too powerful during the Elven Queen's fight with Zhou Weiqing and due to the fact that the powerful Evil Energy created a vague existence like a Divine Territory, the Elven Queen did not use her Divine Territory. She knew that using it would be of no use but at this moment, using it to limit this man in black was no problem. This was because both she and Zhou Weiqing saw it clearly - this man in black only had eleven Heavenly Jewels in his hand. He was a Heavenly Emperor cultivator.

Chapter 779: Whitish Gold Nebula Saint Energy? (1)

Since he was only at the Heavenly Emperor Tier, he naturally did not have the Divine Territory ability. Because he was in the presence of the Elven Queen's Natural Divine Territory, it was impossible for him to perform Time Reversal.

"The Elven Queen?" The man in black exclaimed, his voice was clearly husky and was intentionally lowered. It was obvious that he was trying to hide his real identity. That person was completely covered in a black attire, and his features could not be seen at all.

As dark gold glows lit up continuously, a nine-piece legendary armor set appeared on the Heavenly Emperor, covering his body. The helmet was fully enclosed which made it impossible to see how he looked like. The Elven Queen and Zhou Weiqing stood on one side each while they stared at the man in black coldly. The Elven Queen said in a deep voice, "Give me back my daughter, or else you'll die."

The man in black was not in a rush at all. Perhaps, he did not dare to make a move hastily. If he made a move, he would definitely trigger Zhou Weiqing and the Elven Queen to attack him together. Encountering a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse with terrifying strength whom he knew nothing about and the Heavenly God Tier Elven Queen, the man in black would definitely not make a move unless he was an idiot.

"I've no idea what Your Majesty is talking about. I'm just doing my own things as usual. I thought the Elf Tribe doesn't usually interfere with the human world? If you do that, you might trigger a war between humans and the Elf Tribe." The man in black said cunningly.

Although the Elven Queen had a powerful cultivation base, she was not good with words. She burst into rage, "You..." Suddenly,

Natural Divine Territory was roiling intensely. An overbearing energy wave exploded out of her body continuously. It seemed like she was going to fight.

Because the man in black had his body hidden under the black Consolidated Set, nobody could see his expression. However, there was a layer of peculiar distorted glow coming out of his body. The glow was twinkling, and it seemed to be rejecting the Natural Divine Territory around him.

Zhou Weiqing smiled calmly and said, "Who said the Elven Queen is going to stop you. This has nothing to do with the Elf Tribe and the humans. I'm the one that'll stop you."

"You? Why would you stop me?" The man in black did not even turn around to look at Zhou Weiqing. Although he was attacked by Zhou Weiqing earlier, the Elven Queen with a Heavenly God-tier cultivation base was more of a concern to him.

At that moment, he was secretly shocked. Everything aside, Zhou Weiqing and the Elven Queen had unexpectedly stopped him accurately using Spatial Travel. That was something he did not expect. He had been roaming outside the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land for a very long time to capture the Elven Princess. He even used a couple of consumable treasures to help him succeed. He would only leave after he captured her. As for him, there was no way the Elf Tribe would be able to catch him. However, nobody would have ever thought that the Elven Queen would appear before him in within such a short period of time. He knew that it would be difficult for him to escape today. He was looking for an opportunity to escape. It was not an easy task to run away from a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse! However, he had a trump card as well.

Zhou Weiqing smiled and said, "I stopped you because you abducted my wife. My wife has a bit of my Divine Thought on her so that's how I found you. Your Majesty, please withdraw your Divine Territory. This is between me and this man. It has nothing

to do with you, nor does it have anything to do with the Elf Tribe."

The reason why the Elven Queen did not instantly attack earlier was because she had her own worries. Even if she and Zhou Weiqing managed to get this Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse to stay today, assuming that there was a slight misstep that affected the Elf Tribe, and the news of how the Elven Queen could not even handle a human being spread out, it would bring great trouble to the Elf Tribe. Besides, she did not have any evidence at all currently.

Most importantly, they were dealing with a Time Attribute Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse. A powerhouse with this level of cultivation base in Time Attribute was good in spreading news using the trait of time. For example, the Time Portrait. The image of this Heavenly Emperor Tier powerhouse could be placed in the sky like a portrait in the sky right before he was killed. The image could not be removed even if abilities were used on it and would exist forever. It could even remain in the sky no matter what was happening before their eyes. It would put the Elf Tribe in an unfavorable position if somebody was to take advantage of it.

What Zhou Weiqing said undoubtedly saved her. In regards to the 'wife' that Zhou Weiqing spoke of, the Elven Queen did not take him seriously. How would she know what he was thinking!

The Elven Queen looked at Zhou Weiqing with gratitude. She withdrew her Natural Divine Territory without any hesitation, and she even retreated. She had almost blind faith in Zhou Weiqing because Zhou Weiqing possessed Saint Energy. Even though both of them were at the Heavenly Emperor Tier, the man in black would not have any chance to win against him. One should not forget that Zhou Weiqing fought even with her earlier. In the end, she only managed to defend against the terrifying attack from the Demon God Sword with the help of the elders' strength.

The man in black was stunned. Because Zhou Weiqing had taken

all the responsibility upon himself, he had ruined his plan. However, he was not afraid if he was only dealing with an opponent who was at the Heavenly Emperor Tier since he was at the Upper Level of Heavenly Emperor Tier. In regards to Zhou Weiqing's strength, the man in black knew that he was the one who was being reckless.

"I've no idea what you're talking about. What wife? I didn't abduct anybody. Do you think Divine Thought exists just because you said so?" The man in black thought that even if there were Divine Thoughts, it should have been left by the Elven Queen. He had no idea why the Elven Queen was with this human man but it was obvious that this man was taking advantage of the Elf Tribe earlier, and was taken advantage of by the man in black. He did not expect that not only did Zhou Weiqing managed to escape, he even came with the Elven Queen.

Naturally, he had no idea that when he achieved his goal, he had also triggered a war between Zhou Weiqing and the Elf Tribe. However, the issue was resolved a lot faster than he had expected. That was why Zhou Weiqing and the Elven Queen managed to come so quickly. Zhou Weiqing maintained the smile on his face. He always had that expression on him whenever he wanted to trick a person. "How about this? You let me search you. I'll use my Divine Thought to search. If I don't sense my wife's presence, I'll let you go."

"Dream on. I'm a Heavenly Emperor and also the Emperor of a generation. Do you think I'll let you search me just because you want to?"

Zhou Weiqing burst out laughing and said, "Emperor of a generation? Nonsense! You covered yourself from head to toes. You don't even have the courage to show yourself. How do you live up to your name as a Heavenly Emperor?"

"How dare you insult me?" It was clear that the man in black was mad as the air around him became even more distorted. If the

Elven Queen whom he perceived as a threat was not present, perhaps he would have attacked Zhou Weiqing since the beginning. All that he was thinking about at the moment was how to escape.

Zhou Weiqing's appearance was indeed majestic. He had gold armor covering his entire body. Moreover, it was a 10-piece legendary armor set. The pair of huge hammers and the pair of purple wings with golden edges on his back was releasing a terrifying force just like before. These were not easy to handle. However, to him, his threat would still work as it would not be difficult for him to escape without the limitation of the Elven Queen's Divine Territory. He was thinking of how to escape in a way that would cause him minimal damage. As long as he managed to leave this place, his mission could be considered successful.

"Insult you? That was insulting to you? Do you know even know what insulting means? Let me show you." Zhou Weiqing pursed his lips in disdain and said, "Look at you hiding yourself. You must be the worst of all the scum out there. The savage among all the savages. From what I've observed, you must lack proper upbringing since you were young, and you lacked love when you were growing up. Your grandmother doesn't pamper you and your uncle hates you. The left side of your face should be slapped and the right side of your face should be kicked. Donkeys would kick you and pigs would step on you when they see you. You must be a cucumber since birth because you need some slapping! You must be a walnut later on because you need to be pounded! You're given the opportunity to be anything you want but you're so shameless that you're begging to be a bitch! Damn it, why? I want to see you talk but why do you bury your face in your ass? Oh? I'm sorry, I didn't know that's your face. So where did your ass go? A bitch will be a bitch for life while a pig's life would end with a chop of a knife. I'm doing a good deed today by helping God in killing you."

Zhou Weiqing's face remained serious when he said all that. It

was as if he was talking about some serious matter. Moreover, he was speaking so fast like a cannonball when he said that nonsense in one breath. When the man in black understood what he meant, Zhou Weiqing had already said what he had wanted say with a joking expression on his face.

Let alone the anger that the man in black felt from Zhou Weiqing's insults, even the Elven Queen who was standing not too far away found it hard to stop the corner of her lips from twitching. Zhou Weiqing's insults were too much and there were vulgarities in there. When the Elven Queen looked at that person, who was possibly the youngest Heavenly Emperor-tier human, insulting someone so smoothly, it would have been strange if she was not surprised. She could not imagine how mad she would be if Zhou Weiqing was saying those words to her.

The man in black started shaking uncontrollably as he lifted his hand to point at Zhou Weiqing, "You... You..."

Zhou Weiqing scoffed in disdain, "What do you mean 'you'? Do you mean to say your sister?! Even if you have a sister, I won't be interested."

"Bastard, go to hell." The man in black could not take it anymore. As a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse, he held a certain position. When would he ever be insulted like that? With the expression on Zhou Weiqing's face, he could not bear it even though he knew that he was supposed to keep calm at that moment.

Chapter 780: Whitish Gold Nebula Saint Energy? (2)

Domineering energy wave exploded instantly. Initially, the distorted Time attribute energy was just hovering around the man in black's body. However at that moment, it spread out quickly, and the space within thousands of square meters became distorted. There were countless tiny black cracks on them. It was not caused by Spatial Rend. Instead, it was the effect of Time Rend.

The impact from Time Rend was not as simple Spatial Rend. Once hit, it might not instantly tear the individual apart. However, there would be repercussions such as instant aging or shrinking in size. Besides, the time wave coming through the cracks was different. That said, once hit, the cracks would cause a time disorder in a person's body. By then, it would be a real pain in the ass. When one had a low Time Attribute cultivation base, one's Divine Attribute would not have a powerful impact. It was used more to defend instead of attack. However, when one got to the Heavenly Emperor Tier, the offensive prowess of the Time Attribute would be superior to the Divine Attribute. It was comparable to Demonic Attribute. Moreover, it would be even more unpredictable and harder to defend against.

As the terrifying energy wave exploded, Zhou Weiqing moved quickly with disdain on his face. To their surprise, he chose to retreat. A reddish gold glow that looked like a nebula was released from his body in a spiral shape. It blocked the overbearing time turbulence outside from getting close to his body.

Meanwhile, the man in black had arrived in front of Zhou Weiqing. When he was approaching Zhou Weiqing, all of the cracks from the Time Rend avoided him and created a path for him. As he waved his hand in the air, the sword that was initially on his back appeared in his hand. The sword was also completely

black. The sword glinted and a strange distorted black glow rushed towards Zhou Weiqing.

From the looks of it, the black glow was only about ten meters long. Most people at the Heavenly Emperor Tier would judge the attack superficially and they would not consider it powerful at all. However, Zhou Weiqing knew very well how powerful the man in black's attack was. It was not a simple or normal attack. It was not even a pure Time Attribute attack. To his surprise, the man in black before him possessed double attributes of Darkness and Time. An upper-level attribute combined with a Divine Attribute. Anyone could imagine how impressive the sword attack would be. It integrated Darkness and Time Attributes perfectly. This fellow could be considered a genius.

It was unfortunate that the person he encountered was Zhou Weiqing. Faced with the man in black's attack, the reddish gold Nebula Saint Energy around his body started to distort as well. Soon after, he rotated his body lightly and smashed the dual hammers in his hands forward. It was a strong blow.

When the loud bang sounded, the black sword glow was crushed into pieces by the Dual God Strength Hammers in Zhou Weiqing's hands. Even the large coverage of the distorted time glow was quivering.

A powerful person could fight 10 martial artists. When strength had reached a certain level, it could not be explained using common theory anymore. The trait of the Ringless Ground Purging Set had given Zhou Weiqing the strength to endure attacks of any attributes by force.

The disdain on his face did not lessen at all. As Zhou Weiqing took a step into the air, he swung his dual hammers again and directly rushed towards the man in black. At that moment, the man in black felt fear. He was not afraid of Zhou Weiqing's ability. However, he was afraid of the legendary armor set that he was wearing. He had the same Physical Jewel as him which was

Strength Jewel. The both of them also had the same Heavenly Emperor-tier cultivation base. However, he could clearly feel the difference in strength between Zhou Weiqing and him, and it could not be explained in theory. Why was it like this? Could it be that his legendary armor set increased the base of his strength?

From what he remembered, the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya's Ringless Ground Purging Set was the only legendary armor set that increased base strength. This young man before him was clearly not Long Shiya; furthermore, Long Shiya's Ringless Ground Purging Set was silver in color while this young Heavenly Emperor-tier young man's armor was gold in color. Besides, this young man's strength seemed to be even more terrifying.

Due to his previous experience, the man in black did not dare to fight Zhou Weiqing forcefully anymore. He retreated immediately and lifted both of his hand together in the middle. A rich time turbulence in the air dashed towards Zhou Weiqing. He did not expect the time turbulence to kill Zhou Weiqing, he had a legendary armor set on him after all, and it could shield most of the attack. What he attempted to do was to drain Zhou Weiqing's Heavenly Energy.

Since the earlier attack, the man in black had become much calmer. He realized that it would be unwise for him to get agitated. There was a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse who was watching on the sideline. When he retreated, he already had the intention to escape. He thought to himself that he would teach Zhou Weiqing a lesson about humiliation in the future. If they were in another place, and it was just the two of them, he would definitely fight Zhou Weiqing at all cost just to redeem his honor.

However, this was not a good time for him to attack Zhou Weiqing. Therefore, he picked the direction that was opposite from where the Elven Queen standing when he retreated. He was waiting for the best opportunity. As he retreated, the black sword in his hand glowed a dark glow. The sword glows were black and

distorted. It made it seem like there were countless black snakes moving in the air. As he shook the sword, the black glows left the sword and dashed towards Zhou Weiqing from all directions. 'You have powerful strength, right? Then I shall handle you with this.'

Zhou Weiqing chuckled. He did not avoid the dark glow. He rotated his body quickly along with the dual hammers, and his speed instantly had an immense boost. None of the dark glows got to him where the dual hammers were. They were all dispelled by the Dual God Strength Hammers.

The Elven Queen watched the both of them fight from far away. She was frowning at that moment because she could see that the man in black was not giving it his all and the same could be said about Zhou Weiqing. What were they doing? They looked like they were putting on a show. A bad thought popped into the Elven Queen's mind. Could it be that they were both accomplices?

However, the Elven Queen got rid of that thought. Whether Zhou Weiqing was in cahoots with the man in black or not, Zhou Weiqing's women were still in the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land. If Zhou Weiqing wanted to leave now, with his cultivation base, it was sufficient for him to bring all of his women along with him through the Spatial Travel. There was no need for him to bring her along to capture the man in black. The Elven Queen felt guilty for being suspicious. However, Zhou Weiqing would not have blamed her even if he knew she had such thoughts. After all, as a mother, it was normal that she would have such thoughts because she was worried about her daughter that was abducted.

Seeing that Zhou Weiqing dodged his attack once again, his eyes lit up suddenly. He slashed his sword again. However, this time the black sword glow did not distort anymore as he rushed towards Zhou Weiqing with an enormous Light Blade.

"Eh?" Zhou Weiqing exclaimed in surprise. He held up his dual hammers and screamed, "Open."

As he lifted up his hammers, reddish gold glow covered the Dual God Strength Hammers.

As a loud thud sounded out, the space a few hundred of meters away collapsed. The man in black's body was blown away with the help of the intense shock force. Soon after, circles of distorted halos appeared behind him suddenly. The immense push allowed his body to be thrown back into the sky like an arrow and he became a small, black dot instantly.

That was the opportunity that he had been waiting for. The swing of his sword was no longer tentative and he had given it his all. Otherwise, Zhou Weiqing would not use Nebula Saint Energy to fight. After that, he took advantage of the shockwave to escape. With such speed, even a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse would not be able to catch up to him easily within a short period of time. Moreover, the circles of distorted halos behind him were expanding, it would be much more difficult to discern the direction in which he ran away.

"He ran away?" The Elven Queen panicked.

Just as she was about to chase after him, she heard Zhou Weiqing's voice next to her ear, "Let me do it."

Zhou Weiqing did not move at all as he lifted his right hand and pointed the 'crying-face' hammer into the sky. A bright reddish gold glow was shot into the sky, and the sky became dark. How could he not know that the man in black was attempting to escape? If it was him, he would have done the same. He would look for the opportunity to escape and not fight forcefully. Since he figured that out, it was only natural that he was prepared.

The series of pranks that he put on for the man in black was not meaningless. Since using Spatial Travel, his Saint Energy had been significantly drained, and he needed time to recover. Otherwise, why would he spend so much time with all that nonsense earlier? Moreover, he did not give his all in his attacks. With the help of

the Dragon-Tiger Transformation and powerful Saint Energy that he had in him, his cultivation base had almost fully recovered. He was almost ready in his preparation, the next step was to reap his reward.

The sunny sky became dark in an instant. However, the night sky was extremely clear with countless stars shining in the sky. As Zhou Weiqing shot the reddish gold Nebula Saint Energy into the sky, all of the stars seemed to lit up at that moment. After that, a rich Saint Energy wave exploded from Zhou Weiqing, and he disappeared.

When the starry sky appeared, the time turbulence in the air disappeared completely. The man in black did not leave any trails for the enemy to find him at all. As the terrifying energy wave exploded from Zhou Weiqing, the peculiar reddish gold color dyed the Ringless Ground Purging Set that he was wearing into the same color. His body disappeared into the starry night. When he reappeared, he appeared before the man in black. Naturally, the man in black had sensed the changes in the sky and in his own Time attribute energy. However, there was nothing he could do apart from running at full speed. What surprised him was that ever since the sky changed, he seemed to be trapped in the night sky no matter where he ran.

Chapter 781: Whitish Gold Nebula Saint Energy? (3)

One must know that even a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse had limited coverage in Divine Territory too. Meanwhile, the dazzling starry sky did not seem to have such limitation. How could it not shock him?

"This is the end." Zhou Weiqing stepped out of thin air and swung his Dual God Strength Hammers that were in his hands. As he swung the dual hammers, two beams of starlight descended from the sky and coincidentally shone on the Dual God Strength Hammers. The dual hammers in Zhou Weiqing's hands shone like they were made of two stars. An intense and terrifying energy wave made the man in black shiver. He unleashed everything he had with his black sword. It turned into a black tornado as it attempted to defend against Zhou Weiqing's attack.

However, Zhou Weiqing was a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse, too. How could he, who possessed Nebula Saint Energy, give him any chance? This time, there was no loud 'bang'. There was only a light 'ding'. Something odd happened then. The distorted glow that surrounded the man in black's body disappeared completely. The black sword in his hand was crushed into countless pieces before it disappeared into thin air.

Zhou Weiqing's motion did not seem quick but a beam of starlight would shine on him whenever he performed a simple action which gave him an extra boost in his Nebula Saint Energy. The Nebula glow on Zhou Weiqing's chest became extremely powerful. It was transforming into a whitish gold color from its initial reddish gold color.

The black sword was crushed with a low bang. The man in black no longer defended against Zhou Weiqing's weapon. Feeling helpless, he used all the strength that he had and released a

powerful skill as he dashed towards Zhou Weiqing. His body was thrown back once again. However, he was not trying to escape this time. As his body was thrown backward, a rich aura exploded from his body. When one arrived at the Heavenly Emperor Tier, getting wounded was not as simple as spitting blood anymore. Zhou Weiqing's hammering shocked his entire body immensely. There were tiny cracks on his legendary armor set. The hammers would have severely injured him if it was not for the protection of his legendary armor set.

"Stop." The man in black yelled. A beam sparkled on his hand, and a pretty little lady appeared in his hand. She was shielding him. Zhou Weiqing who was going for more stopped his hammering once and for all. Was that not the Elven Princess in the man in black's hand?

At that moment, the Elven Queen had rushed there. Her expression turned extremely cold when she saw her daughter.

The little lady was in a coma at that moment. It was obvious that she was being kept like one of the man in black's storage item. It was obvious that she was still alive as the Elven Queen and Zhou Weiqing could still feel the life aura on her. The man in black was panting heavily. He could not understand how Zhou Weiqing became so powerful all of a sudden. What made him afraid was that the powerful attribute that he had always depended on could not be felt in any of the elements in the air.

Even when he was in the Elven Queen's Natural Divine Territory, he could at least feel the Natural Attribute even though he had a difficult time getting adjusted. However, he could not feel any attributes at all at the moment. Apart from that, all of the attributes that he possessed were being suppressed. Otherwise, he would not be so passive. It was safe to say that he could not even use 80% of his cultivation base during his peak. Without a doubt, all this was caused by the dazzling starry sky. He could not understand it at all. Especially the unbelievable strength in Zhou

Weiqing's last few attacks! He could not accept the outcome at all.

Zhou Weiqing looked at him coldly, "There's nothing that you can say now. Give us the little lady, and I'll consider sparing your life."

The man in black said ferociously, "In your dreams! Will the both of you let me go if I return her to you? Stop your nonsense and back off. Also, withdraw this shitty thing in the sky and let me go. Otherwise, I'll break this little girl's head and bring her to hell with me."

He knew very well that it was possible for him to escape from this dazzling starry sky that Zhou Weiqing released. Moreover, he guessed that Zhou Weiqing must have drained much of his energy from performing such an ability, and he would not be able to last long. Therefore, it was the most beneficial for him to stall for time. Besides, with the Elven Princess in his hand, Zhou Weiqing and the Elven Queen would have to stay away from him. That was also the reason why he had been calm.

The Elven Queen clenched her fists in anger, and her beautiful face turned pale. It made sense for her to be enraged after seeing her own daughter in the man's hand. However, she did not dare to do anything right now. Even if she had absolute confidence she could kill the enemy, the enemy was a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse. It would take him only a second to kill the Elven Princess. It could be seen that the man in black was cunning when he decided to bring the Elven Princess out before he was badly injured. Due to that, it was still possible for him to escape.

"Did the both of you hear me? If you don't do as I've said, I'll tear off her arms first." The man in black said as he pulled on the Elven Princess' little hand that was like a lotus.

The Elven Queen instinctively screamed, "No!"

Zhou Weiqing's pupils shrunk. Tian'er was going to give birth, and he would be a father soon. The anger within him peaked as he

looked at the despicable man.

Taking a deep breath, Zhou Weiqing put his dual hammers down slowly. He said in his deep voice, "I will withdraw the starry sky but you must let go of the kid. Otherwise, I rather destroy everything than letting a bastard like you leave."

The man in black laughed, "Hey, weren't you all obnoxious earlier? Do you think it's up to you whether I get to leave or not? Elven Queen, this is your child. Or did you and this guy commit adultery and gave birth to the princess? If you want this child to live, you'll have to kill that guy next to you. Otherwise, hehe." He forcefully straightened the Elven Princess' arm as he spoke. With a slight pull, he would be able to tear the tiny arm apart.

"He's right. You're indeed a scum, a savage." The Elven Queen began to slightly lose control of her emotion. Her body was shaking while rich Life aura was continuously being released from her body. As a glow flashed, Zhou Weiqing kept the Dual God Strength Hammers in his hands and pressed on the Elven Queen's shoulder with a hand, "Don't react. For the sake of the child, we'll let him go."

Zhou Weiqing raised his hand and waved at the dazzling starry sky as he spoke. The stars in the sky dimmed like they were fading away. The man in black was secretly glad. He could feel the elements in the outside world that was completely shielded starting to gradually appear. It was obvious that Zhou Weiqing had withdrawn the ability that was similar to Divine Territory. As the stars in the sky dimmed, something odd happened. All of the stars seemed to be getting further away, and the dazzling glow was fading at a high speed. The night sky that was slowly fading away gathered into a small ball. A beam flashed and fell from the sky before it landed in Zhou Weiqing's hand. It seemed as if Zhou Weiqing had grabbed the stars from the sky.

The scene that was unfolding before their eyes even stunned the Elven Queen who was agitated. Suddenly, Zhou Weiqing yelled

ferociously, "Didn't you want to kill her? Do it. I'll kill her for you." As he said that, he lifted his hand to slap the Elven Princess as he ran towards her. However, before he managed to land his slap, an intensely rich whitish gold glow came out of his palm and rushed towards the Elven Princess. Everything happened too suddenly. Zhou Weiqing was already moving when he was speaking. Even the Elven Queen who was next to him could not stop him. What Zhou Weiqing said had also shocked the man in black. However, it was obvious that he could not dodge at that moment otherwise, Zhou Weiqing's attack might land on him instead.

All humans were selfish. At such a critical time, the man in black would naturally choose to use the Elven Princess to shield himself. Besides, he had an idea in his head at that very moment. Since Zhou Weiqing dared to attack the Elven Queen's daughter, would that not mean they would have internal conflict? Even if the Elven Princess died, he would have the opportunity to escape. It was just that he would not be able to complete his mission.

The whitish gold nebula glow imprinted on the Elven Princess' body accurately.

"You bastard..." The Elven Queen's eyes turned red in shock. She gave Zhou Weiqing a slap on his body without any hesitation. As a low thud sounded, Zhou Weiqing was thrown into the air. When he was in midair, he spat out blood vigorously. His body was alternately radiating a gold and grey glow. He forcefully stopped the momentum when he was a few thousand meters away.

A Heavenly God-tier powerhouse's cultivation base was tremendously powerful. Especially when she gave it her all in anger. Even though Zhou Weiqing had the protection of the Ringless Ground Purging Set as well as the powerful defense of the Immortal Deity Shield, the Demon God Protective Aura, and Dragon-Tiger Transformation, it was tough for him to bear the full brunt of the Elven Queen's attack without blocking at all. It was his first time getting injured even since he achieved Heavenly King

Tier.

It was obvious that the Ringless Ground Purging Set on Zhou Weiqing's right shoulder was completely crushed, and there were cracks all over the armor set. At that moment, the Elven Queen's rage had reached its peak. However, her expression changed right after she slapped Zhou Weiqing. She could clearly see that the Elven Princess in the man in black's hand had turned completely whitish gold in color. The starlight looked extra dazzling, and it was just like a whitish gold sculpture mounted with countless starlight gems on it.

What was happening? When the Elven Queen was preoccupied with her thoughts, the man in black on the other side noticed that something was wrong. He could feel an intense force of rejection exploding from the Elven Princess' body. Apart from that, all of the attributes energy in his body was being drained out manically as it headed into the Elven Princess' body. The little lady's body looked like it had turned into a black hole. It was a terrifyingly tough case to handle.

Chapter 782: Dragon-Tiger Demon God Transformation (2-in-1)

The man in black's response was definitely fast. He made a prompt decision as he slammed his palm violently against the little princess' back. It sent her flying towards the Elven Queen. He, on the other hand, turned on his heels and fled.

"Trying to escape? Go to hell." Zhou Weiqing declared icily. A wave of white-gold light came flashing down from the sky. However, before the man in black could even scream, his entire body vanished into thin air.

That's right. He disappeared. He was turned into ashes and vanished into the sky.

After Zhou Weiqing dealt with the man in black, his body descended instantly, falling to the ground. At the same time, blood came spurting out from his mouth.

However, no one noticed as he made his descent, his eyes were filled with delight and a hint of craftiness.

The man in black slapped the Elven Princess hard across the air. The Elven Queen hurriedly rushed towards her daughter. To a mother, as long as there was a chance for her child's survival, she would save her without any hesitation!

Just then, a miracle happened. When the Elven Princess was sent flying, she flew at a pretty fast speed. However, that only happened for a moment. The speed immediately went back to normal as she stopped flying and descended slowly.

What was the Elven Queen's cultivation base? Naturally, she quickly gathered her energy to catch the little princess and scoop her into her arms.

Once the little princess entered her arms, the Elven Queen felt as if something was not right. Her body still contained a strong

attractive force. She showed her own mother no courtesy either as she absorbed the Elven Queen's Natural Attribute Energy rapidly. The most mystifying part was as she absorbed the energy, she grew larger and large. Even though she was growing very slowly, the young lady, who had been around five to six years of age, had suddenly grown to the size of a seven to eight-year-old child.

What was the meaning of this? The Elven Queen could not understand what had happened to her daughter. However, she could sense her daughter's life force very clearly, and it was even more vigorous than before. As a cultivator on the Heavenly God Tier, how could she not see that her daughter was safe and sound? Furthermore, the reason why her daughter was able to survive was undoubtedly due to Zhou Weiqing's slap.

'Ah! Zhou Weiqing, is he alright?'

Only at this moment, the Elven Queen remembered a certain sad person. When she turned around to look at the sky, that person's shadow was nowhere to be seen.

A wave of emotion that the Elven Queen had never felt before appeared in her heart. She felt a powerful sense of remorse erupting from her being. 'Why did I not trust him! It was him. It must have been him. He saved my daughter and yet I've injured him heavily.'

The Elven Queen immediately released her Natural Divine Territory without any hesitation because she could sense everything within her Natural Divine Territory. At the same time, releasing her Natural Divine Territory would also allow her to quickly absorb the Atmospheric Energy so that she could replenish the energy that was absorbed by her child.

At this moment, silver starlight from the Elven Princess' body began to slowly enter her body. She stopped absorbing the Elven Queen's Heavenly Energy and fell into a deep slumber. The Elven Queen glanced at her daughter. Even though she aged a few years,

she was even more beautiful. Now, the Elven Queen had all sorts of mixed feelings in her heart.

With a flash, she arrived on the ground and appeared in front of the man.

Zhou Weiqing's current state could not be simply described as 'a sorry figure'. His legendary armor set had vanished completely. His clothes were torn and tattered due to being scraped by tree branches and stones during his descent. His entire body was flung onto the ground, and he lay on the ground spread eagle with his body slightly twisted.

If anyone else saw this, they would have considered this a comical sight. But in the Elven Queen's eyes, this made her feel even greater remorse. Not only had she injured him heavily, he had used his final ounce of strength to help her kill the enemy. She could not even break his fall, causing him to fall down on the ground. 'Zhou Weiqing, you cannot die! Otherwise, I won't stop blaming myself for the rest of my life.'

As she was mulling over her thoughts, a flash of light appeared in the Elven Queen's hand, and a large leaf appeared out of thin air. She placed her daughter on the leaf. Soon after, the leaf began to roll up and wrap the Elven Princess within it. With a flash of green light, it disappeared into thin air.

After the Elven Queen hid her daughter away safely, she carefully pulled Zhou Weiqing out of the man-shaped hole in the ground.

No one would dare flatter Zhou Weiqing in his current predicament. Most of the skin on his body was exposed, and his aura was severely weakened. It was difficult to even sense any fluctuations from his body.

Given these conditions, the Elven Queen had long forgotten about the differences between men and women. She extended her hands towards Zhou Weiqing, tracing it along his body to check on him. She noticed a lot of damages all over his veins but his flesh

and bones were not heavily injured. The heaviest injury was at his shoulders.

The Elven Queen carefully flipped Zhou Weiqing's body over as her face trembled slightly.

At this moment, Zhou Weiqing's face was as white as a sheet of paper, his breath was coming out in wisps, and the Saint Energy in his body was a mess. His right shoulder was completely swollen. It had swelled to at least one time its original size. One could even see the damaged blood vessels very clearly beneath his skin. His right shoulder was dark purple in color, and his bones could not be seen at all.

The Elven Queen's voice trembled as she muttered, "I... I really didn't know. It's all my fault. I should've trusted you. I..." Her heart was certainly in a mess.

She carefully tore off Zhou Weiqing's clothes. After that, she pressed her hands on his shoulders as she tried using energy from the water element to heal him. Waves of life force poured out from the Elven Queen's hand like a stream into Zhou Weiqing's body.

At this moment, the Elven Queen no longer looked like the powerful leader of a tribe. Instead, she looked more like the girl next door.

Since she was young, she had always held a well-loved and respected position in the eyes of her people. She had never had contact with any males from the Elf Tribe, let alone coming in contact with a man!

Zhou Weiqing's strong muscles and his thick, musky male scent assaulted the Heavenly God Elven Queen's heart. A single thought appeared in her heart, 'So, this is how a man looks like.'

At first, Zhou Weiqing's body seemed to reject the water element that the Elven Queen had poured into his body. Even though there was not a lot of Saint Energy left in Zhou Weiqing's body, it was

still Saint Energy. Once the water element entered Zhou Weiqing's body, his Saint Energy began swallowing it up immediately. His life force reacted in the same way. Her attempts at healing him were useless.

'What should I do?' The Elven Queen did not dare to move Zhou Weiqing. If he was an ordinary person, he would have shown signs of improvement under the powerful healing from her cultivation base. However, Zhou Weiqing possessed Saint Energy, and this was a mysterious energy that not even the Elven Queen, a formidable cultivator, could understand. She did not know what else to do. She could only stay by Zhou Weiqing's side as she carefully and continuously released Natural Energy into his body. Nobody knew if this would help strengthen his Saint Energy. That would be a pretty good outcome as well.

The Elven Queen knew very clearly that it was difficult to injure a Heavenly Jewel Master when he had cultivated to a certain level because his body's resistance would become stronger and could not be easily harmed. However, the more powerful it is, the more difficult it would be to heal the body once it was afflicted with an injury. Even a small wound would cause a huge problem because a powerful Heavenly Jewel Master's Heavenly Energy was just as powerful. Once the body is damaged, it would cause problems in the Heavenly Energy's limitations. It would result in a counter charge between the Heavenly Energy and its user.

The Elven Queen's fair forehead began to break out in beads of sweat. She never thought that the day would come when she would owe a human such a huge debt.

Zhou Weiqing's condition seemed worse than she had imagined. His aura was growing weaker and weaker, and the circulation of Saint Energy in his body was slowing down. It seemed like he would stop breathing at any moment.

'What should I do, what should I do!'

The Elven Queen was currently in a state of panic. If Zhou Weiqing died here... Forget about the repercussions, her own heart would not be able to accept this. Zhou Weiqing's injury was caused by her slap. This was unacceptable to the kind-hearted Elven Queen. If Zhou Weiqing died, this would forever be a nightmare to her.

Actually, this was the measure of her lack of understanding towards Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy. Even though Zhou Weiqing's aura was growing weaker, his body was still protecting itself. The reason why the Saint Energy's circulation had slowed down was merely due to the healing process. Zhou Weiqing, whose body contained Saint Energy, would not die as long as he could still breathe. He could recuperate through self-restoration. The time frame might be lengthy based on the severity of the wound.

This time, Zhou Weiqing's injuries were indeed heavy since he gathered all his power to kill the man in black. Moreover, he suffered a heavy attack from the Elven Queen. Due to that, very little Saint Energy was left in his body, and it stalled the healing process for his injuries by a large degree. Otherwise, a short period of time would have been enough to lighten his injuries.

Saint Energy was an energy of creation, and it placed the safety of its host at the utmost importance. It would never counter charge against its host. Hence, Zhou Weiqing was very safe. He would need at most two to three days' to recuperate.

However, even though Zhou Weiqing could wait, the Elven Queen could not! Her heart throbbed in agony as if it was thrown into a pan and broiled.

She lifted her head to the skies. It was slowly getting darker, and everything was quiet. It was as if the battle did not take place.

The Elven Queen looked at Zhou Weiqing as a complicated look slowly filled her gaze. She clutched her chest with her right hand many times before she relaxed it again.

"He saved my daughter. If it was not for him, I wouldn't have been able to do anything under that man's threats. However, I've hurt him, and his life is in danger. How can I think of my own matters so selfishly?"

The Elven Queen grumbled under her breath, and her gaze suddenly filled with resolve. She took a deep breath and slowly pulled off her lapel.

More specifically, the top half of her clothes disappeared on its own. The Elf Tribe were the sons and daughters of Nature. Even at the Elven Queen's level, her clothes were completely constructed with the power of Natural Energy.

As her snowy-white flesh was slowly unveiled, one could see that there was not a single flaw on her skin. It was absolutely delicate and tender. At this moment, she looked so pure and holy. A layer of faint, green light formed automatically around her body. This did not come from her. It was formed from the Natural Attribute elements in the air that sensed her aura.

As she glanced at Zhou Weiqing, the Elven Queen forced herself to contain her shivers and nervousness. She gritted her teeth and raised her arms. Subsequently, her long skirt vanished as well.

A pair of perfectly straight, slender and smooth long legs, like God's most beautifully crafted work of art, were displayed for all to see. Those long legs, perfectly round buttocks and wonderfully slender waist that could be held by a single hand, would drive any man insane.

The Elven Queen nibbled her lips with her ivory teeth before she took a deep breath. Her entire body gently rose into the air, and the green light around her slowly grew more vibrant. The brilliance from the green light made the Elven Queen's delicate body fairly discernible. She looked even more attractive.

The Elven Queen hovered directly above Zhou Weiqing's body as the green light around her body flickered. The vibrant green light

whirled around the sky like a halo, swirling downwards and wrapping Zhou Weiqing's body within its brilliance.

At this moment, the life energy surrounding Zhou Weiqing's body had grown to a terrifyingly tremendous level. It was so terrifying that even if Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy was to amplify its absorption to the very maximum, it would never be able to absorb all of it.

Soon after, Zhou Weiqing's body slowly levitated above the ground. His already torn and tattered robes had turned into dust.

The Elven Queen looked at him. The resolve in her eyes slowly turned into gentleness. All complicated emotions seemed to have melted away, replaced by an indescribable sense of purity.

Suspended in mid-air, she bent her legs upwards and pulled them towards her chest. This made her perky buttocks look even rounder. At the same time, she wrapped her arms around her thighs, lowered her head and pressed herself firmly against her thighs. Her entire body was curled into a ball.

From behind, the Elven Queen's long green locks covered her delicate frame completely, especially the provocative parts from her waist down.

The Elven Queen released a dark green light from her body. At this very moment, she no longer looked like an elf but a bright and lustrous gemstone. A dense life force turned everything around her into the purest of substances, and a circle of green light slowly dispersed. It enveloped everything within a 100-meter radius of her in its bright radiance. The Elven Queen and Zhou Weiqing were at the core of this light.

The large life energy turned everything around the light into a dark green color. Then a bizarre sight occurred. The Elven Queen, still curled into a ball that was completely green in color, suddenly began to shrink in mid-air. She started becoming smaller and smaller.

In only ten breaths, she had turned into a dark green gemstone that was no bigger than a fist.

A light flashed. The dark green gemstone dropped itself onto Zhou Weiqing's chest as it slowly entered him.

After that, Zhou Weiqing, who was rich in Saint Energy, turned into a resplendent dark green shade. The faint Saint Energy in his body seemed to have received a powerful jolt of stimulation. It began amplifying in madness. Then, the Saint energy stopped the absorption and suppression of the life force. Using the unwavering power of Life Energy, Saint Energy was temporarily pushed aside.

Within the life energy also contained the dense fragrance of creation. However, instead of the creation of everything, it was the pure creation of life itself.

During the continuous rise of the tremendous life energy, Zhou Weiqing's body began to display sudden changes. First was the wound on his shoulders. The frightening swelling quickly subsided, and the veins in his body quickly reconnected at the peak of the powerful life energy. It became even more durable than before.

Zhou Weiqing's body already contained Nebula Saint Energy, and he already had the exceedingly powerful life energy. During the special usage of life energy, his already powerful life energy seemed to have increased by a few times.

Zhou Weiqing would be shocked if he was awake. He would never have thought that it was still possible for his body to evolve even further.

Waves of Tiger tattoos and Dragon scale markings slowly began to appear beneath his skin. Due to that frightening usage of life energy, everything began to fuse together.

Previously, when Zhou Weiqing went through a Dragon-Tiger Transformation, Dragon-shaped scales would appear on his body.

His arms and right leg would go through the Demonic Change with his Dark Demon God Tiger Bloodlines.

However, this time it was different. The Dragon scales still appeared. However, it seemed like the Dragon Emperor Bloodlines and Dark Demon God Tiger Bloodlines were properly merging under the power of the life energy. The Dragon scales slowly turned black in color. And on where it was black, a grey Tiger tattoo slowly appeared. Apart from that, a bizarre image seemed to appear out of thin air on Zhou Weiqing's back.

It was a kind of divine beast. A fusion between a Dragon and Tiger. It had the head of a Dragon, the body of a Tiger, a Dragon's wings, a Dragon's claws and a scorpion's tail. It was as if a dragon and the Dark Demon God Tiger had merged together. Its color was the same as the color of Zhou Weiqing's skin. Its black body was covered with a Tiger tattoo, and it was filled with an icy, sinister energy.

Whether it was the Dark Demon God Tiger Bloodlines or the Dragon Emperor Bloodlines, these were the most powerful bloodlines around. Zhou Weiqing had allowed them to fuse before. But the two bloodlines had their own definite repellent natures. After that, following Zhou Weiqing's continuous rise in power, and the continued increase in Saint Energy's power, the repellent natures were not too apparent. Under the suppression of Saint Energy, the energy of the bloodlines would not snap at Zhou Weiqing or affect him in any way.

However, the fusion was not complete. It could not completely display the true might of the Dragon and Tiger. Even more so after Zhou Weiqing had begun to slowly comprehend the Demon God's energy and was able to summon the Demon God's projection. His Dragon and Tiger could be considered to have a lesser value compared to the amplification for his body.

Now, thanks to the peculiar Life Saint Energy filled with the creation of life that was provided by the Elven Queen, it provided

the best catalyst for the fusion. Due to this, Zhou Weiqing's Dragon-Tiger bloodline was finally able to fuse perfectly together with his Demon Energy. It resulted in the current state of Dragon-Tiger Demon God Transformation.

Chapter 783: Elven Heart (1)

Zhou Weiqing's body began releasing layer after layer of frightening energy. As he has entered the Dragon-Tiger Demon God Transformation state, the scales on his body slowly vanished. The only thing that was changing was the color of his skin that had begun alternating between black and grey. His hair slowly turned grey as well, and his body began to emit an indescribably powerful aura. It was an aura of someone at the Heavenly God Tier.

This did not mean that Zhou Weiqing has already reached the Heavenly God Tier. However, the aura in his bloodlines seemed to have already reached the Heavenly God Tier. It was clear that if his cultivation base went through a breakthrough, would his body's capabilities still be limited to that of the Heavenly God Tier?

You could say that the combined effects of the Dark Demon God Tiger Bloodlines, the Dragon Emperor Bloodlines, and the Elven Queen resulted in the creation of a powerful bloodline that Zhou Weiqing has never possessed before. His cultivation base remained the same, but the frightening thing about the state of his body now was the fact that even dragons could not hold be compared to him right now.

With a gentle sound, Zhou Weiqing's body released a ball of dark green light. The dark green light then blossomed to reveal the Elven Queen. However, her face was now very pale as she yelped and spit out a small mouthful of blood.

The Elven Queen had fast reflexes. She waved her right arm and solidified her blood in mid-air. Then, a small, dark green bottle appeared in her hand. Under her control, the blood trickled into the bottle.

Once that was complete, she could no longer hold it in. Her body came crashing down from the sky and landed on Zhou Weiqing. The two fell to the ground at the same time with a soft thud before

the Elven Queen lost consciousness.

The mystical feat displayed by the Elven Queen was one of the most mysterious abilities of the Elf Tribe, known as the Elven Heart.

Only adults of the royal lineage within the Elf Tribe would be able to harness the powers of the Elven Heart. Once the Elven Heart is released, you could move the heavens and earth to create the purest form of Life Saint Energy. Simply put, if the Elf Tribe were to be at risk of extinction, the strength of the elven soldiers would double and they would become immortal as long as the Elven Queen released the Elven Heart. Under these circumstances, even a Heavenly God-tier cultivator would find it difficult to kill the average Elf under the sustenance of the Elven Heart.

Therefore, the Elven Heart was considered to be the Elf's Tribe's final resort in ensuring their survival. Generally speaking, only Elven Queens of past dynasties would have access to such abilities.

For every Elven Queen, the Elven Heart can only be used once in her life. At this moment, the current Elven Queen of this era has utilized the one and only Elven Heart she had in her lifetime and given it to Zhou Weiqing.

You could say that the Elven Heart was more important to the Elven Queen than her chastity. This was a powerful ability that involved the Elf Tribe's lineage.

Mere moments ago, the Elven Queen could not think of any other way to save Zhou Weiqing, aside from utilizing this ability. With her heart clouded in remorse and a change in her psyche, she finally decided to utilize the Elven Heart.

Once an Elven Queen has used her Elven Heart, she must abdicate the throne within the next ten years, and allow the next Elven Queen to take over. It could be said that although the Elven Queen had attacked Zhou Weiqing and caused him heavy injuries, she has paid a far greater price. This would be beyond Zhou Weiqing's

comprehension.

An Elven Queen who has utilized the Elven Heart would become considerably weaker. Her initially near-limitless Life Energy would become ten times weaker, and she would not even think of regaining her vigor in less than ten years.

Yet, she who has completed such a task displayed a delighted smile on her face. The Elven Queen did not regret her decision. If she did not do so and Zhou Weiqing died, it would probably bring destruction to the Elf Tribe all the same. Besides, she could never forgive herself for her mistake today. Furthermore, her daughter has been saved. The loss of one Elven Heart signified the growth of a new Elven Heart.

The Elven Queen may have lost her Elven Heart, but her daughter would certainly grow more rapidly as a result. Within ten years, with the help of the elders and the current Elven Queen, she would gain the ability to replace the Elven Queen.

After an unknown amount of time had passed, Zhou Weiqing slowly awoke from his coma. When he recovered his state of mind, he felt a strange energy coursing through his veins. The strangest thing of all was that his Divine Thought seemed to have grown stronger than before. Without even having to deliberately sense anything, his spiritual world would light up immediately, and everything within his body was present in his consciousness.

'What is this?' Zhou Weiqing was stunned.

Be it his circulation, bones or internal organs, everything felt more durable than before, so powerful that it would make one boil with anger. On his bones, a faint layer of black-grey energy circulated continuously, glimmering with a faint fluorescent light. His entire body from head to toe was filled with a terrifying power that could tear through the heavens and the earth.

The Nebula Saint Energy in his body seemed to have received some sort of quenching, its originally pure gold hue seemed to

have grown a few shades lighter and developed towards the direction of a white-gold shade. Even his cultivation base has actually broken through to the Upper Level of the Heavenly Emperor Tier.

What the f*ck! Was he dreaming? How was this possible? Even if he back-tracked through the Galaxia and absorbed four to five Heavenly Emperor cultivators' Heavenly Core Nucleus energy, he would not have increased that much. The changes to Zhou Weiqing's body gave him a strong otherworldly feeling.

"Mm?" Just then, he felt something soft on top of him, and opened his eyes instinctively.

The first thing that entered his gaze was a head of dark green hair. That faint Natural Energy melting into the purest of all fragrances gave Zhou Weiqing a carefree and relaxed feeling. He raised his arms automatically and held the delicate figure above him in his arms. The soft and supple feeling gave the guy a kind of reaction.

Who is this? None of his female companions had dark green hair!

Zhou Weiqing turned over, sat up and hugged the delicate figure close to his chest. However, once he saw the features on the pale face, his eyeballs nearly fell out of their sockets as he narrowly threw the charming person in his arms away.

The sky is falling, the ground is caving in! What is the Elven Queen doing butt-naked in my arms?

Zhou Weiqing was so in shock that his elation immediately turned to naivety. He was not even this nervous during his wretched appearance with Dongfang Hanyue. His first thought was that if the Elf Tribe knew that he was hugging the Elven Queen, butt-naked on top of that, it would be impossible not to provoke the entire tribe into hunting him for his blood.

During this short period of shock, Zhou Weiqing did not dare to

flip the Elven Queen off. Instead, he quickly looked left and right, dispersing his Divine Thought to ensure that there wasn't a single human within a radius of several hundred miles around them. He quickly pulled out a set of his own clothes and quickly put them on the Elven Queen. He then carefully placed her on the ground, and put on his own clothes. Only then was he able to recall everything that had happened.

The fight. The first thing that Zhou Weiqing remembered was the fight.

Earlier on when they began hunting down the man in black, Zhou Weiqing had already expected that the enemy might use the Elven Princess to threaten them and had made preparations for this.

Plainly speaking, he anticipated that the Elven Queen would descend into madness and attack him once he moved to attack the Elven Princess. At that moment, he had no way of warning the Elven Queen. No matter what methods he could have used to warn her, even a slight change in the look in his eye would put the man in black at height of anxiety. Besides, he was also a Heavenly Emperor-tier cultivator and would have been able to pick up on it. If that were to happen, their previous efforts would have gone to waste. It may also result in the little Elven Princess' death.

So, at that time, Zhou Weiqing could only grit his teeth and assume responsibility. The ball of white-gold light was a special ability that he had received after his promotion to the Heavenly Emperor Tier. It could temporarily utilize the nebula from the sky and explode into the most powerful offensive or defensive stance. This ability was the Nebula Cosmos.

Whenever he used Nebula Cosmos, Zhou Weiqing would temporarily receive Nebula Saint Energy at one level higher than his own instantly. That is also to say, that it is quite possible that he can only receive the white-gold Nebula Saint Energy once he entered the Heavenly God Tier.

In order to ensure the little Elven Princess' safety, Zhou Weiqing placed all of this energy into her body, without holding anything back. One can only imagine the terrifying might of Saint Energy at the Heavenly God Tier, so you could say that the little Elven Princess has profited from a disaster. Receiving Zhou Weiqing's own exceptionally purified Saint Energy would also render all attacks from the man in black against her completely useless. Under these circumstances, Zhou Weiqing and the Elven Queen would definitely be able to get her back.

This was Zhou Weiqing's plan. He had also thought of the Elven Queen's reaction, so when he released the white-gold light, he raised his defense to the highest level at that moment in time and stiffly endured the Elven Queen's attack.

However, he still underestimated the power in the slap of a Heavenly God-tier cultivator. His powerful defense was broken through and the full force of the Elven Queen's slap broke through his Ringless Ground Purging Set. It would be at least ten days before he could utilize the set. At the same time, she also broke through his Immortal Deity Shield and Demon God Protective defense. If Zhou Weiqing did not have so many defenses, coupled with the fact that his body was unyielding enough, he might have lost his life in that one attack.

Saint Energy was not all-powerful. If Zhou Weiqing was thoroughly destroyed, even his Saint Energy would not be able to save him.

Fortunately, Zhou Weiqing managed to endure it all and even used his final shred of strength to kill the enemy. Once he had completed this, he naturally heaved a sigh of relief. The enemy was dead, and the little Elven Princess was saved. No matter how stupid the Elven Queen was, she should be able to see what he had accomplished.

So, at the moment he lost consciousness, his face broke into a smile. The hint of craftiness was because he thought that this time,

the Elven Blood was in his hand, for he had put in so much effort!
He even ended up wounding himself.

Chapter 784: Elven Heart (2)

At the time, Zhou Weiqing knew as well, that nothing could possibly happen to him. Saint Energy would automatically restore his body, and a Heavenly God-tier Elven Queen was guarding him by his side. How could there possibly be any problems with safety?

However, the scene before him shocked Zhou Weiqing to the core. Let's not mention the fact that the Elven Queen was lying on top of him, even the changes in his body completely stunned him.

While it was a big fight, his cultivation base couldn't possibly have received such a substantial increase! This could only prove one thing; with the Elven Queen's help, his body and cultivation base had received such amazing effects.

Zhou Weiqing wasn't too bothered about the advances to his cultivation base, thanks to his Saint Energy, he didn't really have many bottlenecks to speak of. He only needed to continue cultivating or to receive information from Galaxia to advance and eventually, he would be able to enter the Heavenly God Tier. However, the evolution of his body was different.

He knew his body better than anyone else, so Zhou Weiqing could naturally sense that his own Dragon-Tiger Bloodline had entered a whole new level. The Dragon Emperor Bloodline and Dark Demon God Tiger Bloodline did not just completely merge together, there was no longer any distinction between the two. Even the Essence of Demon God that he used to summon the Demon God had merged perfectly. This was no longer a simple Dragon-Tiger Transformation, but a Dragon-Tiger Demon God Transformation.

An evolution like this has allowed Zhou Weiqing's body to enter the Heavenly God Tier, and the level of his bloodlines had even outmatched those above the known Heavenly God Tier. One can only imagine his level of power. When you include his Upper-Level

Heavenly Emperor Saint Energy, he would definitely have the ability to contend against any Heavenly God cultivator. Even though he had provided a great aid to the Elf Tribe — the Elven Princess should be safe by now. In comparison, it would seem that the benefits he received are far greater.

Even though Zhou Weiqing was rather confident in himself, he would not go so far as to assume that his current looks would make the Elven Queen burn with desire, then strike some sort of special relationship with him. This was completely impossible but what on earth did she do for him?

After mulling it over for a short while, Zhou Weiqing slowly calmed down. He then squatted in front of the Elven Queen, and with a slight movement in his Divine Thought, began to scan his physical situation.

The scanning process was unimportant, for Zhou Weiqing gasped. The Elven Queen was actually unconscious, and it was not because of her own weakness.

There were no wounds on her body, but her initially near inexhaustive and powerful Life Energy seemed so fragile that it was as if it could be cut off at any moment.

At that moment, Zhou Weiqing instantly understood. He had always been a smart person, so how could he lack the skills to make a conclusion in a situation like this? Without a doubt, the Elven Queen had used a special form of mysticism to help heal him from his wounds in the shortest time possible. Because of that, she ended up in such a fragile state.

It's no wonder that he had received such a great improvement, you could tell how high-handed this mystical technique was, to have reduced a Heavenly God-tier cultivator like the Elven Queen to such a weakened state. While Zhou Weiqing was still unaware of the significance of the Elven Heart to the Elf Tribe, he could guarantee that the Elven Queen has definitely used her most

precious ability to save him.

Scratching his head in a puzzled manner, Zhou Weiqing could not help but feel embarrassed. He had only intended to fetch a good trade but ended overstepping the price, for the other party had given far more than what he had given. Under these circumstances, how could he possibly request for the Elven Blood! He did not notice the little bottle in the Elven Queen's hand. If it were not for the mouthful of blood that the Elven Queen had spat out from her mouth, she would not have become so weak.

Once Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy had recovered, with the help of her Life Saint Energy, the Saint Energy automatically began an ejection, forcing the Elven Queen out. This caused the Elven Queen to lose her endurance, coupled with the fact that she had already planned on giving Zhou Weiqing her own blood, her action in spitting out her precious Elven Queen blood resulted in a state of fragility that she had never experienced before.

"No, I cannot go back like this." He thought. If he returned with the weak-looking Elven Queen, and without any knowledge of where she had hidden the Elven Princess, the Elf Tribe would definitely be out for his blood. If they did not, it would be very strange indeed.

Alright then, you gave some to me, now I'm going to give you a little as well. Zhou Weiqing smiled bitterly, albeit exasperatedly. Of course, at this time, his heart held no wicked intentions. He really wanted to take his clothes off again, take advantage of the Elven Queen's previous state, and squash her beneath him. Obviously, these were only thoughts. Who would dare admit to actually carrying a few wicked intentions deep down in his heart?

Sitting cross-legged, Zhou Weiqing gently clapped his hands up towards the sky. Two rays of light twinkled at the same time, the purplish-red light turned into the Demonic Dragon Lady, and the black light turned into Hell's Angel. These two have long been abilities that Zhou Weiqing had used most frequently. Zhou

Weiqing was more afraid of being disturbed, as he would need time to heal the Elven Queen. Hence, he needed guardians. Based on his current cultivation base, summoning the Demonic Dragon Lady and Hell's Angel was definitely more powerful than using his own living cultivation base.

Pure golden light gathered in front of Zhou Weiqing's chest, slowly lighting up. It was the light from the Starcrux Saint Nucleus Core, except, while the light was still a pure golden shade, the core position of the Saint Nucleus Core had already presented itself as a purer shade of white-gold.

The deliberately crucial difference between then and now seemed to only come the moment the Starcrux Saint Nucleus Core released its power. The skies darkened instantly, and little bits of starlight appeared, and thick Genesis Energy filled the sky. The Atmospheric Energy, which was initially in the air, seemed to have been absorbed by the Genesis Energy instantly. In the midst of the bits of starlight, Zhou Weiqing's body followed suit and became transparent. His entire being seemed to emit an extra amount of divinity.

More accurately speaking, his summoning of Nebula Saint has not reached the level of Divine Territory, because he still hasn't achieved total control over the process. Even so, this piece of Nebula Saint was a great deal more powerful than most Divine Territories. This was definitely more superior than those in the levels above it. How many would have the ability to be on the same level as Genesis Energy?

The Starcrux Saint Nucleus Core in Zhou Weiqing's chest suddenly felt a little kinder. Then, a ray of light shot through the skies, it was the Heavenly Core Nucleus from the man in black whom Zhou Weiqing had killed.

A cultivator on the Upper Level of the Heavenly Emperor Tier, who also had a Saint Nucleus Core with Saint Attribute at the Upper-Level of the Heavenly Emperor Tier. How could Zhou

Weiqing bear to waste it?

Even though he was already severely weakened at the time, but he still preserved the Heavenly Core Nucleus at the first opportunity, storing it in his own Starcrux Saint Nucleus Core, ready and waiting to be used for absorption through Galaxia feedback, once his cultivation base was restored. However, now, he clearly had no intentions of absorbing it for himself.

The splendid starlights seemed to send back information in the next moment. This time, Zhou Weiqing did not immerse himself in it. Instead, he extended his right arm, and the starlight solidified into a bundle. Then, under his guidance, slowly illuminated around the Elven Queen's chestal area. At the same time, Zhou Weiqing's other hand gently pressed against the air, and gentle Nebula Saint Energy formed into a half-foot long spiral, then whirled around above the Elven Queen's chest, slowly absorbing the Galaxia feedback that fell from the skies, and then converting into the most gentle and purest Saint Energy, pouring into the Elven Queen's body.

The Elven Queen herself may not have Saint Energy, but her body was pure, a definite rare sight in Zhou Weiqing's lifetime. Drinking in Nature's energy from a young age, growing up in the Goddess of Nature's baptism, the Elven Queen had a very pure body. It's a good thing that Zhou Weiqing didn't do anything immoral to her, otherwise, if her purity were to be damaged in her weakened state, the Elven Queen might have perished.

Gentle Saint Energy mixed with creation aura slowly entered into the Elven Queen's body, filling her weak life energy.

The creation of life includes Creation Energy. The Elven Queen was able to use the Elven Heart to mobilize Life Genesis Energy and was stronger than most humans in the receptivity of Saint Energy. Besides, under Zhou Weiqing's deliberate control, the Saint Energy automatically converted into great life force upon entering the Elven Queen's body, to make up for the severe wear and tear in her

body.

The energy brought from Galaxia feedback from an Upper-Level Heavenly Emperor-tier cultivator is rather powerful, but to a Heavenly God Tier cultivator like the Elven Queen, this was obviously not enough. Soon, the energy from the Galaxia feedback was completely depleted, but this showed no effect to the treatment that Zhou Weiqing had given her.

The pure gold starlight with a faint white-gold nucleus was spat out from the Starcrux Saint Nucleus Core in Zhou Weiqing's chest, making up for the position initially held by the Galaxia feedback. He was now pouring the purest of his Saint Energy into the Elven Queen.

You could say that Zhou Weiqing held nothing back in healing the Elven Queen. Saint Energy brings great benefits to all living things, even though Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy was still not at the level of Genesis Energy, it was pretty close. The attributes of Saint Energy was all-inclusive. Hence, it brings great benefits to people of all attributes. Even if you were not a Heaven Jewel Master and only an average person, it could still provide you with longevity.

To cultivators, it had a more significant purpose. Furthermore, the higher your cultivation base, the greater the benefits received. Simply put, if a Maximum-Level Heavenly Emperor-tier cultivator were to receive Saint Energy from Zhou Weiqing, it would be highly possible for him to shoot up towards the Heavenly God Tier. For example, the current Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor, the old man was now in closed-door cultivation in the Heavenly Bow Empire. With the help of his precious disciple, his bottleneck which has been around for more than ten years showed signs of loosening up.

Cultivators at the Heavenly God Tier could not only gain comprehension of the heavens and earth but could also hold the world in their grasp. They would truly be considered to be masters

in their own Divine Territory.

The benefits that a Heavenly God-tier cultivator would have after receiving Saint Energy could not be easily described in a concrete manner as the benefits would be all rounded. Aside from the comprehension of the heavens and earth, it would bring an even deeper, profoundly meaningful and incomparable benefit to Heavenly God-tier cultivators.

Chapter 785: Elven Heart (3)

You could definitely describe the Elven Queen's current situation with the phrase 'profiting from a disaster'. Due to her kindness and heart of gold, she paid the greatest price and put herself in an extremely weakened state. Because of this, her body is now left with more space to absorb Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy.

Like a blood transplant, the Elven Queen's initially large reservoir of Life Energy was now converted into pure Nebula Saint Energy, thanks to Zhou Weiqing. In the middle of the Elven Queen's chest, lay something similar to a Heavenly Core Nucleus — the Life Core. This was also the symbol of the Elven Queens from the past dynasties.

The Life Core will not only bring her even greater power, for should the Elf Tribe be in grave danger, the Elf Queen would be able to use her life as a form of sacrifice and use the Life Core as a seed while she provided nutrients to nurture the Ancient Tree of Life once again. This would prolong the Elf Tribe's survival.

Hence, the position of the Elven Queen who held the Elven Heart and the Life Core is one of absolute supremacy. Even with the twelve elders combined, they could not be compared to her.

At this moment, the outer area of the Elf Queen's Life Core was completely wrapped in a layer of pure Saint Energy. As Saint Energy continued pouring in, the Life Core continued to secrete powerful Life Energy. Not only was this replenishing the Elf Queen's lost Life Energy within a short period of time, it was also following the Saint Energy as it orbited back and forth from Zhou Weiqing.

The Life Core continuously released layer after layer of green light. At the same time, the green surface of the Life Core slowly began to peel, as if layers of silk were beginning to peel off, and started a transformation towards a shade of gold.

Just like how the Elven Queen, while in combat, was absolutely sure that the Elven Heart could help heal Zhou Weiqing, but was not aware that it would create such a huge effect, Zhou Weiqing also knew that his full usage in pouring Saint Energy into the Elven Queen's body to help her recuperate, would help her replenish the life energy that she had lost. However, he was not too clear on the benefits that she would receive from this.

With Saint Energy's stimulation, the Elven Queen's Life Core began to transform. Furthermore, it seemed to evolve as well. To a Heavenly God-tier cultivator like her, this was definitely considered to be a fundamental change.

However, even though the Elven Queen was probably feeling really good, things for Zhou Weiqing were beginning to take a more gloomy turn. The Elven Queen's body was like a bottomless pit. Based on the purity of his Saint Energy, he assumed that even without the help of the Galaxia feedback, his own Saint Energy should be able to help replenish the Elven Queen's life energy in a short period of time.

However, when he was actually doing it, he did not feel like it was a short period of time at all. After absorbing the Galaxia feedback and a large portion of Zhou Weiqing's converted Saint Energy, the Elven Queen's body still seemed like a bottomless pit. No matter how much energy Zhou Weiqing poured into her, she would receive it with great ease.

This cannot go on! Is the Heavenly Energy of a Heavenly God Tier that horrifying? If she continues her absorption, I'm going to die from excessive ejaculation!

Zhou Weiqing thought sorrowfully while increasing his absorption of the Atmospheric Energy.

With the help of the Nebula from the sky, he managed to replenish his Saint Energy at a rather rapid speed, especially after the completion of his Dragon-Tiger Demon God Transformation.

The most shocking thing to Zhou Weiqing was, that he was not only able to absorb Atmospheric Energy from the air, he was also able to absorb and convert the energy from beneath the ground. This also included Atmospheric Energy, Evil Energy, and other similar types of energies. In the face of his Nebula Saint Energy, everything could be turned into nutrients. It was because of this support system that he was able to continue pouring into the Elven Queen. Besides, the fact that he had the power to continue pouring in even more energy was what gave him even more resolve. If he found himself unable to continue, he could stop. It did not mean that he would be sucked dry.

Zhou Weiqing would not stop so easily, not before he was finished. This was especially since he had received so many benefits from the other party. Only heaven knew what kind of transformation would happen to the Elven Queen. Logically speaking, the Life Energy in her body should have gone back to normal long ago, so why did she not shown any signs of awakening?

Zhou Weiqing had a hunch that the Elven Queen had entered a cocooned stage. Not only was she unable to wake up, she had entered the deepest slumber. Was this due to overconsumption? Zhou Weiqing could not say for sure. However, for the sake of the Elven Queen's safety, he could only continue pouring his Saint Energy into the Elven Queen.

Time continued to pass, and the extreme darkness in this part of the skies would naturally draw the attention of people passing by. However, it was also fortunate that this was a desolate area outside of the city, not many people could really see the changes in the sky. Even if there were cultivators among that small amount of people, once they entered the area around Zhou Weiqing's Nebula Divine Territory, their substantially limited powers would make them choose to flee the area immediately.

Anyone who had experienced the Nebula Divine Territory would

be able to discern that this was the Divine Territory of a Heavenly God-tier cultivator. Who would dare offend the whiskers of a Heavenly God cultivator! Unless of course, that person is courting death?

However, the earliest to realize the problem at hand was the Elf Tribe.

That day, Zhou Weiqing took the Elven Queen and traveled through her realm. It's been three days and three nights since he had left. Initially, the Elf Tribe didn't react too much to it. They fully trusted their Elven Queen and waited quietly.

However, not too long after Zhou Weiqing and the Elven Queen's departure, a large number of leaves on the Elf Tribe's Ancient Elven Tree began to fall, all of a sudden.

One should know that the Ancient Elven Tree was the Elven Queen's residence, and also the core of the Elf Tribe. You might say that it was closely linked to the Elven Queen. Whenever something happened to her, the Ancient Elven Tree would react as well. A huge change in the Ancient Elven Tree shows, very clearly, that the Elven Queen was in trouble.

After careful consideration, the twelve Elf Tribe elders managed to surmise, that the Elven Queen had used the Elven Heart.

How could this be? Just how powerful was the enemy, to have forced the Elven Queen into doing this! The members of the Elf Tribe instantly plunged into panic. However, they could not leave the Sealed Land of the Elf Tribe so easily. The seal on the Sealed Land was not only directed to the world outside, more importantly, it was directed to the world inside. Even the Elf Tribe elders could not leave at will without the help of special magical tools.

The first thought that came to the Elf Tribe elders' minds was that something had happened on Zhou Weiqing's end. They have all seen Zhou Weiqing's power, and have had personal experiences

with the terrifying might of the Demon God Sword. In their eyes, Zhou Weiqing was at least on par with the Elven Queen, so he must have done something terrible to her, which resulted in Her Majesty's usage of the Elven Heart.

The Elf Tribe did not have a lot of good sentiments towards humans, so naturally, they were used to thinking ill of them. In their point of view, it was very likely that Zhou Weiqing was in league with the enemy. Therefore, the Elf Tribe viewed Zhou Weiqing's five female companions with extreme hostility. If it were not for the fact that Shangguan Xue'er had stepped out to reveal her identity from Heaven's Expanse Palace, the Elf Tribe might have moved against her already.

After waiting for yet another day and still seeing no sign of the Elven Queen's return, the Elf Tribe had no choice but to send two elders to forcibly break out of the seal, in hopes of finding the Elven Queen and bringing her back.

Now, these two elders were already in the outer area of Zhou Weiqing's Nebula Divine Territory, but did not dare step in. Not only have they seen the Nebula Divine Territory, they also saw the powerful Demonic Dragon Lady and Hell's Angel. Without a doubt, Her Majesty should be inside this Divine Territory, and the power in this Divine Territory had completely surpassed their previous assumptions.

What could they do? They could only choose to return to the Elf Tribe.

"What did you say? A Divine Territory that turns day into night, and a large helix-shaped Nebula? Where did this cultivator come from?"

The twelve elders assembled, all of them filled with anxiety. The Elven Princess was kidnapped, and now something had happened to the Elven Queen. This, to the Elf Tribe, was definitely a disastrous predicament! If something happened to both the Elven

Queen and the Elven Princess, then the survival of the Elf Tribe would be greatly affected as well.

"Go ask those humans. Perhaps they would know." The First Elf Tribe Elder suddenly remembered Shangguan Xue'er, Tian'er and the rest of the five wives.

Therefore, the twelve Elf Tribe elders appeared in front of the five wives once again.

Even though the Elf Tribe did not make any direct move against them, after receiving knowledge of Shangguan Xue'er's identity, they still placed them under house arrest. While their powers were not exactly weak, they could not leave without Zhou Weiqing's lead from this Sealed Land, even if the Elf Tribe did not do anything to them. Hence, they had no choice but to stay in the Elf Tribe for the time being.

"What? Nebula Divine Territory?" The five wives looked at each other after hearing the Elf Tribe elders' description.

"Do you know whom the Nebula Divine Territory belongs to?" The Elf Tribe's First Elder questioned impatiently. The hostility in his eyes increased. To them, if Zhou Weiqing and his companions' had not disturbed the peace in the Elf Tribe, none of this would have happened.

Shangguan Xue'er nodded, "I think I know. Perhaps that is not a Divine Territory, but that's definitely Weiqing's ability. I can guarantee you all, that if the Elven Queen is with Weiqing, her safety would not be a problem."

"That's Zhou Weiqing's ability?" Hearing this, a dull look momentarily flashed across the twelve Elf Tribe elders' faces. Then, an even more powerful sense of hostility exploded from their being.

The Elf Tribe's First Elder replied in a dark voice, "Regardless, we want to see Her Majesty. No matter where you're from, it's come to

a point where we have no choice but to commit an offense. Take them away first, then find that Zhou Weiqing."

The twelve Elven Tribe Elders surrounded the five wives instantly. Among the five wives, Shangguan Xue'er was the calmest, the most gentle was Shangguan Bing'er. However, if you wanted to point out the one with the worst temper, it would naturally be Tian'er and Fei'er. Especially Shangguan Fei'er who has never been placed under house arrest throughout her entire childhood into her adulthood. Back in the Heavenly Bow Empire, her position was equivalent to the prime minister. Only Zhou Weiqing would dare say he was above her rank. Even a great number of soldiers had to respectfully address her as chief instructor whenever they met her.

Chapter 786: Mindfulness, Sharing Lives (1)

Shangguan Bing'er was already furious from being locked in for an entire day by the Elf Tribe. How could she not feel enraged now that the Elf Tribe elders wanted to take action against them? With a flash, Shangguan Bing'er made the first move to step forward. The legendary armor set swiftly covered her entire body. It might not have been the full set but the Saint Nucleus Core that Shangguan Fei'er solidified was rather special, unlike the others. Her Saint Nucleus Core did not amplify the Elemental Jewel Attributes but amplified the Physical Jewel instead. Hence, her level of resilience could be considered as second only to Zhou Weiqing. In fact, she was second only to Zhou Weiqing at the Heavenly Emperor Tier. A powerful force erupted, ready for attack.

Shangguan Xue'er spoke in a low voice, "Fei'er, wait a moment. Elf Tribe elders, will you please listen to what I have to say?"

The First Elf Tribe elder replied, "Her Majesty is extremely vital to our Elf Tribe. My apologies, everyone. Perhaps you truly don't harbor any animosity. However, in order to ensure the survival of our tribe, please excuse our crimes."

Shangguan Xue'er's expression sank. A shapeless aura erupted from her body, "First Elder, do you understand the implications of your actions? If anything happens to us here, I can confirm that the Elf Tribe will cease to exist."

Her words were no simple threats. Whether it was Zhou Weiqing's newly constructed Peerless Sect, Heaven's Expanse Palace or Heavenly Snow Mountain, they were all the best of the best in the human world. If all them attacked the Elf Tribe at the same time, the Elf Tribe would most likely face imminent destruction.

The First Elder's expression grew complicated. After engaging

with them for over a day, he already knew that these women were not to be trifled with. Others may not be able to comment but they had reached a formidable cultivation base at such a young age. Not many humans could achieve such a thing. One could imagine the great powers that supported them. Naturally, he did not know that the reason why the five women were able to achieve such a level in their cultivation base was because of Zhou Weiqing alone.

However, the Elven Queen was more important. Furthermore, he did not have any intention of harming the women. After a brief hint of hesitation in his eyes, he immediately hardened his resolve again. Only if they captured these women would they have a better chance of threatening Zhou Weiqing. Finding the Elven Queen was currently the most important thing.

Shangguan Xue'er took one look at the change on the First Elder of the Elf Tribe's face and knew something was wrong. "Protect Tian'er," she said darkly. Just as she spoke, she took the lead and stepped forward. She pushed Tian'er behind her. Among the five wives, the pregnant Tian'er was undoubtedly the one who needed the protection the most.

Tian'er had never mentioned this before. In reality, among the five wives, she had the strongest cultivation base. She only wanted to see what Shangguan Xue'er would choose to do in a situation like this.

Among the five wives, Tian'er and Shangguan Xue'er were the most powerful. Shangguan Xue'er was the heir to the Heaven's Expanse Palace and the eldest among the three Shangguan sisters. The three of them were sisters! Therefore, Tian'er had been working hard to establish a good relationship with them. Considering Tian'er herself received Saint Energy at the same time as Zhou Weiqing, she was crucial in helping Zhou Weiqing's cultivation base. Naturally, the other three wives would not fight with her over the position of the first wife.

At this moment, when Shangguan Xue'er moved in a horizontal

direction to defend Tian'er, Tian'er's heart finally officially recognized her as a sister. Regardless of the situation, at the most crucial moment, they were a family. That's right. Because of Zhou Weiqing, the five of them had become a family!

Tian'er slowly closed her eyes. One by one, she silently placed the God Vanquishing Heavenly Spirit Set on her body as the powerful Divine Energy fluctuated continuously from her being. The purity of Saint Energy seemed to surround all five of them at once.

The color of her Saint Energy was not the same as Zhou Weiqing's. Instead, a sparkling and translucent shade of gold with flecks of starlight surrounded the five women. From a distance, a large shadow of an angel appeared in the sky.

The faces of all twelve Elf Tribe elders fell. They could all clearly sense what the large angel shadow brought. It was not as simple as the Purgatory Angel that Zhou Weiqing summoned. It was a divine angel. Additionally, this divine angel had six wings on its back.

A Seraphic Blazeangel! It had an existence that was comparable to the Demon God! Perhaps it was slightly inferior to the Demon God. However, it certainly could not be compared to gods like the Goddess of Nature. Zhou Weiqing alone was able to summon the Demon God. The last time it took all of the Elven Queen's might to resist his attacks. This time, among the five women, one of them was able to summon a divine angel. What kind of powers did they possess?

The divine Seraphic Blazeangel descended from the sky. It suppressed the twelve Heavenly Emperor-tier Elders with such might that they were unable to mobilize the Atmospheric Energy. Even the Natural Elements in the air were constantly fueling this divine angel.

Tian'er stood in the middle of the four wives. At this moment, she suddenly felt a bout of weakness. However, what shocked her the most was a jet of Saint Energy slowly entered her body around

her lower abdomen and it caused the feeling of weakness to slowly fade away.

Based on Tian'er's current cultivation base, it was similar to the time when Zhou Weiqing previously summoned the Demon God. The deterrent force was greater than the fighting strength. The divine Seraphic Blazeangel was enough to deter and intimidate a Heavenly God-tier cultivator but she had no control over it. At most, she could try very hard to defend them.

The twelve Elf Tribe elders began to feel awkward as they prepared to make their move. How could they simply act under these circumstances? They could not make sense of the situation at all! They had already seen the Demon God Sword once and this time, they did not have the Elven Queen to lead them.

Just then, an Elf Tribe cultivator flew in at top speed. It was a Heavenly King Elf Tribe member. Shock was all over his face. However, he did not seem to notice the enormous divine Seraphic Blazeangel. Even before his physical body could be seen, they already heard his voice.

"Elders, you must come and have a look. The Ancient Tree of Life. Something seems to have happened to the Ancient Tree of Life."

The twelve Elf Tribe elders naturally recognized him. This was a tribe member who was responsible for guarding the ancient elven tree. When they heard that, the color immediately drained from the twelve elders' faces. They could no longer bother about dealing with the five wives. The twelve elders immediately retreated, and they all left in the same direction.

Shangguan Xue'er and the rest heaved a sigh of relief as well. Tian'er, who was in the middle, exclaimed, "Let's have a look as well." Then, without withdrawing the Seraphic Blazeangel, all five were swept up in a flash of golden light and followed the Elf Tribe elders.

The Ancient Tree of Life was, without a doubt, of extreme importance to the Elf Tribe. Even the Sealed Land's source of energy came from the Ancient Tree of Life.

More importantly, the Ancient Tree of Life was crucial in producing Elf Tribe offsprings. Every member of the Elf Tribe was born from the Ancient Tree of Life. In the first few moments of their birth, they were bodies of energy. They would grow into elves over the passage of time. If anything happened to the Ancient Tree of Life, the Elf Tribe would face extinction. They would need to sacrifice the Elven Queen in order to restore the Ancient Tree of Life. Furthermore, the Elven Queen had been absent for more than a day now.

The twelve Elf Tribe elders rushed to the Ancient Tree of Life immediately. However, when they laid their eyes upon the Ancient Tree of Life, they could not help but slip into a daze. Their anxiety was completely obliterated.

The Ancient Tree of Life was a large ancient tree that was about a hundred meters in height and around two hundred meters in diameter. Its trunk was tough and solid, and its countless branches were widely stretched. Every piece of leaf was ornately carved in a light shade of jade-green, and it brimmed with endless life force.

This was also the Elven Queen's residence. The breath of life emitted by every inch of the Ancient Tree of Life granted life and ensured the continued survival of the Sealed Land of the Elf Tribe.

However, at this moment, a completely confusing transformation was happening to the Ancient Tree of Life. Every branch of the large ancient tree began to move. It was not because it was wilting, but because it was producing propitious vapor.

A faint gold propitious vapor wafted through the large tree branches as it enveloped every inch of the large ancient tree. Every time a branch moved, it made the breath of life from the tree grow even stronger.

Besides, one could see the link between the Ancient Tree of Life and the earth very clearly. The soil surrounding it was torn open, and the Ancient Tree of Life was growing upwards continuously. Furthermore, every branch seemed to grow at the same time as they danced. The breath of life that had grown to a terrifyingly large degree gave every elf around the ancient elven tree a brand new feeling. Their cultivation base seemed to gradually grow without having to cultivate at all.

"This, this is?" After the twelve Elf Tribe elders recovered from their momentary daze, their eyes displayed an expression of complete disbelief. Perhaps the average little Elf would not be able to understand what was going on. However, how could they, who had been around for more than a thousand years, not see what was going on?

The transformation in the ancient elven tree that was happening before their very eyes could only mean one thing — evolution.

"The Ancient Tree of Life is evolving?" The First Elder of the Elf Tribe gulped. After his astonishment, joy took over. It was a mad kind of joy. He even leaped and hugged another Elf Tribe elder next to him. Overjoyed, he cried out, "The Ancient Tree of Life is evolving. It's really evolving. This is too great. Too great! It's evolving. Can you all see it? It's evolving."

Upon receiving confirmation from the First Elder of the Elf Tribe, every member of the Elf Tribe cheered. Yes, they had witnessed the unbelievable. To the Elf Tribe, this also meant that there would be unbelievable benefits that came with the Ancient Tree of Life's evolution.

The evolution of the Ancient Tree of Life meant that it would be much easier for the Elf Tribe to survive and pass on their traditions to the future generations. This also meant that the Elf Tribe would grow even stronger.

Chapter 787: Mindfulness, Sharing Lives (2)

In the Elf Tribe's history, the Ancient Tree of Life would usually evolve one time. The only Ancient Tree of Life that had gone through two evolutions had only appeared twice in the ancient times. These two times when the Ancient Tree of Life went through two evolutions made the Elf Tribe the ruler of the entire mainland. One could imagine how great the benefit of the Ancient Tree of Life's evolution was to the Elf Tribe.

The Ancient Tree of Life before them was one that was in the process of evolving for the second time. The humans were now in power. Even if the Ancient Tree of Life managed to complete its evolution, it was impossible for the Elf Tribe to defeat the humans and dominate the mainland once again. However, with the second evolution of the Ancient Tree of Life, at least they did not have to hide in this Sealed Land and could walk out of here with dignity. They would not have to fear the dwindling population in the tribe anymore.

This was historically meaningful to the Elf Tribe! Even an old fellow who had lived for more than 1,000 years old would cheer for this.

"Seems like there's no need for us to be worried about our safety anymore." Shangguan Xue'er who was with the Seraphic Blazeangel mumbled. She was the most knowledgeable when it came to the Elf Tribe's legacy. She was surprised to witness the second evolution of the elves' Ancient Tree of Life. Apart from being surprised, she was even more impressed. There was no doubt the Elf Tribe had no need to hide anymore, and they would definitely walk out of this land after the Ancient Tree of Life's evolution.

The five women appeared on the ground as the glow faded. Shangguan Xue'er walked to the Elf Tribe Elders after nodding to the four women. She said to the First Elder of the Elf Tribe, "I

think it has been proven that we've no evil intentions. The second evolution means that Your Majesty, The Queen, is also evolving. Instead of saying the Elven Queen is in danger, it's safe to say that the Elven Queen's current condition is better than when she left. Am I right?"

The First Elder of the Elf Tribe had gotten his emotion under control. He nodded as he listened to what Shangguan Xue'er was saying. "Yes, yes. Since the Ancient Tree of Life has evolved, the Queen isn't in any danger. I would like to apologize for my reckless behavior earlier. Please stay for now. Perhaps all of you will be the Elf Tribe's guests of honor when the Queen returns."

It seemed like the First Elder had figured out that the evolution of the Ancient Tree of Life was related to Zhou Weiqing. Otherwise, why would it evolve when Zhou Weiqing had only gone out for a day while the queen had been at the Heavenly God Tier for hundreds of years yet nothing had happened? However, no matter what and no matter how, it was an immeasurably fortunate incident for the Elf Tribe! There was nothing for them to worry about.

Even if the Elven Queen really died, as soon as the second evolution was complete, the Ancient Tree of Life would automatically elect a new Elven Queen. The Elf Tribe's Ancient Tree of Life's evolution continued as the process would not be completed overnight. The Elf Tribe's elders had no idea how long it would take for the process to be completed. The only thing that they could do was wait, and they waited in excitement and joy.

Meanwhile, Zhou Weiqing stood guard on the other side of the Elven Queen in silence. Time continued passing by. Although Zhou Weiqing had been releasing his Saint Energy with the help of the Nebula Divine Territory, it was getting more and more difficult for him. Fortunately, there were changes in the Elven Queen after he inserted a certain amount of Saint Energy. There was a mysterious wave of energy that her body quietly emitted. She was absorbing

the external Life Energy without being affected by Zhou Weiqing's Nebula Divine Territory. Ever since then, her desire for Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy had lowered considerably, and it allowed Zhou Weiqing to continue holding on.

In the beginning, Zhou Weiqing's intention was purely to rescue the Elven Queen. Later, he thought he might as well cultivate. Ever since he had broken through to the Heavenly King Tier, Zhou Weiqing's cultivation base had improved by leaps and bounds like it was sitting in a rocket. Within a couple of months, he had arrived at the Upper Level of Heavenly Emperor Tier. Although he had completed another round of evolution on his body, and the upgrade was not disadvantageous to his body, he would only be able to utilize the power when he had completely integrated the powerful abilities. Zhou Weiqing still had many things that he had to do so he took the advantage to cultivate.

The continuous release and absorption of Saint Energy allowed Zhou Weiqing to feel the changes in Saint Energy and the help that the Nebula Divine Territory provided to him. It gave him great benefits in terms upgrading his cultivation base and gave him a greater understanding of nature as well.

It was under such circumstances that Zhou Weiqing and the Elven Queen managed to form a kind of circulation cycle between the both of them. He had begun cultivating and did not notice that the Starcrux Saint Nucleus Core that was on his chest was now connected to the Life Core that was on the Elven Queen's chest. As time went by and the cycle became more frequent, the emerald-like energy glow that was connected to each other had materialized without them knowing.

The Life Energy that the Elven Queen had been releasing was cleansing Zhou Weiqing's body, and it removed the remaining impurities in his body. It could be said that the purity of Zhou Weiqing's body was inching closer toward that of the Elven Queen. With that, it could be considered that what he had sacrificed was

given back to him.

As a faint glow sparkled, Zhou Weiqing revealed a joyous smile on his face. He had no idea how long had passed but he could clearly sense the Elven Queen's heartbeat was getting stronger. He could even feel that the Elven Queen was regaining her consciousness. Zhou Weiqing had no idea how he could feel it so clearly. He felt that his heartbeat was in-sync with the rhythm of the Elven Queen's heartbeat.

As Zhou Weiqing opened his eyes slowly, the Saint Energy stopped releasing on its own accord. At the same time, the Elven Queen opened her eyes slowly in confusion. The both of them woke up at the same time, and they looked into each other's eyes. The Elven Queen was stunned when she looked at Zhou Weiqing and felt the tremendous change in her body. Zhou Weiqing could also feel the intense emotional change that she was experiencing.

There were feelings of confusion and shyness but the feelings of joy and excitement were more prominent in her emotions. He even sensed Life Core Evolution in the Elven Queen's consciousness.

'What's happening? How do I know what she's thinking about?' Zhou Weiqing looked at the Elven Queen in shock. A hint of happiness slowly appeared in the Elven Queen's eyes as she looked at him.

She was stunned like Zhou Weiqing. However, the way the Elven Queen looked at him was odd because she could also hear Zhou Weiqing's thoughts. The only thought that Zhou Weiqing and the Elven Queen had at the moment was, 'This is impossible.'

However, the truth was right before their eyes. It only took Zhou Weiqing a short while to snap out of his shock. He thought that this should not have happened, and he wanted to kiss the Elven Queen just to experiment.

Suddenly, the Elven Queen blushed as she looked up at Zhou Weiqing. She did not have any intention to reject him so she

slowly stood up and walked towards him. Zhou Weiqing could clearly feel the shyness and her desire and passion towards him.

'She's not rejecting me, why?' He thought to himself.

In the next second, the Elven Queen appeared before him. She lifted her head and extended her fair hands. She then wrapped her arms around Zhou Weiqing's neck. With her cold, moist and delicate lips that were filled with Life Energy, she kissed Zhou Weiqing's lips.

Bam —

The same sense of shock appeared in their heads at the same time. At that moment, they felt an intense jolt in their hearts and a feeling like they were both merged into a single entity. It made them feel like they had the ability to control each other.

The kiss was long. From the outside, one could see clearly that a rich golden glow had enveloped the both of them. A materialized glow came out of the Starcrux Saint Nucleus Core and the Life Core on their chests, and it connected the both of them together. Without knowing how long had passed, Zhou Weiqing and the Elven Queen opened their eyes at the same time in confusion. They looked into each others' eyes as they let go of their lips. They had a hint of surprise, joy and mostly disbelief in their eyes.

"Why is this happening?" They said at the same time.

"You go first." They said at the same time again.

"I don't know." They were still talking at the same time. They were stunned that they said the same thing at the same time three times consecutively. They were speechless as they hugged each other. Both Zhou Weiqing and the Elven Queen could not imagine that such a thing was happening to them as they looked at each other. Zhou Weiqing swore that even though he was always promiscuous and sleazy, he had never had any dirty thoughts towards the Elven Queen that was currently in his arms!

Ever since he had sex with Dongfang Hanyue on the Mysterious Heavenly Mainland, he had decided to behave himself so that he would not disappoint his wives. Most importantly, he was afraid that he would lose them due to his womanizing behavior. However, what was happening now was beyond his understanding.

A while later, the Elven Queen snapped out of it. Just like how there were no dirty thoughts in Zhou Weiqing's head, there were none in hers as well. She had no idea what a relationship between a man and woman was because her heart was pure without any impurities. She only felt shyness as she looked at Zhou Weiqing who was standing before her.

She mumbled as she thought to herself shyly, "Could, could this be a spiritual connection, Life Sharing?"

Zhou Weiqing could not help but ask, "What's a spiritual connection, Life Sharing?"

Chapter 788: Mindfulness, Sharing Lives (3)

The Elven Queen frowned and said, "It's just like the connection I have with the Ancient Tree of Life. With this connection, we can say that there's a magical resonance in the Life Energy between us. In a certain way, we're like a single entity. It allows us to feel the spiritual waves between us within a certain distance."

Zhou Weiqing was relieved to hear that the connection was only within a certain distance. It was fine as long as they could not sense each other at any time or anywhere. Otherwise, that would be rather awkward. The Elven Queen then proceeded to say, "Our lives are merged into one across time, space, and any form. That being said, unless both of us die at the same time or the shared Life Energy between us is drained, neither one of us will die."

Because they were connected by spirit, Zhou Weiqing knew very well that the Elven Queen was not kidding. His mouth was wide open in surprise as he looked at her exquisite and flawless face. Was it a good or bad thing to be sharing lives, and to be spiritually connected to the Elven Queen? On the surface, it was clearly a great thing. The Elf Tribe originally possessed strong and powerful Life Energy. The abundant Life Energy was a basic guarantee of their survival. Sharing lives with the Elven Queen who was a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse would mean that it would be difficult for Zhou Weiqing to die even if he wanted to.

From another perspective, this relationship was akin to something that tied Zhou Weiqing with the Elf Tribe. With that, he would be duty bound and should a crisis befall the Elf Tribe, he would have to do everything in his power to rescue them with no question asked. Otherwise, if the Elven Queen's Life Energy was drained from the enemy's attack, Zhou Weiqing's Life Energy would be drained as well. Although the possibility of something like this happening was unlikely, it would be almost fatal if it did happen.

Since Zhou Weiqing was thinking that, the Elven Queen naturally had the same thoughts as well. Her expression became extremely complicated as she looked at Zhou Weiqing. She had never thought that she would have such a complicated relationship with a human in her life. A while later, Zhou Weiqing finally recovered from the shock and mumbled as he looked at the Elven Queen, "Could it be possible that this happened because you were absorbing my Saint Energy while I was absorbing your Life Energy during the energy exchange?"

The Elven Queen looked at Zhou Weiqing and frowned, "It seems like you're averse to this?"

"Ah... No, it's not that." Zhou Weiqing explained immediately, "It's just too shocking. Your Majesty, what ability did you use to rescue me? How did you weaken yourself so much? To be honest, there shouldn't be any problem with my recovery with my Saint Energy."

The Elven Queen's expression dimmed when she heard him say that. She let go of Zhou Weiqing's hands that were hugging her and pushed him away gently. "I'm sorry, I really didn't know that you did that to save my child. I'm really sorry. I didn't intend to hurt you."

Although the matter had passed, and the both of them were safe, the Elven Queen was filled with guilt. Zhou Weiqing was almost killed by her slap that carried her full force behind it due to her rage. In the end, he only did that to save her daughter. Nobody would be able to accept such a mistake without feeling any guilt.

Zhou Weiqing smiled in a carefree manner and said, "I figured you'd definitely attack me out of anger when I released Saint Energy into your daughter's body. I was 80% confident that your attack would at the most injure me badly and it won't be fatal. My skin's so thick."

The Elven Queen was stunned because she could feel what Zhou

Weiqing was feeling. She realized immediately that he really did not mind. Such open-mindedness impressed her, and she said softly, "Since you figured that I might attack you, why didn't you hint me before you made a move?"

Zhou Weiqing said helplessly, "I can't do that! At that moment, that person was extremely panicked. Moreover, he's a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse. He would've noticed the slightest changes in our expressions. Your beloved daughter that was in his hands was too weak. I couldn't take the risk so I had to personally take the hit. If I could deceive you, I could definitely deceive that person. However, you should really thank me for your child. The Saint Energy that I inserted into her body is even purer than the one that I used to rescue you. It took almost all of my Saint Energy otherwise I wouldn't be hurt so bad if I had the Saint Energy to protect myself."

"Thank you." The Elven Queen said softly. She was not sure of the reason but she did not dare to look Zhou Weiqing in the eyes.

Fortunately, Little Fatty Zhou was much more proper than he used to be. He did not take the advantage to flirt with the Elven Queen, and he comforted her instead, "It's over now. You don't have to take this personally. I guess it's fate that we have such a connection. I can feel that your body has changed in certain ways and it's just beginning to break through the surface. Try to feel the changes now. The effect will be the best if you're able to feel it right now. Let's head back to your Elf Tribe after this. I've no idea how long the cultivation this time took. Your people must be worried."

Zhou Weiqing was worried when he thought about his wives who were still in the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land. It must have been some time since the both of them cultivated here, he was not sure if the Elf Tribe people caused any harm to his lovers. The Elven Queen sensed Zhou Weiqing's concern immediately and shook her head lightly at him, "Don't worry, that won't happen. My evolution this

time is unprecedented. Actually, you're not the only one that I'm spiritually connected and share lives with."

"Hmm?" Zhou Weiqing could sense the Elven Queen's thoughts, and he looked at her in shock. "The Ancient Tree of Life? The Ancient Tree of Life is also sharing lives with you?"

The Elven Queen nodded. She looked at Zhou Weiqing as a look of intense gratitude appeared in her eyes. "With your help, both I and the ancient tree of the Elves evolved at the same time. My Natural Energy and the original Life Energy have evolved into Life Saint Energy. That's the energy of the Elven Heart that I used to heal you earlier. All of the former Elven Queens in the Elf Tribe could only release Life Saint Energy using the Life Heart. However, now that my Life Core has evolved into the Saint Life Core, the Ancient Tree of Life has evolved following my evolution. The benefits from the evolution of the Ancient Tree of Life are indescribable to the Elf Tribe. Within a short period of time, our people will have improvements in their abilities from the Ancient Tree of Life. It's you who gave us all this. Thank you, Weiqing. I would like to thank you on behalf of the Elf Tribe."

The Elven Queen performed a kneeling ceremony that the Elf Tribe would only perform to the most honorable guest as she spoke. She closed the distance between them slightly and used the tip of her ear to touch Zhou Weiqing's face. Even though it was just a touch, the Elven Queen's ears turned red in an instant. The pointy ears were extra cute like that. Zhou Weiqing had no idea that the most sensitive part for the Elves were their ears. The act of using their ears to touch another person signified that they were willing to give their lives to that person. Safe to say, it was the most honorable ceremony, disregarding the fact that it was the ruler of the Elf Tribe who performed such a ceremony for him.

Zhou Weiqing gave her a gentle hug. As the Elven Queen looked up, she placed her right hand before Zhou Weiqing and opened her hand. There was a tiny bottle containing her blood within her

palm.

"This was what you wanted. Take it." The Elven Queen passed the tiny green bottle to Zhou Weiqing. The bottle contained much more than just three drops of the Elven Queen's blood. Zhou Weiqing did not show any modesty in front of the Elven Queen and put it away in his Sumeru Ring.

The Elven Queen sat down legs crossed. Just like what Zhou Weiqing had said, she needed to adapt to the changes in her body, and it was best for her to do it right now. As the Elven Queen was adapting to the changes of the Life Energy in her body, Zhou Weiqing was doing the same. After the cultivation, his body that had just evolved and his cultivation base were perfectly integrated. The sky was spinning with nebula. Zhou Weiqing no longer felt small under the nebula like he used to. On the contrary, he felt like the heavens, the earth, and the dazzling starry sky were all within his control.

As he waved both of his hands lightly, two glows that were not far away faded. With Zhou Weiqing's protection, the Demonic Dragon Lady and the Hell's Angel were no longer needed. He had also dismissed his Nebula Divine Territory at the same time. Just a mere Divine Thought allowed him to monitor everything that was within 100 kilometers. The Spatial Travel earlier had brought Zhou Weiqing and the Elven Queen hundreds of kilometers away from the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land. His current cultivation base did not allow him to sense so far away.

The Elven Queen's cultivation did not take too long. She opened her eyes slowly four hours later. As she opened her eyes, she was surprised by her cultivation and state of mind.

"Weiqing." She looked up at Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing chuckled and said, "If you're going to thank me, you don't have to. I know exactly what you're feeling right now. Let's head back now."

"Alright." The Elven Queen stood up slowly. She had a tremendously magical feeling in her heart at that moment. Although she was spiritually connected and shared her life with the Ancient Tree of Life, it was not human after all even though it had its wisdom! It was not a living man like Zhou Weiqing. It was a magical feeling having her spirit connected to a man. It was a feeling that she could not describe. All she felt was that it seemed like there was no more loneliness in her life. Instead, it was replaced with a unique satisfaction.

Chapter 789: The Evolved Ancient Tree of Life (1)

Compared to the strange feeling that the Elven Queen was having, Zhou Weiqing was feeling very baffled. Because of the spiritual connection between them, he did not dare to have any filthy, lusty thoughts at all. For someone as wretched as him, it was undoubtedly a painful torment.

Naturally, in addition to this torture, he also felt a bit of triumph in his heart. After all, the Elven Queen was sharing a life with him for goodness sake! The alliance between them now could be described to be rock solid. No matter how close the Heaven's Expanse Palace was with the Elf Tribe, it looked like his own Peerless Sect was about to replace the Heaven's Expanse Palace and become good friend with the Elf Tribe, forming a relationship that more tightly knitted.

Two figures rose to the sky. The next moment, Zhou Weiqing took the queen's hand and as a silver light flashed, the two of them faded into the sky.

Now that they had this spiritual connection between them, he could clearly pinpoint the location of the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land with the help of the Elven Queen. After all, what was faster than Spatial Travel? Even though he would have to consume a higher amount of Saint Energy, he did not really mind much as he was too anxious to see all his loved ones. Not only that, now that his cultivation base had once again elevated, he really did not care about the amount of energy consumed at all.

This time, the Spatial Travel that he used was completely different from the one that he unleashed when they were chasing the enemy previously. Zhou Weiqing could clearly feel the tremendous reduction in his Saint Energy consumption now. More amazingly, maybe due to the fact that he was holding the Elven

Queen's hand and how they had a spiritual connection now, the Elven Queen was actually sharing the Saint Energy consumption load with him. In other words, they could now go to a much farther distance with their Spatial Travel, something that not even a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse could do.

Right now, the Elven Queen's heart seemed to have calmed down a little. In their peculiar Spatial Travel, she never once had her heart changed at all. Zhou Weiqing also tried to restrain his thought as best as he could. Not daring to have any dirty thoughts, the Elven Queen was merely a friend in his mind.

A silver light flickered and when the two reappeared again, they had already returned to the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land. With the Elven Queen by his side and his own Saint Energy in his body, the sealing effect of the Sealed Land did not impact him at all.

The moment they stepped foot again in the Sealed Land, Zhou Weiqing and the Elven Queen could clearly feel the changes to this place. Originally, the Sealed Land was already full of vigor but at this moment, they were astonished to find that the vitality here was so dense to the point that it was almost visible to the naked eye. Just taking several deep breaths was already more than enough to make one's vitality palpitate with eagerness. The natural elements here were so rich that it even automatically elicited a faint green light from the Elven Queen. Due to the fact that Zhou Weiqing was now sharing a life with her, he could clearly feel the vitality that was increasing at a breakneck speed in her body. The speed was so terribly fast that it could only be described as horrifying. Even his own vitality was elevated along with it.

What a wonderful feeling this was! Now that they were already the ultimate powerhouses in this world now, an increase in their vitality might not be too much help towards their cultivation bases. However, it still brought along with it amazing benefits to their physical strength. On top of that, the Elven Queen could now

absorb the natural elements here directly. Zhou Weiqing was absolutely certain that the Elven Queen was now the most invincible individual on the entire mainland. Unless he could increase his own cultivation base to the Heavenly God Tier and use his Saint Energy to mobilize the natural elements here, there was no way for him to even compete with her at all.

Levitating in mid-air, the Elven Queen fixed her gaze in a single direction. She appeared to be utterly stunned as her delicate body started to tremble ever so slightly.

When they had returned to the Elf Tribe, Zhou Weiqing originally wanted to let go of her hand to prevent the other Elves from misunderstanding. To his surprise, the Elven Queen actually held on to his hand tighter, refusing to even let go.

Her little hands were a little cold. Still, he could clearly feel the excitement in her heart from the spiritual connection between them.

After being stunned for about five minutes, the Elven Queen slowly regained her senses. Her heart started to flutter at once.

"Well, there's really no need to," Sensing the thoughts in her, Zhou Weiqing could not help but say.

The Elven Queen turned around to look at him. Both her eyes and thoughts were clear and firm as she made her decision. Not long later, her body gave off a layer of green light that was crystal clear. The light was filled with radiance, made of vitality and endless breaths of life as well as a

Not long after that, a layer of rich green light that was as clear as crystal was exuded from her body. Glorious light shot out to the surroundings from the layers of light; it was full of endless life and a verdant allure. As the green light rose to the skies, Zhou Weiqing could clearly feel the light trembling throughout the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land. Another azure green light could be seen soaring up to the sky as well in the distance.

This time, it was the Elven Queen's turn to lead Zhou Weiqing. Under the rich pulsating light of the Life Energy, she took a step out into the void. At once, everything turned into a blur and he was able to feel the intensity of the fluctuations in the surrounding life energy through his senses. Immediately, the enormous amount of Life Energy transformed into a bridge and transported them to another place.

At the next moment, Zhou Weiqing's gaze was immediately attracted by the amazing before him.

It was a huge tree that he had never seen before. Even the size of the giant trees in the Luster Spatial Realm paled in comparison. This tree before him was at least 300 feet high and had an azure green trunk as if it was carved out of emerald. Still, how could there possibly be such a huge piece of emerald in this world?

The huge tree canopy spread through the air like a huge platform. At first glance, one could clearly see the clear green fog that was gleaming with steam on top. That was the essence of the Life Energy. One could not help but wonder how much vitality it had to have in order to cope with such a monstrous amount of Life Energy!

The size of the canopy itself was so massive that it was almost the same size as the Zhongtian Public Square in the Heaven's Expanse Palace's. Every leaf and branch appeared to be so crystal-clear and transparent and the branches hung low all over the place like a waterfall. The rich breath of life made the entire place look as if one was in a dream. Such a wonderful scene was undoubtedly something that Zhou Weiqing would never come across again.

The Elven Queen who was holding Zhou Weiqing's hand at the moment suddenly turned completely transparent. The azure green radiating from her body also gradually transformed to a peculiar golden color. Though it was still a golden light, it was not the energy ripple that she once exuded. Instead, it was a vigorous vitality that was even more massive than what the gigantic tree

before them had.

Facing the gigantic tree in front of her, tears streamed down the Elven Queen's face as she muttered, "I-It's evolved! Finally! It's really evolved now! It's been so long that we Elves have lived in this Sealed Land, trembling in fear every single day for fear that this Ancient Tree of Life would wilt and die at any time. Weiqing, do you know that the Ancient Tree of Life's evolution means that we Elves have regained the possibility of dominating the mainland once again? With the enormous vitality of the Ancient Tree of Life, it'll be able to envelop at least a third of the Boundless Mainland once we've broken the seal. By that time, the Elven warriors would be almost invincible in that world. The Ancient Tree of Life's evolution would also increase our life extension threefold. It would only take a hundred years at most for us to regain the power to strive for hegemony and unify the entire mainland."

Zhou Weiqing did not say anything but he knew that what the Elven Queen said was possible. The vitality coming from the Ancient Tree of Life in front of him now was absolutely horrifying; so terrible that it could no longer be judged or measured at all. It was not an exaggeration when she said that its breath of life could cover a third of the mainland. Heck, that remark was an understatement in itself.

If the vitality of the Elven Ancient Tree of Life covered the entire mainland, this would mean that the Elven Warriors would come to possess extremely powerful combat abilities under its cover, making it very hard to kill them. Coupled with the fact that the Elven Queen would be almost invincible under the envelopment of the Ancient Tree of Life's vitality, it was not impossible for them to end up ruling the entire mainland. She had even given a duration of a hundred years for them to accumulate enough vitality to take over the mainland.

Zhou Weiqing could feel chills running down his spine. If all of this was to become a reality, the Elves would most likely cause

massive bloodshed in the near future. After all, it was all due to the rise of mankind that had caused them to imprison themselves in the Sealed Land in the first place. There was no doubt that the Elves had a bad impression toward the human race. On top of that, he was the also initiator of the events that had yet to come. Had he not infused his Saint Energy into the Elven Queen to rescue her in the first place, this Ancient Tree of Life would most probably be unable to complete its evolution.

The Elven Queen turned her head and looked at Zhou Weiqing. At that moment, he was astonished to find that he could not read her emotions at all.

Gently shaking her head, a warm smile appeared on her delicate face, "Do you know that after the Ancient Tree of Life has evolved, it has now become sentient. In certain ways, it's actually my body and I'm its heart. Because of this, it no longer needs to root itself in a solitary place any longer. It now can move as freely as it likes."

The moment he heard what she said, Zhou Weiqing could no longer keep his cool. With eyes full of bewilderment, he looked at her as he shouted out loud, "Your Majesty! You must think twice!"

Being able to move anywhere meant that the Ancient Tree of Life's tremendous vitality could shroud any corner of the mainland at its whim! The Elves already commanded horrifying strength and within a few years, a large number of Elven powerhouses would be produced. By that time, the Elves would potentially become a terrible nightmare for the humans.

At once, as if acting as a backdrop for the words uttered by the Elven Queen, a huge number of Elves flew towards them from every directions and innumerable places. A group of Elves had also gathered not far behind Zhou Weiqing and the Elven Queen. Yet, seeing the rich golden light emanating from her body, they did not dare to come nearer for fear of disrupting them. They only kneeled and bowed close to the ground respectfully from afar.

Chapter 790: The Evolved Ancient Tree of Life (2)

Seeing the bewildered look on Zhou Weiqing's face and the deep worries in his eyes, a warm smile appeared on the Elven Queen's delicate face, "Don't worry, I'm just stating the possibilities. In reality, we Elves will never do that. I'll even control the Ancient Tree of Life's release of the vitality so as to prevent my people from becoming too powerful. Being too powerful would only bring on a bigger ambition and that is very likely to bring about a devastating disaster to our tribe."

"Why?" Puzzled, Zhou Weiqing asked.

"It's because of you." The Elven Queen replied without hesitation. "If you've never existed and the Ancient Tree of Life had still evolved, I'd probably do as I've said. I believe that I would stand a great chance of succeeding as well. However, it's exactly because of you that I will not do just that. Be it the debt of gratitude that we owe to you, I'd only bring calamity to my own tribe if I were to do as such."

"We Elves have lived here for too long now and have long accustomed to the peace and comfort here. We don't like killing and we're even less willing to be involved in any disputes. Even if the Elven Ancient Tree has already evolved, things will still remain the same. On top of that, though we used to hate human beings a lot, but isn't this evolution of the Ancient Tree brought upon by humankind? How can we possibly repay your kindness with revenge? You're a great benefactor of the Elf Tribe - no matter where and when. Besides, I can see your future and I saw that it was you who would be standing on the top of this world. Don't forget that the Life Saint Energy that I possess now and the Ancient Tree of Life's evolution were all made possible by you alone. For this reason, there is nothing that you need to be worried

about at all. In fact, it is us Elves that need to be worried instead. The creation of life is just a small part of creating the world. Though this part is very important, it's still unable to be compared to the true Creation Energy. Do you understand?"

As soon as she arrived, the Queen's heart that was seemingly closed had opened up again, allowing Zhou Weiqing to feel the changes of emotions in her heart.

Looking at the Elven Queen, Zhou Weiqing let out a smile as well, "At first, I thought you rarely come into contact with the outside world and that your thoughts would be as simple as you are. Despite my initial impression toward you - which still remains the same - I find you to be very smart. I believe that the choices you make will be the most ideal of all. I too, despise war just as much. As long as you do not initiate a war against us, we, the Peerless Sect, are willing to be the allies of the Elves. Isn't your Ancient Tree of Life able to move now? If you're willing, you can migrate to our Heavenly Bow Empire. Now that it has evolved, I believe that be it you or I, we've no idea how long our lifespan will be. Let us guard the peace that we love together, shall we?"

The Elven Queen narrowed her eyes at him, "Somehow, I feel that your intention is not as simple as it appears to be."

Zhou Weiqing chuckled, "Humans are all very selfish. The reason I infused my Saint Energy to you is because you sacrificed your precious Elven Heart to save me, to the point that you've become weak as a result. Just count this as my debt you, but I did not owe anything to your Ancient Tree of Life. It has drained a lot from my body and had even almost squeezed me entirely dry. Having it migrated over would be a great repayment for me."

After a moment of silence, the Elven Queen nodded slightly, "Alright, I promise you."

Still staring at her, a surprised look could be seen on Zhou Weiqing's face. In truth, he was simply joking and did not really

mean what he said. He did not expect the Elven Queen to agree to it at all. Yet, it had never crossed his mind that not only had she agreed to it, she even did it very quickly. It looked as if she did not even have the intention to discuss this matter with the tribe Elders first.

Listening to the thoughts in his mind, the Elven Queen let out a faint smile, "What's there to discuss anymore? Now that the Ancient Tree of Life has evolved, nobody in the tribe would dare to go against my wishes. Not only that, I also believe that once it has migrated to your country, there would be only benefits and no disadvantages for us Elves. I'm a very far-sighted person - do I make myself clear?"

Looking at the cheeky smile on the Queen's face, a warm feeling resonated around Zhou Weiqing's heart. Evil thoughts almost formed in his mind. Fortunately, he responded in a timely manner and quickly suppressed before it even came to fruition. However, his heart began to burn now. What would it mean if the Elf's Sealed Land had migrated to the Heavenly Bow Empire?

Putting the Elf's strength aside, just the slight leaking of the Ancient Tree of Life's immense vitality would be more than enough for the people of the Heavenly Bow Empire to be well-fed and live in peace.

"Migrating the Ancient Tree of Life is not difficult. What's difficult is migrating the entire Sealed Land that it's enrooted in. We'd need a little more time to be able to do that. It's not possible for us to do it right away," the Elven Queen explained to Zhou Weiqing.

He replied, "It's alright, there's no need to rush. There's plenty of time anyway; I can certainly wait."

"Weiqing!" Right at this moment, a few delighted cries sounded in the air. Zhou Weiqing turned around and at once, he saw the three Shangguan sisters, Tian'er and Little Witch rushing over

toward him.

The Elves did not dare to come closer but these girls did not care at all. Even the Elven Elders would not stop them as well. Although the Elven Queen had not told them about the things that they had gone through during this trip yet, the mere fact that she was still holding on to Zhou Weiqing's hand had already spoken for itself.

Shangguan Xue'er and the other four girls were still very excited when they came to Zhou Weiqing, but the moment they saw him and the Elven Queen holding hands, everyone could not help but widen their eyes in surprise. All five pairs of eyes landed on the joint hands, as they stared at them intensely.

Under normal circumstances, any girl would not hesitate to give her partner a tight slap on the face or show any other strong negative emotions like anger or jealousy, if she were to see her husband holding another girl's hand. However, when the girls - who were led by Shangguan Xue'er and Tian'er - spotted it, the first emotion that they felt was actually admiration.

That's right - admiration!

Right now, all five girls had more or less the same thoughts. Coupled with Zhou Weiqing's remarkable past achievements, they could not help but wonder to themselves - what was there that Little Fatty could not do? Even the Elven Queen had caved in, in just a month! Indeed, it had already been one month since the two of them left to give chase to the enemy.

Zhou Weiqing had an awkward expression on his face now. After all, he did not know what they were thinking at the moment. But, he was really innocent! This time, having another affair did not cross his mind at all. Yet, the Elven Queen still clung to his hand tightly and there was nothing he could do, as he could not possibly pull his hand away abruptly.

The Elven Queen smiled and nodded to the five girls before she said, "Don't think too much. There's no underlying meaning to

this. Please hold on for a while longer."

While she spoke, she flew up to the sky still clutching Zhou Weiqing. Prior to this, it had been him, who brought her back using Spatial Travel, so he did not notice the changes on the Elven Queen at all. Now that she brought him flying, he was astonished to find that the Elven Queen's body seemed to be slightly taller than before, by at least half a head. What was even more amazing was the fact that the two invisible wings behind her turned into three pairs instead. With a faint golden light, she now looked extremely elegant and noble, with a supreme majestic aura around her. Of course, this aura was being exuded outwards toward other people and Zhou Weiqing could only feel a faint hint of it. Right now, he could clearly feel her gentleness towards him.

Before this, most of the Elves only saw the Elven Queen and Zhou Weiqing returning to the land; they did not see that they were both actually holding each other's hands. At this moment, when the Elven Queen clung onto Zhou Weiqing's hand in mid-air, each and every one of the Elf Tribe members could not help but be dumbfounded with astonishment.

In reality, the Elven Queen was the supreme being of the Elf Tribe. At the same time, she was also the purest representative of the tribe. Never mind touching a male human being, even a male Elf had absolutely no right to touch her body at all. Yet, right now, seeing her holding Zhou Weiqing's hand was absolutely something they could not fathom.

The twelve Elven Elders who were standing at the front did not have to kneel down in respect. Exchanging glances with each other, they were stunned to the point that they could not even utter a single word. It was apparent to them that the Elven Queen was holding Zhou Weiqing's hand at her own will. What was more important was that this Ancient Tree of Life's evolution had brought them an abundance of happiness over the past month. Otherwise, the Elders might have long gone berserk upon seeing

such a scene.

As the Elven Queen had explained, the Ancient Tree of Life's evolution meant that her position in the Elf Tribe had elevated and became more well-respected. Therefore, nobody dared to go against the Elven Queen's prestige. All they did was to wait patiently for her orders.

With her right hand holding onto Zhou Weiqing's hand, the Elven Queen lifted her left hand gradually. At once, the rich golden Life Energy around her body started to fluctuate without warning. As her left hand flicked outwards, a layer of faint golden light exuded and turned into a faint gold halo as it slowly spread out to its surroundings.

At this point, at least several thousands of Elves had already gathered here. Under the expansion of the golden halo, the Elves were slowly shrouded by it. The moment the breath of life - which was brimming with creativity - touched the Elves, each of them could clearly feel their already abundant vitality continuing to elevate and improve.

"Long live Your Majesty!" A cheering sound erupted like a tidal wave. Even the twelve Elven Elders automatically kneeled down when they felt the rich spread of Life Saint Energy. As for the Elders, they had the most profound understanding of the type of energy that the Elven Queen was releasing now. This was the Life Saint Energy that one could only possess if you release the Elven Heart! Yet, right now, it was actually being released with ease by the Elven Queen.

Chapter 791: The Evolved Ancient Tree of Life (3)

The Ancient Tree of Life's evolution had an unusual significance towards the Elves. Heck, it could even drive the Elven Queen to experience a quantum leap in her power and strength. At this moment, these Elders had no idea how powerful the Elven Queen was now.

"Rise, my people," the Elven Queen's soft voice resonated through the air, allowing every Elf to hear her very clearly. Her soft, pleasant voice elicited a willing submissiveness from all the Elves.

No Elves dared to disobey her command; all of them rose at once.

The Elven Queen looked at her people with gentleness in her eyes, the way a mother would look at her children. The golden light on her body slowly became more intense and even Zhou Weiqing who was standing by her side was also brimming with this rich golden layer.

"My people, I believe you've all witnessed this miracle with your own eyes. Yes, that's right! Our Elven Ancient Tree of Life had finally evolved again after thousands of years. This was definitely a God-like spectacle for us Elves.

With that simple sentence alone, the Elven Queen instantly evoked the emotions of all the other Elves. In an instance, strong cheers burst out amongst the people. Strong excitement could be seen in their eyes as all of them had their gazes fixed on her. Zhou Weiqing could even feel the strong faith displayed by the Elven people. It was apparent that all of them were concentrating on the Elven Queen now.

The Elven Queen looked at her excited people with a smile on her face. After a long while, she slowly lifted her left hand as she gestured to stop. No matter how many Elves were present, all the

voices immediately died down upon her mere gesture.

"I think all of us must be very curious about what had happened when I was gone and the reasons behind the Ancient Tree of Life's evolution. I'll tell you now but before that, let me introduce someone to you. The human being that is standing beside me right now; he is Zhou Weiqing, the greatest Heavenly Jewel Master amongst the humans of the future."

While she was uttering these words, the Elven Queen turned her attention towards Zhou Weiqing and the excited look in the Elves' eyes immediately turned to a look of shock. At once, all their gazes landed on him.

Zhou Weiqing bowed his head slightly to acknowledge the Elves. As he shared a spiritual connection with the Elven Queen, he was very clear about what she was going to do next. So as all sorts of feelings welled up in his heart; he then continued to follow her lead.

The Elven Queen continued, "I'm sure everybody must be wondering why I am holding on to a male human's hand now. It's all thanks to him that our Ancient Tree of Life could finally evolve. It was also he, who helped rescue my daughter as well. He's a great benefactor of us Elves and he'll forever be the most precious ally of our tribe!"

Having heard the Elven Queen's words, the expressions on all of the Elves changed at once. The look that they gave him had also changed as well.

Was it really this human being who helped the Ancient Tree of Life evolve? Disbelief initially filled their minds, but immediately, their reasoning reminded them that the Elven Queen would never play a fool.

The Elven Queen added, "Though it may be hard for all of you to believe what I've just said, I have to tell you that this is indeed a fact. That fateful day, it was Zhou Weiqing who chased the enemy

who kidnapped my daughter and defeated him. When the enemy took the princess hostage, he did not mind being misunderstood by me and still gave his best to protect our little princess. Yet, due to my misunderstanding, I've seriously injured him and though we had succeeded in killing the enemy - he was already dying at that point."

The moment they heard her words, a look of guilt could be seen on the twelve Elder's faces. These Elves were actually kind in nature. At that moment, they had kept Zhou Weiqing's women as their prisoners, yet, he still made such a huge sacrifice just to rescue the princess for their sake.

The Elven Queen continued to say, "We Elves will never repay kindness with revenge. How could I possibly watch the rescuer of my daughter die in front of me? At that moment, Weiqing's injury was very serious and was in great desperation - I had no choice but to use the Elven Heart."

As soon as these words left her mouth, all of the Elves were stunned with astonishment. This was because all of them knew what an Elven Heart meant to an Elf. At once, clamor burst out among the people.

"Quiet! Let Her Majesty finish her words!" The Elven First Elder exclaimed loudly without warning - a strong tyrannical aura spread out from him all at once. The Ancient Tree of Life's evolution and the Life Saint Energy that the Elven Queen had emitted told him that things were not as simple as it seemed.

The First Elder had a prestigious status among the Elves. Under his pressure, all the Elves quieted down again.

The Elven Queen seemed to have foreseen such a reaction to take place. She continued to appear calm and composed until the racket died down again before continuing to speak calmly, "You must have thought that I've sacrificed too much for him, am I right? However, I can assure you that what I've repaid is akin to a drop of

water in the vast sea, as compared to the things that he's done for all of us. Just the Ancient Tree of Life behind me alone is more than enough to prove my words."

"After Weiqing was saved by me, he found me to be in an extremely weak state and immediately, he used his Saint Energy to heal me at once. The Saint Energy is the most powerful attribute in the entire world and it possesses the power of creation, also known as the Genesis Energy. My life is connected to the Ancient Tree of Life; it was all because of Weiqing who had spared no effort in the Saint Energy infusion, that we finally have this evolution right in front of our eyes. I can tell you that I've already risen to become an empress and my Elven Heart can actually be used more than once. Not only that, the effects of the Elven Heart had completely been embedded in my body now. All of this has been made possible by Zhou Weiqing right here."

As she was speaking, the six transparent wings of the Elven Queen, no, the Elven Empress, was more visible now. All six had suddenly been magnified under the golden light, allowing her people to see them more clearly.

The six wings represented the fact that the Elven Queen had now successfully evolved into the Elven Empress. In the history of the Elf Tribe, it had already been several thousand years ago since they last saw the emergence of an Elven Empress. Not only did an Elven Empress need to achieve the Maximum Level of the Heavenly God Tier, it could only also be made possible if the Ancient Tree of Life had evolved.

An invisible majestic force radiated from the Elven Empress's body. The pressuring aura was so strong that all of the Elves knelt down to pay their respects once again.

"From now on, Zhou Weiqing's order is my order as well. As the ally of us Elves, he'll be able to use all the resources in the Elf Tribe from today onwards. Going against this order will be considered treason!"

"Yes, Your Majesty!"

It was not only the Elves that appeared to be astonished but even Zhou Weiqing's girls too, were taken aback by this announcement.

Although they had already guessed that Zhou Weiqing had managed to strike a relationship with the Elf tribe the moment they saw him and the Elven Empress holding hands, it had never occurred to them that the Elven Empress would exalt Zhou Weiqing on such a high pedestal. One could even say that his position was now equivalent to a King in the Elf Tribe. Just that single sentence uttered by the Elven Empress "all resources can be used by Zhou Weiqing" itself had already shaken them to the core. Of course, they also believed that there must be an affair between Zhou Weiqing and the Elven Empress. They would never believe that there was nothing going on between the two of them at all.

However, as Zhou Weiqing's women, they could not voice their displeasure at this moment, no matter how jealous and dissatisfied they felt. What they could only do were to throw daggers onto a certain somebody's back with their eyes.

At this moment, the Elven Queen finally released Zhou Weiqing's hand before holding out a hand to him, "Weiqing, please come to the Ancient Tree of Life for a visit with your wives. I think we still have matters on hand to talk about among us all."

Nodding his head, Zhou Weiqing replied, "Alright."

Under the leadership of the Elven Empress, he and the five girls entered directly into the Ancient Tree of Life's tree crown. As for the rest of the Elves, they seemed to be still rather dazed and had not recovered from their shock yet. Of course, they did not need to take long to regain their senses. Now that the Elven Queen had evolved into the Elven Empress, nobody dared to go against any decision or order that she had decreed.

...

A day later....

"Little Fatty Zhou, this is not your style at all! Is there really nothing between you and the Elven Empress?" Flying in mid-air, Shangguan Fei'er looked at Zhou Weiqing, who had a look of disbelief in her eyes.

After a day of having a secret meeting with the Elven Empress, they finally departed for their return journey. The day when the secret meeting had just begun, the Elven Empress could clearly feel Zhou Weiqing's awkwardness. Immediately, she proceeded to explain to the five girls that she was merely a friend and ally for Zhou Weiqing. She even made a promise that she would be willing to marry her daughter off to his son, if he had one in the future.

Perhaps the Elven Princess had absorbed Saint Energy that was too pure, so she still remained in a hibernation state. Under the shrouding of the Ancient Tree of Life's immense Life Energy, she was slowly taking in the Saint Energy. She would most likely experience a rapid growth, but to a human being, the long lifespan of an Elf was more than enough for her to wait until the day Zhou Weiqing's future son becomes an adult.

"There's really nothing going on! I'm an honest person, and didn't Her Majesty already explain to all of you?" Zhou Weiqing looked at the five girls pitifully.

However, even the most gentle Shangguan Bing'er, had her eyes full of contempt.

Shangguan Fei'er scoffed coldly, "Who knows if she was just deliberately covering it up for you? If you two are really not having an affair at all, why would she agree to move the entire Elf Tribe to our Heavenly Bow Empire so easily? She even..."

Zhou Weiqing was at a loss whether to cry or to laugh, "I'm really innocent! Darling Fei'er, I am really not having an affair this time! Did you realize that you've been interrogating me ever since we left the Elf Tribe? Please, drop this. I'm already contented enough

having the five of you accompanying me. I really don't want to bring any unnecessary trouble to myself!"

Little Witch had been staying close by his side this entire time as she needed Zhou Weiqing's guidance during the flight. With a chuckle, she asked, "Is that true? That's a f*cking Elven Empress, ya know? Even I can't help but feel proud if you have such an amazing partner. Are you sure you're really able to let her go?"

Chapter 792: The Eleventh Piece of the Ringless Ground Purging Set (1)

"I..." Under the burning scrutiny of the five women, Zhou Weiqing could only let out a dejected sigh, "Alright, I give up. Frankly, it's impossible for me to have absolutely no desire because I'm a man after all. However, the moment I thought of you all, I immediately kept my hands to myself. On top of that, the Elven Queen is the highest and purest being in the Elf Tribe. How could she possibly let me do anything to her? I swear to God, if I really did something to the Elven Queen, all of you will stop loving me. This is terrible enough... Right?"

The moment they heard him saying this, even Shangguan Fei'er who had been relentless in pursuing the issue, stopped the interrogation at once. She chuckled and said, "Alright then, we'll trust you this time. Since you're so well-behaved, I'll reward you when we go back."

Tian'er added nonchalantly by the side, "Yeah, I can prove that the relationship between him and the Elven Queen is indeed pure. Although she also received the infusion of Saint Energy from Weiqing, that kind of infusion feels different from the type of infusion that we received after we did that. The infusion is merely superficial. On top of that, Weiqing's scent is not on the Queen at all. Because Weiqing and I cultivated the Saint Energy together, I can feel all of this with my senses."

Stunned, Zhou Weiqing looked at her, "Oh, darling! Why didn't you tell them earlier?"

Tian'er blinked her eyes innocently as she said, "Well, they didn't ask me! Moreover, since you're such a playboy anyway, it's good if you're taught a lesson."

"You..." Zhou Weiqing was a little exasperated.

Tian'er instantly burst out laughing, "What? Do you want to hit me now? Come on then!" As she was saying these words, she even protruded her stomach towards Zhou Weiqing.

"Alright fine, you win!" Exasperated, he looked at the five girls who were smirking happily, "It looks like I only have hard days ahead of me now. It's fine, just keep on joining hands and bully me together. Watch out though, I might run away one day, you know."

"You dare?" The five girls said almost in unison.

Due to his cultivation base being elevated again, Zhou Weiqing's speed in returning to the Heavenly Bow Empire with his five girls was even faster than when they first came. In just a few days time, they had already returned to the Heavenly Bow City.

Long Shiya and Wu Yueyun were still in their closed-door cultivation with the help of Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy. Ming Yu, on the other hand, had already returned to the frontline long ago. In this period of time, the Baida Empire was extremely peaceful but even then, nobody dared to lower their guard at all. After all, even if the Heavenly Bow Empire had already conquered and annexed the Kalise Empire, it still could not be compared to other orthodox power empires like the Baida Empire.

The first thing Zhou Weiqing did was to pay a visit to both his godfather and real father. After he made sure that the Heavenly Bow Empire was safe, he proceeded to find Duan Tianlang.

Now that he had brought back their most important ingredient — the Elven Queen's Blood, there was no doubt that his next step was to forge the eleventh piece of the Ringless Ground Purging Set's Consolidated Equipment Scroll with Duan Tianlang. Zhou Weiqing had no idea how long it would take for them to complete it but one could easily imagine the difficulty it would bring forth.

"Junior Master, I'm back." He knocked on the door.

"Did you bring it back with you?" Duan Tianlang's eager voice

could be heard first before he appeared. The door opened and at once, his unshaven face appeared behind the door. The instance he saw Zhou Weiqing, he quickly pulled him into the room.

Zhou Weiqing chuckled, "Of course I've brought it back with me. You asked me to do it personally. How can I possibly fail the mission that you've given me? The Elf Tribe had even promised me that I have free access to their resources anytime I want from now on."

Duan Tianlang jeered at him, "Yeah, continue to brag, won't you? Hurry! Quickly show me that thing!" The second he heard Zhou Weiqing had brought back the Elven Blood, Duan Tianlang immediately became very excited. His eyes were lit up brightly as he extended both of his hands out.

Zhou Weiqing passed the Elven Blood to Duan Tianlang as he asked, "Junior Master, so how's the design blueprint now? And all the other materials as well?"

Duan Tianlang chuckled out loud, "Everything is ready. I'm only waiting for this baby that you brought back." Looking at the small green bottle that Zhou Weiqing passed to him, he turned and walked towards his work desk before pointing at the table in front of him.

Zhou Weiqing walked forward to have a look and sure enough, the blueprint laid on the table was different from the previous one that he saw. Although the original design was also almost perfect, there were some places where the details were unrefined. However, now the blueprint in front of him was much more refined and elaborate.

Usually, an ordinary person would be confused looking at such a complicated design, and they would barely be able to make out the lines on the blueprint. Yet, Zhou Weiqing was looking at it to the point that his eyes were shining with glee.

A solemn look could be seen on Duan Tianlang's face as he held

on tightly to the bottle that contained the Elven Queen's blood. "Weiqing, everything's ready now. The only thing lacking is the final forging process. I have confidence in my experience but my cultivation base is not good enough. I'll need to have a cultivation base at the Heavenly Emperor Tier and above if I want to forge the last piece of the eleven-piece legendary armor set's Consolidated Equipment Scroll. For this reason, I can only instruct from the side and you'll need to complete the final step by yourself. This is a very long process and no interruption is allowed in between. You must be prepared!"

Zhou Weiqing looked at Duan Tianlang and nodded his head earnestly, "Junior Master, rest assured, I can control Time Reversal and can correct my mistakes in the past. Not only that, my cultivation base is elevated again after my trip to the Elf Tribe's land. I think it's most probably around the Maximum-Level of the Heavenly Emperor Tier now. I've faith that I won't disappoint you. However, Junior Master, you must promise me something. Once we've completed the final piece of the Ringless Ground Purging Set, you must take good care of your body and give me a chance to be filial to you, okay?"

Duan Tianlang smiled, "You silly boy. Do you think that I really want to die? Moreover, other than making the Consolidated Equipment Scroll, I still have another wish you know."

"Oh? What's that?" Zhou Weiqing looked at him in surprise. In his eyes, other than making Consolidated Equipment Scrolls, Duan Tianlang did not seem to have any other hobby.

Duan Tianlang continued, "Well, the other wish of mine is to see you continue creating miracles."

Wham —

Instantly, a warm feeling showered Zhou Weiqing's body. Heat crept up in his eyes as tears threatened to fall down on the ground, "J-Junior Master..."

"Alright, get a grip on yourself. We're going to start now. Hand over the process of making the Consolidating Ink to me, and calm yourself down first. Make sure you adjust your body to its best state, alright?"

"Okay," Zhou Weiqing replied respectfully and sat down cross-legged in front of Duan Tianlang's work desk before he entered the cultivation state.

Duan Tianlang walked to the other side and carefully took out a palm-sized earthen bowl. The bowl was fully transparent but was turquoise in color. This was the Imperial green glass-type emerald. It was also the purest high-grade emerald in the world. Not only did it represent the breath of life, it also had the highest prestige among all the gems. It was exactly material like this that could stabilize all of the other valuable ingredients to make the Consolidating Ink.

Duan Tianlang's eyes were filled with emotions as he gently stroke the bowl in his hand. This earthen bowl had a beautiful name. It was called "Aqua Tide". Ever since he had gotten his hands on this treasure, there were not many occasions that were worthy for him to use this bowl. After he had become a God Tier Master, he had only used it a total of five times. Out of the five times, it was used twice to craft the final piece of Long Shiya's Hiltless Heavenly Purging Set and the tenth piece of Zhou Weiqing's Ringless Ground Purging Set. The first five times he made Consolidating Ink with Aqua Tide brought him great success. The Consolidating Ink were of the highest quality and in turn, it helped in completing the crafting process of the scrolls.

In Duan Tianlang's opinion, even if the previous five successful completions were added up together, they would still be unable to compare to the current one. The process of making this Consolidating Ink now was the most important to him in his entire life.

All this while, Zhou Weiqing had always been very grateful

towards Duan Tianlang. However, he did not know that Duan Tianlang was equally grateful for his existence, too. Duan Tianlang was a God Tier Master who had no equal in his time. He was the only God Tier Master who was a successor of the Strength Legacy. Even if he had a close relationship with Long Shiya, it was not to the point that he would help take care of Zhou Weiqing to such a degree. All these years, the reason he spared no pains in doing everything for him was because of Zhou Weiqing himself.

First of all, Zhou Weiqing, who possessed the Strength Legacy, had the highest likelihood to become a God Tier Master. The situation had proved to be true since he had successfully become a true God Tier Master himself. At the same time, he even managed to help complete a few of Duan Tianlang's most important, unfulfilled wishes in his entire life.

Just the existence of the Ringless Ground Purging Set itself was already enough to rekindle Duan Tianlang's passion and faith. The shocking and touching moments that he felt at that moment was so earth-shattering that it still remained strong in his heart till now.

One could easily imagine how much it meant to the God Tier Master, who was peerless in his time, that he was able to help Zhou Weiqing create the Ringless Ground Purging Set, and he could see with his own eyes this set existing together at the same time with the Hiltless Heavenly Purging Set.

If Zhou Weiqing had not shown up at all, Duan Tianlang might have already died working his entire heart out. It was Zhou Weiqing who gave him this second life. With the infusion of the Saint Energy, he finally had the ability to thrive at a higher level as a God Tier Master. He was personally involved in designing and making the legendary armor set that had a total of eleven pieces.

In fact, Duan Tianlang only had a cultivation base at the Heavenly King Tier. Moreover, regardless of the circumstances, his Heavenly King-tier cultivation base could no longer rise to the

Heavenly Emperor Tier. In reality, there had never been any record of a Heavenly King-tier Jewel Master who was able to create the eleventh piece of a legendary armor set. That was why this would absolutely be a miracle in this world. Duan Tianlang had no more regrets in his entire since he was able to achieve this miracle, complete the design blueprint and even personally forge this legendary armor set's Consolidated Equipment Scroll.

He turned his head to look at Zhou Weiqing who was sitting by the side while he adjusted his state of mind. A determined look could be seen in his eyes. He only had one chance. There was only room for success, not failure!

Duan Tianlang shut his eyes and quickly entered a meditative state as he carefully lifted the Aqua Tide before him with his two hands. This was also one of the advantages that Saint Energy had brought him. He did not have to do much adjustment to enter his best state of mind in a short amount of time. Of course, this was not the case for his cultivation base state but his state of mind.

Without warning, Duan Tianlang opened up his eyes wide and instantly, two determined lights gleamed in his eyes. He rubbed his hands together. His left hand was pushed inward while his right hand was pushed outward. With the rich silverish Spatial Heavenly Energy holding up the Aqua Tide in the air, a 'swoosh' could be heard as the Aqua Tide suddenly started spinning violently in mid-air. A turquoise light immediately spread out from the spinning bowl.

Chapter 793: The Eleventh Piece of the Ringless Ground Purging Set (2)

Duan Tianlang's entire person seemed to have entered a special state. An intense silver light continued coming out of his body as it infused the Aqua Tide. The Heavenly Energy ripples in the room also intensified.

Right this moment, Zhou Weiqing slowly opened his eyes when he sensed the changes in the surroundings. He did not disturb Duan Tianlang. Instead, he quietly rose up as he watched soundlessly from a distance. Although Duan Tianlang's cultivation base was inferior to his, their abilities were on par when it came to the competency of being a Consolidated Equipment Master. It was all thanks to his innate talent that he became a God Tier Master. That was why he did not need to exert much effort. For this reason, he only needed to learn from Duan Tianlang's technique and experience.

The Aqua Tide continued to spin swiftly in front of Duan Tianlang. Gradually, the turquoise light that was emitting out of it slowly consolidated and merged with the Spatial Heavenly Energy as it emitted a greenish silver light.

What was even more bizarre were the changes to the Aqua Tide's rim. The same greenish silver light actually took the shape of a funnel instead as the tip of the funnel extended all the way into the Aqua Tide bowl. A small, nail-sized black hole could be seen at the tip of the funnel.

Soon after, Duan Tianlang began to make a move. Countless shades of lights appeared in his hands instantly. Every ray of light was as solid as matter. Although they materialized quickly, they appeared to be very stable.

Streams of lights continued to infuse the greenish silver whirlpool in the Aqua Tide. Strange enough, although many of the

valuable materials were pretty large, they quickly vanished without a trace the moment they entered the whirlpool.

Duan Tianlang's speed was indeed too fast. It was not only fast, it was also rather rhythmic. With speed like this, if one were to stand slightly further away, all one would be able to see would be a colorful stream of lights that continued to flow out of his hands. It looked like some kind of illusion as it poured into the Aqua Tide.

As more and more lights entered the Aqua Tide, the turquoise color of the beautiful earthen bowl began to turn richer as time passed by. The rotation speed continued to increase as well as it constantly engulfed the valuable ingredients.

Zhou Weiqing's Divine Thought had already spread to outside the room. It formed a natural barrier over it. Not only could it prevent outsiders from snooping around, it could also prevent the Heavenly Energy ripples and the valuable ingredients' aura from escaping outside when Duan Tianlang was in the process of making the ink.

Apparently, this was something that was necessary. Otherwise, it would easily attract Heavenly Beasts' attention from a huge perimeter. Although Zhou Weiqing was not afraid of Heavenly Beasts casting their covetous eyes on them, he would prefer that they did not disrupt his Junior Master's ink-making process.

Even though Zhou Weiqing was already at the Upper Levels of the Heavenly Emperor Tier and is approaching the Maximum Level soon, the look of astonishment in his eyes grew stronger as time passed.

This was because he could clearly see that the energy ripples rising from the Aqua Tide was growing stronger as time passed. At the same time, it felt horribly dreadful. He was certain that if the Aqua Tide were to be detonated, the entire Heavenly Bow City would be completely wiped out from the world. Heck, was that the best case scenario? One could easily imagine how much energy was

being processed within the Aqua Tide.

Originally, when Duan Tianlang sent Zhou Weiqing on the mission to search for the Elven Queen's blood, Zhou Weiqing thought that the main ingredient for the Consolidating Ink would be the Elven Queen's blood. Although all the other ingredients were valuable as well, they were inferior compared to the blood. However, looking at the situation now, it seemed like he was wrong after all. His Junior Master had only just started the process of making the Consolidating Ink and yet, the Aqua Tide earthen bowl was already exuding such hair-raising energy ripples. Even he, who was already at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly Emperor Tier, was taken aback by such a scene. One could easily imagine how ghastly the amount of energy contained in these valuable ingredients. Only the most priceless treasures would be able to release such threatening energy ripples!

Zhou Weiqing was a pretty good judge of things. Although he did not recognize most of the valuable ingredients that Duan Tianlang was using, just from the few that he recognized, it was already more than enough for him to confirm his initial thoughts. For example, he saw a fist-sized crystal clear Nucleus Core that gave off an intense fiery red light. When this Nucleus Core was tossed into the bowl, the fiery red light that it gave off completely solidified. It made it look like it was covered in a layer of solid light. Zhou Weiqing suspected that the Nucleus Core was most probably taken from a Heavenly God-tier Heavenly Beast.

In fact, if he absorbed this Nucleus Core, it would at the very least stabilize his cultivation base at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly Emperor Tier. Currently, Duan Tianlang was merely using it to make the Consolidating Ink.

At this moment, a realization suddenly dawned on Zhou Weiqing. Just the eleventh piece of the legendary armor suit would most likely surpass the value of all the previous ten pieces together. Most of the valuable ingredients that his Junior Master

used was most likely not bought by the Heaven's Expanse Palace. Instead, they were probably treasures that originally belonged to the Strength Legacy that had been put away for many years.

Zhou Weiqing instinctively shifted his glance towards Duan Tianlang who had a resolute and determined look in his eyes as he was fixated on the Aqua Tide. His entire being gave off an invisible Qi field like a large mountain standing guard up high.

Zhou Weiqing pursed his lips slightly. His eyes instantly turned darker. Just as his eyes darkened, his pupils constricted into tiny pinpoints. He had already made up his mind that he would give his all no matter how difficult the situation turned out. He would work till his last breath just to finish making the Consolidated Equipment Scroll. It was only in this way that he would be worthy of Duan Tianlang's sacrifice. Not only that, it could also be considered as him fulfilling his Junior Master's greatest wish of his life.

The turquoise light that was emitting out of the Aqua Tide made it look like a small, dazzling turquoise sun. An extremely strong aroma was also coming out of it. This aroma was filled with the breath of life and the energy ripples of all the attributes that Zhou Weiqing knew of. Apart from that, each and every one of the energy attribute was the purest as well.

Zhou Weiqing would be able to easily purify a single attribute. However, it was an impossible task to purify all of the attributes at the same time. He could blend all of the attributes together with his Saint Energy but he could not isolate all of the attributes to purify them separately.

Even Zhou Weiqing could not do this, let alone Duan Tianlang. However, it was currently made possible by the Aqua Tide. It was a treasure that was known as an artifact among Consolidated Equipment Masters. This was also the reason why Duan Tianlang had faith that they would be successful in making the Consolidating Ink as long as all there were enough materials and

ingredients. Even the three God Tier Masters in the Heaven's Expanse Palace's Heavenly Jewel Island did not possess such a treasure. It would take the three of them working together just to finish making Consolidating Ink of this level. Moreover, it did not mean that they would be able to succeed with just one attempt.

If it was not for Zhou Weiqing's Divine Thought's protection, other Heavenly Jewel Masters who had a higher cultivation base would definitely feel the strong energy ripple from several dozen miles away. The dense aura that was released by the valuable ingredients was more than enough to induce envy.

Time continued to pass. Duan Tianlang's eyes turned serious as time went by. When the Aqua Tide's rotation reached its maximum speed, the speed suddenly dropped. It was as if it had turned heavier. Tiny black cracks began to appear around the air by the Aqua Tide — it was a sign that space around it was being torn apart.

It seemed like the energy inside the Aqua Tide was so massive that it was starting to become too much for the Aqua Tide to contain. Beads of sweat began to form and flow down from Duan Tianlang's forehead. His clothes were fully drenched from the front to the back. However, the Spatial attribute Heavenly Energy that erupted from his body kept going strong. It was continuously rising up. However, his hand movements had started to slow down.

This was the first time in Duan Tianlang's life that he was performing such a completion process for the Consolidating Ink. Although he had many simulated practices and thought about all possible situations that may arise, he still suffered from a tremendous pressure the instant he started making the ink.

"I can't fail! I can't fail no matter what! I only have one batch of materials and if I fail, God knows how long it'll take before I can start making this Consolidating Ink again!" Duan Tianlang thought to himself. He knew very clearly that he only had one shot at this.

Although the Saint Energy that Zhou Weiqing infused into his body was enough to save his life, his energy was not limitless. It was almost depleted long ago from all the Consolidated Equipment Scroll making from many years ago. If he failed this time, he would not have the courage to attempt it again for the second time. Even though he could still make the scroll by guiding Zhou Weiqing, it was still not a product made with his own hands.

With an interval every few minutes, Duan Tianlang threw another valuable ingredient into the Aqua Tide. Every interval would be longer than the previous one, and after every new item was tossed into it, the Aqua Tide would appear heavier. It seemed like it was sinking from its position in mid-air. Duan Tianlang broke into a sweat when he saw that.

At this time, Zhou Weiqing did not dare to intervene at all. He did not even dare to infuse any Saint Energy into Duan Tianlang's body. Presently, Duan Tianlang was like a taut bowstring that would snap with just the slightest interruption, even if the interruption was good and meant to help him.

Finally, Duan Tianlang reached both of his hands out and instantly, two golden colored fruits fell into the Aqua Tide.

With a "whoosh", the Aqua Tide's swirling came to a halt all of a sudden. Without warning, it crashed directly to the ground.

Duan Tianlang shouted, "Get up!" His right foot stomped mercilessly on the ground. His alarming Heavenly Energy erupted all of a sudden, and a silverish white light began to pour into the Aqua Tide without reserve. It stopped the fall of the Aqua Tide when it was just a foot away from hitting the ground.

However, at this time, on top of the Aqua Tide that was no longer swirling, a very unstable energy ripple blasted out without warning. Tiny cracks began to appear on the turquoise lights as if it was about to explode into pieces. A circle of black light could also be seen around the Aqua Tide. It seemed like it was about to slash

open the space around it and soar away from this realm.

Chapter 794: The Eleventh Piece of the Ringless Ground Purging Set (3)

A spurt of blood sprayed out of Duan Tianlang's mouth on the Aqua Tide. Zhou Weiqing, who was watching by the side, instantly clenched his fists as he resisted the urge to rush forward and stop his Junior Master.

The Aqua Tide that was sprayed with Duan Tianlang's blood immediately flared with turquoise light as it gradually started to swirl again. However, it looked like it was about to break at any moment with the cracks that appeared as it continued to pick up speed.

However, at this moment, Zhou Weiqing could see a smile breaking out on Duan Tianlang's face. That was right, a smile. A faint smile. It looked like he was satisfied with the current outcome.

With trembling hands, Duan Tianlang took out a small turquoise bottle and opened its lid. Three drops of brightly colored blood that was filled with rich vitality flew out all at once as it fell into the Aqua Tide. That was the Elven Queen's Blood that Zhou Weiqing had brought back with him.

With the infusion of the Elven Queen's blood, the cracks that were multiplying on the Aqua Tide immediately halted. In the next instant, the entire room turned completely turquoise in color. As if it had been injected with hot boiling oil, the pure energy from all kinds of attributes that were originally fluctuating inside the Aqua Tide suddenly hissed loudly before a fierce turquoise light burst up into the sky like a gigantic dragon. It smashed the ceiling as it broke out of the house.

Almost instantaneously, Zhou Weiqing removed his Divine Thought. He could clearly sense that this ray of light was not something his Divine Thought could block. In the event of a

collision, his Divine Thought might be smashed apart. One could easily imagine how formidable the power of this Consolidating Ink was.

"Weiqing, stop it! It's trying to get away!" Duan Tianlang shouted out at the top of his voice. At the same time, his Aqua Tide lost all luster as it slammed down to the ground with a deafening thud.

Zhou Weiqing reacted very quickly. The moment he heard his Junior Master's words, he instantly rushed out from the house without wasting even a second.

When the turquoise light soared up to the sky, Zhou Weiqing could feel a sudden burst of powerful breath that was comparable to one from an individual on the Heavenly God Tier that erupted from the turquoise light. The moment the turquoise light soared up to the sky, it began to absorb all sorts of attributes' energy ripples from the air in a frenzy. It was almost like a huge devouring vortex that was even more devastating than Zhou Weiqing's Demon Devour. None of the energy attributes in the air seemed to have any resistance towards it at all.

In just a flash, Zhou Weiqing was already outside of the house. He was completely taken aback when he saw that ray of turquoise light. That light had completely evolved into a gigantic dragon that was 100 meters long, and it was climbing up the sky as it bared its fangs fiercely.

However, it was completely different from the gigantic dragon that Zhou Weiqing had previously seen. This turquoise-colored dragon was completely crystal clear like it was carved out of a jade sculpture. Its body constantly ejected circles of turquoise lights that were absorbing various energy attributes to strengthen its body. It had nine claws under its abdomen and a pair of horns on its head. Every time it moved, a series of cracks could be seen appearing in the surrounding space. It seemed like this dragon was even more fearsome than the Dreadfiend Sea Naga that Zhou Weiqing had previously faced.

With a cold snort, Zhou Weiqing lifted up his right hand and a bright stream of galaxy-like rays exploded out of his body. At that moment, the entire sky in the Heavenly Bow City turned dark and scattered stars instantly appeared out of thin air. Within seconds, all of the energy attributes were separated and isolated.

What cultivation base was he at now? The Maximum Level of the Heavenly Emperor Tier. Moreover, he even shared a life with the Elven Queen. His power was extremely strong. He would lose to the Mountain Lord of Heavenly Snow Mountain. His Saint Energy had already been purified to a nearly white gold level. Although it was still not on par with the Creation Saint Energy, it was constantly getting closer to it. One could say that this Saint Energy that he possessed was the purest Saint Energy that could be found in this world. It was even more powerful than the Elven Queen's Life Saint Energy. This was also one of the main reasons why even the Elven Queen was a little afraid of Zhou Weiqing and was willing to let her Elf Tribe remain in seclusion.

The sky suddenly darkened as each and every one of the energy attributes suddenly vanished without a trace. The Jade Dragon appeared to be stunned for a moment before it immediately became panic-stricken. At once, its huge body wobbled in the air. Instantly, a silverish light flashed across. A layer of rich silverish light erupted from its body and enveloped its entire body. In an instant, an enormous black hole appeared out of thin air right before it.

"Trying to escape?" Without a doubt, this Jade Dragon was feeling threatened, and it was now trying to tear space apart to escape using the Spatial Attribute; part of the attributes that he possessed.

Naturally, Zhou Weiqing would not let it off so easily. With his current cultivation base, he already understood how this Jade Dragon suddenly materialized after a short moment of being surprised.

The valuable treasures became its body and the Elven Queen's blood became its life. One could say that this dragon was an ominous presence that was a combination of all the Atmospheric Energy. If it was allowed to absorb the Atmospheric Energy as freely as it liked, it would most likely form a brain of its own within a certain period of time. At that time, no one would be able to subdue it any longer. How dire would it be having a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse that possessed all the attributes in this world? It could even cultivate Saint Energy on its own and leave this world as it pleased.

Not all Consolidating Inks for the eleventh piece of a legendary armor set would have such a problem. However, almost all of the Consolidating Ink of the eleventh piece of legendary armor sets would gain a spirit due to the fusion of countless valuable treasures.

Although Duan Tianlang knew about the Consolidating Ink crafting method, he had zero experience in this. Even the Strength Legacy's founders did not have any ancient books or records that passed on this knowledge. If it was the Heaven's Expanse Palace's Heavenly Jewel Island that was making a Consolidating Ink of this level, they would definitely lay down a large array of guards as a lookout. It was apparent that Duan Tianlang did not know that such a situation would occur. If it was not for Zhou Weiqing's powerful cultivation base, all of the efforts that he had exerted earlier would be in vain.

At this moment, Zhou Weiqing was feeling intensely excited instead of feeling angry. Just the Consolidating Ink itself was already this formidable. How would the Consolidated Equipment Scroll be like later? This was not something that could be easily speculated just by using imagination alone. Anyway, what was more urgent now was to subdue this Jade Dragon and start making the Consolidated Equipment Scroll.

Zhou Weiqing took a step forward in the air. Before the Jade

Dragon could enter the black hole, he quickly appeared before it and lifted his right hand. At once, the black hole behind the dragon was instantly wiped off by a layer of golden light that exuded from his palm. It was as if it did not appear at all. Forming a fist with his left palm, he smashed it directly on the Jade Dragon's head.

Only Zhou Weiqing had the guts to do something like that. If it was some other Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse, the first thing that he would worry about was whether he would be sucked in by the black hole or not. However, Zhou Weiqing was not afraid of this at all. After all, he was able to use Spatial Travel. Moreover, he had also mastered the Galaxia Saint Energy. Due to this reason, the black hole was not a problem at all for him.

With a muffled thud, the Jade Dragon was sent flying by Zhou Weiqing's fist. Its gigantic body tumbled a few times in the sky. After all, it only had its life and spirit given to him moments ago, and it did not know how to utilize it in a battle yet. Although it had a huge body full of energy, it could only use it to perform some simple things based on his instinct.

Even a real Heavenly God-tier powerhouse might not necessarily be able to win against Zhou Weiqing, let alone this faux Heavenly God.

Zhou Weiqing pointed his right hand towards the sky as his eyes suddenly lit up. All of the stars in the sky gleamed in a dazzle and it was as bright as his eyes. Hundred of stars shone down and formed a huge cage that was made out of hundreds of light beams. It trapped the Jade Dragon within it. No matter how it struggled to try to break open the cage, it still could not break free.

Zhou Weiqing was hovering empty-handed in mid-air and his eyes were shining brightly. Like a God that descended from Heaven, his body was surrounded by the galaxy belt that turned into a circle of light around him. The dazzling light was glowing with an incomparably powerful aura. The Astral Divine Territory — this was part of the powerful ability that Zhou Weiqing

managed to master. Although he was still at the Heavenly Emperor Tier, he had already reached and mastered the Divine Territory. Moreover, his Divine Territory could be considered superior to all the Divine Territories in this world. This was because he had his Saint Energy as a foundation, the Saint Energy that could be used to create the world.

By this time, the people of Heavenly Bow City had already discovered the changes in the air. When they saw Zhou Weiqing and the imprisoned Jade Dragon in the sky, the commoners were completely shaken to their core. With a series of thuds were heard, each and every one of them kneeled down on the ground as they paid homage to the both of them.

It was also at this time that a crisp whistle resonated in the Heavenly Bow City. Even within Zhou Weiqing's Astral Divine Territory, the loud and crisp whistle could ignite a violent energy ripple. Six-colored lights shot up into the sky at once. To his surprise, the powerful beams literally ripped apart a small area of Zhou Weiqing's Astral Divine Territory, as it shot all the way up to the atmosphere. Soon after, a figure appeared out of nowhere and walked out of the six-colored lights.

"Ha ha ha ha! You bastard! I finally made a breakthrough after working hard for so long!"

Looking at that round figure, was that not Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya?

All this while, the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor had been using the Saint Energy that Zhou Weiqing had transfused into his body to seek a breakthrough. He had stagnated at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly Emperor Tier for too many years, just a stone throw away from his final breakthrough. Even though it was only a stone throw away, he could finally close the distance all thanks to Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy.

Just a moment ago, he felt the Jade Dragon's Heavenly God-tier

energy ripple. Coupled with the Saint Energy in his body that happened to coincide with Zhou Weiqing's Astral Divine Territory's aura, lady luck was finally on his side. His strength had also reached a fully baked state. Now that all of the conditions had been met, he was finally able to break through. Within seconds, he had already become a Heavenly God.

Long Shiya was not a person who hid his emotions. Moreover, breaking through to the Heavenly God Tier was a lifelong dream of his, just like how making the eleventh piece of the Ringless Ground Purging Set was the lifelong dream of Duan Tianlang. One could easily imagine the sense of joy that was bursting out of his heart right now. In the midst of his frenzied laughter, his gaze landed on the Jade Dragon that was imprisoned in mid-air.

"Congratulations on your remarkable feat, Teacher!"

Chapter 795: Drawing Saint Energy Ink, Consolidating In The Void (1)

"Congratulations, teacher. It's a miraculous success."

Zhou Weiqing's expression was filled with surprise. He approached Long Shiya and bowed respectfully towards his teacher. Long Shiya's breakthrough at this point in time would be greatly beneficial towards his future plans. Above all else, his teacher was finally able to complete his life's ambition. How could Zhou Weiqing not feel happy for him?

Long Shiya looked at Zhou Weiqing. The fat meat on his face squished his small, smiling eyes so much that they could not be seen, "The wisest decision I've ever made in this lifetime is accepting you as my disciple, kid. Hahahaha, Heavenly God. I've finally become a Heavenly God. See if I don't fight my way up to Heavenly Snow Mountain and pull out all of the teeth of that old geezer, Xue Ao'tian. Wahaha."

Long Shiya certainly was not blowing his own trumpet. He had the Six Great Attributes, and his cultivation base had broken through to the Heavenly God Tier. He was certainly in no way inferior to Xue Ao'Tian who was at the Mid-Level of the Heavenly God Tier.

Just then, a quiet gasp could be heard, "Well, isn't old brother Long lucky! I'm still not good enough. The level of the last breakthrough is simply too difficult."

A black and grey light cast a shadow and the Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue appeared next to Zhou Weiqing and Long Shiya. His cultivation base was second only to Long Shiya despite the fact that he had suffered an injury in the past. Even though his wounds were now healed, he could not utilize Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy and smoothly break through to the Heavenly God Tier like what Long Shiya had done.

However, Long Shiya's breakthrough alone was enough for the Peerless Sect. Even the number one Saint Land, Heaven's Expanse Palace, did not have a Heavenly God-tier cultivator assuming personal command! Long Shiya's existence was enough to intimidate the other four Great Saint Lands and grant the Peerless Sect a leading position.

Long Shiya pointed at the Jade Dragon that still struggling in its attempt to escape and asked Zhou Weiqing, "What's that? Why does it have such a scary amount of energy? Is it a Heavenly God-tier Heavenly Beast that you brought back?"

Zhou Weiqing shook his head, "It's not a Heavenly Beast. Please help me uphold the constitution, teacher, and father-in-law. I'll explain everything to you when I've completed my tasks."

As he spoke, a silver light flashed in Zhou Weiqing's body, and he returned to the ground in the next moment. As he cradled the dying Duan Tianlang in his arms, he poured Saint Energy into his body to help him replenish his strength.

Although Duan Tianlang was substantially weakened, his mind was still excellent. He mumbled, "It's done. Weiqing, I did it. This is the eleventh Consolidating Ink. I dare guarantee that this will become a dragon-shaped Consolidating Ink, and it'll surpass the last piece of the Boundless Infinitum Set. A dragon, it's a dragon! Don't worry about me, you hurry up and start consolidating. It's in the void. Lure the dragon into the scroll."

Zhou Weiqing replied with uncertainty, "Junior Master, what should I do?"

Duan Tianlang closed his eyes. After regaining a bit of mental strength, he opened his eyes again as light radiated from his pupils, "Draw in Saint Energy, and consolidate it in the void. The sky is your scroll, the Jade Dragon is your Consolidating Ink, and the Saint Energy is your Consolidating Brush. Go. The eleventh legendary armor set has always used substances in different forms.

As long as you succeed in consolidating it, draw it into your body at once. By doing so, you'll be able to utilize its power the moment you succeed in your cultivation. Understood?"

Zhou Weiqing carefully memorized Duan Tianlang's simple instructions. His mouth repeatedly muttered, "Draw in Saint Energy, and consolidate it in the void." Suddenly, his eyes shone as his heart was filled with realization. He transfused a bit of pure Saint Energy into Duan Tianlang's body so that he would slowly recover. In the next moment, Zhou Weiqing grabbed the blueprint and appeared in the middle of the sky again.

At this moment, Long Shiya and Wu Yunyue were not the only two people in the sky. Every cultivator at the Heavenly King Tier or above from the Peerless Sect was already in mid-air, including the six Heavenly Kings who originated from the Heavenly Demon Sect and Zhou Weiqing's female companions.

Only Long Shiya and Wu Yunyue were unaware of what Zhou Weiqing and Duan Tianlang were up to. At this moment, without needing Zhou Weiqing's instructions, and under the leadership of Shangguan Xue'er and Tian'er, the Heavenly King-tier cultivators quickly scattered and formed a large circle surrounding the outer area in the far off distance, the Consolidated Equipment was placed neatly, in a calm and unruffled manner despite the raging chaos outside to protect Zhou Weiqing.

Initially, the Shangguan triplets wanted to return to the Heaven's Expanse Palace in the Heavenly Jewel Island to complete the next piece of their Consolidated Equipment. However, they stayed for the sake of Zhou Weiqing's consolidation. After all, Long Shiya and Wu Yunyue were previously in closed-door cultivation, and they didn't know how long it would take for Zhou Weiqing to finish consolidating and safety was of utmost importance. What if the people of Blood Red Hell took advantage of this and came here. What would they do then?

Zhou Weiqing was once again in mid-air. He did not consolidate

immediately when he faced the Jade Dragon. A light flickered in his eyes as the Galaxia light in his body amplified. A two meter wide, enormous light beam shot out from his body towards the sky. It was the Galaxia Feedback. However, he was using his own Saint Energy not for cultivation purposes but for binding instead.

In a few short seconds, a bright gold light beam ten times bigger than Zhou Weiqing's light beam poured down from the sky. It shot ferociously at the Jade Dragon's body.

Terrifying fluctuations from the Saint Energy exploded in a very small area in the sky before turning into a large golden ball of light. All the force was focused on the Jade Dragon's body.

The initially healthy and active Jade Dragon instantly turned docile after the attack. It was firmly bound and was unable to move so it became dispirited and listless as golden starlight surrounded it.

Wu Yunyue and Long Shiya gasped when they saw this.

Among everyone present, the two of them were the most powerful, and their senses were the most vivid. Even the newly minted Heavenly God-tier Long Shiya could not help but look shocked upon sensing the might of the attack from the sky. Even though he would not be restricted by Zhou Weiqing's Divine Territory and had also received his own Divine Territory after becoming a Heavenly God, he was shocked at the might of the Astral Divine Territory and Zhou Weiqing's upgrading speed.

Long Shiya had thought that he could pass on his techniques and experience in breaking through the bottleneck in Heavenly Emperor Tier to the Heavenly God Tier to Zhou Weiqing. However, it seemed that currently there was no need for that. His precious disciple's cultivation base was at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly Emperor Tier, and he also had Saint Energy. At this moment, Zhou Weiqing was probably about to surpass him in overall power. As for how he would reach the Heavenly God Tier,

this was not something that he needed to worry about.

After Zhou Weiqing had perfectly bound the Jade Dragon, he quieted down. He closed his eyes as his hand clutched the Consolidated Equipment Scroll blueprint that Duan Tianlang completed with his blood, sweat, and tears.

The light of Saint Energy disappeared, leaving behind only little bits of starlight and the Astral Divine Discipline. Only cultivators at the Heavenly God Tier and above could clearly sense an immensely powerful Divine Thought that filled them with fear. It surrounded Zhou Weiqing's body as it fluctuated continuously. The power of this Divine Thought nearly surpassed the newly-minted Heavenly God-tier, Six Ultimate Heavenly God, Long Shiya.

The blueprint gently flew out of Zhou Weiqing's hand and spread out before Zhou Weiqing's face. Zhou Weiqing used Divine Thought to roll it up so that outsiders would not be able to read its content. All they would be able to see was a blurry piece of paper.

Zhou Weiqing's body began to slowly change in a bizarre manner. Little bits of starlight began to appear. It was devoid of the dazzling light from the Galaxia Saint Energy. It was just pure and simple starlight. The starlight slowly gathered behind Zhou Weiqing as it gradually became an imaginary shadow that was completely made out of starlight.

At this time, the shadow was no longer the Demon God. Instead, it was Zhou Weiqing.

When the shadow first appeared, it was not that big. It was only about the same size as Zhou Weiqing. However, the shadow slowly grew larger and larger following the continuous condensation of starlight. The strangest thing was this shadow did not display any energy fluctuations. Instead, it only gave off a gold glitter.

It was the first time that everyone present witnessed this bizarre transformation, especially the gradual shape-shifting process.

Only Long Shiya alone was able to sense the abnormality in the shadow. Zhou Weiqing was his disciple. That year, he had told Zhou Weiqing that on the day he was able to use his own shadow to form a Heavenly Skill Projection, he would have truly learned the Six Ultimate Heavenly Path Formation.

At this moment, Zhou Weiqing's condensed shadow was not a simple Heavenly Skill Projection. The shadow looked unreal at first glance. However, upon closer inspection, it seemed to be corporeal. Every bit of starlight used in its condensation was Saint Energy that was compressed to a high degree. The reason why no energy fluctuations were released was that all of the Saint Energy that were reserved and compressed was too pure. There was no reason for any leakage. The only way the power of this shadow could be described was that it was terrifying. It was even more terrifying than the Demon God that Zhou Weiqing had once summoned.

There was a possibility that the power of the Demon God was more formidable. However, this was a projection completely condensed by Zhou Weiqing's own Saint Energy, and it had the ability to hold its own in a fight.

Terrifying energy fluctuations circulated in the air. At this moment, Zhou Weiqing's cultivation base had an overall increase, and the dense Saint Energy fluctuations instantly died down. At a glance, the man floating in mid-air looked like a normal person.

The shadow behind Zhou Weiqing kept growing until it was five meters tall before it stopped. However, it still remained behind Zhou Weiqing as starlight continued pouring in, making it grow clearer and clearer in sight. In the end, it was essentially a larger version of Zhou Weiqing. Even the clothes were exactly alike. If it was not for the difference in size, one would not be able to differentiate between the actual person and the body of energy.

Shangguan Fei'er's mouth twitched at the sight of this, "This bastard. Did he clone himself a twin?"

However, her words came to a sudden halt in the next moment. Zhou Weiqing's physical body did not move but the five-meter tall shadow behind him took one step forward and immediately swallowed Zhou Weiqing whole. The original body and the body of energy had merged into one.

Chapter 796: Drawing Saint Energy Ink, Consolidating In The Void (2)

The most shocking thing was what happened immediately after. The five meter tall Zhou Weiqing suddenly opened his eyes. When he opened his eyes, his entire being seemed to have come to life. He no longer looked like a body of energy but instead, was an enlarged version of Zhou Weiqing. It was as if his own body had gone through puberty once again. Even his gaze was similar to Zhou Weiqing's. There was no difference at all.

All of the witnesses present were cultivators throughout an entire generation. However, at this moment, they were all completely stupefied from Zhou Weiqing's actions. They were even a little numb. They simply could not figure out how Zhou Weiqing had done it. However, they vaguely sensed that everything Zhou Weiqing had done was to amplify himself so that he could become more powerful.

The Six Ultimate Heavenly God, Long Shiya clearly noticed that after Zhou Weiqing had grown to five meters tall and was now one with the Astral Divine Territory in the sky. The most fearsome thing was that the aura he emitted could no longer be described as one from a cultivator at the Heavenly Emperor-tier but instead, one that was from someone on the Heavenly God-tier.

It was similar to what had happened long ago when Zhou Weiqing used the Demonic Change to upgrade himself except now he was using the Astral Divine Territory to temporarily boost his cultivation base to the Heavenly God Tier.

During this kind of transformation, one had to manifest the Astral Divine Territory. The golden light that bound the Jade Dragon grew significantly stronger and gave off a white-gold luster. Zhou Weiqing's five-meter tall body had also transformed from a lighter shade of gold to a whitish-golden color. Obviously,

this white-gold color is the color of the Saint Energy that he would receive once he reached the Heavenly God Tier.

When Zhou Weiqing took a deep breath, the blueprint before him vanished as it rolled up and entered his body. At this moment, Zhou Weiqing went all out with his Divine Thought and had branded all of the contents of the blueprint in his mind. This did not mean that he understood the secrets behind the blueprint. However, he had completely memorized it and would never forget them.

Based on his current age and his understanding of Consolidated Equipment Masters, it was impossible for him to completely comprehend it. At the very least, it was not possible for him to do it in such a short time. However, this would not affect his crafting process, especially under circumstances similar to this moment where he possessed such a high amount of power.

One had to at least have a Heavenly Emperor-tier cultivation base in order to craft the eleventh piece of the legendary armor set. The higher one's cultivation base was, the easier the crafting process would be. Moreover, Zhou Weiqing could also use Time Reversal as a safeguard to speak to the Consolidating Equipment Master about techniques that were against the heavenly stages.

Drawing Saint Energy Ink, and consolidating it in the void. The words shone in Zhou Weiqing's heart like a lighted pathway. At this moment, he had completely entered another kind of state.

If one were to say that Duan Tianlang was like a lofty mountain on the ground when he was crafting Consolidating Ink, then at this moment , Zhou Weiqing was like a cloud in the sky. Pure and imaginary yet unsurpassed, a cloud above everything else. The fearsome energy fluctuated in the air. Currently, no one was able to sense Zhou Weiqing's presence. If they closed their eyes, they would only be able to sense that there was no energy, attributes or elements present. There was only the Jade Dragon, who was like a third wheel, and Zhou Weiqing who looked like he was detached

from his surroundings.

'Junior Master, don't you worry. I won't let you down.' Zhou Weiqing said in his heart. He slowly opened his mouth and took a deep breath. Instantly, countless starlight scattered throughout the sky. At that moment, the surroundings seemed to have transformed into a resplendent galaxia. It was as if the galaxia had fallen down to earth from high above. The density of the blurry radiance and the fluctuations of the Saint Energy had also reached its highest point. It caused all the present cultivators to turn pale from the shock as they flew backwards in panic. It did not matter that they were at the Heavenly King Tier or the Heavenly Emperor Tier.

Those who had received Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy were a little better off. They did not feel it too much. However, those who had never been baptized by Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy seemed to feel a force that repelled them and it made them feel like they wanted to run away and distance themselves immediately. Otherwise, it felt like they would be torn apart by this terrifying energy.

It was Saint Energy, and also a form of Galaxia Sedimentation, one of the most powerful abilities that Zhou Weiqing could currently use. It was one of the Astral Divine Territory's powerful abilities, and it was a display of Zhou Weiqing's comprehension of it.

Since the dawn of the existence of Heavenly Jewel Masters until this day, Zhou Weiqing was the first to comprehend the Astral Divine Territory. That was why he did not have anyone to learn from or refer to. Everything he knew now, he had to learn from his own mistakes when cultivating as he slowly experienced all the subtleties of Astral Divine Territory.

The higher his cultivation base was, the more he could sense the near infiniteness of Astral Divine Territory, especially the Creation Energy it contained. This pushed Zhou Weiqing in his cultivation

even further. It was the best driving force behind his cultivation. At this moment, he was using this feeling to expand the Astral Divine Territory's Galaxia Sedimentation. From there, he raised the might of Astral Divine Territory and his Saint Energy to their highest potential.

A large vortex of stars came spiraling from below. It was obviously impossible for this to be an actual nebula. It was completely condensed through Saint Energy, drawn by Zhou Weiqing's powers. Even so, this horrifying nebula began spiraling the minute it arrived. The density of Saint Energy filled Heavenly Bow City with a kind of incomparably suffocating Saint Energy aura.

When a Heavenly Jewel Master was faced with such a terrifying amount of Saint Energy, all they could do was to stop resisting, bow out sincerely and acknowledge their allegiance to Saint Energy. Only then would he be able to wholly avoid elimination from the Saint Energy. The higher the Heavenly Jewel Master's cultivation base was, the more they would be affected. In contrast, the average citizen would receive quite a number of benefits from this dense Saint Energy.

Normal citizens would only feel the air grow denser as they breathed, and with every breath they took, their bodies would feel more relaxed. This feeling was difficult to describe. However, in just a short amount of time, they would feel mentally refreshed and their entire being would look as if they had become a few years younger.

The best benefit was reserved for the unborn children in the belly of every pregnant woman in Heavenly Bow City. This was because they had congenital Qi and therefore were able to accept Saint Energy, which was the ultimate source of energy in the simplest way possible. Saint Energy was absorbed by their mothers before it was slowly integrated into their bodies. One could say that all these unborn children, regardless of their original gifts and

natural endowments, had the possibility of becoming Heavenly Jewel Masters in the future, thanks to having absorbed the dense Saint Energy. This is a conversation for another day in the future. Presently, even Zhou Weiqing himself had never thought that the consolidation in the void would also bring great benefits to Heavenly Bow Empire and establish a prosperous foundation in the future for Heavenly Bow Empire in the Boundless Mainland.

After the terrifying Saint Energy fluctuations appeared, the Jade Dragon cowered meekly. Although it possessed all attributes and had reached the Heavenly God Tier, it did not have a biological body because it was created from a large amount of energy. It only had basic instincts, that was why it could not possibly use a Divine Territory, like the Six Ultimate Heavenly God, to go up against Zhou Weiqing's Astral Divine Territory. With its instincts, the restrictions on in the Astral Divine Territory on it would be even greater. Coupled with Zhou Weiqing's tyrannical power, it would be unable to fight back and would be like a lamb waiting to be butchered.

Following the Galaxia Sedimentation that was placed in the middle of the violent circle of turbulent Nebula Saint Energy, it was further restrained from fighting back. In the face of Zhou Weiqing's Nebula Saint Energy, its enormous body slowly came together as it was slowly suppressed.

The jade green light grew stronger and stronger. However, its body grew smaller and smaller. Soon, it slowly shrank from over a hundred meters in length to merely eighty over meters in length.

The five-meter-tall body Zhou Weiqing remained suspended in air. At this moment, he was the core of the heavens and earth, the center point of this spiraling nebula. Everything in sight was within his grasp.

From embodying a body of energy to the Galaxia Sedimentation, Zhou Weiqing had worked for about half a day. If this was on a battlefield, no enemy would ever grant him the luxury of that

much time to consolidate such amounts of energy. However, at this moment, Zhou Weiqing who had completed Galaxia Sedimentation could render any Heavenly God-tier powerhouse's Divine Territory useless when they were within the territory of Galaxia Sedimentation. Essentially, even if he faced a renowned Heavenly God-tier powerhouse, he may actually stand a chance at winning. This was his domain, his Divine Territory. If Long Shiya or the Mountain Lord of Heavenly Snow Mountain, Xue Ao'tian were to carry out an evaluation, they would not go overboard if they called this the number one Divine Territory in the world.

Zhou Weiqing slowly raised his right hand before he beckoned towards the Jade Dragon's direction. At the same time, the orbiting Nebula Saint Energy around him dispersed immediately, creating a space that was about a hundred meters in diameter in width.

The empty space was pitch black. It was pure, clean, shade of black. There was no trace of energy and it wasn't a spatial tear. It was so pure that one could not see any flaws.

A ray of jade green colored light was drawn out from the Jade Dragon's body after it began trembling. It instantly entered the pure black space that was nearly a hundred meters in width.

Zhou Weiqing's hand movements grew quicker, and the jade green light subsequently began moving in the middle of the black space. It left ray after ray of jade green cracks. The most bizarre thing of all was that the other side of the jade green light that was constantly connected to the Jade Dragon's body had stayed intact.

Lure the dragon into the scroll. That's right, lure the dragon into the scroll. It was just as Duan Tianlang had previously mentioned.

Zhou Weiqing's eyes took in all of the radiance. He did not stop waving his right hand. Draw the ink from the void and lure the dragon into the scroll. This was the way to craft the final legendary armor set. The bizarre sight made everyone watch with absolute

focus. It was likely that such a marvel would be a rare sight even in a hundred years! However, it had now appeared in the sky of Heavenly Bow City. To the average citizens, this was a feat, and to the Heavenly Jewel Masters, this was a miracle.

Chapter 797: Drawing Saint Energy Ink, Consolidating In The Void (3)

The civilians did not know what Zhou Weiqing was doing. Even the Heavenly Jewel Masters did not know either. Only the Heavenly King-tier cultivators were able to make a vague guess. However, the further they guessed, the more terrified they felt. What kind of Consolidated Equipment Scroll needed this type of crafting process? The Consolidating Ink was even more astounding. It actually turned into a dragon.

Zhou Weiqing's actions were very steady. The jade-green light expanded slowly in the air. It gradually started to take shape as it continued every stroke. It did not stop at all. However, a warped light would appear at certain times and it would cause the green color to retreat a little before it expanded once again.

Down below, Duan Tianlang had somewhat recovered his mental strength with the help of Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy. He then flew up to the sky. Even though Galaxia Sedimentation prevented him from getting any closer, he could see everything despite being so far away.

'Rhythm, rhythm,' Duan Tianlang muttered in his heart. He was more anxious than anyone else. Even more so than Zhou Weiqing himself. The success of this would be an unprecedented success of crafting Consolidating Ink. The blood that Elven Queen had willingly given was so pure, it resulted in the perfect fusion of every material and treasure at the final moment. It even protected the Aqua Tide. At this moment, Zhou Weiqing's consolidation did not seem to be going too smoothly. Naturally he knew that every time there was a reversal, it was a sign that Zhou Weiqing was using Time Reversal to regain control. His control of it was already at the point of perfection.

Perhaps a truly experienced God Tier Master would have a

chance in completing it all in a single stroke. However, it was clearly impossible for Zhou Weiqing. So, what he needed was not only the cultivation base of a Heavenly Emperor-tier, but the superior powers of the Heavenly God Tier. Only with enough support from his Saint Energy can he continue using Time Reversal over the course of the entire consolidation process, hold on to the rhythm, and craft the scroll. Based on the current situation, even though he may not have reached a stage where it was smooth sailing, at least there were no issues throughout the entire crafting process. Just this fact alone made Duan Tianlang sighed in relief. Everything seemed to be on the right track. All that remained was to wait; wait for Zhou Weiqing to complete this miracle. If he succeeded, Duan Tianlang dared to say that this disciple of his senior brother, would definitely be the number one cultivator in less than ten years' time.

However, at this moment, outside of Heavenly Bow City, a group of of dark shadows flew towards the city at top speed. Their numbers were nothing to shout out as there were only seven of them. However, every one of them had speed that was like fleeting lights and sweeping shadows. It was as if every time their bodies flashed, they moved more than a hundred meters forward. It was not any slower than the speed of flight. However, they were definitely capable of flying based on the energy and auras their bodies emitted.

These seven people were completely clad in black. Their bodies gave off an aura filled with darkness and destruction. If any normal person was to go near them, they would have fallen ill under the influence of this aura even if they were not attacked.

"Consolidating in the void. This is the method to craft the eleventh Consolidated Equipment Scroll. We must stop him. Does Duan Tianlang already have this ability?" The man in black at the forefront of the group exclaimed in a hoarse voice.

If one had a closer look, one would have noticed that the seven

people clad in black had extremely slim and petite bodies and as they flashed across the sky, they did not even give off any energy ripples.

"No. 1, our task today is to kill that Zhou Weiqing. Not to create new problems and complicate the issue." Another person in black who was following him closely behind spoke in a malicious voice.

"What do you know. Eh, it isn't Duan Tianlang consolidating over there." The seven people in black had already reached the outskirts of the city. With a glance, they could tell that it was Zhou Weiqing who was in the midst of consolidating in the sky. When they saw the method that Zhou Weiqing had used to consolidate; which was to draw in the ink in the void, their black eyes that displayed a fiery blaze showed a hint of shock.

"There's no need to argue this time. It's Zhou Weiqing who's consolidating right now." No. 1 produced a blueprint from his chest and spread it out. The drawing on the blueprint was a portrait of Zhou Weiqing's likeness.

They could see the Heavenly King-tier and Heavenly Emperor-tier cultivators in the sky very clearly. Every person in black immediately masked their aura. However, they still felt the most suffocated by the Galaxia Sedimentation in the sky.

"No. 1, what's going on? How is this Zhou Weiqing releasing such a powerful aura? What Divine Territory is this? There's an error in our information. We won't stand a chance if he finishes consolidating when we attack."

"No. 2, you're too bold. Do you think drawing liquid in the void is that easy? If my guess is right, they would have to pay a great price simply to consolidate the ink. Zhou Weiqing will not possibly stop. Otherwise, there wouldn't be so many people surrounding him in defense. We have lived for more than a thousand years. If it was not for Fen Tian's use of Destruction Essence to revive us, we would be nothing but a pile of bones. You're still able to consider

your personal losses in a time like this? Do you really think that we'll be able to stay alive if we don't finish this job? Without Fen Tian's Destruction Essence, we'll be dead as well. There will certainly be opportunities. Here. Based on the information, this young one is the most powerful one among them, the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya. If the seven of us combine our powers, there's a high chance that they'll retreat with a single attack."

The other five did not say a word. They stood stoically behind the two leaders. Waiting quietly.

No. 2 momentarily fell silent before he nodded, "Alright. However, No. 1, you must remember, there are precious few among those of us who have been brought back to life who have intelligence. The heavens gave us a chance at a new life, and I don't want to throw my life away here. If things become difficult, I would rather use them as scapegoats and escape."

"You think I want to die? We have no time to lose. Get ready. We only have one chance. Besides, we can't let Zhou Weiqing sense that his life is in danger." No. 1 replied in a sinister manner.

A moment after No. 1 and no. 2 had their discussion, the seven of them finally moved again.

The seven men quickly lined up in a row. The five who had previously kept quiet were placed in front, and No. 1 and no. 2 lined up behind. The seven of them released black light filaments one after the other. If one looked closely, one would be able to notice them. The light filaments mostly came from No. 1 and No. 2. The light filaments from the other five were only released on the lead of the first two men.

The black light filaments slowly condensed. The weirdest thing was these light filaments were similar to the Starlight Saint Energy that Zhou Weiqing had previously released. They did not display any energy fluctuations. That also meant that, unless one looked

closely, one would not have been able to sense what the group clad in black was doing. Otherwise, they would not have fearlessly condensed their energy out in the open.

In order to ensure that the Astral Divine Territory's amplification was focused towards his own body, Zhou Weiqing confined the Divine Territory to the skies of Heavenly Bow City, and this was the outer edge of the Astral Divine Territory. The group in black might have been mildly affected by the Astral Divine Territory but in actual fact, they have yet to set foot into the Astral Divine Territory.

They would never know how Zhou Weiqing managed kill the previous group sent by the Blood Red Hell. However, Zhou Weiqing's possession of Saint Energy was no longer a secret. No. 1 and No. 2 knew very well that even though the energy they released could condense, concentrate and stabilize their auras, if it was to come in contact with the immensely different Saint Energy, Zhou Weiqing would notice them immediately. It was similar to how they were able to use their Destruction Energy to sense Zhou Weiqing's Creation Saint Energy. Hence, they chose this dark corner on the outskirts of the city walls.

The black light filaments slowly condensed. Like a Japanese creeper, it stuck closely onto the city walls as it slowly crawled up. It would occasionally grow thorns that were shaped like gnarly long legs, before transforming into shapes that were similar to arteries soon after. If anyone were to see this, they would immediately feel nauseous.

When these black vines finally got close to the top, they slowly began to gather together. Soon after, they merged into a giant mass and countless branches began stretching out from the pitch black mass. It formed a shape that looked a lot like a crab.

As the originators of this evil, the seven in black were completely covered in the black light filaments.

The large black crab, formed through the condensation of the black light filaments, was not very big. It was only about one meter or so. However, at a glance, one would realize that it looked a lot like a black cave that could swallow even the slightest trace of light.

Two turtles in front of the large black crab slowly eased out to explore the city walls. At this time, even though there were soldiers stationed at the city walls, their attentions were fixed on Zhou Weiqing who was drawing Saint Energy ink and consolidating it in the void. No one noticed the two unremarkable black lights.

The two turtles slowly merged when suddenly, a devastating ray of dark light tore through the sky and shot directly towards Zhou Weiqing.

Similar to before, this black light neither gave a warning nor showed an aura or energy fluctuation as it flew towards Zhou Weiqing.

However, just as the black light entered the city and into the Astral Divine Territory, countless people have already reacted. Tian'er, Shangguan Xue'er, Fei'er, Bing'er, including Six Ultimate Heavenly God Long Shiya and Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue.

They were able to notice it immediately not only because their personal cultivation bases were at a high level, it was also because they all had Saint Energy.

Zhou Weiqing's Astral Divine Discipline would largely repel and affect those who did not have Saint Energy. However, the Astral Divine Territory would boost the effects for those who had Saint Energy as long as Zhou Weiqing was not purposely driving them out.

Shangguan Xue'er was the closest. In order to protect Zhou Weiqing, she had already strapped on the Boundless Infinitum Set. Once she sensed the powerful threat from the black ray, she

flashed towards it and did what she had to do without hesitation. Her body and sword became one. In the air, a wave of white light akin to a plume of smoke descended from the heavens like a waterfall.

The Boundless Infinitum Set's reputation as the number one legendary armor set in the world was not unfounded. Although Shangguan Xue'er only had eight pieces on her currently, it was enough to provide her with the most powerful attack among all the wives. Moreover, her blade was dripping with Saint Energy. The Boundless Saint Nucleus Core was Shangguan Xue'er's achievement.

Chapter 798: Luring a Dragon, Second to None (1)

The white and black lights were beaming extra brightly in the sky. The both of them collided hard, creating a deafening bang. The black light flickered and shrunk slightly; its dashing speed then stopped all of a sudden. However, Shangguan Xue'er let out a deep groan as she was flung away. A black layer of light lingered around her, consuming her Saint Energy. Despite having the Heavenly King-tier cultivation base, she could not remain flying in the air and fell straight onto the ground.

Shangguan Fei'er and Shangguan Bing'er arrived with the second batch. Although they saw the odd condition that their sister was in, they decided to attack by force without thinking much, with the sole intention of protecting Zhou Weiqing. The both of them were flung away with a loud bang. The black light only halted slightly and did not seem to be weakened at all. It was still aiming towards Zhou Weiqing.

Tian'er arrived with the third batch. Suited up in the God Vanquishing Heavenly Spirit Set, she floated in the air quietly. A golden light was shot from the God Spirit Staff in her hand. Besides Zhou Weiqing, her Saint Energy was the purest one among all. This time, she managed to defend the black light and counterweighted a small portion of it. However, the black light was too powerful as a whole. If it did not lock its target onto Zhou Weiqing, the Shangguan triplets might be facing a fatal threat for their attempt to defend against the black light.

Tian'er felt a destructive and raging energy dashing into her body, just when the black light paused. She had encountered enemies from the Blood Red Hell, who possessed the Destruction Attribute, when she was with Zhou Weiqing in the past. However, it was different this time as the Destruction Energy was much

purier than the one from the people from the Blood Red Hell back then. The Destruction Energy was so terrifying that it seemed to be the source of the black hole. Besides, the intensity of its energy had far surpassed Tian'er's Heavenly King-tier abilities. As the terrifying Destruction Energy entered Tian'er's body, it was fighting with her Saint Energy.

One revolved around creation while the other revolved around destruction. As both were similarly pure, they were competing with one another through the quantity they possessed. Without a doubt, Tian'er was completely on the losing end. However, her Saint Energy was much purer than that of the Shangguan triplets after all, so she managed to defend the black light's attack by force. However, it was going backwards from where Zhou Weiqing was.

Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue and Six Ultimate Heavenly God Long Shiya were the furthest away from where the black light was heading to. Everything happened too fast, it took less than a second from the time Shangguan Xue'er took action until the point when Tian'er defended against the black light. They reacted at almost the same time.

Long Shiya teleported above Tian'er at an instant. Just as he was about to defend Tian'er against the black light, a miracle occurred out of nowhere. A layer of pure white light exploded from Tian'er's body. Long Shiya had never seen such a pure light before. As soon as the white light appeared, the black light that flung the Shangguan triplets away who in fact, were all on the Heavenly King-tier, and pushed Tian'er's defense away, so much so that was shrinking like melting snow. It resembled an octopus' tentacles that shrunk upon contact with fire. Moreover, the destructive energy that dashed into Tian'er's body had disappeared that very moment, leaving no trail behind.

Tian'er was shocked to find out that the Saint Energy in her body experienced a major growth; from the Low-Level Heavenly King-tier to the Upper-Level Heavenly King-tier. It felt like the

Destruction Energy was absorbed by her and turned into Saint Energy. Such an upgrade was comparable with Zhou Weiqing's Star Reflection.

Who was Long Shiya exactly? Although he was shocked to see the events unfold before him, he made a decision immediately. He extended his right hand in the air, compressing it at an instant, while a rich six-colored light transformed into a stream of light and was sent down from above. It then lit the source of the black light directly. At the same time, he appeared mid-air outside the city wall.

The Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue did not join the attack. Instead, he waited quietly next to Zhou Weiqing, as nobody could tell if any of the enemies would attack from elsewhere. Meanwhile, a couple of his Heavenly King-tier underlings were sent to get the Shangguan triplets. Wu Yunyue was definitely sure that he, as the representative of the Heavenly Demon Sect had curried favor with the person who could bring great future to the Peerless Sect, as he saw Zhou Weiqing consolidating in the air. Zhou Weiqing was the core of the Peerless Sect as well as his son-in-law. No matter what, he would protect this amazing bastard with all that he had.

What Tian'er and the rest did not see was that the seven men in black outside the city walls experienced a tremendous tremor in their bodies, just when the pure white light emitting from Tian'er's body was purifying the pure Destruction Energy even more. A faint black mist was released from their bodies during the intense tremor. No.1 and No.2 was petrified when it happened, as they could not understand how their Destruction Attribute was being absorbed. They decided right away, without any hesitation, to back off immediately. No.1 had said earlier that they only had one chance to attack. The seven of them were only at the Heavenly King-tier cultivation base; they were not even at a Heavenly Emperor-tier. All they depended on was the pure Destruction Attribute, their unified attacks, as well as their assassination

techniques.

With Zhou Weiqing was consolidating in the air, it gave them the best opportunity to attack. However, they did not expect so many of them to possess the Saint Energy and would take action immediately, especially Tian'er's defensive technique, which made their attack fail completely. The seven men in black backed off at the same time, like seven black lightnings. As they retreated, they coincidentally avoided Long Shiya's six-colored light but unfortunately, the Six Ultimate Heavenly God had arrived above them.

No.1 and No.2 then looked at each other and decided to escape without hesitation. The five remaining men in black who followed suit, flew up into the sky at the same time and flew toward Long Shiya while the first two escaped as fast as they could. They might be able to escape if they encountered the old Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya, however, the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor had now evolved into the Six Ultimate Heavenly God. This was the biggest mistake that these men in black had made on their speculation.

The anger in Long Shiya was burning! How could he not be raging, when he saw that they were attacking his best and most beloved disciple? He had always been protecting his family so he would definitely not let them go. Long Shiya's eyes were cold as he looked at the five men in black who were dashing towards him. He waved both his hands and his body then distorted in the air, before five Long Shiyas detached from his body. The five Long Shiyas who looked exactly like the real Long Shiya then made a beeline toward the five men in black.

At the same time, Long Shiya's head and the soles of his feet merged with the Dual Six Ultimate Heavenly Path Formation. The rich six-colored light swept across the heavens and earth, creating a contrast with Zhou Weiqing's Star Divine Territory. The Six Ultimate Heavenly God disappeared within the distorted six-

colored light. As he appeared again, he blocked No.1 and No.2 while the other five men in black who were far away from their black light transformed into fireworks and disappeared.

When No.1 and No.2 were covered in the Six Ultimate Divine Territory, they felt their bodies tightening. The Water, Fire, Earth, Wind, Light and Darkness Attributes became a restrictive energy to them. They could not defend themselves at all when faced with a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse when they were only at a mere Heavenly King-tier, despite possessing pure Destruction Energy. On top of that, being a unique being aside, the Six Ultimate Heavenly God Long Shiya had attributes aside from Saint Energy. The men in black stood no chance in the Six Ultimate Divine Territory.

Desperation was burning in No.1 and No.2's eyes. However, there was nothing that they could do now. Long Shiya had just learnt the Six Ultimate Divine Territory with Sixfold Chain as one of the major abilities. Long Shiya was the ruler in the Six Ultimate Divine Territory, and the chain with six attributes were unbreakable without any Divine Territory abilities.

A terrifying wave of energy was circulating in the air as Long Shiya stood before No.1 and No.2. He then said coldly, "I see that you are all from the Blood Red Hell. You actually had the guts to attack my disciple."

Their movements, including their Divine Thought were completely suppressed but they could still speak. Knowing that they had nowhere to run, No.1 said coldly, "No matter what you do, you're only killing yourself. Long Shiya junior, stop pretending to be a senior in front of me. You weren't born yet when I was ruling the mainland three hundred years ago."

'Hmm?' Long Shiya was stunned. Three hundred years ago? Although a Heavenly Jewel Master could lengthen their lifespan when their ability had reached certain point, he had never heard of anyone who could live for three hundred years. As he moved his

finger by instinct, two six-colored lights swept above the two men in black's heads and tore the black cloth they were covered in, into pieces. Long Shiya gasped even though he had prepared himself when he saw what No.1 and No.2 looked like.

The duo who stood before him were not human; he was looking at two skulls! There was a black flaming glow in the skulls' eyes. Long Shiya waved his right hand again and tore their black clothes open. As expected, there were two black skeletons. The most terrifying part was that they were still sentient and could fight, just as well as they spoke. That was beyond Long Shiya's expectations.

"What are you?"

Chapter 799: Luring a Dragon, Second to None (2)

No.1 let out a cold scoff, "I was a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse back in the day, but I've lost my flesh when I was resurrected. Otherwise, it wouldn't have been so easy for all of you to stop us earlier. Fen Tian won't let you go, just wait for destruction to arrive."

Two bangs were heard right after he spoke, and nobody expected No.1 and No.2 to self-explode. The overbearing black destructive flames exploded out of nowhere and were swept toward Long Shiya. He let his guard down as he was shocked at what they revealed to him, otherwise, he would not let them self-explode happen at all.

The six-colored light began to circle like a gigantic whirlpool around Long Shiya's body and blocked the black flame outside easily. Meanwhile, No.1 and No.2 disappeared completely without leaving a single trail. Long Shiya was visibly deep in thought as he stood there and paused in thought.

"A Heavenly King-tier skeleton? They even possess the Destruction Attribute. What a relentless person Lord Fen Tian can be!" He thought. It was obvious that the skeletons were the Blood Red Hell's ancestors. The fact that Fen Tian managed to do this, let alone dig up his ancestor's remains from the grave was unforgivable.

Long Shiya did not stay too long as he had no idea how many people Lord Fen Tian sent this time around. Protecting his beloved discipline was his top priority. Zhou Weiqing, who was currently in mid-air did not seem to be affected by anything at all, as he continued with his consolidation without so much as a thought of what was happening outside.

As there were more and more green patterns appearing in the

sky, its magnificent colors were gradually showing. Meanwhile, the Jade Dragon on the other side was slowly shrinking. However, judging by its size, the consolidation process had just begun. Zhou Weiqing floated there without an expressionless face. There was only focus and perseverance in his hands, with a rhythm to both of them. He began to accelerate at a slow speed, gradually speeding up the consolidation process.

At that moment, the Shangguan triplets were on the ground. The Destruction Energy had certainly affected them as the pure energy was more powerful than the one that they encountered in the past. However, they had consolidated the Saint Nucleus Core before. Although it was not a true Saint Nucleus Core, its Saint Energy could not be said to be weak. It had slowly recovered after some time of recuperation.

The time required for the consolidation process would be unbearably long for the outside world. Soon, three days had passed. In mid-air, Zhou Weiqing's still maintained his focused expression and his body was just as stable as the time he started the consolidation process. However, people who knew could tell that Zhou Weiqing's five-meter-tall energy body began to fade and was becoming the way it was in the beginning. It was clear that this was caused by the draining of his bodily energy. On the other hand, the Jade Dragon was now a-third smaller than it used to be.

Since the consolidation process was rather lengthy, the powerhouses of the Peerless Sect did not dare to be careless at all. Under Long Shiya's coordination, they were taking breaks in turns. At the same time, he arranged many soldiers to lock down many of the passages in Heavenly Bow City and to stop business operations. For the sake of Zhou Weiqing, Heavenly Bow City had given its all, its utmost effort to make that happen.

Soon, four days had passed. It had been a full seven days, but Zhou Weiqing's consolidation had yet to end. When the Jade Dragon's size had shrunk by half, the speed of his consolidation

had clearly slowed down. Although nobody knew what he was doing with the decrease in speed, the slower pace meant that his consolidation as a whole would now take a longer time.

Zhou Weiqing's energy body had faded even more; one could even see his actual body in the body of energy. However, the only thing that did not change was Zhou Weiqing's expression. He was deeply focused since the beginning until this very point in time. What was most impressive was how the scroll was being consolidated out of thin air. Throughout the seven days, one could roughly make out its shape.

The jade green glow looked like it was forming a huge web in the sky with many odd patterns on it; each was complicated, yet magnificent. If it was a Consolidated Equipment Scroll, one could see what was it consolidating into from the image that appeared on it. However, nobody could identify what was on the one that Zhou Weiqing was consolidating. The patterns looked like it had a pattern but nobody could identify what kind of consolidated equipment it was. It was definitely not merely a web.

Amongst all of them, Duan Tianlang was the only one who knew the secret as he was the one who designed the scroll. Although it was Zhou Weiqing who was making the scroll, he had no idea what kind of consolidation transformation the completed scroll would do to his Ringless Ground Purging Set. Duan Tianlang had been watching from below, not wanting to miss any details. Even though Long Shiya came to him and tried to get him to rest, he rejected without hesitation. Safe to say, his eyes never looked away from Zhou Weiqing throughout the entire process. He ignored Fatty Long completely.

Long Shiya was helpless, all he could was to help Duan Tianlang adjust his body with his Heavenly Energy carefully. Fortunately, the modification Zhou Weiqing performed on Duan Tianlang earlier was thorough. Although it drained him a lot more this time, the impact on his body was not as bad as it was before. At the very

least, it would not harm his life.

"Old Duan, how much longer does Weiqing need to complete this?" Long Shiya could not help but ask.

Duan Tianlang looked into the sky and shook his head lightly. He said, "I have no idea as well. The pattern of the design gets more complicated as he continues. As the entire process has to be coordinated from the beginning, this is the reason Weiqing's speed is slowing down. However, you don't have to worry. If Weiqing is unable to take it, then no God-tier Master in this world would have the perseverance to make this scroll. I definitely have confidence in him. A miracle would certainly happen under the Astral Divine Territory."

Soon, another seven days had passed, followed by another seven. After 21 days, neither Zhou Weiqing's confidantes nor Six Ultimate Heavenly God Long Shiya could take it anymore. In the air, the Jade Dragon had already lost its dragon form. What was left was a cloud of a jade green light. Zhou Weiqing's appearance was the main reason why they were panicking. His original energy body had disappeared, even the Astral Divine Territory in the sky had become extremely dim. The stars were blue, showing imminent signs of a collapse. Under such circumstance, who could tell how much longer Zhou Weiqing could hold on?

Zhou Weiqing who had revealed his actual body still had a glow in his eyes, but his face was pale. His body would occasionally show a slight tremble when he was moving his hands. It was clear that he could not take it any longer. Looking at his current speed, he would take at least a couple of days to complete the consolidation process! That was the reason why everyone was panicking. However, Zhou Weiqing had sacrificed so much by now. Who would dare to take the lead to ask him to stop?

Time passed by, and soon, three days had passed. Zhou Weiqing's body began to shake in the air. His body did not stop shaking but his hands and the expression in his eyes were the only indications

of stability. Zhou Weiqing's body was tremendously small, hovering above Heavenly Bow City while the massive jade green light lit up everything. The Astral Divine Territory had completely disappeared yesterday, and the jade-green virtual Consolidation Equipment Scroll looked like a brand new sky, giving off a mesmerizing jade-green color that shone above Heavenly Bow City.

The consolidation had come to its final moment but Zhou Weiqing's consolidation speed had been slowed down to the speed of a snail inching its way forward. Tian'er, Shangguan Xue'er, Fei'er, Bing'er and Little Witch was not protecting Zhou Weiqing in the sky at that moment. Long Shiya was the only one there. The five of them were kneeling before Duan Tianlang. Although they did not say anything, everyone knew what they were begging for. Duan Tianlang himself could barely move with all of them at his feet.

Duan Tianlang clenched his teeth without saying anything. To him, the scroll was too important, especially during the final moment of the consolidation. Although Zhou Weiqing's progress was extremely slow, he was still going on after all. The wings on Zhou Weiqing's back were stretched open; he was not consuming his Saint Energy alone as it was completely drained now. He was now consuming his own life force; holding on with the breath in his chest.

At that moment, Duan Tianlang was not only thinking about himself but also Zhou Weiqing as well. If Zhou Weiqing failed this time, one could imagine the severity of the impact on him as he might not be able to break through the Heavenly God-tier forever. However, if Zhou Weiqing managed to do it, the door to the Heavenly God-tier would be wide open for him. Even if he did not achieve this immediately, it was just a matter of time and it would definitely not take long.

As the five wives sensed the draining of Zhou Weiqing's life, they

all thought of something before Duan Tianlang did. They knew very well that if there was anybody who could stop Zhou Weiqing from continuing, it would not be Zhou Weiqing's father, Admiral Zhou, and not Zhou Weiqing's master, Six Ultimate Heavenly God Long Shiya, but the master junior who was in front of them.

The five wives continued kneeling for an entire day and night. By then, Zhou Weiqing who was in the air became even more unstable. The scroll that he was completing on his own was too difficult. Indeed, Zhou Weiqing's cultivation base was sufficient, far more than enough. However, one should not forget that he was not an actual God-tier Master! He only managed to do what a God-tier Master could do because he relied on Time Reversal. When he started making this Consolidated Equipment Scroll, it consumed a majority of his Saint Energy which exceeded what the outside world could replenish. The Jade Dragon was much tougher than he had imagined. Therefore, even Duan Tianlang did not foresee that making this scroll would be this difficult.

Chapter 800: Luring a Dragon, Second to None (3)

Duan Tianlang let out a long sigh as he looked at Zhou Weiqing who was shaking in mid-air, looking like he was going to collapse anywhere. As a God-tier Master himself, he knew best how much longer Zhou Weiqing needed to complete the consolidation. Even if he was left with the final part, he would need three more days! If Zhou Weiqing had to go on for another three days in his current condition, his body would most likely not be able to take it.

"Junior Master." The five wives kneeled before him when they saw Duan Tianlang standing up. To them, they did not care even if Zhou Weiqing's cultivation base made no improvement at all. All they wanted was for their man to live! They could not suppress the emotions they had looking at Zhou Weiqing's situation in the air.

Duan Tianlang took a deep breath slowly and flew into the sky by releasing Heavenly Energy. Long Shiya who was mid-air had been observing what was happening to Duan Tianlang. He could not advise Duan Tianlang as the latter had sacrificed far too much for Zhou Weiqing. Whether he was Zhou Weiqing's master or Duan Tianlang's friend, there was nothing he could do at that very moment.

Long Shiya was secretly relieved when he saw Duan Tianlang flying. 'Is it finally ending?' He thought. However, he felt awful and sadness filled his heart. He felt terrible for Duan Tianlang as the more hopeful one was, the bigger the disappointment would be. One could imagine the impact on Duan Tianlang for the failure this time. Perhaps his best brother would bring this regret with him when he left this world. At the same time, he was sad as well. As a person who possessed the Hiltless Heavenly Purging Set, Long Shiya also wished to see the eleventh piece of the Ringless Ground Purging Set! However, it seemed like it was far from possible now.

Duan Tianlang pursed his lips as he flew slowly towards Zhou Weiqing's direction. The closer he was, the clearer he could see Zhou Weiqing's condition. It was startling, to say the least. To maintain the consolidation process, many of Zhou Weiqing's blood vessels were clearly visible on the surface of his skin. He had indeed tried his very best to hold on to the consolidation by burning through his life force! Furthermore, he could not afford the slightest mistake.

"Weiqing, let's forget about it..." Duan Tianlang said softly as his lips were shaking. However, nobody had expected Zhou Weiqing to ignore what Duan Tianlang had just said. His hand movements did not seem to show any signs of stopping at all. Just as everyone panicked and did not know what to do, a layer of a faint jade-green light emitted from Zhou Weiqing's body.

A mellow sigh came from the sky, "You idiot, why are you reluctant to borrow my strength? Do you really think that I'll live if you drain yourself to death? Such an idiot!"

Then, the layer of the jade-green light emitting from Zhou Weiqing's body grew. In an instant, it had dyed Zhou Weiqing's entire body in a shade of jade-green color. The life force that he had been consuming was recovering at a stunning speed. Zhou Weiqing was also connecting the Saint Energy that was initially unwilling to complete the final integration, like a kitten under the jade-green glow and imprinted itself on the very end of the scroll.

A beautiful silhouette appeared in the sky. Six wings opened up on her back, and her expression was gentle as she looked at the persistent man below him. At the same time, a glow was beaming on her chest. She then mumbled to herself, "Why do I have such painful emotions in my heart? Could this be the affection or the love that humans speak of? But, I'm not human."

The appearance of the Elven Queen made a massive part of the sky turn a jade-green color. At the same time, a rich life aura descended from the heavens. The Elven Queen's blood was

probably the most crucial part of the Consolidating Ink. Because of this, the Consolidating Ink became rather smooth. The last step that would have initially taken another three days had been completed by Zhou Weiqing in an instant, with the support of the Elven Queen.

A scorching jade-green light was shining in the sky while a dense wave of energy shook the area above Heavenly Bow City intensely. Even such a powerhouse like the Elven Queen had to avoid the scorching light temporarily and backed off far away. A few days back, when Zhou Weiqing began consuming his life force, the Elven Queen who shared a life with him had felt it. Although Zhou Weiqing insisted not to borrow the Elven Queen's life force, how could she not notice it, especially since they were connected closely?

Under such circumstances, the Elven Queen made her way there immediately without hesitation. Even she herself did not know if she did it to save her own life or out of her concern for Zhou Weiqing. It was only when she came to release the life force into Zhou Weiqing by force to protect his body via the connection they had, that she realized that she might have an indescribable connection with this man. It was most probably caused by the time when they absorbed the energy of one another.

The jade-green light was changing its form slowly in the air. The complicated patterns completely disappeared within a second and turned into a piercing, jade-green light before it sped thousands of meters away instantly. It was drifting quickly in the air like it was celebrating a new life. When the jade green light began to move, it looked like the Jade Dragon's previous form. However, it was much bigger than the Jade Dragon now. Slowly, intense lights like stars sparkling could be seen on it. Its original green color had gradually faded following the appearance of the stars and it turned a shade of white. It was a crystal clear white.

The Elven Queen could not help but open her beautiful eyes

widely when she saw the white color. She could clearly feel its contents. Zhou Weiqing made it! He had successfully created the eleventh piece of the legendary set. However, it was not merely a legendary set achieved by a first timer. Although Zhou Weiqing was considered a true rookie in the eyes of a God-tier Master, without Time Reversal, there was no way he could complete the consolidation this time. However, one should not forget that how difficult it was to perform the consolidation, especially without using Heavenly Energy!

In the making of the Consolidation Equipment Scroll of the legendary set, the creator needed to integrate his own Heavenly Energy into the scroll in order to gradually complete it. What Zhou Weiqing put in was not Heavenly Energy, but Saint Energy instead. He had arrived at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly Emperor-tier, and he had the power of the Starcrux Saint Nucleus Core's Saint Energy.

That was the reason why it was so difficult to make the scroll, and was possibly the reason why Zhou Weiqing's energy was almost drained. One should know that Zhou Weiqing's ability now was nothing short of a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse. He only managed to complete consolidating the final scroll with the help of the Elven Queen. One could imagine how much Saint Energy was absorbed during the consolidation of the scroll. On top of that, a massive amount of Saint Energy provided by the Astral Divine Territory had been drained too.

Levitating midair, Duan Tianlang who was not far away from Zhou Weiqing did not have the intention to back off at all. It was Long Shiya who came to protect him lest he was washed away by the overbearing remaining waves of energy in the air.

"Luring the Dragon, Second to None. This shall be a miracle that will not occur twice. It's done - we've made it! I've finally seen the completion of the eleventh piece of the legendary set. Besides, this is completely not the legendary set that I designed. The Saint

Energy had improved it. We really did it!"

The massive white light instantly shot tens of thousands of meters above the air. They could only see the white dots of light that were left. However, Zhou Weiqing was not in a rush this time as he clearly felt the connection between him and the white light. The eleventh piece of the Ringless Ground Purging Set had finally been completed. The scroll that was consolidated from thin air had become a part of his body as soon as it was completed.

The very next second, the white light was sent down from above. It spread out when it arrived hundreds of meters above Zhou Weiqing's head. It then spread out in the form of a gigantic white halo. Zhou Weiqing lifted his right hand up entirely by instinct. There were eleven Ice Jade Physical Jewels releasing a gentle white light on his right hand. It seemed like it was choking with the white halo in the air. Then, the gigantic white halo descended from above. A deafening roar of a dragon's groan coupled with a peculiar fluctuation that seemed to contain a profound understanding of the heavens and earth gathered towards Zhou Weiqing's right hand from every direction.

Buzz —

As the white light met the Ice Jade Physical Jewels, Zhou Weiqing's entire body began to shake intensely. All the Saint Energy that he had consumed seemed to be completely refilled immediately. Besides, the ten-piece Ringless Ground Purging Set that he already possessed seemed to be activated by the milky white light. They released waves of energy which felt like it was rejecting the last eleventh piece.

A peculiar thing then happened. A Physical Jewel was consolidated apart from the eleven Physical Jewels that Zhou Weiqing possessed. What set it apart was that although it was also white, it was different from the eleven of them. It was crystal clear; the white jewel that was filled with a profound understanding of the heavens and earth had become the leader of

the other eleven Ice Jade Physical Jewels. Besides, this Physical Jewel seemed a little different from the remaining eleven jewels as it felt like it was a void. They could vaguely see a tiny dragon roaming about in the white jewel.

The initial Ringless Ground Purging Set eventually became quiet. It took a much lesser time to be mastered than what Zhou Weiqing had imagined. Then, ten dark golden lights lit up on Zhou Weiqing's body in a wave as the Ringless Ground Purging Set was put onto his body. It was still the ten-piece set but it was not bright gold when it was completed. It had reverted to a dark golden color, similar to how it was in the beginning. However, Zhou Weiqing clearly felt that the dark golden colored ten-piece set was completely different than it was before.

Chapter 801: Grand Tournament of Saint Lands (1)

Originally, his Ringless Ground Purging Set was purely for the sake of energy and several other boosts to his abilities. However, this time he noticed that his Ringless Ground Purging Set had already become part of his Saint Energy, and it was completely attuned to his energy. He discovered that the starlights that were hidden in the midst of the dark golden color were like an armor on his body that had been fully condensed by his Nebula Saint Energy.

At the same time, he was also clear that once his cultivation base broke through to the Heavenly God Tier, the eleventh piece of the legendary armor set that had just been completed would go through its final fusion. It would allow him to fully own a brand-new legendary suit that could be considered as the best in all the lands.

Unfortunately, at this moment, Zhou Weiqing did not have the time to test the changes that the Ringless Ground Purging Set had gone through. It was all he could do to look at the Elven Queen as he nodded faintly at her. In the next moment, his body slumped backward as he fell and fainted into Long Shiya's arms.

The consolidation through the past twenty days was just too enormous and exhausting for Zhou Weiqing. Be it his body, Saint Energy or his Divine Thought, they were all overloaded. Had it not been for the nourishment from the Elven Queen's tremendous vitality that allowed his body to go through another evolution and complete the Dragon-Tiger Demon God Transformation, he would have most likely long collapsed from the pressure. It was not a stroll in the park to create a miracle using the Atmospheric Energy after all.

When the Elven Queen arrived, she did not believe that she could do the things that Zhou Weiqing had done. Moreover, her

cultivation base was already at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly God Tier and not at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly Emperor Tier.

The Elven Queen glanced at Zhou Weiqing and was deep in thought but she did not say anything as she took a step forward in the air and vanished without a trace.

Although this time Zhou Weiqing had suffered quite some damage, the returns that he gained was equally enormous as well. Whether it was due to his confidence or the control of his Saint Energy, or even the elevation of his body the moment it overloaded, they were all beneficial to him in his next step of breaking through to the Heavenly God Tier.

Long Shiya held onto Zhou Weiqing's body as he descended from the sky. The sealing of the Heavenly Bow City which lasted for nearly a month and all the peculiar spectacles finally had the curtains drawn down. Even after several decades had gone by, the miracles that took place during this month would continue to be the talk of the town for years to come.

Now that Zhou Weiqing had finally completed one of his important mission, the commotion in the Boundless Mainland had also died down and it became unusually peaceful.

Be it the Dandun Empire or the Bai Da Empire, they both actually retreated as if nothing had taken place at all. As for the three Shangguan sisters and Tian'er, they had also left the Heavenly Bow City quietly after Zhou Weiqing regained his consciousness from the coma. They returned to the Heaven's Expanse Palace and Heavenly Snow Mountain respectively.

Those with discerning eyes could clearly see that the current tranquility in the mainland was only temporary. It was apparent that the Dandun Empire would not give up just like that. Apart from that, the Zhongtian Empire could not easily obtain news from the Dandun Empire any longer. Both the Dandun and Bai Da

Empire had tightly sealed off their information from the outer world. All the major empires were in full swing, preparing and dispatching their armies. The commoners had no idea when the war would break out but every top official from all the nations knew about this very clearly. The most crucial thing lay in the upcoming Grand Tournament of Saint Lands that was about to take place.

In the earlier days, the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands was held once every five years. However, it had now been changed to being held once every decade. In the previous years, this tournament was a place for the Five Great Saint Lands to display their true power. The Saint Land with the highest rank would have a greater influence on the mainland.

Just take the previous Grand Tournament of Saint Lands for example, the moment the Heavenly Demon Sect came out last again in the tournament, coupled with the fact that most of its followers possessed the Evil Attribute, it was suppressed by the other four Great Saint Lands together. As a result, the influence of the sect had greatly decreased. At the same time, it was also rejected by all the other nations. Otherwise, it would not have fallen into such pitiful state in the first place. The Heavenly Demon Sect would mostly like be destroyed had it not been for Zhou Weiqing's help.

This time, the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands would take place in the Heavenly Snow Mountain. Be it in brightness or darkness, a great number of people looked forward to the outcome of this tournament.

In the eyes of the people, it was clear that the Heavenly Demon Sect had long lost the qualifications to join the Grand Tournament. The Blood Red Hell's uprising influence was bound to be crushed by the other three Great Saint Lands anyway. However, nobody was able to predict what the final outcome would be. If the Blood Red Hell was successfully suppressed by the other three Great

Saint Lands, then the alliance between Dandun and Bai Da Empire would definitely be squashed as well. On the contrary, this might be the best time for another great empire to rise abruptly. It would be a mystery if Zhongtian Empire was able to block the Dandun and Bai Da Empire allied forces by then.

Of course, no one knew what was going on inside the Saint Lands at the moment. However, the atmosphere on the mainland was already unprecedentedly tensed. Every nation's top officials had their eyes all focused on the Heavenly Snow Mountain as they quietly waited for the arrival of the final result.

...

Heavenly Jewel Island, Heaven's Expanse Palace.

Shangguan Tianyang was lost in his thoughts as he sat on the master throne. Shangguan Tianyue stood beside him with a calm expression on his face.

"Have the three girls left?" Shangguan Tianyang asked nonchalantly.

Shangguan Tianyue nodded his head. A slightly dejected look could be seen on his face. "It's hard to keep a daughter at home!"

A faint smile crept up on Shangguan Tianyang's face as he shook his head, "Perhaps, this is the best outcome after all."

"Huh?" Shangguan Tianyue stared at his brother in shock. In truth, he knew perfectly well that his brother was actually concerned about having all three Shangguan sisters married off to Zhou Weiqing, especially Shangguan Xue'er. After all, even if they did not take into consideration the fact that Shangguan Xue'er was his daughter, she was still the one who was groomed to become the next Heaven's Expanse Palace successor. On top of that, she was also the most outstanding person among all the younger generation in the Heaven's Expanse Palace.

Shangguan Tianyang continued dejectedly, "I heard that fellow

has already completed the eleventh piece of his Ringless Ground Purging Set. Maybe we still have the ability to stop the rise of both Dandun Empire and Blood Red Hell. However, nobody will be able to stop him from leading the rise of the Heavenly Bow Empire anymore. Fortunately, this kid's not greedy, and he's not our enemy."

The moment Shangguan Tianyue thought of that little brat, a faint smile appeared on his face as well, "Brother, if you're given another chance to redo everything, how do you think you'll deal with him?"

A cold gleam shimmered in Shangguan Tianyang's eyes, "I'll kill him without any hesitation. Or maybe, forcefully take him into the Heaven's Expanse Palace."

Shangguan Tianyue cracked a smile, "You're right. If we have another chance to redo everything, I'll marry Bing'er off to him immediately and assist him in rebuilding his nation. Then, he'll truly become one of us Heaven's Expanse Palace."

Shangguan Tianyang cast a glance at him, "Unfortunately, there's no 'if' in this world. Anyway, is everything ready?"

Shangguan Tianyue's face instantly turned solemn as he said, "Everything's ready. We're ready to leave at any time."

Shangguan Tianyang suddenly rose from his throne, and his eyes were brightly lit, "Alright, let me see how strong this Blood Red Hell actually is to the extent that they dare to provoke the entire mainland! Let us go to the Heavenly Snow Mountain!"

"Yes!"

...

Heavenly Snow Mountain.

Unlike the Wan Shou Empire's weather that was pleasant all year round, a piercing cold wind blew on Heavenly Snow Mountain that was situated atop the mountains. Even a Heavenly Jewel Master

that had a slightly weaker cultivation base would have a hard time standing still here.

At this moment, two people were standing, rooted to the spot. One man and one woman. The woman was leaning into the man's embrace while he gently stroked her beautiful hair

"Silly, you're going to become a mum soon, you know. Look at how spoiled you are."

If anybody from the Wan Shou Empire happened to hear such kind words coming out of this man, their jaws would be opened so wide that it would most likely drop to the ground. This was because the man was none other than the Mountain Lord of the Heavenly Snow Mountain who was in charge of the lives of ten million people living in the Wan Shou Empire — the strongest man in the world. Or at least, he would remain the strongest man in the entire world until somebody appeared to defeat him.

"Father, when will I be able to see Mother again? Will she come back if Weiqing and I are formally married?" Tian'er muttered lightly as she leaned back into her father's arms.

Xue Ao'tian's eyes turned solemn instantly. Although he had countless maids and concubines, he only had one true wife. The only child that he had was Tian'er who was lying in his arms now. Could it be that he was infertile? Of course not. The reason he only had one child was because of his profound love towards her.

"I guess the only person who can make your mother come back and never leave is that little brat. It has never crossed my mind that he'll be breaking through to the Heavenly God Tier so soon in just within these few years. Looks like your mother is more of a visionary than I am. Still, I really want to kick this boy's ass at least once! You two are not even married yet, and he has already given me a grandson! Tell me, don't you think he deserves a good beating?"

"Father..." Tian'er squirmed in her father's embrace. Her delicate

face was completely flushed.

Xue Ao'tian chuckled, "Just like the saying goes, 'a married daughter is just like water that has been poured — she doesn't belong to her parents anymore.' Anyway, I'm not going to meddle in your other business but you have to get married here at the Heavenly Snow Mountain. I believe that the two fellows in the Heaven's Expanse Palace will most likely have the same thoughts as I do. Zhou Weiqing is really a lucky bastard!"

Tian'er stared curiously at her father's smile before she asked, "Father, you don't seem like you're worried about the upcoming Grand Tournament of Saint Lands at all? Weiqing told me that the Blood Red Hell is not a land that's easy to deal with. Not only tha..."

Xue Ao'tian waved his hands, preventing her from continuing, "They're just a couple of small clowns. The true enemy is the one pulling the strings behind the scene. I've already read the letter that Weiqing told you to bring me. This time, I'll join him in this game. The mainland will not be chaotic. Don't worry."

"Alright," Tian'er did not say anything more as she continued to snuggle against her father quietly. She knew that once she became Zhou Weiqing's wife, she would not have a lot of time to spend with her father anymore. For this reason, she felt completely attached to her father.

Xue Ao'tian looked towards the far distance. Three days. Three more days before the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands. Xue Ao'tian's heart that had not wavered in many years started to look forward to the upcoming tournament.

"Mountain Lord," a respectful voice sounded from not far away.

Creases crept up in between Xue Ao'tian's brows. It was obvious that he was dissatisfied that his sweet moment with his daughter was disrupted.

Just several dozen meters away, Gu Site, the strong and sturdy Lion King, was standing quietly with his disheveled and tousled hair. No, he was no longer the Lion King because his position had been stripped away by Xue Ao'tian due to the incident previously. The person who was currently in charge of the Leontrope was his son — Gu Yingbing.

Chapter 802: Grand Tournament of Saint Lands (2)

Perhaps it was because he had been living on the Heavenly Snow Mountain for some time now that Gu Site's old lion's temper had tamed down a lot. However, there was something peculiar in the glances that he occasionally cast at Tian'er.

Xue Ao'tian asked nonchalantly, "Is everything settled?"

"Yes, Mountain Lord. We've already evacuated all of the Heavenly Beasts in the Wan Shou Empire to the outskirts, and the Beastmaster Armies are stationed at the mountain foot, waiting to be dispatched at any time. The Lion King has already gone uphill, and all of the powerhouses at Heavenly King Tier and above from every tribe have all gathered. There's a total of two Heavenly Emperors and twenty-one Heavenly Kings.

Xue Ao'tian nodded his head, "Alright. Pass my order down. From now on, nobody is allowed to act on their own without authorization. No exploration is allowed either."

"Yes," Gu Site replied respectfully. He did not question Xue Ao'tian's command and left directly after he replied.

A cold look flashed across Xue Ao'tian's face, "Come on! I want to see how big of a storm all of you can stir up on the Heavenly Snow Mountain!"

The Heavenly Snow Mountain was actually ranked very far behind among all the Saint Lands before Xue Ao'tian built it up. During that period of time, its position was even worse than the Heavenly Demon Sect. However, the Heavenly Snow Mountain had the Wan Shou Empire as their foundation, unlike the Heavenly Demon Sect. Even if the Heaven's Expanse Palace had always been powerful and influential, they did not dare to back the Heavenly Snow Mountain into a tight corner.

Due to Xue Ao'tian's rising influence, the Heavenly Snow Mountain began to rise rapidly in its rank the moment this Heavenly God-tier powerhouse appeared. However, it was still slightly lower than the Heaven's Expanse Palace. This could be seen clearly from the number of powerhouses that they had in hand right now. With only two Heavenly Emperor-tier cultivators, this number was probably only slightly better than the Heavenly Demon Sect. Had it not been for Xue Ao'tian, one could easily imagine what the Heavenly Snow Mountain's position would be like on the mainland. Of course, the Heavenly Snow Mountain also had its own virtues.

Things were beginning to turn turbulent in the Wan Shou Empire. All kinds of powerhouses from every corner of the world were making their way towards the same destination. The battle that would determine the status quo and even the safety of the mainland was about to begin.

Three days passed in just a blink of an eye.

The Heavenly Snow Mountain was usually covered with mist and fog on most days due to the extremely high altitude. However, it was somewhat special today. Somehow, the sky was blue and clear. Not even a cloud was in sight. The air surrounding the Heavenly Snow Mountain seemed very pure, and the merciless sunlight raised the Heavenly Snow Mountain's temperature way higher than usual.

Summit Platform — the true entrance to the Heavenly Snow Mountain Saint Land. 20 young disciples were standing in a row on two sides. The newly appointed Lion King, Gu Yingbing and the Tiger King, Xue Ao'ying were both standing at the innermost region. Today, the both of them were responsible for welcoming the guests.

The Tiger King, Xue Aoying appeared to be very calm but Gu Yingbing seemed a little excited. He had always been a man whose courage would mount as the battle progressed. His pride had

received a big blow when he lost to Zhou Weiqing. However, the blow became the driving force behind all his hard work. In only two years, under Xue Ao'tian's constant guidance, he had already broken through to the Heavenly King Tier and became the youngest Heavenly King-tier powerhouse in the history of the Wan Shou Empire.

Although Gu Yingbing did not know how this year's Grand Tournament of Saint Lands was going to unfold, he had a premonition the moment he saw Tian'er's return. He knew that he would see Zhou Weiqing once again in the Grand Tournament that would be held in the Heavenly Snow Mountain.

The moment he thought of Zhou Weiqing, he could not help but clenched his fists tightly. Now that he was already in the Heavenly King Tier, he had long made up his mind that he would challenge Zhou Weiqing again the next time he laid eyes on him. Even if it was not for Tian'er's sake, he would have to fight for his own honor.

Unfortunately, he did not know that 'the youngest Heavenly King in Wan Shou Empire' title had already been taken away by Tian'er not long ago.

The sun had already risen high in the sky. The Tiger King, Xue Aoying, finally made his move as he said in a deep voice, "They're coming. Let us welcome them!" Having said that, he strode forward and walked towards the mountain entrance with Gu Yingbing by his side.

The roads on Heavenly Snow Mountain were extremely steep. One would definitely feel dizzy if one looked down from the top. Gu Yingbing could clearly see that a group of yellow-clad figures was rapidly climbing up the mountain at an extremely fast pace. From a rough glance, it could be seen that there were at least several dozen people making their way towards them.

Soon enough, the yellow figures approached the top of the

mountain.

Xue Aoying laughed out loudly, "Your elegance is still as graceful as before, Valley Lord Huang. Welcome to the Heavenly Snow Mountain."

A group of yellow figures flickered pass as many yellow-clad powerhouses rose up to the sky before landing in front of Xue Aoying and Gu Yingbing.

The two people who stood before them was a man and a woman. They both appeared to be in their thirties. The man was tall and slender with dashing eyebrows and fiery eyes. The surrounding air behind him was slightly distorted. It was a result of the Time Attribute, not the Fire Attribute. The woman beside him looked very delicate and gentle. Standing half a foot behind the man, her eyes were filled with extreme tenderness. One could easily tell that they were husband and wife and were a sweet and loving couple.

However, if one were to pay closer attention, one could see the vicissitudes of life deep in their eyes. It was apparent that their appearance did not match their true age.

"Tiger King, you're still as hale and hearty as before. This must be Yingbing, right? I heard that you've inherited the position of the Lion King. Congratulations to you!" The man said with a smile on his face. His tone was mild, and his voice was clear and warm. It was very pleasing to the ears.

Gu Yingbing was also looking at the newly arrived guests from top to bottom. He knew that the couple standing before him was none other than the Valley Lords of Love Valley, Huang Xingyun, and Yun Ruoyun. As the ruler of one of the major Saint Land, one could easily imagine just how powerful their strength was. He had seen them both previously in the last Grand Tournament of Saint Lands. At that time, the Demonic Emperor, Wu Yueyun, was defeated by their hands. This couple would always team up and launch an attack together. This was also the tradition of Love

Valley.

"Good morning, Valley Lord Huang, Valley Lord Yun," Gu Yingbing bowed slightly to the both of them. His position was different now. He was now the tribe leader of the Heavenly Divine Earth Spirit Lion Tribe, and he was also the King of the Wan Shou Empire. His identity did not allow him to be too courteous towards them.

Standing behind Huang Xingyun and Yun Ruoyun was a total of 36 people who came from the Love Valley. All of them were at least Heavenly King-tier powerhouses and above. The reason they climbed up instead of flying up earlier was out of respect for the Heavenly Snow Mountain. This was also an unwritten rule in the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands.

The thing that grabbed Gu Yingbing's attention in particular was the couple that followed closely behind Huang Xingyun and Yun Ruoyun. Both of them appeared to be in their forties. However, their auras seemed to be too complex for Gu Yingbing to fathom. Gu Yingbing still could not see through them with his Heavenly King-tier cultivation base. The couple obviously had a cultivation base at the Heavenly Emperor Tier. Along with the Huang Xingyun and his partner, all of them added up would total to six Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouses.

Six Heavenly Emperors and 30 Heavenly Kings. It seemed like the Love Valley was going all out this time. The Heavenly Snow Mountain would never be able to compete with them in terms of overall strength if Xue Ao'tian's presence was not taken into consideration. After all, Love Valley had always had strong combat abilities. They excelled the most in couple joint battles and using Time attribute from the Saint attributes. During the last Grand Tournament of Saint Lands, Love Valley came out third, ranking above the Blood Red Hell.

Chapter 803: The Saint Land — Peerless Sect

(1)

This time, the army from Love Valley was indeed quite big. Huang Xingyin nodded his head at Gu Yingbin again as he asked, "Are the rest of you not here yet?"

Xue Ao'ying chuckled, "The both of you are the first to arrive. Please have a rest inside. We've already prepared a place for you to rest, and big brother will come and see you two in person later."

Huang Xingyun shook his head, "It's alright. This is the Grand Tournament. There's no need for all these formalities at all. The arena will be here, am I right? I'm sure the rest will arrive soon. We'll just stay here and wait for them. This year's Grand Tournament is the most troublesome. It'll better if we can finish it early."

Xue Ao'ying did not press the matter any further. Instead, he turned to Gu Yingbing and said, "Yingbing, please invite big brother here. Let him know that Valley Lord Huang and Yun have already arrived."

Gu Yingbing nodded his head before turning to go inside the Heavenly Snow Mountain. On the other hand, Huang Xingyun and Yun Ruoyun brought the Love Valley's powerhouses to the south of the vast platform. The Heavenly Snow Mountain's disciples immediately brought them seats and tables. Fruits and food that had already been prepared beforehand were also served to them.

Although the Grand Tournament was only held once every decade, the tournament would not take too long each time. Due to the fact that these powerhouses from different Saint Lands were unwilling to socialize with each other for an extended period of time, they usually would not stay for too long. After all, among the few Saint Lands, even Love Valley and Heaven's Expanse Palace who looked as if they were quite friendly with each other on the

surface also had their guards up against each other. They would never let the other party seize any opportunity or exploit any loopholes for their own use.

Other than the two Valley Lords, the other 34 powerhouses from Love Valley did not even utter a single word ever since the moment they arrived. They continued to calmly wait there and no emotions could be seen on them at all. However, when these 36 people stood together, that invisible oppressive force was so terrifying that even Xue Ao'ying who was a Heavenly Emperor did not want to go near them.

After all, during the previous Grand Tournament, the Love Valley only sent out four Heavenly Emperors. However, the number had increased to six this time.

At this moment, Huang Xingyun suddenly pulled Yun Ruoyun up from her seat and smiled, "Our old friend is here. Tiger King, let us welcome them together."

The couple had already walked ahead to the summit entrance as he spoke.

Everything looked completely white from the mountain. However, if one were to observe carefully, one could see that there were many white dots jumping around like stars all the way up to the summit.

Two gusts of cool breeze surged up. Two white figures had immediately taken the lead and reached the top. They did not even use the mountain wall to assist in their climbing. Instead, they looked like they were flying close to the mountain wall. A pair of tall and sturdy figures garbed in white landed on the ground in an instant. Oh, weren't these the two brothers, Shangguan Tianyang and Tianyue?

Huang Xingyun laughed loudly, "How are you, my brothers? Tianyang and Tianyue?" He took the initiative to welcome them as he greeted them.

Shangguan Tianyang smiled, "You're early, Xingyun. Here I thought we would be the first to arrive."

Huang Xingyun smiled as well, "We've only just reached as well. Brother Tianyang, you really brought a lot of people with you this time, huh?" He even cast a meaningful glance towards Shangguan Tianyang while he spoke.

The smile remained plastered on Shangguan Tianyang's face as if he did not see anything at all. "Well, I can't help it. I feel compelled to bring this many. How've you been, Tiger King?" He finally greeted Xue Ao'ying.

Xue Ao'ying appeared to be unbothered by it. After all, the Heaven's Expanse Palace and the Heavenly Snow Mountain had always been rather hostile towards each other. It would be more accurate to say they both see each other as their biggest opponent. Moreover, he could not be compared to Huang Xingyun from Love Valley as far as their status was concerned

"Greetings, Palace Master Shangguan. It's still good. I'm in the pink of health." Xue Ao'ying replied nonchalantly.

At this moment, all the others from the Heaven's Expanse Palace had also reached the top. To Xue Ao'ying's surprise, the number of powerhouses that the two Shangguan brothers brought with them this time was a lot more compared to the previous tournament. Not counting the two brothers, there were a total of 108 powerhouses who came this time. Although all of the 108 people were only at the Heavenly King Tier, everybody knew that the Heaven's Expanse Palace had an ultimate technique called the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Formation. The greater the number of people who cast this technique, the more powerful and mighty the technique would be. During the last tournament, Xue Ao'tian had no choice but to give up in the end because he could not win against the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Formation that was led by Shangguan Tianyang. It resulted in the Heavenly Snow Mountain placing second in the tournament. Moreover, the Shangguan

brothers only brought 64 people with them at that time. Now that they had 108 people with them, it was apparent that this was the strongest lineup from the Heaven's Expanse Palace so far.

However, it was only right that there should be at least one or two Heavenly Emperors in the Heaven's Expanse Palace. Yet, it seemed like none of them had come for this tournament. However, it was kind of understandable. It was obvious that they were stationed behind to guard the Heaven's Expanse Palace. After all, it could be said that they had brought out the entirety of their main forces this time.

With the same smile still plastered on his face, Shangguan Tianyang said, "Tiger King, where's your brother? All of us old friends are here! He should at least come out to meet us, right?"

The Tiger King's face changed slightly. Just as he was about to say something, a cold voice came from behind, "Since when were the Heavenly Snow Mountain friends with the Heaven's Expanse Palace?"

Everyone could immediately feel a heavy pressure suddenly coming off from the Heavenly Snow Mountain Summit. All of them shifted their gaze towards the voice. They saw the Mountain Lord of the Heavenly Snow Mountain Xue Ao'tian walking out slowly to the front escorted by Gu Yingbing.

Shangguan Tianyang's face darkened slightly, and the smile on his face faded a little. His gaze clashed with Xue Ao'tian's in mid-air. Invisible sparks seemed to be ignited at once.

They were old rivals. Strong hostility burst out without reservation as they met once again.

Huang Xingyun and his wife from Love Valley watched from the side. He proceeded to move half a step to stand next to Shangguan Tianyang. They clearly shared a common hatred towards the enemy. In reality, Love Valley had always been standing alongside the Heaven's Expanse Palace in going against the Heavenly Snow

Mountain. Just like how the Blancpain Empire had been working together with Zhongtian and Fei Li Empire to go against the Wan Shou Empire for so many years.

Xue Ao'tian was not bothered by Huang Xingyun's gaze at all. It was as if all he could see was Shangguan Tianyang alone. A hint of ferocious killing intent could be seen in his sharp gaze. It was as if he would launch an earth-shattering attack at any time he liked.

Shangguan Tianyue also took half a step forward and stood on the other side of Shangguan Tianyang. They still acknowledged Xue Ao'tian as the world's strongest powerhouse. No one here was strong enough to be his opponent if they were to go against him one-on-one. They even feared the Mountain Lord of the Heavenly Snow Mountain would suddenly react and launch a full-blast attack on Shangguan Tianyang. If Shangguan Tianyang was not well-prepared, he could be hurt by that attack.

However, Shangguan Tianyang did not back down at all as he stared straight into Xue Ao'tian's eyes. It was as if he was just staring at an ordinary opponent as he glared coldly at him. Yet, a faint white light had already begun to appear around his body. This was a sign that the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum was about to be launched.

A sneer appeared on the corner of Xue Ao'tian's mouth as he said nonchalantly, "You're still standing at the same spot after so many years. I'm so disappointed!"

Shangguan Tianyang's face immediately darkened when he heard Xue Ao'tian's words. It was obvious that his words had touched a sore spot, "So what? We Heaven's Expanse Palace still remain as the best Saint Land in the world. One person's strength can never win against a group of people."

Xue Ao'tian snorted in disdain, "That might not be true. God knows who'll be the best Saint Land after today!"

"Excuse me, would the two you kindly listen to my humble

opinions?" Huang Xingyun took a step forward again and separated the two Great Saint Land Lords' gazes from each other. However, he had placed himself in a situation where he had to bear a very heavy pressure. These two were the Great Saint Land Lords after all. It was a good thing that he at least still had the support from his wife to support him. For this reason, he was finally able to separate Xue Ao'tian and Shangguan Tianyang's clashes of force like a pin against an awn.

When Huang Xingyun sensed Shangguan Tianyang and Xue Ao'tian's eyes on himself, he continued, "Today's the day of the Grand Tournament of our five Great Saint Lands. Since it's the Grand Tournament, let us do everything in accordance with the rules. Since the people from Blood Red Hell and Heavenly Demon Sect have yet to arrive, let us all stay calm. We'll have our turn to claw at each other's throat later. Not only that..."

Huang Xingyun suddenly paused as he reached here and cast a glance at Xue Ao'tian and Shangguan Tianyang who was standing behind him. His face turned dimmer as he continued, "Over the past few years, the Dandun Empire has been too aggressive to the point that it even wiped off the entire Geritimo Empire. I'm certain that the Blood Red Hell must be pulling the strings behind this incident. That's why this time, we must interrogate them thoroughly when they arrive."

Xue Ao'tian snorted disdainfully, "The Blood Red Hell's only a petty little rascal. Huang Xingyun, you'd better just take your excitement back home. Even if the Dandun Empire had truly become strong, the Wan Shou Empire will definitely not be the ones that would be affected."

Shangguan Tianyang's face instantly darkened, "So does this mean you're going to join hands with Dandun Empire to attack us?"

Xue Ao'tian scoffed, "Why can't I do that? The enemy of my enemy is my friend. Unfortunately, that Blood Red Hell is still not

qualified to join hands with me. Shangguan Tianyang, don't be fooled by the illusion that you're really the best in the world just because your Heaven's Expanse Palace has Zhongtian Empire in your hands. It's true that the Zhongtian Empire has occupied the most strategic location in the central plains. However, don't forget that there's absolutely nothing around your Zhongtian Empire as support. It's not that difficult if someone really wants to annihilate all of you."

Shangguan Tianyang bellowed all of a sudden, "Xue A'otian you wolf! Don't think that I really fear you! You told me I've not made any progress, right? Fine! Let me see how much your cultivation base has improved in the past ten years!"

As he was bellowing, he strode forward and overtook Huang Xingyun before thrusting out a palm all the way straight towards Xue Ao'tian.

A milky colored palm-shaped force emerged at once from his palm. It was only the size of a palm when it first materialized. However, it started to grow at a horrifying speed within seconds. By the time it arrived in front of Xue Ao'tian, it had already grown to one meter in diameter. Although not an ounce of energy force was leaked out to the surroundings, everyone was clear on how terrifying the amount of force that was contained in this one palm.

If Shangguan Tianyang did not put on his Boundless Infinitum Set, he could never go against Xue Ao'tian

However, he would possess the strength to go against a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse the moment he put his set on. Otherwise, it would be impossible for the Heaven's Expanse Palace to defeat the Heavenly Snow Mountain with their collective strength alone.

He snorted disdainfully again. Instead of retreating, Xue Ao'tian slammed his right palm out. Everyone present could see that the fist that he had just thrown out was completely covered in a gold

color.

Chapter 804: The Saint Land — Peerless Sect (2)

With a burst of light, the white light soared upwards into the sky followed by a gush of golden light after it had scattered into the surroundings. The entire Heavenly Snow Mountain seemed to quiver with this one attack.

There was nothing Huang Xingyun could do so he brought his wife to a side in retreat. A look of helplessness could be seen on his face. However, there seemed to be a light that gleamed in the depth of his eyes. No one seemed to have noticed this gleam at all.

The duel between two Saint Lands' powerhouses immediately gripped both sides with intense tension. The 108 Heavenly Kings quickly spread out and stood in their respective positions. Intense Heavenly Energy ripples continued to erupt from their bodies. The force instantly overpowered Xue Ao'tian as they coordinated with Shangguan Tianyang.

Xue Ao'tian was not someone who was just born yesterday. Over twenty Heavenly Kings immediately stepped forward and gathered behind him. The Tiger King Xue Ao'ying, the former Lion King Gu Site, Gu Yingbing and the others gathered behind Xue Ao'tian instantly.

At this moment, a loud howl suddenly resonated from below the mountain. Xue Ao'tian and Shangguan Tianyang who were just about to start their battle immediately came to a halt. They both simultaneously turned their attention towards the mountainside.

Streaks of red lights soared up from the cliff all the way up to the summit. Xue Ao'tian could not help but furrow his brows the moment he saw the light. There was a contemptuous look on his face. This was because the red lights were not flying upwards but they were each leaping very high up to land on the summit of the Heavenly Snow Mountain. Their insolence was so unbearable. It

was a lot more arrogant than the Heaven's Expanse Palace.

Huang Xingyun pulled his wife's hand and went back to stand in front of his people. All of the powerhouses from Love Valley that he brought with him were restless. One by one, they stood up to stand behind the two Valley Lords, quietly awaiting further orders.

There was quite a number of the red-clad figures. In a short amount of time, over a hundred people had already gathered on top of the mountain.

The person who stood in front was very tall. He was half a head taller than Xue Ao'tian. His shoulders were wide, and he was dressed in a red robe with a black cloak behind him. He appeared simple-looking yet somber. A cluster of fiery, crimson tattoos was pulsating ever so slightly on his forehead. The moment this man appeared, even the temperature on the Heavenly Snow Mountain had risen along with his presence. His arrogant and lofty manner seemed even more pronounced than Xue Aotian's.

Among all of the crimson-armor clad people who stood behind him, half of them had their entire bodies fully covered in crimson armor. They even wore helmets on their heads, and when they lowered their heads slightly, nobody could clearly see how they looked like.

The people that the Heaven's Expanse Palace brought with them was considered to be quite a significant number. 108 people to be exact. However, the number of these red-garbed people totaled up to around 150. Xue Ao'tian and Shangguan Tianyang's faces darkened slightly at the same time. With their cultivation base, they could clearly sense that these red-garbed people were all at the Heavenly King Tier and above.

If there was an ordinary Heavenly Jewel Master present, he would most likely be aghast at the scene in front his eyes.

One had to know, if a Heavenly King powerhouse appeared anywhere in the Boundless Mainland, he would be lauded by the

masses and the oceans would tremble. However, there were actually more than 300 of them gathered on the summit of Heavenly Snow Mountain at this moment.

This was the power of the Saint Land. With so many powerhouses gathered together, they could easily obliterate an entire nation in just a short amount of time.

The elder who was standing in the front of these red-clad people swept his gaze across all of the people present on the summit, "Looks like I arrived at the perfect time, Brother Snow!"

When he was talking, he did not even look at Shangguan Tianyang. Instead, he nodded towards Xue Ao'tian.

Xue Ao'tian was slightly taken aback. It was obvious that he did not expect the man in red to greet him first, "What the hell are you doing, Fen Tian?"

That was right. This red-garbed, simple-looking man was actually the Hell Lord of Blood Red Hell, Fen Tian. He was a Saint Land Lord as well.

Seeing how Fen Tian was ignoring him, Shangguan Tianyang's face immediately darkened a few shades.

Fen Tian waved his hand. The powerhouses from the Blood Red Hell behind him quickly walked to the west side of the Heavenly Snow Mountain's summit. They gathered and formed a neat formation there. Fen Tian, on the other hand, walked over to Xue Ao'tian and smiled, "The only person worthy of my respect here is only you, Brother Snow. Naturally, I should greet you first, shouldn't I?"

Xue Ao'tian snorted, "I thought Blood Red Hell and Heaven's Expanse Palace have always been friendly with each other? Why? Did everything change because of the conflict with Zhongtian Empire?"

Fen Tian replied nonchalantly, "This world will only house those

who are virtuous. Even an alliance can break and enemies can reconcile. It's been too long since the Zhongtian Empire occupied the central plains. Doesn't the Wan Shou Empire feel a little infuriated at being forced to stay in the north, in this land of merciless winter, Brother Snow?"

Shangguan Tianyang could not contain himself anymore, "Fen Tian, you must be crazy! Don't think that just because Blood Red Hell has this whatsoever Destruction Attribute you can do whatever you like! You really want to push your luck with the central plain in the name of Dandun Empire alone?"

Huang Xingyun also bellowed, "Fen Tian, don't be too arrogant! We'll see whether you'll be able to leave this Grand Tournament safely or not!"

Fen Tian turned around and snorted, " Oh, a sheep in a wolf's clothing! Looks like the two of you are shivering with fear, aren't you? That's right! I won't be able to usurp the central plain just with Dandun Empire alone. However, what do you think will happen if Dandun Empire conspires with the Wan Shou Empire? What do you think will happen, huh? The annihilation of Geritimo Empire should serve as an example to you! Brother Snow, we can split and share the Zhongtian Empire as long as you agree. At that time, the Wan Shou Empire no longer has to hunt for food for the harsh cold during the long winter any longer. It's a win-win situation. It'll only benefit us if we join our forces."

Shangguan Tianyang's face was extremely grim. In the previous Grand Tournaments, even though the competition between all the Saint Lands was pretty intense, it was more toned down without such a strong and an obvious hint of provocation.

Although Fen Tian was the last to arrive, he had already established himself as the Heavenly Snow Mountain's ally with just a few words. Not only that, what he just said was a fact. The conditions that he promised were greatly tempting for both the Wan Shou Empire and the Heavenly Snow Mountain. Had it not

been for the excessively harsh cold during the long winters that caused famine in the area, why would the Wan Shou Empire start a war every winter?

Flashes of emotions swept across Xue Ao'tian's face. It seemed as if he was thinking deeply about something.

Huang Xingyun quickly argued, "Xue Ao'tian, are you really going to disregard universal condemnation and start a war in the entire mainland? At that time, the people will be plunged into an abyss of misery and suffering. You'll be a sinner in the world. Even if all of us from Love Valley die here, we'll still go all out to stop you from doing this!"

Xue Ao'tian's face instantly darkened. He spat out coldly, "Huang Xingyun, who do you think you are? How dare you talk like that to me in Heavenly Snow Mountain?! So what if I decide to join forces with the Blood Red Hell? A small fry like you from Love Valley dares to threaten me?"

Shangguan Tianyang threw a glance at Huang Xingyun. An anxious look could clearly be seen in his eyes. All of them knew that Xue Ao'tian had always been very hard-headed. He would rather die than bend to anyone. It was obvious that Huang Xingyun's desperate words were pushing the Heavenly Snow Mountain to side with the Blood Red Hell.

However, Huang Xingyun did not seem to notice Shangguan Tianyang's meaningful glance. He roared furiously, "Xue Ao'tian, how dare you insult me, the Valley Lord! Fine, then! I'll show you today whether the Heavenly Snow Mountain-Blood Red Hell duo or Love Valley-Heaven's Expanse Palace duo is better!"

Xue Ao'tian snorted again, "You seem to have forgotten that this is the Grand Tournament of Five Great Saint Lands. The Heavenly Demon Sect has yet to arrive, you know. Which side do you think they'll support?"

Fen Tian who stood beside Xue Ao'tian remained emotionless but

a faint smile could be seen playing on the corner of his mouth. It was apparent that he was satisfied with Xue Ao'tian's words. He added halfheartedly, "There's no need for us to wait for the Heavenly Demon Sect anymore. Let's just start the Grand Tournament right away. In fact, the Heavenly Demon Sect had been crushed by me not too long ago."

"W-What?" A look of shock appeared on Huang Xingyun and Xue Ao'tian's face. Shangguan Tianyang's face, on the other hand, darkened another few shades.

Fen Tian continued in the same indifferent manner, "How is the Heavenly Demon Sect worthy of the title Saint Land with that feeble power of theirs? Brother Snow, didn't the Valley Lord just said that he's going to partner up with the Heaven's Expanse Palace and go against us? Let me see who they have behind their back for daring to speak so loudly of themselves!"

Intense killing aura instantly filled the Heavenly Snow Mountain's air. In terms of strength, Love Valley had a total of six Heavenly Emperors while the Heaven's Expanse Palace had 108 Heavenly Kings. However, there were just too many people that the Blood Red Hell brought with them this time. Just the Blood Red Hell alone was already more or less on par with all their Heavenly Kings' strength added up, not counting Xue Ao'tian who was the strongest person in the world. In terms of overall strength, it was apparent that the Heavenly Snow Mountain and Blood Red Hell had a clear advantage.

Just as both sides were all set for a showdown and were about to unsheathe their swords at any moment, a casual voice suddenly resonated in the air, "Oh? So this is the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands? Why does it look just like a normal neighborhood gangster fight to me? Ah, this is kind of disappointing!"

The look on the four Great Saint Land Lords changed at once. However, the reason behind the changes in each person's face was different.

A young man idly strolled all the way up to the Heavenly Snow Mountain. There were no other people but he alone. However, not even a single person present on the Heavenly Snow Mountain sensed his aura before his arrival.

The young man was dressed in a long blue robe. Even though he was not particularly good-looking, his body was tall and sturdy, his shoulder was wide, and his back was thick. He appeared to be only in his twenties, and there was a mocking look on his face. He did not seem to be under any stress faced by so many powerhouses. Instead, he casually walked up the mountain until he came to halt next to Shangguan Tianyang.

"Zhou Weiqing, this is the day of the Grand Tournament! What the hell are you doing here?" Gu Yingbing who was standing next to Xue Ao'tian howled loudly.

That was right. The person who casually strolled here and whose aura was not detected by any of the people present was none other than Zhou Weiqing. A nonchalant smile could be seen playing on his face. It was obviously discordant with the tense atmosphere of the surroundings.

Zhou Weiqing threw a side glance at Gu Yingbing as he continued to smile, "Of course I'm here to take part in the Grand Tournament! Brother Yingbing, if you can be here, why can't I? I'm from a Saint Land as well. Do tell me, what's wrong with me participating in this Grand Tournament?"

Chapter 805: The Saint Land — Peerless Sect (3)

The moment he saw Zhou Weiqing, the Love Valley Lord Huang Xingyun furrowed his brows. On the other hand, the Blood Red Hell's Hell Lord's eyes were lit with a vicious gleam. Although this was his first time seeing Zhou Weiqing, he had actually heard of his name many times before.

Gu Yingbing was stunned, "Y-You've joined the Heaven's Expanse Palace?"

Shangguan Tianyang glanced at Zhou Weiqing as he chimed in indifferently, "Our Heaven's Expanse Palace is only a small tiny temple, we can't possibly accommodate a god like him."

'He didn't join the Heaven's Expanse Palace?' Gu Yingbing thought to himself. His face was filled with a look of astonishment. Huang Xingyun and Fen Tian had the same expressions as well. If their memories served them correctly, the Saint Land that Zhou Weiqing was the closest to was the Heaven's Expanse Palace.

Although these Saint Land Lords had never seen Zhou Weiqing as their equal, they had all heard of his name. Apparently, they had also heard of the things that he had done before.

At the very least, in their opinions, Zhou Weiqing could also be considered as the most powerful person among the cultivators in the younger generation. Casting aside all the deeds that he had done aside, just the fact that he dared to come up to the Heavenly Snow Mountain to snatch his bride and successfully beat Gu Yingbing before kidnapping the Heavenly Snow Mountain Xue Ao'tian's daughter was something his peers would never be able to do.

Later, Zhou Weiqing single-handedly established Peerless Battalion with the aid of the Zhongtian Empire and successfully

defeated the combined coalition of the Bai Da and Kalise Empire. Not only did he succeed in saving his nation and father, he also annihilated the Kalise Empire without a hitch. One could even say that it was the Heavenly Bow Empire that helped the Zhongtian Empire build up their defensive line on the west. That, in turn, managed to slow the combined forces of the Bai Da and Dandun coalition, effectively postponing the war that might erupt after the Grand Tournament.

Due to this reason, Huang Xingyun and Fen Tian who saw him for the first time were a little curious about the young man before them. Particularly Fen Tian, because there were many Blood Red Hell powerhouses who were sacrificed in the Heavenly Bow Empire. There was not even one living person among those people that he sent out. In his opinion, although Zhou Weiqing and Long Shiya were pretty strong, if it was not for the Heaven's Expanse Palace secretly sending a strong backup to help them, how could the small Heavenly Bow Empire be able to detain the four elders of the Blood Red Hell and even the assassins that he sent later on.

Because of this, the moment Shangguan Tianyang clarified that Zhou Weiqing was not a part of the Heaven's Expanse Palace, all of them could not help but be taken aback with surprise.

Xue Ao'tian was the only one who remained unmoved. He asked in a deep voice, "If you're not here in the name of Heaven's Expanse Palace, then I suppose you're here under the Heavenly Demon Sect?"

Zhou Weiqing shook his head, "Didn't Hell Lord Fen Tian say earlier that there's no more Heavenly Demon Sect in this world. I'm not here to represent the Heavenly Demon Sect either."

Gu Yingbing growled, "Zhou Weiqing, how dare you talk so rudely like this in front of so many seniors? It's true that I lost to you last time in a duel. However, I want to issue another challenge to you today! Let us fight to the death!"

As he was speaking, he stepped out of the crowd and walked to the front.

Strangely, nobody tried to stop him at all, nor did anyone say anything. Somehow, it seemed like everyone wanted to see exactly how strong Zhou Weiqing was right now.

Zhou Weiqing sighed softly, "Brother Gu, to be honest, I admire your perseverance and potential. It comes as a surprise to me that you're able to break through to the Heavenly King Tier relying entirely on your efforts in just these short few years. It looks like my battle with you in the past managed to drive you

. Had Tian'er was not between us, perhaps we would be able to become friends instead. Today is the day of the Grand Tournament, I don't think it's good for us to snatch the spotlight away. Let us go in accordance with the Grand Tournament's rules, shall we?"

Gu Yingbing roared loudly, "In what name are you worthy to join this Grand Tournament?"

A gleam of light flashed across Zhou Weiqing's eyes. Within seconds, a concise and impetuous aura erupted from his body. The original jesting look in his eyes suddenly turned solemn as his eyes shone with brilliance, "I'm here as the Sect Leader of the Peerless Sect, one of the Saint Land of the Five Great Saint Lands in this world."

"P-Peerless Sect? Sect Leader?" Gu Yingbing stared at Zhou Weiqing with his mouth agape. Among all of the people present, only a few people remained unaffected by the announcement. On the other hand, the rest had a peculiar look on their faces.

How did a Saint Land come into existence again? It was one of the most prestigious achievements of a Heavenly Jewel Master. All of the four Saint Lands that were present had a legacy of more than 1,000 years that shaped them into how they were today. Suddenly, today, on the day of the Grand Tournament of the Saint Lands, a

young man suddenly appeared out of nowhere and claimed that he was a Sect Leader who founded a sect called the Peerless Sect, a Saint Land. What the hell was this? This was probably the biggest joke in the whole world.

After being stunned speechless for a moment, a weird look appeared on Gu Yingbing's face, "Z-Zhou Weiqing, did you hit your head on something? Did you really just claim that you've created a Saint Land? What do you base this claim on?"

Zhou Weiqing answered him calmly with another question instead, "Let me ask you then. On what basis do the four Great Saint Lands here call themselves a Saint Land?"

Gu Yingbing replied without any hesitation, "Of course it's based on strength! It's only when a place is strong enough that it can call itself a Saint Land."

Zhou Weiqing gave a faint smile, "Then naturally, I base my claim on my strength as well."

"Just you alone?" Gu Yingbing asked in disbelief. At this moment, he really thought Zhou Weiqing was a crazy person.

Zhou Weiqing shook his head slightly, "No, naturally I'm not alone!"

As he was speaking, he walked and stood next to Heaven's Expanse Palace's powerhouse. In the next moment, a layer of dazzling silverish light radiated from his chest. That brilliant luster that was filled with an extremely powerful Spatial Attribute energy ripple turned into a silverish halo before it rapidly spread out.

The moment they felt this tyrannical Spatial Attribute energy, everybody, including Shangguan Tianyang and Xue Ao'tian, could not help but turn pale in an instant. The looks that they were giving Zhou Weiqing at the moment were equally filled with astonishment. All of them knew that Zhou Weiqing would come

and that he would definitely bring the Peerless Sect along with him. However, they were filled with doubts when they saw Zhou Weiqing appearing on the summit all by himself earlier. At this moment, the fact that such a powerful Spatial Attribute energy ripple was emitted from Zhou Weiqing's body had given them even more of a shock. Although Zhou Weiqing possessed the Spatial Attribute, this attribute was not his main one after all!

Soon afterward, among the people who were present, those powerhouses whose cultivation base were at the Heavenly Emperor Tier and above had noticed something peculiar. That silverish light did not come from Zhou Weiqing himself but from the top of his chest instead. There seemed to be a gemstone embedded in it. However, since the light was too dazzling, the piece of clothing on Zhou Weiqing's chest could no longer conceal its shape.

What was he going to do? Nobody knew what Zhou Weiqing was doing. However, since all of the people present were mighty powerhouses, they could also feel that even though the silverish light that Zhou Weiqing emitted was filled with an extremely powerful ripple of energy, there was no sign of aggression in it at all. At the same time, they did not think that a young man like Zhou Weiqing could pose much of a threat to them.

The silverish light circle that Zhou Weiqing released had a radius of around twenty meters. Along with the dazzling silverish light, a series of shadows started to gradually materialize out of nowhere. Each of them appeared by his side one by one.

Teleportation? Mass Teleportation?

Xue Ao'tian could not help but gasp in shock when he saw this. Although there were many powerhouses that possessed the Spatial Attribute present here, there was not a single one who could actually perform a Mass Teleportation. Even a Spatial Attribute Heavenly Jewel Master that was in the Heavenly God Tier might not be able to perform this technique. Even though the

powerhouses of the four Great Saint Lands were knowledgeable and experienced, this was their first time seeing a technique like this Mass Teleportation.

In fact, it could be said that the appearance of the Peerless Sect this time had thoroughly shocked everyone to the core. Those people who first thought Zhou Weiqing was merely being crazy in the first place instantly raised their guards.

There was quite a number of shadows present beside Zhou Weiqing now. Although the number was not as many as the Heaven's Expanse Palace or the Blood Red Hell, there were at least several dozen people in total. The number was roughly more or less the same as the people brought along by Love Valley, or perhaps slightly more.

The silverish light disappeared without warning, and the faces of these people finally could be seen clearly.

Like the long blue robe worn by Zhou Weiqing, all of these people were wearing the same long blue robe as well. Just like this, there was a distinction of colors between the five Saint Lands now. Among them, the colors that looked almost similar was the colors worn by the Heavenly Snow Mountain and the Heaven's Expanse Palace. The Heaven's Expanse Palace was wearing clothes of a milky white color while the Heavenly Snow Mountain's powerhouses were wearing ones with a snowy white color. The members of the Love Valley wore yellow, the Blood Red Hell were in crimson garb and the Peerless Sect were in blue. It was the kind of blue that very much reflected the blue, blue sky.

Seeing these people appearing around Zhou Weiqing, the first person who frowned was none other than the Blood Red Hell's Hell Lord, Fen Tian. This was because he could make out the two people standing on both sides of Zhou Weiqing in just a glance. He knew the both of them. More accurately, most of the four Great Saint Lands' powerhouses present there knew who the both of them were.

The man standing to the left of Zhou Weiqing was none other than the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya who was also known as the first Heavenly God. The man standing on the right, on the other hand, was the Heavenly Demon Sect's Sect Leader, the Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue.

These two people actually showed up here at the same time. On top of that, through teleportation? How could the crowd not be taken aback by such a scene?

Bewildered gazes landed on the mass number of Peerless Sect's powerhouses, particularly behind Zhou Weiqing, Long Shiya, and Wu Yunyue. As it turned out, it was the three Shangguan sisters, Tian'er, Little Witch Wu Yuehan and the six Heavenly Kings of the Heavenly Demon Sect. Behind them stood more people who were also in long, blue robes but these people had their bodies covered in cloaks instead. Even their heads were completely covered, and nobody could make out the faces underneath. It was almost similar to the people of Blood Red Hell who had different attires but the same method of concealing their identities. However, the Peerless Sect people seemed to be even more secretive. Not an ounce of energy could be sensed radiating from their body, let alone estimating their cultivation base.

The silverish light vanished completely and just like this, the Peerless Sect appeared in such an extraordinary manner. It seemed to have instantly nullified the previous tense atmosphere on the summit.

Fen Tian hissed coldly, "Wu Yunyue, you're not dead yet? When did you change your sect's name, huh? It's no wonder that your junior even dared to say that the Heavenly Demon Sect is no more!"

Looking at Fen Tian, Wu Yunyue's eyes were ablaze with hatred facing his enemy. His face was so dark that it was horrifying, "Fen Tian, I'll fight you to the end today! The Sect Lord is correct, there's no more Heavenly Demon Sect. There's only the Peerless

Sect now. Sect Leader Zhou is the true leader of the Peerless Sect. I'm only his deputy, you see."

The moment these words left Wu Yueyun, the other Saint Land Lords could no longer contain themselves. At once, intense arguments erupted one after the other.

Chapter 806: The Tournament Begins (1)

Even though the Heavenly Demon Sect always ranked last in the Five Great Saint Lands ranking, it was still a Saint Land after all. The ancestry of its Evil Attribute was still able to make the other four Great Saint Lands feel dread and fear. It had never crossed their minds that the Demonic Emperor Wu Yueyun would pass on his Heavenly Demon Sect to a junior like Zhou Weiqing. In their minds, this was completely impossible.

Everyone once again focused their gaze on Zhou Weiqing. Fen Tian remarked with a tone full of doubt, "Peerless Sect. This is my first time hearing this name. What does this boy have to his name that enables him to become a Saint Land Lord? Brother Long, I think the real master of the Peerless Sect thing should be nobody else but you. How could you allow your disciple to make a fool of himself?"

Long Shiya swept a cold glance at Fen Tian, "My disciple? Making a fool of himself? Be careful not to bite your own tongue while you're talking, Fen Tian. You were still in your mother's womb when I ran the world, you know. What's wrong with my disciple becoming a Saint Land Lord? Not only did he become a Saint Land Lord, he'll become the best Saint Land Lord in the entire world. Just you wait and see. The truth will be revealed through the battles later!"

Just that one sentence — the best Saint Land Lord in the entire world — from Long Shiya seemed to have touched the nerves of the other four Saint Lands. The gazes that were trained on him turned hostile instantly.

Zhou Weiqing smiled, "Now, the Peerless Sect is qualified to join the Grand Tournament, isn't it? If any one of you still find it unacceptable, I don't mind if you see us as the Heavenly Demon Sect. We merely changed our Sect Master after all."

Fen Tian scoffed, "The Heavenly Demon Sect? Even the Heavenly Demon Sect is unqualified to join the Grand Tournament! Don't you know that the Heavenly Demon Sect has already been cut out from the list?"

Zhou Weiqing continued smiling as he looked at Fen Tian, "Just now Brother Gu said that the name 'Saint Land' is self-proclaimed by virtue of strength. It shouldn't matter if it's the Peerless Sect or the Heavenly Demon Sect, why can't we become a Saint Land if our strength is mighty enough? I've no objections if the Hell Lord Fen Tian wants to give us some pointers. In any case, there are many members of the Blood Red Hell who have really gone to hell with my help."

A chilling look that could kill flashed across Fen Tian's eyes. However, instead of stepping forward to lash out against Zhou Weiqing, he turned to the Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord Xue Ao'tian and said in a deep voice, "Brother Snow, the Grand Tournament is held at your Heavenly Snow Mountain this time. You're the master of the Heavenly Snow Mountain so naturally, you're the chairman of the Grand Tournament as well. What are your thoughts on this matter? Don't you think it's against the rule to have a Saint Land appearing out of nowhere?"

Zhou Weiqing could not help but be somewhat impressed after listening to Fen Tian's words. It seemed like the Blood Red Hell excelled not only in their strength but in terms of scheming and mind games too.

Xue Ao'tian cast a glance at Fen Tian before he replied, "Fen Tian, perhaps you still haven't fully got a grip on reality. Zhou Weiqing's my son-in-law. Didn't you hear him earlier? A Saint Land's existence completely lies in its strength. Since my son-in-law has already brought his people here, this shows the amount of confidence that he has in his sect. Brother Long has always been an elder brother whom I admire. With him and Sect Leader Wu here, I believe they're powerful enough to call themselves a Saint Land."

Huang Xingyun from Love Valley frowned slightly as he chimed in, "Heavenly Snow Mountain Lord, this does seem to be a little against the rule. What do you think, Brother Tianyang?"

Shangguan Tianyang replied nonchalantly, "As long as their strength is mighty enough, I don't see anything wrong with having an extra Saint Land. Since the Blood Red Hell is the most upset with the Peerless Sect, why don't you send somebody from your sect to inspect their ability and see?"

Fentian narrowed his eyes as he snorted, "Fine, I'll send out a disciple. As long as there's a disciple who can defeat my follower, we from Blood Red Hell will also agree to them participating in the Grand Tournament this time."

As he was speaking, he waved his hand. A middle-aged man who was in his forties immediately walked out from behind him. This man was not too tall but he had long and slender arms. The bones on his hands appeared thick and big, and it gave off a ghastly feeling. His eyes that were slightly yellow exuded undisguised viciousness as he glared at the Peerless Sect.

Wu Yunyue scoffed coldly. Just as he was about to take a step forward, he was immediately stopped by Zhou Weiqing's hand, "Deputy Lord, the Blood Red Hell said that they want to test the true strength of our Peerless Sect's disciples. You're a top-level official so just take a break by the side. Ling Dang, have a go with this Blood Red Hell master. Remember to show some mercy, okay?"

A person who was standing in the back and was dressed in a blue cape that covered the face instantly walked out after hearing Zhou Weiqing's words. Judging by that delicate body figure, it was clearly a girl.

She gracefully walked forward and did not exude any imposing manner from her body. However, she seemed to have already arrived at the center of the Summit Platform of the Heavenly Snow

Mountain with just a single step.

The Blood Red Hell powerhouse sneered as he watched the blue-clad woman who was called Ling Dang by Zhou Weiqing, "Look at that attire that fully conceals everything. You don't even dare to show your face? Oh, don't tell me this is an old witch who's so ugly that she can't even bear to show her face to us!"

Although she had the body of a young lady, it was obvious that somebody who was able to come all the way here to this venue had to be of some age already. It was quite reasonable for that Blood Red Hell powerhouse to call her an old witch.

However, Zhou Weiqing almost burst out laughing the moment he heard the remark. He could not help but thought to himself, 'What an unlucky bastard this man from Blood Red Hell is!'

When Ling Dang heard the man's remark, her body trembled a little for a moment. It was apparent that her emotion had been strongly ruffled at that moment. She gradually lifted her head up. All that everyone could see other than the cloak that was covering her head was another blue mask underneath it that covered her entire face. It only exposed a pair of beautiful turquoise-colored eyes. However, her eyes were completely filled with a sense of chill at that moment.

"Let's start," Ling Dang's cold voice resonated in the air. Instead of giving a reply to her opponent's earlier remark, she directly lifted up her right hand.

Her movement was not fast, and she had no intention of putting on her Consolidated Equipment. The palm that was stretched out was fair and slender, and her fingers that were as delicate as spring onions looked like they were carved from a flawless jade. Still without even a hint of an imposing manner, and there were no energy ripples from her, she thrust her hand out in front of her chest and charged towards the Blood Red Hell powerhouse.

In truth, Fen Tian had his own reason sending out this man of

his. This ferocious looking middle-aged man was actually in his eighties. Although he had not reached the Heavenly Emperor Tier yet, he at least possessed a cultivation base at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly King Tier. Previously, Fen Tian had already made his intentions very clear. He wanted to examine the Peerless Sect's disciples' strength on behalf of all the Saint Lands, or in another word, the underlying true force of the Peerless Sect. If the person who joined the fight from the Peerless Sect turned out to be either Long Shiya or Wu Yueyun, then the Peerless Sect would no doubt lose their prestige. At that time, Fen Tian would be able to drive them out of the Grand Tournament of Saint Land without any problem. On the other hand, if the Peerless Sect really did send their disciple out, he was certain that this Maximum Level Heavenly King-tier powerhouse from his Blood Red Hell would most certainly win the fight. A Maximum Level Heavenly King-tier powerhouse who possessed the Destruction Energy could still win the battle even if he came across a Heavenly Emperor-tier master. Fen Tian doubted they had any Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse left in their sect anyway.

However, in many cases, a dream was always beautiful but reality often turned out very differently.

When the Blood Red Hell man who was dressed in red saw Ling Dang thrusting a palm towards him, he did not lower his guard. Crimson flames erupted from his body instantly. A strong and destructive willpower filled with a calamitous aura could be felt. Instantly, his eight pieces of Consolidated Equipment sparkled with brilliance as they merged together to form a complete set and appeared on his body.

Eight pieces of God Tier Master Consolidated Equipment Set — this could also be considered as a legendary armor set.

However, while he was preparing his equipment set, the dark red flame around his body was suddenly put out under everybody's stunned gaze. In the next second, the red-clad man was suddenly

sent flying backward with a wretched wail as he crashed into the rest of the Blood Red Hell powerhouses.

"Huh?" Fen Tian was taken aback. He instinctively extended his right hand to catch that man. However, in the next moment, a loud explosion sounded followed by a mess of flesh and blood that suddenly appeared before his eyes.

That Blood Red Hell powerhouse that Fen Tian had faith in had been blown into pieces in mid-air. He turned into fragments that scattered all around the place. Suddenly at this moment, another crimson red flame reappeared again. However, the one being destroyed was not Ling Dang from Peerless Sect but the man from the Blood Red Hell himself. Under the crimson flame, the mess of flesh and blood turned into flying ash as it scattered everywhere.

The hand that Ling Dang thrust out made a grab in the air. The Nucleus Core of the Red Blood Hell powerhouse instantly flashed, and in a blink of an eye, vanished into thin air without a trace.

From the beginning till the end, the entire process of the battle was just too fast. It was so fast that almost everybody could not make out what was happening.

Just like that, Ling Dang strode back to the Peerless Sect side calmly and quietly when the battle was over. She returned to her standby position. The entire mountain top of Heavenly Snow Mountain became so quiet that even a pin drop could be heard.

Even the two Shangguan brothers — Tianyang and Tianyue who had already known beforehand that the Peerless Sect had returned to this place and had known part of the Peerless Sect's true strength was completely taken aback with astonishment. On the other hand, the rest of the Saint Land Lords had all sorts of different expressions plastered on their faces.

Huang Xingyun from Love Valley was completely astounded. Until this moment, he still could not believe the scene that had just unfolded in front of his eyes.

The astonished look on Xue Aotian was even more exaggerated than Shangguan Tianyang. This was because after Ling Dang had made her move, he had caught some of her energy fluctuations. He realized that if he had been the one to receive the blow earlier, he did not have the confidence that he would be able to fully retreat. As for Fen Tian, his eyes were entirely glazed with coldness. It was so cold that it was bloodcurdling. He stared coolly at Ling Dang, "I didn't expect that such an ace would be hidden in the Peerless Sect. May I ask who is this ace?"

Fen Tian was not angered by the death of his disciple. He was so calm that even Zhou Weiqing could not help but lift his eyebrow slightly as he smiled, "Ling Dang's a member of my Peerless Sect. There's nothing else to say other than this. I wonder how did your inspection go, Hell Lord? My Peerless Sect is strong enough to enter the Grant Tournament of the Saint Lands now, isn't it?"

Fen Tian returned Zhou Weiqing's gaze. Zhou Weiqing suddenly realized that his gaze seemed to have become much darker than before. He could not help but be slightly stunned by the look that Fen Tian gave him. As quickly as it appeared, Fen Tian's gaze immediately returned to normal. To Zhou Weiqing's surprise, he actually nodded his head and said, "Since you're strong enough, naturally you're eligible to join the Grant Tournament of the Saint Lands. We from the Blood Red Hell have no objection to that."

Chapter 807: The Tournament Begins (2 I 3)

'Was the Blood Red Hell so easygoing? They didn't even plan to avenge the death of the Maximum Level Heavenly King-tier powerhouse?'

Zhou Weiqing glanced at Fen Tian as if he was absorbed in his thoughts.

At the same time, Xue Ao'tian who was standing by the side started to speak, "Since nobody else has any more objections to it then the Peerless Sect will be temporarily counted as a Saint Land until the Grand Tournament ends. However, according to the tournament rules, if the Peerless Sect comes out last in the ranking in the end, it won't be regarded as a Saint Land once the tournament ends. Do you understand, Weiqing?"

Zhou Weiqing smiled, "I understand." No matter what, his identity now was the Sect Master of the Peerless Sect. As expected, he could not bow down to his father-in-law in front of so many people. Moreover, all three of his fathers-in-laws were currently present at the scene.

Perhaps it was due to Zhou Weiqing's presence that the other four Great Saint Lands appeared to be much calmer. They no longer seemed ready to jump at each other's throat. However, there was still some indistinct hostility between the Heaven's Expanse Palace and the Heavenly Snow Mountain.

Fen Tian turned to Xue Ao'tian, "Mountain Lord, since it's going to be this way, let us begin our Grand Tournament. You're the lord here. Naturally, you're the host of this tournament as well."

"Alright," Xue Ao'tian nodded his head as he slowly walked out to the center of an open space.

The open space on the mountain top of the Heavenly Snow Mountain had a very large area. Although it could not be compared

to Zhongtian Plaza, the center of the mountaintop still had several thousand square meters of open space left even though it was already filled with several hundreds of people.

Xue Ao'tian swept a domineering glance over the place, his gaze stopped briefly on everyone present on the scene before he said in a deep voice, "As per the old rules, the Grand Tournament will take place in the sky. Let me first make it clear to all of you. During the tournament, whoever dares to destroy even a blade of grass or one tree on my Heavenly Snow Mountain will have a taste of the full extent my my wrath!" As he was saying that, he even deliberately looked towards Shanguan Tianyang.

On the other hand, Shanguan Tianyang did not even bother looking at him. It was as if he did not even hear Xue Ao'tian's threat.

Xue Ao'tian continued, "In view of the Peerless Sect joining in our tournament, let me repeat the rules once again. According to the rules, all five Great Saint Lands will send ten people to join the first round of the tournament. The order of the battle will be decided by drawing lots. The representatives from the five Great Saint Lands will take turns battling each other. Whoever loses will be eliminated while the winner remains to accept the next challenger. The Saint Land will be disqualified once all ten of its powerhouses participating in the tournament are eliminated. All the Saint Lands will be ranked according to the elimination speed. The last two Saint Lands that lasts till the end will go through another group battle without a limit to the number of participants. The winner will be known as the best Saint Land in the world. There are no rules during the battle. The winner will be the king."

Although the rules of the Grand Tournament might sound simple, even much simpler than the Heavenly Jewel Tournament that was held in the Heavenly Jewel Island, one must not forget that those who were participating in the Grand Tournament were not young people, and there was also no limit to the cultivation

base of those who participated. There were no rules for the battle, and one could easily imagine how dangerous this would be.

Five Great Saint Lands biting each other's head off ruthlessly. There was bitter enmity between all of them. Once they started to battle it out in the Grand Tournament, nobody would show any mercy at all. Death would most likely become a common occurrence, and who knew how many lives would be taken away this time.

Before Zhou Weiqing came here, Wu Yunyue had already told him about the Grand Tournament rules. For this reason, it did not surprise him at all. He seemed like he did not give a damn about the upcoming bloody hurricane with that annoying and mischievous smile plastered on his face.

Xue Ao'tian suddenly announced in his deep voice, "Every Saint Land can send out their first participant now! You'll step into the arena altogether to make a draw first."

As soon as Xue Ao'tian finished talking, five shadows had already appeared on the arena. It was apparent that each of the Saint Land had already made their preparation beforehand.

To everybody's surprise, the first participant that the Heavenly Snow Mountain sent out turned out to be none other than the Tiger King, Xue Aoying. The person who represented Love Valley was one of the Valley Lords — Yun Ruoyun. In truth, this kind of one-to-one battle was slightly disadvantageous to Love Valley. This was the main reason why it had never lasted till the final round all this while.

On the other hand, the powerhouse that the Heaven's Expanse Palace sent out was an elder whose name was unknown, and it seemed like his cultivation base was only at the Heavenly King Tier. He looked like a small fry compared to the rest of the participants sent out by the other Great Saint Lands.

As for the Blood Red Hell, the person who stepped out was a

skinny, tall and gloomy looking elder who had a cultivation base at the Heavenly Emperor Tier.

The first person who stepped out from the Peerless Sect was none other than the former Sect Master of the Heavenly Demon Sect, who was also the current vice Sect Master of the Peerless Sect — Wu Yunyue.

Judging from all of the participants who were sent out in the first round, it was obvious that other than the Heaven's Expanse Palace, the other four Great Saint Lands intended to amaze the others with a show of strength. That was why they sent out all the strong ones from their side.

According to the rules of the Grand Tournament, after the battle order was decided by drawing lots, whoever lost would lose the eligibility to continue in the tournament. The Saint Land would then have to send another person to replace this person until all ten people from its side lost or achieved final victory. In reality, this kind of battle was still considered relatively fair. Whoever wanted to stay on the battle ring longer would have to exert all their strength during the battle.

Xue Ao'tian swept a glance over all the five participants of the first round. The rest of the Great Saint Land Lords slowly walked out as well.

Due to the tournament's system, those who have a later turn would undoubtedly have more advantages. The people who would be deciding the order of the battle were none other than the Five Great Saint Lords. And the term 'drawing lots' actually meant that they had to rely on their own strength. During the last tournament, thanks to Xue Ao'tian's individual strength, the Heavenly Snow Mountain obtained the last turn in the first round of drawing lots. For this reason, it was able to enter the final battle without many obstacles.

Xue Ao'tian stretched his palm wide open to show five different

colored stones of red, orange, yellow, green and blue respectively.

"According to the order of the rainbow, the person who gets the red stone will be the first to enter the battle while the one who gets the blue stone will be the last. Listen to my mark!" As he was speaking, he flicked his right wrist. The five stones in his hand instantly transformed into five different colored lights as they soared up into the sky.

The five stones gathered together as one as they soared up. Due to Xue Ao'tian's cultivation base, the five stones had already disappeared in the air in just a blink of an eye.

All five Great Saint Land Lords, including Zhou Weiqing, exchanged looks. In the next moment, Xue Ao'tian bellowed loudly, "Start!"

Five figures, each representing the Saint Land Lords of the five strongest Great Saint Lands in the mainland, rose up in the air at once almost at the same time.

The person who acted first was Huang Xingyun from Love Valley. The air in his surroundings distorted severely as a layer of the distorted film of light appeared in mid-air. He stepped into it. Instantly, everyone felt like their bodies were being compressed and everything around them seemed to slow down.

However, nobody would fall behind this time around. In accordance with the rules of the Grand Tournament, no legendary armor set was allowed during the process of snatching lots, and a direct attack was not allowed as well. All that they could use was binding techniques that restricted movements.

A cluster of golden light exploded from Xue Ao'tian's body without warning. His body flashed past and he ascended to the sky as if he did not encounter the time delaying restriction at all. At the same time, a mighty and supreme pressure erupted from him all of a sudden. The golden light was so rich that the entire sky started to change color.

Heavenly Spirit Divine Territory — this was the Divine Territory that Xue Ao'tian mastered ever since he entered the Heavenly God Tier. The moment he unleashed his Divine Territory, an endless pressure instantly plunged down from the sky. Suddenly, the movements of the Love Valley Lord, Huang Xingyun who had had a slight upper hand earlier, slowed down as Xue Ao'tian continued to rush up to the sky.

"Heavenly Expanse Infinitum," Shangguan Tianyang roared loudly as he made a circle with his palms. Milky-colored Heavenly Energy formed a gigantic whirlpool underneath him in the next moment. A horrifying thrust of energy erupted without warning, and it propelled his body forward in pursuit of Xue Ao'tian.

"Nirvana Heaven Glory," Fen Tian hissed coldly. A condensed black Light Blade emerged from thin air as a strange scene unfolded in the next second. Instantly, a hole was ruthlessly torn open in Xue Ao'tian's Heavenly Spirit Divine Territory. In the next second, the space around his body shifted quickly. With just a flash, he overtook Shangguan Tianyang and appeared beside Xue Ao'tian.

At this moment, Zhou Weiqing was still at the back of the line.

Huang Xingyun became slightly anxious when he saw that three people had overtaken him. He instantly shouted out loud, "Time Prison". When it came to binding techniques that limited movements, nobody else present was better than him. After all, the attribute that he controlled was none other than the Time Attribute.

A series of distorted lights formed a huge cage in the air before it dropped down from the sky. It completely enveloped everyone inside it. That distorted light was as solid as matter. Even though it was greatly weakened within the Heavenly Spirit Divine Territory, its restrictive ability was still very apparent. At the very least, the moment this technique was unleashed, everyone's speed instantly slowed down. At this moment, the five stones that previously

soared high into the air started to drop down.

"What are all of you fighting for? Aren't these just a few stones?"

While the few Great Saint Lords were using their techniques as they struggled with each other, a lazy voice resonated in the air suddenly. The four Great Saint Land Lords, Xue Ao'tian, Shangguan Tianyang, Huang Xingyun and Fen Tian lifted their heads up to have a look. They were completely bewildered when they saw that Zhou Weiqing was already high up in the sky since god knows when. All of the five stones were already in his palms. He was playing with them and juggling them one by one.

The four Great Saint Land Lords who were rushing upwards were stunned. They had no idea exactly when Zhou Weiqing appeared above them. It was absolutely impossible for them to not notice anything if somebody went past their sides. Yet, they really did not feel anything at all.

In truth, It was relatively easy for Zhou Weiqing to be the first one to reach. After all, the technique that he used was none other than the Spatial Law. He relied on the Spatial Attribute to beat everyone to the draw.

There were two ways for Zhou Weiqing to successfully complete his Spatial Travel. One was by using coordinates if he had to travel long distance. The second way was by traveling to a spot where the user could see. The technique was similar to Blink. However, the space ripple that he caused was extremely small when he used his Spatial Travel because of his current cultivation base. Even a Heavenly Emperor would not notice anything if he did not deliberately pay any attention to it.

Before this, Zhou Weiqing had deliberately fallen a step behind to make the four Great Saint Lords mistakenly think that he was much weaker and had no ways to overtake them so they would not pay him any attention. When they started their fights in the air, Zhou Weiqing used his Spatial Travel to move all the way in front.

The reason why it could be said that he had used the four Great Saint Land Lords' conventional thinking to his advantage was because none of the Saint Land Lords were particularly skilled in the Spatial Attribute, let alone being able to master the Spatial Law before the Peerless Sect became a Saint Land.

For this reason, the moment the four Saint Land Lords saw Zhou Weiqing hovering in mid-air with the five stones in his hand, the first thought that appeared in their minds was, 'How is this possible?'

However, the truth was displayed right before their eyes. No matter how Zhou Weiqing did it, it was a fact that he had already obtained the stones in his hand. According to the rules of the Grand Tournament, no direct attacks were allowed when drawing lots. This meant that there was absolutely no way for them to snatch the stones off his hands.

Before the four Great Saint Land Lords could even snap out of their bewilderment, Zhou Weiqing waved his right hand and bellowed, "There, here you go! Catch 'em properly, will you?" Four lights appeared and blasted towards the four great Saint Land Lords at the same time.

With Zhou Weiqing's current cultivation base, coupled with the short distance between them, the four stones had already appeared in front of the four of them before he even finished waving his hand. The four Great Saint Land Lords raised their hand instinctively and each caught the stone in front of them.

The moment he saw the stone in his hand, Huang Xingyun from Love Valley almost fainted in anger. The stone that he was holding in his hands was none other than the red-colored stone. What it meant was Love Valley would be the first to enter the battle ring in the upcoming tournament. Fen Tian's face was equally grim as well. The stone that he received was the orange-colored one. In other words, the first round of this continuous battle would see the Blood Red Hell and Love Valley clashing with each other.

The stone that Xue Ao'tian received was yellow so the Heavenly Snow Mountain would be the third to step into the ring. Shangguan Tianyang, on the other hand, looked at the green stone in his hands with a smile on his face before he nodded towards Zhou Weiqing who was still hovering in mid-air. Shangguan Tianyang seemed to be satisfied with the order of the battle. He suddenly found this brat, who had snatched his three nieces, not as annoying as he used to be.

Xue Ao'tian had a calm look on his face. It was as if he had long known Zhou Weiqing would do this.

Of course, Zhou Weiqing had his intentions doing this. The Heavenly Snow Mountain and Heaven's Expanse Palace were on equally intimate terms with him, and it did not matter who appeared last. However, since the Heaven's Expanse Palace's first participant was only a Heavenly King-tier powerhouse, it would not be good for them to step into the battle ring early. As the rule stated, whichever Saint Land that lost the battle would have to send out a second participant to queue up behind the battle line. Naturally, this meant that it would be better the longer one could hold on in the ring.

With a mocking smile, Zhou Weiqing landed on the ground while holding a blue stone that represented he had the last turn in the battle. A triumphant and proud look could be seen on his face. He did not even bother to hide the emotions in his heart.

Earlier, when the Peerless Sect had just arrived, most of the people present looked down on them and wanted to see them make a fool out of themselves. However, after Ling Dang's performance and the way Zhou Weiqing's snatched the lots, nobody else dared to look down on them anymore. After all, the Peerless Sect had taken in Heavenly Demon Sect's remaining members. Moreover, there was also the existence of the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor as well as Ling Dang whose cultivation base nobody could see through. However, the most important thing was, they also could

not figure out Zhou Weiqing's cultivation base.

After the rest of the Great Saint Land Lords touched the ground, their respective subordinates immediately filled them in on how Zhou Weiqing had seized the stones earlier. All of the people present on the scene were strong powerhouses who were at the very top of their own field. There was no doubt that they could quickly make out that Zhou Weiqing had already mastered the Spatial Law. This was an ability that only Heavenly God-tier powerhouses could master under normal circumstances. However, Zhou Weiqing was only so young! Could it be that he really had become a Heavenly God?

Everyone found this hard to digest. That included Xue Ao'tian and Shangguan Tianyang as well. However, even if he was not a Heavenly God yet, just the fact that he had mastered the Spatial Law made him very difficult to deal with.

Xue Ao'tian announced in a deep voice, "Now that the draw is over. Let us start the battle according to our order."

In the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands, the average age of the participants was mostly more than 70 years old. Coupled with the fact that every Saint Land was already familiar with the rules of the tournament, there was no need for anyone to preside over the battles anymore.

The skinny and tall powerhouse from the Blood Red Prison and Yun Ruoyun from Love Valley walked out slowly to the center of the field.

On the other hand, Zhou Weiqing chuckled as he walked back to his team. Long Shiya was chuckling as well as he glanced at his beloved apprentice while Little Witch gave a thumbs-up to Zhou Weiqing. However, the other four girls had an unhappy look on their face. Shangguan Bing'er was still relatively normal but Shangguan Xue'er, Tian'er, and Shangguan Fei'er seemed to be angry about something. They refused to acknowledge him at all.

At this moment, the battle in the field had just begun. The two figures simultaneously leaped up into the sky like two arrows that were shot upwards. Everybody looked up in the air at once.

All of the Grand Tournament battles in the previous years always took place in the air. That was why every Saint Land would usually only bring powerhouses whose cultivation base were at the Heavenly King Tier and above. If the venue were to take place on the ground, only God knew how big of a disaster the powerhouses would cause with their destructive power. Due to this reason, it was much safer for the venue to be in the air. Even so, their battles could only start after they climbed up several thousand meters in the air.

Several thousand meters high up in the air away from the ground. Even a Heavenly King-tier powerhouse would most likely be unable to see the situation that was taking place. In just a few seconds, strong clashing sounds resonated in the air. A loud rumbling sound continued to erupt non stop. Every time there was an explosion, the entire world would simultaneously shake.

Bloodcurdling energy ripples continued to fluctuate in the air.

A Heavenly King-tier powerhouse might not be able to see what was going on but that might not be the case for a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse. Coupled with the particularly good weather today, what Zhou Weiqing saw in mid-air when he lifted his head up high was a battle that was well-matched in strength.

That was right. A neck-to-neck battle. As one half of the Love Valley Lords duo, Yun Ruoyun's strength was undoubtedly powerful. Her opponent was equally as sturdy as well. The moment the battle started, the Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse from Blood Red Hell did not hesitate to use his Destruction Attribute.

Before he used the Destruction Attribute, it was obvious that his cultivation base was far inferior to Yun Ruoyun who was already at

the Maximum Level of the Heavenly Emperor Tier. However, the moment he unleashed his Destruction Attribute, it immediately snatched away the upper hand that Yun Ruoyun gained from her Time Attribute. To everyone's surprise, after a series of clashes, Yun Ruoyun was the one who started to fall behind. The rich Destruction Attribute aura in the air made it hard for the Lord of Love Valley to take the blows. She was instantly placed at a great disadvantage.

A hint of pride could be seen on Fen Tian's face as he watched the battle that was taking place. However, Xue Ao'tian remained emotionless. Huang Xingyun from Love Valley, on the other hand, looked completely uneasy and anxious. He and his wife were the strongest in Love Valley. If Yun Ruoyun could not even last through the first round, he would have to send a second participant to join in the back of the line of the continuous battle. This would no doubt be unfavorable to Love Valley. On top of that, the power that was being demonstrated by the Blood Red Hell was absolutely alarming.

The look on Shangguan Tianyang was the most obvious. At this moment, he looked extremely grim, and it was certainly not a facade that he was putting on. He knew Blood Red Hell very well but he had never seen this man that Fen Tian had sent out. This Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse had a cultivation base that was far beyond his imagination. Even though Shangguan Tianyang was certain that he could win against this man, what would happen if there were still many powerhouses of this level on Fen Tian's side? Would the Heaven's Expanse Palace be able to defend their position as the best Saint Land in the world this time?

There was no doubt that the Heavenly Jewel Masters who were able to participate in the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands had at least eight pieces of the legendary armor set. This was also the case for the two fighting in the air. They were both wearing a nine-piece set at the moment.

"I give up," Yun Ruoyun's unwilling voice reverberated from above. Afterward, the two figures immediately descended from above.

In the Grand Tournament, once the battle had started, the battle would continue to go on until one of them was dead unless one of the party decided to surrender.

Yun Ruoyun appeared disheveled. Dozens of black marks could be seen on her legendary armor set. Those were left by the Destruction attribute. Even her hair seemed to be tousled from the fight. Her breathing was irregular, and there was a pained look on her face.

On the other hand, the skinny and tall powerhouse from the Blood Red Hell had a haughty look on his face. He did not even utter a word as he placed both his hands behind him. It looked like he was completely looking down on Love Valley.

Fen Tian burst out laughing and turned to Huang Xingyun, "Valley Lord Huang, looks like Love Valley will never be ranked ahead of us Blood Red Hell anymore!"

Huang Xingyun snorted in disdain, "The battle has only just begun. I'm afraid it's still too early to say those words, you know."

He waved as he said that. A Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse immediately walked out from behind him to join the end of the waiting line.

In accordance with the draw, the person joining in the battle ring next would be the Heavenly Snow Mountain's representative — the Tiger King, Xue Aoying. There was no resting time between the battles in the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands. Otherwise, wouldn't one mighty powerhouse be more than enough to last until the very final round?

This kind of 'simultaneous exhibition' battle tactic would at least weaken those individuals with high cultivation base.

"After you!" Xue Ao'ying roared loudly as a series of intense white light erupted from his body. There were dozens of black lines that were intertwined with the white lights. He soared into the sky like a giant tiger with another loud roar.

That Blood Red Hell elder once again rose up to the sky. In a flash, he had already climbed up to several thousands of meters high.

Similar to when the Grand Tournament had first commenced, the atmosphere at the summit of the Heavenly Snow Mountain became very tense. Moreover, the rhythm of the battle was absolutely too fast to understand. Additionally, all of the participants were such strong powerhouses! From the two battles that had just taken place since the tournament started, the participants were all Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouses. Every Saint Land was trying to overwhelm their opponent in terms of strength. Due to this reason, all of the participants that were sent out were all very strong. However, somehow it seemed like the Saint Land Lords had no intention to join in the battle at all.

The armor that the Blood Red Hell Heavenly Emperor was wearing was a crimson-colored one that had no weapon. However, the armor covered his entire body completely. As his silhouette flickered in the air, a series of red images could be seen flashing across the sky.

The legendary armor set that the Tiger King Xue Aoying wore was much more dazzling in comparison. A snowy white armor covered his entire body. The snowy white color was decorated with streaks of blue lines with a tiger head on both of his shoulders. A weapon could be seen in his hands. His two tiger palms appeared to be particularly large, and one could see traces of the air being torn around the palms' surroundings.

As the younger blood brother of the Mountain Lord of Heavenly Snow Mountain Xue Ao'tian, one could easily imagine just how powerful Xue Aoying was. On top of that, the combat ability of the

powerhouses in Wan Shou Empire was usually cultivated since they were very young. As the two of them rose up to a certain height, the Tiger King immediately launched his attack without any hesitation.

Chapter 808: The Demonic Emperor's Power

(1 | 2)

A deafening roar of a tiger resounded throughout the sky. Half of the sky turned golden in color and a huge blaze of golden light burst out as he lifted his hands. It was aimed towards the enemy.

Then, the other half of the sky turned black. An overbearing Destruction Thought seemed to obstruct the expansion of the Divine Aura on the Tiger King's body.

The Blood Red Hell's Heavenly Emperor took a step out of the void and attacked with his right fist. A loud blast could be heard and before long, the gold and black colors in the sky could be seen fluctuating violently.

The Divine light from the Tiger King was smashed into pieces in response. It turned into pieces of golden light before it disappeared. What was even more horrifying was when the black Destruction Energy curled back and countered the golden light. It completely disregarded all the specialties of the Divine Attribute as it began devouring it in an insane manner. It was as if it only needed a split second to counter the merits and drawbacks from both sides.

The tyranny of the Destruction Energy had already surpassed many expectations. At least, in Zhou Weiqing's experience, he had never seen such a powerful Destruction Attribute before.

If his earliest sighting of the Destruction Attribute from Little Demon Shen was only a small addition to his personal attributes, then the Destruction Attribute displayed by the Blood Red Hell's Heavenly Emperor was a pure Destruction Attribute, similar to his Saint Energy. Zhou Weiqing had guessed that even if the Blood Red Hell's Heavenly Emperor did not consolidate the Extermination Nucleus Core, which was an opposing force of the Saint Nucleus Core, at the very least the Destruction Energy in his body would

have taken over half of his Heavenly Energy. Besides, the overall density was a far cry from the previous Blood Red Hell powerhouses. The density of the Destruction Energy was on par with the Blood Red Hell assassins who had shown up in Heavenly Bow City to mount a sneak attack on him. However, those assassins were only at the Heavenly King Tier. He was at the Heavenly Emperor Tier. Naturally, his power could not be spoken of on equal terms.

The tyranny in the Destruction Attribute caused varying degrees of changes on the faces of the crowd that had gathered to watch the fight in Heavenly Snow Mountain's peak. Xue Ao'tian's face followed suit and grew stern.

Beyond a shadow of a doubt, the appearance of Destruction Attribute had overturned the rules of all attributes from the original Four Great Saint Attributes of the leading Heavenly Jewel Masters.

The disadvantages of Tiger King Xue Ao'ying's attributes were immediately exposed in battle. In truth, there was still a slight gap between his power and Yun Ruoyun's previous level. The reason he unleashed an assault the moment he arrived was because he wanted to get help from Yun Ruoyun to consume the enemy's Heavenly Energy. It would give the enemy no chance to retaliate.

However, the enemy did not even show the slightest signs of being depleted of energy from his previous battles. Additionally, it seemed like he became more powerful than Yun Ruoyun back then. When the Destruction Attribute was completely released, the terrifying force caused the color to drain from the Tiger King's face.

He could clearly feel that the attributes and elements in the air being ruined, violated and destroyed under the powers of the Destruction Attribute. The destruction made the Destruction Attribute even stronger in contrast. It was as if a black hole was swallowing everything in its path to strengthen its powers.

Another fierce explosion rang loudly. The Tiger King's body was sent flying out of the way. It was also at this very moment the gold color seemed to vanish completely from the sky before everything turned dark. If it was not for the fact that the Destruction Attribute had yet to envelop the entire sky, Heavenly Snow Mountain would have become pitch black if not for the sliver of light from afar.

The Tiger King let out a muffled moan in the sky. His entire body flew backward, and the dazzling legendary armor set on his body was surrounded by a black light. It seemed like it was continuously corroding him. It was fortunate that he was protected by this legendary armor set. Otherwise, his body would have been severely injured by this attack.

Once one achieved the Heavenly King Tier and beyond, a significant amount of abilities would have been infinitely weakened. Although the competition was based on sheer strength as well as the advantages one property had over the other, it did not mean that skills were unnecessary, only that they were not the most important thing.

Clearly, both sides were equally matched in power. However, in terms of attributes, the Tiger King was vastly inferior. Judging by the looks of it, he would not be able to hold on for very much longer.

Xue Ao'tian's feet seemed to move a little bit. Fen Tian smiled at him and said, "Brother Xue, do not despair. My subordinate will not kill you. We aren't enemies anyway."

With profound meaning in his eyes, Xue Ao'tian's glanced at him as he said, "This Destruction Attribute is indeed powerful! Fen Tian, where did you find such a powerful attribute and how is it that every person in Blood Red Hell is equipped with the power of this attribute?"

Fen Tian chuckled, "I'll tell you once the Grand Tournament of

the Saint Lands is over, Brother Xue. As long as we solve the problem before us, you can even have a share of this Destruction Attribute. I know your cultivation base is at the Heavenly God Tier. Once you possess the power of Destruction Attribute, you'll be a powerhouse that surpasses all."

Xue Ao'tian's eyes flashed as if something had stirred.

Fen Tian secretly smirked in his heart. Naturally, he would not willingly face Heaven's Expanse Palace and Heavenly Snow Mountain on his own at the same time. That was why he was trying to entice Xue Ao'tian. He was the only one who knew if he was actually going to share the Destruction Attribute with Xue Ao'tian or not. At the very least, he had no intentions of sparing the Tiger King in the battle before him. The other Great Saint Lands were merely stumbling blocks to him. The more he could get rid of, the better it would be. He had even thought of his excuse. If the Tiger King died in battle, he would shirk the responsibility and pass it on to his subordinate. After all, in this battle, it was not easy to show mercy.

The battle in the sky was going according to Fen Tian's plan. Another deafening roar was heard as Xue Ao'ying spat out a mouthful of blood. His originally white legendary armor set had turned completely black in color. One could only imagine how much damage he had endured.

It was also at this point in time that the Blood Red Hell powerhouse suddenly paused in mid-air as he raised both his arms to the sky. Then, the Destruction Thought that covered the sky suddenly gathered towards him like a whirling scattering puff of clouds.

The terrifying black shade suddenly heightened him into a ten-meter-tall giant.

All of this happened very quickly. The Tiger King, Xue Ao'ying steadied himself in the sky with great difficulty. In the next

moment, the enemy had already finished gathering the Destruction Thought, and the ten-meter tall giant was already charging towards Xue Ao'ying.

"Stop! Mercy!" Fen Tian yelled from below. Even though he was faking it, he had to really show it. He was still unwilling to fall out with Xue Ao'tian. He knew very clearly that after this attack, even if Xue Ao'ying survived, he would be severely injured. The ideal outcome would be to cripple the Tiger King without killing him.

Xue Ao'tian's expression significantly changed as well. However, this was the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands. Even with his status as the number one in the world, he could not disrupt the competition. Otherwise, the other Great Saint Lands would unite against the Heavenly Snow Mountain.

However, the gigantic black shadow was charging too quickly. When Fen Tian's voice rang out loud, the giant black shadow had already slammed itself fiercely against the Tiger King.

The powerhouses of Heavenly Snow Mountain could not bear to watch this. Most of them had their eyes shut. Even the Lion King, Gu Site, who had been in conflict with the Tiger King his whole life could not hold back the sullen look in his eyes. Anyone could see that the Tiger King was already wounded. The difference in attributes between the two was far too great. How could he possibly catch a lucky break and escape from the enemy's Divine Thought, that was filled with the force that it had absorbed. Even a legendary armor set could not block such a forceful attack!

Bang!

An ear-piercing explosion echoed throughout the sky.

Fen Tian who was at the peak of Heavenly Snow Mountain saw the ashen look on Xue Ao'tian's face. He said with an apologetic look on his face, "Brother Xue, this is a mistake, I..." Just as he was about to console Xue Ao'tian with his excuse to temporarily protect the alliance between the two, he noticed the ashen look on Xue

Ao'tian's face turned into shock. Voices of surprise could be heard from all around.

Fen Tian instinctively raised his head towards the sky, and he saw two figures falling from the sky.

The first to fall was the Tiger King, Xue Ao'ying. Xue Ao'tian's body flashed and caught his younger brother. At this moment, Xue Ao'ying's face was like a hell's banknote. He was completely unconscious but his hands and legs were intact, and he was still breathing. At first glance, it looked like his entire body was heavily injured.

The other figure was also falling from the sky. There was no need for Fen Tian to act as a member of Blood Red Hell automatically caught him in a flash. It was the Heavenly Emperor powerhouse from Blood Red Hell.

The difference was his situation was far more dire compared to Xue Ao'ying. A large hole with a diameter of a ruler could be seen on his chest. He looked lifeless.

Even Fen Tian, who had carefully laid out what he thought was a perfect plan, was stunned. This was because when he turned to speak to Xue Ao'tian previously, he did not notice any changes to the sky. He simply could not fully comprehend the situation before him. Clearly, his subordinate had the upper hand. How could the situation change so suddenly? Even though the Tiger King seemed like he was badly injured, his own subordinate who was more competent was completely killed off.

After all, the number of powerhouses in Blood Red Hell was rather alarming as well. Zhou Weiqing had gotten rid of quite a number of them in the past so the number of Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouses he had was limited. Blood Red Hell's wild schemes were not only limited to this Grand Tournament of the Saint Lands. They had already made plans to selfishly take over the other Great Saint Lands. Now that they had lost one of their best

Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouses without any rhyme or reason, even Fen Tian could not help but feel glum?

"What's the meaning of this?" He asked his subordinate through slightly gritted teeth.

The last clash in the sky was equivalent to a dramatic scene. Everyone else knew that when the giant shadow created by the Blood Red Hell's Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse slammed into Xue Ao'ying, the initially pale-faced Tiger King who looked like death was knocking on his door, suddenly released an explosion of blinding gold light from his body.

This golden light forcibly tore through the invincible Destruction Energy. The successful attack carved a hole through the Blood Red Hell's Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse's body. The Tiger King also suffered the repercussions from the clash with the Destruction Energy. That was why both parties ended up falling from the sky.

Fen Tian could not believe his ears when he heard his subordinate's report. If Destruction Energy was that easy to break through, what was he going to use to lead Dandun Empire into an easy victory against the Geritimo Empire? To think he arrived in such a grandiose manner, ready to use the Grand Tournament of the Saint Lands to thoroughly change the mainland's landscape.

Xue Ao'ying was clearly on the losing end just a while ago, and he had also sustained heavy injuries. Even if he was not wounded and went all out, it was not possible that he could break through the Destruction Energy. Both parties had almost the same cultivation base, and he was definitely at a disadvantage in terms of attributes so no skills could possibly have any effect at that point in time!

"Fen Tian, I think this must be Ao'ying's mistake. You saw it as well. In matters of life and death, Ao'ying couldn't give his all. As for your subordinate's death, I'd like to express my deepest regret." Xue Ao'tian's voice rang in Fen Tian's ears. There was an apologetic note in his voice but when Fen Tian turned to face Xue

Ao'tian, he could not detect a single trace of regret on his face.

Fen Tian clenched his fists instinctively. He almost lost his temper but in the end, he managed to hold it in. Regardless of the situation, he could not detach himself from the recent events. After all, it was his subordinate who had received a fatal blow. Even though he still could not make sense of what happened after, this was not the time to fall out with the Heavenly Snow Mountain.

He forced a smile on his face, "The Tiger King can't be blamed for this. In the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands, life and death is something that can happen in the blink of an eye. However, it seems that the Tiger King will not be able to continue fighting. In this fight, it can be said that neither of us has won. However, it can be considered that I lost a little more since my man is dead. My men will enter the cycle first. Send another person out, Brother Xue."

Xue Ao'tian nodded. He and Fen Tian both sent out another person each. Fen Tian chose a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse again. However, the shocking thing was Xue Ao'tian actually sent out a mere Heavenly King.

The other Masters of the Great Saint Lands were not at all surprised by this arrangement. After all, the greatest power of Heavenly Snow Mountain lay with Xue Ao'tian. Their power as a whole was not considered too strong. That was why using a Heavenly King to undertake the mission was an inevitable situation.

Heavenly Snow Mountain and Blood Red Hell's mutual suffering had resulted in the Heavenly Expanse Palace getting off easy. At least the cannon fodder Heavenly King-tier powerhouse that they sent out in the first round allowed them to receive a position in the next cycle and maintain their position as number four. Unfortunately, he was up against the Demonic Emperor, Wu Yunyue.

A Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse versus a Heavenly King-tier powerhouse. Unless this was an abnormality like Zhou Weiqing, what kind of suspense would this bring?

Wu Yunyue did not bother wasting much of his effort and easily won his first round.

Presently, the first round of the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands had ended. The winner of the first round was the Peerless Sect. Of course, from Fen Tian's point of view, the Peerless Sect had only achieved this by luck. If the Heavenly Emperor he sent out did not die, Wu Yunyue might not have such a good result.

There was no break in the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands. Wu Yunyue's next opponent would be a challenger from Love Valley who lost in the first round.

The representative from Love Valley was also a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse who was clearly a little anxious because he had to face Wu Yunyue. When both parties ascended to the sky, his figure lagged behind Wu Yunyue by an obvious measure.

This was understandable. Wu Yunyue was the previous Sect Leader of the Heavenly Demon Sect. Even though the Heavenly Demon Sect's overall power was inferior to the other four Great Saint Lands, one would have to measure each individual's power in a battle. No one in the other Great Saint Lands dared to take Wu Yunyue's cultivation base lightly. Evil Attribute had a rather tyrannical power, and that included the two great attributes, The Darkness and Life Attributes. Even when faced with Shanggong Tianyang in his Boundless Infinitum Set, Wu Yunyue's power was enough to grant him the possibility of victory in a single combat. So, what could an average Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse have to stand against him? Moreover, Wu Yunyue did not waste a lot of effort in the previous match against the cannon-fodder Heavenly King-tier powerhouse from Heavenly Expanse Palace.

The entire sky turned grey following Wu Yunyue's ascent. The

air was already icy-cold but now it turned gloomy as well. At first glance, Wu Yunyue looked very calm but his eyes were filled with ferocity.

He had never had a good impression of the other four Great Saint Lands. If it was not for their coercion, how could the Heavenly Demon Sect have fallen to the point of needing a crutch? He had volunteered himself to represent the Peerless Sect in the first round. He did not think about how long he would have to continue. All he thought about was that he needed a way to relieve himself of the burden he felt. Under these circumstances, the Demonic Emperor was undoubtedly very terrifying.

Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy might not have been able to help Wu Yunyue in breaking through to the Heavenly God Tier but it had placed him one step closer to the tier. All he needed was just a little more to reach the Heavenly God Tier. This was also due to the severity of Wu Yunyue's old injury that the Saint Energy managed to heal.

The Love Valley's Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse faced Wu Yunyue from a far distance in the sky. A warped light resulted in him occupying a leading position in the sky. However, he was much weaker in contrast to Wu Yunyue's Evil attribute that covered the sky. This Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse from Love Valley was only at the middle level of his cultivation base.

"Demonic Emperor, if you please." Shrouded in the brilliance of his light, the Heavenly Emperor from Love Valley gestured in an invitation as eight pieces of the legendary armor set wrapped around him at the same time.

Wu Yunyue did not reply him at all. He moved in the next second. A thick, grey light seemed to burst out from his body. When the grey light erupted, Wu Yunyue's body began to swell, and his eyes turned into a blood-red shade. His long hair that trailed over his shoulders turned into a horrifying grey color.

Demonic Change. That was right. Wu Yunyue had actually used Demonic Change at the beginning of the battle. He did not even bother feinting.

Bang! A horrifying blast exploded in the sky. Wu Yunyue was like a cannon shot as he instantly charged towards the Love Valley's Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse. A nine-piece legendary armor set, colored like grey crystals covered his entire body. He held a sword condensed from grey crystals in his right hand, bringing a ray of light with him before the light went off in an instant.

Demonic Emperor Set. Even though there were only nine of this legendary armor set, it was worn by Demonic Emperors of days past. It held the highest position among the nine legendary armor sets.

Any Heavenly Jewel Masters with the Evil Attribute were believed to be Demonic Emperors. Zhou Weiqing had the clearest perception in sensing the ability used by the Demonic Emperor at this moment. Wasn't the grey sword in his hand an imitation of the Demon God Sword?

Zhou Weiqing who stood in his original position seemed to absent-mindedly turn towards Huang Xingyun, the Lord of Love Valley. Huang Xingyun was clearly shocked when he saw Wu Yunyue utilizing Demonic Change. Afterward, his expression turned very ugly.

Rumble...

Just then, a loud clap of thunder rang throughout the sky. Upon reaching the Heavenly Emperor Tier, hand-to-hand combat became more straightforward. One must at least possess the Heavenly Skill Projection ability to actually have any effect. However, to utilize an ability of that level would not be easy. Hence, generally speaking, hand-to-hand combat in the Heavenly Emperor Tier was a mostly rigid affair that relied on pure strength, attributes, experience in battles and a few special techniques.

The Heavenly Emperor from Love Valley seemed like he was giving his all in his fight with Wu Yunyue. He also raised his swords in shock.

The distortion from the Time Attribute had caused a messy trace in the light rays around his body. One, it was to confuse the Demonic Emperor. Two, it was to use the Time Disorder to wreck havoc on the Demonic Emperor's sense of direction.

Unfortunately, the difference in cultivation base between him and Wu Yunyue wasn't all that great. Moreover, Wu Yunyue's transformation had exceeded all physical limits upon using Demonic Change. The ice-cold perception had also been magnified.

The Demonic Emperor's sword cut through the Time Disorder Skill from a small opening before it clashed with the Love Valley Heavenly Emperor's sword.

A loud bang was heard from the clash.

At a crucial point, the Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse unleashed his power. The Love Valley Heavenly Emperor looked like he had been electrocuted as he trembled all over. He could not possibly withstand Wu Yunyue's blow. How terrifying was the corrosion of Evil attribute?

However, in the next moment, his body actually separated. His Heavenly Skill Image shattered under the Demonic Emperor's sword but his original body had already retreated ten meters away. It neutralized a large amount of Wu Yunyue's attack.

Time Mirror Image? This was the most powerful technique of Time Attribute. It allowed a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse to unleash a mirror image that was not a complete Heavenly Skill Image. The cultivator would be able to maintain a certain degree of defensive strength in the mirror image and give the original user enough space for to evade attacks. Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue's crucial blow was neutralized under these circumstances.

A sharp gleam flashed across the Love Valley Heavenly Emperor's eye. Naturally, he could see that Wu Yunyue's attack was meant to take his life. If he did not have the Time Mirror Image defending him, he would have ended up gravely injured if not dead.

Wu Yunyue brandished his sword, and the Love Valley Heavenly Emperor dodged it in the next moment as he stepped back. His body had already charged upwards once again, and the space in his surroundings began to warp. It enveloped him and Wu Yunyue within it. At this moment, only he and Wu Yunyue alone knew of what going on around them. The powerhouses in Heavenly Snow Mountain's peak had no way of seeing the changes at all.

The Love Valley Heavenly Emperor appeared right in front of Wu Yunyue in a flash. His body and sword became one as he charged towards Wu Yunyue's chest.

Wu Yunyue might be slightly passive due to his outdated sword techniques but he had a wide array of experiences in battle. His body followed the sword and a puff of dense, dark blue light exploded in all directions. It enveloped his entire body within it. It was Life Protection, a specialty of the Life Attribute.

The Blue Rain Hibiscus bloomed with a million rays of lights. It was not only for defense. It also whirled towards the Love Valley Heavenly Emperor. At the same time, the Demonic Emperor raised his sword following its movements.

Chapter 809: The Demonic Emperor's Power

(3)

However, at that moment, Wu Yunyue saw the ferocity bursting forth from within the Love Valley Heavenly Emperor's eyes very clearly. The sword gleamed with a distorted light that turned black without any warning. When the Blue Rain Hibiscus clashed with the black light, it did not put up any resistance and faded away maniacally. The sword seemed to pierce through the Demonic Emperor's chest.

The ferocity in the Love Valley Heavenly Emperor's eyes was clear for all to see. A powerful Destruction Energy burned from deep within his sword. He had absolute confidence that Wu Yunyue would not be able to block his blade. In truth, he was only feigning weakness in the previous battle. If Wu Yunyue had only launched a simple attack, perhaps he would have stuck to his plan and consumed Wu Yunyue's absolute cultivation base before he admitted defeat. However, Wu Yunyue's attack that was filled with killing intent had angered him thoroughly. He no longer cared about Huang Xingyun's orders. He wanted to use this opportunity to defeat the Demonic Emperor with a blow. Judging from his Heavenly Emperor-tier cultivation base, once the longsword that was filled with a high level of dense Destruction Energy pierced through Wu Yunyue's body, the Destruction Energy would cause Wu Yunyue's body to explode. Not only would it destroy Wu Yunyue instantly, no trace of him would remain even with the protection of the Time Attribute.

A loud explosion reverberated clearly and loudly in the entire area. The entire Heavenly Snow Mountain could hear it very clearly. Then, a blood red light appeared in the sky as two black shadows descended from the sky causing the initially distorted light to scatter.

Boom! Boom! Two bodies were fiercely flung onto the peak of Heavenly Snow Mountain followed by a rain of blood that covered the skies.

Everyone was stunned. They could tell that the figure that had fallen down from the sky to the ground was the corpse of the Love Valley Heavenly Emperor.

His body was severed from his left thigh all the way to his right shoulder. It was severed — cleanly and magnificently. One could even see a dense aura of the Evil Attribute in the Heavenly Energy on the two devastated halves of his body. With a few dazzling techniques, he managed to destroy the tough and tenacious body of a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse to the extent that the body was now beyond recognition.

'What was going on?' This was a question that everyone was asking. Even though Wu Yunyue previously had the upper hand, when the Love Valley Heavenly Emperor utilized Time Mirror Image to evade the life-threatening attack, he had managed to snatch back the upper hand. Even if he was unable to defeat Wu Yunyue, the victor should not have been decided in such a short time.

At this moment, Wu Yunyue was descending from the sky as well. At first glance, he looked completely unscathed. Only his middle finger on his left hand that was concealed in his sleeve was completely swollen. He would not be able to use it in a battle for a short period of time at least.

Even in death, the Love Valley Heavenly Emperor still had his eyes wide opened. His gaze was filled with disbelief. Wu Yunyue glanced at him coldly and increased the density of his overbearing aura.

Only Wu Yunyue himself knew what had happened. The deafening bang came from Wu Yunyue when he used his left middle finger to flick away the Love Valley Heavenly Emperor's

blade that was filled with Destruction Energy.

In the midst of dealing his crucial blow, the Love Valley Heavenly Emperor was flicked off by Wu Yunyue. He had concentrated all of his Heavenly Energy completely in that one blow. How could he have possibly anticipated that his own attack would be so easily neutralized? Naturally, he was also unable to evade Wu Yunyue's counter slash and ended up with his body sliced in half.

Wu Yunyue looked at Zhou Weiqing. Both men had a momentary exchange, communicating with their eyes. Zhou Weiqing could roughly guess what had actually happened. Huang Xingyun, on the other side, stared dolefully at Wu Yunyue as if he could attack him at any moment.

The Demonic Emperor glanced at him with mild disdain. Just as he was about to say something, Zhou Weiqing was already next to him. He spoke apologetically, "Valley Lord Huang, I'm truly sorry. Our Vice Sect Master momentarily lost control and was unable to show mercy. Sigh, fights between Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouses are indeed cruel! I ask that you do not take this to heart, Valley Lord Huang. It's the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands after all. Death and injuries are unavoidable."

Seeing the pitiful look on Zhou Weiqing's face, Huang Xingyun almost gnashed his teeth in anger, "Fine. That's a good one, Peerless Sect. Wu Yunyue, I hope you can keep going like this."

Wu Yunyue grew calmer due to Zhou Weiqing's arrival. He replied emotionlessly, "If you're not satisfied, why not personally take the field. However, if you plan on facing me, you'll need to get in line. Next!"

"Demonic Emperor, after you." Naturally, it was the powerhouse from Blood Red Hell, placed behind Love Valley, who had entered the second round. Fen Tian sent a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse as well. However, at this time, Fen Tian was frowning as he stared at the Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue. His looked like

he was deep in thought.

Undoubtedly, from the beginning of the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands, it was the Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue from the Peerless Sect who had the most eye-catching performance. He is also the only one to pass the first round. Even though this was also directly related to Zhou Weiqing's smoothly drawn lot, Wu Yunyue has also been able to defeat both his opponents in immediate succession and is currently the only one who has been able to win two fights in succession. Especially the recent round against the Love Valley Heavenly Emperor, where he won in a short period of time, fiercely issued a death blow, and raised the atmosphere of the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands into suspense.

Of course, Wu Yunyue may have delivered a powerful performance, but at least based on the current situation, the other four Great Saint Lands still found it all very acceptable. After all, Wu Yunyue was once a leader of the Five Great Saint Lands. In the previous Grand Tournament of the Saint Lands, he was always the last to emerge. It was normal to have a contestant with powers slightly higher than the rest. Besides, it was Yun Ruoyun of Love Valley in the first round who was an aberration, to have actually lost the match so easily.

Two figures rose to the sky once again. The emotions of the Five Saint Lands observing the match from below showed a clear change as well. Zhou Weiqing and Fen Tian were naturally the ones who paid the most attention. They stared squarely upon the two powerhouses as they ascended the sky. Zhou Weiqing smiled at Fen Tian and said, "I wonder when are you prepared to personally take the field, Hell Lord! By simply sending out your subordinates... I'm afraid that you won't stand a chance in the Grand Tournament."

Fen Tian glanced at Zhou Weiqing with an indifferent expression, "The Grand Tournament has only just begun. Sect Master Zhou, you seem to be talking prematurely. Wu Yunyue

might be powerful, but he cannot possibly hold on like this for too long. Do you really think that he can take me on, head to head?"

Zhou Weiqing chuckled, "Of course not. Only that I've heard of Lord Fen Tian's great name since a long time ago. I do wonder if I can actually take you on head-to-head, Hell Lord, and get some advice. Sigh. How unfortunate."

"What's unfortunate?" Fen Tian stared at the remorseful-looking Zhou Weiqing with a mild suspicion.

Zhou Weiqing sniggered, "I'm only saying that it's unfortunate that there are so many powerhouses in Blood Red Hell. However, I don't know how many will return with their lives this time around!"

"You're looking for your own death." Two Blood Red Hell powerhouses behind Fen Tian were enraged and were about to charge towards him.

Zhou Weiqing exclaimed with a terrified look on his face, "Ah! Unable to win the Grand Tournament, and here you are, wanting to violate the rules of the Grand Tournament? I'm so scared of you! Come on!"

Zhou Weiqing might not be speaking very loudly, but not a single person in Heavenly Snow Mountain did not have the stature of being a powerhouse. Naturally, they heard this very clearly. Instantly, a numb expression appeared on many of the powerhouses' faces. Mountain Lord of the Heavenly Snow Mountain Xue Ao'tian and Shangguan Tianyue glanced over, putting on an 'I don't know who this person is' look on their faces.

The battle in the skies had begun. Compared to the last two battles, Wu Yunyue looked as if he had gone wild from eating medicine this time around. He did not remove his Demonic Change and his Demonic Emperor Set. He had long harbored a deep hatred towards the Blood Red Hell, from the moment the Heavenly Emperor of Blood Red Hell rose to the air, he unleashed an attack

that had the force equivalent to a torrential rain.

In the air, all you could see was a grey-colored omnipresence filled with Evil Energy. Powerful Evil Attribute bore down like the weight of Mount Taishan, forcibly stifling the opponent as if Wu Yunyue could not care less about the depletion of his energy. His crazed attacks rendered the Blood Red Hell Heavenly Emperor powerless to fight back. The Blue Rain Hibiscus coupled with his Demonic Emperor Sword caused the heavens and earth to transform with his every attack.

The Blood Red Hell Heavenly Emperor may not be a weakling and had chosen to unleash the Destruction Attribute from the very beginning. However, his cultivation base was still a little inferior to that of Wu Yunyue's. More importantly, the Destruction Attribute that he had unleashed had no effect towards Wu Yunyue's Evil and Life Attributes. It felt as if he were simply relying on his Fire Affinity to contend against Wu Yunyue.

Fen Tian observed the situation in the sky and frowned. However, there was a flash in his gaze as he carelessly shot a look toward Love Valley, and coincidentally caught the Lord of Love Valley, Huang Xingyun looking at him. Both men communicated silently through their eyes and saw the chill in the opposing party's eyes.

It was only momentary, and not many people managed to notice this change in the two Lords of the two Saint Lands.

Wu Yunyue's attacks were simply too powerful. Under the conditions of the Demonic Change, he who was at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly Emperor-tier had absolute control – vertically and horizontally. With the Demonic Emperor Sword in his hand, he gave everything he had with every slash and showed no signs of mercy. On top of that, the Blue Rain Hibiscus continuously attacked the enemy from every angle. Under these attacks, one would be dreaming if they were thinking to use a Heavenly Skill Projection.

The main reason why Wu Yunyue's had the ability to kill the Heavenly Emperor from Love Valley at the last minute, was because he had Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy in his body. With the help of Saint Energy, he no longer feared the Destruction Attribute. Otherwise, in that last second, he could only choose to dodge, and would never have been able to successfully kill his opponent.

Fen Tien had clearly noticed this now but so what if he had? Zhou Weiqing having the Saint Energy was no secret. The only new thing he discovered was that Zhou Weiqing was able to transmit Saint Energy to other people.

"Go to hell!" Continuously suppressed, the Blood Red Hell Heavenly Emperor was red with rage. Suddenly, his entire body turned black. His weapon was a long saber. At that moment, the tyrannical Destruction Energy was taken away, and the long saber reacted in a way that could split the heavens and earth throughout its body. A black, crescent-shaped light appeared from the saber and charged toward Wu Yunyue.

Chapter 810: Collision of the Divine Territories (1)

The Blood Red Hell Heavenly Emperor's face turned pale as the attack was launched. The black flame that was burning from the merging of the Destructive and Fire Attribute around his body dimmed instantly. His attack was consolidated with his own Heavenly Core Nucleus - the most powerful attack that came from burning his Flames of Life of Fire Attribute.

Wu Yunyue let out a cold scoff while he swayed the Demon Emperor Sword around. It flew out of his hand and turned into a crystal-like glow before colliding hard with the black crescent Destructive Light Blade in the sky.

Bzzt!

This time, the collision from both sides did not create any bangs at all. When the gray and black lights collided in the sky, an odd yet ear-piercing crackle was heard, much like when oil meets a hot blade. No matter the black or gray color, both of them melted rather visibly. In the end, both of them disappeared in the sky.

It was clear who won and who lost. Although the Demonic Emperor lost his Consolidated Weapon, the worst that could happen was his inability to use his Demon Emperor Sword for a short period of time. It was worse for the Blood Red Hell Heavenly Emperor, as he was draining his ultimate source of energy. One should not underestimate the attack. If it had landed atop a mountain, it would instantly cut the mountain in half if it was less than a thousand meters tall.

"We surrender!" Fen Tian shouted almost as soon as the collision happened. However, would Wu Yunyue stop just like that? Of course not. Wu Yunyue began to move as soon as he tossed out his Demon Emperor Sword. The Blue Rain Hibiscus appeared silently behind the Blood Red Hell Emperor. It was impossible to restrict

his movements but the Blue Rain Hibiscus that was twisted around the back had paralyzed the Blood Red Hell Heavenly Emperor's body for a little while.

It was sufficient for the Demonic Emperor. A blue glow held onto his leg from below; Wu Yunyue's body felt like it was being pulled hard as he was dragged downward at an angle. When he fell five meters downward, he was yanked by another blue string, which was pulling upward in the other direction. He looked like he was folded at a clear angular fold line in mid-air.

When the Blood Red Hell Heavenly Emperor's body was paralyzed, Wu Yunyue arrived before him. Naturally, the Blood Red Hell Heavenly Emperor would not sit and wait. It was impossible for him to dodge it, but at that very moment, the only thing that he could do was to defend himself as much as possible. He punched with both his fists while releasing the little Destructive Attribute that was left, in attempts to defend himself against Wu Yunyue.

As the four fists collided, the Blood Red Hell Heavenly Emperor groaned as a deep bang was heard, which flung him away. Both his hands were now completely folded backward. A blue string that detached from the Blue Rain Hibiscus appeared out of nowhere and its ends were tied onto Wu Yunyue and the Blood Red Hell Heavenly Emperor's waists. While the latter was flung away, the blue string pulled Wu Yunyue together. The Demonic Emperor conveniently slapped hard on the Blood Red Hell Heavenly Emperor's chest.

An ear-piercing bang exploded in the sky; the Blood Red Hell Heavenly Emperor's legendary set broke and shattered everywhere. The last layer of protection had now vanished.

"Stop." Fen Tian's surrender had lasted for a couple of seconds but Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue proceeded to attack like he did not hear him at all. It was impossible that he was not mad! He then leaped toward the sky in a flash. The terrifying Destructive

Thought was like a stormy wave that swept towards Wu Yunyue.

"Hell Lord, I don't think that's very nice." Zhou Weiqing's mellow voice was heard. A dark light curtain with a bright white light then unfurled in the sky and blocked Fen Tian's Destructive Thought completely. The black light curtain looked like a huge cloth but as soon as it opened, as countless dazzling starlights fell from the middle of the cloth, blocking Fen Tian's Destructive Thought completely.

When Fen Tian exploded with his Destructive Thought, he had already flown upward. Now that his thoughts were being blocked, it still did not stop him from flying in the sky. While Zhou Weiqing was releasing the Astral Divine Territory, Fen Tian had arrived with the help of the Spatial Law at the same time. It was a battle between the Blood Red Hell and the Peerless Sect, Fen Tian against Zhou Weiqing. The both of them collided hard in the sky without much theatrics.

Fen Tian's Destruction Energy was different from the rest of the powerhouses who possessed the Destruction Attribute, especially the ones that Zhou Weiqing had witnessed before this. If the way that the other powerhouses released the Destruction Attribute was in the form of a facet, then Fen Tian's way of release was akin to countless powerful sharp blades. Not only was each of the Destruction Energy filled with a dense Destructive aura, they were filled with the ability to cause immense harm. With the impact of Zhou Weiqing's Astral Divine Territory, it caused ripples among the starlight.

Fen Tian's right arm enlarged at the same time when he flew into the sky. His arm had enlarged to almost double its original size when he got closer to Zhou Weiqing. His muscular fist had completely turned a dark red, while the energy that was hiding in the sparkling, dark red brought about a terrifying feeling like it was going to tear the sky open.

Zhou Weiqing attacked Fen Tian - not with his arm, but with his

leg - his right leg to be exact. He lifted his right leg high and stepped hard onto Fen Tian's gigantic fist as swiftly as a whip would.

Bang!

An intense stormy bang made everyone on the Heavenly Snow Mountain lose their sense of hearing temporarily. The snow near the Heavenly Snow Mountain was thrown up from the intense bang and fell hard onto the ground, causing an avalanche to roll down from the Heavenly Snow Mountain from every direction.

Everyone present was shocked at the overbearing collision. Fen Tian's body fell from the sky and all his Destructive Thought retreated. As his feet landed on the ground, his right arm had gone back to its original size but part of his clothing that was covering his right arm was damaged beyond repair. The people could clearly see that the veins bulging from Fen Tian's right arm were all black, like how it would look if his blood was black.

A couple of people with the most powerful cultivation base saw Fen Tian's legs completely submerged into the ground the moment he landed. That meant that he did not manage to completely counter the impact from Zhou Weiqing's kick when he was falling from the sky. However, it only took a second before Fen Tian got both his legs above ground, as if the ground had been moved by him. With his cultivation base, it was an easy task for him to morph the ground under his feet.

Meanwhile, Zhou Weiqing who was mid-air had just ascended approximately a hundred meters higher, but he still looked calm, plastering a smile on his face. Was it a tie?

Many people secretly gulped when they saw what happened earlier. When Zhou Weiqing arrived and announced that his Peerless Sect would be a Saint Land, many people were waiting to ridicule him. Even after the other Saint Lands had recognized the position of the Peerless Sect as a Saint Land temporarily, most

people, including Fen Tian and Huang Xinyun thought that the Peerless Sect depended on the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya and Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue's abilities. This was regardless of Zhou Weiqing's outstanding talent and the fact that he was a remarkable powerhouse amongst the young generation.

However, everyone's perspective changed at that very moment. Without a doubt, the raging attack that Fen Tian launched as he dashed into the sky was definitely at the standard of a cultivator at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly Emperor Tier. That was indeed a Maximum Level Heavenly Emperor-tier's attack with Destructive Attribute as its base.

However, Zhou Weiling managed to block it with ease and the battle seemed to end in a tie. That would mean that no matter what, Zhou Weiqing would at least have the cultivation base of a Maximum Level Heavenly Emperor himself. The both of them did not put on their Consolidated Equipment when the attack happened, so it was safe to say that the collision was the most direct representation of their cultivation bases. Zhou Weiqing did not lose, which meant that he had emerged victorious. Now, the Peerless Sect was like an entirely new concept to everyone there.

Gu Yingbing stared blankly at Zhou Weiqing; he was completely stunned now. He was full of confidence when his cultivation base was upgraded to the Heavenly King Tier from his continuous handwork, and his power even experienced a leap the moment he achieved this. All Heavenly Jewel Masters knew that very well. He challenged Zhou Weiqing once again for his dignity.

However, he suddenly understood that his distance with Zhou Weiqing did not only fail to get closer due to his Heavenly King Tier achievement, but he was now even further away from him — similar to the distance between a Heavenly King and Heavenly Zong Master. Such a distance between a cultivator at the Heavenly King Tier and one at the Heavenly Emperor-tier was an extremely huge gap! He had never expected Zhou Weiqing to have the ability

to challenge Lord Fen Tian. Gu Yingbing knew that he was never going to be capable of fighting Zhou Weiqing forever, as he would never be able to catch up with Zhou Weiqing.

Right after Fen Tian landed on the group, two slams were heard as the two bloody bodies fell on the ground before him. The two bodies belonged to the same person, who was Wu Yunyue's opponent earlier, the Blood Red Hell Heavenly Emperor.

Zhou Weiqing blocked Fen Tian at just the right time while Wu Yunyue managed to catch up to his opponent. The Blood Red Hell's Heavenly Emperor whose Consolidated Equipment Set was broken was now akin to a young lady with her legs wide open - helpless and powerless to defend herself. Wu Yunyue had been waiting for this day for far too long. He grabbed each of the Blood Red Hell Heavenly Emperor's legs with both his hands and ripped him in half mid-air.

Zhou Weiqing landed at almost the same time Wu Yunyue did. He discreetly patted Wu Yunyue's back with his hand before landing. Wu Yunyue had given his very best in all the battles, so he had already consumed quite a lot of his strength. Hence, Zhou Weiqing's pure Nebula Saint Energy was the best supplement.

"Zhou, Wei, Qing." Fen Tian said word-by-word as an overbearing will to kill swept towards Peerless Sect like it had come to fruition.

Chapter 811: Collision of the Divine Territories (2)

Zhou Weiqing said in a fit of a rage, "Why are you calling out my name? Fen Tian, are you shameless? This is the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands. How dare you take action and defy the justice of the tournament? It's a shame how you're even a popular person."

Fen Tian was initially raging and was on the brink of blowing up. The Blood Red Hell powerhouses behind him were ready to fight with full force. However, Zhou Weiqing blew him off just as he landed on the ground.

"Didn't you hear what I said about surrendering just then?" Fen Tian shouted angrily.

Zhou Weiqing nodded and said, "Yes I did! However, my Deputy Sect Master might not have heard it. Both Heavenly Emperors fought as intensely as they would if they were fighting with all their might - who would have noticed you screaming down there? If I let you send your rescue team up, who can tell if you'll decide to take revenge and attack our Deputy Sect Master instead? How was it wrong of me to stop you? After all, it's the people from Blood Red Hell who are lousy."

When Zhou Weiqing spoke up to this point, he looked around at the powerhouses from other Saint Lands and continued like nothing was wrong, "Everyone, are the lives in the Blood Red Hell so precious? People from Love Valley perished earlier as well, and what did Valley Lord Huang say? Absolutely nothing. What makes all of you think that nobody from the Blood Red Hell should die? Besides, which Grand Tournament of Saint Lands in the past ever had a zero-death record? Isn't this normal? If you can, you Blood Red Hell people can send somebody more powerful to kill our Deputy Sect Master in fair combat. Then I, as the Sect Master, will

not utter a word."

Fen Tian had never wanted to kill someone so badly, whether it was before or after he possessed the Destruction Attribute. He really wanted to attack Zhou Weiqing and the Peerless Sect right now, ignoring everyone else in the crowd. Even destroying Zhou Weiqing into a million pieces would not be able to make him feel better! This kid was too irritating; he distorted the truth and pretended everything he said was right.

However, Fen Tian simply could not do that right now. He had yet to accomplish his plan so it was not the time to take action just yet. Besides, regardless if it were the people of Heavenly Expanse Palace or Heavenly Snow Mountain, all of them looked at him in an unfriendly manner.

"Alright, alright. Zhou Weiqing, Wu Yunyue - both of you, wait for me." Fen Tian swung his hand hard as he groaned in rage and gotten his underlings to retreat. He then backed off and returned to his initial place. Naturally, there were people from the Blood Red Hell who went forward to pick up the bodies scattered on the ground. At the same time, he nodded to the short old man who had been standing next to him. The old man walked out slowly and into the ring without saying anything as he waited for the next Blood Red Hell battle.

Wu Yunyue had defeated a couple of people consecutively, including killing two Heavenly Emperors. Suddenly, Peerless Sect had the upper hand. However, Zhou Weiqing then made a decision that confused everyone.

"We'll concede the next battle. The Deputy Sect Master has already won a couple of battles consecutively; he has done enough. Please go back and rest."

Even Wu Yunyue could not understand why Zhou Weiqing did that, so he spoke to him telepathically, "Weiqing, I can still fight. Let me kill one more Blood Red Hell bastard."

Zhou Weiqing shook his head and looked at him calmly. An invisible might in his eyes flashed. Wu Yunyue took a deep breath and returned to his team after glaring at the Blood Red Hell's corner reluctantly.

Zhou Weiqing had his own plans. Although Wu Yunyue had much of his strength recovered from the help of Zhou Weiqing, it was not the right time to fight yet. He did not hope for the Demonic Emperor to drain his strength. Besides, he did that for another purpose. Perhaps Xue Ao'tian did not see through what Zhou Weiqing's intuition of doing this was, but Shangguan Tianyang managed to figure something out. It was simple; he could tell from the sequence. The order would be Love Valley, Blood Red Hell, and finally, Peerless Sect. That would mean that Love Valley would be fighting Blood Red Hell next, and the winner would be fighting Peerless Sect next. If that happened, it would be more difficult for Blood Red Hell to kill or injure the people from Heavenly Snow Mountain or Heavenly Expanse Palace. This kid was too cunning and far too smart.

The second person that Zhou Weiqing sent out had shocked everyone. Long Shiya walked out and stood in the ring with his round body. Nobody would have expected that Zhou Weiqing would send Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor out after the Demonic Emperor. Without a doubt, he certainly did that just to foil the other Saint Lands' plan, especially Blood Red Hell's.

Zhou Weiqing returned to his side with no change in his expression. Shangguan Bing'er had even gotten him a chair to sit down on. Zhou Weiqing sat down majestically while laughing secretly and thought, 'Didn't all of you see the existence of the Demonic Emperor and my master? Alright then, I'll let all of you think that the Peerless Sect had already exposed all our cards. I'd like to see how you're going to handle this.'

The tournament went on. Zhou Weiqing had gotten Wu Yunyue to quit the tournament which was equivalent to Peerless Sect

surrendering. Therefore, the next battle would take place between the second Heavenly King-tier powerhouses of Heavenly Expanse Palace and the Heavenly Snow Mountain. The two who were sent into the ring were supposed to be sacrifices but nobody expected this to happen. There was an intense spark in their eyes as the two Heavenly king-tier powerhouses looked at each other.

It was a battle between Heavenly Expanse Palace and Heavenly Snow Mountain. Although those were just two Heavenly King-tier powerhouses, it was an exciting battle. On the contrary, the battle seemed to be the one that lasted the longest from the beginning. In the end, the Heavenly Expanse Palace's Heavenly King-tier powerhouse defeated the opponent with his Consolidated Equipment but suffered minor injuries.

Shangguan Tianyang announced that they would give up on the next battle immediately. The rounds had then passed since the tournament began. Apart from the Peerless Sect who already had one person disqualified, the other four Saint Lands had already disqualified two people and had sent their third participant out.

When Shangguan Tianyang announced that the Heavenly King-tier powerhouse was surrendering, Fen Tian's pupils clearly shrunk. Although Heavenly Expanse Palace and Heavenly Snow Mountain had disqualified two people, they were scheduled to fight toward the end of the battles. Furthermore, none of their members were injured, while Blood Red Hell already had two of their Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouses killed. Fen Tian seemed to sense something.

It was Love Valley versus Blood Red Hell in the third round, where both parties sent out Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouses. Without a shadow of a doubt, the Blood Red Hell's Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse managed to force his opponent to surrender in a short period of time. There were no casualties in this round at all. However, the Blood Red Hell Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse would be facing Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor

Long Shiya next.

The Blood Red Hell Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse who had just won the battle looked questionably at Fen Tian with his head slightly tilted as he landed on the ground. Fen Tian nodded slightly at him, insinuating a hint. If they were comparing their body weight instead of their abilities, Long Shiya would definitely be at the top of the ranks, amongst all the powerhouses in the Five Saint Lands. He seemed to be putting on weight lately; his rosy skin exuded a healthy glow. He put both his hands on his back, he was not rushing at all.

The Blood Red Hell powerhouse snapped out of his thoughts and said to Long Shiya with a lowered voice, Brother Long, please." He took the lead and levitated as he spoke.

Long Shiya smiled a little and moved his plump body slightly. At the very next second, he was already in the sky. There was a faint six-colored glow surrounding his body, and likewise, a faint series of shadows trailed behind him as he flew into the sky.

"Hmm?" Xue Ao'tian who had been watching the battles in silence could not help but reveal his doubts when he saw Long Shiya flying into the sky. Rising shock quickly filled his eyes. Zhou Weiqing then said softly to Wu Yunyue who was next to him, "Father-in-law, do you know the person that Blood Red Hell sent? It seems like Fen Tian relies strongly on him."

Wu Yunyue nodded lightly, "This person is called Shen Mo. He's the Blood Red Hell's Deputy Hell Lord. His position is just one rank lower than Fen Tian's."

'Shen Mo?' Zhou Weiqing instantly thought of the Shen Little Demon that he defeated more than once, upon hearing his name. Judging from the name itself, it seemed like Little Demon Shen was related to Shen Mo. 'Blood Red Hell's Deputy Hell Lord, huh?' It seemed like Fen Tian could not wait any longer! Shen Mo flew thousands of meters up into the sky. He was not in a hurry to

attack Long Shiya. Instead, he waited for Long Shiya to fly slowly and stopped in front of him.

"Brother Long, it's been a long time since we last met. How have you been?" Although Shen Mo was Blood Red Hell's Deputy Hell Lord, he was much older than Fen Tian. He was one of the seniors in Blood Red Hell. However, he had the same seniority as Long Shiya and was only a few years younger than he was.

Long Shiya smiled faintly and said, "Not bad. I've gotten myself a good disciple recently; my mood has been great."

Shen Mo then replied, "If he's really a good disciple, he wouldn't have pulled you into this whirlpool of a mess. There's no chance for all of you, so please give up. It's been many years since Brother Long had been stuck at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly Emperor Tier. If Brother Long is willing to join me at the Blood Red Hell, perhaps I can think of a way to help you break through the very last step."

Long Shiya was known by many for a long time now. Most importantly, he had always been a free cultivator or Shen Mo would not have said so much to him. Although the condition that Shen Mo asked for was simple, he knew very well how intense the temptation to break through to the Heavenly God Tier was, especially for a Maximum Level Heavenly Emperor-tier cultivator who had plateaued for a long time now.

"You know of a way to help me achieve this?" Long Shiya said in shock.

Shen Mo nodded and said, "I'm at least eighty percent sure. Brother Long, perhaps such an opportunity isn't much for you anymore."

Long Shiya chuckled. His smile and his plump body made him look content and at peace - he did not look like a powerhouse of a generation at all.

"You Blood Red Hell people have been having so much fun all these years... Perhaps it's caused by the Destruction Energy? I guess the breakthrough you mentioned is coming from that as well?"

Chapter 812: Collision of the Divine Territories (3)

Shen Mo then said without shying away, "No matter what method I'm using, anything would suffice as a solution as long as it helps you break through. Brother Long, you've been cultivating all your life. Don't you want to break through to the Heavenly God Tier to see what it's like to be another level higher?"

Long Shiya scoffed, "You're just saying it - who doesn't know how to make empty promises? Haven't you been stuck at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly Emperor Tier for many years already as well?"

Shen Mo laughed out loud, nodded and said, "That's right, perhaps it'll be rather difficult to convince you with empty promises, Brother Long. I shall prove it to you with the truth."

The aura on Shen Mo grew more powerful as he spoke, and a dense black glow then shot up from his body. Suddenly, the entire sky became dark, especially the wide area behind Shen Mo. A gigantic purplish-black shadow appeared slowly, looking like an enormous head with a huge mouth capable of engulfing everything. Darkness, destruction, fear and other many negative emotions exploded at that moment. Even the people atop the Heavenly Snow Mountain felt that the gigantic mouth wanted to engulf it in its entirety.

The people who were present were powerhouses that were above the Heavenly King-tier. All of them could adjust the Atmospheric Energy for their personal use and they could sense it at its deepest. They soon realized that all sorts of attribute elements in the air broke when the sky turned dark and was absorbed ferociously by the endless black shadow. There was a layer made of an odd black color that appeared around Shen Mo's entire body. His eyes had turned dark purple and instead of calling him a human, perhaps it

would be more apt to say that he looked more like the devil. Almost everyone present was affected by the terrifying aura.

"A Divine Territory?" Countless exclamations broke out on top of Heavenly Snow Mountain. Everyone knew what that was about, naturally, they recognized the ability Shen Mo was using.

Aside from a Divine Territory, what other ability could be this powerful? Xue Ao'tian, Shangguan Tianyang, Tianyue and the rest turned serious. They knew very well what a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse could do. Even ten Heavenly Emperors combined could not fight a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse. Besides, the existence of a Heavenly God would mean that his parents would benefit from his ability. Otherwise, Xue Ao'tian would not be capable of bringing the Heavenly Snow Mountain to such a high position on the mainland with his powerful cultivation base.

The Mountain Lord of Heavenly Snow Mountain was the one and only Heavenly God-tier powerhouse in the world and was ranked No.1 throughout his generation. His position became unstable when Shen Mo showcased his Destructive Divine Territory. Most importantly, everybody present was smart. Naturally, they would wonder — even the Blood Red Hell's Deputy Hell Lord was already at the Heavenly God Tier. How could Fen Tian, who was the Hell Lord, not be a Heavenly God?

The release of the Destructive Divine Territory, as well as the conversation between Shen Mo and Long Shiya would mean that he was trying to make Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor succumb to him without having to put up a fight. The Blood Red Hell's true color had finally been revealed at that very moment. Shen Mo's eyes that had turned a dark purple were glaring ferociously at his opponent. As his opponent, Long Shiya was deeply affected by his Destructive Divine Territory. Although Shen Mo did not take action, the terrifying Destructive Thoughts that came from the Destructive Divine Territory seemed like it was going to break his body apart. The six-colored glow around his body was

continuously diminishing, seeming like it was going to collapse anytime.

Long Shiya chuckled and said, "I didn't realize that you've already broken through the Heavenly Emperor Tier. The Destructive Divine Territory... Such a great feeling to be able to destroy the heavens and earth!"

Shen Mo then said with his deep voice, "Brother Long, this will be your last chance. If you're willing, especially with your intelligence and foundation, you'll be even more powerful than I am in the future. Otherwise, don't blame me for being rude."

Long Shiya maintained the smile on his face. Despite having to face the overbearing suppression of the Destructive Divine Territory, he seemed not the least bit pressured. "I've never expected you, Shen Mo, to show me such a majestic thing. Since you've shown me something, I shall show you something in return."

The smile on Long Shiya's face disappeared suddenly as he spoke. He pointed to the sky with his left hand and the ground with his right hand. Both his hands started moving at the same time, and his six-colored glow that was growing weak from the Destructive Divine Territory's suppression increased in power ferociously out of the blue. Then, two hexagrams appeared — one above his head, the other beneath his feet.

The dazzling six-colored glow burst out suddenly and shot into the sky. They forcefully broke open the Destruction Energy and a large area of darkness in the sky was illuminated by the rays of the six-colored glow. The sun shone from the sky onto the top of the six-colored glow, forming a big cloud illuminated by the six-colored glow in the sky. The Destructive Divine Territory could not destroy the cloud of light that was consolidated by the six attributes. A plump shadow appeared behind Long Shiya, the gigantic shadow being hundreds of feet tall. It was the enlarged version of himself.

Everyone atop the Heavenly Snow Mountain was shocked to see that happening before their eyes. Xue Ao'tian mumbled, "He did it! He has really done it! Six Ultimate Divine Territory, he has broken through to the Heavenly God Tier now." Disappointment flashed across Xue Ao'tian's face. If they were to ask who amongst them knew Long Shiya best, it was not Zhou Weiqing, but Xue Ao'tian. He had fought with Long Shiya many a time, and Xue Ao'tian knew very well that he was nothing like Long Shiya when their talents were compared. Even if he possessed the Saint Attribute, his talents paled in comparison to Long Shiya's. The reason why he managed to break through to the Heavenly God Tier was because he had the Saint Land's support as the Mountain Lord of the Heavenly Snow Mountain. Meanwhile, Long Shiya achieved what he had today all with his own abilities.

Long Shiya had broken through the level of Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor to achieve the level of a Six Ultimate Heavenly God. Xue Ao'tian knew that he might not be able to fight Long Shiya any longer if it was based purely on their individual abilities. Shock then overcame Fen Tian. He had never thought that Long Shiya would be able to break through to the Heavenly God Tier.

What did it mean when a Saint Land had a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse? It was clear with only one look at the Heavenly Snow Mountain. At that moment, nobody was questioning the Peerless Sect's position as a Saint Land any longer. Six Ultimate Heavenly God Long Shiya and the Maximum Level Heavenly Emperor-tier Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue - both of them were enough to support the powerful Saint Land. Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing did not lose to Fen Tian when he was fighting the latter earlier. Even if Fen Tian held back, what Zhou Weiqing did was rather stunning.

Initially, Shen Mo was a little shocked when he saw Long Shiya releasing the Divine Territory but he managed to react swiftly. His expression dimmed as an intense will to kill exploded from within his body. The petrifying Destructive Thoughts that were released

from the Destructive Divine Territory dashed towards the Six Ultimate Divine Territory that Long Shiya released ferociously.

The characteristic of the Destructive Divine Territory was destruction - pure destruction, while Long Shiya's Six Ultimate Divine Territory's characteristic was balanced. With the harmony between the six attributes, a system created from the Six Ultimate Divine Territory containing a little bit of Saint Energy aura was formed. No matter how much Destructive Energy was attacking it externally, it could not be destroyed - only neutralized and absorbed.

"Congratulations Brother Long, I didn't know that you've already achieved the Heavenly God Tier. It seems like you are not taking my suggestion into consideration anymore." Shen Mo said in a cunning manner.

Long Shiya pouted and said in disdain, "You only figured it out now? What an idiot."

Fatty Long, since you're asking for death, I shall fulfill your wish." Shen Mo had a sinister look in his eyes, as he slapped Long Shiya with his palm in the air. At the same time, dark purple light flowed around his body. A ten-piece legendary set was put on his body, and dark purple battle axes appeared in both his hands. The demonic shadow behind him opened its mouth as a deafening shriek was heard. All of the Destructive Energy expanded and dashed towards Long Shiya's Six Ultimate Divine Territory.

The Hiltless Heavenly Purging Set appeared on Long Shiya's body, while the Silver Octagon Plum Blossom Hammers appeared on both sides of his body. The shadow that was a hundred feet tall behind him moved; the plump shadow then collided with the gigantic black mouth.

Crack —

The sky seemed to break open from their collision. The shadow that Long Shiya created was torn by the gigantic mouth ruthlessly,

but it took a hard blow from the shadow's hammer.

Suddenly, the black light and the six-colored glow in the sky vibrated intensely. The two Divine Territories were fighting head-on. Long Shiya and Shen Mo did not just watch without doing anything. The two of them began to battle despite being hundreds of meters away from each other. Shen Mo threw the battle hammers in his hands, and a black Light Blade dashed towards Long Shiya following the trail of the crack in the skies. Long Shiya separated his hammers, and a gigantic black hole that was more than a hundred meters in diameter appeared between them. A loud bang then ensued.

It was a whole new experience in comparison to the battle between a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse and a cultivator on the Heavenly Emperor Tier earlier. However, the powerhouses on top of the Heavenly Snow Mountain felt a catastrophic energy wave from the two simple collisions.

Fortunately, the both of them controlled themselves as they ascended higher into the sky in unison during the battle, lest the impact from their collisions landed on the Heavenly Snow Mountain. Otherwise, the powerhouses from the Five Saint Lands would be forced to take action.

The gigantic black hole had separated Long Shiya and Shen Mo temporarily. Although they were both Heavenly God-tier powerhouses, they did not dare to be absorbed into the black hole.

With a powerful enemy close by, it would be difficult for any of them to escape. Long Shiya backed off and quickly entered the hundred foot shadow that he created from his Divine Territory. Suddenly, the shadow became clearer as it materialized. The six-colored glow was shining brightly as if it was borrowing the light from the sun. The glows were flowing, and massive Destruction Energy was broken down. Within a second, the tables were turned on the Divine Territory.

Indeed, the Destruction Attribute was completely different from the Saint Energy's Creation Attribute. Shen Mo's Destructive Divine Territory was more powerful than most Divine Territories as he had already achieved the Heavenly God Tier. Fortunately, there was a certain amount of Saint Energy in Long Shiya's Six Ultimate Divine Territory. Otherwise, under the onslaught of the Destructive Divine Territory, he would be at the losing end despite having the six attributes in his pocket. However, he did not consolidate a Saint Nucleus Core after all. Although the Saint Nucleus Core that Zhou Weiqing embedded into his body was pure, the integration of it with his personal cultivation base was limited to the Six Ultimate Divine Territory's Saint Energy aura.

Chapter 813: Fight! Zhou Weiqing (1)

Both of them were Low-Level Heavenly God-tier powerhouses. Regarding their cultivation base, Long Shiya who possessed six attributes had the upper hand. However, regarding their Divine Territories, Shen Mo's was far superior. Moreover, Shen Mo had a ten-piece legendary set on him, which surpassed the nine-piece Hiltless Heavenly Purging Set. Therefore, Long Shiya was at a slight disadvantage, as the both of them were equally matched.

Seeing that Long Shiya transformed himself into a shadow, Shen Mo did not just watch and do nothing. He moved his body in a flash and indulged in his own Destructive Thought. The huge engulfing mouth expanded at an instant, and the rich purplish-black color seemed like it had materialized as it attempted to bite Long Shiya ferociously. The combination of the Divine Territory and the physical body was a battle technique exclusive to a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse. At that moment, they were both like gods. If their attacks were used in human wars, it was sufficient to destroy hundreds of thousands of soldiers within a short period of time.

Besides, the biggest characteristic of the Heavenly God-tier powerhouse was that their personal cultivation base was almost unlimited. Without having to absorb too much Atmospheric Energy for their individual circulation, they could create massive amounts of energy on their own. That was the biggest difference between the Heavenly God Tier and the Heavenly Emperor Tier. Therefore, even though Shen Mo's overall ability was slightly more powerful than Long Shiya's, it was not easy to take advantage of the latter.

It had been years since the last battle between the Heavenly God-tier powerhouses on the Boundless Mainland. At that moment, the Five Great Saints Lands' powerhouses had even forgotten that the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands was ongoing. All of them were

focused as they looked into the sky, as none of them wanted to miss such an exciting battle.

The huge engulfing mouth that Shen Mo merged with became extremely ferocious and attempted to bite Long Shiya's gigantic body in a frenzied manner. He managed to tear a couple of pieces of his flesh forcefully, very quickly. Moreover, a layer of a rich, black destructive Qi current dashed up wildly with every tear, as it attempted to cover Long Shiya's gigantic body so it could erode his body with Destructive Thought.

It was obvious that Long Shiya was on the losing end now. However, it was not as easy to handle the Six Ultimate Heavenly God. After a loud bang was heard, Long Shiya's gigantic body - which was in the air - became transparent out of nowhere, while the six-colored lights separated themselves into individual lights. Then, a series of peculiar sights appeared in the sky.

The first that erupted was the Wind Attribute. A rich green light now erupted from the Six Ultimate Heavenly God's gigantic body. Countless Wind Blades formed into a tornado and sliced the Destruction Energy from all directions. A screeching sound was made when the Destruction Energy was sliced by the Wind Attribute. Regular people aside, even Heavenly King-tier powerhouses activated their Heavenly Energy to protect their ears or they may lose their ability to hear forever.

This was just the beginning. The reason why the Wind Blades did not destroy the Destruction Attribute right away was mainly caused by the limited amount of Saint Energy in them. Under such conditions, although the Wing Blade's slicing ability was limited, it prevented the terrifying Destruction Attribute energy from further eroding Long Shiya's.

Countless green Wind Blades were clearly seen embedded in the black energy. Then, the Fire Attribute was the next one to erupt. The Fire Attribute attack was the most primitive one — a fireball. The fireballs did not directly hit the Destruction Energy. Instead, it

collided with the Wind Blades that erupted earlier. There is a saying that goes — the wind helps the spread of fire. During the collision of the Wind Blades and the fireballs, the latter exploded first and a series of roars could be heard. On top of that, the series of explosions combined with the Wind Attribute resulted in the strengthening of the terrifying Fire Attribute energy even further. The explosion created a space around the gigantic body that Long Shiya had transformed into. Massive amounts of Destruction Energy had been driven out. Although it could not be destroyed, at least it managed to put a distance between them.

Shen Mo was shocked. He had never encountered something like this for as long as he possessed the Destruction Attribute. To him, the Wind Attribute, Fire Attribute or any element attributes could be absorbed by the Destruction Attribute easily. However, what he was experiencing was not like that at all. Furthermore, he was far behind the control ability that Long Shiya had for the energy. Although the Destruction Attribute had the upper hand - like what the Mountain Lord of Heavenly Snow Mountain Xue Ao'tian had mentioned before - Long Shiya had outstanding talent as the Six Ultimate Heavenly Path Formation was one-of-a-kind. In terms of control, almost nobody could compare to Long Shiya. Even Xue Ao'tian admitted that he was no match for Long Shiya before he arrived the Heavenly God Tier.

At that moment, Long Shiya showcased his powerful control ability. Each of the fireballs positioned with every single one of the Wind Blades. That alone was shocking enough. It was not just one or two fireballs, but at least tens of thousands of fireballs that were so dense, it could not even be seen with the naked eye in the collision!

Fire came after wind, but earth came after fire. Sharp, earthy thorns exploded from the air. At an instant, Long Shiya's body looked like it had transformed into a huge porcupine. Countless earthy thorns passed across the flames and pierced the Destruction

Attribute. Each earthy thorn instantly became harder under the high temperature as they passed through the flames. Most of the earthy thorns were even refined to the point that they looked crystal clear, akin to a stone sculpture. Their destructive ability had increased tremendously.

After earth, came water. Countless pillars of water erupted. They were not there to destroy but to boost the earthy thorns. Each of them had become the driving force for the earthy thorns to move forward. Under such conditions, the impact of the earthy thorns became even more terrifying. One could see clearly that the Destruction Energy that made it hard for them to move forward earlier was now pierced by countless earthy thorns. As a series of bangs filled the air, narrow and long channels were opened.

Under such circumstances, even a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse who could produce tremendous energy could not withstand such large amounts of energy consumption! The Destructive Divine Territory that initially had a clear lead and the upper hand, had suddenly dimmed a little. However, this was not the end of Long Shiya's onslaught. He was the Six Ultimate Heavenly God, not the Four Ultimate Heavenly God.

The last to appear was naturally Light and Darkness. These two do not appear as individuals but as one. One after the other, sparkling, crystal clear light balls appeared out of thin air. The balls of light were rather peculiar as they had two colors to them - black on one side and gold on the other. The two colors took their turns shining in the sky as they released a peculiar wave of energy. If observed closely, one would notice that the dual-colored light balls had circles of distorted energy waves around them. It was easy to imagine how terrifying the energy was in there.

The light balls used the simplest route as they headed toward the channels created from the piercing earthy thorns. A terrifying wave of energy was flowing in the air. The light balls did not pierce through these channels. Instead, they paused when they reached

the center of the Destructive Energy. As the light balls paused midair, the powerhouses on the Heavenly Snow Mountain below held their breaths. Many of them predicted what Long Shiya was going to do - even Shen Mo knew it all too well. However, he did not have the ability to stop Long Shiya at that moment at all.

Shen Mo had been handling the explosion of the four attributes in a state of panic earlier. His Divine Territory might not be able to hold out from the full-force impact by the four attributes if he did not have the Destructive Divine Territory. As soon as his Destructive Divine Territory was destroyed, his advantage would become a disadvantage. He definitely did not wish to see that happening. He knew very well that although the attack that Long Shiya performed was powerful, it drained his body. As long as he managed to withstand this onslaught, he would be the one who would emerge victoriously.

In reality, Shen Mo was being careless. He was relaxed as he had the upper hand earlier. To him, Long Shiya would definitely lose as long as he absorbed his energy with the help of the Destructive Divine Territory. Never would he have thought that Long Shiya would have such an ability. Most importantly, he had underestimated Long Shiya's control of his abilities. If it was performed by someone else, like Zhou Weiqing for example, it would be impossible for him to control it as accurately as Long Shiya. Besides, without accurate control, it was naturally impossible for the four attributes to come together so smoothly, and the impact of the attack would naturally be far less effective than this.

On after the other, the crystal clear, dual-colored light balls that seemed shine with various colors paused in mid-air just like that. The locations that they paused at was almost at the center of the channel. At that moment, the only thing that Shen Mo could do was to give his all to boost his Destructive Divine Territory to make it denser. However, Long Shiya's attacks were connected to

one another without delay.

Then, an explosion occurred. Though the effects of light and darkness colliding should have resulted in the two opposite energies disappearing, they exploded instead. The explosions were ten times to a hundred times more powerful than the explosion of the Fire Attribute. Long Shiya spent his entire life mastering the six attributes to the point where he could control each attribute with utter ease. Naturally, he knew how to control the Light and Darkness Attributes very well. Each of the dual-colored light balls' was separated at a distance with a layer of energy made up from gently merging the six attributes, ensuring they did not come into contact with one another. At that very moment, Long Shiya removed the layer of energy made from the six attributes, causing the terrifying explosion.

Chapter 814: Fight! Zhou Weiqing (2)

The explosions did not happen at the same time. Instead, it was more like an implosion that gradually developed into an explosion as it spread further. The terrifying explosion made the sky seem like a palace of light and darkness. At this moment, the sky was like it was being lit with splendid fireworks while a large amount of Destruction Attribute energy spread all around. Regardless if it was the gigantic body of Long Shiya or Shen Mo's huge engulfing mouth, neither of them could be seen right now.

The Heavenly Snow Mountain began shaking vigorously. Not only did it tremble here, but even the entire Wan Shou Heaven was shaking. It seemed like the end of the world was coming and everything was about to be destroyed. To Zhou Weiqing, the terrifying energy explosion in the air made him immensely nervous. He knew Long Shiya's abilities very well but it was his master's first time in combat ever since he became a Heavenly God. At the same time, they had no idea how long the opponent had been a Heavenly God cultivator for.

Zhou Weiqing would rather lose the battle and even the entire Grand Tournament of the Saint Lands rather than see Long Shiya get injured. He already thought of surrendering when Long Shiya's Six Ultimate Divine Territory was covered by the opponent's Destructive Divine Territory. However, Zhou Weiqing was shocked at the attack that Long Shiya launched afterward and secretly praised him in his heart — this was true control. Although Zhou Weiqing had Saint Energy and the six attributes, he was far less familiar than Long Shiya when it came to controlling the attributes.

Safe to say, Long Shiya had reached a godlike level of control over his six attributes. The sequence, combination, and control of each attribute were done in perfect harmony. Though it did not seem like the attack was laced with the six attributes, they were

actually witnessing something far more powerful than the impact of an attack merged with six attributes.

This was true strength! However, his opponent was a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse after all. After exhibiting such precise control, it had taken a toll on Long Shiya's Divine Thought. If he did not win from this attack, Long Shiya might be at risk. The opponent had defeated two Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouses from the Blood Red Hell and Zhou Weiqing knew that as long as Shen Mo had the opportunity, he would definitely not let go of Long Shiya. Losing to a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse would definitely have a huge impact, be it to Zhou Weiqing or the Peerless Sect. Zhou Weiqing was even ready to join the battle, even if it means going against the rules. He would definitely not let his master die on the Heavenly Snow Mountain.

On the other side, Fen Tian was anxious as well, as Long Shiya becoming a Heavenly God was beyond his expectation. Shen Mo's victory in this battle would bring more opportunities to the Blood Red Hell from the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands, and in order for the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands to carry on according to his plans, the victory of this battle was crucial.

Besides, it was the same thing to the Blood Red Hell as it was extremely important for them to have a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse who possessed the Destructive Divine Territory. Fen Tian might not feel sad even if ten Heavenly Emperors were dead, but he might actually go insane if Shen Mo was killed in the battle.

Fen Tian looked at Zhou Weiqing by instinct and the both of them glared at each other, seemingly wanting to see the strong will to kill in the eyes of the opposing party. Not only did they plan a rescue, they also wanted to fight each other. A confrontational atmosphere broke out all of a sudden. A golden layer filled with the divine aura of a powerhouse appeared at that moment and covered the top of the Heavenly Snow Mountain.

It was the Mountain Lord of the Heavenly Snow Mountain, Xue

Ao'tian. Nobody knew what he was thinking about when he looked at Zhou Weiqing and Fen Tian casually. However, a strong tremor descended when the golden glow appeared, creating layers of glowing mist within the golden glow. It was Xue Ao'tian's territory. He did not hope that the Heavenly Snow Mountain would get destroyed by the impact of Long Shiya and Shen Mo's battle. Because of this, he made the first move. If Zhou Weiqing and Fen Tian wanted to fight each other, they would not only have to deal with each other, but would also have to break through these chains.

A terrifying energy wave exploded in the air all of the sudden. Zhou Weiqing looked shocked as he watched the scenes unfold in mid-air. Fen Tian had the same shocked expression as well as they looked at the changes happening in the sky. The initial darkness had disappeared completely, and the Destructive Divine Territory vanished just like that. Finally, it was broken by Six Ultimate Heavenly God's full-force attack.

However, Long Shiya's gigantic body had disappeared as well. The explosion of the Destructive Divine Territory had a major impact on Shen Mo and Long Shiya. He could not hold on to his Six Ultimate Divine Territory anymore as he had over-consumed his Divine Thought. Besides, that was the last attack of the Destructive Divine Territory.

At that moment, Shen Mo and Long Shiya were still in the air but they were pulled a distance of thousands of meters apart. They looked at each other and were both a little pale, especially Shen Mo. His body was slightly shaking while Long Shiya had his eyes closed and his body trembled lightly for a second.

Everyone else was silent. The audience was indulging themselves in the clash of the two Heavenly God-tier powerhouses. Long Shiya who was at a disadvantage against Shen Mo on his cultivation base and Divine Territory managed to turn the tables with his knowledge and amazing control of the six attributes. At that

moment, it was hard to tell who was winning but at least the Six Ultimate Heavenly God was not on the losing end.

Safe to say, this was by far the most exciting battle that the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands had ever seen. The battle of two Heavenly Gods had silenced all the attribute energies within hundreds of miles. Shen Mo looked at Long Shiya who was before him with a puzzled look in his eyes. Never did he expect that he would not be able to defeat Long Shiya with his Destructive Divine Territory, especially since he had already arrived at the Heavenly God Tier. He knew very well about his condition - he was wounded. When he got to the Heavenly God Tier, his physique became terrifyingly powerful, making it difficult for him to sustain injuries. However, it was not that easy for him to heal the moment he got wounded.

The current situation was simple. Shen Mo was wounded; he had even wounded his Qi while Long Shiya had exhausted his Divine Thought. Overall, they were in equal positions but Shen Mo was at a slight disadvantage. However, no matter who attempted to kill who, they would still have to brave the risk of the both of them perishing.

"I never thought that Brother Long would be able to destroy my Destructive Divine Thought. Brother Long, why don't we announce this battle as a tie? What do you think of not participating in the tournament any longer? Give the opportunity to other people instead. Let's not change the ranking as well." Shen Mo said quietly.

Long Shiya neither opened his eyes nor argued with him, "Alright." The both of them descended from the sky after that simple response and returned to their places accordingly. They crossed their legs to recover as soon as they could, at almost the same time.

Zhou Weiqing and Fen Tian went behind them respectively and helped them heal. Xue Ao'tian and Shanguan Tianyang looked at

each other and had an odd expression in their eyes. They were in luck today. They knew very well that as long as they did not join the tournament, Long Shiya or Shen Mo could easily defeat any contender from both sides. The tie allowed the Heavenly Snow Mountain and the Heaven's Expanse Palace to stay in the tournament.

It was a lady who entered the ring from the Peerless Sect's corner. Shangguan Tianyang and Tianyue looked uncomfortable when they saw the lady appearing, as it was Shangguan Xue'er who represented the Peerless Sect this time. The situation was the same as it was in the last battle. Two Heavenly King-tier powerhouses represented the Heavenly Snow Mountain and the Heaven's Expanse Palace. However, the Heavenly Snow Mountain had the upper hand this time. If they won, they would have to quit the tournament and pass the next battle to Love Valley and Blood Red Hell.

This time, Huang Xingyun seemed to have learned his lesson and sent out a Heavenly King-tier powerhouse right away. Fen Tian sent a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse after some thought, but the results were expected - the Blood Red Hell won. Shangguan Tianyang and Shangguan Tianyue then became anxious all of a sudden. Although they knew that Shangguan Xue'er had almost reached the Heavenly King Tier and that she had consolidated a few pieces of the Boundless Infinitum Set, she was facing a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse from the Blood Red Hell! It was not easy to fight a Heavenly Emperor cultivator from the Blood Red Hell who possessed the Destruction Attribute. Even with the slightest mistake, she might lose her life. The Peerless Sect had killed the people from the Blood Red Hell before. They would definitely not show mercy to Shangguan Xue'er.

The two brothers then looked at Long Shiya who stopped his battle due to his wounds and shifted their gaze toward Zhou Weiqing. They had a strong resentment and questions in their

eyes. The Heavenly Emperor that was sent by the Blood Red Hell was called Tian Yu. In Blood Red Hell, the family name 'Tian' and 'Shen' were the two biggest family names that had been managing the Blood Red Hell. Fen Tian had the family name of Tian but it got switched around. The powerhouse who was named Tian Yu was Fen Tian's cousin.

Tian Yu could not help but frown when he looked at the young Shangguan Xue'er and said in disdain, "It seems like the Peerless Sect is left with Wu Yunyue and Long Shiya, those two old men. Even a little girl like you would have to sacrifice your life here."

Shangguan Xue'er looked coldly and Zhou Weiqing spoke just as she was about to say something, "Wait."

Zhou Weiqing strode to Shangguan Xue'er as he spoke. He then said to Fen Tian who was on the Blood Red Hell's side, "If I recall correctly, according to the rules of the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands, the lords of the Five Great Saints Lands can change the participants on their own corner as and when they please. Am I right?"

Everyone was shocked by what Zhou Weiqing had just said. The Peerless Sect's ability had been proven by Wu Yunyue and Long Shiya - nobody dared to underestimate them. However, what Zhou Weiqing just did had confused everyone there.

Chapter 815: Fight! Zhou Weiqing (3)

Indeed, there was a rule in the Grand Tournament of the Saint Lands that states that the Lord of a Saint Land could choose to replace himself with whomever that was sent into combat from his corner whenever he pleased. However, there was a condition that mentioned that the Lord of the Saint Land must not fail. Once he did, it would be equivalent to the disqualification of that Saint Land. Therefore, the Lord of the Saint Lands would usually choose to fight in the last battle to be the one to determine their victory. Nobody expected Zhou Weiqing to fight when the tables were turned to the advantage of the Peerless Sect.

Did they really not have anyone else like Tian Yu claimed? However, the lady wearing the hood who killed the Heavenly King from the Blood Red Hell was at least a powerhouse with the cultivation base of a Heavenly Emperor. In terms of power, she might even be on par with Wu Yunyue... So why did they let Zhou Weiqing fight instead of her?

Everyone was confused by the odd strategy that Zhou Weiqing was using. Xue Ao'Tian then said in his deep voice, "There really is such a rule in the tournament, but are you sure you want to fight? As soon as you lose, your Peerless Sect will no longer be able to join the rest of the Grand Tournament of the Saint Lands."

Zhou Weiqing naturally lifted his hand, held Shangguan Xue'er's slender waist and said, "Yes. I'm sure. I want to fight."

Shangguan Xue'er moved her waist away slightly and avoided Zhou Weiqing's beastly hand. She rolled her eyes at him without saying anything and walked straight back to the Peerless Sect's corner. Zhou Weiqing retrieved his hand awkwardly and coughed twice before saying to Tian Yu, "Please."

Tian Yu instantly became more anxious when Shangguan Xue'er was replaced by Zhou Weiqing. No matter how young Zhou

Weiying was, he was the Lord of a Saint Land, unmatched by those in his generation. Besides, judging from Zhou Weiying's clash with Fen Tian earlier, his ability was definitely not weak. Under such conditions, Tian Yu did not have the confidence to win at all. Fen Tian would definitely not fight at a time like that. He was slightly shocked but his shock returned to normal when he saw Zhou Weiying's odd battle strategy.

Whether it was Fen Tian or the rest of those who were present, most of them had the same thought - the Peerless Sect lacked support. It seemed like the Peerless Sect had an advantage during the beginning of the tournament as they had the best score. However, Long Shiya and Wu Yunyue did not actually defeat that many opponents. Likewise, Long Shiya, who was at the Heavenly God Tier, only fought Shen Mo before ending the battle. He did not manage to show much of his abilities. Meanwhile, there were no other powerhouses amongst the ranks of the Peerless Sect. Zhou Weiying may have great abilities, but was it possible that he was more powerful than his mentor? Moreover, him fighting so early in the battle would give many opportunities for the other Saint Lands to test the water. Seeing as he was about to do battle in the fourth round on his own, how many rounds would he be able to last regardless of how powerful his ability was?

Tian Yu moved in a flash and appeared tens of meters above the sky. A dark glow shot out from his back as two gigantic, black Destruction Energy Wings opened in the air. The black wings were so clear that those present could even see each individual feather. However, the feathers were consolidated with the dense Destructive Energy. He flapped his wings hard and they supported his body all the way. Almost instantly, he was thousands of meters above the ground.

Zhou Weiying's movement was obviously much slower than Tian Yu's. However, he immediately disappeared from where he was the moment he took a step. What he just did made everyone's pupils

shrink a little. Although it was not Zhou Weiqing's first time using Blink after mastering the Spatial Laws, it was still impressive to many.

Tian Yu had been locking his thoughts on Zhou Weiqing and he reacted quickly. As soon as Zhou Weiqing disappeared, the wings on his back wrapped around each other and rotated his body in mid-air. With the gigantic, black wings made of energy protecting his body, Destructive Energy exploded in the air and swept through at least a hundred square meters of space. Although the area of effect was limited, the area was filled with a powerful Destructive Storm. Tian Yu thought to himself, 'Even if Zhou Weiqing was even more powerful than he was, he would still not dare to appear within his Destructive Storm. Otherwise, he would certainly have the confidence to kill Zhou Weiqing.' Therefore, he put on his legendary set as soon as he released the Destructive Storm.

However, many things would not change following what a person wanted. Often, the impact was the greatest if something that was clearly impossible, became possible. Zhou Weiqing appeared at the next second when the Destructive Storm was formed. To top it off, he appeared right in the midst of the Destructive Storm and stood before Tian Yu, which was the area where the Destructive Storm was the most powerful and concentrated.

The moment when Zhou Weiqing appeared, there was a layer of golden starlight, shining all over his body. An explosive crash happened when the golden starlight appeared within the Destructive Storm. However, it did not affect Zhou Weiqing's movement at all. A simple punch was pummelled right onto Tian Yu's chest; it was an extremely simple one.

Going by Tian Yu's initial speculation, Zhou Weiqing might have mastered Spatial Law but he would have to appear outside the Destructive Storm so that Tian Yu could come up with a way to

fight him. It might not work, but it was worth a try. However, Zhou Weiqing's appearance was just too odd. He appeared right before Tian Yu while the Destructive Storm that he was proud of did nothing to affect Zhou Weiqing's movement at all. That was the scariest part of all.

As everything happened so quickly, the only thing that Tian Yu could do was to protect himself as quickly as he could. At that moment, he had yet to completely put on his legendary set and his weapons had yet to appear. Sensing danger upon himself, Tian Yu made the decision which he thought was the best choice right away. As a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse himself, he had also fought hundreds of battles. He immediately figured that Zhou Weiqing must have some borrowed ability due to his courage of appearing in the Destructive Storm. Therefore, he did not dodge Zhou Weiqing's punch but chopped both sides of Zhou Weiqing's neck with his hands.

Attack the enemy to save yourself. It was something that would result in harm to both sides. At that moment, at least Tian Yu had almost finished putting on his armor while Zhou Weiqing did not even have any consolidated equipment on him. Tian Yu thought that he had the upper hand. However, fear crawled into Tian Yu eyes at the very next second when he noticed that Zhou Weiqing did not dodge at all. Yes, Zhou Weiqing did not dodge his attack. A punch was getting closer to Tian Yu instead.

Slam —

Zhou Weiqing's punch hit Tian Yu's chest while the latter's hands karate-chopped both sides of Zhou Weiqing's neck almost immediately. Everyone who was watching from beneath was stunned; the two people fighting in the sky did not look like they were participating in the Grand Tournament of the Saint Lands. Instead, their fight seemed to resembled how children would fight. However, the results stunned them even more.

Bang —

Zhou Weiqing's punch that hit Tian Yu's chest did not throw him away. Instead, it stuck onto his body while the legendary set that Tian Yu had just put on was instantly smashed to pieces. An intense bang was heard; even the black wings on his back had disappeared. Both his palms that chopped both sides of Zhou Weiqing's neck had only created two weak patting noises... and that was the end of it.

A spurt was heard, and a sharp claw appeared out of Tian Yu's back as it spewed glowing blood. The sharp claw vanished right after it appeared as Tian Yu's body fell from the sky - just like that. The sharp claw was actually Zhou Weiqing's right hand, and nobody could identify when his palm had turned into a sharp claw. As he clenched them tightly, there was a faint glowing ball shining from within.

A Heavenly Core Nucleus - that was indeed Tian Yu's Heavenly Core Nucleus. Zhou Weiqing had ripped his chest open and dug out Tian Yu's Heavenly Core Nucleus. The injury that Tian Yu had sustained was fatal. However, even if he did not perish, the Heavenly Core Nucleus that was taken away by Zhou Weiqing had already rendered him useless.

Tian Yu's body crashed right before Fen Tian, as his face turned red while his body shuddered. People who knew him well would know that this was Fen Tian in a state of rage. Aside from the battle which saw one of them surrendering, this was definitely the quickest battle of all. It only took three seconds for Tian Yu to fly up to the sky for Zhou Weiqing to kill him - those three seconds had taken the Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse's life away. Even his Heavenly Core Nucleus was ripped out.

Zhou Weiqing who was in mid-air shook his neck and grinned. It seemed like nothing happened to him but a devilish expression was plastered on his face. What kind of defensive ability did he possess? Although Tian Yu did not have any weapons at that time, he was an actual Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse after all! To

attack the enemy that attacks you - he was naturally using everything he had. The neck was much more vulnerable than the chest was in a human body as it was not protected by any bones whatsoever. However, Zhou Weiqing was completely fine; he was not injured at all from the full-force attack of a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse, and this was without the protection of a legendary set. It was unbelievable for him to possess such a powerful body.

In reality, those people who were shocked had no idea that Zhou Weiqing had Saint Energy that could destroy the Destruction Attribute which played the most important role aside from his overbearing self-defense abilities. When the Destruction Attribute meets Saint Energy, it was like snow meeting fire. The creation of Saint Energy alone was completely different from the destructive characteristics of the Destruction Attribute. Meanwhile, Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy was purer and more concentrated than Tian Yu's. As such, with the protection of Saint Energy and his Dragon-Tiger Demon God Transformation, his defensive abilities were terrifying. Anyone present would pale in comparison.

It was wrong to think that Zhou Weiqing did nothing at all. He had actually released the Dragon-Tiger Demon God Transformation when he used the Spatial Law. The effect was even more noticeable when the Dragon-Tiger Demon God Transformation was complete. Nobody could tell from the outside at all - only the devilish expression was obvious. He did not release his wings at all, so it seemed like he was defending the Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse's attack with his very own flesh.

Chapter 816: The Seduction Attribute (1)

The entire Heavenly Snow Mountain fell into a momentary silence. There was no exception. Even Xue Ao'tian and Shangguan Tianyang were silent as well. At this moment, nobody could see through Zhou Weiqing at all. None of them could tell what his cultivation base was. From the very start, there were no Heavenly Jewels on both of his wrists at all. After all, once one had reached the Heavenly Emperor Tier and above, it was not hard to conceal one's Heavenly Jewels.

After he had defeated Tian Yu, Zhou Weiqing did not immediately descend from the air. Instead, he began to casually and calmly put on his legendary armor set.

Dark golden lights shone on his body one after the other. Because the light that was flashing on his body was too fast, it was difficult to determine the exact pieces of armor he had already put on. However, the last color that appeared was a dark golden color.

It was very easy to identify a legendary armor set. As long as it was a complete set, one could easily distinguish how many pieces there were in total just from the aura itself. However, it would be difficult to distinguish if the legendary armor set was not complete and all it showed was only a dark golden color.

This was exactly what happened Zhou Weiqing's case. The moment he finished putting on his legendary armor suit, his legendary armor set immediately gave off a powerful and tyrannical aura. Yet, this was not a complete legendary armor set!

Even the anger that Fen Tian initially felt subsided a little when he saw Zhou Weiqing like this. This brat was just too strange. Everything that he did was completely unpredictable. How could he not possess even one complete set of legendary armor as the Sect Leader of the Peerless Sect? Yet, he still managed to defeat one of his Heavenly Emperors. What the hell was he doing actually?

Zhou Weiqing bellowed loudly from the air as he held the Dual God Strength Hammers in his hands, "Next! Come up now!"

At this moment, the powerhouses on the summit of Heavenly Snow Mountain immediately snapped back into their senses. Shangguan Tianyang said without any hesitation, "We admit defeat this round." The Heavenly King who was the next in line immediately got cut off. The next person that they sent out was also a Heavenly King.

Xue Ao'tian looked at Shangguang Tianyang from the corner of his eyes as he chimed in, "We also admit defeat. We'll change!" As he was speaking, he also changed his participant to another Heavenly King. The Lion King Gu Site whispered a few words to Xue Ao'tian but Xue Ao'tian merely shook his head in silence.

This time, it was the Love Valley's turn again. After a moment of hesitation, Huang Xingyun uttered, "We give up as well." The person that he sent out to queue in line earlier was a Heavenly King. What use was there for him to send this Heavenly King when even a Heavenly Emperor was so easily defeated?

Everything happened in just a blink of an eye. It was so fast that even the Blood Red Hell did not have the time to send another person to the line to substitute Tian Yu after his death.

At this moment, all eyes were on Fen Tian as they waited to see how he was going to deal with the situation before him. The Grand Tournament had already entered the fifth round. However, until now, the Peerless Sect had only sent out three people.

In everyone's eyes, it seemed like there were only three people in the Peerless Sect. However, Zhou Weiqing's strong performance had placed Fen Tian in an extremely difficult situation. Of course he could see Zhou Weiqing was using the Saint Energy, and for this reason, the Destruction Attribute seemed to have no effects on him at all. However, whether it was Fen Tian, Huang Xingyun or everyone else, they were placed in one big disadvantage — they

could not see through Zhou Weiqing at all.

Well, nobody could blame them entirely. After all, Zhou Weiqing was still too young and had not been the object of their attention all this while. It was only after the Blood Red Hell had been placed in a difficult situation by him that Fen Tian started to become aware of him. However, the Grand Tournament was already about to start at that time. Even though Fen Tian was paying more attention to him now, he still had the opinion that the small and tiny Zhou Weiqing still could not be compared to the Heaven's Expanse Palace or the Heavenly Snow Mountain.

However, at this moment, Fen Tian suddenly realized that he might have committed a grave mistake. With the Six Ultimate Heavenly God Long Shiya, Demonic Emperor Wu Yunyue and along with this unreadable Zhou Weiqing, the threat that the Peerless Sect posed seemed to be no less than the Heaven's Expanse Palace or the Heavenly Snow Mountain.

Now that it had come to this point, it posed the biggest problem in dealing with the current situation. If only Shen Mo did not battle it out with Long Shiya earlier. He would have been the ideal person to be sent out right now. This was because as long as Shen Mo could defeat Zhou Weiqing, the Peerless Sect would be rendered powerless.

A gleam shone in Fen Tian's eyes as his eyes landed on Huang Xingyun who was standing not far ahead. This time, his eyes gleamed meaningfully without any disguise as if he was trying to convey a message to Huang Xingyun.

Huang Xingyun frowned and shook his head lightly.

Fen Tian narrowed his eyes and growled, "Shen Bu, go!" In the end, he chose to put up with it. However, he himself also did not know how long he would be able to hold back.

A voluptuous woman who looked as if she was in her thirties walked out from behind Fen Tian. This woman was extremely

gorgeous. Every single movement of hers spelled out sexiness, and bewitching seduction radiated naturally with each glance of her eyes. She walked alluringly out of the crowd. Her waist was so slender that it looked like it could easily be broken with just a twist. She looked exactly like a snake woman.

"Yes, Hell Lord."

Shen Bu did not immediately rise upwards. Instead, she steadily walked upwards to the sky as if there were staircases built in the air. With every step, her body would curve into a perfect 'S' shape and she would give a fawning look. Anybody who had a lower cultivation base would easily have their hearts beating rapidly the moment they laid eyes on her sexiness.

Zhou Weiqing was impacted the most. After all, from the very beginning, Shen Bu's gaze had been focused entirely on him. Prior to this, Zhou Weiqing never knew that there could be so many changes in a female's gaze.

She was suddenly pitiful, excited, shy, then pouty. Every tiny and subtle flicker of her eyes seemed to tug on his heartstring every time. It was to the point that Zhou Weiqing was staring at her with his mouth wide open. It was a good thing that he did not visibly drool.

However, nobody would laugh at him this time. This was because there were already plenty of people literally drooling over her currently on the summit of the Heavenly Snow Mountain. Even a woman would blush with redness when they saw Shen Bu's figure and movement.

She was actually Shen Mo's cousin. Due to her cultivation base, her position was not as high as Shen Mo. However, she was the only person in Blood Red Hell that even Fen Tian did not dare to offend.

Since young, Shen Bu had been born with a natural charm. Even though she was not particularly skilled in other fields, as her

cultivation base rose, her own feminine charm coupled with Heavenly Energy formed a special mutated attribute that the members of Blood Red Hell referred to as the Seduction Attribute. Previously, Shen Bu's Seduction attribute could only seduce those with cultivation base lower than hers. On top of that, it only worked on men. However, after she had merged the Destruction Attribute into her own Seduction Attribute, it had somehow leveled up and turned into a unique ability that was one of a kind in this world. Even though her cultivation base was only at the Intermediate Level of the Heavenly Emperor Tier, even Fen Tian was not able to stand it once she fully unleashed her Seduction Attribute. Moreover, it worked on both men and women as well.

This time, Shen Bu followed Fen Tian here to join the Grand Tournament as his trump card. At first, his initial plan was to use her against either Shangguan Tianyang or Xue Ao'tian. However, he had no other choice at this moment but to play this card in advance after seeing Zhou Weiqing's strong performance.

At this moment, Fen Tian appeared to be angry but in truth, he was still relatively calm inside. He had heard some of the stories about Zhou Weiqing's romantic affairs. It was absolutely in the nature of a hot-blooded young man to fall for a woman easily. For this reason, he decided to send Shen Bu out to deal with Zhou Weiqing after he had thought about it thoroughly.

The main reason Fen Tian sent out his trump card, Shen Bu, so easily was because Fen Tian had started to take Zhou Weiqing seriously. This meant that from this moment onwards, Fen Tian had truly seen him as a Saint Land Lord and was prepared to deal with him seriously.

Previously, Fen Tian and Zhou Weiqing had come face to face before but at that time, he chose not to unleash his full power. Although Fen Tian could feel Zhou Weiqing's Saint Attribute energy and Heavenly Emperor-tier cultivation base that time, he believed that Zhou Weiqing was still far behind Xue Ao'tian and

Shangguan Tianyang. However, he instantly knew the young man before him was a threat to his plan when he saw how he took on the kick of a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse earlier without the help from his armor or weapons. Moreover, it was a huge threat on top of that. If he could use this opportunity to get rid of him in the Grand Tournament, the situation would be in his favor especially for his upcoming plans. Not only that, Fen Tian was actually eager to see how strong Zhou Weiqing had become. Of course, the best case scenario would be him being annihilated before he could unleash his true power.

Shen Bu looked at Zhou Weiqing with extreme tenderness in her eyes as she slowly walked up to the sky one step at a time. Both of them did not use their energy or even attempt to mobilize the Atmospheric Energy. Bright sunshine fell from the sky and shone on the two of them. Under that golden gleam of light, they looked like a pair of long-lost lovers who were slowly moving closer to each other.

Shen Bu's gaze did not turn intense as she got closer to Zhou Weiqing. Instead, it became somewhat softer and gentler. If the gaze that she initially gave him was seductive, then at this moment, it had gradually become soft and sad. As if begging for people to take pity on her, it was similar to the gaze of a wife who was waiting for her husband to come back home.

Zhou Weiqing's gaze was now trance-like. It was obvious that his gaze was fixed onto Shen Bu as he silently watched her approach him. He began to unconsciously lower the Dual God Strength Hammers in his hands.

The people from the Peerless Sect who were watching the battle became tense in an instant. Even Long Shiya and Wu Yueyun stopped their cultivation immediately as they stared at the sky.

The Blood Red Hell did not lower their guard as well. All of them had their eyes fixed on the Peerless Sect. They would definitely rush forward to fight in case the Peerless Sect suddenly decided to

rescue Zhou Weiqing from the current situation.

The three Shangguan sisters, Xue'er, Fei'er and Bing'er, all had worry etched on their faces. On the other hand, Little Witch was completely filled with fury. Only Tian'er remained calm and composed.

"Aren't you worried?" Still fully cloaked, Ling Dang who was sent out to the battle previously, asked Tian'er from the side.

Tian'er grunted immediately, "What's there to be worried about? Even if that bastard really fell for her gentle act, that woman will never be able to break his defense. As for controlling his mind — yeah right. In her dreams!"

The moment the other girls heard Tian'er's words, a realization hit them with a bang, and the worries in their eyes instantly began to fade a little.

Chapter 817: The Seduction Attribute (2)

The look in Zhou Weiqing's eyes started to change at once. The changes were consistent with Shen Bu's look as well. His gaze suddenly turned gentle, then it was pitiful, worried and finally, he looked like he was in pain. The hammer in his right hand was passed to his left hand as well. It seemed like he could no longer wait. With just a leap, he descended from the sky and rushed towards Shen Bu with his right arm wide open.

Shen Bu remained calm. However, the look on her face immediately turned to excitement and one of longing. Shyness and joy could also be seen in her eyes. Being able to cultivate her Seduction Attribute to such a level meant that she had already reached a state where she had gone back to the basics, a natural state.

Finally, Zhou Weiqing reached her, and the two bodies began to merge together in the air. The right arm that Zhou Weiqing had emptied previously directly stretched out to hug Shen Bu. Shen Bu began to cuddle in his arms like a timid and loveable little woman.

However, in the midst of the shyness and joy in her eyes, her right hand that was hidden in her sleeve had long since turned black. Each finger was as black as pointed awls. Even though it might seem like she was gently stroking Zhou Weiqing's chest, it was obvious that her hand was very lethal.

She was waiting. Waiting for the moment when Zhou Weiqing would finally hug her. His emotions were being manipulated by her charm, and she was waiting for the moment when his heart was the gentlest towards her to make a move. Unfortunately, she did not have enough time to do that. What she loved most was to take a man's life at the peak of his happiness while he was on top of her body. That indescribable pleasure was Shen Bu's favorite feeling in the world.

Did Zhou Weiqing really hug her? Yes. Indeed, he did. Unfortunately, he was not hugging Shen Bu's body.

The now empty right hand went past Shen Bu's sight, and just as it was about to land on her slender waist, Zhou Weiqing's big hand suddenly changed its trajectory and gently slid over Shen Bu's neck.

A gentle voice resonated by Shen Bu's ear, "If I were you, I wouldn't have taken out those ugly claws!"

At this moment, Shen Bu's right hand was only less than three inches away from Zhou Weiqing's chest. However, even though these three inches was a distance so short that it was basically nothing to a Heavenly Emperor like her, it seemed like she was not able to continue her attack at all.

Disbelief filled Shen Bu's eyes instantly. No matter what, she could not believe that Zhou Weiqing actually managed to free himself from her Seduction Technique. Looking back at all the signs and symptoms that he had exhibited before, he should have completely fallen into her Seduction control!

She had her reasons for having such faith in herself. After all, even Fen Tian would be unable to resist her Seduction Attribute if he did not prepare himself in advance.

The people around them could only feel 1% of the Seduction Attribute's effects but Zhou Weiqing had taken the full brunt of the effects.

Casting aside the fact that he was a hot-blooded young man, even if he was an old and decrepit senior, Shen Bu was certain that she would still be able to seduce him.

"This is impossible!" Shen Bu instantly screamed loudly, surprising the people watching below.

This round of match seemed to be the most peaceful one but everybody knew that the killing intent would erupt anytime soon.

However, how did Zhou Weiqing manage to turn the situation around at the very last minute? The people from the Blood Red Hell, in particular, could not believe this turn of events at all.

The Yang Giant Spirit Palm on Shen Bu's smooth-as-silk neck tightened at once. Although he did not exert any force, it still caused Shen Bu's skin on her neck to shiver in cold. She understood very well that it was just a matter of course if Zhou Weiqing wanted to kill her.

"H-How did you break away from my Seduction Attribute?" Shen Bu asked. She was obviously upset. She was a psychologically twisted woman. Otherwise, she would not be able to cultivate her Seduction Attribute to such an extent. The Seduction Attribute was considered to be everything to her. It was even more precious and important to her than Heavenly Energy was to an ordinary Heavenly Jewel Master. That was quite a perverted kind of narcissism, a narcissistic view towards the Seduction Attribute. She could not accept the fact that her Seduction Attribute was so easily thwarted by Zhou Weiqing. This blow to her was even more painful than death.

Zhou Weiqing squeezed Shen Bu's neck as he shifted his gaze that had returned to normal towards Blood Red Hell's Hell Lord, Fen Tian below them. He sneered mockingly, "How hard can it be? No matter how powerful your Seduction Technique is, it still doesn't change the fact that you're already an old witch! I merely repeated this to myself in my heart. An old witch in her seventies or eighties flirting with me would only make me feel repulsed. How can I possibly be manipulated by you? Ahhh, it has never crossed my mind that the Blood Red Hell has fallen so low that you'd need to use this old witch to sell sex appeal! Tsk tsu tsu..."

"Barf —" A mouthful of blood spurted out of Shen Bu's mouth. Zhou Weiqing's every single word hammered fiercely at her heart. Especially the words 'seventies or eighties' and 'old witch' that almost choked and angered her to death.

A terrifying energy ripple exploded from Shen Bu without warning. She had chosen to detonate her Heavenly Core Nucleus when she was spewing out blood. It was her desire to wash off this disgrace with fresh blood. Right now, there was no look of seduction in her eyes. It had already been entirely replaced by a hysterical madness.

However, it was also at this moment that Shen Bu could feel Zhou Weiqing's right hand that was clutching on her neck shuddered without warning. In an instant, the look in his eyes became brighter, and a vindicated look could be seen in his eyes. His right hand immediately slid down and plunged directly into Shen Bu's body from the back. It blocked her Heavenly Core Nucleus from blowing up.

"YOU ——" Shen Bu stared at Zhou Weiqing blankly. Below them, chaos had already erupted.

The moment Shen Bu chose to detonate her Heavenly Core Nucleus, Shen Mo had rushed out and charged towards Zhou Weiqing who was levitating in the sky. However, he was blocked by the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya before he could do anything. Fen Tian, on the other hand, sent Wu Yunyue flying with a thrust of his palm. He spurted out blood as he was thrown backward. Ling Dang quickly flew out from the Peerless Sect group and stretched out both of her hands as she temporarily blocked Fen Tian from continuing his attack.

Shen Bu did not seem to notice the havoc that was unfolding on the surface below. She stared at Zhou Weiqing fixedly as she asked, "Y-You... You're still under m-my control, r-right?"

A hint of embarrassment could be seen on Zhou Weiqing's face as he nodded his head.

Shen Bu laughed. She could still actually laugh at this time, "I... I knew it. I-I knew it! N-Nobody... c-can resist... m-my Seduc...tion Attribute... S-Same goes t...to you, too... Alt-though I've... n-no

idea how... you... m-managed to do it... I... I didn't... lose...! Blerghh —" Fresh blood spurted out from her mouth again. The ultimate enchantress finally took in her last breath.

That was right. Zhou Weiqing was actually not immune to Shen Bu's Seduction attribute. The Blood Red Hell's Hell Lord Fen Tian who possessed the Destruction Attribute was not immune to it and it was the same for him, even when he possessed the Saint Attribute.

Although Shen Bu's heart was already completely twisted, she was still indeed a genius amongst her peers. The Seduction Attribute that she invented herself was extremely powerful. That kind of seductive charm that was in harmony with the worldly nature was definitely one of a kind. Even a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse was not immune to this charm of hers. Right now, she was already a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse. After she incorporated the Destruction Attribute into her Seduction Attribute while she perfected it, she had never failed, not even once.

Not only that, a young man would have a greater desire towards the opposite sex compared to old people just as Fen Tian had predicted. For this reason, Zhou Weiqing was already enraptured by her Seduction Attribute the moment he gazed into Shen Bu's eyes.

Of course, just like what Tian'er had said, even if Zhou Weiqing was bewitched by Shen Bu's Seduction Attribute, he would not lose this match. After all, Shen Bu's main ability was only the Seduction Attribute. There was absolutely no way for her attack to pierce through Zhou Weiqing's Ringless Ground Purging Set and his Dragon-Tiger Demon God Transformation's defenses.

Zhou Weiqing knew instantly that he would not be able to resist Shen Bu at all the moment he first looked into her eyes. That was right. What he did was he actually set a psychological cue for himself. It was not a cue so he could directly resist. Otherwise, he

would show signs of struggling, and it would be difficult for him to attack Shen Bu. She was already a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse after all and had the duration been any longer, Zhou Weiqing might not be able to hold his Divine Thought any longer.

Zhou Weiqing had always been a very careful person, and naturally, he would be well prepared for this exact reason. He made his preparation right at the moment Shen Bu launched her attack. No matter how powerful the Seduction Technique was, when one reached Zhou Weiqing's cultivation base, the Saint Energy would automatically protect his body the instance he was attacked by a foreign assault. At the same time, his own body would form a strong resistance by itself. This was also the moment the psychological cue that he had set earlier on woke up in an instant and prompted him to kill Shen Bu without any hesitation. It did not leave her with a chance to continue her Seduction Technique so that he could win this battle.

If everything had gone according to Zhou Weiqing's plan, there was quite a huge chance for him to succeed. After all, his own judgment was pretty accurate and on point.

Fortunately, there were a few people who did not want Zhou Weiqing to be in a passive state. That was why just a moment after Zhou Weiqing had fallen into a bewitched state, a power rose from the Peerless Sect and freed him from Shen Bu's Seduction Technique.

At any rate, the Seduction Technique was not completely invincible. It was similar to how everything in the world could be trumped by another thing. Due to this reason, Zhou Weiqing was in a slightly disadvantageous position in this round. There was no doubt that Zhou Weiqing also knew this. It was only when Shen Bu saw Zhou Weiqing's expression at the final moment that she was hit with this realization. It was unfortunate that the enchantress' one of a kind Seduction Technique would now be lost to the world. There was nothing wrong with this attribute. It could have been

righteous had it been used in the correct manner.

When Shen Mo saw how Shen Bu had fallen in Zhou Weiqing's hands, he was instantly enraged with madness. This Heavenly God-tier powerhouse erupted in the lower atmosphere. It was so powerful that the other few Great Saint Lands had to join forces to release their Heavenly Energy and cast a joint protective shield to protect themselves from harm.

Anger could be seen burning in Fen Tian's eyes. However, instead of choosing to continue his attack, he shouted towards Shen Mo, "Come back!"

Although Shen Mo was a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse, not to mention the fact that he was enraged at this moment, he chose to restrain his impulses, albeit reluctantly. Once again, he descended to the ground the moment he heard Fen Tian's voice. On the other side, the Six Ultimate Heavenly God Long Shiya had quite a grim look on his face as well. The series of turbulent-like attacks that was released by the opponent had also taken quite a tremendous toll on him.

Chapter 818: The Seduction Attribute (3)

Zhou Weiqing threw Shen Bu down to Shen Mo and Fen Tian before hissing coldly, "Hell Lord, you should know the Grand Tournament rules. Your actions have already violated the rules. In other words, from now on, the Blood Red Hell is eliminated from the Grand Tournament of the Saint Lands."

"Hahaha! Haha!" Fen Tian threw his head back as he laughed. A ferocious look appeared on his face, and the power that he had been suppressing all along instantly burst out at once without any warning. Horrendous Destruction Energy scattered all over the place as if it had just been detonated. The sky quickly darkened on its own without needing Destruction Energy to dye it black. It immediately gave off a feeling as if one had entered a world that was full of destruction. Every attribute that was in the atmosphere was destroyed within seconds. In just an instant, the ghastly Destruction Energy became the only thing that filled the entire space.

What a powerful Divine Territory! Even Zhou Weiqing faced some difficulties in controlling and maintaining his flight in the air. He quickly landed in front of the Peerless Sect and was surrounded entirely by darkness. Only the dark purple flames that were ignited on the Blood Red Hell followers' bodies allowed them to vaguely identify everything that was happening around them.

"The Maximum Level of the Heavenly God Tier!" Xue Ao'tian could not help but inhale in a cold breath as he exclaimed in surprise.

Even before today's Grand Tournament took place, everyone had already held Fen Tian in high regards. However, the moment they saw Fen Tian unleashing his cultivation base that was at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly God Tier with their own eyes, all of them immediately understood that they had underestimated him and the Blood Red Hell.

The purple flames on Fen Tian's body were like a layer of dazzling outerwear. It made his entire person look even more menacing. The surroundings were completely shrouded in darkness. He was not the only one who turned powerful. All of Blood Red Hell's followers who possessed the Destruction Attribute became powerful as well. At this moment, it was as if they were all injected with some sort of growth hormones. Each of them was emitting an unparalleled and mighty sense of powerful aura.

Shen Mo's breathing had obviously become a lot heavier. It was him who caught hold of Shen Bu's dead body. When he saw that she was no longer breathing in his arms, he gritted his teeth as he growled, "I've told you before. We need to subdue them by force and directly lay all our cards out in front of them. What use is there to include this useless tournament in our plan? Shen Bu wouldn't have died had it not been the case!"

"Are you questioning my decision now?" Fen Tian glared at him coldly. Shen Mo's voice instantly stopped abruptly in its track. He did not dare to make any sound as he lowered his head.

As Shangguang Tianyang looked at all of the Blood Red Hell's people, he calmly asked, "Fen Tian, what do you mean by this?"

Fen Tian replied indifferently, "Can't you see what I'm trying to do? This is my Divine Territory. To be more precise, the Destructive Divine Territory. In my Divine Territory, unless somebody has a cultivation base that is far greater than mine and reaches the Heavenly Change Tier that only exists in the legend, nobody else but I will be the ultimate ruler here. All of your affairs will be under my control! Originally, my plan was to first weaken your strength to a certain level through the Grand Tournament because, at the very least, all of you are still from the Saint Lands and possess a certain level of strength. Unfortunately, since all of you have already found out about the truth, not to mention the fact that you even caused me to lose my beloved subordinate, I don't see a point in continuing this Grand Tournament any longer.

I'll give all of you two options now!"

He paused for a moment as he reached here. A magical light shone within his eyes that were twinkling with a dark purplish gleam. At this moment, one had to admit that Fen Tian who possessed the Maximum Level of the Heavenly God-tier cultivation base was emitting a sense of coercion that was so powerful that everyone, including Xue Ao'tian, was feeling suffocated by it.

Once one reached the Heavenly King Tier, each and every small gap after that was like a chasm that needed to be crossed. A Heavenly God at the Maximum Level. It would be difficult to even rouse the desire of Xue Ao'tian, who was at the Middle Level of the Heavenly God Tier, to fight him. Moreover, this Destructive Divine Territory seemed to have enveloped the entire world.

"What should we do?" This was the question that everyone present was dying to ask.

At this moment, Fen Tian's voice continued to boom out loud, "First option. I'll let you off safely as long as all the Saint Lands seal themselves and not show themselves for a thousand years. I don't even need you to submit entirely to my Blood Red Hell. During the sealing process, you're not allowed to interfere with anything that's happening on the mainland. I want to unify the entire Boundless Mainland!"

"And if we don't agree to it?" Shangguan Tianyue could be heard asking coldly.

Fen Tian smiled indifferently, "If you don't agree to it? Well, if you disagree, then all of you will die today! Maybe killing all of you will incur huge losses to us. However, the entire Boundless Mainland will still remain under my control as long as I can annihilate all of you here!"

Slightly perplexed, Zhou Weiqing asked, "Fen Tian, since you already have the power of a Heavenly God at the Maximum Level, why did you wait until now to make your move? Are you really not

going to do us any harm once we sealed off our Saint Lands? Do you really think that we're all three-year-old kids?"

Fen Tian scoffed, "Of course I have my own reasons for doing what I'm doing now. Even though we're all enemies, I'll still keep my words. As for what will happen after a thousand years, well, that will depend on your strength at that time. However, there's one thing that I'd like to add! All the other Saint Lands can choose to seal themselves off but you, the Peerless Sect, cannot! Today, all of those from the Peerless Sect will have to leave your lives behind! No man will be spared!"

Zhou Weiqing laughed, "I knew you'll never let me go! Saint Energy and Destruction Energy are polar opposites. Since I'm still so young, you're afraid that given enough time, I'll grow even more powerful and will no longer be under your control. I'm right, aren't I?"

Fen Tian did not deny it. Instead, he stared at Zhou Weiqing as he proclaimed calmly, "You're a smart person. Although I do wonder how you managed to achieve such accomplishment at such a young age, honestly, I've no choice but to kill you while you're still in a cradle. This is because even if you surrender and submit to me, I'm still not confident enough to think that I can control you completely."

Even though the two of them were at the opposite ends of an antagonistic position, just the fact that Fen Tian said this showed how much actually he acknowledged Zhou Weiqing's strength.

Zhou Weiqing shrugged his shoulders as he let out a sigh, "What a pity! You and I have really different mindsets. What cradle were you talking about, huh? What makes you so sure that I'm still in a cradle anyway? You only have two Heavenly Gods by your side. We also have two Heavenly Gods right here. Moreover, the number of people we have are no lesser than yours. Do you really think that you'll be able to make all of us here yield to you with just that stupid Destruction sorry-ass Divine Territory alone?"

Fen Tian replied nonchalantly, "Don't be so insolent, young man! It's indeed true that your cultivation base is not bad and your Saint Energy is able to restrain my Destructive Divine Territory. Otherwise, Long Shiya would have been dead long ago. Unfortunately, your cultivation base is still far from being enough. How are you supposed to destroy my Destructive Divine Territory without having the same level of cultivation base as me?"

Zhou Weiqing chuckled, "Facts speak louder than words. Make sure you take a good look, alright?"

As he was speaking, the smile on his face disappeared. Two dots of lights instantly radiated from his face — from his eyes to be exact.

At this moment, Zhou Weiqing's eyes had become as dazzling as the stars. Dense Saint Energy instantly burst out from within him without warning.

This energy ripple radiated from the Saint Energy was extremely pure. Gold colored little starlight showed up on his body immediately. At the same time, a bright light could be seen lighting up in the middle of Zhou Weiqing's chest as well. The little starlights rose up in a spiral and forcibly dispelled the darkness in the surroundings as it expanded outwards at an extremely fast rate.

At this moment, all of those who were present on the scene seemed to be in some sort of illusion. It seemed like they heard shrill screams coming from the Destructive Divine Territory and everywhere that the Saint Energy had passed through. The Destructive intent contained in the Destructive Divine Territory immediately dissipated just like snow that came across hot boiling water.

"Come out!" Zhou Weiqing shouted out loud without warning.

An intense golden Nebula Saint Energy soared up to the sky at once. It was closely followed by a clear golden ray that shone down

from the sky. In an instant, it was as if the dark sky was cracked open. A starry sky appeared in front of everyone's eyes.

The starlight was so intense and dense as it hovered in the air. In a flash, gigantic nebula light cluster filled up the desolate abyss that was created by the Destructive Divine Territory. Once again, the energy of various attributes appeared in the air. Even though it was only confined to this one area on the summit of the Heavenly Snow Mountain, it was more than enough for these powerhouses from the various Saint Lands.

"Divine Territory!" Some changes could finally be seen in Fen Tian's expression.

Apart from some innermost secrets that could not be said out loud, the reason why he did not unleash his full power when he first arrived was partly due to the strength of the other Saint Lands.

Whether it was the Heavenly Snow Mountain or the Heaven's Expanse Palace, they both had a greater lineage compared to the Blood Red Hell. The rise of the Blood Red Hell in these few years were completely due to their reliance on the Destruction Attribute. However, Fen Tian did not know what other trump cards the other two Great Saint Lands held. For this reason, he was more than willing to continuously weaken the strength of the two Great Saint Lands through the Grand Tournament. The best scenario would be him killing off Shangguan Tianyang and Xue Ao'tian one after the other in the final battle. It would still be much easier for the next step of his plan if he had successfully killed off even one of them.

Unfortunately, due to the sudden appearance of the Peerless Sect, his plan had fallen short miserably. At this moment, it was the correct decision for him to use the Destructive Divine Territory to restrain all of the people present on the scene. Once the Destructive Divine Territory was activated, the Blood Red Hell followers would have their strength greatly enhanced and concurrently greatly reduced the cultivation base of the people

from other Saint Lands. However, the Astral Divine Territory that Zhou Weiqing had just launched had completely destroyed his plan.

As the caster of the Destructive Divine Territory, Fen Tian was the clearest about Zhou Weiqing's Astral Divine Territory. Indeed, Zhou Weiqing's Astral Divine Territory was not as powerful as his Destructive Divine Territory. One could even say that it was much more inferior compared to his Destructive Divine Territory. However, he clearly noticed one thing. The purity of the Saint Energy contained in Zhou Weiqing's Nebula Saint Energy was far greater than the Destruction Attribute in his Destructive Divine Territory.

In other words, Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy was far purer than his Destruction Energy. It was exactly for this reason that even though his Destructive Divine Territory was far more formidable than Zhou Weiqing's Astral Divine Territory, it was still unable to destroy Zhou Weiqing's Astral Divine Territory in a short period of time. Well, unless he killed Zhou Weiqing off.

However, the two of them were not the only one on the Heavenly Snow Mountain right now. With the help from Zhou Weiqing's Astral Divine Territory, the Heavenly Snow Mountain and Heaven's Expanse Palace followers would undoubtedly have a great increase in their combat effectiveness while the Blood Red Hell would be suppressed by it. How should they fight in this case? Even if he could obtain the Saint Energy in the end, he would have to pay a hefty price for that.

Chapter 819: Showdown (2 in 1)

Fen Tian slightly narrowed his eyes slightly and looked at Zhou Weiqing without hiding his hatred towards him at all, "You bastard! Destroying my plan again. It seems like I must kill you as soon as I can."

Zhou Weiqing shrugged and said, "Come at me!" His voice was calm but his expression was provocative.

However, Fen Tian chose to ignore him at that moment as he turned to Xue Ao'tian who was next to him, "Brother Xue, I'll keep my word. As long as you're willing to seal off the Heavenly Snow Mountain, I can even promise you that no harm will come to the Wan Shou Empire. We'll be allies from today onwards. I'm even willing to share the Destruction Attribute with you. What do you think?"

Xue Ao'tian looked at him and calmly said, "Fen Tian, have you run out of ideas?"

Fen Tian sighed and said, "Looks like I'm right. Be it you or Shangguan Tianyang, it seems that all of you have ganged up with that kid."

Xue Ao'tian said in a composed manner, "He's my son-in-law. I only have one daughter and you're trying to kill him. What do you think I should do? Moreover, I've always been disinclined to obey the words of others ever since the Heavenly Snow Mountain was established. Even if you're at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly God Tier, I'm not going to obey you. There may be a crushed Heavenly Snow Mountain but never a Heavenly Snow Mountain that exists without dignity."

Suddenly, Fen Tian smiled. At that moment, his smile was rather odd. The dark purple flames around his body did not become stronger. It seemed like he did not have the intention to attack.

"If that's the case, I'll have to add some weight to this. Brother Xue, since you're destined to fail, why not back off? Brother Huang, let's show them your ability. They've figured out our relationship since the beginning. What's the point of hiding it?"

Huang Xingyun, who was leading the Love Valley's powerhouses, had been standing at the side silently all this while. He frowned when he heard what Fen Tian said. He brought his wife Yun Ruoyun and walked to Fen Tian's side. Both Huang Xingyun and Fen Tian were not idiots. The lineup of the Heavenly Expanse Palace and Heavenly Snow Mountain in the tournament, the continuous surrenders by the both of them later in the tournament, and the Peerless Sect targeting Love Valley and Blood Red Hell. It was obvious which side was being picked. (Obvious that peerless sect was against Love Valley and Blood Red Hell)

As Huang Xingyun and his wife walked out, the powerhouses from Love Valley also teamed up with Blood Red Hell. Their bodies gave off the same black glow. It was the Destruction Attribute. Huang Xingyun looked at Xue Ao'tian and Shangguang Tianyang and said in a deep voice, "I find it strange. I'd like to know how all of you figured out the relationship between Love Valley and the Blood Red Hell. I thought our act was flawless."

Xue Ao'tian expression seemed alright but Shangguan Tianyang's expression was extremely terrible. Love Valley had always been a firm ally of the Heavenly Expanse Palace after all. He could easily imagine the consequences if they did not see through Love Valley's act before the end of the tournament or before the Blood Red Hell turned against them. Huang Xingyun and his followers would have dealt them the deadliest attack.

"Little Brother Huang, why? Are our years as allies so unsteady?" Shangguan Tianyang could not help but ask.

Huang Xingyun then said calmly, "The alliance that you speak of is just Love Valley trailing behind your Heavenly Expanse Palace. We fought the Heavenly Snow Mountain because it was beneficial

to us. Shangguan Tianyang, don't you know that in this world, there are only ones that seek endless benefits, but never ones that will be an ally forever? The Destruction Attribute brought much power to us. We no longer have to be suppressed by you. My Blancpain Empire would even be given a huge piece of Zhongtian Empire's land. There's no reason for me not to collaborate with the Blood Red Hell. On the mainland, we've already owned the Dandun Empire and Bai Da Empire. Initially, the lands of Geritimo Empire and Blancpain Empire covered a third of the mainland. After the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands ends, without the support from all the Saint Lands, the entire mainland will be ruled by us. That's the most important to me."

"This will only benefit a small number of people. Shangguan Tianyang, do you dare to say that you won't be persuaded if someone is willing to provide you with Destruction Attribute so you can break through to the Heavenly God Tier and give your Heavenly Expanse Palace the opportunity to rule the entire mainland? Although we're enemies now, there's no difference between us when it comes to human nature."

Before Shangguan Tianyang could speak, Zhou Weiqing took the opportunity to ask first, "I'm curious. The Destruction Attribute couldn't have appeared out of thin air. The people who gave you the Destruction Attribute, what intention do they have exactly? You're right. Perhaps what benefits you is the most important in this world but there's no such thing as a free lunch. All of you must have sacrificed something to gain this."

Huang Xingyun looked at Zhou Weiqing and said coldly, "Those that were sacrificed were the lives of people from other countries. The mainland is overpopulated and our master requires the resentment from the people at the time of death."

"What did you say?" Zhou Weiqing could not help exclaiming.

Huang Xingyun said casually, "What's so surprising about that? I have nothing to hide from all of you. If all of you don't obey, you'll

all die here today. We, Heavenly Jewel Masters, are precious. The death of those ordinary people is just like the death of ants."

Shangguan Tianyang's expression was so somber that it looked like water was about to drip from his face, "So all of you are collaborating to destroy the Geritimo Empire and to kill millions of people?"

Huang Xingyun said calmly, "This is just the beginning. After all, we can't kill too many people in a single place or the place would be dead. It'll be disadvantageous to us when we rule in the future. However, your Zhongtian Empire is a different case because the land is vast and highly populated."

"You... you lunatic." Shangguan Tianyang could not help but condemn out loud. Although Huang Xingyun did not say it directly, how could they not understand what he actually meant?

Huang Xingyun smiled. His smile was calm. If one was to describe Fen Tian's character as ruthless, then Huang Xingyun could be described as sinister.

Shangguan Tianyang narrowed both his eyes, "Huang Xingyun, perhaps what you said is right. I might be persuaded with such an abundance of benefits but I'm different from you. I'm a human, not an animal. I still have the ethics of a human, but it seems you don't anymore. In my eyes, even the filthiest Heavenly Beast is a thousand times cleaner than you."

"Are you trying to rile me up?" Huang Xingyun suddenly turned serious but he was not riled up from what was said. "I've already told you everything you wanted to know but you still haven't answered my question. We have darkness and light from the Love Valley and Blood Red Hell. I thought we hid it really well. How did all of you find out?"

Shangguan Tianyang took a deep breath to calm his agitated emotion before he looked at Zhou Weiqing, "You'll need to ask him that. I didn't believe it when Weiqing first told me about the

possibility that the Blood Red Hell are working together with Love Valley. However, I began to believe it when I saw all of your performance on the Heavenly Snow Mountain. I never expected that I would not be able to see who you are after all these years. You have indeed concealed yourself deeply."

Huang Xingyun did not seem to be bothered by Shangguan Tianyang's sarcasm as he looked at Zhou Weiqing curiously, "So how did you manage to find out?"

Zhou Weiqing said calmly, "Do you remember? Around half a year ago, I think you sent someone to the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land to kidnap the Elven Princess."

Huang Xingyun's facial expression shifted. Although he tried his best to hide it, it was impossible to hide the surprise within the depth of his eyes.

"I don't understand what you're trying to say."

Zhou Weiqing smiled coldly, "Do you really not know? Have you not been harboring the intention of constraining the Elf Tribe for a long time now? Otherwise, it's impossible for the powerhouse that you sent there to enter the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land with just some unique relic. Too bad his luck wasn't good. I arrived at the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land on the same day coincidentally. He even blamed me for what he did. When I caught up with him after chasing him, I found out that he was using the Time Attribute. At the moment before his death, he used Destruction Attribute when he was in a panic. You don't need me to tell you how rare the Time Attribute is. Apart from me, I've never heard of anyone possessing the Time Attribute outside of Love Valley. How could I not suspect anything when the Time and Destruction Attributes appeared on the person at the same time? There's a saying that goes 'it's better to believe that something exists than not'. I didn't expect that the righteous Love Valley couldn't resist the temptation of the Destruction Attribute. All of you know that the end of the Destruction Attribute is self-destruction. Even your master won't

be able to run away from this fate even if he ruled the entire world."

Fen Tian glared at Huang Xingyun with anger in his eyes. Huang Xingyun had never told him that the Love Valley had the information about the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land. It was obvious that Huang Xingyun wanted to enjoy the advantage on his own.

"Such trash." There was coldness sparkling in Huang Xingyun's eyes, "I thought that trash died in the hands of the Elf Tribe, I didn't know he died in yours. A wise man would sometimes make mistakes."

If there were no hiccups, the Blood Red Hell and Love Valley would simultaneously attack with their darkness and light. They would only have to pay a small price to attain victory. The most important reason why Blood Red Hell and Love Valley decided to lay a trap here was because they did not want to lose too many people here. Other countries aside, the Zhongtian Empire and Wan Shou Empire were both tough empires. It would be much more difficult for them to rule the entire world if these two Saint Lands suffered severe losses. Therefore, all of their plans revolved around the principle of paying the smallest price to win the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands.

Huang Xingyun said coldly, "All of you have witnessed Fen Tian's ability. Since the story has developed to this point, then we'll have to fight with our abilities. If you don't accept our suggestion of proclaiming this Saint Land as ours, all of you will stay here today."

Xue Ao'tian glared madly with his eyes wide opened, "Huang Xingyun, Fen Tian, the both of you seemed to have forgotten that this is our Heavenly Snow Mountain."

Huang Xingyun glared at Xue Ao'tian, "I've sacrificed so much for the Destructive Energy, how can I not gain anything? I didn't forget. This is indeed your Heavenly Snow Mountain, so what?

With what ability are you going to struggle against the absolute ability that we possess?"

A layer of distorted, dark-purple light appeared on Huang Xingyun's body suddenly. It was not just him. Yin Ruoyun who was next to him had the same layer of dark purple light appearing on her body as well. The terrifying suppressive aura rose immediately as the dark purple light pillars shot into the sky under the slight distortion.

The area that was created by Zhou Weiqing's Astral Divine Territory that initially drove away the Destructive Divine Territory atop the Heavenly Snow Mountain was currently locked, clashing intensely with the dark purple light.

Zhou Weiqing staggered three steps backward. He could barely stand straight as he scoffed. His face suddenly paled as the two dark purple light pillars broke through the constraint of the Astral Divine Territory and integrated with Fen Tian's Destructive Divine Territory.

The black color in the sky started to change. It had changed to an odd dark purple color. A terrifying and immense pressure caused Zhou Weiqing's Astral Divine Territory to shrink rapidly. In just a few breaths, it was suppressed to the point where it could only maintain a space with a diameter that was less than 30 square meters. It only covered a portion of the Peerless Sect's powerhouses.

Meanwhile, the people of Heavenly Snow Mountain and the Heavenly Expanse Palace had lost the protection of the Astral Divine Territory. Suddenly, the suffocating pressure appeared once again. Moreover, the pressure this time was even more petrifying. It was just a suppressive aura, not even a physical attack. They could see clearly that the snow that accumulated on top of the Heavenly Snow Mountain all year long was melting at an alarming speed, and it was disappearing. In a just a while, the head of the rock mountain was revealed. Not even a drop of water

could be seen.

The Destructive Divine Territory. It was the Destructive Divine Territory again. The difference was the attributes that were mixed with Huang Xingyun and Yun Ruoyun's Destructive Divine Territory. It was not the Fire Attribute but was the Time Attribute instead. Put simply, their Destructive Divine Territory was even more powerful than Fen Tian's Divine Territory. However, their cultivation base was slightly inferior to Fen Tian. Even so, within a short period of time, the powerhouses on top of the Heavenly Snow Mountain could tell that this couple who controlled Love Valley had the cultivation base of an Upper-Level Heavenly God.

Whether it was the powerhouses from the Heavenly Snow Mountain or the Heavenly Expanse Palace, none of them, including Xue Ao'tian and Shangguan Tianyang, had a change in their expressions. To compare their total headcount, the people from Blood Red Hell and Love Valley combined were still slightly lesser than the people from the Heavenly Snow Mountain and the Peerless Sect combined. The difference was not much. However, at this moment, they already displayed four Heavenly God-tier powerhouses!

A Maximum Level Heavenly God, two Heavenly Gods, and a Lower Level Heavenly God. They had four Heavenly God-tier powerhouses. What kind of ability was that?

At that moment, Xue Ao'tian was the one who had the most complicated feelings. Throughout these years, he had been named the world's first powerhouse. He was the only Heavenly God-tier powerhouse in the Five Great Saint Lands.

However, five Heavenly Gods appeared at once in the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands. Five of them! Which one of the Heavenly God-tier powerhouses did not possess the ability to destroy the heavens and earth? The distance between a Heavenly Emperor and a Heavenly God was equivalent to the distance between an emperor and a God. Both could not be theoretically

calculated. Moreover, three among the five had a higher cultivation base in the Heavenly God Tier than him. Could he really emerge victoriously in this battle?

Fen Tian walked forward slowly and stood next to Huang Xingyun, "All of you don't have much of a choice. Choose whether you want to seal this place up or death. Give me an answer."

His words were directed at the Heavenly Snow Mountain and Heavenly Expanse Palace. It did not matter if it was Fen Tian or Huang Xingyun, both of them had made their decision. They had to destroy the Peerless Sect today no matter what. The Saint Energy that Zhou Weiqing possessed was the only thing that could go against them.

Shangguan Tianyang took a step forward slowly as a layer of blurry mist was released from his body. Within the dreamy mist, pieces of armor appeared silently on his body. It was the Boundless Infinitum Set. He was not the only one who was putting on a legendary armor set. Everyone's body from the Heavenly Expanse Palace lit up. The faint mist released from their bodies floated into the air slowly and formed a blurry cover of light that enveloped all of them within it.

Apart from the two brothers Shangguan Tianyang and Tianyue, although everyone who came from the Heavenly Expanse Palace these time were only Heavenly King-tier powerhouses, the power the released by the legendary armor sets of the 108 Heavenly King-tier powerhouses was shocking. They could not break the Destructive Divine Territory but they managed to block the suppressive effects of the Destructive Divine Territory. The combined strength saved them from being continually eroded.

Seeing that the people of the Heavenly Expanse Palace were putting on their legendary sets, Fen Tian and Huang Xingyun's pupils slightly shrank. They could see that all 108 Heavenly Kings from the Heavenly Expanse Palace had nine-piece legendary armor sets with them. A nine-piece set! What sorcery was that? That said,

it was like everyone who was wearing a nine-piece set was on the same level as Long Shiya!

No matter how fast the development that Blood Red Hell and Love Valley managed to achieve with the help of the Destruction Attribute, they would not be able to bring out so many legendary armor sets even if they combined both their Saint Lands together. That was the main reason why Fen Tian and Huang Xingyun had not been forcing the Heavenly Expanse Palace and Heavenly Snow Mountain too much. That was a relic. A relic from the Saint Land that existed a thousand years ago. Who would be able to compare with the Heavenly Expanse Palace in terms of financial capability?

Shangguan Tianyang looked at Fen Tian and Huang Xingyun closely, "My Heavenly Expanse Palace's 108 Heaven and Earth Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Formation has not appeared on the mainland for at least 400 years. Sealing up the Heavenly Expanse Palace is just a way to stall for time. We're just targets that you'll kill, it's just a matter of time. Furthermore, how could the Heavenly Expanse Palace shy away? Today, the Heavenly Expanse Palace will fight to its death but not the people of Zhongtian who had compromised and lived without dignity."

Everything he said was as tough as nails that could be hammered into steel. Each and every one of his words was tough. The smile from the Palace Master of the Heavenly Expanse Palace had disappeared completely. The eleventh piece of the set appeared on his body, and a dazzling and bright glow that was similar to diamonds radiated from his body as well. It was the Boundless Infinitum Set. The No.1 legendary armor set in the world.

When the Boundless Infinitum Set was completed, it looked like a layer of crystal was covering Shangguan Tianyang's body. In this layer of crystal, there was faint layer of cloudy of white smoke flowing continuously. The boundless smoke felt like it was filled with the consolidation of all attributes. This was the reason why the boundless smoke could break the suppression of the

Destructive Divine Territory. It was a god set.

Chapter 820: One Trump Card After Another (1)

The Boundless Infinitum Set, also known as the world's best legendary armor suit. Of course the true god set — the only god set — had its claim to fame.

The Heavenly Snow Mountain and the Heaven's Expanse Palace had been each other's rival for such a long time. If Xue Ao'tian really had the power to kill Shangguan Tianyang, he would have done so earlier a few tournaments back. How could he possibly show any mercy to him? However, he was unable to do it, and the reason was none other than the Boundless Infinitum Set that Shangguan Tianyang owned.

An eight-piece legendary armor set could hardly scratch the 'legendary' title but a nine or ten-piece set was definitely a legendary set. As for an eleven-piece armor set, well, it would no longer be limited by the word 'legendary'. Instead, it would be a true god set.

The first distinctive feature of the Boundless Infinitum Set was its resistance towards Divine Territories. The second was its own Divine Territory. The god set was equipped with its own Boundless Infinitum Divine Territory. Although Shangguan Tianyang might not be able to defeat Xue Ao'Tian in terms of overall strength, it was precisely with the help of this set that Xue Ao'tian was also unable to defeat him. Under such circumstances, the Heaven's Expanse Palace that had a strong backing was able to rank first in the Five Great Saint Lands without any dispute.

At this moment, the Boundless Infinitum Set once again made its entrance on the summit of Heavenly Snow Mountain. It did not matter if Fen Tian, who was already a Heavenly God or Huang Xingyun, their imposing manner could not help but falter a little. The shock that the Boundless Infinitum Set brought to them was

just too much to digest. Even until this day, they were still unable to break free from the nightmare that is the Boundless Infinitum Set.

There was no emotion in Shangguan Tianyang's voice. It was so cold as if he was pouring icy cold water on Fen Tian and Huang Xingyun. "The Heavenly Spirit Earthly Fiend Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation is also known as the God Slaying Demon-Vanquishing Great Formation. So what if you're at the Heavenly God Tier? Brother Xue, let the Heaven's Expanse Palace be the one to deal with Huang Xingyun and Fen Tian."

Xue Ao'tian cast a glance at Shangguan Tianyang. Although they had no choice other than to join forces right now because of the immediate situation and Zhou Weiqing's secret act as a mediator, how could they so easily erase the estrangement between them after being rivals for so many years? A cold snort could be heard immediately, "With just your Heaven's Expanse Palace alone? Huh, so do you think we from the Heavenly Snow Mountain is incapable now?"

As he said that, Xue Ao'tian lifted up his right hand and waved it swiftly in the void. A bright and splendid golden light erupted from his wrist instantly. Without any warning, the rich golden light illuminated the entire surroundings brightly as a golden light beamed up to the sky. It forcibly bulldozed an area within the Destructive Divine Territory in a tyrannical manner and enveloped all of the people that were present on the Heavenly Snow Mountain.

The God Vanquishing Heavenly Spirit Set materialized on his body. The ten-piece set shone lustrously in gold color. The slender and long God Spirit Staff landed in Xue Ao'tian's hand as the intense divine aura instantly began to spread out.

Unlike the Heaven's Expanse Palace, when Xue Ao'tian put on his gear over at the Heavenly Snow Mountain's corner, all of the powerhouses of the Heavenly Snow Mountain quickly stepped

forward and surrounded him in the middle as they formed a ring around him. On the contrary, at the Heaven's Expanse Palace's corner, the battle array that they formed took the shape of a triangle with the Shangguan brothers, Tianyang and Tianyue, taking the lead as the arrowhead.

Huang Xingyun and Fen Tian did not take this opportunity to order their followers to attack. Instead, they were merely watching the situation coldly. Before they had a clear understanding of Heaven's Expanse Palace and Heavenly Snow Mountain's strategy, they were not in a haste to make their moves. At least for now, everything was still within their control. They still had a trump card that they had yet to play as well.

After the God Vanquishing Heavenly Spirit Set and the God Spirit Staff were ready, it took on a peculiar purplish gold color. Noble, sacred, and majestic. A purplish golden headband decorated with complicated patterns could be seen on Xue Ao'tian's head. A dazzling golden oval gemstone was embedded right in the middle of the headband. Divine aura radiated from his body ceaselessly and broke a part of the Destructive Divine Territory. That was none other than his Heavenly Spirit Divine Territory. Apart from that, what was more peculiar was the fact that the strong Destruction Attribute leaking out from the super intense Destructive Divine Territory could not do any harm to his Heavenly Spirit Divine Territory at all.

Just like how the Blood Red Hell and Love Valley shared the same Destruction Attribute, the Heavenly Snow Mountain, and Heaven's Expanse Palace both equally shared the Creation Attribute originating from Saint Energy.

Long ago, when Zhou Weiqing had gone to the Heaven's Expanse Palace to defeat Shangguan Tianyang and received his blessing in taking the hands of the three Shangguan sisters, he had already given his words to Shangguan Tianyang during a private conversation that he would share the Saint Energy with the

Heaven's Expanse Palace. Of course, there was a certain degree of limit to their agreement to share.

Later, when Zhou Weiqing let the three Shangguan sisters return to the Heaven's Expanse Palace to consolidate their legendary armor sets, the plan that he put together from his foreshadowing came in handy.

It was still relatively easy for Shangguan Fei'er and Bing'er to consolidate their legendary armor sets but Shangguan Xue'er's legendary armor set was the Heaven's Expanse Palace's secret relic — the Boundless Infinitum Set. If he was not prepared to pay a price, how else could he cajole the old fox, Shangguan Tianyang, to agree to it? After all, the moment he agreed to allow the three Shangguan sisters to be married to Zhou Weiqing, they would no longer be part of the Heaven's Expanse Palace anymore. This fact was attested when the three sisters showed up in the Grand Tournament of the Saint Lands under the name of the Peerless Sect.

The main reason Zhou Weiqing passed on his Saint Energy to the Heaven's Expanse Palace was, without a doubt, to fight against the Blood Red Hell's Destruction Attribute. At the same time, how could he be willing to see his wives being put in an awkward situation as a man? For this reason, he decided to use his Saint Energy to exchange for the three women's Consolidated Equipment Set, and that included the Boundless Infinitum Set as well.

Shangguan Tianyang understood perfectly well that the role and transitivity of the Saint Energy were far superior to the Boundless Infinitum Set. For a Heavenly Jewel Master with a lower cultivation base, the Saint Energy, could only accumulate in their body and allow them to possess a greater strength temporarily when they unleashed it at most. By the time they finished consuming it, that would be all to it. However, this was a whole different concept altogether for a powerhouse who was at

Heavenly King Tier and above.

All of the powerhouses who were at the Heavenly King Tier and above possessed a Heavenly Nucleus Core. They were fully capable of integrating the Saint Energy into the Heavenly Nucleus Core and add the Creation Attribute to their Heavenly Nucleus Core. In this case, their resistance towards the Destruction Attribute would undoubtedly be enhanced, and this would also bring great benefits to their cultivation, particularly to those powerhouses who had already reached a bottleneck in their cultivation.

Due to this reasons, Shangguan Tianyang did not spend much time pondering before he agreed to Zhou Weiqing's proposal by allowing the three Shangguan sisters to infuse their not-so-pure Saint Energy into some of the Heaven's Expanse Palace's powerhouses to increase their strength. Of course, those who gained the most benefits were none other than Shangguan Tianyang and Tianyue.

This was also why Shangguan Tianyang was not particularly nervous when faced with the Destructive Divine Territory. With a certain amount of Creation Attribute in their bodies, the Destruction Attribute would not be as threatening as it used to be. At least, they were not in a position where it was too disadvantageous for them in terms of attributes. Of course, the Destructive Divine Territory would still have the upper hand against them owing to the purity of the Destruction Attribute in it. However, at the very least, it could not do much harm to the Heaven's Expanse Palace's powerhouses just by relying on the Destruction Attribute alone.

It was even simpler in the case of the Heavenly Snow Mountain. Tian'er's return had meant everything. Moreover, the purity of Tian'er's Saint Energy was second only to Zhou Weiqing. Even though she was there alone, the benefits that the Heavenly Snow Mountain's powerhouses received was actually even greater than that of the Heaven's Expanse Palace.

For this reason, at the moment when Xue Ao'tian hoisted his God Spirit Staff up high and unleashed his Heavenly Spirit Divine Territory, the Destructive Divine Territory could not forcefully tear it apart. On top of that, the strength that Xue Ao'tian demonstrated right now was not as simple as something from someone at the Mid-Level of the Heavenly God Tier. It was obvious that he had already strode into the Upper-Level of the Heavenly God Tier. This was the power of the Creation Attribute.

"For the glory of Wan Shou, the brilliance that guards the Heavenly Snow Mountain! All rise! Guardians of the Heavenly Snow Mountain!"

All of a sudden, the divine aura strengthened without warning. A golden ray shone down from above the Heavenly Spirit Divine Territory that stretched over the sky. The ray shone down all the way and lit up a part of the castle atop the summit of the Heavenly Snow Mountain followed by countless deafening roars and howls that began to fill the air.

The Heaven's Expanse Palace had the Heavenly Spirit Earthly Fiend Boundless Infinitum Set as their trump card so why wouldn't the Heavenly Snow Mountain, that had a longer history than the Heaven's Expanse Palace, have their own trump card up their sleeve as well? Furthermore, they had never ever played this card before in the past Grand Tournaments.

Figures of gigantic shadow soared up to the sky from the Snow Deity's Castle. Under the illumination of the Heavenly Spirit Divine Territory' Divine brilliance, a strong sense of coercion could immediately be felt the moment each of the huge figures showed up on the scene. Not only that, each of them would shine a strong golden beam and infuse it with the Heavenly Spirit Divine Territory as it increased the area that the Heavenly Spirit Divine Territory was enveloping.

Those were all gigantic Heavenly Beasts. Heavenly Beasts that could only be found in the Heavenly Snow Mountain. After all the

Heavenly Beasts had soared up to the sky, they immediately made their way towards the Heavenly Snow Mountain's powerhouses. Even though they appeared very quickly, there would be a Heavenly Snow Mountain's powerhouse that leaped up to the sky to join them each time a new one appeared. In just a blink of an eye, over twenty Heavenly Snow Mountain's powerhouses had already found their mounts. What was more amazing was the fact that none of these twenty-odd Heavenly Beasts had a cultivation base that was lower than the Heavenly Emperor Tier.

In terms of strength, a Heavenly Beast that had a cultivation base at the Heavenly King Tier and above usually would not be on par with a Heavenly Jewel Master who was at the same level. However, the difference was not too large. In any case, this was the first time everyone present on the scene witnessed the appearance of so many Heavenly Emperor-tier Heavenly Beasts all at once. What a spectacular scene this was!

The aura of over twenty Heavenly Emperor-tier Heavenly Beasts united together, coupled with Xue Ao'tian's Heavenly Spirit Divine Territory actually decreased the area that the Destructive Divine Territory forcibly controlled. Even that purplish black light was no longer able to seal off the surrounding air completely. Streaks of lights began to pierce through from above the Heavenly Spirit Divine Territory.

Let alone Fen Tian and Huang Xingyun who had their brows knitted together, even Shangguan Tianyang who could be considered as their ally was completely taken aback by such a sight. After all, the Heavenly Snow Mountain had never unleashed so many Heavenly Emperor-tier Heavenly Beasts before in the past Grand Tournaments. Moreover, no one had ever joined forces with a Heavenly Beast before. Even though the number of powerhouses that the Heavenly Snow Mountain sent out was not too large, which caused them to lose the championship at the Grand Tournament every time, Shangguan Tianyang always had the

feeling that there must still be some tricks up the Heavenly Snow Mountain's sleeve. However, it had never crossed his mind that this trump card of theirs would be so impossibly excessive.

Each of the Heavenly Snow Mountain's powerhouses including Lion King Gu Site and Tiger King Xue Ao'ying, possessed a Heavenly Emperor-tier mount of their own. From the looks of it, it was obvious that this was not the first time they joined forces with the Heavenly Beasts. After each and every one of them was settled in, their strength merged together all at once. Just take the Tiger King and the Lion King for example, after they had merged with their Heavenly Beasts, their strength immediately approached the Heavenly God Tier.

Furthermore, this was not the end of it. The Heavenly Beasts did not stop appearing continuously. In just a short amount of time, over 50 Heavenly Beasts appeared in succession at the summit of Heavenly Snow Mountain, and each of them had a cultivation base higher than the Heavenly King Tier.

Chapter 821: One Trump Card After Another

(2)

Standing motionlessly, Zhou Weiqing murmured, "Wan Shou Empire! As expected of the Wan Shou Empire! Looks like the trump card of the Heavenly Snow Mountain does not lie with their Heavenly Jewel Masters but with the Heavenly Beasts instead!"

Tian'er rolled her eyes at him, "What? You only just found out? There are no human beings living on the Heavenly Snow Mountain at all. It's just that some of us are able to cultivate to take the form of a human being and some can't! According to the rules that our ancestors passed down to us, Heavenly Beasts who are not able to cultivate and take human form are not qualified to claim themselves to be part of the Heavenly Snow Mountain. However, as long as their cultivation base is higher than the Heavenly King Tier, they'll be allowed to enter the Heavenly Snow Mountain from the Wan Shou Heaven and cultivate under the shelter of the Heavenly Snow Mountain. Otherwise, you human poachers would just enter the Wan Shou Heaven and kill them all! It's only when the Heavenly Snow Mountain is faced with a life-and-death situation that these Heavenly Beasts will finally come out and help us fight. They are the guardians of the Heavenly Snow Mountain. Only the progeny of the Mountain Lord of the Heavenly Snow Mountain can command them!"

With the appearance of the Heavenly Snow Mountain's guardians — the Heavenly Beasts, the scale that was slightly tilted to one side seemed to gradually return to an equilibrium. There was no need to mention anything else. Just the mere presence of so many Heavenly Emperor-tier Heavenly Beasts was more than enough to pose a great threat to the Blood Red Hell and Love Valley. Even though they had four Heavenly God-tier powerhouses with them, the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation was not something that could be easily defeated. On top of that, there was

also the presence of Xue Ao'tian and Long Shiya who were both Heavenly Gods

Fen Tian looked at Xue Ao'tian as he let out a sigh, "Brother Xue, you know, originally, I really had no intention to cross swords with you. Indeed, be it the Heavenly Snow Mountain or the Heaven's Expanse Palace, I'm sure all of you have your cards hidden up your sleeves. However, do you really think we would make our appearance here if we do not have absolute faith in our own ability?"

A black light burst out from Fen Tian's hand. A gigantic purplish black light instantly condensed into a halo before it spread out above the purplish-black Destructive Divine Territory.

"Grrrrr—, Grrrrrr —" Two deep ferocious roars reverberated at once from the distant sky. Immediately afterward, two gigantic figures charged into the Destructive Divine Territory while emitting dark red light like two huge meteors and made their way towards the summit of Heavenly Snow Mountain.

Other than the four Heavenly God-tier powerhouses, there was another trick up the Blood Red Hell and Love Valley's sleeve? Xue Ao'tian and Shangguan Tianyang looked at each other. Both of them saw the solemnness in each other's eyes.

The reason why both parties did not take the lead in an attack yet was because there were too many powerhouses gathered on the summit of Heavenly Snow Mountain now. With these many powerhouses, it would be impossible to stop once a battle broke out. Not only that, the situation would become very chaotic and messy as well. Other than Zhou Weiqing and the few other young people, all of the people present here were all old-timers who were laden with experience. They understood clearly that morale was the most important thing in a large-scale chaotic war. If both sides were equal in strength, the side with the higher morale could even achieve the final victory by paying as small a cost as possible. It was because of this reason that they were both currently trying to

overwhelm their opponents with their imposing manner.

Despite all of that, the preparation their enemies had made was far more horrifying than they had first thought. The horror was contained in the two masses of the dark, red light's energy that was at least at the Heavenly God Tier or higher.

The two huge meteor-like rays came into view at the Heavenly Snow Mountain in a split second. Instead of landing on the ground, they merely hovered above the summit of Heavenly Snow Mountain. The moment they made their entrance, a commotion immediately broke out among the Heavenly Beasts who were the Heavenly Snow Mountain's guardians. The originally imposing momentum instantly deflated. Fear could even be seen in every single one of their eyes.

The two masses of dark red lights started to fully reveal their figures at this moment. When everyone finally had a clear look at their figures, all of them could not help but take in a breath of chilly air. Horror immediately dawned on Zhou Weiqing's face.

The reason why they did not land on the ground was because the size of their bodies was just impossibly huge. It turned out that they were both actually a pair of fiery red gigantic dragons that were more than 100 meters long. However, a layer of black light was currently emitting out of their fiery red body. Their eyes had also turned a ferocious evil-looking purplish black.

"Hui Yao? Duo Si?" Zhou Weiqing could not help but exclaim in surprise.

Before coming to this Grand Tournament, Zhou Weiqing had tried to summon the two of them but somehow, he did not receive word from them. It had never crossed his mind that they would actually appear on the summit of Heavenly Snow Mountain at this precise time and become their enemy on top of that. It was obvious to him that right now, Hui Yao and Duo Si were not completely conscious of their actions. They had been eaten away by the

Destruction Energy and were mere puppets now.

However, it did not mean that their strength was weakened just because they had become puppets now. On the contrary, after the fusion with the Destruction Energy, these two gigantic dragons seemed to become even more powerful now. Particularly Hui Yao who was easily causing cracks to appear in the Destructive Divine Territory with every slight movement of his. Presently, their appearance had instantly increased the imposing manner of both Blood Red Hell and Love Valley as it suppressed the Heaven's Expanse Palace, Heavenly Snow Mountain and Peerless Sect's powerhouses who had all gone pale.

After all, with the legendary gigantic dragons making their entrance on the battlefield, not to mention that they were the opponents that had to go against the dragons, nobody would possibly be able to smile at the sight of this.

Worse, it was not only Hui Yao and Duo Si who made their grand entrance. There were hundreds of figures each on their backs. These figures were all clad in black with a black hood. All that one could see was only the eyes that were as eerie as the will-o'-the-wisps. There was no doubt that these people had a cultivation base that was at least at the Heavenly King Tier. Just the sheer number itself had put Zhou Weiqing's party in a completely disadvantageous situation.

Even Huang Xingyun could not suppress the sense of pride on his face, "So? Are you still trying to go against us now? You should understand very well now that your resistance would only end up in vain. My advice still stands. As long as you're willing to seal off your Saint Land, your lives will be spared!" Having said that, a hint of jealousy could still be seen in the depth of his eyes. This was because the two gigantic dragons were not taking orders from him but only from Fen Tian. In Huang Xingyun's mind, he who possessed the Time Attribute had far greater potential than Fen Tian but the Lord had chosen to give Fen Tian greater authority

instead. He was merely a coordinator.

After a short moment of astonishment, Zhou Weiqing finally snapped back to his senses. Staring at the two gigantic dragons in the air, he could not help but feel a pang of pain in his heart. It was apparent that Hui Yao and his wife had fallen into the hands of the Blood Red Hell when they went forward to rescue their children. He vowed to free the two of them from this ordeal no matter what.

"Huang Xingyun, Fen Tian, there's no need to be hasty! All of you have your trump cards so there's no reason for us Peerless Sect not to have ours, right?" Zhou Weiqing sneered coldly.

Huang Xingyun laughed out loud, "What an ignorant brat! All you can do is rely on your teacher, Fatty Long. Do enlighten me, what other trump card do you have that can turn the situation around?!"

Zhou Weiqing smirked and turned his attention towards Ling Dang who was standing not far away from him, "Your Highness, looks like it's your turn to make the grand entrance now!"

"Huang Xingyun, you actually sent somebody to kidnap my daughter! In public or in private, I'll make you pay today!" A pleasant voice that was filled with a hint of wrath resonated in the air. Ling Dang slowly took off the cloak above her head and revealed a gorgeous, stunning face that could stifle a man's breath and make women go green with envy.

A dazzling light gleamed in the Elven Empress's eyes as she lifted both her hands up. A layer of greenish brilliance rose up to the sky. Immediately afterward, twelve other cloaked men standing behind her took off their cloaks respectively as twelve turquoise rays soared up at the same time to the sky. Then, all thirteen turquoise rays began to merge together and transformed into a staggering light beam that pierced upwards through the sky. A rich, intense breath of life and the Destruction Energy from the Destructive Divine Territory erupted in a unparelled violent collision.

WHAM —

The entire world quaked. To everybody's surprise, a huge hole was smashed open in the tyrannical Destructive Divine Territory. That almost endless spread of green color slowly spread apart and pitted its wits equally against the Destructive Divine Territory in a heartbeat. Under the guidance of the Elven Empress, the Natural Divine Territory that was formed together with the twelve Elven Elders was not the slightest bit inferior compared to the Destructive Divine Territory that was formed by Fen Tian, Huang Xingyun, and four other Heavenly God-tier powerhouses.

That was right! This was the Peerless Sect's trump card. Previously, when Zhou Weiqing was still at the Elven territory, he had already discussed this matter with the Elven Empress. Even supposing the extraordinary relationship between the two of them did not come to exist, the Elven Empress would still make her way here. The reason she came was because of the Lord pulling the strings behind Huang Xingyun and Fen Tian. After all, she was also one of the people involved in sealing the Nether Lord last time. How could she possibly allow the Blood Red Hell and Love Valley to do what they wished without restraint and bring the Nether Lord to the human world?

A Maximum Level Heavenly God-tier powerhouse. When the Elven Empress unleashed her Natural Divine Territory, everyone on the scene immediately felt her powerful cultivation base. Moreover, there were also four other Heavenly Gods among the twelve Elven Elders who unleashed their power at the same time with her. The remaining eight elders were also at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly Emperor Tier.

What a powerful force this was! Not only that, as it turned out they were on the Peerless Sect's side.

Other than Blood Red Hell and Love Valley, the person who was most in shock was none other than Shangguan Tianyang. The Heaven's Expanse Palace and the Elf Tribe had always maintained a

good relationship with each other. They could even be considered as allies to a certain extent. However, Shangguan Tianyang was very clear that he would never be able to invite the Elven Empress out at all. More importantly, he had seen the Elven Empress before in the past. If memory still served him right, the Elf Tribe was far less powerful than they were now. During that time, only the Elven Empress was at the Heavenly God Tier in the entire Elf Tribe. Even then, she was definitely not at the Maximum Level.

One could say that the appearance of the thirteen powerhouses from the Elf Tribe had once again turned the situation around. The momentum that was suppressed by the emergence of the two gigantic dragons had reversed entirely. Fen Tian and Huang Xingyun no longer had the upper hand.

Standing side by side with the Elven Empress, Zhou Weiqing smiled, "Your Highness, I'll leave the two dragons in the air to you. They're both my friends, and they're merely under the control of the Destruction Attribute now. Please don't hurt them. Once we've dealt with the problems here, I think I might have a way to help them regain their senses."

"Don't worry, the Dragon Tribe is a friend of the Elven Tribe, too," the Elven Empress nodded her head lightly. The look that she gave Zhou Weiqing was so gentle that most men would turn green with envy if they saw it. At the same time, the rest of the Lords of the Saint Lands could not help but be taken aback as they thought to themselves, 'What exactly is the relationship between Zhou Weiqing and the Elven Empress? He actually has a way to make her obey his orders?'

Chapter 822: One Trump Card After Another (3)

Zhou Weiqing looked at Huang Xingyun and Fen Tian provocatively, "So? Do you have any more tricks up your sleeves? Just bring them out if you have them! Let us have a look at who's stronger, you or us?!"

While Zhou Weiqing was talking, the Peerless Sect's powerhouses behind him put on their own Consolidated Equipment Sets.

The ones attracting the most attention were the three Shangguan sisters and Tian'er. All four of them actually had a cultivation base at the Heavenly Emperor Tier. Even though they were only at the Lower Level of the Heavenly Emperor Tier, how old were they?

Tian'er was wearing the exact same God Vanquishing Heavenly Spirit Set like her father. However, the golden luster that was radiating from her body was much more radiant and brilliant. It was a gold color that shone brightly like the stars — a rich, intense Saint Energy fluctuation that shared the same root as Zhou Weiqing's.

The person who was the most shocking was none other than Shangguan Xue'er. With a cultivation base at the Heavenly Emperor Tier, the Boundless Infinitum Set could be seen on her body. Although she might not be as good as Shangguan Tianyang if everything was taken into account, do not forget that Shangguan Xue'er's cultivation method was totally different from Shangguan Tianyang's. Her offensive prowess with her sharp and swift swordsmanship was superior to Shangguan Tianyang.

Shangguan Fei'er was also wearing a ten-piece Consolidated Equipment Set. It was slender and dazzling with a foot long blade at every joint. Among the three sisters, her legendary armor set that was attached to her Dual Physical Jewels appeared to be the thickest and heaviest.

Similarly, Shangguan Bing'er was wearing a ten-piece Consolidated Equipment Set as well. A greenish golden luster shone brilliantly, especially the pair of gigantic Wings of the Wind God that was so dazzling, it ravished the eyes.

The strength of the Peerless Sect was now entirely on display. Even if the Elf Tribe was not taken into consideration, the Peerless Sect had at least one Heavenly God and six Heavenly Emperors as of now. Such strength was already more than enough for them to possess the glory of a Saint Land. Not mentioning the fact that their Saint Energy had not been taken into consideration yet.

Did Fen Tian and Huang Xingyun still have any other tricks up their sleeves? Maybe they do, but it would not be a trump card that they could easily show to the public.

"Now!" Fen Tian yelled as he raised his hands high. At once, the Destructive Divine Territory that was in mid-air clashed with the Natural Divine Territory like a whirlwind, scattering wisps of clouds.

The Elven Empress remained unfazed. A turquoise-colored staff materialized in her right hand out of thin air. As she pointed the staff forward, the Natural Divine Territory suddenly spread over the sky and covered up the Earth as it transformed into an endless supply of Natural Energy and charged forward as well.

The two huge Divine Territories collided violently in mid-air. To Fen Tian's surprise, his impenetrable Divine Territory could not work its Destruction Devour ability in the face of the Elven Empress' Natural Divine Territory.

That was by no means merely Natural Attribute energy. There was no doubt that it had the Saint Energy in it as well. This was... the Life Saint Energy? A branch of the Genesis Saint Energy.

Perhaps the Life Saint Energy could not be compared to Huang Xingyun's Destruction Energy in terms of purity. However, in terms of overall strength, the Elven Empress plus the twelve Elven

Elders were much more superior than it. For this reason, when the two Divine Territories collided, none of them could gain the upper hand.

As the two Divine Territories collided head-on, the powerhouses from both sides began to make their moves as well.

Xue Ao'tian let out a faint sigh. He knew that the Heavenly Snow Mountain's foundation over thousands of years might not be able to survive today.

A huge number of powerhouses from the Blood Red Hell and Love Valley descended from Hui Yao and Duo Si's bodies. They coordinated together with the powerhouses on the ground as they charged towards the Peerless Sect, Heavenly Snow Mountain and Heaven's Expanse Palace in a frenzy.

With the addition of these latecomers, their numbers had already far exceeded the Peerless Sect, Heavenly Snow Mountain, and the Heaven's Expanse Palace. Due to the fact they all had the same Destruction Attribute, the entire world was suddenly overwhelmed with Destruction Energy with just one attack.

Long Shiya continued to take on Shen Mo. Before this, there was no victory in their previous match. This time, none of them would hold themselves back. The two of them did not want their own attacks to harm their own people. As if their minds were in sync, both of them rose up to the sky at the same time as they looked for their battlefield in the air.

Huang Xingyun and Yun Ruoyu, on the other hand, led the Love Valley's powerhouses and charged towards the Heaven's Expanse Palace. In contrast, the two gigantic dragons in the sky soared downwards and rushed at the Heavenly Snow Mountain.

"Heavenly Expanse Infinitum, Star-Lunar Rotation!" Shangguan Tianyang roared loudly with his eyes wide open. 108 Heaven's Expanse Palace's powerhouses began to move at the same time. White smoke suddenly spread out and vast energy ripples clashed

fiercely with Huang Xingyun and his wife.

The Heavenly Spirit Earthly Fiend Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation was a lot stronger than the ordinary version of the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation that was used to fight against Xue Ao'tian last time. In just one blow, they effectively blocked Huang Xingyun and his wife with brute force.

The total number of powerhouses from both Love Valley and Blood Red Hell totaled up to nearly 400 people now. On the contrary, the Heaven's Expanse Palace, Peerless Sect, and Heavenly Snow Mountain only totaled up to just about slightly over 200 people. Not to mention that this also included the Heavenly Snow Mountain's Heavenly Beast Guardians.

A turquoise light swept across in the air. The Natural Divine Territory mightily enveloped Hui Yao and Duo Si from above the sky.

Hui Yao was already at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly God Tier. After he had possessed the Destruction Energy, he naturally became even more tyrannical than before. Duo Si, on the other hand, had also made a breakthrough to the Upper Level of the Heavenly God Tier, with one foot already stepping on the threshold of the Maximum Level. In terms of strength, the two of them were not inferior to both Fen Tian and Huang Xingyun added up together.

Roar!

In a frenzied uproar, the two gigantic dragons instantly ran amok and smashed left and right in the Life Divine Territory. Within a second, the unnerving energy ripple turned the Snow Deity's Castle on the summit of Heavenly Snow Mountain into powder.

"Let us go up to the sky," the Elven Empress ordered in a deep voice. She lured the two gigantic dragons to leave the battlefield temporarily with the help of the Natural Divine Territory as she led the twelve Elven Elders and rose up to the sky at the same time.

Zhou Weiqing's judgment of the situation was extremely excellent. When Hui Yao and Duo Si first made their appearance, he could see that if the two dragons were present on the battlefield, even in a best-case scenario, the Heavenly Beast Guardians would still have their strength immensely weakened. It was unlikely that the beasts would be able to utilize their full strength in the face of the Dragon Emperor Bloodline.

For this reason, he decided to let the Elven Empress and the Elf Tribe deal with the two dragons. First, they would not be at a disadvantage in terms of bloodlines because they would not be affected by the dragon's tremendous pressure. All the same, Zhou Weiqing did not want to harm both Hui Yao and Duo Si. Only the Elves had the strength to be able to suppress them completely yet making sure that they remained unharmed.

At the same time, Zhou Weiqing also put himself in the Elf Tribe's shoes. The Elf Tribe was made up of a kind and peaceful people. They did not like killing nor did they possess actual combat experience. Therefore, even though they had a total of five Heavenly God-tier powerhouses, their actual combat ability was not that good. The Elven Empress was the only person powerful enough to join in the battle. They would most likely suffer a great loss if they had joined the battlefield up front. If that was the case, how would Zhou Weiqing be able to lift his head up in front of the Elven Empress?

Of course, now that the Elf Tribe had to go deal with the two dragons, the pressure on the battlefield had become way stronger too. The number of the powerhouses from Blood Red Hell and Love Valley had far exceeded Zhou Weiqing's initial judgment.

The Elf Tribe and the two gigantic dragons soared up to the sky. Fen Tian did not bother following them. He understood very well that the battle here on the summit of Heavenly Snow Mountain was the most important, particularly that Zhou Weiqing.

At this moment, Fen Tian finally understood. Among the three

Great Saint Lands rival, the soul of the team was not Shangguan Tianyang or Xue Ao'tian. Instead, it was Zhou Weiqing, the young Sect Leader of the Peerless Sect. He was the real leader of the other side. It was apparent that everything was under his control. Not only that, just the fact that Zhou Weiqing could make so many Elf Tribe's powerhouses obey his command undoubtedly proved his position as a leader. He would never have guessed that in truth, both Heaven's Expanse Palace and the Heavenly Snow Mountain only found out about Zhou Weiqing's trump card just a moment ago as well.

Two acutely violent and chilly beams blasted out from Fen Tian's eyes towards Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing provocatively threw a dirty look at him fearlessly. Although his cultivation base was still at the Maximum Level of Heavenly Emperor Tier and he has yet to make a breakthrough to the Heavenly God Tier, there was not an ounce of fear in him at all when facing a Maximum Level Heavenly God like Fen Tian.

Zhou Weiqing took his stance with the hammers in both his hands. He then tipped his right hammer towards Fen Tian and lustrous stars instantly burst out of his body. A spiraling nebula halo appeared and hovered above his head.

This time, the nebula spanned an area with a diameter of about five meters, and it only enveloped Zhou Weiqing alone. However, Zhou Weiqing's chest began to lit up as well when he was bathed in the mass of nebula rays. The Starcrux Saint Nucleus Core and the Astral Divine Territory echoed and responded to each other from afar. The golden Nebula Saint Energy from before gradually changed its color to a whitish-gold.

Without warning, a pure and intense Saint Energy ripple erupted out of Zhou Weiqing's body. That Saint Energy was so strong that it caused several of the Blood Red Hell's powerhouses who were charging towards him to stop abruptly in their tracks. With fear on their faces, none of them dared to take a step closer.

On the other side, horror dawned on Fen Tian's face as well. Despite the fact that there were at least several hundred meters in between the two of them, he could still clearly feel the horrifying and threatening aura that Zhou Weiqing had on him. The whitish-gold Saint Energy aura that was mixed with a little golden color emitting out of Zhou Weiqing's body brought a sense of coercion to the Destruction Energy in his body. There was no doubt — if his destruction was compared to Zhou Weiqing's creation, it was still far inferior in terms of their attributes.

Fen Tian clasped his hands together above his head. Under the shadow of his full legendary armor set, a massive scarlet sword materialized in his hands. Without any fancy moves, he slashed down towards Zhou Weiqing.

Dark purplish ray transformed into a gigantic light blade. With the innumerable gigantic Devouring Mouths in the sky as a backdrop, it sliced downwards at Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing merely scoffed. The Dual God Strength Hammers in his hands that were completely dyed in a whitish-gold color by the Nebula Saint Energy was hoisted upwards towards the sky.

With a loud bang that smashed opened a huge space in the surroundings, the dark purplish light blade shattered. Even Zhou Weiqing needed to take two steps back to stabilize himself.

The corner of his mouth lifted in slight disdain. Zhou Weiqing understood that Fen Tian was trying to use brute force to exert pressure on him. However, how could he possibly be afraid of him with the help of the pure Nebula Saint Energy?

Chapter 823: Zhou Weiqing's Other Trump Card (1)

When the Dragon-Tiger Demon God Transformation was unleashed, enormous wings unfurled on Zhou Weiqing's back. Zhou Weiqing soared up to the sky with the hammer in his left hand pointed to the sky as the wings on his back flapped violently.

The sky was the true battlefield for the Heavenly God-tier powerhouses. After all, with the constant clashes between the Heavenly God-tier powerhouses on the Heavenly Snow Mountain's peak, it would not take long before the impact of the clashes completely annihilated the Heavenly God and Heavenly King-tier powerhouses.

When Zhou Weiqing was still cultivating in the Mid-Levels of the Heavenly Emperor Tier, he had managed to forcefully resist the Elven Queen. Now that he was at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly Emperor Tier, why would he be afraid of Fen Tian? The Creation and Destruction Energies restricted one another. However, Zhou Weiqing's pure Saint Energy was a result of his own cultivation. On the other hand, Fen Tian's Destruction Energy originated from an external source. It was impossible to compete against the purity of Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy.

The entire battlefield was divided into five areas following the two individuals' ascension to the sky. The battles in the sky were divided between the Elf Tribe who was fighting against the two gigantic dragons, Long Shiya who was clashing with Shen Mo, and the leaders, Zhou Weiqing and Fen Tian who were battling each other.

Meanwhile, the pair of husband and wife from Love Valley who was at the Upper Levels of the Heavenly God Tier — Huang Xingyun, and Yun Ruoyun — were battling the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation that belonged to Heaven's Expanse

Palace on the ground. At the same time, Xue Ao'tian led the powerhouses from the Heavenly Snow Mountain and Peerless sect to confront the siege by hundreds of powerhouses from Love Valley and Blood Red Hell.

If one was to compare their actual strength, the Elf Tribe that was battling in the sky had the upper hand. However, the Dragon Tribe's combat capability was much stronger than the Elf Tribe even though they were on the same level. Moreover, the Elf Tribe had a standing order that the Elven Queen received from Zhou Weiqing to not cause harm. There was no way to determine the victor and the loser in a short time since they were at a stalemate.

Long Shiya and Shen Mo were also evenly matched. There was no way to determine the victor and the loser in such a short amount of time as well. Zhou Weiqing and Fen Tian's battle played the most crucial role in the grand scheme of things. However, victory and defeat was not something that could be determined quickly.

It could be said that all three battles in the sky required a prolonged period of time to determine victory and defeat.

Meanwhile, on the ground.

Even though the Heaven's Expanse Palace's Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation was brutal and tyrannical, Huang Xingyun and his wife had been working together their entire lives. They were both at the Upper Level of the Heavenly God Tier, and with their combined effort, they were able to completely subdue the Heaven's Expanse Palace's powerhouses even if they failed at breaking the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation.

It could be said that all four battles had reached a stalemate. The only certainty was it was a battle with the largest number of people. The battle with the largest number of people was the only battle that was showing the most apparent/obvious standards.

Even though Xue Ao'tian personally took command of the Heavenly Snow Mountain's side, the enemies' numerical strength almost exceeded theirs by four times. Moreover, all of them possessed the Destruction Attribute. The moment the enemies approached, they were completely subdued and placed in a disadvantageous position. They could only take the defensive position in face of the enemies from the Blood Red Hell and Love Valley.

After all, there were more than seventy powerhouses at the Heavenly Emperor Tier and above on the Blood Red Hell and Love Valley's corner. Meanwhile, there were only over three hundred remaining powerhouses at the Heavenly King Tier on their corner. They were capable of setting up an extremely powerful Destructive Divine Territory just by joining hands and relying on Destruction Attribute. The Heavenly Snow Mountain lost six to seven Heavenly Beasts with just one blow from them.

The combat strength of the Heavenly Snow Mountain's corner was now less than a hundred, and this included the Heavenly Beast Guardians. The Peerless Sect was even more pathetic. They were made up of a total of less than a dozen people.

The situation on the battlefield was already very apparent. As long as the people from Heavenly Snow Mountain and Peerless Sect were eliminated first, the powerhouses from Love Valley and Blood Red Hell would be able to aid Huang Xingyun and his wife. At that time, they would be invincible when facing the resistance from Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation that belonged to the Heaven's Expanse Palace. Once the battles on the ground ended, how could the battles in the sky still pose a problem? The only thing that might possibly be problematic was the Elf Tribe. However, as long as their assault force could merge together, surely the Elf Tribe would not be able to resist?

Even though Zhou Weiqing had invited so many powerhouses from the Elf Tribe, Blood Red Hell and Love Valley still had the

upper hand when the situation was viewed as a whole.

Zhou Weiqing did not expect this situation earlier. The crux of the problem laid with the Elf Tribe. The Elf Tribe's kindness and their aversion to killing stopped them from giving free reign to their actual strength. Moreover, the appearance of the pair of enormous husband and wife dragons, Hui Yao and Duo Si, was also out of Zhou Weiqing's expectation. The situation on the battlefield became complicated because of this.

Xue Ao'tian continuously waved the God Spirit Staff in his hand. He was relying on the Heavenly Spirit Divine Territory to resist the opponent's Destructive Divine Territory. Even though he was a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse, he was afraid that his army would be annihilated quickly if he yielded to the Destruction Energy.

As the former number one powerhouse in the world, Xue Ao'tian never felt as oppressed as he did now. However, there was nothing he could do. He managed to withstand it for a little longer due to Tian'er's reinforcement and assistance from her God Spirit Staff that released Saint Energy. Otherwise, just Xue Ao'tian alone would not be enough to forcefully resist the Destruction Energy that was unleashed by the 400 powerhouses on the enemy's side.

Even though the Tiger King Xue Ao'ying and the Lion King Gu Site were riding on their Heavenly Beast Guardians to offer support, the Blood Red Hell's powerhouses had evidently trained together for a very long time, making their teamwork really good. There was no chance at all for them to battle these people one on one. With their combined attacks, the Blood Red Hell somehow managed to force them into a steady retreat.

Among the Heavenly Snow Mountain and Peerless Sect, it was the dozen members of the Peerless Sect that racked up the most kills. The most apparent one was Shangguan Xue'er.

Shangguan Xue'er was attired in a Boundless Infinitum Set and her body was just like an unsheathed sharp blade.

The crystal clear armor that was on her body was like a layer of rubber, and the mist that circulated inside the armor was never in a completely solid state. The only thing that remained unchanged was the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum sword in Shangguan Xue'er's hand.

The power of the eleven piece Boundless Infinitum Set would be displayed on the battlefield soon.

With just one person and a sword, Shangguan Xue'er charged into the enemy's battle formation.

The sword went forward in the most direct way, similar to a dragon emerging out of the ocean whilst glimmering with the snowy-white color of the sword's reflection. Meanwhile, at least a dozen powerhouses from Blood Red Hell and Love Valley simultaneously launched their attacks towards Shangguan Xue'er who was charging towards them.

However, when their attacks struck Shangguan Xue'er's body, the only sensation she felt was like a vast expanse of mist enveloping her. It was as if their attacks were struck into the water and vanished without a trace. On the other hand, the terrifying sword's intent that was bursting out of Shangguan Xue'er's body claimed two Heavenly King-tier powerhouses' lives in a blink of an eye.

The Heavenly Core Nucleus that was solidified by Shangguan Xue'er was half a Saint Nucleus Core, just like her two sisters. That was why the Destruction Attribute barely caused her any damage. She had trained laboriously in swordsmanship since she was a child. The sharp energy that burst out of her powerful sword's intent was ever triumphant. Moreover, the Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouses were facing Shangguan Xue'er who was fully suited with the Boundless Infinitum Set at this moment. They would need to dodge the enemy's blunt force for now rather than confronting her forcefully.

As a result, Shangguan Xue'er was just like an alien as she moved with ease within the enemy's battle formation. The Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouses managed to counterattack or dodge her attacks with great effort. However, seven Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouses were killed by her sword in succession in just a short while. Four of the powerhouses even turned into skeletons immediately upon their death.

The Blood Red Hell and Love Valley were capable of cultivating so many Heavenly King-tier and Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouses in just a few short years. Just like those people who raided Zhou Weiqing in the beginning, more than half of the powerhouses dug out the graves of their family's ancestors and resurrected their ancestors' skeletons to help them in their battle. While these skeletons were only capable of regaining a very small portion of their living memories, most of them were only acting as killing machines.

Xue Ao'tian had learned about this situation from Tian'er earlier. However, after witnessing the scene with his own eyes, he was in a great shock. At the very least, they were all from Saint Lands. However, the Blood Red Hell and Love Valley were somehow willing to sacrifice their ancestors. This made the Mountain Lord of Heavenly Snow Mountain detest them bitterly.

Fortunately, there was Shangguan Xue'er's series of attacks. Due to that, the Heavenly Snow Mountain and Peerless Sect's powerhouses could stand steadily and gather to form a densely arranged formation to resist the enemy's attacks with great effort. The casualties from both parties were growing at an alarming rate. The Heavenly Snow Mountain's Heavenly Beasts guardians were injured the most.

What should he do? At this moment, Xue Ao'tian was filled with immense hatred in his heart. He wished that he could charge into the enemy's formation and detonate his Heavenly Core Nucleus so that he could perish together with the other parties. This was his

Heavenly Snow Mountain after all! Although the duration of the battle was short, the Heavenly Snow Mountain's peak was already in a chaotic mess. Even Snow Castle had been destroyed earlier. How could the Mountain Lord of Heavenly Snow Mountain not be infuriated by the scene?

He understood very well that it would not be an easy task for him to spontaneously self-detonate. Even if he was to do so, it was not certain that all the enemies would die, and he was afraid that no one from his side would survive. He might even extensively affect the Heaven's Expanse Palace nearby. It was impossible for him to spontaneously self-detonate. However, if the situation was to drag on continuously, it would only become more and more disadvantageous to them.

The difference between the two parties was truly too great. The enemy did not even have a single Heavenly God-tier powerhouse on their side. They could only rely on the advantage from their attribute and devote all their effort to suppress the Peerless Sect and Heavenly Snow Mountain's powerhouses like Xue Ao'tian. They could not even enter the battle. It could be said that this was the arrival of a critical moment — one of life and death.

Judging by the situation, the four battlefields were at a balanced state for now. The Elf Tribe still had the upper hand but in reality, as soon as the result on the battlefield was revealed, a chain reaction would immediately follow.

At the moment when the scales were dangerously tipped to a side, a deep and awe-inspiring dragon's roar echoed suddenly. An enormous body charged up directly next to the cliff of Heavenly Snow Mountain.

The wind was blowing wildly as the swift and fierce figure charged directly into the middle of the battlefield. As a result, Blood Red Hell and Love Valley's powerhouses at the vanguard stopped to take a look and subsequently, their attack was also temporarily halted.

It was an enormous black dragon that continuously emitted a dense aura of darkness. Xue Ao'tian's heart sank the moment he sensed the Darkness Attribute that the dragon's body emitted.

It was over. The enemy owned a black dragon, and it was a black dragon at the Heavenly God Tier. How could the battle continue with the involvement of this black dragon? They would certainly be defeated without a doubt.

Chapter 824: Zhou Weiqing's Other Trump Card (2)

The Dragon Clan were peerless beasts among the Heavenly Beasts. Even though the black dragon before his eyes did not possess the strong and powerful Dragon Emperor Bloodline, it was still an enormous dragon after all! With its strength and power, in addition to the prestige of its bloodline, the possibility of the Peerless Sect and the Heavenly Snow Mountain achieving victory in this battle was already lost.

The stench of despair burst out of Xue Ao'tian's body, even the God Vanquishing Heavenly Spirit Set on his body was emitting a layer of white misty radiance. A resolute gleam appeared in Xue Ao'tian's eyes. He was already mentally prepared. As the Mountain Lord of Heavenly Snow Mountain, he would rather die in glory than to live in dishonor. He was prepared to die on the battlefield if he could no longer resist the Destruction attribute. However, at that exact moment, Tian'er's voice suddenly echoed in his ears.

"Father, do not act recklessly. That belongs to us."

After hearing Tian'er's words, Xue Ao'tian could not help but be stunned, "What did you say? That, that belongs to us ours?"

Tian'er's expression seemed to be slightly sour, but he still nodded anyway, "Isn't this the result of that good son-in-law of yours who enjoys flirting wherever he goes?"

Xue Ao'tian was too persistent in his prejudice because of the earlier first impression. In his perception, the enemy was capable of using two enormous dragons. Naturally, there would be the possibility of a third dragon. Moreover, this was a black dragon that was emitting the Darkness Attribute. Xue Ao'tian who possessed the Divine Attribute was naturally hostile towards those creatures. That was why he instantly assumed that it was an enemy. When he heard Tian'er's words at this moment, Xue

Ao'tian took another glance at the dragon.

He saw a woman standing impressively at the front of the black dragon's head. That woman was clad in a full-black attire. She appeared rather inconspicuous because of concealment from the dense Darkness Energy from the Blackfiend Dragon earlier. Leaning against the horn of the Blackfiend Dragon's head, her exceedingly beautiful face was icy cold. One could vaguely see the firm, resolute intent of murder, as well as the arrogant prestige in her eyes.

The enormous dragon began spitting out waves of brutal and peerless dragon flames the moment it appeared on the battlefield. Even though the Blood Red Hell and Love Valley's powerhouses were united and unafraid, this was still an unexpected attack. Moreover, it was an attack from a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse. They had no choice but to fall back rapidly as they resisted the onslaught together.

The person who was riding the black dragon, rushing her way towards the battlefield during the most crucial moment — could she be Zhou Weiqing's lover who was attracted to him from the Mysterious Heavenly Mainland, Dongfang Hanyue?

Yes. Though it may be surprising, she was Zhou Weiqing's other trump card. In other words, she was his other trump card when he no longer had any alternatives.

It was not that long ago when Dongfang Hanyue arrived on the Boundless Mainland riding the Blackfiend Dragon. She found Zhou Weiqing through the Saint Energy connection she made with him and the assistance from the Blackfiend Dragon.

This was the reason why Zhou Weiqing's soulmates were looking at him sourly earlier. Shangguan Bing'er was the only person who was aware of the relationship between Zhou Weiqing and Dongfang Hanyue. On the other hand, the rest of the women had no idea. Now that the other party had found her way to his door, it

was no wonder they were unhappy.

Because the Saint Lands' Great Battle was about to begin, Zhou Weiqing did not have the time to explain. As a result, he was deserted by his lovers. He did not even have the right to blame Dongfang Hanyue. After all, this was caused by his inability to suppress his lustful desires.

The reason Dongfang Hanyue came looking for Zhou Weiqing was simple. She needed to inform Zhou Weiqing of a matter that made him stare at her bewilderment. He had no choice but to accept the fact that she was here.

Dongfang Hanyue explained to Zhou Weiqing that she gave birth to his son recently. Yes, it was just that one time. He hit the target with one shot and was blessed by fate. Dongfang Hanyue became pregnant with Zhou Weiqing's child. The child stayed behind on the Mysterious Heavenly Mainland and became the next successor to the Mysterious Heavenly Mainland. Dongfang Hanyue's purpose for this trip was very simple. She was there to propose her terms to Zhou Weiqing. The child could not grow up without a father so she requested for Zhou Weiqing to live on the Mysterious Heavenly Mainland for a month from each year to accompany her and his son hereafter.

As the Palace Master of the Mysterious Heavenly Palace, Dongfang Hanyue had an unyielding temperament since the beginning. In addition to her proposed term that would forcibly usurp Zhou Weiqing for a month every year, it was natural that she would not have a good relationship with Tian'er, the three Shangguan sisters, and Little Witch.

The outcome of the situation was that the unfortunate Zhou Weiqing was directly banished to solitude. The few days before he came to the Heavenly Snow Mountain to take part in the Saint Land's Great Battle, all the women had ignored him.

Even though Dongfang Hanyue did not have a close relationship

with the other women, she followed them as well when she learned that Zhou Weiqing's trip to the Heavenly Snow Mountain's peak this time would possibly result in him fighting a battle to the death. Naturally, she would not make an entrance beforehand. She refused to mingle with Tian'er and the rest. During the crucial moment, she was finally willing to make a move. Despite being extremely infuriated by Zhou Weiqing's unfaithfulness, she could still clearly distinguish what was important to her.

Dongfang Hanyue inhaled deeply and a rush of ample, powerful energy suddenly erupted from her body. In a flash, streaks upon streaks of dark golden-colored lights radiated out of her body continuously as she instantly entered the Blackfiend Dragon Transformation state.

Dongfang Hanyue had the Blackfiend Dragon's lineage in her body that was why her Blackfiend Dragon Transformation had some specific difference from Zhou Weiqing's Dragon-Tiger Demon God Transformation. However, the greatest advantage of the Blackfiend Dragon Transformation was that she could perfectly merge herself with the Blackfiend Dragon to enter combat together. In this sense, even the Heavenly Snow Mountain's powerhouses who were riding on the Heavenly Beasts could not compare to her.

Two enormous wings unfurled and spread out from Dongfang Hanyue's back. The legendary armor set she once showed off to Zhou Weiqing was attired on her body.

Dark golden-colored emerged one after another on her body. In just a short while, six pieces of her armor were already completed. The seventh piece was the helmet. Her helmet was like a dragon's mouth. Although it did not appear femininely beautiful, it was filled with a powerful mannerism that concealed her charming facial features.

Now that seven pieces of the legendary armor set were complete, the appearance of the eighth piece followed closely. The eighth

piece of armor extended from her waist. Within the intense dark golden-colored light, the eighth piece of armor merged with the Blackfiend Dragon's horn behind her back. It firmly anchored her body to the upper part of the Blackfiend Dragon's head. Surprisingly, the dark golden-colored armor turned downwards all the way to merge with the Blackfiend Dragon's head.

A layer of terrifying aura from the Darkness Attribute erupted from the Blackfiend Dragon's body. The dense Darkness Energy surged wildly into Dongfang Hanyue's body through the horn.

The ninth streak of dark golden-colored light appeared at this moment. This time, the armor appeared directly on the Blackfiend Dragon's body. The dark golden-colored armor extended out from the bottom of Meng Xing's feet and firmly anchored her feet to the top of the Blackfiend Dragon's head. The armor extended downwards along the Blackfiend Dragon's neck and covered the lower region of the Blackfiend Dragon's neck that was the most vital part. The armor continued to extend all the way until the Blackfiend Dragon's entire neck was covered completely.

Yes, this was Dongfang Hanyue's Blackfiend Dragon Set. She had relied on this armor set's ability to work together with the Blackfiend Dragon to forcefully defeat the Dreadfiend Sea Naga previously.

On the other hand, she was no longer comparable to her past self. Even Dongfang Hanyue did not expect that there would be a pure seed of Saint Energy in her body just because she was pregnant with Zhou Weiqing's child. From the moment she gave birth to the child, her cultivation base was forcefully elevated from the Maximum Level of the Heavenly Emperor Tier to the Lower Level of the Heavenly God Tier.

The combination of Dongfang Hanyue and the Blackfiend Dragon who were both similarly at the Lower Level of the Heavenly God Tier was not as simple as one plus one equals two!

The tenth streak of the dark golden-colored light glowed once again. This time, the dark golden-colored light was glowing from the top of Meng Xing's head. The Blackfiend Dragon gave out a melodious sound of dragon's roar in accordance. The loud and powerful dragon's roar made the Blood Red Hell and Love Valley's powerhouses in the surroundings fall back in succession. The energy fluctuation generated from the merging of two great Heavenly Gods was truly too terrifying. A streak of enormous dragon-shaped shadows that was thousands of miles long appeared indistinctly in the sky. Due to the fact that it was black in color, it did not appear to be eye-catching when compared to the surroundings of the Destruction Divine Territory. However, it genuinely existed. This was the Blackfiend Dragon's Divine Territory that was unleashed when the Blackfiend Dragon joined forces with Dongfang Hanyue.

Following that was the eleventh streak of dark golden-colored light that glowed from her body.

A gigantic, long spear glowing in a dark golden-color was suspended before her face. The full length of the long spear was seven meters. It was thick and strong in the middle, tapered to sharp and fine tips on both ends and was entirely black. Two enormous coiling dragons were engraved on the surface. There was a bright red pearl at the convergence point of the two enormous dragons that was positioned at the midpoint of the spear's body.

In the next moment, Dongfang Hanyue wrapped her right hand around the pearl that was at the midpoint of the long spear.

Bzzt!

An absolutely terrifying aura erupted in a wave from the Blackfiend Dragon and Dongfang Hanyue's body.

A red color light as bright as blood almost replaced all the dark golden-colored lights in a blink of an eye. Blood red-colored long

spear and blood red-colored armor. Even the Blackfiend Dragon's horn had been similarly turned into a blood red color.

It was completed. The eleven pieces of the Blackfiend Dragon Set was finally completed. The eleven-piece Boundless Infinitum Set paled in comparison the moment the Blackfiend Dragon Set appeared. It was not that the Boundless Infinitum Set was no match for the Blackfiend Dragon Set. However, the strength of the armor depended on the strength of the wearer as well. Only a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse was capable of truly displaying this divine armor set's power!

The Blackfiend Devastation Dragon Slaying Spear in Dongfang Hanyue's hand connected the dots in the sky. Ten streaks of blood red light descended from the sky, which was then followed by ten puffs of bloody mist that exploded in mid-air. The first ten powerhouses from the Blood Red Hell and Love Valley did not even have the chance to defend against the terrifying Blackfiend Devastation Dragon Slaying Spear as they turned into bloody mist in a blink of an eye.

Dongfang Hanyue was utterly unafraid of the Destruction Divine Territory because she had been similarly injected with Saint Energy by Zhou Weiqing. Moreover, the Blackfiend Dragon's Divine Territory was spinning in mid-air as it forcibly tore open a gigantic breach in the Destruction Divine Territory.

It could be said that Dongfang Hanyue was the strongest person from Zhou Weiqing's corner who appeared on the battlefield today, with the exception of the Elven Empress. Furthermore, Dongfang Hanyue was not as merciful as the Elf Tribe. As the Palace Master of the Mysterious Heavenly Palace, she was absolutely resolute to kill. As long as the person was an enemy, he would only have one ending in her hands.

Chapter 825: Zhou Weiqing's Other Trump Card (3)

When Zhou Weiqing's other trump card appeared on her own accord when he had no other alternatives, the initially adverse circumstances on the scene turned around in a flash. Although Dongfang Hanyue only came with a dragon, they were capable of competing against a Maximum Level Heavenly God-tier powerhouse when they merged together with the help of the eleven piece Blackfiend Dragon Set. On the other hand, there was no other Heavenly God-tier powerhouse on Love Valley and Blood Red Hell's side. Who else was capable of fighting against Dongfang Hanyue?

When there was no other possible alternative, the forty Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouses separated themselves from Blood Red Hell and Love Valley to besiege Dongfang Hanyue. Only then did the slaughtering speed of her Blackfiend Devastation Dragon Slaying Spear slow down.

"Kill..." Dongfang Hanyue's arrival greatly reduced Xue Ao'tian's stress, he no longer needed to devote all his effort to resist the Destruction Divine Territory. The Mountain Lord of Heavenly Snow Mountain could finally immerse himself in the battle.

In terms of quantity, there were less than a hundred people on their side, while the enemy still had almost four hundred powerhouses. However, the battle was no longer leaning to one side due to the existence of the three Heavenly God-tier powerhouses on their side. It was difficult to gauge which side would be victorious or defeated. Due to the terrifying lethality of the Blackfiend Devastation Dragon Slaying Spear in Dongfang Hanyue's hand, the scales of victory was tipping in favor of the Heavenly Snow Mountain and the Peerless Sect's side.

Xue Ao'tian was the only Heavenly God-tier powerhouse who was

involved the previous Saint Lands' Great Battle. However, this time there were already more than ten Heavenly God-tier powerhouses on the Heavenly Snow Mountain's peak alone!

The battlefield on this side calmed down. On the other side, the pair of siblings, Shangguan Tianyang and Shangguan Tianyue, led the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation and fought against the husband and wife, Huang Xingyun and Yun Ruoyun like a raging fire.

In terms of cultivation base, Huang Xingyun and Yun Ruoyun obviously had the upper hand. However, they seemed to be in a disadvantageous position based on the situation at the battlefield now.

The Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation could be used as the ultimate fail-safe for the Heaven's Expanse Palace, but it was not an easy task. Even without a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse to assume command, the Heaven's Expanse Palace was capable of sitting on the number one throne amongst the Five Great Saint Lands. They were definitely not just relying on their luck.

Huang Xingyun and his wife felt as if they were one once the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation was launched. No matter which direction they attacked, they would be greeted with the combined energy of 108 Heaven's Expanse Palace's powerhouses.

The siblings Shangguan Tianyang and Shangguan Tianyue were at the eye of the formation in the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation. The Destruction Divine Territory was completely useless in the face of this great formation. This was one of the distinctive features of the great formation. It was capable of shielding against any Divine Territory's effect.

Even though Heavenly God-tier powerhouses were strong, if Huang Xingyun and Yun Ruoyun were to launch an attack against the great formation, the attack would be weakened by half in the

formation. Subsequently, the force of the attack would be equally shared among the Heaven's Expanse Palace powerhouses. They would then rely on the profoundness of the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation to dissolve the attack with ease.

On the other hand, the great formation did not attack Huang Xingyun and Yun Ruoyun. However, every time the dull white-colored mist swept past their bodies, they would feel the fatal sensation of a threat that left the husband and wife with no choice but to use the full force of their Heavenly Energy so they could counterattack.

The Upper-Level Heavenly God-tier powerhouses were considered superior beings in the world. Nonetheless, there was still a limit to the Heavenly Energy in their bodies. The act of continuously depleting their energy would weaken their cultivation base. Due to the fact that the Heaven's Expanse Palace's powerhouses were relying on the rotation of the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation to form a miraculous energy circulation, their level of depletion was much lower compared to Huang Xingyun and his wife.

If Huang Xingyun was given another choice, he would rather face Zhou Weiqing than to trap himself within this Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation. The feeling of not being able to exert his energy was truly too agonizing. Moreover, there was nothing he could do even if he wished to pull himself away from the great formation. Within this wide expanse of the mist-covered great formation, even his Divine Thought was incapable of charging out of the formation due to his inability to sense everything that was happening in the outside world.

"The Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation that Xue Ao'tian faced in the beginning was not as strong as this one, right?" Huang Xingyun complained in his heart, but he could only hope that the other battles would end soon so they could help him. Although he could not break out of the formation with his wife, he

could clearly sense that this Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation was already at its limit with their two-person attack. If only one more Heavenly God-tier powerhouse were to join in, they would certainly be able to break out of the formation.

Huang Xingyun's situational judgment towards the Heavenly Snow Mountain was rather accurate. In his opinion, their side should definitely have the upper hand in at least two battlefields.

On one side, there were the main forces of the other two parties who were competing against each other in terms of quantity, actual strength, and attribute advantage. He believed that the battle on that side would end momentarily. The other side's advantage naturally came from Fen Tian. Huang Xingyun was well aware of Fen Tian's actual strength. A Maximum Level Heavenly God-tier powerhouse versus that lad from the Peerless Sect. He ought to be able to deal with him within a few short moments. At that time, as long as Fen Tian was willing to help Huang Xingyun, the battle on this side would also naturally end in the shortest time.

"Xingyun, we should conserve some of our Heavenly Energy." Yun Ruoyun's voice echoed in Huang Xingyun's ears.

Huang Xingyun nodded. The husband and wife held each other's hands as the distorted darkness radiance continuously spun around their bodies. Even though they were trapped in the great formation that resulted in their inability to absorb the outside world's energy attribute to replenish themselves, the Heavenly Energy that was generated from their bodies would last them for a long period of time with their cultivation base.

The siblings Shangguan Tianyang and Shangguan Tianyue had been calmly observing Huang Xingyun husband and wife all along. When they realized that the husband and wife were completely on the defensive, the two siblings could not help but smile.

They had the best understanding of the essence of the Heavenly

Expanse Infinitum Great Formation. The great formation was almost perfect in a manner of speaking. It was impossible to breach the formation no matter how it was attacked. It would only be possible to break out of the formation if the absolute energy of everyone combined exceeded the great formation by at least three times. All the laws were futile within this great formation, and the use of Divine Territory was forbidden as well.

However, the only weakness of the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation was that its offensive ability was too weak. With Huang Xingyun and his wife's actual strength, even if they were not on a complete defensive stance, the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation had no way of truly harming them. If it was truly as such then the entire situation would be reversed. The effort to sustain the great formation still required an amount of energy to be depleted. As long as Huang Xingyun and his wife could continue to resist, the people from Heaven's Expanse Palace would eventually exhaust their Heavenly Energy.

It was easy to say that. However, under the threat of being killed at any given time within this great formation, who would dare to forsake resistance and allow them to attack as they pleased? Moreover, this weakness was only aimed specifically towards the Heavenly God-tier powerhouses. Huang Xingyun and his wife did not have the courage to forsake their defensive efforts. This was their destiny. Even though the battlefield on this side was meant to last the longest, it was also the one that appeared the calmest.

The two battlefields on the ground had regained its balance once again. Meanwhile, the three battlefields in the sky were a different sight altogether.

The battle between the Six Ultimate Heavenly God Long Shiya and the Blood Red Hell's Vice Lord Shen Mo could only be described as a volatile situation.

In terms of cultivation base, Shen Mo had the advantage. Meanwhile, in terms of control of Heavenly Energy, it was

apparent that Long Shiya had the upper hand. If they were to continue the fighting the battle, the end result would only be detrimental to the both of them.

However, they did not continue the battle. They stopped in the middle before they started the battle once again. This time, they were competing against the energy restored by both parties earlier.

Long Shiya's enormous body was conjured up in the sky once again. However, he was only 100 meters tall this time. Although his Heavenly Energy seemed to become even more condensed and was denser, it was still incomparable to the larger body that he conjured up earlier.

On Shen Mo's side, there was a gigantic devouring mouth that was continuously launching wild attacks at Long Shiya. He resented the people from Peerless Sect. Shen Bu was murdered by Zhou Weiqing. There was no way he could make peace with that.

The two parties were both Heavenly God-tier powerhouses. Naturally, they had an accurate judgment of the earlier battle. Shen Mo was well aware of his current situation. Even though he was slightly injured to the point that his cultivation base was affected, he had the opinion that Long Shiya should be more severely affected because his Divine Thought depleted a lot of energy. Divine Thought was even more difficult to restore than injuries. It was impossible for Long Shiya to recover in such a short period of time. This could be obviously seen in the battle. Long Shiya's Divine Thought was only capable of controlling his hundred-meter-tall body right now.

Any defeat or victory across any of the five battlefields was enough to affect the overall situation. Shen Mo was even more optimistic than Huang Xinyun. In his opinion, they were only on the losing side in the battle between the Elf Tribe and the two enormous dragons, while they had the advantage in the rest of the battlefields. He wished that he could use the fastest speed to destroy Long Shiya who was running low on Divine Thought so he

could go all out and kill everyone. Only the sight of fresh blood could wash away the rage in his heart.

Everything before his eyes seemed to be developing according to his wish. Under his violent attacks, Long Shiya had absolutely no way to come up with a good counterattack. This was due to the Destruction Divine Territory being restrained by the Elf Tribe's Natural Divine Territory to a certain extent. Shen Mo could go all out on his attack because Long Shiya was completely on the defensive. Every time a gush of energy was torn away from Long Shiya's hundred-meter-tall body, his body size would shrink by a few sizes. It seemed like it was only a matter of time before Shen Mo would achieve victory.

The battle between the Elf Tribe and the two enormous dragons were occupying the largest area in the sky. The Elven Empress was standing in the formation and became the main restraining energy.

Although the Natural Divine Territory Great Formation that the Elf Tribe's twelve elders cast with great effort were capable of limiting Hui Yao and Duo Si, the two enormous dragons were truly too powerful. The dragons became even more terrifying after they came to possess the Destructive Attribute. In terms of cultivation base, Hui Yao was even more superior than Fen Tian.

If they were to truly charge and attack at full force, it was very likely that even this great formation would be incapable of trapping them.

It seemed like there were as many as five Heavenly God-tier powerhouses on the Elf Tribe's side. However, in reality, those four Elf Tribe elders had only just advanced to the Heavenly God Tier recently. Hui Yao could easily eliminate them if the Elven Empress was not around.

However, the current Elf Tribe now was no longer the same one that existed in the Sealed Land. The evolution of the Ancient Elven

Tree resulted in the evolution of the Elven Queen into the Elven Empress. How could she be so easily dealt with?

The Elven Empress was actually on the same level as the Dragon Emperor of ancient times!

Chapter 826: Zhou Weiqing Versus Fen Tian

(1 | 2 | 3)

The Elven Empress who was in the Natural Divine Territory Great Formation did not look that powerful. Although she was around a hundred meters tall when she when she took the form of the Goddess of Nature, she was still not as enormous as Duo Si. However, the Natural Divine Territory was like an iron plate due to her presence.

Although Hui Yao and Duo Si had lost control of their senses, the thousands of years of experience in battle that they had was deeply ingrained. They would be able to find the weakest spot of the Natural Divine Territory as soon as they attacked. Meanwhile, the Elven Empress levitated in midair as she continuously waved the Goddess Nature Staff. Rays and rays of jade green light spread out, protecting their bodies that were vulnerable to the impact.

If it was a one-on-one battle, the Elven Empress would definitely suffer severe injuries if she attempted to defeat Hui Yao. However, it was not a one-on-one battle at the moment. With the help from the Elf Tribe's twelve elders and other factors, Hui Yao and Duo Si would not be able to come within a hundred meters of the Elven Empress even if they were to attack her together.

Each ray of the jade green light shone on the two enormous dragons' bodies. The rich Destruction Attribute on their bodies retreated a little from the suppression. Even a portion of it was separated and then dissolved by the Natural Divine Territory. The Elven Empress could not be compared to her former self after she finally understood the principles of the Life Saint Energy. Although it might seem like she had only upgraded from the Upper Level of the Heavenly God Tier to the Maximum Level of the Heavenly God Tier, her abilities had been elevated a few folds in reality.

Zhou Weiqing had previously said that the Elven Empress might be an invincible entity in this world unless he managed to advance to the Heavenly God Tier to suppress the Elven Empress' attribute. However, this estimation did not take the merging of the Elven Empress and the Ancient Elven Tree into consideration.

Ever since the Ancient Elven Tree evolved, the entire Elf Tribe became rather powerful. That was how the four Elf Tribe elders could advance to the Heavenly God Tier or it would be impossible for them to experience such a breakthrough. At this moment, the Natural Divine Territory was effectively restraining the attack by the two enormous dragons while it continuously defended the Elven Empress. Although their situation was different from Huang Xingyun and his wife who could not even see what was happening outside, they were trapped even deeper. The Elven Empress' attack could not compare to the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Formation. Natural Aura was mixed with rich Life Saint Energy but the lights that shone on the two enormous dragons could not really harm them, though it could efficiently remove the Destruction Energy in their bodies. If that persisted, the abilities of the two enormous dragons would be weakened. Moreover, Zhou Weiqing might not even need to do anything because it seemed like the Elven Empress' Life Saint Energy was enough to help the dragons regain their senses.

Although the Elven Empress was executing everything calmly, she did not look too good. She would occasionally display a worried expression on her face as she glanced every so often at the battle that was happening on the other side. Even though she had restrained Hui Yao and Duo Si at the moment, the power of the two enormous dragons surpassed her expectation. Due to that, the Elf Tribe was not able to assist Zhou Weiqing. Zhou Weiqing was currently facing Fen Tian! That person was the true mastermind after all, how could the Elven Empress not worry?

Even since she and Zhou Weiqing shared a life, Zhou Weiqing's

importance had risen to quite a high position in her heart. She definitely did not wish for Zhou Weiqing to experience any danger. This distracted her as she glanced at the battle between Zhou Weiqing and Fen Tian. As soon as Zhou Weiqing was in any danger, she would head over there to help immediately.

However, did Zhou Weiqing truly need her help? After a short moment of observation, an expression of astonishment and disbelief appeared on the Goddess of Nature's face that the Elven Empress had transformed into. Among the five battles on the battlefield, the battle with the biggest disparity was not the ones that were fought on the ground. Instead, it was the battle between Zhou Weiqing and Fen Tian that was being fought in the air. One was at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly God Tier while the other only possessed a cultivation base at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly Emperor Tier. The difference in each rank above the Heavenly King Tier was like heaven and earth. Taking that into account, Zhou Weiqing and Fen Tian were four ranks apart.

If Fen Tian was fighting a regular Maximum Level Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse, he would definitely say that he would only need a second to crush the person to death. However, his opponent at the moment was Zhou Weiqing so he had to be cautious. Fen Tian stared coldly at Zhou Weiqing as he ascended to the sky. Neither one of them took the initiative to attack first. In Fen Tian's opinion, Zhou Weiqing's unpredictability posed the biggest threat. He had no idea what Zhou Weiqing's most powerful ability was. Based on the fact that he managed to defeat two Heavenly Emperors even though he was only at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly Emperor Tier, he was not someone who was as simple as a regular Maximum Level Heavenly Emperor. Fen Tian grew even more cautious when the gigantic wings unfurled on Zhou Weiqing's back, his eyes filled with a demonic glow.

On the surface, Fen Tian's character seemed to be extremely violent. However, he was actually a very cautious person. He

would not attack if he did not have absolute confidence. To put it simply, he was not the type to take unnecessary risks.

The Astral Divine Territory that was hovering above Zhou Weiqing's head made the glow of the white Saint Energy on his body even more dazzling.

"Fen Tian, I can't believe that all of you are sacrificing your ancestors for your personal desire. I shall bring you to justice as a Sect Master."

Fen Tian glared coldly at Zhou Weiqing, "Ancestors are just skeletons if they stayed in their coffins. I've given them the opportunity to be reborn. They should thank me. Though I do admit, I've underestimated you. If only I took you seriously earlier, I would've killed you before you became this powerful and things wouldn't have to be so troublesome. I didn't expect that the one who's obstructing my way at the very end isn't the Heavenly Snow Mountain or the Heavenly Expanse Palace but you, the leader of the so-called Peerless Sect. However, do you really think you can take me on fairly with just your abilities alone?"

Zhou Weiqing chuckled, "Since you think I'm no match for you, why don't you attack me now? What're you afraid of? I've seen through you, Fen Tian. You're actually an indecisive person. If I was you, I wouldn't have even waited until now to attack. I would've used all of my power to attack a Saint Land. However, you've only been waiting for the opportunity to suppress the compromise between the Heavenly Expanse Palace and Heavenly Snow Mountain. You're afraid that they'd cause you a huge loss. Oh, that isn't right. That's not the only thing that you're afraid of. Perhaps your ambition isn't as simple as ruling the world. Perhaps Huang Xingyun is your obstacle, maybe even the master pulling your strings has become your target as well. It's very possible that a mad dog like you would bite your master."

"Shut up." Fen Tian's expression changed and his eyes were ferocious. He pointed the heavy sword in his hand at Zhou

Weiqing, and a terrifying aura of suppression made Zhou Weiqing unable to speak. Fen Tian's body gave off a purplish-black glow in a frenzy, and a gigantic devouring mouth rose behind him at the same time. The difference between that mouth and Shen Mo's was that there was a faint, gigantic black shadow within the mouth. The shadow seemed to be in the form of an enormous black crab.

A wave of purplish-black light darted out and surrounded his heavy sword as a domineering Destruction Aura shot and shined towards Zhou Weiqing. At the same time, Fen Tian's body was expanding together with the wind, and he expanded to a thousand meters in height in an instant. The gigantic devouring mouth and the black shadow merged with Fen Tian's expanded body while the crab's shadow was imprinted on his chest.

This was the reason why the Elven Empress' expression changed when she saw that — this was the difference between cultivation bases. At that moment, Fen Tian was releasing the Destruction God. The overbearing Destruction Aura seemed like it was going to tear the heavens and earth apart. Even the Natural Divine Territory that the Elven Empress and the twelve Elven Elders had unleashed shrank due to the suppression of the Destructive Divine Territory since the Destruction God appeared. One could imagine how powerful Fen Tian was at that moment.

Although Shen Mo could release his Destructive Divine Territory as well, the difference similar to an adult and a child when compared to Fen Tian. The Maximum Level of the Heavenly God Tier was just a step away from an entirely different realm. Among the crowd, there were two individuals who were at the same level. One was the Elven Empress and the other was Fen Tian. Even the enormous dragon Hui Yao was very far away from this level.

That was true ability, the abilities of a true powerhouse. The heavy sword in Fen Tian's hand expanded following his body. The purplish-black glow on the gigantic heavy sword completely sealed everything around Zhou Weiqing, including his Astral Divine

Territory. The terrifying energy wave seemed like it could smash him into powder.

As Fen Tian's opponent, Zhou Weiqing's felt the most intense emotions. The Destruction Energy felt like it was going to tear off his Astral Divine Territory. The terrifying energy wave was moving frenziedly in the air, resulting in Zhou Weiqing being unable to breathe. Fen Tian was furious. The threat that Zhou Weiqing posed made him unleash his most powerful ability. One could only imagine how the Natural Divine Territory could not be compared to the power of the Destructive God in the Destructive Divine Territory any longer. If the Elven Empress did not have the help of the Ancient Elven Tree, it would be impossible to go against Fen Tian under such circumstances.

What should Zhou Weiqing do? The appearance of the Destruction God had caused the battles on the ground to slow down. Countless eyes were trained on the sky, and the powerhouses from Love Valley and Blood Red Hell's had a hint of ferocity in their eyes, their morale flying high. Meanwhile, the powerhouses from the Peerless Sect, Heavenly Snow Mountain, and Heavenly Expanse Palace were clearly stunned. All of them understood that as soon as Zhou Weiqing who was in the air was defeated, it would mean the end of everything once the Destruction God descends from the heavens.

However, right at that very moment, Zhou Weiqing's eyes suddenly lit up. The demonic glow in his eyes shone while the Astral Divine Territory was rapidly shrinking. It then transformed into a cloud of light and flew towards Zhou Weiqing. When it arrived before Zhou Weiqing, it was only the size of a palm. The Astral Divine Territory advanced slowly as it fastened itself on the Starcrux Saint Nucleus Core on Zhou Weiqing's chest before it quietly merged with it. Suddenly, Zhou Weiqing's entire body lit up. Whitish-gold starlight was surging out and supported the territory that belonged to it within the destructive glow by force.

At that moment, Zhou Weiqing's eyes turned gray. He retracted the Dual God Strength Hammers in his hands as a rich gray color instantly emitted out from his right leg. He shot up into the sky like a cloud of black smoke as the whitish-gold starlight surrounded him. Zhou Weiqing's body vanished, and similar to before, a gigantic shadow that also grew to a thousand meters tall appeared in the sky instantly. It was in no way weaker than the Destruction God before them. It had an extremely handsome and a pale face with a pair of gray eyes. In the middle of its forehead, was a fine vein that stretched to the area between its brows. The gigantic shadow was giving off a demonic aura.

Demon God. Yes — this was the Demon God. Zhou Weiqing could not claim a Divine Territory on his own so it was impossible for him to summon the god from his own attribute like Fen Tian. However, it should not be forgotten that he possessed the power of the Demon God in his blood, and the Demon God was also one of the most powerful gods. The Demon God appeared, and with Zhou Weiqing's Nebula Saint Energy, it forcefully broke through the seal from the Destruction God with its overwhelming demonic aura and swelled abruptly.

The Demon God's body was very distinct, and it seemed like it was an entity by itself. If it was not for the fact that not many people that knew Zhou Weiqing only had a cultivation base at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly Emperor Tier, they would think that both the Demon God and Destruction God were on the same level. The manifestation of the Destruction God bore a resemblance to Fen Tian's looks as it sparkled with a rich purplish-black glow. Even its eyes were shining with a purplish-black light. Its hair was a devilish purplish, and it was filled with a ruthless aura.

Meanwhile, on the other side, the Demon God that Zhou Weiqing transformed into clearly did not look like him. It had a gray robe covering its entire body while its gray eyes were filled with endless

pride. Intense disdain gleamed in its eyes as he looked at the Destruction God before him. The two, thousand-meter tall giants faced each other in the air while they released the powerful aura that only gods possessed. The powerhouses from the Heavenly Snow Mountain and Peerless Sect who were in slight despair saw hope again. Although they had no idea how Zhou Weiqing managed to do it, at the very least they now had a powerhouse who could fight the opponent.

Surprisingly, there was a human-like smile on the extremely handsome Demon God's face. In accordance with his odd character, it gave off a demonic yet mysterious feel. Although he was smiling, his gray eyes were filled with extreme coldness.

"Fen Tian, show me how much of God's power your Destruction God wields."

At that moment, the person who was most shocked was Fen Tian. What was a God? It was an entity that completely surpassed the humans. It was a powerful entity that could control the heavens and earth. Naturally, the Destruction God that Fen Tian transformed into was not an actual god. If he could transform into a real god, then he would not only be on the Heavenly God Tier but at the legendary Heavenly Change Tier instead. One could only transform into a god when one achieved the Heavenly Change Tier. If that was the case, how could he still be controlled by his master?

Therefore, the Destruction God was just an imitation that he created by combining his own Destruction Energy and Destructive Divine Territory. Although it was just an imitation, Fen Tian could faintly feel its level and the power of the Heavenly Change Tier. Due to that, he could clearly feel that the Demon God that Zhou Weiqing transformed into was an entity that was on the same level!

Fen Tian knew very well that it was not Zhou Weiqing's actual body. However, even though it was not Zhou Weiqing's actual

body, based on the fact that he could summon the Demon God here meant that Fen Tian was on the losing end in terms of the purity of the gods they summoned. 'How did he manage to do it? How exactly did he do it?' Fen Tian had questions in his heart but it did not matter because the battle had to go on.

Just like what Zhou Weiqing said, Fen Tian's character was slightly indecisive. Fen Tian was a little scared when he faced the overbearing Demon God. Moreover, he could sense its powerful aura that was as vast as the starry night. As he lifted up the gigantic sword in his hand, the rich purplish-black glow turned the sky behind his back into a purplish-black color. However, he got into a defensive stance.

On the other side, the Demon God that Zhou Weiqing transformed into did not move as well. It was just standing there quietly as its gray eyes gave off a demonic glow that shone in all directions. The overbearing force of suppression had forced out a path from the Destructive Divine Territory on his side. It did not affect the Natural Divine Territory nor did it look after the powerhouses from the Love Valley and Blood Red Hell. It was not Zhou Weiqing's first time summoning the Demon God. However, there was no doubt the control he had on the Demon God would rise significantly each time he summoned it. Zhou Weiqing only managed to summon a faint consciousness of the Demon God during his first try and the instant protection of the Demon God during his second try. This time, he managed to summon an actual projection of the Demon God. Moreover, it was projected with the part of the abilities of the actual Demon God.

That was how powerful Zhou Weiqing was. The greatness of Saint Energy was boundless, and it allowed him to unleash the power of his bloodline to the highest degree. It was neither possible for Zhou Weiqing to release the actual Demon God, nor was it possible for him to actually become a Demon God. However, he could use the Demon God's power in his battle. Although he had

no idea how long this Demon God that he summoned would last, this was the only way to defend against Fen Tian at the moment.

Fen Tian who was a thousand meters tall at the moment, let out a ferocious roar as the terrifying purplish-black light suddenly soared upward. Like countless waves, they hit the gray sky on the Demon God's side. Flashes of purplish-black light transformed into gigantic devouring mouths that were in a frenzy as they tore and destroyed the Demonic Energy in the air.

The Demon God finally moved, and there was a hint of anger on his handsome face. He seemed to be really agitated by Fen Tian. He lifted his hand slowly and the Destructive Energy before him, approximately tens of thousands of meters in the sky completely solidified from the Demon God lifting its hand. The Demon God clenched his right fist tightly as a gigantic crack that traveled tens of thousands of meters in the sky appeared just like that. All the Destruction Energy that was shot at it at the beginning vanished, as the gigantic crack appeared that seemed to tear the sky in half. When the Demonic Energy appeared like a domineering storm with rolling clouds, the Destruction Energy that initially suppressed the Demon God's side was instantly devoured.

Fen Tian widened his eyes in shock as two beams of purplish-black light shot out from his eyes. What did it do? Did the Demon God just devour his Destruction Energy? How was this possible? Could Destruction Energy even be devoured? The Demon God would definitely not be able to devour the Destruction Energy if Fen Tian possessed true Destruction Energy, one that could destroy the world. Unfortunately, his Destruction Energy was similar to Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy. There were impurities in it, and his Destruction Energy was not as pure as Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy. One could imagine how powerful the Demon God was judging by his Devour ability. Moreover, Zhou Weiqing was supporting the Devour Skill with his Saint Energy, causing even the Destruction Energy was devoured by the terrifying Demonic

Energy.

Based on Zhou Weiqing's current cultivation base, apart from summoning the Demon God, he would not be able to even release one attack from the Demon God under regular circumstances. What he depended on was Saint Energy! Put simply, if one was to describe Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy, it would be described as a form of impure Genesis Energy. Humans and most gods were fatally attracted to Genesis Energy. Of course, the Destruction God was an exception because it was an entity that was the exact opposite of Genesis Energy.

Therefore, Zhou Weiqing could borrow the Demonic Energy from the Demon God that he summoned and projected here. The Demon God's actual body could gain Saint Energy from Zhou Weiqing even though its location was unknown. Although it was impure, it was still Genesis Energy after all and was greatly beneficial to the Demon God.

The gigantic crack in the sky was slowly sealing. If the tear was not big enough to devour the entire Boundless Mainland, it would result in the tear vanishing. Fen Tian roared ferociously and swung the gigantic heavy sword towards the Demon God's head with both of his hands. He had given up the plan of attacking with caution. After the attack earlier, Fen Tian was absolutely sure that Zhou Weiqing had transformed into the genuine Demon God. Perhaps, it was not the true Demon God, but it definitely possessed a portion of the Demon God's power. However, if he continued to attack in a testing manner, he would end up being devoured time after time.

The gigantic heavy sword came from the sky. As the Demon God faced the icy cold, purplish-black Destruction Energy, the sky sank. The whole sky seemed like it was cracking from when Fen Tian swung his sword, and the crack spread towards Zhou Weiqing's direction. The Demon God moved as its eyes sparkled. Not only did he not stagger backward, he moved forward with both his hands

lifted up and put his palms together on top of his head.

Bang—

Demonic and Destruction Energy spread out immediately and turned into a circle of distorted ripples that exploded in the sky. The collision this time drove the Natural Divine Territory tens of thousands of meters away. Fortunately, the battle between the Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya and Shen Mo was on the other side of the Natural Divine Territory. Otherwise, the aftershock might affect them, and they might have to temporarily end their battle. It was also fortunate that the collision happened in the air or else the clash might cause half of the Wan Shou Heaven to vanish forever from this world.

What was more terrifying was at the back. As the distorted ripples faded away in the air, what appeared next was shocking. The Demon God's palms that were pressed together abruptly caught Fen Tian's destructive heavy sword. Fen Tian could not move, and it was the first time the two gods were in close proximity to each other. They looked at each other.

The Destruction God's purplish-black eyes had ferocious flames bursting out of it. His huge and muscular arms pressed down with all his strength as he attempted to swing the destructive heavy sword down on the Demon God's body. However, it was obvious that the Demon God's strength was far beyond that of the Destruction God. Its palms that were pressed together did not move at all, and there was not even a chance for the destructive great sword to escape.

That was the difference between an imitation of a god and the projection of a god. Judging by their levels, Fen Tian was below Zhou Weiqing after all. Moreover, the Demon God possessed the Demon God bloodline. That was why the projection had similar characteristics to him and was so powerful. Zhou Weiqing, who had the ten-piece Ringless Ground Purging Set on him, elevated his power by 1024-fold. One could imagine how powerful he was with

that elevation of power. Even without the Demon God, Fen Tian might not be Zhou Weiqing's opponent judging from their strength.

The Demon God's right leg moved. It was the most powerful part of Zhou Weiqing's body. His leg kicked towards the side of the Destruction God's face at lightning speed. At that moment, the Destruction God only had two options. He could either let go of his sword or fight forcefully. Naturally, Fen Tian was unwilling to give up on the heavy sword in his hands. He had a weapon while the Demon God did not. He thought it was his biggest advantage at the moment so he chose to fight by force. The Destruction God lifted his left leg and extended his knee to block the Demon God's leg that was kicking at him.

Bang!

It was another tremendous bang. The Destruction God roared, and it caused the Destructive Divine Territory in the air to spread outward temporarily. Those standing below could clearly see a cloud of warped light spreading out, and they could clearly see that the Destructive God's right leg became slightly distorted. It was obvious that he suffered a heavy loss.

The disdain in the Demon God's eyes became even more intense. However, he let go of the destructive heavy sword because the Demon God's hands could not take the Destruction Energy that the destructive heavy sword was giving off. It was good enough because the Destruction God was only left with one leg. By then, it was obvious that who the victor and loser were.

The Demon God's movements were simple. His body suddenly became incorporeal the instant he let go of the destructive heavy sword. The destructive heavy sword swung across its incorporeal body that was a thousand meters tall and landed on nothing. Zhou Weiqing was using the Spatial Law that he was most proficient at, as he controlled the Demon God to utilize the Spatial Law.

As the battle progressed, Fen Tian's experience began to show. He noticed something was wrong when his sword hit nothing, and he reacted instantly by letting go of his sword — at the very end, he decided to let go of his heavy sword. He pressed his fists against each other on his chest and coincidentally blocked the last slap when the Demon God appeared out of thin air. An intense collision exploded in the air and the two gods began fighting again. Meanwhile, the Destruction God's left leg was recovering at a stunning rate. It would not die as long as it had sufficient Destruction Energy. It was not its actual body after all.

Fen Tian's heavy sword that was thousands of meters long fell from the sky directly onto Wan Shou Heaven. The intense bang was like an earthquake, and as a result, Wan Shou Heaven gained a gigantic canyon. The ground split opened as terrifying Destruction Energy spread across almost a hundred miles before it stopped. Naturally, that left a permanent mark on Wan Shou Heaven.

It seemed like it was just the beginning of the battle between the Demon God and Destruction God. Both of them had extremely fast attack speed. Although they were huge, the others could only see a purple and gray shadow shining continuously in the air from the ground. Circles of distorted light spread out from the center of their collision as a powerful wave of energy exploded.

Right at that moment, the victor of a battle was finally decided among the five battlefields. It was the battle between Long Shiya and Shen Mo. Shen Mo had had constantly been on the offensive as his frenzied attacks weakened the gigantic body that Long Shiya continuously transformed into as it weakened the energy waves. What was more important was when Shen Mo found out that Long Shiya's Divine Thought was getting weaker to the point that he could barely control his body any longer.

Putting aside the joy that Shen Mo felt in his heart, it was obvious that the Six Ultimate Heavenly God who had just achieved the Heavenly God Tier had injured himself from balancing the

Destruction Energy by displaying his amazing ability to control the six attributes perfectly. He was controlling a massive amount of energy at that time! It must be petrifying to be drained of his Divine Thought. Could he not unleash it anymore, or was he just unable to hold on to it?

Although the continuous onslaught of powerful attacks took a major toll on Shen Mo, he was feeling good. He thought that he would be left with at least half of his Heavenly Energy after killing Long Shiya. As long as he made some slight adjustment, he would be able to continue fighting on the ground.

Shen Mo was not an idiot, he did not plan to fight the Elf Tribe's formation because there were too many powerhouses. Besides, he had also noticed that Dongfang Hanyue was the one who had caused a lot of casualties to the Blood Red Hell and Love Valley by killing ruthlessly on the ground. She alone had killed at least more than 20 Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouses from the Blood Red Hell and Love Valley. Presently, her attack speed had dropped due to an excessive consumption of strength. As long as Shen Mo went down to constrain this person, it would not be long before he defeats his enemy in the battle on the ground. Regarding Huang Xingyun and his wife, their life had nothing to do with him. It was best if they died together with the Heavenly Expanse Palace.

Although the Blood Red Hell and Love Valley had a working relationship with the same master, they were not that close to each other. To Shen Mo, Huang Xingyun only had one option when he was faced with life and death — to self-detonate. The explosion from a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse's self-detonation. It was very likely that both sides would die together and would benefit the Blood Red Hell when they ruled the entire mainland in the future.

Seeing that Long Shiya was starting to lose ground, Shen Mo showcased the battle techniques that he had in store. He was not worried about Fen Tian and Zhou Weiqing's battle. As an onlooker

and a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse, he had a clearer view than Fen Tian. He remembered that Zhou Weiqing was only a Maximum Level Heavenly Emperor, and did not possess the cultivation base of a Heavenly God. Although he had no idea how Zhou Weiqing summoned the Demon God, how long could it last? As long as Fen Tian could hold on to his summon longer than him, it was impossible for Zhou Weiqing to win.

Just when as Shen Mo planned this in his heart, a huge impact appeared in waves. The waves came from the Elf Tribe's Natural Divine Territory Formation. It was not that the Elf Tribe was targeting him, but the explosion of energy from the battle between the Demon God and Destruction God was too overbearing and was filled with destruction. It forced the Natural Divine Territory to divert the energy and naturally, it was diverted at their direction.

This situation had happened before so Shen Mo did not panic. It was just that his attack was slightly delayed. He had thought about it — he would launch a fatal attack on Long Shiya as soon as the energy around them calmed down. However, what Shen Mo did not expect was that Long Shiya took the initiative to attack him first for the very first time in their second battle.

Two unimpressive light rings floated out of Long Shiya's body. Due to the fact that Shen Mo had been attacking continuously, Long Shiya body had been weakened so the two, six-colored light rings were only around one meter in diameter. They were coming out of Long Shiya's head and the Six Ultimate Heavenly Path Formation under his feet.

Was this his last struggle before his death? Disdain filled Shen Mo's eyes. He did not bother with Long Shiya's attack at all. The devouring mouth remained glorious and it directed its mouth that was wide open without thinking twice. However, just when that gigantic devouring mouth was about to close, the unimpressive six-colored rings of light that were emitting regular energy waves suddenly accelerated into the mouth.

The two rings of light did not engage the devouring mouth. Instead, they moved towards each other. To be exact, they overlapped one another. The devouring mouth closed at that moment and devoured the both of them. Since the beginning of the battle, the Six Ultimate Heavenly God Long Shiya's chubby face had been serious all the time. However, at this moment, there was a faint smile on his face. Shen Mo saw the expression on Long Shiya's face and wondered what he was smiling about. That was the first thought that Shen Mo had before a gentle energy wave in his devouring mouth.

Yes, the energy explosion was very gentle. However, it caused the Destruction Attribute in his body to collapse at an exceptional speed. Shen Mo's devouring mouth was formed from his real body with his Divine Territory. In a way, it was his actual body! He was shocked when his Destruction Energy collapsed. He could not spit the rings of light out even if he attempted to.

A deep thud sounded as a dense, purplish-black mist of light broke out in the air. The devouring mouth vanished as Shen Mo's real body appeared in the air. However, he did not have the joy of a victory on his face any longer. As he looked at Long Shiya, he pointed his right hand at him while his left hand was pressed against his chest, "You, you..."

The Six Ultimate Heavenly God, Long Shiya looked at Shen Mo and revealed a smile, "You've lost to yourself. If not for your overconfidence, we would both have suffered a great loss in this battle. Sigh, I've become terrible after spending too much time with Little Fatty. I've even learned to deceive."

Under Shen Mo's palm was a small, six-colored palm-sized light ring that was embedded in his chest.

Chapter 827: Reversal, The Scales of Victory

(1)

Shen Mo's body was suspended in the air as he trembled slightly. There was a hint of bitterness on his face, and his eyes looked unwilling; he knew he had lost. He had lost so badly that all hope was lost for him to recover.

Long Shiya was right. He had lost all confidence, was careless, and had really underestimated the Six Ultimate Heavenly God.

Although the Destruction Attribute was powerful, it did not represent everything. Long Shiya had already made a name for himself and also possessed six attributes. He would not have been easy to deal with.

When the second battle between the two began, Long Shiya was at a disadvantage. However, this was part of his plan. Even the results of their first battle had already been foreseen by the Six Ultimate Heavenly God.

Many powerhouses were present but there were not many that could compare with Long Shiya when it came to combat experience. The Six Ultimate Heavenly God did not come from any Saint Land. He arrived at this point with his own effort. The hardships he went through could only be imagined. It could be said that it was because he had survived countless life and death battles before he reached the Heavenly Emperor Tier. It was an achievement he obtained by crawling back from the brink of death numerous times. This was also one of the important reasons why Xue Ao'tian had always admired Long Shiya.

Perhaps Long Shiya's cultivation base was not the strongest. However, he would not make any mistakes on the battlefield. His sinister self-mocking nature was related to Zhou Weiqing. After spending a long time with his baby apprentice, he also learned something from Zhou Weiqing. For instance, layout.

Long Shiya and Shen Mo were both powerhouses at the Heavenly God Tier. However, in comparison to Long Shiya, even though Shen Mo had the Destruction Attribute, his foundation was very poor. How long had Long Shiya been at the pinnacle of the Heavenly Emperor Tier? He had tempered his Divine Thought to an incomparable purity long ago. On top of that, he needed to constantly control his various attributes in his battles. Although the first battle had not consumed a lot of his Divine Thought, it was far from being as powerful as it looked. Even his body swaying in the air was intentionally done to confuse Shen Mo.

Long Shiya had understood for a long time. He knew that he would not be the one deciding the outcome of today's battle. However, he had set his own objective - he wanted to obtain a personal victory. This objective was set the moment Shen Mo appeared.

Later, when he and Shen Mo returned to the camps of their respective sides to recuperate. Without even considering Long Shiya's recovery speed, Zhou Weiqing had secretly sent in a stream of Saint Energy into his teacher's body. This helped him recover his Divine Thought.

That was the reason why Long Shiya went up to fight Shen Mo for the second time - his Divine Thought had already recovered completely. Even if he fought against Shen Mo doggedly, the chances of him winning were higher. However, if he did fight doggedly, exactly like he thought he would, both sides would suffer. Long Shiya was not afraid of this. However, the war was not his only battle! He had to keep his body strong so that he could help his apprentice.

Hence, at the start of the second battle, Long Shiya performed as Shen Mo expected. He was actually saving his energy and waiting for an opportunity.

Zhou Weiqing's engagement in a furious fight in the sky with Fen Tian had reignited the battle here, giving rise to the first

opportunity. However, Shen Mo had not completely lowered his vigilance at that time. So, Long Shiya continued to wait patiently. It was his patience that eventually made Shen Mo less vigilant. When the second opportunity presented itself, Long Shiya acted.

The small six-colored halo should not be underestimated. Long Shiya spared no effort in launching his best, and this could even be considered the most powerful attack he had ever used in his life.

The six attributes formed two rings of light with different ratios. When they fused together, the power greatly surpassed the first level of the Heavenly God Tier. More importantly, Long Shiya had thrown in all the Saint Energy that Zhou Weiqing gave him so that Shen Mo would not have a chance for a comeback.

With the combined might of the Saint Energy and Six Ultimate Heavenly God, Shen Mo's Destruction Attribute was unable to fight back. The six-colored halo struck him in the middle of his chest, separating Shen Mo from his Heavenly God Tier Heavenly Core Nucleus. On top of that, it destroyed everything in his body and turned it into nothing.

Puff!

Shen Mo spewed black blood from his mouth. At the same time, a bloody beam of light struck out twice from his chest. The six-colored halo quickly supplanted the bloody beam of light, and the pitch black Heavenly Core Nucleus popped out right into Long Shiya's hand.

Shen Mo's pupils gradually dilated. His entire body shook violently in the air before he fell to the ground. He did not even have the opportunity to blow himself up. However, no matter how unwilling he was, facts could not be changed. His corpse had turned into ash, disappearing before it even reached the ground. Without the defense of the Destruction Heavenly Core Nucleus, his body was prone to the six attribute attack.

In the air, Long Shiya gasped as he took in large breaths. He had

paid a tremendous price for his best attack. At the very least, for the time being, he was unable to use the strength of a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse.

He then looked at the other side, at Zhou Weiqing and Fen Tian's battle. At this point, their battle resembled a raging fire.

It was indeed a confusing battle - each clash gave off a large distorted circle of light. The Demon God Zhou Weiqing transformed into obviously had the upper hand, especially in terms of power. He had completely suppressed the Destruction God. However, the Destruction God that Fen Tian transformed into was extremely tough. It continued to stand firm under the tyrannical attacks of the Demon God. The battle between the two had hit a thrilling climax.

Long Shiya shook his head lightly and secretly sighed. He knew he was unable to intervene in a duel of this level. Even if he were to rush in, he would only cause trouble for Zhou Weiqing.

After adjusting himself a little, with the help of the Natural Divine Territory in the vicinity, he had recovered some Heavenly strength. He headed for the peak of the Heavenly Snow Mountain before charging down to join the battle between the two sides, where he could best make use of his ability.

Following the end of Long Shiya's battle, it would seem as though the scales of victory were turning in favor of the Peerless Sect, the Heavenly Snow Mountain, and Heavenly Expanse Palace.

Heavenly Expanse Palace aside, the battle here had lasted the longest. However, when Long Shiya joined the battle, the situation changed once again.

Although there were many powerhouses amongst the Red Blood Hell and Love Valley, there were now three Heavenly God powerhouses at the Peerless Sect and Heavenly Snow Mountain's side, such as Dongfang Hanyue - the killing machine. Although the offensive onslaught had slowed down, the Blackfiend Devastation

Dragon Slaying Spear would show results every time it was used.

Xue Ao'tian's strength and importance were mainly reflected in his assistance. After rushing into attacks in tandem with Dongfang Hanyue for a while, he began to calm down. The Heavenly Snow Mountain they were affiliated with had suffered damages too quickly. If they continued to fight the same way, there would not be many left in the Heavenly Snow Mountain even if they had won in the end.

That was why Xue Ao'tian changed his tactics to providing support instead. He used his powerful strength to continuously utilize each and every situation to support the powerhouses on his side. With his help, their ability to survive on the battlefield became stronger, regardless of whether it was the Heavenly Snow Mountain powerhouses or the Peerless Sect powerhouses.

Aside from Dongfang Hanyue, the strongest on the battlefield that inflicted the most casualties were the three Shangguan sisters. The three sisters formed a triangular formation; Shangguan Xue'er was at the main point while Shangguan Fei'er and Shangguan Bing'er guarded both sides to maximize the effect of Shangguan Xue'er's attacks. At least a dozen enemies perished in their hands. The remaining half of the Saint Nucleus Core resulted in them being completely unafraid of the enemies' Destruction Attribute.

At this moment, the Heavenly Snow Mountain had lost about twenty men. As for the Peerless Sect, they had very few people left. Only the Heavenly Kings that were previously from the Heavenly Demon Sect King Tier succumbed to two fatalities and an injury. On the other hand, the number of Blood Red Hell and Love Valley powerhouses had dropped drastically to about three hundred people. If this continued, it would be really hard to determine the winner.

The reason why the Heavenly Snow Mountain and the Peerless Sect's losses were so minimal was thanks to the Blackfiend Dragon, along with Dongfang Hanyue. Although the Heavenly Snow

Mountain had a large area at its summit, the area was still limited as a residential space. The Blackfiend Dragon's arrival would immediately occupy a large area. This made it impossible for the Blood Red Hell and Love Valley to unleash their full power. At the same time, the battles were only fought in a small area. Dongfang Hanyue's attacks with the Blackfiend Devastation Dragon Slaying Spear was so powerful that when it struck, very few of the Blood Red Hell and Love Valley powerhouses would still dare to take her on.

However, after fighting for a short duration of time, the entire Heavenly Snow Mountain had been reduced to two-thirds of its original height. This was because of the Heavenly King and Heavenly Emperor powerhouses. The destructive power from their clashes was too formidable.

Although Xue Ao'tian was distressed, there was nothing he could do.

In the sky, the battle between the elves and the two huge dragons had also reached a critical juncture.

Perhaps, they had sensed a crisis. The two dragons - the couple Hui Yao and Duo Si, suddenly began a seemingly suicidal attack.

Their intense dark red flame turned nearly a third of the Natural Divine Territory into a shade of dark red. The two dragons roared and their huge bodies gathered with a huge dark red light forming around themselves. The Natural Divine Territory even expanded because of the sudden eruption.

The Elven Empress's transformed goddess-like expression suddenly took a more serious look. She knew what the dragon couple was doing. She put both hands in front of her, circling her body, and the Natural Divine Territory then opened up like a mouth, spitting Hui Yao and Duo Si out. Immediately after that, the enormous amount of energy from the Natural Divine Territory that was full of life aura converged toward the goddess. This

included the energy released by the twelve Elven Elders.

Chapter 828: Reversal, The Scales of Victory

(2)

Zhou Weiqing had faced this technique before. It was once used by the Elven Empress after he had accidentally aroused the Sword of the Demon God. However, compared to that point in time, the energy released by the Goddess of Nature now was many times stronger.

With the Goddess of Nature as the center, a massive, crystal clear, dark green ball appeared in the air and rapidly grew in size. It was the same as the dark red ball of light made by the two dragons on the other side. One was red, while the other was green and both were clearly visible in the sky.

The terrifying energy fluctuation crushed the Destruction Divine Territory so much that the battle between the Destruction God and the Demon God elsewhere had slowed down.

The two huge balls of light swelled to almost a kilometer thick in a blink of an eye. The red and the green was an awful combination of colors if anything at all. Nevertheless, it was dazzling.

Because of their enormous size, they could be seen even from the ground. A huge sigil appeared on each of the balls as they expanded in size.

What appeared on the dark red ball of light was a golden and glittering dragon-shaped pattern. It did not seem like a large dragon. Instead, it seemed more like endless, wriggling, golden blood vessels.

The dark green ball of light was different. It also had a pattern but it clearly looked more textured. It was like jade, with leaf-like vein patterns on it. It had a thick Life Aura that constantly dispersed the surrounding Destruction Energy.

Boom!

It was not the dragons and the elves that clashed first, but the Demon God and the Destruction God instead.

The Demon God swung his right leg. The Destruction God clasped his palms together. There was a thunderous roar and both of them retreated, turning into two streams of light that flashed into the distance. They were different from the people on the ground. This violent energy colliding in mid-air will definitely affect those below them.

There was no need for them to wait for the moment of the collision. The energy fluctuations itself were already enough to overwhelm the rest.

It was at this time that the red and the green balls of light moved, carrying with them dazzling trails of fire, as they streamed like comets and crashed into one another.

The movements of the powerhouses battling on the ground on both sides also slowed down considerably. The scene in the sky was so shocking that everyone threw all their Heavenly Energy into their defenses.

The worst ones were the two brothers - Shangguan Tianyang and Tianyue.

"As the moons and stars rotate — Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation!," Shangguan Tianyang shouted. All the powerhouses from the Heavenly Expanse Palace then used their full power.

The Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation suddenly changed. A huge white whirlpool emerged in the sky. The terrifying energy fluctuation caused the Heavenly Snow Mountain to be covered with a layer of white luster.

Immediately after that, following a huge force that came rushing out, two figures shot out like meteors rising to the sky.

The couple, Huang Xingyun and Yun Ruoyun, had been hard-

pressed by the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation. Although they had always been in a defensive stance, they had been consuming their Heavenly Energy. While the consumption was not that significant, the possibility of them being able to escape had now become smaller, after some time.

Just moments ago, the originally moderate Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation suddenly started attacking wildly. It forced the couple to go all out to deal with it. Huang Xingyun was enraged. The couple broke forth with maximum effort, trying to take advantage of this opportunity to escape.

It was also at this time when the pressure on them by the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation had suddenly dropped. Immediately after that, they were flung towards the sky.

The feeling of suddenly breaking free was incomparably comfortable. At that moment, Huang Xingyun and Yun Ruoyun were as happy as birds breaking free from their cages.

'It seems like there isn't enough energy to sustain the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation. Now, let's see how I'm going to kill you. I've already escaped. I'm now free to act!'

Just as Huang Xingyun and his wife were overjoyed, preparing to show off their might and slaughter the Heavenly Expanse Palace, they suddenly discovered the tragedy that they were in.

In order to break away from the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation, they made it a point to go higher as they were flung up high into the air. Their attention at that time was still on the whirlpool of the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation below them. When they realized that something was wrong, they looked up and saw the green and red light balls that had almost blanketed the whole sky.

Zhou Weiqing who had transformed into the Demon God trembled a little in the distance, and whispered in his heart, 'Who has been cursing me?'

Shangguan Tianyue's mouth twitched as he laughed loudly. Beside him, Shangguan Tianyang then thought to himself, 'Sigh. He had been around that fool, Zhou Weiqing, for too long... I've been infected.'

It is not known what kind of reaction he would have if he knew that both his teacher and Shangguan Tianyang would push the blame to him every time they did something mischievous.

The red and the green lights finally collided with one another and burst into an incomparably terrifying radiance. It was so terrifying that the energy fluctuations burst out in all directions at the same time.

The green ball showed its superiority when it collided. It only flashed and moved up a little, so that the aftermath of the collision did not smash into the peak of the Heavenly Snow Mountain.

However, that slight move upward was not something fortunate for the now fast-approaching Huang Xingyun and Yun Ruoyun.

Shangguan Tianyang's ability to seize opportunities was indeed excellent. When their bodies reached the highest point, and the red and green balls collided, the couple were also right in the middle of the collision.

There was an incomparable roar that could even be heard from the entire Heavenly Expanse Mainland. A huge black hole appeared at the center of the collision in the sky. The diameter of the black hole was about ten kilometers wide, wildly absorbing all the violent energy.

Huang Xingyun and his wife were like two small birds flying up before they were smashed down by a palm. The speed at which they were slammed down at was ten times faster compared to when they were flying upward. The two already spat out volumes of blood before they could even scream.

Although they were Upper-Level Heavenly God-tier

powerhouses, they had expanded a lot of Heavenly Energy in the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation. On top of that, the powerhouses clashing in the sky were much more powerful than they were. They had even conserved their energy for that opportune moment. At the center of the collision, how violent would the energy be? Even the Destruction God and the Demon God had escaped, so the couple took a direct hit. It would be rather peculiar indeed if they were able to escape unscathed.

The white whirlpool from the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation was like a large mouth that was mocking them as it swallowed them whole once again. This time, the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation was totally unrestrained. Even if the attack was weak, it still had the power of 108 Heavenly King-tier powerhouses.

If Huang Xingyun and his wife had remained in the formation earlier, they would have endured it for a long time but now, having just been heavily mauled, how long could they hold out for?

As Huang Xingyun and his wife fell, two huge figures also flew out at the same time. It was Hui Yao and Duo Si. But they had not flown out very far before the two green lights shot out, which then engulfed them and pulled them back.

The Goddess of Nature's form reappeared in the sky. The huge black hole that was slowly closing above her head seemed to have no effect on her.

A glittering green glow surrounded the Elven Empress, making her look even more sacred. Eleven Elven Elders also appeared by her side, out of thin air. They jointly created a Divine Territory and isolated the black hole in the sky.

The two dragons were still struggling but their strength had dropped. The Goddess of Nature had pulled them back with the dark green light from her staff. Obviously, the dragons had lost the ability to resist her. The battle between the two dragons and the

Elf Tribe had come to its end.

Not much time had passed since the start of the war. However, the battle was extremely fierce. The balance between both sides constantly changed. At one moment, the Blood Red Hell and Love Valley held the advantage. At the next moment, they suffered three defeats out of the five battlefields.

If only Shen Mo had lost to Long Shiya, the overall situation would not be greatly affected. However, at this time, the dragons had lost to the elves and the elves were now free to reverse the situation. On top of that, Huang Xingyun and his wife, both Heavenly God-tier powerhouses, were trapped in the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation. It was clear that the winners of the battle were already determined.

When Fen Tian and Zhou Weiqing retreated from each other, Zhou Weiqing was still filled with hope.

Feng Tian did not expect Hui Yao and Duo Si to be able to defeat the Elven Empress. He had only hoped that both sides would suffer losses. For him, the biggest threat was the elves. This was because their appearance was a factor that was totally unknown to him.

While he was retreating, Huang Xingyun and Yun Ruoyun were thrown into the air. Even if Fen Tian wanted to rescue them, he would not be able to do so. Besides, he was also not a selfless person. With such a terrifying collision, he would also suffer if he were to get really close to it.

As the situation took a turn for the worse, Fen Tian's eyes immediately seemed to look gloomier than it was before.

The outcome of two out of the five battlefields had already been decided. For him, there was neither suspense nor dawn for him.

The Elven Empress stretched out her right hand. She then flew far away into the distance with the escort of the Elven Elders. Although the two dragons had been stopped, it was not easy to

completely control them. Therefore, she was unable to intervene in Zhou Weiqing's battle for the time being, but it was clear that it was only a matter of time.

Chapter 829: Reversal, The Scales of Victory

(3)

The Demon God and the Destruction God in the sky appeared to be fighting a solitary battle. However, if the Blood Red Hell and Love Valley still had any opportunities remaining, it would be in the battle between Zhou Weiqing and Fen Tian.

Fen Tian had to defeat Zhou Weiqing, and he needed to defeat him before the Elven Empress defeated the two dragons. Only then would it be possible for this battle to continue.

Fortunately for the Blood Red Hell and Love Valley, their strongest advantage was the ancestral powerhouses they revived, most of whom were not self-aware. Therefore, even after the war was no longer in their favor, these powerhouses would still fight desperately.

The Demon God silently looked at the Destruction God. Zhou Weiqing's voice calmly rang in the air, "Fen Tian. Surrender. You no longer have a chance."

Fen Tian's cold voice was vicious. "The victory is not yet final. How can you be so sure that I won't have a chance? Zhou Weiqing, you underestimate the Blood Red Hell. Huang Xingyun may have been rubbish. However, I, Fen Tian, was destined to become the master of this world."

Zhou Weiqing asked, "Fen Tian. You seem to be so obsessed with this, even until this day. I can never understand you. Is power really so important to you? Isn't your life comfortable enough in the lands under the Blood Red Hell rule as a Saint Land?"

Fen Tian then replied, "Zhou Weiqing. You're still young and won't understand. In this world, it's either rule or be ruled. What do you think the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands is? The winner of the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands is essentially the ruler of

this world. Why does the most fertile land on the mainland belong to the Zhongtian Empire? If it wasn't due to the Heavenly Expanse Palace winning the championship at the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands successively several times, do you think the other countries would agree? If the Heavenly Expanse Palace could do it, why can't the Red Blood Hell do it? Power is a desire. A supreme desire. It's my life's goal to rule the world."

There was a flash of light in the Demon God's demonic eyes. Zhou Weiqing had no choice but to say, "In that case, there's nothing left for us to say to each other. Let's determine the winner by virtue of strength. Ignoring the fact that you may not defeat me, even if you do, the ultimate winner of today's battle won't be you."

The Destruction God shook his head. "Zhou Weiqing, I have already said this before. You still underestimate me. I wouldn't have come here today without absolute confidence. I've been preparing for this moment for ten; no, twenty years! Destruction will always be destruction. How can your power of creation stop me? Let me just show you, what true destruction really means."

As he spoke, the Destruction God slowly raised his arms. The heavy sword in his hand disappeared. He then clasped his heart with both hands.

"Huh?" For some reason, Zhou Weiqing suddenly felt anxious. He became especially vigilant when he looked at Fen Tian. Zhou Weiqing was actually very depressed now. Originally, he thought that his cultivation had already reached the peak of the Heavenly Emperor Tier. It should only be a minute away from the Heavenly God Tier, and he should be have been able to use the Sword of the Demon God. However, he had already tried it several times before. He could not deploy the Demon God's sword at all.

He once used the Sword of the Demon God to defeat the Elven Empress and ger twelve Elven Elders. Although they were not as strong then as they were now, it was still a Heavenly God coupled with twelve Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouses at that time! If

Zhou Weiqing could use the Sword of the Demon God again, he was seventy percent certain that he could get rid of Fen Tian.

A gray Qi spread out from within the body of the Demon God. His right leg kicked out like a bolt of lightning, and a gray blade of light broke out, flying toward the Destruction God. Zhou Weiqing was testing the water, as he did not know what Fen Tian was going to do at the time.

The Destruction God saw the attack coming from the Demon God. However, the look in his eyes did not change in the least bit. It was as if it did not see the Demon God's movements at all.

It was at this moment that the pattern of the large black crab on the chest of the Destruction God lit up. It turned from black to a bright purple. A dazzling halo of purple light then spread out.

Hummmm.

A strange scene unfolded. The blade of light was kicked out by the Demon God, and silently turned into nothing when it arrived about a hundred meters from the Destruction God. Not even energy ripple remained.

'What happened?' With Zhou Weiqing's sharp perception, he immediately discovered that the Destruction God's energy had undergone tremendous changes.

The originally powerful Destruction Energy had been concentrated. It was as though all the Destruction Energy had undergone a thorough change. In every available space, the Destruction Energy was vibrating at a terrifying speed. This made it even more powerful. Moreover, the Destruction Energy was now incredible condensed, making it feel as though the Destruction God had completely transformed into a black hole.

'Fen Tian was already at the peak of the Heavenly God Tier. The Destruction God he transformed into was still evolving. How did he do it?' Zhou Weiqing was full of questions but he could not wait.

The Demon God spread out his arms on both sides of his body. His whole body shook forcefully. Numerous gray balls of light shot out from the body of the Demon God. Each gray ball of light contained energy with multiple attributes.

This was the Dark Demon God Thunder. However, it was not the original Demon God Thunder. When Zhou Weiqing summoned the Demon God, he made full use of all of his attributes. He relied on the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation to create this new version of the Demon God Thunder by fusing the six attributes together in an orderly manner. It could be said that any one of the balls of light from the Demon God Thunder could make a Heavenly King-tier powerhouse freeze in shock, in absolute amazement. Moreover, thousands of them appeared at the same time. Its power could only be imagined.

The terrifying Demon God's Thunder shot to the sky instantly. It then swiftly headed for the Destruction God. But Zhou Weiqing controlled the Demon God and remained still because the Destruction God floating before him continued to give Zhou Weiqing a sense of peril. It seemed as if a disaster would befall him the very moment he got close.

This time, there was finally a roar. It was as though there were a thousand thunders cracking in the air. Thunder rolled and the sky turned bright. Time, space, darkness, wind, thunder, and evil created a moving melody, albeit a destructive one.

Zhou Weiqing was confident that with such an attack, even a regular Heavenly God-tier powerhouse would suffer heavy damage. Moreover, his current objective was to interrupt whatever Fen Tian was doing.

The horrifying fluctuation of energy severely distorted the space around them. Zhou Weiqing could no longer see the appearance of the Destruction God clearly. Surprisingly, he was still able to see the bright glowing light from the purple crab.

"Zhou Weiqing, it is futile. Since you forced me to do this, All of you will die. Here, today, right now. Except for me, there would be no one else left alive."

Fen Tian's voice seemed to have changed. It was filled with an unexplainable depth, as if he had transformed into a bottomless abyss.

The violent energy fluctuation gradually calmed down. The Destruction God still hovered in the sky. However, the bright purple crab that was originally imprinted on his chest had flown out and floated before Fen Tian.

The Destruction God's body was already large enough. However, when this bright purple light spread out, it was three times larger than that.

At this moment, it no longer showed a bright purple light. Instead, the center was dark like a black hole, surrounded by a bright purple and misty light.

It was pure Destruction Energy. Zhou Weiqing turned pale with shock because he could clearly feel that the Destruction Energy emanating from the silhouette of the large crab had already surpassed his Nebula Saint Energy in purity. This meant that this was the first time ever since he possessed the Saint Energy, that he encountered a person with a purer Destruction Energy than his Saint Energy.

'Fen Tian still has something like this up his sleeves?'

It was at this moment that the Destruction God made a move that Zhou Weiqing could not understand. It kneeled down mid-air, on both knees as it faced and worshipped the large crab.

"Great Lord. Please, give me strength." Fen Tian's voice reverberated through the air. At the same time, the purple radiance shrouded the Destruction God's body.

Zhou Weiqing wanted to attack again but alas, he suddenly heard

the voice of the Elven Empress in his mind. "It's useless. He has tapped into the power of the Netherworld. Although I don't know how he did it, the intensity of energy around the body of the Destruction God is already equal to one you'd find in the Netherworld."

Zhou Weiqing was aghast as he asked, "Then, what should we do? The Netherworld's power is probably not confined to the powers of a Heavenly God. How are we going to deal with this?"

The Elven Empress then said, "Rest assured. He can only borrow the energy from the Netherworld. However, he cannot directly control the energy for an attacks. It's similar to you, only being able to create the projection of the Demon God but it isn't the real deal. If I'm not mistaken, he should be using the energy from the Netherworld to enhance his own strength, and his cultivation base will ascend to a greater height soon. As for how much he'll be able to improve himself, I can't determine. However, since he's only a Netherworld servant, it'll be impossible for his cultivation to ever be able to compare to the Netherworld. On top of that, the Nether Lord is extremely greedy. It must've cost Fen Tian a hefty price to borrow his energy. All we can do now is wait. Once the outer layer of the Netherworld's energy disappears, your attack will become effective. You should quickly cultivate to the next level now, or we won't have a chance at all."

Chapter 830: Lovers Return to Dust (1)

Zhou Weiqing frowned sternly. "How much can he level up?"

The Elven Empress replied, "While it'll be impossible for Fen Tian's cultivation base to level up to the Netherworld Lord's level, his Destruction Energy would surely become purer. The only thing that can restrain his Destruction Energy is your Saint Energy. That's the reason why you must make your Saint Energy purer than his Destruction Energy. Otherwise, no one would be able to deal with him. Don't worry. With my help, I believe that we'll be the ultimate winners."

After listening to the Elven Empress, Zhou Weiqing calmed down a little. Lights flashed and the Astral Divine Territory appeared again, floating above the Demon God's head. Under the bright starlight, the Demon God that was originally filled with an evil aura unexpectedly looked divine.

"Ah!" A sad and shrill voice suddenly came from the Destruction God. In the purplish-black light, the Destruction God's body began twisting and suddenly trembled violently.

A large hand appeared from the void. A horrifying pull suddenly burst out in the mid-air.

What was Fen Tian trying to do?

Zhou Weiqing who was preparing for some action was shocked. What he was most worried about was that Fen Tian would launch an attack against the Peerless Sect in his current state. Those in the Peerless Sect were his companions and loved ones.

However, Zhou Weiqing's worries were unnecessary. Ten figures surged to the sky from below, toward the large pulling force. However, they did not belong to the Peerless Sect, the Heavenly Snow Mountain, or the Heavenly Expanse Palace. They were powerhouses from the Blood Red Hell.

Amongst the ten fighters, four were sentient while the other six only had their fighting instincts with them. As they rose to the sky, there was a layer of a dark purple light around their bodies. However, when compared to the Destruction God, the purple light was much lighter.

What was Fen Tian trying to do?

Zhou Weiqing looked carefully and discovered that the Blood Red Hell powerhouses who were rising into the air were also shocked. This was obviously not something Fen Tian pre-arranged.

The next moment, Zhou Weiqing finally understood Fen Tian's objective.

Puff! Puff! Puff! Puff! Puff! Puff!... A peculiar sound was heard consecutively. The Blood Red Hell powerhouses that rose towards the purple radiance around the Destruction God exploded into clouds of blood. When their bodies exploded, so did their Heavenly Core Nucleus. Then, it formed dark purplish balls of light that merged with the huge, purplish-black radiance. The assimilation of these light balls caused the Destruction God's body to seemingly fade a little. Only its huge palm continued to face down as it absorbed the mist.

He was absorbing all those powerhouses that have the Destruction Attribute into himself! Who would have thought that Fen Tian could still perform such a malicious maneuver? It was no wonder he waited until this point to use it. He only did this when he no longer had any alternatives. After absorbing the Destruction Attribute of these Heavenly King-tier powerhouses, his strength would certainly increase immensely.

The Demon God's body also flashed at the same time. It was just like what the Elven Empress had said. Zhou Weiqing could not wait any longer. If Fen Tian really completed his merging, who would be able to stop him?

A ball of light, mixed with platinum and golden colors hovered

above the Demon God's chest. On top of his head, the radiance of the Astral Divine Territory suddenly became richer and stronger. The nebula, formed by tens million rays of starlight formed rotated violently. The eye-catching brilliance clearly illuminated the body of the Demon God.

The Demon God stretched out his hands and made a downward move. Immediately after that, balls of light rose from beneath and flew toward the Demon God.

The people from the Blood Red Hell and Love Valley were now in confusion. In the sky, Fen Tian continued to absorb the powerhouses, and within a short time, dozens of people had already exploded into bloody clouds and disappeared into the void just like that. They did not die at the hands of their enemies but by the hands of one of their own. How could they not panic? Among them, the first to be absorbed were the ones in charge of controlling the powerhouses from Blood Red Hell that had lost all sentience, as well as the ones from Love Valley who were controlling the insentient ancestors. However, the Destruction God's actions resembled that of a greedy, terrifying demon that had no intention of stopping anytime soon.

Originally, the two sides were evenly matched on the battlefield. This unexpected situation caused a huge confusion among the Blood Red Hell and the Love Valley.

How could this opportunity be missed by Xue Ao'tian, Shangguan Xue'er, Dongfang Hanyue, and the others? They first probed a little, and after finding out that the power from the Destruction God's action had no effect on them, they immediately launched an all-around counter attack. Within a short moment, the Blood Red Hell and Love Valley suffered a crushing defeat. In the beginning, they could still put up some resistance. When the Destruction God continued absorbing them one after the other, they were finally unable to hold out any longer. So, they immediately fled and scattered in the sky, trying to escape.

However, they had forgotten that the peak of the Heavenly Snow Mountain had already been shrouded in the Destruction Divine Territory. If Fen Tian did not allow them to leave, would they even be able to leave?

The entire battlefield became chaotic. Although the sky was calm, the crisis that could happen at any moment was even more terrifying.

At Fen Tian's side, he was constantly merging with the subordinates that he had drawn to him. Zhou Weiqing's Demon God was also doing something similar, but without any murder involved. Instead, he absorbed the Heavenly Core Nuclei and released it into the Astral Divine Territory. Without a doubt, it was Star Feedback.

Before this, Zhou Weiqing had already killed several enemy powerhouses. Quite a considerable amount of powerhouses died on the battlefield. Fen Tian needed to absorb it from living bodies but Zhou Weiqing only needed the Nucleus Core.

For a period of time, the Demon God and the Destruction God were immersed in a different colored display of light. The brilliance of creation and destruction sparkled symphonically, sending a continuous dazzling splendor into the sky

"Weiqing, catch!" Six Ultimate Heavenly God, Long Shiya, swung out his right hand. A beam of light shot high up into the sky. He had killed Shen Mo earlier.

Before he came here, Zhou Weiqing told his powerhouses that upon killing their enemies, they had to seize their Heavenly Core Nuclei and give them to him as soon as possible. He was now at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly Emperor Tier. However, even with Saint Energy, breaking through to the Heavenly God Tier would not be easy. However, as long as he was able to obtain sufficient Heavenly Core Nuclei for his Star Feedback, the chance for a breakthrough would definitely be much greater. The greatest

advantage Saint Energy had given him was that he would not need to worry about a possible rebound or his foundation being insufficient.

When there was confusion on the Heavenly Snow Mountain while Zhou Weiqing and Fen Tian were both building their strength, there was a fierce burst of fluctuating energy at the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation.

The dreamy white clouds disappeared almost instantly. More than a hundred figures scattered all over the sky at breakneck speed.

"Brother Xue, let's go. Quickly!" Shangguan Tianyang's voice burst out in the sky. The energy fluctuation that was already very intense spread out even further because of the dispersion of the clouds.

Huang Xingyun and Yun Ruoyun were quietly standing on the peak of the Heavenly Snow Mountain. They held each other's hands, looking calm. However, a bright purple color slowly spread out from their chests.

Xu Ao'tian heard Shangguan Tianyang's voice and immediately turned his head to take a look. The moment he laid eyes on them, he could not help but gasp with astonishment. He then grabbed Tian'er and escaped.

'They're going to self-detonate.'

It was true. Huang Xingyun and Yun Ruoyun were going self-detonate. They could no longer fight the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great Formation. This was because they had suffered heavy injuries during the collision between the elves and dragons. They could not hold out much longer.

Dragging Dongfang Hanyue along, the Blackfiend Dragon escaped even faster than Xue Ao'tian. They rushed out immediately after the Heavenly Expanse Infinitum Great

Formation collapsed.

Shangguan Bing'er escaped while holding her two sisters — one in each hand — as she flapped the Wings of the Wind God with all her might. Surprisingly, she was not much slower than the Blackfiend Dragon.

At this moment, the only people Six Ultimate Heavenly God, Long Shiya could help were the members of the Peerless Sect as he quickly fled far away as well. The fighters on the Heavenly Snow Mountain were equally proficient. Unless their parents gave birth to them without both their legs, they ran as fast as they could.

While everyone scattered away as though they had encountered a plague, the couple quietly held each other's hands as they slowly turned around to look at one another.

"Xingyun, why are you doing this?" Yun Ruoyun looked distressingly at her husband as she gently caressed his face. Earlier, she had taken the lead in choosing to detonate her Heavenly Core Nucleus in order to give her husband a chance to live.

"You fool. We've been together for nearly a hundred years, never once were we apart from one another. No matter how ambitious I am, no matter how much I desire to rule the world, without you by my side, will all these things even matter?"

Huang Xingyun held the hand that was caressing his face.

At that moment, the Love Valley Lord no longer had a treacherous and vicious gaze. Instead, his eyes were filled with an endless affection for his wife.

"If we cannot live a glorious life, we'll have a glorious death! Ruoyun, at the end of the tunnel, we'll still be together. If there's a life after this, you're the only one I'll want to be with."

Yun Ruoyun slowly closed her eyes. She could clearly feel that she could no longer hold back the Heavenly Core Nucleus from exploding. If it was to kill the enemy, they should not stop here.

However, at this time, their hearts were full of reluctance. They were neither reluctant to part with their lives nor the world. Instead, they were reluctant to part with one another. They wanted one good look at each other for just a moment longer. Although they had been with for close to a hundred years, they were unable to get enough of each other at this moment. They only wanted to be able to imprint the face of their loved one within their hearts.

The Heavenly Snow Mountain was now almost empty. Everyone had run far away as Huang Xingyun and Yun Ruoyun struggled to restrain the energy that was about to burst within their bodies.

The two only stared at each other affectionately. It was the end of their love story, but you could say that this was probably the start of an entirely new beginning.

Chapter 831: Lovers Return to Dust (2)

"Ruoyun, you've always been with me as we walk this path together... Have you ever regretted your decision?" A sense of guilt flowed from Huang Xingyun's gaze - from the beginning until the end - it was his wild ambition that guided everything else.

"You and I are one. Why was it necessary for you to ask me that?" Yun Ruoyun chuckled softly as she laughed in a light-hearted manner similar to the clouds and the wind.

Huang Xingyun laughed, "Ruoyun, I want to kiss you... Is that alright?"

Yun Ruoyun laughed again and slowly raised her head. Her red lips met his, as she muttered, "I still remember how you looked the first time you kissed me. I love you, Xingyun."

"I love you too." Huang Xingyun slowly lowered his head, and crystal clear teardrops flowed out from the Saint Land Lord's eyes uncontrollably. Yes, he regretted all this; he regretted his foolishness. It was at this moment that he suddenly realized. Compared to his wife, what else was he able to gain from his power and wild ambition?

When the four parts of their lips met one another, they felt the other's warmth and breath once again, as well as that unwilling tremble to part with each other.

Boom.

A terrifying growl that felt like the entire mainland was about to be crushed was accompanied by a distorted halo. It was then that it was unleashed on the peak of Heavenly Snow Mountain.

This was the end of his wild ambition, but also the end of an undying relationship at the same time. Perhaps, Huang Xingyun and Yun Ruoyun's wild ambition caused the death of countless lives, as they were the devils that affected the entire Boundless

Mainland.

However, this did not affect their passionate, unchangeable love; the kind that only death would do part. In this aspect, Zhou Weiqing could only turn red with shame when he compared himself to them.

The space that surrounded them became distorted along with the entire Heavenly Snow Mountain. Within that distortion, the enormous peak of the mountain that towered thousands of meters high unraveled quietly. There was neither explosion nor growl that followed afterward. The enormous mountain peak gradually unraveled within that distorted glow and melted into nothingness.

Before the brief moment of explosion, every single surviving powerhouse who had been on the Heavenly Snow Mountain were at least already fifty kilometers away. Yet, even as such, they could still feel a tremendous gush of a thrusting force pushing them continuously another fifty kilometers away.

If it were not for the husband and wife's unwillingness to part, the spontaneous explosion of these Heavenly God-tier powerhouses would at least cause the loss of more than half the powerhouses' lives on the Heavenly Snow Mountain peak.

Sentimental love - vanished. Yet similarly, someone was still benefiting from such a situation.

When Fen Tian was worshipping the Nether Lord, the function of his Destruction Divine Territory had already changed. It bounded and detained everyone who possessed Destruction Energy. Because of that, the people from the Heavenly Snow Mountain, the Heaven's Expanse Palace, and the Peerless Sect were able to escape while the people from Love Valley and the Blood Red Hell were unable to leave.

The Destruction God that Fen Tian summoned had already done its best to send these two powerhouses from the great Saint Lands into the skies during the brief moment of their self-detonation.

Despite that, close to half of the people caught in the terrifying explosion were falling from the sky.

Those two, great Saints Land powerhouses who were sent into the sky by Fen Tian, would naturally be destroyed by melting into his purplish-black balls of light. On the other hand, those who fell from the sky onto the mountain peak, and those who perished with the Heavenly Snow Mountain, had devoted their Heavenly Core Nuclei. In the sky, they entered the Astral Divine Territory and transformed into Feedback Energy.

The Heavenly Snow Mountain disappeared. Yes, the Heavenly Snow Mountain that towered a thousand miles into the skies disappeared in the midst of this heaven-shocking battle.

With Xue Ao'tian on the far side, his heart was filled with bitterness at this point. When he witnessed the appearance of so many Heavenly God-tier powerhouses earlier, he had already predicted the possibility of such a situation happening. Yet, now that he had witnessed the Saint Lands that had existed in the world for thousands of years vanish before his eyes just like that, one could only imagine the agony in his heart.

At this point of the battle, one could say that the coalition of the Peerless Sect, the Heaven's Expanse Palace, and the Heavenly Snow Mountain was a great success. Even after taking the Heavenly Snow Mountain's who suffered the greatest loss into account, the loss of its manpower was still within an acceptable range. It was only that the Heavenly Snow Mountain would cease to exist from here on. On the other hand, aside from Fen Tian who was advancing his Destruction Energy wildly, their entire army on the Blood Red Hell and Love Valley's side had already been annihilated. After all, they had already sent out all their main forces for this great battle. At this moment, it could also be said that the two Saint Lands had already ceased to exist.

Among the survivors, the only person who was found to be in even more agony than Xue Ao'tian, was Fen Tian. Even after he

had transformed into the Destruction God, his eyes were filled with an indescribable hate while he was encased in the purplish-black ball of light.

Because Yun Ruoyun and his wife self-detonated, only the Demon God and Destruction God remained in the Heavenly Snow Mountain's sky at this moment. They were suspended in the midst of the sky and were not influenced by the explosion. Instead, the light that was glowing on their bodies gradually grew stronger.

The gorgeous starlight that surrounded Zhou Weiqing's body was continuously changing. The initial platinum and golden colors also went through gradual changes. The golden starlight was quietly disappearing into Star Feedback. Meanwhile, only a platinum-colored radiance remained around Zhou Weiqing's body. Even the Astral Divine Territory in the sky turned into the same dazzling radiance as well.

The amount of Star Feedback this time was truly too immense; a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse's Star Feedback was even more intense than all the Star Feedbacks Zhou Weiqing used in the past. Moreover, so many powerhouses had passed on during the battle. Aside from the self-detonation of their Heavenly Core Nuclei by Huang Xingyun and his wife, a majority of the Heavenly Core Nuclei from the deceased powerhouses were involved in this Star Feedback.

Streaks upon streaks of pure Creation Saint Energy merged with his body, yet Zhou Weiqing's felt an unusual and peculiar sensation. It was not the feeling of expansion that he felt when he was about to achieve a breakthrough in the past. At that very moment, he could only feel a gush of clear energy rise from within his body, as it rose slowly. It was a marvelous process of attaining a higher level. It felt as if he was separating himself from the original world, and subsequently setting foot into another.

The impure energy was continuously separated from within his body, and the impurities within his Saint Energy was also melting

at an incomparable speed. Streaks of minute spatial fissures were continuously appearing around Zhou Weiqing's body.

If this was in the past, Zhou Weiqing would certainly assume that this was a spatial tear caused by a violent energy fluctuation. However, he did not think that this was the case at this moment. He could clearly sense that there was a tiny space within each tear, and these little spaces were all created by the Saint Energy emanating from his body.

A clear comprehension appeared in Zhou Weiqing's heart. Creation, creation, is this Creation Energy? In his eyes, it was as if he could everlasting eternity. Countless chaotic yet, realistic fragments of images continuously flashed through his mind.

The Demon God crumbled without a sound. In midair, only Zhou Weiqing's body remained. His entire body had now completely taken on a platinum color. His ten fingers continuously pulsed in a rhythmic manner and each time his fingers pulsed, minute fissures appeared on his palms while accompanied various attributes. Among them, the attributes that appeared the most were the Time, Evil, Divine and Spirit Attributes.

These were the four great Saint Attributes of the world right now, and they had manifested around Zhou Weiqing's body. As this happened, the peculiar energy fluctuations grew more powerful as well.

It was at this moment when a spatial fissure appeared around Zhou Weiqing's body without a sign. A female silhouette gently and gracefully took a step forward as she probed with her palm and held onto Zhou Weiqing's hand. Next to her, were four peculiar energy fluctuations that glimmered in a similar manner.

It was Tian'er.

Saint Energy was initially formed from the dual-cultivation of Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er. However, just as Zhou Weiqing was about to enter another realm, just as he was about to attain an even

purser version of Saint Energy, the Saint Energy sensed Tian'er's presence. After all, it was jointly created by Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er. Without Tian'er, how could Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy be complete?

As Zhou Weiqing held Tian'er's hand, the buoyant Saint Energy in his body suddenly surged forward and engulfed Tian'er body. What puzzled Zhou Weiqing even more was the Saint Energy inside Tian'er body that turned as pure as his in a flash. The energy from the four great Saint Attributes around their bodies merged instantly. At this moment, they seemed like conjoined twins, and there was no longer a distinction between one and the other.

The platinum-colored halo grew more and more intense. The Astral Divine Territory above their heads was also continuously growing. The Starcrux Saint Nucleus Core within their bodies began to undergo some changes as layer after layer of the halo around the Starcrux Saint Nucleus Core, was stripped from it. Soon, the original Saint Nucleus Core transformed into human form after the layers were stripped from it. Yes, it was in the form of a human. A human replica that was the exact replica of Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er.

Its entire body was a platinum color, and within Zhou Weiqing's chest was a tiny figure of a human with the exact appearance as himself. Similarly, it was alive; a life that was completely connected to Zhou Weiqing. A life that was created from Saint Energy.

This was the Saint God Nucleus Core. This was the evolution of Saint Energy. The Saint God Nucleus Core that evolved from the Saint Nucleus Core.

At that point, the Saint God Nucleus Core had completely taken form. A dazzling brilliance erupted from Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's bodies as the starlight that initially surrounded their bodies disappeared. They were both like enormous stars as the dazzling radiance erupted from within them. The thick, platinum-

color brightened the entire sky. The Destruction Divine Territory that initially shrouded the area dissipated almost instantly the moment it encountered this brilliance.

Only an enormous purplish-black colored ball of light remained suspended in mid-air. Even then, layers of thick, the intense ball of light continued to ascend, forming layers of intense energy halos.

The powerhouses of the Heaven's Expanse Palace, Peerless Sect, and Heavenly Snow Mountain had already flown back. A few hundred li's would not pose them any trouble. However, at this exact moment, no one dared to approach the area. It was clear that the battle Zhou Weiqing and Fen Tian was significantly more terrifying than the battle Huang Xingyun and his wife were involved in earlier.

On the ground where the Heavenly Snow Mountain was initially at, was an eerily deep cave with a diameter of over three hundred meters. There was no way to tell how deep the cave was, as it stretched as far as one's eyes could see, but its depth was enough to send a chill down anyone's spine.

Xue Ao'tian, Shangguan Tianyang, Shangguan Tianyue, Long Shiya, Wu Yunyue, Dongfang Hanyue and also Zhou Weiqing's soulmates had all gathered together; they were witnessing the battle before their eyes anxiously.

"I didn't expect this young lad to emerge as the strongest one after all. If he's capable of defeating Fen Tian in this battle... Brother Xue, I'm afraid your reputation as the best in the world will need to be passed on to him." Shangguan Tianyang exclaimed with a soft sigh.

Chapter 832: Lovers Return to Dust (3)

A bitter smile crept up on Xue Ao'tian's face, "I can't even protect the Heavenly Snow Mountain. What's the point bearing the title of being the most powerful person in the world? From today onwards, Heavenly Snow Mountain has ceased to exist."

"No!" Shangguan Tianyang stared straight into Xue Ao'tian's eyes, "Brother Xue, I'm deeply sorry about the catastrophe that fell upon the Heavenly Snow Mountain, but regardless if it were to be you or the Heavenly Snow Mountain, this is a sacrifice that you had to pay for the sake of the mainland's survival. Before I came here for the Grand Tournament, I've received news that the Dandun Empire has launched an attack on the Zhongtian Empire. It's entirely conceivable that if the battle here fails, the entire mainland will plunge into misery and suffering. Brother Xue, as long as you're willing to, we from the Heaven's Expanse Palace can give you half of the area on Heavenly Jewel Island to you so that you can rebuild your glory. At the same time, I give you my word that we, the Zhongtian Empire, will sponsor all the food the Wan Shou Empire requires during the winter months from this day on. However, you'd naturally have to give the order to control the population of your country, Brother Xue."

After listening to Shangguan Tianyang's words, Xue Ao'tian could not help but be touched by his gesture, "Tianyang, are you really serious? I don't need the Heavenly Jewel Island but if you can help solve the famine of the Wan Shou Empire, you can count on us to do our part in fighting against the Dandun Empire. Ao'ying, Yingbing, both of you, go now! Pick ten of the most elite soldiers and go forth to assist the Zhongtian Empire!"

"Yes, sir!" Xue Ao'ying and Gu Yingbing replied respectfully as they turned to leave. Before they left, Gu Yingbing deliberately cast a look onto Zhou Weiqing who was still levitating in the distant sky.

"Wait a minute!" Shangguan Tianyang hurriedly said, "You can't just go off like that! Tianyue, you go with them. Escort the Tiger and Lion King to the frontier. I'll skip the formality of showering you with thanks. However, Brother Xue, with all the members of the Peerless Sect present here as my witness, I'm sure all of you have heard me earlier. I'll definitely honor my words!"

A smile which was hard to come by appeared on Xue Ao'tian's face, as he took the initiative and extended his right hand to Shangguan Tianyang. With a laugh, the latter stretched out his right hand before extending a firm handshake to Xue Ao'tian.

Both the lords of two great Saint Lands who had been fighting against each other for their entire lives had finally reconciled under such a circumstance, to solve the misery and suffering in the northern regions of the mainland.

After repeatedly forewarning her daughters to be careful, Shangguan Tianyue hastily left the scene with Xue Ao'ying and Gu Yingbing. In truth, from his point of view, he was actually not willing to leave at such a time. This battle had yet to end and what was more important was whether or not Zhou Weiqing would be able to defeat Fen Tian. However, he also understood fairly well that neither Shangguan Tianyang nor Xue Ao'tian was entirely certain regarding the ultimate outcome of this battle. Finding a reason to let the three of them go at once was to hold on to whatever kindling they could for the survival of their own Saint Land.

Just as Shangguan Tianyue left, a platinum-colored light suddenly spread out from Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's body.

"It's complete! The Heavenly God Tier! They're both Heavenly Gods now!" Shangguan Tianyang almost cheered with joy.

In truth, both he and Xue Ao'tian did not have high expectations in this battle at all. After all, the gap between Zhou Weiqing and Fen Tian was just too huge. Not only that, Fen Tian had used such

a long period of time to accumulate his strength and one could easily imagine the immense magnitude of his boost in power would be. However, things appeared to be very different now.

Tian'er actually achieved a breakthrough to the Heavenly God Tier with Zhou Weiqing. In fact, both of them possessed Saint Energy as their power! To top it all off, it was Creation Saint Energy! With the two of them joining forces, they stood a greater chance of winning against Fen Tian now.

Slowly opening his eyes, Zhou Weiqing breathed in the thrill of having a completely different type of Saint Energy in his body, along with the breakthrough that he had just undergone. A smile slowly crept up on his face.

At this moment, regardless if it was him or Tian'er, both of them felt like they had been washed off from all the bad, leaving only the good behind. Both of their dispositions had also changed dramatically.

Originally, there was still a hint of evil in Zhou Weiqing's body but right now, he seemed to be a noble person with the utmost integrity in this world. Easygoing, warm, righteous, kind, and all sorts of positive traits could easily be found in him now.

It was the same for Tian'er as well. The only thing was that the Saint Energy ripple in her body was much weaker than that of Zhou Weiqing.

A breakthrough with Saint Energy was always different from the Heavenly Energy. With the help of Galaxia Feedback Energy, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er harmonized with each other perfectly and achieved a breakthrough to become Heavenly Gods in the end. Within just a short period of time, Zhou Weiqing's cultivation base was immediately raised to the Middle-Level of the Heavenly God Tier while Tian'er's was at the Lower-Level of the Heavenly God Tier. At any rate, Zhou Weiqing was the person who first initiated breakthrough but the person who benefited the most from it was

none other than Tian'er. Within a short duration, she had made a huge leap in crossing several bottlenecks.

"Relax, the big surprise has yet to come," said Long Shiya triumphantly to Shangguan Tianyang and Xue Ao'tian. Seeing his beloved disciple becoming a Heavenly God and with a strength that far exceeded himself, one could easily imagine the swelling excitement and joy that Six Ultimate Heavenly God felt.

Xue Aot'ian and Shangguan Tianyang did not even attempt to hide the envy that they felt towards Long Shiya. After glaring at him fiercely, they turned their gaze towards Zhou Weiqing and waited for the miracle that Long Shiya had just mentioned.

Right now, the biggest emotion they felt was regret. When they first came across, or rather, got to know Zhou Weiqing, they certainly had the opportunity to take him into their own Saint Land but unfortunately, they did not show enough sincerity toward him at that time.

When Long Shiya was speaking, Zhou Weiqing already gradually lifted his right hand until it was fully over his head. What followed next was a loud dragon's roar that erupted from his hand.

A turquoise light instantly surged and without warning, it transformed into a gigantic Jade Dragon in mid-air as it circled above Zhou Weiqing's head.

The white golden light that was spreading in the air suddenly converged and rushed into the body of the Jade Dragon in a frenzied manner, dyeing its entire body in white and gold. After the gigantic dragon had completed its ninth circle in the air, it charged straight down all the way into Zhou Weiqing's body.

At this moment, in order not to affect Tian'er, Zhou Weiqing released her hand for a short while. With a white flash, he entered the gigantic dragon's body and an intense platinum-colored light erupted from Zhou Weiqing.

"W-What's that?" Stunned, Xue Ao'tian asked.

On the other hand, tremors could be heard in Shangguan Tianyang's voice, "T-That's the e-eleventh piece of his legendary armor s-set! H-He actually has the e-eleventh piece of the legendary armor set? H-How is that possible?"

Shangguan Tianyang was clear that Zhou Weiqing's eleventh piece was totally different from the eleventh piece of his Boundless Infinitum Set's. Only a Heavenly God can make full use of the power of the armor set. Furthermore, Zhou Weiqing himself was not an ordinary Heavenly God! He was a Heavenly God who possessed Saint Energy. Even if Shangguan Tianyang managed to achieve a breakthrough and become a Heavenly God, he would still be unable to compete with the power of this legendary armor set. At this moment, the Boundless Infinitum Set that was once ranked as the best legendary armor set had now completely been taken over.

It was also at this time that the purplish-black ball of light on the other side started to show signs of change.

Layers of the purplish-black light started to cluster up toward the middle and the originally huge ball of light gradually shrunk. The image of the huge crab in the air slowly disappeared without warning.

However, an apocalyptic force soared up to the sky and forcefully bulldozed away the surrounding platinum light. The tyrannical Destruction Energy erupted in a force that was so devastating to everyone present.

As the Demon God disappeared, the Destruction God vanished without a trace as well. Once again, Fen Tian's figure appeared right in front of everyone's eyes but now, he was no longer the same as he was before.

The legendary armor set on his body had turned into a peculiar dark purplish color. His arms had become exceptionally thick and

four jointed long legs seemed to have grown from both sides of his back respectively, making him look like he had just grown eight crab legs out of thin air.

What was most terrifying was the weapon in Fen Tian's hand — a heavy sword. Yes, it was a heavy sword, but not Fen Tian's heavy sword per se. Instead, it was the heavy sword of the Destruction God that spanned a length that was more than a thousand meters.

The better question was, what kind of visual image would it be, to be seeing a man who was barely two meters tall, holding a thousand meter-long heavy sword that was dazzling with a purplish light?

There seemed to be a black hole. No, more accurately, a purple hole behind Fen Tian. The periphery of the circle was dark purple, while the center was dyed a strange dark green. The light was constantly pulsing time and again on it. With each pulse, layers of distorted ray would form all around it as they would madly devour every type of attribute energy in the air. Even the platinum-colored Saint Energy seemed to have its golden light partially ripped apart and devoured, while its white light was repelled instead.

"Zhou Weiqing!" Like the sound of thunder, Fen Tian's voice rumbled in the air. Two intense dark purplish rays spewed out from his eyes. In a flash, the Destruction Sword on his hand was raised up high and slammed down again, forming a bright dazzling slice in the air as it charged towards Zhou Weiqing, who was still hovering in mid-air.

"Ah —" A loud scream reverberated from the sky. A peculiar golden light crashed onto Fen Tian with a speed that was indiscernible by the naked eye. Right now, even with Fen Tian's cultivation base, his body was still stunned for a moment and the speed that the Destruction Sword was heaving down seemed to have slowed down as well.

This golden light was actually shot from Tian'er's forehead. Even Fen Tian would be affected by her, as she possessed the Spirit Attribute, had her Saint Energy condensed and had also managed to acquire her Saint God Nucleus Core.

As she pointed her God Spirit Staff up high towards the sky, an intense platinum-colored light transformed into a light shield before it came into contact with Fen Tian's attack.

A thunderous rumble resonated in the air as creation clashed head-on with destruction.

The platinum-colored light shone all over the place as the shield shattered into pieces. Still, the Destruction Sword managed to be blocked and did not land on Zhou Weiqing.

Tian'er took a great stride and in a flash, she was already a hundred meters away in front of Zhou Weiqing. Both of her eyes were fixed on Fen Tian who was still in the distance as circles of white golden halos radiated from her body.

The God Spirit Staff drew a circle in the air and slowly, the Astral Divine Territory began to take shape without so much as a sound. Within a second, thousands and thousands of splendid white golden stars burst out and dashed towards Fen Tian's direction.

Fen Tian growled deeply. At once, the space behind him suddenly turned a purplish-black color as the bloodcurdling Destruction Energy transformed into a layer of light, spreading out to its surroundings. All of the white golden stars that burst out from the Astral Divine Territory a hundred meters ahead of him had turned into waves and vanished without a trace. Once more, the Destruction Sword in his hand slashed again and again. However, his target this time was Tian'er instead.

"Divine, Seal!" Tian'er shouted in her charming voice. All of a sudden, the Astral Divine Territory in the sky suddenly transformed into a gigantic Seraphic Blazeangel levitating in the air. In an extremely short period of time, both of its hands weaved

a mysterious sign and in just a flash, that sign was shot directly at the Destruction Sword.

Chapter 833: The Perfected Ringless Ground

Purging Set (1 | 2 | 3)

With a bang, the Destruction Sword came to a halt in the air. The sign shattered noisily as well. The Seraphic Blazeangel flickered, and a gigantic platinum-colored longsword appeared in his grasp instantly. Once again, it slammed down at the Destruction Sword.

Even though the angel sword was only a hundred meters long and paled significantly compared to the Destruction Sword, it actually managed to stop the gigantic Destruction Sword from slashing down again. Perhaps it was due to the sign earlier that somehow worked.

Purple light darted past Fen Tian's eyes, and the eight long legs by his side began to quiver. Instantly and without any warning, eight purplish black lights shone upon the Destruction Sword. The layer of platinum-colored light from the shattered sign that engulfed the Destruction Sword immediately dissipated. Furthermore, the light on the Destruction Sword suddenly became twice as bright.

Crack!

The angel's sword shattered. Even the Seraphic Blazeangel was sliced into two halves in mid-air by the slash of the Destruction Sword. Its gigantic body did not disappear immediately. Instead, it was absorbed by the Destruction Sword. It was devoured and completely cleaned out by the Destruction Light with a speed that was visible to the naked eye.

Tian'er's body shuddered violently. Blood drained from her face as she turned pale instantly. A streak of blood could be seen trickling down from the corner of her mouth.

She had a high expectation of Fen Tian but somehow, the power that Fen Tian had just demonstrated was far stronger than she had

expected. In fact, the current Tian'er was far stronger than Zhou Weiqing who previously fought with Fen Tian. Despite the fact that she was a Heavenly God who possessed Saint Energy and the support of the Saint God Nucleus Core, she was already wounded two rounds into the match. The purity of Fen Tian's Destruction Energy was a lot purer than Tian'er who had already achieved the Heavenly God Tier.

After the Destruction Sword destroyed the Seraphic Blazeangel, it paused briefly in the air before it accelerated and charged directly towards Tian'er. Fen Tian's goal was very straightforward. Even if he could not inflict any damage on Zhou Weiqing now, he had to first put Tian'er to death first. The compelling Saint Energy in Tian'er could equally become a threat to him as well. If she was allowed to work side by side with Zhou Weiqing, it would be hard to tell who would emerge as the victor in the end.

Even Shangguan Tianyang could clearly see that Zhou Weiqing was currently consolidating the eleventh piece of his legendary armor, Fen Tian naturally would be able to see that as well. Right now, only one word existed in his mind — destroy!

Swoosh!

A circle of platinum-colored light surged from Tian'er's body. A Heavenly Skill Image of a miniature Tian'er's gradually took form on her chest. That was the Saint God Nucleus Core. A beam of Saint Light blasted out from Tian'er's chest. With a bang, it mightily lifted the Destruction Sword with all its force. At the same time, Tian'er's face was completely pale as she spat out a mouthful of blood.

When Xue Ao'tian, who was watching the battle from afar, saw his daughter was wounded, he immediately became worried and attempted to charge forward. However, he was grabbed by the Six Ultimate Heavenly God Long Shiya before he had the chance to do that.

"Don't go! This battle is no longer within range of our powers! If you go, you'll only be digging your own grave, and you might drag your daughter down along with you. It's going to be Weiqing's turn to launch an attack soon."

The Destruction Sword was lifted once more. Fen Tian snorted coldly. In a blink of an eye, the eight long legs behind Fen Tian emitted a purplish-black light yet again. This time, it was not as simple as a straightforward blast. Instead, the purplish-black light was continuously infused into the Destruction Sword. Little by little, the thousand-meter long gigantic Destruction Sword became transparent. The energy ripple was so perturbing that multiple rifts began to appear in the Destruction Divine Territory.

Tian'er appeared to be so terribly small and weak in front of the Destruction Sword that was raised in the air. However, she did not even flinch or cower in the face of this. The Saint God Nucleus Core by her chest was unceasingly radiating ripples and ripples of intense platinum-colored halos. No matter what the outcome was, she was determined to withstand this blow. She would not allow Fen Tian to harm her man.

Whoosh!

Thick, dark purple light expanded aggressively on the Destruction Sword like flames. The gigantic sword instantly doubled its width as inexhaustible bloodlust and destruction aura plunged down like a purplish-black mountain crumbling towards Tian'er.

A look of despair could be seen in Tian'er's eyes. Fen Tian who had refined his Destruction Energy that had fused with the Destruction Attribute of so many of Blood Red Hell and Love Valley's followers had evidently become more powerful than before. His cultivation base had unquestionably gone beyond the Maximum Level of the Heavenly God Tier. Even if he had not fully reached the Heavenly Change Tier yet, at the very least, he already had half his foot in.

Tian'er's Saint Energy was not as pure as his. Coupled with the fact that there was a huge gap between their cultivation bases, how was she supposed to withstand it under such circumstances?

Tian'er knew that she might be able to help Weiqing block this blow but she might no longer be able to see her Little Fatty anymore.

The gigantic sword plunged down from the sky as it brought along the destructive aura, bloodlust, and an infinite terror along with it. It was like the entire Boundless Mainland would also be sliced and destroyed by just this one slash.

Despite that, a change could suddenly be seen in Fen Tian's eyes at this moment. Without any warning, a gray light materialized in front of his earth-shattering sword.

Ding!

A crisp sound resonated in the air. Even though it did not sound as horrifying as the previous rumble, with just this one loud and crisp ding, all of the powerhouses who were levitating in mid-air to watch the battle suddenly dropped toward the ground. They dropped for almost a thousand meters before they could carefully regain control of their bodies.

It was a long gray sword that appeared to be much more slender compared to the Destruction Sword. It had a gray, crystal-like body with a dazzling gray light that radiated brightly from its body. The air around it was so sharp that it seemed even sharper than the Destruction Sword.

The sword was not long. It looked like it was just about 1.5 meters long. Before such a gigantic sword like the Destruction Sword, it resembled a speck of dust. However, it was exactly this speck of dust that blocked the path of the Destruction Sword.

The gray sword light shimmered, stretched out and became a thousand meters long before it obstructed the Destruction Sword

abruptly. The two swords came to a halt in mid-air as they came in contact. Without warning, a gray figure materialized soundlessly in the air.

A figure that was a hundred meters tall. Evil yet handsome. It was the Demon God.

However, unlike the Demon God that Zhou Weiqing had summoned before, the current Demon God appeared more devilish. Furthermore, there was another figure that could be seen behind the Demon God. His hand was holding Tian'er who had previously fallen into despair.

This person was entirely enveloped in a white armor that could only be described to have absolute magnificence and dazzle. The entire armor set that was white in color appeared to be glittering and translucent. The armor seemed to be heavy as it covered his entire body. Apart from that, it seemed like a gigantic dragon was constantly swimming within the armor as ripples of platinum-colored light continuously radiated from it. A visible cluster of the nebula was spiraling continually at his back, and that was none other than the Astral Divine Territory. One could easily imagine just how powerful the armor set was with the Astral Divine Territory embedded in it.

The arms on the armor set were notably thick, with two sledgehammers in both hands. The hammers were not particularly big. However, it was apparent that the two lights that emanated from them were projecting their images in the sky, creating two gigantic energy sledgehammers that were a hundred meters long. They looked like a Heavenly Skill Image but even Fen Tian's Destruction Divine Territory could not seem to go near this pair of hammers.

Right in the middle of the chest of the armor was a piece of crystal clear milky gemstone that was in the form of a human being. Upon closer inspection, was that not Zhou Weiqing who was sitting cross-legged over there?

That was right, Zhou Weiqing had completed his consolidation. He had completed the last consolidation of his Ringless Ground Purging Set. The eleventh piece of the Ringless Ground Purging Set was no longer gold in color but a white god set. It was a true god set. Although the Boundless Infinitum Set was made up of eleven pieces as well, it was significantly inferior compared to the Ringless Ground Purging Set.

Not only did Zhou Weiqing summon the Demon God's Illusion, he actually managed to merge himself with it. It allowed the Demon God's illusion to bring into play a much greater power than before, to the point that even the Demon God's Sword was summoned. Just like how Fen Tian's power was magnified, similar changes could be seen in Zhou Weiqing as well.

Unexpectedly, the Demon God's body became incorporeal. In no time at all, the Demon God's sword expanded in the air and became a hundred meters long before it fell into the Demon God's hand. With a light flick of the long sword, he forcefully smacked the Destruction Sword away.

Zhou Weiqing who was still in mid-air was not standing around idly either. He threw his left hammer in the air as his right hammer swept across in front. The two hammers clashed together and a rich, intense platinum-colored Saint Energy blasted out in an instant. His Dual God Strength Hammers actually merged into one as it turned into a giant hammer with a long handle.

This gigantic hammer with a long handle was three meters long. The huge hammerhead's width was almost a meter long. A gigantic dragon could be indistinctly seen hovering and spiraling above it as both the smiling and crying-face hammers sparkled harmoniously.

Zhou Weiqing's right hand held onto the gigantic hammer as his left hand held onto Tian'er's hand. At this moment, Tian'er felt like her spirit had merged into one with his.

"He'll have to cross over my dead body first before he kills you!"

Zhou Weiqing's voice resonated by Tian'er's ears without a hint of hesitation. The next moment, he stepped into mid-air as well and stood side by side with the hundred-meter tall Demon God.

Fen Tian did not continue to launch his attack. As he stared at Zhou Weiqing and the Demon God, his eyes instantly turned darker, "The eleventh piece of the legendary armor set. Zhou Weiqing, looks like you have plenty of trump cards up your sleeves, don't you? However, these are all useless! So what if you have the Demon God? Even if the real Demon God is here, I'll make him fall today!"

As Fen Tian said that, he waved his right hand. Without any warning, the thousand-meter long Destruction Sword suddenly shrank at a rapid pace and transformed into a four-foot-long sword in his hand.

The Destruction Sword that became a four-foot sword turned into a deep, serene black color. Zhou Weiqing could not describe the feeling that the sword gave him at all. Additionally, Fen Tian's entire being was now shrouded in complete darkness, even his face could no longer be seen clearly.

At this moment, the Demon God suddenly made his move. He was an illusion that was summoned by Zhou Weiqing. That was why he immediately launched his attack without delay the instant he sensed that Zhou Weiqing was threatened.

The Demon God's Sword sliced upwards on its own. Fen Tian's black figure materialized out of thin air on its path. Even Zhou Weiqing who had mastered Spatial Law did not know how Fen Tian managed to appear there so suddenly.

Whoosh!

This time, the situation took a turn.

Ding!

With a crisp sound, the Demon God's sword broke into two...

Under the aghast expressions of Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er, the powerful Demon God's sword actually broke into two.

All of a sudden, Fen Tian enlarged in size and transformed into a gigantic mouth, completely shrouded in black, that devoured everything into nothingness. Without warning, it swallowed the Demon God along with its sword in just one mouth.

Zhou Weiqing immediately began to launch his attack. He lifted up the Dual God Strength Hammers with both of his hand as he charged towards with him without making any unnecessary moves.

Slam!

A dark shadow flew across and the Demon God instantly reappeared. However, it only appeared for barely a second before it vanished into a cloud of gray air.

The dark shadow that was thrown across was none other than Fen Tian. He was looking at Zhou Weiqing with an astonished look. However, Zhou Weiqing could not see the look on his face because he was completely shrouded in black.

The eleventh piece of the Ringless Ground Purging Set did not only multiply Zhou Weiqing's power by two-fold. Instead, it gave him a ten-fold increase of his original power. In other words, the power that Zhou Weiqing possessed now was ten-thousand-fold compared to his original power with the help of the Ringless Ground Purging Set. This was the ten-thousand-fold power of a Heavenly God, to be exact!

Any energy would start to have a certain degree of mutation the moment it reached its limit. Just as the saying went, all roads lead to Rome. Earlier, Zhou Weiqing swatted Fen Tian away with the help of his brute force. Although he was unable to inflict any injuries to Fen Tian, at the very least, he did not allow him to fully devour the Demon God's energy.

The Dual God Strength Hammers were waved again. In mid-air, a hundred-meter tall illusion of the gigantic hammer plunged down from the sky as it slammed its way towards Fen Tian.

There was another flash of shadows, and Fen Tian disappeared again. All the same, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er vanished as well.

A light reappeared. Without any warning, Fen Tian's Destruction Sword reemerged right at the spot where Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er were standing barely a second ago. The two of them, on the other hand, reappeared at another side.

The power that Zhou Weiqing used was the Spatial Law. As for the power that Fen Tian was using, well, he had no clue at all.

The gigantic hammer did not come to a halt despite Fen Tian's disappearance. Instead, it crudely slammed down in mid-air. With a loud rumble, a black hole with a diameter of a thousand meters was slammed open by the hammer. The energy from the devour was so robust that it caused Zhou Weiqing and Fen Tian's body to shake violently for a moment.

The Dual God Strength Hammers moved again. In no time at all, the illusion of the gigantic hammer in the air suddenly went into a frenzy as it began to smash in all directions without hesitation.

Whether it was Zhou Weiqing or Fen Tian, and regardless of how powerful their cultivation bases were, they were not real gods after all. They could not go near the black hole at all. Perhaps the black hole could not devour them, but it could still affect their strength greatly. At this moment, several dozens of gigantic black holes suddenly emerged in the sky as it blocked off all the routes of Fen Tian's attacks towards Zhou Weiqing.

"Do you really think that this can stop me?" Fen Tian's disdainful voice boomed in the air. His black figure expanded once again. With a swish, he enveloped a black hole and disappeared without a trace in just a blink of an eye.

Zhou Weiqing was struck dumb with astonishment. How was this possible? Has his Destruction Energy reached the point where it could even devour a black hole now? Even if he did not have the ultimate, purest form of Destruction Energy, it seemed like he was almost there.

Although Zhou Weiqing was taken aback, he could not possibly just stay idle. When the other party was devouring the black hole, the Dual God Strength Hammers rumbled like lightning instantly.

With a loud bang, the gigantic hammer along with the Ringless Ground Purging Set's terrifying energy burst out without warning and forcibly sent Fen Tian flying backward again.

However, Fen Tian did not seem to mind this attack at all. In just a flash, he charged forward once more. This time, his body suddenly shrank and became extremely small. The effect of him devouring the black hole earlier immediately became apparent. A crack began to appear on the black holes that were originally protecting Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er. In just a short while, Fen Tian suddenly crawled out from that hole. The black shadow suddenly enlarged as the Destruction Sword slashed directly towards Zhou Weiqing.

None of his techniques could help him now. The Dual God Strength Hammers slammed forward again. This was the first time the two of them directly clashed in direct contact after they raised their cultivation bases.

Wham!

The entire sky went dark for a moment. Within seconds, a black figure flew backward and crashed into a black hole. What a sagacious man Zhou Weiqing was! Before he sent his hammer out, he had already worked out the position. Fen Tian was not a match for him when it came to the matter of brute strength.

However, could the black hole inflict any harm on Fen Tian?

Shattered. The thing that was shattered was the black hole instead. Fen Tian's body actually shattered the black hole before it turned into black spots and slowly dissipated in the air.

On the contrary, even though Zhou Weiqing had managed to sent Fen Tian flying backward, he was not entirely free from complications. His body was densely covered in a layer of black light, his Ringless Ground Purging Set was shimmering brightly and intensely while its platinum-colored light was flickering in a frenzy. It was apparent that he did not have the upper hand in terms of attributes. His Saint Energy could barely suppress Fen Tian.

As soon as Fen Tian shattered the black hole, his black figure flickered across again without the need to regain his bearings. This time, his momentum was even more powerful than before.

Swish!

The platinum-colored light on Zhou Weiqing's body suddenly flared brightly as it forcefully melted the black light that covered his body. At the same time, his Dual God Strength Hammers was illuminated with the brilliance of a nebula as the spiraling nebula appeared directly at the hammerhead. As it turned out, he actually activated his Astral Divine Territory directly above it.

All of the Heavenly God-tier powerhouses who were watching the battle were stunned with their mouths wide open. All of them possessed a Divine Territory as well so it was natural that they knew how a Divine Territory functioned. They also knew that Divine Territories were easier to control when it was bigger in size. Although there was a limit to how much it could grow, it would not cause any pressure on the body at all. However, it was a different story when the Divine Territory shrank. Shrinking a Divine Territory was like compressing it. They could not imagine how one could possibly shrink his Divine Territory to become as small as the size of one's hammer like what Zhou Weiqing was doing at the moment.

At this moment, Tian'er changed her position and stood at Zhou Weiqing's back. Her entire being was pressed tightly against him with both her arms around his waist. She unreservedly infused all of her Saint Energy into Zhou Weiqing's body and fully merged their Saint Energy into one.

The sky suddenly dimmed without any warning. Just as quickly, a bright light shimmered and this time, Fen Tian was not sent flying. Instead, he was stuck firmly onto the hammerhead.

The platinum-colored light of the Astral Divine Territory completely enveloped Fen Tian's black-colored body. Innumerable stars appeared beside him and began to collide uncontrollably with the Destruction Energy that radiated off his body. Every time there was a collision, it produced a tenacious energy ripple that was filled with the elements of destruction and creation. It could clearly be seen that both of the white and black colors coming out of Fen Tian and Zhou Weiqing's bodies were slowing down at a visible speed.

Was it true that Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy could not restrain Fen Tian's Destruction Energy? Naturally, the answer was negative. The twins known as creation and destruction would always inhibit each other. After Zhou Weiqing had managed to raise his cultivation base to the Heavenly God Tier, the purity of his Saint Energy was not inferior to Fen Tian at all.

He was waiting for an opportunity, waiting for the window when Fen Tian let his guard down. The reason he allowed the Destruction Energy to attach itself to his body in the first collision was so that Fen Tian would let down his guard and opportunity would come in the next moment.

Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's combined Saint Energy might not be on par with Fen Tian's Destruction Energy. However, at the very least, it could act as a firm restraint on Fen Tian in terms of their attributes. All of the weaknesses that he previously displayed had vanished without a sight. Even Tian'er who was hugging Zhou

Weiying tightly could not help but let out a faint smile.

Indeed, from the moment she resisted Fen Tian's attack, Zhou Weiying had already laid his trap in place. The previous defeat when their attributes clashed was merely a facade.

Fen Tian who was completely shrouded in black gradually exposed his original appearance. However, what took Zhou Weiying by surprise was that he could not even see a hint of panic on Fen Tian's face.

Zhou Weiying's motive was relatively simple, that was to deplete. He was going to rely on his Saint Energy's Creation Attribute to deplete Fen Tian of his Destruction Attribute. He had full faith in his self-healing abilities. After all, with the presence of his Astral Divine Territory, and as long as the stars that were created during the genesis were still present in the sky, his Saint Energy would still continue to be replenished. On the contrary, Fen Tian no longer had any other powerhouse who possessed the Destruction Energy by his side anymore.

"Do you really think that my current self can only devour the Destruction Attribute?" Fen Tian sneered coldly. All of a sudden, the eight long legs behind him stretched outwards. Almost instantly, a black orb lit up at the tip of each leg. It was just like eight tiny black holes had materialized out of nowhere.

Eight bright lights blasted forward and went straight to the crowd that was watching the battle.

'SH*T!' Zhou Weiying yelled in his heart but everything was too late. The first victims were eight powerhouses from the Heaven's Expanse Palace. The eight Heaven's Expanse Palace's Heavenly Kings were directly hit by the eight black lights. In the next moment, they had already vanished on the spot before they could even let out a shrill cry. On the other side, the black light that was diminishing on Fen Tian's body suddenly turned brighter. What worried Zhou Weiying the most right now was that the black lights

on the eight long legs had begun to lit up again.

However, this time, the eight lights did not hit the crowd. Instead, they were aimed towards the eight holes that had not completely vanished in the air yet. The eight holes all dimmed at once and at the next moment, Zhou Weiqing felt a Destruction Energy that was powerful beyond comparison erupting from Fen Tian's body. His Dual God Strength Hammers could no longer bind the Destruction Sword to it.

With a loud rumble, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er were sent flying away. The bloodcurdling Destruction Energy metamorphosed into a large devouring mouth and bit down brutally on Zhou Weiqing's body.

"Urghhh —" Zhou Weiqing spat out a mouthful of fresh blood. The atrocious Destruction Energy erupted completely from inside his body. Even the light from the Ringless Ground Purging Set on his body dimmed down.

'Damn it!'

It had never crossed Zhou Weiqing's mind that Fen Tian's power could actually rise to such a level after he had borrowed his power from the Nether Lord.

Fen Tian sneered. He did not rush forward to give chase to Zhou Weiqing. He merely lifted his right hand and raised the Destruction Sword. A strange voice that was neither male nor female could suddenly be heard coming from his body.

"You lowly humans, how daring of you to want to destroy my plans?! You must be out of your mind! The war between mankind has already begun. What a lovely feeling this is, to listen to the sorrowful souls and this sense of foreboding evil. The current Fen Tian already possesses a third of my power. It's not something that all of you can defeat so easily! All of you will die. When I'm released from my shackles and descend to Earth, that'll be the end for all you humans!"

A dark gloomy light soared up into the sky and spread outwards in a circular pattern. Within seconds, it had already reached a thousand meters in diameter. Right at the center of the dark light, a mass of dark green color that looked eerily like a gigantic eye appeared soundlessly.

At that moment, a powerful suction energy that defied all expectation erupted from the dark gloomy hole that was a thousand meters wide in diameter. The suction energy was at least a hundred times stronger than that of a normal black hole. It did not matter if it was Zhou Weiqing who stood only a short distance away or the powerhouses of Heaven's Expanse Palace, Peerless Sect and Heavenly Snow Mountain who were all standing from afar watching the battle, all of them could no longer control their own bodies as they were tightly hauled by the perturbing devouring Destruction Energy. Their bodies were pulled closer and closer to it.

Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er could barely stabilize their bodies. It was all that they could do to stabilize themselves. It was fundamentally impossible for them to escape this time.

The Nether Lord. The voice just now had to belong to the Nether Lord. Just a third of his power and it was already this powerful. To what extent exactly was the power that the true Nether Lord possessed? It would definitely be the end of mankind if they allowed him to descend to Earth.

"Nether Lord, you'll never succeed!" A cool and pleasant voice resonated at this moment. Immediately afterward, a turquoise light appeared in the void soundlessly right above Fen Tian, directly in the middle of the black hole.

"Elven Queen? Oh, my bad, I should call you the Elven Empress now. Are you really trying to stop me all by yourself?" Disdain could be heard in the Nether Lord's remark.

The Elven Empress did not speak a word at all as a faint turquoise

light began to ooze out from her body. Despite the fact that she was situated right in the middle of the devouring black hole, the black hole did not affect her at all.

One by one, she continuously made complicated hand signs in front of her chest. The turquoise light that was growing more intense as time went by, surged out from her in the form of a light halo. Her gaze, on the other hand, was trained on Zhou Weiqing.

"Weiqing, I can only temporarily hold off Fen Tian. The only thing that can inflict real harm on him is your Saint Energy. We don't have many opportunities left so you'll have to launch your most powerful attack and destroy him completely. He's merely a projection of the Nether Lord so we must first kill him off. Otherwise, everyone present here will die and Fen Tian will be able to use our power to open up a passage for the Nether Lord. You only have thirty seconds!"

The Elven Empress's voice was solemn with a hint of nervousness. This was the first time Zhou Weiqing had seen her in such a state since he met her, except for the time when the Elven Princess was abducted. One could easily imagine how terribly formidable the Fen Tian before them had become.

Rays of turquoise light descended from the sky like drooping vines and enveloped Fen Tian entirely. Right at this moment, the black devouring hole in the sky had also come to a pause. It was as if all the Destruction Energy had been isolated by the Elven Empress.

Those turquoise lights compressed inwardly and literally crushed Fen Tian. It prevented him from releasing his Destruction Energy.

"Elven Empress, what you're doing now is like quenching thirst with poison. How long do you think you'll be able to hold me back like this? I'm more interested in seeing how much vitality you're planning to burn this time!" The Nether Lord's voice was still full of disdain. It was apparent he was not at all worried about the

Elven Empress' actions.

The Elven Empress did not utter a sound. On the contrary, the turquoise light became even more intense to the point that Fen Tian who was trapped in the middle could no longer move.

Zhou Weiqing and the Elven Empress was still sharing the same life. For this reason, he knew that what the Nether Lord had said was correct. At this moment, the Elven Empress was burning her life to purify her Life Saint Energy to an appalling degree. It was only just enough to trap Fen Tian who could utilize the Nether Lord's energy.

In fact, the energy that the Elven Empress was using right now was not entirely her own. She was actually using the energy of the Elven Elders as well. Even a part of the Elf Tribe's Ancient Tree of Life's energy was being used by her right now. Even so, she could only last for 30 seconds.

Zhou Weiqing motioned for Tian'er to release his body. As she did that, the Dual God Strength Hammers in his hands vanished without a trace. Thirty seconds. He only had thirty seconds. Right now, Fen Tian did not even have a corporeal form. It would be extremely difficult to launch a powerful attack within half a minute to kill him who possessed a third of the Nether Lord's power.

The most difficult part lay with the fact that Fen Tian's Destruction Energy was currently so pure that it had reached a terrifying level. If Zhou Weiqing could not kill him off with a blow, he would be able to devour any energy from the air or even open a black hole to devour its energy and heal himself.

Zhou Weiqing did not have the slightest bit of confidence in his own Saint Energy. Thirty seconds was really too short. If he merely used the depletion method to attack him, he would never be able to kill Fen Tian off completely in such a short amount of time.

Due to this reason, Zhou Weiqing did not even bother trying to deplete him any longer. He had another option, an option that he had never tried before. However, at this moment, all he could do was to take a gamble and bet to see if he could succeed.

The gentle Saint Energy ripple slowly oozed out of Zhou Weiqing's body. The tiny figure in front of his chest followed suit as if its eyes were also open.

The purest Saint Energy in the Saint God Nucleus Core surged out gently. Zhou Weiqing clasped both of his hands together and made a very strange gesture.

His fingers were clasped together but the palms were not touching each other. A fist-sized distance was left in between the palms as both of the palms faced each other. Without warning, the Saint God Nucleus Core flew out from his chest and stopped right in between his palms. The radiant platinum-colored light suddenly shone brightly at once. The tiny Saint God Nucleus Core that was floating between Zhou Weiqing's palms had the same pose as Zhou Weiqing and looked rather peculiar.

It also had its hands clasped together with its palms facing each other and a small space in between.

The light on Zhou Weiqing's forehead lit up immediately. In that instance, both of his eyes suddenly turned gray before a huge Heavenly Skill Image gradually emerged at his back.

When one reached the level of his cultivation base, the Heavenly Skill Projection that was cast would usually be of his own image. However, at this moment, the Heavenly Skill Projection that materialized behind Zhou Weiqing was not himself at all.

It was a gigantic tiger that was entirely black in color — the Dark Demon God Tiger. Its stout tail was curved, the huge wide wings and the imposing manner were, without a doubt, much stronger than before.

In fact, Zhou Weiqing had never once cast the Dark Demon God Tiger Heavenly Skill Projection ever since he became a Heavenly King. However, he had no choice but to launch it now in the face of such a critical situation.

Other than its powerful and imposing manner, what made the Dark Demon God Tiger different than before was the rider on its back. It was a miniature version of Zhou Weiqing. If one was to look carefully, one would notice that the Saint God Nucleus Core that was originally between Zhou Weiqing's palms were no longer there. His God Saint Nucleus Core had actually merged with his own Dark Demon God Tiger Heavenly Skill Projection. What a strange situation this was!

Nobody had any idea what Zhou Weiqing was going to do next. Even the Elven Empress who shared the same heart with him could not split part of her attention to sense it because she needed to devote all of her energy into sealing Fen Tian. At any rate, she had absolute confidence in Zhou Weiqing. That was a kind of faith that no words could describe.

Fen Tian, who was unable to break free from the Elven Empress' restraint, decided to just hover in the air quietly as he silently watched Zhou Weiqing from a distance. He did not know why but there was an uneasy feeling eating its way to his heart right now. However, at this moment, the energy ripple that emanated out of Zhou Weiqing was not strong at all. After he had withdrawn his Dual God Strength Hammers, he even retracted his Astral Divine Territory.

'Under such circumstances, how can Zhou Weiqing possibly inflict any injury on me with his attack?' Fen Tian thought to himself.

Fen Tian was certain that Zhou Weiqing would fail.

The terrifying Destruction Energy continued to struggle against the Elven Empress' restraint. Perhaps only the Elven Empress

alone was able to hold him off temporarily in such a state. However, such a restraint greatly depleted her energy as well even if she was the Elven Empress. Fen Tian was absolutely certain that as long as he could break off this restraint, she would be the first to bear the brunt. He would be able to slaughter the Elven Empress and devour her. At that time, Zhou Weiqing and his wife would be nothing compared to him. Even if he was left all alone, even if he had to pay such a hefty price to obtain this powerful strength, he believed that he would still be able to wipe off all the powerhouses that were before him. When that time came, he would still at least be an emissary in this world, even if he was only a stooge for the Nether Lord.

'Zhou Weiqing's eyes suddenly turned gray, huh? Does he intend to use the Demon God's energy?' Fen Tian thought to himself when he saw the changes in Zhou Weiqing's eyes.

On the other hand, the Dark Demon God Tiger and the Saint God Nucleus Core behind him seemed to be unable to withstand such a great deal of energy as they began to distort in an unreal pattern. At this time, a tiny black hole emerged between Zhou Weiqing's opposing palms.

From the appearance itself, this black hole could only be described with one word — minuscule. Even though Zhou Weiqing's action was slowly becoming bigger, it was still quite limited. Even with Fen Tian's cultivation base, he could not sense the presence of any energy or aura coming from it at all. Such a tiny black hole did not even warrant an attack from Fen Tian. In his mind, he was sure that such an attack would automatically vanish the moment it came in contact with his body.

This was his intuitive judgment on the energy but he did not understand why he was feeling particularly strange. Somehow, he had a gut feeling that this seemingly insignificant tiny ball of energy might pose a threat to him. However, he was not sure exactly where did this sense of threat come from.

The tiny black hole gradually expanded as Zhou Weiqing slowly opened up his arms. His eyes were extremely focused because this attack would be his only chance. Due to this reason, he would never allow himself to make even the slightest mistake. At this moment, whether it was him, Fen Tian or even the Elven Empress, each of them had placed their bets. It's either succeed or die!

As the black hole slowly became bigger, Fen Tian could finally see the uniqueness of this black hole. The surroundings of an ordinary black hole would usually be entirely dark or filled with devastating and destructive devouring energy. However, it was not the case for this black hole that Zhou Weiqing cast. Instead, around the black hole were circles of distorted bright light. That was exactly how the Heavenly Skill Projection's Heavenly Skill Image got distorted.

The feeling of uneasiness suddenly became even more intense. Fen Tian struggled with all his might and the Destruction Energy in his body erupted all as he tried to drive the Elven Empress away.

The Empress felt very pleased when she sensed Fen Tian's hysteria. It was apparent that Zhou Weiqing's attack must be effective. Otherwise, why would Fen Tian suddenly go berserk? The fire of life continued to burn vigorously. It was so vigorous that one could even see the seemingly real turquoise flame flickering above the Elven Empress' head.

Chapter 834: Genesis Time Law (1)

The Elf Tribe did not lack vitality, especially after the Ancient Tree of Life went through its second evolution. Despite how the Elven Empress was suffering from being tremendously depleted at this point, it was certainly not a problem for her to hold out for another thirty seconds like she had mentioned before. Moreover, even if her vitality had been exhausted, she could still make use of her connection with the Ancient Tree of Life to restore her vitality if given enough time. This was the advantage of Ancient Tree of Life's evolution.

The black hole in front of Zhou Weiqing's chest then expanded to a diameter of one meter before it finally stopped. Zhou Weiqing raised his hand slowly, not to push the black hole towards Fen Tian; instead, he raised it up until it reached the top of his head. This was followed closely by the black hole being suspended in mid-air as it expanded once again, this time to a diameter of three metres above his head.

The pitch-black, distorted radiance then completely turned into a platinum color, followed immediately by Zhou Weiqing's entire body warping into something unreal and distorted.

"Come at me Fen Tian, I'll let you broaden your horizon with my ultimate critical strike." Zhou Weiqing's eyes were shimmering with a divine radiance; his right hand pointed to the front of Fen Tian, who was currently restricted by the Elven Empress.

An intensely distorted radiance appeared in the black hole above Zhou Weiqing's head and surged towards Fen Tian like an electrical snake.

That distorted radiance may seem weak and small, not even affecting the energy ripples in the least. However, when it came into contact with the Elven Empress' dark green-colored life force that was capable of trapping Fen Tian, all the dark green-colored

life force vanished completely to everyone's surprise. Even the Elven Empress was swept away by the gushing distorted radiance as she disappeared into thin air along with it.

Its target was not the Elven Empress, but since it came into contact with the energy she released with the support of the twelve Elf Tribe's elders, it was attracted by it. Then, it swept the Elven Empress away as well. It was indeed a terrifying energy! Following that, it was branded onto Fen Tian's black-colored ball of Destruction Energy.

Fen Tian had already used his fastest speed to run when the Elven Empress was swept away. However, the surrounding space suddenly distorted, and his movements turned exceedingly slow, beyond his control. Before they knew it, that distorted radiance was then branded onto his body.

"Th-this... is the Genesis Time Law!" The shocked voice did not belong to Fen Tian's, but was from the Nether Lord. The distorted halo flashed past, before Fen Tian and Zhou Weiqing vanished in a split second.

Time Law was similar to the Spatial Law, but the Time Law that belonged to the Divine Attribute was obviously more powerful than the latter, though Fen Tian's Time Law had the word Genesis preceding it. What did it mean? It meant that Zhou Weiqing's Time Law had already merged perfectly with the Genesis Energy in his Saint Energy. Fen Tian's powerful Destruction Energy was then rendered incapable of reversing it.

The agitated energy in the sky was suddenly swept away into nothingness; even the huge engulfing hole created by Fen Tian earlier had vanished as well. The crowd who witnessed the battle from afar could feel their heart rates increasing into an extremely intense, violent level. What did Zhou Weiqing actually do? Why did Zhou Weiqing, the Elven Empress, and Fen Tian disappear from the sky? Where did they go? Time Law? How did the Time Law make people disappear?

No one understood what was happening there and then, but these questions did not matter to them anymore, even from the very beginning.

When the Elven Empress was swept away by the distorted radiance, she could only feel the time around her turning slow all of a sudden. Following that, the energy she released earlier and the energy in her body decayed at an astonishing speed.

Suddenly, a radiance flashed and she appeared at a strange place.

It was an amazing arena; its diameter was more than fifty meters with a twisted radiance surrounding it. Everything seemed and appeared to be unreal.

Another figure appeared at this moment. The Elven Empress scrutinized it closely and found that it was a young boy who had appeared out of nowhere.

The clothes on his body had already completely disappeared. Even though he looked like he was six to seven years old, his face was overflowing with a foul evil. He was also astonished when he caught sight of the Elven Empress.

"Are you the El-elven Empress?" His shocked, childish voice echoed. Even though it was the voice of a child, it was filled with a murderous intent. Moreover, there was no way to tell if the voice came from a boy or a girl.

"Nether Lord?" The Elven Empress gasped in surprise. She lowered her head and looked down at herself subconsciously; she was stunned immediately.

At this exact moment, the Elven Empress had the body of a child. There was only a pair of tiny wings on her back that could only set her afloat in mid-air. She was right, her own cultivation base had almost completely disappeared. In other words, she was in a state where she had transformed into her six-year-old self. Could the young boy before her be Fen Tian?

'Zhou Weiqing, what sort of skill did you actually use? How did we turn into this?'

It was at this exact moment that a figure that was much taller than they were, appeared within the horizon quietly.

Zhou Weiqing, who was dressed in the Ringless Ground Purging Set slowly emerged. He could not help but be stunned when he saw the arena with his very own eyes, with Fen Tian and the Elven Empress standing within it.

"I have succeeded. I've truly succeeded. The Time Law that restores childhood, hahaha! I've truly succeeded!" There was a layer of distorted light rings floating around Zhou Weiqing's body that made him seem slightly unreal, but his proud expression remained exactly the same as it was before.

"Weiqing, what's happening here?" The Elven Empress could not help but ask, while Fen Tian, who was only six years old, had a very unpleasant expression on his face.

Zhou Weiqing chuckled as he spoke, "This is one of my abilities. When I broke through to the Heavenly God Tier, I realized that the skill utilizes the Time Attribute. This skill allows me to turn life-forms in a designated area around me back to their childhood days while I remain unaffected by the transformation. It's effective on every living thing unless the life-form escapes the designated area around me when I use the ability, or if the life-form attacks me and renders me incapable of using the ability. If that's not the case, once this ability has been used, it'll definitely be successful. Initially, this ability was not powerful enough to shrink Fen Tian's Destruction Energy. However, Fen Tian was still only Fen Tian. He's just borrowing the Nether Lord's abilities. In fact, he isn't even the genuine Nether Lord. My ability will be effective as long as he still has a body. Moreover, this skill is powered by the merging of the Saint God Nucleus Core. Your Majesty, I am truly grateful to you for your actions in restraining him or I would not have been able to use this ability. Oh and... little Fen Tian, what

else do you have to say right now?"

Chapter 835: Genesis Time Law (2)

The Nether Lord exclaimed coldly, "Fen Tian's nothing but a puppet of mine. I truly didn't expect that you would be able to master the Genesis Time Law. What a waste! Your skill may be effective against Fen Tian, but it's utterly useless against me. You can trap living things, but my Destructive Thought is not something that your puny Time Law can trap. I'll admit that I lost the battle here. However, the Netherworld's about to open a passageway that leads to this stretch on the mainland. The day my true body descends to this world is the day all of you are destroyed. Fen Tian is my puppet. Even if he has to die, he'll die by my hands."

As he was saying that, two green-colored light suddenly shot out of the little six-year-old Fen Tian's eyes. With a pop, his head exploded just like that. The two green-colored light merged into one in the air, and it seemed to stare at Zhou Weiqing for a moment before it forcefully erupted while the Time Law's constraint vanished.

All the Destruction Energy in the air seemed to vanish with this disappearance. There was only Fen Tian's corpse that dropped onto the ground with a thud. The Saint Land Lord from the Blood Red Hell did not even manage to say his final words before he died.

Zhou Weiqing and the Elven Empress stared at each other. They could not refrain from laughing, "So did we lose or win? Fen Tian's already so powerful with only a third of the Nether Lord's abilities, how are we going to deal with the actual Nether Lord then?"

The Elven Empress sighed, "We are incapable of dealing with him. The Nether Lord's not lying. The Genesis Time Law is only capable of restraining lifeforms like us, but he's different. He's formed completely from the Destruction Energy and resentment. He's not even a living entity with substance. Moreover, the level of his Destruction Attribute significantly exceeds the level of your

Genesis Time Law. Unless you can comprehend the true Genesis Law, even with all of us combined, we still won't be a match for him."

"Comprehend the true Genesis Law? Is there even a way to do that?" Zhou Weiqing asked in a lowered voice.

The Elven Empress let out a forced laugh as she spoke, "That's impossible. There's only one person who has ever mastered the Genesis Law, and that person was the Genesis God. After he created the world, his Genesis Law disappeared and ceased to exist. If you can master the Genesis Law, you'll become the new Genesis God. You'll be able to destroy the likes of the Boundless Mainland with just a turn of your palm. How will it be possible for something like that to happen? The Genesis God no longer exists."

Zhou Weiqing stared at her in bewilderment as he asked, "So what are we going to do then? We can't just wait for our doom here, right?"

The Elven Empress spoke, "We should leave this place first before we discuss the matter any further. Our only way out is to reinforce the seal on the exit of the Netherworld passageway. It won't be a difficult task to reinforce the seal with your Saint Energy. As long as we can stop the Nether Lord from charging out, what else can it do even if it's more powerful? It's already at the Heaven Change Tier now, and it's also a God in the truest sense. However, it's still incapable of breaking out of the secure seal that was formed from the divine blood from the bloodline of all the different sects."

Zhou Weiqing nodded. In truth, he did not like the feeling of destiny not being in his control. However, he could only abide by the Elven Empress' suggestion for the time being.

A distorted halo flashed past, and Zhou Weiqing and the Elven Empress simultaneously emerged within the void. When they emerged once again to their own space-time continuum, the Elven Empress returned to her original state accordingly. On the other

hand, Fen Tian's corpse was in Zhou Weiqing's hand. Apart from the corpse, Fen Tian's Heavenly Core Nucleus was in Zhou Weiqing's other hand. It was the Heavenly Core Nucleus of Maximum-Level Heavenly God.

The Heavenly Snow Mountain, Heaven's Expanse Palace, and Peerless Sect powerhouses were initially idling around because they were at a loss of what to do. It seemed like Zhou Weiqing and the Elven Empress had only vanished for a split second before they reappeared again in the next moment. To everyone's surprise, Fen Tian had already turned into a corpse.

After a short moment of silence, sounds of cheering similar to mighty wave erupted.

After experiencing such a long battle with countless life and death situations, the great battle had finally ended. They were precisely the final victor.

Within the sound of cheers, Zhou Weiqing's soulmates had already pounced on him. Tian'er who was also a participant of the earlier battle stood the closest to him. She hugged Zhou Weiqing tightly. The other women were not slow either as they surrounded Zhou Weiqing in the center.

The powerhouses from the Three Great Saint Lands also surrounded him one after another. They were truly relieved when they saw the corpse with its blown-off head. It did not matter that they went through many hardships, the battle had finally ended and victory was theirs.

Shangguan Tianyang could not refrain himself from asking, "Weiqing, how did you do it? Is Fen Tian..."

Zhou Weiqing wrapped his arms around his soulmates on the left and right as he chuckled, "Uncle, this is a secret. There's no way I'm telling all of you. I can only say that Fen Tian has truly died. However, everything hasn't ended yet. The threat from the Netherworld Lord still stands."

After hearing his final sentence, the crowd's initial excitement instantly became much quieter. Each of Zhou Weiqing's soulmates loosened their grip on his arms shyly. At one point, they truly thought that they were going to lose Zhou Weiqing, with all of their resentment and grudges turning into anxiousness. However, while they were looking at everyone nearby at this moment, they saw Dongfang Hanyue who was also standing next to them. The joy on their faces was once again, replaced by jealousy.

The Elven Empress spoke, "Zhou Weiqing is right. We can't relax our vigilance yet. We must quickly make our way to the seal at the exit of the Netherworld's pathway. Judging from the Nether Lord's confidence, I predict that it think it's certain that it will be able to break through the seal. At that time, no one will be able to stop him if he descends to our world."

Shangguan Tianyang's expression became solemn as he spoke, "So where's this Nether Pathway then? Your majesty, please teach me."

The Elven Empress lowered her gaze as she bided, "It's precisely there."

The crowd followed her gaze. Moreover, more than half of the Wan Shou Heaven's surface area was destroyed. Shangguan Tianyang was startled, "Brother Xue, this..."

Xue Ao'tian sighed before he spoke, "There's no need to hide anything now. It's true. Those of us from the Heavenly Snow Mountain has always been guarding the Nether Pathway's exit. My wife's even one of the seal's guardian. After she gave birth to Tian'er back in those days, she returned to the seal right here. I've never seen the Nether Pathway's seal before, but this is definitely the exit."

Zhou Weiqing looked at the Elven Empress, "Your Majesty. What are we supposed to do now?"

The dark clouds and darkness in the sky had already dispersed

following the battle's end, and sunlight was shining on the ground. However, the Heavenly Snow Mountain no longer existed. Moreover, more than half of the Wan Shou Heaven's surface area was destroyed.

The Elven Empress spoke in a solemn tone upon feeling the gazes from everyone, "It's useless for ordinary people to go to the seal. Weiqing, you shall go with Tian'er. You and Tian'er possess true Saint Energy, only the two of you truly possess the ability to reinforce the Netherworld's seal. I'm one of the originators who created the seal back in the day, and my lineage has the ability to reinforce the seal as well. However, you'll need to further enhance your cultivation base before you leave for the Netherworld's seal. You need to restore the two enormous dragon spirits so the dragons can come along with you. You can rely on their Dragon Emperor Bloodlines to ease the process of reinforcing the seal."

Zhou Weiqing nodded, "Very well. In that case, we'll begin now."

The Elf Tribe's twelve elven elders had already brought over the two enormous dragons, Hui Yao and Duo Si. The Elven Empress relied on her powerful Life Saint Energy to put them into a temporary slumber after trapping them earlier. However, the black-colored stains on their bodies had yet to fade.

Zhou Weiqing first went over to the upper area of the enormous dragon Hui Yao's head. His hands were glimmering with a gentle white light as he conjured up the Dual God Strength Hammers. The Astral Divine Territory was still attached to the giant hammers as well.

He aimed the giant hammers downwards and pinned it down onto Hui Yao's head. A white-colored radiance flashed past and the pure Saint Energy amplified by the Astral Divine Territory was infused into Hui Yao's body.

Hui Yao's enormous body started trembling violently all of a sudden. It was Fen Tian who exercised control over Hui Yao and

Duo Si earlier, the Destruction Energy that was controlling them turned into a masterless matter now that Fen Tian was already dead. The Destruction Energy was utterly defenseless in the face of Zhou Weiqing's pure Nebula Saint Energy that had advanced to the Heavenly God Tier. It only took a few moments before the black color on Hui Yao's body gradually faded and disappeared.

On the other side, Tian'er was also following the same method as she removed the Destruction Energy within Duo Si's body.

After the process was completed, Zhou Weiqing did not relax. Instead, he furrowed his brows and did not lift the giant hammers in his hands that was still pinning Hui Yao's head down.

"Woo..." The low and deep sound of a dragon's roar slowly escaped Hui Yao's mouth as he slowly opened his enormous dragon's eyes. When his muddled eyesight gradually turned crystal clear, the sound of a dismal dragon's roar burst forth from Hui Yao's mouth suddenly.

"No... my children." On the other side, Duo Si's dismal and agonizing moan echoed simultaneously. The two enormous dragons let out a sorrowful howl as if they had simultaneously become hysterical. It made all of the powerhouses on the scene feel a sense of grief for them.

Zhou Weiqing had already predicted such an outcome, but he still could not refrain from feeling heavy-hearted. Even Hui Yao and Duo Si were enslaved by the Blood Red Hell, there was no need to go into details about their children.

The only thing that Zhou Weiqing could do at this moment was to use his gentle Saint Energy to continuously ease the grievance in Hui Yao and Duo Si's hearts.

Hui Yao and Duo Si gradually turned calmer after a long while. Hui Yao raised his enormous head and looked at Zhou Weiqing. Surprisingly, his ginormous body was still trembling.

"Weiqing, they...they killed my children and used my children as a blood sacrifice to the Nether Lord. I...I..."

Zhou Weiqing squatted down and gently caressed Hui Yao's huge head, "What has passed is past. Turn your pain into strength, my friend. We've already destroyed the Blood Red Hell, and I've also killed Fen Tian. We're now heading to the Netherworld's seal urgently to reinforce the seal so that the Nether Lord's vision to come to our world will be unfulfilled."

Chapter 836: Animus Realm (1)

After listening to Zhou Weiqing's words, Hui Yao and Duo Si's eyes gradually turned red. Fierce and murderous intent oozed out from their bodies. At Zhou Weiqing's inquiry, they finally told the story that took place after they went their separate ways.

It turned out that after Hui Yao and his wife went their separate ways from Zhou Weiqing, they proceeded to look for their children. Relying on the connections of their bloodline, they finally found the Blood Red Hell. Just in time, they saw their children being used as the blood sacrifice for the Nether Lord that was presided by Fen Tian.

Naturally, Hui Yao and his wife went crazy upon seeing this. However, the Nether Lord's Destruction Energy materialized once again at that moment. Under Fen Tian's control, it managed to inflict great harm on the two of them. With the help of the power from their children's blood sacrifice, they took the opportunity while Hui Yao and his wife were in a confused state of mind as they went berserk and enslaved them using the Destruction Energy. It was not until this moment that they finally regained their consciousness.

Duo Si went to stand beside Hui Yao. The two dragons snuggled with each other with their necks touching as Duo Si burst into tears. After all, anybody would be sad losing their children.

At this moment, a peculiar wave of energy suddenly caused the entire realm to quake. It caused everyone to stay vigilant on their feet.

Not only did the air quiver, the ground below quaked as well. A wave of Destruction Aura blasted out from the middle of the abyss. Even though it was not particularly strong, the sense of Destruction aura in it was more than enough to elicit horrors on their faces. The sky that had just lit up seemed to have dimmed

down a little as well.

The Elven Empress quickly urged, "Weiqing, hurry! Absorb Fen Tian's Heavenly Nucleus Core! We must really go now! It must be the Nether Lord smashing the seal. It seems like the seal can no longer hold him off!"

Zhou Weiqing did not dare to waste any time. As he activated his Astral Divine Territory, Fen Tian's Heavenly Nucleus Core transformed into a stream of light and flowed into the Astral Divine Territory. Thousands and thousands of stars instantly shined brightly at the same time as it gave feedback to his body and increased his cultivation base sharply.

The Elven Empress did not stay idle either. She crossed her legs in midair and restored her Life Energy that was used up previously. In a sense, sealing the Nether Lord would be their true final battle.

As Zhou Weiqing bathed in the pure starlight, circles of halos started to form around his Saint God Nucleus Core. Even his skin began to show signs of ripples as the Saint Energy continued to refine and purify in the midst of the elevation of his cultivation base. However, just like what the Elven Empress had said, he noticed that even if he cast the Star Feedback on a powerful Destruction Heavenly Nucleus Core like Fen Tian's, it would still be impossible for him to touch the threshold of the level that Fen Tian used to have half his foot in previously.

As it turned out, having Saint Energy prevented one from entering the Heavenly Change Tier. Rather contradictorily, the creation characteristics in Saint Energy would confine and limit one's future.

If the Heavenly Change Tier would allow one to become God, then he would never become a god.

It did not matter much to Zhou Weiqing if he became a god or not. However, if he could not break through this barrier, how

could he face the Nether Lord if he managed to break open the seal? How could he protect his family, friends, or the entire world if he could not kill him?

Even though Zhou Weiqing was not particularly enthusiastic about power, he had always been a person with a strong desire to control. This was a situation that he liked the least where it was completely out of his control, and he had to rely on luck instead. However, at this moment, he had done everything that he could have done. He worked hard to improve his cultivation base, and every time he improved slightly, luck would naturally be a step closer to him

The Astral Divine Territory did not expand outwards with the elevation of his cultivation base. Instead, it engulfed Zhou Weiqing entirely and made it seem like multiple stars that could emit Saint Energy was embedded in his Ringless Ground Purging Set. The Saint Energy that became increasingly pure effectively suppressed the Destruction Energy that was rising from beneath the abyss.

Little by little, the starlight converged. The Astral Feedback's energy had completely integrated with Zhou Weiqing's body. Fen Tian's Destruction Heavenly Nucleus Core was indeed powerful. As the saying went, when things were at their worst, they began to mend. The Nebula Saint Energy that was obtained from the Feedback did not deplete as much compared to the Star Feedback of other ordinary Heavenly Jewel Master's Heavenly Nucleus Core. Zhou Weiqing's cultivation base was greatly raised all the way up to the Maximum Level of the Heavenly God Tier from the Middle Level, and there was even some Saint Energy left. However, this leftover Saint Energy could only ultimately make his Saint Energy more abundant, it could not help him with another breakthrough.

The Star Feedback's light dimmed down but the starlight on Zhou Weiqing's Ringless Ground Purging Set did not disappear accordingly. Instead, it became even clearer. Stars shone brilliantly on the white armor as if the luster that was full of Saint

Energy would easily spill out from any parts of his body with just a simple thought from him.

Zhou Weiqing looked at the Elven Empress. She was still sitting cross-legged in the void as circles of life halos spread out and converged ceaselessly.

"Weiqing, I'll go with you," Dongfang Hanyue's chilly voice sounded in the air. She rode the Blackfiend dragon, and in no time at all, she had arrived in front of Zhou Weiqing.

"We'll go as well!" The three Shangguan sisters and the Little Witch quickly rushed over, too!

Tears began to well in Zhou Weiqing's eyes when he saw the eagerness and determination in the girls' eyes.

"Silly, what are you guys going there for? It's not like you have the Saint Energy. If we really could deal with this problem through the mere accumulations of all our cultivation bases, then the Nether Lord would not have been able to live this long. Don't worry, we'll be fine! We're just going there to reinforce the seal. We'll definitely come back in no time at all."

Shangguan Bing'er was a little beside herself, "So... what if the Nether Lord breaks the seal?"

Zhou Weiqing froze for a moment before he waved his hand at Bing'er, "Bing'er, come here!"

At this moment, jealousy was the last thing on the girls' minds. In a flash, Shangguan Bing'er appeared in front of Zhou Weiqing. He spread his arms wide open and pulled her into his arms.

"Bing'er, I'm sorry that I've let you down. You're the one who introduced me to the world of Heavenly Jewel Masters. I remember when we first met, I actually ravished your body due to the awakening of my Heavenly Jewels. Instead of blaming me, you helped and took care of me as you used your gentleness to guide me on the path of becoming a Heavenly Jewel Master. In my life, it's

the happiest thing for me, Zhou Weiqing, to have you as my wife. However, I'm sorry for letting you down. My infidelity must have hurt you a lot. Still, I have to tell you that my love for you has never once lessened. Bing'er, I love you!"

As he was saying that, he lowered his head and planted a deep kiss on Shangguan Bing'er's fragrant lips.

Bing'er was taken aback for a moment. However, within seconds, she quickly responded to his kiss passionately. Her arms were trembling slightly as she put her arms around Zhou Weiqing's neck and hugged him tightly.

Their lips parted and Zhou Weiqing pulled away both of Shangguan Bing'er's arms before he gently pulled her to a side. A dazed look could be seen in her beautiful eyes as she continued to levitate quietly in the sky.

With a flash, he appeared in front of Shangguan Fei'er and proceeded to pull her into his arms, too.

"Fei'er, even though you look exactly like Bing'er, your personalities are totally different. With your vivacious and vibrant personality, there's no man that could ever be a match for your perseverance. During the most difficult time in my life, you've always been by my side. Thank you. I love Bing'er but I love you, too! There's no way for me to survive without you. Indeed, I'm a selfish man but there's no way for me to not be selfish!"

"Don't say such wor..." Shangguan Fei'er was beside herself. However, just as she was about to say something, she was forcefully stopped by Zhou Weiqing's lips. In the next moment, she melted in his arms as well.

When Zhou Weiqing finally let go of her lips, no words came out from her mouth either. She floated in the air in a daze.

"Xue'er," Zhou Weiqing pulled Shangguan Xue'er who was standing next to Shangguan Fei'er, "Xue'er, I know that you've

always thought that you're not as precious as Bing'er and Fei'er in my heart but you've never been so wrong. I love you, and it's not because it's out of convenience. I love your coldness and that unsullied nobleness. All the things that you've done for me secretly are forever engraved in my heart."

Shangguan Xue'er took the initiative and offered her lips to him. She kissed him and left him with no chance to continue his speech.

"Yuehan," Zhou Weiqing waved towards Little Witch as he let go of Shangguan Xue'er.

Wu Yuehan's beautiful eyes were completely red as her tears streamed uncontrollably down her cheeks, "I hate that you're doing this! Are you trying to give us your last words?" Although she was saying this, she still came forward to face Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing shook his head, "No, I just want to hug all of you and feel the heat of your bodies!" Holding her cheeks that were soaked with tears, he kissed her tenderly.

It did not matter if it were the three Shangguan sisters or Wu Yuehan, they were all currently hovering motionlessly in the air after they were kissed by Zhou Weiqing. A dazed look could be seen in their beautiful eyes.

"Hanyue," Zhou Weiqing looked at Dongfang Hanyue. She was staring at him, too.

"You don't have to do this. I won't follow you there. Don't forget, I still have our son other than you," Dongfang Hanyue replied Zhou Weiqing as she paled noticeably. Her right hand that was holding the Blackfiend Devastation Dragon Slaying Spear was completely pale as well.

Zhou Weiqing let out a smile, "Alright, that's great. However, I still want to kiss you, can I?"

Her figure turned into a flash as she collided into his arms forcefully, "Don't die! Promise me that you'll come back alive! As

long as you come back in one piece, I'll give you my word that I'll give up my position as the Palace Master of the Mysterious Heavenly Palace and bring your son here to meet you!" As she said that, she kissed Zhou Weiqing hard on the lips and even bit down on his lips.

Dongfang Hanyue was still a Saint Lord after all. When Zhou Weiqing kissed Shangguan Xue'er, she already had a sneaking suspicion. The few girls who had been kissed by Zhou Weiqing had clearly lost their sensibility. She understood that Zhou Weiqing merely did not want them to follow him to such danger.

After Dongfang Hanyue kissed him, she hugged him tightly and refused to let him go.

Zhou Weiqing sighed, "Perhaps this is my punishment from God. It would be my greatest fortune to have either one of you, no matter which one, to be my wife but I'm just too greedy. Still, I really don't have the heart to leave any of you behind. This time, if I can come back safely, all the time in my remaining life will belong to all of you. I'll use my remaining time to repay all of your love towards me. Hanyue, when I come back, I'll go to the Mysterious Heavenly Palace with you to formally bring you and our son back. Nobody will be able to stop me! Even if I have to pull and connect the entire Mysterious Heavenly Mainland to the Boundless Mainland, I won't allow the two of you to be separated from me!"

Chapter 837: Animus Realm (2)

Dongfang Hanyue turned her body away and once again, returned to ride on the Blackfiend Dragon's head. Her back was facing Zhou Weiqing, and she refused to look at him again as she held on to the dragon's horn.

Last but not least, Zhou Weiqing's sight finally landed on Tian'er who was staring at him but did not come near him.

"My dear..."

Tian'er stared at Zhou Weiqing nonchalantly, "I know you better than they do so you don't have to persuade me anymore. You don't have any reason to talk me out of it either. I have the Saint Energy, too! You're allowed to sacrifice for the mainland so why am I not allowed to?"

"B-But, our child is in your tummy!" Zhou Weiqing let out a bitter smile.

Tian'er continued on indifferently, "But I don't want my child to lose his father before he's even born. If that's the case, I'd rather die together with our family of three. Don't say anything else. If you try to stop me from going by force or make me unconscious, I'll kill myself the moment I wake up, regardless of whether you're able to come back alive! I'm sure you know my temper very well!"

"You..." Stumped, Zhou Weiqing stared at Tian'er. He was at a loss for words. Indeed, among all the other girls, Tian'er was the one who understood Zhou Weiqing the most. The time the two of them spent together cultivating was the longest, and they had created the Saint Energy together. Their minds were also very much in sync. As she watched how Zhou Weiqing dealt with the few other girls, Tian'er naturally had her own countermeasure.

Zhou Weiqing looked at Xue Ao'tian with a slightly helpless look as he tried to ask his father-in-law to help him with this matter.

However, Xue Ao'tian merely shook his head at him gently, "Although Tian'er is my daughter, I'm actually on her side regarding this matter. If it's not for the fact that we don't have any Saint Energy that can help you, I'd definitely go with you together as well. Weiqing, stop thinking too much. You have to understand that if you don't succeed this time, it's very likely that our world will disappear. At best, we'll probably just live slightly longer than you. With Tian'er's help, the chances of you succeeding will be much greater. Bring her along with you. We'll wait for your good news right here. No matter how difficult the situation that you face, you must have faith in yourself. We'll be waiting for your triumphant return!"

Zhou Weiqing nodded his head silently before he solemnly swore to Xue Ao'tian, "Even if I die, I'll die in front of Tian'er! I'll use my life to protect her!"

Relief could be seen in Xue Ao'tian's eyes, "I believe in you!"

At this moment, the Elven Empress gradually opened her eyes as well. The twelve Elven Elders were waiting beside her with a worried look.

All of them also knew that once the Elven Empress left, she might not be able to make it back alive. No matter what, the Elven Empress was still the most powerful ruler in the Elf Tribe for the past ten thousand years. She had brought them great hope. Additionally, all the lives of the Elven Empresses were connected to the Ancient Tree of Life. If an Elven Empress died, the Ancient Tree of Life would wilt as well. It would then need a new Elven Empress to connect her bloodline with it before it could be revived once again. However, if that was the case, the Ancient Tree of Life that had evolved would disappear, and the new tree would return to its original form. This was not a good news for the Elf Tribe at all.

The Elven Empress let out a faint sigh as she looked at the Elders, "You've heard the Mountain Lord of Heavenly Snow Mountain,

too. As the saying goes, how can the eggs remain unbroken when the nest is ruined? If we can't stop the Nether Lord, we'll no longer be able to survive. If we fail this time, then there's nothing else that can be said and done. However, if I die after we succeed, please follow Weiqing and my agreement. Please take our people to the Heavenly Bow Empire and allow them to thrive there. The Peerless Sect will take care of our Elf Tribe. At that time, please let my daughter inherit my throne."

"Your majesty!" All of the twelve Elven Elders fell to their knees in the air. Grief was apparent in their voices.

The Elven Empress let out a faint smile, "Every life will come to an end. Moreover, it's not guaranteed that I'll die. Weiqing will be the true combat force in this battle, and I'm just merely assisting from the side. As long as we can suppress the Nether Lord and strengthen the seal, our mission will be completed. Alright, it's time for us to go now. Otherwise, everything will be too late once the seal is broken."

Turquoise light retracted at once as it dyed the six wings behind the Elven Empress into the same color as well. In just a flash, she re-emerged by Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's side.

Two loud dragon roars resonated in the air. The roar was filled with complete hatred. Hui Yao and his wife, Duo Si, flew in front of Zhou Weiqing and the other two before he said in his deep voice, "I'll carry you there. Let us work together. No matter what, we can't let the Nether Lord have his way!"

When Zhou Weiqing saw Hui Yao's blood-stained eyes, he sighed secretly in his heart. However, he could not bring himself to say any comforting words to him at all. After all, the scar that was etched in this couple's heart was just too deep.

"Let's go," Zhou Weiqing replied in a deep voice.

As he was speaking, he took hold of Tian'er's hand and landed on Hui Yao's head swiftly. The Elven Empress, on the other hand,

landed on top of Duo Si's head all by herself. With another growl, strong fiery red light spewed out from the bodies of both gigantic dragons. As they carried Zhou Weiqing, Tian'er, and the Elven Empress, they turned around and flew directly into the huge abyss that was a cavern on the ground and disappeared in just a blink of an eye.

Nobody said a word. With Shangguan Tianyang, Xue Ao'tian, and Long Shiya in the lead, all of the powerhouses of this generation slowly closed their eyes and said a silent prayer in their hearts. Without a doubt, all of them understood very well that Zhou Weiqing and the rest would not be able to defeat the Nether Lord. Due to this reason, all they could do was pray that the entire sealing process would be completed without a glitch.

As they flew into the abyss, the surrounding air suddenly turned cold. Fortunately, Hui Yao and Duo Si both had a strong affinity to the Fire Element, and it was thanks to this that they managed to drive the cold away. All that Zhou Weiqing and the rest could feel was a warm and pleasant atmosphere.

"Weiqing," Hui Yao's voice suddenly echoed in Zhou Weiqing's ears.

"What's wrong, Hui Yao?" When he first came across Hui Yao, he was still a very feeble and ordinary Heavenly Jewel Master, but now he had grown into a powerhouse who was at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly God Tier similar to Hui Yao. Moreover, he was a Maximum Level Heavenly God who possessed a Saint God Nucleus Core.

Hui Yao told Zhou Weiqing in a very deep voice, "Weiqing, I know it's very likely that I won't have a chance to avenge my children. Ever since I knew you, you've helped us out many times, and every time we're with you, our problems were solved without many difficulties. What I'm trying to say is this time, if you who possesses Saint Energy has a chance to kill the Nether Lord, please do so with all your might! If you can kill him and avenge my

children, Duo Si and I are willing to become your slave and servant in the future. We'll guard you and your offsprings for the rest of our lives, forever and ever until the end of time!"

Zhou Weiqing was taken aback. He could feel the persistence and determination, along with a hint of helplessness and despair in Hui Yao's voice.

Zhou Weiqing took a deep breath as he spelled out his words slowly, "I'll give it my best and do everything in my power!"

"Thank you!" Hui Yao's voice quivered a little.

The conversation ended, and they did not continue speaking about it any longer. Zhou Weiqing took a clear look at the surroundings calmly.

The huge cave was probably a thousand meters wide in diameter. Due to this, even a body as large as Hui Yao and Duo Si could fly inside the cave side by side without being overcrowded.

The cave wall was a dark gray color. A faint Destruction Energy could be felt in there. It was apparent that this cave was not artificially dug out. Instead, it seemed like it was blasted open by a powerful force.

Zhou Weiqing asked the Elven Empress who was seated on Duo Si's head, "Since we're going to face the Nether Lord soon, please do tell me more about it. After all, I'm not very well-informed regarding this matter. How did it manage to come here in the first place?"

The Elven Empress nodded her head, "Well, in truth, the appearance of the Nether Lord was actually caused by you human beings."

"We, humans, were the one who caused it to appear?" Zhou Weiqing asked, perplexed.

The Elven Empress nodded her head, "Yes. When the Nether first appeared, it did not have a living body at all. To be more precise,

it's a powerful force of living things that evolved from energy. It made its appearance during the first emergence of living things in this world."

"Then what kind of energy is it actually? And where does this Destruction Energy originated from?"

The Elven Empress replied, "It's from all the negative emotions that come from human beings. It's mainly from resentment, hatred, fear, bloodlust and so on. These negative emotions then merged together and formed themselves into Destruction Energy."

She saw the disbelief in Zhou Weiqing's eyes as she continued, "It's hard to believe, isn't it? You may think that it's a little too much for me to blame everything on you human beings. However, the fact is, it indeed stemmed from all the negative emotions that you human beings feel. In ancient times, the Dragon Tribe and we from the Elf Tribe were the main rulers of this mainland. Even though we also had wars that time, there were only a few wars that actually took place. Moreover, we did not have those backstabbing, scheming tactics that you human beings always employ. What played the biggest role here was population."

"The Elf Tribe and the Dragon Tribes were particularly strong in the past. However, even during our most prosperous period, our population was barely one in ten-thousandth of the population of human beings now. You human beings have reproductive abilities that we envy to death. Additionally, all of you also use underhanded schemes to get ahead among each other. For this reason, the number of negative emotions naturally increased."

"At the beginning, these negative emotions were merely coming off your bodies. However, with the continuous increase of these negative emotions, some of the energy began to mutate and opened up a small realm of its own. In ancient times, we used to call this the Animus Realm. At first, when the realm was just opened, it was so small that it was almost impossible for anyone to detect it. However, with the gradual strengthening of you human beings, to

the point that you gradually became the ruler of this mainland, wars and slaughtering continued to repeat itself again and again. This was how the Animus Realm became bigger and bigger as time goes by. By the time we discovered this realm, it had already formed its own consciousness and was already out of control. That's the Nether Lord that we all know now."

Chapter 838: Animus Realm (3)

"At the beginning, we were still able to destroy him when we joined our hands together. However, this Nether Lord was extremely cunning. It turned out that he actually drilled a hole in the ground of his realm and hid there so that our ancestors could not find him for a very long time. By the time he was found again, he had become much stronger than he was, as strong as Fen Tian whom you faced previously. At that time, we did not have the Saint Attribute so the previous Elven Empress burned herself into ashes to weaken him. Even then, they were unable to kill him. The Dragon Emperor, on the other hand, combined forces with the rest of the Dragon Tribe powerhouses to lay down a seal and sealed him with extreme difficulty so that he could no longer absorb anymore enmity from the outside world."

After listening to it, Zhou Weiqing let out a sigh of relief. However, a sad and mournful expression suddenly appeared on the Elven Empress' face, "It's precisely due to that battle that our Elf and Dragon Tribes were all badly wounded because our most powerful forces had all been sacrificed in that battle. In turn, it kind of sped up the process of you human beings taking control of this world."

Zhou Weiqing chimed in, "If that's the case, then the Nether Lord that was sealed should be very weak, shouldn't he? Since he could no longer absorb enmity from the outer world, there was no way for him to become even stronger. So what's actually going on?"

The Elven Empress let out a bitter smile, "Well, it was indeed like this in the beginning. He could no longer enhance his strength by himself, and we also thought that we could keep him sealed forever. However, as time goes by, things began to change. We've no idea how the Nether Lord did it but somehow, he managed to drill a tiny hole in the seal and absorbed enmity carefully from the outside world. By the time the Dragon Emperor noticed it, he had

already become much stronger than before. Left with no other choices, the Dragon Emperor could only repeatedly strengthen the seal. However, if the Nether Lord could break the seal the first time, there would undoubtedly be a second time. If I guessed correctly, when he broke open the seal for the second time, he was even more careful than the first time and even managed to contact the Blood Red Hell to increase the grievances in the outer world. Not only that, it was the Blood Red Hell who helped direct the grievance into the Nether Realm. He finally made his first move when he became strong enough, and this time, it was already too late when we noticed it."

"The Destruction Energy that was formed by negative emotions had been strengthened to become as powerful as the Heavenly Change Tier through the constant purification from the Nether Lord. It's a level that even your Saint Energy will never be able to break through. Now, I just hope that with the help of your Saint Energy, we can completely seal the Nether Realm. With this way, you'll only need to infuse some intensified Saint Energy into it once in a while so that we can stop him from getting stronger. Although this is only a temporary solution, it's the only way that we have right now!"

Zhou Weiqing nodded his head in silence. Even the Dragon and Elf Tribe that were so powerful had their hands tied when faced with the Nether Lord. One could easily imagine just how powerful he was. However, this did not mean that there was no other way to deal with him. At the very least, the temporary solution would allow this world to continue existing in peace.

Hui Yao and Duo Si continued to push forward into the deep abyss. Every now and then, Hui Yao would spew out balls of fire to illuminate the pathway ahead. This abyss seemed to have no end at all. They had already flown for more than 15 minutes with their current flying speed and was at least fifty kilometers in. Still, there was no sign of them reaching their destination yet.

At this moment, a gentle pop suddenly sounded from an eruption below, and an intense Destruction Energy surged out from the cave below.

Zhou Weiqing's perception was the most alert. Within seconds, he immediately acted. His body remained still as platinum Nebula Saint Energy blasted out from a piece of lit star that was embedded in the chest piece of his Ringless Ground Purging Set. Although the Destruction Energy was powerful, it was not that pure. With just a flash of platinum light, the entire Destruction Energy was consumed by the Saint Energy.

"We have to speed up!" The Elven Empress announced anxiously.

Zhou Weiqing nodded his head. Several dozens of Nebula Saint Energy forces spewed out from his Ringless Ground Purging Set and formed a gigantic platinum light shield that enveloped the two gigantic dragons.

Both Hui Yao and Duo Si strained every nerve to increase their speed and charged straight towards the deep abyss without the need of Zhou Weiqing's command.

The two gigantic dragons had cultivation bases at the Heavenly God Tier. Now that they were charging forward with all their might, their speed was impossibly fast and as swift as the wind. The Destruction Energy in the air that accompanied them became even more intense as they made their way in deeper. All of them had a solemn look on their faces. They were all praying that the seal would hold, at least until they arrived at their destination.

WHAM —

A surge of Destruction Energy that was several times stronger than before crashed forcefully on the Saint Energy Shield that was being held up by Zhou Weiqing as it forced the two gigantic dragons to slow down suddenly. However, thanks to the Saint Energy, and the fact that Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy was purer than ever after he had reached the Maximum Level of the

Heavenly God Tier, the powerful Saint Energy suppressed the Destruction Energy in the air by force. Due to this, the two dragons merely halted for a moment before they continued to pick up their speed again as they moved deeper into the deep abyss.

At this point, a voice erupted in the air, "Who's that?" What followed next was a wave of intense tyrannical energy ripple that burst out from the bottom of the abyss. A gigantic figure suddenly appeared and blocked their way.

Zhou Weiqing had traveled far and wide, and he had seen a great deal. However, even he could not help but be taken aback when he saw this huge figure.

Although the abyss continued to stretch downwards and the diameter gradually narrowed, it was still at least 500 meters wide in diameter. Nevertheless, this giant that had appeared out of nowhere from below literally obstructed the entire 500-meter wide pathway. With just this alone, it was easy to imagine just how humongous its body was. Hui Yao and his wife immediately felt dwarfed in comparison in front of this figure. Waves of Destruction Energy continued to emanate out of its body unceasingly. It turned out that the Destruction Energy that had attacked Zhou Weiqing and the rest earlier was only the residual energy ripples.

This humongous being turned out to be a turtle-shaped Heavenly Beast. However, there was one thing that made it stand out when compared to other ordinary turtles, and that was its head. It possessed a head that was almost identical to Hui Yao, or worse, even bigger than Hui Yao. A dragon head on a turtle's body. At this moment, glowing fire that looked like flowers were lighting up the patterns on its back. A pair of dragon orbs were staring fiercely at Zhou Weiqing and the rest.

"It's the Dragon Turtle!" The Elven Empress exclaimed in surprise. With a flash, she leaped off Duo Si's body. As a gentle green light shone downwards, the green light that was filled with

the Life Saint Energy landed gently on the Dragon Turtle.

The Dragon Turtle was dumbfounded, "T-The Elf Tribe? Life Saint Energy? A-Are you the Elven Empress?" The hostility in his eyes immediately faded when he saw the six wings behind the Elven Empress.

The Elven Empress quickly replied, "I'm the current Elven Empress. Dear respected Dragon Turtle Elder, what's the current situation with the seal? We just killed the Nether Lord's advocate in the human world and are here to help out because we noticed that the seal seems to be in an unstable state. This is a human powerhouse, Zhou Weiqing, and this is his wife, Tian'er. They have managed to cultivate the Saint Energy with the help of the four Saint Attributes. I believe that it'll be a great help in reinforcing the seal. These two dragons here are the descendants of His Majesty Dragon Emperor."

At this point, the Dragon Turtle already had a clear view of Zhou Weiqing and the others. Zhou Weiqing had also withdrawn his own Saint Energy.

There was no doubt that the Elven Empress' Life Saint Energy had won the trust of the Dragon Turtle. Due to the fact that they were from the ancient tribes, the moment it saw the six wings behind the Elven Empress and sensed the Life Saint Energy that was extremely serene and relaxing, it immediately understood the goodwill of these newcomers.

Hui Yao's voice reverberated in Zhou Weiqing's ears, "Actually, the Dragon Turtle is also part of our Dragon Tribe. It's sort of like a mutated dragon, but it's extremely powerful. This Dragon Turtle elder's cultivation base is most likely at the Upper Level of the Heavenly God Tier. Not only that, the Dragon Turtle is known as the Heavenly Beast that has the best defense in the entire world. Even in ancient times, their population was extremely scarce. I did not expect the ancestors to place a Dragon Turtle Elder here to attend to us."

As he was saying that, Hui Yao led Duo Si forward to pay their homage to the Dragon Turtle who had lived for only-God-knows-how-long.

The Dragon Turtle stretched his head forward in Hui Yao's direction. A stream of intense red light beamed out from his eyes and landed on Hui Yao. Instead of dodging, Hui Yao merely stood still and allowed the red light to shine on him.

After a short moment, the Dragon Turtle and Hui Yao both simultaneously emitted the same golden brilliance from their eyes.

The Dragon Turtle nodded his head towards Hui Yao, "You must be the descendant that His Majesty had left behind in the Luster Spatial Realm. In this case, please follow me, hurry! I'm afraid the seal won't hold much longer. Let us talk about this while we move. All of you, get on my back!"

Hui Yao and Duo Si landed gently. Although their gigantic bodies also landed on the Dragon Turtle's back, it did not appear crowded at all.

A loud rumble resonated in the air. Zhou Weiqing finally noticed that all four limbs of the Dragon Turtle were inserted in the surrounding caverns previously. All four of his limbs were shaped in the form of dragon claws as well, and they were humongous. At this moment, the four limbs were retracted, and everyone instantly plunged straight downwards into the deep abyss.

"Your timing's just perfect! There have been multiple combat engagements at the seal, and His Majesty's heavily wounded now. We can no longer hold on!"

"W-What? Our ancestor is heavily injured?" Hui Yao was completely taken aback.

The Dragon Turtle replied in a deep voice, "We've no idea why, but the Nether Lord's strength has been continuously increasing in the last decade or so. We couldn't even find out where he managed

to get his power. Recently, he had launched several attacks on the seal, and because of this, there were already many cracks on the seal. On top of that, not too long ago, he managed to break a small piece of the seal by force. His Majesty only managed to patch and reinforce the seal at the cost of a serious injury. However, all the cracks are becoming bigger and bigger, and it'll break anytime now. I'm sure all of you must have felt the force from the Destruction Energy. That's exactly the doing of the Nether Lord. Apart from that, I'm afraid the seal will break any time now judging by the Destruction Energy that's getting stronger and stronger as we speak. If it's not for the fact that I noticed your presence and went out to see earlier, I would've gone there to help the others to strengthen the seal."

After listening to the Dragon Turtle's words, all of them could not help but take in a cold breath in shock. The situation seemed to be even worse than they had thought. They could still accept the fact that cracks had appeared on the seal, but to the point that the Dragon Emperor — the one who played the most important role in the sealing process — actually got injured? What did that mean?

Chapter 839: The Netherworld's Seal (1)

The Netherworld Seal was previously completed by the Dragon Emperor who was the leader, the Elven Empress of that generation, and the rest of the powerhouses. The current Dragon Emperor was severely injured so one could only imagine how badly the seal's energy had depleted. Furthermore, would they be able to successfully reinforce the seal without the help of the Dragon Emperor?

Even though everyone felt slightly anxious in their hearts, they understood that their anxiety was useless at this moment. They could only pray for the best.

The Dragon Turtle fell at an extremely fast speed, and there was a distorted layer of light, with a pattern that glimmered indistinctly in the surrounding area. There was also a dense Destruction Energy that attacked the lower part of the Dragon Turtle's body. Its defense was truly strong and powerful to be able to withstand the violent Destruction Energy while remaining uninjured. It definitely lived up to its name of being the Heavenly Beast with the strongest defense in the world.

Zhou Weiqing pressed his hands on the Dragon Turtle's body as he infused a surge of gentle Saint Energy into its body. The Dragon Turtle's body noticeably trembled once when the Saint Energy entered its body, and just in a short while, it could sense the benefits of the Saint Energy. Its body stopped falling for a tiny moment as it turned its dragon's head around and nodded at Zhou Weiqing. Zhou Weiqing could clearly see that there were joy and excitement in its huge dragon's eyes. It was apparent that the Dragon Turtle could sense the suppressing effect Saint Energy had on the Destruction Energy.

The Dragon Turtle continued falling for almost an hour when the pattern on its back brightened up suddenly. It released a gush of air from its lower abdomen that supported its enormous body, and

it reduced the momentum from the fall as it enabled it to land gently.

When the crowd arrived in this place, they realized that the surrounding darkness had gradually disappeared. Due to that, they were able to witness a magnificent scene.

The surrounding cave walls were glimmering with the dazzling radiance from countless colorful gemstones encrusted on the walls. The gemstones were glowing with a myriad of brilliant colors from the reflection of the Dragon Turtle's radiance. The deeper they traveled, the more intense the gemstones glowed in the surroundings. Zhou Weiqing swore that if these gemstones were excavated and sold outside, they would certainly be sold for an enormous fortune as he had never even seen most of these gemstones before.

"There's no need to be surprised. The rocks in the surrounding walls are continuously corroded by our seal's energy for many years, and they slowly formed from the gradual changes in the rock's internal structure. These are not real gemstones. They're actually filled with a large amount of attribute energy. It's quite similar to our Heavenly Beasts' Nucleus Core, and the Heavenly Core Nucleus of you humans," the Dragon Turtle explained.

With a thud, the Dragon Turtle's enormous body finally came in contact with solid ground. However, it did not stop there as it placed its gigantic dragon claws on the ground and moved rapidly along a route in front that led to the inside.

Zhou Weiqing and the rest had only discovered that they had finally arrived at the bottom of the abyss. They could not help themselves when a sudden realization hit them — they had indeed traveled a terrifying distance! The surrounding temperature was obviously different from when they had just descended into the abyss, it changed from the original icy cold temperature to scorching heat. The surrounding air rippled with water-like vapor occasionally.

"Are we close to the earth's core?" Zhou Weiqing asked curiously.

The Dragon Turtle explained, "To be exact, we're in the earth's outer core. We, from the Dragon Clan, are masters in controlling fire and so were the imperial families of past dynasties. His Majesty, the Dragon Emperor draws support from the energy of the earth's core to attain the highest level in his cultivation base so that he can maintain the seal."

Zhou Weiqing exclaimed with overwhelming emotions, "For the benefit of the mainland, the senior Dragon Emperor and all the seniors have truly contributed too much. It's just too much." He questioned himself — If he was in their place, would he be able to persist for so many years? Just the loneliness from carrying out this duty was not something an ordinary person was capable of enduring.

The Dragon Turtle did not march for a long period of time before the place ahead suddenly widened into a clearing that was brightly lit.

To everyone's surprise, even the Dragon Turtle's enormous body was dwarfed by the place that was as vast as an arena.

Zhou Weiqing could sense a sort of peculiar energy fluctuation here that made him feel kind and warm. He looked closely and discovered that there were a total of thirteen balls of energy floating in mid-air in the middle of this huge arena. The energy balls were constantly changing its colors. A giant Demon Magic Formation was formed right underneath the thirteen energy balls. The complexity of the Demon Magic Formation exceeded the complexity of Zhou Weiqing's design for the eleventh piece of Ringless Ground Purging Set, and it made one dizzy at first glance.

Out of the thirteen energy balls that were frozen and floating in midair, the biggest ball in the middle was over two hundred meters in diameter while the diameter of each of the twelve balls surrounding it was over one hundred meters. Together, the energy

balls formed a Demon Magic Formation that was beyond even the word 'gigantic'. Zhou Weiqing already possessed a cultivation base at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly God Tier. However, he still felt small as he stood before the Demon Magic Formation at this moment.

Hui Yao and Duo Si leaped down from the Dragon Turtle's back separately. As they witnessed the gigantic Demon Magic Formation before them, Hui Yao could not refrain from sighing emotionally, "So this is the Netherworld's seal then? Does the Netherworld still lie below it?"

The Dragon Turtle murmured, "I can't say for sure that the Netherworld is lying underneath it because the Netherworld belongs in another realm. We're merely suppressing the realm. However, it's obvious that the Nether Lord had come up with a way to make contact with those above ground. Otherwise, his actual strength won't be continuously increasing. Human, were you infusing Saint Energy into my body earlier?"

The last sentence was meant for Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing hastily nodded, "That's correct. It was Saint Energy."

The Dragon Turtle did not even attempt to conceal its excitement, "That's wonderful. I can feel that your Saint Energy is very effective in restricting the Destruction Energy. Please wait for a moment while I quickly request for His Majesty, the Dragon Emperor to allow all of you to enter the seal."

The Dragon Turtle let out a strange voice from its mouth as it was saying that. It sounded like an ancient language that carried an energy fluctuation that was similar to soul vibrations as the voice surged towards the largest ball among the thirteen energy balls in the sky.

A voice that sounded ancient yet majestic echoed, "All of you are finally here, my children. We don't have much time now. Enter the

seal quickly."

A gust of gentle energy suddenly glowed from underneath the feet of Zhou Weiqing's group as halos of light emerged out from the surroundings. Zhou Weiqing and the rest felt that the surroundings had an unreal feeling to it. It was as if they were transported to another place by Spatial Law.

It seemed like they were already in another realm. The surrounding area was pitch black with only thirteen figures that appeared unusually clear within the darkness. The largest figure amongst them was at least eighty percent similar to Hui Yao's appearance. It was only that the figure's body was even larger than Hui Yao with the addition of a majestic and kingly mannerism. Its enormous dragon eyes were filled with infinite weariness and the experience of the many vicissitudes of life.

Zhou Weiqing could not help but be startled by the situation before his eyes. The Netherworld's Seal was so powerful that it formed a realm of its own. He did not even have any confidence that he would be able to charge out of here despite having the Saint Energy. Moreover, the realm was built from the inside out. On the other hand, the Netherworld was suppressed from the outside of the seal, and yet the Nether Lord still managed to almost break the seal on multiple attempts. His true strength must be unimaginably powerful.

There was no doubt that the largest figure in the middle was the Dragon Emperor who was supporting the core of the entire Netherworld's Seal.

"Mother." Tian'er shouted almost instantly. It was true that the Entropic Nether Tiger, Phelia was one of the twelve guardians by the Dragon Emperor's side. It was just that she was currently in the beastly form of the Entropic Nether Tiger.

Phelia stared at her daughter with gentle gaze but she did not speak. Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er could see the deep weariness in

her eyes.

It was not just Phelia, all the Heavenly Beasts at the Heavenly God Tier including the Dragon Emperor looked extremely worn out.

"First Ancestor." Hui Yao and Duo Si's huge dragon eyes were filled with emotions when they saw the Dragon Emperor. They instantly knelt on the ground and worshipped the Dragon Emperor without hesitation.

"Stand up, this is not the time for etiquette. The both of you take over Phelia and Gang Dora's place, quick."

"Yes, First Ancestor."

The entire Netherworld's seal was extremely complicated. However, the complexity was mainly focused on the magic formation while the thirteen Heavenly God Tier Heavenly Beasts including the Dragon Emperor's main purpose was to provide the seal with adequate energy.

Hui Yao and Duo Si simultaneously leaped up and flew over. The Entropic Nether Tiger, Phelia and the other enormous leopard-like Heavenly Beasts that was entirely snowy white in color removed themselves in unison and were replaced by Hui Yao and Duo Si.

The entire magic formation's glow suddenly became more powerful with the addition of fresh troops. The darkness that surrounded the space became much brighter than before.

The Dragon Emperor nodded in satisfaction towards Hui Yao. It was apparent that he was satisfied with Hui Yao's true strength. Hui Yao's gaze that was earlier filled with enmity became much gentler and was replaced with respect.

"Senior Dragon Emperor, what do you need us to do?" Zhou Weiqing spoke to the Dragon Emperor.

The Dragon Emperor nodded to Zhou Weiqing, "I have heard Phelia speaking regarding all of you. I hope that your Saint Energy

is capable of triggering a decisive effect to completely reinforce the seal. Release a little of your Saint Energy first so I can get a feel for it. Then, I'll decide what to do with it afterward."

Zhou Weiqing nodded as he raised his head and shot out two gentle beams of Saint Light that spread out in the pitch black space.

The radiance that was emitting from the thirteen Heavenly Beasts with the Dragon Emperor as leader seemed to become brighter at once.

Surprise and emotion appeared in the Dragon Emperor's simple and unsophisticated voice, "This is truly Saint Energy and a pure Genesis Aura. Even though it's not the true Genesis Energy, it won't be a problem for us to reinforce the seal with the existence of this Saint Energy. Weiqing, you shall take my place after this. Everyone else, get on my body."

As he said that, a dazzling red light shot out from the Dragon Emperor's head into the area beneath Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's feet, looking similar to a bridge.

The energy that was released by the Dragon Emperor was quite different from Hui Yao. Even though they both had control over the fire element, Hui Yao's control of the Fire Attribute was filled with vigor and agitation, while the Dragon Emperor's version of the Fire Element gave Zhou Weiqing an unexplainable feeling. He could not sense any temperature on the surface and it was very gentle. However, he discovered that the Fire Element was so pure that even when he focused on trying to find it, there seemed to be no impurities at all.

Chapter 840: The Netherworld's Seal (2)

They had the same cultivation base at the Maximum Level of the Heavenly God Tier and almost the same amount of Heavenly Energy. The only difference was the purity of their attributes and Heavenly Energy. This was the reason why there was still a huge disparity between Hui Yao and the Dragon Emperor's ability.

Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's bodies were flying directly towards the area above the Dragon Emperor's head within the glow of the dark red radiance.

Zhou Weiqing held Tian'er's hand as they remained still. They allowed the wave of energy to carry them because Zhou Weiqing could clearly sense that it was impossible for them to arrive above the Dragon Emperor's head through the seal's magic formation entrance on their own. The Dragon Emperor was the core of the entire Netherworld's Seal. If someone were to forcibly approach him, the person would be immediately attacked by the rest of the twelve Divine Beasts under the guidance of the magic formation.

Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er promptly got closer to the Dragon Emperor. However, at that exact moment, the sound of a loud rumble shook the entire pitch black space violently. The powerful tremors even shattered the Fire Energy that the Dragon Emperor released. All thirteen Divine Beasts were shaken violently, and that resulted in Heavenly Energy shooting out of their bodies wildly. Not only were Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er stuck outside, their energy was instantly poured out at a shocking speed.

The pitch black space became completely bright at this moment. Various peculiar, dazzling light patterns and symbols shimmered against one another.

Zhou Weiqing felt as if he was in a sea that was viscous and dense at this very moment. The viscous seawater was tremendous Saint Energy.

The Heavenly Energy that was simultaneously released by thirteen Heavenly God-tier powerhouses was further amplified by the magic formation. It was unimaginably extensive.

Even with Zhou Weiqing's current cultivation base at the Maximum-Level of the Heavenly God Tier, he still found it difficult to move within the dense and viscous energy in liquid form.

This change was undoubtedly caused by the Nether Lord's second attack on the seal.

Zhou Weiqing realized that an enormous veil had appeared below the thirteen Divine Beasts' bodies from the violent assault earlier. The veil had a diameter of almost a thousand meters and was faintly tainted with red color.

There were already dozens of cracks crawling on the veil. As a result of the violent assault from earlier, the cracks were spreading out in all directions. It seemed very likely that the veil would collapse at any given moment.

The veil was transparent so that one could faintly see a huge figure standing behind that enormous veil. The fellow's body size was even slightly bigger than the Dragon Turtle. Due to the fact that it was separated by a red-colored veil, one could only indistinctly see that it was black in color. Zhou Weiqing was very familiar with the appearance of its form and body. It was almost exactly the same as the black-colored giant crab that appeared when Fen Tian borrowed the Nether Lord's energy.

The veil was undoubtedly the microcosm of the entire Netherworld's Seal, while the enormous shadow on the other side of the veil was exactly the true body of the Nether Lord.

The viscous Heavenly Energy was continuously injected into the gigantic symbol suspended in the air in an attempt to slow the cracks from spreading while it simultaneously reinforced the entire seal. However, it was apparent that the Nether Lord's assault was even stronger as the cracks kept spreading

continuously like before.

"Do not waste your energy for nothing, Dragon Emperor. None of you are capable of stopping me this time. The human world's resentment provides me with continuous energy. There are no more opportunities for all of you. Hah-hah, hah-hah-hah-hah. Wait for me to get out. All of you will die, and I'll turn all of you into my puppets. All of you shall bear witness to my magnificent feat of destroying the entire mainland. I'm going to turn the Boundless Mainland into the Nether Mainland. I'm going to swallow everything so that I can create the real Netherworld."

The Nether Lord's voice remained as ambiguous as before. Moreover, it was different listening to its voice here compared to listening to it from the outside world. Every word it spoke caused an intense tremor in the soul that guided everyone's emotions. It pulled at everyone's emotion as if it was attempting to forcibly inject negative emotions into everyone's hearts.

"I'll never allow you to prevail, Nether Lord. I was able to seal you for millennia so I'm certainly capable of continuing my effort to seal you." The Dragon Emperor's eyes gleamed with determination. His energy was still surging out continuously like before. Even though Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er did not succeed at arriving at the Dragon Emperor's head, with the husband and wife duo, Hui Yao and Duo Si's recent participation as fresh troops, Heavenly Energy began to surge steadily and continuously increased to the point that it finally managed to reduce the speed of the spreading cracks. Moreover, it seemed like the cracks were trying to seal themselves.

"Perhaps, you'll be able to sustain your efforts in sealing me if you were still in your prime. However, you're done now. I've prepared a gift for you and now is the right time for me to present you with the gift." The Nether Lord's voice gradually turned somewhat hysterical. Following that, a strange, red-colored halo brightened the area before the Nether Lord's body on the other side of the veil.

The Nether Lord's assault slowed down noticeably when the red-colored halo first appeared. All the cracks on the seal then stabilized. Although it was difficult to try and close the cracks, at least the cracks would not continue to spread.

However, before the Dragon Emperor and the Divine Beasts even managed to catch their breaths, Hui Yao and Duo Si let out a dismal roar in unison.

On the other side of the veil, the red-colored halo released by the Nether Lord gradually grew clearer. Within it was two unappealing, tiny figures. However, it was obvious that they had the form of dragons. Two tiny little dragon forms that looked helpless and afraid as they moved rhythmically in the ball.

"Those, those are..." The Dragon Emperor's enormous body trembled violently as well.

"Children, my children. Those are the dragon children's souls. Return my children to me." Duo Si screamed out bitterly and was about to charge towards the direction of the veil. Although the influence of the magic formation prevented her from leaving her position, the entire magic formation became unstable when she moved.

"Stay calm, do not affect the seal!" The Dragon Emperor roared once, and it resulted in the realm within the seal shaking violently once as well. The Dragon Emperor relied on the Dragon Clan's powerful and imposing manner to forcibly suppress Hui Yao and Duo Si's wild emotional fluctuations. Even so, the Heavenly Energy that was transferred by Hui Yao and Duo Si became noticeably unstable.

"Hah-hah-hah-hah-hah, Dragon Emperor, do you like this huge gift that I got for you? That seal of yours is built on the foundation of the Elf Tribe and your bloodlines. Now that I have seized control of your bloodline, I'm interested to see what else you can do to seal me."

As it was saying that, the Nether Lord in the form of a crab probed forward with its two gigantic front claws. It managed to grab one little dragon soul's in each of its claws. A dismal and deafening roar sounded from Hui Yao and Duo Si as the dragon souls were instantly crushed. Dense black-colored radiance combined with two balls of crushed dragon souls' shadows slammed ferociously against the seal.

Boom!

The entire seal's realm was almost shattered in a flash. More than half of the magnificent colors in the surroundings also vanished. The initially desolated realm revealed itself once again. The group of Divine Beasts brought Zhou Weiqing and the rest along as they emerged together in the huge cavern that Zhou Weiqing and the others first arrived at.

A pair of gigantic front claws of a crab stabbed out from the bottom of the seal's magic formation and ferociously bombarded the Dragon Emperor's body. The impact sent the Dragon Emperor's enormous body into the air, and it crashed ferociously into the cave's ceiling, resulting in a loud bang.

A large stretch of scales under the Dragon Emperor's abdomen was smashed. Countless specks of a pitch black radiance surrounded his body. Blood splattered everywhere as the Dragon Emperor began spurting dragon blood wildly, with his entire body embedded into the ceiling.

The seal's energy was at its weakest at this moment. Even though the seal was still being sustained, the pair of gigantic front claws were waving around wildly, and it would soon break out of the seal and destroy everything. The Nether Lord would descend into the mortal world at that moment!

"Do not panic, count on me." A loud shout awakened the Divine Beasts that were filled with despair at this extremely dangerous and crucial moment. Following that, two platinum-colored figures

flew into the air and arrived at the position where the Dragon Emperor was at earlier. At the same time, a surge of a bright green radiance suddenly brightened the area as it transformed into a huge green halo that gathered the twelve Divine Beasts to form the magic formation that was scattered earlier by the tremors. Then, it infused a massive amount of Life Saint Energy into them.

On top of that, the entire cavern also turned into a green-colored sea at this moment. An unreal light was suspended in mid-air as it emerged below the Dragon Emperor's body. The moment it appeared, even the movement of the Nether Lord's gigantic front claws became slower.

"Th-his is..." Every single one of the Divine Beasts was shaken but they had an expression of wild joy amidst the incredulity.

That colossal light shadow was a hundred kilometers tall, and its vast crown almost covered the entire arena. The dense Life Saint Energy and the green-colored radiance were exuding dense vitality as if it was formed from the most beautiful Emperor's green jade carving. Even the Dragon Emperor who was slammed into the ceiling and was already critically ill was forcibly pulled back from the brink of death after receiving a massive flood of Life Energy.

That was right. It was the Ancient Tree of Life. The Elf Tribe's Ancient Tree of Life. It appeared in this cavern to everyone's surprise. At this moment, let alone the Divine Beasts, even Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's eyes were similarly filled with incredulity and disbelief.

This was the real fail-safe by the Elven Empress. The Ancient Tree of Life became mobile after its evolution. Ever since Zhou Weiqing left the Elf Tribe's Sealed Land, the Elven Empress started carrying the Ancient Tree of Life around even as she entered the Wan Shou Empire's area. It took her a few months to walk to the Heavenly Snow Mountain. She had been using her secret skill to hide and conceal the Ancient Tree of Life's presence so that no one but the Elf Tribe's elders was aware that she brought along the

Ancient Tree of Life.

This was the Elven Empress' trump card. She had waited until this moment to use it.

When Zhou Weiqing was fighting against Fen Tian initially, the Elven Empress was very close to summoning the Ancient Tree of Life. It was all thanks to Zhou Weiqing who depended on his powerful Time Attribute technique that this final trump card was successfully kept until this critical moment.

Chapter 841: The Netherworld's Seal (3)

The Ancient Tree of Life was connected to the Elven Empress' life. Once the Elven Empress was dead, the Ancient Tree of Life would devolve on its own into how it was before the evolution. When the Ancient Tree of Life devolved to that form, it would be gifted with the addition of a new ability that allowed it to give birth to the Seed of Life.

The Elven Empress was already fully prepared before she participated in the Grand Tournament of Saint Lands. Her presence would either make or break the tournament. The first reason was because she shared the same life as Zhou Weiqing. If Zhou Weiqing was to die in this battle, she would not survive on her own. The more important reason was her responsibility. She was responsible for sealing the Nether Lord. Even if the Elven Empress and the Ancient Tree of Life were to die in this battle, the Seed of Life that was kept by the Elf Tribe would grow into a new Ancient Tree of Life again. Although it would require a long time for it to be fully grown, it would ensure the continuity of the Elf Tribe. This was also the reason why the Elven Empress ordered the elders to head to the Heavenly Bow Empire where the Peerless Sect was before she entered the abyss where the Netherworld's seal was located.

At this exact moment, the Ancient Tree of Life made its entrance in an earth-shocking manner. It depended on its peerless and tremendous Life Force to forcibly maintain the entire seal's stability again.

The Elven Empress' voice that was usually calm echoed in the cavern, "Nether Lord. You're right. I was precisely the one who created the Netherworld's seal that managed to seal you for millennia with the Elf Tribe's first ancestors and the senior Dragon Emperor. My first ancestors even died in the battle over here and sacrificed their lives in order to complete your seal. For the many

years that followed, it was the senior Dragon Emperor who had been maintaining the seal, that was why you had no way to break through it. Similarly, the Elf Tribe also bears the responsibility to maintain the seal. As long as we're still alive, we'll absolutely never allow you to escape the Netherworld and destroy the mainland."

Her voice sounded calm yet awe-inspiring. At this moment, the Elven Empress was hovering above the Ancient Tree of Life. Her austere yet magnificent face was overflowing with a determined expression. She unleashed her dense aura of life to forcibly suppress the momentum of the Nether Lord's attempt to break through.

"I see that you've even brought along the Ancient Tree of Life, huh? So what? Do you think that tiny little Life Saint Energy of yours is a rival for my pure Destruction Energy? You're too naive."

The Nether Lord's voice was filled with rage. Two of its front claws that had already broken through swung violently as dense Destruction Energy surged out wildly and collided fiercely with the Life Force released by the Ancient Tree of Life.

At least a fifth of the Ancient Tree of Life's roots was damaged with a loud rumble. The agitated Destruction Energy rolled upwards and forced its way into dispersing the tremendous Life Energy.

The Elven Empress and the Ancient Tree of Life were one. When the Ancient Tree of Life was attacked, she could not help but bawl and spit out a mouthful of fresh blood. Her determination did not waver at all as she turned her body and transformed into the Goddess of Nature. The Goddess of Nature's scepter in her hand glowed with a dazzling radiance, and her Life Saint Energy was replenished so she could exert her energy to match the Destruction Energy released by the Nether Lord's front claws.

"Weiqing, quick! Restore the magic formation. I won't be able to withstand this for long," the Elven Empress' anxious voice echoed.

Yes, they could not completely suppress the Nether Lord even with the combined strength of her and the Elf Tribe's Ancient Tree of Life. That pair of gigantic front claws were still drilling its way out of the seal's magic formation bit by bit. With every bit that it drilled, the Destruction Energy that was released would become stronger by a few times.

The Dragon Emperor was already injured from a fatal blow. He was only depending on the Ancient Tree of Life's tremendous Life Force to pull him back from the brink of death with great effort. It was impossible to maintain the Seal Magic Formation anymore. The only person who was capable of maintaining the magic formation currently was Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er were suspended in midair. His expression was solemn because he understood very well that the fate of victory or defeat hung upon this single action.

The Destruction Energy that the Nether Lord's front claws released was so pure that there was not even an ounce of impurity. In comparison to Fen Tian's ability, the Nether Lord was still capable of displaying such formidable power under the double restrictions of the Seal Magic Formation and the Ancient Tree of Life. Zhou Weiqing was well aware that although his Saint Energy was already considered rather pure, he was still not on the same level as the Nether Lord. He could only depend on the magic formation to possibly seal the Nether Lord.

The Dual God Strength Hammers appeared in Zhou Weiqing's hands as thousands of dazzling Saint Energy's starlight simultaneously bloomed on every part of Zhou Weiqing's Ringless Ground Purging Set in a blink of an eye. The strong Saint Energy's fluctuation was elevated to the utmost extent in a flash.

The Destruction Energy emitted by the Nether Lord was immediately repressed and shrank several folds under the influence of the Saint Energy. All the Divine Beasts that were present, the Elven Empress and the Ancient Tree of Life became

high spirited.

"Restore the magic formation, quick." Zhou Weiqing shouted once as he raised his single-handle Dual God Strength Hammer high above his head. The Astral Divine Territory was unleashed and the dazzling Nebula was spinning wildly while the Saint God Nucleus Core directly leaped out from Zhou Weiqing's chest and released a wave of dense yet enormous Saint Energy.

The strong and powerful aura released by Zhou Weiqing who was at the Maximum-Level of the Heavenly God Tier at this moment even exceeded the prior Dragon Emperor's. The purity of his Saint Energy inspired confidence in every single one of the Divine Beast.

The twelve Divine Beasts, including Hui Yao and Duo Si, returned to their designated position in the magic formation once again, and they dispersed their energy and aura to merge with Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy.

Zhou Weiqing's eyes were as bright as the dazzling stars as twelve streaks of platinum Saint Light were simultaneously unleashed from that gigantic hammer and reflected onto twelve Divine Beasts' bodies respectively.

These Divine Beasts were immediately enshrouded with a layer of platinum-colored radiance. Their energies that were severely depleted initially seemed to be almost fully restored at this moment.

Tian'er acted just like how she did earlier during Zhou Weiqing and Fen Tian's battle. She hugged Zhou Weiqing from behind with her hands and infused her Saint Energy into Zhou Weiqing's body without holding back.

The platinum-colored radiance emitted from Zhou Weiqing's body turned even more intense after the union with Tian'er's Saint Energy. The strong energy fluctuation that was filled with Creation Aura suppressed the Nether Lord's Destruction Energy, and it took the pressure of the Elven Empress and the Elf Tribe's

Ancient Tree of Life. The Ancient Tree of Life also lowered itself accordingly in an attempt to suppress the Nether Lord's Destruction Energy.

"Fen Tian, you're a useless piece of trash." The Nether Lord's hateful voice echoed. If Fen Tian managed to successfully kill Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er, he would have already succeeded at breaking through the seal by now. Although the Dragon Emperor was severely injured, the Netherworld's seal had lasted for millennia so there was a massive amount of energy accumulated in the magic formation. The Nether Lord could not charge out of the seal in one go. After the eye of the formation was destroyed, he would still need to assemble a large amount of energy to have a chance at breaking through the seal with a single attempt. At this moment, the Saint Energy produced from the merging of the Elven Empress and Zhou Weiqing was forcibly suppressing his charging momentum.

The Nether Lord did not fear the Life Saint Energy that the Elven Empress and the Ancient Tree of Life released. The true Saint Energy contained in Life Saint Energy was very insignificant and not enough to pose a threat to it.

However, Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy was different. Despite the fact that his pure Saint Energy was not true Genesis Energy, the only difference between the energies was the level of purity. Although the Nether Lord was well aware that it was impossible for Zhou Weiqing to possess Genesis Energy and become the Genesis God, he still felt slightly afraid in its heart at this moment because he was most familiar with this seal. He knew that once Zhou Weiqing became the core of the magic formation, he would complete the seal using his Saint Energy. The Netherworld's seal would then become a perfect seal. A seal that was completely free of flaws.

The Nether Lord came from the crack that he secretly opened from the other side of the seal. Although he relied on the negative

emotions from the Boundless Mainland's people to strengthen his body, he would still vanish once the seal was completed and perfected.

Only the Nether Lord had a clear grasp on his own situation. He would need to continuously absorb negative emotions in order to strengthen himself and also, to maintain himself.

He had been absorbing negative emotions from the outer world since the day he was born. Moreover, not only would he stop growing stronger, he would continuously be weakened until he vanished for eternity if he lost the supply of negative emotions.

That was the reason why the Nether Lord would never allow Zhou Weiqing to maintain and complete the seal no matter what. If that happened, it was equal to announcing his own death sentence. He really regretted not discovering that someone actually possessed the true Saint Energy earlier so that he could slaughter that person before he grew stronger. He was under the assumption that his own plan was perfect until this point. It was Zhou Weiqing's appearance that became a variable in this situation. The variable had already grown into a state where it was enough to affect his existence now, how could he not be filled with enmity?

The Nether Lord's two front claws suddenly stopped swinging. A tiny black-colored light mass appeared in the middle, between the two front claws. At this moment, he had already exerted his ultimate source of energy in order to break the seal and stop the seal from being completed again. This ultimate source of energy was refined by it after millennia, and there was only a small portion of this energy left. However, the Nether Lord could not care less about the amount currently. As long as he could break through the seal and arrive at the Boundless Mainland, everything else could be rebuilt again hereafter. He had a wild ambition of using the Boundless Mainland as a springboard to strengthen his body. His next goal was to progressively devour the entire universe

and make himself into a force that controlled and governed everything.

The dark radiance was flooded with endless darkness. The mass that was the ball of light continuously grew bigger, and the Destruction Energy in it was terrifying. It turned into a dark green light shield that could not be penetrated by Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy or the Elven Empress' Life Saint Energy. The energy would disappear into thin air upon coming into contact with the dark green light shield.

Zhou Weiqing could only shudder in fear when he sensed the Destruction Energy that was expanding continuously in the black mass of light. This was because he could sense that the waves of Destruction Energy within it was the purest Destruction Energy in the world, and it could truly compare to Genesis Energy. This was a powerful energy that he could not completely resist. Even his Saint Energy that was considered to be very pure would vanish upon contact with the aura released by this Destruction Origin Energy. Furthermore, the Creation Feature that was contained in his Saint Energy would be destroyed by this Destruction Origin Energy into nothingness.

Chapter 842: Zhou Weiqing, the Heart of the Seal! (1)

'What sort of energy is this? How do I deal with it?' When Zhou Weiqing saw the black-colored light mass growing bigger without any signs of stopping, a strong sense of crisis surged into his heart. He understood that if this thing crashed onto his body, he would immediately vanish from this world for all eternity no matter how strong his cultivation base was.

He lifted his right leg and directly kicked that black-colored ball into the air. Zhou Weiqing's right leg could no longer transform into the tailhook-like state anymore following the completion of the Dragon-Tiger Transformation. However, his terrifying energy had surpassed his energy previously.

The simple movement of stomping his right foot resulted in an intense explosion in the air that was created by the terrifying energy. An orb of extremely condensed Saint Energy brutally slammed towards the black-colored Destruction Energy.

The shield broke with the sound of a soft pop the moment this Saint Light ball came in contact with the dark green protective shield. After all, this was Zhou Weiqing's extremely condensed and compressed Saint Energy. The Saint Energy and the Destruction Energy were diametrically opposed, and both energies naturally restricted one another, making Zhou Weiqing's full force attack was also naturally unprecedented.

The protective shield naturally broke when the black and white energy balls collided in the air. However, there was no thundering rumble to be heard, only a hissing sound akin to hot oil being poured on a snow mountain.

The powerhouses' gazes were shocked as they watched the two energy balls merged into one. The color still remained black even after merging together. Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy ball was

completely destroyed by the Destruction Energy ball.

"Zhou Weiqing, your Saint Energy's still not pure enough to compete with my Ultimate Destruction Energy. Go to hell." Meanwhile, the black-colored light mass had already condensed into a ball with the diameter of about one meter. This was his ultimate energy. The amount of energy continued to lessen with usage, and it required a long time to replenish. That was why the Nether Lord was unwilling to use too much of this energy. If it was not because he had to deal with Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy, he absolutely would not use his ultimate source of energy to launch an attack. He had only used the ultimate source of energy in the past when he attacked the seal.

The Nether Lord only initiated attacks on the Netherworld's Seal after he had accumulated a certain amount of Ultimate Destruction Energy. It was precisely this energy that was capable of splitting the Netherworld's seal and severely injuring the Dragon Emperor.

The Destruction Energy Ball was floating in the air slowly when a streak of black-colored light directly shot out of the energy ball. It enshrouded the space around Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er. Every existing energy was completely cut off in a flash. Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er only felt cold throughout their entire bodies, and they were not attacked in this situation. However, Zhou Weiqing discovered that he had lost all contact with all energy attributes and even all the laws of the outside world. In other words, there was no way he could even attempt to escape by using the Spatial Law at this moment.

The Nether Lord was experienced and vicious, he was not planning to give Zhou Weiqing any opportunity to escape since he had attacked with full force.

Meanwhile, everyone could sense that the surrounding temperature had increased abruptly, and the entire cavern had turned red. At this moment, even Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy and the Nether Lord's Destruction Energy could not conceal the

red color glow in the cavern.

"Nether Lord, the only ending for you is being sealed for eternity. I've accompanied you over here for ten thousand years. Since that's the case, I'll continue accompanying you for the remainder of eternity."

An enormous ball of the red mass of light descended from the sky. Its enormous size was terrifying. The most crucial part of the situation was the fire element within the bright red ball that was even denser than lava by thousands of times. It was seared with unparalleled spirit and carried along the dedication of the soul as it descended from the sky. It slammed ferociously towards the Destruction light mass that was flying towards Zhou Weiqing.

The size difference between the Destruction Energy ball and this red-colored light mass was completely disproportionate. However, just as the two collide, the ball of Destruction Energy and the red glow from the mass of red light vanished simultaneously. Furthermore, it continued on its trajectory and ferociously crashed down on the Nether Lord's gigantic front claws.

"First ancestor..."

"Senior Dragon Emperor..."

The sound of people crying out loud in alarm echoed in unison and everyone's eyes reddened almost instantly.

Yes, it was the Dragon Emperor who transformed into that enormous red mass of light that descended from the sky. The Dragon Clan's emperor, who possessed boundless prestige and experienced the many vicissitudes of life, sacrificed the final parts of his life in an attempt to guard the Dragon Clan's honor and the Boundless Mainland.

His enormous body forcibly slammed into the Nether Lord's front claws, and he wrapped his body around that pair of gigantic front claws. Huge mouthfuls of dragon blood continuously gushed

out from the Dragon Emperor's mouth and splashed on the seal on the ground.

"No..." The Lord of Destruction's voice was filled with panic and hysteria. However, his voice rapidly turned weak rapidly, even his Destruction aura was weakened to a great extent at this moment.

A green light descended from the sky, coming from the Life Energy of the Elven Empress. She was pouring almost all of her lifetime's worth of Life Energy into the Dragon Emperor's body at this moment.

"Your majesty, there's no need for that. Hold on to that useful energy of yours to help Zhou Weiqing to reform the seal." The Dragon Emperor's eyes were overflowing with mercy and a gentle glow. When he made the decision to act, he had already given up his life.

In the beginning, when he was fatally wounded, it was the Life Energy that the Elven Empress released that pulled him back from the brink of death. However, how could he be willing to let the Nether Lord kill Zhou Weiqing at this moment? The Nether Lord knew that Zhou Weiqing was his biggest threat, and so did the Dragon Emperor.

The Dragon Emperor and the Nether Lord had been fighting each other all their lives. He was unwilling to lose this battle between him and the Nether Lord in the final moment.

That was why he chose to die a hero. He used the final brilliance of his life to seal off the Nether Lord's escape path. That red-colored radiance was the Saint Fire produced by the Dragon Emperor by burning his Life Flames and the Dragon Clan's emperor bloodline. His Fire Attribute Energy was exceptionally tremendous. Even the Nether Lord's Ultimate Destruction Energy ball was completely annihilated in face of the Dragon Emperor's fatal blow. His pair of front claws were also temporarily sealed by the Dragon Emperor's enormous body.

This was the Dragon Emperor's seal created by the Dragon Emperor by sacrificing his own life, meridians, bones, muscles and also everything else! Despite the Nether Lord being more powerful, the Dragon Emperor who was halfway through the Heavenly God Tier, still managed to temporarily seal it.

"Your Majesty, Dragon Emperor! You..." The Elven Empress had only spoken a few words before she started sobbing so hard that she could no longer speak. In order to seal the Nether Lord, the Dragon Emperor sacrificed his entire lifetime. It was thousands of years worth of desolation and loneliness that would be unbearable for ordinary humans.

The Dragon Emperor's gaze was gentle as he shook his head at the Elven Empress. He said, "There's no need to feel sorry for me. I can now die without regrets since I was able to fight to the death here. We don't have much time. From now on, everyone must listen to my orders."

"Yes, Your Majesty Dragon Emperor." Everyone including Zhou Weiqing, Tian'er, and the Elven Empress respectfully worshipped this senior that was filled with prestige. They awaited his orders. Meanwhile, the Dragon Emperor had already risen to an unparalleled position in everyone's heart.

Zhou Weiqing admired very few people in his lifetime. There was his persistent father, his teacher, Long Shiya and his teacher's brother, Duan Tianlang. There were also those bold and unrestrained members of the Heavenly Bow Unit. However, at this very moment, he truly regarded the Dragon Emperor as his idol. He could say with absolute certainty that no matter how glorious he became in this lifetime, it would be impossible for him to compare to this respectable senior before his eyes.

For the good of the entire world, the Dragon Emperor sacrificed his life that lasted for thousands of years. His life and the lives of those Divine Beasts that helped him to maintain the seal were the most respectable and admirable lives in this world! In order to

guard the world, they sacrificed so much and for so long quietly yet no one was aware of that. At this moment, the Dragon Emperor even sacrificed his own life in order to complete the seal once again.

Zhou Weiqing's heart was deeply moved. It was at this moment that he had completely forgotten about his fear of death. He secretly made up his mind that he would seal the Nether Lord today regardless, so that it could never escape from here.

The Dragon Emperor's gaze shifted to Hui Yao as Hui Yao and Duo Si's gigantic dragon eyes flowed with large drops of tears. There was no sorrow in their gazes, only endless pride. It was the Dragon Clan's pride. The Dragon Emperor set a good example for them. This was the supposed nobleness of the Dragon Clan that once dominated the entire world! The sorrow of their children's tragic deaths had faded a lot. Compared to the Dragon Emperor, what was the meaning of sorrow?

"First ancestor?" Hui Yao's voiced quivered ever so slightly.

The Dragon Emperor's gaze gradually turned gold in color, "My child, there's no need to be sad. All living beings will die sooner or later anyway. This is the dictum of heaven and earth that no one can ever disobey. It's just the same for us who're blessed with such a long lifespan. I and my friends' lives are already nearing its end since the beginning. Even Phelia, who's the youngest among us, is already almost six thousand years old. What more could we ask for? The Dragon Clan's responsibility is entrusted to you after my death. If you're capable of completing the seal, you'll be able to leave this place alive. If that's the case, go and look for our clansmen in the world. I don't have any more responsibility to entrust to you. I can only hope that you'll lead our clansmen and ensure the continuity of our Dragon Clan's glory and honor. Do not let the fire of the Dragon Clan be extinguished, can you do that?"

"I can. I'll use my life and everything else to guard the honor and future of the Dragon Clan. I vow to thee," Hui Yao solemnly swore

an oath.

The Dragon Emperor nodded satisfactorily at him, "Very well. From now on, you're the new Emperor of the Dragon Clan." As he was saying that, two beams of golden light shot out of his enormous dragon eyes that had completely turned gold in color. It converged together in front of the Dragon Emperor's enormous head before he transformed into a golden-colored light mass that floated towards the area above Hui Yao's head.

Hui Yao lowered his head in great respect as he quietly waited for the ball of golden light to float to the top of his head.

Chapter 843: Zhou Weiqing, the Heart of the Seal! (2)

The golden light dropped onto the center of Hui Yao's head. The light gradually faded until a golden crown appeared on top of Hui Yao's head before it turned into a golden energy that gradually sank into Hui Yao's head.

This was the Dragon Emperor's legacy. It would only be passed down to the next generation of the new emperor when the older generation of Dragon Emperor was about to pass on. This was the Dragon Clan's legacy of giving place to the new.

After the Dragon Emperor had completed the process, the radiance in his eyes clearly became dimmer as a large amount of fresh blood surged out from his body continuously and tainted the entire seal on the ground red.

"Weiqing." The Dragon Emperor did not look at Hui Yao anymore. There was more that he wished to hand over to this junior of his! However, time was not on his side. In his perception, the disaster that might befall the entire mainland was even more important than the continuity of the Dragon Clan.

"Your Majesty, Dragon Emperor." Zhou Weiqing exclaimed with great respect. Meanwhile, his Saint Energy had already completely circulated and connected with the twelve Divine Beasts. With the support of the Saint Energy and the Elven Empress' Life Saint Energy, the Divine Beasts were healing at a shocking speed.

However, Zhou Weiqing was not the Dragon Emperor after all. Although he possessed tremendous Saint Energy, and his cultivation base was even more powerful than the Dragon Emperor, he knew nothing about the Netherworld seal's magic formation before his eyes. He did not know how to wield the magic formation.

The Dragon Emperor muttered, "From now on, everyone must follow Weiqing's order. After I'm gone, all of you must respect Weiqing like how you respected me. Otherwise, I'll never be at ease even when I'm in another world, do all of you understand?"

Even when he was already on the brink of death, and he was about to arrive at the end of his life, all the Divine Beasts still simultaneously lowered their heads towards the Dragon Emperor the moment he displayed his courage and power. This was an emperor's prestige.

The Divine Beasts' eyes had reddened. Many of them were shedding tears. They had been together with the Dragon Emperor for at least a few thousand years, it could be said that the Dragon Emperor was like a teacher or a father to them. Aside from the husband and wife, Hui Yao and Duo Si who had just joined, almost every single one of the Divine Beasts served the Dragon Emperor willingly after they were subdued or rescued by the Dragon Emperor.

Once the Divine Beasts heard the Dragon Emperor's words, many of them could not refrain from sobbing aloud. The cavern was instantly filled with a sorrowful atmosphere.

"Do all of you understand what I've just said?" The Dragon Emperor spoke in a lowered voice.

"Yes, Your Majesty," All of the Divine Beasts answered the Dragon Emperor's question with a voice that almost sounded like a sad cry.

The Dragon Emperor only nodded before he continued speaking to Zhou Weiqing, "Weiqing, I don't have much time here. From now on, you shall do as I bid. With the existence of your Saint Energy, it's absolutely possible to restore the seal to perfection. Very well, we shall begin now."

The Dragon Emperor's gaze became solemn as he spoke. He appeared just like a healthy elder. There was still a sense of strong

prestige that remained on his body. He did not seem like he was on the brink of death at all.

"The magic formation was created together by me and the former Elven Empress. There were only six Divine Beasts that aided me back in the day, out of which there's only three left currently out of the six Divine Beasts. I'm not going to dwell on the magic formation's principle and structure. You'll only need to launch the magic formation. My blood has already tainted the entire magic formation so the ultimate bloodline that's destroyed by the Nether Lord earlier has been restored. Following this, you'll need to complete the connection between all the Divine Beasts and the magic formation. Meanwhile, you're the heart of this entire seal magic formation."

Zhou Weiqing listened quietly. The Dragon Emperor's voice had already begun to turn weaker as he spoke. It was apparent that he could die at any given moment.

"The heart of the seal is at the position where I am now. It's also precisely the position that was destroyed by the Nether Lord earlier. This position will be empty after my death. You're going to divide your Divine Thought into twelve portions. In order to complete the connection with the Divine Beasts, you need to completely loosen your state of mind. After that, you'll lead them into infusing their energies into your body, and use yourself as the core and foundation. Convert all their energies into your Saint Energy then shoot it towards my position that's also the core of the magic formation. The entire magic formation will be triggered from that. This is not a complicated process. I can sense that your body has a similar bloodline to our Dragon Clan's Dragon Emperor Bloodlines. I'm going to strengthen the Dragon Emperor Bloodlines in your body before I die so the magic formation will recognize you as the new leader. Quick, let us begin. I can't hold on much longer."

The Dragon Emperor's enormous body trembled violently as he spoke. Streaks upon streaks of Destruction Energy emerged from

his body continuously. It was apparent that the remnant of his body would lose its suppressive effect on the Nether Lord soon.

The Nether Lord could naturally sense the Dragon Emperor's actions. Although it would take time and tremendous energy to restore the seal, the Nether Lord would have no other opportunity to escape anymore once it was truly restored. That was why he no longer cared about exhausting his Ultimate Destruction Energy anymore. He used his powerful Ultimate Destruction Energy to launch an attack at the Dragon Emperor in an attempt to break through the seal that used the Dragon Emperor's body as a medium to eliminate Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er first.

However, the Dragon Emperor had already made the decision to pay the price with his life. Even if the Nether Lord devoted all his effort and resources, it was still not an easy task to completely annihilate the Dragon Emperor. After all, they had dealt with each other for a long time now, and the Dragon Emperor understood the Nether Lord very well. Moreover, the Dragon Emperor had already gotten accustomed to the Destruction Energy since a long time ago. In addition to the Dragon Emperor's fire element energy that was already burning at the strongest point, he was not just combusting his life force, but his Maximum-Level Heavenly God Tier Heavenly Nucleus that was firmly wrapped around the Nether Lord. As long as the Dragon Emperor's life did not burn out, it was utterly impossible for the Nether Lord to charge out of the seal.

Zhou Weiqing dared not slow down. The gaze in his eyes was dull as the powerful energy from his Divine Thought spread out instantly. He was very intelligent for he did not directly divide his Divine Thought into twelve portions. He was going to connect to the twelve Great Divine Beasts. The combination of the Divine Beasts' Divine Thoughts was unimaginably powerful and far exceeded Zhou Weiqing's. Most importantly, Zhou Weiqing was not familiar with the Netherworld's magic formation. If the connection failed, there was no way Zhou Weiqing could possibly

form a connection again.

Therefore, Zhou Weiqing only divided his Divine Thought into two. Then, he unleashed it towards the husband and wife, Hui Yao and Duo Si, the moment he came up.

The two enormous dragons and Zhou Weiqing had the closest relationship. They had known each other for such a long time, and they were very familiar with each other's auras. Moreover, it was not a problem for Zhou Weiqing to form a Divine Thought connection with the two enormous dragons due to the existence of the Dragon Emperor Bloodlines in his body.

Hence, Zhou Weiqing made such a choice. In no time at all, his Divine Thought came in contact with Hui Yao and Duo Si.

Zhou Weiqing could feel two waves of vast Divine Thoughts instantly flowed from the other party. The Divine Thought was very gentle, and there was no conflict between the Divine Thoughts just like he had predicted. The moment Hui Yao and his wife sensed the Divine Thought that Zhou Weiqing passed to them, they immediately completed the connection with him. Two faint golden glows could be indistinctly seen emitting out from the middle of Hui Yao and Duo Si's heads. It was similar to two silk threads that were released in Zhou Weiqing's direction.

Zhou Weiqing used his own to guide their Divine Thoughts into connecting with his body. The moment the two strands of Divine Thoughts were connected to his, the Netherworld seal's magic formation below immediately ignited into a red, piercing mass of light.

In just a split second, Zhou Weiqing could feel a very peculiar sensation all over his body. The sensation could not be described with words at all. He only felt as if everything that he could sense and perceive was doubly amplified at this very moment.

The sensation and perception were not in macroscopic view but was in a microscopic view instead. Everything in the surroundings

became crystal clear. Anyone's Divine Thoughts would be repressed to a certain extent in this situation where one possessed a combination of the Dragon Emperor's energy, the Destruction Energy and all the energies of the Divine Beasts. However, Zhou Weiqing immediately realized that his Divine Thought felt as if it was amplified after merging with the two enormous dragons' Divine Thoughts. His sensation and perception towards everything in his surroundings became much clearer until he could already enshroud the energy of the Divine Thought around the area surrounding the entire magic formation.

Not only that, there was an addition of some other knowledge in his mind. The knowledge was related to the magic formation. A weird sense of understanding came to him, it was as if he had suddenly understood many things in a flash.

Was it supposed to be so ingenious?

It was also at this moment that movements appeared from the Dragon Emperor's side. He opened his enormous dragon mouth and spat out a ball of blood red light that shot towards Zhou Weiqing.

Just as Zhou Weiqing's Divine Thought connected to Hui Yao and his wife, the blood red energy had already arrived before him and slammed directly into the Saint God Nucleus Core on his chest.

A wave of scorching hot sensation that was difficult to explain immediately spread throughout Zhou Weiqing's entire body. He felt as if at this exact moment, the Saint Energy in his body and even his soul was boiling. The sensation was not agonizing. On the contrary, it was filled with a hot and comfortable sensation. It felt as if his entire body was soaking in a hot spring, and the pores on his entire body were all opened and absorbing this energy that made him feel beyond comfortable in a relaxed yet greedy manner.

A warm light revealed itself in the Dragon Emperor's eyes before he slowly closed his eyes. His final thought was to pray. To pray for

the success of the seal, and to pray that everything he did was not in vain.

That ball of red light that he just released was his Dragon-Phoenix Ultimate Energy. Just like the Nether Lord's Ultimate Destruction Energy, this was his most essential and purest energy.

Although the Dragon Emperor was a Maximum-Level Heavenly God-tier powerhouse and was incapable of being equals with the Nether Lord's Heavenly Change Tier, his powerful Dragon Emperor's Maximum-Level Energy was still rather terrifying.

If the Dragon Emperor had a choice, he would certainly not hesitate in exerting his ultimate source of energy to his own clansman, the next Dragon Emperor Hui Yao.

If that was the case, it would only require ten years' time at most for Hui Yao to possess the same powerful cultivation base he had when he was at the ultimate level.

However, the Dragon Emperor had no other choice as Hui Yao was not his replacement in becoming the heart of the Netherworld's Seal. Instead, it was Zhou Weiqing. In order to allow Zhou Weiqing to have the energy to trigger the entire magic formation, he could only choose to pass his Dragon Emperor's Ultimate Energy to Zhou Weiqing because only by doing so, he could truly launch the magic formation without causing a rejection.

Chapter 844: Zhou Weiqing, the Heart of the Seal! (3)

The Dragon Emperor's Ultimate Energy deepened into Zhou Weiqing's Saint God Nucleus Core drop by drop. It could be clearly seen that a faint layer of red glow appeared on the surface of Zhou Weiqing's Saint God Nucleus Core. That little Zhou Weiqing who was sitting upright slowly opened its eyes at this moment as its eyes completely turned fiery red. A little bright red dragon coiled slowly and comfortably around its body while that red ball of light gradually disappeared.

Little by little, a layer of misty red light emerged on Zhou Weiqing's Ringless Ground Purging Set. The layer of light did not conceal the armor's original white tint. However, the layer of red light was shimmering quietly like the glow of gemstones.

The Netherworld seal's magic formation below had completely brightened alongside the appearance of this layer of red light. The misty red light slowly drifted and enshrouded the entire magic formation.

The sensation Zhou Weiqing felt at this moment was different again. He realized that his body had already become a part of the magic formation or more accurately, the entire magic formation was like his body, and he was like this body's heart.

Zhou Weiqing immediately released his Divine Thought outwards without the slightest bit of hesitation. He remained calm and composed and did not attempt to form connections with the rest of the ten Divine Beasts. He released three strands of Divine Thoughts and formed connections with three Divine Beasts.

Zhou Weiqing's actions made absolute sense. Although everything that happened here was temporary, he discovered that he could merge the Divine Thoughts of the Divine Beasts into his own for his own use during the process of forming the Divine

Though connection with Hui Yao and his wife. In this situation, his own Divine Thought would rapidly amplify. Even more importantly, he could experience the effects of understanding the Netherworld seal's magic formation by following the Divine Thought connection.

Usually, two types of problems would occur if he merged with too many Divine Beasts' Divine Thoughts at once in situations like these. Firstly, these Divine Beasts absolutely did not trust him the way they had trusted the Dragon Emperor. It was difficult to tell if the connection could be completed at once or if he could achieve the perfect connection. On the other hand, what was even more important was his understanding would be affected. Combining so many Divine Thoughts at once would result in his own rapidly amplifying to a terrifying level. It would be tough for Zhou Weiqing to get accustomed to it. How could he have the intention to understand the secrets of the Netherworld seal's magic formation at this crucial moment?

That was why he had only made connections with the three Divine Beasts' Divine Thoughts this time.

Just as he had expected, a problem instantly arose when the Divine Thoughts of the three Divine Beasts' Divine Thoughts were connected to his. The three Great Divine Beasts' Divine Thoughts were probing around and attempting to accept Zhou Weiqing. They were completely unlike Hui Yao and Duo Si who directly connected to Zhou Weiqing's Divine Thought. They were unfamiliar with Zhou Weiqing after all. Moreover, the Dragon Emperor Bloodlines did not exist in their bodies.

Zhou Weiqing unleashed his own Divine Thought. There was not an ounce of reservation in him this time. This was akin to him completely opening up his heart to the Divine Beasts. If the other party were to attack him in this situation, his Divine Thought would certainly be severely damaged. However, it was only by doing so that he could ensure that the Divine Beasts would put

their trust in him in the shortest period of time.

The Dragon Emperor's Ultimate Energy had already completely fused with Zhou Weiqing's body by now. The Dragon Clan's aura emitting from his body was even stronger than Hui Yao and Duo Si under the Saint Energy that complemented the aura. After the three Divine Beasts sensed the Dragon Clan's aura from his body in addition to his open Divine Thought, the three Divine Beasts only hesitated slightly before they opened up their Divine Thoughts and connected to Zhou Weiqing.

Boom!

In just a split second, Zhou Weiqing felt as if everything in his surroundings had exploded. Every realm became crystal clear to him, and everything in the surroundings seemed to have entered a brand new realm. All the energy elements were present in his Divine Thought in a crystal clear manner.

The magic formation below also began to surge violently. The unparalleled tremendous energy started converging in the middle. Zhou Weiqing could clearly sense the Dragon Emperor's blood that tainted the entire magic formation red, flowing into every single complicated crevasse in the magic formation. As a gentle energy fluctuation was unleashed on the outside, a powerful coercive force began to appear. Beyond the magic formation, it felt like the realm had been completely shattered, making this place feel like it was isolated in an entirely different realm.

When his Divine Thought was suddenly enhanced, he found the feeling of being able to sense such minute energy changes in this place filled with complicated energy very addictive.

Zhou Weiqing could similarly sense every energy change in the realm outside as well. However, there were only a dozen Heavenly God-tier powerhouses and one Heavenly Change-tier Nether Lord in this cavern.

Although the Nether Lord did not manage to truly break through

the seal, and its cultivation base was constantly suppressed, his Destruction Energy still possessed the purity of the Heavenly Change Tier! When such numerous yet tremendous and powerful energies were all squeezed and condensed together, even the Divine Thought of a Heavenly Emperor-tier powerhouse would be instantly destroyed if he released even a little of it. Zhou Weiqing could sense every single energy change in the magic formation now so one could only imagine how powerful his Divine Thought was at this moment.

Moreover, an understanding had already emerged in Zhou Weiqing's heart at this exact moment. He finally understood how the Dragon Emperor suppressed the Nether Lord.

Leaving the issue of energy aside, the Dragon Emperor's Divine Thought had the upper hand in the match of Divine Thoughts just by depending on his cultivation and the help from numerous Divine Beasts for now. It was also because of that the Dragon Emperor managed to maintain the seal for so many years. Every time the Nether Lord launched an assault, he would be suppressed.

Zhou Weiqing could not indulge in such a comfortable sensory experience. The moment he understood the magic formation, another three strands of his Divine Thought was unleashed. Based on his prior experience, he directly opened his Divine Thought this time and formed a connection with another three Divine Beasts.

Due to prior changes, Zhou Weiqing was not in so much shock after the connection was completed this time around. The Divine Thought continued to increase while the magic formation below seemed to be completely ignited. There was only the Dragon Emperor's enormous body that had sank into desolation.

During the crucial moment when Zhou Weiqing was about to complete the magic formation, an unparalleled loud rumble could be heard all of a sudden.

The entire magic formation shook violently, and the Dragon

Emperor's enormous body suddenly turned entirely black followed closely by the sound of a loud explosion. The Dragon Emperor's enormous body exploded into ashes and smoke while the Nether Lord's gigantic front claws stabbed out at the sound of the explosion.

This time, he did not bother to condense his energy because he did not have the time. Two pitch black light turned into two clear pillars of light that were charging at and bombarding Zhou Weiqing's body.

"Quick, open up all of your Divine Thoughts," Zhou Weiqing shouted towards the final four Divine Beasts. He simultaneously connected to their Divine Thoughts and unleashed it outside. There was no way he could dodge or block at this moment because before the magic formation was completed, all their efforts from earlier would be in vain if he made any movements. Therefore, he could only forcibly push through now. He was going to depend on the Saint Energy in his body to forcibly push through.

Meanwhile, a gigantic green figure rose from below Zhou Weiqing's body. It was the Elven Empress that had transformed into the Goddess of Nature.

She used the scepter of the Goddess of Nature to block the two black light without any hesitation.

The Nether Lord was close to madness by now. Although he did not have time to condense his Ultimate Destruction Energy, the two black lights were released using Ultimate Destruction Energy as its foundation.

With a soft pop, the Goddess of Nature vanished into nothingness almost in a blink of an eye. In place was the original body of the Elven Empress. However, it was also at this exact moment the Ancient Tree of Life in the sky dropped with a pop. It transformed into a ball of ginormous green light that not only broke the remaining black radiance energy but also fiercely slammed

towards the Nether Lord's front claws.

Tremendous energy fluctuation suddenly exploded. In the next moment, a mass of green light shot into the sky.

The Elven Empress' body was spurting out fresh blood in the air while at least half of her crown had already withered away when the Ancient Tree of Life appeared. They paid a great price in order to block the Nether Lord's attack. However, they managed to ensure the Nether Lord's attack did not land on Zhou Weiqing's body.

Zhou Weiqing's single shout aroused had an important significance toward the situation unfolding before his eyes. He formed the connection with the four Divine Beasts almost simultaneously when his four Divine Thoughts were released.

Bzzt.

The entire magic formation brightened in the next instance after the connection between the twelve Divine Beasts' energy and Zhou Weiqing was completed. The Nether Lord's gigantic front claws instantly seemed like it was being clamped to the extent that the front claws could no longer move as freely as before.

The blood that came from the Dragon Emperor fully seeped into the magic formation quietly before the entire magic formation turned into a dazzling and piercing golden color.

At this moment, Zhou Weiqing felt as if his body was about to explode in midair. The terrifying energy fluctuation rose in a flash. All the twelve Great Divine Beasts' Heavenly Energy surged towards his body at a shocking speed.

In that split second, Zhou Weiqing thought that his body was about to be destroyed. However, it was also in that split second that he had completely understood the method of controlling this magic formation.

The Netherworld seal's magic formation required a simple yet

pure energy of any attribute to work. However, it must come from only one type of attribute. Moreover, the energy's purity must be maintained to a certain degree, such that the Dragon Clan or the Elf Tribe's Emperor Bloodlines could exercise control over it.

The connection of Divine Thoughts earlier did not only allow him to experience the secret behind the magic formation. At the same time, and most importantly, he was capable of exercising control over any form of energy at least ten times stronger than before after his Divine Thought was amplified to a terrifying extent.

Chapter 845: The Hero (1 | 2 | 3)

At this exact moment, Zhou Weiqing had the illusion that he had already broken through the Heavenly God Tier and entered the state of Heavenly Change. The Heavenly Energy from the twelve Divine Beasts that converged toward him from all directions did not attack at him. On the contrary, due to the effect of the Netherworld seal's magic formation, the tremendous Heavenly Energy became exceedingly pliable and was completely under his control.

The Saint God Nucleus Core on Zhou Weiqing's chest burst out in a dazzling array of lights. The originally platinum Saint Energy gradually began to emit an intense white heat. With Zhou Weiqing's precise control, the tremendous Heavenly Energy that was coming from outside was converted into his Heavenly Energy at a shocking speed.

An invisible huge vortex had already taken form around Zhou Weiqing's body. Zhou Weiqing was the center of this vortex while the tremendous energy in the vortex was formed from the immense Heavenly Energy sent out by the twelve great Divine Beasts. The immense Heavenly Energy continuously spun and with every round, it was going through a purification process that was affected by Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy. Due to this purification, it was converted into an even purer Saint Energy for Zhou Weiqing to control.

Although Zhou Weiqing had a cultivation base at the Maximum-Level of the Heavenly God Tier, he would not be able to endure the tremendous Heavenly Energy being infused into his body all at once. He would be filled to the point of bursting since this was the cultivation base that belonged to the twelve Heavenly God-tier Divine Beasts. However, this was absolutely not a problem for Zhou Weiqing due to the effect of the Netherworld seal's magic formation. After the purification process, the tremendous Saint

Energy spun around Zhou Weiqing's body, ready for him to use. There was no need for it to enter his body. This was also the reason why Zhou Weiqing felt like the entire magic formation was his body.

Under such circumstances, the pressure that Zhou Weiqing endured was almost non-existent, and he managed to seamlessly merge the cultivation bases of the twelve Divine Beasts to his cultivation base. This was such a powerful entity!

He no longer cared about the sorrow brought on by the death of the Dragon Emperor. Zhou Weiqing's only thought at this exact moment was to fulfill the Dragon Emperor's last wish to seal off the Nether Lord for good.

The Elven Empress' attack from earlier was too timely. Although she paid an agonizingly great price, she still managed to stall for time on behalf of Zhou Weiqing. Otherwise, if Zhou Weiqing was struck by the Destruction Energy at that time, it would certainly mess up his control of the entire magic formation even though he might not be severely injured. He was not the Dragon Emperor, and he was not too familiar with the Netherworld seal's magic formation yet. In the event of a problem arising, it could possibly turn into an opportunity that the Nether Lord could exploit. More often than not, success or failure depended on a single moment.

The Nether Lord's gloominess was already in an incomparable state. Although the Elven Empress and the Ancient Tree of Life paid a great price for resisting the Nether Lord's attack, they managed to neutralize his attack and substantially pushed back his claws that had already partially broken through. If the Nether Lord exerted his full force in the attack earlier, he was definitely capable of completely destroying the Elven Empress and the Ancient Tree of Life. However, the Nether Lord was distraught by the fact that the Netherworld seal's magic formation was not successfully broken apart because most of his energy was still constricted within the limitation of the magic formation. There

was absolutely no way he was capable of displaying his full energy. Otherwise, how could the Dragon Emperor or the Elven Empress possibly seal him?

The most important moment that determined if the Nether Lord could break through the seal or not had already arrived. He no longer cared about exhaustion as he launched an attack again.

The pitch black destruction light transformed into a ring of light that rose upwards while a pitch black mass of light appeared simultaneously in between the two claws again.

A ring of light rose as it forcibly resisted the Saint Energy vortex conjured up by the combined efforts of Zhou Weiqing and the twelve Divine Beasts, in an attempt to stop the tremendous Saint Energy from sinking into the magic formation.

At this moment, the Nether Lord was already risking his life. He was well aware that without displaying his entire body's strength, he could only use the Ultimate Destruction Energy to possibly eliminate Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing scoffed coldly. The Saint God Nucleus Core on his chest erupted into a ball of hot white light that was as thick as an arm. It descended from the sky and slammed ferociously on the Nether Lord's black orb of light that had just begun to condense.

The time for a counterattack had arrived!

Poof!

There were no violent sounds of explosion, there were only two of the purest black and white colors that collided together ferociously. The black halo and the white vortex also simultaneously came into contact and energy from both sides caused an intense collision.

Meanwhile, Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy revealed its strong suppressive capability towards Destruction Energy. Even if it was the Dragon Emperor who was upholding the Netherworld seal's

magic formation, he might not necessarily be capable of suppressing the Nether Lord again. However, it was different with Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy.

With the support from the twelve Great Divine Beasts, Zhou Weiqing absolutely did not need to worry about exhausting his Saint Energy. Moreover, he was not only capable of maneuvering the immense Saint Energy, he could also continuously refine the Saint Energy that he shot out from the Saing God Nucleus Core on his chest. This was also the reason why the hot white light was burning so intensely.

The Saint Energy launched by Zhou Weiqing at this moment was already halfway into the powerful existence of the Genesis Tier. Although it was impossible for him to become a true Genesis God, the intensity of his Saint Energy at this moment was completely capable of attacking the Nether Lord.

Genesis and Destruction were engaged in a battle. The black and white colors were colliding intensely in the air. Although the energy of both parties did not explode, they were exhausting each other immensely.

The entire Netherworld seal's magic formation had brightened completely. Only the misty red light was still gradually turning white.

Zhou Weiqing felt calm in his heart. The Dragon-Tiger Transformation evolved again after he had received the Dragon Emperor's ultimate source of energy. It also resulted in the enhancement of his Cold Perception to an unprecedented level. He could clearly sense every single secret of the Netherworld seal's magic formation, and he also gained an understanding of its secrets. He relied on the powerful Divine Thought that was already at the Heavenly Change Tier under the amplification of the magic formation, to exercise control over the magic formation as he extruded the Nether Lord in a frenzy.

The Nether Lord let out a sharp cry that was clearly filled with fear. His Ultimate Destruction Energy was no longer of any use under the suppression of the Saint Energy. The two parties were completely locked in a stalemate at the moment. The Ultimate Destruction Energy in the center was capable of resisting Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy, but the rings of black light it emitted had no way of resisting the victory of Zhou Weiqing's enormous vortex that was gradually descending.

Strands upon strands, wisps upon wisps of platinum light began to gradually sink into the Destruction halo and approached the magic formation on the ground. There were even some areas that had already come in contact with the red light emitted by the magic formation.

As the old Chinese proverb said, 'A single spark can start a prairie fire'. When the magic formation's red light came in contact with the platinum Galaxia Saint Energy, the magic formation's original color immediately began to change.

The Saint Energy's assimilation capabilities were rather remarkable. It guided the change of the magic formation's attribute to continuously increase the pressure on the Nether Lord.

The twelve Great Divine Beasts' expressions and gazes gradually became excited, they were feeling even more confident now.

If one was to say that most of the Divine Beasts could not accept the Dragon Emperor's decision to have Zhou Weiqing replace him, it was at this moment that they believed in the Dragon Emperor's foresight. It felt like the young man before their eyes was even more powerful than the Dragon Emperor, and he did not even look a day over twenty!

The Dragon Emperor was dead. He left the world forever without even leaving behind a corpse or bones. However, his will did not vanish. Every single one of the Divine Beasts were filled with determination in their hearts, they would not allow the Nether

Lord to come out no matter what.

The Saint Energy, and the magic formation had begun to make contact while the Nether Lord still did not manage to charge out of the light condensed from Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy. The Divine Beasts witnessed hope, a hope to seal the Nether Lord once again!

A common goal could accomplish wonders! At this moment, not a single one of the Divine Beasts selfishly guarded their own cultivation bases, they could not care less about the possibility of injuring themselves as they circulated the Heavenly Energy in their bodies at full force to support Zhou Weiqing. The Saint Energy was also continuously nourishing their bodies so that they would not be injured at all.

The Elven Empress brought along the Ancient Tree of Life as they landed far away. Her beautiful eyes were gradually overflowing with excitement as she witnessed the scene that was taking place before her eyes. Her eyes would reveal a slight dullness when her gaze fell upon Zhou Weiqing's solemn face occasionally. She could not claim that Zhou Weiqing's current accomplishment would never be accomplished again, but it was definitely a record that had never been accomplished before. At the very least, there had never been such a powerful existence like Zhou Weiqing among the humans in her mind.

Outside the abyss .

"Weiqing, where's Weiqing?" Shangguan Bing'er was the first one to wake up from a state of confusion. She shouted as soon as she regained her consciousness.

The sky had already turned into a clear blue, and sunlight was scattered on the ground. It carried a faint sense of warmth in the originally cold Northern Border. It felt very comfortable when the sun shone on the human body.

However, Shangguan Bing'er could not indulge in the warmth right now. This was because that familiar figure before her eyes

was already lost.

Shangguan Fei'er, Shangguan Xue'er, and Little Witch woke up in succession. After their momentary confusion, they regained their consciousness too.

Shangguan Bing'er saw Six Ultimate Heavenly Emperor Long Shiya who was standing nearby at first glance, and she hastily ran towards him. "Teacher, where's Weiqing? Where did Weiqing go?" Although she had already figured out the answer, she still refused to acknowledge the fact at this moment.

"Little Fatty Zhou, you bastard. How dare you knock us out and run away by yourself. Just wait, just wait and..." Shangguan Fei'er shouted out in rage. However, her eyes had reddened unwillingly during the process of shouting.

Little Witch stood there absentmindedly. Zhou Weiqing's words spoken to her before she lost her consciousness were still echoing in her mind. She felt like her heart was empty at this moment.

Although she had no way of resisting when she became Zhou Weiqing's sacrificial offering, and when she sacrificed herself for him, she did not want to resist him either. Although she was uncertain if she liked Zhou Weiqing, she could confirm that only this fellow deserved to be her match in this world. That was the reason why she did not resist him.

Afterward, she left and did not see Zhou Weiqing again for a very long time. It was then she gradually learned how it felt to miss him.

When she met Zhou Weiqing again, they were intimate when Zhou Weiqing promised to be responsible for her. However, she watched helplessly as there were so many soulmates by his side. The Little Witch had been harboring a sense of grudge in her heart all along because she was not confident and could not understand how much love she would receive from Zhou Weiqing.

Perhaps, Zhou Weiqing was truly a flirt. He was so flirtatious she wished that she could beat him up violently. However, there was still room in his heart that was meant for her all along. He was gone now. No one knew if he would return alive. It was at this moment that Little Witch suddenly felt as if her heart was carried away by him too.

'So I really do love him. I don't know when it was when I genuinely fell in love with him, but it was not my choice to become his wife for the Heavenly Demon Sect's future.'

Unbeknownst to her, her tears had already glided down from her eyes although her face was completely cold and expressionless at this moment. Her tears were akin to a broken string of pearls that dropped down from her face continuously.

"Sister..." Shangguan Bing'er pounced into Shangguan Fei'er arms as she wailed bitterly, "The Little Fatty left us behind. He went by himself. Sister, I... I wish to look for him, shall we go and look for him together?"

Shangguan Bing'er's eyes were filled with imploration as if Shangguan Fei'er was the straw that saved her life.

Shangguan Fei'er spoke fiercely, "Why do you want to look for him? It was him who left us behind as he ran away. Why do we still need to look for him? It's better for that scoundrel to die. It's even better if he doesn't return anymore so we'll not feel sad for him. Bing'er, you're not allowed to go look for him."

Although she was speaking like that, Shangguan Bing'er could clearly feel that Shangguan Fei'er's body was trembling at this exact moment, and she was trembling uncontrollably.

Shangguan Xue'er's reaction was different from her two sisters. She was slightly stunned for a moment after she had awakened. She gently touched her red lips that were kissed by him before as she walked step by step towards the edge of the abyss. Her entire person was just like a puppet.

"Xue'er." Shangguan Tianyang stood before her in an attempt to stop her from walking forward. "Children, all of you ought to calm yourselves down first. Zhou Weiqing's did this because he doesn't want all of you to risk your lives for him. He possesses the true Saint Energy in his body, that's why he's capable of dealing with the Nether Lord. All of you are different. Your Saint Energy is not as pure as his. He's just worried that all of you will be harmed! If all of you were to look for him, it'll only be counteractive. You'll only distract his state of mind. Although I don't like this fellow for being a flirt, I can't help but say this. If anyone of you were to meet with a mishap, it'll be the death of him. We're not going to do anything now. We can only wait here, we can only wait for his return."

"There's no need to be overly pessimistic. The purpose of his trip is only to help the Dragon Emperor in reinforcing the seal. He's not going to challenge the Nether Lord. That young fellow has been lucky all along, he'll certainly come back alive this time."

Shangguan Xue'er did not stop walking even with Shangguan Tianyang's blockade. On the contrary, she circled around him. When Shangguan Tianyang was attempting to stop her again, he realized that she had stopped walking on her own accord. She stopped by the side of the abyss as she stared straight into the abyss.

Shangguan Xue'er did not cry but her entire person seemed very stiff. She was the only one who knew what she was thinking in her heart.

She regretted. She regretted that she did not outwit his trick with her own, and she did not reveal that scoundrel's evil idea but obeyed him instead.

Among all of Zhou Weiqing's soulmates, she was the only one who did not have a genuine sexual relationship with Zhou Weiqing. She was genuinely regretting that right now. She had lived for the Heaven's Expanse Palace since young. She had been

working hard continuously in order to become the successor of the Heaven's Expanse Palace. Ever since she was old enough to reason with, she did not think that there would be a man in this world that would be worthy of her admiration. The only thing that she was meant to do was to foster and enhance the Heaven's Expanse Palace and protect the pride of the Heaven's Expanse Palace.

However, everything seemed to change after she was acquainted with him. Everything became different after knowing him. He had been continuously toying with her feelings. She could still remember clearly everything that had happened that one time between her and him. She lost the bet that time. Not only did she lose her own people, but she lost her heart too. Back in those days, she would never willingly acknowledge that fact no matter what. However, she was very certain now that it was that instance that he truly walked into her heart.

Since she had taken a liking to him, why did she remain so reserved? Why did she not completely surrender herself to him? 'Weiqing, you must return alive'.

Shangguan Xue'er tightened her fists. However, the color of her face was as ghastly pale as the snow.

Dongfang Hanyue's behavior was completely different from the four women. Her agitation had since calmed down. She was similarly gazing quietly in the direction of the abyss, and she would occasionally peer in the direction of the Mysterious Heavenly Mainland. She suddenly felt a sense of joy when she saw the three Shangguan siblings and the Little Witch's reactions. Perhaps she did not receive as much love from him as they did, but she was fortunate compared to them. At least she gave him a child.

The people from the Heaven's Expanse Palace, Peerless Sect, and Heavenly Snow Mountain were just standing around. If the people from Heavenly Snow Mountain and Heaven's Expanse Palace originally despised Zhou Weiqing for being the Sect Master of the Peerless Sect, they had long approved of him and accepted him as a

Saint Land Lord in their hearts when they witnessed him attacking and killing Fen Tian before jumping in to the Netherworld's abyss without any hesitation.

Xue Ao'tian's expression at the moment was the most complicated. That was because his son-in-law was not the only one that was headed to the abyss, there was his daughter too.

The moment Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er left, he instantly shut his eyes, but he did not attempt to stop them. Aside from his daughter and son-in-law, his beloved wife was also in that abyss.

The Heavenly Snow Mountain was destroyed, and if his wife and daughter were to leave this world for eternity, Xue Ao'tian would still be devastated even if the seal was completed. He was once the number one powerhouse in the world yet he appeared a little old and frail at this moment. He stood quietly by himself, and it seemed like he was filled with an aura of desolation.

However, in the depth of everyone's hearts, including Xue Ao'tian, Shangguan Tianyang, Zhou Weiqing's soulmates and also all the powerhouses on the scene was doing the same thing at this moment. They were all praying.

It was unknown if this was the effect of the prayers from the powerhouses of the Three Great Saints Lands, but the Netherworld's seal progress was headed in a good direction.

The hot white light and the pitch black light continued to surge against one another, but that white heat managed to gradually suppress the area above the black Destruction Energy.

This was not because Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy was stronger than the Ultimate Destruction Energy, but more importantly, it was due to the Netherworld seal's magic formation.

Rings of black light released by the Ultimate Destruction Energy was gradually disappearing at the moment, while the Saint Energy vortex produced by the joined efforts of Zhou Weiqing and the

twelve Great Divine Beasts had already completely connected to the magic formation below. The red color in the magic formation had since disappeared, and the surroundings were already covered in a stretch of platinum light.

There seemed to be countless starlight that was floating about in the dense platinum light. It was as if this place had already turned into the galaxy. Every time the starlight shimmered, the entire magic formation would generate a powerful energy to charge against the Nether Lord, and the originally destroyed mark was gradually disappearing in a speed that could be seen with the naked eyes.

The Ultimate Destruction Energy released by the Nether Lord was becoming weaker and weaker under the pressure of the magic formation. There was a possibility that it might vanish at any moment.

Just like the Elven Empress and Dragon Emperor had predicted, Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy was tremendously effective for the Netherworld seal's magic formation.

The sound of low moans continuously echoed out of the magic formation's fissure that was torn by the claws. It was the Nether Lord's voice. It was filled with unwillingness.

Zhou Weiqing's expression remained as cold as ever. Although he already had the upper hand in this battle, he did not slack at all. He did not want to lose the momentum before the seal was completed.

Poof!

The hot white Saint Energy finally had a direct confrontation with the ultimate source of Darkness energy. The entire magic formation trembled violently once, and the tremendous energy fluctuation surged abruptly. Zhou Weiqing who was acting as the magic formation's core and the pair of gigantic claws simultaneously shuddered.

The sound of a sharp and bitter howl echoed once again. The competition to see who could consume the most energy had begun. A light glowed in Zhou Weiqing's eyes made him seem like he was immortal, as his enormous Divine Thought assembled all the Saint Energy to merge with the hot white light that erupted from his Saint God Nucleus Core. It was only in a blink of an eye, the hot white-color light did not only expand but it became even more concentrated. The Saint Energy seemed like it was in the form of a spear as it ferociously pierced the Ultimate Darkness Energy.

The entire Netherworld seal's magic formation also erupted in a dazzling light at this moment. Within the intense fluctuation, the surrounding space turned into [the space division situation] when Zhou Weiqing and the rest first arrived.

The separate realm of the seal emerged again, but there was not even a hint of black this time. There was only the shimmering boundless platinum light. The sky of this parallel realm was completely covered by the milky way. Streaks upon streaks of starlight scattered down from the sky continuously and reflected onto the hot white Saint Energy long spear as the spear pieced towards the bottom in a slow and steady manner.

The most crucial moment of restoring the seal had finally arrived. At this moment, Zhou Weiqing had absolute confidence that he would succeed. Under the effect of the magic formation, he was like an enormous Saint Energy core. Even he was shocked at the level of purity and density of that Saint Energy. Moreover, the Netherworld seal's magic formation was continuously changing albeit slightly under the Saint Energy's effect. The change was beneficial. It was as if the magic formation was continuously perfecting itself after it was infused with his Saint Energy. The magic formation's power was also continuously boosted during the perfecting process. The magic formation was also applying pressure to the Nether Lord.

The Ultimate Destruction Energy began fluctuating violently.

The Nether Lord's gigantic claws also shuddered in accordance and were gradually pinned down by the magic formation.

The seal that was broken by his claws and also the destroyed mark on the seal were gradually converging towards the pair of claws. Meanwhile, the cracks on the other part of the magic formation had already vanished without a trace under the infusion of the Saint Energy. At this moment, everything was progressing well.

"Bastard! Bastard!" The Nether Lord roared in rage. However, no matter how infuriated he was, he could not change the fact that his pair of claws were being pushed back into the realm within the Netherworld inch by inch.

The intense sense of crisis and fear continuously appeared in the Nether Lord's mind. He could clearly sense that the little fissures that he originally opened on the other part of the magic formation in secret, had been closed when Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy was infused. This signified that the scenario that he was most worried about was going to happen soon.

Due to the seal's realm being open again, it could be clearly seen through the veil that the Nether Lord's enormous body on the other side was continuously swaying. It was obvious that he was no longer sparing any effort in releasing his Destruction Energy in hopes that he could find one final opportunity. However, he could only sense the Saint Energy that was filled with an aura of creation within the seal's realm at this moment.

The Elven Empress and the Ancient Tree of Life's injuries were healed under the effect of the Saint Energy. The Saint Energy was apparently the best nourishment for them.

"Leave! Go back to your Netherworld. You'll forever be suppressed in there." Zhou Weiqing's icy cold voice echoed back and forth in the space. His hands were clasped in front of his chest as his powerful Divine Thought burst out once again. He dealt a

heavy blow to the Nether Lord with the boost from the light of his Saint God Nucleus Core. He forcibly pushed back the pair of claws by a few meters.

Meanwhile, the twelve Great Divine Beasts that formed the magic formation with Zhou Weiqing were feeling very excited as they saw the seal that was about to be completed again. How could they not feel happy about that? They had an even more profound familiarity to the magic formation than Zhou Weiqing. Naturally, they would be able to sense its perfect state after the magic formation was completed this time. Moreover, they were also affected in a good way due to Zhou Weiqing's effort in constantly transforming their Heavenly Energy into the Saint Energy. The Saint Energy was healing their bodies, allowing their Heavenly Energy to become even smoother with an infinite supply.

A third of the Nether Lord's gigantic claws were already pushed back. The speed of pushing in the remainder of the claws was also continuously increasing. With all the waning and waxing, he had no way to resist the Saint Energy controlled by Zhou Weiqing anymore.

"Zhou Weiqing, my biggest mistake is I did not realize that you possessed the Saint Energy earlier. However, do you really think that I can no longer deal with you just like that? Do you really think that you'll be able to seal me for eternity just like that? You're not the Dragon Emperor after all."

The Nether Lord's body on the other side of the veil suddenly stopped swaying. The icy cold voice that seemed to come from an endless abyss made one shudder from the depth of one's soul. Its pair of gigantic claws seemed to have stopped resisting the Saint Energy's attack, even the Ultimate Destruction Energy in between his claws had also quietly withdrawn. The pair of gigantic claws allowed the tremendous Saint Energy to enshroud it and pushed it back in a speed that was even faster.

"Nether Lord, are you still going to put up a struggle before

death? You don't have much opportunity." Zhou Weiqing did not slack just because the Nether Lord suddenly stopped resisting. On the contrary, he increased the Saint Energy's output. Moreover, he felt uneasy in his heart for no reason. The Nether Lord's words did not feel like aimless utter.

It was also at this exact moment that pair of gigantic claws that was emitting a dark green light suddenly stopped moving. It stopped moving while it was in the process of being pushed back. No matter how Zhou Weiqing urged the Saint Energy, there was no way it could be pushed back any further.

'How did this happen? This is impossible!' Zhou Weiqing and the Divine Beasts were greatly startled. Could it be that the Nether Lord received some Destruction Energy from some other place? However, he was already so strong and powerful. Moreover, the opportunity earlier was obviously better than now, why did he chose to forgo the powerful energy earlier but waited until this moment?

It was also at this exact moment that streaks upon streaks of dark green lightning suddenly began to appear above the gigantic claws. Even the pure Saint Energy that was sent out from Zhou Weiqing's Saint God Nucleus Core was continuously disintegrated by the dark green lightning. A terrifying wave of aura was violently unleashed from the pair of claws. The terrifying pressure directly forced out the Saint Energy, released from the magic formation to a dozen meters away.

The dark green claws gradually changed color and turned crystal clear like a black crystal. Following that, the surrounding light from the pitch black lightning became even more intense along with the changing of its color.

Fortunately, that terrifying black lightning seemed to only circle the Nether Lord's claws. It was continuously crushing the Saint Energy that was pushing the claws from the surroundings.

'What kind of energy was that?' Zhou Weiqing felt confused in his heart. As he looked at the gigantic claws, his eyes could not help but revealed a suspicious gleam.

"Zhou Weiqing, you should feel proud of yourself for having the capability to force me into such a predicament. So, now's the time for you to die." The icy cold voice echoed back and forth in the magic formation. The black lightning that surrounded the claws also suddenly boomed. Zhou Weiqing seemed to see indistinct streaks of cracks appearing on the Nether Lord's gigantic claws.

"This isn't good. It's going to detonate its claws. Be careful, Weiqing." The Elven Empress' cry echoed from outside the magic formation. However, this time was different from when she resisted the Nether Lord's attack on behalf of Zhou Weiqing earlier. Now that the magic formation had been completed, she would not be able to charge into the magic formation even with the level of her cultivation base without the approval of Zhou Weiqing who was acting as the magic formation's core.

'A spontaneous detonation?' When Zhou Weiqing finally heard those words, he heard an unparalleled roar coming from below his body. It was at the position in the center of the Netherworld seal's magic formation that exploded.

It was more than just an energy fluctuation, it was also a soul-shuddering feeling. The violent roaring sound exploded in the company of a clear, black halo.

Zhou Weiqing could only feel as his state of mind was being shaken violently at that moment. It felt as if the entire magic formation was disassembling itself at that moment.

However, it was also at this exact moment that each of the complicated symbols that had already turned platinum in color within the magic formation brightened. The symbols emitted a dense and divine light, each of them exploding with powerful Saint Energy. Although a large amount of Saint Energy in the middle of

the magic formation was destroyed by the spreading black halo, the black halo was being forcibly suppressed within an area that was three hundred meters in diameter without a way to charge out.

The original Nether Lord's claws had already disappeared, in place was a humongous black vortex. It was apparent that even after the Nether Lord spontaneously detonated his claws, his current Destruction Energy was still not strong enough for him to charge out of the Netherworld seal's magic formation that was almost completed. On the contrary, the place where the claws broke through on the seal was closing up at a shocking speed after the claws spontaneously detonated.

Although the Destruction Energy from the explosion was powerful, it was still gradually being melted away by the Saint Energy. As long as the seal was completed, it would be over for the Nether Lord. His actions right now felt like he was quenching his thirst with poison. It was like his supposed effort had the opposite effect.

However, how could the Nether Lord possibly engage in such meaningless actions? Especially when he was on the verge of surviving or dying?

Although the Netherworld seal's magic formation was not destroyed by his violent spontaneous detonation, the terrifying explosion did forcibly push away the surrounding Saint Energy. The spontaneous detonation was caused by a part of the Nether Lord's body after all. One could only imagine the amount of Destruction Energy it generated.

A vacuumed space emerged in the middle of the magic formation while the black Destruction Energy vortex formed from the explosion still remained condensed. The vortex rolled forward and charged directly towards Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's position in a blink of an eye.

The black vortex was not too large in size, but the Destruction Energy that was contained in the vortex was truly terrifying. It seemed to be completely condensed from the Ultimate Destruction Energy.

Zhou Weiqing had two choices now. The first one was for him to bring Tian'er along as they immediately flee from the core's position and dodge the Destruction Energy's vortex. He was the center of the magic formation so he could leave at any time he wished.

However, he could very possibly cause the destruction of the almost completed and perfected Netherworld seal's magic formation that was about to close up if he did that. No one could tell if the Nether Lord would seize the opportunity and charge out of the seal if he was to do so. The final breach in the magic formation below had yet to be completely sealed by the Saint Energy at the moment. Once the magic formation's effect had vanished, it was highly likely for the Nether Lord to come charging out of the seal. In that case, everything that they did before would be in vain.

Zhou Weiqing's second choice was to ignore the Nether Lord's attack and spare no effort in closing up the magic formation so he could completely seal the Nether Lord. However, he would need to withstand the Nether Lord's terrifying attacks if he did that. He would be severely injured even if he survived the attacks.

It was at this exact moment that the image of how unyielding the Dragon Emperor was when he passed Zhou Weiqing his Dragon Emperor's ultimate source of energy flashed past Zhou Weiqing's mind. It was at this moment that Zhou Weiqing, who feared death ever since he was young, made the most determined decision in his lifetime.

Zhou Weiqing's first action was to unleash the Saint Energy from his body. A wave of gentle yet indomitable energy erupted from his body. He lifted Tian'er's body who was hugging him and sent her

directly to the side through his control over the surrounding Saint Energy.

Meanwhile, his body did not move at all. He did not even glance at the powerful Destruction vortex. However, he spared no effort in urging the Saint Energy and infused it into the Netherworld seal's magic formation so that the greatest effect of the magic formation could be triggered.

"Weiqing..." The Elven Empress cried out involuntarily outside of the magic formation.

All the Divine Beasts widened their eyes in surprise at this moment. However, they were not the magic formation's core. Moreover, they had opened up all their Divine Thoughts to Zhou Weiqing, and they allowed Zhou Weiqing to exercise control over their actions and they could do nothing to influence Zhou Weiqing's decision.

Chapter 846: The Netherworld

However, the eyes of all the Divine Beasts revealed the kind of respect that only appeared when they faced the Dragon Emperor at that split second. Regardless of the age of the young man before them, everything he had done was enough to prove that he deserved the trust of the Dragon Emperor.

When he was faced with a crisis of life and death, he did not choose to retreat. Instead, he persevered in confronting the potentially deadly attack. Even his face did not betray any changes. The Divine Beasts were originally very disdainful of human beings. In their opinions, entities like the Nether Lord would never have existed had it not been for the many negative emotions that humans produced. However, at that moment, they only had respect for Zhou Weiqing. In their eyes, the status of humans had already changed. Among humans, there were also heroes!

Although Zhou Weiqing had flung Tian'er's body out, he did not see the halo of platinum Saint Energy wrapped around his waist. The other end of that Saint Energy was in Tian'er's hands.

While the black vortex was engulfing Zhou Weiqing's body, Tian'er was using all her strength to pull on the rope of condensed Saint Energy. Although she could not pull away from the core of Zhou Weiqing's magic formation, she could rely on the inverse force to send herself back.

The formidable power of the Destruction Energy vortex could only be described as horrible. The Nether Lord's terrifying and explosive energy collided with the spiraling Saint Energy that surrounded Zhou Weiqing's body. This generated a strong energy impact, and the energies from both parties were drastically consumed. However, the Destruction Energy was too pure. Thus, within a short period of time, it had unexpectedly broken through the Saint Energy that was successfully condensed by the Twelve Great Divine Beasts.

Of course, the Saint Energy from Zhou Weiqing and the Twelve Great Divine Beasts was not so easily countered. The black vortex had also shrunk at an alarming rate.

Zhou Weiqing's facial expression remained the same. He knew very well that even if that Destruction Energy had strongly affected his body, it still would not be able to kill him. With the weakened Saint Energy, the strength of his own defensive power and the protection from his Heavenly Saint Nucleus Core, he would at most suffer a serious injury. However, the Nether Lord would surely be sealed. The moment before the destruction vortex appeared, he had already used powerful Divine Thought to send out Saint Energy to complete the entire seal. Although that led to insufficient self-defense, the seal was bound to be completed.

However, Zhou Weiqing's face changed in the next moment. Once again, Tian'er's delicate body embraced his body from behind. A dense Saint Energy burst out from Tian'er's body and protected both of them. It was also at this time that the black vortex had broken through the Saint Energy and engulfed both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er.

The reason Zhou Weiqing's face changed was due to Tian'er and also because of the peculiar changes in the Destruction Energy. Although it momentarily cut off the connection between Zhou Weiqing and the Twelve Great Divine Beasts, it did not directly attack Zhou Weiqing. As a result, the Destruction Energy only engulfed Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er. At that moment, a huge force that was pulling at them burst out. The cluster of Destruction Energy retreated instead of advancing, turning into a stream of black light before it instantly drilled back through the final of the tiny cracks of the Netherworld seal's magic formation.

Boom!

A divine light flashed and a platinum light rose instantly. It transformed into a giant pillar of light, exploding along the meandering passages before it spread out.

The entire seal of the magic formation was finally completed. The seal continued to strengthen while the Saint Energy slowly accumulated after that dramatic rise.

The sealed realm was filled with soft energy fluctuations. Unlike the seal originally created by the Dragon Emperor, the seal's realm at this time truly resembled a separate world. In the sky, countless stars sparkled. Under the feet, the earth emitted a milky white light. The Nether Lord was no longer visible. He had been completely sealed in the Netherworld seal's magic formation.

However, Zhou Weiqing, the person that had accomplished all of this, had disappeared. He and Tian'er had vanished at the last moment when the Destruction Energy had swept everything away.

The radiance from the Saint Energy gradually dissipated from the bodies of the Divine Beasts. When they looked at the perfect seal, the mood of each of the Divine Beasts was heavy. No matter what was said, they were still unhappy.

"Weiqing..." The Elven Queen suddenly flashed and appeared at the place where Zhou Weiqing was at before he disappeared. She stood there in a complete daze. In order to complete the seal, Zhou Weiqing did not take precaution or evade the final attack from the Nether Lord and was forcibly brought to the Netherworld. That was the domain of the Nether Lord. Even if the Nether Lord had expanded a lot of energy previously, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er would not be his match!

Two figures descended from the sky. It was Hui Yao and Duo Si who had transformed into their human forms as they landed on the ground. Duo Si could not help but rush into the arms of Hui Yao. However, Hui Yao's face looked extremely unsightly.

All the Divine Beasts had descended as well. At this time, Phelia, the Entropic Nether Tiger had also rushed in from the outer circle. However, try as she may, she could not cry out.

Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er had disappeared, and the shock she

received was equally great. She had already felt extremely guilty towards Tian'er. Moreover, she had just witnessed the moment her daughter disappeared right before her. Her terrible state of mind could only be imagined.

"He's a hero." The Dragon Turtle's voice sounded. "He's similar to His Majesty, the Dragon Emperor. They're all heroes who have saved our world."

The Elven Queen stood there blankly, "But why must heroes die? I brought them here but I can't bring them back. How can I explain this to their soulmates? How can I explain this to the people outside?"

There was a hint of grief on her face. The Elven Queen sat down cross-legged where she was and murmured to herself, "Perhaps I'm thinking too much. Our lives are intertwined. If he's dead, I certainly won't be able to continue living. Let me accompany him here and wait for the moment of death with him."

"Your Majesty, the Empress. You should not be too pessimistic." The Dragon Turtle's deep voice sounded again. "There's a chance that Zhou Weiqing might come back alive."

The Elven Queen stared blankly for a while. "What did you say? That he might come back alive? He was taken away by the Nether Lord!"

The Dragon Turtle spoke in a deep voice, "However, our seal has also been completed. Previously, when the Nether Lord attacked to destroy the seal, he had been using his Destruction Energy. Moreover, he was also attacked by His Majesty the Dragon Emperor and you. In addition, he paid the price for the final self-detonation of his powerful pair of claws in order to capture Zhou Weiqing and his partner. His own cultivation base had also been greatly weakened. Although he's very strong in the Netherworld, it will no longer receive any external negative emotions to re-energize itself since we've already completed the seal. Zhou

Weiqing's and Tian'er cultivation bases are not weak. Under such circumstances, there's still a fighting chance. I just find it strange that the Nether Lord chose to take them away instead of attacking them."

After listening to the Dragon Turtle, there were some changes in the faces of the Elven Queen and the other Divine Beasts nearby. The original somber atmosphere had slightly lightened. He was right. Previously, they had joined forces with Zhou Weiqing. In addition, the Nether Lord had to deal with the power of the magic formation. In other words, the present Nether Lord's strength was by no means at its peak. Under such circumstances, Zhou Weiqing might still have a chance.

The Elven Queen nodded slowly. "I hope so. As long as I'm still alive, it'll prove that Weiqing has not died. However, even if he defeats the Nether Lord, how is he going to break the seal that even the Nether Lord could not break through?"

Phelia, the Entropic Nether Tiger began to understand once she heard the Dragon Turtle's words. "Her Majesty, the Empress, you don't need to worry about this. Since our seal is called the Netherworld seal, it's only effective against the Nether Lord's Destruction Energy. As long as Weiqing and Tian'er can defeat the Nether Lord, they can use their own Saint Energy to return through the seal without the restriction from the Destruction Energy. God, bless the children!."

As Phelia spoke, she slowly knelt on the seal and silently prayed.

Hui Yao patted Duo Si who was trembling with grief. "Let's go out first. The people outside are waiting anxiously. We must at least inform them about what happened here."

"Alright."

The two enormous dragons simultaneously rose and flew out of the abyss.

It was dark. An endless darkness.

When Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er were swept up by Destruction Energy, they could only feel an endless darkness. Zhou Weiqing's Divine Thought was connected to the Twelve Great Divine Beasts. Due to that reason, they were already strong enough to reach the Heavenly Change Tier. Although they were forcibly disconnected by Destruction Energy, he could still perceive what was happening at that moment.

'I'm finished.' That was Zhou Weiqing's last thought before he broke away from the seal and entered the crack. He never imagined that the Nether Lord would come up with such a method. Instead of attacking him directly, he used the power of self-destruction to pull him and Tian'er along into the Netherworld.

The powerful and unstable Destruction Energy fluctuated constantly. It moved around Tian'er and himself, and everything around them became unreal. The distorted and illusory energy fluctuations continuously crushed them. Zhou Weiqing could only use his Saint Energy to protect himself and Tian'er from getting eroded by the Destructive Energy.

The only thing he was glad about was while he had been mobilizing the Saint Energy from the Twelve Great Divine Beasts previously, his and Tian'er's cultivation base had reached its peak. However, even if their cultivation base was at its peak, could they overcome the Nether Lord?

His body suddenly felt lighter. The surrounding Destruction Energy seemed to have collapsed. Although it still existed, it was no longer as dense and pure as before.

"Tian'er, why did you follow me?" Zhou Weiqing pulled Tian'er from behind him by her little hand. For a moment, all sorts of feelings welled up in his heart.

The seal was completed but he and Tian'er were caught in the Netherworld. At that moment, Zhou Weiqing could only feel the

impending death looming ahead of them.

Tian'er looked at Zhou Weiqing. She did not seem to care about anything from the outside world. "Fool, how can I let the father of my child die on his own? Whatever happens, I want to be with you. Don't even think of getting rid of me."

Zhou Weiqing clenched Tian'er's hand tightly. He did not blame her anymore. Things had already come to this. There was no point in him saying more.

"Very touching, isn't it? Is this what you humans call love?" A neutral voice came from all directions.

The originally dark space suddenly lighted up.

A light came from the front. It was a faint green glow that easily brought fear into people's hearts.

A huge body emerged from the green light; it was a huge crab. The width of its body was about a kilometer wide. As its eight long legs spread open, a closer look revealed that there were innumerable patterns on its body, and those patterns were like human faces. Each face had a different emotion. There was anger, panic, and resentment. Each one was different but all of them were strong negative emotions.

Two huge eyes were located at the top of the body, looking like two small, remote green suns that were sparkling. Not far from both eyes, there were gaps in the huge body that was positioned at the front of the crab. It was apparent that these from the earlier detonation on its body.

The Nether Lord. Zhou Weiqing finally saw the body of the Nether Lord. The big guy in front of him had already achieved the Heavenly Change Tier. Furthermore, it possessed the Destruction Energy from the Heavenly Change Tier. It was the polar opposite of his Creation Energy.

"You look really disgusting." Zhou Weiqing said in disdain.

The Nether Lord was not angered by his words. "You're already in my world and yet, you're still so disparaging. What's the point? I did not expect that my plan would be destroyed by such a puny human like you."

Zhou Weiqing sneered, "Do you think I'll have good words for you even if I don't berate you? Will you let me go then?"

The enchanting voice of the Nether Lord charmingly said, "Why won't I let you go? If you allow me to imprint a destruction mark in your soul and help me break through the seal, I'll not only let you go, I'll also let you return to your human world. You can also become my spokesperson in the human world. I can even promise you that I'll set aside a piece of land for you and let you live happily."

Zhou Weiqing burst out in loud laughter, "Hahahahaha. Nether Lord, are you trying to trick a three-year-old child? We only just sealed you up with great difficulty, and you actually expect me to release you? Moreover, do you think your destruction mark can be imprinted on my soul? My body is almost completely made up of Saint Energy. You shouldn't daydream."

"Then, the only outcome is destruction." The voice of the Nether Lord suddenly turned cold. An awe-inspiring killing intent burst out without any reservation, and like a raging wave, it ferociously smashed into Zhou Weiqing's and Tian'er's body.

The dense platinum Saint Energy radiated from Zhou Weiqing's body. It shrouded him and Tian'er inside. In any case, he had previously experienced the mystery of the Heavenly Change Tier. Coupled with the integration of the Dragon Emperor energy, his cultivation base had progressed another step although he could not become a Creation God.

"Come on then. Let's see whether I can cut off some of your crab legs before you kill me."

The Nether Lord did not seem to be in a hurry to act against Zhou

Weiying. His huge dark green eyes flashed with a strange brilliance.

"Zhou Weiying, you must have found it very strange that I brought you here instead of using the final moment during my self-detonation to launch an attack on you. I paid such a heavy price for self-detonating only to invite you to the Netherworld, don't you feel puzzled?"

Zhou Weiying's heart was moved. "What? Do you want to dispel my doubts?"

The Nether Lord issued a series of wicked laughter. "Why not? Do you think that the Netherworld seal that was built from your Saint Energy can completely seal me inside and that I'll never get out again? Even to the extent that I'll no longer be able to have any connection to the outside world?"

As he spoke, the killing intent that erupted earlier slowly dissipated.

Zhou Weiying remained calm and collected, "Isn't that so? Nether Lord, it's useless for you to play these tricks on me. Whatever it is, I'll not be deceived by you."

The Nether Lord snorted in disdain, "Tricks? Do I need to play any tricks on you? Your lives are in my hands. I just want you to die contentedly. Let me tell you honestly. Yes, with you as the leader and Saint Energy as the core instead of the original Dragon Emperor power, the Netherworld seal is completed. I can no longer break through. I'm also incapable of connecting with the outside world through the cracks to strengthen myself. This time, I've suffered an unprecedented trauma and do not even have the ability to break through the seal again. My cultivation base also suffered severe damage and I lost my claws. Coupled with the depletion of the original source of destruction, I'm no longer even a being at the Heavenly Change Tier. I have regressed to a level that's only a little more powerful than Fen Tian."

Tian'er's eyes could not help but betray a hint of happiness when she heard the Nether Lord's words. However, in contrast to her, Zhou Weiqing's eyes immediately looked somber.

The self-detonation was short-lived. What did that mean? That meant that although the cultivation base of the Nether Lord had been weakened, he was absolutely certain he would be able to deal with the both of them. That was Zhou Weiqing's first thought. Moreover, the Nether Lord did not influence them to break the seal. Instead, he gave them an account of his own circumstances. His mood was still so calm. Could it mean that he still had a way to deal with the seal? Is he going to make use of him and Tian'er?

Zhou Weiqing had been learning from Mu En since his childhood. He was much better at understanding human nature and words than Tian'er.

Sure enough, the Nether Lord faintly sighed, "I absolutely did not anticipate that I'll be forced into such a situation. However, I still have a slight chance and it's created by myself. I'm not afraid to tell you that when I finally blew up my front claws if you had slightly let go of the formation, there's a possibility that I could've rushed out. Even if I just ran partially out of Divine Thought, as long as I secretly cultivate and continuously absorb the grievances and negative emotions in your human world, I'll be able to restore my strength to its previous level sooner or later. Regrettably, you stopped me, to the extent of not caring about your own safety. However, would I allow you to seal me? Zhou Weiqing, you forgot one of the most important things. Although the Netherworld seal's magic formation is powerful, it needs a continuous energy injection. The Saint Energy injected this time is large enough to maintain the seal for at least ten years or more. However, what will happen after ten years? Don't tell me in your human world, there are still people like you who possessed such pure Saint Energy and can also use the energy of the Dragon Emperor as a guide? Hahahahaha."

Upon listening to what the Nether Lord said, Zhou Weiqing's face finally changed. He already understood what the Nether Lord was trying to say.

"Originally, I was already desperate when you sent this girl out. After all, she has the same pure Saint Energy as you. Replenishing the formation with Saint Energy is still possible with the support from the Elven Queen and the new Dragon Emperor. Unfortunately, she couldn't bear to part with you so she followed you in here. Even the heavens helped me. I just need to kill the both of you here and quietly wait until the Saint Energy that supports the formation to deplete. Although it's impossible for me to break through the formation with my current cultivation base, at least I can secretly open up a small crack and once again absorb the grievances and negative emotions from the human world to replenish myself. In less than a few decades, I'll have the ability to once again attack the Netherworld seal's magic formation. At that time, I'd like to see who else in your human world can stop my coming."

Zhou Weiqing's facial expression was unsightly. Tian'er was in a daze beside him. She never expected that because of her love for Zhou Weiqing, she had given the Nether Lord an opportunity that he could exploit.

"Tian'er, ignore his words. He's trying to divide us. If I'm not mistaken, he's not absolutely certain that he can kill us."

Zhou Weiqing's cold voice which rang in the air sounded very clear to Tian'er and himself. Tian'er herself possessed the Divine and Spirit Attributes. They were later transformed into the Saint Attribute. Her Divine Thought was much stronger than others of the same level. Although it was not as strong as Zhou Weiqing's, after receiving this hint from him, she suddenly felt her mind becoming clear, and the negative emotions that had just emerged suddenly disappeared. Her eyes once again regained a clear and determined look.

The voice of the Nether Lord came to an abrupt end. "What did you say? I can't kill you?" The Nether Lord screamed as if it had heard something ridiculous.

Zhou Weiqing nodded without hesitation and said, "Correct. You're uncertain if you can kill us. Am I right? Nether Lord, you're really devious."

"Do you think everything I said was lies? Do I need to lie to a junior like you?" The Nether Lord was obviously a little angry.

Zhou Weiqing shook his head and said, "No, you were not lying. On the contrary, you were telling the truth. That way, you'll be able to properly confuse us. You needed to use this counter-argument to divide me and Tian'er, and at the same time, cause our remorse to give rise to negative feelings. Yes, there's no way you can receive Destruction Energy that's transformed from negative emotions from outside. However, you can still absorb our negative energy to replenish yourself. Both Tian'er and I are at Heavenly God Tier, and our negative emotional energy is much stronger than that of ordinary humans. If everything you said is true, you could've just killed us the instant we arrived. Everything will then go according to your plan. Why are you wasting so much time arguing with us? The only explanation is that you're seriously injured, and you're not absolutely certain you can kill us. Am I right?"

The Nether Lord quieted down, and the two eyes on top of his head moved slightly. The dense Destruction Energy suddenly converged into his body. His voice also subsequently calmed down a lot.

"Looks like I'll never be able to compare with you humans in terms of treachery. Zhou Weiqing, you win again. However, there's a flaw in your reasoning that's not entirely true. It's not that I'm not certain if I can kill you. I'm just not certain I can kill you without having to pay a heavy price."

"I've been sealed in this terrible place for far too long, and I do not wish to wait in this pitch-black realm for even another minute. I have to admit that your cultivation base has already reached a level high enough to threaten me. I don't currently have the power of the Heavenly Change Tier. However, it's not a difficult task if I want to kill you. At most, I'll need to sleep in this world for another hundred years."

Zhou Weiqing sneered, "A hundred years? I am afraid it's more than that. If your consumption of energy is too high, how can you create a crack in the Netherworld's seal and quietly absorb the negative energy from outside? If you can't even do this, then you can only destroy yourself here. This is what you're worried about, and this is why you don't dare to use all your energy to attack us. Am I right?"

"You... You bastard!" The Nether Lord was furious. He never expected to be far inferior to Zhou Weiqing when it came to a comparison of treachery or perhaps, wisdom. He had already concealed matters very well but everything was still discerned by Zhou Weiqing. At that time, he had no other choice.

A twisting fluctuation of the dark Destruction Energy appeared on the huge body of the Nether Lord. It could clearly be seen as his whole body began to twist violently.

Zhou Weiqing floated there motionlessly. All the starlight from the Ringless Ground Purging Set on his body subsequently lit up. Under that magnificent state, the dragon-shaped shadows also pulsed and continuously revolved around his body.

A faint light circulated in the air. Zhou Weiqing's eyes were continuously focused on the Nether Lord and did not relax. His other hand firmly gripped on to Tian'er's hand and both their Saint Energies continued to be connected.

The Netherworld was the Nether Lord's domain after all. It could be said that it was his Divine Territory. Zhou Weiqing feared that

once he was not in contact with Tian'er, they would be separated and annihilated by the Nether Lord.

The black light gradually dwindled. Suddenly, the Nether Lord's body actually became incorporeal. While his body was shifting to an incorporeal state, it shrank rapidly and everything seemed rather unreal.

Zhou Weiqing pulled Tian'er with his left hand, and the Dual God Strength Hammers in his right hand moved forward a little. A beam of platinum light shot out towards the Nether Lord.

With a light bang, the Netherworld trembled slightly. Subsequently, the platinum light disappeared into thin air. Not to mention that it did not hit the body of the Nether Lord, it did not even manage to reach a distance of twenty meters when it was shot out.

The distorted radiance gradually diminished. The body of the huge crab in mid-air disappeared. A figure about the same height as Zhou Weiqing appeared in the spot where the body of the Nether Lord was previously located.

It turned out to be a human silhouette. It was approximately two meters tall with wide shoulders. The entire body was dressed in a dark green armor. The back was like Fen Tian but it had eight long legs spread out like wings. The handsome face was grim and cold, his serene, glittering green eyes firmly trained on Zhou Weiqing.

His body armor did not include a helmet and he had a huge, bald head. However, the dark green light in his eyes was too strong. The Destruction Energy around his body was extremely viscous. Zhou Weiqing could clearly feel that that human-like body was completely condensed from the Destruction Origin Energy.

"Isn't it strange that I chose to use a human form to end this last battle with you? This is because I think a human form is the most suitable for fighting. Now... Both of you, die!"

As soon as the Nether Lord said that, he made the first move. His body flashed slightly and the entire Netherworld suddenly turned into a serene green color. His body also vanished into thin air.

'Here it comes.' Zhou Weiqing's heart tightened. He did not hesitate to brandish the Dual God Strength Hammers in his hands. He did not target anything specifically with the Hammers. Instead, he attacked the air within the Netherworld.

With a loud rumbling sound, the Netherworld shook violently. Zhou Weiqing and the Dual God Strength Hammers in his hands exuded a strong, distorted platinum light beam.

In the Netherworld that was filled with Destruction Energy, he forcibly created a black hole that was three meters wide with his attack. Due to the appearance of the small black hole, the entire Netherworld went through a rapid spatial transformation.

Do not underestimate Zhou Weiqing's hammer attack. On top of his invincibility, it had properties from the Spatial Law and the Time Law. Even the Nether Lord had to merge terrifying amounts of power to achieve that effect.

Bzzt!

The Nether Lord's body appeared on the right side of Zhou Weiqing's and Tian'er's back. He was less than ten meters away from Zhou Weiqing. If Zhou Weiqing's action was a little slower, the attack from the Nether Lord would have struck him.

At this moment, Zhou Weiqing's eyes had also brightened up. A dazzling platinum light sparkled in his eyes. The frightening energy fluctuated and exuded a tyrannical aura. He did not look back as he kicked his right leg backward. He carried the distorted platinum light and charged towards the direction of the Nether Lord.

When he kicked his right foot out, a dense mass of incandescent luster burst out of his right foot before it turned into a condensed

light with an electrical charge.

At the same time, Zhou Weiqing pulled Tian'er's delicate body and flung her outward.

Both of them had cultivated together for such a long time that they could read each other's mind and there was no need for Zhou Weiqing to say anything. Tian'er knew what she was supposed to do as a chain of Saint Energy encircled Zhou Weiqing's waist and connected the two bodies. Immediately after that, she flew tens of meters away. That was the only way she would not hinder Zhou Weiqing in his melee combat.

Zhou Weiqing kicked out his right foot, his body turned and the Dual God Strength Hammers that carried with it a terrifying force smashed directly towards the Nether Lord.

When the Nether Lord saw the incandescent light ball that Zhou Weiqing's right foot kicked out, he was taken aback. He did not expect Zhou Weiqing, even without the help from the Divine Beasts, to actually still be able to release such a pure form of Saint Energy.

What the Nether Lord did not know was that while maintaining the formation previously, Zhou Weiqing had attained a completely new understanding of Saint Energy. Although he no longer had help from the Divine Beasts, he was still able to purify Saint Energy with the integration of the Saint Energy from both him and Tian'er.

At this moment, Zhou Weiqing had already completely disregarded life and death. The moment he arrived at the Netherworld, he did not keep any thoughts about getting out alive in his mind. What he wanted to do now was to weaken the Nether Lord as much as possible, inflicting a serious amount of damage to him to an extent that he would never recover. This would be the only way the seal that he initiated would not be wasted. Although Zhou Weiqing also believed that the scenarios mentioned by the

Nether Lord were possible, the powerhouses led by the Elven Queen would also find ways to continue maintaining the formation. There was no pure Saint Energy but a semi-pure form of Saint Energy still existed. The cultivation base of the Nether Lord had been weakened to a certain degree and to a certain extent, it could not be restored. It would be easier said than done for him to break through the seal. In the battle between him and the Nether Lord, each time the Destruction Energy from the Nether Lord was depleted, he would be one step nearer to being destroyed.

How could Zhou Weiqing have any hint of cowardice when confronting the Nether Lord after he made such a decision?

The Nether Lord did not have any weapons in his hands. Seeing the ball of incandescent light that was sent in his way, his right hand flashed out like lightning, and he actually caught the ball.

The ball of incandescent light was actually extinguished by the Nether Lord accompanied by a hiss. However, at the very instant when the ball of light burst, an explosive roar sounded from the Nether Lord's hand. It actually exploded and it shook his body.

Immediately after that, Zhou Weiqing's hammers reached him. The eight long legs at the back of the Nether Lord moved forward to block and at the same time collided with the massive hammerheads. A ding was heard along with the terrifying energy fluctuations that burst out at that moment. Zhou Weiqing was surprised to find that he actually felt like he was unable to deploy his powers. The power of the Nether Lord was applied in all eight directions. The tyrannical power of destruction was like eight sharp needles piercing into his Dual God Strength Hammers. This immediately dissolved most of the strength with a soft bang. Zhou Weiqing had no choice but to retreat more than ten meters away.

At the same time, a layer of warped light appeared before Zhou Weiqing. It blocked the eight beams of Destruction Energy shot out by the eight long legs. Wherever the Destruction Energy made

contact with this warped light, it would immediately disperse. None could fall on Zhou Weiqing. This was, indeed, the Time Disorder skill.

Earlier, when the Nether Lord was attacked, Zhou Weiqing had kicked a ball of light that had the Dark Demon God Lightning's version of Saint Energy. It was equivalent to combining three types of energy before it was detonated. Even the Nether Lord was tricked and suffered some damage.

The brief clash and contact gave Zhou Weiqing a chill in his heart. The cultivation base that the Netherworld Lord revealed was much stronger than Fen Tian at his peak. Although it was not at the Heavenly Change Tier, the purity of the Destruction Origin Energy had far exceeded his own Saint Energy. It was almost impossible to defeat him.

Chapter 847: Saint Baby (1 | 2 | 3)

The Nether Lord stared at Zhou Weiqing coldly with his pair of green eyes. His attack did not stop at all. To be exact, it was only the beginning.

His body flickered, but he did not disappear. However, his speed was so fast that it was no different from Blink. What was even more frightening was the fact that Zhou Weiqing could not use Blink in the Netherworld. This was because he could not find Spatial Law here for some reason. He could still destroy Spatial Law like before, but it was impossible for him to master or control it here.

Sharp claws appeared soundlessly on the Nether Lord's right hand. All eight legs behind him instantly stretched out as well. A net of greenish light charged directly at Zhou Weiqing. This green color was the true color of the Destruction Origin Energy. It was far more blood curdling than the black Destruction Energy.

The Nether Lord's attack was very simple. There were no extravagant schemes, and it was simple and direct instead. He merely relied on his tyrannical force and speed.

A brilliant white light shone down from the sky and shone directly on Zhou Weiqing. His body was instantly enveloped by a layer of platinum light. It was time for Tian'er to make her move now.

At this moment, changes could also be seen on Tian'er's body. With her body as the principal part, three pairs of wings glittered with platinum light behind her. She had actually transformed into the Seraphic Blazeangel. Not only that, her body still maintained its original size, and it kept her Saint Energy in a highly concentrated state as much as possible.

Instead of retreating, Zhou Weiqing advanced. With a stride in the air, his body faced forward. All of the starlights on his

Groundless Purging Set instantly lit up. An alarming amount of Saint Energy condensed on every starlight, it was as if an explosion that could happen in the next second would blow the entire realm up completely.

The Nether Lord was taken by utter surprise after he sensed the way Zhou Weiqing was burning his Saint Energy in a frenzy. He was initially charging towards Zhou Weiqing, but he instantly made a sharp turn and flew away horizontally.

A weird sneer could be seen on the corner of Zhou Weiqing mouth. "Idiot! It's only a bluff!" The Saint God Nucleus Core flew out of Zhou Weiqing's body soundlessly. The move he made earlier was executed with the help of his Saint God Nucleus Core's energy. Only he knew if the move earlier was an attempt to deceive the Nether Lord or not.

A galactic ray that was like the Milky Way flowed down from the sky and spilled all over the Dual God Strength Hammers. It wiped out the green light that the Nether Lord previously released. The Saint Energy and Destruction Energy created a loud sound from the friction that sounded eerily like nails on a chalkboard.

Due to the problem with the purity of the Zhou Weiqing's energy, his consumption of the energy was undoubtedly far greater than the Nether Lord. However, what he consumed was the Destruction Origin Energy — the Nether Lord's most precious energy. Now that the Nether Lord could no longer replenish his energy from the outer world, it would do Zhou Weiqing good if he could consume this even if it was just a small amount. The Nether Lord was so angry that he let out a cry after he was deceived by Zhou Weiqing into wasting his origin energy without yielding any results at all. The Nether Lord's speed suddenly increased as he rushed towards Zhou Weiqing like an arrow of green light. Judging from his stance, it seemed like he wanted to perish together with Zhou Weiqing.

Zhou Weiqing still remained extremely calm at this moment. He

understood very well that this would probably be the last battle in his life. He wanted to give it his all. Even if he died, he would make sure that the Nether Lord suffer as well.

At this moment, the gigantic Dual God Strength Hammers was like a paddle in Zhou Weiqing's hands. His body remained still, but the Dual God Strength Hammers continued to swing twice in front of him. It still had the same platinum brilliant Saint Energy, but the aura that it carried was entirely different.

The Nether Lord instantly crashed into it in the next moment. There were no rumbling sounds, but the Nether Lord could feel that the energy before him was emitting peculiar waves. His body instantly skidded. He did not crash into Zhou Weiqing, but he skidded to the side instead. At this moment, even his pure Destruction Origin Energy could only snuff out the two energies that Zhou Weiqing released when he skidded to the side.

Spatial Rend, and the Time Disorder Skill. This was the method that Zhou Weiqing used to retaliate earlier. However, do not forget that although he possessed the Saint Energy, he was still only a Heavenly Jewel Master who possessed six Heavenly Jewels of different attributes. He would never use his Saint Energy to counter-attack if he really wanted to deplete the Nether Lord's Netherworld Origin Energy. After all, the strength gap between the two of them was awfully huge. All that Zhou Weiqing could rely on now was merely his skills and techniques.

Zhou Weiqing and the Nether Lord literally brushed past each other. The speed of the Nether Lord was as swift as lightning. However, Zhou Weiqing had shown an innate battle capability that defied all reason. From the deception earlier to the defense that he had just displayed, it was all because of his foresight that he was able to deal with the Nether Lord's attack. At the same time, his body was already half turned when he was casting the two skills earlier. That was why when the Nether Lord skidded to the side, Zhou Weiqing used his Dual God Strength Hammers like a meteor

hammer and smashed it mercilessly onto the Nether Lord's back.

There was a loud bang. Just the brute force alone was horrifying enough to torment the Nether Lord terribly, not taking into consideration that the Saint Energy was attached to the Dual God Strength Hammer.

With a loud bang, his entire body was sent flying like a cannonball and turned into a green spot that disappeared from Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's sight in just a blink of an eye. One could easily imagine just how terrible the power that Zhou Weiqing had just used.

However, Zhou Weiqing did not stop there. With this one smash onto the Nether Lord, he also received the Feedback from the Destruction Origin Energy, that drained all the Saint Energy from his body for a split second.

Zhou Weiqing retrieved the Dual God Strength Hammers. Both his hands drew an image on the air, and two triangular-shaped light instantly appeared before him. The Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation suddenly appeared. Moreover, it was a dual Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation.

Two dazzling platinum lights in the shape of hexagrams appeared above Zhou Weiqing's head and below his feet respectively as twelve Heavenly Jewels spun splendidly.

Zhou Weiqing could conserve as much Saint Energy as possible and also use his strongest force with the help of the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation. One should never underestimate the two clashes between him and the Nether Lord earlier. Although it might look like Zhou Weiqing had the upper hand, he experienced the profound terror of the Destruction Origin Energy after made contact with the Nether Lord. After he experienced the two collisions, his Saint Energy was immediately depleted by twenty percent before he could even lessen the erosion that the Destruction Energy caused. What a frightening Destruction

Energy!

The platinum light began to display peculiar changes under the shelter of the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation. Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy started to become incandescent.

Even Zhou Weiqing himself did not expect the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation to have this special effect. He was the caster of this formation so he immediately figured out the reason behind it in a heartbeat.

It was not because his Saint Energy had been purified again. Instead, it was the boost that the Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation produced after being perfectly merged with his six Heavenly Jewels. By nature, the boost affected the Saint Energy and increased its power.

Once again, the Dual God Strength Hammers appeared in Zhou Weiqing's hands. The huge hammers were pointed forward. The intense glow made the hammer resemble a small sun that was blindingly dazzling with a radiant luster.

At this moment, the green shadow of the Nether Lord appeared within the range of this incandescent light. How incredibly fast the Nether Lord was! Despite the fact that the earlier attack was quite powerful, it was still not enough to inflict any real harm on him. However, the dismay in his heart was quite apparent. In just a flash, he flew back again, just in time to see the completion of Zhou Weiqing's Six Ultimate Godly Light Formation that would purify his Saint Energy again.

Whoosh —

This time, the Nether Lord no longer charged directly towards Zhou Weiqing. Instead, the eight long legs behind him lit up again simultaneously. Each of them was turquoise in color. It was a kind of turquoise that was surrounded by a dense black aura. Eight streaks of green lights instantly blasted out from the tip of the eight legs and condensed into a mass of light before him. At the

same time, the Nether Lord laced all his ten fingers together and another mass of green light instantly appeared as well.

In an instant, the entire Netherworld lit up. Everything was engulfed in the green light.

Tremendous pressure started to pile down on Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er frenziedly from all directions. Both of them unleashed their Saint Energy in full force to prevent this powerful Destruction Energy from affecting their bodies.

Space, time, and everything else seemed to have been completely sealed off. It was not just the Spatial and Time Law but this time, all of the techniques could no longer be in use. All they could do was to use the purest energy to counter with brute force.

Zhou Weiqing's skills had caused quite a problem for the Nether Lord so he no longer reserved when using his Destruction Origin Energy. The more frugal he was about it, the higher the price he had to pay. At this moment, he had already made up his mind to end the battle in a single round.

A dark look that had never been seen before fell on Zhou Weiqing's face instantly. Through the telepathic ability of his Saint Energy, he asked Tian'er to return and stand behind him. At the same time, the incandescent light his body emitted became extremely robust as well.

The Dual God Strength Hammers were crossed in front of his chest. Every single star on his Ringless Ground Purging Set instantly lit up. This was the Netherworld, and the Nether Lord was the true ruler in this realm. When the Nether Lord made up his mind to fight head-on with Zhou Weiqing, there was no longer any other option for Zhou Weiqing. All that he could do at this moment was to ignite all of the Saint Energy in his body and fight the Nether Lord to the last drop of his Saint Energy.

The Nether Lord's eyes lit up brightly. He had already made his decisions. After killing Zhou Weiqing, he would definitely get a

certain amount of negative energy from Zhou Weiqing and his wife. At this moment, he wished that the negative energy would be slightly more so that it would be enough for him to open a tiny crack — even if it was the smallest rift ever — in the Nether Seal Formation. When that happened, he would have a chance to escape from here.

Whoosh —

Without warning, the two green light orbs in front of the Nether Lord stacked on top of one another. The two orbs merged into one. Although it did not increase in size, a mass of pitch black light materialized out of nowhere right in the center of the two green lights after the orbs merged. It was like an eye that was piercing chillingly at Zhou Weiqing with its gaze.

The Eye of Destruction — the Nether Lord's most powerful skill. Back when he was still in his prime, it was exactly with this skill that he was able to crack the Netherworld seal's magic formation. Right now, he was actually using this skill to go against Zhou Weiqing. Although he was no longer as powerful as he was in his prime, the power of this Eye of Destruction was still horrendous.

Almost instantly, the dark and dim light blasted out without warning. At the other side, Zhou Weiqing was also affected by the dynamics of the Qi around him. All of the stars that erupted from the Ringless Ground Purging Set melted into one with his incandescent Saint Energy before it turned into a thin but extremely condensed and solid incandescent light. It clashed directly with the beam that blasted out of the Eye of Destruction in the air.

Zhou Weiqing's Saint God Nucleus Core — the core of where the light had erupted from — had all its ten fingers interlaced. Incandescent light continued to surge out of it ceaselessly.

This was definitely Zhou Weiqing's most powerful attack in his entire life. At this moment, he felt like he was touching the edge of

the Heavenly Change Tier. Although it was not the real Heavenly Change Tier, just the feeling of elevation itself was more than enough to give him some confidence

However, this confidence would soon become dismayed.

Black versus light. The instance the two beams clashed in the air, that black light quickly forced Zhou Weiqing's light to retreat in an overwhelming manner. It bore down on it and fell towards Zhou Weiqing in a supersonic speed.

The dark light from the Eye of Destruction had an irrepressible imposing manner, and it was firing towards Zhou Weiqing like greased lightning.

It was also at this moment that the Nether Lord's body seemed to fade a little. One could easily imagine how much of a toll it took on his body. However, it was precisely because of the huge toll it took that he had such a frightful force. Zhou Weiqing condensed all of the energy from Tian'er, the Ringless Ground Purging Set and himself, but it still could not stop the Eye of Destruction's beam at all.

Right now, all color had already drained from Zhou Weiqing's face. He could clearly feel the Destruction Energy that was charging at him directly from the front. After all, death would cause everyone to shiver in fear. Zhou Weiqing's full potential was suddenly unleashed when he saw the black light approaching him inch by inch.

It was like the rich incandescent light was going to burn his body into ashes. Incandescent flame rose up into the sky and entirely bathed Zhou Weiqing in it.

That was right. Zhou Weiqing lit up his own Flames of Life due to this circumstance where his life hung in a balance. This was the only way that he could increase the force of his attack.

At this moment, the Eye of Destruction's beam had already

reached the front of the Saint God Nucleus Core. A hint of pale milky white color could be seen in the sudden increase of the incandescent light. It was the appearance of this hint of milky white color that halted the Eye of Destruction's beam that had already reached Zhou Weiqing's chest. It was only an inch away from the Saint God Nucleus Core.

The Nether Lord's eyes twitched as he sneered coldly, "Burning your own Flame of Life? Alright, I'd love to see how much more life you have left to burn! Under my Eye of Destruction's beam, death will only come to you faster!"

He was not exaggerating. Although Zhou Weiqing's attack was greatly boosted by burning his own Flames of Life, he could feel that his own vitality was being consumed at an extremely alarming rate at the same time. Almost in a blink of an eye, Zhou Weiqing could feel himself degenerating, and his black hair instantly turned all white.

His vitality was fading rapidly crazy, and it was just enough for him to resist the attack. However, how much longer could he withstand it?

Tian'er hovered behind Zhou Weiqing and watched his black hair turned white with her own eyes. At this moment, her heart almost shattered into pieces. However, she could not do anything at all to help him. Right now, even her Saint Energy cultivation base that was at the Lower Level of the Heavenly God Tier would not be of any use to Zhou Weiqing. Even if she burned her own Saint Energy, it would still be impossible for her to help Zhou Weiqing to withstand the Eye of Destruction's attack.

'Little Fatty... Little Fatty!' Tears had fully clouded Tian'er's view. She had completely lost all hope at this moment.

...

Outside the seal.

Hui Yao and Duo Si were back again. Flying from the Netherworld seal to the outside of the abyss and back again required a long time after all. On top of that, it had only been fifteen minutes since Zhou Weiqing was captured into the seal by the Nether Lord.

The Elven Empress was the most nervous. Color had long drained away from that beautiful and delicate face. All this while, she had been continuously and silently sensing her own vitality. The life sharing ability of hers and Zhou Weiqing was not obstructed by time or space at all. Despite her nervousness, her face remained calm and composed because she knew once Zhou Weiqing was dead, she would not be able to live as well.

Sharing a life with a male human being filled her with a very complicated feeling. Moreover, she had no idea why but somehow, it seemed like Zhou Weiqing had taken a place in her heart, and had become completely irreplaceable.

'Could he come back alive?' A bitter look could be seen on the Elven Empress's face. Without a doubt, the probability of Zhou Weiqing coming back alive was basically close to zero. That was the Netherworld God for f*ck's sake! One could easily imagine just how powerful the Nether Lord was. Even Zhou Weiqing's attributes would definitely be suppressed, let alone his cultivation base.

At this moment, the Elven Empress swayed on the spot without any warning. Horror instantly dawned on her face. This was because she could clearly feel that her own vitality was being consumed at an alarming rate.

'Weiqing, it was Zhou Weiqing!' His vitality was so deteriorated that he now needed to consume the Elven Empress' vitality. At this second, chills gripped onto the Elven Empress' heart. She knew that the inevitable was coming. The fact that Zhou Weiqing could last for fifteen minutes in the Netherworld alone was something that was more than enough to make one proud. However, there

was no change to the outcome at all.

A sorrowful look slowly crept up the Elven Empress' face as she slowly sat down with her legs crossed. Be it her or the Ancient Tree of Life behind her, both of them started to emit an intense turquoise brilliance that transformed into streaks of rich energy ripples that slowly vanished into nothingness.

That was right, Zhou Weiqing was starting to deplete the Elven Empress' vitality at this moment. The moment his hair had completely turned white, his own vitality had already reached a stage where it was almost dried up.

What a terrible consumption rate! Zhou Weiqing was a Heavenly God-tier powerhouse at the Maximum Level who had already touched the threshold of the Heavenly Change Tier. Even under such circumstances, his vitality was still being consumed so rapidly by the Eye of Destruction.

"Oh?" A puzzled voice could be heard from the Nether Lord. Previously, he had properly calculated that Zhou Weiqing would fall in the next second. However, he had no idea why a wave of vitality that was filled with determination suddenly burst out of Zhou Weiqing's body. The vitality continued to burn and withstand the beam from the Eye of Destruction as it stopped the black light from devouring him.

Once again, Zhou Weiqing had defied his prior judgment. The Nether Lord had an extremely annoyed look on his face. The Eye of Destruction was indeed powerful, but the consumption of his Destruction Origin Energy was equally huge as well. If this continued to go on, he would only have very little energy left in him.

However, he had no other choice as well at this moment. All he could do now was to kill off Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er first before the option of opening the door would even be open to him.

On the other hand, Zhou Weiqing's vision that had become

obscured suddenly lit up without warning. He could clearly feel the strong wave of vitality that was pouring out from his heart to every inch of his body. This wave of vitality kept flowing in an endless stream without any interruptions. All the same, a beautiful shadow rose from inside his heart.

'I-It's the Elven Empress. I'm sharing her vitality now. Moreover, it looks like I'm using up the Ancient Tree of Life's vitality as well.'

'B-But, the vitality consumption is just too fast! I'm afraid that they would all die with me if this continues!' Zhou Weiqing thought to himself as his heart was filled with a bitter taste. However, he had no energy left to change the current situation. Zhou Weiqing and the Elven Empress were destined to die together because of their life sharing ability. What else could he do? Pray for the Nether Lord's Destruction Energy to be insufficient? This was obviously impossible! Not only did the power of the Eye of Destruction not show any signs of being weakened, it was constantly getting more powerful as time went by. It caused the vitality that was burning in his body to vanish at a distressing rate.

"L-Little Fatty..." At this moment, a trembling voice rang in Zhou Weiqing's ears.

In the next second, Tian'er entered his sight.

Due to the incandescent Saint Energy that burned around Zhou Weiqing's body being too strong, Tian'er could no longer have any contact with his body. However, because they were both of one heart and shared the same feelings and sentiments, Tian'er could clearly sense Zhou Weiqing's vitality that was about to deplete anytime now.

"Little F-Fatty," Tian'er was calling out to him softly, "I really don't want to watch you die. I-I'm sorry, Little Fatty. P-Please forgive me... Our son and I will make our moves first. W-We'll wait for you i-in the other world."

'NOOO...! TIAN'ER!' Zhou Weiqing shouted maniacally in his

heart. However, he could not do anything all at this moment — he could not even making the slightest noise. It was all he could do to watch as Tian'er threw herself into the destruction beam.

That was right! Tian'er had already made up her mind to be selfish for once. She really could not stand seeing the man whom she loved the most dying right in front of her eyes. For this reason, she would rather die before he did.

While Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's was decisive, the Nether Lord was overjoyed and delighted. The moment Zhou Weiqing entered the Netherworld with Tian'er, Zhou Weiqing had been suppressing his emotions. Even now when he was faced with this situation where he was about to die, he did not show any negative emotion at all.

However, things were different now. As Tian'er threw herself into the destruction beam, a tremendous amount of negative emotions rushed out of Zhou Weiqing in a frenzy. Furthermore, these negative emotions greatly complemented the Nether Lord's Destruction Energy.

The Nether Lord understood very well that once Tian'er died, Zhou Weiqing would be greatly consumed by his negative emotions. He had even planned to slow down his attack if Tian'er died so Zhou Weiqing would release more of his negative emotions. Then, he would be able to replenish his Destruction Energy.

A Heavenly God-tier powerhouse was indeed very fast when they flew. The second Zhou Weiqing shouted in his heart, Tian'er had already flung herself towards the Destruction beam and used her body to block it from blasting forward.

Zhou Weiqing instinctively shut his eyes. Two streaks of tears flowed out of his eyes without control.

A series of images began to flash through his mind. He could still remember clearly what a cute little chubby cat Tian'er was when

he met her for the first time. When he was at the darkest point of his life, Tian'er had helped soothe his heart using her own body. No matter what the situation was, she would always be by his side, all the way until now. At this moment, Zhou Weiqing was so agonized that he could not even breathe. For a moment, he had even forgotten where he actually was.

'Tian'er, Tian'er...' Zhou Weiqing could not suppress the anguish in his heart. That heart-rending heartache was so agonizing that the burning of his vitality started to become unstable. Even the Elven Empress who was outside of the seal could feel the call from his heart.

Whoosh —

The destruction beam blasted squarely at Tian'er. At that instance, Tian'er's body suddenly stiffened. The Saint Energy that was protecting her immediately broke down under the Eye of Destruction's beam. After all, the energy was so bloodcurdling that even Zhou Weiqing was not able to hold it off.

The destruction beam soundlessly hit Tian'er's body, her eyes were already shut tightly. Although she was extremely unwilling, she did not regret her decision at all. Even if she could only hold off the attack for the sake of her man for a brief moment, she would never regret her decision.

The Nether Lord's eyes were already filled with a manic joy. He was eagerly waiting in excitement for Zhou Weiqing to explode with negative emotions and for Tian'er's own negative emotions to erupt after she died.

However, the laughter in his eyes froze without warning in the next moment. His entire body instantly began to shake violently. This was because Tian'er did not disappear although she was blasted with the destruction beam. Instead, a layer of gentle and harmless looking white light was radiating from her body.

In the face of this gentle white light, the powerful Eye of

Destruction's beam was like cheese that came in contact with a red-hot steel knife — it instantly shattered. In just a blink of an eye, the entire destruction beam vanished without a trace.

The gentle white light pulsed before the Eye of Destruction gently. The eye also froze and in the next moment, it faded away when the Nether Lord blasted out black aura from his mouth.

"This... T-This is impossible!" The Nether Lord shouted hysterically. He could not believe this. He could not believe the situation that had just unfolded in front of his eyes.

The Nether Lord felt the soft gentle white layer of light, and Zhou Weiqing could feel it clearly too. With tears flowing down Zhou Weiqing's cheeks, he could feel an extremely gentle energy suddenly enveloping his entire body. Hot on the heels was the fact that his vitality that was consumed before was now being restored at a speed that was much faster than the speed it was being consumed before. The Saint Energy in his body was also returning to his body at a miraculous speed. Moreover, this time the Saint Energy was no longer white gold in color nor was it the incandescent color that appeared after purification. Instead, it was a kind of gentle-like white color, a color that Zhou Weiqing was unable to describe but it was a color that was completely filled with Creation.

Intuitively, Zhou Weiqing opened his eyes. His pupil immediately widened up in surprise. 'W-What was that?'

He could see a holy saint light shining with radiance in the Netherworld that was filled with darkness and destruction.

Tian'er was not dead. She was hovering in the air with her eyes closed. Circles of gentle white light ceaselessly emitted from her lower abdomen.

At this time, a loud cry from a baby suddenly filled the air. A mass of soft white light suddenly floated out from Tian'er's lower abdomen.

Indeed, there was no wound on Tian'er, but a small tiny baby just flew out from her lower abdomen.

That baby had a height of about fifty centimeters. Both of his palms were fisted tightly together. His legs were curled up closely towards his chest. The pink little buttocks were so adorable that it was absolutely succulent. Moreover, it was apparent there was a tiny, cute little thing hanging in between both of his legs.

Yes, it was a boy.

At this moment, Zhou Weiqing was blown away. Tian'er was taken aback as well. All of this went beyond their expectations. It was not only the Nether Lord who could not believe this, even the two of them who were the initiators could not believe the scene before their eyes as well. However, this scene had undeniably taken place right in front of them.

A soft white light was radiating off the tiny body, and it bathed Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er in it. The Saint Energy in their bodies also turned into the gentle white color as well.

After the tiny baby floated out of Tian'er's lower abdomen, he slowly opened his eyes. Although his body was still curled up in a fetal position, at this moment, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er could clearly see a pair of clear black orbs in his eyes.

It was like they could see the other side of the world from these black orbs. It was also at this second that the both of them could feel every part of themselves being elevated.

The moment the Eye of Destruction was shattered, the Nether Lord had already flown far into the distance. He was aghast as he stared at the scene before him. He could clearly feel that all of the Destruction Energy in the Netherworld was disappearing at a terribly brisk speed, and it was caused by none other than the gentle white light that was radiating from the baby's body.

'This... T-This is impossible!' The Nether Lord's soul trembled in

fear. This was because he could finally identify what this gentle white light was.

It was the Saint Energy. It was not the Saint Energy that Zhou Weiqing possessed, but it was the Genesis Saint Energy instead. The true Genesis Saint Energy! The most formidable, most powerful energy in existence. An energy that only the Genesis God possessed — the Genesis Saint Energy that was endowed with an infinity of Creation Energy.

'C-Could it be that he's the reincarnation of the Genesis God? A... A Saint Baby...'

The despair in the Nether Lord's heart was exactly the same one that Zhou Weiqing had felt just a moment before. Right now, he could no longer muster the strength to revolt. After all, any resistance would be futile in front of the true Genesis Energy.

"T-Tian'er!" In a flicker, Zhou Weiqing appeared in front of Tian'er and hugged her tightly in his embrace.

Tian'er was looking at Zhou Weiqing as well. With her trembling voice, she announced, "T-This is our c-child!" At this instance, she had already recalled the white light that appeared when she was previously attacked. It turned out that all this while, it had been her child who had been protecting her all along. And right now, at this moment, he was finally born.

"T-That's right! It's o-our son!" Zhou Weiqing's voice was trembling as well. He could feel the changes in his Saint Energy. Although his judgment was not as refined as the Nether Lord, he understood fairly well that this battle was finally over. Truly over! His own family finally emerged as the final victor.

The tiny baby floated slowly into the sky and eventually fell into Tian'er's bent arms. His big eyes were lit up with divine glitters as he looked at Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er with the newfangled novelty of coming into this world.

Although Dongfang Hanyue had also given birth to Zhou Weiqing's son as well, the feeling of witnessing the birth of his son was entirely different. At this moment, there were only excitement and joy in Zhou Weiqing's heart. Intuitively, he lifted up a hand to stroke this cute little life gently, a little life who had given his parents a new life.

However, it was apparent that this little guy did not seem to care much about a certain somebody's feeling. A small fair hand lifted up and seized Tian'er's chest. Another small hand quickly dived into her clothes and started to grope naturally.

Zhou Weiqing stared at this scene in bewilderment with his mouth agape. In the next moment, a fair and tender bulging mound was taken out by the little guy. Tian'er's gasped in shock as his tiny pink mouth immediately latched onto it and started to suck vigorously.

Was this a lecherous instinct or survival instinct? Zhou Weiqing was a little dumbfounded. However, although he was in shock, he was quickly reminded of a certain important thing that he had yet to do.

He lifted his head up as his piercing gaze searched sharply for a certain figure. Now that Zhou Weiqing had possessed the true Genesis Energy, even if he was not the Genesis God, he was more or less similar to one. Even supposing the Nether Lord was still in his prime, he would still probably not be a match for Zhou Weiqing, let alone a Nether Lord who was left with only an empty shell.

However, when Zhou Weiqing tried to look for him, he was astonished to find that the Nether Lord had vanished from sight. Although the surrounding remained dark, no signs of the Nether Lord could be seen at all.

'Did that guy run away?' Zhou Weiqing snorted coldly, "Nether Lord, do you really think you can escape from me? I'll just tear

apart your Netherworld and see where you're going to hide after this!" With his Genesis Saint Energy cultivation base, he no longer bothered about the Netherworld seal. Indeed, the Nether Lord could still conceal himself in this Netherworld but what would happen if the Netherworld was gone? Where else could he hide?

Intense Saint Energy exuded out of Zhou Weiqing's body and transformed into a huge white halo that spread out to his surroundings. All of the Destruction Energy in the surrounding area was being purified in an extremely astonishing speed. The place that the Genesis Saint Energy brushed past was full of vigor and was void of destruction.

"Little one, don't make your move so recklessly. It's better to leave the Netherworld as it is, and as for that Nether Lord, let me help you to deal with him."

At this time, a crisp voice could be heard reverberating in the air. In just a blink of an eye, a streak of strange blue light appeared out of thin air in this dark realm.

Zhou Weiqing's Genesis Saint Energy was indeed powerful. However, when this blue shadow appeared, a golden light radiated from his body and actually forced all of Zhou Weiqing's Saint Energy to retreat.

At that moment, horror dawned on Zhou Weiqing's face. 'Who was this? Why was the Saint Energy not working on him?'

The blue figure appeared, and it turned out to be a young man with handsome features. His blue, long hair that was like the blue ocean hung loosely behind his shoulders. A blue robe that was like the ocean as well shrouded his entire body. A golden weapon could be seen in his right hand.

The dazzling golden light illuminated almost the entire Netherworld, including the Nether Lord who was curled up by the corner.

Chapter 848: My Name is Tang San (Grand Finale)

The blue-haired youth watched Zhou Weiqing with a gentle look. The golden trident in his hands looked particularly dazzling.

"Who are you?" Zhou Weiqing asked cautiously. Now that another person had suddenly appeared in the Netherworld, who knew if this was another plot or trick by the Nether Lord.

The blue-haired youth smiled, "I guess I'm known as a God from your point of view."

"God?" Zhou Weiqing stared at him in astonishment with his mouth agape.

The blue-haired youth nodded his head. "Let me deal with the elephant in the room first." As he said that, he turned around slightly and faced the direction where the Nether Lord was at.

"What God? F*ck you!" The Nether Lord snarled madly in terror and anger. His originally crouched body leaped up and charged towards the blue-haired youth. Whatever little Destruction Origin Energy that was left erupted from him.

He understood very well that it was unlikely that he would be spared today. When Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er's suddenly gained the Genesis Saint Energy under the illumination of the Saint Baby's light, he knew immediately that he was doomed. At that time, his only thought was to use his familiarity with the Destruction Realm to hide for a short while to prolong his life. However, it seemed like it was almost impossible now. Under the all-embracing radiance of the Genesis Saint Energy, he had no place to shelter himself at all. How could he possibly find a place to conceal himself?

That blue-haired youth appeared to be much easier to deal with compared to Zhou Weiqing. With this thought in mind, the Nether

Lord rushed forward with the idea of perishing together with him in mind.

Eight long crab legs were bared and brandished. Streaks of green lights instantly blasted out as it formed a giant net and shrouded the blue-haired youth.

Zhou Weiqing hovered in the air without doing anything. He wanted to see exactly how this blue-haired youth was going to handle the Nether Lord.

The blue-haired youth only smiled when faced with the Nether Lord's attack. The smile remained warm and gentle. " I haven't used my Eight Spider Spears for some time now. Since you've eight legs as well, I might as well use that to deal with you!"

Eight blue lights immediately shot out from behind the blue-haired youth — it was eight crystal clear long and blue legs. Although they might look almost similar to the ones that the Nether Lord possessed, the aura that they emitted was completely different.

The aura that emanated out of the blue-haired youth was awe-inspiring, massive and magnificent. Zhou Weiqing could not distinguish the exact attribute of that inexhaustible energy. All he could feel was that even his own Genesis Saint Energy would not be able to retaliate against it.

A gigantic net of blue light spread out in no time. The Nether Lord instantly resembled a flying moth that darted into the flame. The instant his so-called Destruction Origin Energy that could destroy everything came in contact with the blue light, it immediately vanished without a trace. The next second, the Nether Lord's body was directly shrouded inside the huge blue net as it was being sucked in by a powerful force.

The blue-haired youth let out a sigh, "You know, you can be considered as quite a genius for being able to cultivate from enmity and destruction to such a level. Unfortunately, you should've

never existed in the first place. You didn't cherish your wisdom. Instead, you chose to walk on the path of self-destruction. Just this one point shows that you're far less clever than the little girl who plays with fire from the other world. For this reason, I've no choice but to wipe you off this world."

As he was saying that, the clear black pupils of the blue-haired youth suddenly became red. A wave of horrifying air that forebode evil that erupted from the blue-haired youth almost made Zhou Weiqing fall. It suppressed all his Genesis Saint Energy and forced it back into his body.

A red light flashed for a second in the sky before it disappeared again. The net of blue light was no longer in sight, and before the Nether Lord could even let out a last scream of terror, any remnants of his soul had already been completely wiped out from this world. There was not even a trace left at all.

The evil air immediately retracted, and the blue-haired youth returned to his original gentle temperament again. However, both Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er were gripping their chest tightly at this moment. They could clearly feel that this blue-haired youth was most likely even more frightening than the Nether Lord in his prime. The Genesis Saint Energy that he was proud of did not seem to have any effect on this youth at all.

"Do you find it strange that your Genesis Saint Energy is useless against me?" The blue-haired youth turned towards Zhou Weiqing and flashed him a gentle smile.

Zhou Weiqing nodded his head. At this moment, he started to believe the claim that the blue-haired youth had made earlier about him being a God. After all, there was no reason for the youth to deceive them at all with the power that he possessed.

The blue-haired youth smiled. "Actually, the theory's very simple. This is because neither one of you nor the Nether Lord whom I've just wiped out, are gods. In a sense, your understanding

is actually correct. The so-called Heavenly Change Tier in your world indeed is a tier that reaches the level of a God. However, that's only confined to reaching the level of a God. Whoever wants to become a true God must possess the true status of a God. Otherwise, just having God's power itself without possessing the legacy will not allow you to become a real God."

"As for your Genesis Saint Energy. Yes, you're right, it 's indeed the most powerful energy in this world. Even if you only possess this Genesis Saint Energy temporarily, it's already quite impressive. Even I would find it hard to kill the two of you who temporarily possess the Genesis Saint Energy."

"The two of you are very fortunate. It's because the two of you already possess the Saint Energy when your child was conceived. Conceiving a child happens to coincide with the Genesis Path. For this reason, before your child was even born, he already possesses a little bit of the Genesis Origin Energy. Originally, if he was born under normal circumstances, this bit of Genesis Origin Energy would dissipate on its own. However, who would have ever thought that the Nether Lord would activate this Genesis Origin Energy with his Destruction Origin Energy. It's exactly because of this that the two of you have the power that you have right now."

"I've already felt it initially when the Nether Lord tried to break the seal. I immediately made my way here without wasting any time. However, what entered my sight was all of you working together to seal the Nether Lord again. Moreover, the two of you have created a miracle, and I guess I'm just here to clean up the mess."

Zhou Weiqing was dumbfounded. That was to say even if he and the others did not come to fight the Nether Lord, the person before him would still come to wipe the Nether Lord off. It seemed like even the Godworld would not allow the Netherworld to exist!

Tian'er could not help but ask, "T-Then, would it affect our child?"

The blue-haired youth shook his head, "Don't you worry about it. It won't have any effect on him at all. However, this Genesis Saint Energy is a power that nobody can possess, not even the Gods. This is because the Genesis God had disappeared after he created this world. Honestly, even I can't help but be a little jealous that your child can temporarily possess the Saint Baby's power. After a period of time, the Genesis Saint Energy would disappear from your body, and your original strength will be restored so you don't have to worry about anything at all."

Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er breathed a sigh of relief. Zhou Weiqing continued to ask, "So why did you stop me from destroying the Netherworld earlier?"

The blue-haired youth replied, "This Netherworld has become a fixed place that absorbs the enmity and all negative emotions from your world. Therefore, you'll only need to come here regularly to purify this realm. This way, you no longer have to worry about the emergence of another Nether Lord in thousands or even ten thousands of years to come. If this place is destroyed, and as luck would have it, another Netherworld would most probably be formed at some other place that you don't know of. There's no point in allowing this to happen right?"

This time, Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er finally understood. Both of them bowed towards the blue-haired youth at the same time. "Thank you for your guidance."

The blue-haired youth smiled, "I need to go now. Before I leave, Weiqing, have you ever thought about becoming a true God? The power that I used to wipe out the Nether Lord earlier was called the Shura Energy. He's one of the Three Great Enforcers in the Godworld who has a power that's almost equivalent to a God King. If you're willing, I can transform your Saint Energy into the Shura Energy, and let you inherit the God's Status of God Shura. As for your cultivation base, as long as you work harder and cultivate for a period of time, even the God King might not be your match."

Zhou Weiqing was taken aback. He looked into the clear eyes of that blue-haired youth as he faced a proposal that was enough to make everyone go crazy, he shook his head firmly.

"No, it's alright. Thanks for your kindness."

"Can you tell me the reason why?" The blue-haired youth asked curiously.

Zhou Weiqing chuckled and said, "Well, because being a God might not be as enjoyable as being a human. Otherwise, why would you give your status to me?"

The blue-haired youth laughed, "What a cunning kid! Alright, it's time for me to leave. Goodbye. If you happen to change your mind, just face the dark sky, and call out my name. I'm Tang San by the way."

A streak of blue light flickered and transformed into a light beam. It rose up into the sky as it brought Tang San along. He waved his hand at Zhou Weiqing and Tian'er from the sky while he muttered in a gloomy and low voice that only he could hear, "Ahh I've finally found someone who's capable to be my heir but I got rejected in the end. Looks like Kindness and Evil are quite the cunning people. They somehow managed to get that little Ji Dong and Lie Yan to inherit their places. Hmm, seems like I need to work harder and give my status as the Shura God away as soon as possible so that I can finally bring Xiao Wu and Xiao Qi to live a free life."

...

Outside the seal. Within the deep abyss.

Those who were waiting were no longer restricted to the twelve Divine Beasts and the Elven Empress.

Shangguan Tianyang, Xue Ao'tian, and Zhou Weiqing's wives were here waiting quietly. Hui Yao and his wife had fetched them over and told them everything that had taken place before.

The three Shangguan sisters, Little Witch, and Dongfang Hanyue were all so pale that no words could come out of their mouths. Only tears could be seen welling in their eyes.

What were the odds of Zhou Weiqing coming out alive after being dragged into the Netherworld by the Nether Lord? None of them dared to even ponder on this question.

"L-Little Fatty, L-Little Fatty! You must make it out alive! I won't blame you anymore, alright? No matter how many wives you want to have, I'll never disagree any longer!"

Shangguan Fei'er who was usually domineering, high and mighty was now fully drenched in tears. Although she looked like she was the strongest of the girls, she was currently the most vulnerable right now. She hugged Shangguan Bing'er and Little Witch, and the three of them were crying until they were out of breath.

Although Shangguan Xue'er and Dongfang Hanyue were quite strong, both of them were staring ahead numbly into space as well. Dongfang Hanyue muttered in a low voice, "As long as you can make it out alive, I'll go back immediately and stop disturbing all of your lives okay? Weiqing! Please stay alive!"

Shangguan Xue'er shook her head, "No! If he comes back alive, all of us are a family! You must stay as well!"

Dongfang Hanyue was shocked as she stared at Shangguan Xue'er. The two girls locked eyes. At this moment, the wall between them slowly melted away as they both felt despair.

Only the Elven Empress who was sitting there with her eyes gradually opening had a faint smile on her delicate face.

"LITTLE FATTY —" All of a sudden, Shangguan Fei'er's shrill voice pierced the sky, "You bastard! You must come back alive! As long as you're back, even if you want to sleep with all of us together at the same time, I'll be willing to do that too..."

If she had announced such words previously, all of Zhou

Weiqing's wives would have blushed a crimson red. However, at this moment, all that they had were tears.

Suddenly, at that moment of grief, a teasing voice resonated among the crowds, "Oh! A bargain is a bargain!"

"L-Little Fatty?"

"Little Fatty!"

"LITTLE FATTY —"

"Little F-Fatty..."

"AH! Don't bite me! I'm still alive!"

...

The turquoise blue sky was entirely cloudless. This was a world that was decorated in green. The grass was green and lush. Various cute animals were playing all over the green hills and valleys.

Beside the huge lake that was as blue as blue crystal, a thatched cottage that appeared simple yet comfortable stood quietly.

"Little Fatty! The eldest one just pee-peed! Go and clean out the urinal please!"

"Okay, okay, I'll go right now."

"Little Fatty, is the meal ready? I'm hungry. If my tummy's not filled, your daughter's tummy will not be full as well!"

"Alright, It's coming soon! Eight dishes and one soup! It's absolutely sumptuous!"

"Little Fatty! You told me that you're going to give me a massage! When are you going to do it?"

"I-I... Oh, my lovely wives! Can somebody teach me a Shadow Clone Technique please!" A certain someone shouted out indignantly.

"Well, you deserve it!" A few beautiful voices rang out almost unanimously.

Zhou Weiqing was an honest man. He had fulfilled his promise and created this separate realm that was connected to the Elf Tribe. At this moment, he was using the remainder of his time to greatly compensate his loved ones.

Two huge figures could be seen sneering not far away from the thatched cottage.

Hui Yao was laughing in his deep voice, "As it turns out, having multiple wives is not necessarily a good thing. Looks like being faithful to one is better after all!"

Duo Si chuckled, "You're right. Still, it's not okay for you to gloat you know. Weiqing is our great benefactor after all!"

Hui Yao chuckled as well, "Of course, I'll never forget that. If it's not for his Saint Energy that nourished our health tremendously, you wouldn't be able to get pregnant again. Looks like we'll have to push back our plan of finding our tribe. However, I believe that even if our ancestor is resurrected, he'll never blame us for this."

Embarrassed, Duo Si lay her head on Hui Yao's neck, "The twelve Divine Beasts from the Nether Seal that Weiqing has sent out to accompany Dongfang Hanyue back to the Mysterious Heavenly Mainland will most probably be coming back soon I guess."

"Yeah! Only this brat Weiqing can do such thing. I still remember his tone at that time. He told Dongfang Hanyue that if the Mysterious Heavenly Palace refuses to set her free, he'll ask the twelve Divine Beasts to pull the Mysterious Heavenly Mainland over to join with the Boundless Mainland. Oh, yeah! What words do the humans use to describe a person like Zhou Weiqing again? I remember there are two words, right?"

"Are you trying to say these — hooligan and rascal?"

...

(The End)

Translator's Thoughts

It's finally come to an end. Although I did not have the pleasure of translating this novel from the beginning, I have grown to enjoy the story itself, along with the amazing fans of this wonderful story.

A sincere thanks to those who have followed it since we picked up the translations, and also to those who have been kind enough to point out my oversights when I make mistake. I sincerely apologize.

That being said, I look forward to the chance of maybe seeing all of you again sometime in the future. Thanks for being awesome.

Yours Truly,

Insignia